ANNALES, OR, A GENERALL CHRONICLE OF ENGLAND.

Begun by IOHN STOW:

CONTINVED AND Augmented with matters Forraigne and Domestique, Ancient and Moderne, vnto the end of this present yeere, 1631.

By EDMVND HOWES, *Gent.*

LONDINI, Impensis RICHARDI MEIGHEN, [illegible]

1631

X9942
S+77a

TO THE HONEST AND VNDERSTANDING READER.

TO giue thee good content, and to delight thy successors with the plaine knowledge of the occurrents in generall, which hapned in the daies of their fore-fathers, I haue vsed my best diligence and industry: and if in reading the same, it may please thee but to vse the tenth part of that patience, which in the collection thereof I haue endured, thou shalt doe thy selfe a great pleasure and me a high fauor. What I might say more, and that very iustly I now forbeare, hauing spoken somewhat to that purpose in the Epistle Dedicatorie of my abridgement: which for a generall answer vnto all scandalls, calumny, and malicious obiections against me, I haue annexed it at the end of this booke. If these my tedious labours of impart all truth, be kindly accepted and honestly construed: then perhaps some other in time to come may be encouraged to enterprize the like. Expect no fyled phrases, Inke-horne termes, vnpoath words, nor phantastique speaches, but good plaine English, without affectation, rightly befitting Chronologie: If Cicero's eloquence, Plato's Oratorie, or Virgils lofty verse, be thy chiefe desire; Pauls-church-yard is now plentifully furnished to satisfie thee: yea, and that so excellently well written in thy mother-tongue, as no forraigne Nation may compare with thee: no, not the Germans, of whom it hath beene said, to haue all Stories, Arts and Sciences in their vulgar language.

Doe not backbite me for my good meaning, nor play the Momus when thou heareſt truth. It is extreme baseneſſe to abuse him, that in all his endeauours seekes to loue and honour thee. Read vnderstandingly, and iudge indifferently.

The ancient Britaines amongst many their ancient Prouerbs, say: it is the least requitall of honest courteſies, to accept them kindly, and it is the smalleſt frendship that may be, to giue good words of the absent. But if neither desire, nor deſert may gaine thy fauour, it shall euer remaine as much thy fault as my hard hap. Therefore freely vse thy speach and wit at thy own pleasure for lauſhing toungs, and vile encounters of the ignorant, proud, and enuious, haue so tyred me, that henceforth I will reſt sans feare or care of their braine-sick imitations. But to generous spirits, honorable mindes, learned heads, and vnderſtanding hearts, I humbly proſtrate my life and labours at their reuerend feete:

657926

TO THE READER.

knowing they will expect no more then may be had, and rest content with what they find, giuing their censures fauourably. Truth was, and is both subiect and soueraigne of what I sought, and haue composed, without intent of flattery or offence. Lay not then the PRINTERS *fault vnto my charge, perhaps there may be too many escapes of my owne, the which if comming to thy knowledge, with all meekenesse I doe intreate thee to amend, or kindly for thy country sake, instruct me to reforme my error, and thou shalt find my honest diligence answer thy true expectation, one day iudgeth another, and the last iudgeth all,* Bernardus non vidit omnia, *I presume thou art wise and honest be assured I wish thee so, and hoping thou wilt proue so, I cease, recommending all things to thy good acceptation, euer praying that peace and good though tsmay possesse thee.*

Thy friend euer assured,

EDMOND HOVVES.

AN HISTORICALL PREFACE TO THIS BOOKE.

THE Law of God forbiddeth vs to receiue a false reportt, and the law of *Histories* is, that we ought to publish no falshood, nor dissemble any truth. If in any thing this should be obserued, it ought to be in the preseruation of those *Monuments* which do set forth the memory of our ancestors, the honor of our ancient Fathers, the mercies of God vpon our country, and his iudgements warning vs what to follow and auoyd: this excellent vse of aged *stories*, we are depriued of, by those who when they haue laid hold vpon some one or two mistakings in the life of some one man, do by and by not onely deny that there was any such man, but dash and cashire a whole succession of Princes and the consenting testimonies of many learned and worthy Hystorians. The example hereof is in *Brute*, the first King of this Monarchy, who in that age, when almost all the world, especially *Europe*, ran doting in desire of the *Troian* or *Italian* ancestors, some writers fabled to be the sonne of *Siluius*, descended of *Aeneas*, and that he killed his Father, and came by Oracle into *Brittaine*: these things learned men, finding to dissent from the *Roman* Story, some left out the Pedigree of the British Kings. *Nuberigensis* maketh a solemne inuectiue against *Galfridus*, one of the penmen of that Chronicle, speaking, as may appeare more of spleen, then of iudgement. The most learned and diligent Antiquary, M^r. *Camden* for his owne censure, doth not deny the person of *Brute*, but relating the opinions of others. *Iohn* of *Whethampsted*, the first that I read of in the yeere 1449. setteth downe some exceptions taken to the particular narrations of *Brute*, namely, that he was the son of *Siluius*, and killed his father, and such like. *Polydor Virgil* is the only man I find, who vpon those particular exceptions, although hee confessed those things to be registred *Per duos egregios historicos*, yet he reiecteth the whole hystory of *Brute* and his successors: by the same reason, he may reiect all ancient hystories, & himself deserueth to be reiected for his many fabulous narrations, as also *Nuberigensis*, otherwise called *W. Petit*, who hath not a few, who wrote bitterly against the hystory of *Ieffrey* of *Monmouth*, but neuer wrote a word against *Hen.* of *Huntington*, that wrot of the same things before the publication of *Ieffries* booke: his malice against the *Brittanes*, was, because being an earnest suitor for a Bishopricke in *Wales*, he was reiected by *Dauid* Aberconen then Prince of *Wales*. This *Newberigensis* liued in the yeere 1165. and was the first that wrote against the Brittish hystory, but I will not stand to confute or answer their obiections, for it is already done at large by S^r. *Iohn Price*, in the defence of the Brittish hystory, and briefly by M^r. Doctor *Powel* in his Epistle prefixed to *Pantieus*, and most gravely, and iudiciously by M^r. *Lambert* in his perambulation of *Kent*, to me, it shall suffice to write that the first that I find directly to oppugne the hystory of *Brute*, is *Iohn* of *Whethampsted* not 200. yeeres agoe, and I doe not read of any of our owne, that agree with him, but *Polydor*, *Bodin*, and other strangers, who may well be excused for their ignorance in Brittish Antiquities, and deserue not to be laid in ballance to counterprize the authority of so ma-

ny learned Authors of our country, who, with ioynt consent, haue affirmed the Brittaine hystory, whose names, or so many of them as haue come to my knowledge I haue here set downe to be perfued of such as desire to be satisfied.

Gildas Sapiens, cited by *Cestrensis Ponticus*, Sir *Iohn Price*, and others, or as some call him, *Nennius*.

Thomas, Archbishop of *Yorke*, in the time of *William* the *Conquerour*, cited by *Fox*, in his booke of *Monuments, ex Chronico Sigeberti*.

Henry Huntington, stiled by *Polydor Egregius historicus*, in other bookes, but especially in the booke *de origine Britannorum*, cited by Master *Lambert*.

Mathew of Paris, a most wise, faithfull, and learned hystorian saith of *Monmouth*, that he did translate the Brittish hystory into latine.

Mathew of Westminster, in *floribus*, nameth *Brito* for *Brutus*, calling him the sonne of *Hector*, descended of *Iuuan*, which Pedigree is also found in *Gildas*, and the ancient Brittish hystories, as it may appeare by Sir *Iohn Price*.

Giraldus Cambrensis, who carped at *Galfridus*, and yet followed the hystory of *Ponte*.

Ranulfus, Cestrensis, Alfredus cited in *Polichronicon*, and Sir *Iohn Price*.

Fasciculus temporum, Iohannes Anglicus, Honeian.

Cornubiæ, these three last are cited by Sir *Iohn Price*.

Galfridus, Simon Dunelmensis.

Petrus Langtoft, about the time of *Edward* the second, or *Edward* the third.

An ancient Chronicle in french verse, these three I saw in the study of Sir *Robert Cotton*, a most learned iudicious and diligent Antiquary.

Alanus ab insulis in prophetias Merlin, Ponticus Virrunnius.

Sir *Iohn Price, in defensione Britanicæ Historiæ, Iohannes Baleus in Centuriis, Iohn Leyland, Iohn Cooprane, Robert Kelway*, in his reports of Law, *Folio* 161. speaketh of *Mulmutius*, the Brittish King.

Fabian Grafton, Languet, Cooper, Stow, Hollingshead, and Master *Lambert* in his perambulation of *Kent*, and many others.

Of these, some doe set downe the common report, whom therefore I cannot much blame, but others more iu licious, defend, or teach the hystory briefly, or make short narrations, that there was one *Brute*, King of the Realme, who left this kingdome to his three sonnes, whose iudgements I must needs commend, but those that preferre the Coniectures of a few incompetent witnesses, before the grauity and authority of so many ancient Authors, whereof most are very learned and sincere, and by all likelihood, had seene diuers ancient writings and Monuments, which are now vtterly vnknowne and extinct, doe violate both the rules of Wisdome and of Iustice: of Wisdome, first, in preferring incompetent witnesses, before competent, strangers before natiue, few before many, arguments before testimonies: secondly, in not discerning betwixt fables and truth, betweene that which may stand with other hystories, and that which cannot, but for some aspertions of fiction, reiecting altogether: of Iustice, towards their country, in depriuing it of the glory of so many antient Kings; and towards God, in suppressing many examples of his diuine iustice, whose iudgements as vpon other sinnes, so especially vpon Idolatry, heresie, cruelty, dissentions, rebellions, murders, and confused lusts, registred in our records, ought now to be so many *Trumpets* to summon vs to repentance. These ought we therefore alwayes to remember in regard of our Ancestors, and for that purpose, I will say no more but this: *qui parcit alterius dignitati, suam seruat*, and whoso without cause, dishonoreth antiquity, deserueth, little or no credit of posterity. But if neither these obseruations, nor the traditions of the Brittaines from age to age, which neuer faild to keepe memory of *Brute*, nor the authorities before alledged, then let such as will search further, read the ancient Chronicles of *Italy, France, Spaine*, and *Germany*, or the Cosmography of *Sebastian Munster, Macrobius* or *Æneas Siluius*, other wise called *Pius Secundus* in his *Bohemyan* hystory. And for as much as of my owne knowledge, I

well wot, that there are some, that daily make as causeless doubt and question concerning *Troy*, that is, whether euer there were any such City or Prouince as *Troy*, and that if there were, then where it stood: for whose modest satisfaction, sith neither the authorities before rehearsed, nor the foure and twenty Bookes of the most wise and learned *Homer*, called *Homers Iliads*, who liued in, or neere the time of the destruction of *Ilyum* doe nor satisfie, I will therefore set downe an abstract out of sundry Authentique Authors the state and scituation thereof, and after that a briefe relation of the chiefe seuerall alterations of this kingdome, according to the obseruation of the reuolution and change of euery fiue hundred yeeres, from *Brute* vnto this time present.

IN *Asia* the lesse, are many particular Regions, as *Acolia, Meonia, Ionya, Misea, Lidea*, with others, and haue also diuers famous Cities in the lesser *Phrigia*, amongst which, of ancient time, was a City called *Ilyum*, being then the most renowned of all the world, and vulgarly of the countrey wherein it stood, was called *Troya*, from whence many famous and great men were dispersed thorow the whole world, after the *Grecians* had destroyed it. Some write, that this City was builded, 828. yeeres after the deluge, and 1200. yeers before the incarnation of our Lord Iesus. In the Region, or Citty, there raigned sixe Kings, namely, *Dardanus, Erichtonius, Tros, Ilus, Laomedon*, and *Priamus*, in whose time it was subuerted by the *Greekes*, because when *Priamus* vpon certaine occasion being absent, the *Grecians* violently entred into his Kingdome, and ouerthrew *Ilyum*, and returned with great spoyle, and carryed away with them, *Hesione*, the Kings sister, vpon knowledge whereof, and considering what was fit to be done, *Priamus* repaired and strengthened his Citty, and holds against all further incursions of his enemies. He had to wife, *Hecuba*, and by her had fiue Sonnes, *viz. Hector, Paris*, who was also called *Alexander, Diophobus, Helenus* and *Troylus*: he had also three daughters, *viz. Andromache, Cassandra*, and *Polixena*, and for that he would be reuenged of the late outrage, done by him and his people, he sent his kinsman, Prince *Anthenor*, into *Greece*, who required that *Hesione* might be restored, but they proudly refused it, vsing the Ambassador reprochfully, and so sent him away, whereupon *Priamus*, by aduice, prepared a Nauy of ships, and an army of men, ouer which, he appointed *Paris* for their Generall, who with a prosperous wind, sailed into the Isle of *Citherya*, wherein was an ancient Temple of *Venus*, of high estimation amongst the *Grecians*. In this Temple, and at that time, it chanced to be the celebratin of the feast of *Venus*, and great multitudes of people to be there assembled, mongst whom was the most beautious, *Helena*, wife to *Menelaus*, King of *Lacedemonia*, whose kingdome was not far distant from that Isle. She hearing of the *Troians* arriuall, was wondrous desirous to see the strangers, for which purpose, vnder pretence of performing her vowes, went in all haste to the Isle where she was very honorably receiued of the Inhabitants, and in the morning earely, with great pompe she entred the Temple, and *Paris* hauing heard before of her beauty, and of her comming, entred likewise into the Temple, in all princely brauery, and as one of them beheld the other, they both became enamored one with another: *Paris*, desirous to take aduantage of all opportunities, forthwith commands his men priuately to conuey away their ships by night when they had feasted, taken *Helena*, and spoyled the Temple, all which they performed. This exployte being known to *Priamus*, he was very ioyful, hoping that *Helena* would ransome *Hesione*, but *Castor* and *Pollux* hauing intelligence of their Sisters surprizall, they embaked themselues with all expedition to make pursuite, but there arose a very fierce tempest and they were drowned at

Priamus began his raign in *Troy*, in the yeere of the world, 2237. and before the incarnation of our Saiuour Christ 1229. read *Dictis of Candy*.

David, King of *Israel*, began his raigne in *Hebron* in the yeere of the world, 2891. and before the comming of our Saiuour Christ, 1071. *Hesione* was Ant vnto *Dionelaus*, and was giuen in marriage by *Hercules* vnto *Telemon*, for *Hercules* not long before, had sack *Troy*, and tooke *Hesione* prisoner read *Dares* of *Phrigia*, and *Ouid*.

Helena was the daughter of *Iupiter* and *Leda*.

Menelaus was son to *Atreus*, or as some say, to *Pelopheres*, & *Europes* read *Dares* the *Phrigian*, & *Ouid*.

Menelaus was not so much grieued for the losse of his wife, as for his two kinsmen, *Bibra*, and *Cymera*, when were taken away in the company of *Helena*: read *Dictis of Candy*, *Dares* and *Ouid*.

Helena was rauished in her infancy by *Thiseus*, as I gest *Athens*, who began his raigne in the

yeere of the world, 2720. read *Iustin*, 2. Booke, and *Plutarch* and *Ouid*. *Agamemnon* was the Grecians generall, and king of *Micena*, in the yeere of the world, 2762. he reigned 18. yeeres, and *Helena* was rauished by *Paris* in the first yeere of his raigne which was before sheouth of our Saiuour, Christ Iesus, 1194. read *Euripides* in the Tragedy of *Orestes*. *Vlysses* and *Achilles* came not in their owne persons to the warres of *Troy*, vntill the yeere of the world, 2771. and then they came together, *Vlysses* was the subtillest and *Achilles* was the strongest of all the Princes of *Greece*: read *Homer*, and *Virgil*.

sea neere the coſt of *Lesbos*. And *Menelaus* hearing that his wife was gone, hee by the inſtigation of his brother *Agamemnon*, ſtirred vp all the Kings and Princes of *Grecia* to reuenge his wrong, whereupon the Kings of *Mycena*, *Sparta*, *Boeotia*, and of *Phocis*, with *Vlyſſes*, King of the Iſle of *Ithaca*, and *Achilles*, King of *Theſſalia*, and others, who hauing with all ſpeed prepared a mighty army by Sea and land well furniſhed, aſſailed the kingdome of *Troy*, and from the Iſle of *Tenedos* they ſent an Ambaſſador to require *Helena*, with ſatisfaction for the ſpoyle of their Temple, but *Pryamus* abſolutely denied all, except they would firſt reſtore *Heſione*, whereat the *Grecians* were greatly diſpleaſed, very wrathfully entred vpon the borders of the *Troians*, and executed great ſlaughter and violence, and many periſhed on both ſides, and many deſpights were done by the *Grecians*, vpon their Citties, in the Iſle of *Lesbos*, they tooke alſo young *Polidorus*, ſonne to *Pryamus*, being but lately borne, who was ſent into *Thracia*, to his wiues brother, *Ciſſeus*, King of *Thracia*, becauſe that if *Troy* ſhould chance to be ſurprized, yet this childe being left, might repayre the Citty and reſtore his blood. This *Polidorus* was offered in exchange for *Helena*, but *Pryamus* would not accept thereof, whereupon they ſtoned the childe in the ſight of the *Troians*, for his brothers fact. *Hector*, in the meane ſpace iſſued forth of the Citty with an army, and aſſailled them fiercely: many battells, with great valour and ſlaughter were performed betweene them. *Hector* ſhot *Menalaus* thorow with an arrow, and wounded *Achilles*, for which cauſe, hee purſued *Hector*, vntill he had ſlaine him, and put the *Troians* to flight. Within a while after, *Achilles*, ſeeing *Polyxena*, the daughter of *Pryamus*, became ſo extremely in loue with her, that he promiſed to renounce armes and enmity, if he might haue her: and thereupon Captaine *Palamedes*, ſucceeded him, and fought manfully againſt the *Troians*, by whom he was ſlain, and *Troilus* right worthily exerciſed his brothers place, and wounded *Menelaus*, *Dyomedes*, and *Agamemnon*, and ſlew many others. * The *Greekes* perceiuing their great loſſe of Chiefetaines and Souldiers, conſtrained *Achilles* to enter againe into Armes againſt the *Troians*, he eſpied *Troilus*, and ſeing his horſe ſoundred, purſued him, and thruſt him thorow. *Hecuba* hauing bewailed the death of her ſonnes, *Hector* and *Troilus*, deuiſed how thee might entrap *Achilles* to kill him, and knowing that hee loued *Polyxena*, tooke opportunity, in time of a truce betweene both armies, cauſed it to be giuen out, that ſhee would giue him her Daughter, requiring him to come into the Temple of *Apollo*, neere vnto which place, in ſecret manner, *Paris* lay armed, and ſlue *Achilles* as hee was entring into the Temple vnarmed, and then fled. The *Grecians* vnderſtanding thereof, and being very forward to fight with their enemies, very eagerly aſſaulted the *Troians*, and in battell ſlew many, amongſt whom, *Paris* was ſlaine, and the reſt purſued to the gates of *Troy*, and had almoſt won the walls of the City. The next day, *Agamemnon* ordred the battell, and fought with *Penteſilea*, Queene of the *Amazons*, whom the *Troians* had called to their ayde (as they did many other their adioyning neighbours, and others) with her he had many ſharpe fights, but at laſt hee ſlew her and deſtroyed her army. By this time, *Pryamus* hauing well obſerued his many hard euents, called his friends to Councell, which conſiſted in three parts, ſome whereof aduiſed him to reſtore *Helena*, with her ſpoyles, that were taken out of *Venus* Temple: others aduiſed him to ſound, and ſee if the third ſort would ſtand firme, and couragi-

Achilles fought to kill *Hector*, becauſe hee had ſlaine his deare friend, *Patroclus*, and *Proteſilaus*.

Achilles was Son to *Peleus* and *Thetis*, King of *Theſſalia*.

* *Achilles*, not long before, had got *Pirrhus* by *Deydamia*, the daughter of King *Licomides*, and in the Campe hee alſo deflowred from hoſtility, for the loue of *Briſeis*, and haſtily fell into treaty of marriage with *Polixena*, read *Homer* and *Virgil*.

Agamemnon was ordained the Grecian Generall, who at his returne from the wars into *Greece*, his wife, *Clytemnestra*, cauſed *Egiſtus* his *Minion*, to killhim, in reuenge whereof, his ſonne *Oreſtes* ſlew his mother, and *Egiſthus*, read *Sophocles*, in the Tragedy of *Electra*, *Euripides*, *Cicero*, and *Ouid*. Some write, that *Helena* knew of this Treaſon, and held the burning *Torch*, which was the Signall to the enemy, hoping thereby to regaine her husbands fauour, and after his death, the bee me a fugitiue, and fled towards *Poliſpe*, where ſhe was ſtrangled by the young Ladies of that country: read *Herodotus* his 6. booke. Part of the ruins of the walls, gates, and vaults vnder ground, remaine to this day, as will be iuſtified by Engliſh men, now liuing, that haue ſeene and obſerued the ruines, for the City was exceeding large, hauing within the walls great woods, ſweete waters, many corne-fields, and fayre paſtures *Tyndarus*, the Grandfather of *Helena*, whileſt *Menelaus* was in the campe, did giue *Hermyone* their daughter, in marriage, vnto *Oreſtes*, not knowing that *Menelaus* had promiſed her to *Pyrrhus*, who, at his returne to *Greece*, made loue to *Hermione*, whereupon *Oreſtes* ſlew *Pyrrhus*. There fell great and ſtrange ſtrifes and ſlaughters amongſt the *Greekes* after their returne: read *Sophocles* in the Tragedie of *Electra*, *Euripides*, *Cicero*, and *Ouid*.

ouſly

ouſly fight and dye in defence of their country, and their counſell onely preuailed, and therewithall *Pryamus* feared leſt thoſe which deſired peace might be the loſſe or betraying of the Citty, hee thereupon commanded his friends of the warre faction, priuily to kill the other: of which faction *Antenor* and *Æneas* were the chiefe, who ſo ſoone as they vnderſtood thereof ſent priuily to the enemies with promiſe to deliuer the city into their hands, vpon condition that themſelues and their goods ſhould be freed and ſecured, thereupon the enemy came the next night according to the appointed time. *Antenor* and *Æneas* found a gate open, and there ruſhed in and ſlew all they met. When *Pryamus* knew the treaſon, though all in vaine, yet he attempted to fly to the Altar of *Iupiter*, for he could not imagine any certaine place of refuge, plainly perceiuing deſtruction and death in euery corner. *Menelaus* entred the Kings Palace, tooke *Diophebus*, and after he had cut off his eares and noſe, hee killed him. *Pirrhus* killed *Pryamus* at the Altar: finally, the Citty was ſackt and burnt to aſhes. *Agamemnon* brough *Helena* as if ſhe had ſuffered violence, and ſo reſtored her to her huſband *Menelaus*. This *Troian* warre continued 10. yeeres, and 8. moneths, in which time there periſhed of the *Argiues* or *Peloponeſians*, eyght hundred and ſeuenty thouſand, of the *Troians* before the Citty was Sackt, ſix hundred threeſcore and ten thouſand, and at the taking there was ſlaine two hundred threeſcore and ſixteene thouſand. *Antenor*, Couſin to *Pryamus*, was then mad King of *Ilium* by *Agamemnon*, where he raigned almoſt 22. yeeres, and all the ſcattered *Troians* which returned, acknowledged him for their King.

But *Æneas*, the ſonne of *Anchiſes* and *Venus*, came into *Italy* with all his family and goods, and entring the mouth of the Riuer *Tyber*, he planted himſelfe not farre from the Citty *Laurentum*, where he obtained certaine land of King *Latynus*, wherein he built a new *Troy*, and at length he obtained the kingdome of *Latinum*. He raigned three yeeres: from him are deſcended *Remus* and *Romulus*. *Antenor* being expulſed *Troy* by the ſonnes of *Hector*, when he had raigned two and twenty yeerers, trauelled to the Prouince of *Venice*. Hee laid the foundation of the Citty of *Padua*. Preſently after the facking of *Troy*, *Cyrus*, King of *Perſia* ſubdued *Greece*, and made the *Grecians* tributary and vaſſalls, which were euer vntill then a free people.

About a thouſand yeeres before the birth of our Sauiour Chriſt, *Brute* of the race of *Troians* with his company poſſeſſed this whole Iland of great *Britaine*, containing *England*, *Scotland* and *Wales*. He left one part thereof to his ſonne *Locrine*, and ſo founded the kingdome, ſince which foundation, there hath happned in the ſame, the laſt onely exeepted, ſundry ſtrange alterations of Kings, Princes, and Religion, people and Nations: the firſt alterations haue beene moſt great and vniuerſall, about the ſhifting of the period, or reuolution of fiue hundred yeeres, ſomewhat more or leſſe, but alwayes after the fourth hundred yeeres, and before the ſixt.

The alteration of this kingdome vpon the reuolution of the firſt fiue hundred yeeres after the foundation thereof, was preſently vpon the death of *Corboduc*. After he had raigned ſixty and three yeeres, he would needes ordayne and cauſe his youngeſt ſonne, *Porrex* to be crowned King ioyntly with his eldeſt ſonne *Ferrex*, who within fiue yeeres raigne, fell at mortall hatred for Soueraignty, and entred furiouſly, and vnreconcileably into armes one againſt another. *Porrex* ſlew his elder brother, then came his mother vnto him, vnder colour of kindneeſſe, to congratulate her younger ſonnes victory: ſhe murthered him treacherouſly in his chamber, her moſt affection was to her eldeſt Son, and was wholly againſt their ioynt gouernment: when the multitude vnderſtood her vnkind bloudy act, they fell into an vproare, and ſlew her, whereupon the Crown became vacant & the Land fell into extreme miſery and confuſion. The ciuill warres continued 54. yeeres and ceaſed not, vntill *Don Wallo Molmutius* after infinite battells and blood-ſhed had ſubdued all other Competitors, and then from him began a new lyne.

The firſt Alteration.

Porrex.
Ferrex.

The causes and effects.

The causes of this ruine of the Realme, was the folly of *Gorboduc*, to ioyne his youngeſt ſonne with his eldeſt, the diuelliſh malice of the old Queene to butcher her youngeſt ſonne, hauing then no iſſue to ſucceed, and the peoples wantonneſſe and ſecurity after long peace. The effects of this alteration, was the laying open of the Crowne to be as a prey for him that could winne it, and the change of the gouernment into another Lyne.

The ſecond alteration.

The ſecond Alteration vpon the ſecond reuolution of fiue hundred yeeres, was by *Iulius Cæſar* in the time of *Caſsibelan*, and was perfected in the time of *Claudius* the Emperor. This *Iulius Cæſar*, although he was the moſt ambitious and greateſt traytor that euer was to the Romane State, yet his high valour, and braue victories made him ſo renowned, that many of his ſucceſſors would be called *Cæſar*, and at this day, the generall word in *Germany* for an Emperor, is *Ceſar*, by which name he is better knowne, then by any other ſtile or Title, and call all the Emperors quoine *Cæſars* money, or *Keaſers* quoyne, vſing K. for C. pronouncing it *Keyſar*, as *Keyſars* dollors, and it was hyſtorically obſerued, that they all periſhed that were Actors of the death of *Iulius Cæſar*.

The cauſes and effects.

Amongſt other cauſes of this Alteration, one was a particular grudge of *Iulius Cæſar* againſt the *Brittaines*, becauſe they intermedled with the affaires and quarrells of the *Gaules*, and for aſſiſting the *Gaules*, who are now called *French*, for the kingdome of *France* was anciently called *Gallia*, of the *Gaules*, which were a valiant people, which at firſt inhabited vpon the borders of *Germany* and afterward ouerſpread all *France*, and the name of *Gall* and *Gaules* continued long after this, vntill the time of the famous *Duke Franchion*, of whom a particular chiefe Prouince therein was called *France*, and the inhabitants *French*: the fame of which *Dukedome*, in time, drew the whole kingdome to be called *France*, and at this day, the Chronicles of *Italy*, *France*, and *Spaine* in their Languages, call our Prince of *Wales*, Prince of *Gaules*: another cauſe was the ambitious minde of *Androgens*, and others, pretending Title to the Crowne, of which and of all things elſe, *Iulius Cæſar* had good intelligence: for there were ſome of them that fauoured his fortunes, and hoped by him to haue aduancement; and for breuity, I will omit to ſhew other generall cauſes, concluding thus, that the vniuerſall vexation of the world at this time for ſinne, was Propheſied by *Daniel*, when he foretold of the Romane Monarchy. The effects of this alteration were very violent and horrible according to the nature of a conqueſt, ruling by force and will, making a free people ſeruile, tributary and vaſſall, exerciſing daily all manner of cruelty and exceſſe.

Ther in ſtandeth the Citty *Paris*.

The third alteration.

The third alteration and reuolution of fiue hundred yeeres, was preſently vpon the raigne of *Vortiger*, and then this Land, which is now called England, was conquered by the *Saxons*, being then an Idolatrous people, worſhippers of Planets and Diuells, as *Sol*, *Luna*, *Iupiter*, *Mars*, *Venus* and *Saturn*, of whom the dayes of the weeke, both then and now beare their names, as you may read at large in that excellent hiſtoricall worke of Maſter *Verſtegan*: the cauſes of this conqueſt, according to *Gildas*, and other ancient Records, was the extreme couetouſneſſe of the Nobility, the iniquity and partiality of the Iudges, the ſecurity and ſloth of the Clergy, and the cuill life of the people; the other cauſes were the diuiſions and ciuill diſſentions of the *Brittains*, whoſe weaker faction, to be reuenged of the ſtronger, called in the forraine ayde of the *Saxons*, who moſt ſubtilly aided and ſeconded them for their own aduancement; by which means & purpoſe, they forced the ſtronger faction to forſake their own ancient Cities, Caſtles and Habitations, and all their neer neighbourhood and alliance with the *French* and others, and flye into the remote mountaynes, where euer ſince they haue right valiantly and worthily remained, and continued their proper race and language in deſpite of their enemies: and preſerued their Records of time and ſtate better then any other people of this Land. When the *Saxons* faction had put the one part of the *Brittaines* to flight, then they practiſed

practiſed all rigor and vſurpation vpon the other, who had kindly entertained them, and after that, when the *Saxons* were fully ſetled and ſeated here in others poſſeſſions, then they receiued Saint *Auſtin* and his complices, and very actiuelly became Chriſtians: for ſeeing alſo that by that meanes they ſhould ſecure their eſtate by hauing league and alliance with forraine Chriſtian Princes, and preuent the *Brittaines* of all their former forraine ayd and amity, and whereas it was generally ſuppoſed and wiſhed, that the *Saxons* being conuerted, that there would haue preſently followed a firme peace and reconciliation, betweene them and the *Brittaines*, but through the inueterate malice of Satan, the ancient enemy of Chriſtian vnity, it hapned quite contrary, for ſtill there continued great diſſentions and ſharpe warres betweene the *Brittaines* and *Saxons*, by reaſon the kings of *Saxons*, with many of their Peeres, being brought to Chriſtianity by the great paines, deuoute prayers, and preachings of S. *Auguſtine* and his aſſociates, by vertue whereof they were not onely ſtrengthened in their ſoules health, but alſo ſtrongly backed and ſeconded in their faction and aſſuredneſſe of ayd from *Italy*, *France*, and other parts, whereat the *Brittaines* were ſore vexed, not becauſe of their conuerſion from Heatheniſme to Chriſtianity, for ſo much good they wiſhed them, and would willingly haue brought them that glad Tydings, rather then they ſhould haue wanted it, though they were their mortall enemies and vſurpers of their natiue inheritance, but by that meanes they politickly preſented them of all hope of recouery of all ſuch Cities and Territories as the *Saxons* now held, or might get in like vſurpation, hauing depriued them of all their nauigation, and preuented them from all their ancient ayd and amity with *France*, and other forraine parts, who therewithall obſerued the *Saxons* milde receiuing of the Goſpell, became inſtantly not onely their good friends, but alſo their confederates and allyes againſt the *Brittaines*; whereupon began great ſtrife and ha red betweene the Clergy on eyther part, and the rather being thereunto daily prouoked by the ſeuerall Princes with whom they held reſidence, ſo as the Prieſts and Monks of *Bangor*, and other Eccleſiaſticall perſons who, before the arryuall of Saint *Auguſtine*, had endured great miſeries, and at laſt with ſingular paines, piety, and preaching, conuerted moſt of the *Brittons* vnto the Chriſtian faith, and therewithall knowing that the ancient inheritance of this part of the Iland, which is called England, of right appertained to their proſelytes, in whoſe defence they had deuoted themſelues without any great hope of extraordinary preferment to Eccleſiaſticall dignities, became thereupon the more oppoſite againſt S. *Auſtin* and his company, whom they plainely beheld, as it were ſuddenly in reſpect of that time, not onely to be entertained, receiued and beloued, but alſo highly preferred, dignified, and endowed with ſtately houſes, goodly poſſeſſions, large priuiledges, and Immunities, and themſelues in daily want of indifferent maintenance, being in ſome ſort conſtrained to vſe extraordinary meanes and paines for ſuſtentation. Theſe moues with the great difference in matters of State, which was daily vrged and preached at their Altars, to approoue their ſeuerall quarrells, cauſed the Britiſh ſide with great bitterneſſe, to write, preach, and muay againſt the other, and S. *Auguſtine* with his followers on the other ſide, being animated by that authority which ſent him, and by the ſtrong hand ſtate of thoſe who had receiued him, and beleeued his doctrine, vſed like inuectiues and reproches againſt the *Brittaines* and their Clergy, and againſt the reſt of their faction. Each ſide, thus ſet on, preſumed their practice to be warranted by Religion, Law, and Conſcience, and yet in all this controuerſie, the religious perſons on either part agreed in the full ſubſtance of faith and adminiſtration of the Sacraments, and would haue beene in vnity and amity, if it had not beene for the diuiſion of their Princes in their temporal eſtates and affayres, as they did afterwards, although for a time they wrote and preached very vehemently one againſt another, omitting nothing that might tend to the reproch and ſcandall one of another, which was done

Saint *Auſtine* his ſurname was *Mellitus*.

The Weſtſaxons vſed them with as great kindeneſſe and reſpect as their ability would permit, ſeuen of them inclues for the moſt part but as ſtrangers in their Cloyſters, which were not greatly inhabited.

more for their seuerall politicke affayres of estate, then for any maine matter iñ Religion: the Ministers being thus diuided, it was not possible the people could be vnited, whereupon for many yeeres ensued extreme hatred, warres, and bloodshed.

The fourth fiue hundred yeeres.

About the end of the fourth fiue hundred yeers, here hapned a double blow as it were in the necke one of another, within few yeeres, for about this fiue hundred yeeres came a two-fold conquest of this Land, both which in respect of time, was but a little one before another, the first by the *Danes*, somewhat before the expiration of fiue hundred yeeres, and the other by the *Normans*, presently vpon the expiration of fiue hundred yeeres: that of the *Danes*, because it ceased, and had not any long continuance, may be compared vnto a violent storme, who for want of issue, this kingdome returned againe to the *Saxons* race, and the *Danes* in the time of the Conqueror, had prepared and were fully purposed to haue inuaded *England* againe, and doubtlesse had performed their determination, if it had not beene hindred by the charitable care and industery of the Archbishop of *Hambro*, who at that time was Metropolitaine of *Denmarke*, and of diuers other large Teritories, who with great piety in meere commiseration of this distressed Nation, dissuaded the *Danes* from their setled determination: touching this, I set it not downe as one of the vniuersall Reuolutions and Alterations, although it fell about the like period, or fulnesse of time. Whilest the *Danes* held their residence here, there hapned many great and grieuous battells, great destructions on both sides, and in all respects, such oppressions, rapes, violences, and deuastations, were vsed and performed, as the sinnes of the Princes and people drew vpon them the wrathfull hand of God. Let the vnderstanding Reader iudge what a hellish misery it is, to haue vnreconciliable warres in one small kingdome, between two mighty people, striuing deadly, the one for Empyre and wealth, and the other for naturall liberty and safety.

The effects of the *Danes* warrs.

The conquest by the *Normans*.

The conquest of the *Normans* was more great and vniuersall, and fell neere vpon the reuolution of fiue hundred yeeres: the causes thereof are said to be many, but principally next vnto the impiety and sinnes of the people, who neuer cease to prouoke the wrath of God, was the vncertainty of the heyre and succession of the Crowne: for King *Edward* vpon diuers reasons, gaue ouer his regall gouernment, entred into a Monasticall life, and willingly became a Confessor, not hauing any issue, and from his will and Testament the Conqueror pretended his claime to this kingdome, and the rather, because the Confessor establisshed no knowne Succession, the causes thereof are diuersly conceiued, which for breuity I heere omit. *Edgar* in the opinion of some deepe iudgements that looke exactly into this matter, is said to be the lawfull heyre: but whether his minority or being absent, or his remissnesse in his carriage were the causes, hee had not the peoples fauour to preferre him before *Harald*, cannot directly be said: The ambition of *Harald* was such, that being appointed regent during *Edgars* minority, by popularity and fraud he got the Cowne, which was the cause of *Englands* ruine, but whosoeuer had most right, certaine it is, the Conqueror being a Bastard, was absolutely illegitimate, and therefore he had least right, yet neuertheless, he obtained the Crowne, when *Harald* was establisshed in the regall Throne, and had got the Nobility to doe him homage and fealty, and had also defended his kingdome from inuasion of his owne brother, and of the *Danes*, but he had liued wickedly, and was guilty of much blood: besides, the murther of *Alured*, brother to the Confessor. The people tooke offence against *Harald*, for that hee did not liberaly diuide the spoyle of the *Danes*. The issue of this alteration was, the conquest of this kingdome of *England*, the slaughter of the King, Nobility and Common people, the alteration of ancient lawes, and the translation of the Crowne, with the thraldome of the Nation: for the word conquest, of it selfe, sheweth it could be no otherwise, nor want ought that might adde heauinesse vnto the vexed English Nation.

Nation. The great admiration of this alteration, was not so much in the Conquest of this Land: which may be said to be done, as it were, vpon the sudden, because it is but part of an Iland, and therefore the Conquest thereof is not so admirable, as that the Conquerour and his heyres should keepe it, by reason the *French* King neither fauoured his attempt, nor fortunate successe, neither were the *Scots* and *Brytons* any way pleased with the spreading of his strength ouer this land, by which meanes he might doe them double annoyance, as he, and his daily exercised vpon the poore *English*, as well vpon the Clergy, as Laity, the Nobility, as common people, all which would haue beene glad of his extirpation, and yet in dispight of them, and all others, hee royally, and peacefully swayed the Kingdome, which is the greatest wonder of all.

The fifth Alteration.

The fifth Reuolution, or Alteration of time, may be said to be in two sorts, and in all respects, farre milder and more peacable then any of the former, the first, in the time of *Henry* the eighth, when the Clergy was exceeding rich and powerfull, and were endowed with wondrous stately Palaces, and great possessions, so as in euery Citty, and County, and townes corporate, and in very many remote places, then were very strong and sumptuous houses for Religious persons: as *Abbayes*, *Priories*, *Friaries*, *Monks* regular, *Minories*, *Chauntries*, *Nunneries*, and such like, at which time, the Clergie grew proud, negligent, and secure, presuming like the Knights Templers, vpon their proper greatnesse, as well in regard of the reasons aforesaid, as that euery Lord *Abbot* and Lord *Prior*, that wore *Miters*, sate in the vpper Parliament and had free voyces, as Barons subsistant with the Bishops. The Lords and Ladies *Abbesses* of which houses were vsually of noble birth, and sometime of the blood Royall, as well women, as men, for by this time, through the charitable deuotion, and special affection of former Kings, Princes, Peeres, and common people, the Monasteries were so much increased, gloriously builded and adorned, and plenteously endowed with large priuiledges, possessions, and all things necessary. Albeit, they relieued the poore, and raised no rents, nor tooke excessiue Fines, yet they many wayes neglected their duty to God and man, being verily perswaded, their estate and safety to be more safe and secure then euer was any condition of people, because their houses were repayred, their rents encreased, their Churches new builded and beautified, euen to the very day of their generall dissolution, which came suddenly vpon them, like the vniuersall deluge. For whilest the Religious persons thus flattered and secured themselues, the King obtained the Ecclesiasticall Supremacy into his particular possession, and there-withall had power giuen him by Parliament, to suruey and reforme the abuses of all those houses and persons aboue said: but the King because hee would goe the next way to worke, ouerthrew them, raced them, many ruins of them remaine a testimony thereof to this day: whereat many of the Peeres and common people murmured, because they expected that the abuses should haue beene onely reformed, and the rest haue still remained. The generall plausible proiect which caused the Parliament consent vnto the reformation, or alteration of the Monasteries, was that the Kings Exchequer should for euer be enriched, the kingdome and Nobility strengthened and encreased, and the common Subiects acquainted and freed from all former seruices and Taxes, to wit, that the *Abbots*, *Monks*, *Fryers* and *Nunnes*, being suppresst, that then in their places, should be created forty Earles, threescore Barons, and three thousand Knights, and forty thousand Souldiours, with skilfull Captaines, and competent maintenance for them all, euer out of the ancient Churches reuenewes, so as in so doing, the King and successors should neuer want of Treasure of their owne, nor haue cause to be beholding to the common Subiects, neither should the people be any more charged with Loanes, Subsidies, and Fifteenes. Since which time, there haue beene more statute Lawes, Subsidies and Fifteenes, then fiue hundred yeeres before. And not long after that, the King had Subsidies granted, and borrowed great summes of money, and

dyed

died in debt, and the forenamed religious houses were vtterly ruinated, whereat the Clergy, Peeres, and common people were all sore grieued, but could not helpe it. Hee also suppreſt the Knights of the Rhodes, whose ſtately Pallaces, and large poſſeſſions, were no way inferiour vnto the welthyeſt Abbaies, by which ſuppreſſion, many were aduanced, and sore that reſiſted, were called in queſtion of their liues and goods. This alteration was long ſince foretold by *Merlin*, saying.

The hare ſhall kindle vpon the Harth-ſtone,
And lads ſhall wed Ladies, when Loras are gon.

He likewiſe suppreſſed many fayre hoſpitalls, whereat the cõmons began to thinke that the King had no intent, eyther to relieue the poore, admit maintenance for maimed ſouldiours, or to eaſe them of any common charge, notwithſtanding all former pretences and proiects. This was done after the King was diuorced, from *Katherine* of *Spaine*, his firſt wife, with whom he had liued aboue twenty yeeres, and by her had fiue children, whereof foure dye in their infancy. The Clergy, nor Parliament, notwithſtanding the Kings importunity, would neuer yeeld to the diuorced, by reaſon they could not find any iuſt cauſe. Then the King made *Cranmer* Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, who was very apt and ready to performe the Kings will, and hee denounced the ſentence of diuorce. Then the King, contrary to the good liking of all men, married *Anne Bullen*, by whom he had the Lady *Elizabeth*, and then by Act of Parliament made it high Treaſon, againſt all men that ſhould ſay the marriage was not lawfull. And preſently after her birth, he pickt a quarrell againſt Queene *Anne* and then repealed the former Act, and made a new Act of Parliament, wherein it was enacted, that it ſhould be high Treaſon for any to iuſtifie his former marriage to be lawful, and the next day after her beheading, he maried her hand-maide, *Jane Seymor*, and then declared the Lady *Elizabeth* to be illegitimate, as he had done before by the Lady *Mary*. All this while, he ſtill maintained the Roman Catholike Religion, with ſeuere puniſhment to ſuch as did impugne it: and to that purpoſe, he publiſhed the ſixe Articles, which ſome called the whip of ſixe ſtrings, ſo as many were amazed, and could not vnderſtand the Kings meaning: for many Catholiques which applauded the ſixe Articles, denyed the Supremacy: and many that approued his Supremacy, reſiſted the ſixe Articles, of which ſort in both kindes, there were ſome executed at one time, as Maſter *Fox* very well noteth: and thereupon thoſe that were of the Kings Religon, and denyed his Supremacie were called Papiſts, and the other were termed the new Aſſumptimus, or Innouators.

Shee was daughter to Sir *Thomas Bullen*.

And albeit he vpheld the Maſſe, yet hee cauſed the Epiſtle and Goſpell with the Morning and Euening Prayer to be read in both languages. With the great riches of the Monaſteries, he raiſed an Army, inuaded *France*, and won *Bullen*, and many yeers before that, he won *Turwin* & *Turney*: for the which his iudgement was generally called in queſtion, becauſe thoſe cities lay ſo far within the Land, that it was not poſſible for the Engliſh to keep or relieue them. He began his raigne prodigally, raigned rigorouſly, liued proudly, and dyed diſtemperately. In his latter time he waxed very fat and ſlothfull, and made engins to lift and remoue him vp and downe, which engins were taken downe about the yeere 1612 Through feare and terror, he obtained an Act of Parliament to diſpoſe of the right Succeſſion to the Crowne, and then by his Will and Teſtament contrary to the Law of God and nature, conueys it from the lawfull heyres of his eldeſt ſiſter, married vnto the King of *Scotland*, vnto the heyres of *Charles Brandon* and others, thereby to haue defeated, preuented, and ſuppreſt the vnqueſtionable and immediate right from God, of our gracious Souereigne Lord, King *James*, as if it had beene in the power of his will, or of the Parliament, to diſ-inherit and preuent the diuine free gift and grace of Almighty

Which was then called Mattins and Vesper.

Almighty God, by which the Kings of this Land doe hold their crownes, borrowing this his preſident from King *Pepin* of *France*, and from *William* the *Conquerour*: who obtained their ſeuerall Crownes in their owne particular rights, way of conqueſt, and not by ſucceſſion and the law of nature, and thereupon diſpoſed of them at their free pleaſurus: *Pepin* deuiſed and diuided his kingdome, part to *Charlemaigne*, and part to his other ſonne, and the *Conqueror* diuided his kingdome vnto his younger ſonne, *William*, and his Dukedome of *Normandy*, to his elder ſonne, *Robert*, which hee might doe, being *Conqueror*. King *Henry* the eighth, had ſixe wiues, to wit, *Catherine* of *Spaine*, *Anne Bullen*, *Iane Seamor*, *Anne* of *Cleane*, *Catherine Howard*, and *Catheryne Parre*. Hee appointed his body to be buried at *Windſor*, and ordained a Prieſt to ſay Maſſe, for euer, and two *Obits* to pray for him for euer: at his death he was much perplexed, and ſpake many things to great purpoſe, but being vnconſtant in his life, none durſt truſt him at his death.

His ſonne *Edward*, at nine yeeres of age ſucceeded him, and then the Church was fleec't againe, the Biſhopricks cut and pared, all Chauntries ſuppreſt, and the Biſhopricke of *Durham* alienated, by all which, the Kings Exchequer was very little enriched, neither was the common-wealth eaſed or benefited, nor the ancient Nobility any way dignified, onely ſome few preferred. The Earledome of *Northumberland*, was giuen to the houſe of *Suttons*, who obtained the Title of Duke of *Northumberland*. In the firſt and ſecond yeere of his raigne, the Maſſe was wholly ſuppreſt, and part of King *Dauids* Pſalmes were turned into Engliſh verſe, by *Hopkins* and *Sternehold*, Gromes of the Kings chamber, and ſet them to ſeuerall tunes: the reſt of the Pſalmes were turned into verſe in the raigne of Queene *Elizabeth*, and for diuers yeeres were called *Geneua* Pſalmes. The Duke of *Somerſet*, vncle to the King by the mothers ſide, being the Kings Protector, did all things in the Kings name, and inclined ouermuch to the ſubtill counſell of his ſecret enemy the Duke of *Northumberland*, who was fully bent to defeat and ſuppreſſe the apparant heyres of God and nature vnto the Crowne, and to preſerre the heyres of the Duke of *Suffolke*, according to the iniurious determination of *Henry* the eyghth. For the better effecting whereof they made a combination which had as good ſucceſſe, as ſo bad a practice deſerued. The Protector among other things that croſt his greatneſſe in popularity, was the ſpoyling of Churches and Chappells, the defacing of ancient Tombes and Monuments, his attempting to pull downe all the Bells in Pariſh-churches, and to leaue but one Bell in a Steeple, whereat the whole Comonalty were ready to rebell. The young King, by reaſon of vntimely birth, was weake in body, in ſuch ſort, that riding in State thorow *London* to be ſeene of the people, he had a faire chaine of gold about his necke, which was then held a Kingly ornament, though at this day contemned to be worne, by meane ſubiects, the weight of his chaine, cauſed his feeble body to bow: hee was of a delicate ſpirit, wel tutored, courteous of ſpeach, well fauoured and very faire, he raigned ſeuen yeeres and by many coniectures he could not haue liued much longer, though he had not met with a tricke of Treaſon.

After *Edward*, his ſiſter *Mary* ſucceeded him, notwithſtanding the great confederacy of the new *Northumberland* Duke and his faction, which for a time was wondrous great and ſtrong, conſiſting of many Noblemen, and moſt of the Iudges and Officers of the Land: againſt all which in the right of *Mary*, the Earle of *Oxford* was formoſt, whoſe forwardneſſe within few houres, made the aduerſe faction to renounce their confederacy and follow his courſe. Queene *Mary* was Crowned with great popularity, and the generall loue of all her ſubiects: but ſtriuing too violently to ſtop the gap, and ſtay the ſtreame, which her father & brother had laid open, beeing then made the free paſſage and common way, ſhe was onely affected of ſuch as preferred her proceedings. Shee reſtored the firſt fruits, and Eccleſiaſticall Supremacy vnto the Papacy. Shee reduced the Biſhoprick of *Durham* vnto the Church, which the late Protector had

had otherwise appointed, and restored *Piercy* to his birth-right of the Earle-dome of *Northumberland*, and by her best meanes, began to set vp the ruinated Monasteries, endeauouring with some extremity, to re-establish the Roman Catholike Religion. The matter of it selfe, though it were very gracious vnto all Catholikes in generall, yet the manner was mis-liked of by many, because the multitude were so roughly dealt withall, which needed not, if some few of higher nature had been called in question, and made examples to the common people. The Emperour *Carolus Quintus* had so reuerend an opinion of her vertues, and princely high perfections, that hee resigned his kingdome of *Spaine*, and the seuentéene Prouinces to his sonne *Philip*, thereby to make him worthy of so great aduancement, as to match with the Queene of *England*. King *Philip* arriued in *England* with great magnificency, being in all things furnished and attended like a lusty wooer, and the sonne of an Emperor. The Queene, after marriage, was conceiued with childe, but it mis-tortuned. Shee raigned fiue yeeres, in which space, though the Clergy were aduanced, yet the Commons through the difference of Religion were many waies vexed, and alwaies that of her selfe she was wise and learned, of a milde nature, and gentle disposition, yet by reason of the generall course she tooke in so different and pernitious a time, she seemed cleane contrary: and the rather for that in her time, as some did afterwards in the raigne of Queene *Elizabeth*, that executed their particular malice, and practised priuate reuenge, vnder colour of Religion, and preferring the iustice of the Law.

ELIZABETH succeeded her Sister, and began not her raigne with so generall applause as her Sister did, by reason the Clergy, the Nobility, and most of the Commons were Roman Catholikes, who neuertheless, although they well knew her full determination was to alter their setled course in Religion, yet they all with one consent, being set in the Parliament-house, when the certaine newes was brought them of Queene *Maries* death, they acknowledged her immediate right, and presently declared the same by diuers Proclamations: and forthwith prepared themselues to performe their homage & fealty, which she very graciously accepted: and in the next Parliament, shee suppresst the Masse, resumed the Ecclesiasticall Supremacy, and recalled the first fruits, and repreast all Religious houses, which her Sister had erected. In this Parliament notwithstanding the presence of the Queen with the apparant likelihood of her long life, and hope of issue to succeed her, yet the Maior part exceeded the Minor but in fiue voyces: at which time, the Queene openly pronounced, that she would neuer vexe nor trouble the Roman Catholikes, concerning any difference in Religion. She swayed the Scepter with great mildenesse, and ministred Iustice carefully vnto her Subiects, and within few yeeres, obtained great popularity: which of all things else, thee held the applause of the multitude but as a blast of wind. The state and forme of Religion being established, the Booke of Common-Prayer was published, which with some reformation was Correspondent to that, lately published in the time of *Edward* the sixth. Whileft the Queene was young, she was often importuned by Parliament to marry, in hope of issue to establish the Crowne, and when shee grew in yeeres, shee was as earnestly moued by Parliament to appoint and declare her lawfull successor, but neither of them preuailed. In her latter time, shee was grieued with the *French* King, because hee entred into league with *Rome* and *Spaine*, contrary to the Tennor of a league offensiue and defensiue, lately made between the Queen and him. She was vexed with the pernicious rebellion of *Hugh Tyrone* in *Ireland*. She was endowed with many excellent gifts and high perfections, which I here omit, because I haue set them downe at large at the end of her raigne. In the time of her sickenesse, the people were sore amazed, and distracted, not knowing which way, nor vpon whom to fixe their eyes for safety, euery man double furnished his house with sundry kinde of Muni-

Munition, & some fled the Land, and some laid in competent store of corn for diuers monethes, and most men desired to haue their being in *London*, but none could tell what course to take, vntill by the ineffable goodnesse of Almighty God, the hearts of the Nobility, and other the priuy Councellors of estate vnto the Queene, beyond all humane expectation, and merit, were inwardly vnited, and with her long feared death, euen at an instant, according to the diuine saying of holy writ, *Griefe and feare was ouer-night, but ioy and gladnesse came in the morning*, all gronings ceased, feare and doubt banished, and all vexed spirits cheared, by hearing the name of King IAMES proclaimed. She was the last of her Fathers Line, and then notwithstanding her fathers many wiues, and iniurious will and Testament, which was seconded and preferred by the combination in the time of *Edward* the sixth, and since that further ed by sundry Acts of Parliament, to obscure the true Successor, with other practises and deuices to impeach, if not to defeat all future right of Succession, all these forenamed temporall policies, perished and came to nought, to the eternall praise of God, by whose diuine prouidence, the Crowne returned vnto the next and immediate heyre of *Henry* the seuenth, after the thrice blessed and memorable coniunction of the houses of *Yorke* and *Lancaster*, and King IAMES in all loue and peace was tryumphantly established.

This last Alteration vpon the Reuolution, which by Gods diuine prouidence, was farre more admirable, milde, gracious, and propitious to this kingdome, then euer hapned since it first was inhabited, came in the height of period, or fulnesse of time, when the hearts of the English were bigge fraught with griefe, and ouergrowne with feare, and the eyes of forraigne neighbours fixed vpon this Land, expecting more strange and terrible euents, to haue suddenly ensued vpon the Queenes death, then at any of the former Alterations vpon the Reuolutions, because by them, all the forenamed time, policies and practices were more obserued abroad, then noted or knowne at home: being free from the danger of Lawes, which with great penalty, no lesse then high Treason, forbad the English eyther to dispute, or determine any person in the right of Succession. When the Queene, according to the course of nature was past child-bearing, thee was often very importunately vrged by Parliament with many humble petitions for the vniuersall, and euerlasting safety of her kingdome and Subiects, that shee would vouchsafe to appoint and declare her Successor, but she would neuer consent thereunto by any meanes, wherear the Subiects feare hourely encreased, and the more, because no cure could cure their long feared misery. Then the rich began to hoard vp money for a rainy day, and a generall prouerbe past currant among all men, that the time would come, which could not be farre off, that a hundred pound of real worth should be better then an hundred pound of yeerely Reuenewes.

terror, diuers times there were more that offered Land to sell, than thus were the hearts of young and old perplexed, for such as had reputions, were at their wits ends, in deuising which way they might leaue their some in good estate in time to come, without hope or meanes for their redress, but onely humble prayers to the King of kings, whose arme in mercy, as in iustice, is neuer shortned, nor his hand wearyed, inspired the forenamed Nobility and priuy Councellors of estate, uniting their hearts with due acknowledgement of our Soueraignes right, and he as graciously approued their actions and desires in due obedience to his Soueraignety, whose long patience, in digesting wrongs of sundry kinds offered to him and his, without the least disturbance, or impeach of any practice or proceedings which were vsed to impaire his right, and without all attempts of interruption to his land or state, or will to shew his strength to take reuenge, being daily thereunto prouoked, and most strongly allyed and backed by all Christian Princes, besides his proper power and assured friends within this land, who were alwaies prest to lay downe their liues and goods in his true seruice and defence, all which laid together with his said admired

admired patience and free spirit duely considered, hee hath giuen to all posterity a lasting president worthy his honour, and the greatnesse of so gentle and speedy an alteration. The Queene being but sixe houres dead, his right hand dignity, was straight way proclaimed and receiued with the greatest ioy and peace that mans heart could wish, without any signe of faction or interruption: being vniuersally glad, to haue a King of Chastity, Patience, Piety, Mercy, and Iudgement, Wisdome, Learning, Bounty, Peace, and Munificence, hauing a hopefull issue, and healthfull Race, descended from the most ancient Kings of *Europe*, and from his infancy had continued in perfect amity with all Christian Princes, to the generall good of all Christendome, and weakning of the common Enemy the Turke.

The effects of this Alteration were in all respects cleane different from all former changes, and was no lesse wonderfull to all other Regions, then beneficiall to the English Nation: who in a moment had their Kingdome settled, the Crowne rightly established, the Clergy cherished, the Nobility aduanced their common Lawes continued, and the people resting in all Tranquility, enioying their ancient Customes, Lawes, and Liberties, in as good and as ample manner as eyther their heart could wish, or is inioyed by any other Nation: who were no sooner sensible, of what high blessings they possest but were instantly lulled in security, and became sensleise, forgetfull, and vnthankfull of Gods aboundant grace and mercy, and of the vnspeakeable benefit of the vnity and concord of King and Peeres of both kingdomes: being absolute instruments and good meanes that brought this wondrous worke vnto desired effect: to the vtter daunting of all aduersaries, and endlesse admiration of all posterities.

AND thus much briefely, touching the Law of Hystory: the authority and proose of *Brute* and *Troy*, and the fiue seuerall changes, and alterations, or reuolutions since the first habitation of this most famous and renowned Island of great *Britaine*. And also of the effects and obseruations of euery of those seuerall changes, alterations, and reuolutions.

All which, both generally and particularly, though here but briefely mentioned: yet their extremities, alterations and effects, worthily deserue iudicious obseruation, and lasting memory: especially by the rusty mindes of this Iron Age, whose extreme wilfull forgetfulnesse and ingratitude for infinite benefits and boundlesse blessings receiued, haue compelled me in discharge of my duty diligently to search into the depth of our ancient English *Chronicles*, and others; to place before their eyes, a mirror of the miseries of former times. In setting downe whereof, I haue vsed all diligence, and layd away partiality with both my hands; I was bred and borne free from schisme and faction, hate contention.

The Originall and true purpose of Chronology, as I said before, was to shew Successors, the Actions good and bad of their Ancestors, and to remaine as documents to pursue the good, and eschew the bad, and not to fill vp great Volumes with superfluous curiosity, lofty stile, and needlesse Eloquence, such as our fore-fathers neuer knew or heard of.

Plaine truth was the marke I aym'd at in the beginning, midst, and end, and in that simplicity or solid truth I end, leauing this short discoure as a Token and Remembrance to after ages, but chiefely to those to whom it shall please Almighty God to giue vnderstanding of his diuine Mercy and Iudgements, hoping it will be as kindly accepted; as it is freely offered, *Vale*.

EDMOND HOWES.

A

TO THE KINGS MOST EXCELLENT *MAIESTY.*

MOst *Gracious Soueraigne*, The manifold *Vertues* & Princely *Perfections* wherewith it hath pleased Almighty GOD most plenteously to enrich your Maiesty, are so infinite and eminent, as well by the diuine instinct of GOD and Nature, as by endeauour and royall education, that to expresse them but in the least part, would worthily fill vp large Volumes; but at this time, and in this place I am tied to breuity, whereby my duteous integrity is preuented from manifesting your matchlesse Gifts and Graces, and the present time onely permitteth me to pray for their continuance and encrease.

May it therefore please your MAIESTY to pardon my defect, and graciously accept into your most royall Patronage, these my thirty yeeres labours of impartiall Truth, which with all faithfulnes I haue composed, according to my oath and promise made to the late most reuerend Prelate, Doctor *Whitegift*, Lord Archbishop of *Canterbury*; by whose especiall instruction and encouragement I vndertooke this general Worke, in honor of my Prince and Country, as who please to read vnderstandingly, and iudge religiously, shall find more benefits befalne vnto this Monarchy of GREAT BRITAINE, since the first yeere of his late MAIESTIES, your Highnesse Royall Father of euerlasting blessed memory, his most happy Inauguration, then

euer happened since the first Foundation. And your euer renowned Wisedome continuing the same, is more obserued by all forraigne Nations, then is either acknowledged, or thankefully receiued by those that wholly enioy it, who rather surfet in excesse, then taste of want: Yet neuertheless in discharge of my place and duty in this Seruice, I haue set downe good testimony of the premises, which with all humility I dedicate vnto your *Maiesties* benigne and gracious acceptation and protection, and my zealous prayers to the King of Kings, for your long and happy raigne, prosperous estate, and eternall felicity.

Your Maiesties most

humble loyall vassall,

EDMOND HOVVES.

A BRIEFE DESCRIPTION
OF ENGLAND, SCOTLAND, *WALES* and *CORNWALL.*

BRYTAINE, or BRVTANNE, which by 2 names is called England and Scotland, is an Iland in the Ocean sea, situate right ouer against Fráce, one part of which Ile, Englishmē do inhabit, another, Scots, the third part Walshmen, and the fourth part Cornishmen. All they, either in language, conditions, or lawes, do differ among themselues.

Forty Counties or Shires.

England (so called of Englishmen, which did win the same) is the greatest part, and is diuided into 40 Counties, which we cal Shires: whereof ten (that is to say) Kent, Sussex, Surry, Southhaupton, Barkshire, Wiltshire, Dorsetshire, Somersetshire, Deuonshire, and Cornwall, doe contain the first part of that Iland: which part bounding toward the South, standeth betweene the Thames and the Sea.

From thense to the Riuer of Trent, which passeth thorow the midst of England, be fifteene Shires wher of the first fiue (standing Eastward) are Esser, Middlesex, Hartfordshire, Suffolke, Norfolke, and Cambridgeshire: the other ten which stand more in the middle of the Country, are these: Bedford, Huntington, Buckingham, Oxford, Northampton, Rutland, Leicester, Nottingham, Warwick, and Lincolne. After these there be 6 which border Westward vpon Wales, as Glocester, Hereford, Worcester, Shropshire, Stafford, Chester and Monmouth. About the middle of the Region, lie Darbishire, Yorkshire, Lancashire and Cumberland. On the left hand toward the West, is Westmerland. Against the same is the Bishoprycke of Durham, and Northumberland, which boundeth vpon the North, in the Marches of Scotland.

The antiquity of the Common Law of England.

This diuision into Shires or Shares, is by some that cite, and perhaps mistake Ingulfus, ascribed vnto King Alfred, the Saxon. But some others doe affirme it to be much more ancient, and doe verily thinke it to haue beene shortly after the first inhabiting and plantation of this Iland. For the first point, that it is more ancient then King Alfred, is most euident by the Lawes of King Ina, 100 yeares before Alfred, as they are extant in the Saxon tongue, and by the lawes of Kennethus King of Scots, in which diuers times there is mention made of Shires and of the Shireman or elderman, whom we now call Shiraue or Sheriffe. And truly the learned Bishop Offer, for ought that I can find in the life of Alfred, maketh no mention of any such diuision to be made by him, but nameth diuers Shires, namely Esser, Kent, Sussex, Surrey, and Barkshire, and the seuerall Earles of the same, before he commeth to speake of that King: and before him also Cæsar, Tacitus, Ptolomy, Marcellinus, and other histories doe name the seuerall Nations of the Brittaines, Cantios, Trinobants, Brigants, and the rest which had seuerall parts of the Kingdome, as also appeareth by the learned M. Camden. For the second it is very probable, that the ancient Coomery or Cymbry descended of Iapher the first possessors of this Iland, after the dispersion of Babel, did as other ancient Nations in their seuerall Territories: for not only of the Iewes, but of many other people it is recorded, that they were diuided into Tribes, which possessed their seuerall shares or parts of their Countries. The Persians, the Medians, the Grecians, and Scythians, as is reported by Xenophon, Herodotus and other Authors, yea the Canaanites, and the Ismaelites, retained the same order, as appeareth in the sacred Scripture: wherefore it seemeth this diuision in Britain was likewise very ancient, which is also proued by that elder law of Mulmutius, recited by Polydore. And so the diuision made by Alfred, was but some description or more plain distinction of the former, for so doth Ingulfus in another place expound his meaning.

The Bishopricks in England.

These Shires be diuided into two and fiuety Bishopricks, which by a Greeke word, be called Dioceses. Of which Dioceses, Canterbury hath Kent: Rochester hath part of Kent: London hath Esser, Middlesex, and part of Hartford. Chichester hath Sussex: Winchester hath Hamphire, Surry, and the Ile of Wight. Salisbury hath Barkshire and Wiltshire: Exeter hath Deuonshire and Cornwall: Bathe & Wels hath Somersetshire. Worcester hath Worcestershire, and part of Warwickshire: Glocester hath Glocestershire: Hereford hath part

of Shropshire, and Herefordshire. Countrey and Lichfield hath Staffordshire, Darbishire part of Warwickshire, and part of Shropshire. Lincolne, which is the greatest, lying betweene the Thames and Humber, hath Lincolne, Leycester, Huntington, Bedford, Buckingham, and the residue of Hartfordshire. Ely hath Cantabridgeshire, and the Ile of Ely. Norwich hath Suffolke and Norfolke, and part of Cantabridgeshire. Oxford hath Oxfordshire. Peterborow hath Northamptonshire and Rutland. Bristow hath Dorsetshire. And this is the province of the Archbishop of Canterbury, which is the Primate of all England, with Wales. The Archbishop of Yorke, hath Yorkshire, Nottinghamshire, and a piece of Lancashire. The Bishop of Durham, hath the Bishopricke so commonly called, and Northumberland. Chester, hath Cheshire, most part of Lancashire. Richmond, part of Flintshire and part of Denbighshire. Carlile containeth Cumberland, and Westmerland: and this is the other province of the Archbishop of Yorke, which is another Primate of England, and was of long time also Primate of all Scotland: but these Dioceses take their names of their Cities where their Seas bee placed, the chiefe whereof, is London, where in the beginning was the Archbishops Sea, but afterwards transposed to Canterbury, a City in Kent, placed in a soyle amiable and pleasant.

The River of Thames.

London standeth in Middlesex, on the North side of the Thames. That most excellent and goodly River hath first the name of Isa. and beginneth in Cotteswold in Glocestershire, about a mile from Cirbery, and as much from the high way called Fosse: and it taketh first the name of Tamise, neere to Dorcester-bridge, where the River Tame, and the foresaid Isa meete, and so with a marvellous quiet course, it passeth by London, and then breaketh into the French Ocean by meane tides, which twise in foure and twenty houres space doth ebbe and flow more then three score miles, to the great comodity of travellers, by which, all kindes of marchandise be easily conveyed to London, the principall Store and staple for all commodities within this Realme. Upon the same River is placed a stone bridge, a work very rare and marvellous, which bridge hath (reckoning the Drawbridge) twenty Arches made of foure square stone, of height three score foot, and of breadth thirty foot, distant one from another twenty foot, compact and joyned together with Vaults and Cellers: Upon both sides be houses builded, that it seemes rather a continuall Streete, then a Bridge.

London-bridge.

The Ocean Sea doth bound England, the first part of Britaine, East and South, Wales and Cornwall West. The River of Twede diuideth England and Scotland, North. The length of the Iland beginneth at Portsmouth in the South part, and endeth at Twede in the North, containing 700 miles.

This Realme above other is most fruitfull on this side Humber: for beyond, it is fuller of mountaines. And all ought to the beholders of that Country a farre off, it may seem plaine, yet it is full of many hils, and those for the most part voyd of trees, the vallies whereof be very delectable, inhabited for the most part by Noble men, who according to ancient and old order, desire not to dwell in Cities, but neere into vallies and rivers in severall villages, for avoyding of vehement windes, because that Iland naturally is stormy.

Humbre hath his beginning a little on this side Pozke, and by and by runneth Southward, and then holdeth his course Eastward, and so into the maine Sea, greatly increased by the Rivers of Dun and Trent.

The River of Humbre.

Trent beginneth a little from Staffordshire, running thorow Darbishire, and Leicestershire, passing by Lichfield and Nottingham on the right hand, and Dune on the left hand: so that both those Rivers doe make an Iland which is called Auxolme, and then joyning together on this side Kingstone upon Hull, a goodly Marchant Towne, they fall into Humbre: by which River they map arrive out of France, Germany and Denmarke.

The River of Trent.

England is fruitfull of beasts, and aboundeth with cattell: whereby the inhabitants be rather for the most part, graziers then plowmen, because they give themselves more to feeding, then to tillage. So that almost the third part of the Countrey is imployed to cattell, Deere, redde and fallow, Goats, (whereof there bee store in the Northparts) and Conies: for every where there is tolly maintenance of those kinds of beasts, because it is full of great woods: whereof there riseth pastime of hunting, greatly exercised, specially by the Nobility and Gentlemen. (Andrew Bourd saith, there be moe Parks in England then in all Europe beside.)

Andrew Bourd.

Scotland, another part of Brytaine, (whereof in this place I have thought good to treat at large, that no further mention of the situation thereof might be made hereafter) it beganne sometime at the hill called Grampius, now called Gantesbein stretching to the furthest coast Northward, but after the over-throw of the Picts, it beganne at the River Twede, and sometimes at the River of Tyne, the footsome of the warres altering the same, as it doth all other things. Therefore the length of Scotland from Twede to the furthest coast, is esteemed to be 480 miles: but as Scotland is longer then England, so it is narrow, and endeth like a wedge: For the mountaine Grampius is cuilt-fauoured and craggy, which Tacitus in the life of Julius Agricola doth remember, peircing thorow the bowels of Scotland, from the coast of the Germaine Sea, that is to say, from the mouth of the River of Dee to the Irish Sea, euen to the Lake of Lomond, which lyeth betweene that Countrey and the same hill.

Scotland.

Cornelius Tacitus.

The River of Twede (which springeth out of a little hill, not farre beyond Norborough) is marked with the Germaine Ocean, joyning Southward with that Countrey which is called the Marches, being the East bounds betweene England and Scotland. The said River, of Twede separateth the Marches from Northumberland, the furthest Countrey of England, having

ing prospect to the Germane Sea, the chiefe Towne whereof is Barwicke, now in possession of the English.

The Westerne limit of Scotland whilom was Cumberland, which the River of Solue diuideth from Annandale. Betweene these two Regions the Cheuiot hils appeare. Nert to the Marches, Pictland boundeth, now termed Loughdean, bounding upon the East, a very hilly Countrey, barren almost of any trees. The most famous Townes of the same be Dunbarre, Haddington, Leith, Northberwick, and Edenborough the Kings seat, where also is the Castell of Maydens, a very strong and defensible place. The same City the River of Forthes (commonly called the Frith) doth water and passe by: which being carried into the Germane Ocean, maketh great armes or meres, comonly called the Scottish sea: wherein besides other is the Iland of Saint Columbe, by name called Aemonia. The same River again diuideth from Loughdean a Country adioyning (abundant of all things) called the Fife, in which Countrey are many Townes, as Donfermile, Cupre, but the notable Towne of Saint Andrew, specially famous for the Vniuersity, and beautified with the Sea of the Archbishop and Primate of all Scotland. On the other side towards the Irish side Northward, is Nidisdalia, so called of the River that passeth thereby, where be the strong Townes of Douglasse and Donfriese.

Upon the South adioyneth Galloway, more abundant of fodder for Cattell, then of Wheat, where is the Towne of Candida Casa, now called Whitherne, and the ancient Temple of S. Ninian, adorned also with an Episcopall sea. In those parts besides the Town of Wighton is a lake of a wonderfull nature, because the one side in Winter doth freeze and the other not. By that standeth the Countrey Caricta, once renowned with the Towne Caricton, whereof perchance it take the name. Above Caricta towards the West, is Elgonia (by which name Ptolemy calleth the Countrey) bordering upon the Ocean, wherein is the Lake Lomond, which is very broad one large, containing many Ilands, situate at the foote of the mountaine Gantesbeine, 8 miles from the Castle of Dunbryton, besides the River Bodotria, now named Leuinus, entring into the River of Glota or Glude. Here some doe contend that the name of Bodotria, is not well applied to Leuinus, because it appeareth by Cornelius Tacitus, that Bodotria and Glota have sundry passages into the sea and are clearely direpnt one from the other, as Leuinus and Glota are not: wherefore they judge rather the River now called the Frith, to be that which of old time had to name Bodotria, and to prove the same, they adde many other reasons, which here I omit. But a good space on this side Grampius riseth the River of Taus, the greatest in all Scotland, taking his name of a lake from whence it springeth, which falleth by Athola and Calidonia by many places, but chiefely by Perthum now called Saint Johnstown, and lastly by Dunde, in time past called Alectum, and there breaketh into the German Sea, and at the mouth forth creth great ebbes or armes of the sea, whereof Tacitus maketh mention. Against Taus is Anguise, which by meanes of that River is fertile and prosperous, and is diuided from Fife. To the same upon the North adioyneth Athol, not the barrenest country as well for water as for plenty of soile. On the other side Arguile (weeth it self) which being full of lakes, yeldeth greater plenty of fodder then fruit, whose bitterwost bounds stretch so far, as Ireland is not distant past 12 miles about which the Promontory of Lorne called Lanos head standeth. That coast whilome the Silures did inhabit, as Polidor gathereth by these words of Pliny in his 4 booke, the 16 chapter.

Ireland being situate ouer against Britaine, is distant from the station of Silures by the shortest cut 20 miles. Howbeit, some other, for that it is manifest by the same Pliny in the same chapter, and also by other Writers, that Britaine was not in his time well knowne so farre South, suppose hee meant not by this, that the Silures should inhabit Arguile, but rather South-Wales, from whence the passage ouer was better knowne (and as hee might have vnderstanding) hereof. Where also as well Tacitus as Antonius seeme to place that people.

Betweene Arguile and Leniox Westward lyeth the Countrey of Sterling, so called by a Towne there. Here the forrest of Calidonia began on the left side, which with his fruitfulness fat and broad. This forrest sometimes dyed white Buls, long maned like Lyons, which were so wilde as they could not be tamed, but because the flesh was pleasant and dainty to the mouth, the whole race of them almost is extinguished. There likewise is the Castle of Calidone, situate by Taus called Doucheloins. From a little hill of the forrest riseth Glota, or Cluid, which by a broad channel falleth into the Irish Ocean: for shaped in a manner by the banks of the mountaine Grampius it sloeth into the Sea by great tides, so (as witnesseth Tacitus) the Romanes thought it to be another Iland. Of that river the Dale was called Glotevale, which Country the River runneth by: and as the same is the City of Glasco, a goodly Vniuersity. Against towards the East is joyned the Country of Anguish and Merne upon the Sea coast, wherein Fedoms by situation is very strong, and for the reliques of S. Palladius the Scottish Apostle, famous.

Of the same side of Scotland, is the Countrey of Marre, garnished with a City called Aberdone, standing betweene the two Rivers of Dona & Dea, with a Schole also adorned. Then followeth Morrey, which the two notable Rivers doe compasse about, called Nessa and Spea. At the mouth of this last River, standeth the Towne of Elgin, about the banks whereof be huge woods replenished with all sorts of wilde beasts. There is a lake also called Spina, stored with plenty of Swans: but in the middle part, standeth the broad Country of Rossia, now called Beane Rozen, stretching to the bitternose angle, euen to both the Seas, and the farthest goeth Eastward, the better it is inhabited. In the same is a bosome of the Sea, now and then

so conuenient for Sailers, as commonly it is called the port of health, (or the Hauen of Safety) and the Towne Thana. The breadth of the Iland is very short, for falling into the forme of a wedge, it is scant 30 mile ouer, which defended with three promontories like towers, repelleth the great waues and surges of the Sea: and incironed with two gulfes, which those promontories doe inclese, the entries bee quiet and calme, and the water peaceable. The trait of that Land, is at this day called Cathanes, consisting vpon the Sea Deucalidon.

Thus much of the particulars of Scotland. But the same is in euery place full of good Hauens, and nauigable entries, Lakes with Marshes, floods, fountaines, very full of fish, and mountains, vpon the tops whereof, be pleasant plains, yeelding great store of grasse, and plenty of fodder for Cattell, woods likewise full of wilde beasts; that part of the Land is well stuffained with commodities, and therefore the people hard to be vanquished at any time, by reason the woods and Marshes be at hand for refuge, and hunger eased with venison and fish. Without Scotland, in the Irish Seas, are many Ilands now discouered, to the number of 140: some of these in length are 30 miles, but in breadth not aboue 12. Amongst them is Iona, beautified with the Tombes of the Scottish Kings. The Ilanders generally speake Irish, which declareth them to take their Originall of the Irish Nation. Beyond Scotland toward the North, be the Iles of Orchades, which (as Ptolomy sayeth) be three score in number, some lying in the Deucalidon Sea, and some in the Germane Ocean, the principall of which Ilands, is Pamonia, because it is a Bishoppes Sea, and is vnder the gouernment of Scotland. The Ilanders vse the Gothes speech, which argueth them to proceed from the Germanes. They be tall of stature, but very healthy and lusty of body and minde, liuing very long, although their chiefest food is fish, for the Land almost continually beset with cold, in many places is not able to beare corne, and generally almost without tree or bush. Beyond the Orchades be the Ilands of Scotland, vnder the king of Scots obedience, and beyond those standeth Thule, in the frozen Sea, now called Ieland, to which our Marchants repaire for fishing once euery yere in the Summer. And thus much haue I to say of the site of Scotland: now of the nature and maunerss of the people.

The Scots which inhabit in the Southerne part, be well nurtured, and liue in good ciuility, and the most ciuill vse the English speech. And for that wood there is geason and scant, their common fewell is of a blacke stone, which they dig out of the earth. The other part Northerne and full of mountaines, a very rude and homely kinde of people doth inhabite, which are called the Redshankes or wilde Scots. They be clothed with a mantle, and shirt saffroned after the Irish manner, going bare-legged to the knee. Their weapons are bowes and darts, with a very broad sword and a dagger, sharpe onely at the one side. All speake Irish, feeding on fish, milke, cheese and flesh, hauing a great number of Cattell. The Scots differ from the English in Lawes & Customes, because they vse the ciuill Law, as almost other Countries do. The English haue their owne Lawes and Edicts. In certaine other conditions they be not farre vnlike, but their language is one, their habit and complexion like, one courage in battell, and in the Nobility, one desire and pregnancie in hunting. The Countrey houses be narrow, couered with straw and reede, wherein the people and beasts doe lodge together. Their Townes besides Saint Johns Town, are vnwalled, which is to be ascribed to their animositie and hardinesse, trusting all their succour and helpe allway in the valiancy of their body. The Scots are very wise, as their learning declareth. For to whatsoeuer Art they doe apply themselues, they easily profit in the same. But the idle and slothfull, and such chiefely as shunne and auoyd labour, liue in great pouerty, and yet will not sticke to boast of their Nobility and Gentry, as though it were more seemely for the honest to lacke, then comely (by exercise of some honest Arte) to get their liuing. But the Scots generally be deuoute obseruers of Religion. And thus much of Scotland.

Wales, the third part of Britaine lieth vpon the left hand, which like a promontory or forelande, or an Ile (as it were) on euery side is compassed with the maine Sea, except it be on the South-East part with the Riuer of Sabzine, commonly called Seuerne, which diuideth Wales from England, although some late writers affirme Hereford to be a bound betweene Wales and England, and say, that Wales beginneth at Chepstow, where the Riuer Wey (augmented, with another Riuer called Lugge) passing by Hereford, doth runne into the Sea, which Riuer riseth in the middle of Wales out of that hill (but vncertaine whether out of that spring that Sabzine doth) for euen to that place there goeth a great arme of the sea, which passing through the Land Westward, on the right hand leaueth Cornwal, and on the left Wales: which Topography or description, although it be new, yet I thought good to follow. Wales. Therefore Wales is extended from the Towne of Chepstow, where it beginneth almost by a straight line a little aboue Shzowsbury, euen to Westchester Northward. Into that part, so many of the Britaines as remained aliue after the slaughter and losse of their Countrey, at the length being driuen to their shifts, did repaire, as ancient Writings report, where partly through refuge of the mountaines, and partly of the woods & marishes, they remained in safety, which part they enioy euen to this day. That land afterwards the Englishmen did call Wales, and the Britaines the inhabitants of the same, Wallmen: for amongst the Germans, Wallman signifieth a Stranger, and an alien, as out-borne or Strange man, that is, such a one, as hath a contrary language from theirs, for Wal in their tongue is called a Stranger borne, as an Italian or Frenchman, which differ in speech from the German: Man signifieth *Homo*, which is

Wales

This arme of the Sea, as I iudge, is now called Iust, where is a passage betweene the village of Iust, and Chepstow.

is a man in English. Therefore Englishmen, a people of Germany, after they had won Britaine, called the Britains, which escaped after the destruction of their Countrey, after their Country manor, Wallmen, because they had another toung or speech besides theirs: and the land which they inhabited, Wales, which name afterward both to the people and Country did remaine. By this meanes the Britaines with their Kingdome lost their name. But they which affirm that name to be deriued of their King or Duene, without doubt be deceiued. The Country soile towards the seacoast, & in other places in the vallies and plaines, is most fertile, which yeldeth both to man and beast great plenty of fruit & grasse: but in other places for the most part it is barren and lesse fruitfull, because it lacketh tillage: for which cause husbandmen doe liue hardly, eating Oaten cakes, and drinking milke mixt with water. There be many Townes and strong Castles, and foure Bishoprickes, if the Bishoprickes of Hereford be counted in England, as the late Writers declare. The first Bishoprick of Menew, so call'd of Menena, which at this day they call Saint Dauids, a City very ancient, situated vpon the seacoast, & bounded Westward toward Ireland. Another is Landaffe, the third Bangor, and the fourth S. Asaph, which be vnder the Archbishop of Canterbury. The Wallmen haue a language from the Englishmen, which (as they say that fetch their pedigree from the Troians) doth partly sound of the Troian antiquity, and partly of the Greeke. But howsoeuer it is, the Wallmen do not pronounce their speech so pleasantly and gently as Englishmen doo, because they speake more in the throate: and contrarywise, the Englishmen rightly following the Latines, doe expresse their voice somewhat within the lips, which to the hearers seemeth pleasant and sweete. And thus much of Wales, the third part of Britain.

Foure Bishops in Wales.

Cornwall.

Now followeth the fourth and last part of Britaine named Cornwall. This part beginneth on that side which standeth toward Spain Westward: Toward the East, it is of breadth fourescore and ten miles, extending a little beyond Saint Germains, which is a very famous village, situate on the right hand vpon the Seacoast, where the greatest breadth of that Country is but 20. miles: for this parcell of land on the right hand is compassed with the coast of the maine Sea: and on the left hand with that arme of the Sea, which (as before is declared) parteth the land, and runneth vp to Chepstow, where the Country is in forme of a horne: For at the first it is narrow, & then groweth broader a little beyond the said Towne of S. Germaine. Eastward it bordereth vpon England: West, South, and North the maine sea is round about it: it is a very barren soile, yeelding fruit more through trauell of the tillers & husbandmen, then through the goodnesse of the ground: but there is great plenty of Lead & Tin, in the mynes and digging whereof, doth specially consist the liuing and sustentation of the inhabitants. Their tongue is farre dissonant from English, but it is much like to the Welsh tongue, because they haue many words common to both toungs: yet this difference there is betweene them, when a Wallman speaketh, the Cornishman rather vnderstandeth many words spoken by the Wallman, then the whole tale he telleth, whereby it is manifest, that those three people do one vnderstand another, in like manner as the Southern Scots doe perceiue and vnderstand the Northern. But it is a thing very rare and marueilous, that in one Iland there should be such variety of speeches. Cornwall is in the Diocese of Exceter, which was once worthy to be counted the 4th part of the Iland, for the cōtrariety of the language. Afterwards the Normans, which constituted a kingdom of all these 3. parts, reckoned Cornwall to be one of the Countries or Shires of the Countrey. Thus much of the particular descriptiō of Britain, that the whole body of the Realme (by the members) may be the better knowne to some peraduenture that neuer heard the same before.

The forme of the Iland is Triquetra, or three-cornered, hauing three corners, or three sides: two thereof, that is to say, the corner toward the East, and the other toward the West (both extending Northwards) are the longest. Strabo lib. 4.

The third side, which is the South side, is farre shorter then the other: for the Iland is greater of length then of breadth. And as in the other two parts is contained the length, euen so in the last, the breadth, in which place the breadth beginneth: and so continuing from the South part to the North, it is but narrow. The first and right corner of which Iland Eastward, is in Kent, at Douer and Sandwich. Frō whence to Caleis or Bolein in France, is the distance of 30. miles. From this Angle which is against France to the third Angle, which is in the North in Scotland, the maine whereof boundeth vpon Germany, but no land scene (and there the Iland is like vnto a wedge, euen at the very Angle of the Land in Scotland) the length is seuen hundred miles. Againe, the length from this corner at Douer in Kent, to the vttermost part of Cornwall, being Saint Michaels mount (which is the West part, or West Angle) is supposed to be three hundred miles. From this left Angle being the West part, & the vttermost part of Cornwall, which hath a prospect towards Spaine, in which part also standeth Ireland, situate betweene Britaine and Spaine to the North Angle in the further part of Scotland, in which part the Iland doth end, the length is 800. miles, in which part there be very good hauens, and safe harboroughs for ships, and apt passages into Ireland, being not past one daies sayling: but the shorter passage is from Wales to Waterford, a Towne in Ireland vpon the Seacoast, much like to that passage betweene Douer and Calcis, or somewhat more: but the shortest passage of all is out of Scotland. From this last Angle to Hampton, which is a Towne vpon the seacoast, with a hauen so called toward the South, and therefore called Southhampton, betweene the Angles of Kent and

Girald. Cambrens.

Cornwall, they do measure by straight line the nu[illegible]ele length of the Iland, and doe say, that it containeth eight hundred miles, as the breadth from Menena or Saint Davids to Yarmouth, which is in the vttermost part of the Iland towards the East, doth containe two hundred miles: for the breadth of the Iland is in the South part, which part is the front and beginning of the Land, and endeth narrow, or as it were in a straight. So the circuit, or compasse of this Iland, is 1800. miles, which is 200. lesse then Cæsar doth reckon or accompt.

Of the first habitation of this ILAND.

A short Note to the Reader.

Iapheteos.

HEre it is recorded by the sacred and most ancient Historyy, that after the vniuersall Flood, the Iles of the Gentiles were diuided by the posterity of Iapheth the sonne of Noah, wee doubt not but this Ile of Britaine was also then peopled by his progeny, the History whome, as it is to be wished, and appertinent to this purpose, so fith it is irrecouerable, not onely vnto vs, but also to other nations, I thinke it better to say nothing therein, then to set downe heere *Samothes*, *Magus*, *Sarron*, *Druys*, and *Bardus* for his successors, which are vpholden and bolstered onely by the credit and authority of a new small Pamphet falsely forged, and thrust into the world vnder the Title of the ancient Historian *Berosus*. For that is the censure of all the best learned, as concerning our common *Berosus*, which at his first appearing, about one hundred yeeres since, was partly suspected by *Lodouicus Viues*, afterward conuicted to be fabulous, by the learned *Gaspar Varrerius*, in a seuerall Treatise, and now vniuersally reiected of all skilfull Antiquaries, as a meere fable, vnworthy the name of *Berosus*. Therefore I dare not ground the beginning of our history vpon the credit thereof, vnlesse I would be preiudiciall to the truth, whereunto I leuell all my endeuour. I hope it shall be sufficient in this History for the Britaines time, to follow the authority of the receiued British History, which *Geoffrey*, Archdeacon of *Monmouth*, translated out of the British toung about 400. yeeres since, beginning with *Brute*, who after the progeny of Iapheth seemeth to be first namer, and Ruler of this Land. Yet before we enter into the History of *Brute*, it shall not be impertinent to note here, that whereas *Pomponius Mela* mentioneth that one *Hercules* kild *Albion* a Giant about the mouth of *Rhosne* in France, many learned men haue iudged the said *Albion* to haue ruled heere, (sith the Greeke monuments doe alway call this Ile *Albion*) and after his death that *Hercules* came hither, *Lilius Giraldus* writeth. An ancient Altar also containing the inscription of a vow, told in the vttermost North part of Brytaine 1500. yeeres since, as *Solinus* reporteth, plainely proued that *Vlisses* the renowned Grecian in his 10. yeers trauels, after the sacking of Troy, arriued in this our countrey. And thus much is found only in approued Historics, as concerning Brytaine before the time of *Brutus*.

Ludouicus Viues. Gaspar. Varrerius.

Nicol. Perotus. Liluus Giraldus.

Solinus.

A briefe Proofe of BRVTE.

THe History of this *Brute*, is affirmed by very many ancient and learned Historians, vpon whose vniforme consent, although I dare not precisely conceit, that he was descended of *Æneas* or *Silvius*, or came hither by Oracle accompanied with *Troians*, yet I dare boldly say, that neere the time heereafter mentioned, there was one *Brute*, or *Brito*, King of this Realme, which left it to his posterity. And the impugners of this ancient History, must not with so light a breath as they doe, seem to blow away the authority of so many graue testimonies, the succession of so many Princes, the founders of so many monuments and Lawes, and the ancient honors of the nations, that first with publike authority receiued Christianity. The names of the learned men that affirme this History, or so many as are come to my knowledge, are these:

Gildas Sapiens cited by *Cestrensis Ponticus*, and others, *Nennius* before the Conquest.

Thomas Archbishop of *Yorke*, in the time of King *William* the Conqueror, cited by *Foxe* in his fourth Booke of *Monuments*, *ex Chronico Sigeberti*.

Henricus Huntingtonensis, stiled by *Polidor*, *Egregius Historicus*, specially in his booke, *de origine Regum Britannorum*, cited by Master *Lambert*.

Matthew Paris the Authour of a golden history, who saith of *Galfridus Monmouthensis*, that he did translate the British history into Latine.

Matheus Westmonasterienſis in *floribus* nameth *Bryto*, for *Brutus*, calling him the son of *Ilicion*, descended of *Iauan*, which pedigree is also found in *Gildas*, and the ancient British histories, as it may appeare by Sir *John Price*.

Giraldus Cambrensis, *Ranulfus Cestrensis*, *Alfridus* cited in *Polichronicon*, and Sir *John Price*, *Fasciculus Temporum*, *Iohannes Anglicus*, *Houeden*, *Geruasius*.

Galfridus Monmouthensis.

Simon Dunelmensis.

Petrus Langtoft, about the time of *Edward* the second, or *Edward* the third.

An ancient Chronicle in French verse, these three I saw in the study of Sir *Robert Cotton* a most diligent Antiquary.

Alanus ab Insulis in prophetias Merlini.

Virrumnius Pontius,

Sir *John Price*, *in defensione Britannicæ Historiæ*, *John Leyland*, *John Capgraue*.

Robert Kelway, in his reports of Law, *Folio* 191. speake of *Mulmutius* the British King.

Fabian, *Grafton*, *Languet*, *Cooper*.

And the most graue and iudicious master *Lambert* in his perambulation of *Kent*.

Against these so many, so ancient, so learned and iudicious Authours, who had more bookes to enforme them then wee haue, and tooke more paines to be informed both by forraigne, and domesticall monuments then wee can, are produced some fiue or six strangers, that either could not, or would not looke into British Antiquities, and not aboue one or two of our owne nation. Of these, the chiefe is *Iohannes de Whethampsted*, admitted to be an Englishman, yet not 200. yeeres agoe, who rather oppugneth the processe and circumstances of the narration, then the person of *Brute*, saying, that no such thing is found in the Romane Historics, nor any mention made of any such *Brute*. To him Sir *John*

Price, Master *Lambert*, and Doctor *Powell*, shortly answer, that an argument negatiue *ab authoritate humana*, is not good, & much worse it is to say, that it is incredible that *Brute* should kill his father, and so come hither; Therefore no such *Brute* was. For by such inferences, not onely our owne antiquities, but the Romane, and all other ancient Chronicles shall be reiected, seeing not one of them is free from such imputations. And againe, though many things be obiected against this Troian Pedigree, yet neyther he, nor any other obiecteth any thing against the Brytish Pedigree, set forth by *Floriligus*, *Gildas*, and other Brytish Authors: as Sir *John Price* affirmeth. The next therefore is *William Petit*, a Frenchman borne, as his name importeth, who most sharply inuayeth not against *Brute*, but against *Galfridus Monmouthensis*, calling him the forger of the British History: this man liued in the time when Wales not wholy subdued, stirred vp wars against the English, and therefore not only speaketh of ignorance, being a stranger, but of spleene, to disgrace the Brytaines. And himselfe hath some things not very credible, as the tale of the greene children caught in the sea, and such like. The last *Polidore* an Italian, though learned, yet with a vaine-glorious enuy, so aduance his owne Country, will not endure that any other Countrey shall haue monuments of antiquity. And whereas the rest onely except against *Brute*, this man with one dash of a pen, cashireth threescore Princes together, with all their histories and Historians, yea, and some ancient Lawes also: a iudgement so inconsiderate, as of it selfe deserueth a censure, besides the manifold grosse errours by euery man now discouered in the rest of his story. To these are added, *Boccas*, *Viues*, *Iunius*, *Buchanan*, *Bodin*, although learned, yet strangers, like *Pedarij Senatores*, to fill vp the number, and vnfit to be witnesses in this case, seeing it cannot be presumed they had any vnderstanding of the English tongue, and much lesse of the Welsh. Wherefore there is no reason, that such weak testimonies and arguments should remoue the setled and approued authority of our ancient Historics, whereof who desireth to be better informed, let him read Sir *John Price*, *John Leland*, Mr. *Lambert*, and other Authours, who haue defended it more copiously.

The race of the Kings of Brytaine after the common receiued opinion since

Brute, &c: and in the margent are placed the yeeres before Christ his birth, when euery
King began their Raignes, till *Cassibelanus*, in whose time Christ the
Sauiour of the World was borne, and then following, the yeeres
from Christ his birth are placed.

Brute. Vrsidide.

BRVTE therefore, according to the common opinion, the Sonne of Siluius, the Sonne of Ascanius, the Sonne of Aeneas, after the death of his Father being banished into Greece, deliuered there the remnant of the Troianes from their long captiuity, wherein they were detained vnder the Grecians, with whom he departed thence for to seeke some habitation: and associating to himselfe Corineus with his Troians whom he found in the way, after a long and weary iourny, and many notable acts atchieued in Aquitain, he arriued in this Iland, which was called Albion, at a place now called Totnes in Deuonshire, the yeere of the world, 2855. the yeere before Christs nativity, 1108. wherein he first began to raigne, and named it Brytaine (as some write) or rather after his owne name Brutaine, as Aethicus that wonderfull Philosopher (a Scythian by race, but an Illirian by Country) translated by Saint Hierom aboue a thousand yeeres past, teacheth both it & the Iles adiacent *Insulas Brytannicas*. And for more proofe of this reckoned name, not onely the said Philosopher (who trauelled thorow many lands, and in this land taught the knowledge of mynerall works) may be alledged, but sundry other, as the Sibils Oracles, wherein the name of the Brytaines is written with y, that is the Greekes little u, which Oracles, although they were not the Sibils owne worke, as some suspect, yet are they very ancient indeede, and that they might seeme more ancient, vse the most ancient of Countries and peoples. And some English writers more then two hundred yeeres since, vsually doe name it Brutaine, and not otherwise, though a large Hystory of this Land, translated out of French, Brute builded the City of new Troy, now called London, hee stablished therein the Troian Lawes, and gaue the vttermost Westerne part of the Realme to his companion, Corineus, of whose name it was called Corinea, and to this day Cornewall. Iohn Harding saith that Brute bare Gules, two Lyons rampant endorsed Or. Also a Banner bert, a Diana of gold with hir crowned and inthronized, that were Aeneas armes, when he entred the land of Latins. Iohn Hanuille in Architrenio, and Nicolas Vpton, and other ove ancient Heralds say he bare Or, a Lyon passant, Gules, &c. Many are desirous (saith Aeneas Siluius) to know how the name of Heralds came first in vse, who first ordained them, and what office and authority they haue amongst men. Of the which thing I once stood in doubt my self: but as the nature of man is to desire knowledge of many things, and seeking to be satisfied therin, I found in the reuestry, or treasury of Saint Pauls Church in London (in anno. 1451.) an old Hystory written (as the title did specifie) 600. yeers before, which if it be true, it may both satisfie my desire, and others in the premisses: the Authour of the booke was Thucydides the Grecian, but the translatours name was not therein noted: but truly, it was right eloquently set forth in the Latine toung. The content of the words I do not now well remember, but the tenure of the sentence was well-neere in this sort, as I shall declare. Heralds be they, which our Elders were wont to call Heroes, that is to say, those which were greater, or surpassing all men in maiestie, yet inferiors to the gods. For, when the people of antiquity did perceiue to be notable, and surmounting all others in his acts, and feates, renowned in vertues, & friendly, or gracious vnto them, him would they magnifie and exalt in the highest degree, and as it were, with their good words, make them cousins to God almighty, placing them amongst the gods, if it so were, that they had wrought some miraculous feats aboue the comon course of nature. But if there were no such miraculous or wonderful deeds, but that through their vertues they seem wonderfull & honorable: then thought they to call such persons, not altogether gods, nor yet simply men, but inuented out a mean word and name for them, calling them Heroes, as it were halfe gods. And of this word Heroes, or Heros, groweth by corruption of vse this name Herald, albeit some say that those Heroes were old souldiers, that had spent all their age well-nar in the wars: out of the which sort the Heralds ought to be chosen, and so the terme Herald seemeth to be a Dutch word, and to sound as much as an old souldier, or man of warre. But the first that begunne and ordained this order, was Dionysius, the which was the first also that inuaded India with an armed power, and gathered the rude people there together, which liued in Woods and Desarts like wilde beasts, feeding on leaues, barks of trees, and raw flesh: teaching them to liue after a ciuill order and fashion: also to build Townes and Villages, to worship the gods, to till and plow the earth, to plant vineyards, & make wine, to weare apparell, to anoint & trim their bodies, & to be short, to liue after a humane maner. And now, following the comon opinio, after Geffrey Monmouth: Brute deuided the whole Iland among his 3. sons, which he had by Innogen his wife, Locrine, Camber, and Albanact. Vnto Locrine he gaue the middle part betweene Humber and Seuerne, which of him was called Loegria. To Camber, he gaue all the region beyond Seuern, which

Aethicus.

Gotfride Monmouth.

I. Mancuill.

Iohn. Harding.

Iohn Hanuille. Nicholas Vpton.

Aeneas Siluius.

which of him tooke the name of Cambria, and is now called Wales. To Albanact he gaue all the Lands beyond Humber, which of his name was called Albania: after which partition hee deceased, when hee had raigned 24 yeeres, and was buried at new Troy.

1084. Gaufride. LOcrine, the eldest Sonne of Brute, raigned twenty yeeres: hee chased the Hunnes, which inuaded this Realme, and pursued them so sharply, that many of them with their King were drowned in a River which then parted England and Scotland. And for so much as the King of Hunnes, named Humber, was there drowned, the River is till this day named Humber. This King Locrine had to wife Guendoline, Daughter of Corineus, Duke of Cornwall, by whom he had a Sonne named Madan. He also kept as Paramour, the beautifull Lady Estrilde, by whom hee had a daughter named Sabrine. And after the death of Corineus, he put from him the said Guendoline, and wedded Estrilde: but Guendoline repaired to Cornwall, where shee gathered a great power, and fought with King Locrine, and slew him. Shee was buried at new Troy. She drowned the Lady Estrilde, with her daughter Sabrine in a River, that after the yong maidens name is called Seuerne.

Hoyd Humber tooke that name.

Deuerel.

1064. Guendoline a Queene raigned. Gaufride. Flores Historiar.

GVendoline the daughter of Corineus, and wife to Locrine (for so much as Madan her sonne was too young to gouerne the Land) was by common assent of all the Brytaines, made ruler of the whole Ile of Brytaine: which shee well and discretly ruled, to the comfort of her subiects 15 yeeres, and then left the same to her Sonne Madan.

1049. The King deuoured by wolues.

MAdan, the Sonne of Locrine, and Guendoline, was made ruler of Brytaine: he lyued great ty: amongst the Brytaines: and being at his disport of hunting, hee was deuoured by wild Wolues, when he had raigned 40 yeers. He left two Sonnes, named Mempricius and Maulius.

1009. A traitor to his brother, deuoured of wilde beasts.

MEmpricius, the Sonne of Madan, being King, by treason slew his brother Manlius, after whose death, hee lyued in more tranquility, where through hee fell in sloth, and so to lechery, taking the wiues and daughters of his subiects: and lastly, became so euill, that hee forsoke his wife and concubines, and fell to the sinne of Sodomy with beasts, whereby he became odible to God and man. And going on hunting, he lost his company, and was deuoured of wilde Wolues, whereof the Land was then full, when he had raigned 20 yeeres.

989. Gaufride. Flores Historiar.

EBranke, the sonne of Mempricius, was made ruler of Brytaine, he had 21 wiues, of whom he received 20 sonnes, and 30 daughters, which were sent by their father to Alba Siluius, the 4th King of Albanois in Italy, to be married to the Albanes. This Ebrank first after Brutus attempted to inuade France with an Army, as Iacobus Bergomas sayeth in his first of his Chronicles, and Iacobus Lessabeus in the description of Henalt affirmeth the same, and that he was driuen backe by Brunchildis, Lord of Henalt, with no small losse of his men. Assaracus the second Sonne of Ebranke, with the rest of his young brethren 18 at the least by the ayde of Alba Siluius, conquered all Germany, which was then no great matter, for then Europe was very smally inhabited, saue onely about the seacoasts, as Dalmatia, Italy, and the coasts of France, as in the reading the hystories may easily be seene, how the East people at sundry times, came swarming into Europe. Of these brethren had Germany the name, *a Germanis fratribus*, that had subdued it. Ebranke was a founder of many Cities (saith Bergomas) as Alleuid in Albania (now Scotland) which is after Hector Boetius, Dunbytaine, but other think the same to be cleane destroyed. He made the Castle of Maidens, called Edenbrough. He made also the Castle of Bamburgh. In the 20 yeere of his raigne, he builded Kayrbrauke, since by the Saxons called Eurowicke, now corruptly Yorke, wherein hee builded a Temple to Diana, and set there an Archdiamine, and was there buried, when he had raigned 40 yeeres.

Germany took the name of Ebranke his sonnes, who conquered the same. Bergomas Hector Boetius. Dunbytain. Edenbrough Bamburgh, and Yorke builded.

John Rouse saith, he builded Caer Pennin, after it was called Bellestitum, at length Caer Bossa Rhydohen, and Orenford, of a certaine Ford, which John Leiland calleth Ifs, in English Vse. and saith it is now called Orefordfor Vuleford.

929. BRutus 2 the eldest Sonne of Ebranke, succeeded in the Kingdome, and for that his father had received such a repulse at the hands of Brunchildis, Lord of Henalt, hee in reuenge thereof, inuaded Henalt with a great army in the Fennes and Marshland, at the mouth of the Riuer Scaldis (of old time named Stadon) and encamped himselfe vpon the Riuer Hania, where betweene Brutus and Brunchildis, was foughten a strong battell in that place, which to this day is called Estam-binges, of the station and campe of Brutus, as Iacobus Lessabeus writeth in his description of Henalt. This Brute, of his lusty courage, was surnamed Greeneshield, he raigned 12 yeeres, and was buried at Yorke.

Iacobus Les. sabeus.

917. LEill the sonne of Brute Greeneshield, being a louer of peace, builded Carleile, and repaired Carleon, which was since by the Romanes redified, when a Legion of souldiers was sent thither, and by them named, The City of Legions, now called Chester, of the ancient building with vaults and Towers, each house like a Castle, which sometime had beene of great pleasance. A Legion of the Romanes (as Vigetius reporteth) contained 6000 warriours or more: which Legion was diuided into ten bands, but the first passed all the rest, both in number of souldiours, and also in estimation: for this band bare the Eagle, which was the chiefest standard of the Romanes. This first band contained 1105 footemen, heauy armed horsemen 132, and was named *Cohors Militaria*, that is to say, a company of a thousand and more souldiours. This band is the head of all the Legion: whensoeuer they must fight, these begunne the battell, and are first set in order in the Front of the battell. The second band containeth 555 footmen, and 66 horsemen of heauy armour, and this

Henry Bradshaw.

A Legion of souldiours. Vigetius.

this Land is called *Cohors quingenaria*, that is to say, a company of 500 and moe souldiers. The third band likewise hath 555 footemen, and 66 horsemen. The fourth band hath 555 footemen, and 66 horsemen. The fifth band hath as many. These fiue bands are set in array in the first battell. The first band hath 555 footemen, and 66 horsemen. The seuenth band hath 555 footemen, 66 horsemen. The eight band hath 555 footemen, 66 horsemen. The ninth band hath 555 footemen, 66 horsemen. The tenth hath 555 footemen, 66 horsemen. These ten bands make a full and perfect legion, containing 6100 footemen, and 726 horsemen. King Leill in the end of his raigne, fell to sloth, and lust of the body, by meanes whereof, ciuill strife was raised, and not in his daies ended. He raigned 25 yeers, and was buried at Carleile alias Chester.

Canterbury, Winchester, and Shaftesbury built.

RVdhudibras, *alias* Ciculer, the Sonne of Leil, builded Caergant, of the Englishmen called Canterbury, (that is to say, the Court of the Kentishmen) Caiergueint, now Winchester, and Caerlepton, now called Shaftesbury, wherein hee builded three Temples, and placed in the same Flammes. He raigned 29 yeers.

863. Stamford an Vniuersity.

BLadud the Sonne of Rudhudibras, who had long studied at Athens, brought with him foure Philosophers to keep Schoole in Britain: for the which, hee builded Stamford, and made it an Vniuersity, wherein he had great number of Schollers studying in all the seuen liberall Sciences: which Vniuersity, dured to the coming of Saint Augustine, at which time the B. of Rome interdited it for heresies that fell among the Sarons and Brytains together mixt, so lastly Harding. He builded Caier, Badon, or Bath, and made there a Temple to Apollo, and placed there a Flamine: hee made also the hot Baths, and practised his Necromancy: he decked himselfe in feathers, and presumed to fly, but by falling on his Temple, he brake his necke, when he had raigned 20 yeeres.

Joh. Harding I. Roule. Iohn Bale. Bathe with the hot Baths built. The King attempteth to flye.

834. Leicester built.

LEir Sonne of Bladud succeded his father. Hee builded Caier Leir vpon the River of Soze, now called Leicester, and made there a Temple of Ianus, placing a Flamine to gouerne the same. He had three daughters, Gonorill, Regan and Cordeilla, which Cordeilla, for her vertue and wisedome towards her father, succeeded him in the Kingdome. When he had raigned 50 yeeres, he deceased, and was buried vnder the channell of the River Soze, within Leicester. This vault vnder the earth was built in honor of Ianus Biirons. There all the workmen of that City, when the solemnity of the day came, begunne all things that they had to doe the yeere following.

I. Rouse.

805. Cordeilla, the youngest daughter of Leir, succeeding her father, was soze vexed by her two nephewes, Morgan of Albany, and Cunedagius of Camber and Cornwall, who at the length take and cast her in prison: where shee being in despaire of recouering her estate, slew her selfe, when shee had raigned 5 yeeres, and was buried at Leicester.

800. MOrgan, the eldest Sonne of Dame Gonorilla, claimed Britaine, and warred on his nephew Cunedagius, that was King of Camber (that now is Wales) and of Cornwall, but Cunedagius met with Morgan in Wales, and there slew him: which place is called Glamorgan till this day. And then Cunedagius was King of all Brytaine. He builded a Temple of Mars at Perth, that now is S. Johns Towne in Scotland, and placed there a Flamine: He builded another of Minerua in Wales, which now is named Wangoz. The third he made of Mercury in Cornwall, where hee was borne. Hee raigned 33 yeeres, and was buried at new Troy.

Holl. Glamorgan tooke that name. S. Johns Town built. Bangor built.

RIuallus, Sonne of Cunedagius, succeded his father, in whose time it rained blood three daies: after which tempest, ensued a great multitude of venemous flies, which slew much people, and then a great mortality throughout this Land, caused almost desolation of the same. This Riuallus raigned ouer this whole Land, 46 yeeres, and then deceased, and was buried at Caerbranke that now is Yozke. Rome builded in Italy, by Remus and Romulus 356 yeeres after Brute arriued in this Land. 766. Bloodrained Flores Historiarum. Rome builded.

GVrgustius, Sonne of Riuallus, succeded in the Kingdome of Brytaine, who raigned quietly, but was a common drunkard, whereof followed all other vices. When he had raigned 38 yeeres, hee deceased and was buried at Yozke. 721.

SIcilius, brother of Gurgustius, succeded in the kingdome: of whom is left but little memozie: he raigned 49. yeres, and was buried at Bathe. 684.

IAgo or Lago, Cousin of Gurgustius, raigned, 25. yeres: for his euill government he died of a Litargie, and was buried at Yozke. 636.

John de Vigney, in his Booke named, The Moralization of the Chesse, saith, that the same game of Chesse was deuised by Xerxes the Philosopher, otherwise named Philometor, to repzoue and correct the minde of a famous Tyrant called Euilmerodach, King of Babylon (as is supposed) about the yeere before Christs birth, 614. Iohannes de Vigney. Game of Chesse. fo.

CKimmacus raigned 54. yeres, and was buried at Yozke. 612.

GOzbodug raigned threscore and three yeres, and was buried at new Troy. 550. Flores Historiarum.

FErrex with his brother Porrex, ruled Brytaine 50. yeres: but it was not long ere they fell at ciuill discozd: the soueraigne dominion, in which Ferrex was slaine, and Porrex after wards by his mother, whose name was Idoine, was killed in his bed. Thus cruelly was the blood and house of Brute destroied, when this Realme by the space of 616. yeres had bene gouerned by that lynage. 496. The brother slue the brother, and the mother murthered her owne sonne. Justin. lust. extinguish.

After, this Realme was diuided with ciuill warres, for lacke of one soueraigne gouernour, vntill Dunwallo reduced the same into one Monarchie.

MVlmutius Dunwallo, the sonne of Cloren, Duke of Cornwall, reduced this Realme into one Monarchie, being before by ciuill warres and dissention seuered and brought into diuers dominions 442.

dominions: he was the first that ware a Crown of Gold, he constituted good Lawes, which long after were called Mulmutius Lawes, amongst which, hee ordained how many plowes euery Shire should keepe, and for lacke of the beast of the plow to be taken for debt Polid. These Lawes holy Gildas wrote out of the Brittish speech into Latine. He gaue priuiledges vnto Temples, and ploughs, and begunne to make the foure notable wales in Brytaine. Hee raigned forty yeeres, leauing after him two sonnes, Belinus, and Brennus. 401.

BElinus and Brennus, Sonnes of Mulmutius Band Cornoenina, diuided the whole Ile of Baptaine betweene them. Vnto Beline the elder brother was appointed England, Wales, and Cornwall. Vnto the other, the North part beyond Humber. This Brennus, a young man, desirous of glozy and dominion, raised warre against Belire. But in the conclusion, by the weanes of their mother, they were accozded, and Brennus being wholly giuen to the study of warres, left his Countrey to the gouernance of his brother, and went into France amongst the Galles, where for his excellent qualities, hee was greatly esteemed, and made of them their Soueraigne Captaine, with whom hee passed into Italy, sacked Rome, and expelling the Tuscanes, builded Millaine, Bzescia, Como, Bergamo, Vincenza, Trent, and Verona, which he called after his owne name, Brenona. After this (as writeth Trogus Pompeius abzidged by Iustine) Brennus, leader of the Galles, (he named him not a Baptaine) raised an host of 15000 footemen, and 15000 horsemen, and inuaded Macedon againe. Whome when Sosthenes saw how they wasted the Countrey and Villages, he met them with his host of Macedons, well appointed. But by reason they were few, and their enemies many, they were soone put to the worse. Wherefore, while the Macedons being beaten, kept them within the walls of their Cities, Brennus like a Conqueroz, against whom, no man durst shew his head to make resistance, spoiled all the Ile of Macedon. And from thence, as though those battles and spoyles seemed to base and simple in his eye, he turned his minde to the Temples of the gods, scozning that the gods were rich, and ought to depart liberally to men. Therefore hee take his iourney towards Delphos, setting more by the gaine of the Gold that had beene offered to the gods, then by their displeasure. Iustinus Historicus. Lib. Leland. Comment.

The Temple of Apollo at Delphos, is situate in the mount Pernassus, vpon a cliffe on euery side falling steepe downe. There the confluence of men hath made a populous Citty. Moreouer both the Temple and the Towne are enclosed with the steepnesse of the rocke. The middle part of the rocke inward, is in fashion like a Theatre, by meanes whereof when men make any shouting, or any trumpet is sounded, the same breaketh and redoubleth in such wise vpon the stones front one to another, that the Eccho is heard double and triple, the noise resounding farre lowder then it went forth. The which causeth the ignozant to stand in more feare, thinking it to be the presence of the Godhead. In the winding of the rocke, almost midway to the toppe of the hill, there is a little plaine, and in the same, a deepe hole pight to the ground, which (except to giue oracles) out of the which, a certaine cold breath ascending vpward, stirreth the mindes of the Prophets into a madnesse, and so compelleth them to giue answer to such as come for counsell. In the same place therefore, there are to be seene many and rich gifts of kings and peoples. Wherefore, when Brennus came within the view of the Temple, hee was in doubt a great while, whether hee were better to attempt the matter forthwith, or giue his souldiours that nights respite to rest them. Euridanus and Thessalonus, who for couetousnesse of the pray, had ioyned themselues with him, willed to cut off all delay, while their enemies were vnprouided, whereas by giuing them that nights respite, their enemies thereby perchance, get both courage and succour: but the common souldiours of the French men, when after long penury, they found a Country replenished with wine, and all other kinde of victualls, they dispersed themselues in the fields, making hauocke of all things like Conquerours, by which meanes, the Delphians had respite to lay for themselues, and wanned the Towne by the helpe of their neighbours, or euer the French men could bee called from the Winesat to the standard. Brennus had therefore and fiue thousand chosen footemen of the best in all his host, whereas the Delphians were in all but 40000 fighting men. In disdaine of which small handfull, Brennus to the intent to sharpen the mindes of his men, shewed them all what a rich and plentifull pray they should haue. The Frenchmen beeing by this botching of their Captaine, or rather by their olune beholding, stirred vp, and also wounded with the wine they had powred in the day before, without respect of any danger, ranne headlong to the encounter. On the contrary part, the Delphians putting more trust in God, then in their olune strength, resisted their enemies, and what with stones, and what with their weapons, threw the Frenchmen (as they scaled) headlong from the top of the mountaine. While the two parts were thus striuing one with another, suddenly the priests of all the Temples, and the Prophets with their hayre about their eares, &c. like men distraut and out of their wits, came running into the forefront of the battell, crying out, that while they were all making their supplications to God for aide, they met a young man of beauty and personage, farre excelling any mortall creature, and by his company two Virgins in armour, wherefore they beleeued them, seeing the Gods did guard their standard, they should not strike to dispatch their enemies. And there withall the two things hapned, that God was present on their side. For both a piece of the mountaine being broken off, by a sodden earthquake, ouerwhelmed the French host, and the thicket

of their enemies (not without great slaughter) were opened and put to flight. In the necke whereof, there ensued a tempest with haile, thunder, and lightning, consuming as many as were any thing sore wounded. The Captaine Brennus himselfe, not being able to abide the smart of his wounds, tooke a sword and killed himselfe. Thus farre abridged out of Iustine.

Brennus killeth himselfe.

Beline in the meane time (saith Gaufride) both in ciuill iustice, and also Religion, greatly increased his Realme. He made three Archflammes, whose Seas were at new Troy, Kayebzanke, and Lavelegion. Hee finished the foure great wayes, begunne by his father: he subdued and made tributary vnto him, Denmarke. In new Troy, hee made the hauen, which at this day retaineth the name of him, called Belines gate: He married his daughter Cambria, vnto a Prince of Almaine called Antenor, of whom these people were calle Cymbri, and Sycambri.

Archflammes. Foure wayes. Belines gate builded. Iob. Leyland.

Finally, after hee had raigned with his brother, and alone 26 yeeres, hee dyed: and after the Pagan manner, with great pompe was buried, and his ashes in a vessell of brasse set on a high pinacle ouer Belines gate. He builded *Caerheon* vpon the River Vske, which since, by a legion of the Romanes there placed, was named *Caerlegion*, now cleane destroyed.

Flores Historiarum. See page 9.

375. GVrguntius, Sonne of Beline, succeeded his father. I. Rouse saith, hee builded Caerwerith, that is, Longcastra: he subdued Denmarke, compelling them to continue their tribute, and in his returne home, met with a fleete of Bafonefes, comming from the parts of Spain, which were lacking for habitations, because their Country was so populous, and not able to sustaine them, to whom the King granted the Ile of Ireland to inhabit, and to hold the same of him as their Soueraigne Lord: But the Scots write, that Spaniards arriued before this time in Ireland. This Gurguntius builded Porchester and Warwicke in the middle of the Realme (saith I. Rouse.) He raigned 29 yeres, and was buried at Caerlheon.

Giraldus.

Ireland inhabited.

Hector Boetius.

356. GVinthelinus, Sonne of Gurguntius, was crowned King of Brytaine. A Prince sober and quiet, who had to wife a noble woman, named Mercia, of excellent learning and knowledge. She deuised certaine Lawes, which long time among the Brytaines were greatly esteemed, and named Mercian Lawes. This Prince raigned 26 yeres, and was buried at new Troy.

Mercian Lawes the third.

359. CEcilius the Sonne of Guincheline and Mercia, raigned 7 yeeres, (as the Scots write.) In the first yeere of his raigne, a people called Picts, arriued here in Brytaine, and possessed those parts, which now be the Marches of both Realmes, England and Scotland. Cecilius was buried at Caerligeon.

The Picts first arriue-ed in the North parts.

373. KImarus succeeded Cecilius, who being a wilde young man, and liuing after his owne lust, raigned but 3 yeeres, and was slaine as he was hunting of wild beasts.

ELanius, called also Danius, was King of Brytaine 9 yeeres. 376.

MOrindus the bastard Sonne of Danius, began to raigne in Brytaine: he fought with a King who came out of Germany, and slew him with all his power. Moreouer, out of the Irish Seas in his time, came forth a wonderfull Monster, which destroyed much people: whereof the King hearing, would of his valiant courage needes fight with it, by whom he was cleane deuoured, when he had raigned 8 yeeres. 385. Gaufride. Ж

GOrbomanous, eldest Sonne of Morindus, raigned 11 yeeres: a Prince iust and religious: he reuiued the Temples of his gods, and gouerned his people in peace and wealth. This Gorbomannus builded Grantham in Lincolnshire. Our English Chronicle saith, he builded both the Towns of Cambridge and Grantham: but seeing that Cambridge in ancient Chronicles is called Gant (as it is also Grantchester, Caiergrant, and Gantbridge) it was an easie matter (as Grammarians know) to translate Grantham into Cambridge, and so ascribe the building of both Townes to him that builded but one, or neither of them both. 393. Caxton. Grantham builded. I. Rouse.

ARchigallo, brother to Gorbomannus, was crowned King of Brytaine: he was in conditions vnlike to his brother: for he deposed the noblemen, and exalted the vnnoble. He extorted from men their goods to enrich his treasury: for which cause by the estates of the Realme, he was deprived of his royall dignity, when he had raigned 5 yeeres. 402. The King deprined.

ELidurus, the third Sonne of Morindus, and brother to Archigallo, was elected King of Brytaine, a vertuous and gentle Prince, who gouerned his people iustly: as he was hunting in a Forrest, by chance hee met with his brother Archigallo, whom most louingly hee embraced, and found the meanes to reconcile him to his Lords, and then resigned to him his royall dignity when he had raigned 5 yeeres. 286.

ARchigallo this restored to his royal estate, ruled the people quietly and iustly 10 yeers, and was buried at Yorke. 282.

ELidurus aforenamed, after the death of his brother Archigallo, for his piety and iustice, by the generall consent of the Brytains, was againe chosen King. But he raigned not passing 2 yeres, for his younger brethren, Vigenius and Peredurus raised warre against him, tooke him prisoner, and cast him in prison, where he remained during their raigne. 272.

VIgenius and Peredurus, after the taking of their brother, raigned together 7 yeeres. 270.

Vigenius then dyed, and Peredurus raigned after alone, 2 yeeres. He builded the Towne of Pithering, in the North parts of Yorkeshire. The Towne of Pitherington built. Caxton. I. Rouse.

ELidurus the third time was made King, who continued his latter raigne honourably and iustly: but being sore vexed with age and troubles, hee finished his life, when he had now lastly raigned in Brytaine 4 yeeres. 261.

Gorbonian raigned in Brytaine 10 yeeres. 258.

Morgan guided the Realme peaceably 14 yeers. 248.

Emerianus

EMerianus his brother, when hee had tyrannously raigned seuen yeeres, was deposed. 234.

IVal was chosen King for his iustice and temperance, which gouerned peaceably twenty yeres. 222.

Rimo gouerned this Realme fifteene yeeres, his time was peaceable. 207.

Gerumcius raigned in Britaine twenty yeeres. 192.

CArellus raigned peaceably ten yeeres, hee chang by all oppressors of the poore, to giue example vnto other. 172. A good example.

Coilus succeeded Carellus, who quietly raigned twenty yeeres. 161.

Porrex, a bertuous and gentle Prince, raigned fiue yeres. 142.

Chirimus, through his drunkennesse, raigned but one yeere. 136.

Fulgen, his son raigned two yeres in Brytain. 135.

Eldred raigned in Brytaine but one yere. 133.

Androgius likewise raigned but one yeere. 132.

VRianus, the sonne of Androgius, wholy gaue himselfe to the lusts of the flesh, and raigned three yeeres. 131.

Elind raigned fiue yeeres, who was a great Astronomer. 126.

Dedantius King of Britains raigned 5 yeers. 124.

Detonus raigned in this Land two yeres. 120.

Gurgineus raigned three yeeres in Brytaine. 118.

Merianus was King of Brytaine two yeeres. 115.

Bladanus gouerned this Land of Brytaine two yeeres. 113.

Capenus raigned King of Britaine three yeres. 111.

Quinus ruled this Land of Britain two yeers. 108.

Silius raigned in this land of Brytaine 2 yeres. 106.

Bledgabredus raigned ten yeres, and gaue himselfe to the study of musicke. 104.

Archemalus was King of Britaine two yeres. 94.

EIdolus raigned foure yeeres. In his time diuers prodigies were seene, as Globes of fire, burning out of the ayre with great noyse, &c. 91. Prodigious signes.

Rodianus was King of Brytaine two yeeres. 88.

Redargius raigned King of Brytaine 3 yeeres. 86.

Samulius raigned King of Brytaine 2 yeeres. 83.

Penifellus was King of Brytaine three yeres. 81.

Pyrrhus ruled this Land of Brytaine 2 yeeres. 78.

Caporus was King of Brytaine two yeeres. 76.

DInellus the Sonne of Caporus, a iust and bertuous Prince, gouerned this Realme foure yeeres. 74.

HElius his sonne raigned not fully one yere. Of this Prince the Ile of Oly tooke the name, saith Geffrey. 70.

Vd the eldest sonne of Hely, succeeded his father: hee amended his Lawes, and tooke away all blages that were naught: moreouer, hee repained the Citty of new Troy with faire buildings and walls: and builded on the West part thereof, a strong gate, which vnto this time retaineth the name of him, and is called Ludgate. Finally, hee dyed, leauing after him two sonnes, Androgius, & Auarous, and Theomantius: who not being of the age to gouerne, their vncle Cassibelane obtained the Crowne. London tooke the name of Lud, and was called Ludstone, as saith Geffrey. 66. Lud repaired and fortified London. Flores Historiarum. Ludstone, or London took the name of King Lud.

CAssibelanus, the son of Hely, after the death of his brother Lud, was made gouernour of Brytaine, which ruled 19 yeeres. In the 8 yeere of his raigne, Iulius Cæsar comming vnto that part where Calcis and Bolougne now stand, determined to make warre into Brytaine, which vntill that time remained vnfrequented and vnknowne of the Romans. His quarrell was, because that in the warres of France, he perceiued the Frenchmen to haue much succour and ayde from thence: And because hee could not vnderstand, nor learne the greatnesse & state of the Iland, neyther what Nations they were which inhabited the same, nor what Lawes, Customes, or kinde of gouernment they vsed, nor yet what Hauens they had able to receiue any number of shippes, hee sent Caius Volusenus before with a galley to discouer as much as hee could, concerning those matters, who within fiue dayes after returned to Cæsar, declaring such things as he had learned by coasting alongst the shore, for he durst not for feare of the Brytaines stirre out of his galley. In the meane space there came Embassadours from many Citties of the Ile, and deliuered him Hostages, with whom he sent Comius of Arras, charging him to exhort and perswade the rest of the Citties and Countries to doe the like. And hee himselfe shortly after hauing prepared 80 shippes, sailed into Brytaine, where at the first being wearyed with an hard and sharpe battell, and after with sudden tempest, his Nauy almost destroyed, hee returned againe into France there to winter his men. 58. Iulius Cæsar for his first voyage into England. Eutropius. Cæsars Commentaries.

The next Spring (which was the yeere before Christ 51) his Nauy being new rigged and encreased, hee passed the seas againe with a greater army: but whiles hee went towards his enemies on the Land, his shippes lying at anchour, were driuen on the sands, where they stacke fast: or else through beating one against another, with force of the tempest, they were destroyed, so that fourty were lost, the other with much labor were saued. In the meane space, Scæua one of Cæsars Souldiours, with foure others, who before in a small bessell were conueyed to a Rocke neere the Ile, and by ebbing of the Ocean being forsaken, a great number of Brytaines fell on a few Romans, and some of his companions (though but few) found meanes to returne by boate, but Scæua remained without feare in the middest of his enemies darts: first with his speare he resisted them, after with his sword hee alone fought against many of them, and when hee was both weary and wounded, and had lost his helmet and shield, with two light harnesses, hee ran to Cæsars tents, and asked pardon of the Emperour for his ouerboldnesse, who not onely forgaue him, but honoured him with the office of a Centurion. Vpon Land Cæsars horsemen at the first encounter were vanquished, and Laberius Durus the Tribune slaine in a place now called Eutropius. Two voiages of Cæsar.

Chron. Wygmor.

Cæsar Commentaries.

Bede. Aller.

Britons subdued to Cæsar.

Iulius Cæsar blame with doubting. Entropius. Plony. Suetonius.

Cæsars Commentaries, touching the Brytaines barbarousnesse of Brytaines.

Chester was, here vnto Rochester, as saith the Chronicle of Wigmore. At the second conflict, not without great danger of his men, he put the Brytaines to flight: from thence he went to the River Thamis, on the further side whereof, Cassibelanus with a great multitude of people was keeping the bankes, who had set all the said bankes, and all the shallow places vnder the water, with sharpe stakes, euery one of them as bigge as a mans thygh, bound about with Lead, and driuen so fast into the bottome of the River, that they can neuer be remooued, (so saith Bede and Aller) who affirme that in their times, the said stakes were easily perceiued to remaine as afore said. But Cassibelanus and his Brytaines, not being able to resist the violence & force of the Romans, hid themselues in woods, and with a sudden eruptions often times manded them: but in the meane time, the Trinobants, which is the strongest City welneere of all those Countries, submitted it selfe, and deliuered Hostages to Cæsar, who at their request, placed Mandubratius to be their gouernour, whose father called Imanentius, being chiefe Lord & Ruler of the Trinobants, Cassibelane had before slaine, where with Mandubratius fled, and comming to Cæsar, not only submitted himselfe, but also was a great meanes (as many doe write) for Cæsar to subdue the rest: yet did Cassibelane send messengers to the foure Kings that ruled in the quarters of Kent, that with all their puissance, they should set on the Romanes that lay next them: their names were Cingetorex, Carullius, Taximagulus, and Segonax, who obeying his request were discomfited, & Cingetorex taken, whervvithall Cassibelane being dismaied after many losses, was constrained to giue pledges and to agree that Brytaine should become tributary to the Romans, as Cæsar for himselfe affirmeth: but Horace and Propertius long after called Brytaine vntouched, to which agree Lucan, Paterculus, and Seneca, with others. This action of Cæsar was in the yeere of the world, 3951. after the building of Rome 698. before Christ birth, 53. Then Cæsar like a Conqueror, with a great number of paiseners sailed into France, and so to Rome, where after his returne out of Brytaine, hee consecrated to Venus a sureote of Brytaine pearles the desire whereof partly moued him to inuade this Country: shortly after, hee was by the Senate slaine in the Councell house.

Cæsar in his Commentaries, describeth the Brytaines thus. The inner part (saith hee) is inhabited of such, as by tvitnesse of their ancient Records were borne and bred in the Ile, and the Sea coast, by such as haue passed thither out of Belgike to fetch booties, and to make warre. All the vvhich vvinners are called by the names of the Cities, vvhere they were borne, and from vvhence they first came, remaining there still vvhen the vvarre was done, and tilling the ground. The country is marueilously well replenished vvith people, and there be very many buildings, almost like in fashion to the building of Gallia. There is great Rore of Cattell. The Coyne they vse, is eyther of brasse, or else rings of yron, sized at a certaine vvaight, in stead of money. In the inner parts of the Realme groweth Tin: and in the Sea coast groweth yron, but hereof is small store. The brasse that they occupy is brought in, from beyond the Sea. There is timber of all kinds, as in Gallia, sauing Beech and Firre. They thinke it a hainous matter to taste of a Hare, a Henne, or a Gose: nevertheless, they cherish them for their pleasure. The ayre is vvoxe temperate in those places, then in France, and the cold lesser. Of all the Inhabitants of this Ile, the ciuillest are the Kentish folke, the which Country marcheth altogether vpon the Sea, and differeth not greatly from the manner of France. Those that dvvell more into the heart of the Realme, for the most part sow no corne, but liue by milke and flesh, and cloath themselues in Leather. All the Brytaines doe die themselues vvith vvoad, vvhich fetteth a blevvish colour vpon them, and it maketh them vvoxe terrible to behold in battell. They vveare their hayre long, and shaue all parts of their bodies, sauing the head, and the vpper lippe. They haue ten or twelue vvives apiece, common among themselues, specially brethers vvith brothers, and parents vvith their children, but the issue that commeth of them, is accounted his that first marrieth the mother vvhen she vvas a mayde, &c.

THeomantius the sonne of Lud, and nephevv to Cassibelane, succeaded in the Realme of Brytaine, and raigned quietly 23 yeeres, paying the tribute to the Romans vvhich Cassibelane had granted. 37.

OCtauius Augustus desiring to be like Iulius Cæsar his father (for so he alvvaies termed him) prepared an expedition into Brytaine, but being come forvvard into France, vnderstanding that the Pannonians lately subdued, rebelled, he turned his power against them, and altred his mind, as touching our Countrey. 34. Dion Cassius lib. 49.

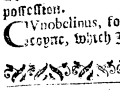
The fourth yeere after, he opened the Temple of Ianus at Rome, fully determining to inuade Brytaine, but vvhen he had marched on his vvay, as far as Ariminum, Ambassadors of Brytaine met him, humbly suing for peace and submitting themselues vnto his obedience and protection. Whereupon he staied againe to settle some troubles then raised in France. 25. Dion. 53. Goloxius.

The yeere following, because the covenants betweene him and the Brytaines could not be agreed vpon, he made promision for a third expedition into this Ile, but an actuall rebellion in Biscay and Sauoy withheld him then also. But shortly after, Ambassadors came from Brytaine to Rome, entreating for peace, svvearing fealty in the Temple of Mars, offering gifts in the Capitell to the gods of the Romanes: and submitted part of the Ile vnto Augustus. Now the Brytaines began first to pay tolls and tribute without grudging, for all vvares which they traded, which were for that time, Iuory bores, tongues, owches, & other trinkets of Amber and Glasse. And all here were so quiet, that 24. Strabo. lib.

one

one band of Souldiours and a few horsemen, were sufficient to keepe the Ile in the Romane possession.

CVnobelinus, for so is the inscription of his Coyne, vvhich I haue seene, and read, and therefore corruptly called Kimbeline, the sonne of Theomantius, raigned King in Brytaine thirty and fiue yeeres. In the 14th yeere of his raigne, Christ our Saviour was borne in Bethlehem of Iudea. Clau.



HEere, right Christian, and friendly Reader, for thy better vnderstanding of ancient Histories in generall, I haue thought good to insert these Histories following, which I haue painfully and carefully abstracted out of many graue and authentique Authours, which I haue cited at the end of euery seuerall History. I pray thee to accept them as kindly as I offer them freely, which if thou doe, and indifferently obserue may giue thee good knowledge of the time and chiefe persons from the vniuersall deluge, with the inuention and originall of many excellent and memorable matters vnto the time.

NOah, the beloued of almighty God, of whom the holy Scripture speaketh at large, entred into the Arke with his wife, his three sons and their wiues with paires of all manner of beasts, cattell and feathered fowle, in the yeere of the world 1656. and before the comming of our Saviour Iesus 2306. Noah.

SEm the son of Noah had 5 sonnes, viz. Aelam from whom are descended the Aelamites, who were chiefe amongst the Persians, the second was Assur, of whom came the Assyrians, his third son was Arphaxad, from whom issued the Arpharades, which were afterward called Caldeans, the fourth was called Lud, of whom the Lidyans take their name, the fift was Aram who gaue the name of the Aramites, whom the Gréekes call Syrians: Read Gen. 10. 11. chap. the first booke of Paralip. and Iosephus first booke. Sem.

CHam, the Sonne of Noah, who for his contempt, and neglect of reuerence vnto his Father in his drunkennesse, became accursed. He had 4 Sonnes, viz. Chus, of whom are descended the Aethiopians, whom he called Chusseans: the second was Mesraym, from whom are descended the Pethreans, otherwise called the Egyptians. Melrim in Hebrew signifieth Egypt: the third was Phut, of whom are descended the Libians, whom he calleth after his owne name Phuteans: the fourth was Chana, from whom are descended the Chananites. Cham.

IAphet the Sonne of Noah, had seuen Sonnes, viz. Gomer, from whom are issued the Gomerites, who are since by the Gréekes called Galates: the second was Magog, from whom the Magogs tooke their beginning, whome the Gréeks called Scithians: the third was Maday, of whom came the Medes: the fourth was Iauan of whom were descended the Ionians in Grece: the fifth was Tubal, he peopled those Regions anciently called Iberyes, now called Spaniards: the first was Mosoch, from whom came the Molchins, which shortly after were called Cappadocians, the last was Thiras, who called those at his owne race Direntians, from whom the Gréekes derive the name of Thracians: Read those Authours before named. Iapher. The originall of the Medeans.

SAle was the sonne of Arphaxad aforenamed: at 30 yéeres of age he begat Heber, and after that hee lined 403 yeeres, in which time he had diuers sonnes and daughters. From this Sale, are descended the Germanes, which came into Europe into Germany, neere Polonia, and another part of them went into Tartaria which is in Asia Maior. Sale.

HEber the sonne of Sale, at 34 yéeres of age begat Phaleg in the yeere of the world 1758. and before Christ, 2204. and after that, he lined 430 yeers, and from him are the Iews descended, and were called Hebrewes, after his name. And at the diuision or confusion of languages, the Hebrew tongue remained onely in his house. In his time, the Hebrew speech was called the humane, or mans speech, because all men spake the same. Heber had another sonne called Iecton, of whom Moses maketh mention. Heber.

PHaleg the son of Heber, at 30 yéeres of age, begat Reu in the yeere of the worlds creation 1788. and lived after that, 239. yéeres, his name by interpretation, signifieth diuision, for in his time, the earth was diuided into kingdomes and prouinces, viz. the kingdome of Scithia, &c. Read Saint Ierome, and Saint Augustine *de ciuitate Dei*, and the Chronicles of Paul, Constantine, Phrygion. Phaleg.

NEmrod Saturnus, the sonne of Chus, which was the sonne of Cham, sonne to Noah, he became mighty vpon the earth. He builded Babylon, Arach, Achad, and Chalanna, in the Land of Sennaar, about the yeere of the world 1788. and before the nativity of Iesus Christ, 2174. In his time was the confusion of tongues, at the building of the Tower of Babel, as Iosephus saith, alledging those words of one of the Sibels, vvl ilst all men spake one only Language in all places, some of them builded a very lofty and strong Tower, as if by that meanes, they ment to aspire the heauens, but the gods sent mighty windes and ouerthrew it, and gaue proper Languages vnto euery man, and was therefore called Babylon, which is to say, confusion: read Ge. 10. 11. Iosephus his 1 booke, Paulus, Constantine, Phrygion, and the Chronicle of Fuscius. Hee raigned 56 yeers: his son Belus Iupiter raigned after him 62 yeers, he enlarged the foundations of Babylon, he raigned in peace vntill towards the end of his raigne. About this time, Comerus Gallus taught the Italians to build Cities after the Scithian fashion from whence he came. Nemrod Saturnus. Belus Iupiter. Comerus Gallus.

Reu, alias Ninyas.

REu 63 Rhagau, ſonne to Phaleg, at 32 yeres of age, begat Sarug in the yere of the world 1820. and before Chriſt, 2142. and lived after that 207 yeres, and begat other ſons and daughters. In this time, diuers Princes were worſhipped of their Subiects. Hee builded many Temples, alſo foure kingdomes tooke their beginning: the firſt was the kingdome of Scithians, whereof ſomething is already ſpoken. Their King was called Tanais, from whom the River Tanais taketh the name: the ſecond was the kingdome of the Amazones, which were deſcended of the Scithians, and inhabited nere Tanais, and from thence, nere the River Termodone, and by that meanes, it hath been called Amazonius: the third was the kingdome of Egypt, the firſt that reigned there in, was called Sores, or as ſome write, Vexores: the fourth was the kingdome of Bohemia, which take that name of a Prince called Boemus, touching which kingdomes: Read Iuſtin. Euſeb. and the Chronicles of Bohemia. His ſon Sarug begat Nachor, in the yere of the world 1850. In the raigne of Sarug, began the great kingdome of Aſſyria: Read S. Auguſtine in his booke de ciuitate Dei.

The originall of Bohemia.

Ninus the firſt that taught Idolatry.

NInus the ſon of Belus, was the 3 King of Babylon, he ſet up his fathers Image, and proclaimed free pardon vnto all offenders, if they would fall down and worſhip it, which they did, and after that, many ſimple honeſt people in plaine deuotion did the like. This Ninus was the firſt that began this groſſe Idolatry: he began to raigne in the yere of the world 1906. and before Chriſt, 2056. hee builded the great City Niniue, and was ſlaine by the hand of Arioch. Niniue was afterward deſtroyd by Cyrus, King of Aſſyria. By his ill president, other Princes ſet up their fathers Images, and cauſed people to commit Idolatry vnto them, and the Diuell in his willingnes to procure man vnto wickednes, would oftentimes giue anſwer by thoſe Idols, and thereof came the name of Bel, Baal, Bel-phegor, and Belzebub: Read S. Ierome tom. 6. vpon Hoſee 2 chap. S. Auguſtine, Euſebius, Pliny, Berоſus and Paul, Conſtan. Phri.

The wall of this City of Niniue was in circuite three daies iourney.

Zoroaſtes,

ZOroaſtes, as ſome think, was the ſecond ſon of Noah, called Cham, he was the 1 King of the Bactrians, he was very ingenious, hee was the firſt that taught the Arte of Magicke, hee found out the Arts of the ſeuen liberall Sciences, he taught the courſe of heauen, and the rule of the Starres: ſome Philoſophographers write, that he was borne laughing, which is contrary to nature: he was ouercome in battell by Ninus: Read the foreſaid Authors.

Tuyſcon, alias Alcenas.

TUyſcon, whom the Prophet Moſes ſurnamed Alcenas, was the ſon of Gomer: from him are deſcended the Cymbrians, which left Italy, and dwelt on the North ſide of Germany towards that country which is now called Denmarke, nere Norway and Gotland. The Germanes which dwelt nere Polland were put amongſt the Germans, and deſcended of Tuyſcon, who taught them the knowledge of letters: he eſtabliſhed Lawes and Ordinances, and by him began the kingdome of Germany in the yeere of the world, 1509. and before Chriſt 2053. and when he had raigned 150 yeeres, he was numbred among the gods: Read Berоſus.

Samotes, otherwiſe called Dis, was the firſt King of the Gaules, about the time aforeſaid, ſo writes Berоſus in his 5 booke of antiquities, and Cæſar mentioneth the ſame in his 6 booke of his Commentaries. All the Gaules barnt themſelues to be deſcended from Dis: he was a very excellent, wiſe, and learned Prince, and verypprudent, and was therefore called Samotes. Alſo the Græckes haue beene called Samotes, becauſe by him they were reduced into a kingdome, as teſtifieth Diogenes Laertius, in his booke of the lines of Philoſophers.

Samotes, otherwiſe Dis the firſt King of Gaules.

NAchor, the ſon of Sarug, at 29 yeres of age, begat Thare, in the yere of the world, 1879. and before Chriſt, 2083. and after that, he had many ſonnes and daughters, and dyed at the age of 148 yeeres. In this time, beganne the kingdome of the Sicyonians, ouer whom raigned Aegialeus.

Nachor.

The Sicyonians.

THare the ſonne Nachor, liued 70 yeres, and begat Abram in the yer of the world 1949 and before the birth of Ieſus, 2013. he alſo begat Nachor and Aram, and hauing liued 205 yeres, died. Abram, which was afterward called Abraham, begat Iſmael and Iſaac. Nachor begat of Melcha 8 children, the firſt was Hus, which was the father of Iob. The 2 Buz. The 3 Camuel, father of the Aſſyrians. The 4 Cased. The 5 Aſau. The 6 Pheldas. The 7 Iedath. The 8 Bethuel, who begat Rebecca. This Thare lothed to dwel in the land of the Chaldeans, becauſe of their extreme groſſe Idolatries, chiefely they worſhipped the fire which was buried vnto their neighbor Nations, as alſo becauſe his ſon Aram dyed there, hee left Chaldea, and came vnto the City Charan in the Land of Meſopotamia, and there died. Read Geneſis and Iſidore.

Thare.

Abraham.

IAnus comming from the parts of Spaine into Italy, and perceiuing that Camalennus had made great waſte there, he abode there 3 yers, then he ordained certaine Colonies, and forced the hauockers to depart out of Italy, then hee gaue part of Italy vnto his daughter Helerna, and in the yeere of the world 1948. in the yere aforeſaid Chriſt 2014. he founded a City, and called it Ianiculum after his own name: he taught the Ianygenes, ſurnamed Razenites, the Arte of Phiſicke, Aſtronomy, Diuination, with ſundry obſeruations, and for the ſame, the people did him great diuine reuerence. Hee was afterwards reputed as a god, and pictured with two faces, looking forward and backward: ſome ſay the moneth January tooke that name of him: Read Berоſus in his 5 booke of antiquities.

Ianus.

The hauors kern and ſuch aſſoyl the countrey Ianiculum.

VEſta, the wife of Ianus, inſtituted in a Temple fire Virgins, who were called veſtals, having among other ceremonies erpreſſe charge to keepe continuall fire: the number of theſe Veſtals were increaſed from fire to ten, and were bound by their order to remaine ſo thirty yeeres, and at thirty yeeres end, they might marry if they pleaſed, but if within that 30 yers ſpace any of them were found corrupt, or vncleane, ſhee was burped quicke: Read

Veſta.

The originall of veſtalls.

Saint

Saint Auguſtine de Ciuitate Dei, 4 booke, and 10 Chap. Titus Liuius, booke 1 Saluſt and Ouid. This inſtitution of Veſtalls was ordained by the ſaid Veſta, in the yeere of the world, 1963. and before Chriſt, 1999.

Denis.

DEnis the ſonne of Hamon tooke armes and driuen Camalennus with his wife Rhea out of his fathers kingdome, yet notwithſtanding he retained with him their ſonne Oſiris, and adopted him for his owne, but impoſed another name vpon him, that is to ſay, Hamon Iupiter, and gaue him all the kingdome of Egypt: this was done in the yeere of the world, 1948: Read Berоſus 5 booke.

Palladon, or Minerua, or Pallas.

PAlladon the Virgin, whom the Græckes call Minerua, was in her infancy forſaken and left neere to the Lake Tryton, and then Denis Iupiter aboue written adopted her for his daughter: thee taught the Libians all kinde of warre, as ſaith Berоſus: ſhe was afterwards called Pallas: thee was the firſt that found out the making of oyle, and preſently after, the vſe of it, thee taught them to number and keepe reckoning, and to make armor of yron, and many are of opinion, that ſhe found out the inuention and vſe of wooll, how to picke it, card it, to ſpin with a Diſtaffe, to weaue and dye cloth, ſhe was of admirable reuerence amongſt maydens, for they held her as a goddeſſe.

Oſiris.

OSiris, Sonne to Camalennus and Rhea aforeſaid, raigned King ouer the Egyptians, 35 yeeres. he taught the people of his country many Artes, the firſt whereof was Tillage, to Plow, Sow, and Reape, with all kinde of husbandry, and from thence by little and little, inuent into other parts of the world: by meanes of his excellent gifts, he was Lord of all, except Babylon.

Juno.

ISis Iuno the Egyptian, was daughter to Camalennus and Rhea, Sister and wife to Oſiris, ſhe for her excellent gifts, was greatly renowned amongſt the Egyptians: if any man make doubt thereof, let him read Diodorus, who in his firſt and ſecond booke, reports wonders of her. She was borne in the yeere of the world, 1958. Read the Chronicles and ſupputations of Paul, Conſtantine, Phrigion, and the Chronicles of Funcius.

Semyramis

SEmyramis, whom ſome ſay obtained of her husband Nynus three dayes, and others ſay, ſix daies, abſolute gouernment both of him and the State, and hauing bound both the King and the Nobility by oath to obey her behests in all things, ſhe firſt practiſed treaſon and tyranny vpon Ninus her husband, whom ſhee committed to priſon, where he periſhed, after whoſe death, ſhe raigned Queene of a great part of Aſſyria and Aſia, in the yeere of the world 1958. and before Chriſt, 2004. ſuch was her ambition to raigne, that ſhe went in mans apparell, to the end the people ſhould take her for the Sonne of Ninus deceaſed, ſhe builded Babylon more ſumptuouſly then it was before, and fortified it with ſtronger walls and ditches, and through much warre ſhe conquered Egypt and Ethiopia with other Regions, and enlarged her kingdome greatly. When ſhe made warre in India, thee had in her campe thirty hundred thouſand men of warre that ſerued on foote, fiue hundred thouſand horſemen, an hundred thouſand chariots, with as many Camels, and their riders which carryed ſwords foure cubits long. And vpon the Sea ſhe had 2000 Ships: thus ſhe raigned 42 yeres and was ſlaine by her owne Sonne, becauſe ſhe practiſed to haue drawne him vnto inceſtuous luſt with her: he was a faire young man, and ſhe couueted carnall copulation with him.

Ninias, otherwiſe called Zameis Ninias, was ſonne to Ninus and Semyramis, he was the fifth King of Aſſyria, he raigned 38 yeres, hee builded Temples, and liued peacefully vntill the end of his raigne: the ſacred Scriptures call him Amraphel: he began his raigne in the yere of the world 2000: Read Geneſis, Diodorus, Caſidore, Euſebius, and Berоſus.

Ninias.

ABraham, the ſonne of Thare, and the beloued of God, came into Chanaan, in the yeere of the world, 2024. and before Chriſt, 1938. Sara the daughter of Aran was wife to Abraham. Iſmael the ſonne of Abraham and Agar was borne in the yere of the world, 2036.

Iſaac the ſonne of Abraham and Sara was offered to be ſacrificed in the yere of the world, 2073. and before Chriſt, 1889. Ioſeph the ſonne of Iacob and Rachel, whom his brethren ſold into Egypt, became a great ruler ouer Pharaos houſe, and all Egypt, in the yere of the world 2230: Read Geneſis and Ioſephus 2 booke, Chap. 2. 5. vntill the 9.

Abraham.

PRometheus Sonne to Iapetus, was a man of great knowledge, and for the ſame held in high eſtimation in Archadia, he taught the people good gouernment, hee was the firſt that taught the Art of painting.

The inuention of painting.

ATlas the brother of Prometheus was likewiſe a very learned and ſkilfull man in the courſe of the planets and of conſtellations, with the influences and effects of the Sunne and Mone, he was the firſt that taught the Gretians Aſtrology, and thereupon their Poets fained that he ſupported heauen with his ſtrength: of him the great Mount Atlas taketh the name, and the adioyning Sea called the Atlanticke Sea.

Atlas.

ABout this time alſo of the world 2263. and before Chriſt 1699 Altadas was the 12 King of Aſſyria. And Galatas raigned ouer the Gaules. And Vandalus raigned ouer the Sarmates, which are Germaines inhabiting nere Polonia. And Hiſpanus, the ſon of Hiſpalis, raigned in Spaine, of whom that kingdom beareth the name: Read Herodotus, Plutarch, Pliny, Caſcio, and Berоſus.

The originall of Spaine.

The originall of the Vandals.

CEcrops Diphies the firſt king of the Athenians, liued in the time of Moſes: hee builded Athens, which at firſt was called Cecropia in the yere of the world 2408. and before the Nativity of Chriſt, 1554. Hee was the firſt that called vpon the name of Iupiter, and ordained the Spundiazes in the land of Grece. He deuiſed the making of Altars for the laying on of beaſts for burnt ſacrifice, ſ was alſo the firſt that began the coniopning together of man and woman in marriage, in the foreſaid countrey: Read S. Auguſtine de Ciuitate Dei, 1 8book, 8 chap. Iuſtin 2 booke, and Euſebius in the preface of his Chron-

Cecrops Diphies.

Athens founded.

Deucalion. DEucalion the ſonne of Prometheus, began to raigne in Greece in the yere of the world, 2428. and before the Nativity of Jeſus 1514. he inhabited neere Mount Parnaſſus, and about 3 yeres after, there hapned a great deluge, which walted a great part of Greece, which when Deucalion had beheld the apparant danger thereof, he with Pirrha his wife, and his proper family, take ſhipping and ſail'd unto the hill of Parnaſſus, and as many of his ſubiects as could get ſhipping came alſo for refuge unto that mount, unto whom the King gaue conuenable place to dwell vpon: Read Beroſus.

IN this time Iaſius Ianigena raigned in Italy, whoſe Nuptials were aſſiſted by 16 from Egypt.

The inuention of dancing by meaſure. CVretes & Coribantus, builded Gnoſſen, and vſed to leape in their armour, they inuented the dancing by meaſure: Read Euſebius.

AScatades was the 18 King of Babylon, hee ſubdued all Syria, and ioyned it vnto his kingdome.

Moſes. MOſes by the cõmandement of God, led the Children of Iſrael out of Egypt from their captiuity in the yere of the world, 2453. and before the birth of Chriſt 1509. Amongſt the Hebrewes he was of God the moſt beloued, and of all men he was the moſt milde & patient, & of all the Prophets, he was the moſt excellent Hiſtoriographer: his brother Aaron was a vertuous man and renowned amongſt the Hebrewes: he was greatly adorned with eloquence, hee was made high Prieſt in the yer of the world 2455. Maria ſiſter vnto Moſes and Aaron, died a little before her brother Aaron: Read Exod. Leuit. Numb. Deutero. and Ioſephus.

Aaron.

Joſhua. IOſhua, the Sonne of Nun, ſucceded Moſes in the yeere of the world, 1493. and before the comming of Chriſt, 1496: Read thoſe Authors aforenamed.

Perſeus. PErſeus, the ſonne of Iupiter and Danaë ſlew Meduſa one of the Gorgons, in the yeere of the world, 2497. and before Chriſt, 1465. and vpon good deliberation, he left Greece, and tranſported himſelfe into the Country of Aſſa, where he endured great trauell and labour, and was conſtrained to hold continual fight with the rude and barbarous inhabitants of that Land, but by his prudence, proweſſe, policy and paines, he obtained dominion ouer them, and they ſubmitted themſelues vnto his gouernment, and were called Perſians, after his name vnto this day.

The original of Perſia.

Andromeda. Andromeda, the daughter of Cepheus, King of the Aethiopians, bore of his wife Caſſiope, by reaſon of her mothers pride and hatred, was by the Nymphes bound vnto a rocke, to the end ſhe ſhould be deuoured of a ſea-monſter, but Andromeda was deliuered by Perſeus, and then he take her to his wife: after that, hee returned into his country of Greece vnto the City of Argos, where hee ſlew his Grandfather, for an old grudge, becauſe whē he was an infant, his grandfather cauſed him and his mother Danaë to be left at ſea in a careleſſe and deſperate aduenture, and there he raigned alone after the ſlaughter of his grandſire: Read Oroſius 1 booke, 11 chap. Diodorus Sici. 4 booke, Euripides and Propertius.

PHoenix, ſonne to Agenor, came with his brother Cadmus from Thebes in Egypt into Syria in the yere of the world 2506. and before the birth of Chriſt, 1456. he raigned ouer Tyre and Sydon: of this Phoenix the Country of Phoenicia taketh the name: he found out the inuention of certaine Letters, which he taught his ſubiects the Phenicians, and for want of other ink, he taught them the dye of vermilion, but the queſtion is, whether it was naturall or artificiall vermillion. Theſe Phenicians obtained ſome perfection in hunting, fiſhing and fowling, they alſo found out the vſe of Vyon, and the making of all ſorts of Toles. In this countrey are ſituate the two great mounts or hils, viz. Libanus and Carmell: his brother Cadmus hauing forſaken him, and returned backe into his countrey of Greece, and ſeated himſelfe neere the goodly fountaine called Hipporrena, being vered in minde, began to ſtudy and deuiſe certaine characters wherewith hee might write to expreſſe his mind: at length, when hee had well laboured his wits, hee found out foure and twenty, and ſome ſay but ſixeene, the which hee brought to great dexterity and perfection, and being a man of good vnderſtanding, hee taught the Greekes a ready method in writing, which was a happy thing for them, for that they were a very rude and ignorant people: Read Iſidor, Mantuan and the ſupplement of Chron.

Phoenix. Phenicia. Inuention of Letters.

COrax the 16 King of the Sycionians raigned about this time, and Romus raigned ouer the Celtes: Read Manethon.

Corax. Romus.

ABout this time alſo Aſterius raigned in Crete, and the goodly Temple of Delphos was burned by Philegias: read the foregnamed Authors. Dionyſius ſurnamed Liber-pater, alſo Bacchus, hee was the ſonne of Iupiter and Semele, the Greekes called him the god of drunkennes, becauſe he taught the planting of vines. Some called him Dionyſius, becauſe of the place where he was nurſed: ſome called him Liber, becauſe he fought for the freedome of his country, or as ſome ſuppoſe, of the operation of Wine which maketh a free ſpirit, & cauſeth the tongue to vtter words freely: ſome called him Bacchus, becauſe of the great number of ſhameleſſe drunken Bacchanalian women, which followed him with clamours and outcries, whom he taught to gather fruites, and to preſſe them, whereof they made drinke, and were daily drunke: he inuented the making of Ale, for ſuch places as would beare no Grapes: hee was the firſt in Greece that taught them military diſcipline: he aſſembled men and women with him vnto battell, with whom he almoſt compaſſed the world: he executed great iuſtice vpon malefactors: hee made warre vpon the Indians in the yeere of the world, 2508. and before Chriſt, 1454. hee take the Amazones to his ayd, he builded many Cities, and repaired that which Ninus builded, called Niſibis, and peopled it with 5000. men. There was another Dionyſius, which was elder then this Bacchus, he was the ſon of Iupiter and Proſerpina, whom ſome called Sebaſis, and was much more renowned amongſt the Greeks then the other, becauſe they attribute vnto him the

The Temple of Delphos burned. Dionyſius, & Liber, Bacchus. The making of Ale.

the eminent deeds of the latter, in the ſame manner as they did by their Hercules, yet he was the firſt that taught them the taming of the Ore, to carry the yoke, and plow the earth: he made war vpon the rude Indians who eate the barkes of trees with raw fleſh, he cauſed them to dwel in cities and taught them ciuility, and how to ſow and reape corne: he raigned 52. yeres ouer them: Read Diodorus 3. and 5. booke.

Pelops was a very mighty Prince. PElops the ſon of Tantalus, the mighty King of Phrygia, being greatly enamoured with Hippodamia, required her in marriage, but was reiected by her father Enomaus King of Piſa, which was a city in Elis neere Arcadia, the inhabitants whereof, at their returne from the wars of Troy, builded a city of the ſame name in Italy, whereupon thoſe Kings warred one againſt another, and the virgin kept ſo cloſe, as Pelops could not obtaine his deſire by any meanes, though their loue either to other was equall, vntill the yere of the world 2617. By treaſon of Myrtilus, chariot-driuer vnto Enomaus, he got her into his owne poſſeſſion, by whom he had 2. ſonnes, that is to ſay, Atreus and Thieſtes: he raigned triumphantly 52. yeres, he ſubiugated vnto himſelfe and his heyres the Prouince of Peloponeſus, of whom ſome write, it take that name, and at this preſent ſome call it Morea, which is in manner an Iland, and is called of the Greeks Cherſoneſus. It was foretold vnto Enomaus, father vnto Hippodamia, that he ſhould be ſlaine when his daughter was married, whereupon he made a chariot and furniſhed it with horſes of wonderous ſwiftnes, and proclaimed that if any could runne ſwifter than his chariot, he ſhould haue his daughter Hippodamia in marriage, but if any attempted to outrunne the chariot and failed, then they ſhould be put to death: vpon hope of winning which princely prize, there were 30. grand perſonages ouerthrowne: but Mirtilus being corrupted by Pelops, in ſtead of oyle, put ware into the axell tree of the chariot, and as hee driuen the chariot as hee was accuſtomed, the chariot fell and brake, in which fall, Enomaus was ſlaine, and Mirtilus was caſt into the Sea by Pelops, and ſo Pelops obtained his hearts deſire.

Amphion. AMphion the Son of Iupiter and Antyope, raigned in Thebes a city of Boetia, in the land of Greece in the yere of the world 2636. and before the Natiuity of our Saniour 1326. he was ſo excellent in Muſicke, that ſome ſayd, he had the lute of Mercury, vpon whom the Poets faine, that wirh his melody he drew ſtones to build Thebes, but Euſebius in his Chronicle expounds that, ſaying his auditory or hearers were very rude, and as dull as ſtones, which agreeth with the words of Horace in his Art of Poeſie, ſaying that Amphion was vertuous, wiſe, and eloquent, and that by his prudencie and ſweete oratory, hee brought ſauage people vnto ciuility, and taught the ignorant knowledge, making them dwell together in Cities conſonable vnto humane Lawes. Palephatus writes, that Amphion by meanes of his ſweete inſtrument and melodious harmony, gained ſo much money as payd for the building of the wals of Thebes. Niobe, the daughter of Tantalus, ſiſter to Pelops, and wife to Amphion, who bare him 7 ſons, and as many daughters of ſingular beauty, wherof ſhe was extremely proud, and preferred her ſelfe as equall with the goddeſſe Latona; for which preſumption, the Pacts ſaine, ſhe was turned into a ſtone. Palephatus ſaith, that this fable tooke originall from the ſlaughter of her 14 children by Apollo, vpon whoſe Sepulchre ſhe cauſed her picture of ſtone to be placed, being ſo excellently carued, that they ſeemed to lament and weepe for her childrens vntimely death, and ſaith alſo, that he himſelfe path ſeene her Image of ſtone.

Europa. EVropa, was daughter to Agenor king of Phenicia: the Poets faine that ſhe was rauiſhed, and tranſported into Crete by Iupiter, who tranſformed himſelfe into the likeneſſe of a Bull, of foretold of whom he begat Minos Rhadamantus, and Sarpedon: read Diodorus Sicilian his 5 booke, and Ouid his 2 booke of Metamorphoſis. Palephatus doth interpret this fable to be a certaine man of Crete or Candy, whoſe name was Taurus, which ſome ſay the is to ſay, a Bull, who led away the ſaid Europa, and rauiſhed her: ſome write that of this mayde Europa, the third part of the world took the name of Europe, although Herodotus in his 4 booke is of contrary opinion, ſaying there is no reaſon can ſay certainely from whence that third part of the world took that name. Her ſon Minos was the firſt Lord of the Iles of Cicklads, which are 54 in number. Iupiter Aſterius was his father. he ſent his letters into the Cariens from the Iſlands, and planted there his owne ſubiects, and then ordained Princes and gouernors in the yeere of the world 2710. and before the birth of our Saniour 1252. as Read Thucidides in the preface of his Hiſtory.

Hercules. Niobe. Europa. Minos. Carmenta: ſome ſay that ſhe was the firſt that taught the Letters to write. Dunis Helicanis in his booke: Some ſay that the Arcadians carried the firſt Alphabet into Italy, but Titus Liuius ſaith, that in Euander, Ennius vnder

which ſpeech, Euander being then a fugitiue from Peloponeſus, called his country more by reuerence then ſtrength, being a man of wondrous skill in letters, which then were much eſteemed, becauſe the people were all vnlearned. Euander flew his father; and flying from Arcadia into Italy, from thence he expulſed the Aborigenes, and dwelt in their habitations, and in the yeere of the world 1716. he builded a Caſtle vpon a mount in the midſt of Rome, and called it Palantium, after the name of his great Grandfather. Read Denis of Halicarnis and others.

for thee hated Hercules as being begotten of an other woman: he came from Spaine into Italy, 55 yeeres before Æneas: he slew Cacus, he gaue lawes vnto the Italians, then tooke Troy, and slew Laomedon the King, because hee brake promise with him, and placed Priam his Son in his stead. In the end his wife Deianira daughter to Oenius King of Calydon, sent himan enenomed shirt, bathed in the blood of Nessus, thinking that this blood would withdraw him from the loue of other women, as Nessus had falsely perswaded her, but when she vnderstood what euill it had brought vnto her husband, she hanged her selfe: whilest he yet liued, Hercules endured great agony with that shirt which claue fast vnto his skinne, and seeing no apparent remedy in a fury cast himselfe into a great fire.

Laomedon was father vnto Priam, who reedified Troy in such sort, that it surpassed all other Cities of that time, yet in his time it was wearily vexed by the Grekes.

Priam and the facke of Troy.

PRiam, the sonne of Laomedon, when his Father was slaine, and the City taken by Hercules in assault, was then constituted King by the said Hercules: who also restored vnto him all his kingdome as to a man of worth and vertue: Read Diodorus his fifth booke. There are others which say that Priam was led captiue into Greece, and from thence redeemed from Hercules, of which ransome or redemption, hee toke the name of Priam, and was thereupon so called. Hee had fiftie sonnes, whereof by his wife hee had 17. whereof the most renowned were Hector, Paris, Diophebus, Helenus, Polites and Polidorus. When the Citty of Troy was destroyed by the Grecians, then was aged Priam kild by young Pyrrhus sonne to Achilles neere to the Altar of Iupiter, where his sonne, Polites was but newly slaine: Read Dictis of Candy. Priam began his raigne in Troy, in the yeere of the world, 2725. and before the incarnation of our Lord and Saviour Christ, 1237. Priam married Hecuba, daughter to Cisseus King of Thrace. Whilest she was with child of Paris, she dreamed that shee brought forth a flaming Torch that burned the country: Read Virgil his 10 booke of Eneyds, and Ouid his 13 booke of Metamorphosis.

Theseus,

THeseus sonne to Ægeus king of Athens, began his raigne in the yeere of the world, 2730. hee followed the theevish steps of Hercules, he was possessed with ambition, he had ships at Sea, he slew Creon the tyrant, and the great Bull which spoyled the people of Attica, hee iorned with Hercules against the Amazones, where hee did great exploits, and tooke their Queene Hippolita prisoner.

Minotaurus.

PAsiphae the wife of Minos, whilest her husband was sicke lay with a youth, whole name was Taurus, by whom shee had a sonne and called his name Minotaurus, which was both the name of his reputed Father, and of him that begat him, but so sone as Minos vnderstood for certaine that hee was a bastard, hee chased and persued after him, and in the end sent Theseus against him, who slew him with the sword, which Ariadne gaue him, of whom the Poets faine wondrous strange things, that her was halfe a man and halfe an Ore, and that by wishin the labyrinth, which Dedalus made, deuouring of all people that came vnto him: read Virgil 6. booke: Ouids Epistles and Palephat.

Minotaure slaine.

Amazones.

MArtheisia, alias Marpesia and Lampedon, alias, Lampeto, queenes of the Amazones, began their raigne in the yeere of the world 2734. and before the Nativity of our Saviour 1228. they diuided their armie into two parts, the one to second the other, being rich and fortunate. And to the end no honor nor glory should faple them in their designes, nor crosse their enterprizes, they haunted and diuulged themselues to be the children of god Mars, and hauing subdued a great part of Europe, took diuers Cities and holds in Asia, where they builded Ephesus and many other Cities. Whilest the one part of their army went a foraging and bathaling, the other part stayed with Martheisia to safegard the Countrey of Asia, but Martheisia with her squadrons was ouerthrowne and surprized by a barbarous people. Her daughter Orithya succeeded her: and as concerning the originall of Amazones I will onely giue a touch in a word: they are descended of the Scythians, and diuelt in Cappadocia neere the River Themadone, where their husbands were accustomed to make excursions vpon their bordering neighbours, and at last were all prsented and slaine by secret Ambuscadoes of their enemies. Their wiues being become widdows, calling to mind their incestuall griefe for their husbands, whilest they were married, also they hourely feared their continuall slaughter by the chances of war, and the desperate extremity wherein they were all left being either widdows, or vphants, remaining as a pray to their bowed enemies, with one consent toke heart of grace, entred into armes, ordered their common-wealth of themselues, accounted marriage to be seruitude, and hauing made peace with their neighbours, setled themselues to dwell, by them, and for continuance of their race, they appointed times and seasons of amozous meetings with their manly neighbours: and when they brought forth children, they either openly slew all the males, or very secretly sent them vnto their Fathers, and their daughters were trained vp to warres, and were taught to shoote in Bowes, to which purpose, their right Dugge was either burnt, or cut off. and thers of were called Amazones. Thalestris was the last Queene of Amazones, who liued in the time of Alexander the great, and hearing of his great valour and conquest, was wonderfull desirous to haue issue by him, vpon hope whereof she came vnto him, being accompanied with 300 or 400 women, whom she commanded to stay aloofe, and not to stirre, and so soone as she espyed the King, and that her was alighted off his horse, she boldly went vnto him, and hauing saluted him, deliuered the cause of her voyage. Alexander kept company with her 13 daies: then she returned into her own kingdom, and dyed very shortly after. With her death that kingdome endeo: Read Quintus Curtius 6 booke.

Ephesus builded.

Originall of Amazones.

Paris

PAris, otherwise called Alexander, was sonne to Priamus and Hecuba. His father commanded that he should be throwne away so sone as he was borne, because his mother, after she was conceiued, dreamed that she was deliuered of a terrible flame of fire, pet neuerthelelle, his mother, in her motherly affection, caused him to be kept, and brought vp very secretly amongst Shepheards vpon mount Ida. In his youth, he loued the Nymph Æenna, by whom he had two sonnes, and after that he became knowne and receiued of his parents, then he was sent Ambassador into Greece, where he rauished Helena the daughter of Iupiter and Leda, in the yeere of the world, 2768. and before the Nativity of our Sauiour 1194. whereupon began the sharpe and bloody wars betwixt the Grekes and the Troians, which continued 10 yeeres, in which time liued Hector, Achilles, Aiax, Vlisses, and many other famous warriors on either side, of whom many haue written at large, as you may read.

Vlisses was greatly possessed with cowardize and tealousie of his fatre young wife Penelope: she was the daughter of Icarius and Peribea. Lycophron strongly affirmeth that Penelopes chastity was neither so, nor so as some haue written, being by Ouanton, weake, and simple.

Nauplius.

NAuplius, King of the Ile of Euboea, which is now called Negrepont, was Father to Palamedes, who to be reuenged vpon the treacherous practises of his Sonnes death, (for he perished though the false accusation of Vlisses) this Nauplius procured the Ladies of Greece to practise adultery, whilst their husbands were at the Troian warres, imagining thereby that at their returne, and in their fury they would haue slaine them all, one with another: he also went to mount Capharens at the very instant, when he perceiued the Grecians were coming home, and there placed many burning Torches, which the most part of the Grecians well seeing in the night time, bent their courses directly to those fires and lights, supposing they had beene there placed for their special good, and that they would haue guided them the best and neerest way, which caused them to perish amongst the rocks, cliffs, and sands of the Sea, and then hee cast himselfe into the Sea for very madnesse, when hee vnderstood for truth, that Vlisses and Diomedes were escaped, whose destruction a boue all others he most desired: Read Homer, Virgil, Ouid, and many others.

Reuenge is a waiting Serpent.

After this, Vlisses was murthered by his son Telegonus, which he had by Circes. God did many times vse the seuerity of the Grecians which they vsed towards the Troians, for within few yeeres after, their chiefe Princes not only perished by vntimely death, but the whole nation also became vassals and tributaries vnto the Persians whom they most hated. Palamedes. Inuention of many things.

PAlamedes, sonne to the forenamed Nauplius, as some write inuented 4 Greek letters, and the well ordering of a Campe, and the giuing of watch-words, the keeping of Centinels, and watches, which hee tooke by example of Cranes: he also inuented the casting of account with Counters, and son say he deuised the playing at Tables, Chesse, and Dice, weights and measures, he also proportioned the yeere by the course of the Sunne, and the moneths by the course of the Moone, and in the prime of his wit and strength, hee was most wrongfully accused by Vlisses, and was stoned to death in the Camp: some write that Homer for mere envy tore and burned all his Posies. Read the Authors last named, and Celius Rodiginus 20 book 27 chap. and 7 book 31 chap. and his 20 booke 30 Chapter, Volcatius 18 booke, Pliny 7 booke, and 56 Chapter. The cause why Vlisses practised his death, was for that Palamedes being both wise, learned, politique and valiant, discouered the subtill shifts, and faint cowardize of Vlisses, and manifested the same vnto the whole Campe, saying, Vlisses could deuise many stratagems, but durst not attempt in his own person to put any one in execution: he also discouered and made knowne the cowardize of Achilles, and of his disguising himselfe in womans apparell, and so kept company with the daughters of King Licomedes: all which he did by the aduise of his mother, who caused him also to hide himselfe, because hee should not goe to the Troiane warres, for that it was foretold her, that her son Achilles should perish in the wars of Troy: and when shee saw that all her drifts were discouered and knowne, shee sent him away, being accompanyed with Vlisses, who departed from Ithaca with 40 small ships vnto the warres of Troy, in the yeere of the world 2773. and before the birth of our Sauiour 1189.

Ænæas accoping to diuerse Authors.

AEneas was sonne to Anchises and Venus, of the race of Pryam: Virgil saith he was vertuous, humane and warlike, hee relieued his father, and carryed him vpon his backe to escape the fire of Troy, and being sore amazed, and in a violent throng, he lost Creusa his wife: then he sayled into Italy, where hee ouercame Turnus in battell, and then tooke to wife Lauynia, daughter to King Latynus: shee was first promised to Turnus, then hee builded a City, and called it Lauinium after his wiues name, in the yeere of the world 2788. and before the birth of our Sauiour Jesus Christ, 1104. And concerning this Æneas and the renowned Queene Dido, her entertaining and lustfull pleasures with him, many Historyes hold it very fabulous; and touching his death, I read not any thing, for certainely the Historyes say, that after hee had raigned 3 yeeres ouer the Latines, hee had a very great battell against the Rutilians and Hetrucians, which was 3 yeeres after the death of his father in Law Latinus, and great slaughter fell on both sides, and that Æneas could not be found amongst the dead: this was about seuen yeeres after the destruction of Troy: Read Denis Helicarn, and Titus Liuius, in both their first bookes. Turnus King of the Rutilians, cousin germaine to the King of Latines, was much grieued that Æneas a stranger was so preferred, and thereupon in great rage, made fierce wars vpon them both, but in the end he was banquished by Æneas in single combate, man to man. Read Virgil his 12 booke of his Æneyds.

Iepthe.

IEpthe was Iudge of Israel in the yeere of the world 2787. and the same yeere dyed Latinus, who at first was conquered by Æneas, and afterwards by kind and honorable peace, became his most faithfull friend, and gaue him Lauinia his daughter in marriage, for very griefe whereof, her mother Amata hanged her selfe. Lauinia was the second wife to Æneas, he built a City after her owne name, called Lauinium, a rich and flourishing City. Æneas dyed, and left her with childe of Silvius Posthumus the third King of

of Latines, and was ſo called, becauſe hee was borne after his fathers death.

Brute.

BRutus, the Sonne of Silnius, drawe out the great tyrannous wild men out of their habitation, and called the ſame Iland Brytania, after his owne name, which before was called Albion. This Brutus had three ſonnes, who conſtituted their Kingdoms, the firſt was Locrus, who called his Countrey and Kingdome Locria, wherein London ſtandeth, the ſecond was Camber, who named his Countrie Cambria, and ſince that, called Wallia and Liſa, whom ſome call Galles, the third was Albanactus, who named his Country Albania, which is ſince called Scotland. The eldeſt continued his other brethren, and became ſole Lord of all England. This Brutus raigned about 50 yeres after the deſtruction of Troy, viz. in the yere of the world 2822. and before the birth of our Saviour Jeſus Chriſt 1130. Read Raphael Volateran, his 3 booke of Geography of the people and Kings of England. Ignona, the daughter of Pandraſus, King of Leo-grece, was wife to this Brutus, by whom he had thoſe three ſonnes: Read the Chronicle of Chronicles, and the Supplement of Chronicles the fourth booke.

Leo-greece.

Homer.

HOmer, the moſt renowned Greek Poet, flouriſhed about the yeere of the world, 2838. and before the birth of Jeſus Chriſt, 1124. as ſaith Caſſiodore. Cornelius Nepos ſaith, hee lived in the yere of the world, 3501. and before the building of Rome, 160 yeeres. Plutarch with others write, that hee lived in the time of the Troiane warres, wherof he wrote 24 bookes. And ſome ſay, he lived 100 or 150 yeres after. He was borne neere the flood Meleſes, and therof was called Meleſigenes: he lived many yeres, and when he waxed blind, he was called Homer. His kinſman Heſiodus, a famous Poet, was his ancient, and yet lived in his time. This Heſiodus was borne in Aſera, a village of Boetia: he was the firſt that wrote of husbandry in verſe, whom Virgil imitateth in his Georgicks as well as her doth Homers bookes.

Heſiodus.

Virgil.

VIrgil was borne in a Towne nar Mantua, in the yere of the world, 3895. and before the birth of our Saviour Jeſus, fifty and ſeven yeres: ſome ſay that he erred not when he was borne, but rather ſtrilde, and looked pleaſant: he was alſo called Parthenias, which is to ſay, a virgin, becauſe of his ſtrict and amiable lookes: he was highly fauoured of Auguſtus, who denied him nothing, and albeit he was no way covetous, yet his eſtate was better then an hundred thouſand marks: hee dyed at 52 yeeres of age, his field of Poeſie was his beſt helpe. In his time lived Mecenas of the race of the Kings of Tuſcania: in his youth he wrote many Poeſies, and was all his life time the rewarder and refuge of Poets, and Orators, for whichmerit, his name is famous to this day. Virgil wrote his owne Epitaph before hee dyed, to this effect. I was borne at Mantua, dyed in Calabria, and buried at Naples. I ſang paſtorals, fields, and Kings: Read Donatus, and Bucleus [illegible] his third booke.

Mecenas.

SAmuel was Judge ouer Iſrael, in the yere of the world, 2878. and before Chriſt 1084. Saul the firſt King of Iſrael began his raigne in the yere of the world 2889. and before Chriſt, 1073. King David began his raigne in the yere of the world, 2891. and Salomon begunne in the yere of the world 2931. and before Chriſt 1031. Achab raigned in Iſrael in the yeere of the world 3027. and before Chriſt 935. in his dayes lived the great Prophets Eliah, and Eliſeus.

David.

Salomon.

SYcheus, alias Sicharbas, was huſband unto Dido, hee was high Preeſt unto Hercules, hee had much treaſure, but durſt not truſt it either in cheſts or chambers, but for his moſt ſuppoſed ſafety, he bid it in the earth, and although his people knew not directly where it was layd, yet the generall fame thereof ſo enflamed Pigmalion, with a couetous deſire thereof, that he traytorouſly ſlew Sycheus, alias Sicharbas, as he was offering ſacrifice. This Pigmalion, was brother unto Dido, and King of Tyre, and raigned 40 yeres, and in the 7 yeere of his raigne, as ſaith Joſephus, Dido builded Carthage. Read Virgil in his booke of Aeneids, and Juſtinius, his 18 booke. Dido was daughter unto Belus, King of Phenicia, otherwiſe called Tyre, her huſband was ſlaine by Pigmalion, as he was ſecretly ſaying with his treaſure into Affrica, and with that money, Dido bought as much ground, as ſhee could compaſſe with the lachets, or thinne cuttings of a Bull hide, which contained two and twenty furlongs, and is about 3 Engliſh miles, or 2 and a halfe, and therein ſhe builded the City of Carthage. This Carthage was founded in the yere of the world, 3076. and before the incarnation of our Saviour Chriſt, 886. and after the building of the Temple of Salomon, as ſaith Joſephus, 143. yeeres in his 1 booke againſt Apyan. Her chaſtity was very great, notwithſtanding Virgil and Ouid, and is commended by Boccace, and Antonius, for the choſe rather to haue dyed, then to haue maryed with King Hiarbas. And between the time of the Troian Aeneas, and this Dido, according to diuers hiſtories, there is aboue 200 yeeres difference, her proper name was Eliſa, and was ſurnamed Dido, which is to ſay, manly, or manlinde, becauſe of her noble manly Acts. Shee was honored and adored as a goddeſſe. Temples and Altars were erected unto her name and honour: Read Juſtin, in his 18 booke, and Boccace, 2 booke of Ladies of renowme.

Dido, accompted to be Queene Iuno.

ILcurgus the famous Lawmaker of the Lacedemonians, lived in the time of Aremulus King of the Latines, in the yeere of the world, 3290.

Ilcurgus, Rome founded.

REmus and Romulus, twins, borne of Rhea Ilya, a votary unto the goddeſſe Veſta: their mother ſaid, they were begotten of Mars: ſo ſoone as they were borne, they were layd upon the banke of the River Tyber, and it chanced that Fauſtulus found them, and carried them to

Her buckle forced her to become a Veſtall, hoping thereby ſhee ſhould haue no iſſue, leſt he might be heire to her father inheritance.

be very carefully brought vp, and being growne to mens eſtate, they aſſembled great numbers of Shepheards, then entred into armes and ſlew their great buckle Amulius. Romulus ſlew his brother to raigne King alone. but firſt they encreaſed their kingdome by ſubduing diuers their neighbour Princes: they builded a City in the place where they were firſt foſtered, which is called Rome to this day, and Romulus began his raigne in the yere of the world, 3212. and before the incarnation of our Saviour, 750. Romulus cauſed his brother to be ſlain, becauſe he had miſtaken his proclamation, and walked vpon the new made walls of Rome. Romulus being ſole King, ordained 100 Senators, who for their honors, were called fathers, and their poſteritie, patricians, and 300 men at armes for his perſonall guard, and as hee was making an Oration vnto his army, there fell an extreme ſodaine terrible tempeſt, with horrible thunderclaps, and a blacke cloud compaſſed him round about, and from that time he was neuer ſeene: he raigned 36 yeeres: Read Titus Linius.

Romulus.

Eſay the Prophet.

HOſea the Son of Ela raigned in Samaria, in the yere of the world, 3195. And before the birth of our Saviour Chriſt, 767. In his time lived Eſay the Prophet, a man of high birth in Jeruſalem he prophecied of the deſtruction of Juda & all Iſrael, which ſuddenly came to paſſe, for in the yere of the world, 3212. and before Chriſt, 749. Salmanaſar the King of Aſſyria, inuaded Juda & Iſrael with a huge hoſt, and after three yeres extreme ſiege, hee won Samaria, take Hoſea priſoner, ſpoiled all the land of Iſrael, and led 10 tribes captiue with him into Aſſyria, according as Eſay had foretold. This noble Prophet alſo prophecied the Iſraelites deliuerance from the captiuity of Babylon, of the comming of our Saviour Chriſt, and the calling of the Gentiles. Read the 4 booke of Kings, Joſephus the 9 booke and 15 Chapter, and Saint Jerome vpon Eſay.

The Prophet Ieremy.

IEremy the Prophet being yong, began to prophecie in the yere of the world 3307. and before Chriſt, 655. Read S. Jerome vpon the prophecie of Ieremy, and Joſephus in his booke of Antiquities, 10 booke, 8 chap. The Prophet Baruch was Scribe, or Secretary vnto Ieremy and wrote vnder him the booke of theſe things that were to come vpon Jeruſalē: alſo when Ieremy was in priſon, he ſerued him, and accompanyed him in his exile, and neuer left him: he read his prophecies before Iechonias the King, in the captiuity of Babylon, he foretold many great myſteries of the incarnation of our Saviour Jeſus Chriſt, and of the end of the world.

The Prophet Baruch.

Nabuchadonozer.

NAbuchadonozer the great, whom the Hebrewes call Nebuchadnezer, begunne his Raigne in Babylon in the fourth yeere of the reigne of Eliacim, otherwiſe called Ioachim, who raigned in the yere of the world 3326. and before Chriſt, 636.

[illegible] Daniel.

DAniel the Prophet prophecied in the time of King Ioachim, and in the time of Ieremy the Prophet: hee was led captiue into Babylon by Nebuchadonozer, in the yer of the world 3348. and before the birth of our Sauior 614. he and his aſſociates, for 3 yeres ſpace: he learned the Arts and language of the Chaldeans.

Ezechiel the Prophet lived in the time of Ieremy, Baruch and Daniel, and was but yong when he was led captiue into Babylon: he began to prophecie in the yer of the world, 3349. and before Chriſt, 613. he prophecied in Chaldea, when Ieremy prophecied in Judea: Read Joſephus, 10 booke and 9 Chap.

The Prophet Ezechiel.

CRoeſus King of Lidia, ſurnamed the rich, raigned in the yeere of the world 3402. and before Chriſt 560. in his time lived the man of moſt hard fauour, ill feature, and excellent wit, Aeſope: in his time lived alſo Solon.

Croeſus.

Aeſope.

CYrus was the firſt King of Perſia, in the yeere of the world 3403. and before the incarnation of our Sauiour 559. he was the ſonne of Cambyſes and Mandane, daughter to Aſtiages King of the Medes. Aſtiages whileſt his daughter was with childe, dreamed, that from her lownes, there ſprang a time which ſhould cauer all Aſia, and thereupon commanded Harpagus, being the Generall of his army, to take the new borne Cyrus and kill him: but Harpagus being better minded, take the childe and gaue him vnto Mithridates, who deliuered the babe vnto his wife Cyno, by whom hee was kindly nurſed, and brought by amongſt Sheepheards, vntill hee was 12 yeres old, at which time, the Shepheards in a May-Game, chooſe him for their King. When Aſtiages vnderſtood that Harpagus had not murthered Cyrus, as hee was commanded, then hee ſlew the ſonne of Harpagus, and by deuice, made the father to eate his Sonnes fleſh, which ſo ſoone as Harpagus knew thereof, he ſought to be reuenged for his Sonnes death, and made fierce warre vpon Aſtiages: in which battell, the Medes put the Perſians to flight, then was Cyrus, who was alſo called Darius King of Medes and Perſia. Hee tooke Babylon, as you may read in Daniel and Eldras. Tomiris Queene of the Maſſegetes, made warre vpon Cyrus, becauſe he had ſurpized her Sonne, and moſt cruelly ſlaine him, and all that were with him: in this fight the ouercame Cyrus, and ſlew all his people with great ſeuerity, to the end, none ſhould returne with newes, and by diligent ſearch ſhe found among the dead, the body of Cyrus, then carſed his head to be cut off, and put into a beſſell full of mans blood, ſaying, O Cyrus! thou ſleweſt my ſonne treacherouſly, and haſt drunke humane blood for thirty yeres ſpace, and not ſatisfied, now ſolace, and take thy fill of mans blood. Read Juſtin, 1 booke, Herodotus, 1 booke Pharch of Ladies, and Xene 8 booke.

Cyrus.

Aſtiages ſlew his ſonnes fleſh.

He raigned 30 yeres.

TArquin the proud, was the ſeuenth and laſt King of the Romanes, he began in the yere of the world, 3431, and before Chriſt 531. he was the ſonne of Tarquin Priſcus, and hauing domination, without the election, eyther of the

The laſt King of Rome.

Senate

Senate, by common people, he put to death many principall persons, and Tarquin his sisters sonne, brother to Brutus, because he had shewed favour to Tullius his predecessor. Hee was the first in Rome, that devised grievous torments, viz. Bulls pitsels to whip, Waltmaders to strike, chaines and shackles to bind, hot pans to burn, and banishment: and although he had diuers victories, and builded a Temple to Iupiter, yet by reason of his pride, cruelty, and tyranny, and for the Rape which his sonne committed upon the chaste Lucrecia, he was hated of the Romans and at the siege of Ardea, hee and all his race were driuen out by the Romans, and in his most need, his souldiers forsoke him. His wife Tullia was as proud and bloody as himselfe, as appeareth by her actions in her fathers death: read Titus Liuius 1 booke, Denys Halycarnis 4 booke.

Denis of Halycarnis.

Cambyses. CAmbyses, the son of Cyrus, was the second King of Persia, in the yeere of the world, 3433. Eldras in his 1 booke and 4 chapter called him Artaxerxes, and saith that he sauced the stay from repairing the Temple of God, in Jerusalem, which his father had permitted. The Hebrewes say, that in this Kings raigne, was performed that which was read in the booke of Hester, and others say, it was in the raigne of Darius, the sonne of Histaspes: hee banquished Plamment, the last King of Egypt, and conioyned it unto his owne Kingdome, and being vexed with the Egyptians superstitions, commanded the Temple of Apis, and all their Idols, to be beaten down, he also sent an army to destroy the Temple of their god Ammon, which army utterly perished in the desart, of wouing sands of Lybia, he slew his brother Smerdis, and tooke his sister in marriage, and slew her within a while after, and in the end at the siege of Ecbatana in Egypt, he slew himselfe with his owne sword; having raigned 8 yeeres. After him raigned Smerdis Magus, 7 moneths, and after him Darius, the sonne of Histaspes: they had another Cambyses. Holofernes, the Generall of the army of Cambyses, was sent against all nations that would not submit themselues unto him, he was commanded not to remit any, and at the siege of Bethulia, whose inhabitants were almost famished, he was ouercome by the valiant and prudent Iudeth. Read Herodotus 3 booke, Xenophons 8 booke. Iustin 1 booke, and Iosephus 11 booke, and 2 chapter. About this time lived and flourished the excellent Philosopher Pithagoras, born in the Ile of Samos, he was the first that said, amity to be an equality, and that among friends, all things are common: read Lactius 8 booke.

Pithagoras.

Darius. DArius, the sonne of Histaspes, was chosen King of Persia, in the yeere of the world, 3441, and before Christ, 521. Smerdes and Patizithes were slaine, that had usurped the Kingdome by force. Atossa the daughter of Cyrus, was wife to Darius: some say that Hester was wife to Darius, and that Eldras calleth this Darius, Assuerus. He permitted the Iewes to returne into Iudea, and to new build their Temple, and restored against their treasure, and holy vessells and ornaments. Hee ordained 20 Prouinces and gouernors ouer them, and constrained the people to pay tribute, which they never did before, but onely gaue what themselues thought good. Hee subdued the Getes, and the Thracians yeelded themselues unto him, but the Scithians put him to flight. Babylon revolted from him, and hauing besieged it 2 yeeres, saw no hope of recouering of it by force: then hee secretly agreed between Zopirus his owne Generall and himselfe, that it should be divulged throughout the campe, that the King had entertained great displeasure against Zopirus, and because it should passe for plaine truth, Zopirus slit his owne Nose, mangled his lipps, and cut off his owne eares, and whilest his foes were in a manner bleeding, he fled into Babylon, where hee told them, that thus cruelly his Master had dealt with him, for speaking but favourably in their behalfe, and prayed them to ayde him that he might be auenged of the tyrant. The Babylonians gaue full credit to his speeches, and thereupon made him their General, and then he yeelded the City into the Kings hands, who said that he had rather haue one onely Zopirus, then many such Cities as Babylon. He raigned 36 yeers. Read Herodotus 3 booke, Iustin 1 booke, Orosius 2 booke.

Zopirus.

PResently after the violent rape of chaste Lucrecia by Tarquin, and punishment done upon the proud insolent offender, and his abetters, then began the Roman estate to be gouerned by Consuls, which was in the yeere of the world 3456. It is a story worth reading, read Titus Liuius his 1 booke.

The rape of Lucrecia.

The first beginning of Consuls at Rome.

SAapho, a mayden Poet, lived in the time of Tarquinius Priscus, which was in the yeer of the world, 3349, he doubled the number of Senators and Knights also, he inuironed part of Rome with strong walls. Plato admired this Sapho for her excellent wisedome, she was skilfull in verse, of whom the Saphique verse beareth the name unto this day: she lived before the birth of our Saniour Christ, 613.

The original of Saphique verses.

ZErxes the 5 King of Persia, son of Darius Histaspes, began his raign in the yeer of the world, 3477, and before the birth of our Saniour, 485. There hapned some division between him and his elder brother Artabarzanes, but it was easily suppresst, and was concluded that this Zerxes, sonne to Atossa the second wife to the forenamed Darius, should be King. He first subdued the Egyptians which had revolted, then he led a very mighty army into Greece, the like whereof in those parts, had not beene knowne: for some Authors say, that he with his hoste and fort haue drunke some Rivers drie: he grieuously oppressed the Greekes, and burned Athens, with diuers other her neighbour Cities, but in the end hee was sharply repulsed by the most valiant captaines Leonydas, and Themistocles, and by them put to the worst twice in one day, and then fled in a little fisher-boat into his owne country to saue himselfe. He raigned

Zerxes.

Leonidas. Themistocles.

raigned 20 yeeres, he and his sonne Darius were both slain by Artabanus, who affected the crown, and Artabanus had his iust reward by Artaxerxes: read Iustin 1 and 3 bookes, Plutarch upon the life of Themistocles and Agesilus, Herodotus 7 booke. There was also a valiant Athenian captain called Cymon, that ouerthrew the army of Zerxes twice in one day, the first by Sea, where he tooke 200 vessels, the next by Land, and then cleared all Greece. Afterward he reinforced himselfe, and then crossed the Sea, and went into Asia minor, where he got rich bootes from his enemies, and distributed a great part thereof unto the poore, he kept an open table for all commers, especially for strangers, trauellers, and poore people.

Cymon.

Artaxerxes. ARtaxerxes, the sonne of Zerxes last mentioned, begunne his raigne ouer the Persians in the yeere of the world, 3497. and before the birth of Christ, 465 yeeres, the Greekes called him Artaxerxes Longhand, because his right hand was longer then his left. Methastenes calls him Darius, and Eldras that lived in his time, and knew him well, and obtained all favour at his hands, calleth him indifferently Darius and Artaxerxes, for the Persians vsed both those names, like as our Cuipero saare called Cæsar and Augustus. Hee was throughly auenged upon the murther of his father, and brother, for he slew Artabanus by a politike deuice, and then slew all his children: Read Eldras the 1 booke, Iustin. 3 booke, Herodotus 7 booke, and Plutarch upon the life of of Artaxerxes: he raigned full 40 yeeres.

Methastenes. Eldras.

Lucullus quintus Cincinnatus chosen Dictator.

LVcullus Quintus Cincinnatus, was by the Romane Senate called from the plow, and with all honour and magnificence, ordained to be Dictator in the yeere of the world, 3506. and before the birth of Jesus 456.

Socrates. IN the yeere of the world 3531. flourished Socrates, the most excellent Philosopher, his fathers name was Sophronisces, he was a carver of Images, his mothers name was Phanareta, she was a Midwife: hee was very famous amongst the Athenians, his wisedome and vertue procured the ignorant and enuious to practise his death, they accused him of blasphemy against their Gods. Amongst many his golden Sentences, he said, that a mans friend was his knowledge, and his foule his enemy: Read Cicero, I booke of Quæstiones Pliny 7 booke, and Saint Augustin de Ciuitate Dei, with diuers others: the name of his shrewd wife was Xantippe.

Aspasia. ABout this time lived Aspasia, the daughter of Axiochus, famous for wisedome, and Oratory, for whose sake, the wife Pericles forsoke his wife and married her. Sophocles, the renowned learned Poet, was his speciall friend, and they twaine were sent in armes, ioyntly together, to make warres upon the Lacedemonians.

Pericles. Sophocles.

Brenno, or Brennus. BRenno, or Brennus, an excellent warriour, was as chiefe, or King ouer the Gaules, hee entred with a very warlike army into Italy, but hee was not the first that went thither, for the Gaules had invaded Italy, 200 yeers before, and obtained great victories upon the Romans, nere to the River Alia: he suddenly bent his forces right upon Rome, and found the gates open, for the Romanes being much astonished, were fled to the Capitoll, pilling, spoyling and burning, and after he had plant ed his siege about the city, those of the Capitoll, offered a certaine summe of money to raise his siege and depart: but when they came and made tender of the money, according to the agreement, Brennus refused it, and sware he would haue the waight of his Rapier more, which they denyed to giue, byding his voluntary competition, and while Brennus stood in contention, the noble Romane Camillus, with a resolute army came upon him, repulsed Brennus, and saued Romes honor. This was done in the yeere of the world 3670. and before the nativity of Jesus, 386. Read Titus Liuius 1 booke, Dec. 5. The Gaules endeuor greatly to attribute unto this Brennus, the founding of the City Verona in Italy, which since is called Verona, and will not admit any authority to the contrary, were it not very manifest by diuers Chronicles, and the account of time, that there is more then 100 yeeres difference, betweene this Brennus of the Gaules, and the English Brennus, that was the true builder of Verona, alias Verona, and of him it tooke the name: Read Titus Liuius 8 booke, Dec. 4. and Iustin his 25 booke, who say that the Gaules beare the Tuscans out of their countrey, and builded in Italy, Milan, Coma, Brescia, Bergama, Trenta, and Vicentia.

The Gaules win Italy. Camillus. Verona founded.

MAusolus, King of Caria in Asia minor, died in the yeere of the world 3556. for extreme griefe of whole death, his wife Artemisia, for the entyre love which she bare him when his body was burnt to ashes (as was the custome of great Princes) shee would not suffer his ashes to be put into an vrne, or other vsuall vessell, but onely in her owne stomacke, and by degrees, she dranke them with wine, or water, mired with sweete Odours, and after that for an euerlasting memorial of her husband, she erected a stately Sepulchre, it was so great, strange and sumptuous, that it was numbred among the 7 wonders of the world, and because she would be sure to haue it exceede all former Monuments, as well in curious workemanship, as otherwise, she sent chosen men to survay all knowne parts of the world, namely, Scopas to the Cast. Briaxis to the North, Timotheus to the South, and Leochares to the West. But before sice could fully finish this memorable worke, she died, yet neuertheless, the building went forward to the fulnesse of perfection, because they esteemed it to be their glory, and of Art the master-peece of the whole world for euer. Furthermore, this Artemisia was by all solemnity, celebrated her husbands obsequies and funerals, and because sometime she would beguile her griefe, and take truce with her teares, she ordained silver-games, & other rich prize of great value, which were proposed to be won by those that could preach best in her husbands praise. Unto this combate of eloquent tongues, came many men of high desert, frō all parts, namely,

Mausolus.

Artemisia.

A search made over the world for fruitfull Artificers.

Isocrates, and Theopompus, who was adiudged to haue wonne the chiefe prize. She raised an army to defend the City of Halicarnas, against the Rhodians, whom she ouerthrew, and then tooke Rhodes the second time: she succoured Xerxes against the Lacedemonians: Read Iustin, 2 booke, Herodo. 7. Pliny 36 booke, and Boccace of Ladies of renowne.

P of don.

PHilip, the Sonne of Aminias, was King of Macedon in the yere of the world 3603. and before the birth of Christ 359. hee first made warre vpon the Athenians, and ouercame them, but offered no violence vnto their bodies, nor goods: then he warred vpon the Sclauonians, and tooke many Cities from them: after that, he went against the Thessalians, because they had refused to ayde him with their Ioyseurn. At the siege of Methona, hee was wounded in the eye, with the shaft of an arrow, which hee tooke so patiently, that when the Methonians vnderstood thereof, they required him to receiue them into his fauour, which he did. He was wonderously renowned, for patience, mildenesse, and mercy, and by these vertues, hee ouercame his greatest enemies. Towards the end, hee was chosen Head, or Emperor of all Greece, he prepared a mighty army to subdue the Persians, but was there slaine treacherously, by Pausanias, because he had not done him Iustice, of certaine iniury, where of he had complained. Olimpias, the daughter of the King of Molossus, was wife to this Philip, and mother to Alexander the great, endued her aduiterie, there was put away from her husband; then her tooke Cleopatra to wife, and at his death there was great doubt made, whether Alexander were his naturall Son, or no, or should succeed him, or whether his issue by the second wife should raigne after him. But his sonne Alexander was of rare gifts in nature, and of singular perfection in the knowledge of Philosophy, being instructed and tutored in all good letters by Aristotle, who wrote vnto Philip, saying, I esteeme my selfe happy, in that hee was borne in my time. After the death of Philip, Olimpias slew Cleopatra, and her sonne, for rage, that they in her disgrace, were so highly aduanced to haue [illegible] the whole history, for it is pleasant, Iustin 7 and 8 booke, Diodorus, Scet, Orosius 3 booke 13 Chap.

Iury les.

Iepatra-

Valerius, alias Corninus.

MArcus Valerius, a tribune of [illegible], at 23 yeres of age, appointed himselfe in combate, against Agrippa, that [illegible] Romans a-ny Romane to fight on horseback, and when they were approached, there came a Raven and pearke of his right eare, a helmet of Valerius, her remoued not thence vntill the end of the combate, and as they enterchanged blowes, shee ceased not to clap her wings, put into her bill, and offer to strike the assailant with her talons, which strange apparitions effect much amazed him. He was ouercome, and slaine by Valerius, who was euer after called Corninus, because of the Raven that haunted his enemy. The Consull after this, made very much of the Rauen; this was done in the yere of the world, 3617. Read Titus Liuius 1 booke, Orosius 5 booke, and many other approued Authors.

IN the yere of the world 3673. Curius Dentatus, a Romane Consull, ruinated the Saumnites, and then that warre ceased, hauing continued 49 yeres. These Saumites had formerly sent Ambassadors, with diuers rich presents, as well vessels wherein to put meate, as otherwaies, vnto Curius, whom they found at dinner, sitting vpon the side of a banke, hauing his meat in wooden dishes, thauing presented their gifts vnto him, he thus said, I marry, quoth he, these vessels make a goodly show without foode, and fit to feede the eyes, and therewithall hee laughed, saying, Returne ye Ambassadors with your superfluities, vnto the Saumnites, and tell them, I had rather raigne ouer riches, then to be rich, beare backe your presents, and know, that I cannot be ouercome by warre, nor corrupted with money. And hauing chased king Pyrrhus out of Italy, reserued to take any part of his spoyle, vnto himselfe, but gaue the booty vnto his Souldiours, and the rest vnto the City. He was called Dentatus, because he was borne with teeth: Read Pliny 8 booke, of the first Elephants that were seene in Rome.

Curius Dentatus.

IN the yeere of the world, 3615. flourished Demosthenes. Demosthenes, the excellent Orator of the Athenians, he was the sonne of a rich Cutler, or Knifemaker, in his youth he stuttered, and could hardly speake plaine, but through great paines, and industry, he obtained vnto singular perfection of plain and pleasant speaking. He courted Lays, the Corinthian Harlot, who demanded of Lays. him 3000 pieces of siluer, for one nights lodging: but he answered her, hee would not buy repentance to deare: read Plutarch and Macrobius. About 3 yeres after this, viz. in the yeere of the world 3618. and after Christ, 344. the Noble and vertuous Tymoleon, of Corinth was Timoleon. sent with a small army of Gallies into Cicilia, to deliuer the City of Syracusa, from the tyranny of Denis the tyrant, which hee performed Denis. within 50 daies after his arriuall. He cleared the country from the tyrant, and all other their oppressors, pulled downe all fortifications, that might any way aduantage their enemies: hee repeopled their decayed Cities, and ordained many wholsome Lawes for their future gouernment. The forenamed Denis, through fauour of the Soldiers, succeeded his father, being of the same name, and thought to raigne peaceably, and because he would reobtaine the peoples fauour, hee set 3000 captiues at liberty, and forgaue 3 moneths tribute: all which, notwithstanding, the extremity of his former cruelty was so fresh in memory, that he was chased by Dyon, and after that, by Timoleon, that he gladly became a poore Schoolemaster: Read Plutarch, Iustin 22. Cicero, and others.

ALexander the great, succeeded his Father Alexander Philip, at 20 yeeres of age in the Kingthe great. dome of Macedon in the yer of the world, 3628. and

and before the birth of our Saviour Iesus, 334. he was of wonderous courage in his Infancy: for when hee beheld any bonefires made for ioy of his fathers victories, he would weepe saying, My father will conquer all, and leaue nothing for me to conquer: He first led his Army neere to the great River Danubia, and ouerthrew Syrmus King of the Tribals, then hee went against the Thebans and ouerthrew them, and because they had reuolted, he sacked and raced their City to be a terrour vnto other Cities of Greece, to feare rebellion. The Greekes called him Emperor, and then began a consultation for a voyage against the Persians, which he performed with great prudence and prowesse, but before he entred in the Persian expedition, hee parted the kingdome of Macedon and Europe among his friends, saying with an exceeding feruent spirit, that hee would conquer the East, and that thorlo suffice him, and that the Persians had held the Empire long enough, and that he must change hands with them in their authority, and teach them better gouernment: his best treasure was his assured hope in the accomplishing of his determination. His Souldiers and men of warre followed him with like spirit and resolution, who forsooke wiues, children, friends and all, to follow his fortune, making no doubt, but to haue their full prey of the Kingdomes of the East: his ordinary strength was, 32000. footemen, 4500 horsemen, and 182 Ships: hee made speciall choyse of old Souldiours and expert warriors: hee ouercame Darius, King of Persia, ouerthrew 20000 of his footemen, and 15000 of his horse, he tooke the Queen and her two daughters prisoners, whom hee entreated most honourably, he inuaded India, as farre as the River Ganges, tooke Babylon, and sacked Persopolis. Read Plutarch and Iustin.

Philosophers. Plato. Zenocrates. Diogenes.

AT this time flourished many excellent Grecian Philosophers in Athens, namely, Aristotle, Diuine Plato, Zenocrates, Diogenes, and many others, whose liues, learning and sayings by diuers of our kind countrymen haue bin learned, and liuely translated into our natiue tongue, as you may finde in most Stationers shops. And as these forenamed Philosophers and many others with great care, & conscience, taught piety, vertue, and true morality, there sprang vp a hel hound, like to the Serpent in Paradise, called Epicurus, he went into Athens, and as it is written, there he taught publikely, that the soueraigne god of all things was free pleasure in all voluptuousnes, and in his Epistle to Minicetus, hee expounded himselfe, saying, When I say, that voluptuousnesse and pleasure is the end of all good, I do not mean only by eating and drinking, as some ignorant take it, but to haue their bodies free from harme, and diseases, and their minds not troubled, for the vertues are ioyned with the life in pleasures, and cannot be separated. From this Epicurus, the Epicures of our time take their names. Read Diogenes, Laertius, S. Augustine, and many others.

Epicurus.

Ptolomeus.

PTolomeus the Son of Lagus, whom Alexander the Great aduanced from a common souldiour, to be a chiefe man in the Court and Campe, was after his death chosen King of Egypt in the yeere of the world, 3640. and before the birth of Christ, 322. he turned vnto his kingdome of Egypt, the City of Cirena, and part of Africa and Arabia, he was well beloued of his subiects, and his neighbour Princes: he ouercame Demetrius, the sonne of Antigonus, and freed all his friends from captiuity, and also whatsoeuer himselfe had taken, he sent it backe againe, saying, hee made warre for honour, not for profit: and after this victory he was ouercome at Sea, by Demetrius, who shewed like mercy and honour vnto him and his friends: for he freely sent backe his brother, his Sonne, and his friends which hee had taken, and then began a further Emulation in honour and courtesie betweene them, to manifest their warre was onely for honour, and not for gaine nor enuy. This Ptolomeus sent Ambassadors to Rome, to make alliance betweene them, he prepared the famous Li- The great brary which hath beene renowned through the Library of world, he assembled the seuenty and two Inter- Ptolomeus. preters, he tooke Cipres and Phenicia, and from him all the rest of the kings of Egypt were called Ptolomeus: he raigned 40 yeres, and appointed Philadelphus his youngest Sonne to raigne after him: his wiues name was Berenice, who in honour of her Sonne Philadelphus, builded a Philadelphus City neere to the gulfe of Arabia, and called it Berenice Philadelphus: she had a daughter called Arsinoa, she married Euergenes. Read Iustin, 13 booke, and Orosius 3 booke.

Demetrius.

CAssander, the sonne of Antipater, was King Cassander alias of Macedon, after Philip in the yere of the Aridaeus. world, 3647. and before Christ, 315. hee was called Arideus, brother to Alexander the great, he besieged the City of Pidna, wherein was Olimpias, the mother of Alexander, who fled thither in hope of safety, but being sore pressed with long siege, yeelded vpon condition and promise to haue her life saued: yet neuertheless, he slew her, and caused Berfina and Roxana to be murthered, which had beene wiues to Alexander, and with them their two sonnes: he gaue vnto the Abderites who were driuen out of their Countrey by Frogs and Rats, a habitation in a Land vpon the frontire of his kingdome, because he feared them: he raigned 19 yeeres, and left sonnes, viz. Alexander and Antipater, who slew his mother Thessalonica, because she was more fauorable vnto his brother, then vnto him, in the diuiding of the kingdome. Read Iustin, 15, and 16 booke.

Berfina. Roxana. Frogges. Rats. The originall of the Thessalonians.

LYsimachus, for haughty courage, strength of body, and knowledge in Philosophy, surpassed all the Captaines of Macedon, by whose loyes Alexander had forbidden the East, and yet he was not ashamed to be instructed by Calisthenes whom Alexander caused to haue his lips, nose, and eares cut. Alexander commanded him to encounter with a fierce Lyon, which he did, and by sudden violence snatched out his tongue: then Alexander began to loue him exceedingly, and whereas in his former displeasure he had wounded

Lysimachus.

A Lyon slain in plaine fight.

ded in the forehead, hee put off his great Diamond, and placed it vpon his forehead to adorne and couer the fear, which was held a great preſaging at hee ſhould be King of Macedon, as he was in the yeere of the world, 3676. hee did many excellent things in his authority, he builded a Citty called Lyſimachia, which within 22 yeers after ſunk with an earthquake: he lined to ſee 15 of his Sonnes eyther ſlaine or taken: hee dyed valiantly in warres againſt Seleucus, at 74 yeeres of age.

Lyſimachus and Seleucus ſlayers one the laſt of the remayned Captaines of Alexander the great.

Pyrrhus.

PYrrhus, ſonne to the King of Epirus, his father being chaſed out of his Countrey, was ſecretly brought into Sclauonia, at 2 yeeres of age vnto the wife of the King, who being of his kindred, receiued him kindly, and obtaind of the King to preſerue him from the King of Macedon. The Epirates changing their minds repealed Pirrhus at 12 yeeres of age, and being come to mans eſtate, proued valiant, he defended the Tarentines againſt the Romanes, and albeit he was much feighted with the bold appearance of great Elephants, not hauing ſeene any before, yet he ouercame them, he ſent backe to Rome all their men of war, and others which were taken priſoners, without pay or ranſome, and in the yeere of the world, 3676. he tooke the kingdome of Macedon, he came into Sicilia, and was called King of Sicilia, as well as King of Epirus, he aſſigned vnto one of his ſons Sicilia, and vnto the other Italy, he ſeuerally ouercame the Carthaginians, and when he left Italy, he ſaid, Oh, what pleaſures and exerciſes of warres doe I leaue vnto the Romanes and Carthaginians! but at length per fas & nefas he ouercame the Spartanes, and hauing loſt his ſon, he retired. After that hee went into Argos when Antigonus had retyred himſelfe, and beſieged him, at which ſiege he was ſlain by the blow of a ſtone, which a woman threw at him from the wall, but before he dyed, he came into the thickeſt thong of his enemies, and dyed valiantly. Read Plutarch, Iuſtin 17, 18, 23. and 25 bookes, and Orioſius 4 booke, 1, 2, 3. chapters, his Sonne Alexander reuenged his death.

Eleazer. Ptolomeus Philadelph.

ELeazar the ſon of Onias, ſurnamed the Juſt, Chiefe Gods high Prieſt in Jeruſalem in the yeere of the world 3691. and before the nativity of our Sauior Chriſt 272. vnto whom Ptolomeus Philadelphus, ſon to the firſt Ptolomie, before mentioned, ſent letters reſpectfully as you may read in Joſephus. The King required the high Prieſt to ſend ouer vnto him the 5 bookes of Moſes, and ſeuenty Dothe 6 ſelected faithfull and learned Interpreters to tranſlate theſe bookes out of Hebrew into Greeke, which make 27 in number, although they are commonly called the 70 Interpreters and when they entred into his

The great Library. The 70 Interpreters.

Library, they were as much amazed as ioyed at the gowly light thereof, and hauing tranſlated the foreſaid bookes, the King rewarded them all, and gaue to euery of them 2 talents of gold, and a cup of gold waighing a talent, which is after the rate of 15000 crownes, of the ſumme for euery man. Read Titus Liuius, 1 booke, Dece. 5 booke, Iuſtin 17 booke. Epiphanius his bookes of waights and meaſures, Ioſephus his bookes of antiquities, and S. Auguſtin de Ciuitate Dei.

HAnnibal the ſonne of Amilcar, firſt fled vnto Annibal, to Bruſias, king of Bithynia, and for a time ſerued him againſt Eumenes, and after that at 26 yeeres of age, he was generall of the Carthaginians: at the firſt he ſhewed himſelfe to be prudent and honorable, but afterward hee became couetous and cruell. Within 3 moneths ſpace, he had almoſt conquered all Spain, and at the ſiege of Sagontia, he draue the inhabitants vnto ſuch extremity of famine, that the Sagontines did eate one another, & then burned themſelues rather then they would ſubmit themſelues into his hands. In his army were an hundred and fifty thouſand footmen, and twenty thouſand horſe, he left his brother in Law Aſdrubal in Spaine, then he croſſed the Pirreneanhils, and paſſed by Lions, where hee appointed two petty Kings, brethren, then with great difficulty, he paſſed the Alps with the loſſe of 30000 men, being conſtrained to make a new way ouer the rockes, with fire & vineger. And after he ouerthrew Scipio Scipio Corneliu. nius and Flaminius with ſlaughter of 15000 of Flaminius their men, but Fabius repreſſed him well enough. Fabius. After that, hee had a great victory at Cannes, from whence he ſent 3 Chariots full, taken with gold and ſilver Rings, and Iewels, which hee had wonne, vnto Carthage: then all that time, hee might haue taken Rome, but he then ouerkept his good fortune: he returned into Campaigne, in the end he was ouercome by Mar. Scipio, that was afterward ſurnamed Scipio Affricanus. Then he fled towards Pontus, but ſuſpecting him of ſome ancient grudge, hee died by poiſon, in the yeer of the world 3774. and before the birth of our Sauior Chriſt, 188. he brought 32 Elephants into Italy, and loſt one of his eyes at mount Apennyn. Read Plutarch, Titus Liuius, Dece, and S. Auguſtin, de Ciuitate Dei. Read the whole Hiſtory: for it is delightfull.

SCipio Affricanus, the great, being the firſt Scipio Affriſon of thoſe man among the Romanes, hee canus. was ſo called, becauſe hee ſubdued all Affrica, hee aduentured very dangerouſly, to ſaue his Father from being taken in the battell againſt Hannibal, neere vnto the River Trebra, and after the Iourney at Cannes, he ſet Rome free from the danger of Hannibal. At ſome and twenty yeeres of age, hee made the Romanes ſweare vpon his ſword, to be reſolute in defending their ſtate and country, he was ſent into Spaine, where Aſdrubal had ſlaine the other two Scipioes, hee tooke new Carthage, where he had mighty treaſure, ſtore of munition, and tooke great Lords priſoners, whom he ſent captiues to Rome, among whom was Magon, brother to Hannibal. Yee made all

all Spaine tributary to Rome, hee was the firſt of the Romanes that conquered ſo farre that way, as vnto the ſtraights of Gibraltar, he was more deſirous to maintaine, then to conquer, he releaſed his priſoners, and by his bounteous and honourable demeanor, he was exceedingly beloued. Yee for ſooke Rome in the yeere of the world, 3777. and before Chriſt, 85.

Iudas Machabeus.

MAttathias was high Prieſt, in the yeere of the world, 3795. and gouernour of the Iewes: hee ſlew a Iew openly, that offered ſacrifice to the Idols, as Antiochus commanded, he raigned one yeer, his ſonne Iudas Machabeus ſucceeded him in that dignity, in the yeere of the world, 3805. and before the birth of our Sauiour Jeſus Chriſt 157. hee dyed in warre, and raigned 12 yeeres. Read the booke of Macchabees, and Ioſephus.

Hannibal. Scipio.

HAnnibal, the Sonne of Amilcar, was 26 yeeres Captaine General of the Carthaginians, and dyed in the yeere of the world, 3774. and before the Nativity of our Sauior Jeſus Chriſt, 188. and 3 yeres after his death, Scipio Affricanus was baniſhed from Rome.

Mithridates.

MIthridates, King of Pontus, ſaying the Romanes buſied and troubled with ciuil warre, he ruinated Cappadocia, and draue out Artobarzanes, the King therof, becauſe he was a friend to the Romanes: then hee made truce with the countries of Bithynia, and Paphlagonia, from whence he had chaſed out the King. The truce was in the yeere of the world, 3876. and before the birth of our Sauiour Chriſt, 86 yeeres, then he marched vnto Epheſus, and ſent Letters throughout Aſia, commanding them to kill all the Romanes that they could finde, and thereupon were ſlaine in one day, 8000 Romanes. The cauſe of this his fell warre, and deadly malice to the Romanes, was, becauſe that Nicomedes, eſpeciall friend of the Romans, had diſturped vpon his Territoryes. Yee ſent Archelus into Achaya with fiue ſcore thouſand men, and tooke Greece, and all the Iles, except Rhodes: hee warred ſo long, and ſo fiercely, that it was called Mithridatique warre: the warre of Pyrrhus againſt the Romanes, laſted but 4 yeeres, the warre of Hannibal but 17 yeers, but the warres of Mithridates laſted 40 yeeres, euen vntill he was beaten and weakned in three great battels by Silla, Lucullus, and Pompey, and in the end he was beſieged by his owne Sonne, in a Caſtell, who cauſed him to be ſlaine, which hee well deſerued, as well for his cruelty afore ſaid, as alſo for that hee cauſed to be ſlaine, three of his owne Sonnes, and three of his owne daughters, his wife, his ſiſter, his mother, no his brother. His Lone Hipſicratea, or as ſome call her, his wife, accompanied him in his warres, in mans apparell, and was found dede by him,

8000. Romanes ſlaine. Nicomedes.

Herod.

when hee was ouercome in his battell by Pompey. Read Florus third booke, and Plutarch vpon the life of Pompey.

Iulius Cæſar.

IVlius Cæſar was the firſt Emperor of Rome, in the yeere of the world, 3918. and before the birth of our Sauiour Jeſus Chriſt, 44 yeeres: he being Conſull, had 10 Legions, with commiſſion to conquer the Gaules, and Illyria, he cauſe Aſia was ſubdued by Pompey, hee was appointed to ſubiugate Europia. The Gaules and Germanes were then ſuppoſed to be the moſt ſtrong Nations: he ſubdued the Switchers, he croſſed the ſea, and came into England, in which attempt he was more vnfortunate then in all the reſt, for three ſeuerall times his men were almoſt all drowned by tempeſts, at Clermont in Auergne, hee loſt one Legion, and vpon the borders of Germany, his Captaines were ſlain by Ambuſcadoes, and as hee returned backe towards Rome, he required to be Conſull ſtill, but Marcel, Bibulus, Pompey, and Cato, reſiſted him, and was commanded to diſſolue his Campe, and returne to Rome. From this roote ſprang all the terrible ciuill warre, which preſently enſued: then he entred into armes againſt his owne Country, and thereupon, all the Senate fled into Greece with Pompey, whom Pompey ouercame at the firſt onſet. And then Pompey was ouercome in Theſſaly, by Cæſar. In his returne, he ouerthrew Pharnar, and after that, hee did many notable things: he raigned Emperour about three or foure yeeres, and was ſlaine at 56 yeeres of age.

HErod the great, the ſonne of Antipater, gouernour of Iudea: this Herod was an Idumean, and the firſt of ſtrange Nations that was King of Iudea, in the yeere of the world, 3927. and before the Nativity of our Sauiour Jeſus, 35 yeeres, and 3 yeeres before that, hee was by the Senate of Rome declared and called King of the Iewes: he was very well beloued of the Emperor Auguſtus, who to augment his Kingdome, gaue him Samaria, with the Cities and Caſtles. Herod builded a Temple & a Citty, which hee called Ceſarea, in honor of Cæſar Auguſtus: he ſent his 2 ſons, viz. Alexander and Ariſtobulus vnto Rome, to be inſtructed. Hee ouercame the Arabians, he was very cruell, as well vnto his owne wife and children, as vnto his friends and kindred, he put to death diuers Doctors of the Law, hee practiſed much craft againſt the true Meſſeme, that he ought the firſt newes of the birth of our Sauior Jeſus Chriſt, whom aboue all other he meant to put to death, and therupon cauſed the ſudden and cruell martyrdome of all the Infants of Bethelem: in this time was an earthquake in Iudea, by meanes where of there periſhed 30000 people: Read Ioſephus touching the warres of the Iewes.

AND thus much by the way, concerning theſe fortraigne and generall briefe Hiſtories: and now I will returne to the reſt of the Britiſh Hiſtory where I left, which I will continue vnto the time of the publication of this Booke: and hereafter are alſo contained many fortraigne and generall Hiſtories in their proper ſeuerall times, when as they were performed, which I haue done onely for thy vertuous delight, &c.

The names of BOOKES and AVTHOVRS from whence I deriue my *Antiquities* and *Ancient Stories*.

The Bible.
Iosephus.
Berosus.
Homer.
Thucidides.
Metasthenes.
Virgil.
Xenophon.
Ouid.
Diogenes Laertius.
Dyodore Sicillian.
Herodotus.
Titus Liuius.
Denis of Halicarnas.
Procopius.
Cornelius Tacitus.
Strabo.
Iuuenal.
Dares of Phrygia.
Dictis of Creete.
Egisippus.
Valerius Maximus.
Iornandes.
Macrobius.
Apian of Alexandria.
Plutarch.
Iustin.
Herodian.

Aule Gelius.
Cicero.
Horace.
Lucan.
Europia.
Tertullian.
Cassidore.
Swetonius.
Orosus.
Florus.
Pliny.
Saint Augustine.
Saint Ierome.
Eusebius.
Prosper.
Fulgentius.
Isidorus.
Lactantius.
Spartianus.
Lampridius.
Herodian.
Pomponius Letus.
Dyon Cassius.
Iulius Capitolin.
Volcatius.
Flauius Vopiscus.
Aurelius Victor.
Baptist Egnatius.

AmbroseMercelinus.
Claudianus.
Celius Rhodiginus.
Blondus.
Solin.
Sabellicus.
Platina.
Textor.
Boccace.
Volateran.
Paulus Emillius.
Mathew Palmer.

Ab vsperg.
Paralipomena.
Carions Chro.
Iohn Nawclerus.
Chro. Functi.
Budeus of Assa.
Gaguinus.
Paulus Iouius.
Mantheon.
Iohn Villano.
Francis Villano.
Nowclerus.

The Eccleſiaſticall Hiſtory.
The Trypartite Hiſtory.
The Scholaſticall Hiſtory.
The Catalogue of Saints.
The Supplement of Chronicles
Hermanus Contractus.
The Chro. of Phrygia.
The great Elucidarie.
The Annals of Aquitaine.
The Illuſtration of the Gaules.
Chronica Chronicorum.
The Chro. of the Kings of France.
The Coſmography of Sebaſtian Munſter.
Rycherius of Turkey.
Aeneas Siluius, *alias* pius ſecundus.

From this place following, the yeeres from CHRIST *his birth are placed in the Margent.*

Anno Christi. 1.

VEn Cæſar Auguſtus the ſeconд Emperor by the will of GOD, had eſtabliſhed moſt ſure peace thorow the world, our Redeemer Ieſus Chriſt, very God and man, was borne in the 42 yeer of the raign of Auguſtus, he began to preach the 15 yeere of Tiberius, and ſuffered his paſſion the 18 yeer of the ſame Tiberius, according to the Prophecies. The 3 yeere is to be noted, that the firſt yeere of our LORD hath but 7 dayes, after ſome computation, for he was borne the 25 day of December, and the firſt of January following, begannes the ſeconд yeere.

The Euſebii. Paulus Orosii. Baptistes Mantuanus Platina.

GVideriꝰ, the firſt ſonne of Cunobelinus, was ordained King. This man was valiant, hardy, wealthy, and truſted much in his ſtrength. And for that he thought the Romans had their tribute wrongfully, he of great courage denyed to pay the ſame. 21.

Wherefore Tiberius the Emperor purpoſed to come hither in perſon but death preuented him. Gniderius raigned 23 yeeres. Aruiragus, or rather (as the Baptaines terme him) Morigus, the youngeſt Sonne of Cunobelinus, and brother of Guiderius, was ordained King of Britaine, hee ſlew Hamon neere to a Pauen of the Sea, and threw him gobbet-meale therein: it is now called South-hampton. Hee ſtrengthened the Caſtle of Douer, and alſo the Caſtle of Richbourgh, neere vnto Sandwich in Kent. Hee raigned 28 yeeres, and was buried at Glocester.

Geffrey Mon. Humfrey Lhuyd. Geffrey Mon. Chro. Douer.

Albeit

45. Suetonius. Tac. lib. 99.

ALbeit, the Brytaine Hiſtory doth heere place Aruiragus, yet it is probable that Cunobelinus as reſtlued, for about 40 yeeres after Chriſt, Admimus, the ſon of Cunobeline baniſhed out of Brytaine by his father, was receiued into protection by Caius Caligula the fourth Emperour, who was then ſet forward with great preparation againſt Brytaine, but when he came into the parts of Holland againſt Boſforke, hee ſtaied, writing taunting letters to the Senate, that all Brytain was yeelded vnto him, becauſe Admimus had ſo done. Afterward as though he would immediately fight a field, he caſt his men into battels and ſquadrons vpon the Seacoaſt, diſpoſing all his Engines in moſt warrelike manner (no man knowing what he meant.) This done, he himſelfe in a Galley launched into the Sea, and immediately returning, he cauſed the Trumpets to ſound to battaile, and ſuddenly commanded them to gather Cockles and Muſcle-ſhells, and therewithall, to fill their helmets, ſaying, they were ſpoiles due to the Capitoll, and in theſe ſpoyles, hee greatly tryumphed, as though hee had ſubdued the Ocean. Hee rewarded his ſouldiours, and returned to Rome, after hee had built a high watch-Tower in token of his victory againſt the Sea, the ruines whereof are great, remayning in Hollano, but ouerflowed by the water, and to this day called the Brytons houſe, in remembrance of this ridiculous expedition againſt Brytaine, by the perſwaſion of Bericus baniſhed out of Brytaine.

The ridiculous expedition of Caligula into Brytaine.

Brytaine houſe in Holland.

45.

CLaudius the Emperour diſpatched Aulus Plancius with an army into Brytaine, where, after diuers conflicts, when hee had received part of the Boduni into his tuition, and had ſlaine Cataracus and Togodumus, Sonnes of Cunobeline, and thereby had made the Brytaines more eager to reuenge, hee ſent for Claudius himſelfe, who with great preparation, and Elephants, came into Brytaine to his army then encamped neere the Thames, with which hee paſſed ouer into Oſſer, fought with the Brytaines, obtained the victory, tooke the chiefe city of Cunobeline, and all weapons from the Brytaines, and ſo returned to Rome: the firſt moneth after, hee ſet forth from thence, where hee tryumphed, furnaming his ſonne Britanicus: to which tryumph, he permitted not only the preſidents of Prouinces, but alſo certaine baniſhed priſoners to repaire to Rome: and amiddeſt the ſpoyles taken from the Brytaines, hee fixed on the toppe of his Palace a Crowne of Gold beſet with ſtems, and foreparts of ſhips, in token hee had vanquiſhed the Brytish Ocean. Hee behaued himſelfe very courteouſly towards diuers of his friends, in ſo much that when Plancius (a notable man) who had made voyage which he made into Brytaine, atchieued diuers notable Acts, and ſhould tryumph for the ſame, the Emperour himſelfe accompanyed him, and (the like being ſuch, that with his tryumph hee ſhould goe vp into the Capitoll) Claudius gaue him the pre-eminence, and went on the left hand.

At this time Veſpaſian, who was after Emperour, was ſent by Claudius into Brytaine, where hee fought thirty times with the Brytaines, ſubdued to the Romane Empire two worthy Nations, aboue twenty Townes, and the Ile of Wight.

50.

OStorius was appointed Lieutenant in Brytaine for the Romanes, who at his firſt entry, in the beginning of Winter aſſayled the Brytaines, and purpoſed to penne them vp, and include them with Riuers and fortifications, wherefore the Iceny made an inſurrection, which when he had pacified with ſome ſlaughter, he marched againſt the Cangi, forraging all the Countries as hee paſſed, but was forced by new tumults to turne from them againſt the Brigants, whom with ſome ſlaughter, and promiſe of pardon, he pacified.

Then he made proviſion againſt the Silures which inhabited South-Wales, bearing themſelues bold vpon the puiſſance of Caracaus a baliant Brytaine, who being ſkilfull of the Country, remoued the warre into Shropſhire, where he fortified amongſt craggy mountaines a place ſtrong by ſituation, where neuertheleſſe the Romanes preuailed. The wife, daughter, and brethren of Caracaus were taken, and hee flying to Cartiſmandua a Queene, ruling in Yorkeſhire, was by her deliuered captiue to his enemies, nine yeeres after the warres begaune, who ſending him to Rome, was there in open aſſembly brought before Claudius, with his wife, daughter, brethren, and friends, and ſuch ſpoyles as had beene taken from him, where hee (nothing diſmayed in Spirit or Countenance) ſpake after this ſort to Claudius:

Caratacus' his Oration to Claudius.

If my immoderation of proſperous ſucceſſes had beene correſpondent to my Eſtate and Nobility, I might haue come to this Citty, rather a friend then a captiue: neither you haue diſdained to admit me into League, being deſcended of noble parentage, and Soueraigne ouer many Nations. This preſent ſtate of mine, as it is villainous toward mee, ſo it is honourable to you. I had horſe, men, money, munition, and what wonder is there, if I had loſt them vnwillingly? For, if you will rule and raigne ouer all, of neceſſitie all muſt come into ſeruery: If I had yeelded at the firſt, neyther my Fortune, nor my glory had beene renowned, and the oblivion of mee had enſued immediately after my execution: but if you ſaue my life, it ſhall be an euerlaſting example of your clemency. At theſe words Claudius remitted his offence, granted him life, and the Senate adiudged Oſtorius worthy to triumph: but in the meane time, the inhabitants of South-Wales, to reuenge Caratacus captiuity, intercepted and diſcomfited certaine bands of the Romans, amiddeſt which new warres Oſtorius tired with trauell, departed this life.

In Oſtorius time certaine Cities were giuen to Cogidumus a Brytish King, and a Colony of Romanes was planted there.

52. Tacitus, 3. Hiſto.

CLaudius ſent Didius to ſupply the place of Oſtorius now departed, but in the meane

time the Silures fought fortunatly against the legions which were under the conduct of Manlius Valens. In this time warre brake out betweene Cartismanda Queene of the Brygants, and Venutius her husband, whom she refused, and matched her selfe with Velocatus his Squire: Hereupon Venutius favoured of the people, attayled her territory, and she succoured by the Romanes, after she had intercepted by treachery Venutius brother and allies, fought with him. Where, after a sharpe fight, she by the ayde of the Romans, prevayled, as also Caesius Nasica did with his legion against the Brytaines, in another place: for Didius bred others in these matters, because hee was aged, and onely kept that which others had heretofore conquered.

61. CLaudius being now poysoned by Agrippina his wife, Nero her sonne obtained the Romane Empire, and about the seventh yeare of his raigne, Veranius was appointed Lieutenant here, who dyed within the first yeere of his government, saying, that hee would have subdued Britannies, had he survived but two yeeres: but about this time great slaughter was here of the Romanes.

62. SVetonius Paulinus was then sent hither, who at his arrivall purposing to subdue Angleley, whither many Brytaines had withdrawne themselves, hee in boates with flat bottoms ferried over his footemen, bringing over his horsemen by some Fords, whereas on the shores stode closely together great numbers of Brytaines, and among them women gadding up and downe frantickely in mourning weedes, their hayre hanging about their eares, and shaking firebrands: the Druydes also casting up their hands towards heaven, thundred out cruell execrations, with which unusually affrighted, the Romanes at first stood dismayed, but after encouraged by the Generals perswasion, they burst in among them, made great slaughter, got the possession of the Ile, and felled downe the woods consecrated to superstitious rites. In the meane space the Brytaines tooke two cities belonging to the Romanes, and slew 80000. of their people, and the whole Ilwo revolted: and to the Romanes reproach, the slaughter was committed by a woman, being foretolde them by many strange signes and tokens. For in the court was heard a noyse with much slaughter. In the Theatre a great tumult and much wondring, when there was no man there, that either spake by mone or deede. Besides, in the River of Thames certaine houses or buildings were seene. The Image of the goddesse Victoria in the Temple of Camulodunum (which is Maldon in Essex as W. Camden writeth) turned her backe as though shee had yeelded to her enemies: the women raune as madde here and there, saying, and singing, Destruction is at hand.

Finally, betwixt the Ilands and France, the Ocean Sea appeared as it flowed with blood.

The occasion of this warre was a confiscation of the Brytaines goods, which being remitted by Claudius the Emperour, Decianus Catus then Procurator of the Ile, sayd that it ought to have bene rented. To this cause was added, that whereas (against their willes Seneca had lent them 40. Sesterces upon great Usury) he now with great force and all kinde of violence compelled them to pay all the whole summe at one payment, and also perswaded them to make warre on the Romanes.

Bunducia of Brytaine, a woman of noble byth, not onely with much honour ruled amongst them, but also was the soveraigne in their warres, and had indeed a Romache more manly then womanlike: who having gotten together an army of 120000. men, got her upon her seat made of Parish turues, after the manner of the Romanes, and being a tall woman, of comely shape, and severe countenance, sharpe voyce, with yellow hayre hanging downe to her skirtes (Ponticus Virunius saith to her thighes) shee ware a great chaine of gold, and had on her backe a coate of sundry colours, and a plaited Kirtle. When shee was thus apparelled, and had in her hands a great speare, shee spake unto them to this effect:

First shee commended liberty, shewing them how poverty with liberty, was farre better than great riches in misery and bondage: on the other side, with great eloquence shee declared the mischiefes and calamities they suffered at the hands of Romanes, who exacting Tributes of payments, so oppressed them, that much better it were once to die, then long to live in such extreame slavery.

Secondly shee reproved them, for not expelling their enemies, as their forefathers had done Iulius Caesar, Claudius, and Caligula: and against shee prayed them for their present readinesse to helpe her, and recover their ancient state.

Thirdly, shee disabled the Romanes, for that they were few, combred with armour, and so faint of courage, that they had rather fight a farre off, then encounter with them by handstrokes: shee commended the Brytanes, to be more in number, of greater valour, and farre more able to abide hunger, cold, thirst, rayne, winde, heat, &c. shee added the vantage of the place, as being at home, where the woods and ryvers, lakes, and all other things were well knowne to every one of them.

Lastly, shee exhorted them to shew themselves as Dogges and Wolues among fearefull Hares and Foxes: wherewithall shee let out of her lappe a quicke Hare, thereby to learne the event of her enterprize. The Hare having a prosperous passage, all the multitude gave a great showte, and Bunducia clapping her hands gave thankes to her gods, that thee ruled not the Romanes, as did Nero (who though he were a man, yet was in deed but a woman, for that hee sang and played on the Harpe) but the Brytaines, who esteemed it better to be Warriours then Plow-men, who, as they had to all

all things in common, so had they both wives and children, and that having a kingdome amongst such a kinde of people, she prayed their divine aydes against a spitefull and wicked kinde of men, if they were to be called men, who lived hot baths, dainty fare, Wine, ointments, lay in soft beds, and were ballails to such a wanton Minstrell as their Emperour Nero was.

Bunducia having spoken these and such like amongst her people, with all her hoste shee set forward against the Romanes, who at that time were without Head or Governour, for that Paulinus was gone with his army into Iland neere Brytaine, by meanes whereof Bunducia tooke two of their Cities, and committed the notable slaughter before remembred.

Shee exercised all kinde of cruelty on such men as shee tooke. As for the noble women that shee gate, shee hanged them up, and cut off their Pappes, and sewed them to their mouthes: besides this, she stretching their bodies out at length, thrust sharpe stakes cleane thorow them: all which things were done in despight, when they sacrificed and feasted in their Temples, but specially in the wood called Andates.

Paulinus, who had now subdued Angleley, hearing of the foresayd slaughter, returned to Brytaine, yet would hee not adventure the fortune of battell with them, fearing their number, but when hee wanted victuall, and that his enemies approched, hee was compelled to abide the battaile. Bunducia, who had in her army 230000 men, was her selfe placed in a Chariot, and ordered her men at length: but Paulinus could not stretch his company so long, for that they were not of any such number: but at length hee divided his army into three parts, so that at one time they might fight in sundry places, exhorting them not to bee abashed at the multitude of their enemies, for both they and their forefathers had with lesse number atchieved greater matters, and gotten greater Victories. Adding, that now was the time to play the men, to enjoy that in quiet, which before their Ancestors had won, and recover that which they had lost, or else to live for ever in misery and shame. Againe, hee shewed what cruelty their eyes had seene, by those barbarous people, to such as they had overcome, exhorting them in revenge thereof to fight manfully, and there was no doubt but the gods (who were alwayes favourable to such as had suffered cruelty) would helpe them: and better it were to dye fighting valiantly, then with reproach to be taken, and dye in their enemies hands like dogges. Finally (saith hee) whether we live or dye, Brytaine shall bee ours: for though the other Romanes lose it, yet shall our bones continually keepe it. When hee had thus spoken, the signe of the battaile was given, and each part prepared himselfe: the Brytaines with great and strange noyse, the Romanes in silence came so neere, that they might throw their Darts to them: and perceiving their enemies to approach, with great violence they shed in amongst them, and brake their array: but after being compassed with the multitudes of their enemies, the battaile waxed doubtfull. The light harnessed men became to smite each other, and those of heavy armour together with the Horsemen encountred, and the Romane Archers fought against the Brytish Chariots. They which fought without brest-plates, were slaine with Darts. This encounter was made in three severall places, and was fought with great courage on both sides.

At the last, the Romanes departed Conquerours, many were slaine in the battaile, and many were taken. Great numbers which escaped, prepared to fight againe, but in the meane space Bunducia died of a disease which shee had, and they mourned, and buried her very honourably. After, those that remained were easily overcome and dispersed.

Tacitus saith, that Prasutagus King of the Iceni, a Prince of great wealth, appointed, that Caesar and his owne two daughters should inherite his lands, hereby thinking all his life to be more quiet, and being deceased, his wife and daughters should bee the more safe by meanes of such protection: but it fell out farre otherwise, for the Centurions got his Realme, their servants spoyled his house, beat his wife, and deflowred his daughters: others, the chiefe men of his Land were displaced of their inheritances, and handled cruelly. In revenge whereof Bunducia raised the warre, and committed the slaughter before remembred, and at last, her army once overthrowne by Paulinus, being afraid to fall into her enemies hands, shee poysoned her selfe.

THis yeere 67. being the eleventh yeere of Nero the Tyrant, he caused the Citty of Rome to be set on fire, and the same fire continued six dayes, and seven nights, onely because he would see the likenes of the fire that consumed the great Citty of Troy: and in the time of Titus Vespasianus, the Citty of Rome was on fire three dayes together.

POlicletus then a servant of Nero, was sent hither to survey the state of Brytaine, who discharged Paulinus Suetonius of the government.

PEtronius Turpilianus was sent into Brytaine as a man fitte to be entreated, and being not altogether agrainted with offences of the enemies, was the readier to come to grace: who setting matters in their former stay, and attempting no further, moderated the Province unto rebellious Quietnes. Trebellius being both faint-hearted and too sluggish, and also utterly unacquainted with experiments of armes, ruled the Province with a certaine mildnes of government. Now for his barbarous

Ponticus Virunius.

Cornelius Tacitus.

Rome set on fire and continued burning 6 dayes and 7 nights.

Petronius Turpilianus.

barbarous people also learned to winke at intiſing tires, and the ciuill warres of the Romans then happening, was a cloake to his cowardize: but there preſently aroſe diſcord betwéne Roſcius and Carbus, legates of the 20. legion, when the ſouldiours (accuſtomed to be employed in expeditions) gaue themſelues to laſciuiouſnes: whereupon Trebellius take his flight, and hid his head, to auoyde the fury of the army, and in moſt baſe and beaſtly manner, gouerned (as it were) by entreaty, ſo as they might ſéeme to haue compaſſioned, that the ſouldiours ſhould liue in all libertie, and the Generall at his faſety. This time for a yeere and a halfe there was deadly ciuill warre among the Romanes for the Empire, betwéene Galba, Otho, and Vitellius.

Cap. Veſpaſius Volanus.

VEſpaſius Volanus then was ſent hither by Vitellius, he did not vſe any diſcipline or correction in Byptaine, ſo as there continued the like ſloth and cowardize in his ſouldiors, toward their enemies, and the Campe ſtill as full of watonneſſe, ſauing that Volanus was a good and milde man, and thereby made himſelfe beloued where he ſhould haue béene feared. In this time, Vitellius aduanced many ſouldiers in the Byptaine legions, and Herodonius Flaccus brought vnto him 8000. choſen men of warr out of Byptaine. The Byptains ſeing the Romans thus encombred with ciuill war, began to trouble them: wherefore Volanus would ſend no ſuccour to Vitellius at his commandement, when Veſpaſian warred againſt him for the Empire, and all the Byptaines fauoured Veſpaſian.

Tacitus.

Cap. 70.

VVHen as (with the reſt of the world) Veſpaſian had recouered Byptaine, then were there placed great Captaines, and notable armies, the enemies hope abated, and Petilius Cerealis brought great feare vpon the Byptaines. The city of the Brigants (which was accounted one of the greateſt of the land) being by him aſſayled, he had many encounters, and ſome not without ſlaughter, whereby he opther conquered or aſſayled a great part of their countrey.

Petilius Cerealis.

Iulius Frontinus.

Iulius Frontinus, a man as worthy and valiant as was poſſible, take then the charge vpon him, and ſubdued the nation of the Silures, being both valiant and warlike, notwithſtanding the valour of the enemy and difficulties of the places.

Iulius Agricola.

THis was the ſtate of Byptaine, and courſe of the warres, which Agricola found arraying in the middeſt of Summer, the ſouldiours euen then beginning to retire to their ſtrengthes, and the enemy ſearching for his moſt aduantage.

The City of the Ordouices, few dayes before his arriuall, almoſt wholly defeated a company lying vpon their borders. This beginning ſtirred vp the Prouince, ſerving for an example to them, how to conceiue the warres, and yet deſired to ſée what was in their new gouernour. Agricola, although the Summer were now well ſpent, the bands diſperſed al about the prouince, the ſouldiours had determined to reſt for that yéere, the time being late and incommodious to commence the warre, thinking it would be better to man the places moſt ſuſpected: yet he determined nenertheleſſe to preuent danger, and gathering together the Standards of the Legions, with a few of his forayne aydes, for that the Ordouices durſt not take the field, marched forth againſt them himſelfe in the vaward of his army, that others might take like courage in the ſame danger, and put almoſt that whole nation to the ſword: then following his good ſucceſſe, he inuaded Angleſey (which Suetonius had before attempted) cauſing certaine Byptaines that ſerued him, and knew the hauens and manner of ſwimming, with horſe, and harneſſe to paſſe ouer into the Ile on a ſuddaine, wherewith the inhabitants were ſo amazed (who fearing nothing becauſe they ſaw no nauie) that they ſubmitted the Ile vnto him immediately. Now hauing ſome quietneſſe, and perceuing that war would little preuaple againſt the Byptaines, if they were iniuriouſly handled, he purpoſed to cut off all cauſes of quarell, and firſt reforming his own family, did nothing partially, onely reſpected the vertus of men, loolened tributes, and behaued himſelfe moſt honourably. And thus much the firſt yéere.

Tacitus.

The death of the holy Apoſtle Saint Peter.

THis yéere 70. being the 14. yéere of Nero, Baſſus and Tuſcus being then Romane Conſuls, the holy Apoſtle Saint Peter hauing accompliſhed his preaching in the weſt parts, returned to Rome, where he preached againe as he did before, and was therefore apprehended, and araigned as a villaine and odious Traytor to the Romane Emperor, by reaſon he daily and openly preached that Jeſus Chriſt was the Son of the liuing God, Kings of Kings, and Lord of heauen and earth: and therefore (as ſaith Saint Chryſoſtome) he was executed in an out-place vpon a Croſſe, as was vſed vpon haynous offenders, and theeues, and baſe perſons: but when he came to the place of execution, in ſigne of true humility, he refuſed to be crucified, ſtanding vpright, ſaying his Lord and maſter was crucified on that manner, and thereupon cauſed himſelfe to be nayled to the Croſſe, with his féete vpward and his head downward: but they durſt not execute Saint Paul on that manner, nay vpon a Croſſe, becauſe hee was a free Romane, and therefore they admitted to him an honourable death, and in a place of reſpect.

When the Summer began, he aſſembled his armies, trained his ſouldiers, forraged the enemies countries, with ſuddaine inuaſions to their great feare, & put to fauourably, as many countries willingly yeelded vnto him, and ſuffered Caſtles to be built among them. The Winter following he ſpent in ciuil adminiſtratiō, counſelling the people priuately, and helping them publickly to build houſes, Temples and Court-houſes. He procured noble mens children to ſtudie liberall Sciences, and then began the Byptaines to conforme themſelues to Roman faſhions and attyre.

The third yéere hee diſcouered people in the North hitherto vnknowne, euen as far as Tay, terrifying the people, and placing fortreſſes moſt wiſely to the annoyance of the enemy.

The fourth Summer hee employed, getting thoſe Countries which hitherto he had paſſed thozow, euen to Odenbozough, Frith, and Cluid, the narrow ſpace betweene the which waters he fortified.

The fift yéere, by Sea he diſcouered and vanquiſhed further nations in the North, and placed Garriſons in the coaſt toward Ireland, whereunto he alſo aſpired, and to that end retained an Irith Prince with him, that was oppoſed out of his Countrey by ciuill diſſention.

But in the Summer which begunne the firſt yeere of his gouernment, he ſearched the hauens by a nauy for that purpoſe ſent to the Sea, ſearing leſt all thoſe nations beyond had united themſelues and kept the paſſages by land: but afterward he marched forward, his Nauie coaſting with his army by land, ſo as ſometime in the ſame Campe, he had horſemen, footmen, and Sea-men, lodged together. It was reported by ſuch as were taken priſoners, that the ſight of the Nauy much aſſonied the Byptaines as men from whom all refuge was cut off, the ſecrets of their ſeas being diſcouered: wherefore determining to trie it with hand blowes, the inhabitants of Calidonia with great preparation, although the repoyt thereof were greater (as it often happeneth in vnknowne matters) of their olone accord aſſayled ſome Caſtles, and ſeing themſelues rather to be aſſayled then defendants, put the Romanes in ſome doubt: whereupon the cowards pretending policie, aduiſed to retire on this ſide Bobotria, rather then to be driuen thereto by force, when as in the meane while, Agricola knowing that the enemy would charge him in ſeuerall troupes and companies, and fearing to be ouer-matched and coupled in with number, or deceiued by the ignorance of the place, diuided his army into three battels, and ſo marched forward: which order marked by his enemies, made them alter their purpoſe, and in the night killing the watch, brake in vpon the 9. legion, halfe aſleepe and halfe affrighted, which (as they tooke it) was the weakeſt, and ſo the fight continued within the Campe til it was day light, at which time the Romanes hearing the ſound of the Byptaines horne to gather courage, and the Byptaines deceiued, ſo as, had it not béene for the woods and bogges, that victory had ended the whole ſtrife, after which battell the Romane ſouldiours grew to be of haute corrage, crying out to pierce the country of Caliconia, that they might finde out the vttermoſt ports and bounds of Byptaine. The Romanes on the other ſide, aſſeruing the peace of this victory, put to the proweſſe of the Romane ſouldier, but to Fortune and the willines of their Captain, vſed all meanes poſſible, to hearten vp and arme their youth, beſtowing their wiues and children in places of ſafegard, and by ſacrifices and holy aſſemblies vnite all their Cities togother: vpon theſe reſolutions they remoued.

In the beginning of the next ſommer, which was the 8. yeere of his charge, Agricola ſending his fleete before him, which often put alarus and ſpopled the Countries, thereby cauſing a great and vnextame feare: himſelfe with a picked army, wherevnto he added of the valiantſt Byptaines, came to the mountaine Grampius, whereon his enemies had encamped, (for the Byptains nothing quailed by the ſucceſſe of the former encounter, and expecting nothing but a reuenge, or bondage, learning at length, that common danger is onely to bee reſiſted with common conſent) by leagues and meſſages had ſtirred vp the minds of all the Cities about. Now were there to be in armies 30. thouſand and vpward, vnto which number, for youth, and old age, and ſuch as were of ſtrength and luſty yeeres, euery man bearing his token of prayſe about him, continually repayred from all ſides. Their hart continually repyned from all ſides. Their hart amongſt many other Captaines, Calgacus a man both in nobility and valor aboue the reſt, ſpake to the aſſembly in this manner: As often as I behold the cauſes of this warre and our neceſſity, my minde (my men of Byptaine) and your manifeſt conſent, tell me the beginning of liberty to all Byptaine: for, euery one of you hauing tryed ſeruitude, and hauing no othe land nor ſea, which can ſafe us (the Romance maſte being at our elbowes) the very warre and weapons by which are the honour of the worſt, muſt be our only ſafety of the inuincible hearted. With theſe and ſuch reaſons Calgacus drawne from the cuſtome of their gouernours, the pride and inſolency of their gouernours, the fickle felowſhip of the Romanes ſeruing in their enemies campe, ready to change vpon euery high occaſion, and the preſent remoue of all miſery, which as he ſaid in the beginning, was onely valiancy, he ſo ſtirred vp all mens minds, that they applauded his Oration after their manner, with ſongs and diuers kind of noyſes. This Oration being ended, as alſo Agricola his ſpeech to his ſouldiours, the Byptaines began to encounter. Agricola placed his battailes in this order: he made the maine battell of the ſtrangers (of whom 8. thouſand, on each ſide thereof, for wings he placed his Byptaines to the number of 3000. and his legion he caſed to guard the trenches of his Campe, that if there ſhould happen any vnlucke to be giuen without the bloodying of Romane blud, or if his maine battaile were broken, they might be gathered againe, and the fight renued by his legions. The battaile of the Byptaines (of terrible their enemies, as alſo to their owne becauſe thoſe, ſtood on higher ground, ſo as their battered helmes came ouer the plaine, the reſt were on the ſide of the hill their Charriots in the meane time gallopping vp and downe the field, making great ſhoutes and crie. Then the Byptaines ſeeing the number of his enemies to be greater then his owne, and fearing to be charged on both the face and flanke of his battaile at one time, and that many thought it neceſſary to make the wings aduance forward, remained not without reaſon vnmoued in his firſt reſolution, cauſing his battaile

battaile to be somewhat drawne in length, himselfe alighted from his horse, and stood on foote before his standards. The first fight was with shotte of arrowes and darts, during which time the Brytaines, both skilfully, and couragiously with their huge Swords and small Bucklers, either bare or brake the Romanes shotte, and answered them with an infinite number of the like, untill Agricola was perswaded by bands of Hollanders, and Brabanders, that the matter might be brought to swords & hand-strokes, which kind of fight they were acquainted withall, by long hunting the warres, and the same was very incommodious for their enemies, bearing but small shields, and unmeasureable swords. For the pointlesse swordes of Brytaines, were unfit for a throng, and where they wanted roome. Wherefore the Hollanders strake thicke together, and thrust them over the Bucklers, wounding them in the faces, and having broken that battaile, passed forward toward them which kept the hill, which seene by the rest of the Romanes bands, they partly moued by enuie of the others glory, and partly by heat of their owne courages, cut in peeces those that they first encountred, leauing notwithstanding, some halfe dead and others not touched, for haste to obtaine a perfect victorie. In the meane while, the troups of the Brytain horsemen, did take their flight, but the Chariots put themselues piecemeale among the footebands, which kinde of fight, (at first) seemed somewhat terrible to their enemies, but it long serued not their turnes, being assayled with a thicke preasse of their enemies, and the ground not commodious for the Chariots, nor their riders all of the best. So as at the last, their Chariot-horses, coursing up and downe the fielde without guiders, ouerranne many of their own companie, as they fled for feare from one place to another. The Brytaines, which all this while kept the hill, and came not to the fight, making little reckoning of the small number of the Romanes, beganne by little and little to descend, intending to enuirone them in, in the middest of their conquest, which surely they had done if Agricola, suspecting the same, had not dispatched foure companies of horsemen (which hee kept for all soddaines) to encounter with them, who the more fiercely they assailed, so much the more sharpely repulsed them, and sent them to flight: whereupon the deuice of the Brytaines turned to their own harme. Moreouer, by Agricola his commandement, the wings of the horsmen were taken from the front of this battel and were made to charge vpon the battel of his enemies, standing ouer-against them. Then might you behold in the open field, a grieuous and lamentable spectacle. Some followed the chase, some tooke prisoners, and after killed them to take others. Now the enemies as euery one thought best, fled, some in heapes and armed fled from a smaller number: other, though vnarmed, tarried and were slaine: euery where lay weapons, carkasses, and lymbs cut off, the ground all bloody: sometimes the vanquished approching neere to Victors, would make head, and entrappe the

heedelesse followers, so as if Agricola had not caused certaine lustie bands in the manner of a search, and also diuers horsemen, leauing their horses where the Woods were thick, and others on horseback where the wods would suffer, to range them all about, there might haue bene some detriment receiued by the much hardiness. But when the Brytaines saw themselues pursued in order of battell, they tooke againe their flight, not in companies as before, nor tarrying one for another, but here and there, euen as men glad to escape, sought long and by-wayes. Night and wearinesse of slaughter ended the chase. There were slaine of the Brytaines about 10000. of the Romane army, 340. among whom was Aulus Atticus, Captaine of a band, whom the heate of his youth, and courage of his horse brought into the hands of his enemies. That night the victors made merry with the spoils, but the Brytaines, wandring vp and downe, men and women lamenting together, relieued and fetcht away their hurt men, assembled together the whole, forsook their houses, and for anger set fire on them, chusing themselues lurking places, which straight they forsake againe: sometime conceiuing good hope, which straightway quayled againe: and some were knowen to kill their wiues and children, as though they had therein taken compassion vpon them. The next day made the victory more manifest, in which there was nothing but silence, the hils being then forsaken, and allo the houses smoaking a farre off.

Agricola sending abroad his espialls, could finde no enemy to make head, wherefore summer being too farre spent to proceed any further in the warre, he had his Souldiers into the coasts of the Horestij, and there taking hostages caused his nauie to coast about Brytain, which at last arriued at the Hauen called Trutulensis, afterward hauing beholden his Souldiers in their winkering places, departed Brytaine, and left the prouince in quiet to his successor.

Diuers authors affirme, that about this time, the Gospell of Christ our Sauiour was first Preached in this Iland. Nicephorus a Greeke author in his second booke, 40. Chapter, hath as followeth. Simon borne in Cana Galilei, who for his feruent affection to his Master, and great zeale he take by all meanes to the Gospell, was surnamed Zelotes, he hauing receiued the holy Ghost from aboue, trauailed through Egypt and Affrick, then through Mauritanie and all Lybia, preaching the Gospell. And the same Doctrine he brought to the occidentall sea, and the Iles called Brytaniæ, &c. And in the 3. Book and 1. Chap. he saith, The holy Apostles (like as wee haue declared already) being dispersed throughout the whole earth, did diuide the prouinces amongst them by lot, to preach the Gospell in. Peter vndoubtedly first at Jerusalem, then in Galatia, Bythinia, with the higher Asia, Cappadocia, and all Italy, taught the Gospell: John in Asia, who ended his life there. To Andrew fel the Prouinces on the coast of Euxine, all Scythia, Byzans, Macedonia, and the frute land of Greece: Thomas among the Parthians, Indians,

Dorotheus.

Inhabitants of Glastenbury. Ex Gulielmo Malmesburiensis. Ex Antiquitatibus Glastoniensibus. Ioseph. ab Arimathea. Glastenbury first Church of Christs name in Brytaine. Ioseph Caprarensis. Melkin and Merlin.

Chronic. Regia.

First Christians in Brytaine. Nicephorus.

Indians, and the Ile of Taprobane did publish the Gospell: Another chose Egypt and Lybia: another the vttermost coasts of the Ocean, with the Iles of Brytaine, &c. Dorotheus writeth thus: Simon Zelotes, passing through Mauritania, and Affrica, preached Christ, at length was crucified, slaine and buried in Brytaine, or rather Bithania. Also he saith, Aristobulus, whom the Apostle to the Romanes remembreth, was made a Bishoppe in Brytaine or Bithania. George Maior writeth in a preface, that immediatly after Christs resurrection vnder Claudius the Emperour, the light of the Gospell was kindled in Brytaine by Ioseph of Arimathea, that buried the body of Christ. Tertullian writing against the Iewes of those times, saith: The Brytains inhabitants of places vnknown to the Romanes, yet did obey and were subiect to the Kingdome of Christ. William of Malmesbury, in his booke of the antiquities of Glastenbury, allegeth Freculphus to write in his second booke and 4th chapter, as followeth: Philip the Apostle, preaching the Word of God in Gaule, (now called France) chose out 12 amongst his Disciples whom he sent into Brytain to preach the Word of life, and vpon euery one of them, he most deuoutly stretched out his right hand: ouer these he appointed for chiefe, his deare friend Ioseph of Arimathea, that buried our Lord. These (saith Iohn Capgraue, who alledgeth Melkin and Merlin) came into this Land, the yeer of Christs Incarnation 36. in the time of Aruiragus, who gaue to them the Ile of Aualon, where they builded an Oratory of wythen wands, and after there were buried: which place being since encreased, and newly builded by diuers Princes, was named Glastenbury. For confirmation whereof King Henry the second (as himselfe in his Charter affirmeth) hauing diligently perused the Priuileges and Charters, which he caused to be presented and read, not onely of William the first, of William the second, & Henry the first his Grandfather: but also the Charters of the Princes, his predecessors, of more ancient times, to wit, Edgar, Edmond, Edward, Elfred, Bringwalthus, Kenthwin, Baldred, Ina, Arthur, and that noble man, Cudred, and many other Christian Kings beside, also of Kenewalla, sometime a Heathen and Pagan King, concerning the house of Glastenbury, found that in some of those Charters, it is called The Mother of Saints: of some other, The Graue of the Saints, and that the said place was first builded euen by the very Disciples of Christ themselues, and by them dedicated to our Lord, as the first place which hee chose to himselfe in this Realme: all which is to be, the foresaid King Henry established by his Charter: which Charter my selfe haue seene and read.

37. Gaufrid.

MArius, Sonne of Aruiragus, an excellent Wise man, was ordained King of Brytaine. At this season, Rodrike, King of the Picts, (which were people of Scythia,) accompanied with the Scots, inuaded Brytaine, and spoyled the country with sword and fire, against whom, Marius with his Knights, assembled in all haste, and gaue them sharpe battell, wherein Rodrike was slaine, with a great number of his souldiers vpon Stanmore, in token of which victory, there was a stone not farre from Carlile erected with this inscription, In token of Marius victory. To them which remained, Marius gaue inhabitance in the further part of Scotland. And forsomuch as the Brytaines disdained to giue to them their daughters in marriage, they acquainted them with the Irishmen, and married their daughters, and grew in processe of time to a great people. He repaired, walled and fortified the city of Caerlegion, now called Chester. He raigned 53 yeeres.

Flores Historiarum.

Ran. Higd. Henry Bradshaw. Chester repaired.

THis yeere 74 being the second yeere of the raigne of Vespatian the Emperour, the glorious Temple and City of Jerusalem was vtterly destroyed by fire, being 1101 yeer after the foundation of the Temple by Salomon, and the reuerent Beda saith, it was 1492 yeeres after the building thereof by Salomon, and 590 yeeres after, it was redified in the second yeere of Darius.

The destruction of Jerusalem and the Temple.

HElius, surnamed Adrianus, the 15 Emperour of the Romanes, beganne his raigne in the yeere of our Redemption, 119. hee raigned 21 yeeres, and in his time, the Vniuersity or Study of Philosophy in Athens, was transferred to Rome, and in the fifteenth yeere of his raigne, he erected a godly Library in the City of Athens.

The Vniuersity of Athens transferred to Rome.

This Adrianus caused his owne Statua to be set vp in the very same place of the Temple in Jerusalem, where the Ark of God vsed to stand: but the yoke remainder of the distressed Iewes, inhabiting part of the ruines, would not permit it, but with one consent put it out of that place, whereat the Emperor became sore inraged, and forthwith expelled all Iewes from Jerusalem, vtterly raced the City, not leauing one stone vpon another, either of the walls, or any other building whatsoeuer, and straightly commanded that the City should neither be repayred nor inhabited, and that the Iewes should be dispersed, and held bagabonds: this was done in the yeere of our Lord, 130.

Jerusalem made desolate as our Sauiour had foretold.

And about the same, time Pope Thelesphorus constituted the foure dayes fasting, and abstayning from flesh, comonly called Lent. This Pope was martyred in the 4 yeere of the raigne of Antonius the Emperor, surnamed The godly, and in the 14 yeere of the foresaid Adrianus, Galen the great Phylician flourished, and was very famous in Rome: hee liued 87 yeeres, and wrote many worthy bookes.

Lent instituted.

Galen the famous Phylician.

DOmitianus the Emperour sent Salustius Luculius into Brytaine, whom he shortly put to death, for that he suffered certain Lawes to be called Luculleu, after his name. Some write that Cneus Trebullius was now gouernour heere.

94. Suetonius.

What Lieutenants were in Brytaine for the time of Nerua and Traiane, I find not recorded: but when Adrian was possessed in the Empire,

...us Se-
...us.
120.
...us
...ll.

Julius Severus governed here under him, whom Adrianus called out of Bytaine to warre against the Iewes, and came hither himselfe in person, pacified the tumults, reared a wall, which should separate the barbarous from his subiects, and returned to Rome.

Spartianus.

124. Hadrianus Colchester. ...ended.

COilus the Sonne of Marius, was ordained King, hee was brought vp euen from his youth in Rome among the Romanes, and therefore fauouring them, payed the tribute truly: he builded Colchester, and raigned 55 yeeres.

139. ...nius.

ANtonius Pius succeeded Hadrianus in the Empire, and gouerned this Prouince by Lollius Vrbicus, who ouercame the Bytaines, and raised another wall of turffes, to keepe out the incodes of the Northerne Bytaines.

162.

ANtonius Philosophus now ruled the Romaine Empire, and Calpharnius Agricola was sent hither with authority against the Bytaines, then repining at the Romanes, but with what successe it is not specified.

179. Horent. Wigorn.

LVcius the son of Coilus, was ordained King, who in all his Acts and Deedes followed the steps of his forefathers, in such wise as hee was of all men loued and dread. Hee sent his two Ambassadors, Eluanus and Medwinus, two learned men in the Scriptures, with his louing letters to Elutherius, Bishop of Rome, desiring him to send some deuout and learned men, by whose instruction, both he and his people might be taught the faith and Religion of Christ: whereof Eluctherius being very glad, baptized these two messengers, making Eluanus a Bishop, and Medwinus a teacher, and sent also with them into Bytaine, two famous Clarkes, Faganus and Deruuianus, by whose diligence, Lucius, and his people of Bytaine were baptized, and instructed in the faith of Christ: Temples were made Cathedrall Churches, and Bishoppes placed where Flamines before had bene: at London, Yorke, and Carlion vpon Vske, (now saint Dauids in Wales) were placed Archbishops: thus farre after the common opinion, and Writers of that time. True it is, that till this day, there remaineth in Somersetshire, in the Deanery of Dunsto, a parish church bearing the name of S. Deruian, as a Church erected & first founded, or to him dedicated. To the confirmation whereof, the reuerend Beda writeth thus: In the yeer 156 Marcus Aurelius Verus, the 14 Emperour after Augustus, gouerned the Empire, with his brother Aurelius Commodus. In whose time, Eluctherius, a godly man, being Pope of the Church of Rome, Lucius, King of Bytaine wrote vnto him, desiring that by his commandement hee might be made a Christian: which his request was granted him, whereby the Bytaines receiuing then the faith, kept it sound and vndefiled in rest and peace, vntill Diocletian the Emperours time. Thus farre Beda, of that matter, which may suffice to proue the Christian faith, then to bee receiued here, but Beda speaketh nothing of such an Epistle sent by Eluctherius to Lucius, as some haue ascribed vnto him, I onely finde the same entred in a booke intitled: Constitutions, pertaining to the Guild-hall of London, misdated in the Latine, as the English following thereth.

England receiued the faith. Beda. Aster. Flores Histo. riar Ruber S. Alaphs. Iohn Capgraue. Ranulphus Cestrensis. Lendey, Yorke and Carleon.

The yeere after Christs birth, 169. Pope Eluctherius did write to Lucius King of Britain, for the amendment of the Kings and the Nobility of Bytaine as followeth. You required that wee should send you the Romane and Imperiall Lawes, that you might vse them in your kingdome of Bytaine, but those Lawes wee may disprooue, and not the Lawes of God. You haue receiued lately through Gods goodnesse in your kingdome, the faith and Law of Christ, you haue there in your kingdome, both Testaments, out of them by Gods grace, and the aduice of your Realme take a Law, and thereby patiently gouerne the kingdome. You are the Vicar of God in your kingdome, according to the kingly Prophet. The earth is the Lords, and his fulnesse is the whole World, and all that dwell therein: and againe, Thou hast loued righteousnesse, and hated iniquity, wherefore God (euen thy God) hath anoynted thee with the oyle of gladnesse aboue thy fellowes. They are the Kings children, Christian nations, & people of your kingdome, that liue and consist vnder your protection, peace and kingdome according to the Scripture: as an Hen gathereth her chickens vnder her wings, the people and Nations of the kingdome of Bytaine is yours, such as are diuided, you should gather them together to the Law of Christ: his holy Church to peace and concord: and cherish, maintaine, protect, gouerne and defend them from the iniurious malice, and their enemies. Woe be to that kingdome, the King whereof is a childe, and the Princes eate early in the morning. I do not call a King a childe for his youth or minority, but for his folly, iniquity, and madnes, according to the Kingly Prophet. The bloodthirsty and deceitfull men shall not outliue halfe their daies. By eating, we shall vnderstand Gluttony: by Gluttony, Luxury: by Luxury, all filth, wickednesse and mischiefe, according to King Salomon: Wisedome will not enter into a spitefull soule, nor inhabit in a body subiect to sinne. A King hath his name of gouerning, and not of his kingdome: so long you shall bee a King, as you rule well, otherwise you shall not be so named, and lose that name, which God forbid. God grant that you may so rule your Realme of Bytaine, that you may raign with him euerlastingly, whose Vicar you are in the said Kingdome. To whome with the Father, &c.

Epistle of S. Eluctherius to Lucius King of Bytaine. Lib. Constit. Lon.

Psalme 45.

Psalme 55.

Sapiences.

There remaineth in the Church of Saint Peter vpon Cornhill at London, a Table, wherein is written that Lucius founded the same Church to be an Archbishops sea, and made it the Metropolitan and chiefe Church of his kingdome, which so endured the space of 400 yeeres, vnto the comming of Saint Augustine.

The Archbishops names, I finde onely to be set downe by Iocelyn of Furnes, in his booke of Bytish Bishops, and not elsewhere.

Iocelyn of Furnes.

1 Thean (saith hee) was the first Archbishop of London, in the time of Lucius, who builded the said Church of Saint Peter in a place called Cornhill in London, by the aide of Ciran, chiefe butler to king Lucius.

2 Eluanus was the second, and hee builded a Library to the same Church adioyning: and conuerted many of the Druides (learned men in the Pagans Law) to the Christian faith.

3 Cadar was the third.
4 Obinus.
5 Conan.
6 Paludius.
7 Stephan.
8 Iltura.
9 Dedwin.
10 Thedred.
11 Hilary.
12 Guidelinus.
13 Vodinus slaine by the Sarons.
14 Theanus fled with the Bytaines into Wales, about the yeere of Christ, 587. Thus much out of Iocelyn of the Archbishops: the credits whereof, I leaue to the iudgement of the learned: for I read of a Bishop of London (not before named) in the yeere of Christ, 326. to be present at the second Councell holden at Arlas, in the time of Constantine the Great, who subscribed thereunto in these words: *Ex prouincia Brytannia ciuitate Londinensi Restitutus Episcopus*: as plainely appeareth in the first Tome of the Councels. Hee writeth not himselfe Archbishop, and therefore maketh that matter of Archbishops doubtfull, or rather ouerthroweth that opinion.

Godfathers and Godmothers instituted.

10 COmmodus after his father Antonius Philosophus succeeded in the Empyre with most cruell tyranny. In his time the Northerne Bytaines burst in thorow the wall, foraged the countrey, and slew the Romane Generall with his souldiers: wherefore Vlpius Marcellus was appointed here a carefull vigilant Captaine: he sore annoyed the Bytaines, which were enemies to the Romane state, and purchasing enuy by his vertue, was shortly dismissed. 181.

Dion.

20 Then Ceronnis who ruled all vnder Commodus, appointed certaine men of base estate to gouerne the Romane enemies here, wherewith the souldiours being grieued, sent 15000. chosen men out of their number to Rome, who accusing him before Commodus to compasse the Empyre for his Sonne, was deliuered vnto them, who immediately mangled him, and slew his wife with his two Sonnes.

Lampridius, Dion.

30 Commodus then sent Helnius Pertinax into Bytaine, and surnamed himselfe Brytannicus, thereunto perswaded by flatterers, when the Bytaines were to euill affected toward him, that they would haue nominated some other Emperour against him, and namely Pertinax: but these tumults were appeased by the wisedome of Pertinax to his great danger, for hee was well neere slaine in a tumult, and left among the dead, which iniury he after seuerally reuenged, and sued for his discharge, being afterward preferred to the Empyre.

Lampridius.

Capitolinus.

40 Clodius Albinus was then sent hither by Commodus, who at the first so greatly esteemed of him, that he honoured him with the Title of Cæsar, which Clodius refused: but afterwards when a false rumor was dispersed, that Commodus was slaine, he made an Oration to the legions of Bytaine, impeaching the gouernment of Emperors, and preferring the Senate: whereupon Commodus being sharpned against him, sent Iunius Seuerus to rule heere, and shortly after, Commodus was slaine.

Capitolinus.

PErtinax then was chosen Emperour, and within three moneths was slaine through the perswasions of Didius Iulianus, who enioyed the Empyre two moneths, and the practice of Clodius Albinus, which then returned into Bytaine, and (as it seemeth) recouered his former gouernment. 194.

50 SEuerus, after the death of Pertinax was saluted Emperor: he immediately slew Didius Iulianus, and because he feared Clodius Albinus with his Bytaine legions, he created him Cæsar, and partaker of the Empyre, and sent Heraclitus to gouerne this Ile: but after hee had subdued Niger, who also usurped the Empyre, hee moued warre against Albinus, who passing hence into France with the 194.

Anno mundi. 5114 Anno Christi, 162. Eluctherius by his prudent to cure Lucius.

Marcus Aurelius Anthonius, surnamed the Iust, he was the 17 Emperour of the Romanes, in the yeere of Christ, 162. hee raigned 19 yeeres, and began his raigne with his brother Lucius Anneus Anthonius. The forenamed Marcus Aurelius was very peacefull, bountifull, and magnificent, very learned in the Greeke and Latine, and a good Philosopher by nature, he married Faustina, daughter to Anthonius the godly, and it chanced one day, that two excellent skilfull men in feates of armes, performed diuers valiant combates before the Emperour and the Empresse: Faustina the Empresse beholding them earnestly, became very deeply enamoured with one of them, and from that time she beganne to langnish, in such apparant sort, as thee was constrained to manifest the same vnto her husband the Emperor, who presently by the aduice of Physicians, of Chaldea, caused the party to be slaine with whom thee was in loue, and anoynted her with his blod, and so Faustina was cured of her disease and temptation. Read Martin in his Chronicle.

The Capitol and Library in Rome burnt.

This yeere 182 Lucius Aurelius Anthonius surnamed Cómodus, the 18 Emperor of Rome, begamne his raigne, and in the 9 yeere of his raigne, the Capitol and Library of Rome were burned and quite spoyled, and the Temple of the Vestall Virgins, with a great part of the City wholy beaten downe, and not one stone thereof left one vpon another.

Lucius raigned 12 yeers, and was buried at

Britiſh army, encountred with Seuerus neere Lyons, and was there ſlaine. Henceforth Seuerus quietly enioyed the Romane Empyre, and made ſharpe warres into the Eaſterne parts of the world, with great glory.

209. But returning to Rome, hee vnderſtood of a warre raiſed in Britaine. Wherefore hee haſted hither with his two ſonnes, Baſſianus and Geta: at his arriuall, peace was offered, which he refuſed, and leauing his younger ſonne Geta to gouerne the Prouince (being the higher part of the Ile) hee with Baſſianus his eldeſt Sonne entred into the North, and paſſed the further part of this Iland without any reſiſtance: but by ambuſhes, difficulty of the way, and other inconueniences, he loſt 50000 men, and then returned, enforced the enemies to conclude a league and yeeld ſome part of their Countrey.

At concluſion of which league, when hee and his ſonne rid to treate with the Caledonians, or Northerne Britaines, Baſſianus his Sonne drawing his ſword in the ſight of the enemy, was ready to haue ſlaine him, and had done it, had not ſome of the company made an outcry: yet this fault was remitted.

After this league, the Britaines of the North reſorted to the Emperours Court, where Iulia, Seuerus wife, obiected to a woman of Britaine, the wife of Argentocrix the Caledonian, that the Britiſh women accompanied with men diſhoneſtly. Yea, quoth the Britiſh woman, we ſatisfie the naturall luſt in better ſort then you Romanes: for wee accompany our ſelues openly with the beſt men, and you commit adultery cloſely with the moſt vile perſons. But after this League, there was a generall reuolt of the Britaines againſt the Romans, which yet was pacified with great ſlaughter, and then he built Seuerus Wall. a wall of turfe, to inhabite the Northerne Britaines, from whence when he returned, at the next lodging, a Blackemoore that ſerued him, a notable ſcoffer, met him with a Crowne of Cypres: he mocked with the colour of the man, and the Cypres (which was then vſed at all buryals) as with ſignes of euill lucke, commanded the man to be ſent away, wherewith hee cryed: Thou haſt béne all in all, and haſt vanquiſhed all, and now of a Conqueroure be thou a god. Then comming to the City of Yorke (as is ſuppoſed) he was by miſtaking, brought to the Spartianus. Temple of Bellona: blacke beaſts alſo being ordained for ſacrifice, followed him home to his Palace: which things theſe did then account to be ominous.

Shortly after, he departed out of this life at Yorke, partly through ſickeneſſe, and partly through griefe conceiued of his ſonnes euill demeanor. At his laſt eſpe he vttred theſe words: I found the ſtate troubleſome euery where, and leaue it quiet euen vnto the Britaines.

Herodian. Herodian writeth that in theſe warres of Seuerus againſt the North Britaines, hee found their countrey full of watery Marſhes: by thoſe Marſhes did the Britaines ſwimme and skirmiſh with their enemies, being couered with water vp vnto the Nauell, not caring that men ſaw the priuy parts of their naked bodies. Moreouer there did they know the vſe of apparell, but accuſtomed to compaſſe their bellies and necks onely with yron, which they eſteemed an ornament and token of riches, as other barbarous people ſuppoſed of Gold. They painted their bodies with diuers pictures, and formes of beaſts, and therefore ware no garment, leſt the painting ſhould be hidden, being a Nation very valiant and warrelike, greedy of ſlaughter, and content onely with a ſmall Target, a Speare, and a Skaine hanging by their naked ſides, ignorant of the vſe of Shirts of maile and helmets, for they reckoned the ſame combersous vnto them, when they ſhould ſwimme ouer the lakes, &c.

A grieuous diſeaſe came vpon Seuerus, being ſore appalled with age, ſo that he was conſtrained to keep his chamber, and ſend Antonius vnto the warres: but Antony not regarding the buſineſſe of Britaine, endeuoured by all meanes hee could, to winne the hearts of the ſouldiers vnto him, depraying his brother, to the intent they ſhould onely ayde him to the attaining of the Soueraignty. The long malady of his father, cauſed him to perſwade Phyſicians to rid the old man out of the world, vntill that Seuerus being conſumed, ended his life, who was the moſt famous of all Emperours in warlike affaires: For none other had obtained ſo many victories and conqueſts, eyther ciuill againſt his aduerſaries, or forraine againſt the barbarous Nations. Thus deceaſed he, after he had gouerned the Empyre the ſpace of 18 yeeres, leauing his Sonnes for ſucceſſors in the ſame: vnto whom hee left alſo great abundance of riches, as none of his predeceſſours had before him done. When Antony had gotten the ſupreme authority, he put to death the Philiſtians, becauſe they obeyed not his commandement in haſtening his fathers death: and ſlew all his owne and his brothers bringers vp, and inſtructers, for that they went about to reconcile them, leaning none aliue, that was either of dignity, or had reuerenced his father. The Captaines of the army hee enticed to perſwade the ſouldiers to proclaime him only Emperor: imagining daily manifold miſchiefes againſt his brother: but hee could not winne the ſouldiers good wills. Wherefore Antonie hauing taken truce with the Britaines, remoued towards his mother and brother. Their mother laboured to bring them to agréement, wherein alſo many prudent Councellors earneſtly trauelled: Antony thereby was induced, rather of force, then good will, to counterfeite loue. After which done, the two brethren gouerning the Empyre with equall honour, launched out of Britaine, and ſailed with the reliques of their Father toward Rome. For when they had burned the body (as was the cuſtome of the Romanes) they carryed the Aſhes, intermeddled with pleaſant Odours, (in a Vaſe of Alabaſter) to Rome, that it might be there interred amongſt the monuments of other Princes. Themſelues led thus their army, as conquerours of Britaine, and paſſed ouer the Ocean vnto the next coaſt of France, and ſo haſted

ted towards Rome. When they were entred into Rome, all the people crowned with Laurell, received, and the Senate welcommed them. Foremoſt rode the Emperours themſelues, clothed in Emperiall purple. And next vnto them followed the Conſuls, bearing the beſtell with Seuerus reliques. Which beſtell, the people after they had ſaluted the new Emperour, did reuerently worſhip. The Emperours and Conſuls being thus accompanyed with Princely pompe, carried the ſame into the Temple, where the Monuments of Marcus, and other Emperours are ſeene. After they had finiſhed the ſolemne ſacrifice, and according to the ancient vſage, celebrated the Funerall ceremonies, both the brethren departed into the Emperiall Palace, which they diuided betweene them, cloſed vp all backe doores, and priuy poſternes, and met together onely at the outer gates. They choſe beſides either of them vnto himſelfe a ſundry guard, and neuer came together, vnleſſe it were ſometime for a little while to be ſéene of the people. Neuertheleſſe, firſt of all, they accomplished the due Funerals of their father. For the Romanes accuſtome to conſecrate with immortality, ſuch Emperors, as at their death, leaue either children or ſucceſſours in the Empyre behind them. And thoſe which are endued with the honour, they canonize amongſt the gods. There is thoſe the City, a certaine dolefull lamentation, mixed with fearefull ioy. And they vſe to interre the dead Corps very ſumptuouſly: but then they haue an Image, made as like the dead Emperor as may be. The ſame, within the porch of the Emperiall Palace, they lay in a great and high bed of Iuory, couered ouer with cloth of gold. The ſame Image liketh very pale, like a diſeaſed patient. About the bed on eyther ſide, a great part of the day doe certaine perſons ſit: that is to wit, on the left ſide, the Senate clothed in blacke garments: and on the right ſide, many Matrones. None of theſe are ſeene to weare any Ouches, or Chames of gold, but being clad with thinne white Veſtures, they ſhew the countenance of mourners, and thus doe they continue the ſpace of ſeuen daies: during the which, euery day the Emperors Phyſicians doe repaire vnto the bed, and as though they had felt the patients pulſes, declare that he waxeth more ſicke then before. Finally, when it ſeemeth that he is deceaſed, certains of the moſt Noble and worthy young men, of the orders of Knights and Senators, doe take vp the bed on their ſhoulders, and carry it thoſe the ſtreete, called *Sacra via*, vnto the old market place, where the Romane Magiſtrates are accuſtomed to render vp their offices. There on both ſides, are certaine ſtages made with ſteps, vpon the which, on the one ſide, is a quire of boyes being Noble mens ſonnes: and on the other ſide are many beautifull women, ſinging hymnes and ballads, in praiſe of the dead Emperour, meaſured with diuers lamentable verſes. When theſe are finiſhed, the young men doe take vp the bed againe, and beare it out of the City, into the field called Campus Martius, in the broadeſt part whereof, there is erected a Tower foure ſquare, with ſtoes of equall height, builded of great timber, like vnto a Tabernacle. The ſame within forth, is filled with dry chips and rodes, and on the outer ſide, it is hanged with Arras clothes of gold, and decked with Images of Iuory, and ſundry painted pictures. Within it alſo is another leſſe Tower, but like in forme, with doores and poſtals opened. And ouer that, the third and fourth, with many other roomes aſcending continually, vntill they reach vnto the higheſt, which is leſſe then all the other. A man may compare this building vnto Towers, which are ſet in Hauens with fire on the tops, to direct Ships which ſayle by night on the Seas, into their perfect poſts: The ſame are commonly called Phari. Now when they haue put the bed in the ſecond Tabernacle, they gather all kindes of ſpices and perfumes, with diuers odoriferous fruites, hearbes and iuices, the which they throw on heaps in the Tabernacle. Neither is there any Nation, City, or perſon, which excelleth in honour or dignity, but at that time will to the vttermoſt of his power, moſt honourably celebrate the laſt Funerals of the Emperour.

When they haue couched a great heape of ſpices together, and built the building therewith, all the Romane Knights doe ride about the Tower, with a iuſt courſe and order to and fro: Chariots are alſo drawne about, wherein many doe ſit clothed in purple, repreſenting the perſons of all Noble men, being Magiſtrates and Captaines of Rome.

The Ceremonies being thoroughly ended, the Succeſſour in the Empire, taketh a brand of fire in his hand, and fireth therewith the Tabernacle. After whom, all other that are preſent, doe throw likewiſe fire into the ſame. And immediatly all the building being filled with thoſe dry ſticks and ſpices, beginneth to burne behemently. Then out of the higheſt and leaſt Tower, as out of a high Steeple, is let forth an Eagle, the which, they beleeue, doth beare the Emperours ſoule into heauen. And from thenceforth is that Emperor worſhipped as the other gods.

From this time, to the raigne of Diocleſian, for the ſpace of 72 yeeres, there is nothing recorded in our Hiſtories hitherto publiſhed concerning Britaine: but whereas it is manifeſt that the Soueraignty of Britaine reſted in the Romane Emperours all that ſpace, I will ſet them heere downe ſucceſſiuely.

AFter Seuerus Baſſianus, ſurnamed Antonius Caracalla, murthering his brother Geta, ſucceeded in the Empire. Hée was cruell to his people: hee founded the Bath in Rome, which is called Antonians: hee was out of meaſure giuen to ſenſuality and carnall concupiſcence, inſomuch that he eſpouſed his mother in Law Iulia. Yee was murthered by Martialis, when hee had gouerned 6 yeeres. 212. Herodian.

Macrinus one yeere. 218.

223. Antonius Heliogabalus three yeeres.
Lampridius Vector. Alexander Severus, who was slaine by his souldiers here in Bryttaine, in a village called Sicila, but others say in France, thirteene yeeres.
236. Iulius Maximus three yeeres.
238. M. Antonius Gordianus one yeere.
239. Antonius Gordianus the sonne five yeeres.
245. Iulius Philippus the first Christian Emperour, five yeeres.
250. Decius two yeeres.
252. Trebonianus Gallus, and Vibius Hostilianus two yeeres.
252. Iulius Æmelianus foure moneths.
254. Licinius Valerianus five.
Lacinius Galicinus fifteene.

At this time there arose in divers countries thirty Usurpers, which are called the thirty tyrants, of the which Lollianus Posthumus, Victorianus Territus, as it is supposed, kept Bryttaine from Gallicinus.

Flauius Claudius two.
269. Aurelianus five.
Tacitus five moneths.
Florianus three moneths.

This yeere 276. being the yeere since the creation of the world, 4238. and of the Olimpiad 263. Aurelian the Dane was chosen Emperor of the Romanes, hee was a goodly man of stature, very Noble, Valiant and terrible, hee would pardon no Capitoll offence, neither in Prince nor Peasant, yet himselfe caused his sisters sonne to be murthered: he was the first The first Emperour of the Romanes that ordained the Emperiall Crolwne or Diadem of gold, adorned with pearles and precious stones, hee made it lawfull to eate Swines flesh, which before they held most abominable, and might not eate, hee had three most glorious victories vpon the Gothes, hee hated the Christians, and in the fourth yeere of his raigne, hee stirred vp the The ninth persecution of Christians. ninth persecution vpon the Church of God: he raigned five yeeres, and five dayes, and after Tacitus succeeded him in the Empyre, being a very fit and worthy Governour, and after Tacitus, Probus Equirius sonne to Delmacius a Clowne, and a Gardener by Profession: this A Gardners sonne Emperour of Rome. Probus Equirius was a most valiant man at armes, and as good a Justiciar as any that had the publique government, he began his raigne in the yeere of Christ, 282. and raigned 6 yeeres and 4 moneths.

Aurelius Probus five yeeres. In which time, Bonosus, a Bryttaine borne, but brought vp in Spaine, fearing lest hee should be executed, because the Germanes had burnt certaine vessels in the Rhene, whereof hee had charge, vsurped the Empyre with Proculus at Colen, and would haue exempted from the Romanes, Bryttaine, Spaine, and part of France, but being vanquished by Probus in a long and sore battell, hee strangled himselfe. Some sedition was then raised in Bryttaine, and appeased by Victorinus, a Moore, by whole motion, Probus had made him Regent of Bryttaine, which was Vopiscus. Tolerances permitted to the Bryttaines. causer of this trouble. This Probus permitted the Bryttaines and others, that they might haue vines and make Wine. After hee had raigned five yeeres, hee was slaine of the souldiers. 282.

CArus was created Augustus, he made Carinus and Numerianus his sonnes Cæsars, to which Carinus, hee assigned Bryttaine, Gaule, Illyricum, Italy and Spaine: but Carus was slaine by lightning, and the other two within three yeeres space lost their liues. Vopiscus.

Diocletian was then chosen Emperour, who adioyned Maximianus vnto him in like gouernment. 285.

Carausius was appointed to be Admirall of the Bryttaine Seas, which were sore troubled by the Pirates of the Franks and Saxons: but when hee had oftentimes apprehended the Pirates, and neither referred the Prizes, or was accomptable for it, neither to the Emperors, nor their deputies, it was suspected, that of set purpose he permitted those rouers to haue recourse thyther with those seas, to the end he might rifle them, and enrich himselfe. Maximianus therefore sent part of his army to suppresse him, in which were many of the Thebane legion, who in this iourney were slaine by his commandement, and made Martyrs, because they professed Christ. Carausius vnderstanding of the preparation made against him, passed out of Gaule into Bryttaine, where bringing the countrey to his obeysance, hee vsurped the robe of an Emperour: whereupon they which were sent to surprise him, returned to Maximianus, who then was incumbred with new warre in Gaule. In the meane time Carausius built ships in Bryttaine, intercepted certaine companies of souldiours, assembled a great number of barbarous people with spoyle, with hope of whom he purposed to trouble the Sea-coasts of Gallia and Spaine. Holland also (then holden by certaine Franks) reuolted to Carausius.

Then purposed Maximianus the second time to make warre against Carausius, but by stormy weather, and want of Pilots, he was enforced to deferre his purpose. Shortly after, the two Emperours elected two Cæsars, Valerius Maximus, and Constantius Chlorus, to which Constantius they committed the recouery of Bryttaine. Hee immediately passing thyther Gaule hitherward, suddenly surprized Gessoriacum (now called Bullein) which Carausius had manned, and so stopped the Hauen, that it could stand Carausius in no stead. Then building ships to ouer passe hither, he first assayled luckily the Hollanders, which had reuolted to Carausius, and then staying for conuenient winde, hee houered a while on the Sea-coast, and in the meane time, Carausius was trayterously slaine by Alectus his familiar friend. Panegyricus Constantio dicus. 292.

Alectus then vsurped the Empyre heere in Bryttaine, against whom Constantine with his former preparation, made ready for warre, and lanched out in haste, though the winde was contrary: which when his souldiours vnderstood, they set out also with stoe windes out of the same and other ports, in such foggy and misty weather, that they passed by Alectus Nauy, then houering about the Ile of Wight, the one not seeing the other. The Romanes, as soone as they lanoed, burnt their Ships, determining eyther to winne, or lose their liues. Which when Alectus vnderstood, hee left the shore, and prepared himselfe for battell, with his mercenary barbarous Souldiours, in which hee was slaine by Asclepiodatus, Lord great Master of Alectus slain. the Emperours house. In this fight none of the Romanes perished, but heere all the field was ouerspred with dead bodies of the enemies, among whom lay Alectus himselfe without any Emperiall ornaments, and scantly knowne. Other Romane Souldiours also which had lost their company in the mist, arriued at London, slew in the Citty a great number of barbarous people which escaped from the battell, and purposed to haue sacked London. Then, when Constantius came a-land, the Bryttaines with their wiues and children flocked vnto him, and submitted themselues ioyfully, being now deliuered out of a long thraldome.

This expedition of Constantius into Bryttaine, is ascribed by some to Maximianus, into which errour, a false inscription of the Panegyriks hath led them.

290. Asclepiodatus, hauing recouered Bryttaine, as is before touched, belayd the Citty of London with a strong siege (saith Geffrey Monmouth) and ere it was long, by knightly force and violence, entred the Citty, and slew the Romanes Captaine, named Liuius Gallus, neere vnto a bzooke there at that time running, into which bzooke hee threw him, by reason whereof it is called in Brytish, Nant Gallon, since in Saxon tongue, Gallus or Wallus bzooke, and to this day, the street where sometimes the bzooke ranne, is called Walbzooke. The Romane Historiographes speake nothing of this Gallus, but of Galerius, which was ioyned in the Empire with Constantius, after the decease of Asclepiodatus, and also of the Brytish King Coil, as shall be shewed in place conuenient. True it is, I grant, that a certaine bzooke dzained, I wot not from what heads, but much encreased by the moysh grounds, without the Citty of London on the Northside, passed thzough the same Citty Southward, to the Riuer of Thames. And therefore of comming thzough and from the wall, and so thzough the Citty, was since called Walbzoke: which bzooke in old time had in diuers places Bzidges ouer it, as appeareth by inquisition made in Anno. 1300. Elias Russel being Maior of London, William Iordane, and I. de Beuer, then Maiors of those Bzidges found, who were bound to repaire them so oft as needed, and then was the same bzoke vaulted ouer with bzicke as it now remaineth. Wallbzooke wherevpon it tooke that name.

301. Coil, after Asclepiodatus, (as saith Geffrey) tooke on him the Kingdome of Bryttains: Peter de Icham saith, this Coil was

Duke of Caire Glow, or Glocester. But to returne to the Romanes, who had now recouered Bryttaine within ten yeeres after Carausius first tooke it. Diocletian (saith Eusebius) Eusebius. Churches in Bryttaine persecuted. persecuted the Church of God. In the nineteenth yeere of his raigne, hee began to ouerthzow the Churches downe to the ground, yea, Churches ouerthrowne; and the very foundations were digged vp, and the Holy and Sacred Scriptures burned to ashes in the open Market-place, the Pastors of the Church were persecuted. When hee had raigned together with Maximianus, who persecuted with him twenty yeeres, hee deposed himselfe voluntarily, and liued a priuate life. From that time to his end hee pined away with diseases: but Maximian hanged himselfe. and the Scriptures burned.

Of this persecution, Bede hath thus: Diocletian in the East, and Maximianus in the West, raised the tenth persecution, after Nero, against the Christians: hee commanded the Churches to be spoyled, the Christians to be tormented and killed. Which persecution was both longer, and also crueller then all the other: for whole ten yeeres together it continued in burning the Churches, in banishing the Innocents, in murthering the Martyrs, and neuer ceased. Briefly, among other places, it made Bryttaine to be honoured with the gloay of many holy Martyrs, which constantly stood and dyed in the confession of their faith. Bede.

Among other suffered S. Albane, of whom Fortunatus Prisca, in the booke hee wzote in the praise of Virginity, speaking of the Martyrs, which from all the coasts of the world came vnto God, saith: The martyrdome of Alban and other in Bryttaine.

Albanum egregium fœcunda Brytannia profert.
The fertile Land of balefull Brytannie
Bringeth forth Alban a martyr rightworthy.

S. Alban for professing Christ, being led from the Citty of Uerolamium, vnto Holmehurst, since called Dersiwold wood, where now the Towne of S. Albans is builded, suffered martyrdome in the yeere of Christ, 293. who is specified to be the first Martyr of Bryttaine: and shortly after, to the number of one thousand Christians were martyzed at Lichfield, where Amphabele Instructer of Alban was taken, bzought to Uerolamium, and there tormented by slitting vp his belly, whipping him about a stake, winding his bowels out of his body, and stoning him to death. The life and martyzdome of these two, to wit, of Alban and Amphabele was recoaded and wzitten in Latine at large, by one who wzote himselfe by none other name, then, Of all wzetches the simplest man: since by Mathew Paris, a Monke of Saint Albane, turned out of Latine pzose into French Uerse: both which Bookes I haue seene, and was since translated out of the Latine and French, into English meetre by Iohn Lydgate, Monke of Bury. Iohn Cyt graue. Matthæus Paris. John Lydgate.

305. CONstantius began his Empire with Galerius, the Empire was diuided betweene them: so that Constantius should possesse Affrica, Italy, France and Bzytaine: Galerius should haue Illyzica, Asia, and the East parts: which done, they substituted vnder them two Cæsars. Constantius holding himselfe content with the dignity of Augustus, refused to sustaine the trouble, which hee should haue endured through the administration of the affaires of Italy and Affrike: he sought by all meanes how he might enrich the people of the Empire. He abolished the superstition of the Gentiles in his dominions, so that afterward Bzytaine felt no persecutions. The yéere following he passed out of France hither against the Picts, at which time his sonne Constantine, who then serued Galerius, perceiuing his destruction to be compassed, posted to his father in all haste, houghing and killing al the post horses, which way soeuer he passed, that might not be pursued, and came to his father the very houre that he went aboad to come into Bzytaine: but Constantius, as sone as he came to Yozke, suddenly sickned, and perceiuing his day to dzaw nére, when he was asked to whom he would leaue the Empire, answered, To Constantine, and shortly after departed.

This Constantius begot Constantine, on Helena his wife, daughter of Dripona in Bithynia, as he was passing thozow the countrey, being one of the Romane legates sent into the East parts: Constantine was created Emperoz in France.

311. Eutebius. CONstantine, surnamed the great, sonne of Constantius, borne in Bithynia by Helena, the Innképer (saith William of Malmesburie) first consecrated, as is aforesaid: his Father being now dead, did with so great sozow, and shedding of teares solemnize his burial, that the Soudiours hoping he would resemble his father, saluted him Emperour at Yozke against his will: but at Rome Maxentius the Socrates, l. 1. Euse. sonne of Maximianus Herculius, is chosen of the Pzetozian souldiours, not to gouerne the Empire, but rather to practise Tyzanny.

Maximianus being chiefe Emperour, after he had crowned Emperour Licinius (by originall Dane, his old fellow souldier and familiar friend) departed himselfe rather a Tyzant then an Emperour, abusing the spoules of noble personages, slaying many with the sword, and putting in vze other such like practices.

Constantine the Emperour, being certified hereof, deuised with himselfe which waies possible he might ridde the Romanes from vnder this grieuous yoke of seruitude, and dispatch the Tyzant out of this life: deliberating thus with himselfe, he fozecasted also what God he were best to call vpon foz ayde to waze battell with the aduersary. He remembzed how that Diocletian, which wholy dedicated himselfe vnto the seruice of the Heathenish gods, preuailed nothing thereby: also he perswaded himselfe foz certaine, that his Father Constantius, who renounced the Idolatry of the Gentiles, led a moze foztunate life. Passing thus doubtfully with himselfe, and taking his iourney with his souldiers, I wot not whether a certaine vision appeared vnto him, as it was strange to behold, so moeede incredible to be spoken of. About noone, the day somewhat declining, he saw in the Skie a lightsome Pillar in fozme of a Crosse, wherein these wozds were ingrauen: In this ouercome. The which Vision so amazed the Emperour, that he mistrusting his owne sight, demanded of them that were present, whether they perceiued the Vision: Which when all with one consent had affirmed, the wauering minde of the Emperour was settled with this diuine and wonderfull sight. The night following, in his sleepe he seeth Christ, which saith thus vnto him: Frame vnto thy selfe the fozme of a Crosse, after the example of the signe which appeared vnto thée, and beare the same against the enemies, as a fit banner oz token of victozy. Hée being fully perswaded with this Oracle, commandeth the victozious signe of the Crosse (which as yet is reserued in the Palace of the Emperour) to be made, and therewith proceedeth fozwards with great courage, and ioyning with the enemy, right ouer against Rome, about the bzidge commonly called Vulbia, hee got the victozy, foz Maxentius being dzowned in the Riuer, dyed: it was the seuenty yére of his raigne when hee ouercame Maxentius. After these things, when as Lucinius his fellow Emperour, and his bzother in Law, hauing married his sister Constantia, led his life in the East: Constantine enioying againe benefits receiued at the hands of God, shewed himselfe gratefull in offering of thanks and praises vnto the Author of all godnesse: his practices were these: To deliuer the Christians from persecution: to call against the exiled vnto their native soyle: to set at liberty such as were in pzison: to restoze against the gods of the confiscated: to build againe the Churches that were ouerthzowne: all which things hee accomplished with great pzomptnesse of minde. But Licinius persecuting the Christians, Constantine waged battell against him, and meeting oft by Sea and Land, in the end, at Chrisopolis, a City of Bithynia, to wit, at the Hauen of Chalcedon, Lucinius was ouercome, and yéelded himselfe to Constantine.

The gaddy study and practices of Constantine.

After he had repzessed the ciuill warres, banquished the Gothes in many places, and wonne great memozy among the Barbarians, he placed the Bzytaines that had done him so good seruice, in a part of France toward the west thoze of the Deem: hee applyed himselfe wholy to the study of the Liberall Arts. He summoned the Nicene Councel, which was held at Nicea, a City of Bithinia, foz the debating of the controuersie about the feast of Easter, and the rooting out of the heresie of Arius. Which Councell being ended, he lined in great tranquillity, and turned himselfe wholy to the building of Churches, as well in other Cities, as in that City which he called after his owne name, Constantinople. In this Citty he erected from the foundation 2 Churches, calling the one of Peace,

W. Malmes. Bzytaines placed in France.

Councell at Nice.

Constantinople builded. Socrates.

the other of the Apostles.

Helena mother to Constantine.

Helena, the Emperours mother (which of the village Drepane made a City, the which afterwards the Emperour called Helenopolis) tooke her iourney to Ierusalem, which when she found lying waste in a heape of stones, she searched diligently foz the Sepulture of Christ: and at length thee found it, but with great difficulty: foz as they which imbzaced the faith of Christ, highly esteemed of that Sepulchze and Monument after his passion: so such as abhoyred Christian Religion, heaped in that place much earth, and raised great hillocks, and builded there the Temple of Venus, and set vp her Idoll. But when the Empereours mother was made pzimy thereunto, she thzew downe the Idol, and caused the great heape of earth to bee hurled downe, where-vnder thee found thzee Crosses in the graue, one vpon the which Christ suffered: ouer two, whereon the two theeues ended their liues, together with the Table of Pilate, wherein hee had written that Christ was crucified King of the Iewes: the Empezors mother builded ouer the Sepulchze a gozgious Church, and called it New Ierusalem, right ouer against that old, and waste Ierusalem. She builded a second Church, nothing inferiour to the first, at Bethelem in the hollow zocke, where Christ was bozne. Also the third vpon the mount, where Christ ascended vnto the Father. Many things she gaue to Churches, and to poze people, she liued godly and religiously, and departed this life, being fouresczoze yeeres old: her body was buried at Constantinople. Simon of Durham writeth, that shee builded walls about the City of London, and the City of Colchester.

New Ierusalem builded.

About this time, Octauius, whom Constantine had left gouernour in Bzytaine, rebelled, against whom Constantine sent Traherne with a Legion of Romanes, who (after diuers conflicts) was slaine: Gratianus surnamed Funarius, was at that time gouernour of the Romane Legion in Bzytaine.

S. Catharyn martyred for the Christian faith.

THis yéere 316. at Alexandzia in Egypt, by command of Maxencius the Emperoz, the Noble Lady Catharyn, daughter to King Costus, was martyzed vpon a wheele: at this time Constantine the great was also Emperour, and had raigned fiue yéeres: at this time there were diuers competitoys to the Empyze, and in the first yeere of Constantine the Great, the cruell persecution of the Christians ceased, hauing continued extreme violent, tenne yeeres together, especially in the East-parts, whose numbers were infinite, that suffered foz the faith of Christ, and pzesently followed an exceeding great plague and famine vpon the persecutors of our faith, concerning which the venerable Beda, in his little booke hath written very sufficiently.

Gods Iudgements vpon Tyrants and persecutors.

Arius the Arch-Heretique.

THis yeere 324 Arius and all his damnable Heresies, were condemned by the censure of the generall Councell: this was done in the 4 yeere of the raigne of Constantine, and in the time of Pope Siluester: Constantinus, sonne to the forenamed Constantine, enclined to the Arian heresie, concerning which, some writers haue wzongfully tared his father with that heresie.

Constantine, at the age of 65. yéeres was baptized and dyed, and was buried at Constantinople: he left behind him three sonnes, to wit, Constantinus, Constans, and Constantius to succéede him in the Empyze.

Bzytaium called Constantinople from this time.

THis yéere 330. being the 19 yéere of the raigne of Constantine the great, the sayd Constantine reedified the ancient City Bzytium, bozdering vpon the Sea, and called it Constantinople after his owne name, and constituted it the head Citty of his Empyze, yet notwithstanding the venerable Beda, in his little booke, saith that this was done in the 24. yeere of the raigne of Constantine: and in the 20. yéere of the raigne of this Constantine was held the Councell of Nice, with great solemnitie, wherein were condemned and suppzest the damnable heresies of Arius Bygot, that vaine glozious dissembling Minister, whereof the Arian heresie take the name, and foz a long space after much troubled Christendome: and at this time the Nicene Creed was commanded to be sung, oz said, in all Christian Churches, and the forenamed Arius pzetending to make a retract of all his heresies, take his leaue of the Emperoz, as if he had great necessitie to take Physicke to purge his body, which purgation neuer ceast working, vntill it had purged him of all his bloud and bowels, and so dyed most miserably, and shamefully. Read the 12. Chap. of the 15. booke of Vincentius, and the Tripartite History, wherein is set downe his hypocrisie and dissimulation which he vsed first and last, as well to the generall Councell as to the Emperoz, &c. He dyed about the yére 341. being the first yeere of Constantinus, the sonne of Constantine, and in the eighth yeere of Constantius the famous Priest.

The Nicene generall Councell.

The Nicene Creed.

The miserable end of Arius the heretique.

337. CONstantinus began his Empire and raigne ouer Bzytaine: with him his Father Constantine had appointed by his last will, that his two bzethzen Constans and Constantius should participate and haue their portion of the Empyze, but not long after, when Constantinus attempted warre against his bzother at Aquileie, it demeaned himself vnaduisedly therein, he was slaine, and then was the Empyze reduced vnder the gouernment of the two bzethzen onely.

340. COnstans then ruled Bzytaine, which he administred with great Iustice: but after, when he failed of his health, he associated vnto him in stead of friends, euil disposed persons to assist him, through which euil counsell he declined into horrible vices, by meane whereof, waxing scant tolerable of the inhabitants of the Prouinces, he was slaine by Magnentius, who vsurped the Empyze in France, Spaine, and Bzytaine.

353. COnstantius then had the regiment of Bzytaine, who sent hither a Spaniard called Paul, a Notary by profession, to bzing out certaine

taine men of warre which had conspired with Magnentius: but he vpon false surmises grieuously molested the guiltlesse, fettering and manacling whom he pleased. Whereupon Martinus then Lieutenant in Bryttaine, being moued with compassion, desired him to forbeare the harmelesse: but he was so rigorous, that he also charged Martinus himselfe of conspiracy with Magnentius, and was earnest to bring him before the Emperour: whereupon Martinus drawing his sword smote at him, and because he could not slay him, he suddenly slew himselfe; and this Paul embued with blood, haled a great company (linked in chaines) to the Emperours presence, which were either banished, executed, or attainted.

Martinus.

Constantius after this, appointed Iulianus to gouerne Gaule, at which time great spoyle was made in Bryttaine by the Scots and Picts, wherefore Iulianus busied with warre against the Almaines, sent Lupcinus hither with an army, in whose absence Iulianus blurped the Empyre: whereof when Constantius heard, he returned from the warre (against the Parthians) against Iulianus, and died in the way.

Dulcitius.

S. Athanasius Creede.

Saint Athanasius Archbishop of Alexandria, being very odious amongst all Arians, hauing endured great danger and persecution, was very kindly received and entreated by Maximillian Bishop of Treuer, where he composed the Symboll or Creed, *Quicunque vult saluus esse, &c.* which was shortly after confirmed and published by a generall Councell, held at Alexandria, for the suppression of many heresies which then abounded, and in the 24. of this Constantius, Iulian the Apostata rose vp and with great force and pride blurped the name of Emperour, alonge the River of Reyne in Germany: when Constantius heard thereof, he hakned to come vpon him to giue him battell, but was preuented by sudden death, of an Appoplery, as he was departing from the warres in Parthya betweene Cicilia and Cappadocia, the third of November at 45. yeres of age: presently vpon his death, Iulian went to Constantinople, and was there made Emperour by the name of Iulian, alias Claudius Iulianus: it pleased God his raygne was short, viz. a yere and eight moneths: he was of small stature, long bearded, very eloquent and learned in the Liberall Sciences, quick of memory, more aduenturous then was fit for an Emperour, he was a great worshipper of Idols.

In this Councell the Christians were forbidden to reade the discipline of Poets and Philosophers.

Iulian the Apostata obtaineth the Empyre.

362. Iulianus (called the Apostata) begunne his raigne ouer Bryttaine and the Empyre, a man sore passing well in Liberall Sciences, but an earnest aduersary of Christian religion: he banished Palladius a great and honourable person into Bryttaine vpon a suspition: he sent Alypius who had beene a Lieutenant of Bryttaine, to repayre Jerusalem, but terrible flashes of fire issuing out of the earth, when they layd the foundations, enforced them to leaue their purpose. This Iulian with great preparations made war vpon the Parthians, he spoyled Allyria, and returning from thence a conqueror, he was slaine by his enemies, as he preased vnadvisedly into the battels. After him succeeded in the Empyre Iouinian, and held it nine moneths.

Ammianus. Marcellinus.

365. VAlentinian was then chosen Emperour by the souldiours. The Picts, Scots, Attacotes, and Sarons, grieuously molested the Bryttaines. Nectaridius, who had the charge of the Sea-coast here, was slaine by them, & Bulchobandes a great Captaine was enclosed by them: wherefore after diuers Captaines, Theodosius was sent hither, who discomfiting the enemy, and recouering the spoyle, entred triumphantly into London, and the nert yere went into the North, suppressed the enemies, recouered the prouince, and repaired cities and fortresses: he oppressed Valentinus an Hungarian, who being banished hither, practised new tumults, deliuering him to Dulcitus to be executed, without any enquiry of his confederates, because he would not renew the tumult: which done, he returned to Rome. Shortly after, Valentinian sent hither Fraomarius (which he before had ordained King of the Buccenobants in Germany) to be Marshall of the Almaines which serued in Bryttaine. And not long after Valentinian dyed.

375. GRatian with his brother Valentinian was then created Emperour. He, to the intent he might better repayre the decayed state of the Empyre, made Theodosius a copartner with him in it.

S. Ierome.

This yere 369. being the 2. yere of Valentinian the Emperour, was Saint Ierome made Cardinall, and the nert yere after, was Saint Ambrose made Archbishop of Millaine, and in the yeere aforesaid, the venerable Beda in his little booke recordeth, that there was a great vniuersall Earth-quake throughout the whole world: and the nert yeere, as other Hystories write, it rayned Wool, and there withall it hayled, which Hayle-stones were of wonderous greatnes, and slew great numbers of men and beasts at Constantinople: and the nert yere after, that is to witte, 370. the City of Nice was vtterly throwne down and ruinated by an earth-quake: and this yeere dyed S. Hillary Bishop of Poitiers.

S. Ambrose.

Vniuersall earth-quake.

Strange rayne and hayle.

Nice destroyed by an earth-quake.

S. Hillary.

383. MAximus a baliant and worthy man, was shortly after forced here in Bryttaine to take the Empyre vpon him, who passed into France, and immediately all the Germane legions and Romane souldiers revolted vnto him from Gratian, so that he being destitute of men of warre, fled to Lions, where he was slaine by treason: for Maximus gaue out that Gratians wife was comming to her husband, which Gratian entirely louing his wife, lightly credited, and therefore accompanied with a few, went forth to mete her: but in the coach where he supposed to haue found his wife, was Andragatius a desperate man, who leaping out of the coach killed Gratian.

Then Maximus created his son Victor a Cæsar, and vsed some crueltie against Gratians Captaines. Valentinian being herewith terrified, sent Saint Ambrose vnto him to treate of a peace, which he accepted, and Theodosius permitted him to vse the title of Augustus.

Sigebertus.

Then

Then he settled himselfe at Trier in Germany, impouerished the Countries round about him, executed certaine heretikes called Priscillianists, and then entred into Italy breaking the peace, and thought to haue intercepted Valentinian, but he with his mother fled to Theodosius, and perswaded him to take reuenge of Maximus. In the meane time Maximus came to Aquileia, all Italy and Affrica submitted themselues vnto him, when suddenly Theodosius comming from Constantinople, moued warre against him, corrupted his Souldiours with Bribes, and after one or two skirmishes inforced Maximus to flie into Aquileia, where his owne souldiours deliuered him to Theodosius, by whose commandement he was shortly after beheaded. Andragatius also who kept the Seas, vnderstanding this, drowned himselfe, and Victor the sonne of Maximus was slaine in France by Arbogastes. The Bryttaines which serued him, returned into France, and settled them in the Country there, which is now called Bryttaine: so was Bryttaine recouered againe to the Romane Empyre.

Bryttaine in France.

Priests commanded to keepe houses.

The Islands grow barrē still.

S. Chrysostome.

The Emperor Theodosius doth open penance.

The Antiquall of the French nation, and of the City of Paris.

THis yeere 386. being the 5. yere of Theodosius the Emperour (as saith Sigibert) the Emperour at the request of Pope Damasus commanded a generall Councell to be held at Constantinople, wherein was condemned Macedonius the heretique, who taught that the holy Ghost was not God, nor of one substance with God the Father, and God the Sonne, and in this Councell it was ordayned that the Apostles Creed should be sung in all Churches vpon all solemne Dayes, as well in the East Church, as in the West Church, viz. both in the Greek, and Latine Churches, and in this Councell it was also ordayned and constituted, that the Patriarchs of Constantinople, should henceforth be reputed as Bishops of new Rome, with speciall priuiledges next vnto the Pope of Rome. And from this time al the Bishops of Constantinople were called Patriarches: and about this time, a Bishop called Priscillianus, greatly troubled the Church of God, and began to preach other heresies, he denied the Trinity in Vnity, and Vnity in Trinity, he maintained many other vilde errors, which were condemned by Councels, he was by Pope Damasus and S. Ambrose committed to Rome, and from thence to the Councell of Burdeaux, where he was censured by Saint Martyn and other holy Bishops and Fathers, and in the end he was slaine in the City of Treuer.

To generall Councell. The Apostles Creede commanded to be sung in the Greeke and Latine Churches.

The Archbishop of Constantinople constitutes three Patriarch.

S. Ierome translateth the old and new Testament.

This yeere 389. being the second yeere of Theodosius the elder, the most Christian Emperor, S. Ierome the Priest of Bethelem vtterly before was made Cardinall, began to translate the old and new Testament out of Hebrew into Latine: some write he began this holy worke in the 4. yere of Gratianus, and in the third yere of this Theodosius, the Church was purged from the heresie of the Panithes, and by the learned and deuout preachings and prayers of S. Ambrose, was S. Augustine conuerted vnto the Christian Faith at 30. yeres of age, his mother fasted, prayed, and wept dayly, for his conuersion, and loued and honoured S. Ambrose as the Angell of God, for the manifold gifts and graces of God, wherewith he was indued. S. Ambrose baptized S. Augustine, and at his Baptisme was sung *Te Deum laudamus*.

S. Augustine conuerted.

This yeere 426. being the first yeere of Gratianus the Emperour, he made a Law that all Priests which had charge of Soules, should sojourne no more with others, but forthwith repayre to their proper habitations, and kepe hospitality, and to see their Churches and Reuenues repayred, which were now restored vnto them, and commanded that the Catholiques should respect the Arians but as brute Beasts, and to driue them out of his Empire: and about three yeres after, in the Church of Millaine, they began to sing Anthemns, Hymnes, and Psalms to the praise, and thanks giuing to God, for all his benefits. At this time flourished S. John Chrysostome Patriarch of Antiochia, and at this time Theodosius did open penance in Millaine, and fasted and prayed eight moneths together, according as S. Ambrose had enioyned him, viz. because in the 5. yeere of his Empyre, he had commanded fiue thousand Citizens of Thessalonica to be slaine, and for executing the Innocent with the wicked, in scorne of ciuill Iustice, therefore the Archbishop would not permit him to enter into the Church, nor to receiue the Sacrament, vntill he had performed his penance.

The 11000. virgins.

In the fift yere of Theodosius, dyed Duke Pream, otherwise called Ibros, the great Captaine of the French, who they say was lineally descended of King Pryam of Troy, and after him in the yeere 386. they chose a valiant man called Marcomyr, he continued 14. yeeres, he taught them the vse and art of warre, he walled many Cities and Castles, and in the tenth yeere of his raigne, viz. 396. he changed the name of the great City of France, and called it Paris, which before that time was called Lutecia, because of the muddy or durtinesse of the place wherein it standeth: the City of Paris was found 950. yeres before the Incarnation of our Saviour Iesus, and was called Paris, in honor and remembrance of Prince Paris, son to the King of Troy, from whom he was descended: some write, he also changed their generall ancient name of Gaules, and called them French, and haue beene so called euer since.

S. Vrsula with 11000. virgins, which were sent into Bryttaine to be married to Conon and his knights, were slaine and martyred of the barbarous people being on the sea, but as some write, by Attila King of the Hunnes.

Pelagius heresie.

395. HOnorius the son of Theodosius succeeded in the Empire, in whose time Pelagius a Bryttain borne, displayed the venom of his faithles doctrine very farre abroad, holding, that a man might line well without the helpe of the Grace of God: vsing herein the aid of Iulianus of Campania, who was intemperately stirred with the losse of his bishoprike, to whom S. Austen and other fathers also answered in most ample manner,

manner, but yet they would not bee amended thereby, but being conuicted of their falsehood, they rather would encrease it by defending and maintaining it, then amend it by returning to the truth.

This time Marcus was chosen Emperour by the souldiers in Brytaine, fearing the inuasion of the Gendales, but immediately they slew him, and elected Gratianus, whom also they murthered within foure moneths.

Then Constantine, a souldier of base estate, onely vpon confidence of his name, was elected here Emperor, who passing hence into France, with all the youth of Brytaine, got all the men of warre there to take part with him. Honorius sent therefore Sarus to withstand him, who in a foughten field slew Iustinian Constantines Captaine, and so pursued Constantine, that he made him take Valentia, wherein hee sharpely besieged him, vntill Gerontius with his Brytaines, and Edobrichus with the Frankes raised the siege.

Then Constantine fortified the Alpes and Rhene with Garrisons, sent Constans his sonne (whom of a Monke he had made a Cæsar) with a great army into Spaine, where he woke, and afterward slew certaine noble personages allied to Honorius, and returning to his father, left Gerontius to gouerne Spaine. Constantine himselfe then craued pardon of Honorius for vsurping the Empire, saying, that he did it by compulsion: which when Honorius heard, hee well liked of him, that he sent an Imperiall Robe vnto him.

In these troubles Brytaine was greatly endangered by Picts and Scots, and fled to Honorius for succour, but he sending them onely Letters, willed them to look to their own state. Shortly after Constantine that was a Monke, was slaine by Gerontius his owne Captaine, at Vienna in France: and Constantine himselfe being besieged at Arles by Honorius Soldiers, entred into holy orders, and fled into the church, thinking thereby to saue himselfe, but was drawne out from thence, and slaine. Gerontius who had traiterously killed his master, was beset round about with Spaniards in his lodging, wherefore he first slew Alanus his tried friend, then Nemichia his wife, and lastly himselfe, and now Honorius recouered Brytaine.

In this time (saith Beda) Rome was destroyed of the Goths, 1164. yeeres after it was builded: after which time the Romanes left off to rule in Brytaine, almost 470. yeeres after that Iulius Cæsar first entred the said Ile. The Romanes dwelt within the trench, which as we haue said, Seuerus drew ouerthwart the Iland at the south part, which thing may appeare by the cities, temples, bridges, and paued streets to this day remaining, notwithstanding they had in possession, and vnder their dominion the further parts of Brytaine, and also the Ilands which are about Brytaine (by meanes (as is aforesaid) the Romanes had vsed to transport their men ouer into France the flowre of all the youth of Brytaine, to serue in their forraine warres, their men of warre were consumed, and were not now able to defend themselues against the inuasions of their enemies: whereupon many yeeres together they liued vnder the oppression of two most cruell Nations, the Scots and Picts: which were of the circuite of Brytaine, but diuided from the Land of Brytaine by two armes of the sea, running best twirt them, of the which, one from the East sea, the other from the West, runneth in farre and wide into the Land, though they may one reake to the other. In the middle of the East creeke there is a City builded called Guidi. Aboue the West creeke toward the right hand, standeth a City called Alcluith, which in their language is as much as to say, as the rocke Cluith, for it standeth by a flood of the same name. The Brytaines then being thus afflicted by the said nations, sent their Ambassadors with letters vnto Rome, with lamentable supplications, requiring of them ayde and succour, promising their continuall fealty, so that they would rescue them against the oppression of their enemies: whereupon there was sent vnto them a Legion of armed souldiours from Rome, which comming into the Iland, and encountring with the enemies, ouerthrew a great number of them, and draue the rest out of the frontics of the country, and so setting them at liberty, and free from the misery with which they were before so grieuously ouercharged, counselled them to make a wall betwixt the two Seas, which might be of force to keepe out their euill neighbours: and that done, they returned home with great triumph. Now the Brytaines building the wall which they were bid to make, not of stones, as they were willed, but of turfe, as hauing none among them that had skill therein, made it so slender, that it serued them to little purpose. This wall was made betweene the two armes or creekes of the sea, many miles long, that where the fence of the water lacked, there by the helpe of the trench they might keepe their country from the breaking in of their enemies, of which piece of worke there remaineth euen vnto this day, most assured tokens yet to be seene. This trench beginneth about two miles from the monastery of Abercorning, in a place which in the Picts language is called Penuahill, and in English is called Panwelt, and running out Westward, is ended by the Citty Alcluith. But the former enemies, when they had once perceiued that the Romane Legion was returned home againe, foithwith being set on Land by boats, inuaded the borders, ouercame the Country, and, as it were, beat downe all before them: whereupon Ambassadours be sent againe to Rome, beseeching them they would not suffer their miserable Country to be vtterly destroyed. Against there is sent another Legion, which comming vpon a sudden, made a great slaughter of the enemies, and chased them ouer into their owne country. Then the Romanes told the Brytaines, that it was not their ease to take any more such trauelous Journies for their defence, and therefore bade them to practise their armour themselues, and to learne to withstand their enemies.

They builded by a wall of hard stone from sea

Picts wall

Sea to Sea, right between the two Cities, which there were made to keepe out the enemy, in the selfe same place where Seuerus before had cast his trench, with publike and priuate charges: the Brytaines also putting to their helping hands, they then builded it eight foot broad, and twelue foot high, right as it were by a lyne, from East to West, as it doth to this day appeare, which being perfected, they giue the people straight warning to looke well to themselues: they teach them to handle their weapons, and instruct them in warlike feats. Also by the Sea side Southward, where their ships lay at harbour, lest their enemies should land there aboutes, they made vp bulwarkes along, one somewhat distant from another: and this done, bid them farewel, as minded no more to return. At this time, almost all the treasure of Brytaine was hid vnder ground, or transported ouer into France.

As soone as they were gone, the Scots and Picts hauing intelligence, that they had made promise they would come no more, they taking heart of grace, returne againe to their businesse: and first, all that was without the wall, they tooke for their owne. After that, they giue assault vnto the wall, where the Brytaines were with grapples pulled downe, and otherwise so assaulted, that they leauing both the Cities and the wall also, were dispersed, and put to flight: the enemies following, killed and flayed more cruelly then euer they did before: whereupon, being driuen out of their owne houses and possessions, they fall a robbing, and spoyling one the other of them, so farre forth, that all the whole Countrey was brought to that exigent, that they had none other sustenance, but that they got by hunting and killing of wild beasts.

408. THeodosius the younger sonne of Arcadius, succeeded his vncle Honorius, and appointed Valentinianus his cousin, Emperour in the West parts.

At this time, Timotheus, heere in Brytaine, vnder a pretence of Religion and great continency, drew many into dangerous heresie.

Chrysanthus the sonne of Bishop Martian, a Consull of Italy, was made Viceroy and Lord Deputy of Brytaine, he was afterward made Bishop of Constantinople.

Now the poore remnant of the Brytaines directed letters to Ætius, whereof this was the beginning: To Ætius thrice Consull, the mourning of the Brytaines. In the processe of which Epistle, they thus set forth their pittifull estate. The barbarous enemie driueth vs vpon the Sea: the Sea againe vpon the enemie: betweene these twaine riseth two manner of deaths, either we are killed or drowned. And yet for all their suite, they could obtaine no ayde of him, as hee which had then both his hands full of businesse and battell at home with Bleda and Attila, Kings of the Hunnes.

The Pelagian Heresie being brought in by Agricola, the Sonne of Seuerianus a Pelagian Bishop, about this time did sore corrupt the faith of the Brytaines, but the Brytaines being neither willing to receiue their lewd doctrine, as blasphemous against the grace of God, neither able to refute their wily and wicked persuasions, they deuised this wholesome counsell, to seeke for ayde of the Bishops of France, against these their spirituall enemies. And they calling a common Councell, consulted among themselues, whom of them all it were best to send to helpe their neighbours faith. By the assent of them all, there were chosen two worthy Prelates Germanus Altisiodorensis, and Lupus, Bishop of the City Trecassa, which should passe ouer into Brytain to confirme them in the faith, which with ready obedience, accepting the commandement of the Synode, tooke shipping thitherward, and had prosperous winds, which set them ashore in a place where they themselues desired. Thither a great multitude of people being assembled, receiued the Priests of God, and the Word of God was preached by them, not onely in their Churches, but also in the open streets, and in the Countrey, in such sort, that in all places, both the sound and faithfull word were confirmed, and they that before swarued out of the right faith, were amended. The Authours and head professours of this heretical errour, lay lurking all this while, and much spited to see the people daily to fall from them. After long aduisement had, they take vpon them to try the matter by open disputation, which being agreed vpon, they come forth richly appointed, gorgeously apparelled, accompanied with a number of flattering fauourers. The people were present both to see and iudge the matter. The parties were farre vnlike in condition: on the one side was the faith, on the other, mans presumption: on the one side meeknesse, on the other side, pride: on the one side Pelagius, on the other, Christ. First of all, Germanus and Lupus gaue their aduersaries leaue to speake, which bainely occupied both the time & eares of the people with naked words. But after, the reuerend Bishops powred out their words confirmed with Scriptures out of the Gospels and Apostles. Thus the vanity of heretikes was confuted, and falsehood confuted, so that at every obiection, they were forced to confesse their errour, not being able to answer them: but after their departure, the heresie begunne againe to reuiue. Wherefore Germanus returned into Brytaine with Seuerus, banished the heretikes, and restored the Faith.

Pelagian heresie.

Pelagians heresie come againe.

The end of the ROMANES gouernement in BRYTAINE.

About this time began the foundation of *Venice*, and becauſe it is memorable, I haue thought good to ſet downe the Originall *and ſtate thereof in briefe manner.*

The Originall and ſtate of Venice.

Leda and Attila brethren, kings of the Huns, with their huge warlike Armies, did great oppreſſion and inuaſions vnto diuers Nations: and when in pride and practice of their matchleſſe ſtrength, after they had made great excurſions and ſpoyles vpon Illyria and Thrace, without ceaſing, vntill they came vnto Thermopyle, wherewith Attila grew proud, and extreme deſirous to be ſole Soueraigne, that he cauſed his elder Bleda to be traytorouſly murthered, and then hee ſubdued moſt Nations Eaſtward, and after that with fiue hundred thouſand men, he boldly inuaded the Romane Empire, viz. the Romanes and Viſigots, who encountred him with diuers Armies, but he repulſed them and paſſed violently thorow Italy, and forced the people to fly from City to City, and other places, of which ſort, ſome went and poſſeſſed certaine very ſmall Ilands in the ſea, which then were neither familiarly knowne by any man, nor called by any name, but were afterward called Venice, as you may read: hee alſo inuaded France, and beſieged Orleance in the yeere of the world, 4414. and after the incarnation of our Sauiour Ieſus Chriſt, 452. and gaue battell vnto Ætius the Vice-Emperor, and vnto Theodoric, King of Viſigots: the fight continued one whole day, wherein was performed all Martiall proweſſe, and 200000. ſlaine on both ſides, yea, ſuch was the effuſion of blood, that very many dead bodies floated by and downe, as if it had ben a bowle of blood: in this great battell, Attila had the worſt, yet neuer the leſſe, he reinforced himſelfe, and furiouſly aſſayled Italy, and had vtterly ſpoiled it, if the Pope, viz. Leo the firſt, had not humbled himſelfe before him, then he returned into his owne Countrey of Hungary. The Emperour Valentinian the third, being in a manner conſtrained, gaue him his ſiſter in marriage, after that he married another, at which Nuptiall he became ſo drunke, that hee dyed thereof: his blood guſhing out at his mouth and noſtrils in moſt lothſome manner. The Citty of Venice being at firſt but a ſmall thing, was gouerned by Conſuls, in the time of Pharamond, the firſt King of France, they zealouſly reſiſted Pelagius and Neſtorius, two great Heretikes. And in the yeere 582. Pope Pelagius the ſecond in a Councell of twenty Biſhops, by meanes of the Archbiſhop of Aquiſea, it was agreed that Grado ſhould be the Metropolis of Venice and Iſtria, by reaſon that Grado was then more Noble and populous then Venice, although at this day it is ſo ruinated, that there ſcarce remaines any memory of it: the foreſaid decree touching Grado, continued vntill the yeere, 654. after that Mallo, Mocco and Paleſtina, Hauen Townes: by meanes of a great concourſe of people from Padua and Mount Seluce, which came in company of the Biſhop of Padua, Venice was greatly encreaſed: this was done when Padua had bin deſtroyed by the Lombards, the third and fourth time, in the yeere 593. and in the foreſaid yeere 654. vnto the foreſayd ten Tribunes, were added two more to rule in Hyparlia, which Hyparlia tooke his name of Hyrachus the Chriſtian Emperour: the ſaid Hyparlia in the yeere, 603. was redified, and enlarged by Biſhop Magno, but Rotario, king of Lombards, ſtill exerciſing his cruelty, deſtroyed Oderzo and other places, as alſo there was ciuill warres a long time in Italy, ſo as many ancient Noble cities and other habitations being ruinated, the diſtreſſed perſons for their ſafety, reſorted and inhabited the foreſaid ſmall p'ats of ground, being indeed not worthy the name of Ilands, though they lye in the Sea, the chiefe whereof, was then called Riuo Alto, and is now called the Rialto, which they found to lie cõmodious for Traffike and Nauigation: then they encreaſed ſo faſt in people & building, that theſe petty Plats or Ilands became well inhabited, and therein with great Chriſtian pietie erected eight faire godly Churches, with many ſtately Palaces, ſo as the City grew very great, and the laſt 12. Magiſtrates of Tribunes continued but vntill the yeere 697. and was then by the foreſayd Hyracius, and Pope Sergius the firſt in the generall Councell of Aquilea: thoſe foreſaid Ilands, were called Venice, and by vertue of the ſaid Councell, it was ordained that they ſhould chooſe themſelues a Duke out of their City ſucceſſiuely for euer, and for concluſion of peace, after long diſſention betwixt Grado and Venice, the Pope was content that the Patriarchy of Grado, ſhould be tranſferred vnto Venice, ſince which time, he hath there held his Cathedra: and the Venetians haue beene gouerned by Dukes, aſſiſted by Senators. Paulo Lucio was the firſt Duke, and haue ſo continued Dukes by election, vntill this preſent yeere, with great honour and proſperity, ouer whom now at the publiſhing heereof this yeere, 1613. Leonardo Donato raigneth: there haue bene 91. Dukes ſince the ſaid ſignamed Councell.

BRYTAINES and SAXONS.

The Brytaines continued in doubtfull warre with the Scots and Picts, ſometime bearing away the victory, and ſometime leauing it to the enemy. But conſidering the ambitious minds of men, and fearing leſt ſome ſhould vſurpe the kingdome at home, while they were detained with warres abroad, thought good to appoint ouer them ſome King: and ſo with one conſent they elected Vortiger. 447.

VOrtiger raigned in Brytaine, in whoſe time hunger more preuailing againſt the Brytaines,

Brytaines, drone many of them to yeeld themſelues vnto the hands of their enemies. Other there were which could neuer be brought therevnto, but from the hils and brakes where they lurked, many times inuaded their enemies, as truſting ſo much the more in the helpe of God, how much the leſſe hope they had of ayde of men, and by ſuch meanes, firſt of all both reſiſted and ouerthrew them, which many yeeres together had liued by the ſpoyle of the Country, whereby for the time they drew homeward with ſhame enough, intending not long after to returne.

The Picts then, and long time after, kept themſelues quiet at home, ſaue onely they would now and then make inuaſions into the Lme, and driue away bottes of cattell. After that they grew to a quietneſſe, there enſued ſuch plenty of graine, as neuer was ſeene the like before, as farre as any man could remember, whereof the people grew to looſe and wanton liuing, whereof all manner of lewdneſſe followed, ſpecially cruelty, hate of truth, and loue of lying, in ſo much, that if any were gentler and more giuen to truth then other, the other would worke him all the hurt and ſpite they could. This did not only the Seculars, but alſo the Cleargie, and the heads thereof, giuing themſelues ouer to drunkennelle, pride, contention, enuy, and ſuch other, ſaſting from them the yoke of Chriſt.

Gildas.

In the meane ſeaſon, a bitter plague befell among them for their corrupt liuing, conſuming in ſhort time ſuch a multitude of people, that the quicke were not ſufficient to bury the dead: and yet for all that, the remnant remained ſo hardned in ſinne, that neither their friends death, nor feare of their owne, could cure the maimaine of their ſoules, which daily periſhed through their ſinfull liuing: whereby a great ſtroke of Gods vengeance enſued vpon the whole ſinfull Nation: for being now infected againe with their old neighbours the Scots and Picts, they deuiſed with themſelues what was beſt to doe, and where they might ſeeke reſcue, to withſtand and repell the feare of the Northerne Nation: and they agreed all with their King Vortiger, to demand ayde of the Saxons beyond the Seas: which thing doubtleſſe (ſaith Bede) was done by Gods owne appointment, that the people might be thereby plagued, as by the end it manifeſtly appeared.

The people of the Engliſh or Saxons, being ſent for of the ſaid King into Brytaine, landed heere in three long ships, and by the Kings commandement, were appointed to abide in the Eaſt part of the Land. And the Ile of Thanet was giuen to them, they to defend their Countrey like friends, but indeed as it prooued afterward, minding to deſtroy the Countrey as enemies. Wherefore encountering with the Northerne enemy, the Saxons had the better, whereof they ſending word home into their Country, as alſo of the fruitfulneſſe of the Land, the Saxons ſent ouer a great Nauy and number of men better appointed for the warres, which being now ioyned with the former band, drew to a ſtronger army, then all the power of the Brytaines was able to ouercome. Thoſe by the Brytaines were allowed a place to dwell among them, with that condition, that they ſhould warre for them againſt their enemies, for wages of the Brytaines.

W. Malmeſ.

Theſe Saxons, Engliſh, and Iuites that came from beyond the Seas, were three of the ſtrongeſt Nations in Germany. Of the Iuites came the people of Kent, and the Ile of Wight, and alſo they in the Prouince of Weſt Saxons, are called Iuites, right ouer againſt the Ile of Wight. Of the Saxons (that is, of the Region now called old Saxons) deſcended the Eaſt Saxons, the South Saxons, and the Weſt Saxons. Of the Engliſh deſcended the Eaſt Engliſh, the Mercies, and the Northumbers. The chiefe Captaines of the Saxons are ſaid to be two brethren, Hengiſt and Horſus. This Hengiſt (ſaith Geffrey Monmouth) on a time required of King Vortiger, ſo much ground as mought bee compaſſed with a thong of a Bulls skin, thereupon to build a place to reſt in, which the King granted, where Hengiſt built a Caſtell, which he called Thong Caſtle, and therein feaſted King Vortiger with great royalty: and when night was come that the King ſhould goe to reſt, Rowen the daughter of Hengiſt, by commandement of her father, came with a Cup of gold in her hand, and kneeling before the King, ſaid to him, Waſſaile: and he againe, by counſell of an Interpreter, anſwered, Drinke haile: at which time King Vortiger ſeeing the beauty of this Rowen, hee was enamoured, and deſired to haue her to wife: which was granted by her father, on condition the King ſhould giue him all the Countrey of Kent, for him and his people to dwell in: which the King willingly, but vnaduiſedly granted, and eſpouſed the Damoſell.

Thong Caſtle in Kent, is now a ſmall village, little more then halfe a mile from Sidingborne. The ditches and the ſteepe hill of Thong Caſtle appeare in a little wood a two ſtight ſhot by South from Thong hurcch. Thong is a mile from the mouth of Melton creeke, and about halfe a mile from Melton Towne, if paſſage were thorow the Marſhes the nert way.

Thong Caſtle in Kent.

The originall of Waſſaile.

For the loue that Vortiger bare to Rowen the Saxon, hee was diuorced from his Lawfull wife, by whom hee had three Sonnes, for which deede, wel neere all the Brytaines forſooke him.

W. Malmeſ.

Vodine, Archbiſhop of London, a man of ſingular deuotion and good life, by the admire of Vortimer, went to Vortiger, and ſaid to him, that he had not done as a Chriſtian Prince, in departing from his Lawfull wife, and taking another women, whoſe father was an enemie to the Chriſtian Faith, and alſo went about to conquer the Crowne of Brytaine. Then ſaid Vortiger, I was not wiſe when I brought the Saxons to helpe me againſt mine enemies, but I was more vnwiſe, when I was taken with the inordinate luſt of the Daughter of Hengiſt: I know that mine Empire will be terrible, except I repent mee with ſpeede, and turne to GOD.

Archbiſhop of London reproueth the King.

Hengist hearing Vortiger make this lamentation, blamed him, for that he beleued the perswasions of a prophane man, of fained life (as hee termed him) and forthwith slew the good Archbishop Vodine, and many other Priests, and religious persons. All the Churches in Kent were polluted with blod: the Nuns with other religious persons, were by force put from their houses and goods, and constrained to pollution of their bodies.

Archbishop of London slaine.

The Brytaines considering the daily repaire of the Saxons into this Realme, shewed to their King the ieoperdy that might thereof ensue, and advertised him of the danger, but all was in vaine: for Vortiger, by reason of his wife, bare such favour to the Saxons, that hee would in no wise heare the counsell of his subiects: wherefore they with one minde deprived him of his royall dignity, when hee had raigned 6. yeeres, and ordained to be their King, Vortimer his eldest sonne.

454. VOrtimer pursued the Saxons, and by his martiall knighthood fought against them foure battels, besides diuers skirmishes, vntill at length he was poysoned by the meanes of Rowen his stepmother, after hee had raigned fiue yeeres. The first battell Hengist and Horsius, who were (saith Bede) the sonnes of Wiglike, whose father was Vecta, whose father was Woden, fought with Vortimer, and his brother Catigerne, in a place called Aglesthorpe, now Aelfsord in Kent: and notwithstanding that Horse was slaine in this battell, yet Hengist bare away the victory. Bede saith, that Horse was buried in East Kent, where his Tombe or Monument bearing his name, was in his time to be seene: and true it is, that in Kent to a place to this day called Horstede, about 2. miles from Aelsford, in the Parish of Chetham, where the people of that Countrey say, the said Horse was slaine. There was also slaine in the same battell at Aglesthorpe, Catigerne, brother to Vortimer, whose Monument remaineth til this day, on a great plaine heath in the parish of Aelsford, and is now corruptly called Otts cothons, for Catigernes. (I haue my selfe in company of diuers worshipfull and learned Gentlemen beheld it in Anno 1590.) And is of foure flat stones, one of them standing vpright in the middle of two other, inclosing the edge sides of the first, and the fourth laid flat aloft the other three: and is of such height, that men may stand on either side the middle stone in time of storme or tempest safe from winde and raine, being defended with the breadth of the stones, as hauing one at their backes, one on either side, and the fourth ouer their heads. And about one coits cast from this Monument, lieth another great stone, much part thereof in the ground, as faine down where the same had borne fired.

Aglesthorpe or Aelsford in Kent.

Horstede in Kent.

Catigernes slaine.

The second battell, Hengist and Eske fought with the Brytaines in a place called Creccanford, or Crekford in Kent: of the Brytaines, many perished by the sword, the rest of them abandoned Kent altogether, and with great feare fled to London.

Crekford in Kent.

The third battell, Hengist and Eske fought with the Brytaines, in a place called Weppedsfleet, that is to say, the fleet of Wepped, where they killed Dukes or Captaines of the Brytaines, with many other, whereas on the party of the Saxons, there was one onely man slaine, whose name was Wepped.

Wepped-fleet.

The 4th battell was fought by Hengist and Eske against the Brytaines, neere to a Poole called Colmoore, the which was sore fought by the Saxons, and long continued with great danger to the Brytains, because that the said Poole inclosed a part of their host so strongly, that the Brytaines could not approach to them, being beaten off with the enemies shot, albeit in the end, the Saxons were put to flight, and many of them drowned in the same Poole.

Vortiger obtained againe the kingdome, and shortly after, Hengist, which was chased into the Ile of Thanet, entred the Land with a number of Saxons: but when hee heard of the great assembly the Brytaines had made against him, he treated for peace, which in fine was concluded. Shortly after, Hengist (by a guile which before hee had deuised) bid his Son in Law, and 300. of his Nobles vnto a Feast or Banquet, where when hee had ouercloyd his guests with ouermuch Wine, he fell to quarrelling, and with taunting talke, pinched euery one of them, and straight fell to fighting, wherethrough the Brytains were slaine euery one. The King was taken prisoner, and forced to giue for his ransome, Kent, Sussex, Suffolke, and Northfolke. This murther of the Brytaines was on the plaine of Salisbury. Then Hengist began his dominion ouer Kent, and Vortiger fled into Wales, and builded there a Castle, of which building, & long let of the same, and of his Prophet Merlin, Geffrey Monmouth and others speake many things. Great companies of the Saxons daily flocked into this Iland, and grew so strong, that the people of the countrey which sent for them, stod in great feare for their puissance, for those Saxons had taken league with the Picts, and began to turne their force vpon the Brytaines: and to be short, the fire once kindled in the Lands of the Pagans there, tooke iust reuenge of the wickednes of the people, raging first vpon the cities and country next adioyning, after from the East sea to the West, ouerwhelming all the whole Land without resistance: both publike & priuate houses were ouerthrowne to the ground: the Priests were slaine standing at the Altar: the Bishops with their flocke were murdred, without respect of their dignity, nor there was any that would bury the slaine: some of the miserable leauings being taken in the hils, were there killed: other being starued with hunger, were faine to creepe out of their caues, and buy their victuall at their enemies hands, with saile of their liberty for euer, if yet they were not killed out of hand: other fled ouer the seas with an heauy heart: other tarrying still in their country in feare of death, and lack of food, liued full miserably in the mountains, woods, and cliffes. Aurelius Ambrose, and Vther (brethren of Constantine that was before slaine

460.

W. Malmes.

The Saxons of the Brytaines slaine at a banquet.

The King taken prisoner.

Hengist king of Kent.

Bede.

Miserable state of the Brytaines.

in France) lanced with a Nauy of Britons at Totnes, made warre vpon Vortiger, and burned him in his Castle in Wales, when hee had reigned fiue yeeres.

465. Bede. W. Malmes.

AVrelius Ambrose was ordained King of Brytaine, in whose time the Brytaines by little and little began to take strength and courage vnto them, comming out of their caues in which they lurked before, and with one consent, calling for heauenly helpe, that they might not for euer be vtterly destroyed. They hauing for their captaine and leader, the foresaid Ambrosius Aurelius, assembled themselues together, and prouoking the victors to fight, through Gods assistance attchieued the victory, and from that day forward, were the men of the country. Now the enemy had the victory vntill the yeer that Bathe was besieged, where they gaue their enemies a great ouerthrow, which was about the foure and forty yere of their comming into the Land. But of this we shall speake more hereafter.

W. Malmes.

Of this Ambrosius, William Malmesbury writeth thus: Surely, euen then (saith he) the Brytaines had gone to wracke, if Ambrosius, who onely and alone of all the Romanes, remained in Brytaine, s was Monarch of the Realme after Vortiger, had not kept vnder the proud Barbarians, with the notable trauaile of the warriour Arthur. Now it followeth in Geffrey, that this Ambrosius caused Churches to be repaired, which had ben spoiled by the Saxons: he caused also the great stones to bee set on the Plaine of Salisbury, which is called Stonehenge, in remembrance of the Brytaines that were slaine and buried there, in the raigne of Vortiger, at the banquet and communication of Hengist with the Saxons. This ancient Monument is yet to be seen, and is a number of stones, rough, and of a gray colour, 25 fate in length, and about 10 fat in breadth, they are ioyned by two and two together, and euery couple fastneth a third stone lying ouerthwart, gatewise, which is fastened by the meanes of tenons that enter into mortaises of those stones not closed with any cement. It appeareth, that there hath bene 3 ranks going round as circles one within another: whereof the vttermost and largest containeth in compasse 300 fate, but the other ranks are decayed, nor therefore yard to reckon how many stones there be.

Stonehenge beside Salisbury.

Geffrey Mon. Guil. Cam. Grana. Doro.

The Chronicles of the Brytaines doe testifie, that whereas the Saxons, about the yere of our Lord 450. had slaine 480. of the Brytaines Nobility by treason, and vnder colour of a treaty, Aurelius Ambrose now King of the Brytains desirous to continue their memory, with some worthy Monument, caused these stones to be set vp in a place of their murther and burial, the which stones had beene first brought from Affrik into Ireland, and placed on mount Killare, and from thence by the industrious meanes of Merlin, were conueyed to this place to the foresaid end. There are about this place, certaine little hils, or banks, vnder the which are found sometimes bones of big men, and pieces of armour: also not far from thence, remaine old ruines of the manner of a fortresse, which the Romanes (as it is not vnlike) did build there in times past.

Alla, and his three sonnes, Kimon, Plineing, and Cissa, came into Brytaine with three ships, and landed with them in a place called Kimenshore: and there slew many of the Brytaines, forcing the rest to make their flight into a wood called Andredsleage: this Alla fighting with the Brytains in a place nere vnto Pecreds Towne, or Pecreds Kleat, slew many of them, and put the rest to flight.

Kingdome of the South Saxon.

Kimenshores.

Andredsleage.

Pecreds boorne.

Alla, and Cissa his son, after long siege, brake into the City of Andreasceaster, and slew the inhabitants from the greatest to the smallest.

Andredsceaster.

Porte, and his two sonnes, Byda, and Moegla, arriued in Brytaine with two ships, in a place called Portesmouth, and there slew a young Gentleman, one of the Nobility of the Brytaines, and diuers others.

Portsmouth.

The same yeere, two Dukes, to wit Cerdic and Kenric, his sonne, came into Brytaine with 5 ships, and arriued in a place called Cerdicshore, the same day they fought with the Brytaines, and put them to flight: Cerdic and his sonne Kenric, slew Natanleod King of the Brytaines, and 5000. men, of whose name that countrey as farre as Cerdicsford, was called by the name of Natanleod.

Aurelius Ambrose being poysoned, died, when hee had raigned 35 yeeres, and was buried at Stonehenge, then called Chorea Gigantum.

VTher Pendragon, so called, for that hee caused alwaies a Dragon to be borne before him in his battels, was crowned King of Brytaine: he vanquished Octa and Oza, at Windgate, by Coquet River. He was enamored vpon Igren the Dukes wife of Cornewall, and to obtaine his vnlawfull lust, made warre vpon her husband Goilen, and slew him in battell at Dunliot. On her he begat Arthur. He raigned 8. yeeres, and was buried at Stonehenge.

499. Gaufride. Arbor Succes.

ARthur the sonne of Vther, borne in Cornewall, at the age of 15. yeeres was crowned King of Britain, as some say, at Caerleon, other at Winch. One old nameleste pamphlet saith, at Cilicester, by Dubritius, Archbish. of Legions.

516. Nennius.

This City of Cilicester in Britih is called Caersegent, and was situate nere Reading. It was so called, for that Constantius the sonne of Constantine the great dyed there: his Sepulchre might once haue bene seene there besides the city, as the letters engrauen on it in stone, did declare. Thus farre the said nameleste Author.

See Chron.

The Towne of Cilicester, is yet to be seene in Hampshire, euen in the very edge of it, as the bambe diuideth, it is 6. miles or more from Reading, and containeth within the wall of stone about 80. acres of ground, diuided into 3. fields, beside the ground about the Pannor place it self, and the Church. The wall is about two miles compasse, with foure places where gates haue bene, on the which wall grow some Oakes of 10. cart load the piece, the ground within the wall, is almost leuell with the top of the same wall, but without the wall, is 6. or 7. foote of

Cilicester an ancient City.

height, above the ground within the wall at this present, is one farme house, and a parish church, the parishioners whereof dwell without the Towne. There is in digging and plowing much Romane money found: the ground there beareth wheate and corne, saue in some place, the corne being maruellous faire to the eye, and ready to shew perfecter, it decayeth. The Land of the Towne, after the Conquest came to one Blewith, and then one of the Blewiths leauing no heyre male, the Land not entailed to the heyres generall, came by marriage to one Peter de Cusance, Knight: and after, to one Edward Baynard, comming out of the house of the Baynards of Esser, whose name is now obscure there: thus much of Cilicester. And now againe to Arthur, who, as is reported, take to wife Guineuer, cousin to Cador, Duke of Cornwall, and daughter to the King of Liskar. Of this King Arthur there be many fabulous reports: but certaine he was (saith Will. of Malmesbury) a Prince more worthy to haue aduancement by true Histories, then false fables, being the onely pyop and vp-holder of this his country.

See Chron.

W. Malmes.

In the yere of our redemption 528. being the second yere of Iustinian the Emperour, the Gregorian, Theodosian and Hermogenian Codes were reduced into twelue bookes, which before that time were very pooly, and of infinit number.

The abridging and reducing the Ciuill Law into vniformity.

In the 4th yere of the raigne of Iustinian were published 50. bookes of Digests or Pandects.

Not long after that, came forth the institutions ordained for young students of the Law.

The 8th yeere of Iustinian, came forth a new Code, and shortly after were published new institutions, called in Latine Nouellæ institutiones.

Hee also ordained professors of the Law, viz. two at Baruth in Syria, 2. at Constantinople, and at Rome 4. Read Neander and Eunapius.

The abridging and reducing of the Ecclesiasticall Decrees into order and vniformity.

In the yere of our redemption, 1077. being the 22. yere of the Emperour Henry the fourth, and in the 5. yere of Pope Hildebrandus, otherwise called Gregory the 7. the order of Canons regular began to flourish in many places, according as they were instituted by Saint Augustin, namely at S. Quintines, which order of Monks was there placed by the famous Clerke, Ines, who was afterward Bishop of Chartres: hee compiled many goodly works, among which, one was the great and excellent booke of the Decretales, called Pamormia Iuonis, which was afterward called Iuons Decretal, because in the same booke he had abridged, and reduced into breuity the Apostolique Decrees, as you may read in the 26. booke, and 84. chap. of the Pystor of Pyskories. The foresaid Decretall was made at first very prolix and intricate, by Isidore in the time of Hyraclius the Emperor, as Vincent witnesseth in the 31. chapter of his 23. booke, and as you may well perceiue by what is already said, the Decretall was so very great, that besides the prolixity thereof, men could neither orderly read it, nor with any conuenience carry it from one place to another, for in the same was collected & contained all the Decrees of the Apostles, the Canons & Councels of all the Popes: after these came the renowned Gratianus a Monke, and from the foresaid Decretals, hee reduced them into order and breuity, and compiled the Decretall which is now in vse.

In the beginning of his raigne, Locho and Conradus his allies, enuying his prosperity, made warre against him, but he valiantly vanquished them with their Picts and Scots, and at his pleasure appointed them a gouernor, named Anguisel. He fought 12. battels against the Saxons, and alwaies bare away the victory. These battels (saith Nennius) were fought in places following:

Anno Hist.

Nennius.

The first battell was fought in the mouth of the water Glepue or Gledy.

The second, third, fourth, and fift, nigh vnto the River Douglase which is in the County of Lincur.

The sixt vpon the River Bassus.

The seuenth in the wood Calidon, or Carcoite Calidon.

The eight beside the Castle called Guinirn.

The ninth at Cotreiten in Wales.

The tenth by the Sea side, in a place called Trachevrith, or Rithopwode.

The eleuenth vpon an hill named Agned Cathergonien.

The twelfth, at the hill or Tolr ne of Bath, then named Bathen-hill, where many more were slaine by the force of Arthur: for he alone (saith Will. Malmes.) hauing the Image of our Lady soiled vpon his armes, fet vpon 900. of his enemies, and with an incredible slaughter put them to flight. But now concerning this Bath before mentioned, it is to be noted, that Bath in Sowersetshire standeth low compassed about with hils, whereby it is euident, that either it is remoued from that place where it stood in Nennius time, or else that the place which he called Badonicus Mons, was not this Towne it self, as Leyland and other coniecture, but some other high place neere, which is not vnlikely: for at this day within a mile of it, ouer a towne called Bannardowne, which is so called, either corruptly for Bathendowne, or else in memory of the Bannars displayed there, Bannerdowne. and secretly to me, both vpon the sight of the place, and report of such as haue gathered caps full of mens teeth in following the plow there, to be the same that Nennius (corruptly calleth Gildas) or Bede meaneth, though Polidor mistakes it for Blanchewode. Thus much for Badon hill: now to the History.

Bath, or Bathen hill.

W. Lambanners-downe.

Afterward Arthur raised the siege, which the Saxons had planted about Lincolne, and slew them in great numbers. On the other side (saith W. Mal.) though the English Saxons were forced with the variable valliance of fortune, yet they did alwaies supply their armies, when they were decayed, with their countrimen which came to him. & therefore with the better courage they ran vpon the weapons of their enemies, & when the inhabitants by little and little quailed & gaue ouer, they spred themselues thorow the whole Iland; Gods pleasure being so, in whose hand & power the alteration & change of all kingdomes is,

is, and doth consist: but these things came to passe in processe of time and yeres.

Arthurs round table.

Arthur hauing abated the rage of the Saxons, as is afore shewed, and reduced his country to quietnesse, he constituted the order of the round table, into the which order he only retained such of his Nobility as were most renowned for vertue and Chiualry. This round table he kept in diuers places, especially at Carlion, Winchester, and Camalet in Somersetthire. This Camalet sometimes a famous Towne or Castle, standeth at the South end of the Church of South Gadbury, the same is situate on a very hy or hil, wonderfully strengthened by nature, to the which be two entrings vp, by very steepe way, one by North, another by South-West. The very rote of the hill, whereon this Fortresse stood, is more then a mile in compasse. In the vpper part of the top of the hill be 4. ditches or trenches, 3 a bally wall of earth betwixt euery one of them. In the very top of the hill aboue all the trenches, is Magna area, or campus, of 20. acres or more, where in diuers places men may see foundations and rudor of walls. There was much dusky blue stone, that people of the village there by haue carried away. This top within in the vpper wall being more then 20. acres, hath often beene plowed, and borne very good corne: much gold, siluer, & copper of the Romans come hath bin found there in plowing, and likewise in the fields about the rots of this hill, with many other antique things, especially by Cast.

Camalet Castle.

Leyland.

There was found in memory of men, a horsehoofe of siluer at Camalet. The people can tell nothing there, but that they haue heard say, that Arthur much resorted to Camalet. The old Lord Hungarford was owner of this Camalet, since Hatting, Earle of Huntington by his mother, &c.

There is yet to be seene in Denbighshire, in the Parish of Lansanan, in the side of a stony hill, a place compassed, wherein be the foure and twenty seats for men to sit in, some lesse, and some bigger, cut out of the maine Rock by mans hand, where children and young men, comming to seeke their Cattell, vse to sit and play: they commonly call it Arthurs round Table.

Flores Historiar.

While Arthur was thus vnlikely occupied in his warres beyond the seas, (where he wrought many wonders, as some haue written, but farre vnlike to be true) Mordred, to whom he had committed the gouernment of Britaine, considerating himselfe with Cerdicus, first king of the West Saxons, traytorously vsurped the kingdome, of which treason, when relation came to Arthur, he speedily returned into Britaine, and at Richbrow nere to Sandwich, gaue battell to him, and won the field. Anguisel of Scotland, Gawin and Cador were there slaine, then pursuing him into Cornwall, gaue him battell there against the River of Alaune, of some Historiens called Cablan, where Mordred was slaine. And Arthur being deadly wounded, was conueyed to Glastenbury, where hee dyed on the 21. day of May, in the yere of Christ, 542. and was there buried, after hee had victoriously gouerned this Realme 26. yeres: he gaue Wentwarth (saith Rowse) with other possessions, to the value of 500 marks, to the Abby of Glastenbury.

Battell at Dover.

Mordred slaine.

Pont. Glasco. Walter conc. Monk Glast.

More then 600. yeres after his death, to wit, about the yere of Christ, 1189. which was the last yere of the raign of King Henry the second: his body was found buryed in the Churchyard betwixt 2. pillars, 16. foote deepe vnder ground, but those that digged the ground there to find his body, after they had entred about 7. foote deepe into the earth, they found a mighty broad stone, with a leaden Crosse fastened to that part, which lay downewards towards the corps, containing this inscription:

See pag. 357

Hic iacet sepultus inclitus Rex Arturius
in insula Aualonia.

This inscription was grauen on that side of the Crosse which was next to the stone, so that till the Crosse was taken from the stone, it was not seen. His body was found, not inclosed within a Tombe of stone, but within a great tree made hollow like a trough, the which being digged vpon and opened, therein were found the bones of Arthur, which were of a maruellous bignes, as Giral. Cambrensis, a learned man that then liued, reporteth to haue heard of the Abbot of Glastenbury, of whom he was enformed, that the thigh-bone of Arthur being set vp by the leg of a very tall man, came about it like the breadth of 3. fingers. The skull of his head of a wonderfull bignesse, in the which head, there appeared the paints of 10. woundes or more: all the which were growne into one scame, except onely that wherof he dyed, which being greater then the other, appeared very plaine. Also in opening the Tombe of his wife Guineuer, that was buryed with him, they found the tresses of her haire whole and perfect, finely platted, of colour like to gold, but being touched, fell to dust: the Abbot of that house (sometime Prior of Dermonsey) was named Henry Bloys, and was Nephew to King Henry the second, by whose commandement the burpall of Arthur was searched for and found. Whose bones, with the bones of Guineuer his wife being found, were removed into the new great Church (for the old was burned in Anno 1191.) and there buryed in a faire Tombe of Marble, laying the bones of the king at the head of the Tombe, and the bones of the Queene at his feete toward the West. The Crosse of lead with the inscription, as it was found, and taken off the stone, was kept in the treasury of reuester of Glastenbury church, till the suppression thereof, in the raigne of King Henry the eight.

Brute bookes

CONstantine, kinsman to Arthur, and son to Cador, Duke of Cornewall, was ordained King of Britaine, and raigned 3. yeres. 542.

This man was by the two sons of Mordred grieuously vexed, for they claimed the Land by the right of their Father, but after many battels they fled, the one to London, the other to Winchester, which cities they obtained, & take them: but Constantine followed, and subdued, and take the foresaid cities, and one of the young men he found in an Abbey at London, slew him neer the Altar cruelly, and burned him nigh Vter Pendragon, at Stonehinge. The other young man he found at Winchester, and slew him, dy-

Mordreds children slaine.

Gildas. Arbor fulcrell.

ting into the Church of Saint Amphibalus.

Aurelius Conanus a Brytaine, raised mo?tall warre against Constantine the King, and after fo?e fight slew him in the field, when he had raigned 3. yeres and was buried at Stonehinge.

455. AVrelius Conanus, Nephew to Arthur, was crowned King of Brytaine.

He cherished such as loued strife and dissention within his Realme, and gaue light credance to them which accused other, were it right o? wrong.

Flores Histo- rum. He imprisoned by strength his Uncle, which was right heyre to the Crowne. Hee raigned 33. yeres.

The fifth kingdome of the Saxons. 578. The kingdome of Nozthumberland began first in Brytaine under a Saxon, named Ida.

Gildas Conquest. VOrtiporus the son of Conanus, was ordained King of Brytaine, a vicious King, and cruell tyrant, who put from him his wife, and kept her daughter for his Concubine. In diuers battels, he discomfited the Saxons. He raigned 4. yeres.

581. MAlgo Pulcher Canonus of Nozth Wales, began his raigne ouer the Brytaines, and gouerned them 5 yeres.

Gildas. This Malgo was in proportion of body, greater then all the Dukes of Brytaine, but he delighted in the foule sinne of Sodomy. He slew his first wife, and then took to wife his owne brothers daughter.

586. CAreticus began to rule the Brittaines. This man loued ciuill warre, and was odible both to God and to his subiects. They moued the Saxons (being accompanied with Gurmundus King of Irelawo) to make warre vpon Careticus in such wise, that hee was faine to take the Towne of Cicester, where they assaulted him so?e, and fired the coyne, by tying fire to the wings of Sparrowes, that he with his men fled from thence into Wales: by which meanes, hee See Chron. left a great part of his dominion, and ended his life, when he had raigned 3. yeres.

Clocks ap- pointed to be set vp in Churches. This yeere 606. died S. Gregory, surnamed the Great, being the third yeere of Focas, 59. Emperour of the Romanes, and after him Sauinianus succeeded, being the 63. Pope: he commanded clocks and dials to be set vp in Churches, to distinguish the houres of the day: and in the yere, 612. in the moneth of August, there happned great earthquakes, and presently followed a Earth- quakes, pes- tilence, and strange dis- eases. most grieuous pestilence, with extreme great Scabs and Botches vpon most people, so as it was hard to discerne one man from another.

This Gurmund burned by the Land of Brytaine from Sea to sea, and the more part of that Ile called Logres, he gaue to the Saxons. The Brytaines gaue place, and fled into the West parts of Cornwall and Wales. Theanus, Archbishop of London, and Thadeocus Archbishop of Yo?ke, when their Churches were all destroyed to the ground, they with their Clergy fled into Wales, and many of them into little Brytaine. This plague came on the Brytaines for their couet ous nesse, rauine, and Lechery. Gurmund builded Gurmundchester. Gurmundchester built. 613. Paulus Diaconus. CAdwane, Duke of Nozthwales, was made Soueraigne of the Brytaines, who gaue strong battel to Ethelfride, King of Nozthumberland, and forced him to intreat for peace: After which concord being made, they continued all their life-time louing friends. Hee raigned 22. yeres.

Sixt king- dome of Saxons. Seuenth kingdome of Saxons. The kingdome of the East Saxons began vnder Erchenuinus, about the yere of Christ, 614.

The kingdome of Mercia, o? middle England, began vnder Penda, 626.

635. CAdwallin, the sonne of Cadwane, raigned ouer the Brytaines, he warred strongly vpon the Saxons, and made Penda King of Mercia tributary to him: He raigned 48. yeres, and was buried at London, in a Church of S. Martine neere vnto Ludgate, which Church was then new founded, and builded by the Brytaines in Anno 677.

685. CAdwalladar (saith Geffrey) was ordained King of the Brytaines, and ruled only three yeres: he banquished and slew Lothier, King of Kent, and Athelwold, king of South Saxons: and then forsaking his kingly authority, he went to Rome, there to be christened, who after became a Monke, and was buried in S. Peters Church at Rome. He was last king of Brytaine (saith Geffrey) but Bede sheweth, that Lothier, King of Kent, was slaine by Edrike, who succeeded him in that kingdome of Kent: and Ethelwold hee saith was slaine by a Saxon called Ceadwalla, King of the West Saxons, which Ceadwalla went to Rome, and was there buried, as you may read in the Hi?to?y of the West Saxon kings.

NOw are we come to the time wherin God (who fo? the sins of the people, translateth kingdomes) dispossessed the Brytaines of their ancient habitation, and rule of this Land, who by the victory of Saxons were enforced, either to miserable seruitude, o? driuen into the Westerne parts of the Ile, now called Wales and Cornwall, (where they now inhabit) o? else to their countreymen the Brytaines in France. They also called the Brytaines Walshmen, as who should say, strangers, that vse an vnknown tongue. This happened in the raigne of Ceadwalla, King of the West Saxons, whom Geffrey Monmouth calleth Cadwalladar, King of the Brytaines, about the yeere of Christ, 658. when the Brytaines being wasted with ciuill dissention, pestilence, and famine, lost all that small that they had long time painefully kept, and were couched in a corner. Thus much fo? the Brytaines: and now shall be shewed the raigne of the Saxons, who enioying the fertile soyle of this Realme, parted it in processe of time into seuen kingdomes: Kent, Southsex, East-angles, East-saxons, Mercia, Nozthumberland, and West-saxons, which the learned call the Heptarchy of the Saxons, of which kingdomes, I purpose (fo? auoyding of confusion) to treat seuerally, setting downe the limits of these countries, with the succession, Acts, and ciuill battels of their petty kings, vntill the time that this Heptarchy, o? gouernment of seuen, was reduced to a Monarchy, o? regiment of one.

KENTISH-SAXONS.

456. KEnt, the first kingdome possessed by the Saxons, contained that Country that stretcheth from the East Ore an to the River of Thames, hauing on the Southwest side Southery, on the West, London, and vpon the Nozthest, the said River of Thames. It hath the Archbishopzick of Canterbury, Metropolitane and Primate of all England, and the Bishopzicke of Rochester, and had Kings as followeth.

HEngist the Sonne of Widgils, the Son of Victa, the sonne of Weeta, the first sonne of Woden and Frea, was the first of the Saxons that made himselfe king of Kent, as before yee haue heard, 8. yeeres after his first entring into this Iland, in the yere from Christs birth, 456. He raigned 34. yeres, and died honozably, saith Marianus: others haue written, that by the counsell of Elded, Bishop of Glocester, Edell, Duke of Glocester, caused his head to be cut off, at Conesbozow. But this hath no likelihood of truth: fo? certaine it is, that Robert, base Son to Henry the first, was made first Earle of Glocester, and Henry the eighth made the first Bishop of Glocester. Marianus Florilegus. Bede. Austine came into Brittain. Ethelbert was the first Christian king of the Saxons. The first Earle of Glocester, and the first Bishop of Glocester.

490. ESke o? Vske, succeeding his father Hengist, raigned peacefully 24. yeeres.

514. Otta, sonne of Eske raigned 22. yeeres.

536. Emericus, the Sonne of Otta raigned 25. yeeres.

562. W. Malmes. EThelbert the Sonne of Emericus, had gouernment of this kingdome, by the space of 53. (o? after Bede, 56.) yeeres. This Ethelbert in the beginning of his raigne, being but a childe, was troubled with warres on euery side, that her could hardly defend his owne Coasts. In his first battell against Ceauline, King of the West Saxons, and Cuthe his Sonne, hee was forced to make his flight into Kent, hauing two of his Dukes, Oslaue and Cnebbano slaine in a place called Unibadumi: but when he came to more age, and was more cunning in warre, in short space, hee ouercame all the kingdomes of the Saxons round about, saue the Nozthumbers. And to the end he would haue acquaintance with fo?raigne Princes, hee made affinity and alyance with the King of France, by the marrying of his daughter Berta, a Christian woman, to whom hee permitted to vse the Lawes and Rites of her Countrey, and to haue a Bishop, whose name was Letardus, to remains with her, fo? her better instruction in the Lawes of God. By this meanes the barbarous and Heathen Saxons keeping company with the French, did agree to haue all one Law and like customes: besides this, the chaste & vertuous life of Letardus the Bishop and the other French, which came with the Queene, changed the kings mind vnto the knowledge of Christ, whereby it came to passe, that afterward he did so seeme giue place to the preaching of Augustine. Bede. At this time (saith Bede) the Brytaines being at quiet, little regarding the stormes past in their fathers dayes, and hauing respect onely to the present prosperous estate in the which they then lined, were so set to breake all good o?ders of truth and iustice, that scant any token o? remembrance thereof remained, but only in a few. Among many other of their deings, which their own Hi?to?iographer, Gildas, doth lamentably set fo?th in writing (he saith of them thus) that they neuer take care to preach the Gospell of Christ vnto the Angles and Saxons, which inhabited the Land among them. But yet the goodnesse of God prouided fo? the said Nation of the Angles, much more worthy preachers, by whom they might be brought to the Faith. Gildas.

In the yere 596. Pope Gregory moued of godly instinction in the hundred forty and seuen yeere after the arriuall of the Angles in Brytaine, sent Augustine, Melitus, Iustus and Iohn, with sundry other Monks that lined in the feare of God, to preach the Gospell to the Nation of the Angles in Brytaine, which landed in the Ile of Thanet, and were first receiued by Ethelbert king of Kent, whom they conuerted to the Christian Faith, with diuers of his people. In the 24. yeere of his raigne: and king Ethelbert delaying no time, gaue vnto Augustine the City of Canterbury, who furthered thus by the king, receiued at his hands an old Church, sometimes founded there by the faithfull Romanes, and dedicated the same to our Sauiour Iesus Christ, which since was called Austins. S. Augustins at Canterbury builded.

Augustine consecrated Melitus and Iustus Bishops, and appointed Melitus to preach vnto the East Saxons, who with their king Sebert the Nephew of king Ethelbert, at the preaching of Melitus, receiued the Word of life.

King Ethelbert founded the Church of Saint Paul in London. Iustus was made Bishop of Rochester, where Ethelbert builded fo? him and his successors the Church of S. Andrew. S. Paules in London founded. S. Andrewes in Rochester founded. Bede.

This yeere 603. died Pope Gregory the first, vpon the fifth of March, being the second yeere of Phocas the Emperor, after he had gouerned the Romane Sea 13. yeres, 6. moneths, and 10. daies, after whom succeeded Sabinian the first.

About this time (saith Bede) Austine (by the aide of king Ethelbert) called together the Bishops and Doctours of the greatest Vniuersitie and nerest to him, which were the Brytaines, to commune with them, in a place which to this day is called Augustines Oake, as yee would say, the power and strength of Austine, being in the borders of the Hiccians and West Saxons. There hee beganne with brotherly admonition (saith Bede) to perswade them to peace and Catholike vnity with him, and to communicate with him fo? Gods sake, the labour Austin erected the Brittaines to vnity with him.

of preaching the Gospell to the Heathen of England: for as yet they keepe not the Easter Sunday in due time, but from the fourteenth to the twentieth Moone, which count is concluded in compasse of eighte foure yeeres. They vsed moreouer, many other things contrary to the vnitie of the Church, which when they had beene with long discourse declared, and these men, neither for prayers, rebukes or threats of Augustin and his company, would giue their assent, but rather preferred their owne tradition before all other Churches, which throughout the World, agreed with Austine in Christ. Whereupon Austine fell to prayer, and also restored a blinde man to sight (saith Bede) which the Brytaines could not doe, and therefore confessed indeede that to be the true Way of Righteousnesse which Austine had preached and shewed them, but yet said, they could not alter their old customes, without the consent of their Clergie and people. They desired therefore to haue a second Synode of a greater multitude. Which when it was appointed to be so, there came by report, seuen Brytaine Bishops, and many other well-learned men, especially out of their greatest Monastery of Bangor, where at that time Dinoth was Abbot.

Second Synode.

Monastery of Bangor.

These men being now ready, togoe to the foresaid Synode, came first to a certaine holy and Wise man (which liued thereabout an Anchoritelife) to aske his counsell, whether they ought at Austines preaching and exhortation, leaue their traditions or no? Who answered them: If (quoth he) hee be a man of God, follow him. But how shall wee proue (say they) that hee is a man of God? The Anchorite answered, Our Lord saith, Take on you my yoke, and learne you of me, for I am milde, and humble of heart: it is likely that himselfe beareth the yoke of Christ, and will offer you the same to beare: but if he be cursit and proud, it is certaine that hee is not of God, neyther must wee much esteeme his words.

The Brytaines counsel to an Anchorite.

Matth. 11.

Then they enquired of him how they might know whether this Austine were proud or not? Mary (quoth hee) prouide yee that hee with his company come first to the place of the Synode, or Councell-house. And if when ye approach neere, hee ariseth courteously to you, thinke yee that hee is the seruant of Christ, and so heare yee him obediently: but if hee despise you, nor will vouchsafe to rise at your presence, which are more in number, let him likewise be despised of you.

And truely, as this Anchorite bade them, so did they: for it happened, that when they came thither, Austine was already there, and sate in his chayre: which when they saw, straightway waxing wroth, they noted him of pride, and therefore endeuored to ouerthwart and gainsay whatsoeuer he proposed: his Oration briefely was thus: Although, deare brethren, in many other points yee doe contrary to our custome, or rather contrary to the custome of the vniuersall Church of Christ: yet notwithstanding, if ye will in these three things consent vnto me, that is, to celebrate the Easter in due time, to accomplish the Ministery of Baptisme, according to the Romane, and Apostolike Church, and last of all, to preach with vs to this English Nation, the Word of our Lord, all your other Ceremonies, Rites and Customes, though they be contrary to ours, yet wee will willingly suffer, and be content to beare with them. But they answered, they would doe none of the things requested, neither would account him for their Bishop: saying, Nay, if he would not so much as rise to vs, truely the more wee should now subiect our selues to him, the more would hee hereafter despise vs, and set vs at nought. To whom Austine threatfully prophesied, that if they would not take peace, and be at accord with their brethren, they should receiue and feele warre from their enemies. And if they would not preach to the Englishmen the way of life, they should suffer at their hand, and by their power, the vengeance of death: which thing came to passe afterward, as shall be shewed in the raigne of Edilfride King of the Northumbers.

The Brytaines refuse Austine to be their Archbishop, or to obey him in any thing. Austin threatneth the Brytaines.

The said yeere of Christ, 603. also died Augustine the Archbishop, the 26. of May, after the decease of Saint Gregory, two moneths, two weekes, and two daies: And after himselfe had beene consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury eight yeeres, fiue moneths, and one and twenty daies, but before he deceased, he ordained Laurence to succeed him in the Archbishoprick, which he saw in his life time the rather perfourmed, left that after he was dead, the state of the Church (being as yet but rude, and lately conuerted) might beginne to waxe and fall, if it should haue lacked a Pastor or Ruler neuer so little awhile: his body was for a time layde in the porch of the forenamed Church of Saint Peter and Paul, because the Church was not yet finished, nor dedicated, but shortly after the dedication of the same, (which was done by Laurence his successor) hee was translated into the Church, and layd on the North side thereof decently. And vpon his Combe was written this Epitaph, *Hic requiescit Dominus Augustinus Doroberniensis Episcopus primus, &c.* Heere resteth blessed Augustine, the first Bishop of Doraborna, who being sent hither of holy Gregory Bishop of Rome, and strengthened of God by the working of miracles, conuerted King Ethelbert and his people from the worshipping of Idols, to the Faith of Christ, and fulfilling in peace the daies of this office, hee dyed the twentie sirth of May, in the raigne of the same King Ethelbert.

Augustine the Archbishop deceased.

Gocelini monachi antiqui Epitaph. of Augustine.

The Noble King Ethelbert, making prouision for them that should come after, brought the Lawes of his Country into the mother tongue, thereby to reward the good accordingly, and to withstand the wicked by seuere meanes, and let nothing whereof his posterity needs to doubt in any matter, and then after his temporall raigne, which hee had kept most gloriously ouer the Kentish Saxons, the space of 54. (or after Bede 56.) yeres, he entred into the eternall Blisse of the Kingdome of Heauen vpon the

W. Malmesb. Of these Lawes foure copies are yet extant. Register Cotton. W. Thorne.

foure and twentieth day of February, being the eleuenth yeere after that he had receiued the faith of Christ, and the nineteenth yeere after S. Augustine, with his company were sent to the English Nation to preach: he was the third King, and raigned ouer all the South Prouinces, which are separated from the North, by the River of Humber, and the borders adioyning thereunto. King Ethelbert being married to the Lady Bertha, a Christian woman, and Daughter of the King of France, receiued of her a sonne, named Edbald, (who married Emma the daughter of the King of France) and a daughter named Ethelburge, otherwise called Tate, that was married to Edwin, king of Northumberland, which Edwin was conuerted to the faith by Bishop Pauline. The place of King Ethelberts buriall was in S. Martins Parish within the Church of the blessed Apostles, Peter and Paul, neere Canterbury, on the North side of the same Church, which he builded from the ground, as before is declared, where also the Noble Lady, Queene Bertha, his wife, was buried before him, and the Bishop Luiardus that came out of France with her, and vpon his graue was left this inscription:

Rex Ethelbertus *hic claditur in poliandro,*
Fana pians certus Christo meat absque meandro.

EDbald, when he had taken vpon him to rule the Realme, and stood no longer in awe of his father, hee did not onely refuse to accept the faith of Christ, but was also polluted with such a fornication, as the Apostle witnesseth, neuer had beene heard of among the Gentiles, which is, that hee had married his fathers wife, with the which two haynous facts hee gaue occasion to his subiects to returne to their former filth, which vnder his fathers raigne, for fauour or for feare of the king, had perfect to the Lawes of Christian faith, and chastity: but the scourge of God, and vengeance from Heauen wanted not to the punishment of this vnfaithfull King: for he was plagued with often frensie of minde, and raging fury of an vncleane spirit: but by Laurence, Archbishop of Canterburie, hee was at length conuerted from his Idolatry, and vnlawfull fame, and was turned againe to the Faith, and being baptized, hee endeuoured to maintaine the state of the Church in all points to the vttermost: he builded a Chappell within the Monastery of S. Peter and Paul, and gaue to that Monastery a great portion of Land: hee is said to be the first founder of Fulkstone in Kent, but I haue seene no Charter thereof: he raigned 25 yeeres, and was buryed by his Father in the Monastery of S. Peter and Paul.

640. ERcombert, the Sonne of Edbald by Emma his wife, hee first suppressed the Temples of the Idols, and because his people were giuen to excesse, commanded a solemne fast of forty daies long, to bee obserued thorowout all his kingdome, and raigned twenty sius yeeres. It is recorded in the Antiquities of Chsikes Church in Canterbury, that about this time,

The Archbishoprickes of Canterbury and Yorke erected.

Honorius, Archbishop of Canterbury, diuided his Prouince into Parishes. Which Honorius deceased in Anno 693. when hee had sate Archbishop 20. yeeres.

667. W. Malmesb. EGbert his Sonne succeeded, whose quiet gouernment for a long season was afterward defaced by the cruell murther of Ealbert, and Egelbright his cousins Germans, whom either he slew himselfe, or procured to be slaine by a trap, named Thanor: he raigned 9. yeres.

The Lady Domneua, next true heyre to the Crowne from Edbald, erected a Monastery called Minster in the Ile of Thanet, and became first Abbesse there.

674 OThanus succeeded his brother Egbert, who being assaulted oftentimes by Edrike, the Sonne of Egbert, in a cruell fight was shot thorow with a dart, whereof hee dyed vnder his Surgeons hands, when he had raigned thirteene yeeres, and was buried with his predecessours, Kings, in the Monastery of Peter and Paul by Canterbury.

EDrick the Sonne of Egbert, within the space of two yeeres, lost both life and kingdome. After his death, the kingdome being sometime gouerned by vsurpers, and sometime by forreiners, began to decay.

The Kentishmen by casting of fire, did cruelly burne Moll, the brother of Cedwall, King of the West Saxons, and twelue of his Knights with him: wherewith Cedwall being mooued to fury, did vilerably harry and spoyle all Kent, so that by these pace of fiue yeeres, there was no King in that Countrey.

698 WIthredus, the Sonne of Egbert, purchasing peace with money, was then established King, in which state he behaued himselfe very honorably, both in peace and warre. Hee founded the Priorie of Saint Martin at Douer, and raigned 33. yeeres, with whom King Swebheard de raigned iointly in one part of his kingdome.

732 EDbert the Sonne of Withred, walked in his fathers ordinances, and had like successe, and raigned 23. yeeres.

This yeere 737. the Visigots ended their raigne, and about foure yeeres past, dyed the venerable Bede.

The end of the Visigots. The venerable Bede died.

This yeere 729. two dreadfull Starres appeared, the one before the Sunne rising, the other after the Sunne setting, both which appeared in the moneth of January, the space of 15. daies, and carryed with them the likeneese of a bundle of fire against the North, and somewhat towards the West, at which time, the Pagans infested France and Spaine.

754 EDelbert his brother succeeded, in whose time the City of Canterbury (as is to be thought) was burned by chance: he raigned not 11. yeres, and was buried in the Monastery of Peter and Paul at Canterbury.

769 ALricke, the third Sonne of Withred, ruled Kent after his brethren, and was vanquished

shed in a fought field against Offa King of the Mercians: hee raigned 34. yeeres, and was the laſt of the line or ſucceſſion of the Kings of Kent.

799. EDelbert or Egbert, otherwiſe called Pren, then vſurped the kingdome, and leuied war againſt the Mercians, by whom hee was taken priſoner, and not long after reſtored, but the Kentiſhmen would not receiue him. Cuthred then vſurped, and bare a Title of a Kentiſh king for the ſpace of eight yeeres.

BAlbred the heyre of Cuthred then tooke on him the Princely dignity, but Egbert King of the Weſt Saxons, ſo diſcomfited him in battell, that hee fled ouer the Riuer of Thames, and loſt both his kingdome, when he had raigned 20. yeres, and was neuer heard of afterward. whereby this kingdome of Kent was united to the kingdome of the Weſt Saxons. 827.

The yere 829. Wilfred, Archbiſhop of Canterbury deceaſed, and was buried in Chriſts Church in Canterbury, when hee had ſate 27. yeres, after whom ſucceeded Fleogild.

SOVTH-SAXONS.

SOuthſex the ſecond kingdom contained the Counties of Southſex and Surrey, which had on the Eaſt ſide Kent, on the South ſide the Sea, and on the Weſt ſide Hampſhire, and on the North, the Riuer of Thames: it containeth the Dioceſſes of Chicheſter, and part of Wincheſter.

847. AEle the eighth from Woden, with his three ſonnes, Cimen, Plencing and Ciſſa, came into Bryttaine with three ſhips, and landed in a place called Kimenſhore, and there ſlew many of the Bryttaines, and forced the reſt to make their flight into a wood which is called Andeſeage. After ward fighting with the Bryttaines in a place nere vnto Marcredes burne, ſlew many of them, and put the reſt to flight. Then hee and Ciſſa his ſonne after long ſiege, brake into the Citty of Andeds Ceſter, and ſlew the inhabitants from the greateſt to the ſmalleſt, and ſo began the kingdome of Southſex: hee raigned 36. yeeres.

514. CIſſa his ſonne ſucceeded, he built the Citty of Ciſſaceſter, now called Chicheſter, and named it after his owne name: hee raigned, as it is ſaid, 76. yeeres.

590. ETheluulfus, whom Bede nameth Edelwach, was chriſtened in the Prouince of the Mercies, in the preſence, and at the exhortation of King Wulfhere, who alſo at the Font was his godfather, and in ſigne of that adoption, gaue him two Prouinces, that is to ſay, the Ile of Wight, and the Prouince of Manures, in the Weſt part of England. Bede. First chriſtened King in Southſex.

Wilfride the Biſhop, came to the Prouince of the South Saxons, vnto them did hee miniſter the Word of Faith, by the permiſſion and great reioycing of the King. This Biſhop chriſtened the chiefe Lords and Knights of the Countrey: and the reſt of the people at the ſame time, or ſome after were chriſtened by other Prieſts. The Queene Ebba was chriſtened in her Ile which was in the Prouince of the Uiccians: for ſhee was daughter of Eanfride, who was Eanheres brother, where were both Chriſtian men, and all their people. But all the Prouince of South Saxons had neuer before that time heard of the name of God, nor the faith: yet there was in that country a certaine Monk, a Scot borne, named Dicuil, which had a very little Monaſtery in a place called Boſanham, all compaſſed about with woods and the ſea, and therein liue or ſixe brethren ſeruing God in humble and poore life, but none of the people there did giue themſelues either to follow their life, or heare their preaching: but when Biſhop Wilfride came and preached the Goſpell vnto them, hee deliuered the people not only from the perill of damnation, but alſo from an horrible murrain of temporall death. For in three yeres before, it had not rained in all thoſe quarters, whereby a famine deſtroyed the people by heaps, in ſo much that diuers times 40. or 50. in a company being famiſhed for hunger, would goe together to ſome rocke, or ſea-bank, and caſt themſelues all downe either to be killed with the fall, or drowned in the Sea: but on the ſame day they receiued baptiſme and faith, there fell a plentifull ſhowre of raine, wherewith the earth flouriſhed againe. This Biſhop alſo taught the people there to get their ſuſtenance by fiſhing.

Edilwach gaue vnto Biſhop Wilfride the Land of 87. tenements, where hee might place his company, the name of the place was Seole-ſay. In this place hee founded a Monaſtery, to be his Epiſcopall Sea. Seales the nunnery in Southſex.

CEadwall a valiant young man of the Weſt Saxons, being baniſhed from his Country, came with an hoſt of men, and ſlew King Edilwach, walked that Prouince, cruelly murthered and ſpoyled euery where: Edilwach raigned 25. yeeres. 605.

And ſoone after, Ceadwall was driuen out by two Captaines of the Kings, Bertham and Anthum, which from that time did hold and keepe the Dominion of that Prouince, the chiefe of which two, was afterward ſlaine of the ſame Ceadwall, (being then King of the Weſt Saxons) and the Prouince ſubdued and brought into more grieuous ſubiection then it was before. Againe, Ine, that raigned after Ceadwall, oppreſſed it with like miſery and bondage many yeeres, whereby it came to paſſe, that the people of Suſſex in all this time could haue no Biſhop of their owne: but were faine (their firſt Biſhop Wilfride being called home to Yorke) to be vnder the Dioceſſe of the Geniſes which belonged to the Weſt Saxons, as many as were in the Territory of Seleſey.

After that Ceadwall had thus obtained the kingdome of the Weſt Saxons, hee tooke the Ile of Wight alſo, which was ſo altogether giuen to the worſhipping of Idols, that hee intended vtterly to baniſh and driue out thence all the old native inhabitants, and to put people of his owne Countrey in their places. For, though hee was not yet at that time baptized, and regenerate in Chriſt, yet he bound himſelfe with a vow, that if he tooke the Iland, he would giue vnto God the fourth part thereof, and of all the prey. Which thing hee ſo performed, that Biſhop Wilfride happening to be there at that time, a man of his owne Countrey, he offered and gaue the ſame vnto him, to the vſe and ſeruice of our Lord. The ſaid Iland contained as the Engliſh did rate it, 1200. tenements, whereof was giuen to the Biſhop, the poſſeſſion of the Land of three hundred Tenements, which portion the Biſhop gaue and committed to one of his Clerks, named Bermerni, and appointed thereto a Prieſt, named Hildila, to miniſter the Word and baptiſme of life to all that would be ſaued. Two children of the blood Royall, being brethren to Druadle King of that Iland, being fled into the next Prouince of the Vites, where they had hidden themſelues in a place called Stonecſtat, were betrayed and found out, whom the King commanded to be put to death. Which thing when a certaine Abbot named Cimberth had heard of, whoſe Monaſtery was not farre from thence, at a place called Redfoyd, hee came to the king, and deſired him, that if hee would needes haue the children put to death, yet they mought firſt receiue the Sacraments of Chriſts Church. The King granted his requeſt, and then he take and Catechized them in the faith of Chriſt, and waſhed them with the font of Baptiſme, made them ſure in perfect hope to enter the Kingdome euerlaſting: then were they put to death by the Hangman. When after this order, all the Prouince of great Bryttaine had receiued the Faith of Chriſt, the Ile of Wight receiued the ſame alſo: In which notwithſtanding, becauſe of the miſery and ſtate of forraine ſubiection, no man take the degree of the Miniſtery, and place of a Biſhop, before Daniel, who was Biſhop of the Weſt Saxons, and of the Geniſes, Suſſer and Hampſhire. The Ile of wight. Stonecſtat. Redfoyd. The Ile of wight receiued the faith but not the Biſhop.

The ſituation of this Ile is ouer againſt the mids of the South Saxons and Geniſes, the Sea comming betweene, of the breadth of three miles, which Sea is called Solent: in which two armes of the Ocean Sea, that brake out from the maine North Sea about Bryttaine, doe daily meete, and violently runne together beyond the mouth of the Riuer Homelen, which runneth along by the Country of the Vites that belong to the Prouince of the Geniſes, and ſo entreth into the foreſaid Sea, and after this meeting and ſtriuing together of the two Seas, they goe backe, and flow againe into the Ocean from whence they came.

Now at length (ſaith Bede) it was determined by a decree in a Synode, that the Prouince of South Saxons, which to that day appertained to the Dioceſſe of Wincheſter, where Daniel was Biſhop, ſhould haue a Sea and Biſhop of their owne ſeuerally: whereupon Cadbert, Abbot in the Monaſtery of Biſhop Wilfride, was made, and conſecrated firſt Biſhop of that Dioceſſe. Suſſex and Hampſhire diuided.

After his death, Ceolla take the Biſhoprickе vpon him: after whoſe departure, the Sea ſtood vacant many yeeres.

EAST ANGLES.

EAſt Angles, the third kingdome, contained the Countries of Norfolke and Suffolke, Cambridge, and the Ile of Ely, which had on the Eaſt and North ſides the Sea, on the Weſt, Saint Edmonds Dike, with a part of Hertfordſhire, and on the Southſide Eſſex: it containeth the Dioceſſe of Norwich and Ely.

492. VFfa the eighth from Woden, firſt King of the Eaſt Angles, raigned 7. yeere.

499. CTitulus raigned 20. yeeres.

519. W. Malmeſ. REdwaldus the tenth from Woden, as men writte: this is he, that for the fauour of Edwine, killed Edelfride king of Northumberland. The ſame Redwald was by the perſwaſion of Edwine baptized, but in vaine: for after by his wiues counſell, hee fell from the Faith againe: his ſonne Dorwaldus in pure and vncorrupted Chriſtianity, was ſlaine by the Pica, then Rochbert: Redwaldus raigned 25. yeres.

554. GErpenwald, ſonne to Redwaldus, ſucceeded in the kingdome of the Eaſt Angles, raigned 12. yeres.

569 SEebert, brother to king Gerpewald, taken vpon him the kingdome, a man in all points learned, and moſt Chriſtian, who whileſt his brother was yet liuing, being himſelfe baniſhed into France, was baptized and inſtructed in the Faith, of which Faith he laboured to make all the Realme partakers, as ſome as he came to the Crowne. To whoſe good endeuour, Biſhop Felix did greatly apply himſelfe. Who, when he came from Burgundy (where he was borne) into Bryttaine to Honorius the Archbiſhop, and had obtained licence of him to preach the Word of God vnto the foreſaid Eaſt Angles, his zeale and vertuous deſire proſpered not in vaine, for he found in that Nation plenteouſneſſe of fruit, and increaſe of people that beleeued him. For, hee brought all this Prouince vnto the Faith, and workes of iuſtice, and in the end, to reward of perpetuall bleſſedneſſe, according to the abodement of his name, which in Latine is called Felix, and in our Engliſh tongue, Happy: he was made Biſhop of Dunnocke, or Dunwich, an ancient Citty in Suffolk, now ſore decayed, and as is ſuppoſed, more then halfe ſwallowed vp in the Sea. East Angles receiued the Faith. Felix Biſhop of Dunwich.

The common fame and report of the inhabitants is, that before the Towne came to decay, there belonged thereunto two and fifty Diuine houſes, as Parith Churches, Priories, Hoſpitals, and Chappels, as many Windmils, and as many toppe Shippes. But certaine it is, as appeareth by manifeſt and found record, Liber Domeſd. Records Dom.

which I haue saine, that euen of late time, there was within the said Towne fiue Parish Churches, two houses of Friers, an house which had beene of Templers, two Hospitals, and three Chappels, foure of these Parish Churches are now of late swallowed vp in the Sea, and but two of them remaining on the Land, to wit, S. Peters, and all Saints. The men of Dunwich desiring succour for their Towne against the rage of the Sea, affirme that a great piece of a Forrest, sometimes thereby, is deuoured and turned to the vse of the Sea.

There hath beene a Mint, many men of that Towne can yet shew of the coynes, which are sterling pence, with this inscription, Ciuitas Dunwich, 20. of which pence weighed an ounce, 12. ounces apoinct Troy, and so being 20 s. in money, was both a pound in payment, and also a pound in waight, as is aforesaid. This Citty was gouerned by a Maior and three Bailifes, besides inferior officers: Felix their first Bishop sate 18. yeres, and ended his life there An. 649.

Sebam, now called Somerfoure miles from Ely.

and was buried at Sebam, a place where sometimes a great famous Monastery stood replenished with religious persons, vnder their Abbot, Warsred, which house was founded by a Noble man, named Luringus, and was wholy subuerted by the Danes: the body of Felix was remoued to Ramsey. Bishop Felix founded a Church at

Radham.

Radham, which was also amongst other destroied by the Danes. Felix also founded Schooles at Felixstowe, now called Filchestow. After Felix, succeded Thomas, a Deacon, borne in Gerwy, he sate 5. yeres. After him Berergilius, surnamed Bonifacius, a Kentish man borne, sate seuentene yeres. After him succeded Bisi, who diuided the Sea into two Bishoppicks, to wit, Dunwich, and Helmham. Thus much for Dunwich.

Felixstow.

Sebert the King, being desirous to follow the godly order which he had seene in France, set vp Scholes in this kingdome (by the ayd of Felix, whom hee had taken out of Kent for that purpose) appointing Maisters and Teachers to bring vp children in learning and vertue, after the manner of the Kentish men. This Sebert was so inflamed with the loue of Heauen, that leauing at the last all affaires of his Realme to the gouernment of his cousin Egrike, he became a Monk, and entred a Monastery by him builded, wherein he bestowed his time in diuine studies, and contemplation: but the vplandish English-men with their old Captain Penda, inuaded his dominions, so that his people after long resistance, finding themselues too weak, they pluckt Sebert out of the Monastery, and brought him against his will vnto the field, where, of the cruel heathen people he was kill'd, with king Egrike, and the whole army discomfited, about the yere of CHRIST 652.

At this time the Christian faith was in most places gloriously increased, and peacefully established, so as the Gospell sweetely flourished, which blessednesse, Satan enuied, as hee did mans estate in Paradise, and now infected the minds of diuers, to plant a new Religion, the chiefe whereof,

was MAHOMET, *whose dauelish doctrine hath done extreme damage to the christians, particularly and generally.*

The life and Doctrine of the false prophet Mahomet.

MAHOMET, of the stocke of Ismael, an Orphant of poore parentage, of an excellent wit & great strength, borne in Arabia, in his youth taken and sold to a rich Marchât, who employed him in all his affairs, his Master died, then he married Cadiga his Mistris, of 50. yeres of age, by whom hee had much wealth, the which in few yeres he encreased mightily, as well in Treasure, Camels, Munition, as other commodities: he gaue great entertainment in his house, and was liberall vnto the poore, hee was very skilfull in Magicke, and had learned many deceits of the Egyptians: for the which he was held in admiration of the rude ignorant Sarazens, and distracted Arabians: And albeit he was of very small reading by reason of his education as otherwise, yet hee diligently hearkened vnto such as were learned, especially if they were any way malecontented, either with any established Religion, State, or Gouernment, among which number, hee enclined earnestly vnto the censured Heretike Sergius, a Monke of Constantinople, which should haue beene punished for maintaining the Nestorian heresie. This subtle Mahomet attributed great diuinity to himselfe: and hauing the falling sickenesse, he denied it, saying, hee was onely in a trance, being rauished with the vision of the Angell Gabriel, who deliuered him secret instructions and new commandements from God. Hee taught a white Doue to pecke foode out of his eares, which hee made the people beleeue, was the holy Ghost that came to inspire him: by meanes whereof, and other his illusions which his cunning confederates vsed in his behalfe, he strongly possest the multitude with a most holy and reuerent opinion of him, and perswaded them also that hee was the Great Prophet of the Ismaelites, or as they call themselues, Sarazens, because they would be thought to be descended of Sara the wife of Abraham:

And then by the helpe of Sergius and the rest, in contempt of the old and new Testament, he made his Antichristian Alcharon, wherein he forbade the beliefe and vse of holy Scriptures,

commanding

commanding them to continue Circumcision, and vtterly to abolish baptisme, saying, that to them belonged the diuine promise (in contempt of Iewes and Christians) he commanded euery Friday for euer to be held his holy Sabbath, he commanded them not to eate Swines flesh, nor drinke Wine by day, he allowed euery man to haue many wiues, and constituted a voluptuous Paradise, like to the Manichees, he absolutely denied the Trinity, and the diuine Doctrine of our Sauiour Christ and his Apostles, except onely such sentences of the Text, as hee wrested to serue his satanicall purpose, saying, Christ was a holy Prophet, and his forerunner, and had foretold much of him and of his coming. He taught that the holy Ghost was a creature, like as did the Nicolaitans, with many other abominations and blasphemies not fit to be spoken by a Christian: all which at this time he beganne publikely to preach, this yere 620. being the 12th yere of Hyraclius the Emperour. And by degrees it was so followed and beleeued, that hee grew mighty in fauour with all sorts of people, chiefely with the Sarazens. Then he entred into Armes, and with a great hoste wasted Assyria, tooke Damasco, and ouerthrew the Persians: he enueigled to his seruice, the warlike Scenits, who reuolted from Hyraclius for want of pay, and hauing subdued many Nations, caused himselfe to be crowned king of Persia, then hee proclaimed himselfe a great Prophet, and by force established his blasphemous Alcharan, consisting of the dregs of all religions then in vse. Which diuelish and Antichristian doctrine, through the negligence and ciuill dissention of the Christian Princes, hath ouerspred all Asia, Africa, and the best part of Europe, and in many places of India: he dyed in the yere 632. being poysoned by his Allies, vpon hope to succeede him in his gouernment: some write at 60. yeeres of age, and some write at 40. yeeres, being dead, he was put into an yron Chest, and placed it vpon lofty Tresels, in the City of Mecca in Persia, vnto whom, and other his Saints, they make their daily prayers, and the Turkes goe thither in pilgrimage from all places: Read Egnatius 2. booke, Blondus 9. booke, Charles Fontaigne his 2. booke of Pedals, and Polidor Virgil 7. booke.

But they will be extreme drunke in the night.

637. ANna, the sonne of Ewide, brother to Edwald, succeded Egricus, and was likewise slaine by the fury of Penda, Captaine of Marches, or vplandish Englishmen, then heathen and vnchristned people, vnder whom he had raigned nineteene yeeres, and was buried at Blidzburgh, in which place also was buried his son Firminus, but was after translated to S. Edmundsburie. He had issue by his wife Hereswida, daughter to Herericus, the Nephew of Ardwine, King of Northumbers, sister to Hilda, Etheldred, Ethelburga, and Saxburg. Etheldred, daughter to Anna, founded the Church of Saint Peter in the Ile of Ely, in the yeere of Christ 674. placing there an hundred persons of both seres, vnder monasticall habite, and the her selfe became their first Abbatesse. This Countrey of Ely

Blidzburgh.

is a Prouince of the East English, and containeth about two hundred housholds, and is compassed on each side, as an Iland, round about with fennes or waters: and for that many Eeles are taken there, some suppose the Ile to be called Ely: but other thinke the same to take name of Willowes, wherof the Ile aboundeth. The ground heere is very plentifull of all kinde of fruites, full of pleasant woods and vines, replenished with many kinds of wilde beasts, fowles and fishes, &c.

Athelhere, brother to Anna, succeded, and both hee and Penda were slaine by Oswinus, King of the Northumbers, and that deseruedly, because hee had ayded Penda against his owne brother, and his kinsman.

Adelwaldus, his brother, succeeded him with like fortune, and left the kingdome to Aldulfus, Elohwoldus and Hisberna, sonnes of the same Athelhere.

Ethelbert succeeded him: he had by his wife Laondrine, a sonne named Ethelbert.

ETHelbertus his sonne succeeded in the kingdome of the East Angles. This man in his youth much profited in learning, not giuen to voluptuous pleasures, but to prayers, almes, and other good workes: hee was praised in counsell, mercifull in iudgement, and sober in speech: he was at length perswaded so marry, for the encrease of children, whereunto hee assented. At length, Offa, King of the Pecties, vsing deceit, when strength failed, for this king Ethelbert promised him many great things, but when hee had got him into his Palace, which was at Sutton Wallis, three miles from Heuefoyth, Northward vpon Lugge in Herefordshire, by the counsell of the said Offaes wife, for ambition of his kingdome, caused his head to be stricken off, by one Grimbert a familiar to king Offa, on the eighteenth day of May: his body was buried on the banke of the River Lugge, where now standeth the Parish Church of Maurdine. And so Offa vniustly inuaded and obtained the kingdome of the East Angles: but when a Virgin named Alfride, daughter to Offa, whom Ethelbert should haue married, vnderstood thereof, shee willed his seruants to hasten them into their Countrey, for their Master was beheaded. And being taught by the Holy Ghost, prophesied to her mother in this manner, quoth shee, Thy sonne shall not liue three yeeres, and the kingdome shall be vnstable, and thou thy selfe shalt not liue in the confession of God ouer three moneths, but shalt be possessed with a wicked spirit, and shalt eate thine owne tongue, and dye an euill death: And it followed, (saith mine Author) as the Virgin had spoken: which Virgin vowed to liue a religious life, and became an Ancresse at Crowland.

709. John Capgraue. Giraldus Cambrensis. Ofbert de Clere.

Sutton Wallis.

Maurdine.

When King Offa heard hereof, he repented him, and caused the body of Ethelbert to be remooued to Hereford, three miles from Kenchester, and foure miles from Sutton Wallis, where afterward ouer him was builded a goodly Church by king Milfride, which Church hee

Kenchester.

endowed with great possessions, and made the same a Bishops Sea: since which time that Church is dedicated to the said Ethelbert.

At Sutton Wallis there appeareth yet notable ruines of some ancient and great building, and therefore great likelihood that it was sometime the mansion house of king Offa, at such time as Kenchester stood, or else Hereford was a beginning. Maurdine village is about a mile from Sutton Wallis, and hard by is a hill, whereas men say, Saint Ethelbert was beheaded. At this Village is now a fayre Church dedicated to Ethelbert. I thinke he was slaine at Sutton in king Offaes house, but the name of Maurdine seemeth to expresse the martyrs hill.

Kenchester.

Kenchester, three miles from Hemeforth Westward, a mile from the banke of Wy River, there was a Palace of Offaes (as some say) the ruines yet remaine: there haue beene found ditches and flores. This Towne is farre more ancient then Hereford, it standeth on the same side of the River Wy, and 3. miles or more aboue Hereford, and was in the Romanes time, as appeareth by many things, especially by antike mony of the Cæsars very often found within the Towne, and in plowing thereabout, the which, the people there calleth dwarfe money. The compasse of Kenchester hath beene by estimation as much as Hereford, excepting the Castle, the which at Hereford is very spacious: pieces of the walls and Towres yet apppeare from the foundation: the people of Hereford haue fetcht much away from thence to build withall. The place where the Towne was, is all ouergrowne with brambles, hazels, and like shrubs: there haue beene found in our time Brytains bricks, conduites for water, stoned pauements, pieces of gold, and other strange things. To be short, of the decay of Kenchester, Hereford rose and flourished.

Hereford.

The towne of Hereford is large and strongly walled. Also hauing a maine Castle hard by the ripe of Wy, the Castle is thought nigh as great of circuit, as Windsore. The Dungeon of the Castle is high, and strong, and in the Dike not farre from it, is a faire spring called Saint Ethelberts Will. Within the Castle in digging haue beene found the bones of men of great bignesse, and hard by in the ripe of the banke also are found the like bones: the wall of the Towne is compassed with a Dike, alway filled with moorish water descending into it: this water resorteth to the bottome of Wy. There bee in the Towne foure Parish Churches, one being the Cathedrall Church, of a very strong building. Saint Ethelbert was buried there: but since the Welshmen destroyed the Towne in King Edward the Confessours time, his Reliques haue not beene seene there. There be in the suburbs two Parish Churches, there hath beene a cell of blacke Monkes, and two houses of Fryers, blacke and gray. Some say, that this Towne tooke the name of an old foord or passage ouer Wy, not farre from the Castle: some say it was called Ferneledge, or Fernehill: and the place where the Cathedrall Church now is, was a Chappell of our Lady called Fernelege. Thus much for Hereford.

After Ethelbert, few men of might raigned in East England, by means of the violence done by the Mercians, untill Edmond, borne in Saxony, in the City of Norhenberge, sonne to King Alkemond and Queene Siware. In which time raigned in East Angle a king named Offa, who minding a voyage to the Holy Land, tooke his iourney thorow Saxony, there to visit his cousin Alkemond, and Nephew Edmond, which Edmond hee adopted to be his heyre of East Angles. Now so it happened, that the said Offa, hauing accomplished his voyage at the holy Sepulture, and returning, deceased at Port Saint George, hauing before sent his Ring to Edmond, making him gouernour of the East Angles, his father Alkemond prouided him of men famous by experience, both in armes and gentlenesse: hee had also clerks circumspect and wise, to counsell him, he stuffed his ships with men and victuall: which thing done, and leaue taken of his father and mother, he sailed and landed in East England, at a place called Maidenbour, where falling on his knees, hee made deuoute prayer unto God, that his comming thither might be to him acceptable, and to all the countrey profitable. And not farre from thence hee builded a royall Tower, which to this day is called Hunstanstone, which betokeneth sweetnesse and great might: there he held his houshold nigh one yeere, and then remooued to Athelbrough, where hee remained one whole yeere, and learned his Psalter in the Saxon tongue, which booke was reserued in the Reuestry of the Monastery of Saint Edmundsbury, till the same Church was suppressed in the raigne of King Henry the eighth, as I haue beene credibly informed.

I. Pringston.

Hunstanstone.

Athelbrough.

870.

EDmond raigned 15. yeeres, in whose time Hinguar and Hubba, Danish kings, entring the Prouince of the Northumbers, raged ouer all the same, and made great spoyles. Hinguar hauing gotten a great prey, left Hubba, and with his Nauy sayled into the East Angle, and arriued at a certaine Citty thereof unawares to the Citizens, set it on fire, and slew both man, woman and childe. This wicked Hinguar tooke Edmond, king of that Prouince, in a Village then called Heglesdune, neere to a wood bearing the same name, where this holy Edmond being constant in the Christian faith, was first by the Pagans beaten with bats, then scourged with whips, he still calling on the name of Jesus: his aduersaries in a rage shot him full of shafts, and then smote off his head and threw it in a bush: after which time the Angles ceased to raigne in the East Angle, but the same was possessed by Danes, till fifty yeeres after, that Edward, the sonne of Etheldred, did expulse the Danes, and ioyned that Prouince, and also the East Saxons, to his kingdome of the West Saxons.

Asserius.

Albo Floriacensis.

King Edmond cruelly martyred by the Danes.

EAST SAXONS.

ESsex, the fourth kingdome, containes Essex, Middlesex, and Hertfordshire, being bounded on the East with the Germane Ocean, on the South with the River Thames, on the West, with Colme, and on the North with Stowre, which at this day, parteth Suffolke from Essex: it containeth the Diocesse of London.

527. ERchenwine, the eighth from Woden, from whom all the Saxons derived their Genealogies, first erected this Country to be a kingdome, which neverthelesse he held as feodary to the kings of Kent, who were as yet the very soueraignes of the whole Country from Thames to Humber. And as we haue specified, Vortiger yeelded seizon to Hengist for his deliuery, when the Peeres of the Brytains were slaine on Salisbury-plaine, and he taken prisoner.

Bede.

587. SLedda, the sonne of Erchenwine, succeeded his father in the gouernment, and to establish the state more sure, married Ricula, the daughter of Ermenrich, king of Kent, and enioyed his gouernment so quietly, that hee ministred small matter to Historiographers.

603. SEbert, the sonne of Sledda by Ricula, ruled this kingdome after his father. The second yeere of his raigne, which was the yeere of Christ 604. Augustine, Archbishop of Canterbury, consecrated two Bishops, the one named Miletus, the other Iustus: Miletus he appointed to preach to the people of the East Saxons, which are separate from Kent, with the River of Thames, and are fast ioyned to the East Sea, whose chiefe City is London, a princely port Towne of many people, arriuing thither by sea and Land. Now as soone as this Prouince by the preaching of Miletus, had receiued the word of truth,

Sebert first Christian king of the East Saxons.

Ethelbert, king of Kent, builded in the City of London S. Pauls Church, wherein Miletus and his successors were appointed euer after to haue their Sea. Iustus was ordained Bishop of Rochester in Kent, where king Ethelbert builded the Church of S. Andrew the Apostle, and gaue many goodly gifts to the Bishops of both Churches. Which Ethelbert in his Charter to the Church of S. Paul hath these words: *Adilbertus Rex, Deo inspirante, pro animæ suæ remedio dedit Episcopo Mileto terram quæ appellatur Tilingham, ad monasterium siue solatium, scilicet, S. Pauli. Et ego Rex Athelbert ita firmiter concedo tibi, ut in perpetuum monasterij utilitate permaneat, &c.*

Saint Pauls Church in London founded.

Afterward king VVilliam the first, surnamed Conquerour, by his Charter, confirming the Lands giuen by the said Ethelbert king of Kent, to the said Church of S. Paul in London, hath these words: *VVilhelmus, Rex Anglorum, omnibus fidelibus suis Francis & Anglis de Middlesex salutem. Sciatis quod concedo Deo & sancto Paulo suisque seruitoribus 24. hidos quos Ethelbertus dedit Ecclesiæ sancti Pauli, iuxta Ciuitatem London, quando eam fundauit, in perpetuum liberas esse, & solutas, & quietas, de Dane-gildis, & omnibus alijs gildis, & ab omni expeditione, & ab omni opere, & volo, & firmiter præcipio, ut bene, & honorifice, & in pace teneant, & ne aliquis super hoc eis iniuriam vel contumeliam faciat. Teste Lanfranco Archiepisco, &c.* Moreouer, beside this confirmation abouesaid, the same King VVilliam gaue unto the Church of S. Paul in London, and unto Maurice then Bishop thereof, the Castle of Stratford, or Stourefoord in Essex, and all things which belonged thereunto, and namely the Land which VVilliam the Deacon, and Ralph his brother held of the king. Thus much for the foundation of Saint Pauls Church in London, founded by Ethelbert, king of Kent, and confirmed by king William the Conqueror.

Stourford in Essex.

King Sebert, by the perswasion of king Ethelbert his Uncle, and through the preaching of Miletus, hauing embraced Christianity, was baptized by the same Miletus, and immediately, to shew himselfe a Christian, built a Church to the honour of Saint Peter, on the West side of London in a place, which because it was ouergrowne with thornes, and inuironed with Waters, the Saxons at that time, called it Thorney, and now of the Monastery, and West situation thereof, is called Westminster. In this place long before was a Temple of Apollo (as Sulcardus writeth) which beeing ouerthrowne with an earth-quake, Lucius then built thereon a Church for the Christians. Sebert (when he had raigned 13. yeeres) dyed, and was buried in the Church which hee had built, with his wife Aethelgoda, whose bodies many yeeres after, to wit, in the time of Richard the second (saith Thomas Walsingham) were translated from the old church, to the new at Westminster, and there enterred.

Westminster founded.

Sulcardus.

Tho. Walsingham.

616. SErred, Steward and Sigbert, sonnes of Sebert, iointly (as it seemeth) then ruled Eastsex, men wickedly giuen, irreligious, and deadly enemies to the Christian profession: who presumed contemptuously to the Table of the Lords supper, being not baptized: and because Miletus would not permit them to be partakers of the Christian sacrament, they expelled him from his Sea at London, but shortly after, Serred encountring with the West Saxons, was slaine with both his brethren by king Kinegles.

SIgebert, surnamed the Little Sonne of Steward, succeeded in this kingdome, and left the same to Sigebert his kinsman.

SIgebert, sonne to Sigebalde brother to Sebert, then ruled in Eastsex, he by the perswasion of Oswy king of the Northumbers, abandoned all superstition, and became a Christian, and tooke an holy man Ced with him, who did mightily beate downe errours, and wan many by preaching the Christian Religion in his Dominions, whereupon Ced was by Finan consecrated Bishop of the East Saxons, and then proceeded with more authority in his function, ordering Priests and Deacons in all places of Essex, but especially at Ithanchester, and Tilbery.

Bede.

Ithanchester and Tilbery Cities in Essex.

This City of Ithancester stood on the banke of the river Pante, that runneth by Maldune in the hundred of Dancy, but now that Citty is drowned in Pante, so that nothing remaineth but the Ruines of the Citty in the said River. Tilbery standeth on the Thames side.

In the good proceedings of Sigeberr, he was slaine by a kinsman for his owne, vpon none other occasion, but for that he vsed too much clemency towards his enemies, as the murtherers themselues confessed.

Swidhelin, sonne of Sexbald, succeeded then in his regiment, who was baptized by Ced, in a Town of the kings, called Rendlesham in East England: Edelwald, king of the East Angles, brother to Anna, was his Godfather at the Font.

Sigher then ruled with Sebba, or Sebbi, although they were also vnder the allegeance of Wulfhere, King of the middle Englishmen. This Prouince being visited with a great plague and mortality. Sigher with the people ouer whom he ruled, forsaking Christs Religion, fell to Apostasie, for both the king himselfe, and many of his people, as well of the Nobles, as of the meaner sort, began to renue their Temple, which had stood desolate, they worshipped their Idols, as though they could by that means haue escaped the mortality. But Sebbi, his companion with all vnder him, perseuered deuout in the Faith, and he ended his life in great felicity, as we shall hereafter declare. Wulfhere hearing, vnderstanding part of his dominions to fall from the Faith, for to call them backe again, sent vnto them Iarumanus the Bishop of Richfield, successor to Trunihere, who by much labor and diligence, being a man of great vertue, painfull and zealous (as a certaine Priest waiting then vpon him, and helping him in preaching the Gospel, reported vnto Bede) brought them to the Faith againe, both the king and all his people, so that abandoning, and throwing downe their Temples and Altars, they opened againe Churches, confessed gladly the name of Christ, and chose rather in hope of resurrection to dy, then in the filth of Idolatry to line. Which being so brought to passe, their Priests and Instructers returned home with much ioy and comfort.

Theodore, Archbishop of Canterbury, appointed Erkenwald to be Bishop of the East Saxons in the City of London. This Erkenwald, in the yere of Christ, 677. before hee was made Bishop, had builded 2. goodly Monasteries, one for himselfe at Crotley, in the Ile of Crots in Surry, by the River of Thames: and another for his sister Edilburge, in a place called Berching in Saxlser, for his sister Edelburge (she was first Abbas there. Sebbi, king of the East Saxons (as is aforesaid) a man very deuout and godly, being giuen to often prayer, and charitable almes giuing, eſtoomed the celebrary and monasticall life, before all the riches and honours of a kingdome, which kinde of life hee had a long time before taken, and had giuen by his kingdome, had not his wife refused to be separated from him. And therefore some men thought (as it had beene often said) that a man of such a nature and well-disposed minde, was more mete to be made a Bishop then a King. Now when this Souldiour of the Ecclesiasticall kingdome had passed 30. yeeres in his temporall raigne, at length he died: but first he admonished his wife, that then at the least they should giue themselues both together to serue God, whereas they could no longer now inioy or serue the World together. Which thing, when he had with much adoe obtained of her, he came to the Bishop of London, named Waldhere, who had succeeded Erkenwald, and at his hands receiued the habite of Religion, which he had long desired, to wit, of a Monke, for at that time were Monks in the Church of S. Paul in London, as writeth Radulphus, Dedicero and other.

To this Bishop hee brought a great summe of money to be bestowed and giuen to the poore, reserning nothing at all for himselfe, but rather desiring to remaine poore in spirit for the kingdome of Heauen. And when hee perceiued the day of his death to be at hand, because his foresaid sickenes grew still vpon him, for the princely and hautie courage that hee had, hee began to feare, lest at his death, through bitter paine hee might lap, either to bitter with his mouth, or with his body doe any thing that were not decent for his person: hee sent for the Bishop of London, where hee also then continued, and desired him, that at his departing out of this world, there should be no more present but himselfe, and two of his Chaplaines: which thing when the Bishop had promised gladly to doe, the third day after hee gaue vp the Ghost, and was buryed in a coffin of stone, and layde in the Church of the blessed Apostle Saint Paul, by whose good Lessons hee had beene taught to labour, and long for the ioyes of Heauen.

Sigher King Sebbi Monke in Pauls Church Radul. Dedicero.

King Sebbi buried in Pauls Church of London.

Sigheard, sonne of Sebbi, then raigned ouer the East Saxons for a time, and after him his brother Seofride.

Seofride, sonne to Sebbi, and brother to Sigeherd, raigned next successiuely, of whom I finde nothing recorded of his acts.

Offa, the sonne of Siger, then ruled this Prouince, hee enlarged with building, and enriched with Lands the Church of Westminster, and then forsaking his wife Genefwede, Pendacs daughter, Lamos, Kin, and Countrey, he went to Rome with Kenred king of Mercia, and Edwine Bishop of Worcester, and there in a Monkes coule ended this life, leauing Selred to rule his Countrey.

Rich. Cicestr.

Selred (whom other call Colred) peaceably after Offa raigned in Esser 30. yeeres, and at length was slaine. 718. Ri. Grincestri.

Sthred after Selred was slaine, raigned in Esser: but Egbert king of the West Saxons the very yeere that he conquered Kent, subdued also this Suthred, and annexed Esser to his kingdome: yet London with the countrey confining about it, came not in subiection to the West Saxons, but obeyd the king of Mercia, as long as that kingdome continued. 748.

Sigehrike

Sigehrike and Sigehard afterward aspired to the kingdome of the East Saxons, but with no good successe: and so that kingdome ceased.

Wonderfull great frost and snow and terrour.

This yeere 764. was a most extreme cold Winter: for a hard frost beganne the first of October, and so continued vntill February: and diuers Chronicles write, the frost was so extreme violent within forty degrees of the Equinoctiall, that the maine Sea was frozen in very many places, and the Ice remained like Rockes, as it doth toward the North pole, and other cold Regions: also the Snow couered the Ice in many places aboue twenty foote thicke: and this yere also the Starres seemed as if they would fall from Heauen, as saith Sigebert, and the people feared that the generall day of Iudgement was come, and the first day of June, there was a great Eclipse of the Sunne, which continued six houres, and in the yeere 787. it rained blood. Blood rained.

MERCIANS.

MErcia the fifth kingdome and greatest of the other, contained Glocester, Hereford, Chester, Stafford, Worcester, Orford, Warwith, Darby, Leicester, Buckingham, Northāpton, Nottingham, Lincolne, Bedford, Huntington, and part of Hartfordshire. It had on the West side, the river Dee, fast by Chester, & Severn, fall by Shrewsbery vnto Bristow in the East, the East sea, in the South, Thames vnto London, in the North the River Humber, and so Westward, downe to the River Perce, vnto the corner of Wrysball.

This kingdome of Perce in the beginning was parted into three parts, into West Percia, middle Percia and East Percia: it containeth the Diocesses of Lincolne, Worcester, Hereford, Coventrey and Lichfield.

585. CReda (the eleuenth from Woden) first king of the Percies, raigned 10. yeeres.

596. Wibba his sonne, raigned 20. yeeres.

616. Ceorlus his sonne, raigned 10. yeres.

626. PEnda the sonne of Wibba, a man active in warres, a frantike and most wicked man, tooke on him the kingdome of the Percies, when he was 50. yeres old: he tooke the Cities, and disturbed the borders of the kings, that were his owne Countreymen borne: he slew Edwine and Oswald, kings of Northumberland: (where Oswald was slaine, is now situated the Towne of Oswaistre, which of him tooke that name) hee also slew Sigebert, Egfride, and Anna, kings of the East Angles, which all were of holy life and conuersation: hee banished Kenwallus king of the West Saxons, but in the end, himselfe was slaine by Oswin which succeeded Oswald his brother, when he had raigned 30. yeres. W. Malmes.

PEda the sonne of Penda, succeeded in part of the kingdome which was call'd middle England, who comming after to Oswine king of Northumberland, required his daughter Alfleda to wife, which suite he obtained, vpon condition he would receiue the Christian Faith, and be baptized: and so hee received Baptisme at the hands of Bishop Finan, in a famous Towne of the kings, called Admurum, by the Picts wall, 12 miles from the East sea, from whence he returned home with 4. Priests, notable for learning and vertue, which should instruct & baptize his people. These preached the Word of God, and were gladly heard, whereby many daily, as well Noble, as of the base sort, renounced their filthy Idolatry, & were baptized: neither B. Penda, father to the young Prince, did with stand the preaching of the Gospel in his dominis, but persecuted such as hare the names of Christians, and liued not accordingly, saying that such men were wretched, which regarded not to serue the God in whom they professed to beleeue. These things began thus 2. yeres before the death of Penda. Admurum, Berwith. Ingulphus

A notable saying of a heathen Prince.

In these daies, king Oswine, after often and cruell inuasions of the heathen Tyrant Penda, forced of necessity, offered many and most precious Iewels, with an infinit summe of treasure, to redeeme quiet and peace to his Countrey, but the barbarous Tyrant, pursuing his deadly enterprise, and protesting vtterly to extinguish the whole Nation from the highest to the lowest, king Oswine called to God for help against his enemies, vowing, that if he had the vpper hand, his young daughter should bee consecrated to God in perpetuall virginity, and 12. farme places with the Land, should be conuerted to the erecting of Monasteries. Then preparing himselfe to battell, with a very small army, the army of the Heathen reported to be 30. fold as many, he ouercame them: and this is to be noted as a great helpe to the Christians, that whereas the field was fought nigh to the River Iuenet, the said River did at that time to ouerflow the banks and fields about, that in the flight of the heathen, more were drowned then perished by the sword. And thus was King Pendaes power ouercome, and himselfe slaine, when he had raigned 11 raged cruelly 30. yeres. This Penda (saith Ingulphus) had sonnes that were most deuout maintainers of Christian religion, to wit, Peda, Vifere, Ethelred, Marwald and Mercelini, and daughters, Kinitburga and Kenefwith, both for holy conuersation excelling. The foresaid battell was fought by king Oswin, in the Countrey of Leid, the 13th yeere of his raigne, the yeere of Christ 659. the 15. day of Nouember. Oswine hauing obtained this victory, rendred due thanks therefore to God, gaue his daughter Elfleda to be brought vp and consecrated to perpetuall virginity, and also the 12. possessions promised, by performed. The Lady Elfleda entred the Monastery of Harts-eye, to be brought vp vnder Hilda the Abbesse, and afterward builded for her selfe a Monastery in a place called Strenshalt, 30. miles from Yorke, and was there buried. Ingulphus Strenshalt founded.

OSwine now raigning ouer the Percies and ouer the South people of England, subdued also the Picts, for the most part, to his allegiance: he founded Lichfield, and preferred it to be a Cathedrall Church of that Prouince: Dwina was first Bishop of Percia, & also Alchefields founded, and made a Bishops See.

of Lichfeilde, for there were then so few Priests, that one Priest was compelled to governe two Parishes. This Duma was a Scottishman, and governed the Church of Lichfield two yeeres, and died at Foxping. The second Bishop was Ceidach, a Scot, who ere long left his Bishoprick, and went to Lindesfearne. The third was Thumbere an Englishman, who was also Abbot of Ingetling, a Monastery builded where the King Offwine was slaine. The fourth was Jarman. The fifth was Cedda, who was buried at Lichfield, though he had founded an Abbey at Lindsey, in a place called Stheare. The first was Winfrothus. The seventh Sexulfus, a great builder of Peterborow Abbey: after whose decease, two Bishops ruled the Province or kingdome of Mercia, to wit, Winifred at Chester, and Heda at Lichfield, after, Winefred was reiected, and Heda sate alone, and died in the yeere of Christ, &c. Now concerning the name of Lichfield, John Rowse saith there was in Britaine a great number of Christians, which hearkened to the preaching of Amphibale (instructer of Alban) martyred and slaine in a place at Lichfield, called *Cadauerum campus*, a place of dead bodies, &c. This Colwne for the most part, standeth upon a low and equall ground, onely the close and the Cathedral church, with a long street that lyeth North on the Bridge of the Towne, is somewhat upon a high ground: there is no token that ever the Towne was walled: a ditch was made in a part of the Towne by Langton, Bishop of Lichfield. There hath beene a Castle of ancient time, but no part of it standeth: the place of the ditch is seene, and it is yet called Castle-field. In the maine Towne, which is a faire large thing, be three Parish Churches, S. Maries, a right beautifull piece of worke, in the very market steade, where was a Guild or Brotherhood begunne about King Edward the thirds time, and since much encreased by one Heywood, Deane of Lichfield: Saint Nicholas in the South East end of the Towne: Stowe Church in the East end of the Towne, whereas is Saint Coddes Well, a thing of pure water, where is seene a Stone in the bottome, on the which (some say) that Cedde was wont to kneele and pray. At this Stone, Cedde had his Oratory in the time of Vlfere, King of the Mercians: at which time, all the Countrey about Lichfield was a Wooreff, and wilderneffe. There was an house of Saint John in the very South end of the Towne, wherein was a Master and Fellowes. Smith, Bishop of Couentry and Lichfield, in King Henry the seuenths dayes, and afterwards Bishop of Lincolne, began a new foundation at this place, setting vp a Master, two Priests, and tenne poore men in an Hospitall. Besset there alfo a Schoolemaister, and an Vsher to teach a Grammar schoole. King Henry the seuenth gaue vnto it an old Hospital, called Denball. An Vrychall in Cheshire, with the Lands and the impropriation of Burton Church in Wirehall: there was an house of gray Fryers in the North West part of the Towne, Alexander Bishop of Lichfield was the founder of it: There commeth a conduite of water out of an hill to the Towne, and hath two castelets, one in the East wall of the Fryers close, and the other about the Market place, besides water to serue the close and the Prebends houses. There was a faire old Crosse, enuironed with steps in the Market-place: Denton, Deane of Lichfield compassed this Crosse with eight faire Arches of stone, making a round vault ouer them for market folkes to stand dry in: it did cost him an hundred and threescore pounds. The North part of Lichfield is diuided from the South part with three Ponds or Lakes, whereof both the two first lying by West, are nothing so great as the third, that lyeth by East: there be diuers Springs in these pooles, but the principall Spring is a brooke that entereth into them, and feedeth them, comming from Dwe, about a mile and halfe by west from Lichfield: the first westward poole is diuided from the second poole by a great maine causway walled on each side with stone, and in this causeway, be Arches of stone for the water to issue into the second pole: and this causeway serueth to come out of the South part of the Towne into the North. This causway was last made by Langton, Bishop of Lichfield. There is also a stone causeway, and an issue for the water betwixt the second poole, and the third, leading out of the Towne hard to the South gate of the close of the Cathedrall Church, and on the East side of it, is a fayre Pill: this causeway is little more then a quarter so long as the first. The third pole that lyeth by west, is a very faire thing, and plentifull of fish, and goeth in length about halfe a mile, or euer the whole water be drawn into a narrow bottome, that three miles lower goeth into Trent by the right ripe.

The Cathedrall Church of Lichfield being first erected by King Offwine, was of later times renouated and dedicated to Saint Mary and S. Cedde. The whole close of the Cathedrall church was newly ditched and walled by Bishop Langton, and he made one gate of a maiestly and great strength at the West part of the close, another but a lesse gate, at the southeast part of the close: hee made also the Bishops Palace, at the East end of the close: he made Cokelehal castle, Shobrow Manor place, and the Palace by Stond at London, besides many other great acts: hee was treasurer to K. Edward the first. The Prebendaries in the close be very faire builded. The Choristers haue a goodly house lately builded by Bishop Blithe. Farewel a small priory of Nuns suppressed by Thomas Wolsey Archbishop of Yorke, and giuen to Lichfield, in recompence of a pension that should haue beene giuen out of his college in Oxford, was impropriate to the Choristers of Lichfield. The Liuary, at the North west part of the cathedral church was erected by Tho. Heywood, Deane of Lichfield. The glory of the church is the work of the west end, that is exceeding coftly and faire. There be three pyramides or steeples of stone, two at the west end, and one in the midst of the Church. That part of the Towne that lyeth by North the great cause-

cause-way or bridge, is but one faire streete in length. And this much for the City of Lichfield: all which spaze of the Monastery there. King Offwine gaue to Peda sonne to Penda, because hee married King Offwines daughter, as is aforeshewed, the kingdome of the South marches, diuided by the River of Trent from the North marches.

Hugo de Peterborow. Peda the first Christian king of Mercia.

Peda, now King of Mercia, being also the first Christian king of that kingdome, began to plant Christianity, throwing downe, and destroying the Idols, and erecting Churches of Christian Religion. Among the which hee began the foundation of Medilhamstede, now called Peterborow: but he raigned not long, for he was trayterously slaine by the meanes of Alfled his wife, in the feast of Easter, in the yeere of Christ, 657. And king Offwine three yeres after his great victory ouer the cruell Pagan Penda; the Nobility of the Mercians, Iumin, Eaba, and Eadbert rebelled against him, aduancing to the Crowne, Vlfere, brother to Peda.

661. Vlferus brother to Peda, earnestly preferred Christianity, which his brother had begun, but he was the first (saith William of Malmesbury) that through the sinne of Symony, sold the Bishoprick of London vnto Wina.

Worcester. I reade in a Legar booke of the Monastery of Peterborow, that Vlferus, King of Mercia, remaining at his Castle of Worcester in Staffordshire, and vnderstanding that his sonne Vlfade had led his brother Rufin to Chad (vnder colour of hunting) by whom they were both instructed in the Christian Faith, and had receiued Baptisme, by the perswasion of Werebode, goeth to the Oratory of the Holy man, where, finding both his sonnes in diuine contemplation, he killed them with his owne hands, whose bodies, Ermenhelde, the Queene their mother, did bury in a Sepulchre of stone, and in procelle of time, caused a Church of stone there to be builded: which place was after called Stones, by reason of the stones which the multitude brought thither for the building thereof, when they came to frequent the place.

Vlfere slew his owne sonnes. Priory of Stones in Staffordshire.

Medilhamsted or Peterborow.

But Vlfere after, repenting thereof, destroyed all the Temples of the Idols, and in place of them did build Churches and Monasteries, among the which he bestowed great cost on Medilhamstede enriching it with large possessions.

This Church standeth in the Prouince of Gerwy, or such as inhabite the Fennes, and may not be come vnto, except on the East side: on the South side where doth runne the River of Nenne, in the midsoll of the which course is a place, as it were, a Whirlepole, which is so deepe and cold, that in the Summer none can fathome or dine to the bottome, and yet it is neuer frozen in the Winter: for (as they say) there is a Fountaine, out of the which issueth water, which place the ancients did name Medeswell, of which the Monastery built hard by, was called Medilhamstede, with the three brethren, Peda, Vlfere, and Ethelred, the sonnes of Penda, with their sisters, Kenesburge, and Kenelwith, and king Offwine did build from the foundation. But Peda in the yeere of Christ 675. with the deuout multitude, by the helpe of Sexulfus first Abbot there, began this Monastery, and layd the foundation there, of such stones as eight yoke of Oxen could scarce draw one of them, which stones were same when the Monastery was burned. This Church was destroyed by the Danes, as all other Monasteries were, and so remained 96. yeres, till the time that Ethelwald, Bishop of Win, comming into a place called Tindall or Dondall, began there to make a new foundation, but after comming to Medilhamsted, which he found desolate, by the help of king Edgar and Adulphus his Chancellor, he did new repaire the Monastery there: and the Monastery at Dundall was made a Parish Church. In Anno 1117. this Monastery of Medilhamsted with the whole Town was burnt, but in the yeere after begun to be new builded by Abbot Iohn, from the foundation, and the Monkes entred againe in the yere 1140. King Vlfere raigned 17. yeres, and was buried at Lichfield: Ermined his wife, after his decease became a Nun at Ely vnder her mother Sexburg.

Dundall in Northamptonshire.

676. Ethelred, brother to Vlferus, succeeded in the kingdome of the Mercians: hee obtained a Bishops sea to be in the City of Worcester: Bosellus was first Bishop there: Egwinus was the second. This Egwinus, by the helpe of Kenredus, king of the Mercies, founded the Monastery of Euesham, in a place then called Souesham, of the Shepheards field a house purchased by the said Bishop. The Towne in the Saxons time was called Hothebolne. About the same two Noblemen, Odo and Dodo, founded the Priory of Tewkesbury. Also Olricke, Duke of Gloucester founded the Monastery of Gloucester, then for Nuns: since the same is a Bishops Sea. Ethelred became a Monke at Bardoney in Lincolnshire, when he had raigned 30. yeres.

Bishops seas of Worcester. Ex Charta Euesham.

Lib. Tewk. Tewkesbury. Monastery of Glouces ter. Inscriptiones Glocestriæ.

706. Kinredus, sonne to Wolferus, in the 5. yeere of his raigne went to Rome, and became a Monke in the Church of S. Peter the Apostle, where he continued in fasting, prayer, and almes giuing, vntill his dying day.

710. Elred, the sonne of Ethelred, who as he was marueilous in prowesse against Ina, of the West Saxons, so was he miserable by vntimely death, for he raigned not past eight yeeres, and was buried at Lichfield.

718. Ethelbald raigned in continuall peace many yeeres, and then by the procurement of Beruredus, was slaine of his owne subiects. Also this Ethelbald, Boniface, the second Bishop of Mentz in Germany, after Archbishop of Mentz vpon the Rhene, an English man borne, who was afterward martyred, for the profession of Christ and his holy Gospell, sent an Epistle, of the which I will here set downe a piece to be seene, for that it serueth partly the estate of that time then present, and serueth for example in time to come.

Chronicle of Mariana. Polydor. Hollinshed.

To his most deare Lord, and to be preferred in the loue of Christ aboue all other, Kings of England, Edbaldus, Boniface Archbishop, to Ethelbald

the Germane Legate, perpetuall health of charity and love in Christ. We acknowledge before God, that wee did reioyce to heare of your prosperity, your Faith and good workes: and wee be sorry when we heare any thing that goeth against you, either in successe of warre, or in danger of your soule, for wee haue heard, that you forbid theft and robbery, that you loue peace, defend the widdow, and the poore, for the which wee giue God thankes: but in that you refuse lawfull marriage; which if it were to the preferring of chastity, it were commendable: and sith you wallow in lechery and adultery with Virgins consecrate to God, it is both shamefull and damnable, for it doth confound your renowne, both before GOD and man, placing you among Idolaters, because you violate the Temple of God. Wherefore, my deare sonne, repent, and remember how filthy a thing it is, that thou, who by the gift of God raignest ouer so many Nations, shouldest to the great displeasure of God, make thy selfe a bondslaue to thine owne fleshly lust. We haue heard also, that the more part of Noble men and people of the Mercians, by thine euill example, haue left their lawfull wiues, and haue denied the wiues of other, and also Virgins, which how farre it differeth from all good order and honestie, let the lawes of strange Nations teach you: for in the ancient country of the Saxons (where was no knowledge of GOD) if either a mayde in her fathers house, or being married to an husband, were become an adultresse, she should be strangled by her owne hand closed to her mouth, and the corrupter should be hanged vpon the pit where the adultresse was buryed. If she were not so vsed (her garments being cut away downe to the girdlestede) the chaste Matrones did scourge and whip her, and pricke her with knives, and so was sent from Towne to Towne, where other fresh and new scourgers or whippers did meete and whip her, vntill they had killed her. Likewise the Womedians, who are the most vncleane kinde of people, had this manner of wage with them, that the husband being dead, the woman together with the dead body, should cast her selfe headlong into the fired stake or pile of wood prepared for the burning of their bodies. If therefore the Gentiles (not knowing God) had so great zeale to chastity, how much more (my deare sonne) is it to be required at thy hands, who art a Christian and a King? Haue therefore compassion of thine owne soule, and spare the great number of the people, that by thy fatherly example yet may beware to offend God, for whose soules thou shalt giue an account.

Adultry among Infidels punished by death.

Consider also, that if the English Nation, despising lawfull matrimony, doe increase by aduoutry, (as the Frenchmen, Italians, and also the very Pagans doe call in our teeth, and vpbrayd be withall,) of such coniunctions and copulations, shall spring by a peakish dastardly people, which shall despise God, and with their wicked qualities inuade the country, as it came to passe to the Burgundians, the people of Piacenance, and the Spanyards, whom the Saracens haue many yeeres assaulted for their sinnes which in times past they had committed. Besides this, it is told vs that you take away priuileges of Churches, and thereby giue euill example vnto your noble men to do the like: but I pray you remember how terrible vengeance God tooke vpon the kings, your predecessors, which committed such offences as we rebuke you for.

A wicked spirit came vpon Solredus, your predecessor, which was a defiler of Virgins, and a breaker of Ecclesiasticall priuiledges: for sitting royally among his Barons at a dinner, the diuell plucked away his soule without confession of his sinnes. The diuell also driue in such a rage, Ofredus, king of the Northumbers, which was guilty of the same crimes, that with a vile death, hee lost both kingdome and life in his lustie young age. Also Charles, king of France, which ouerthrew churches, and altered the Church money to his owne vse, was consumed with a long torment and fearefull death. It followeth therefore (my deare beloued sonne) that with fatherly and earnest prayers wee beseech you, that you will not despise the counsell of your fathers, which diligently doe admonish your Highnesse: for nothing is more commodious to a good king, then willingly to amend such faults when hee is warned of them, as Salomon saith, Who so loueth Discipline, loueth Wisedome. Therefore (my deare sonne) declaring our aduice, wee beseech you by the liuing God, by his Sonne Iesus Christ our Lord, and by his holy Spirit, that you will remember how transitory this present life is, and how short and momentany the pleasure of this filthy flesh is, and how vile and shamefull a thing it is, that man shall leaue euill examples to his posterity for euer: begin therefore to frame your life in better daies, & amend the errors of your youth, that you may obtaine praise with men in this life, and eternall glory in the life to come: We wish your Highnesse well to fare, and to encrease in all goodnesse.

Moreouer, the same Bonifacius sent an Epistle of the like tenor vnto Cuthbert, Archbishop of Canterbury, adding thereunto, that he should rebuke the Clerkes and Nuns for their finenesse and pompe of apparell and garments. Hee also willed Cuthbert not to marueile that hee meddled with other mens matters, nor to thinke it no part of his charge, to deale with the English Nation, but to vnderstand that Gregory, Bishop of Rome had bound him, by the Sacrament thrice received, to let him vnderstand of the manners and blages of the Nations about him: which indeede (hee said) hee would doe, if his gentle admonition tooke not good successe.

The Epistle of Boniface to Ethelbald tooke such effect, that Ethelbald foorthwith sending to the Archbishop Cuthbert, and other his Clergy and Nobility, by their counsell, amongst other things hee caused to be published, as followeth:

I Ethelbald, king of the Mercians, foreseeing that I ought to prouide for the kingdome euerlasting, and the remedy of my soule, that I may deliuer (herein) the bondage of sinne. And forasmuch as Almighty GOD, by his mercifull clemency, without any of my deserts going before, hath giuen mee the Scepter of the Kingdome, gladly therefore will I render vnto him of the things which he hath giuen mee, and for this cause, I giue this gift by my life time:

That all Churches of my kingdome shall be discharged of all maner of tribute, in works, and burdens, except it be in the building of Towers, Castles and Bridges, which cannot be released vnto any. Moreouer, that seruitours of Monasteries and Churches, shall haue their own proper liberty in the profit of woods, and of fields, and shall not be bound to giue any reward vnto the King or Princes, except they will, but shall be free, that they may serue God, &c.

This Councell, or Conuocation was holden by Cuthbert the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the other Bishops and Prelates, in the yere of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ, seuen hundreth, forty and seuen, and was in the three and thirtieth yere of Ethelbald King of the Mercians, who then was present with his Princes and Dukes, where when there was assembled out of diuers Prouinces of Bryttaine, Bishops, and other spirituall persons, and the writtings of Pope Zachary were read in two parts, wherewith hee did admonish the people of England to liue more continently, he threatened that the despisers of his commandements should be excommunicated: whereupon the Bishops and Prelates agreed vpon certaine Articles as followeth.

W. Malmesburies fore the Church of England.

That the Prelates should liue more carefully and warne their subiects.

That they should liue in one peaceable mind, although they liued separate in bodies.

That euery yere they should visit their Parishes and charge.

That euery one in his iurisdiction warne the Abbots and Monks to liue orderly, and the Bishops not to oppresse their subiects, but to cherish them.

That they also see that the Monasteries, the secular men that cannot be taken away, be decently ordered.

That none be admitted to orders, vnlesse his life before be well examined.

Holy Scriptures to be read in the Church.

That the reading of holy Scriptures be frequented in the Monasteries.

That the Priests be not buyers and sellers in worldly affayres.

That the Priests receiue no reward for baptizing of children, and other Sacraments.

The Lords Prayer and Creede in English.

That they learne and teach in English the Lords Prayer and the Creede.

That all doe finish their Ministery after one and the same manner in their Churches.

That they sing seruice in the Churches with sober voyce.

That the solemnization of our Lord, and the birth daies of Saints be solemnized at one and the same time.

That the Sunday be kept honourably holy.

That intercession be made for Kings and Rulers, &c. In all thirty Articles.

Ethelbald founded the Monastery of Crowland, and because the marish of this Crowland, as the very name declareth (for it signifie hornby ground and mire) was not able to beare a Stone building, the foresaid king caused many and mighty piles of Oake to be driuen into the ground, and commanded hard earth to be brought thither 9. miles off by water in boats, from the higher ground, and to be mingled with the marish, and in this sort he laid the foundation, and finished the Church of Stone.

The Monastery of Crowland founded.

When Ethelbald had raigned 41. yeeres, fighting against Cuthred, in the warre not prudently begun, vpon Segisiwald, or Secondone (as some say) three miles from Tamworth, he was slaine by the Tyrant Barred, and was buried at Ripendine, or Ripon, at that time a famous Monastery.

Segisiwald by Tamworth.

BEraredus the murtherer of Ethelbald did nothing worthy the remembrance, but was slaine by Offa, and had an end meet for a traytor. 749.

OFfa, Nephew to Ethelbald succeeded: hee ioyned battell with Kinculfus King of the West Saxons, and got the victory. Hee sent for Ethelbert, King of the East Angles, promising great things by flattery: but when he had got him to his Palace, hee caused him to be beheaded, and then vniustly inuaded the kingdome of the East Angles, as is shewed in the raigne of the East Angles. Vita Albani.

This yere 788. and the eighth yere of the raigne of Constantine the seuenth of that name, and the seuenty seuenth Emperour of the Romanes, at the request of Pope Adrian and Tharasius Patriarke of Constantinople, there was an vniuersall Councell held at Nice, of three hundred Bishops, in which Councell, the Catholike Faith was strengthened and confirmed, and all ancient heresies and new Schismes condemned. And at this time in France, flourished the famous Englishman, Albinus, *alias* Rabanus, surnamed Abcainus, whom the King of England sent to conclude the peace with Charlemaigne, and after that became his Tutour for Logicke, Rethoricke, and the liberall Sciences, and was also an excellent Astrologian: he also procured the translation of the Vniuersity from Rome to Paris, in like manner as that of Greece was translated to Rome: hee dyed very famous and memorable. 3 generall Councells at Nice.

Albinus the famous Englishman.

The Vniuersity of Paris found ded.

He caused the reliques of Saint Alban to be taken vp, and put in a Shrine adorned with gold and precious stones, and builded there a Princely Monastery, endowing the same with Lands by his Charter, dated the yere of Christ 793. in the yere of Offaes raigne, 32. in the famous place called Celchyth, with the witnesse of himselfe, his Sonne Egfride, 9. Kings, 15. Bishops, 10. Dukes, &c. S. Albans builded.

Hee founded the Abbey of Bath.

He translated the Archbishops See to Lichfield.

Hee made a Dike betweene Wales and the kingdome of the Mercies, which ditch extendeth by Offas Dike.

by South from the parts about Bristow, ouer the Mountaines of Wales, eso North, toward Flint, and vnder a hil of coale, euen to the mouth of Dee, or the North Sea, which Dike is yet to be seene, and manifestly appeareth in diuers places. He raigned 39. yeres, and died at Oslay, and was buried in a Chappell which then stod on the banke of the River Ouse, without the Towne of Bedford. Which Chappell with the Sepulchre of the King, the said River hath swallowed vp, whose Tombe of Lead (as it were some phantasticall thing) appeareth often to them that seke it not, but to them that seke it (saith Rowse) it is inuisible.

The original of Flanders and Holland.

This yere 793. the waste countrey of Flanders began to be an Earledome: the first Earle thereof was called Lindericus: the people of this Prouince are descended from the Seines and Saxons, after they were returned from the warres of Charlemaigne.

Munster founded.

Charlemaigne builded the Bridge in Collen, and founded Munster in Germany, and in the yere 864. the countrey of Holland began to be an Earledome, being two yeres after the Bulgarians had receiued the Christian Faith.

796. EGbertus, bz Ecfride his sonne, raigned one yeere: Alquine wzit to Osbert of the Bercians, that the noble young Ecfride dyed not to some for his owne faults, but because his father Flaccus Albinus. was a great theder of blood.

796. KEnulfus, Nephew in the fifth degre vnto Penda, warred on the Kentish Saxons, pu-W. Malmes. nished their Countrey very sore, and carried away bound their King Egbertus, but not long after, when he had builded a Church at Winchelcombe: on the day of the dedication thereof, he deliuered him, declaring a worthy example of clemency. He founded the church of S. Ethelbert in Hereford, and raigned 24. yeres. Winchelcombe founded. Bishops seate Hereford founded. 820.

KEnelmus sonne to Egbertus, a childe of seuen yeeres, was innocently slaine by his sister Quenda, whereby he obtained the name of a Martyr.

COelwulfus, bzother to Kenulfus, raigned one yeere, and was expulsed by Bernulfus. 820.

BErnulfus in the third yere of his raigne was ouercome by Egbertus, king of West Saxons at Clyndune. 821.

LVcanus, after hee raigned two yeeres, was oppressed by the East Angles. 824.

WIthlafus, being at the first subdued by Egbirth, raigned 13. yeeres, paying to him and his sonne a tribute. 826

BErthulfus raygned 13. yeeres, in the same estate, till at last he was chased beyond the Seas, by the Sea-rouers of Denmarke. 839. W. Malmes.

BVrdredus paying the tribute, enioyed the same 20 yeres, and then he being deposed, and driuen out of his Countrey, fled to Rome, and there was buried at the English Schole. Then that kingdome was by the Dane deliuered to Ceolwulfus, and in few yeeres after that, Alphred the Nephewe of Egbirth gate it. So the kingdome of the Bercians fell away in the yeere of Christ 875. 852.

NORTHVMBERS.

THe firth kingdome was of the Northumbers, which contained Lancashire, Yorkeshire, Cumberland, Westmerland, Northumberland. It had on the West, the Sea, by South the River of Humber, and so downward toward the West, by the ends of the Shires of Nottingham and of Darby, vnto the River of Perce, and hath the Diocelles of Yorke Durham, and Carleile.

At the beginning, it was diuided into two kingdomes, Bernitia, and Deira. Bernitia stretched from Edenburough Frith to Tine: and Deira, from Tine to Humber, but these two were shortly vnited.

W. Malmes. When Hengist had established himselfe in Kent, hee sent his brother Octa, and his Sonne Ebusam to possesse the North parts of Britaine, where many times they put the men of that Prouince to flight, and for the space of ninety nine yeeres: they and their successours ascribed to themselues the names of Dukes, and bare themselues vnder the kingdome of Kent: but in the yeere of Christ, 547. the yeere after Hengists death 60. that Dukedome was changed into a kingdome.

IDa the ninth from Beldegius, and the tenth from Woden, continued 14. yeeres in the kingdome of Deires. 547.

AElla his successour of the same kindred, but by mother line, strongly aduanced his kingdome 30. yeeres. 559.

In his time, children of Northumberland were carried to be sold in the market at Rome, where, when the Citizens beheld them, and wondred at their comelinesse and beauty of face, amongst other, Gregory the Archdeacon of the Apostolicall seat being one, asked of what Nations they were. Vnto whom it was answered, That they were the children of Englishmen, of the Prouince of Deires, and subiect to Alla their King, but were Painims: whereunto Gregory said, They shall be taught to sing Alleluia there, during the raigne of Alla ouer the Deires. Children of Northumberland sold at Rome.

CAdda the eldest sonne of Ida, raigned ouer the Wernitians 7. yeres.

CElappea 5. yeeres.

CTheodwald one yeere.

CFrethulfe seuen yeres.

CTheodrike seuen yeres.

CÆthelfrids

CÆthelfride two yeres, and all in the life of Wernicians.

582. W. Malmes. ETheliricke, the sonne of Ida, raigned in both Prouinces of Deiric and Bernicia 5. yeres.

587. Matthæus Florianensis. ETheltride, bzother to Echelricus, made greater spoyle of the Brytaines, then all the kings of the Angles, and vnpeopled and subdued moze of their Countries, and made the same tributary and habitable foz Englishmen: wherfoze Aadan, king of the Scots, being greatly moued with this happy successe, came against him with a mighty army but was ouercome and put to slight of a few Saxons; which battel was fought by Athelfreth, in a place called Degsastan, in the 11. yere of his raigne, and in the first yeere of Phocas the Emperour, which was the yere of Christ 603.

This king also, not long after this time, leuied a new power, and according as Augustine the Archbishop of Canterbury had before spoken, marched toward the Citty of Legions, which of the Brytaines is called Cairlegion, and there slew 1200. Monkes, assembled to make prayer vnto God for the good successe of their souldiers in battell: and afterward he ouerthrew the whole power of the Brytaines host. Hee was slaine by Redwald king of the East Angles, in a battell nere vnto the River which is called Idle, in the yere of Christ 616. when hee had raigned 27. yeeres. The Monks of Bangor murthered. W. Malmes.

617. EDwine succeded Ethelfride, and droue out the seuen sonnes of king Ethelfride.

In Anno 626. Paulinus being the third Bishop of Rochester, was constituted by Iustus, then Archbishop of Canterbury, to be Bishop ouer the Northumbers, and sent by Eadbald to Edwine the king of that Nation, with his wife, being the daughter of king Ethelbert, and sister of the said king Eadbald. Fitt Christian king of Northumberland. Matthæus Florianen. W.

A certaine desperate fellow, named Eomer, was sent vnto king Edwine, by Guicheline king of the West Saxons, who came vnto him on Easter-day, and hauing a naked weapon vnder his garment, assayled the King, but Lilla his seruant thrust himselfe before the stroke, yet notwithstanding, the King was with that stroke wounded thozow the bodie of his faithfull seruant.

The same night the Quene his wife was deliuered of a daughter, which vpon Whitsunday next after was the first that was baptized of Paulinus the Bishop, and named Eanfleda.

In the yeers of Christ, 628. Edwine the most mighty king of the Northumbers, and his people, receiued the Word of God, at the preaching of Paulinus the Bishop: this was done in the 11. yere of his raigne, and in the 230. yere after the arriuall of the Angles in Brytaine.

Edwine gaue vnto Paulinus a Bishops Sea in the City of Yorke, and began the Cathedrall Church of S. Peter there, which Church was after finished by king Oswald his successor: after this, in encreasing of the Christian faith and heauenly kingdome, his earthly possessions did wonderfully encreale, foz he first of all the Angles brought Brytaine wholly vnder his subiection, sauing the kingdome of Kent. Cathedrall Church of Yorke founded.

Edwine, in the 17. yere of his raigne, and the 48. of his age, was slaine in a battell which hee fought at Heafsield, with the most valiant Patrun, Penda, king of the Mercies, and Ceadwalla, king of the Brytaines. Paulinus the Bishop builded the great Church at Lincolne. In the raigne of king Edwine, such was the peace and tranquillity thozow all Britaine, which was soeuer king Edwines dominions lay, that a weak woman might haue walked with her new borne babe ouer all the Iland without any damage. Lincolne Minster founded. Bede.

Moreouer, foz the refreshing of trauailing men, he ordained cups of yron oz brasse, to be fastned by such cleare Wels and Fountaines as did run by the waies side, which cups no man durst touch, further then to his owne present vse and necessity, foz the love and good will they bare to their Prince, who was foz the time of his raigne so honoured and loued, that the triumphant banners were borne before him, not in warre only, but in peace too, whereseoeuer he went abzoad. Cups of brasse by the high way.

After the death of Edwine, the kingdome of Northumberland was againe diuided.

OSrich, sonne of Elfrike, who was Edwines vncle, succeeded in the gouernance of Deira. And Eanfride the sonne of Ethelfride, ruled the Wernicians: but both these forsaking the Christian profession, wherein they were instructed, yeelded themselues to be defiled with the filth of Idolatry: but this Apostasie was reuenged by Cedwall King of the Brytaines, who slew them both, and with tragicall slaughter spoyled Northumberland. 633.

OSwald, bzother to Eanfride, then gouerned this kingdome, who with a small army ouercame the Brytaines, and slew Cedwall their king at Denisesburne. He sent foz Aidan a Scot to aduance the Christian Religion among his people, assigning to him the Ile of Lindisfarne oz Holy Iland, foz his Sea. He greatly enlarged his kingdome, reconciled the Deirians and Wernicians, which did deadly hate one another. And when he had raigned 8. yeres, was slaine in a cruell battell at Palefield, by Penda, King of Mercia, and canonized a Saint. 634.

OSwine, bzother to Oswald, succeeded: he buryed the head and armes of Oswald, which Penda commanded to be hanged vpon poles. His gouernment was greatly disturbed by insurrection of the Bercians, rebellion of his owne sonne Ælfride, and insurrection of Adilwald, sonne to Oswald. Hee murthered Oswy, the sonne of Olrich, who ruled Deira, being traiterously deliuered vnto him at Ingelthing, where afterward a Monastery was erected. But at length he deliuered his Country from foraine inuasion, banquished the Bercians with Penda, in a fought field, neere the River Iewet, brought them to his subiection, and caused them to be instructed in the Christian Faith. 642. Liber Lichfield. T. Rudburne.

Hee builded a Church among the Mercians, called Lichfield, and procured the same to be a Bishops Sea, in Anno, 657. Lichfield Church & Bishops Sea founded.

Dwina was first Bishop there of Mercia, and also of Lindesferne: for there were then so few Priests, that one Bishop was compelled to governe two Provinces. King Oswine ended his life quietly, when he had raigned 32. yeres.

670. EGfride, his lawfull son, then inherited Northumberland: hee deposed Wilfride of the Bishopricke, and appointed two Bishops over the Northumbers. Mildred, otherwise called Etheldred, his wife, would by no meanes accompany with her husband, but continued a Virgin, and after the had beene married twelue yeres, toke at the hands of Wilfride the vaile and habite of a Nunne, and built the Monastery of Ely, where she was Abbesse.

Egfride her husband fought a battell with Edilfride king of Mercia, but after they were reconciled by Theodore the Bishop. Then turning his power against Ireland, hee sent Berte thither, who miserably destroyed the silly people. But the yere following, he marched against the Picts contrary to the good counsell of Saint Cuthbert (whom hee made Bishop) and was slaine by them in an ambush, in a place called Nectansmere, when hee had raigned 15. yeeres, and was buried in S. Columbes Iland.

685. ALfride, baſtard sonne to Oswine, succeeded after his brother Egfride. Hee did repaire the decayed state of Northumberland, but could not recouer all that Picts, Scots, and Britains tooke from the Northumbers, at the death of his brother. He raigned 29. yeres.

704. OSred his sonne, a childe of eight yeeres succeeded, who, when he had wickedly raigned 11. yeres, was murthered by his kinsmen, Kenred and Ofricke. Kenred, when hee had slaine Osred, ruled Northumberland two yeres.

715. OSricke obtained the kingdome after eleuen yeeres, and elected Ceolnulph, brother of Kenred, to be his successor.

728. CEolnulph raigned in this Prouince with great piety and victory 8. yeres, and then forsoke the state of a king, and toke the habite of a Monke, in the holy Iland.

Glasing brought among the Saxons. Bede famous

Benedict, who first brought Palons, Painting and Glasing into this Realme to the Saxons, flourished at this time. Beda also that famous learned man, liued at this time, who dedicated his Historye of the Church of England to the forenamed Ceolnulph.

736. EGbert, cousin germane to Ceolnulph, raigned in Northumberland 20. yeeres peaceably, and then forsaking the world, entered into Religion, and became a Monke: his brother bearing the same name, was Archbishop of Yorke, which Sea he greatly aduanced, and founded there a most worthy Library, replenished with all good Authors.

W. Malmesb. Library at Yorke.

758. OSwulfe succeeded his father, who was slaine by the people in the first peere of his raigne.

758. MOllo then toke the regiment, and after 11. yeeres was traiterously murthered by Alered.

769. ALered raigned after him 11. yers, and was enforced by the people to leaue the Countrey.

780. AThelred, or Etheldred, the sonne of Mollo, was aduanced to the Regiment of Northumberland by the people, and the 5th peere after was by them depriued.

785. AElfwold then was proclaimed king of Northumberland, and when hee had raigned 11. yeeres, was slaine by his subiects: hee lyeth buried at Hauguſtald.

796. OSrede, the sonne of Alerede, then succeeded, but the first yere he was deprined.

AThelred, or Etheldred, who was before depoſed, now received the kingdome, and when he had ruled foure yeeres, was also miserably slaine. After his death, this kingdome decayed, and was pittifully ransacked by ciuill sedition, and forraine inuasions, for the space of thirty yeeres, in which space, there ruled here without Title of kings,

CEardulfe.
CAlfwold.
CEandred.
CEtheldred.
CRadulfe.
COsbert, which two last, to wit, Readulfe and Osbert, were slaine at Yorke by the Danes, in a place to this day called Elle-Croft, because Elle was there also slaine.

This Osbert rauished a Lady of his Countrey, wife to Bernebokard, in reuenge whereof, the same Bernebokard flying into Denmarke, returned againe with the Danes, Hinguar and Hubba, and arriued in Holy Iland, and so came to Yorke, and there slew King Osbright, and Elle the new elected king of Northumberland.

CEgbert king of the West Saxons, then obtained Northumberland.

800. RIcsy then vsurped it, and after him Cuthred, from whom, Sitricke the Dane got it, vnto whom king Athelstane the Monarch gaue his daughter in marriage.

Thus ended the race of the kings of Northumberland, and was since counted an Earledome, the succession of the Earles whereof set downe by T. Otterborne, I ouerpasse for breuity, as also the names of Castles and Forts in the said County, with their owners set downe by Iohn Currar, to the number of 78.

T. Otterborn. Iohn Currar.

WEST

WEST SAXONS.

THe 7th kingdome was of the West Saxons, which contained the countries of Barkshire, Southhampton, Wiltshire, Dorsetshire, Somersetshyre, Deuonshire, and Cornwal, and hath Dioceses, Bath and Wels, Sarisbury and Cresester: hauing on the East side Southsex, on the north side Thames, on the South and the West, the Ocean Sea.

This kingdome, although it take beginning long after the first comming of the Saxons, yet the same endured longest, and ouercomming all the other kingdomes, brought them againe to one Monarchy.

CErdic, the tenth from Woden, with his son Kenricke, and other Saxons in fiue ships, in Anno Christi, 499. landed in Brytaine, at a place called Cerdikesford, and slew Natanleod King of the Brytaines, and fiue thousand men, of whose name the Country as far as Cerdikesford, was called by the name of Natanleod. From thencefoorth hee kept the Brytaines in great quiet, for they thought not good to stirre where they wanted hope to preuaile.

519. CErdike and Kenrike beganne to raigne as kings, and the same yeere they fought with the Brytaines in a place called Cerdikesford, and departed banquithers.

After that, they fought with the Brytaines in a place called Cerdicklege. These two Kings, to wit, the Father and the Sonne, toke the Ile of Wight, and gaue the same to their Nephews, Stuffe and Withgare, and slew the Brytaines in a place called Withgarberg. He raigned 17. yeeres. Withgare the Nephew of Cerdic was king of the Ile of Wight, and was buryed at Withgarberg, or the City of Withgare in the Ile of Wight.

526. KEnrike, the sonne of Cerdic, fought with the Brytains at Searesburige, and afterwards at Berambrige, and at both times put them to flight, and raigned 25. yeeres.

560. CEauline, the sonne of Kenrike, tooke vpon him the kingdome of the West Saxons.

In the beginning of his raigne he discomfited Ethelbert King of Kent, and slew his two Dukes, Oslaue and Cnebban at Wibbandune. Afterward his brother Cutholfe vanquished the Brytaines at Bedford, and wan from them the Townes of Libanburge, Egelsburge, Benfington and Egnesham.

Liganburge.

Sir yeres after, Ceauline slew three Kings of the Brytaines, Commeaile, Condidan, and Fariemeile, at Droxham, and toke three Cities from them, Gloucester, Cirencester, and Bathancester.

After hee fought with the Brytaines at Fethanleah, in which hee had the victory, but lost his sonne Cutha: for now his fortune changed, and when he had raigned 33. yeeres, hee was ouercome at Woodnesbeorge, or Wannes ditch in Wiltshire, and expelled out of his kingdome by the Brytaines, by the meanes of Cealrike his brother Cuthas son, that now rebelled against him, and expulsed him the kingdome, when hee had raigned 30. yeeres.

The Redborn Leyland.

Cealrike, the Sonne of Cutholfe, ruled the West Saxons 5. yeeres. 591.

CEolwulfe, sonne of Cutha before named, succeeded, who had continuall warres eyther with the Englishmen, with the Britaines, with the Scots, or with the Picts, and lastly moued warre against the South Saxons, and there ended when hee had raigned 14. yeeres. 598.

KInegilsus, the sonne of Ceolrike, succeeded. He brought his host against the Brytaines into Beandune, and there slew of them 2046. 611. Marian. Floria. Wigor.

Hee also fought with Penda, King of Mercians, neere vnto Cirencester, and after made peace with him.

And shortly after, in the yere of Christ, 635. by the preaching of Berinus, King Kinegilsus, and all his people received the Christian Faith, to whom King Oswald was God-father at the Font, of which kings, the said Berinus had granted to him the City of Dorchester, and builded there an house of Canons for his Bishops Sea. Kinegilsus raigned seuen and twenty yeeres. Westsex baptized. Vita Berini. Dorchester a Bishops sea.

CVicheline, the sonne of Kinegilsus, was baptized by Berinus the Bishop, in the City of Dorchester, and deceased the same yeere. 638.

CVthedrus, the sonne of king Guicheline, was baptized at Dorchester, by Berinus the Bishop, who was his God-father at the Font. He raigned foure yeeres. About this time, Honorius, Archbishoppe of Canterbury diuided his Prouince into Parishes. 639.

KEnnewalcus, the sonne of King Kinegilsus, tooke on him the kingdome of the West Saxons. 649.

Hee founded the Cathedral Church in Winchester, placing there a Bishops Sea. Winchester a Bishops sea. Malmesbury buylded.

Hee gaue Sepdulfusburgh to Adelmus the Abbot, there to build a Monastery. Afterward being infested with warres, by Penda, King of the Mercians, because he had forsaken his wife, sister of the said Penda, was by him driuen out of his kingdome, and fled to Anna, King of the East Angles, where he was baptized of Bishop Felix, and after was restored to his kingdome by the help of the forenamed Anna. He raigned 30. yeeres. After whome Quéene Sexburge his wife governed a while. She founded a Monastery of Nuns in the Ile of Sheppey, and became her selfe a Nun, and after Abbesse of Ely. Vita Adelm.

EAsewinus, Nephew to Kinegilsus succeeded, hee fought a battell against Wulfere, King of Mercia, in a place called Biddanfeafold. He raigned two yeeres. 672.

676. KEnewinus, sonne to Kinegilsus, chased the Brytaines suen to the Sea shore, and raigned 19. yeeres.

685. Marianus. CEadwalla, Nephew to Ceauline succeded in the kingdome.

Hee slew Berthune, Duke of the South Saxons, and brought that Province vnder grieuous bondage.

After that, hee and his brother Moll wasted Kent, and subdued the Ile of Wight, which till that time was giuen to Idolatry, whereof hee purged them, giuing the fourth part thereof to Bishop Wilfride, who appointed Preachers to conuert the people of that Ile to Christianity. Ceadwalla once againe spoyling the Country of Kent, his brother Moll, and 12. of his Knights were slaine by fire cast vpon them, after which time, euen before he was baptized, hee gaue for Tithe of Tenth to God all the prey and spoyles he had gotten to his owne vse: in whom (saith Malmesbury) although wee praise his affection, wee allow not the example: for it is written, that whoso offereth the sacrifice of poore folkes good, doth as it were sacrifice the sonne in the sight of his father.

After this hee went to Rome, when Sergius was Pope, hee was there baptized on Easter Euen, the yeere after Christs birth, 689. and falling sicke he dyed on the 20. day of Aprill, and was buryed honorably in S. Peters Church, with an Epitaph in Latine verse, and another in Latine prose, which may be Englished thus:

Ceadwall buried at Rome. Heere Ceadwall is buryed, otherwise named Peter, King of the West Saxons, who dyed the 20th of Aprill in the second indiction, and lined 30. yeeres, or thereabouts, when that Noble and mighty Prince Iustinian was Emperour of Rome, and had raigned 4. yeeres in the Empire, and Sergius a true patterne of the Apostles, had sate two yeeres in Peters seate.

687. Asser. INe raigned among the West Saxons, a Noble man, of great power and wisedome, and therewith valiant and hardy, in feats of armes very expert: he maintained such warre against the Kentish Saxons, that hee constrained them to seeke and intreat meanes of peace, giuing to him, for the same, great gifts, 30000. Mancas (pieces of gold so named.)

Floriacensis. This Ine was the sonne of Kenred, the sonne of Ceadwolde, brother to Keadwold, and sonne to Chenling, sonne of Kenri, sonne of Cirdic, the first King of the West Saxons. This man was more for his industry and naturall prowesse, then for his succession of the right Line called to be King. Hee was a Patrone of strength and manlinesse, an Image of wisedome, and his like was of no man knowne at that time, for Religion in profession, and framing himselfe thereafter in his liuing. He made also diuers good Lawes, which are yet to be seene.

Asser. About the 26. yeere of his raigne, hee fought a great battell against Ceired King of Mercia, Cuneburg. at Wodnesbury. And the same yere he inuaded the South Saxons with a mighty army, and slew in battell Anthun, King of the South Saxons, and supped that kingdome vnto his.

He builded a Colledge at Welis, dedicating it to the honour of God, and Saint Andrew the Apostle, in the yere of Christ, 704. which Church was since translated into a Bishoppes Sea, by Kenulphus, King of the West Saxons. He new builded the Abbey of Glastenbury, in a fenny place out of the way, to the end the Monks might so much the more giue their minoes to heauenly things, and chiefely die the contemplation meete for men of such profession; this was the 4th building of that Monastery. Besides which the said King did also erect a Chappell of gold and siluer (ta wit garnished) with ornaments and vessels likewise of gold and siluer, to the building of the which Chappell, he gaue 2640 pounds of siluer, and to the Altar, 264. pound of gold, a Chalcis with the Patten, ten pound of gold, a Censar 8. pound, and twenty Mancas of gold, two Candlesticks, twelue pound and a halfe of siluer, a Viser for the Gospell booke, twenty pound, and 60. Mancas of gold, vessels for water to the Altar, thirteene pound of gold, a Vason eight pound of gold, an holy-water Bucket twenty pound of siluer, Images of our Lord, and the twelue Apostle, 175. pound of siluer, and 28. pound of gold, a Pall for the Altar, & ornaments for the Monks, of gold and pretious stones subtilly compacted, all which treasure he gaue to that Monastery. In the yeere of Christ 705. Hedda, Bishop of the West Saxons, departed this life, after whose death, King Ine caused that Bishoprike to be diuided into two Parishes, the one to Winchester, which he gaue to Daniel, the other, to wit Shirebone, was giuen to Aldethelme, where he ruled 4 yeeres.

Also Eadberte Abbot, was made Bishop of Selsey by Chichester.

This Ine, King of the West Saxons, was the first that caused the mony called the Peterpence to be paid to Rome, and this was called the Kings almes, and was leuied in this manner, euery man that had 30. pennie worth of good of one manner cattell in their house of their owne proper, should giue a penny at Lammas yeerely. And when he had gouerned the West Saxons, by the space of 37. yeeres by the earnest labour of his wife Ethelburge, he left his worldly kingdome to his cousin Ethelard, and went to Rome, and there ended his life in poore estate.

Colledge at Wells.

Glastenbury new builded with a Chappell of gold and siluer.

Bede.

Bishoprick at Shireborne.

Bishoprick at Selsey by Chichester.

Peter pence paid and how leuied.

ETheland, kinsman on the fathers side to Ine, succeeded in the kingdome, notwithstanding Oswald a yong man of the Kings blood, did disturbe the beginning of his raigne: for he stirred vp rebellion among the inhabitants, but not long after he dyed, and then Ethelard raigned quietly 14. yeeres. 749.

CYthrede, his kinsman, made warre on Ethelwald, King of Mercia against the Brytaines, and had of them the victory.

In his time, there appeared 2. blazing starres, calling as it were burning brands towards the South. He raigned 16. yeeres. Blazing Starres.

The Englishmen buryed not the bodies of their dead in Cities, vntill the time of Cuthbert Archbishop of Canterbury, who procured of the Pope

Burriall in Churchyards. Pope, that in Cities there should be appointed Churchyards, for Honorius, when hee diuided his Province into Parishes, appointed not to them Churchyards for burriall.

75. W. Malmes. See Chron. SIgebert was King of the West Saxons. He was cruell and tyrannous towards his subiects, and changed ancient Lawes and customes after his owne lust and pleasure, and because a certaine Noble man some-deale sharply aduertized him to change his manners, hee put him to cruell death: and for so much as he continued in his malice, and would not amend, he was deprined of all Kingly authority, and lastly, as a person forlorne, wandring in woods, and hiding himselfe in caues of wilde beasts, hee was slaine in Andreads Wald by a Swineherd, whose Lord and Master, called Cumbra, hee had wrongfully put to death, when he had not raigned one yeere.

757. KEnulphus of the blood of Cerdicus, appeased certaine murmours and grudges that were amongst the people, for the deposing of his predecessour Sigebert.

Bishops sea at Wels founded. He founded the Cathedrall Church of Wels. As he haunted a woman which he kept at Merton, he was slaine by the treason of one Otio, the kinsman of Sigebert late king, when he had raigned 29. yeres, and was buried at Winchester.

786. BRithricus of the blood of Cerdicus, was made King of West Saxons, a man more desirous of peace then of warre.

He married Ethelburga the daughter of Offa king of Mercia, by whose power he expelled Egbert, that was an inner King in the Lordship of the West Saxons.

Blod rayned. In his time it rained blood, which falling on mens clothes, appeared like Crosses.

The Danes first arryued in this land. Marianus. In Anno 800. the Danes arriued in the Ile called Portland, but by the puissance of Brithricus, and other Kings of the Saxons, they were ouercome at Tegnemouth, driuen backe and compelled to auoyd the Land.

The King poysoned by his wife. Brithricus was poysoned by his wife Ethelburga, when he had raigned 17. yeres, and was buryed at Wartham. For this deede the Nobles ordained, that from thenceforth, the Kings wiues should not be called Quenes, nor suffered to sit with them in place of estate.

Eadburge with infinite treasure fled into France, where, offering a great portion of her gold to King Charles of France, he said vnto her, chose Eadburge whom thou wilt haue to thy husband, me or my Sonne: and shee answered, If choyce be granted me, I chose your son, because hee is younger then you: then (quoth Charles) If thou hadst chosen me, thou shouldst haue had my sonne, but because thou hast chosen my sonne, thou shalt haue neither him nor mee: and then gaue to her a Monastery wherein shee professed herselfe a Nunne, and became there Abbesse a few yeeres, but afterwards committing adultery with a Lay man, and cast out of the Monastery, she ended her life in pouerty and misery, as of many that haue seene her wee heard, saith mine Author Asserius.

After a wicked life, followed a miserable end to Queene Eadburg. Hougden.

Asser.

EGbrichus obtained the gouernment of the West Saxons. He tamed the Wellshmen, vanquished Bernulphus king of the Mercians at Hellendone, and subdued to his obeysance the Kentish Saxons, East Saxons, and Northumbers. Hee caused the brazen Image of Cadwaline king of the Brittaines to be throwne down, and this land no more to be called Brytaine, but Angita, or England. He was crowned at Winchester. 800. W. Malmes. Sea. Chron. Brytaine first named England.

In the 33. yere of his raigne, the Danes arrived at Lindefferne, and sought with the Englishmen at Carham, where two Bishops, two Earles, and a great number of the English people were slaine. Two yeres after, the Danes arriued in West Wales, where Egbright ouercame them at Pengiftendon. In Anno 832. the Danes spoyled the Ile of Sheppey in Kent, and yet were they expelled out of the Ile of Thanet. He raigned ouer the most part of England the space of seuen and thirty yeres and seuen moneths, and was buried at Winchester. Danes arriued here. Sea. Chron.

839. W. Malmes. I. Brompton. AEthelulfus, the sonne of Egbrichus, late Bishop of Winchester, (saith Iohn Brompton Abbot of Iarwaux) began his raigne ouer the most part of England. Hee take to wife Osburgh his Butlers daughter, and after her, Iudith, daughter to the King of France, and had by his first wife 4. sonnes, which were kings after him.

Aredus Rituall. Danes spoile Rome. In his time there came a great army of the Pagan Danes, with 350. ships into the mouth of Thames, and so to London, spoyled it, and put to flight Beorthulfe, King of Mercia, with all his power which came to bid them battell: Then the Danes went with their army into Southry, where Adhelnulfus with his sonne Adhelbald, and a great army came against the forsaid Danes, and at a place called Aolea, they fought a cruell battell, wherein the most part of the Danes were slaine.

Sea Chron. The same yeere, Adhelstane, the sonne of Adhelnulfus, and Chalchere the Earle slew a great army of the Pagans at Sandwich in Kent, and take nine of their ships.

Adhelnulfus sent his sonne Alfride to Rome with a great number of Noble men and other, at which time, Pope Leo confirmed the said Alfride, and take him to be his sonne by adoption, and also conferred him King.

Tenth giue to the church by King Adhelnulfus. This Adhelnulfus did make the tenth part of his kingdome free from tribute and seruice to the King, and gaue it to them that did serue Christ in the Church: and the same yere he went to Rome, where hee repaired the English schole, which was first founded by Offa, King of the Mercies. He confirmed that grant of the Peter Pence to Rome, and as hee returned home through France, hee take to wife Iudith, the daughter of Charles, the bald King of France. English schoole at Rome repaired.

In the meane season, his sonne Adhelbald rebelling, vsurped the kingdome, so that when Adhelnulfus returned, hee was forced to diuide the kingdome, & to take the worse part. He raigned 18. yeres, and was buried at Winchester, where sometime he had bin Bishop (elected belike) but was after the deceasle of his Father, of neere kin

taken from thence and made king.

7. Aug. A Dhelbald raigned after his father: against God, and the worthinesse of Christianity, yea, and contrary to the custome of all Pagans, hee presumed to his fathers marriage bed, and with great infamy married Iudith, the French kings daughter. He raigned after his father 2. yeeres, and was buried at Sherborne.

S. Ce. Ethelbrick, brother to Athelbald, tooke vnder his dominion, Kent, Southrey, and Sussex. In this time, the great army of the Pagans inuaded and spoyled the Citty of Winchester, who, when they returned with a great pray, towards their Ships, Ofrike, Earle of Hampton, and his folke, and Adhelmulus the Earle, with Warkeshire men met them, and farre from any Towne they ioyned battell, where the Pagans were slaine in euery corner, and the Christians kept the field.

The Mozmans and Danes made a firm league with the Kentish men, who promised them money to keepe the league, but notwithstanding the Pagans brake priuily out of their Castels by night, and spoyled all the East parts of Kent.

Athelbrick raigned fiue yeeres, and was buried at Shirborne.

865. Ethered, brother to Athelbrick, receiued the kingdome of the West Saxons. In the first yeere of his raigne, a great Daup of Pagans came into England, and remained all the winter in the kingdome of East England.

The Pagans departed out of Mozthumberland, came to Nottingham, and there wintered, but Beorede, gathering a great army against them, strengthened besides with Etheldreds power, king of the West Saxons, forced them to leaue Nottingham, and to goe backe againe to Yozk, where remaining till winter was passed, they then passed ouer by Boate into Linsey, and comming vp to Humberstane, spoiled the whole Country, they destroyed the most famous and ancient Monastery of Bardeney, slaying all the Monks without mercy, they ranging the Country, slew the Abbot and Monks of Croyland, and fired their Church, with the houses belonging to the Monastery. At Spoldishamstede, or Peterborough, they made the like slaughter, hacking and spoile, and so proceeding toward Huntington, preying & spoyling the Country, euen into Grantbrigesshire, and to the house of Nuns in the Ile of Ely, where they murthered all, as well women as men. Thus entering into East Angle, they slew the most valiant Earle Walkerulis, and all his company that resisted. The king also of the same Prouince, holy Edmond they take, bound him to a stake, shot him full of arrowes, and strake off his head, by meanes whereof they possessed all East England, and soiourned there all winter.

The yeere 871. the said army of the Danes came to Reading a Towne of the Kings, situate on the South side of the River Thames in Barkeshire, and there two of their Earles with a great power, rode forth to spoile the Country; in the meane time, the other cast a trench betweene the Thames, and Cinium or Kynet, on the right side of the same Towne, with whom Ethelwolfe Earle of Barkeshire did meete in a place called Englefield, (or field of the Englishmen) where one of the Earles being slaine, and the rest chased away, the Christians obtained the victory.

The Christians within 4. daies fought a battell with the Pagans, in Assendune, but the Pagans diuided themselues into two battels, for then they had two Kings, which when the Christians saw, they likewise diuided their army into two companies. Battell at Assendune.

It was determined that king Etheldred with his battell should goe against the two Pagan Kings with their battell, and that his brother Aelfred with his army should set on all the Pagan Dukes and their army. All things thus ordered, when the king tarried long in his prayer, and the Pagans being readily prepared, came to Chipenhame, where the battell was pitched: Aelfred seeing he must either retire, or set on his enemies before his brother did come, he straight waies set vpon them, though the place of battell was vnequall, for the Pagans had gotten the higher ground, and the Christians brought their battel from the valley. There was in that place one onely thorne tree, very short, about which tree, the battels met, & ioined, where when they had long time fought, Hubba one of the Kings 5. Earles, and many thousands mo of the Pagans being slaine, the other were chased. Battell at Chipenhame. Sca. Chron.

A great heape of stones was laid copped vp, where Hubba was buryed, and the place called Hubbelow. Hubbelow. Sca. Chron.

This being done, king Etheldred and his brother Aelfred, shortly after gathered their power againe to fight with the Pagans at Basing, where, after a long and sore battell, the Pagans had the victory. Pagans vanquished.

After this battell, came another army of Pagans from beyond seas, and ioined with the first.

When king Etheldred had raigned 5. yeeres, hee was slaine of the Pagans at Whittingham, and buried in the Monastery of Wimburne, with this Epitaph.

In hoc loco quiescit corpus sancti Etheldredi *regis Weſt Saxonum martyris, qui* Anno Domini. 172. *23. die Aprilis, per manus Dacorum Paganorum occubuit.* His armes a crosse Florie. Sca. Chron. Martinus Scotus

Anno 870. Saint Ebbe, Abbesse of Coldingham 6. miles North from Barwike, cut off her nose and vpperlip, and perswaded all her sisters to doe the like, that they being odible to the Danes, might the better keepe their Virginity, in despite whereof, the Danes burned the Abbey, and the Nunnes therein. Flores Historiar. Chastity before beauty preferred, a rare example.

A Elfred, borne in Barkeshire, at a Village called Wanting, the 4th son of Athelwolfe, received the gouernment of the whole Realme, and within one moneth after, with a very small number, fought a sharp battell against the whole army of the Pagans, in a place called Wilton (which lieth on the Southside of the River Wily, of which River, the whole Shire taketh his name) and after they had fought a great part of the day, the Pagans fled: but seeing the fewnesse of them that pursued, they set themselues in 871. Florentii Cro. Marianus Scottus. Asser. Speculum Hi. westhirre. Ri. Cirens. stensis.

in battell a fresh, and got the field.

The West Saxons made a League with the Pagans, vpon condition, they should depart out of their Country. The next yeere they wintred at London, and made league with the Mercies.

The next yeere they wintered at Lindesey, which was in the kingdom of Northumberland.

The next yeere at Ripendune: they constrained Burgoredus king of Mercies, to fly beyond the seas, who went to Rome, where he dyed, and was buryed in the Schole of the Saxons. Burgoredus death.

The Pagans subduing the whole kingdome of the Mercies, which they committed to Ceonulfus: The next yeere one part of the Pagans wintered in Northumberland, neere to the River Tine, subdued the whole Country: the other part went with Guthram, Oskettellus, and Amandus three Kings of the Pagans, to Grantbridge, and wintered there.

The yeere following, the Pagans going from Cambridge in the night, entred the Castle of Wareham, where there was a Monastery of Nunnes, situate betweene two Rivers, Frawa and Trent, in the Country called in the Saxon, Thomseta, a most fare seat, except the West onely, where it layneth to the Land, with whom king Aelfred made a League that they should depart his kingdome, but contrary to their oath, they rode into Denonshire, to Exancester, and there wintered. Exceter.

Hinguar and Halfdene with 23. ships, came out of North Wales, where they had wintered, and like to fierce Wolues, had shed much Christian blood: setting fire to diuers Abbies, and made them equall with the ground; neuer kingdome or Country suffered greater calamity, at the hands of any Nation, then did the English, especially the Monks and religious women, for them they burnt in their houses, or otherwise tormented them to death. Monks and Marriages of religious people here.

The next yeere 120 of the Pagans ships were drowned at Swanaway: And king Aelfred pursuing an army that went by Land to Exceter, tooke of them pledges, and also an oath to part with all speed.

In the yeere following, the Danes came to Chipingham, a Mannor of the Kings, situate on the left side of Wiltshire, & there wintred, compelling many of the West Saxons to leaue their Country and to go beyond the seas, the rest that remained they subdued. King Aelfred himselfe was oft times brought into such misery, that none of his people knew where he was become. On a time being forced to hide himselfe with a Cow-heard in Somersetshire, as he sate by the fire, preparing his Bow and Shafts, the Cow-heards wife baking bread on the coales, threw the Kings Bow and Shafts aside, and said, Thou fellow, why dost thou not turne the bread which thou seest burne, thou art glad to eate it, ere it be halfe baked. This woman thought not that it had beene king Aelfred, who had made so many battels against the Danes, and gotten so many victories. For GOD did not onely vouchsafe to giue him victory ouer his enemies, but also to be wearied of them in the sight of his owne people, to the end hee should know there is one God of all, to whom all knees shall bow, and in whose hands the hearts of Kings consisteth. The brother of Hinguar, and of Healfdean, who had wintered in Mercia, and had made great slaughter of the Christians, sayled with 23. Shippes into Denonshire, where, doing great mischiefe, he and the most part of his people were slaine, the rest escaped by flying to their shippes. In this battell among many rich spoyles, was taken a Banner or Ensigne called Reafan, which among the Danes was had in great estimation, for that it was imbroidered by the three sisters of Hinguar and Hubba, the daughters of Lodbroke. King Aelfred made a Castle in Aethellingei, from thence hee went to Petram Egebrichti, which is on the East side of the Chase called Selnudum, in Latine *Silua magna*, the great wood: there met with him also the inhabitants of Hamshire, which, when they saw the King, reioyced as though he had beene risen from death to life. The ensigne of the Danes was a Basilisk. Alredus Rieuall. Aethelingey, the noble Island. Egbrichts stone

The King with his army went to Ethandune and fought against the Pagans, where he made great slaughter, and pursued the rest to their Castle, who after 14. daies, desired peace, gaue pledges, and tooke oath to depart this Realme: and Gythram their king received baptisme here by Ethelingsey, in a place called Aire, whom Aelfred received to be his God-son. Gythram king of Danes christened.

In the yeere 879. the Pagans went from Chipnam to Cirenceaster, and there remained one yeere after. The same yeere a great army of Pagans came from beyond the sea, and winred at Fullanham hard by the River of Thames. Chichester. Fulham. Marianus Scotus.

The next yere, the Pagans went from Cirenceaster to the East English, dinding that Country among them, and there inhabited. The Pagans that wintered at Fullanham, went into East France.

In the yeere 885. an army of Pagans came into Kent, and besieged the city of Rhofeceaster which lyeth on the East side of the River Medowegs, and before the gate of the same Citty they made a strong Castle, but Aelfred with a great army chased them to their ships. Rochester besieged. The Castle builded. Medway.

The next yere Aelfred restored and honourably repaired the City of London (after it had beene amongst other Cities destroyed with fire and the people killed vp) hee made it habitable againe, and committed it to the custody of his sonne in Law Adhered, Earle of the Mercies, vnto whom before hee had giuen his daughter Ethelfleda. And now with king Aelfred, all the English, Mercians, Kentishmen, South and West Saxons (which before were in captivity vnder the Pagans) willingly came and submitted themselues. Asserius. Horiace. London builded and made habitable. Marianus Scotus.

In the yeere 890. Gythram the King of the Pagans (whose name in his baptisme was changed to Athelstane) dyed, & was buried in the Kings Town called Headleaga in Suffolk among the East English. Hadleigh

In the yeere 892. the great army of the Pagans came from the East Kingdome of France into Adhon, and from thence with 250. ships into Kent, arriuing in the mouth of the River Limene, which River runneth from the great Inglesdale in Sussex. Hampshire

wood, which is called Andreads Weald, from whose mouth foure miles into the same woode, they drew their ships, where they destroyed a Castle, and fortified another more strong, in a place called Apultrens, now Apuldor. This wood was from the East to the West, 120. miles in length, and more, in breadth 30. miles.

Wilton. Beauflete.

The same yere, Hastings came with 80. ships into the mouth of Thames, and made a strong Towne called Middleton, in the South side of the Thames, and another on the North side, called Beauflete.

The yere following, the City of Yorke was taken by the Normans, but Sober the Bishop, by Gods provision escaped.

Fernham.

The same yere also Aelfred fought against the Normans at Fernham in Kent, in the Parish of Neles ford, where hee slew them, wounded their king, & chased the remnant thorow the Thames into Eastsex, where by many of them were drowned, they which escaped, fled to an Iland called Byrhtsey, situate in a streame of the River Colne.

Aelfred hearing that a great number of the Pagans were arrived at Cranceastre, he took with him a great army, and by battell ouercame and chased them away.

Beauflete taken from the Pagans.

In the meane season, Adhere, Earle of the Percies, and the Citizens of London, with other came to Beauflet, and besieged the Castle of the Pagans and brake into it, where they take exceeding rich spoyles of gold, siluer, horses and garments, among which was taken the wife of Hastings and his two sons, which were brought to London, and presented to the King, who commanded them to be restored againe. But Hastings came againe into Beauflet, and repaired the Castle which they had broken downe. From thence he went to Sceabridge, and there builded a strong Castle: there was ioyned vnto him the army that remained at Apuldrane, and other that came from the East Englishs, and from the Northumbers, who altogether spoyled and robbed, till they came to the banke of Seuerne, and there at Bultingatune they made a strong Towne, but by Adhered, Earle of the Percies, and other, they were besieged, and shortly through famine forced to come out. where many on both sides were slaine, but the Christians had the victory.

Sudbury.

Apuldor.

Florentii. Cro. Marianus. Scotus.

Isle of Merfey.

In the yeere 895. the Pagans wintered in a little Ile called Merlig, in the East part of Cester, situate in the sea, and the same yere they sayled by the River of Thames, after by the River of Ligia, and twenty miles from London began to build a Fortresse. In the Summer following, the Londoners and other here adioyning, did seeke to destroy the Fortresse of the Danes, but they being put to night, King Aelfred pitched a field not farre from the City, lest the Pagans should take away the harnesse of the Countrey, and viewing the River one day, perceiued that the Chanell might be in one place dammed vp, that the Danes should not get out their ships, he forthwith commanded on both sides of the River a damme to be cast, and diuided that River into 2. streames, that where ships before had sayled, now a small Boat could scantly row, which

Key that bare ships vnto Ware. Asserius.

when the Pagans perceiued, they leaving their wiues and ships, fled a foote to Quatbridge, and there builded a fortresse, lodged there the Winter following, whose ships the Londoners brang some to London, the other they brake downe and destroyed. Anno 897. the Pagans came from Quatbridge, part into East England, part into Northumberland: some got them ships and sayled into France. After all these verations by the cruell Danes committed, followed far greater the space of three yeeres, by death of cattell, and mortality of men: twenty Danish ships were taken, being Pirates, and the Pirates slaine or hanged on the Gallowes.

New called Cantwarabridge or Cattwelabridge.

The victorious Prince, the studious prouider for Widowes, Orphants and poore people, most perfect in Saxon Poetry, most liberall, endued with Wisdome, Fortitude, Iustice and Temperance, the most patient bearer of sickness wherewith he was daily vexed, a most discrete Searcher of truth, in executing iudgement, a most Vigilant and deuout Prince in the seruice of God: Alfred, the 29. yere and 1st moneth of his raigne, departed his life, the 28. day of October, and is buried at Winchester, in the new Monastery of his foundation. Hee founded a Monastery of Monks at Ethelingsey, and another for Nunnes at Shaftesbury. Hee ordained the hundreds and tenths, which men call Centuaries and Cupings: he sent for Grimbald to come into England, that by his deuice hee might erect the study of good learning cleane decayed. By the counsell of Neotus, he obtained common Schooles of diuers Sciences, in Oxenford, and turned the old Lawes into English, with diuers other Workes.

Battle of King Alfred.

Alfred dieth.

Florilegus. Reg. Hig. Scal. Cron Regist. Hyde T. Rudburne Vniuersitie in Oxford. Marianus Scotus. Regist. Hyde

He established good Lawes, by the which he brought to great quietnesse to the Country, that men might haue hanged golden Bracelets and Iewels where the wayes parted, and no man durst touch them for feare of the Law. He carried ouer the Psalter in his bosome, that when he had any leasure, he might read it ouer with diligence. He diuided the 24. houres of the day and night into three parts: hee spent 8. houres in writing, reading and praying: eight in prouision of his body: and eight in hearing and dispatching the matters of his subiects. He diuided his yerely reuenues into two parts, and the first he diuided into three: one part he gaue to his seruants, the second part to his workemen, which were occupied in building, the third part to strangers. The second part of the whole he diuided into foure parts, the first part whereof hee gaue in almes to the poore, the second to Monasteries by him founded, the third to Schooles which he had erected, and gathered of many both Noble mens and other mens sonnes of his Nation, the fourth part he distributed to the nert monastery in all the English Saxon. Alhfwido wife to King Aelfred founded the Monastery of Nunnes in Winchester.

Asserius. Marianus Scotus.

EDward, surnamed Senior, the sonne of Aelfred, was crowned and anointed King at Kingstone, 4 shortly after, Adhelwoldus, cousin germane vnto King Edward, reuolted and went to the army of the Pagans, who forthwith chose him

900. Speculum hift. Ri. Cirenc. Adhelwold reuolted.

him to be their King in Northumberland.

Leofer.

Ioannes Leofer in his third booke of the description of Africa, writeth, that about this time (to say) about the yere of our Lord 905. the Englishmen at the perswasion of the Gothes, besieged the great City Argilla in Barbary, which the Africans call Arrella, being 70. miles distant from the straight of Marrocho Southward, hoping thereby, to withdraw the Sarazens out of Europe, where they fought with so great courage and good successe, that they wanne the said Towne, and so ransacked it with fire and sword, that scant one escaped there, and the Towne lay desolate, and without inhabitants for the space of thirty yeeres. Wee account this to haue happened in the foresaide yeere, because the Authour after the fashion of the Sarazens, doth referre it to the 314th yere of Mahomets Hegira, which by conference of their places doth seeme to beginne in the yeere of our Lord, 591. which number being added, doe bring forth 905.

Edhelwoldus, king of the Pagans, brought a great army from Calster, into the East English, which robbed and spoyled thorow all Mercia, and the West countrey, vntill they came to Cerikelade, and there went ouer the Thames, and take great spoyles about Wadney.

King Edward gathered an army and went toward the Danes, but while hee tarryed for his Army out of Kent, Adhelwolfe, King of the Danes came vpon him with a great power, and made him battell, wherein Cochricus, and Adelwolfe, kings of the Pagans were slaine.

Wodnesfield in Staffordshire. Wiltrane. Hampton.

In the yeere 910. a battell was fought at Wodnesfield, a mile North from Wolfrune Hampton in Staffordshire, where Cowillus and Healidene, kings of the Pagans, with many Earles and Nobles were slaine, but of the common people innumerable.

Aethered, Earle of the Mercians, dyed, and King Edward toke into his Dominion London and Wrenford, and all the Countrey adioyning thereunto.

In the yeere 914. by the Kings commandement at Hertford, betwixt the Riuers of Meneran, Benesician, and Legian, in the North side a City is builded.

In the yeere 913. the Pagans of Northumberland, and Leicester, in the County of Oxford tooke spoiles, and in the Kings Towne called Bokenoxton, and in many other places they slew many people, and returned home againe: another Army of the Danes being horsemen, were sent into Hertfordshire, towards Legeston, with whom the men of the Countrey encountred, and slaying many of them, put the rest to slight, taking their horses and armour, with a great prey. King Edward leauing certaine to build a City in the South part of the River Ligea, to wit, the Towne of Ware, with more part of his army went into Eller, and encamped at Mealdune, where hee tarried till a Towne was builded at Witham.

Bokenoxton.

The Towne of Ware builded.

Maldon in Eller.

Witham.

In the yere 915. a great Army of Danes sailed about the West country, and landed in diuers places, taking great preyes, and went to their shippes againe. The King for strengthening of the Countrey, made a Castle at the mouth of the water of Auon, and another at Buckingham, and the third fast by, that is, on either side of the Riuers course, one, and then went into Northampton and Bedfordshire, and subdued the Danes there, with their Leader called Turkecills.

King Edward builded, & new repaired the Townes of Torcester and Wigmore.

In the yere of our Lord, 918. the Kentish, Southsex, and East Saxons, besieged Colchester, and won it by force, and slew all therein, a few excepted, that escaped by flight. The same yere King Edward went to Colchester with an army, repaired the walles, and put a great garrison of Souldiers into it.

Torcester. Wigmore. Coghall Colchester in Eller.

The next yere died the Noble Princesse Elfleda (wife to Ethelredus Duke of Mercia) and was buried in the Monastery of Saint Peter, which her Lord and she before had builded in the Towne of Gloucester, which Monastery was after thowne to the ground by the Danes, but Aeldredus Bishop of Yorke, and of Worcester, made there another, which is now the chiefest Church in the Towne.

Henry Bradshaw. Rainul Higden.

This Noble woman Elfleda, ruled the city of *Chester, she repaired the towne of Camworth, besides Lichfield, Stafford, Warwicke, Shrewesbury, Watlesbury, Gloesbury, Leycester, with a Towne and Castle in the North end of Mercia, vpon the River of Serce, that is called Runcorne: she builded a Bridge ouer Serne, called Bathbury Bridge, &c.

*Chester. Camworth. Lichfield. Stafford. Warwicke. Shrewesbury. Watterbury. Gloucester. Leycester repaired. Runcorne Towne and Castle, and Brimbury with the bridge builded. Marianus Scotus. W. Thorne. Hen. Huntingd. Alredus Rival

When shee had once assailed the paines that women suffer in trauelling with childe, shee euer after refused the imbracing of her husband, saying, It was not semely for any Noble woman to vse such beastly liking, whereof should insue so great sorrow and paine: shee tamed the Welshmen, and in diuers battels chased the Danes, after whose death, Edward held that Province in his owne hand.

built. Manchester repaired. 924. Alredus Beuerla. Leiland. Spe Histo. Ri. Cirenc. W. Malmes.

King Edward builded a new towne against the old towne of Nottingham on the South side of the River of Trent, and made a Bridge ouer the said River betweene the two townes: he subdued the kings of Scotland and Wales: he builded a Towne in the North end of Mercia, by the river of Mercia, and named it Thilwall, and repaired the Town of Manchester: after all which deeds by him done, hee deceased at Faringdon, and was buryed at Winchester in the new Church, which his father Alfred had builded, when he had raigned 24. yeers.

A Delitane, after the death of Edward Senior, his Father, was crowned at Kingstone by Adhelmus, Archbishop of Canterbury. His Coronation was celebrated in the Market-place vpon a stage erected on high, that the King might be seene the better of the multitude: He was a Prince of worthy memory, valiant and wise in all his acts, and brought this Land into one Monarchy: for hee expelled vtterly the Danes, and quieted the Welchmen. Hee caused them to pay him yeerely Tribute twenty pound

pound of gold, three hundred pound of siluer, and two thousand fiue hundred head of Neate, with Hounds and Hawkes to a certaine number.

And after that hee had by battell conquered Scotland, hee made one Constantine King of Scots vnder him, adding this Princely word, That it was more honour to him to make a King then to be a King. He made seuen coyning Mints at Canterbury, foure for the King, two for the Archbishop, and one for the Abbot: at Rochester three, two for the King, and one for the Bishop: besides these, in London 8. in Winchester 6. in Lewes 2. in Hastings 2: in Chichester one: in Hampton two: in Wareham 2. in Exceter two: in Shaftesbury two: and in euery good Towne one Copner.

Cons. Record. W. Lambert. Seuen Layers.

T. Rudborne. Girardus Cornubius.

He founded Saint Germanes in Cornwall, which was since a Bishops Sea: hee founded Saint Petrocus at Bodmin: he founded Pilton priory, Middleton and Michelney. He walled the City of Exceter with squared stone.

Guy of Warwicke slew Colbrond.

In this time, Guy, Earle of warwicke, in a combate, slew Colbrond the Danish Gyant in Hidemead neere vnto Winchester.

The Empire translated into Germany.

OTto the Great Sonne to Henry the first of that name, was the 84. Emperour of the Romanes, hee beganne in the yeere of the world, 4892. and from the foundation of Rome 1686. and in the yeere of our Redemption, 935. and from the time that the Court Imperiall of seate of the Emperours was held in Germany, 135. yeeres, that is to say, from Charlemaigne, but if you reckon from Lewes the Stammerer that was king of France, then it is but fifty and fiue yeeres. Hee was anoynted Emperour by Pope Iohn the 12. in the 24. yeere of his raigne, and raigned foureteene yeeres after: he was the eleuenth Emperor after Charlemaigne, who translated the Empire from Greece into Almaigne, as appeareth in the Decretall: and in the time of this Otto, the Pope sent his Chapline called Poponius to Denmark, where with great diligence and diuine industry, hee conuerted and baptized Alardus King of Danes, being the 90. King of Denmarke, about the yeere of our Sauiour Christ 950. This Otto founded Magdeburgh, and constituted it Metropolitane of Sclauony, and about the end of the raigne of this Otto, old Nicephorus raigned Emperour of Constantinople, who seeing himselfe to be aged, waxed very iealous of his children, that they should supplant him and aspire to the Crowne, whereupon he determined to haue his Sonnes geloed. The old Emperour their mother vnderstanding certainely thereof, at last perswaded Iohn her eldest Sonne to kill his Father Nicephorus, and then hee raigned Emperour of Greece seuen yeeres after, and in the tenth and last yeere of his raigne, hee was poysoned by his wife, shee was a Romane, shee poysoned him at the very time, when shee saw he would depart from Rome: and after him succeeded Henry the second of that name, hee was the first Duke of Bauary: and then beganne a gratious and deliberate order by the Princes of Germany, for the election of Emperours to auoyd pretended right in succession, whereupon they constituted 6. Princes Electors, 3. whereof to be Ecclesiasticall, that is to say, the Archbishops of Maguntia, of Treuer, and of Collen, the other 3. are secular, that is to say, the County Palatine, the Marques of Brandenburgh, and the Duke of Saxony, into these sire was giuen power and faculty for euer to chuse the Emperor in time of vacancy, and they to be held the most puissant and mighty Princes of the Empire. Vnto these 6. Princes aforesaid was also added the King of Bohemia, by reason that if there should chance any diuision in their election, as three against three, that then the seuenth voyce would easily decide the difference by making the Maior part, and keepe concord in the election, at this constitution, it was also ordayned that the Archbishop of Maguntia, should be Chancellour of Germany, The Archbishop of Treuer should be Chancellor of Gaule, and the Archbishop of Collen should be Chancellor of Italy, and the County Palatine should be the Emperors chiefe Taster or Cupps bearer, the Marques of Brandenburgh should be Chamberlane, the Duke of Saxony should be Constable, and the King of Bohemia should be Butler. Touching the Consecration of this, and this new election of Christian Emperors, you may read at large in many Authors, but chiefely as I find it in the fifth booke of the Archdeacon, of his Distinctions. Conradus the second of that name, and the fourescore and eighth Emperour of the Romanes succeeded Henry in the yeere 1023. and in the first yeere of his raigne, was builded the City of Spire in Germany: in his time flourished Aretine the famous Italian Musitian, of whom is written that hee brought the art of singing to great perfection, and inuented the Gamoth, vt, re, my, fa, sol, la, and in the fourth yeere of the raigne of the foresaid Henry, there was so great and generall mortality throughout the world, as Sigebert testifieth in his History, that the liuing dyed suddenly as they were burying the dead.

The consultation of the Princes Electors in Germany for the peaceable choosing of Emperors.

The seuerall offices of the Princes Electors.

Spire founded.

The inuention of vt, re, my, fa, sol, la.

A wonderfull mortality.

This yeere 930. the Hungarians, which were yet Sarazens, with great strength and fury passed through Austratia, and Germany, wasting and spoyling all Cities and countries with fire and sword, they crost the River of Reine and entred France, and did great damage and outrage chiefely in Burgondy and Champaigne, and passed cleane through France, euen to the Sea side, and so for want of shipping, they went no further that way, else they would haue visited England.

The Sarazens inuaded Germany & Frace, and wold haue inuaded England if they could haue come to it.

Athelstane raigned 15. yeeres, and was buried at Malmesbury. John Lydgate.

EDmund, the brother of Adelstane, toke vpon him the gouernment of this Realme, whose short raigne tooke from him the renowme of most high praises that should haue redounded to this posterity: for he was a man disposed of nature to noblenesse and iustice: he take out of the Danes hands the townes of Lincolne, Nottingham, Derby, Leicester, and Stamford, and brought

940. Marianus

Io. Taxter.

W. Malmes.

946. Spe Histo. Ri. Ciren.

brought all Mercia to his dominion: he expulsed the two kings, Anlafus the sonne of Sithricus, and Reginald, the sonne of Cuthbert, out of Northumberland, and subdued the Countrey to his dominion. He granted the priuiledge vnto S. Edmund, in which the limits of the Towne of Edmundsbury are contained.

On Saint Austins day, in the kings Towne named Pucklechurch, the king (whilst he would haue saued his Sewar from the hands of a wicked theefe, called Leofe) was slaine, when he had raigned 5. yeeres, and 7. moneths, and was buryed at Glastenbury.

EAldred succeeded Edmund his brother: for his sonne Edwine and Edgar were thought too young, to take on them so great a charge. He tooke on him but as Protector, but afterwards he was crowned at Kingstone.

This Eldred had the earnest fauour of the Commons, because he was a great maintainer of honesty, and also most abhorred naughty and vnruly persons: for his expertnesse in feats of armes, hee was much commended, whereby he quieted and kept in due obeysance the Northumbers and Scots, and exiled the Danes.

He placed the Bishop of Cornwall at Saint Germans, where it continued till the time of Edward next before the Conquest, in whose time it was translated to Exeeter.

Martinus Conerb. Record.

In the yeere of our Lord, 951. he committed to prison Wolstane, Archbishop of Yorke in Luthabury, because he often had beene accused to haue commanded many Citizens of Thetford to be slaine, in reuenge of the Abbot Adelme, vntruthly by them slaine: he was a yere after released, and restored to his See.

Aller.

King Eldred builded much at Abindone, gaue great Lands, and confirmed them Charters with seales of gold.

Hee raigned 9. yeeres, and was buried in the Cathedrall Church at Winchester, in the old Monastery.

EDwin succeeded his vncle Eldred in the kingdome: hee was crowned at Kingstone, of whome is left vnto honest memory, for one hapnes act by him committed in the beginning of his raigne.

Wolues baptized in stead of men in England.

Marianus

Malmes. Ang. W. Malmes. Speculum Hi. Ri. Ciren. ces.

In the same day of his cozonation, he suddenly withdrew himselfe from his Lords, and in the sight of certaine persons rauished his owne kinswoman, the wife of a Noble man of his Realme, and afterward slew her husband, that hee might haue the vnlawfull vse of her beauty. For which act, and for banishing Dunstane, hee became odible to his Subiects: and of the Northumbers, and people of middle England, that rose against him, was deprined, when hee had raigned 4. yeeres. He dyed and was buryed in the new Abbey of Winchester.

The king deposed.

959. King crowned at Bathe

EDgar the peaceable brother to Edwine, was crowned at Bathe. Hee was so excellent in iustice, and sharpe in correction of vices, as well in his Magistrates, as other subiects, that neuer before his daies was vsed vnlesse felony by robbery, or extortion, bribery, or false officers:

He chastised the great negligence, couetousnes and vicious liuing of the Clergy, and brought them to a better order. Of stature hee was but little, yet of minde valiant and hardy, and very expert in Martiall policie. Dunstane was ordained Metropolitan and Primate of England, by whom, and other Wise men, the King being instructed, did in euery place oppresse euill persons, repooued rebels vnder sharpe correction, the iust and modest man beloued and cherished: Churches that had beene destroyed he repaired, casting out of Monasteries secular Priests, and gathered together companies of Monks, and of Nuns, giuing good admonition to the Pastours, whom he appointed to haue rule ouer them. He was in his gouernment discreete, ciuill, liberall, gentle, mercifull and valiant: in warres hardy, defending with warlike power, the right of his kingdome, bringing his people vnder the obedience of their gouernours, framing his Magistrates to iustice, obtaining rightfull Lawes, whereby hee enioyed a quiet kingdome, so that he needed not to prouoke them to warre, nor any warre was procured against him, but kept the bounds of his kingdome, so long as he liued, with prudence, fortitude, iustice and temperance: not onely the Princes of the Iles, being Tyrants, stood in feare of him, but also the Kings of many Nations, hearing of his wisdome and baliancy, did all honour him. He caused Widwall *alias* Edwall, king of Wales, to pay him, in name of tribute, three hundred Wolues yeerely (or rather their skins) which thing when he had performed for the space of three yeeres, the fourth yeere was none there to be found.

Alfridus Beuerlacensis.

Marianus.

King Edgar prepared a Nauy (as diuers authours haue written) of three thousand and fiue hundred shippes, of the which after Castri euery yeere, one thousand two hundred hee appointed to come into the East part of the Realme: one thousand two hundred, into the West parts, and one thousand two hundred into the North parts: This number of ships being incredible, peraduenture one Author following another, the first being deceiued by mistaking the same, the rest haue erred: but Will. Thorne a Monke of S. Augustines by Canterbury, setteth downe the whole number of shippes to be 300. and this hath a more likelihood of truth. But to the matter, with the East Nauy he sayled into the West, and sending that backe, hee would saile with the West Nauy into the North, and that being sent back, with the North Nauy he would saile into the East parts; and after this sort, hee vsed to saile round about the whole Iland euery Summer, by the which doing, he prouided for the defence of his kingdome against strangers, and practised himselfe and his people in exercises of warre.

In the Winter season, and spring of the yere, he trauelled through all the parts of his Realme, diligently searching how the lawes and statutes were obserued by the Lords, and men of greatest authority, lest the poore should be oppressed by the mighty and rich men.

Thus Edgar, notwithstanding his manifold vertues before rehearsed, was reported (saith W. Malmesbury)

W. Malmesbury) to be a cruell Prince, and also giuen ouermuch to the lusts of the flesh, and for example, they say, that Edgar hearing tell, that Olgar, Earle of Deuonshire, had a daughter of passing beauty, named Alfred, hee commanded Ethelwold an Earle, and also his Secretary, to goe looke vpon her, and so to prouide, that if thee were according to the common bruited fame, shee mought be his wife. Which Ethelwold take his iourney, and found it to be true: whereupon (being himselfe taken with her loue) leauing his message from the King vndone, hee laboured to obtaine her to be his wife: and returning to the King, reported the Damosell to be such a one as pasted not the common beauty of women, and therefore not meete for so great a Paiestly as hee: So that after, when the King had set his loue vpon another, Ethelwold obtained the said Damosell in marriage, to his owne destruction: for when the fame of her passing beauty was spred throw the whole Realme, the King desiring to see her, and by deceit to deceiue the deceiuer, shewing a great countenance to the Earle, appointed a day to goe looke on the woman, which he heard so much commended.

The Earle being in great heauinesse, went before to his wife, and desired her that shee would, for the safegard of his life, disfigure her selfe with some homely apparrell, and otherwise, as the night: but the breaking promise with her wretched husband, dressed her selfe in a glasse, as curiously as shee mought, omitting nothing that mought tempt the King, and prouoke his desire: and according to her meaning it came to passe; for the King no sooner saw her, but hee was taken with her loue, and to obtaine his purpose the sooner, shewing a good countenance to the Earle, he called him to go with him to hunt in the wood of Warwell, where hee shot him throw with an arrow, into the which place, a bastard sonne of the dead Earle came, euen as the deede was done, whom the King asked, how he liked such hunting, who (as men say) made this answer, I like it well, me Lord, that liketh you: with which saying, he so appeased the Kings angrie minde, that the King neuer loued any man better then him, and made amends to the sonne for the cruell act against his father. The King tooke Lady Alfred to wife, and thee builded an house of Nunnes in the same place where her first husband Ethelwold was slaine. Warwell founded.

963. Ethelwald, Bishop of Winchester, in a great famine, solo away all the sacred Vessels of his Church for to relieue the almost starued people: saying, that there was no reason, that the senselesse Temples of God should abound in riches, and liuely Temples of the holy Ghost lacke it. Bishop of Winchester his saying.

The yeere 969. King Edgar gaue commandement to Dunstane, Archbishop of Canterbury, Ethelwold, Bishop of Winchester, and Oswold Bishop of Worcester, that expelling secular Priests out of the great Monasteries, builded throw Mercia, they should place Monks, and to that effect hee made the like Oration, as followeth. Wherefore Ouadlensis.

Because our Lord hath magnified his mercy to worke with vs: it is meete (most reuerend fathers) that with worthy workes we answer his innumerable benefits: for neyther by our owne Sword possesse wee the earth, and our owne arme hath not saued vs, but his right hand, and his holy arme; for that he hath beene pleased with vs: meete therefore it is, that wee submit both our selues and our soules to him, that hath put all things vnder our feete; and that wee diligently labour, that they, whom he hath made subiect vnto vs, may be made subiect vnto his Lawes. And truly it is my part to rule the Laity, with the Law of equity, to doe iust iudgement betwixt man and his neighbours, to punish Church-robbers, to repaire rebels, to deliuer the weake from the hands of his Stronger: the poore and needy from them that spoyle them. And it also belongeth to my care, to haue consideration to the health, quietnesse, or peace of the Ministers of the Church, the Flocke of Monkes, the companies of Virgins, and to prouide the things needfull for them. The examining of whole manners belongeth vnto you, if they liue chastly, if they behaue themselues honestly towards them which be abroad, if in diuine service they be carefull, if in teaching the people diligent, if in feeding sober, if moderate in apparrell, if in iudgement they be discrete: If you had cured these things by prudent scrutinie (by your licence I speake, O reuerend fathers) such horrible and abominable things of the Clerkes had not come to our eares. I omit to speake, that their crowne is not large, nor their rounding conuenient, but want connelle in apparell, insolence in behauiour, filthinelle in words, doe bewray the madnesse of the inward man. Furthermore, how great negligence is there in the diuines, when in the holy digits, they will scarce bouthsafe to be present: when at the holy solemnities of the diuine service, they seeme to be gathered together, to play and to laugh, rather then to sing. Oration of Edgar.

I will that which good men lament, and euill men laugh at, I will speake with sorrow (if so be it may be spoken) how they flow in banquetings, in drunkennelle, in chambering and wantonnelle, that now Clerkes houses may bee thought to be bythell houses of harlots, and an assembly of players. There is dice, there is dancing and singing, there is watching till midnight, with crying and howling. Thus the patrimony of Kings, the almes of Princes, yea, (and that is more) the price of that precious bloud is ouerthrowne. Haue our fathers therefore, for this purpole, emptied their treasures? for this intent haue the Kings elchets by withdrawing of many reuenues beene giuen? hath the kings bountifulnelle giuen lands and possessions to Chriftian Churches for this end? that Clerkes harlots should be pampered with delicious dainties, that riotous guests may bee prepared for, that Hounds and Hawkes, and such like topes may be gotten? Of this the soldiers cry out, the common people murmure, the fiddlers and scoffers sing and dance, and you regard it not; you spare it, you dissemble it?

Where

Where is the sword of Leuis, and zeale of Symeon, which killed the circumcised Sichimites, being the figure of them that defile the Church of Christ, with polluted acts, abusing Iacobs daughter as a harlot? Where is the spirit of Moses, that spared not his brothold Kinsfolke, worshipping the head of the Calfe? Where is the dagger of Phinies the Priest, who killing him that played the harlot with the Madianite, with this holy emulation pacified Gods wrath? Where is the spirit of Peter, by whose power couetousnes is detected, and simoniacall hereste condemned: Endeauour ye vnitary. O ye Priests in God: It is time to rise against them that haue broken the law of God. I haue Constantines, you haue Peters sword in your hands, let vs ioyne right hands, let vs couple sword to sword, that the Leapers may be cast out of the Church, that the hallowed place of our Lord may be purged, and the sonnes of Leuie may minister in the Church, who said to his father and mother, I know you not, and to his brethren, I am ignorant of you. God is carefully I beseech you, least it repent vs to haue done that we haue done, and to haue giuen that we haue giuen, if we shall see that not to be spent in Gods seruice, but on the vnrighteousnesse of most wicked men, through bapanished liberty. Let the reliques of holy Saints, which they scorne, and the reuerend Altars before which they rage, moue you. Let the marueilous deuotion of our ancestors moue you, whose Almes the Clearkes fury deuleth.

My great grandfathers father Ethelwolfus (as you know) gaue the tenth part of all his Lands to Churches and Abbeyes: my great grand-father Alfred of holy memory, thought not meete to spare his treasures, his patrimony, no costs, nor reuenewes that he might enrich the Church: my grandfather, the old Edward, how much he gaue into the Churches, your fatherhed is not ignorant. It becommeth you to haue in remembrance, with what guifts my Father and Vncle enriched Christs Altar. O Dunstane, father of Fathers, behold, I pray you, the eyes of my father shining on thee, from the bright coast of Heauen, heare his complaining words with a certain pitie thundering in thine eares. Thou O my father Dunstane! Thou gauest me wholesome counsell to build Abbeyes and Churches, thou wast my helper and sellow worker in all things. Thee I elected as a shepheard, father and Bishop of my soule, and képer of my manners, when did I not obey thee? What treasure did I preferre before thy counsels? What possessions despised I not, thou commanding me? If thou thoughtest meet to giue any thing to the poore, I was ready. If thou judgest any thing to be giuen to Churches, I deserred not. If thou complainedst any thing to be wanting to Monkes or Clearkes, I supplyed. Thou saidst that Almes was euerlasting, and none to be more fruitfull than that which was giuen to Abbeyes and Churches, wherewith Gods seruants may be sustained, and what remaineth may be giuen to the poore.

O precious Almes, worthy price of the soule! O wholsome remedy for our sinnes! Which from the Priests Lemman, linketh in the little skinne of a strange mouse, which adorneth her little eares, which garnisheth her small fingers, which trusseth vp her delicate body in silke and purple. Behold O Father, the fruits of mine Almes, and the effect of thy promise. What wilt thou answer to this complaint? I know, when thou doest see a theefe, thou runnest not with him, neyther hast thou put thy portion with adulterers. Thou hast rebuked, thou hast intreated, and blamed them, words are contemned, thou must come to stripes, and thou shalt not want the Kings authority. Thou hast here with thee the venerable Father Ethelwold Bysthop of Winchester. Thou hast the Reuerend Prelate of Worcester Oswald: to you I commit this businesse, that both by Bishoply censure, and kingly authority, filthy liuers may bee cast out of the Church, and they that liue in order brought in.

King Edgar, hauing restored and new founded sixty seauen Monasteries, which before his time had beene destroyed by the Danes, and other Pagans, and intending to continue that his intent till the number of fifty were accomplished, he confirmed the Monasterie of Worcester with Oswald then Bishop of Worcester, by the Kings consent, had enlarged, and made it the Cathedrall Church of that shire.

Ethelwold Bishop of Winchester, renewed the Monasterie of Elie, and Edgare confirmed his foundation, with great priuiledges, as by his Charter may appeare. Liber. Ely.

More concerning the state of the Church of England in thole dayes, may appeare by the words of Edgare in his Charter to the Abbey of Malmesbury, which are to this effect: All the Monasteries in my Realme, to the outward sight are nothing but wormeeaten, and rotten timber and bordes: and that worse is: within they are almost empty and voyde of diuine service. W. Malmesb. Church of England, the date thereof.

The Danes and all other people in England, hauing vsed the vice of great drinking. The King therefore by counsell of Dunstane, put downe many alehouses, and would suffer but one in a village or towne, except it were a great Boyough: he ordained certaine cups with pins or nailes, and made a Law, that whosoeuer dranke past that marke, at one draught, should forfeit a certaine paine. Against quaffing. Lawe against drunkards.

Alwinus Alderman, Earle of East Angle, kinsman to K. Edgar, founded the Abbey of Ramsey: King Edgar confirming the same on Christmas day, the yeere of our Lord God, 969. hundred seauentie, and foure, in the presence of all the Nobilitie. The same yeere was an Earthquake through all England. Ramsey founded. Ex chartario.

Edgar being at Chester, entred the River of Dee, he take the rule of the helme, and caused eight Kings to row him into S. Johns Church, and from thence vnto his Pallace, in token that he was Lord and King of so many Prouinces. Eight Kings rowed King Edgar.

The names of the eight Kings were, Kinoch King of the Scots, Malcoline of Cumberland, Macone King of Man, and of many Iles, Dufnall King of Demecia or Southwales, Siterth and Huwall Kings of Wales, Iames King of Florilegus. Iohn Pike. Eulegium. W. Malmesb. Alfredus Beuerlc.

of Chalgraue, and Iskill of Westmerland. King Edgar raigned xvj. yeares, and was buried at Glastenbury.

Ley his first wife Egelfleade(as some doe write) or by a religious votaris, as some other doe write, he had issue Edward surnamed the Martyr, who succeeded after his Father. Of his wife Elfrith, daughter to Ordgarus, Duke of Deuonshire, he receiued another sonne named Ethelred, and a daughter named Wolfrith.

975. William of Malmesb. lib. 2. de Reg. Anglorum. Ran. Higden. lib. 5. cap. 19. Ro. Cicestrens. Flores Historiarum.

EDward the sonne of Edgar, was crowned at Kingstone, by the hands of Dunstane Archbishop of Canterbury, and Oswald Archbishop of Yorke. This man might well be compared to his Father for his modesty and gentlenesse, so that he was worthily fauoured of all men, except only of his step mother, and other of her alliance, which euer bare a grudge against him, for so much as she desired to haue the gouernance of the Realme for her owne sonne Ethelred.

The king murthered.

This Edward while he was hunting in a Forrest (by chance) lost his company, and rode in the Ile of Porbecke, where, by counsell of his Stepmother Elfrede, he was traiterously murthered as he sate on his horse, when he had raigned 3. yeares. He was buried at Warham, and after at Shaftesbury. Elphred did after that take great penance, and builded two Monasteries of Nunnes, Almesbury and Warwell: in which Warwell she after lined a solitary life, till she dyed.

Warwell and Almesbury Monasteries built.

978 W. Malmesb. Speculum hist. Ri. Cirencest.

ETheldred commonly called Unready, the sonne of king Edgar, by his second wife Elfored, was crowned at Kingstone. But because he came to the kingdome by wicked meanes, and by killing his Brother, he could neuer get the good will of the people, who had conceiued an ill opinion of him: of this arose ciuill Warres within the Realme, and often diuision and discords, as well of the Nobles, as of the common sort.

In the yere 982. a great part of the City of London was burnt, which City at this time had most building from Aldgate toward Westminster, and little or none where the heart of the Citie is now, except in diuers places was housing, that stood without order: so that many Cities as Canterbury, Yorke, and other in England, passed London in building: but after the conquest it increased, and now passeth all other.

988. Dunstane Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and was buried at Canterbury. Siricus Bishop of Saroun succeeded.

A disease not knowne in England in time past, to wit, feuers of men, with the fire, and murreine of Cattell killed many.

Asferus Bishop of Cattell and Wynne Bishop of Cicester.

In the yere 994. King Ethelred erected 2 bishops sea at Cicester.

The same yeare, Anlafe King of the Northwales, and Sweyne King of the Danes on the day of the nativity of our Lord, in yblis. Galleis came vp to London, which they attempted to breake into, and to set on fire: but they were repulsed, not without their great detriment and losse by the Citizens, whereupon they being driuen with fury, leauing London, set vpon Eastker & Kent, by the Sea coasts burnt townes, and wasted the fields, without respect of sore or age killed all, and wasted with fire and sword, all what they may not carry away. At length being pacified with a tribute of 16000. pounds departed to their Ships, and wintered at Southampton.

Bishops of Durham.

In the yere 995. A Comet appeared. The Bishoprick of Lindisfer or Holy Iland, was removed to Durham: and there Aldwine the Bishop first builded a small Oratory of wythen wands or hurdles, where y body of Cuthbert rested for a time, till a larger Church were builded.

Ulfrune Hampton.

In the yere 996. the Lady Ulfrune widow, sometime wife to Athelme Duke of Northhampton, obtained licence of King Ethelred to giue land to the Church which he had founded at Hampton in Staffordshire, whereby the said towne of Hampton take the addition of Ulfrune and so was called Ulfrunehampton.

Here followeth a briefe discourse of the latter kind of *Amazones*, whose beginning and ending, I haue here inserted, as a matter of worthy note.

The historie of Libussa and Valasque with her Army of Bodyces.

CRocus alias Cracus, the second Duke or Prince of Bohemya had issue, three daughters. Brela the eldest was skilfull in Philicke, and in the vertue of hearbes. Therba the second, was a cunning Enchantresse, addicted vnto spels and charmes, but Libussa was youngest, and obtained the sole gouernment, for the was of an excellent feature, wit, and eloquence well studyed in Morall Philosophy, and affected vnto vertue, and was reputed as a learned famous Sibilla. She was kind and peaceable, like to her father, and ministred iustice vnto all sorts of people very indifferently. All which notwithstanding, it hapned, that 2. chiefe Citizens fell at strife about possessions, and after Libussa had fully and equally heard the cause pleaded before her, she gaue sentence with the payer, whereat the other being vexed, and enraged became factious instantly, and stirred vp great dissention amongst all sorts of people, especially amongst the vulgar, a monster of many heades, who are neuer liable in any goodnesse, so as they with one consent beganne to despise and renounce her gouernment, and with great exclamations sayd, it was a shame for men to be gouerned and iudged by a woman, especially so ancient, noble and warlike a Nation as themselues. This turbulent newes greatly amazed & troubled Libussa, yet vpō hope so appease their vproare, & to see if the multitude would

would fall perfect in their suddaine determination: she came the next day into the Market-place, where the people were assembled to know her resolution, crying with lowd voices, they would no longer be gouerned by a woman, and her womanish Councell, but forthwith they would haue a man, to be their Lord and gouernor, such a one as should goe before them to battell like hardiall Martialians, and that if perseuering the whith not agree with them in the sing such a one, then would they themselues elect such a one for their purpose. Whereby their hart perceiued, that their late new deuise was no happy change, or abated: she made a very wise, eloquent oration, and amongst other things, she said, O ye Bohemians, you all know right well, that but a this day I haue taught things followed my Fathers steps, and continued your peaceable and kinde Lady, I neuer wronged nor offended any of you, neyther oppressed you, nor tooke aught from you iniuriously, neyther hath my gouernment bin like a spiderresse, but as a gracious mother, and yet you are not pleased therewith, for the cause I make no wonder, sith therein you doe but imitate all other men who neuer rest long contented with any one thing, being euermore apt and ready to vary, and with for a merciful and iust ruler, then hauing obtained such a one, to yeld him their seruice and due obedience: and as for the power and commaund which now remaines in me, I freely and willingly resigne it into your hands, and because your whole desire is, to haue a man Prince to raigne ouer you, I am well pleased it shall be so, therefore in election of your new Prince, I onely wish you to take here this my white hazle, saddle and bridle him, and from henceforth let him be ten taro ponder plaine where he, as his owne liberty, may take which way himselfe liketh, either one way or other without guide or interruption, keeping all men aloofe from him and to follow after him a farre off, vntill you that se him stay and stand still before a man, whom you shall se to sate vpon an yron table, and that man before whom he shall so stand, him haue I chosen to be my husband and your Prince. This speech highly pleased the people, and forthwith they did as she appointed, and hauing brought the hazle into the plaine field, they freely let him take what course he would, then the hazle went ten miles in length, vnto the River Byelye, and there stood still before a Clowne called Prymislaus. When y Bohemians, as well the nobles as vulgar, saw the hazle stand still, they all raune hastily thither, and obserued the strange signes of joy which the hazle made vnto the Peasant, then they with great admiration drew neere vnto him, and said, God which hath made thee and ordayned thee to be our Prince, saue thee, and now forsake thy plough, oxen and husbandrie, and get vpon this goodly steed, and goe now along with vs, for Libussa hath chosen thee for her husband, and the Bohemians doe accept thee for their Prince. Prymislaus, perceiuing he was to goe before Libussa, prepared himselfe as if he had bin to trauell a long iourney: thereupon he tooke his yron Gomer, and turned the bottome vpwards, whereupon he laid his bread and cheese, and did eate before them, which was vnto them a cleare signe, and full satisfaction of what Libussa foretold them when she said, you shall see him eating vpon an yron Table, whom they beheld with great admirament, vntill he left eating, then they set him vpon the white horse and gaue him a arrow in his hand, and as they rode, they asked him many questions, and one was, why he brought his wooden Shoes or clampers with him, he answered he would haue them kept in the Castle of Visigrade, for a memorial vnto his posterity to suppresse their pride and cause them know from whom they were descended, least they should forget their Originall: he came to Visigrade and was received into the Citty with great honour and fauour of the people, who with great pompe presented him with the Crowne and Scepter, and was married vnto Libussa, who caused all Artificers to present their workes before him that he might giue euery faculty a proper name. Within short space after, he builded walls and bulwarkes about the City of Prague, he made many good lawes, and lined a long time very peaceably whereby the people became very rich. Libussa builded a Castle neere the River Alby wherein she was buried: after her death the Country was wholly gouerned by Prymislaus and his Counsell of men, for in the dayes of Libussa, the wisest and greatest part of the privy Councell consisted of women, but with her death the authoritie of women ceased, who vntill then did what they lusted, but were now many wayes restrained: whereupon Valasque a lustie gallant Lady of wondrous Amazonian courage, not being able to endure the sodaine alteration in gouernment and womens declination, very roserily assembled most of the chiefe women of the country, vnto whom amongst other things she said, deare Sisters we haue lost our louing kinde Lady and mistresse, she that euer kept and feed vs from the yoke and bondage of men and would neuer suffer vs to be subiect vnto their slauery, so as she and we loyntly together held the Raines of gouernment in our hands, as if we had bin Quenes, see now, Oh now se how it behoueth you to looke about, least we and our sers remaine euer oppressed by the tyranny of the Male gouernment, and we and our heires become slaues, to slaues, vnlesse by our owne proper vertue, and prouidence, we regaine the sweetnesse of our former soueraignitie, now therefore if your resolute and vndaunted spirites consort with mine, we will recouer our former happines. I as you all know, was secretary vnto Libussa, and knew all that she knew. I am not ignorant of the charmes, and spells of her Sister Therba, nor lesse instructed in the vertue of hearbs, then was her Sister Brela, and I dare affirme without bunting, that the knowledge, which these thre famous Sisters had in those artes, I alone haue obtained. If therefore for the ether freeing of our selues, and our Sers, you will now lend me your strong hands, and make me your generall, such is our true worthy and valour, that I doe and dare assure you, &

This Gomer was his meate and table.

Libussa after her own name.

un from the highest to the lowest, you shall haue the soueraignty ouer men. Vnto this, they all instantly consented, and to each hearts, & hands, to effect their will, and to ioyne together, as is vsed in such conspiracies. About this time Prymislaus dreamed, that a Virgin gaue him blood to drinke, whereat he was much troubled and sought to shun the ensuing danger. Whereupon he assembled his chiefe Counsellors, and willed forthwith, a course to be taken, to represse the great exercise, and liberty of women, for at this time, maydes and wiues vsed to ride, run at Tilt, shote, Pike, cast Darts, vse slings, and all other exercises proper to men, a thing which Prymislaus held, altogether vnbecomming their Sore, and dangerous to his estate. At this time, not in foure hundreth yeeres after, there was no vse, nor knowledge of Guns. But his noblemen scoffed at him, and held his feare ridiculous, and would not be perswaded, that women could either haue skill, or courage, to contriue and performe any thing, preiudicial to men, and therewithall commended their actiuitie, and agilitie. But Valasque ceased neyther night, nor day, to animate the conspirators ouer whom he preuailed much, with drinkes, spells, and charmes, against the loue of men, and being assembled into an innumerable company of maried and vnmaried women, not farre from Prague, who according to her appointed time, & watchword, entred fiercely into armes, and without fauour or mercy, slew all the male kind which they could find, both father, brother, husband, and children, old, and young in fields and villages. This their first eruption was performed by night, when men were ouercome with wine and sleepe. Then they went neere Prague, & hauing put certaine squadrons to flight, which pursued them to punish them for this monstrous inhumaine act, they boldly encamped before Visigrade, wherein was Prymislaus, and besieged it, but not being able to take the Castle they withdrew into a Mountaine exceeding strong by nature, and there builded themselues a Castle, which they called Dyevizo, which is to say in their language, a place of virgins: their late impious fact, became odious to all the Country, as well for the murders they had done as fearing they would attempt the like, & come vpon them againe vnawares. Then the people offered their liues and seruice vnto Prymislaus, to giue battell vnto these new bloody Amazones, vnto whom he answered, that God warned him to the contrary, and that all those should perish, which at this time attempted any harme against those women: this he spake out of his Magicall diuination, which they neither beleeued, nor obeyed, but rashly without pause, assembled themselues, and raised a very mighty host and besieged Valasque in Dyevizo, who when shee beheld them and their great strength, remained euery way as couragious, cheerfull, and resolute, as at any time before, for it was her custome to be least afraid in most apparant danger, then she animated her company that they should not abate one iot of their setled determination, assuring them the victory was theirs already, and that this huge host of Enemies which encamped before them, was wholly for their goods, because in them consisted the greatest strength and malice of their enemies, whom she infinitly would deliuer into their hands, being assuredly possest of the conquest, wishing them not to take it for any wonder or strange matter to see men subdued by women: for the Amazones of Asia, made many Nations tributary vnto them, gaue siege and battell vnto Troy, ouerthrew Hercules and Theseus: he therefore courageous and let these pestilents suffer to proue that women want neither strength, wit, nor boldnes to attaine their desires. This, and much more she spake vnto her lustie army, which so preuailed, that with one consent, rage and violence, with strength of their Castle, and with wonderous skill and valour assailed their enemies, which lay here, and there, strange, great, and terrible were the rumors, stirres, and clamours in the battell, in the end when men were put to flight, whom the women pursued as eagerly, where few escaped, but such as had lucky horses. These new Amazones, in pursuite of their enemies got great spoiles, and many gallant horses which they conuayed into secure places; with this to ecge the women became most couragious and proud, and the men waxed as disgracefull, fearful, and desperate. The chiefe women in this battell, were Malada, Nodea, Swatacyn, Volasta, Radga, Zastana and Trista. The Queene with her owne hands slew seauen other enemies. She distributed of the spoyle vnto euery one equally according to their deserts, & vnto the foresayd seauen, there were giuen chaines and Wastelets and from this time they reputed their Queene, as a Goddesse. The Bohemians with this ouerthrow were so dismayed that they durst not at any time openly attempt to molest the Amazons and therewithall their former feare increased as well touching those women, which were in hostility against them, as the iust cause of feare, and iealousie which they had of the small number of women, which yet remained with them in their Cities, became no man held himselfe secure, eyther of mother, sister, wife, or daughter. The bloudious Amazones with vnknowne fury, forraged, robbed, spoild, & bawcked all that they could come by, appertaining to men, in which space, all the premisses notwithstanding, when they had ruinated all Villages, and open habitations, and saw they could not preuaile vpon lofty walls, and well peopled Cities, then they practised all dissembling, and treacherous practises, sometimes by sending amorous Letters vnto yong noblemen, and others of note, vnto whom they protested a hatred of their owne dissolute liues and their gouernesse, and their earnest desire in humaine right to reduce and suppresse the intollerable pride of Valasque, beseeching them to come with their friends and traine into the woods: others sent messengers and tokens, which very many of your mad brained yong men accepted and beleeued, for good sooth, being therewithall enamored of their beauties, wit, and valour, went into the Woods, where there fained loues inticed them into caues, vaults, and thickets

kets hauing their ambuscadoes ready, sodainly set vpon them, and slew them: others obserued the most vsuall place where the Bohemians hunted, and there presented themselues with shew of great desire of their familiar company, inticing them into the rockes, where they perished: others in the dawning of the day caused themselues to be bound to trees as being malefactors condemned to death, or torture, who when they espied the hunters, would pittifully cry, and call vnto them for rescue, weeping, and lamenting their owne danger, with curling, and raying bitterly against Valasque, and with great groanes and sighes, intreat them to alight from their horses to vnty their bonds, which some credited, and did so as they desired. Valasque lying in ambush came forth and slew them all, because none should go back to tell newes, or discour, such was the subtilty of these women, that the Bohemians thought the Diuell to be their chiefe counsellor. These women liued most by beastes, and birds, and wilde fruit, as Acornes, Nuts, wildings, wilde honey &c. like as did the ancient Bohemians, who refused to dwell in Poland, because it was an open plaine Country, whereof it taketh the name, & chose to dwell in Bohemia, because it is full & round beset with goodly woods, groues, and thickets. And albeit these women had got the chiefe command of Bohemia, yet necessity constrained them to conuerse with men, least they should sodainely end & come to naught, whereupon for the setling of their common wealth, it was agreed that they should take Husbands according to time and season, and ordained a law, that all maiden children which should be borne of them, should be brought vp with great care and diligence, and that euery man childe which should be borne of them, should haue his right eye pluckt out, and his middle finger cut off, because comming to mans estate, he should neither draw Bow, nor manage weapon. This law for their time was as duly obserued of women, as abhorred of men, thus they afflicted the Bohemians seuen yeares together, and brought them tributary, and whosoeuer refused to yeeld them tribute, were like birdes in cages, not daring to put their heads out of their Citie gates, by meanes whereof, all villages for the most part perished and tillage ceased, and at last their fell an extreame famine which oppressed the Bohemians vnnaturally in all parts, so as they were constrained eyther to die by hunger, or to submit themselues wholly to the bondage and obedience of women. Whereupon the multitude in generall not being any way able to indure the cruelty of famine, with griefe and clamour came to the Duke manifesting their intollerable misery, and boldly accused him of basenes and cowardize, that durst not goe forth to fight with women, crying they would rather forsake him & yeeld to them their obedience, then dye of that incurable desperate disease, threatning him that he wanted courage, and that if he would not defend them they would chuse another. Prymislaus seeing himselfe dangerously beset with his enemies, and tormented by his friends with faire speeches, exhortations and perswasions, besought them, to haue patience for a few dayes and he would free them from danger of their enemies, and all other greuances, with which speech they were pacified expecting the euent.

Prymislaus who did all things by his wonted magicall obseruation, in the meane space sent Letters vnto Valasque, protesting himselfe to be innocent of whatsoeuer had bene done against them from the first to the last, and that all damages & vnkindnesses whatsoeuer, which they had any way sustained, was absolutely done by the headstrong Barons, and disordered multitude without his knowledge or consent, whose miseries by their proper merits was sufficiently falne vpon them, and that if his counsell or command might haue preuailed, they should neuer haue beene vexed or moued to warre, and that her euer (as shee well deserued) respected her as his daughter, and would doe so still without bearing her any ill or hatred for aspiring to soueraignty, for it belonged vnto her, because she was the true disciple of his wife Libussa, and sith for seauen yeares space by her courage and vertue, she had swaped ouer Bohemia, hee now seeing himselfe aged and vnapt to gouerne the Subiects, and also hauing but one Sonne left of three, who was not the chiefe of his age, no way fit to gouerne, if therefore it would please her to come to Visigrade, he would deliuer the Castle into her hands, and so should all Bohemia be at her dispose, whereof shee need not doubt or feare, hauing her chiefe power to weare the Citie, and that he held it his duty to resigne his Scepter to a woman, because from a woman he received it. This politique fained Letter, with the fawning Messenger, found great fauour with Valasque, by whose meanes her selfe and followers, were all ouerthrown by the measure of their owne practise, which they vsed vnto others. Valasque rashly without pause, sends a squadron before to possesse the Fort, who entred therein very peaceably, & the Duke feasted them in his Pallace, and whilst they fate eating and drinking, a certaine band of yong men armed, being secretly placed, rushed forth and slew them all. Then Prymislaus sent forth a very mighty host, which very speedily marched towards Dyevizo, whereof Valasque had intelligence, and of all that had happened, yet neuerthelesse she retaining still her wonted spirit, mounted vpon her little horse, crying Arme, Arme, bravely leading the rest to fight, darapued her Armies like an expert Generall, and from the first onset, all talke ceased, and blowes encreased: the Battels being ioyned, Valasque was slaine, fighting in the thickest throng of her enemies, the rest enraged seeing their Queene slaine, became more fierce, not so much in hope of victory, as for reuenge, fought wonderous valiantly, each side performed great feats of armes. This battel was extreame cruell and doubtfull, one while the one side had the better hand, and anone the other side preuailed, but in the end the greatest slaughter fell vpon the Amazones, who made retreate, hoping to returne to their Castle from whence

they

Lady betrayeth Land in manner, louebying dissembled compassion hauing slaughter vpon Valasque. Why it is called.

It this Words seem spilt more blood then wine.

they came, but could not hauing so eagerly pursued their beast bodies couered the field. Their enemies tooke their Castle, shut the gates, and set them all in peeces that they found therein, and from that time the raigne of women ceased, and the Bohemians were freed from womens tyranny, and remained in their former estate. This was atchieued by the young men of Bohemia. Valasca remained vnburied, and became food for Beasts and Birds, who for her high and rare perfections, deserues to be recorded amongst the Ladies of renowme. The Bohemians are a very ancient noble family, descended of the Sclauonians. The aforenamed Cracus founded the chiefe Citie in Poland, and called it Cracaw, after his owne name, which of some is called Craco, but in what yeere is diuersly set downe by sundry Authors. Pyus Secundus, Nauclerus and Sebastian Munster, indifferently accord that Prage was fortified about the yeare 935. others say in the yeare 1121. whose opinion at first I followed in my abridgment. There were eight Dukes of Bohemia heathens, Borsolyus and his wife Lunilya were the first Christian Princes of Bohemia, & were Baptized by Methodius, Archbishop of Moravia. Radislaus the 25. Duke was by consent of the Emperour Henry the fourth, at an assembly at Magontia created King of Bohemia, in the yeare of our Redemption as testifieth, Pyus Secundus, Nauclerus and Munster, 1086. Diuers other Authors of lesse credit say, about a hundred yeares after. Swatacopus was King of Moravia when Methodius was Archbishop, he was the first Christian King thereof, and was the last King of Moravia: the Bohemians, Hungarians, and Polonians did him homage, but was seppast for refusing to pay tribute to Rome, after he had long reigned triumphantly: there hath beene many auncient famous Kings of Morauia.

Cracus founded Cracow.

Methodius baptized Bohemians.

Methodius.

Ottho King of Bohemia.

Theobald King of Moravia baptized.

Archbishop no longer Primate.

In the yeare 1002. King Ethelred caused all the Danes in England to be slaine vpon the day of Saint Brice. The same yeare Ulricus Spore founded a Monasterie at Burton vpon Trent. King Ethelred confirmed this foundation in these words: 1004. *Indictione 2. horum testimonio suppositum quorum nomina inferius annotata cernuntur.*

The Danes massacred.

Burton vpon Trent.

Ego Ethelred rex Anglorum, hoc donum perpetuam diuini laboris.

Ego Ethelstan filius regis.
Ego Eughelph filius regis.
Ego Edmund filius regis.
Ego Alured filius regis.
Ego Aluing filius regis.
Ego Aluger filius regis.

xii. Archbishops and Bishops, vij. Abbots, vij. Dukes, &c.

In the yeare 1003. Swaine King of Denmarke, with a great armie inuaded England with fire and sworde: 1004. they fought a great battell at Sherstead against Vlekettell Earle of East Anglia.

In the yeare 1005. The vnciuill Edrike of Streon, had the noble Duke Alfhelmus to a banquet at Scrobesbury, from whence he had him out to hunt, where a seruant Butcher of Shrewsbury named Goodwin Forstard, whom Edrike long before had hyred, leapt out of a place where he had laine in waite for him, and wickedly slew Alfhelmus. And within a while after, his sonnes, Wulfeagus, and Wegare, by commandement of the King Etheldred at Cotham where the Court then lay, had their eyes put out.

Edrike of Streon Duke of Mercia and his treacheries.

In the yeare 1007. King Ethelred made Edrike of Streaton, Duke of Mercia, and gaue to him his daughter Edina to wife. This Edrike the sonne of Egelricus, was but a man of low liuinged, to whom nenertheleese, his eloquent tongue had purchased riches and nobilitie: why he was of wit, eloquent of speech, and passed all men in those dayes in enuie, filthood, pride, and crueltie, he had to his brethren Brictricus, Alfricus, Beda, Agelricus, Agelwardus, Agelmarus, father to Godwine Duke of West Saxons.

Brictricus, Alfricus, Beda, Agelricus, Agelwardus, Agelmarus, Godwine.

In the yeare 1009. Swaine King of Denmark with the Danes, fought a great battell against Vlekettell at Reagemore.

In the yeare 1010. The Armie of Danes march through the wood called Cilltron to Oxford, which towne they burnt & destroyed. Then marching about into East Angle, spoyled that Country, burnt Thetford, Cambridge. Then they spoyled the shires of Hartford, Buckingham, and Bedford. Then they wasted Southamptonshire, Wiltshire, &c. The Danes hauing spoyled the East Angles as is afore shewed, Ailwine Bishop of Helmham, brought the body of S. Edmond from Bedrelsworth through Cassiter, ouer Stratford bridge, and so to London in at Criplegate, (a place so called of Cripples begging there) at which gate (as it is said) the body entring, miracles were wrought, as, some of the lame to goe vpright praising God. The body of King Edmund rested for the space of three yeares in the parish Church of S. Gregory, adioyning vnto the Cathedrall Church of S. Paul, from whence it was conueyed backe againe to Stapleford in Cassiter, and so to Bedrelsworth, now called Bery in Suffolke, where Bishop Ailwine builded for him a new Church.

The Danes spoile East Anglia.

In 1011. East Angle, East Saxon, Middlesex, Bedfordshire, Hertfordshire, Cambridgeshire, halfe Huntingtonshire, and Northamptonshire: and on the South side of Thames, Kent, Surrey, Sussex, Southampton, Wiltshyre, and Barkeshyre, being destroyed with sword and fire, King Ethelred required Peace with the Danes, promising to them Tipends and tribute, to the which they faigningly assented, but yet they neuer left their cruelties: at length they besieged and destroyed Canterbury, and for that the Archbishop Elfegus would not yeeld to them, he was first imprisoned there, and after conueyed to Greenewich, and there stoned to death. Christs Church is spoyled and burnt: the Monks with all other men are teathed, ix. of euery x. being put to death, the tenth suffered to liue in misery: the number of them that were left aliue, was 4. Monks, & of lay people 800. so that the number slaine was thirty and five Monkes, and

The Danes destroyed Canterbury.

Cyprianus of the Danes in England.

1016.

and eight thousand of the law vowde.

In the yeare 1012. they tooke tribute of 48000. pounds, & at the last, after diuers murthrowes giuen to the men of this Iland, they possessed the same, and put King Ethelred to flight, contraryning him to liue in exile among the Normans.

This Ethelred had two wiues, Elfeigina an English woman, and Emma a Norman: of the first he had two children of noble farning of Edmund, who succeeded him in the kingdome, it were nothing to our purpose to speake: of the second that was Emma sister to Richard Duke of Normandie, there were borne two sonnes, to wit, Edward and Alured. And that I doe here (contrary to that is commonly used set Edward before Alured as elder brother, I am moued thereunto by no small authority, which I haue taken out of the Pifsotagrawers of that age, out of Gemeticensis, a most diligent writer of genealogies, and one other Author, who in his commentarie written in praise of Emma the Queene, affirmeth, that Edward was the elder brother, whom I doe the better beleeue, because it is not like, that he being the things with his eyes, should mistake the matter, especially writing to the Q. who was mother to them both.

Ethelred & Emma.

Gemeticensis.

Emma Queene.

Swanus in the meane time subdued all England, and the people for fear yeelded vnto him on euery side, ouer whom most cruelly he triumphed. But not long after he departed this life at Geinsburge, and left Canutus his Sonne successour in the kingdome.

The Danes spoile East Anglia.

Ethelred hearing that Swanus was dead, leauing in Normandie with Duke Richard his Sisters sonne, Emma his wife, and the children that he had by her, returned with all speed into England with Edmund his Sonne by his first wife, being then at mans estate, and by the trustinesse of his owne men, and the ayde of the Normans, moued warre against his enemie.

Canutus finding himselfe vnable to match with him, went into Denmarke, minding to returne hither immediately againe.

This yeare 1014. speed Iohannes de temporibus, he was vulgarly called of all nations Iohn of Tynes, because he had some and noted many great Alterations of time and State, he was an Squire to Charlemayne, he liued 361. yeares, of whom you may reade in diuers Authors, but namely in the Chronicle of Martinian. And in the yeare 1015. Albertus began to be Marquis of Brandenburgh, and to seperate his Marches from the Dukedome of Bauaria.

Ethelred being, contrary to his expectation, thus restored to his kingdome, shewed great crueltie vpon the Danes that remained in England, sparing neither man nor woman, young nor old. Therefore Canutus being very desirous to reuenge the same, prepared a new army, and came into England against Ethelred with all speed he could, raging wide and sle with fire and sworde. Ethelred in the meane season, whether by sickenesse or for sorrow, died, when he had raigned thirtie and eight yeares, and was buried in the North Ile of Saint Paules Church in London.

Edmund the sonne of Ethelred by his first wife, succeeded in the kingdome, who (whether it were for the great strength of his body, or for that he alwayes died to goe in armour) was surnamed Ironside.

Ironside.

Canute in the meane time, with all his naule came vp to London, and on the South side the Thames, he caused a trench to be cast, through the which he caused all his ships to be towed or drawne into the west side of the bridge. And after with a deepe and large trench and siege they compassed the Citie round about, and so shut vp all going in or out, of all manner of persons: and after attempted to haue won it by assault, but that would not serue, the citizens made so valiant resistance, that in the end, the enemies were repulsed farre from the walls: whereupon the siege for a time being dismissed, part of the armie being left to keepe the shippes, the other part went into the West Saxonie, with such speed, that they gaue no leisure vnto King Edmund to gather his armie, notwithstanding with that small army which he had, he boldly met with them in Dorsetshyre, and ioyning battell with them at Penham, neere to Gillingham he ouercame them, and put them to flight.

A trench cast, and ships towed about the South end of London bridge.

Gillingham forrest in Dorsetshyre. Penham.

After this, King Edmund determining manfully to giue battell vnto Canute with a greater hoste then before, met with his army at a place called Shereftane in Wiltshyre, where he in the forward fiercely fought, executing the office both of a hardy Souldier and baliant Captaine. But because Edrike of Straton, the ofe named Traytor, and the beloued Almaricus, and Algarus the sonne of Meaninus, which ought to haue ayded him with the Southamptonshyre men and Wiltshyre men, were of the Danes party, he was soze wearied, but per the first day of the battell, the fight was so extreame and bloudie, that both the armies were so wearied, they were not able longer to fight.

Edrike a traytor his example of a miserable pardoned.

The next day the King had ouerthrowne the Danes, but for Edrike of Straton, who being the Englishmen haue the better hand, he cut off the head of a certaine man named Osmerus, like to King Edmund in stature and hayre, and holding it vp, cryed out, that the Englishmen fought in vaine, and held vp the head, saying: Your maister King Edmund is dead, flie as fast as you can: which the Englishmen had no sooner heard, but they were ready to flie. But shortly after vnderstanding the King to be aliue, they take courage againe, and are carried vpon the Danes, and beate down a great number of them. After this about midnight, Canute commanded his people to depart with silence, and hasting toward London, went to their ships and shortly after besieged London. Duke Edrike sued for pardon, and obtained it.

King Edmund hasted toward London, and deliuered the Londoners from the siege, chasing the Danes to their ships.

About two dayes after, King Edmund passed ouer the Thames at Brentford, but passing the riuer many of his men were drowned. He increasing his army, hated towards the West Saxons. And the Danes against ge vp to Lon-

don, but could there profit nothing: wherefore going from thence with their nauy, they enter the riuer of Arepne, and passe into Mercia, there to fetch spories, slaying all they meete, and burning Townes, and so laden with spoyle returne into their shippes. After this their footemen passe in shippes into the ryuer of Medway, but their horsemen take prayes vpon the land.

Kent wasted by the Danes.

King Edmond againe passed the Riuer of Thames at Brentford, entred Kent, and fought with the Danes at Otford, and put them to flight: and if the false Edrike had not stayed him at Eaglesford or Aclesford, he had that day gotten the full victory. To be shorte, the first and last battell was at Aclleden in Essex, neere to Rochford, here he put his armie into three battels.

All driuen in Essex.

In the meane time Canute bringing his men into order, a foure battell was fought, and many slaine on both sides. But Edrike perceiuing the Danes to giue ground, he with his power fled, as he had promised to Canute, and so King Edmund and the English armie had the worst: there was slaine in that battell, Duke Alfrike, Duke Godwine, Vlketetell Duke of East Angles, Athelwardus Duke, sonne to the Duke of East Angles, Athelwine called Godsfriend, a Duke: and almost all the companie of the English Nobilitie. Cadocth also Bishop of Lincolne, sometimes Abbot of Ramsey, and Wolsey the Abbot, which were come together with their Cleargie to pray to God for the souldiers that fought, were slaine. And Edmund went almost alone on foote to Glouester, where he gathered a new force to set vpon his enemies, but Canute pursued him as he fled. And hauing prepared their armies, both the Kings themselues attempted to fight hand to hand for the right of the kingdome in the Ile of Olania, alias Oley in Seuerne. In the which combate, they both being wearied, fell to a couenant to diuide the same, so that the one halfe of the kingdome should bee Canutus, and the other halfe vnder Edmond, which Edmund not long after died at London slaine by the treason of Edrike of Stratton, and was buried at Glastenburie, leauing Edmund and Edward his children, very young.

Bishop Iohn and the Clergie slaine in prayer.

Combat for the kingdome.

England diuided.

1018. CAnutus the Dane, taking an occasion, because in the couenant that was concluded concerning the diuiding of the Realme, no assurance was made for the Children of Edmund, he challenged all England to himselfe alone by law as they call it, or growing to, which was a most easie thing for him to doe, because there was no man that durst erect himselfe as patron to defend the children right and title, and by this subtile and crafty interpretation of the couenant, the Dane got the Monarchie of England, and slew the brother of Edmund, and conueyed the children farre away out of England, least they should at any time bee brought againe and receiue their right. Some say, they were sent to a certaine man that was a Prince in Swethland, there to be dispatched out of the way: and that the Prince vnderstanding they were kings children, spared them, contrary to the credit and trust that was committed vnto him: which appeared to be true, in that the same forayne Lord kept and brought vppe the children honourably, the youngest of which, whose name was Edward, did afterwards marry Agatha, the daughter of Henry the fourth, Emperour of Rome, of whom he had many children, of which we shall speake hereafter. And the other, which was the elder brother, whose name was Edmund, dyed without children.

The Danes possessed all England.

The Kings children conueyed into Swethen.

Agatha the Emperours daughter, wife of Edward.

In the meane season Canutus, because he had no heyre that lawfully might succeed him in his kingdome (for Harold and Swaine were begotten of a Concubine) partly that he might establish in time to come, the kingdome that he had gotten vnto his owne kindred that came by lawfull succession; and partly that he might purchase to himselfe the friendship of the Englishmen, and of the Normans, procured to haue giuen him in marriage Emma, the widow of King Etheldred, who at that time was with Edward and Alured her sonnes in exile with duke Richard in Normandie, which marriage seemeth to be made euen by Gods prouidence, who had determined to restore the common wealth in England, whereby, as by the Law and Title of Recouery, and returne out of exile, the Monarchie of all England, which the Danes had taken from the Englishmen, and had possessed fiue and twentie yeares and more, did returne againe to the Englishmen that were the right heyres. For Emma concluded marriage with the Dane, vpon condition that the kingdome of England should remaine vnto none other but vnto the children that were begotten of her, if any of them did remaine aliue: by reason of this marriage, shortly after she did beare Canutus a sonne of his owne name, commonly called Hardycanutus.

Harold Swaine, & cubines of Eden.

Marriage made vpon condition.

This second name was giuen him because of his great courage, like as his brother Harold was named Harefoote, that is to say, Lightfoote, because of his notable swiftnesse of foote.

By this affinitie and alliance, the Danes became of the more strength and power. He kept the Englishmen in his seruice so long as he liued.

At the feast of Christmasse, King Canute being at London, commanded the traytor Edrike of Stratton to be put to death in his Palace closely for feare of tumult. Some say, he was tormented to death with firebrands and tiules: some say one way, some another, but dispatched he was: for the King feared, though his treason to be circumuented of his kingdome, as his predecessours had beene before, to wit, Ethelred and Edmund. His body he caused to be laid forth of the wall of the Citie, there to remaine vnburyed, to be scene of all men. With him also were slaine, Northman a Duke, son to Duke Leofwinus brother to Leofricus, and Athelwardus, the sonne of Duke Eglomore, and Brithricus sonne of Elfegus Prince of Denonshire: these dyed without fault (sayth mine Author.) The King made Leofrike Duke in his brothers place, and held him afterwards very deare. King Canute subdued the Scots, whereby he

Edrike of Stratton executed.

Florilegus.

Hunt.

King Canutus.

was King of England, Scotland, Denmarke and Norway.

After that, King Canutus went to Denmark, and so to Rome, and returned againe into England, where he kept good iustice all his life: and did many charitable deedes.

Edmundsbury founded by Canutus.

Canute founded a new the Monastery of St. Edmund at Bury, restoring to the same, the donation which Edmund King of the West Saxons had giuen to Saint Edmund the King and Martyr, who was their buriel: he displaced the secular Priests for their dissolute life, and placed there an Abbot with Monkes, he gaue to them many great limolades, and made a ditch ouerthwart Newmarket heath, it is now by some called, the Diuels ditch, to inclose the lands sometime belonging to King Edmund, and discharged the same of all tribute.

Peter de Leia. Marianus. Florilegus.

King Edward the Confessor, since that time, not onely confirmed the said liberties of Saint Edmund, but also gaue to Abbot Baldwine a Kampe, and authorized to haue an exchange of mynt, and to coyne in his Monasterie: And more to increase their franchise, gaue the Mannour of Mildenhall and the towne, with eight Hundreds to their possession (saith Iohn Lydgate) and true it is, that I finde in record, the franchise of Saint Edmundsbury, to containe these hundreds following, Blackbourne, Riselridge, Thedwardster, Babbar, Cosford, Thingo, Lackford, and Cruing halfe hundred. Thus much for the liberties of that Towne. Now Baldwine a Monke, of Saint Dyonis, phyllition to the said King Edward, being made Abbot of Bury in the space of nine and twenty yeres, erected a new Church of stone, by licence of William Conqueror, brought from Caen in Normandy, lauded at Ratlisden, and from thence brought by land to Bury: the foundation was accomplished, and the body of the Martyr, was translated out of a Chappell called Rotund, into a shrine prepared for him in the new Church of Bedrisworth or Bury, in the yere of our Lord God 1095. Thus much for Bury.

Iohn Lydgate.

Canons in Essex.

The Church which king Canute, and Earle Tuketell builded on the hill of Assen in Esser, was dedicated with great honour, of Wolstone Archbishop of Yorke and other Bishops, the King and nobles being present.

He appointed to be king of Norway, Swanus his sonne (as was said) by Algine daughter to Athelme Duke of Northampton, and Lady Vulfrune: but other said he was a Pictes son. He also appointed his sonne Hardycanutus by Emma, to be king of Denmarke, and deceased at Shaftesburie, when he had raigned twentie yeres, and was buried in Saint Swichins at Winchester. After whose decease and buriall, Queene Emma made her abode there.

Henry of Huntington of this Canute hath as followeth: Open (saith he) doe speake of the great deedes that he did: first, that he married his daughter to the Emperour Conradus: that he went nobly to Rome, and came againe with precious guifts: that he set his feet on the Sea strond while the sea was flowing, and commanded the Sea not to rise, to wet his Lords feete or cloathes: but the Sea keeping his old course, rose, and wet both his feet and his thighes: whereupon the King started away, and said: All men shall vnderstand and know, that the power and might of Kings is vaine, and banitie: and that none is worthy to haue the name of King, but he that hath all things subiect to his commandement and lawes. And after this, this Canutus neuer bare Crowne vpon his head, but he set the same vpon the head of the Crucifixe at Winchester. Peter of Poytiers. Of Peter of Poytiers.

Pictaui, ouer Chancellor of Paris, saith, that the custome to hang vp the armour of Kings and noble men, and other in Churches, sprang of that this Canutus refused to weare his crowne, and offered the same as is shewed.

1035. HArold, for his swiftnesse called Harefoote, whom Canutus had by a Concubine Alice of Hampton, a Shomakers daughter (affirming himselfe to be sonne of Canutus, and Algina the Earle of Northamptons daughter) kept not vpon the occasion and opportunitie offered, but suing the force of the Danes that dwelt in England, inuaded the realme, while his brother Hardycanute gouerned in Denmarke.

He take from his mother in law Emma, the most part of the riches and treasure that Canutus, his father had left her, and then with consent of the great Lords began to raigne, but not so mightily as his father Canutus did, for a more iust heire Hardycanutus, was looked for, whereupon the kingdome was diuided, the North part to Harold, and the South to Hardycanute.

Edward and Alfred sonnes to king Etheldred, with many Knights, came out of Normandy, to see their mother at Winchester, which sore troubled the mindes of many great men, who bare more fauour to king Harold. Especially, Godwyne Earle of Kent, fayning to receiue Alfred as a friend, came to meete him, but in the end put him in prison, part of his company he put in fetters, and after put out their eyes. Of some he caused their skinne to be plucked ouer their eares, chopping off their hands and feete. Some he commanded to be sold, and diuers were murthered at Gilford.

Queene Emma hearing of this dealing, she sent her sonne Edward backe againe into Normandy.

After this Alfred was conueyed to the Ile of Ely, where his eyes being first plucked out, he was deliuered to the Monkes to be kept prisoner there, where shortly after he departed this life, and was buried in the South Ile of the west part of the Church. Because Hardycanutus delayed to come ouer being sent for, he was vtterly reiected, and Harold, who before was king of the Mercies and Northumbers, was chosen king of all England, who shortly after expelled his mother in law Emma out of the Realme. He raigned three yeres, payed, and was buried at Westminster, and after at S. Clements without Temple-barre at London.

1041. HArdycanutus the lawfull begotten Sonne of Canutus and Emma, as soone as he had gotten

cotton his fathers kingdome, fetched home his mother out of exile: & in reuenge of displeasure that was done to her, and of the murther of his brother Alured, he commanded the carcasse of Harold to be digged out of the earth, and to be throwne into the Riuer of Thames, where by a fisher it was taken vp, and brought to the Church with-out Temple-Barre.

Wikes to be set vp-pon to be S. Clements Danes, who buried is in a Churchyard, which they had at London.

Which done, the King appointed eight marks to be payed to euery Baker in his Nauie, and twelue markes to euery Pitot or Waker, which tribute was to be payd of all England, so grieuous, that scarce any was able to beare it.

Shortly after, he sent for Edward the son of Etheldred his brother, on the mothers side to come into England, and embraced him with all loue and fauor. Being at a marriage feast pleasantly drinking with the Bride and other persons in the midst of his cups he fell sodainly downe to the ground, and so remaining dumbe, departed this life the third yeare of his raigne, and was buried by his father at Winchester.

1043. Alfredus Beu. L. Rouie.

EDward borne at Islip beside Oxford, the sonne of Etheldred, whom Hardycanutus had sent for into England, at the age of almost fortie yeares, was by the helpe of Godwine crowned at Winchester.

This Edward for his excellent holines, is vntill this day called Saint Edward, who for some as he had gotten his fathers kingdome, of his owne free will released the tribute of fortie thousand pounds called Dane gilt, which the English people, euen from the very beginning of the raigne of the Danes, was compelled to pay to their Kings euery yeare. He was also the chiefe author and cause, that the Law which we call the common Law, was first brought vp, being gathered out of the lawes and ordinances of foure nations, which were receiued when the Iland was subiect to diuers regiments and gouernances, to wit, of the Mercies, of the West Saxons, of the Danes, and of the Northumbers. He was hard to his Mother, because she was hard to him in his minoritie, and also suspected with Alwine Bishop of Winchester, whom he put into prison, by Counsell of Robert Archbishop of Canterbury: but after his Mother had purged her selfe, Alwine was deliuered, and Robert the Archbishop conueyed himselfe out of England. He tooke to wife Edgitha the Daughter of Earle Godwine, who was a Virgin most chaste, in whose breast there was a Schoole of all liberall Sciences (saith William of Malmesburie.) And for a further testimony of the said Queene, Ingulphus writeth thus: Vnto this Edward was giuen to wife, the Daughter of Earle Godwine, a very beautifull Damsell, very well instructed in learning: and for behauiour, and the rest of her life; a Virgin most chaste, and for humility most holy, named Edgitha, in no point fauouring of her fathers or brothers barbarousnes, but milde and modest, faithfull and honest, enemy or hurtfull to no body: whereupon this verse was spoken of her:

Sicut spina rosam, genuit Godwinus Editham.

I haue seene her (saith Ingulphus) often when being yet but a boy, I came to see my father dwelling in the Kings Court. And often comming from Schoole, when I met her, she would oppose me touching my learning and tellon, and falling from Grammar to Logicke, wherein she had some knowledge, would fubcilly conclude an argument with me, and by a handmaiden giue vs 2 or 3 coure pieces of money, and send me vnto the place where I should receiue some bisnuits, and so be dismissed.

Now concerning this Edward, he was borne in England as is afore shewed, but brought vp in Normandie, and continuing there a long time, was in a manner become French, bringing hither, and drawing out of Normandie, very many, whom he promoted to diuers dignities, and exalted aboue measure. Among whom chiefely was one Robert, a Monke of Gemiteence, made by him first Bishop of London, and after Archbishop of Canterbury. And William the Kings Chaplaine made Bishop of Dorchester.

Then began the whole land ouer the King, and other Normans brought in, to leaue off the English rites, and in many things to imitate the manners of the French. All the noble men tooke it to be a great point of gentrie in their Courts to speake the French tongue, to make their Charters and deeds after the manner of the French, and to be ashamed of their own custome and life, as well in this, as in many other things. But hereof more in another place.

He sent for home into England his nephew Edward the sonne of King Edmund his brother, who by reason of his long absence out of the Country, was commonly called the Outlawe. This is that Edward the Sonne of King Edmund firnamed Ironside, which remained aliue, whom Canutus when he had gotten England, had sent into Sweethen with his brother. He knowing the aduise of his Uncle, came againe into England, and brought with him Agatha his wife, & Edgar, Margaret, and Christian, his children, borne in Pannonia, in hope of the Kingdome, where he liued but a while. Thus Saint Edward being disappointed, both of his nephew and his heire, for that Edward the Outlaw was both by nearenesse of bloud, and by lawfull succession right heire vnto the kingdome, without delay pronounced Edgar the Outlawes sonne, and his great nephew, to be heire of the Kingdome, and gaue him to surname Adeling, which name in those dayes, was peculiar onely to Kings children, which were borne in hope and possibility of the Kingdome: for this word Adeling in the English tongue is as much to say, as Prince or Lord, the contrary of which word is Vnderling, that is to say, seruant or bondman: or according to the Welsh speech, Adeling signifieth heire: but because this Edgar was but young of yeeres, and within age, by his testament he made Harolde the sonne of Godwine (a stout man both in warre and peace) Regent, but till the young Edgar should be of age to receiue the kingdome, and that then he should be made King: which thing Harolde with a solemne oath promised to see so performed and done.

done. Notwithstanding, he like a Wrayter (by force of armes) immediately after the death of Edward, refused the name of Regent, and presumed himselfe king, which thing shortly after brought destruction both to himselfe, and to all England.

In the yere of our Lord one thousand foure and fiue, King Edward gathered a mighty nauy into the Hauen of Sandwich, against Magnus King of Norway, that meant to haue come into England, but through that warres that Swanus King of Denmarke moued against him, his iourney was broken off.

In the yere of our Lord one thousand foure and fiue, Leuingus Bishop of Worcester, Dorsetshire, and Cornewall deceased: and the bishopricke of Cridington and Cornewall was straight giuen to Leofrike Baron the kings Chancellour. And Alfredus a Monke of Winchester was made Bishop of Worcester.

Magnus King of Norway, came to Olaus, hauing chased Swaine King of Denmarke out of his realme, subdued that kingdome to himselfe.

In the yere 1047. Swaine king of Denmarke sent Embassadors to king Edward, requiring of him a nauy against Magnus king of Norway, but none were sent.

In the yere of our Lord 1048. Magnus being dead, Swaine recouered Denmarke, and Harold Harnager son to King Swardus of Norway, returned into Norway, and shortly after sent Embassadors vnto King Edward, offering to him peace and amitie, which he accepted and promised the like againe.

A great Earthquake chaced on the first of March: mortalitie of men and beasts followed, and lightning burnt vp Downes, and Corne in the fields, where through role such a dearth, that one horse load of wheate was sold for fiue shillings.

In the yere 1049. the Irish pirates with 36. ships entring into the mouth of Seuerne, arriued in a place called Willsreapam, and with the helpe of Griffith King of Southwales, spoyled about those Coasts, and did much mischiefe. After this the said Griffith and those Irish pyrates ioyning their powers together, passe ouer the riuer Wie, and burnt Dunneham, and slew all that they there found. Against whom Aldredus, Bishop of Worcester, and other of Gloucester and Herefordshire, hastily went, but the Welshmen whom they had in their company, sent messengers to Griffith, willing him to make speed against the English men, which he did, and slew many of them, and put the rest to flight.

In the yere 1050. Edsine Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, in whose rome the King placed Robert a Norman, late Bishop of London, a great enemie to Duke Godwine.

This yere King Edward and Edgitha his wife translated the Bishops Sea from S. Germanes at Cridington, and placed the same at Exceter: the King laying his right hand vpon the Altar of Saint Peter, instituted one Leofrike Bishop there whom the King taking by the right hand, and the Queene by the left hand, stalled him in his Bishops seate, in the presence of fiue Dukes, and many other noble men: all which King Iohn of Glastenbery confirmed, and augmented by his Charter, the first yeare of his raigne.

In the yere 1051. when the earth yelded not her fruites after the accustomed fertilenesse, but famine consumed very many inhabitants, insomuch that through dearth of corne, and want of bread, many thousands of men dyed: the good King Edward mooued with compassion ouer the poore, released for euer all England of the most grieuous tribute called Dane gilt. It is reported that the Kings clemencie was moued to compassion, vpon occasion as followeth. When his exactors, (for so were they then called) or treasurers (as we call them) had collected that grieuous tribute called Dane gilt, and brought it into the Kings Chamber, the King being called to see the heape of so great treasure, was at the first beholding thereof much afraid, protesting that he did see Diuell dancing vpon the heape of money, and making ouermuch ioy. And thereupon gaue commandement, it should be forthwith rendered againe to the former owners thereof, and of so cruell an exaction, he would not keepe one farthing, but released the said tribute for euer. Eustace Earle of Bulloigne the elder, which had to wife Goda the wife of King Edward, arriued at Douer in Kent with a few shippes, in the which towne whilst his Souldiers rashly take vp their Innes, they slew one of the townesmen, in reuenge whereof, not onely the quarreller, but other of his company, with many of the Townes were slaine, which doing, so much offended Godwine Earle of Kent, that he assembled a great power out of all his Countries of Kent, Sussex, and Westsex, and his eldest sonne Harold out of his Earledomes of Oxford, Glocester, Hereford, Somerset, and Barkeshire, and his sonne Swaine out of Eassex, East England, Huntington, and Cambridgeshires, to all which he had a great armie, wherewith he marched towards Glocester, where the king then lay, vnto whom he sent Messengers to denounce warre, except he would deliuer Eustace, and his fellow Normans & Bolonians, which held a Castle vpon the Cliffe of Douer: but king Edward when he vnderstood that the armies of Leofrike Earle of Chester, Siward Duke of Northumberland, and Ranulph Earle of Hereford were comming to his aide, he answered roughly, that he would in no wise deliuer Eustace or the other demanded. But after this, Godwins armie entring into Glocester, it was there agreed, that at a day appointed, the king and Earle Godwine should meet at London: and thus departing for the time, the King increasing his armie, led the same to London, and Godwine with his power came to Southwarke, on the other side of the Riuer Thames, into his owne house, but there because his army by little and little slipped from him, he fled, and the king forthwith pronounced him, with his fiue sons, to be banished, who straight-wayes with his wife and two of his sons came to Thoney, where his ship being laden with gold,

Ingulphus.

The Danegeld discharged.

King Edward did see the Diuell dance.

gold, siluer, and precious things, he sayled ouer vnto Flanders: his other sonnes take ship at Yarmouth, and sayled into Ireland.

Marianus.

The King forsaketh his wife Quéene Edgitha, for displeasure conceiued against her father Duke Godwyne, and sent her with one maiden to Wilton, in no honourable wise, where she was committed to the custody of the Abbesse.

W. Malmesf.

William of Malmesbury addeth, that her goods being taken from her to the vttermost farthing, she was sent to Wilton there to be kept vnder the kings sister, least whilest all her parents were in sorrow for their Countrey, she alone should rest in ease: but a nameless author, that wrote a Booke intituled Vita Edwardi, which he dedicated to the same Edgitha, writeth thus. The King pretending this honest cause of diuorce, that in the Monasterie of Wilton, where she had bin brought vp, she should be, to auoid such troubles of the Realme. Thus therefore with kingly honour, and Princely company (yet sorowfull) she was brought to the bonds of the Monasterie of Wilton, where almost one whole yeere in prayers and teares she expected the day of comfort.

Vita Edwardi.

At this time the most noble Earle, or Duke of Normans, William, with a great traine came into England, to king Edward, whom the king honourably receiuing, and for a while keeping him, carried him about to his Cities, and kingly Castles, and with comely humanity shewed, at length gaue him many guifts, and dismissed him to his owne, but of the succession of the Realme, hope as yet or mention betweene them was not made.

William a Norman the kings Chaplaine, tooke vpon him the Bishoprieke of London.

Henry the fourth of that name, sonne to Henry the third, was the 90. Emperour of the Romanes. He began his raigne in the yeere of Christ 1055. he raigned fiftie yeeres, and about the three and fortie yeere of his raigne, as testifieth Helinandus the Historian, the Citie of Lubecke in Germany was founded by a Pagan Sarazen, called Cryton, and at this time for fourescore yeeres space, there was not one Church nor Christian Priest in all Sclauonia: the said Cryton with great cruelty slew all the Lords of Oloembuigh, except Henry sonne to Godescalcus, who escaped by flight into Denmarke, and after a while returned, and very manfully fought with all the new possessors of his Countrey, chiefly towards the Sea of the Sclauonians: he cut off Cryton, and so by force recobtayned due possession of his heritage from the vsurpers. This Citie Lubecke at first flourished a pace, and therefore Henry Lyon Duke of Saxonie, earnestly prayed Adolph Earle of Holst, to giue him halfe the Citie of Lubecke, which at first he absolutely refused. The cause why the Duke so earnestly desired this citie, was for that the growing of this Citie, was the decay of Paris and Fayres of other Cities: the Duke seeing he could not obtaine his request, prohibited the selling of all manner of Commodities whatsoeuer in Lubeck, victuals only excepted, and that all Marchandize should be brought to his Citie of Berdewich, where he kept his rest. Hence, and there sold. He also in contempt of Lubeck, builded a new Citie nere vnto it, but it take small effect, yet in the end, the Duke with kind intreaties and promises preuayled so farre, that Adolph gaue Henry Lyon the Ile and citie of Lubeck, and then the Duke forsoke his new Citie, and commanded Lubeck to be walled and re-edified, and erected Churches within the Citie: he made proclamation throughout Denmarke, Norway, Russia, &c. that they should all come securely to Lubecke Mart, and endowed it with many royall priuiledges and then it quickly increased. The foresaid Duke of Saxonie was a deuout Christian, he visited the Holy land, he founded two Bishoprickes besides that at Lubecke, and shewed great kindnesse vnto Earle Adolph, and his heires after his death. Gerard Dernyer, the first Bishop of Lubeck died in the yere 1154.

Emma late wife to the Kings, Ethelred and Canutus, and mother to two kings, Hardicanutus and Edward, departed this life at Winchester, on the first of March, and was there buried.

Griffith king of Wales waged a great part of Herefordshire, against whom, the men of that countrey and Normans out of the Castle, went: but Griffith obtained the victorie, sleying many of them, and tooke a great prey.

In the next yere, Harold and Leofwine Sons of Earle Godwyne, returning out of Ireland, entred Seuerns, arrived with many ships in Sommerset and Dorsetshire, spoyled many Townes in the Countrey, slew many people and returned with prey: then they sayled about Portesmouth, &c.

Earle Godwine landed in Kent, gathered a power, sayled to the Isle of Wight, wasting along the Sea coastes, till his sonnes Harold and Leofwine came with a Nauie, which being come together, they take their course by the River of Thames, came to Southwarke, and there staied for the tide, & then weped by Barkor, and finding none that offered to resist them on the bridge, they sayled vp by the south side of the riuer, and his army by land placing it selfe vpon the bankes side, made them of a thicke and terrible battaile.

After this, the Nauie turned towards the North-shore, as though it would haue compassed in the kings Nauy: but they that were with the king, and with Godwine, abhorred to fight against their owne kinsmen & countrymen, wherefore a peace was made, Godwine with his Sons were restored to all their former honor, and the Normans were banished the land. Such as had giuen the king counsell against the English, a few excepted, as Robert the Deacon and his sonne in law, Richard fitz Scroby, Alfrid the kings sewer, Anfridus surnamed Geeresset, and other whom the king before the residue loued, and had beene faithfull to him and his people, these were permitted to remaine in England. Robert Archbishop of Canterbury, Wil. Bishop of London, Wino Bishop of Lincolne, and other Normans with much adoe passed the Sea, but William Bishop of London, for his honest conuersation, being shortly called backe againe is

is restored to his Bishoprieke, Osberne Pentecostle, and his fellow Hugh perlued by their Castles, & by licence of Earle Leofricus went through his Earledome into Scotland, and were receiued of Machuta king of Scots.

1053. Rese brother to Griffith King of Southwales, for the often preyes which he had taken at Wolenden, is slaine by commandement of King Edward and his head sent to the king there at Glocester.

On the second day of Pasch, Earle Godwine as he sate at meat with the king, being suddenly stricken with a grieuous sickner, he shranke downe dumbe in the seate where he sate; which his sonnes, Earle Harold, Tosti, and Girthe beholding, bare him into the kings Chamber, hoping that he should haue recouered, but when his strength failed him, on thursday following he died in miserable torment, and was buried in the old Monastery of Winchester, whose Duke dome his sonne Harold tooke vpon him, and his Earledome is giuen to Algarus, the sonne of Leofricus Earle of Chester, thus hath Furens of Worcester. Now to adde somewhat out of Vita Edwardi, Duke Godwine (saith he) and his sonnes being reconciled to the king, and the Countrey being quiet, in the second peare after, died the said Duke of happy memory, whose death was the sorow of the people, him their Father, him the nourisher of them and the kingdome, with continuall weping they bewailed: he was buried with worthy honor in the old Monastery of Winchester, giuing to the same Church, gifts, ornaments and rents of lands. Harold succeeded in his Dukedome, which was a great comfort to the whole English nation, for in vertue both of body and mind he excelled all, yea, as an other Iudas Maccabeus, and was a friend to his Country, diligently supplying his fathers place, and walking in his steps, that is to say, in patience, mercy, and affability to well willers; but to disquiet persons, theeues and robbers, with a Lions countenance he threatned his full seuerity: thus much out of the ancient monument intituled Vita Edwardi.

Touching his issue (saith William Malmesbury) Godwine in his first age had to wife the sister of Knote King of England, Denmarke, and Norway, of whom he begate a sonne, which when he was past his childs age, whilest he proudly did ride vpon an hoyse, which the king his grandfather had giuen him, the hoyse bare him into the River of Thames, where he was drowned: his mother also was slaine with a thunderbolt. After her he married another, by whom he had fiue sonnes, to wit, Harold, Swaine, Tostine, Woolnod, Girthe, and Leofwine, &c.

1054. Siward Duke of Northumberland, ouercame Macbare King of Scots, and made Malcolme the king of Cumberlands sonne, king of Scots.

1055. Siward Duke of Northumberland departed this life at Yorke, and was buried in the Monastere of Golmanho, dedicated to S. Olaue the Martyr, which he had builded.

Griffith King of Southwales, and Algare spoiled the Monastery of Hereford, slew the Canons and burnt the whole Citie. Duke Harold repaired, but Remelinus the Bishop re-edified it of his owne proper expences.

1057. Cito Edgar sonne to king Edmund Ironside, by procurement of his vncle king Edward came into England, out of Hungary, where he had long remained, being now sent by the Emperour honorably accompanied, together with his wife Agatha, and their issue, to wit, Edgar Adeling Margaret and Christian. King Edward was purposed to haue made this Edward his heire of his kingdome: but he died: of Edgar Adeling his sonne, ye shall heare more in the raigne of W. Conqueror. Margaret his daughter was married to Malcolme King of Scots, by whom she had issue, sixe sons and two daughters, Edgar, Alexander, Dauid, Edmund, Ethelred, and Edward, three of the which were Kings; to wit, Edgar, Alexander and Dauid: Matild their sister married Henry Beauclarke King of England, her sister Mary was married to Eustace Earle of Bolougne, of Matild, came a daughter named Matild the Empresse, mother to K. Henry the second: Mary had a daughter named Matild also, married first to the Earle of Mouritaine, and after vnto K. Stephen.

1061. King Edward founded the Colledge of S. Mary Oterie in the County of Deuon: hee gaue vnto it the Village of Dorege, being of the Cite of Rhoan. S. Mary Otery.

1064. Griffith King of Wales was killed by his owne people, his head with the head of his Ship, and his armour was sent to Earle Harold, which he straightway bringeth to king Edgard.

Without the walles of London, vpon the riuer of Thames, there was a little Monastery with a few Monks vnder an Abbot, here the king intended to make his Sepulcher, he commanded therefore, of the tenths of all his rents the worke to bee begun euen from the foundation, which happily proceeded till the same was finished: he also caused the parith Church of Saint Margaret to be new builded without the said Abbey Church, for before the said Parith Church stood within the old Abbey, in the South Ile: This Church of Saint Margaret that King Edward builded, continued till the dayes of King Edward the first, at what time the staple of wools, was at Westminster, and then the parishioners and Sea-faring men builded anew the said Church of Saint Margaret, the great Chancell excepted, which was now lately made before by the Abbot of Westm. The Quéene also hauing beene brought vp in the ancient Monastery of Nuns at Wilton, which Church was but of Wood, began there a princely worke of stone, and fervently perfitted till the same was in princely sort finished, dedicated, and indowed it with large possessions, in 1605. Westminster. T. Clifford. Vita Edwardi. Wilton.

This K. Edward of famous memory (saith mine Author) before the day of his natiuitie

was elected of God, who persevering in chastitie, led all his life dedicated vnto God in true marriage, wherefore as we haue knowne proued by good and sufficient men being witnesses, God greatly glorified him in his life with wonderfull signes, amongst the which, this that followeth was one. A yong woman married, but without children, had a disease about her iawes, and vnder her cheeke, like vnto kernels, which they termed apostes and this disease so corrupted her face with filth, that she could scarce without great shame speake to any man: this woman was admonished in her sleepe to goe to King Edward, and get him to wash her face with water, and she should be whole. So the Court thee came, and the King hearing of this matter, disdained not to doe it, hauing a bason of water brought vnto him, he dipped his hand therein, and washed the womans face, and touched the diseased place, and this he did oftentimes, sometimes also signing it with the signe of the Crosse, which after he had thus washed it, the hard crust or skin was softned and dissolued, and drawing his hand by diuers of the holes, out of the kernels came little wormes, whereof they were full with corrupt matter and blood, the King still purged it with his hands to bring forth the corruption, and disdained not to suffer the stench of the disease, vntill he had brought forth all the corruption with purging: this done, hee commanded her a sufficient allowance euery day for all things necessary, vntill she had received perfect health, which was within a weeke after, and whereas shee was euer before barren, within one yeere she had a child by her husband. And although this thing seeme strange, yet the Normans said that he often did the like in his youth, when he was in Normandy.

King Edward healeth a woman of a disease in her throat, commonly called the Kings euill. Vita Edwardi. W. Malmesb.

Vlfinius Spilcorne.

Next after this mine Authors affirme, that a certain man named Vlfinius Spilcorne, the sonne of Vlmere of Nurgarshall, who wee he hewed timber in the wood of Wautheullena, laying him downe to sleepe after his sore labour, the blood and humours of his head so congealed about his eyes, that he was thereof blind, for the space of 19. yeeres, but then (as he had beene moued in his sleepe) hee went walkward, and barefooted to many churches, in euery of them to pray to God for helpe in his blindnesse, and then last of all, he came to the Court, where a long time hee stood at the entry of the Kings Chamber, an earnest suiter, till at the length the King hearing of the blindmans dreame, he said by our Lady Saint Mary, I would do much with a good will, if it would please God through me to haue mercy vpon these poore wretch; and thus being driuen to it by his seruants, he layd his hand and the water vpon the blindemans eyes, and streight way the blood dropped plentifully frō him, and being healed, he cryed with a cheerefull voyce, I see thee, O King, I see thee, O King. Thus hauing recouered his sight, hee kept the Kings Palace at Windsore a long season (for there he was healed) after King Edward was dead, & deceased, in the raigne of Willian Conqueror.

King Edward sickening on Christmas Eue, deceased on the fourth of January, and was buried at Westminster, on the day of Epiphany, when he had raigned 23. yeares fiue monethes, and odde dayes; it appeareth by a Charter, that he raigned aboue 24. yeres for the Charter beareth date in the 25. yeare of his raigne. 1066.

Aluredus Rinallensis writing the life and death of this King, reporteth him to be a man void of pride, a louer of peace, a vanquisher of Ire, a contemner of couetousnes, &c. And for example he writeth, that as King Edward on a time lay waking in his bed, it chanced that his Chamberlain or Steward taking money out of one of the Kings coffers, left the same coffer open after him, & went his wayes about the Kings businesse which thing being espied of a yong fellow that was wont to wait on the Kings table to beare away empty vessell, he came to the coffer, thinking the King had beene asleepe, and thinke a great quantity of money into his bosome and going away, laid it where he thought best, no comming againe did the like, but when he came againe the third time, and that the King knew (as was thought) that his Chamberlaine was at hand, and willing the Theefe to auoyd the danger: Thou art impotunate, said the King, if thou wilt beleeue me, take that thou hast, and get thee hence, for by Gods mother, if Hugeline come (for so was his Chamberlaines name) he will not leaue thee one penny, whereupon the yong fellow ran his way, and was neyther vttered nor pursued by the King, and behold, when the Chamberlaine came and perceiued much money to be gone through his negligence, he was in such sorow, that his sighes and other noise that he made bewrayed him, whereupon the King rising, and seeming not to know the matter, asked what he ailed to bee so troubled, which when the Chamberlaine had told what had happened, hold thy peace said the King, happily he that hath taken it hath more need then we haue of it, let him haue it, that which remaineth is enough for vs. Alured. Rinal. Vngelinus Camerarius Regis nota Creatura.

1067. The peace of our Lord be with vs.

HArold, the eldest son of Godwine, Earle of Kent, hauing obtained faith of the nobilitie, take the Crowne, and that he might in some behalfe seeme to make the young Begar amends for the wrong he had done him, gaue him the earledome of Orford, and so from a Babe made him an Earle. But in the meane season England began to be tossed and tumoiled with warres within and without: for the disheriting of the right heyre is alwaies wont to be the beginning of ciuill warres.

The twenty foure day of Aprill, a Comet appeared, not onely to the people of this land, but also in other parts of the world 7. dayes. Tostus enuying (as men said) the prosperity of his brother, stirred vp troubles in the Realme

William Conquerour cousin to King Edward by the mothers side.

William duke of Normandy arriued at Pemsey in Sussex.

Battles of Pemsey, and Hastings fought.

Realme, for hee ioyning himselfe to Harold the King of Norway, assaulted England in warlike sort, both by Sea and land. Whose attempt whiles Harold of England prepared to withstand, William Duke of Normandy, who notwithstanding he was a bastard, was of kin to Saint Edward in the third & fourth degree of consanguinitie, seeing a conuenient time and occasion offered to take the kingdome in, gathered a Nauy of eight hundred ninetie and fiue ships, and came into England with a very well appointed army, alledging, that by all right and title it was due to him, by the gift of King Edward his kinsman, and also by the couenant that was made, and by oath established betwixt Harold and him. He landed at Pemsey, neere vnto Hastings in Sussex, on the twenty eight day of September, where in going out of the Ship, the Dukes foote slipped, but he recouered it well enough, and one of the soldiers that were next him, cried vnto him, and said; Oh Duke thou hast gotten England, and thou shalt bee King: hee fortified there a peece of ground, and intrenched it, leauing there a competent number of his men to keepe the same, went then to Hastings, where he built another fortresse, notwithstanding he restrained all his Hoste from rouing, and by the space of fiftene daies, he kept himselfe so quietly, that a man would haue thought he had meant nothing lesse then to haue warre.

Harold, notwithstanding he was bare of men by reason of the battel that he had fought against Tostus and the men of Norway, yet hearing of Williams comming, rose to blody dyuining him forward headlong. Notwithstanding he sent out before, them that should spye and view the number and force of the enemies, which when they were perceiued to be among the Dukes tents, Duke William caused them to be led about the tents, and then made them good cheare, commanding them to bee sent home to their Lord safe without harme. When they were returned againe, Harold asked them what tydings they brought, and they with long commendation extolled the clemencie of the Duke, and in good sadnesse declared that all the host almost did seeme to be priests, because they had all their face and both their lips shauen. For the Englishmen did leaue their vpper lips vnshaven, with the haire growing alwayes, which thing also Iulius Cæsar in his commentaries declareth to be an heathen fashion of the old Brytaines.

The King laughing at their folly, said, they bee no Priests, but men of warre, valiant in armes, and stout in courage. Girthe his brother tooke the word out of his mouth, and said, forasmuch as the Normans bee of such great force, me thinketh it were not wisely done of you to ioyne battell with them, you cannot deny but with or against your will, you made vnto him an oath, wherefore you should doe

Offers made by Duke W. to K. Harold: challenge of Duke William

more wisely, if you keepe you out of this present necessitie and strait, and doe but only leopard vs, and let vs abide the danger to make a shew of battaile, we which neuer sware to him may iustly draw our weapons in defence of our Country, you may iustly assist, and restore vs if we die, and you may auenge our death, if we be slaine. But such was the hardinesse of Harold, that he would giue no good care vnto his counsell, because he thought it shame and reproach to turne his backe vnto any danger whatsoeuer, and with the same vnaduisednes, he drawe away a shonke that was Duke Williams Ambassador, onely bre wished that God would be iudge betwixt Duke William and him.

The Monke brought these offers to wit, that either Harold should vpon certaine conditions giue ouer the kingdome, or to be King vnder Duke William, or else that in the sight of both the armies, they two should trye the matter with the swoord betwixt them; for Duke William chalenged the kingdome (as he said) because King Edward by the counsell of Stigand Archbishop of Canterbury, of Earle Godwine, and Earle Swardus, had giuen it vnto him, (a thing vnlike to be true) if Harold would denie this, he offered to stand to the iudgment of the sea Apostolike.

Of which message the Ambassadour had none other answere giuen then I told you, whereupon he departed, and incouraged the hearts of his countrymen to battell.

Then the stout Captaines on both sides set in order their battels, according to the fashion of their countries. The Englishmen (as was reported) when they had spent the whole night in dauncing, singing and daunsing, not sleeping one winke, in the morning, hauing their Masse said vpon their enemies, all to prayer. Englishmen more giuen to

the footemen with their poleaxes being intrenched with their targets before them, made a rampe that nothing could enter vpon them, which thing without doubt should haue beene for their safeguard, if the Normans had not fained as though they would haue fled, and by that meanes caused them to breake the array wherein they had set themselues. The King himselfe stood afoote by the Standard, and his brethren Girthe and Leowine with him, to the end that in such a common perill and ieopardy, no man should once thinke to flie or run away. Duke William after hee had got the victory, sent this Standert to the Pope, which was made after the shape and fashion of a man fighting, wrought by sumptuous art with gold and precious stones: on the other side the Normans gaue themselues to acknowledging their sinnes, and to prayer all the night, & in the morning they communicated the Lords body. The footemen with their bowes and arrowes defended the first front, and the Horsemen were set in the rereward diuided into two wings: Duke William then with a lowd voyce, declaring vnto them, that God would be with them, because his quarrell was iust and good, called for his ar-

Standert of King Harold.

...mos into battle, and through the tumult and ...fusion of armes, if his seruant, he put his coat of armes on the wrong way, to wit, the backe part before, at which chance he laughed, and turning the right side outwards, said, the ...ing Sueedome shall be turned into a kingdome. Then they began to sing the song of Rowland, to the intent that the example of that man of armes should inflame them that should fight: then after they had called to God for aide, they began the battell, fought fiercelie, neither of both parts giuing place till the day was far spent, which thing when the Duke William did perceiue, hee gaue his men counsell to make as though they would flie, and to withdraw themselues out of the fielde, by which deuice the ranke of the Englishmen was broken, and whiles they meant to smite their enimies on the backes, the Normans turned themselues in good order, and set vpon the Englishmen, being dispersed and out of array, and so put them to flight. Thus the Englishmen, died a faire death in defence of their country, and yet they were not slacke in reuenging of themselues, for they stood hard to it, and made great slaughter of them that pursued them, for hauing gotten a hill, they ouerthrew the Normans into the valley, as they courageously did clime to attaine the said hill, and with their darts which they threw, and stones which they cast vpon the Normans that were vnder them, with small labour beat them all into the bottome. Also the Englishmen with a speare, and to them well vnderstood passage running through a certaine ditch, did ouerthrow so many of their enemies following them, that with the dead bodies they made the Valley euen, with the higher ground: thus it continued all the whole day, one while the English, another while the enemies had the better, so long as Harold was aliue, but in the closing of the euening, when he by the shot of an arrow (which pierced his braine) was killed, the Englishmen fled away in the night season: one of the souldiers when Harold was slaine, did cut him in the leg with a sword, for the which deed Duke William blaming him for his cowardlines and shamefull act, put him out of the wars. Also Duke William whilst he shewed his fiercenes in euery place, three of his best hoples were slaine vnder him that day, the power of God so defending him, that the enemy did draw no blood of his bodie, notwithstanding the number of the darts throwne at him. The two brethren of King Harold, to wit, Girthe and Leofwine were there slaine, with almost all the Nobles of England, and the Normans had the victory, especially (saith Roule) by meanes of their warden bowes and arrowes, (which the Englishmen had not then in vse) for Duke William commanded his men that some of them should shoote directly forward, and other some vpward, by reason whereof, the arrowes shot vpward, destroyed the Englishmen as they flowned, and the arrowes shot directly aforehand, wounded them that stood vpright.

And king Harold himselfe (valiantly fighting) as afore is said, was the throughout y braines whereof he died, when he had raigned nine moneths and odde daies. This battell was fought nine miles from Hastings in Southsex vpon the fourteenth day of October being Sunday, in the yeare of Christ 1066. There was slaine of Englishmen 67974. saith I. de Taller in his history of Normandy, or 47944. after other. And of the Normans 6013. besides such as were disclosed.

This was (saith Matthew Paris) the dole full destruction of this sweet and pleasant land the Kings whereof (meaning the Saxons) at their first comming, with barbarous countenance and gesture in warlike sort prouoked all men to malice and hatred towards them, who ouercame al men by warre and subtilty: but after they had received the Christi faith, and by little and little applyed their diligence vnto Religion, they neglected the exercise of armour, for the Kings did change their habite, and some at Royne, & some in their owne Countrey sought to change their temporall kingdomes, for euerlasting kingdomes: and many which al their lifetime embraced worldly things, did yet distribute their treasures vnto all y works of mercy: but afterwards when charitie waxed cold, all the study and trauaile in religion slacked, and then came the destruction of the inhabitants: first at the comming of the Danes: and now in the expulsing of the Englishmen by the Normans: for the Noble men giuing themselues to gluttony and lechery, did not goe to the Church in the morning, as Christian men vse to doe, but lying in their Chamber dallying with women, did heare the Priest hastily rattell vp Diuine seruice. The Clarkes also that had taken orders if one had learned but his Grammer, euery one wondred at him, the Monkes made a mocking of their rule, and were both finely apparelled & meetly well fed. The common people were brought to be a pray to the mightier sort, so that either their goods were fouked from them or else what was worse, their bodies were sent into farre Countries, to increase the riches of y great men that oppressed them: many when they had fulfilled their lust, and had got their maides with child, they sent them out to bee common harlots; all men in generall gaue themselues to drinking and gulling, & in that kind of exercise they continued sometime night and day. These vices made the Englishmen effeminate, and womanish, whereof it came to passe, that running headlong against Duke Will. they left themselues and their country, with ease, and that an easie and light battell.

To conclude, the Englishmen were then apparelled in garments to the mid knee, their haire rounded, & their beards shauen, all saue their vpper lip, their armes adorned with golden bracelets, and their skin marked, painted, and pointed, at meat they forced themselues to surfet, and drunke till they vomited, these lasse qualities they dealed to them that ouercame them, but I would not (saith mine au-

thor)

Girthe. Godwin. Leofwine. Ed. Vvestbridger. Ede Falow

Chronicles of Normandy. The seuering of Englishe Danes Mathew Paris. W. Malmesb. Fleres Hist.

thor) you should thinke I speake these euils of all Englishmen, for I know that many of the Clergie, did simply obserue y parts of holines and also of the lay people, that did endeuor to serue God, &c.

When Duke William had gotten the full victory, he caused his men that were slaine to bee buried, and also gaue leaue that if anie man would they might bury their enemies in like manner, he gaue the body of Harold vnto Haroldes mother, at her request, taking no money, although by messengers she offered much, thus the receiuing his bodie, buried the same at Waltham in Essex, in a Colledge which he himselfe had founded to the honour of GOD and Saint Crosse, and had placed there a Deane and 13. Canons.

The death of Harold being knowne, Edwine and Morcare, two brethren of great rewardnesse, Caries, the one of Mercia, the other of Northumberland, which with their people had withdrawne themselues from the battell, came now to London: and sending the Quéene Egitha, the late Kings sister vnto the City of Chester, they solicited the citizens to erect either of them to the kingdome, which enterprise of theirs being frustrated, they departed into Northumberland, supposing that Duke William would neuer haue come thither. The rest of the Nobles with the Citizens of London, would haue erected Edgar the Nephew of Edmond Ironside to the kingdome, and promised with him to giue a new battell to Duke William, but through the danger that was at hand, and the discord that was among themselues, they did neither. So that the Englishmen if they had agreed together, might haue reformed the decay of their Countrey, but whilst they would haue none of their owne Countrymen to be King, they brought in a stranger. In this meane time Duke William determining to goe to London, turned forth of the right way, ouer the West Coasts of England, walking and destroying through Sussex, Kent, Surrey, Hampshire, and Barkeshire, till he came to Warringford, or Wallingford, from thence he passed ouer the riuer of Thames, commanding his Armie to settle themselues there for a while, from thence he passed through Oxfordshire, Buckinghamshire, and Hartfordshire, not ceasing to burne Townes, and slay the people till he came to Bercham, or Berkehamsted, where staying for a time (for cause as shall be shewed) thither came to him Aldred Archbishop of Yorke, Wolstane Bishop of Worcester, Wilfre Bishop of Hereford, Cito Edgare, and all other the Noblemen about London, with many other, who altogether submitted themselues giuing pledges, and sware fealtie vnto him, with whom also hee made a league, but notwithstanding he permitted his men still to burne Townes, and to take spoiles.

Apparitions.

The cause that Duke William stayed at Berkehamsted, was this, there was at that time an Abbot of Saint Albones named Frederike who when he heard of Duke William his comming into Hartfordshire, he caused the Woods belonging to his Church round about Saint Albanes, and so in the wayes towards London to be felled, so that no man could passe y way for the trées that were laid crosse one ouer another, and thus this Abbot for the time, kept his Monasterie from spoiling, for Duke William could not come there but was forced to coast about, to the Castle of Berkehamsted (as is aforesaid) whither vnder surety he sent for Frederike the Abbot, and demanded of him, why such felling of woods was made about him more then in other places: whereunto Frederike answered, and said, I haue done but as becommeth mee, for if the Spirituall persons throughout this land had done their endeauour against thee as they mought and ought to haue done, it should not haue beene in thy power to haue entred y land so farre: quoth Duke William, is the spiritualtie of England of such power? If I may liue and enioy that which I haue gotten, I will make their power lesse, and especially I mind to begin with thee. The Abbot perceiuing he had said too farre, as soone as he could departed home to his Monasterie, where calling a chapter of his brethren, he told them of Duke William what he had said, and then taking his leaue of them, departed, and went to the Ile of Ely from whence he neuer returned to his Abbey.

Lib. S. Albani. Abbot of S. Albanes his policie against Duke William.

When Christmas approached, Duke William marched with all his army towards London, whose scouts comming together before him to see the manner and behauior of the people, found them assembled in the streets, determining to resist Duke William, with all their might; but when the Duke came thither, he made a great slaughter of the Citizens, till perceiuing the selues not able to resist him they submitted themselues, & gaue pledges vnto him.

And thus ended the raigne of the Saxons, who were first sent for by Vortiger King of y Britaines, as is aforesaid, about the yeare of our Lord foure hundred and fiftie, and had continued sometimes in warres with the Britaines, then with the Danes, and now with the Normans the space of 600. yeares.

Verses of the Blazing Starre, which appeared on the 24. of April last before passed, as is shewed,

A thousand sixe and sixty yeere, it was, as we doe read,
when that a Comet did appeare, and Englishmen lay dead.
Of Normandie Duke *William* then, to England-ward did sayle,
who conquered *Harold* with his men, and brought this land to baile.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF
King WILLIAM *the Conquerour.*

WILLIAM Duke of Normandy, surnamed Conquerour, Bastard Sonne of Robert the 6. Duke of that Duchy, and cosingerman vnto K. Edward on the mothers side, hauing slaine king Harold, and obtained the victory in the battell neere vnto Hastings in Sussex, on the 14. day of October being Saturday, in the yeare of our Lord 1066. And also now hauing obtained ỹ Citie of London (as is aforesaid) was there both by the Normans and Englishmen chosen and proclaimed king on Christmas day, which that yeare fell on the Monday, and forthwith the same day crowned not by Stigand Archbishop of Canterbury, and Primate of all England, who refused (as some said) to crowne him, for that by blood and cruelties he had obtained the kingdome: but other affirme, that Willam would not take the crown at his hands, because he was chalenged of Pope Alexander, not to haue received the Pall Canonically, Robert a Norman, sometime frō London by K. Edward translated to be Archbishop of Canterbury, as then liuing: wherfore Elred Archbishop of Yorke, associating vnto him Walter Bishop of Worcester, and Walter Bishop of Hereford, with others of the Nobility of England, annointed and crowned him king at Westminster: but before he was consecrated the Archbishop required an oth, which he took on the Altar of S. Peter, where he promised before the Cleargie, and all the people, to defend the holy Church of God, the Pastors thereof, and all the people subiect vnto him, he should iustly gouerne, he should ordaine good Lawes, and obserue true iustice, and to the vttermost of his power to withstand all rapines and false iudgements.

This William was of a good stature, proud of heart, very coste, and big bodied, with a cruell countenance and a bald forehead, his beard alwayes shauen, for so was the custome of the Normans, he had great strength in his armes, so that many did wonder at him, because no man could draw his bow, which he would bend sitting on his horse back, stretching out the string with his foote: he made great ⁊ costly feasts vpon high and principall dayes, keeping his Christmas offering at Gloucester, his Easter offering at Winchester, ⁊ his Whitson offering at Westminster, in each place being crowned, and thus he vsed euery yeare so long as he continued in England. He called all his Nobles of what estate soeuer they were to come to those feasts, to the end, that the Embassadors of forreine countries might wonder at the sight of such a multitude of people ⁊ preparation of delicate, and dainty fare, and hee was at no time more courteous, or ready to grant pardon to any that had offended, then at such times: onely couetousnesse of money was the thing, whereof he mought worthily be blamed.

King William tooke his iourny towards ỹ Castle of Douer, to subdue that, and the countie of Kent: which when the Archbishop Stigand, and Egelsine the Abbot of S. Augustines (being as it were the chiefest Lords and gouernors of all Kent) did perceiue and consider, that the whole realme was in an euill state, ⁊ that wheras in this realme of England before the comming of the foresaid Duke William, there were no bondmen, now all, as well noblemen, as the common people, were without respect made subiect to the perpetuall bondage of the Normans, taking an occasion by the perill and danger that their neighbours were in, to prouide for the safegard of themselues ⁊ their country, they caused to assemble at Canterbury, all the people of the county of Kent, and declared to them the perils and dangers imminent, the miserie that their neighbours were come into, the pride and insolencie of the Normans, and the hardnes of the griefe of bondage and seruile state: wherevpon all the people rather chusing to end their infortunate life, then to submit themselues to an vnaccustomed yoake of seruitude and bondage, with a common consent determined to meet Duke William, and to fight with him for the lawes of their Country. And the foresaid Stigand the Archbishop, and the Abbot Egelsine, chusing rather to dye in battell, then to see their nation in so euill an estate, being incouraged by the examples of the holy Macchabees, became captaines of the armie.

An. reg. 1.

Beginning of the description of King William.

King William crowned the first yeare.

1067.

W. Malmsb.

Thomas W. Thorn.

Oath of King William.

nie. And at a day appointed all the people met at Swanescombe, 3 miles west from Gauelend, and being hidden in the woods, lay priuily in wait for the coming of the foresaid Duke William. And because it cannot hurt to be very warie in such cases, they agreed before hand, that when the Duke was come, and the passages on euery side stopped, to the end he should no way be able to escape, euery one of them, as well horsemen as footmen, should beare boughes in their hands. The next day after, when the Duke was come into the fields and territories neare vnto Swanescombe, and saw all the country set ⁊ placed round about him, as it had bin a stirring and mouing wood, and that with a meane pace they approached and drew neere vnto him, with great discomfiture of minde he wondered at that sight. And assone as the Captaines of the Kentishmen saw that Duke William was inclosed in the middest of their army, they caused the Trumpets to bee sounded, their banners to be displayed, ⁊ threw downe their boughes, and vp their bowes bent, their swords drawne, and their speares and other kind of weapons stretched forth, they shewed themselues ready to fight: Duke William and they that were with him (stood as no marualle it was) sore astonied and amazed, and he which thought that he had already all England fast in his fist, did now despaire of his owne life. Therefore in the behalfe of the Kentish men were sent vnto Duke William, the Archbishop Stigand, and Egelsine Abbot of Saint Augustines, who told him their message in this sort.

My Lord Duke, behold the people of Kent commeth forth to meet you ⁊ to receiue you as their liege L. requiring at your hāds ỹ things which pertaine to peace, ⁊ that vnder this condition, that all the people of Kent may enioy for euer their ancient liberties, and may for euermore vse the lawes and customes of their Country, otherwise they are readie presently to bid battell to you, & them that bee with you, and are minded rather to die here altogether, then to depart from the lawes ⁊ customes of their Countrey, and to submit themselues vnto bondage, whereof as yet they neuer had experience. The Duke seeing himself to be driuen into such a straite and narrow pinch, consulted a while with them that came with him, prudently considering, that if he should take any repulse or displeasure at the hands of this people, which be the key of England, all that euer he had done before, should be vndone againe, and of no effect, ⁊ all his hope and safety should stand in danger and ieopardy: not so willingly as wisely he graūted the people of Kent their request. So when the couenant was established and pledges giuen on both sides, the Kentishmen being ioyfull, conducted the Normans (who also were glad) vnto Rochester, and yeelded vp to the Duke, the Earledome of Kent, and the noble Castle of Douer. Thus the ancient liberties of England, and the lawes and customes of the Countrie, which before the comming of Duke William out of Normandy, were equally kept throughout all England, do (through this industrie and earnest trauell of the Archbishop Stigand and Egelsine Abbot of Saint Augustines) remaine inuiolably obserued vntill this day, only in the county of Kent.

The ancient liberties and lawes remaine in Kent onely.

Thus farre Thomas Spot, after him William Thorne.

King William brought the Iewes from Rhoane to inhabite here: he received homage, oath of fidelitie, and pledges of the Nobles, and commanded that in euery towne and village a Bell should be rung euery night at eight of the clocke, and that all people should thē put foorth their fire and candle and goe to bed, which order was obserued through this realme, during his raigne, and the raigne of William his son. Thus were the Englishmen forced to imitate the Normans in habit of apparell, shauing off their beards, fewtre at the Table, and in all other outward gestures.

Iewes brought into England.

Fire and light appointed to be put out euery night.

The Historiographers of that time accounted ỹ yere to begin at Christmas, after which account then began the yeare 1067. but after the accompt of England now obserued, ỹ yere beginneth not till the 25. of March following.

And now because those houses may not be vnremembred, vnto whom King W. bestowed ỹ lands and possessions of this realme for their good seruice, I haue thought good to publish ỹ names of them as heretofore I haue done, out of the Chronicles of Normandy, gathered by William Tayleur of Rhoane.

To wit, Odo Bishop of Bayon: Robert Earle of Mortaigne: These two were brethren to Duke William by his mother: Bandonni de Buillon: Roger Earle of Beamont, that was surnamed with the Beard, of him came the linage of Meleat.

Guilliam Mallet
Guilliam Fitz Osberne
Le fire de Montfort sus Rille.
Guilliam de vielz Pont.
Neel de saint Saveur le vicont.
Le fire de Feugiers
Henry fire de Ferrers
Le fire Dambemare
Guilliam fire de Romare
Le fire de Lichare
Le fire de Tonque
Le fire de la Mare
Le fire de Nahabon
Le fire de Piron.
Le fire de Beausor
Le fire de Damnon.
Le fire de Soteville
Le fire de Margneville
Le fire de Tankerville
Eustace Dambleville
Le fire de Magneville
Le fire de Grimsville
Guilliam Crespin
Le fire de Sainct Martin

The Chronicles of Normandy written in French by Guilliam Tayleur.

Guilliam de Moulinous
Le ſire de Pins
Gieffray ſire de Mayenne
Affroy de Behunt
Affroy & Mauigr. de Cartaict.
Guilliam de Garennes
Hue de Gournay ſire de le Bray
Le Conte Hue de Dournay
Enguemount le Laigle
Le vicont de Touars
Richart Donnemchni
Le ſire de Biars
Le ſire de Salligny
Le Boutellier Daubegny
Le ſire de Marre
Le ſire de Victry
Le ſire de Lacy
Le ſire du vall Darie
Le ſire de Tracy
Hue ſire de Montfort
Le ſire de Piqgny
Hamon de Brayen
Le ſire de Spinay
Le ſire de Port
Le ſire de Torchy
Le ſire de Iort
Le ſire de Riuers
Guilliam Moyon
Raoul Teſſon de Chignelois
Rogier Marmion
Raoul de Gael
Aue Neel de Biars
Parnel du Monſtier
Bertram le Tort
Hubert Robert
Le ſire de Scukee
Le ſire de Dornal
Le ſire de Brenall
Le ſire de Sainct Iehan
Le ſire de Bois
Le ſire de Homme
Le ſire de Stuffay
Le Sire de Cailly
Le ſire de Semilly
Le ſire de Tilly
Le ſire de Romely
Martell de Baſqueuill
Le ſire de Praux
Le ſire de Gonys
Le ſire de Sainteaulx
De Mullox.

Theſe Archers of the vale of Rueill, *and of* Bretuiell, *and of many other places.*

Le ſire de Sainct Saen
Le ſire de la Rimer
Le ſire de Salnarinlle

Le ſire de Tony
Eude de Beaugien
Le ſire de Ollie
Le ſire de Sacy
Le ſire de Vaſſye
Le Biſquams de Chaymes
Le ſire de Sap
Le ſire Dugloſſe
Le ſire de Nime
Le ſire de Blamville
Le ſire de Brencon
Le vidam de Partenay
Raoult de Mormont
Pierre de Bailleul
Sir de Feſcamp
Le ſire de Beaufault
Le ſire de Tillieres
Le ſiue de Pacy
Le Seneſchall de Torchy
Le ſire de Gacy
Le ſire de Doully
Le ſire de Sancy
Le ſire de Bacy
Le ſire de Tourneur
Le ſire de Praores
Guilliam de Colombiers
Hue ſire de Bollebec
Richart ſire Dorbec
Le ſire de Donnebos
Le ſire de Trois gros
Le ſire Mont Fiquet
Hue le Vigot, *alias* Bigot de Maletot
Le ſire de la Haye
Le ſire de Bracy
Le ſire de Moubray
Le ſire de Say
Le ſire de Laſert
Bontevillam Tronſebours
Guilliam Patris de la Land
Hue de Mortemer
Le ſire Donviller
Le ſire Donnebant
Le ſire de ſain& Cler.
Robert le fitz Herneys duke Dorliansz

Le ſire de Harecourt
Le ſire Crevecure
Le ſire de Dancourt
Le ſire de Brunetot
Le ſire de Cambray
Le ſire Dauncy
Le ſire Fonteney
Le Counte Deureux
Le ſire de Roberchil
Alan ſergent Counte de Britaigne
Le ſire de ſainct Wallery
Le Counte Deden
Gualtar Guiſart, Counte de Longneville
Le ſire de Scouteville

Le Counte Thomas Danbinale.
Guilliam de Hoimes & Darques.
Le ſire de Barreuile
Le ſire de Breante
Le ſire de Freanuile
Le ſire de Panilly
Le ſire de Clere
Toſtamdubec
Le ſire de Mangny
Roger du Mont Gomery Comes.
Almary de Touaers.

Beſides a very great number of Knights and Eſquires that were vnder them. Thus farre out of the Chronicle of Normandy, *the other following are taken out of a Table ſometime in Battaile Abbey.*

Aumeic
Audeley
Angilliam
Argentoun
Arundell
Auenant
Abel
Awgers
Angenoun
Archer
Aſperuile
Amonerduile
Arey, Albeny
Akeny
Aſperemound
Bertram
Buttrecourt
Brahus
Byſeg
Bardolf
Baſſet
Bohun
Baylife
Bondeuile
Barbaſon
Beer
Bures
Bonylayne
Barbayon
Berners
Braybuf
Brand
Bonuile
Burgh
Buſſhy
Blundell
Breton
Belaſyſe
Bowſer

Bayons
Bulmere
Broune
Beke
Bowlers
Baneſtre
Belomy
Belknape
Beauchamp
Bandy
Broyleby
Burnell
Belot
Beufort
Baudewine
Burdon
Berteuyley
Barre
Buſſeuile
Blunt
Beawper
Bret
Barret
Barneuale
Barry
Bodyt
Berteuile
Bertine
Belew
Buſhell
Beleners
Buffard
Boteler
Botuile
Braſard
Belhelme
Braunche
Boleſur
Blundel

Burdet
Bagot
Beawpount
Bools
Belefroun
Barchampe

Camos
Canuille
Chawent
Chancy
Couderay
Coluile
Chamberlaine
Chambernoune
Cribet
Corbine
Corbet
Coniers
Chaundos
Coucy
Chaworthe
Claremaus
Clarell
Camuine
Chaunduyt
Claruays
Chantilowe
Colet
Creſſy
Courtenay
Conſtable
Chaucer
Cholmelay
Corneuile
Champeney
Carew
Chawnos
Claruaile
Champaine
Carbonell
Charles
Chareberge
Chawnes
Chawmont
Cheyne
Curſen
Conell
Chayters
Cheynes
Cateray
Cherecourt
Chaunuile
Clereney
Curley
Clifford

Deanuile
Dercy
Dine

Diſpencer
Daniell
Denyſe
Druell
Deuaus
Dauers
Doningſels
Darell
Delabere
De la Pole
De la Lind
De la Hill
De la Wate
De la Watche
Dakeny
Dauntre
Deſnye
Dabernoune
Damry
Daueros
De la Vere
De Liele
De la Warde
De la Planch
Danway
De Hewſe
Diſard
Durant
Drury

Eſtrange
Eſcutauile
Eſcriols
Engayne
Euers
Eſturney

Foluile
Fitz Water
Fitz Marmaduk
Fibert
Fitz Roger
Fitz Robert
Fanecourt
Fitz Philip
Fitz William
Fitz Payne
Fitz Alyne
Fitz Raulfe
Fitz Browne
Foke
Frenile
Faconbridge
Friſſell
Filioll
Fitz Thomas
Fitz morice
Fitz Hughe
Fitz Warren

Faunvile
Formay
Formiband
Friſon
Finer
Fitz Vrcy
Furnivall
Fitz Herbert
Fitz Iohn

Gargraue
Graunſon
Gracy
Glaunvile
Gouer
Gaſcoyne
Gray
Golofer
Grauns
Gurly
Gurdon
Gamages
Gaunt

Hanſard
Haſtings
Haulay
Huſie
Herne
Hamelyn
Harewell
Hardel
Hecket
Hamound
Harecord

Iarden
Iay
Ianvile
Iaſpervile

Karre
Karron
Kyriell

Leſtrange
Levony
Latomere
Loueday
Logenton
Levell
Le Scrope
Lemare
Litterile
Lucy
Liſlay, or Liele
Longſpes
Longſchampe

Laſteis
Lind-Sey
Loterell
Lindſey
Longuaile
Le Vawſe
Loy
Lave
Le Diſpenſer

Marmilou
Moribray
Morvile
Manley
Malebranch
Malemaine
Muſchampe
Muſgraue
Menilebillers
Mortmaine
Muſe
Marteine
Mountbocher
Malevile
Mountney
Maleherbe
Muſgros
Muſard
Mautravers
Merke
Murres
Montague
Mantalent
Mandute
Manle
Malory
Merny
Muffet
Menpincoy
Mainard
Morell
Morley
Mountmartin
Myners
Mauley
Mainwaring
Mantell
Mayel
Morton

Nevile
Neumarch
Norton
Norbet
Norece
Newborough
Neele
Normanvile

Otenel
Olibef
Oliſaunt
Oyſell
Oliford
Oryoll

Pigot
Percy
Perecount
Perſhale
Power
Paynel
Peche
Peverell
Perot
Picard
Pudſey
Pimeray
Pounſey
Punchardon
Pynchard
Placy
Patine
Pampilion
Poterell
Pekeney
Pervinke
Penicord

Quincy
Quintine

Roſe
Ridle
Rynel
Rous
Ruſſel
Rond
Richmond
Rochford
Reymond

Seuche
Seint Quintine
Seint Omer
Seint Amond
Seint Leger
Souervile
Sanford
Somery
Seint George
Seint Les
Savine
Seint Glo
Seint Albine
Seint Barbe
Sandevile,

Seint More
Seint Scudemore

Towrs
Toget
Talybois
Tuchet
Truſlot
Trusbut
Traynel
Taket
Talbot
Tanny
Tibtote
Truſſel
Turbevile
Turvile
Totet
Tavers
Torel
Tirell
Totels
Taverner

Valence
Vancord
Vauaſour
Vender
Verder
Verdon
Aubrie de Vere
Vernoune
Venables
Venoure
Verland
Verlay
Vernois
Verny
Vilan
Vmframvile
Vnket
Vrnall

Wake
Walenger
Warde
Wardebus
Waren
Ware
Wateline
Watevile
Woly
Wyuell

Here

Here followeth the Sirnames of the Chiefe Noblemen, and Gentlemen, which came into England, with WILLIAM the Conquerour, according as I found them ſet downe in a very auncient *Role, which Role I receiued of Maiſter* THOMAS SCRIVEN *Eſquire,* in whoſe hands it remained at the publication of this Booke.

Cognomina Conquiſtorum Angliæ cum Domino Gulielmo *Duce Normaniæ & Conqueſtore Angliæ.*

AChard
Avereneges
Aielard
Alard
Aubeney
Avenel
Aſprevil
Audeny
Akein
Arcy
Amile
Aumidvile
Abbevile
Andvile
Albemarke
Aubrey
Archer

Baſtarde
Baignard
Barvile
Braſſard
Berad
Boygnard
Barkarvile
Baret
Baſſet
Bars
Belet
Beil
Breit
Boneit
Bluet
Brachet
Baket
Biſet
Blundel
Burdet
Blete
Barry
Berri
Bracy
Brenenile
Bountruile
Butenile
Beamehampe

Burnel
Buſſel
Beleice
Bonere
Bodler
Botiler
Bogod
Burle
Baul
Brenbe
Brus
Butelem
Bricourt
Brian
Boch
Bozim
Bion
Bailoil
Brocheris
Bardulfe
Bancan
Buſſey
Beamuis
Bleis
Bauentre

Camule
Carenile
Cardevile
Condrey
Curſey
Cautlon
Caily
Corbet
Clare
Curtais
Curthoſe
Chamlin
Coſtentin
Comthenſe
Cozmit
Chalenges
Chaſtlem
Courtneis
Chawers
Curty

Conun
Crioile
Charles
Chen
Chaucer
Chandos
Cunly
Curly
Crely
Colenile
Cabot
Charnel
Chamel
Charel
Cheinie

Darcy
Dunſtervile
Douchampe
Deſpenſer
Duredent
Drivall
Duket
Dreward
Delamare
Drunall
Dela
Denicourt

Eurous
Eſtotkirke

Faherburt
Foſſard
Freſel
Frevile
Freſſenile
Folenile
Firmunde
Fizgeffray
Firpers
Fitzwaters
Feskampe
Fizhu
Fizurs
Ferrer

Fornitall
Fineis
Fitzbrian
Friſon
Ferers
Fohamble
Frignes
Fitzgariz
Formentin

Gangy
Gremile
Gieunile
Gornumile
Gemule
Gerard
Giffard
Gondrel
Gorger
Goner
Gigod
Gaibit
Giptot
Garin
Gunter
Gras
Grauntſon
Gournay
Greis
Gamage
Gautere
Gorge

Hamule
Hantuile
Humchampe
Herebrace
Henile
Herenile
Hauet
Hachet
Haket
Haruy
Hanely
Herſy
Hai

Haſard

Hasard
Hausard
Hatser
Hubert
Hamelin
Harecurte
Hus
Henfe

Iardin

Kemes
Keines
Kufac
Kofin
Kamais

Laci
Liar
Lunecy
Luret
Lucy
Lidet
Linguenile
Levener
Licot
Lonecot
Lovell
Lefcei
Lambert
Lenn
Limare
Liſle
La

Maignard
Maureward
Mountford
Mountague
Mountbray
Maundevile
Mortmer
Manfel
Maſchy
Mungomer
Morvile
Meiſy
Munny
Mounteni
Mulet
Mumfichet
Martell
Morell
Muſard

Malcit
Milere
Molevorer
Manturners
Moreijs
Muelent
Meigne
Menul
Manne
Maceis
Mabuom
Mortem
Manfey
Mareſthall
Morley
Martinas
Murdacke
Metun
Manneiſin
Morin
Mire
Morim

Neemarch
Nepunt

Orniall
Oſevile
Orware

Paſſemer
Paſſenaunt
Picot
Poorvanger
Pers
Purcel
Pichard
Pypard
Pamel
Panel
Piterel
Penerel
Pleiſy
Paveli
Pilet
Parly
Palet
Piket
Percy
Punchet
Pachet
Punis
Pandulfe
Pulem

Penir
Penne
Phanecourt
Pales
Prouz
Pirim
Peiſim
Parteben
Puntfrait

Quinſi
Quatramart

Ruſſel
Rydel
Roter
Rochell
Rooz
Richmount

Seintenile
Somery
Say
Suneli
Sorel
Sereplace
Spivenile
Saundernile
Sonule
Soler
Sourrile
Stutenile
Soleny
Spigurnel
Seintbrenel
Soylard
Swywar
Saucer
Sauſaver
Seniler
Sainteler
Senittomer
Seintleger
Saundenal
Savage
Semtion
Saint-mareis
Saucei
Sal
Seignes
Seintlis
Seintmoris
Seintgorge
Seintiore

Seint-quintin
Seintmore
Sauntzire
Saintchy
Setuans
Seinte royiz
Seintelemе

Toret
Tavir
Turpet
Tramel
Torchapel
Tonny
Truſſel
Turnet
Torevile
Trevet
Tirel
Trans
Talebot
Turbenile
Tracy
Truſſebur
Toc
Tailpas
Truan
Tener
Tiſiure
Tayleboys

Verer
Vilers
Veſty
Vinframile
Veily
Vaieus
Veiſin
Vorill
Venur
Vavaſue
Vaus

Wydenile
Wimle
Wilby
Wadel
Ward
Wyſchard
Waldeboef
Waſtueis
Warem
Weirim

Yuoire.

This yeare through the great ſute and labour of William the Norman, then Biſhop of London, King William granted the Charter and liberties to the ſame William Biſhop, and Godfrey Portgreue and all the Bourgies of the Citie of London, in as large ſorme as they inioyed the ſame, in the time of Saint Edward before the Conqueſt: In reward wherof, the Citizens

Citizens haue fired on his graue, being in the middeſt of the great Weſt Ile of Saint Pauls Church in London, this Epitaph following.

Reddita libertas duce te, donataque multis,
Te duce, res fuerat publica muneribus.
Dinitias, genus, & formam breuis opprimat hora,
Hæc tua ſed pietas, & benefacta manent.

Gvilielmo viro ſapientia & vita ſanctitate claro qui primum diuo Edwardo regi & Confeſſori familiaris, nuper in Epiſcopum Londinenſem, electus, nec multò poſt apud inuictiſſimum principem Guilelmum Anglia regem eius nominis primum, ob prudentiam fidemque ſingularem in conſilium adhibitus, ampliſſima huic vrbi celeberrima priuilegia ab eodem impetrauit: Senatus populuſque Londinenſis bene merenti poſuit. Sedit Epiſcopus Annos 20. Deceſſit anno à Chriſto nato 1070.

Hæc tibi, clare pater, poſuerunt marmora cines,
Præmia non meritis æquiparanda tuis:
Namque ſibi populus, te Londonienſis amicum,
Senſit, & hu[illegible] vrbi non lene præſidium.

To William a man famous in wiſedome and holineſſe of life, who firſt with Saint Edward the king and Confeſſour being familiar, of late preferred to be Biſhop of London, and not long after for his prudencie and ſincere fidelity, admitted to be of Counſell with the moſt victorious Prince William King of England, of that name the firſt, who obtained of the ſame great and large priuiledges, to this famous Citie: The Senate and Citizens of London to him hauing well deſerued, haue made this. He continued Biſhop twenty yeares, and died in the yeare after Chriſt his natiuitie, 1070. This ſeemeth by Engliſh.

These Marble monuments to thee thy Citizens aſſigne,
Rewards (O Father) farre vnfit to thoſe deſerts of thine.
Thee vnto them a faithfull friend, thy London people found,
And to this towne, of no ſmall weight, a Kay both ſure and ſound.
Their liberties reſtor'd to them, by meanes of thee haue beene,
Their publike weale by meanes of thee, large guifts haue felt and ſeene:
Thy riches, ſtocke, and beauty braue, one houre hath them ſuppreſt,
Yet theſe thy vertues and good deeds, with vs for euer reſt.

King William (leauing his brother Odo Biſhop of Bayon, and William Fitz Osberne whom he had made Earle of Hereford, to be wardens of England, returned into Normandie, which at that time was bent to thinke from him. He toke with him, Edgar Etheling, Stigand Archbiſhop of Canterbury, Frederike Abbot of Saint Albones, Egelnothus Abbot of Glaſtenbury, Edwine Duke of Mercia, Morcare Duke of Northumberland, Walden Earle of Northampton and Huntington, Robert Earle of Hertford, Renulph Earle of Cambridge, Gospatrike Earle of Cumberland, Gualter the Sonne of Siward, and many other Nobles of England, thinking they would be truer to him in a forreine Country then in their owne: by their diligence he induced the rebelling Normans. Yeodigna[illegible] the King of Scots marr[illegible] to Margaret. Siſter to Edgar. Caſtles at Nottingham and Yorke builded.

When winter was at hand, king William returned, and ſet an importable tribute on the Engliſh men.

William Conqueror gaue to Geffrey Magnaule, the Earledome of Eſſex, to the which Earledome, of ancient right belonged bearing of the Kings ſtandart, ſaith the Chronicle of VValtham.

After this, going into Deuonſhire, he beſieged Exceſter, which the citizens and other Engliſhmen held againſt him. The Counteſſe Githa mother of king Harold, and ſiſter to Swanus king of Denmarke, with many other fleing out of the Citie eſcaped, and got them ouer into Flaunders, and the citizens yelded to the king.

Mathild wife to king VVilliam, came forth of Normandie, and on Whitſonday, was conſecrated Queene by Aldred Archbiſhop of Yorke. Marleſwine, Gospatrike, and other Noble men of Northumberland, to auoyde king Williams rough and boyſterous dealing, and fearing to be put in ward, taking with them Edgar Etheling with his mother Agatha, and his ſiſters, Margaret and Chriſtian, went by Sea into Scotland, where they were receiued and well entertained of Malcolme king of Scots, who toke Margaret the ſiſter of Edgar to wife. King VVilliam with an army went to Nottingham, and there builded a Caſtle. He alſo went to Yorke, and there cauſed two Caſtles to be builded, and put in them garriſons: he commanded alſo Caſtles to bee made at Lincolne, and in other places. Whiles theſe things were in doing, Godwine and Edmond ſurnamed the Great, ſons to king Harolde, returning forth of Ireland, landed in Sommerſetſhire, where Edmothus that was maiſter of the horſe to king Harolde, met them with a great army, and fighting with them was ſlaine amongſt many other. The two brethren hauing got the victory, toke many great preyes in Cornewall and Deuonſhire, and returned into Ireland.

It was the practiſe of king VVilliam to put the Engliſhmen into all places of danger, by that meanes to weaken their force: for againſt certaine Engliſhmen, that after the battell at Haſtings, fled into Denmarke and Ireland, and came againe the third yeare after, with a great power, he ſet an Engliſh Captaine with an hoſte of Engliſhmen, ſo both the armies fought, and brought the victory to the king: the ſtrangers were chaſed into Ireland, but with great ſlaughter of themſelues, and loſſe of their Captaine Edmothus, a man excellent in the time of the Engliſhmen, both at home in his owne Country, and alſo abroad. He was the Father of Harding, who lined in the time of king Henry the ſecond. Thus when the power of the lay peo- Harding the ſonne of Edmothus.

...ished, that no Clarke of the English nation, should be suffered to come to any preferment. He abhorred both the gentlenesse of Edward which sometime had been King of England, for that he restored them, whom he had ouercome, vnto all their promotions and honours: whereby it came to passe, that when he was dead, the inhabitants did easily expulse the strangers, and challenge their old right, and title.

Leofrike. But King William deposed them, distributed the Earledomes, Baronies, Bishoprickes and dignities to his Normans: onely Hereward aforementioned in the yeare of our L. 1070, 1062. had rewarded with a prosperous end. For being in Flanders, and hearing, that the Realme was subdued by strangers, and that his Fathers inheritance (his father Leofrike being dead) was given to a Norman, and that his Mother a widow was much troubled and vnquied, commeth with speed into England with his wife Thurfride, and gathering together a company of his kindred, chased them out of his Fathers inheritance. Then goeth to his vncle by the Fathers side, then Abbot of Peterborough, and first making confession of his sinnes, and absolution receiued, watcheth all night in the Church, in prayers and talking, and the next day offered his sword vpon the Altar: and after the Gospell, the Abbot put the same hallowed sword about Herewards necke, with a benediction, and communicating the holy mysteries of Christ, from thenceforth remained a lawfull souldier of knight.

Hereward made knight.

This custome of consecration of a Souldier, the Normans abhorred: and not onely this in Rome, but many other they did alter and change: for the Englishmen making deeds and Charters, which to the time of King Edward had beene firme, by the subscriptions of the faithfull with Crosses of Gold, and other holy seales, the Normans did condemne those Charters and Deeds, and appointed them to make their Charters and Deeds firme, with a pinne set vpon wax, by the speciall Seale of euery one, vnder three or foure witnesses.

Charters made.

At the first, many Farmes and Mannors were given by bare words, without writing: onely with the sword of the Lord, or his head-peece, with a horne, or standing goblet: and many tenements, with a quill, with a hose combe, a bow, or arrow, to wit, in the beginning of his raigne: but in the yeares after this maner was changed. They did so much abhorre the very speech, that the Lawes of the land were pleased in the French tongue. And boyes in Schooles were taught their letters, & principles in Grammar in French, and not in English, &c.

Among the lawes of William Conqueror, there is one of the Church as followeth. If any man breake the peace of the Church violently, he is in the jurisdiction of the Bishops to haue iustice, but if the partie that is guilty, flye from it, or arrogantly refuse the Bishops order, the King within foure dayes shall bee enformed of it, who will presently take surety of him, that he shall satisfie God first, and then the King: but if within thirty dayes he cannot be found, the king by the words of his owne mouth shall outlaw him, and if after he be found, and may be kept, he shalbe deliuered to the king alive, or else his head if he defend himselfe, for he beareth the head of a Wolfe, after the day of his outlawrie, this is the generall law concerning outlawes.

Outlawes. Ecclesiastical customes.

The Earle of Flanders hauing sent assistance vnto William the Conquerour, towards his enterprise of England, required to know of him what part or portion of the said Countrey, he should haue for his share, if hee obtained it. The Conquerour answered that before his departure, he would giue him that to vnderstand by writing, which delaying euen vnto the very time that he was ready to embarke, he then in faire parchment folded and sealed vp, sent him two verses in French, the effect whereof in English is this.

The Conquerour promiseth Flanders to Baldwin.

I haue vnto your part assign'd,
All what here you written find.

And that was iust nothing, for in all the parchment there was not any one word written, saue onely these verses: giuing hereby to vnderstand that hee meant not to make him a sharer with him in the kingdome of England.

This yeare Henry the Kings sonne was borne in England: his other sonnes, Robert, William, and Richard, were borne beyond the Seas in Normandie, before he conquered England.

Anno reg. 1069. Henry the borne. Lib. Dunel.

King William gaue to Robert surnamed Cumin, the Earledome of Northumberland, of whose comming thither, when the men of that Countrey heard, they made themselues ready to forsake their houses, and to shift for themselues abroad: but sudainly there fell such abundance of Snow and roughnesse of weather, that they could not in any wise flye, wherefore they tooke a deuice and concluded, either to flye the Realme, or else to dye all together, for the liberty of the Country. The which thing when the Bishop of Durham vnderstood, hee went out to meet the Earle, and exhorted him to turne backe againe: but hee suffering his souldiers to robbe and spoyle, would not heare any counsell of health, but forthwith entred Durham with seauen hundred men, spoyling like enemies through the houses of Durham euerie where what they liked for the time, which lasted not long, for on the next morning earely the men of Northumberland being gathered together, burst open the gates, and running vp and downe, slay all that they met in that Citty, that take part with the Earle, whereby all the streets were filled with blood and dead bodies: some there were that defended the entry of the house wherein the Earle was, and had thought to haue saued himselfe, but the other by fire endeauoured to burne the house, with all that were therein, wherehy the West tower of the Church was burnt, but through the wind that then blew out

out of the East the Church escaped burning: notwithstanding the house yet burning as it began, some of them that were within were burnt: and other some whilest they burst out to saue themselues, were immediately slaine, so that the Earle himselfe was dispatched, and all his souldiers sauing one that hardly escaped being wounded. King William taking great displeasure with these doings of the Northumbers, directed a certain Duke with an army, to reuenge the slaughter of Earle Robert: but when they were come to Alnerton, and was in the next morning setting forward towards Durham, there arose such a darknesse of weather through thicknesse of Clouds, that they could vnneth see one another, so that they could not finde their way, whereupon they returned, and so it came to passe, God hauing pitty vpon them, that they heard of the departure of their enemies before they heard of their comming towards them.

About the same time, by the testimony of an old Chronicle in the Library at Richmond, King William gaue such a guift of Lands as followeth.

Richmond.

I *William* King, the third yeare of my raigne,
Giue to the Norman Hunter, to me that art both life and deere,
The Hop and the Hopton, and all the bounds vp and downe,
Vnder the earth to hell, aboue the earth to heauen,
From me and from mine, to thee and to thine,
As good and as faire, as euer they mine were,
To witnesse that this is sooth, I bite the white waxe with my tooth,
Before *Iugge*, *Maud*, and *Margery*, and my yongest Sonne *Henry*,
For one Bow and broad Arrow, when I come to hunt vpon Yarrow.

William gaue to Norman.

Somewhat before the feast of the nativity of our blessed Ladie, Harold and Canutus sonnes to Swanus king of Denmarke, Earle Esborne, Earle Turkellus, Christerne their Bishop, and many other, with 204. ships, comming forth of Denmarke, landed in the mouth of the River of Humber, where Cleo Edgar, Earle Waltheus, and Merleswyne, with many other, and the nauy which they had assembled came to them, of whose comming Aldred Archbishop of Yorke being very sorrowfull, made earnest intercession to Almighty God, that he might not see the vtter ruine and destruction of his Country, fell sicke, and ended his life in the yeare next following, as shall be shewed.

Sweyn King of Denmarke in England.

The eight day after the landing of the Danes, to wit, on the nineteenth day of September, the Normans that kept the Castle of Yorke, fearing least the houses that were nere to the Castle should be a furtherance to the enemies to fill vp the ditches, began to set fire on them, & to burne them vp: which fire increasing to exceedingly, inuaded all the city, and consumed the Monasterie of S. Peter, together with the City, but this act was greeuously reuenged on them very speedily, for before all the City was burnt, the Danish Nauy came, to wit, on the Monday, being the 21. of September, and breaking the Castles, the same day slew aboue 3000. Normans, sauing Will. Mallet and his wife, two of their children, & few other: which done, they returned to their ships with innumerable bootes. Which doing, when it was signified to the king, he forthwith assembled an army, and hasted with an angry mind towards Northumberland, not ceasing to wast that country all that winter, to kill men, and to do all the mischiefe that was possible. In the meane time, messengers being sent to the Danish Earle Esborne, king William promised to giue to him no small summe of money, and to permit his army freely to take victuals, by the Sea coste, with this condition onely, that winter being past, he should depart without battell. Esborne being in greedy of gain and siluer, not without great shame, yeelded to his requests, and departed without more claime of this kingdome for that time.

King William surnamed the Bastard with the Danes to depart without battell.

By reason that the Normans had wasted England in Northumberland, and in certain other places in the yeare before, now this yeare, and the next that followed, such a dearth increased through all England, especially through Northumberland and the Countries adiacent, ...ning, that men were faine to eat horse flesh, ... dogs, and mans flesh: for all the Land thor... betwixt Durham and Yorke, lay waste without inhabitants, and people to till the ground, for the space of 9. yeares, except onely the territorie of Saint Iohn of Beuerlake.

Famine sorely ... flesh ... of men.

When Egelsine Bishop of Durham heard of the comming of king William, he and the elders taking aduise together, fled to the Church of holy Iland: but in the meane season the kings army being scattered throughout all places whatsoeuer betwixt Tese and Tine, found nothing but empty houses euery where: and then was burnt the Church of Saint Paul at Yarrow.

Anno reg. 4. 1070.

The Church of Durham being bereft of all ecclesiasticall seruice was left like a desert, but Lent being at hand, when peace was made, the Bishop returned againe, and entred the Church the first of Aprill, where he found the Image of the Crucifix cast to the ground, and altogether spoyled of the ornaments. Though a counsell of William Fitz Osberd Earle of Hereford, & certaine other in the Lent season, K. William caused the Monasteries of all England to be searched, and the money which the richer sort of the English people, for the cruel spoyling which they saw in him had layd vp in the same Abbeyes, he caused to be brought into his treasury. Roger of Wendouer saith, he bereaued all the Monasteries and Abbeyes in England, of their gold and siluer, sparing neither Chalice nor Shrine, appropriating the said Monasteries and Abbeyes to himselfe: he brought vnder knights seruice, all those Bishoprickes and Abbeyes that held Baronies, which had beene free from all secular bondage, appointing them how many Souldiers they should finde him and his successors in

Marianus.

Monasteries pilfered. R. Wendouer.

in time of Warres.

Marianus Scotus. Archbishop of Canterbury is deposed.

A great counsell was holden at Winchester by commandement of the king, who also was present at the same, Pope Alexander consenting thereunto, sent by his Legates Ermenfred Bishop, and the Priests, John and Peter Cardinals of the sea Apostolike, who exhibited there his authoritie. In which counsell Stigand Archbishop of Canterbury was degraded for three causes, to wit, because he did possesse unjustly the Bishopricke of Winchester, together with his Archbishoprick, and because that whilest the Archbishop Robert was yet living, he had not onely taken upon him the Archbishoprick, but also in celebrating of divine service, for a time used the Pall, which remained at Canterbury, when he was expelled unjustly by violence out of England, and after received the Pall of Benedict, whom the Church of Rome did excommunicate, for that he had invaded the Apostolike sea by money. His brother Agelwine Bishop of the East Angles, and diuers Abbots, were there degraded by the Kings meanes, that other of his nation might be placed in their rooms, for the conformation of his kingdome, many, as well Bishops as Abbots, who for no evident cause were deprived of their honour, and by the king unto their lives end holden in prison.

When the Feast of Saint Iohn Baptist was at hand, Earle Esborne with his Navie which had wintered in Humber (according to appointment made) returned into Denmarke, but his brother Swain King of Denmarke banished him that Realme, for the money (which against his will, & the will of the Danes) he had received of king William: whereby it appeareth, that Swain king of Denmarke surrealed not his claime to the crown of England, as some have affirmed, namely in a Table, untruely intituled, The true portraiture of the countenances, and attires of the Kings of England, &c. collected by T. T. wherein his words be these, Wil. of Normandie, &c. twise the crowne upon him by election of the Estates, (the contrary whereof is true) then seking to stop titles, he imprisoned Edgar Etheling, the onely true heyre of the Saxons bloud, and by means of Ethelbert Archbishop of Hambozow for money procureth Swaine King of Denmarke to surrealse the claime of the Danes, hauing thus established his affaires, &c. which errot the said T. T. hath framed by misinterpreting of his Author Adam Bremensis, whose words be these: *Inter Suen & Bastardum perpetua contentio de Anglia fuit, licet nostet pomiscx numerius Guilelmi persuasus inter reges pacs firmare volueris.* Which is to be Englished thus: betweene Swene and the bastard, there was continuall contention, although our Bishop being perswaded with the gifts of William, would haue established peace betweene the Kings. Marke how little this Author serueth to his interpretation, and note to our Historie.

Earle Esborne returneth to Swain Denmarke.

The Danes make continuall claime to the Crowne of England many yeares, as by the History following may appeare.

Adam Bremensis.

K. William having placed a Canon of Bayon, named Thomas the elder, in the Archbishops sea of Yorke, doth now call for Lanfranke Abbot of Caen in Normandie, that was a Lumbard, borne in the City of Papia, a man skilfull in science, prudent in counsell and gouernment of things, and for religion and life most holy, hereby made Archbishop of Canterbury. This Lanfranke being consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury, he consecrated Thomas Archbishop of Yorke, but not before he had made profession of subiection to the said Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury, which the said Thomas was ordered by the King to doe, and did before his consecration.

Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury being in such fauor with king William, that the same William thought not good to deny any thing that he requested, procured by his industrie that the said king left his euill custome of selling his prisoners, which he tooke in Ireland: which was a thing hardly granted to him, and to Wolstane bishop of Worcester, the gaines that the king had by the sale of those Irishmen was such.

Arnulph. 107. W. Malm.

The Earles, Edwine of Mercia, Morcare of Northumberland, Siward surnamed Bran, Egelwine bishop of Durham, with many knights, and soldiers, both of the Clergie and lay people, fearing that king William would put them in prison, secretly fled out of the Court, and for a time rebelled against him, till they perceiued ỹ thing they had taken in hand went not well with them and then Earle Edwine determining to goe to Malcolme King of Scots, was in the way thereward slaine through the treason of his owne people.

Houeden. Scots ou Eng. Edwine Morcare other. Walth. R. Wend.

Edwine slaine.

Eglewine bishop of Durham, Earle Morcare, Siward surnamed Bran, and Hereward, a right valiant person, with many other went into woods and wild places of the Country, because they were not able to abide the force of K. William: and after they had done much harme in many places, at last, they came into the Ile of Ely by boat, and chose there a place in the Fens, they make Hereward their Captaine of the warre, where he did many warlike feats, so often ouercomming his enemies, so many times deluding them, that he deserued perpetuall commendations, for as long as he could, he sustained the ruines of his country decaying.

Hereward.

Whereof when as king William was aduertised, he gathered a great power, marched thitherward, and stopped their going out of the Ile on the East side thereof, and caused a bridge or causway of two miles in length to be made in ỹ West part. He also (saith Roger of Wendouer) builded a Castle from the ground vp, in a place called Wilsbech, whereupon they of the Ile perceiuing themselues so inclosed, they raysed a Fort of Castle of turffes and timber in the marshes, which by the inhabitants of that country, is called the Castle of Hereward: this Castle they tooke, fought against the assaulting of the Kings host, and fought with their enemies in my dayes together. From thence the King went to the castle of Cambridge, from whence as the necessitie of the time required, sent out diuers companies to beseige and trouble the next places unto the Ile, for the King himselfe was called unto other businesse, and enforced to repaire into Normandy, to speake with Philip King of France. In the meane time Hereward, & the nobles of England obtained by price, that which they could not doe by prayer, and wan the Scots to take their part against the Normans. And also the Danes fauouring them, did greatly desire to triumph ouer the Normans. Further, there were within the Realme great commotions on every part, as well by the Normans as other against ỹ king by perswasion of Earle Ralph de Walfar, calling Hereward into that faction, and others the Nobles of England, as Morcare, Ethelm, Walthenum, Siward, & Edgare. At which time Hereward leauing the Ile of Ely, committed to him for safegard, went towards the English, to whom a valiant company of young souldiers did ioyne themselues, which no man durst encounter.

Malcolme king of Scots with an innumerable multitude of Scots, passing through Cumberland, and turning himselfe aside towards the East, did cruelly forrage all Tesdale, & the places nigh adioyning: but when they came to a place called Hundredskeld, after they had there slaine certaine noble men of the English nation, the king of Scots sent home part of his army laden with spoyles. Then he set upon Holderneste and destroyed the same with a sodaine desolation: then raging through the ground of S. Cuthbert of Durham, he cruelly deprined all men of their goods, and many of their liues. At the same time also did he consume with fire, the Church of S. Peter at Weremouth, and diuers other Churches, with them that were thither fled to saue themselues. And whiles the said Malcolme rode about the riuer bankes, delighting his eyes with the cruell acts committed against the English people, it was told him that Edgar Etheling with his sisters of the bloud royall, & many other Noblemen, banished from their lawfull inheritance were arriued in that hauen: he came to them, & shaking hands with them, gaue them and all theirs, licence with his assured peace to dwell in his kingdome as long as they would.

Malcolme King of Scots.

Earle of Northumberland.

Besides these robberies of the Scots, Gospatrike of Northumberland, did assaile Cumberland, & made there great slaughter and burnings and after returned with great booty, to a strong fortresse at Babbanbrigh, where he with his fellowes inclosed themselues: for at that time Cumberland was under the jurisdiction of king Malcolme, who when he heard what was done by Gospatrike, he charged his souldiers to spare none of the English nation: whereupon, pitifull it was to behold, old men, and women, some were killed with swords, some pierced with speares the yong babes taken from the mothers paps, were cast by into the fyre, & falling downe again, were received on their speares, & then the speare staues striken into the ground in a bushment together: but the yong men and maidens, such as were thought meet to labour, were bound, and forced to be slaues. Malcolme beholding ỹ teares of these, to encrease his tyranny, commanded them to be scourged in their going forward.

At this time (saith Houeden) Scotland was so replenished with bondslaues, men and women of the English nation, that no village or cottage could be found without them.

The Castle of Ledes in Kent was builded by Crequeure, a noble man, a Norman.

The Castle of Oxford was builded by Robert de Olly the first, a notable man that came into England with K. William the Conquerour. Oxford Castle builded.

Also William Earle of Warren, that came in with William the Conquerour, and married Gundred daughter to the said William, this yere founded the Priory of Lewes in Sussex. Cro. Osney.

This yeare by the commandement of Pope Alexander, and consent of king William the Conquerour, in the presence of the said king, his Bishops, Prelates, and Nobilitie, the title of Primacie, the which Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury did claime ouer the Church of Yorke, and concerning the ordering of certain Bishops, whom men were uncertaine, unto which Archbishop they should especially belong, was graunted and tryed out: where, by the authoritie of old writings it was proued and declared, that the Church of Yorke ought to be subiect unto the Church of Canterbury, and ought faithfully to obey the same, in all matters pertaining unto Christian religion, as being Primate of all England. And the Archbishop of Yorke, and his successors to haue under their iurisdiction: the Bishoprickes of Durham, that is to say, Lindisferne, and from the great River of Humber unto the vttermost part of the borders of Scotland, and also whatsoeuer doth appertaine to the Parish of Yorke upon the side of the River: to that if the Archbishop of Canterbury do summon a councell in any place, the Archbishop of Yorke and all his suffragans Subiects, and Clarkes shall be there present at his commandement, and shall be obedient unto his Canons and orders, &c. at Windzore. 1072. R. Wendouer. W. Malmesb. A Synode wherein was pronued that the Archbishop of Yorke shoulde be subiect to the Archbishop of Canterbury

King William having in his company Edrike surnamed Silvaticus, or Wild, marched towards Scotland with a Nauy by Sea, and with an armie of Horsemen by Land, to haue subdued Scotland, for that Malcolme had in the yere last before passed, so cruelly desolated the borders of his kingdome. King William sent into Scotland, and Malcolme king of Scots did homage unto him.

In the which journey, when King William came into Durham, he entred the Church with great deuotion for to pray, and afterwards, he inquiring of the life and conuersation of the Confessour Cuthbert, and also of the antiquity of that Bishopricke, he confirmed all the liberties of that same Church, &c.

This being done, King William went into Scotland, against whom King Malcolme came unto a place called Aberiathey, and became his man. And after King William deprined Gospatrike of his Earledome, laying unto his charge, that he had consulted with them that slew the Earle Robert Comen of Durham, and that he was among the enemies, when the Normans were slaine at Yorke: who being expulsed, Waltheus was extolled unto that Earledome, being due unto him both by Father, and mother, for he was the Sonne of Earle Siward by Elfled, the daughter of Aldred sometime Earle.

Ethelred. Cro. Osney. Ingulph. Hou. Reg. 6.

Castle at Rochester builded.

At the same time when king William returned from Scotland, he builded a Castle at Durham, wherein the Bishop might kepe him and his safe, from such as made assaults. Castle at Durham builded.

This yere Eglewine Bishop of Durham, who had bin by K. William committed to prison first at Abindone, and since at Westminster deceased, ✠ was buried there in S. Nicholas Chappell.

Ann. reg. 7. 1073. R. Wendouer. King William went into Normandy, which Dukedome was then rebellious against him. but with strong hand he subdued the City of Mayne, and the whole Countrey, especially by the helpe of Englishmen, whom he applyed in these affaires, they spoyled the Cities, Townes, Vineyards and Cornefields, whereby they greatly weakned and impouerished that Prouince.

Clito Edgar. Clito Edgar at this time came forth of Scotland, and passing through England, went into Normandie, and was there agreed with K. William.

The Monkes of Ely submit themselues to King William. About this time the Monkes of Ely, seeing the miseries of themselues, and of the whole Iland, determined to try the kings clemency, for there was such a dearth in the land, as the like had not bene seene, for all prouision being spent, many thousandes died through hunger, since it was now the seauenth yere since they had bene besieged, wherefore taking their journey to Warwike a famous towne, they came to the king with great reuerence, commending themselues and all that they had to his clemencie. Thurstane and his Monks standing before king William, beseeched him for the mercy of God, to turne his displeasure from their City, promising faithfully hereafter to obey him. The Abbot said, that if the king would restore vnto the Abbey their possessions, violently taken from them, he might haue sure entrance into the Ile, which the King granted, and commanded William de Warren, and Gilbert de Clare, that they should become pledges for the same. Whereupon the Abbot conferred with them about the regathering together of their possessions, who (going after to his owne) did first instruct Gilbert de Clare, and Earle Warren of the manner of the rebellion, willing them not to feare for the often repulse of the enemies, for they should haue his counsell and helpe, whereby the king might vnderstand that the power of the enemies was weakned.

Wherevpon the king began to triumph, as though he had already got the victory: he assembled therefore as great an army as he could both of Horsemen and Footmen, he toke his journey to Ely, he prepareth his engines, layeth siege to the place which was of most defence, and daily laboured to ouerthrow that which Canutus neither with wit, or strength, with pollicy, or sword could at any time subdue.

At length, though with difficulty wonderfull to be declared, he safely brought his army neare that any one thought he could haue done, which was euen to the waters of Ely, the Normans passed Coningslade, neither did it grieue ✠ King first to passe ouer many Riuers, although he was almost drowned at the point Gale: he ceased not for marshes or other neuer so dangerous, till the sounding voice of victory quickly drawe the enemies out of the Iland, but the Normans compassing the enemies, did in a moment slay a thousand of them, wherefore the king as soone as he had entred the Iland, went about the mores, marshes, and crooked waies, ✠ both with siege inclose the whole company of his enemies. These armed men are brought forth, first the Captaines, then the better sort of the other, whereof he imprisoneth some, and put out ✠ eyes cut off the hands and feet of other some, ✠ suffered the multitude of the common people to depart.

King William in perill of drowning at Stone Gate.

In this Ile he found abundance of beastes and cattell manifold to recompence his slaine horses and other damages. Edwine is taken, and with him many persons of name and power, who were bound in streight prison, but Morcare was escaped: forthwith the king sent a great company to keepe the gates of the Monasterie, to the end the Monkes with crosses and other ceremonies should not meet him and intreat for pardon at his hand, whereunto he must needs haue granted. Wherefore when he came to the Monasterie, he stod alone from the tombe of Saint Etheldred, and hurled a marke of gold vpon the Altar. Which done, and hauing placed a Garrison within the walls of the Monkes, he disposed of Cambridge, Huntington, ✠ Bedfordshires, committing them to such men as he had brought out of France: and likewise placing a strength of Frenchmen, in the Castle of Alreched, he went out of the Iland, the same way by which he entred into it: there was no diuine Seruice since that vnto the xviij. of October, the time was so troublesome. After the king was departed, the Church doores were fast locked: and Gilbert de Clare entring the Monasterie to see the monks places of offices, in the end came into the refectory, and finding the Monks at dinner, sayd to them, Oh wretches and slothfull persons, had you none other time to dine in, but whilest the King remained in your Church: With which word they all rising, ran to the Church: but when they found not the King there, they were greatly troubled: wherefore hauing no hope but in God, they required Gilbert de Clare, that by his meanes they might obtaine a firme Peace, which in the end taking vpon him to doe, he went to the king, and with great difficulty obtained the same: with condition, that when the Monkes came before him, they should by prayer or price pacifie his displeasure against them.

King William lay at Winchcomb.

This done, he brought the Monkes before the king to Winchcomb, where he then sojourned, who being with much a doe brought in fauour with the king by the said Gilbert, and other noblemen, promised 700. markes of siluer. For the preuenting whereof, the Monks were enforced to spoile and sell the iewels ✠ ornaments of their Church, and then repaire to Cambridge to pay that money to the kings officers: but one great being lacking of the said summe, by the deceit of such as did tell it, ✠ waight was not iust by so much. Whereof when the king had vnderstood, he was greatly offended with them, denying vnto them all manner of hope of any further peace. Whereupon they were driuen to make another composition of a thousand markes, for the which they were faine to spoile, and to sell whatsoeuer other kind of ornaments that were left, and yet notwithstanding, lacked that peace which they so much sought, and so dearely bought. Walter borne at Lorraine, was elected by the King,

King, and then consecrated Bishop of Durham.

King William the Conquerour with a great power of Englishmen went into Normandy, which rebelled, and subdued it, spoyling the Cities, Townes, Vineyards, &c.

Gregorie the seuenth, Pope, excommunicated all committers of Simonie, and removed married Priests from executing diuine Seruice, whereof rose great troubles in England.

Conspiracy against King William, by Radulph Earle of Norfolke and Suffolke.

Radulph whom lately before king William had made Earle of Norfolke and Suffolke, or, as some write, of the East Angles, now toke to wife (against the Kings commandement) the daughter of William Fitz Osbert, sister to Roger Earle of Hereford, and celebrating most royally the marriage feast, with a great multitude of Noble men at Exaingham in Cambridgeshire, conceiuing a pride of his marriage, for that his wife was the Kings kinswoman, suen vpon the marriage day, when the feast was solemnly kept, and the riotous superfluity of the Englishmen was entred into the Normans throates, the guests being drunken and full of wine, with a long circumstance of words, he opened his mind and purpose, whereunto the guests consented with a great shout. There was Roger Earle of Hereford, Radulphes wines brother: there was VValdeofus Earle of North-hampton and Huntington, and many other, who all conspired the kings death. But on the next morrow, when the heate of the wine was digested, and the minds of some of them come to better temper, the most part of them repented of that they had promised, and slipping away from the feast, VValdeofus as some as he could went to Lanfranke Archbyshop of Canterbury, and toke penance for his oath which he had receiued against his will, and through his aduise went to the king, then being in Normandy, and opening the matter vnto him, yeelded to his mercy. The other Nobles proceeding in their begun conspiracy, went to the Castles, and raised their people to open rebellion. But VVolstane Bishop of Worcester, with a great bande of men of warre resisted the Earle of Hereford, so that he might not (passing the Riuer of Seuerne) ioyne to Earle Radulph at the appointed place with his campe, in whose company was Aglewine Abbot of Euesham, with his people, hauing called to his ayde Vrse sheriffe of Worcester, and Walter de Lacie with their men, and other multitudes of common people.

Vrse Sheriffe of Worcester-shire. Walter Lacie.

But Odo Bishop of Bayon, and Godfrey Bishop of Constance assembling a mighty army all well of Englishmen as of Normans, came to encounter Earle Radulph beeing encamped at Cambridge, where Earle Radulph perceiuing that his enterprise wanted force, fearing the number of them that came against him, he secretly fled from thence to Norwitch, where committing the Castle to his wife and knights, he getteth himselfe to ship, and fled into little Britaine, whom his enemies pursuing, slew all those of his men that they might come to and after this they besiege the Castle, till that peace was granted, and licence to the Countesse and her people to depart the realme, and so she followed her husband.

Wonder put out, or their hands and feet cut.

Eyes put out. hands cut off, &c.

These things being done, the King in the haruest returning forth of Normandy, put Earle Roger of Hereford in prison, wherein he remained all the dayes of his life: and all the Welthmen that had bene at the Marriage, he caused to haue their eyes put out, their hands cut off, hanged on gibbets, or to be banished at the least. Earle VValtheofus also was committed to prison, although he went to the King, and had obtained of him a promise of pardon.

King William returneth out of Normandy.

Cause the seruants of Swaine K. of the Danes his name against England.

Coute the sonne of Swaine, and Hacon the Earle came out of Denmarke with two hundred ships full of men of warre: but when they heard that their fautors were ouercome, and banquished, they turned their backes, and fayled into Flanders, and durst not fight with King VVilliam: but VVilliam of Malmesbury sayeth that king VVilliam did likewise bribe earle Hacon, as before he had bribed earle Elborne.

R. Wendouer.

Anno 1074.

The Church of Saint Gregory, within the castle of Oxford was founded by Robert of Oylly the second, which was in the ninth yeare of W. the Conquerour.

The Church of S. Mary of Offney was founded by him, Anno 1129. An. 3. Hen. Pri.

Anno reg. 9. 1075. W. Malmes. John of Lond.

Edgitha late Queene of England, wife to King Edward, called (of some) the Simple, or (of other) Confessor, daughter to Duke Godwine, and sister to Harold late king of England, departed this life at Winchester, whose corps, by the kings commandement was brought to Westminster, and there by her husband solemnly enterred: she had a Tombe of siluer and gold curiously wrought. This Queene Edgitha professed on her death bed, that notwithstanding she had bene many yeares wife vnto King Edward, yet now she dyed a pure virgine.

Ingulphus.

King VVilliam banished certaine rebels, others he dismembred, as by putting out their eyes, and chopping off their hands. The Earles VValtheofus, and Roger, by iudiciall sentence, he condemned vnto more strait prisons.

At this time (saith Ingulphus) Brand Herewardes vncle, Abbot of Peterborowe, being dead, succeeded Thorold a stranger, by the gift of King VVilliam, which thing Hereward taking in ill part, that a stranger should rule ouer his kinsed, he inuaded Peterborow, and chased away the Abbot. And though in the said Abbots defence, Iuo Talbois a most mighty Norman, and by the guift of king William made Lord of all Holland in Lincolneshire, Hereward toke the said Iuo in open battell, and set him free from a great summe of money. To this Iuo Talbois, king VVilliam had giuen to wife Lucie, the sister of the Earles Edwine and Morcare, with all the lands and reuenements that to the said Earles had appertained.

Hereward chased the Abbot of Peterborow. Iuo Hereward feeble Iuo Talbois and rans fomed him.

At this time moreouer, to increase the calamity, hapned the cruel beheading of earle VValtheofe or VValden: and although Lanfranke,

Archbishop of Canterbury his Confessour, acclaimed him to be free from the conspiracie and faction, and that if it chanced him to dye in that cause, hee should for his innocencie be counted a Martyr, yet his most wicked wife, coueting to be married anew, did most hainously hasten the death of her husband. Certaine Normans also gaping after his Carledomes, namely of Hozthampton and Huntington, and Iuo Talbois earle of Angew, most greedy to make those lands and tenements his owne, by blood-shedding, this innocent and harmelesse man was beheaded without the Cittie of Winchester, vpon the last day of the moneth of May, and was there basely buried, in a place, where since was builded the Chappell of S. Giles: but fiftene dayes after by permission of the king, his body was conueyed vnto Crowland, and was there honourably buried. Mawd the daughter of Earle Walcheofes widow, after the decease of her husband, with her two Daughters, had the Lordship of Huntington giuen to her in the name of a dowrie, and there made their abode, vntill such time as the king was willing to marrie her to a knight borne in France, named Simon Sylueticus or Seinctiz. For hither came two brethren to the ayde of the king, and to serue him with fortie soldiers Horsemen, their names were Guarnerus le Riche, and Simonde Seinctiz, and their fathers name was Raulph le Riche, after whose death the eldest sonne, Guarnerus went backe into his native Countrey, and succeeded in his fathers possessions: but Simon the younger sonne remained here with the king, vnto whom the king gaue the Towne and Carledome of Hozthampton, and the Hundred of Farkeley, he builded the castle of Hozthampton, and also the Abbey of Saint And ewes there. The king would haue giuen vnto him Iudith the widow of Earle Walcheofus, but shee refused him, because that he halted on the one leg: in wrath whereof, king VVilliam bestowed vpon him the whole honour of Huntington, and so was hee called Earle of Hozthampton and of Huntington &c.

This yere mine oft alleaged Author Ingulphus, was by the kings guift made Abbot of Crowland, which Ingulphus, of himselfe, and his vocation to the Abbacie of Crowland, writeth thus: I Ingulphus, an humble seruant of God and Saint Guthlake, and of the Monastery of Crowland, borne in England, and of English parents, in the most beautifull citie of London, for to attaine to learning, I was first put to Westminster, afterward to Oxford to study. When I had profited in reading Aristotle aboue many mine equals in age, I studied also Tullies Rhetoricke: waxing elder, loathing the base estate of my parents daily moze and moze, I desired to leaue my father and mothers house, and so bee in kings and Princes pallaces, to be attyred in silkes and gozgious apparell. And behold, noble William, now our king of England, then Duke of Normandie, came to London, to talke with his cosin king Edward, then king of England, with a great traine attending vpon him, vnto whom I sone ioyned my selfe, shunking forward, to dispatch all businesse arising, I became in a little time knowne to Duke VVilliam, and was of him very well beloued, and with him I sayled into Normandie, there was I made his Secretary, I ruled the whole Court of the Duke at my pleasure, to the enuy of many.

At length it was noised, that many Archbishops and Bishops of the Empire, and many other Princes would goe to Jerusalem, I among other, as well souldiers as clarkes, with the licence of my Lord the Duke, prepared my selfe. Comming into Constantinople, wee did reuerence to the Emperour Alexes, &c. Departing from thence through Licia, we fell into the hands of Arabian robbers that tooke from vs much money: we came at the length to Jerusalem, where the Patriarke Sophronius receiued vs honourably, and brought vs to the Church of the holy Sepulcher, and so to other places. In the spring returning home by Rome, and so into Normandy, I hasted to the Abbey of Fontenill, where I receiued the habit of a Monke, meaning to purge and amend, as the grace of the holy Ghost inspired me, the offences of my youth, and ignozances, &c. At what time Duke VVilliam vnderstanding of the death of king Edward his cosin, expected a fauourable wind in the port of S. Walarike, to saple ouer into England, I presented vnto him the Abbots guift, to wit, twelue young men chosen out of Boylebacke and armed, with an hundred Marks towards his expences in that voyage, and I returned to the Monasterie. After certaine yeres VValketelus Abbot of Croyland was deposed of his office: King VVilliam sent to the Abbot of Fontanill for me, &c. To London I came to the king, their inuested of the Scaffe and Pastozall office of Croyland Monastery, and consecrated on the day of the Nativity of our Lord. On the day of the Conuersion of S. Paul, I first came to Croyland, and was installed, 1075.

The King passing ouer the Sea, went into little Britaine, and besieged there the Castle of Dolence belonging to Earle Ralph, but Philip King of France came with a great power vpon them, and toke all victuals from them, so that King William was forced to leaue his siege with the losse of many Souldiers and Hozses, with much other substance: and not long after King William made peace with them.

Walter Bishop of Durham, contrary to his Bishoplike dignity, intermeddled himselfe with secular and worldly matters, and bought of king VVilliam the Carledome of Hozthumberland, and then playing the part of a Sheriffe, sate in a secular and lay Court, determining of matters, extorting infinite Sums of money, as well of the Noblemen, as of the others of that same Province, &c.

The earth was hard frozen from the first day of Nouember, vntill the mid of Aprill.

King William the Conqueror gaue the Castle with the Towne of Pontfract, and the land lying thereabout, to Hilbert Lacie, a Noz- man, the which Castle, Towne, and lands before the Conquest belonged vnto one Richard Asnolde, who had issue Ailricke, who had Swayne, who had Adam, of whom came two daughters, one of the which two daughters was married vnto Gawfride Newell, and the other vnto Thomas Breugh, but neither of them had any part of the Towne oz lands about the Towne of Pontfract: Robert sonne to Hildebert Lacie, founded the Priorie of Pontfract.

About the same time Robert the kings sonne, vnto whom, when as he had conquered England he had giuen the Dukedome of Normandy in the presence of Philip King of France, because now his Father would not suffer him to possesse the Dukedome of Normandie, the said Robert went into France, and by the ayde of the said King Phillip, committed great robberies, and toke great preyes in Normandy, and burned Townes, and slew the people, doing no small vexation vnto his Father, so that King William the conqueror fighting a battaile against his Sonne Robert, before the Castle of Gerborte in France, was vnhozsed himselfe, and his sonne William was wounded, and many of his family there slaine. Wherefoze King William the Conqueror cursed his sonne Robert, the which curse he felt eminently before he dyed, foz there did nothing prosper with him.

Paul a Monke of Caue, is made Abbot of Saint Albones, who in short space by the counsell and ayde of Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury, he builded very trimly a new Church and Cloyster there, and all offices, and adorned the same Church with many good Bookes, and rich ornaments.

This yere on Palme Sunday, about the first houre, the Ayre being cleere and faire, a great Starre appeared, and was seene of many neere vnto the Sunne.

This yere Malcolme king of Scots, on the fifteenth day of August, with an Army wasted Hozthumberland vnto the River of Tine, slew many and toke great preyes, and people of the Countrey, which they returning, conueyed into Scotland.

Also in the same yere the Cathedrall Church of Hereford was burned by Griffith the Prince of Wales, and Algar sonne vnto Leofrike Earle of Mercia.

Roger de Beleſme oz Montgomery, founded of an old Church in the Suburbes of the Towne of Scrobsbury an Abbey of blacke Monkes, dedicated vnto GOD, Saint Peter and Paul: he made Fulcharduis his Sonne first Abbot there. He also placed Monkes at Wenloke, in the Priorie sometime founded by Milbrough, after to Mildred, and by Leofrike Earle of Chester foz Nunnes.

Gundulphus bysbop of Rocheſter was surueyoz of the great worke of the Tower of London, which Tower was builded by the commandement of King William. And this Gundulfe founded the Abbey of Pawling in Kent foz Nunnes: he builded part of the Castle of Rochester, and founded the Hospitall of Saint Bartholomew without the East gate of that Cittie, which is in some Recozdes called Chetham, &c.

Walter bysbop of Durham, borne in Lorraine as is afozesaid, is slaine by the Northumbers, in a place called Gateshed, in reuenge of a Noble man named Leulsus, before slaine by meanes of the Bishops Chaplaine named Leofwinus. The said Leulfus in many parts of England inioyed many possessions by right of inheritance, but because the Normans euerie where practised their cruelty, he got himselfe with all his family to Durham, her had to wife Algitha, daughter to Earle Aldred, of whom he begate two sonnes Vtred and Morcare.

This Leulfus was so beloued of the bishop, that without his counsell, he would doe nothing of any great weight, foz the which cause the bishops Chaplaine Leofwinus greatly hated the said Leulfus, and therefoze on a time going out of the courthouse, oz mote hall called vnto him Gilbert, a man to whom the Bishop had committed the Carledome of Northumberland vnder him to be gouerned, he required him to reuenge his displeasure against the said Leulfus, and as sone as he could to put him to death, which he performed in this manner, gathering together his men of warre, one night went vnto the village where Leulfus dwelt, and there in his owne house, together with all his family, slew him, which thing being knowne, the Bishop loze vered in displeasure therewith, take his hood from his head, threw it to the ground, and said to Leofwine his Chaplaine, these things are done by thy meanes Leofwine, and therefoze I will that thou know foz certaine that thou hast killed me, and all my family with the sword of thy tongue. Hauing this said, he got him straight into the Castle, and forthwith sending Messengers through Northumberland, he caused to be declared to all men, that he was nothing priuie to the death of Leulfus, but was now desirous to banish his slayer Gilbert and all his fellowes in that action, and foz him selfe he was ready to purge himselfe according to the Ecclesiasticall lawes. This being signified the bishop and friends of him that was slaine, professing to be at peace together, appointed a day and place of meeting together, where they might establish a moze firme peace: now when the day came, they met at the place appointed, but the bishop refusing to talke with them abroad, abode in the Church thereby with his Clearcie and knights, and when the talke was began, once oz twice he sent out to them of his Councellors, to make an attonement, but they would not agree, because they beleued that Leulfus was slaine by the bishops consent, foz the night after the slaughter of Leulfus, not onely Leofwine did receiue Gilbert and his complices into his house familiarly, but also the Bishop did the like. Whereupon, all those that were found out of the bishops place they slew, very few excepted, that gate away by slight, which thing perceiued by the bishop, he to satisfie the fury of his enemies, commanded his cosin Gilbert (whose life was taught) to depart out of the Church, whom as he went, the men of armes followed with speare and sword, till they had slaine him and all their enemies, sparing onely two Englishmen.

An. reg. 11. 1077.

An. reg. 12 1078.

1076.

1079.

Marianus.

Anno reg. 13.

William Conqueror curseth his sonne Robert.

Simon Seinctiz.

Guarnerus le Riche.

Castle of Northampton builded.

Ingulphus borne in London, brought vp in learning at Westminster and at Oxford, made Abbot of Croyland.

Walcheofes wife hasteneth the death of her husband.

This Mawd and her husband founded the Monasterie of S. Andrew in Northampton.

The Scots waste Northumberland.

Marianus. Church of Hereford burned.

Scrobsbury.

Edward Grimbrin.

Tower of London built.

Rochester Castle builded. Hospitall of Bartholomew.

Hilbert Lacie, Lord of Pontfract.

A great Frost.

T. Castleford.

Bishop of Durham slain.

Lib. Dunelm.

Northumberland against Scotland.

An. reg. 14 1080.

Domes-day book, a register for the whole realme, how many acres of land, &c. Ingulphus.

Lib. Dunelm.

Lib. Bermond.

Sele founded by Symphire.

New castle upon Tine.

William Bishop of Durham.

An. reg. 15 1081.

Lib. Tubul. Turbury Castle and Abbie builded.

Selwin made Abbot and Orderic King William.

Bishop of Bayon.

Earthquake.

Bermondsey in Southwarke. Lib. Bermond.

Maild

Ilhmen that were seruants to the Bishop, they also slew Leofwine the Deane of Durham, and other of the Priests, as they could finde them out in the Church. When the Bishop perceiued that by no meanes their fury mought be pacified, except the head of the author were cut off, he belought Leofwine to goe forth, which when he could not get him to doe, he went himselfe to the Church doores, and besought them to grant him his life, which when they refused to doe, hee concering his head with the skirt of his garment, went forth and straightwaies with the enemies swoords he was dispatched out of his life: after this they bad Leofwine come forth, but he would not, whereupon they set the Church walles and rouffe on fire, which he continued awhile, but when he felt the bitter flames about him, and began to smart, hee leapt out, and being cut in peeces, suffered for his wickednesse.

This detestable slaughter of the Bishop was committed on the 14. day of May, when he had sate Bishop nine yeres, and two monethes, the Monkes of Yarrow fayled to the place, take the body of their Bishop into their Ship, which body they could hardly know for the number of wounds, being also spoyled of his garments, the body they carped to their Monasterie, which being translated from thence to Durham was there buryed, but with no such solemnitie as other Bishops had beene buryed, for his murderers runne vp and downe all the Citie, and assaulted the Castle, but could not preuaile: whereupon at length they dispersed themselues here and there, and were consumed with many calamities, wandring like runnagates, and banished people, for when King William had knowledge of these things, he sent his brother Odo Bishop of Bayon, and many Nobles of his realme with a great army, to destroy Northumberland, who whilest they sought to reuenge the death of the Bishop, brought all that land to desolation, many of the seely people that remained at home, they either commanded to be beheaded, or otherwayes to be dismembred, many of them being vniustly charged, were forced to ransome themselues with money.

The said Odo tooke certaine ornaments of the Church, among the which there was a Bishops staffe, marueilous for the matter and workmanship, for it was made of Sapphyre stone, who having set a garrison in the Castle, returned.

This yere was finished the Booke named Domes day, or Domus Dei, being a perfect surney of the whole Land, which booke remaineth in the kings Exchequer at Westminster, of which booke a making thereof, Ingulphus writeth thus.

King William for the taking of his whole land, tooke this order in all England, there was not an hyde of land, but he knew the value thereof and the possessor also, neither meire nor place there was, but it was valued in the kings role, the rents and profits, the possession and the possessors were made manifest and knowne vnto the King, according to the fidelitie of euery, which being chosen out of euery Countrey taxed or set sed their owne Territories, or made their owne rent role. These men welwillers and friends to our Monasterie, weighed not our Monasterie to the full price, nor to the true measure thereof, preuenting and pounding vpon zealous affection towards vs, for the kings taxation, and other burdens that after might befall.

This role is called the role of Winton, and of the Englishmen for the generalitie thereof, containing wholly all the tenements of the whole land, it is named Domes-day. Such a role and very like, did king Aelfred once set forth, in which he taxed all the land of England by Shires, Hundreds, and Mythings.

And this role, as is before noted, was called the role of Winton, because it was laid in Winchester to be kept. Which Citie was the head of the West Saxon kingdome, comming vnto him by inheritance: At that time among all the particular kingdomes of England most noble and famous. In this role of Winchester, so most of all called, because it was made after the example of the other, were taxed and set downe, the Carledomes, Hundreds, Mythings, Woods, Parkes, and all Farmes, in euery territorie, or precinct, how many carucates of land, how many plough lands, and acres, what pasturs and Fennes, or Parishes, what tenements and tenants were conteined, &c. Thus much Ingulphus.

The booke of Bermondsey, saith this Booke, was laid vp in the kings Treasurie (which was in the Church of Winchester, or Westminster) in a place called Domus Dei, or Gods house, and to the name of the booke, therefore called Domus Dei, and since shortly, Domes day.

The same yere, K. William sent his son Robert into Scotland against Malcolme; but when he was come to Egglesbirth, hauing in no point atchieued his enterprise, he returned againe, and builded the new Castle beyond the riuer of Tine.

After that five moneths were past, since the murdering of Walker Bishop of Durham, William Karilphe Abbot of S. Vincents was by king William chosen to be Bishop of Durham, the 9. of November, and on the third of January he was consecrated at Gloucester, by Thomas Archbishop of Yorke, the king being present, and all the Bishops of the realme, for he was an excellent man in wisedome, learning and vertue, and therefore welbeloued of all men.

Henry Earle Ferrers founded a Priorie within his Castle of Tutsbury.

The late new Church was founded and builded in Anno 1407. when the Normans were put out, and the Priors aliants suppressed.

VVilliam Archbishop of Roane, held a councell at Lisbone, king VVilliam being present with many other Princes and Bishops.

A great Earthquake, and roaring out of the earth was heard in the first of Aprill, about the third houre of the night.

Alwine Child, citizen of London, founder of the Monasterie of S. Saviour at Bermondsey in Southwarke besides London, in the County of Surrey, by licence of king VVilliam gaue vnto the Monkes de Charitate there, diuers rents in the citie of London. VVilliam Rufus afterward gaue them the manner of Bermondsey, and builded them a new Church.

Matild the Queene, daughter to Baldwine, Earle of Flanders, and wife to king VVilliam deceased. King William had many children by this Matild, whereby he prouoked him to loue her, certaine it is a liele variance was growne betweene them in their latter yeares, for his sonne Robert, whom men said his mother, out of the Kings coffers did maintaine with warlike power, but king William himselfe declared that the fauour of matrimoniall loue was not diminished by that, whereas she dyed 4. yeares before him, he did honour her with royall obsequies and Funerals, and did with teares mourne for her death many dayes after, and from that time forth (it was said) he abstained from all voluptuousnesse: The Queene was buried at Caine in Normandy in the Monasterie of Nuns which she had founded and dedicated to the holy Trinitie.

Richard the Kings sonne Duke of Beorn died in the new Forrest, and was buried at Winchester with this Epitaph. *Hic iacet Ricardus Filius Wilhelmi senioris Beornie ducis.*

This Richard King Williams second sonne was a goodly lad, and such a one as of his age did attempt great matters, in whom his noble Father had a very good opinion: but a bitter death did soone deuoure him in his young age, men said that the Deere in the new Forrest, by reason of a cloud or mist of infected ayre, got a disease of goging, and so spoyled him. This new Forrest is a place which king William the father of Richard, had layd waste, ouerthrowing townes, villages, and Churches, by the space of thirty miles and more, bringing the same into a chase for Deere, and horrible thing it was to see, that where before men did inhabit and dwell, and where God was honored: now Deere Goates, and such other kind of wild Beasts doe wantonly course about, and not so much as made to the vse of men. Wherefore it is declared for certaine, that in the same Forrest, William his sonne, and his Nephew Richard, the sonne of Robert Duke of Normandie, did by the seuere iudgment of God, finde their death, William with an arrow, that was shot in his breast, and Richard had his necke broken, or as some say, as hee rode through the wood on Posie-backe, he was hanged vp by the chaps vpon the bough of a tree.

King William in his life time shewed great fauour vnto his mother, who before his father was dead, had married a certaine man of meane substance, called Herlewinus of Canteruile, by him king VVilliam had brethren, one named Robert, whom he made Earle of Morton, a grosse and dull witted man: The other brother was called Odo, who when he was Duke, he promoted to the Bishoprieke of Bayon: & when he was King, he made him Earle of Kent, he being a man of subtill wit, was vnder the king Vice-lord of all England, after the death of William Fitz Osberne, insomuch that he being wonderfull exactie and subtill in heaping vp of treasure, and one of a marualious obstinacie, being absent from the Citizens of Rome, had almost bought the Papacy by stuffing the bagges of strangers with letters and money. And (by reason of the opinion, that all men had of him, that he should goe to Rome to be Pope) all matters of controuersie throughout the whole Realme were brought vnto him, which matter the king tooke very euill, and laid him in prison as shall be shewed in place conuenient, saying that he would not apprehend the Bishop of Bayon, but that he would apprehend the Earle of Kent: his seruants being constrained thereunto with threats, bewayed such plenty of gold, that the heape of yellow mettall did exceed the opulous of all men: moreouer many bags full of grounden gold were drawne out of Riuers which he had buried in certaine places.

VVilliam Bishop of Durham, by licence of the King and the Nobles of the Realme, went to Rome and obtained of Pope Gregory the seuenth, to bring the Monkes from Yarrow and Wermouth into the Cathedrall Church of Durham, for euer with Lands, Churches, ornaments &c. all which king VVilliam confirmed by his Charter.

A wicked sedition arose betweene the Monks and Thurstane the vnworthy Abbot of Glastenburie, which Thurstane king VVilliam had taken forth of the Monasterie of Caine in Normandie, and (being a man furnished with no wisedome) made him Abbot of Glastenburie. This man among other his fellowes, despising the song called Gregories Song, began to counsell the Monks to learne the Song of one VVilliam of Fescamps, and to sing it in the Church, which to doe when they refused, as they that had beene euer vsed not onely in this, but in other seruice of the Church, to follow the manner of the Romane Church, sudainly on a day with a company of armed men, (the Monkes not aware thereof) brake into the Chapter house, and the Monkes flying through excedine feare into the Church, euen to the high Altar, the men of warre pursuing with their darts and arrowes, shot, not sparing to hit the Crosses, Images and shrines, and ran one Monke through the body with a speare, as he embraced the Altar, and so slew him, another was slaine with an arrow, tying as it were bidden vnder the Altar, the other constrained of necessitie, defended themselues with Formes and candlesticks of the Church so that although they were sore wounded, they saue all the men of armes behind the quire, & so it fell out, that two being slaine, 14. were hurt of the Monkes, and some of the men of armes, were hurt also, this matter comming to iudgement, because it was found that the Abbot was all in the blame, the King removed him, and set him in his house againe in Normandie, many of the Monkes were bestowed in Bishops houses, but after the Conquerors decease, the Abbot got his Abbey againe, at his sonne VVilliam Rufus hands, buying it with 500. pound of siluer, & wandring through the possessions of the Church certaine yeares together from the Apostles, euen his life miserably, as he well deserued.

About this time many tempests raging in this world, certaine Southsayers at Rome declared, who should succeed vnto Hildebrand in the

Marianus. Thurstan Abbot of Glastenbur. his Monkes.

An. reg. 17. 1083.

An. reg. 18. 1084.

Odo Bishop of Bayon

the Popedome, they affirmed after the decease of Gregorie, Odo to be Pope of Rome. Odo Byshop of Bayon, bearing this, (who with his brother) governed the Normans and Englishmen, little esteeming the power and riches of the West kingdome, valesse by right of the Popedome, might largely rule all the inhabitants of the earth, he sendeth to Rome, he buyeth a pallace, he secketh out the Senators, whom w great gifts giuen, he iopneth with them in amitie, and his pallace he adorned with much cost and superfluous trimming, he sendeth to Hugh Earle of Chester, and a great number of the chiefest knights, and heartily prayeth them to goe with him into Italy: and the prodigall man, vnto his prayers addeth great promises. They, for that the Normans were light, and desirous to see forraine Countries, straightwayes assented vnto the presumptuous Byshop, to whom the Princedome of Albion and Normandie sufficed not, and consented also to forsake their huge lands, which they possessed in the West Climate, and promised by their faith, to accompany the aforesayd Prelate beyond the River of Po. Prudent king William, when he heard of such great preparation, allowed not thereof, but thought it to be hurtfull to his kingdome, and many others, wherefore, he hastily sailed into England, and suddainly vnlooked for in the Ile of Wight, met with Odo the Bishop, now destroys with great pompe to saile into Normandy, and there the chiefest of his Realme being gathered together in the Kings hall, the King spake in this sort.

Vita W. Con.

King William returneth from Normandie to the Ile of Wight.

Excellent Peeres, hearken to my words diligently, and I beseech you giue vnto me your wholsome counsaile. Before I sayled ouer the Sea into Normandie, I commended the gouernment of England to my brother the Bishop of Bayon.

His Oration to his Nobles.

In Normandie many haue risen vp against me, and as I may say, vnward friends, and forraine foes haue inuaded me, Robert my sonne, and certaine younglings, whom I haue brought vp, and to whom I haue giuen armes, rebelled, and my kalfe Clients, and bordering enemies cleaued vnto them, but they profited nothing, God whose seruant I am, defending me: neyther yet obtained they any thing of mine, but yron in their wounds.

They of Angeow gathered together against me, whom with feare of preparation to warre I pacified, with those pallages I haue beene prouoked beyond the Sea, and there I haue stayed long, and laboriously haue giuen all my endeauour to publike commodities. In the meane time my brother hath greatly oppressed England and hath spoiled the Churches of their lands, and rents, hath made them naked of the ornaments giuen by our predecessors, and hath ledged my Knights, who ought to defend England against the Danes, Iutlhmen, and other enemies ouertroubleth me vnto me, and contemning me purposeth to traine them out beyond the Alpes, to forraine kingdomes, as ouer great dolour grieueth my heart, especially for the Church of God, which he hath afflicted.

Christian kings that haue raigned before me, haue loued the Church of God with honors and gifts of many kinds, they haue enriched it, wherfore now (as we beleeue) they rest reioycing with a happy retribution in a pleasant seate. Adelbert, and Edward, Saint Oswald, Adulph Aelfred, Edward the elder, and Edgar, and my cousin and most deare Lord Edward haue giuen riches vnto the holy Church, the Spouse of God, and my brother to whom I haue committed the gouernment of the whole Kingdome, violently plucketh away their gods, cruelly oppresseth the poore, with a vaine hope, stealeth away my Knights from me, and hath exasperated the whole Realme, by oppressing it with vnjust taxations. Consider you worthily what is to be done hereupon, and I beseech you insinuate it vnto me.

And when all they fearing to great a personage, doubted to pronounce sentence against him the valiant King said, hurtfull rashnesse is alwayes to be repressed, oftentimes heretofore hee straue against his Father, and then likewise stomached for certaine foilies, presently departed away to the King of France, &c. now the King committed his said brother Odo to prison, where he remained about the space of 4. yeres after, to wit, to the death of King VVilliam.

Odo Bishop of Bayon prisoner in prison. *Anno* 1085.

King William taketh of every hide of Land throughout England, five shillings, and then sayled ouer into the parts beyond the Seas.

Canute King of Denmarke, with a mighty Naule by the assistance of his Father in Law Robert Earle of Flaunders, was ready to haue come into England, whereupon King William hyring Souldiers out of all Fraunce, many thousands of Footmen and Archers, and taking some forth of Normandie, in the harnest time returned into England, and diuided his Souldiers throughout the Realme, charging the Bishops, Abbots, Earles, Barons, Sheriffes, and prepositors, to find them meat and drinke, but after, when he vnderstood that his enemies were impeached and let of their purpose, he sent backe part of his army, part he kept with him all winter, and in the feast of the Nativity he held his Court at Gloucester, where vnto three of his Chaplaines, he gaue three Bishoprickes, to Maurice the Bishopricke of London, to William that of Thetford, and to Robert the Bishoprickes of Chester.

Canute King of Denmark inuadeth England.

Bishops, Barons, Sheriffes, and Gentlemen keeping all diers.

Three of the Kings Chaplaines made Bishops.

King VVilliam caused all England to be described, to vnderstand what Land euery of his Barons did possesse, how many Knights fees, how many plough Lands, how many villans, how many beastes of cattell, yea how much readie monie euery man possessed within his Kingdome, from the greatest to the least, and how much rent euery mans possession might yeeld, thus the Land was replear with many mischieues, that came of this doing.

Anno 1086.

In the Whitson weeke King VVilliam honoured his sonne Henry at Westminster, where he then held his Court, with the order of knighthood, which order of knighthood, how the same was ministred I read not, but as writeth Ingulphus, In time of the Saxons before the conquest of the Normans, The Englishmans custome

was, that he that should be consecrated to lawfull warfare, should the euening before the day of his consecration, to some Bishop, Abbot, Monke, or Priest, contrite and compunct, make confession of his sinnes, and absolued, should continue all night in the Church, and giue himselfe to prayers, deuotions, and afflictions: And on the morrow hearing the diuine seruice, should haue a sword put about his necke, and communicating at the same seruice, the holy mysteries of Christ, should thencefoorth continue a lawfull knight, which custome of consecrating a knight the Normans despised.

Shortly after King William commanded that Archbishops, Bythops, Abbots, Earles, Barons, Viscounts, with their power of men of armes, should meet him on the first day of September at Salisbury, whither when they were come, he caused the men of armes to sweare to him fealtie against all men.

The same yere Clito Edgar with licence obtained of the King, passed the sea with 200. men of armes, and went into Apulia, whose sister Christine entred into the Monasterie of Ramsey, and was made a Nun.

When the Normans had accomplished the will and pleasure of their Lord vpon the Englishmen, and that there was scantly any Noble man left of the English nation, to beare any rule ouer them, but was come to passe that it was a reproach to be called an Englishman: There spraug vp wicked tolls and customes, and the more people spake of equitie, the more wrong was done. Those that were appointed Justicers were the authors of all vnrighteousnesse, whosoeuer did take a Dere of Goate had his eyes put out, and no man durst speake against it, for the cruell King loued wild beasts, as though hee had beene Father of them, and by wicked counsel he brought to passe, that where men were wont to inhabit in townes and villages, and where God was wont to be honoured, there all kind of wild beasts did spoyt themselues, so that men said for certaine, that for the space of more then xx. miles, good profitable Corne ground was turned into a chase for wilde beasts: this was called the new Forrest in Hampshire, wherein be 9. walks, 9. Keepers, 2. Rangers, a bow bearer, and the Earle of Arundell is Lord Warden by inheritance. In building of Castles this king exceeded all his predecessors. Normandy came to him by inheritance, Cenomania he got by force of armes, he made Armorica or Brytaine obedient vnto him, in England he raigned alone. Scotland and Wales he subdued, he loued peace so well, that a yong Wench might without danger, carry a burden of gold through all places of England safe.

King William hauing giuen vnto Remigius a Monke of Fiskime, the Byshoppricke of Dorchester, he now misliking that the Bythops Seate stood in a small Cittie, whereas in the same Diocesse was the Citie of Lincolne, which seemed to be more meet for his Seat, he bought Lordships in the top of the Hill, and builded there a Church, and notwithstanding that the Archbishop of Yorke affirmed that place and Cittie to be part of his Diocesse, Remigius not regarding his words, proceeded & finished the worke which he had begun, and when he had finished the same, he adorned it with Clarks that were approued both in learning and manners: he was but small of stature, but stout of heart, browne of colour, but cleare and excellent in works: he was once accused of treason to the king, but a certaine seruant of his, by iudgment of fiery sword purged him, & returned him to the kings fauour.

Judgment by the fiery sword or fiery Iron.

There was a great water flod through abundance of raine, so that diuers hills being softened fell, and ouerwhelmed many villages. About the same time King Wil. had builded the Abbey of Battaile in Sussex, on the place where he ouercame Harold, in which place hee set Monkes, and dedicated the Church to the holy Trinitie, and to Saint Martin. He also founded Selby Abbey in Yorkeshire, and the Priory of S. Nicholas at Exceter, and the Abbey of Saint Stephen in the Citie of Caen in Normandy, where he was buried, he gaue priuiledges to S. Martins le Grand in London, which Church was founded before the Conquest by Ingelricus and Edwardus his brother, cousins to King Edward the Confessour) he also gaue to the Colledge all the Land and more without the Posterne called Criples gate of London, on either part of the Posterne, it is to say from the North corner of the Wall, as the Riuers of the welles there remaining depart the same Gate from the wall to the running water which entreth the Cittie, to wit, through the wall, and so through the Cittie, though vnder ground to the Riuer of Thames, and is called Walbrooke, al comming through and from the wall.) The description of king Williams Seale, with the names of the tenths, (among the which is R. Fitz Gilbert Prince, Willi. Willet Prince Arfastus the Kings Chancellour, &c.) I omit for breuitie.

Water flouded. Battaile Abbey and other builded.

Colledge of S. Martins le grand

Criples Gate of London.

The riuer of the wells came down to Walbrooke by Clarkes well, and so by Oldborne to the Thames.

Walbrooke of coming through and from the wall of the Cittie.

This yere was a great dearth of Cattle, and sore distemperature of the ayre, wherupon a great mortalitie of men hapned, so that many died first of the Feuers, and after of Famine.

Famine and Dearth of men, Marianus.

In the meane time a deuouring fire spread abroad ouer almost all the principall Cities of England, the Church of Saint Pauls in London was burnt, with the more part of the Cittie, which fire began at the entrie of the West Gate, and consumed to the East Gate. Maurice then Bythop of London, afterward began the foundation of the new Church of Saint Paul, a worke that men of that time iudged would neuer haue beene finished, it was to them so wonderfull, king William gaue toward the building of the East end of this Church, the choice stones of his Castle, standing neere to the banke of the riuer of Thamis, at the West end of the Cittie: he also gaue to God and Saint Paul, and to Maurice the Bishop and his successors, the Castle of Stortford with all the appurtenances, namely the land which Wil. Diacon, and Radulph his brother held of him, that they may possesse it for euer.

London and Saint Pauls Church burnt.

Vita Ikenwald.

A new forme of Paules Church.

Stortford Castle in Essex.

After Maurice, Richard his successor did also wonderfully increase the same Church, purchasing of his owne cost the large Crofts about it

where were wont to dwell many lay people, which ground he began to compasse about with a strong wall of stone and gates.

King Henry the first gate to the said Richard Bishop of London, so much of the more or wall of the Castle on the Thames side, to the South, as should be needfull to make the Wall of the Church, and so much as should suffice to make a way to goe out the wall on the North side &c. It should seeme that this Richard inclosed but two sides of ſ said Church, as Comiterie of S. Paul, to wit, the South and the North sides, for king Edward the second granted, that the Churchyard should be inclosed with a Wall, for the murders, and robberies that were committed there. And when the Citizens of London claimed the East part of the Churchyard, to be the place of their assembly to the folkemote, and that the great People at that time there situate, was to the ende, that all the inhabitants of the Citie might heare. They claimed also the West side, that they might assemble themselues together with the Lord of Bayards Castle, for view of their Armour in defence of the Citie. This matter was in the Tower of London referred to Herusins de Stanton, and his fellow Justices Itinerants, but I finde not the Iudgment of that controuersie, wherefore it is like the Church prevailed, for the Wall euen to this time continueth although now on both sides vnder with dwelling houses.

An. reg. 20. 1087. This yere in a province of Wales called Rose, was found the Sepulchre of Wawyn or Gawen, vpon the Sea shore, he was sisters Son to Arthur the great king of the Britaines, being as is affirmed of many, of the length of 14. Fot, he reigned in the parts of Britaine, which to this day (saith Windouer) is called Walwith, a most famous man in Warre, and in all maner of cruelitie, as in the acts of Brytaine is declared.

Gawens bones found of great being.

The Bysshop Scigand of Chichester, Scoland Abbot of S. Augustines at Canterburie, Alfius Abbot of Bath, and Thurstan Abbot of Pyddo deceased.

This yere King William remaining in Normandy, being at variance with Philip king of France, continued there a long while, whose patience the said Philip did (as men said) abuse with these or like words.

The King of England lyeth at Roane, and keepeth his Chamber as women doe when they be delivered of childe, and nourisheth his fat belly: With which talke King William being offended, said, when after my childebirth I go to Church, I will offer a thousand candles to him, swearing by Gods resurrection and his brightnesse, &c.

King Williams oath.

About the latter end of August King William in a great displeasure entred France, where he wasted and spoyled all as he passed.

King William wasted France

Last of all he fiered the Cittie of Spewre, and burnt it with our Ladie Church & two Anchors that were inclosed there, who perswaded themselues, they ought not to forsake their house and cane in such extremitie, whereat the king reioysing, chered his men to ad the fire and came himselfe so neere, that with the heate of his harnesse he got a disease, & to the increase of his sickenesse (it was said) his hosse leaping over a ditch did burst the inner part of his belly, with the paine whereof he was sore afflicted, and returned to Roane, where shortly after he ended his life.

King William fell sick and died.

This wise nobleman seeling himselfe grieuously diseased, deferred not to doe gods vnto himselfe in time to come, and also to many others wherefore he commanded all his treasure to be distributed vnto Churches, poore soldes, and ministers of GOD, and politikely assigned how much he would giue to euery one, commanded the same to be written out by notaries before him.

Gifts of king William to Abbeys & Churches.

Amongst the which gifts, I find that he gaue to the Church of Saint Stephen in Caine, and y Monkes there, two Mannors in Dorsetshire with their appendants, one Mannor in Devonshire, one other in Sffex, many hides of Land in Barkeshire, some in Norfolke, and a Mansion house in Weststreet of London, with many howses of Churches, but specially to be noted, he gaue his Crowne and ornaments to the same belonging, to the said Church, which he before had founded, for the redeeming of y which Crowne and kingly ornaments, King Henry the first, some to the said Conquerour, gaue to the said Church of Saint Stephen, the Mannor of Brideton in Dorsetshire. King William also sent great summes vnto the Cleargie of Pelvore that thereby the Churches which he had burned might be repaired.

Liberwine Wil. Conq. tour.

Of keeping faith and justice, of holding the Lawes of GOD, and peace of observing the priuiledges of the Churches, and Statutes of Fathers, he admonished all those that were present, and his sayings worthy to be remembred, mixed sometime with teares, he eloquently vttered in this sort.

Being laden with many and grieuous sinnes (O Christ) I tremble, and being readie to be taken by and by vnto the terrible examination of God. I am ignozant what I should doe, for I haue borne bzought vp in the feates of armes, euen from my childhood, I am greatly polluted with effusion of much bloud, I can by no meanes number the euils which I haue done, this 64. yeers, wherein I haue liued in this troublesome life, for the which I am now constrained without stay to render an accompt to the iust Judge.

Ed. ye son of William the Conquerour by his Q.

King William 64. yeers old.

When as my Father (of his owne free will going into banishment) committed vnto me the Dukedome of Normandy, I was but a tender boy, that is to wit, of eight yeres old, from which time euen vntill this present, I haue always sustained the weight of armour, and haue governed the same Dukedome almost 56. yeers, in great danger of enemies. Those whom I haue governed, haue often layd snares for me, and wickedly haue bzought vnto me dammages and great injuries.

Castell of St. William.

Turchetill my nourisher, and Osberne Herfakus sonne, the Dapifer or Sewer of Normandie, and Earle Gilbert the Father of the Countrey, with many other necessarie for the common wealth, they haue fraudulently slaine with

both their Lzuges: Hertofore I haue tried the fidelity of my Countrey: oftentimes in the night for feare of my life I rose, I haue beene secretly carried by my Horse Castler out of the priuie chamber, and brought into little houses and hauing no signes of preheminence, least by those meanes that lodged my death I would be found: The Frenchmen if they had good and hard gouernement are of valure, they are most valiant, and in deadfull things inuincible, they excell all men, and for their strength, they conteine to ouercome all their enemies. Otherwise they teare in peeces and consume one another, for they count no bollions, they desire seditions, and are ready to all mischiefe, for them therefore be constrained with a strong censure of gouernment, and with the bridle of Discipline, constrained to walke by path of Justice, for that their pleasure, with the yoke they be permitted to goe, like a wild vntamed Ade, they and their palace shall be ouerwhelmed with penury and reprochefull confusion. And this I haue lately learned by many repeals, my neighbours and kinsmen that sought by all meanes to offend me against all right and men, with often conspiring, haue risen vp against me.

Guy Harold the Duke of Burgundy his sonne, by my aunt ridulph rendred me still to goe, to, I received him courteously comming out of a strange Countrey, and honored him as a brother, and gaue vnto him Vernone and Stonard, not a little part of Normandie, he hath derogated much from me both in his words and acts, detesting and declaring me to be a Bastard, to degenerate and to be vnworthy gouernment, and as an enemy hath defamed me, what need I say more, he hath falsified his faith vnto me, he hath rebelled against me, and my Peeres, Ranulph of Raven, and Haimo Dentched, and Nigell of Constantine, and many other more he hath withdrawne from me, and hath constrained them by his wicked perswasions to be perjured persons with him, diminished thereloze of his homage and fidelitie which he owed vnto me, he went about to take all Normandie from me.

Thus therefore being yet without a beard, I was constrained to take vp armes against him, and at the plaine at Valesdune to fight against my kinsman and owne seruant.

Then God assisting me, betweene Caine and Argiers I ouercame my enemies, who by Gods appointment being ouerthrowne, I freely possessed my Fathers right.

That done I besieged a Fort of Bavon, and therein included Guy sore wounded, & fled from the battaile, nor I suffered him to depart with them, vntill I had expelled him as a common enemie out of Normandy, and obtained all his strong holds. Not long after this another grieuous aduersity came vnto me, for my vncles Malgerius Archbishop of Roane, and William his brother, to whom I had freely given Arches and the Carledome of Calegu, condemned me a bastard and called Henry the King, and Eagelram Carle of Ponthe against me. Presently after I had heard of their enuyes in Constance I entred into the Bayne, many Cowards ioyned me, and sent before me to Arches a few souldiers which were more fermenter to fight, and I followed after, not with a great armie, and ouerpassed the strong Fort, but before I could come into the Countries betweene the two Riuers Jordan and Gerone, my souldiers had preuented Carle Engelram hasting to enter the Castle, and had slaine him manfully fighting, (for he was a most sharpe souldier) and had put to flight all his companies.

Those of the Castle I bidded with an hard beseiging, and forced the periured Carle to exile, neyther yet permitted I him in all this life to returne to that which he had lost. And also the forward Prelate that was neyther benigne to God, nor trustie vnto me, I deposed by decree of the Pope from his Bysshops seate, and placed for him Maurice the venerable Clearke whom God gaue vnto me from the Cittie of Pergame in Italy. Henry delighted with his kingly power, and hot with warlike boldnesse, and greatly pricked forwards with the derogations of mine enemies oftentimes hath endeauoured to tread me vnder as one vnarmed, and by many meanes to feare me, and to appoint vnto me vnlawfull faces. Often with a huge armie he hath entred my Land, but he neuer reioyced of the prey of my spoyles hee often entred my Lands, but he neuer merrie, nor without shame returned home to his owne, many strong men he brought hither with him, whom for that by me swozd and my Souldiers (woe woyth the griefe,) they were slaine, hee neuer carried backe againe, Therefore King Henry ouermuch inflamed against me, diuided his huge hoste into two parts of Fraunce, that he might oppresse our Lands with a double hurting in with violence, for he himselfe brought an army of eight hundred Formen, into Chpdocene Diocesse, that they might destroy all euen vnto the River of Some, and the other company he committed vnto Odo his brother, and to Raynold of Clarimount, and to two Consuls, Ralfe of Mountdesire, and Widen of Montfice, that by the shallow places they might some enter into Normandie, and inuade Deani Calcesi, and the whole Towne of Roane, and should vterly destroy with the swozd, fire, and robbing, euen to the Sea.

This therefore I vnderstanding, on the other side I went forwards, not sluggishly, against the Kings tents, and repoled my selfe and my Souldiers, by the shore of Some, and where soeuer he endeauoured to destroy my Land with weapons and swozd, I prepared a repzoch but Robert Carle of Auceniis, and Robert Mortimer, with other most expert Souldiers, I sent against Odo, and his Legions, who when almost at Calvus, which is called the dead Sea, they met with the Frenchmen, the companies on both parts being prouided, a terrible battle was fought, and on both parts great effusion of bloud for euery where there were most valiant fighters, & euen vnto death ignozant to flie, here were the Frenchmen for desire of gaining, there strike the Normans with a feruent hope of

straining, and defending themselues and their meeting houses, as the last God helpeth, the Normans vanquished and the French men fled away. And this battaile they had beyond Some in Winter, before Yeul, the eight yeare after the battaile at Valesdoune.

Then Wido Earle of Pontine was taken, and Odo with Raynold, and others that were lastie to quicke scelle of Foe, were driuen away. Raulphe also the Earle had likewise beene taken vnlesse Roger the Prince of my warre had supported him, for lately he had done homage vnto him.

Therefore in such necessitie he requited him with a faire competent seruice, when he restored him their dayes in the Castle, and after permitted him to goe safe home to his owne, for this offence I cast Roger out of Normandie, but a little after being reconciled vnto him, I restored him the rest of his honours, yet the Castle of Mortemere, wherein he kept mine enemie, by right, as I suppose, I take from him, but I gaue it to William de Warren, his kinsman and lawfull vassall.

Wido Earle of Bayon I held in prison so long as it pleased me, and after two yeeres I received againe homage of him, with such honour, that from thenceforth he should alwaies be faithfull vnto me, and should euery yeare giue vnto me Souldiers seruice, wherefoeuer I commanded with an hundred Souldiers.

This done I gaue him reloardes, and so honoured him away in peace. After this fight ended, by and by as I certainly had tryed the rumours, I sent by Raulphe of Diceu those things that had chanced on the farther side of Some vnto the King of France, which thing he hearing, straightwayes rose vp, and with his Nobles speedily fled, and neuer after did lie one night in my Land, and then rose from my chiefdome with vnnumerable pressures on euery side I haue beene tossed, but by the grace of God, I haue beene honourably deliuered from them all.

Therefore I was made hatefull to all my neighbours, but God assisting me, in whom alwaies I put my trust, I was ouercome of none.

This oftentimes haue the Britaines, and they of Angeow, and Cenomania grieuously tryed.

Godfrey Martell Earle of Angeow, and Conan Prince of the Britaines, & Robert Frise, Prince of Puterell, haue layed waite to intrap me, by many subtill inventions, but God keeping me, they were neuer satisfied of their desire.

A Royall Diademe that neuer any of my predecessors did beare, I haue gotten, which onely heauenly grace, not right of inheritance hath giuen to me. What labors, and perilous conflicts I haue sustained beyond the Seas against those of Orcester, Chester, and the Northumbers, the Scots, the Gaules, Norwegians, and Danes, and against other aduersaries that indeauoured to spoile me of the Realme of England, it were hard to declare. In all which plot of ground which come vnto me: And although manly gentlenesse vpon such triumphes reioyceth, yet inwardly a carefull feare pricketh and

King William held not England by right of inheritance.

byteth me, when I consider that in all these, cruell ruthes hath raged. Wherefore I humbly beseech you O Priests, and ministers of Christ, that you will commend me to the Almighty God, with your Prayers, that he will forgiue me my sinnes, wherewith I am greatly prelled, and by his bespeakeable mercy, will make me safe amongst his.

My treasures I command to be giuen to the poore and to Churches, that those things that haue beene heaped by by wicked deeds, may be disposed to holy vses of the Saints, for you doe remember how swartly I haue loued you, and how strongly amongst all emulation defended you.

The Church of God, that is to wit, our mother, I neuer violated, but in euery place where reason required did willingly honour, I haue not sold Ecclesiasticall dignities, simonie alwayes detesting, I haue reiected in election of Pastors, I euer searched out the merit of life, and his learning of wisedome, and so neere as I could committed the gouernment of the Church to the most worthy.

And this may be faithfully proued in Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterburie, this in Anselme Abbot of Becco, this in Gerebert of Fontanell, and in Duran Trearne, and many other Doctors of my kingdome, whose famous praises (as I suppose) sounding in the vttermost cozners of the earth may be tryed.

King William commendeth Lanfranke for seuen misdemeanors.

Such fellowes I chuse to talke with, in the fellowship of these I found truth and wisedome, and therefore reioycing, I wished to enioy their counsels. Nine Abbeyes of Monkes, and one of Nunnes, which by my fathers were founded in Normandy, I helping by the assistance of God haue encreased, and with augmentations of many things, which I haue giuen them they are gloriously magnified.

Moreouer in the time of my gouernment seuentene Monasteries of Monkes, and fiue of holy Nunnes are builded, where graet service vnto God, and much almes to the poore is daily bestowed for the loue of the chiefest King. With such Camps Normandy is feated, and in these forts let the ponglings learne to fight against the Diuell, and dices of the flesh. Of these truely either I by Gods inspiration haue beene builder and founder, or else a feruent helper, and well willing intender.

King William remembreth his sinne William.

All things also which my Noble men in lands or rents, haue giuen to God and his Saints for their spirituall health in Normandy and England I haue courteously granted, and the Charters of the gifts, I haue freely confirmed with Princely authority against all emulations and troubles.

These studies I haue followed from my first yeeres, these I leaue vnto my heires to be kept in all times. In this, my children, follow me continually that here and for euer before God and men, you may be honoured.

This chiefly, O you (my very bowels) I warne you, that you continually cleaue vnto the company of god and wise men, and be obedient to their gouernment in all things if you will long

King William Conquerour his children.

long gloriously prosper. For is the doctrine of godly wisedome, to discerne good from euill, to keepe iustice at all times, and with all force to shunne wickednesse, to saue and helpe the sicke and poore, to suppresse and vanquish the proud and vniust, and to bridle them from troubling of the simple, to frequent deuoutly the holy Church: and aboue all things to loue the worshipping of the diuinity, and to be obedient without any wearinesse day or night, in aduersity and prosperitie vnto the law of God.

The Dukedome of Normandy before I fought against Harold in the vale Senlac, I granted vnto my Son Robert, for that he is my first begotten, and hath now receiued homage almost of all the Barons of this country: & honor granted cannot be taken away againe, but without doubt I know that truely it will be a miserable region that shall be subiect to his dominion or gouernment: for he is a proude & foolish knaue, and to be long punished with cruell fortune.

King William disinherited his sonne.

King William not willing Williams inheritance by conquest.

I do constitute none heire of the realme of England, but commend it vnto the euerlasting creator whose I am, & in whose hands be all things, for I possessed not such an honor by right of inheritance, but by the instinct of God, & with much effusion of mans blood I woke it, and the periured Harold being slaine, or his fauourers driuen away, I made it subiect to my dominion.

The naturall sonnes of the Realme I hated more then right required, the Noble men and vulgar sort I cruelly pored, many vniustly I disherited, innumerable, especially in the towne of Yorke, with hunger and sword, I brought to death, for the which the Countreymen beyond Humber take in against me the armie of the King of Swenueland, and slew Robert of Comin, with a thousand souldiers within Duresme, and other of my Nobles and most approued young Schollers in diuers places. Wherefore moued with an immoderate rage, like a wood lyon I hasted vnto the Northerne Englishmen, their houses, their corne and all thier prouision and houshould stuffe I commanded to be burned, and great droues of beasts, and flockes of sheepe euery where to be killed: therefore I punished with the sword of such horrible hunger the multitude of both sex, and so many thousands both of young and old of the most beautifull Countrey (Oh woe worth the griefe) I cruelly killed. The offices therefore of this Realme, that with so many sinnes I haue obtained, I dare not giue to any but to God, least after my death, they be made yet worse by my occasion. William my Sonne, who alwayes from his first yeeres hath sticked vnto me, and according to his power hath willingly obeyed me in all things, I wish in the Spirit of God long to liue, in health, and if it be Gods will, happily to flourish in the throne of the kingdome. These and many such like words William spake and an amazednesse inuaded the Leaders by, that politikly measured things to come.

King William gaue to his sonne Henry.

After that Henry the younger son heard nothing to be giuen vnto him of the kingly treasure, lamenting with teares, he said vnto the king: And what (father) doe you giue vnto me? To whom the king said, Fiue thousand pounds of siluer out of my treasure I giue vnto thee. To this Henry said, What shall I do with that treasure, if I shall not haue a dwelling place of habitation? Whereunto his father answered, Bee of a patient mind my son, and comfort thy selfe in God quietly suffer that thy elder brother goe before thee. Robert shall haue Normandy, and William England, thou in thy time shalt haue all the honour that I haue gotten, and shalt excell thy brethren in riches and power. These words thus spoken, the king fearing least in such a wide Realme sodaine trouble should arise, wrote a Letter vnto Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury, and being signed with his owne seale, gaue it vnto William Rufus his son, commanding him presently to saile ouer the Sea into England, and that done, he killed and blessed him, and speedily directed him to take the Crowne, who in short time came to the poore called Whitsland, and there he heard his father to be dead, Henry also hasted diligently to receiue the nominated summe of money, and to call necessary fellowes, in whom he might trust.

Words of K. William to his sonne Henry.

King Williams sons left him and sought to helpe themselues to his possessions.

In the meane time the Phisitions, & the kings seruants that kept the languishing Prince, and the Nobles that came to visite him, began to speake vnto him for the prisoners that he kept in hold, and humbly besought him to haue compassion vpon them, and to release them. To whom he said, Morcare the noble English Earle, I haue long kept in prison and that vniustly, but it was for feare, left by him, if he were at liberty the Realme of England should be troubled. Roger also of Bitole, for that he very stubbornely raged against me, and prouoked Ralph of Guadar his sisters son, and many others against me, I haue streightly kept in prison, and swoune, that in my life he should not come forth. So many haue I cast in prison deseruing it, though their owne peruersitie, and sundry other mo, for feare of sedition to come, for this is the rule of Righteousnesse, as the diuine Law by Moses giuen vnto the gouernors of the world, requireth, that the wicked be oppressed, left they destroy the innocent. But now being at the point of death, as I desire to be saued & absolued by Gods mercie from my sinnes, so I peticularly command all prison doores to be opened, and all prisoners except my brother, the Bishop of Bayon, to be releasted, and for the loue of God to be freely dismissed, that he may haue mercy on me. Notwithstanding I haue decreed that they depart out of prison with this condition, that first for more security they giue their oath to the officers of the common wealth, that they will by all meanes keepe peace in England and Normandy, and according to their power manfully resist all aduersaries of the same.

All prisoners to be releasted excepthis brother Odo.

And when Robert Earle of Poyton heard his brother to be commanded by the kings sentence to perpetuall prison, he greatly sorrowed: for Herliwinus of Canterwill tooke vnto wife Herliwine duke Roberts Concubine, of whom he begate two sons, Odo & Robert. And Duke William, who afterwards was king, enriched his Father in law with many great honours in Nor-

Robert, Duke of Normandy, & Richard his brethren exiled.

thandy and England, and for by with great poſſeſſions his ſonnes, Rainulph whom he had begotten of another wife, and Odo and Robert, his brethren by the mother: for after that he had for ſmall offences expelled out of Normandy William firnamed Werelenge Earle of Morton ſon to the Earle Magenus, he gaue the Earledome of Morton vnto his brother Robert Herliwinus ſonne.

Hugh alſo Biſhop of Bayon ſonne of Ralfe Conſule, being dead, he granted the foreſaid Prelates dignity to his brother Odo, whom afterwards in England hee made ruler of y Earledome of Kent. To conclude, him, for his exceſſiue crueltie (as before is plainely related) king William tooke in the Ile of Wight, & kept foure yeeres in priſon, neyther yet at his death for his inſolence would releaſe him. Wherefore the foreſaid Earle of Morton greatly ſorrowed, and for his brother both by himſelfe, & by his friends humbly intreated, and with prayers wearied the languiſhing king. And when many had earneſtly deſired him for the Biſhop of Bayon, the king wearied with the requeſts of ſo many, ſaid: I maruell that prudently you ſhew not, whom, or what a man he is, for whom you intreat, doe you not aske for ſuch a man, as lately hath beene in appearance, a contemner of religion, and a crafty ſtirrer of ſedition? haue not I corrected him now theſe foure yeres? a Biſhop who ought to haue beene a moſt iuſt gouernour of the Engliſhmen, and was indeed the worſt oppreſſor of the people, a Monke, and a deſtroyer of Abbeyes. In deliuering a ſeditious perſon, you doe euill, and deſire a great hurt vnto your ſelfe, it is plainely ſeene, that my brother Odo is light, and ambitious, following the deſires of the fleſh, and vnmeaſurable crueltie, and he will neuer be brought from bawdrie, and hurtfull vanities. And this I haue in many things reped, therefore I haue impriſoned, not a Biſhop, but a tyrant, and without doubt the deſtruction of many thouſands. Theſe things I ſpeake, not of hate as an enemy, but as a father of the Countrey, I prouide for the Chriſtian people, for if hee behaues himſelfe chaſtly and modeſtly, as of very right becommeth a Prieſt and miniſter of God, a greater ioy would bee at my heart then I can declare. Euery one pronouncing the amendment of the Biſhop. The king ſaid againe, Will I, will I, your petition muſt bee granted, for that I being dead, ſodainely a vehement mutation ſhall be of all things. Againſt my will I grant, that my brother bee deliuered out of priſon: but know you, that by him, death, or a great impediment ſhall bee brought to many. From Balbricke alſo the ſon of Nicholas, for that he foliſhly left my ſeruice, and without my licence went into Spaine, I take all his lands for a puniſhment, but now, for the loue of God, I reſtore them to him againe. A better young Souldier in armes then he is, I ſuppoſe is not to be found, but he is prodigall and light, and wanderreth to diuers places.

King William or Odo Biſhop of Bayon.

Thus king William, although grauen with enormous paines of the inward parts of his bodie, yet effectually enioyed his wit and liuely ſpeech, and vnto all demanders gaue prompt and profitable counſell of matters of the Realme.

To conclude, the 10th of September on a Thurſday, the Sunne now clearely ſpreading his beames throughout the round world, the king raiſed vp, heard the ſound of a great bell in the Metropolitane Church, and aſking wherefore it ſounded, his ſeruants anſwered, Sir, it ringeth now to praiſe of our bleſſed Ladie. Then the king with great deuotion lift vp his eyes vnto heauen, and holding abroad his hands ſaid: I commend my ſelfe to our bleſſed Ladie Mary the mother of God, that ſhe by her holy prayers may reconcile me to her moſt deare Sonne our Lord Ieſus Chriſt. And theſe words ſpoken, he preſently paſſed vp the ghoſt, on the ninth day of September, when he had raigned 20. yeres 8. moneths, and 16. daies, at the age of threeſcore and foure yeres. The chiefe Phyſitions, and others that were preſent with them that had kept the king all the night without groaning or calling, now ſeeing him vpon a ſudaine to haue preſently departed, were greatly aſtoniſhed, and made almoſt mad. Furthermore the riotter ſort of them ſtraight, taking their Horſe, departed away, and haſted home to defend their owne. The inferiour ſort, or citizens alſo, ſeeing their Maiſter in ſuch ſort to haue departed, ſnatched away the armour, veſſell, apparell, linnen, and all the Kings houſhold-ſtuffe, leauing the Kings dead body almoſt bare in the floor of his houſe, fled away. Behold, I pray you what worldly fidelitie is, euery one as a kite ſnatched what he could of his ſtuffe, and preſently fled away with their prey. Impietie therefore (Iuſtice falling downe) impudently commeth forth, and exceedingly raueinous pillage, vpon the reuenger of raueinous pilers.

The fame of the kings death flew abroad, with ſwift wings, and wide and broad brought ioy or feare to the hearts of the hearers. For the death of King William the very ſelfe ſame day that he died at Roane, was vnto his kinsmen in Rome and Calabria alſo ſhewed, as afterwards by them in Normandy it was truly related. Truely the euill ſpirit greatly reioyced, when he ſaw the ſeruants that vehemently gaped to ſnatch and take away all by death of the Iudge to be free. O worldly pompe how contemptible art thou, becauſe thou art euer vaine and ſlippery? Rightly thou mayſt be compared to a bubble in the water, that in a moment ſo ſpeedily ſcarceſt by thy ſelfe, and ſudainly thou ſhalt be brought into nothing. Behold the mighty Prince, vpon whom aboue a hundred thouſand Souldiers willingly waited, and whom many Courtiers with trembling feared, now is in his owne houſe by his owne ſeruants ſhamefully ſpoyled, and from the prime, vnto the third houre, left vpon the bare ground. For the Citizens of Roane hearing of the death of the Prince were greatly feared, and almoſt all like drunken men, were ſo troubled, as if they had ſeene a multitude of enemies to bee neare vnto

vnto the Citie, euerie one departed from the place where he was, and aſked counſaile of his wife, or his companions that he meete, what were beſt to doe. Euery one either carried or decred to carrie their gods from one place to another, and with feare hid them, leaſt they ſhould be found. At the laſt the religious men, Prieſts, and Monkes, gathering their powers and ſenſes together, ordayned a proceſſion, and decently went forward vnto Saint Geruaſius Church, and according vnto the cuſtome of holy Chriſtians commended the ſoule of the King to God.

Then William the Archbiſhop commanded that his body ſhould be carried to Caine, and there in the Church of Saint Stephen the firſt Martyre, which he had builded ſhould be buried. But his brethren and kinſmen were now gone from him, and all his ſeruants had wickedly left him as a barbarous perſon, wherefore there was not one of the Kings knights to be found that would take care for the exequies of his body.

Then Harluinus a certaine Countrey knight, being pricked with his owne good nature, manfully, for the loue of God, and honour of his Countrey, tooke vpon him carefully to ſee the Kings Funerall ſolemnized. Wherefore the aſſeſſers with apparelments, and carriers of the dead bodie, and a Wagon hee hyred at his owne proper coſts, they carried the dead bodie of the king to the hanes of Soine, and putting it in a Ship, by Sea and by Land brought it vnto Caine. Then the Lord Guilebert Abbot with the Conuent of Monkes, reuerently came forth to meet the corps: to whom, weeping, and praying, cleaued the whole multitude of the Clergy and laity: but preſently peruerſe fortune powred out vpon all together a great terrour, for freight wapes a terrible fire burſt out of a certaine houſe, and caſt by huge flames, and hurtfully inuaded a great part of the Towne of Caine. All the Clarkes therefore with the lay people run to repreſſe the fire, onely the Monkes endeo the office begun, and ſtaning, brought the Kings bodie to the Abbey Church.

To conclude, to burp this great Duke and Father of the Country, were gathered together all the Biſhops and Abbots of Normandy, of the which was William Archbiſhop of Roane, and many other Biſhops and Abbots which were long to name.

All they came together at the ſolemne Funerall of the famous King, and burped him in the Peesbyteryie, betweene the quiere and the Altar. The Maſſe ended, when the Coffin was now ſet in the earth, but the body yet remained on the Bere: The great Guilebert Biſhop of Ebroicen, went vp into the pulpit, and eloquently pronounced a long Sermon of the magnificence of the dead King, that he valiantly had enlarged the bounds of Normandy, and had extolled his Country more then all his predeceſſours, peace and iuſtice he kept throughout all his dominions. Theeues and Robbers he manfully chaſtiſed, with the rule of Right counſelle, and the ſecular Prieſts, Monkes, and vnarmed people he ſtrongly fenced with the ſword of vertue. The Sermon ended, and for pittie many weeping and proteſting his words to be true, he required the people with this addition, for that no man mortall can liue in this life without ſinne, in the loue of GOD we pray you all for the dead Prince, that you will make interceſſion for him vnto Almighty God, and if he haue offended any of you, charitably to forgiue him.

Then Anſelme Fitz Arthur riſing from the company, with an high voice vttered ſuch a plaint. This ground whereon you ſtand, was the floor of my Fathers houſe, the which that man for whom you do make interceſſion, when as yet he was Duke of Normandy, violently tooke from my Father, and all right denyed, vnlawfully founded this houſe. This ground therefore I challenge, and openly reclaime and in Gods behalfe I forbid that the bodie of the taker away by violence be couered in the earth, neyther yet ſhall he be buried in my inheritance.

After that the Biſhops and other Noble men heard this, and vnderſtood by his friends who teſtified him to haue ſaid true, they ſent for the man, and all violence ſet apart, mollified him with gentle prayers, and made peace with him: for, for the place of his burial, they preſently gaue him threeſcore ſhillings, and for the reſt of the ground which he claimed, they payed him an equiualent price, and ſo in a ſmall time, for the ſaluation of their ſpeciall friend whom they loued, they made an agreement, and (by the conſent of Henry his ſonne) 100. pound of ſiluer was giuen. Further, when the bodie ſhould be put in the Wombe or Coffin, and was violently preſſed, that the ſame, through the folly of the rough Paſons, was ſhort, and ſtreight, his fat belly (not bowelled) cracked, and an intollerable ſtinke filled the ſtanders about, and the reſt of the commonalty, ſo that the ſmoake of frankencenſe, and other gummes and ſpices, copiouſly aſcending from the ſenſers preuailed not to exclude the woſt ſmell: wherefore the Prieſts haſted to ſtuffe the burtall, preſently to feare to get them to their celles. And thus haue I truely ſhewed the tall of the Duke, and not a vaine Comedy to make men laugh: which alſo ſufficeth to prooue, that the bodie of King William could not be found vncorrupt more then foure hundred yeares after the ſame was buried (as ſome haue fabuled) neyther yet his bodie to be of eight foot length: for then, ſuch as wote of his life, rafigue, and deſcription would ſo haue noted, who all agree in one, that he was a man of meane ſtature, big bellied, &c. And laſt of all, for a full confuting of the ſayd Fable, when his reſtleſſe bones, which ſo hardly had obtained entombing (as ye haue heard) did afterward as vnluckily againe loſe it in the yeare of Chriſt, 1562. to wit, when Chaſtilli-on, counduting the remnant of thoſe that eſcaped at the battell of Dreax, tooke the Cittie of Caine, certaine ſauage ſoldiers, as well Engliſhmen as others accompanied with foure Captaines, did beate downe, and vtterly deface the Noble

The ſubiect because of his William.

The ſumme of the biſhops Kings body and that he

Place of burial for the king purchaſed.

King William by burſting of his body gaue his farewell with a ſoyle ſauour.

The body of King William could not be found vncorrupt.

Commotion raiſing William defaced and his bones ſcattered.

Noble tombe and monument of that renowned Conqueror, and victorious king, pulling out all his bones, which some of them spitefully threw away, (when they could not finde the treasure they falsely surmised had beene layed vp there) and others, to wit the English snatched euery one to haue some peece of them, not making any wonder of them, as they would haue done, if the same had exceeded the length and bignesse of mens bones of latter yeares, whereas indeed, there was no such thing noted in them, as I haue beene certainly informed by English men of good credit, who were present eye witnesses at the spoile of ỹ monument & bones, and brought some part of them into this realme. Theuit maketh mention of this matter, in his vniuersall Cosmographie writing of Caine.

Addicas Theuit.

Issue of Will. Conquerour.

Now to speake of the issue of this noble Conquerour, whereof I haue before partly touched: He had by Matild his wife daughter to Baldwin Earle of Flanders, Robert surnamed Curthos, as some write, but as saith Cornelius Martin, and Peter Balthazar, in their bookes of the Earles of Holland, Countesse, to wit in English, thoze thigh, who after his Father, was Duke of Normandie. Richard that dyed yong in the new Forrest, as he was hunting in the place where his Father had ouerthrowne Churches, and Townes to make harbour for beastes, he was buried at Winchester, on whose monument he was written Duke of Bologne. William surnamed La Rouse, oz the Red, who succeeded in the Kingdome of England. And Henry vnto whom hee gaue 5000. pound of siluer out of his treasurie (as ỹe haue heard before.) He had daughters, Cicilie Abbesse of Caue, Constance married to Allan Earle of Bzitaine, Adela wife to Stephen Earle of Bloyse, Margaret promised to Harold King of England. And Aclinor betrothed to Alfonso King of Gallia.

Cornelius, Martin. Peter Balthazar.

William the Red fetched from Winchester the treasure, which all the yeares of his Fathers Raigne had beene gathered, and gaue the gold to the Monasteries, and to the parish Churches, euery one fiue shillings of siluer, and to euery borough Towne he gaue an hundred pounds to be dealt to the poze. He also adorned a memoriall of his Father with a great heape of siluer, and gold and precious stones.

King William restaureth gold. King William gaue money to the poore.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* WILLIAM RVFVS.

WILLIAM le Rouse oz Red the third sonne of VVilliam the Conqueror, began his raigne the ninth day of September, in the yeare of our Lozd, 1087. and was crowned at Westminster by Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterburie, the first day of October. He was of person a square man, red coloured, his haire somewhat yellow, his forehead foure square like a window, his eyes not one like the other, not of any great stature though somewhat big bellied, he was variable, inconstant, couetous and cruell, hee burthened his people with vnreasonable taxes, pilled the rich, and oppressed the poze, and what he thus got, he prodigally spent in great banquetting and sumptuous apparell, for he would neither eate, drinke oz weare any thing, but that it cost immeasurably deare. Asfoz example, it was in those dayes written (and foz vs now to be noted) that in a morning his Chamberlaine bringing him a new paire of hosen, he demanding what they cost, and the Chamberlaine answering three shillings, the King being wroth, said, Away beggar that thou art, are those meet hose foz a King to weare, bring me a paire of a marke, oz thou shalt soze repent it: then his Chamberlaine brought another paire that were much worse then the first, foz a better paire could not be got) and said they cost a marke, wherewith K. William was well pleased. Thus farre haue I noted the saying of king VVilliam, because it importeth the simplicitie of apparell in those dayes vsed, so farre different from the excesse of this present time.

Anno. Reg. 1

S. Albans Chron.

The best paire of hose three shillings.

Odo Bishop of Bayon, and Earle of Kent, with his brother Robert Earle of Mortaigne and Herefozd, and almost all the nobles of England, raised warre against King VVilliam, and would haue had Robert his eldest brother to be King: but King William by faire words pacifying some of the principall conspirators, besieged the residue in the Castle of Rochester, (which Odo Earle of Kent had lately repayred) and with much labour lastly ouercame them.

1088. The nobles rebell.

W. Malmes.

King William ouercommeth his enemies.

Lanfranke Archbishop of Canterbury deceased. He renewed the great Church of Canterbury, restoring vnto Saunoys to the same. He repaired the Walls of that Cittie, builded two Hospitals, the one at Saint Iohn, the other at Barbalsdowne. He restored the Church of Rochester from 4. secular Clarkes, to 50. Monkes. He alwayes attended his booke, and trauailed to correct ỹ corruption of Writers. He was a great benefactour to the Abbey of S. Albans, giuing towards the reparations thereof 1000. Markes, and also got Redborne to be restored thereunto. Moreouer by his testament he gaue to ỹ Church a hundred pounds of siluer, besides ornaments.

Ann. reg. 2.

Ann. reg. 3.

Archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

Saint Iohns and Barbalsdowne.

Earth quake.

1089.

When Lanfranke was dead, King William kept in his owne hands the Churches and Monasteries of England, after their Pastors were dead, making great spoyle, and letting them out to farme to such as would giue most for them.

This King William so long as Lanfranke liued, seemed to abhorre all kind of vice, so that he was accounted a mirroz of Kings: But now when Lanfranke was dead, he first shewed himselfe for a while tractable, as it were, betwixt vice and vertue, and after, to wit, toward his latter dayes, all endeauoz of vertue waxing cold, the heat of vices increased in him, he set his mind to exacting: and one Ranulph a Clarke (oz Secretarie) a man of base kindred, by his faire tongue and subtill wit, being come to promotion, did pyche forward his couetous heart. This Ranulph was a Poller of the rich, and an abbor of the poze, a counsellozof other mens inheritances, an inciuill lawyer, the king would oft laugh at him, and say he was a man alone, which could compasse his matters so well to please his master, he being the Authoz: Churches were set to sale, so some as the Incumbent was dead: foz straight way this Ranulph was sent to take inuentoxy of all that was found, and the same to be consecrate to the Kings vse, and inquirie was then made foz one meet to be set in the place of the Bishop, Abbot, oz other deceased, not foz their worthinesse, but foz their money that would giue most, who at the length should haue that promotion naked and bare, notwithstanding they payed deare foz it. There was no man rich but Collectors of money, no Clarks but men of Law, not of Conscience, no Priests but Farmours. What crime soeuer any man had committed, so soone as he did appeale foz the kings aduantage, by accusing other, he was heard, yea the rope was taken from their necks. The Courtiers deuoured the substance of the husbandmen their tenants: Then the laying out of haire, and the superfluitie of garments was found, the tenderuesse of the body, and wrestling with women, nice going with dissolute behauiour was in vze, there followed the Court a number of effeminate persons, and great companies of ruffians, whereby the same Court was not a place of majestie, but a brothel-house of vnlawfull things, such as ought to be abolished.

This was a token of great insolencie in the King, that when the Iewes at London came to him, and brought him presents, he encouraged them to fight against the Christians, swearing by Lukes face, that if they did ouercome, hee would become one of their sect.

On the 11. of August, about 3. of the clocke in the afternoone, a great Earth-quake made all England afraide, with a terrible wonder, so ỹ all buildings (old as it were) leape vpwards and immediately set themselues in their old place: after the which there followed great scarcitie of fruit, and late haruest of Corne, so that ỹ same was scarcely tuned at S. Andrewes tide.

Robert de Olly the second, founded the Priorie of Olney besides Orford.

King William being desirous to take Normandie from his eldest brother Robert, and to bring it vnder his dominion, he first bought the Castle of S. Valery of one Walter, and the Castle of Albemarle of Odo, and put into them men of armes to waste Normandy. Which thing being knowne to Duke Robert, he sendeth Messengers vnto his Soueraigne Philip King of France, requiring him to come and ayde him in Normandie, who indeed shortly after brought a great power, and besieged one of the forenamed Castles, wherein King William had placed a number of men of armes. At which siege when King William vnderstood, he sent ouer no small portion of money vnto King Philip, requiring him to withdrawe his siege, who receiuing the money returned home.

Ann. reg. 3.

Ann. reg. 4.

Ann. reg. 5.

Ann. reg. 6.

Ann. reg. 7.

Ann. reg. 8.

Ann. reg. 9.

Ann. reg. 10.

Ann. reg. 11.

Ann. reg. 12.

Ann. reg. 13.

Ann. reg. 14.

Ann. reg. 15.

*Ann. reg.

[illegible] Castle, [illegible] Dyke of [illegible] Bridge, Cricklade, [illegible] Towne, and with-
[illegible] Castles, besides
Dyke, Pathamow Castle, and Sorresse,
which he repayred, was erected by the Romanes,
and is now the principall Towne of the Shire,
standing upon the River of Sore, Englishmen
name it Salisbury, or Sarisbe. Also, within the bo-
nor of the said Lordship were 18. Castles, five 10
and thirty knights fees, and a halfe, that held of
the same Lordship by knights service, besides
a great number of freeholders. Also, the said
Lordship being a Lordship Marcher, or a Lord-
ship Royall, and subject to no other Lordship,
the Lords thereof, euer since the winning of
the same, owing their obedience onely to the
Crowne, have vsed thereto [illegible] with the
regall of all actions, as well reall as personall, &
pleas of the crowne, with authoritie to pardon 20
all offences, treason onely excepted.

King William subdueth his brother Robert.

Now to returne to king William: he in this meane time making warre against his brother Robert Duke of Normandie, tooke the Castles of Valerulfe, and Aibemarle, the reuolting his souldiers into his brothers Country, he began to spoile and robbe. But through the diligence of friends, agreement was made betweene them, vpon condition, that Robert his brother should giue vp to the king his right, the Castles that he had gotten within the Countie of Eu, the Castles of Falaigne, the Abbey of S. Michaels Mount, and Peterborough, &c. And those Castles which were reuolted from the duke to the countie of Eaune, with the Castles which stood against him in Normandy, the king should enioine them, and restore them to the Duke, and all the lands in England pertaining to the Normans, which for their loyaltie to the Duke they had lost, he should restore to the Normans. Also he should giue to the Duke so much Land in England as was conteined betweene them. Moreouer, it was agreed, that if the Duke died without true male, the king should bee his heyre: and in the case if the king died without lawfull male, the Duke should be his heyre. Which couenants were confirmed by the oath of 12. Barons on the kings part, and as many on the Dukes part.

Henry inuadeth his elder brother.

In the meane time Henry younger brother to the king and Duke, with a power of men of armes, entred S. Michaels Mount, and wasted the kings lands, taking spoylers, & robbing other. Whereofore the king and duke with an army besieged Mount S. Michael, all the Lent season oft times fighting with their brother Henry, where they left both men and horses, but preuailed little. The king on a time coming out of his pauilion, and seeing the enemies a far off riding in a brauerie, he alone rode against them, and set vpon them, thinking that no man durst be so bold as to withstand him: but straight way his horse was slaine vnder him, & himselfe driuen to the ore foot: and when the knight that had ouerthrowne him, tooke his sword in his hand to haue slaine him, he cryed out, Hold thy hand knaue I am the king of England. The whole company of that Garrison, knowing the voyce, straightwaies they reuerently take him vp from the ground, and bringht him another horse: and he looking for no stirrop, leaping vp on the Horseback, and with an angry countenance beholding all that stood about him, say: Who was it that ouerthrew me? Who the knight which had done the deed, said: I not thinking you had beene the King, but a knight, did ouerthrow you. With the which answere the King being pleased, swore by Lukes face thou shalt be my knight, and thou shalt be written in my white Booke, with the reward of a worthy knight.

Malcolme King of Scots, with a great armie inuaded Northumberland, meaning if he had sped well to proceed further, but hee was disappointed in his first attempt, notwithstanding he returned with great prayes. Whereof when King William vnderstood, he returned into England with his brother Robert, & shortly after with no small Nauy and Army of horsemen and footmen, he went into Scotland to inuade king Malcolme, but before he could come thither, almost all his Nauy was drowned, and many of his horsemen perished through hunger and cold. King Malcolme met with king William, which when Duke Robert beheld, he called to him Clito Edgar, whom king William had expulled out of Normandy: vpon truste of whose helpe, he made peace betwixt the two Kings with condition, &c. Duke Robert also pacified the kings wrath against Clito Edgar.

Anno Reg.

On the 19. of October, a vehement stroke of lightning, shaking the steeple of the Abbey at Winchelscombe, made a great hole in the stone, worke thereof, neere to the top, rent one of the beames in the Church, and cast downe to the ground the head of the Crucifix with great violence, and shake the right leg of the same Crucifix, the Image of our Lady also, that stood by the Crosse, being shaken with the blow, fell to the ground. Also a great smoake afterwards with a marueilous filthy smell, filled all the Church, which continued long after: although the Monks with holy water, and incenses, went about the houses of the Monasterie, singing Psalmes, &c.

Temples & Churches burnt by lightning.

Winchelscombe.

And on the 17. day of November, a mightie tempest of wind out of ỹ Southwest, beat down in London fire hundred and fire henles, and shaked the Churches, especially the Church of Saint Mary Bow in Cheape, where the Wind brake in with such a vehement force, that two men were therewith slaine in the Church, and the rose being raised with the beames thereof were carryed in the ayre a great while, and at ỹ last fire of the said beames were driuen with their fall to fast into the ground, that there appeared of some of them the seauenth, and of some the eight part, to wit, but some some aboue the ground: which beames 92 rafters, were seauen and twenty, 92 eight and twentie some long, which was a wonderfull thing to se them so pierce the ground (not pained then with stone) and there to stand in such order, as the workemen had placed them on the Church, vntil such time as they were cut euen by the ground.

Tempests & Winds at London.

Bow Church burnt by lightning.

The Tower of London was also broken, &c. When King William had repayred such castles as the Scots had vnpayred, and builded the new Castle vpon Tine, he returning south of Northumberland, came through Mercia into Westchester, and kept the Duke with him till Christmas, but he would not performe any promise made with him, which the Duke taking grieuously passed ouer into Normandy with Clito Edgar the 23. of December.

Castle in Cumb. 1091.

Osmond Bishop of Salisbury founded the Cathedrall Church of old Salisbury, and on the morrow after the dedication thereof, the steeple was fired by lightning.

Bp Salisbury. Steeple.

This yeare deceased Wido the 42. Abbot of S. Augustines by Canterbury. After whose burriall, the Monks of Saint Augustines went to King William to obtaine licence to chose a new Abbot, which request was not onely denyed them by the King, but hee also charged them vpon a great paine, not to elect any, saying, that hee would hold in his hands, all the Spirituall liuings in the whole realme, and would dispose of them at his pleasure: to the Monks of S. Austines returned fruitfraire of all hope hauing. Now it happened at the same time, there was in that Monasterie a certaine monke, in religion young, but graue in discretion, a Norman borne, and King VVilliams kinsman, by name called Hugh de Floriaco. This Hugh hauing beene a valiant souldier, had long serued king VVilliam the elder, and the said King VVilliam Rufus, as well in Normandy, as in England. Hugh, as yet by protection a souldier, on a certaine time comming to Canterbury with King VVilliam Rufus, vpon deuotion did visit S. Augustines Church, where by Gods speciall grace rauished with the loue of God, and delighting in the chast life of the Monkes, hee would not goe out of the limits of the Monasterie before he had procured to be made a monk and brother of the said Monastery. Which being granted, the said Hugh went into Normandie, distributed his goods vnto his kinsmen, and to the poore, because hee had no wife nor childe, and returned vnto the Monasterie, and put on the Monkish habit, and so remained a Monke.

1091. Bp Salisbury. Steeple.

A souldier becommeth a monke, and then Bow of Saint Augustines.

The Abbot VVido being dead, (as it is said) at the last it was decreed that two circumpect Monkes, together with the said Hugh, who had carefe continued one yeare of probation, should bee sent to the king to procure his fauour by prayer or price, that he would grant them licence to elect an Abbot. When these presented themselues vnto the Kings sight, and saw his cosin, who in time before had serued him in the bzauery of a souldier, to be now clothed in habit of a Monke, hee was so displayed in minde, that gushing out with teares hee sayd, I doe grant you this cousin of mine to be your Abbot, and at your petition I doe giue him the gouernment of the Abbey of Saint Augustine, neyther doe I permit you to chose any other, whom, vnlesse you doe presently receiue, I will shortly burne your Abbey to ashes. Then the Monkes seing no remedie, submitted themselues to the Kings will in the premisses. But the foresaid Hugh long time refused the honour, saying, that he was as well vnworthy, as insufficient, because hee was a man in a manner vnlettered, and one that had very little skill, as well in religion, as in Ecclesiasticall ordinances, but the King and the Monkes forced him to accept the honour offered, neyther did the King suffer him to depart from the Court before hee were consecrated Abbot, which was done in the Kings Chappell at Thestminster, by Maurice Bishop of London. This Abbot did many laudable acts to the great commodity of the church. King William moued wars against the Welshmen, but preuailed not, for he lost many of his best knights, and much cattell, as well at this time, as at other.

Anno regis.

1092.

John Bishop of Welles, a Norman borne, by consent of King VVilliam for a great summe of money translated his Bishoppes Sea to Bathe.

This yeare a noble man of the Normans blood named Picot, *vicecomes* or Sheriffe, at the request of Hugolin his wife, founded a Church to the honour of God and S. Giles, neere vnto the castle of Cambridge, but afterward, to wit, *In Anno* 1102. the Chanons were removed to Barnwell, by Paine Peuerell. The Towne of Cambridge take name of a faire large bridge, made ouer the riuer Grant there running, and so named Granbridge (corruptly Cambridge) it increased by meanes of this bridge, which was the ruine of Grantcester, sometimes a famous citie, situate little more then a mile from Granbridge. The castle was builded the first yeare of William Conquerour, as may appeare by the description in Doomes day Booke in the Exchequer, which hath thus. The bozough of Granbridge defended it selfe for one hundred yeare in the time of Edward the King. In this bozough haue beene, and yet are 10. wardes: in the first ward are 54. mansions, of them 2. be wasted: In this first ward Allan hath 5. burgesses that pay nothing, the earle Morton hath 3. mansions of the land of Lindichel: and there be 3. burgesses, which in the time of Edward the K. paid 5. shillings and 8. pence halfe peny, at this day they pay nothing: Rolfe of Bant hath 3. burgesses that pay nothing. Roger seruant to Bishop Remigius hath 3. burgesses that pay nothing. Erchingor hath 1. burges that payeth nothing: this ward was accounted in the dayes of King Ed. for 2. wards, but for the castle 27. houses were thrown downe. In the second ward were 48. mansions in the time of king Ed. whereof 2. be wasted, of them 13. yeld nothing, the other 32. pay all customes, Earle Allan hath of them 5. burgesses that yeld nothing, and 9 remaine in the hands of the Englishmen. In the third ward were 41. mansions, of them 11. be wasted, the other thirty pay all customes. In the fourth ward were 45. mansions, of them 24. be wasted, the other 21. pay all customes. In the fift ward were 50. mansions, one of them is wasted, all the rest pay the customes. In the seuenth ward were 37. Mansions, 3. of those 37. Frenchmen haue, and pay nothing. In the 8. ward were 37. mansions,

Castle at Granbridge builded in the time of William Conquerour.

sions, a Priest holdeth one and payeth nothing, 3. are wasted. In the ninth ward were 32. mansions. In the tenth ward were 29. mansions, 7. of them are wasted, but yet they defend themselves. The customes payable for this towne were 7. pounds by yere. And for Langable 7. pounds, and 2. ores and 2. pence. The burgesses in the time of King Edward sent the Sheriffe their cares thrice in the yere: now they are demanded nine times. They found neither Boats nor Wagons in the time of K. Edward, which they doe now by custome set upon them. They claime of the Earle Picot a common pasture, which hee hath taken from them. The same Picote hath made there three Milles, which taketh away the Pasture, and destroyeth many houses, and one Mill of the Abbot of Ely, and another of the Earle Allan, the Milles yeld 9. pounds the yere. The same Earle Picote hath of the heriot of the Lagemans seaven pounds, and one Palfrey, and one Knights armour. Alurike Godricson when hee was Sheriffe, had of one of them twentie shillings for a heriot. Thus much Doomes day for Granthridge, whereof more shall be said in place convenient.

Abbey of Chester.

Hugh Lupus Earle of Chester, sent into Normandie for Anselme, by his Counsell to build an Abbey of S. Werbridge at Chester.

King William lying sicke at Gloucester, and thinking he should haue dyed, his Barons put into his head, his promise to God and the world that he would amend his life. And forthwith he gaue unto Anselme Abbot of Becco, the Archbishoppicke of Canterbury: and to Robert Bloet his Chancellor, the Bishoppicke of Lincolne. But when the King had recouered his health, he repented him that he had not sold those Bishoppricks for a great peice of money.

Anselme Archbishop of Canterbury.

Malcolme king of Scots comming into England was met withall, and fondately slaine, with his sonne and heire also, by Robert Mowbray Earle of Northumberland.

Anno. Reg. 6 1093. Lewes in Sussex.

William VVaren first Earle of Surrey, and Gundred his wife, finished the Abbey of Lewes in Sussex.

Carlile Citie and Castle builded.

King VVilliam builded againe the Citie of Carlile, which was destroyed by the Danes 200. yeares before: he also builded a Castle there, and out of the South parts of England sent men to inhabite.

This yere was a great Famine: and after, so great a mortalitie, that the quicke were scant able to burie the dead.

King VVilliam made great Warres in Normandie against his brother Robert, through the which both England and Normandy were sore oppressed with exactions.

The Citty of Gloucester spoyled by Welshmen. *An. reg.* 7. 1094.

The Welshmen spoyled the Citty of Gloucester, with a part of Shzetwsbury, and won the Ile of Anglesey to their subjection.

The Bishoppricke of Thetford was translated to Norwich, by Herbert being Bishop there, sometime Abbot of Ramsey.

King VVilliam sent his brother Henry into Northumberland with a great power, because Robert Mowbray Earle of that countrey refused to come to the Kings Court: the country was spoyled, the Earle was taken, and many were dispersed, some had their eyes put out, &c.

King William with a power entred Wales, but not being able to follow the Welshmen among the hils, he builded two castles in the borders, and returned.

King William builded two Castles in Wales.

Great preparation was made by the Christians to goe against the Infidels at Jerusalem: Peter the hermite being their first leader, and after Godfrey of Lorraine, called Godfrey of Bolloigne.

An. reg. 1095.

In a councell holden at Salisbury, William de Owe was accused to the king of treason, who whiles hee pronoked his accuser to fight with him in combate, by the Kings commandement his eyes were plucked out, and his stones cut off. Many innocent men were also accused, of which number was VVilliam de Aluerie, a man of godly personage, Godfather to the king, his Aunces sonne, and his sewar, yet the king commanded him to be hanged: which VVilliam making his confession to Osmond Bishop of Salisbury, was first whipped throughout by all the Churches of the citie, who dealing his garments to the poze, went naked to hanging, blowping his flesh with often kneeling upon the stones: and at the place of execution, hee satisfied the Bishop and people, saying, So GOD helpe my soule, and deliuer it from euill, as I am guiltelesse of the thing that I am accused of: and after the Bishop had commended him to God, he was hanged.

Councell of Salisbury. Cruelty of Wil. Rufus.

Robert duke of Normandie take his iourney towards Jerusalem, and laid the Dukedome of Normandie to gage to his brother king VVilliam for 6666. pounds of siluer. Paulus Æmilius saieth 13600. pound.

An. reg. 1096. Marianus. Normandy pawned.

The 22. of September, a blazing starre was seene, and for the space of 15. dayes after, the greatest part whereof pointed toward the east, and the lesser toward the west. There were also starres seene, which did, as it were, shoot out dartes one at another.

Blazing starre.

The Dukes Godfrey, Beamond, and Robert besieged the Citie of Nice with fiue thousand Horsemen, and ten thousand Footemen, and take the same, with the wife of Soliman, and his Sonnes. They also take the Citie of Antioch.

The Church of the holy Trinity in Norwich was founded by Herbertus, being first Bishop there.

An. 10 1097.

King VVilliam returned out of Normandy into England, and after Easter with an army of Horsemen and Footemen, went the second time into Wales, that he might kill all the male kind there, but hee could vnaeth kill or take one of them, notwithstanding of his owne people hee lost diuers, and also many Horses.

King William went against the Welshmen.

After this king VVilliam sent Clito Edgar into Scotland with an army, that he might make his cousin Edgar the Sonne of king Malcolme king, and expulse Donwalde, which had inuaded the kingdome.

Clito Edgar sent against the Scots.

About the feast of Saint Andrew, K. VVilliam went into Normandy, and shortly after, to wit, in the moneths of December and January deceased

An. reg. 13 Abbot of Ely.

deceased the Abbots of Saint Edmundsbury, of Abindune, of Peterborow, of the new Monastery at Winchester, and VVulthenus Bishop of Winchester.

This yere King VVilliam builded Westminster Hall.

King William making great wars in Normandie, subdued to his dominion the Citie of Mants, and a great part of that Prouince: but in the meane time with tares, exactions, and tributes, he did not onely poule, but shaue and flay the Englishmen.

Hugh Earle of Chester, and Hugh Earle of Shzewsbury, assayled the Ile of Anglesey with an Army, and slew many Welshmen, whom they tooke in it, and some they dismembred by cutting off their hands and stones, and putting out their eyes: and a certaine Priest called Kenredus, a man of great yeares, of whom the Welshmen tooke their councell, for all matters that they tooke in hand, they drew him out of the Church, pulled out one of his eyes, and cut out his tongue.

The same time Magnus King of Norway, the sonne of Olaus, the sonne of Harold Harnager, when he had subdued to his dominion the Iles of Orkeney and of Man, with a few ships he arriued in the Ile of Anglesey, but when he would haue come a Land with his vessels, Hugh Earle of Shzewsbury with many armed men of warre on the Sea shoze met him, and as it was then reported, by a shaft he was stricken: he ended his life, and his brother Robert de Bellame succeeded in his Earledome.

The Princes of the Pilgrimes with their armies take their iourney towards Jerusalem, besieged it, and take it on the tenth of July, placing there a King, and a Patriarke, and afterward fought with the Soudan of Egypt, (who besieged them in Jerusalem) and ouercame him.

King VVilliam being returned out of Normandy into England, kept his Feast of Whitsontide very royally at Westminster, in the new Hall, which he had lately caused there to be builded, the length whereof was 270. foote, and 74. foote in breath: and when he heard men say that the Hall was too big, and too great, he answered and said, This Hall was not big enough by the one halfe, and is but a Bed-Chamber, in comparison of that I minde to make. A diligent searcher might yet finde out the foundation of the Hall, which he had purposed to build, stretching from the River of Thames, euen unto the common high way. As writeth H. Huntingdon, he challenged the inheritance of Prelates, he pilled and shaued the people, with tribute, especially to spend about the Tower of London, and the great Hall at Westminster.

King William hauing transferred into his treasurie three hundreth pounds by yere sozth of the Bishoppricke of Durham, and fiue Poneths being part of the fourth yeare, from the death of VVilliam Bishop of Durham, he gaue the Bishoppricke to Ranulph, who for certaine excellent parts about the King was named the Kings Chaplaine, but some haue written that he gaue the King a thousand pound for that Bishoppricke. This Ranulph was first familiar with Maurice Bishop of London, but falling at variance because the Deanary was taken away from him, he went to the King in hope of a higher place, in which point his hope was not deceiued, for being admitted, and hauing a good wit and ready tongue, in short time he obtained to be preferred afoze all other estates of England, who being called to bee Procurator, or Chancellor of the whole Realme, did many times behaue himselfe so proudly, abusing his authozitie, that he little esteemed to offend many, who laboured with continuall accusations to cloud the cleare mind of the King toward him, whereof when they failed with vaine labour, they imagined how to haue killed him. For which cause, one Gerald, armed with audacitie and deceit of other, taking a boat with a few persons, met with the Chaplaine Ranulph at London, humbly requesting him that he would make speed unto his maister Mauritius, Bishop of London, lying very sicke at his house upon the Riuer of Thames, who being almost ready to depart the world, greatly desired to speake with him. In affirming the truth whereof, he had brought a boat for him from his Maister, wherein hee might more speedily bee carried.

The Kings Chancellor.

The Kings Chancellor in great danger of death on the Sea.

Ranulph suspecting nothing, entred the boat with a few of his company, which boat Gerald with a straight course, directed in the middle of the streame unto the Sea: and when the Chaplaine demanded why they rowed so long, and did not turne to the shoze, they fained that the Port was further off, where they should haue conuenient place to land.

In the meane time the Chaplaine perceiuing a great ship to lie at Anchoz in the midst of the flood, which, as it seemed, awaited for his comming, did presently suspect the deuise of their deceit. And being transported unto the suspected Ship, in the which was harboured a great number of armed men, perceiuing no hope to escape, he call the King which he ware on his finger into the sea: and his Secretary did throw his Seale into the middest of the flood, least though those Seales the state of things might be disturbed, by counterfeit Procelles and Writs set forth by the deceiuing enemy. After this his men are set ouer, being first bound with an oath not to disclose any thing of the stealing away of their Master.

The Kings Chancellor cast the Great and Priuie Seales into the Sea.

Now the Ship leauing the Riuer, with hoised Sailes entred the deepe Sea, directing their course towards the South, and Ranulph sitting in the foze part of the Ship. There arose a contention among the Shipmen for the manner of his death: and two are chosen forth, either to heaue him into the Sea, or to knocke out his braines, who should for reward obtaine those garments wherewith he was cloathed: of which persons, when the one would haue his coate or vpper most garment, and the other would also possesse the same, this contention protracted time of his death. At length their suddainly arose a fierce wind from the South, which troubled the Sea

from the very bottome, and the Heauens were couered with darkenesse. Which tempest so tossed the Boat hither and thyther, that they could neither goe forward, nor returne backe againe to Land. And when the Sayle and Cables were broken, the Ship was not onely carried on the water, but the also carried in her the water, nothing being more certaine then death to them all, which they looked for, onely such was the course of the Sea, that the Ship was returning to the place from whence she came, and yet the waues beating her back the murderers a new determine the death of the Chaplaine, least he escaping should reuenge such iniurie.

But one which was next to Gerald in the ship abhorring this wickednesse, and being neere to the Chaplaine, with sorrowfull repetition said, Dufalas Ranulph, thou shalt now be murdered, but if thou wilt pardon me this wicked conspiracie, I will stand by thee to thy defence, as a companion of thy life or death. Whereunto he (as he was alwayes bold spirited) with great noise calling vpon him, said: What dost thou thynke Gerald? What dost thou request of vs? Thou art my man, thou owest faith to me, call backe thy mind from the wicked deed thou intendest, demand what thou wilt, for I am he that can giue more then thou canst demand. Then Gerald not so much allured by words, as feared with the authoritie of the man, did consent, and bringing him out of the Ship, now beaten to the shore, did procure him honourable furniture, at his owne house. But not trusting the former promises, he procured his owne safety by banishment into perpetuall exile. Ranulph therefore calling Knights together, is brought to London with many armed men, and a great noyse of people, to the astonishment of all men, supposing him to haue beene slaine, he as then was iudainly reuiued and set againe as executor of the Kings affaires, and reconciled the Bishoppicke of Durham, being consecrated in the Church of S. Paul in London.

The Kings Chancellour escapeth death and is made B. of Durh.

King Williams courage and his words.

Anno. 13. Hector Boetius. Great water flouds.

Godwins Sands.

1100. Simon Bishop of Salisbury deceased.

King William returning out of Normandy, kept his Christmasse at Gloucester.

The Monastery of Gloucester which Abbot Serle had builded from the foundation was now dedicated. W. Malmesb. Dunclarge red to repair.

This yere many strange things came to passe the diuell did visibly appeare to men, and sometime spake vnto them.

Wonderous, in the Towne of Finchhamsted in Barkshire neere vnto Abindune, a spring did continually by the space of fifteene dayes flow plentifully with bloud, (or the likenesse thereof) so that it did colour and infect the next water vnto it. Of which things, when men told the King thereof, he laughed them to scorne, and gaue no credit to them, neyther yet to his owne dreames, nor the visions that other men told him of. A Spring the like to bloud.

King William on the morrow after Lammas day, hunting in the new Forrest in Hampshire, in a place called Chorcyngham, where since a Chappell was builded, sir Walter Tirell shooting at a Deere, vnawares hit the King in the breast, that he fell downe starke dead, and neuer spake word. His men (especially that knight) got them away, but some came backe againe, and layd his body vpon a Colliers Cart, which one sole beast did draw vnto the Citty of Winchester, where he was buried on the morrow after his death, at whose burtiall, men could not weepe for ioy. King William slaine.

This King was taken out of the world in the midst of his vnrighteousnesse, who being wicked to his owne people, and to strangers, was most wicked to himselfe. The Countries about him he prouoked with warres, and England was so miserably oppressed vnder him, that it could not recouer, for he and his traine spoiled and subuerted all things.

He died in the yere of Christ 1100. and in the 13. yeare of his raigne, on the second day of August, when he had raigned 12. yeares, eleuen moneths, lacking eight dayes, and was buried at Winchester, in the Cathedrall Church of Sonasterie of Saint Swithen, vnder a plaine flat marble stone before the lectorne in the quere, but long since his bones were translated in a Coffer, and laid with King Knuts bones. He gaue vnto the Monkes called de charitate in Southwarke, the great new Church of S. Saviour in Bermondsey, which he had caused to be builded for them, and also his Mannor of Bermondsey it selfe, with all the pertinances, and confirmed vnto them all whatsoeuer Alwin Child their first founder, Robert Bishop of Lincolne (who also gaue to them the Towne of Charleton) or other had giuen vnto them. William Rufus troubled the Saints about him with wars, and quelled his owne people.

He also of an old Monastery of Monkes in the City of Yorke, founded an Hospitall, and dedicated it to Saint Peter, for the sustentation and finding of the poore, as well men as women, which Hospitall was since greatly augmented by King Stephen, and by him dedicated to Saint Leonard. Lib. Bermo.

HENRY

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* HENRY BEAVCLARKE.

HENRY, the yongest sonne of William Conquerour borne in England, at a place called Selby in Lincolneshire, brother to William Rufus, and the first of that name, for his learning called Beauclerke, brought vp in the study of the liberall arts at Cambridge, chiefly (through the trauaile of Henry Newborow Earle of Warwicke, (who appeased all debates at that time to the contrary) obtained the dominion ouer this Realme of England and began his raigne the second of August, in the yere of our Lord 1100. and was crowned at Westminster on the fift day of August, by Maurice Bishop of London, because at that time Anselme Archbishop of Canterbury, was by persecution of William Rufus exiled. Malmesb. Rudborne. Matth. Paris. Matth. Westm. Polyd. Virg.

This Henry was a noble Prince, strong, and mighty of body, high of stature, and amiable of countenance, blacke haires, and that somewhat long about the eye-browes, faire eyes, broad breasted, well in flesh, full of merrie conceites. He was excellent in wit, eloquent in speech, and fortunate in battaile, and for these 3. he had 3. notable vices, Couetousnesse, Cruelty and Lechery.

He maried Mawd the daughter of Malcolme and Margaret, King and Queene of Scots, of whom he begate William and a daughter named Mawd. At the beginning of his Raigne, he restored the state of the Clergy, allwaged the grieuous payments, reduced againe Saint Edwards Lawes and amended them. He put out of his Court all nice and wanton persons.

Measures reformed.

He reformed the old vntrue measures, and made a measure by the length of his owne arme which was then called Vlna, an Elle, and now the same is called a yard, or a metwand, &c.

Fire of Aire and Water restored.

Her restored to his Subiects the vse of lights in the nights, which lights and also fire, had bene forbidden by his father to be vsed, after the ringing of a Bell, at 8. of the clocke at night.

Edgar King of Scots, did homage to this Henry.

Priory of S. John of Hierusalem.

This yere Iordan Briset Baron, the sonne of Raufe, the son of Brian Briset, founded the house of S. John of Hierusalem, neere vnto London, by Smithfield.

Clerken well.

The same Iordan gaue 14. acres of ground lying in the field next adioyning vnto Clerkenwell, to build thereupon a house of Nuns, where in he with Muriel his wife, were both buryed in the Chapter house.

1101. *Ann. reg. 2.*

Robert Shorthose, Duke of Normandy, the kings eldest brother, which was now returned from Jerusalem, made warre vpon his brother Henry for the Crowne of England, who assembled a strong army, and landed at Portesmouth, but by mediation a peace was made on condition, that Henry should pay 3000. Marks yerely to Duke Robert: and if the one dyed without issue, the longer liuer should inherit. Winchester was brent the 17. of May, and Glocester was brent the 20. of May.

Robert Fitzham, who came with the Conquerour out of Normandy, with Sibell his wife, after to Robert Belasme Earle of Shrewsbury, founded anew the Church of Teukesbury, with the offices thereto belonging, and enriched it with large possessions, and was there buried. Theuke sbury builded.

Robert de Belasme, Earle of Shrewsbury, eldest Sonne to Roger Mountgomerie, strengthened the Towne and Castle of Shrewsbury, so did he the Castles of Bridgenorth, Tichile, and Arundell, with victuals and armed men against King Henry: but the King being warned thereof, he gathereth his power, & besiegeth Bridgenorth, which Towne was yelded vnto him. And this being knowne to them of Arundell, they forthwith submitted themselues, with condition, that their Lord Robert de Belasme, might be permitted freely to passe into Normandy. Also they of Shrewsbury sent the keyes of their Castle, and pledges of their obeysance, and then Robert with his brother Ernulfus & Roger of Portiers obiured this land for euer. 1102. Earle of Shrewsbury rebelled. *Ann. reg. 3.*

This yere the Priory and Hospitall of S. Bartholomew in Smithfield was begun to be builded by Rahere (a man of singular and pleasant wit, and therefore of many called the Kings Jester and minstrell) in a place which before had bene a marsh ground, a common laistall of all odure and filth, and the place where felons and other transgressors were executed. This Rahere ioyned vnto him a certaine old man named Alfune, that had (not long before) builded the parish Church of S. Giles, nigh a gate of the City of London, then called Creeples gate: this man he died as a counsellor and companion in his building of the Church and Hospitall, and the one of them, to wit, Rahere, became the first Prior of that Priory, & the other, to wit, Alfune, became Hospitaller or Proctor for the poore, and went himselfe daily to y chambles, & other markets, where he begged the charity of denout people for their reliefe, promising to the liberall giuers (alleadging testimonies of holy Scripture) reward at the hands of God. Priory and hospitall of S. Bartholomew. Saint Giles at Creeplegate of London.

King Henry inuested two of his Chaplaines, Roger his Chancellor in the Bishoppricke of Salisbury, Roger his Larder, in the Bishoppricke of Hereford, at Westminster. 1103.

King Henry gaue the Earledome of Leicester to Robert Beamont Earle of Pitient, that came in with William Conqueror. This Robert new Leicester, founded the Colledge of secular Canons in the castle of Leicester, before by wars defaced, Rob. the second surnamed de Bosu, his sonne Earle of Leicester, and Amicia his wife, for Robert his father, and Isabell his mother, founded an Abbey to the honour of God, and the virgin Mary, in the Robert Beamont Earle of Leicester.

meadowes without the Northgate of Leicester for Canons Regular, naming the same Church S. Mary *de prato, in Anno* 1144. he indowed it with Lands, &c. Robert Duke of Normandie comming into England, through the subtilty of K. Henry his younger brother, released to him the tribute of three thousand marks of siluer, which he should have received yearely.

Ponger brother begat ter the elder.

Ann. Reg. 4.

Hugh Lacy founded the Monastery of Saint John at Lanthony, the Chanons of which place were since translated by Miles, high Constable, and Earle of Hereford to a place more into Gloucester, then called Hide, and since to Lanthony.

Lanthony by Gloucester.

Donmow the Ele.

Iuga Baynard, Lady of little Donmow, caused Maurice Bishop of London, to dedicate ẏ church of Donmow which she had founded, and the same day she gaue to it halfe a hide of Land. This Lady Iuga was late wife to Baynard, that first builded Baynards Castle in London.

1104.

William Earle of Morton disherited.

W. Malmesb.

William Earle of Morton, was disherited of all his lands in England, and all his Castles made euen with the ground, and the Countrey sore bewed with the Kings oractions.

Now the flames of warre being translated into Normandy, prouailed there, being kindled by the assemblies of traytors, as with fire which catcheth in all things that is about it. Normandy is a patient sufferer of mischiefes, though it be no large region: it both tolerate sedition very long, and by reskoring of peace arileth into a fertile state of subsistance, letting out the bridle-maker into France with free passage. Contrariwise, England doth not suffer Rebels long. Robert de Belasme Earle of Shrewsbury, comming into Normandy, having confederates of his wickednes, among whom was W. Morton, the sonne of Robert the Kings vncle, who from his childhood euer enuied the glory of Henry, for not content with 2. Earledomes of Morton in Normandy, and Cornewall in England, he required the Earledome of Kent, which his vncle Odo held, being so presumptuous, that he would say, he would not put on his vppermost garment, except he might obtaine of his brother his desired possessions. But the king delaying him with subtile answers, did not onely deny him that which he demanded, but began to challenge from him such things, as he said, he held vnlawfully, whereupon the said William being disherited of all his lands in England, in a rage got him into Normandy, where besides the daine assaults hee made against the kings Castles, he raged against Richard Earle of Chester, the sonne of Hugh, inuading, taking, and spoyling, such things as appertained vnto him, who was then but a child in yeares, and in the Kings wardship.

There appeared about the Sunne 4. Circles, and a blazing starre.

An Reg. 5. 1105. King Henry sayled into Normandy.

King Henry rayled a great army, and passed the Sea into Normandy, against his brother Robert, and got the Towne and Castle of Caen and brent Bayon, with the Church of S. Mary, by the helpe of the President of Angeow, & many Castles more he wan, whereupon the Priories of Normandy submitted themselues vnto K. Henry.

The Flemings hauing a great part of their Country ouerflowned, came into England, and obtained a place to inhabite in, nigh the River of Twede, but afterward they were removed thence, and sent into West Wales.

Endo Dapifer of Sewer to king Henry, founded the Monasterie of S. Iohn in Colchester of regular Chanons of S. Austines rule, commonly called blacke Chanons, and this house was the first that euer was erected in England of y order. K. Henry hauing set things in an order in Normandy, he sayled & returned into England, ẏ he might increase his strength, and returne again.

An. reg. S. Iohns Colchester.

Robert Duke of Normandy, came to his brother at Northampton, and friendly required him to beare brotherly lone toward him, but King Henry seking his conscience accusing him, for obtaining the kingdome by defrauding of his elder brother, fearing men more then God, first he reconciled the Nobles of the Realme with large promises, thinking afterwards to make amends for his great wrongs, by founding of an Abbey which he purposed to build.

1106. *An. reg.*

The Duke returning into Normandy, the King followed with a great power, where betweene them were many sore battailes fought, but at the last the valiant and most stout man Robert was taken, and William Earle of Morton, Robert de Belasme, William Crispine, and other, to the number of 400. men of armes, but Robert de Belasme escaped, when he saw that many of his men were taken.

This yere appeared a blazing starre, from 3. of the clock till nine, and on the Paunday Thursday was seene two full Mones, one in the East, and another in the West.

The first Chanons entred into the Church of our Lady in Southwarke called S. Mary Ouery, founded by William Pountlarge knight, and William Dancys Normans, William Gifford Bishop of Winchester, assisting them in that worke. Algodus was first Priot there.

S. Mary Ouery.

When King Henry had set in order Normandy according to his pleasure, he returning into England, brought with him his brother Robert, and William of Morton, and put them in perpetuall prison: from whence shortly after Duke Robert deuising his keepers, sought to escape, but he was taken as he fled, sitting on his horse in a deepe mire and tough clay where he stucke fast: and by his brothers commandement, had his eyes put out, and kept Traitor till his dying day, which was about 26. yeers after, when he pined away for sorrow and griefe of mind.

1107. *An. reg.* K. Henry put out the eyes of his elder brother Robert.

It appeareth by the priuate historie of Dunstable, that in the ioyning of the 2. high waies of Watling and Ikening, there were great woods which were felled by King Henry, to represse the enills that were there committed by one Dunne a most famous Theefe of that time, of whom the place was called Dunstable, the said king therefore built there a Bozow, by the which he also erected a pallace for himselfe, making the Burgesses there as free, as any other Burgesses of ẏ Realme were, to the which Towne the K. granted both Faire and Market.

Hist. Dunstab. The Towne and Priory of Dunstable.

And this yere he began there to build a faire Church of Priory, placing therein regular Chanons, and gaue to Peter the first Priot, and his

Record.

successors there serving God, the towne of Dunstable, and 4. cultures of land about the towne, with great priuiledges, as appeareth by his Letters Patents, this Priory was valued at the generall suppression to dispend by the yeare, 344. li. 14. s. 2. d. ob.

Also this yeare King Henry began to build the new Castle with the Chappell and Towne of Windsore. on the hill, one mile from the old Towne of Windlesore.

This yeare Maurice Bishop of London, Robert Fitzhamon, Roger Bigot, founder of the Monastery of Monkes at Thetford, Richard de Reduers Counsellors to the King, Milo Crispen, and many other Noblemen of England, deceased, Richard de Bewmes was elected Bishop of London, and was consecrated by Anselme at Pageham, Gundulphus Bishop of Rochester deceased, after whom succeeded Radulphus.

Gerard Archbishop of Yorke deceased at Southwell, when he had sate Archbishop seuen yeares and almost 6. months, and was buried at Yorke. Thomas the ponger, the Kings Chaplaine, ẏ nouell of Bewer take succeeded.

1108.

This yere ẏ Priory of the holy Trinitie, within Aldgate of London, was founded by Matild the Queene, in the Parishes of Mary Magdalen, S. Michael, S. Catherine, and the holy Trinitie, all which are now but one Parish of Christs Church: in old time called holy Rode Parish: the gaue to the same Priory the port of Aldgate, with the soke thereunto belonging, which was of her demaines, and is now called Aldgate ward.

King Henry with sundry expeditions brought vnder him the Welshmen, and to pull downe their stoutnes, he sent all the Flemings that inhabited England thither which Flemings of late were come hither, when a great part of Flanders was drowned, and also in time of his father, by alliance of his mother, insomuch, that though their great multitude, they seemed grieuous to the Realme, wherefore he sent them all with their substance and kindred, into Rose in Penbrokeshyre, a Country in Wales, as into a smile, that he might cleanse the Realme of such noysome people, and also suppresse the wilfulnesse of the enemy: and not long after he made expedition thither, compelling the Welshmen to giue him for pledges the sonnes of the Nobilitie with some money, and much cattell, and returned.

Henry Emperour of Rome, sent Messengers into England, requiring to haue Mawd ẏ Kings daughter giuen him in marriage, which was granted, by the king, who then toke 3. shillings of euery hide of Land through England.

1109.

The 21. of April, Anselme Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and on the next morrow after being on thursday, was buried at Canterbury, when he had sate Archbishop 12. yeres, being of the age of 76. yeares. he bestowed on Christs Church in Canterbury much money, as well in building, as in ornaments, he wrote many bookes vpon the holy Scriptures, he was twice expelled the Realme, at the first for 3. yeares, and wanted the whole profits of his Bishoprick. The second banishment was almost 4. yeres long, and lined onely 2. yeares after the second restoring. After whose decease, King Henry assumeth the custome of his father and brother, and inuadeth as well the possessions of the Archbishop of Canterbury then void, as of all, and any that fell void. And putteth extreamly in practise, the decrees of the Synode at London, touching Priests wiues, exacting of them great summes of money, and at the last without respect, alloweth imposition in that respect vpon euery Church, which diuers therein not guilty, did euill like and much curse. The Archbishoprick was void after ẏ death of Anselme, 5. yeres and fiue dayes, the king receiuing the reuenues as from the beginning. He made saleable all spirituall promotions, selling to his Chaplaine Ragnolph, the Bishoprick of Durham for a thousand pounds, and Herbert Losinga the Bishoprick of Thetford, &c.

Bishoprickes and other spirituall promotions sold for money.

An. reg. 10

Richard the tenth and last Abbot of Ely deceased, and was buried among his predecessors at Ely. This Richard being a man of a great wit perceiuing that the ancient priuiledges of his house were daply violated by sundry great personages, especially, by the Bishop of Lincolne, who challenged Episcopall iurisdiction ouer the house, notwithstanding ẏ the same was clearely exempt therefrom by their ancient priuiledges, went to the king, and dealt with him in such sort, that he obtained his regall consent, to change the Abbey into a Bishopricke: vnto the which place was named for the first Bishop one Harueus, then Bishop of Bangor. And because there was yet no Prouince assigned, where this new bishop should haue iurisdiction, the king sent for the bishop of Lincolne Robert, and of him obtained, that the country then called Granthzioge might be his Prouince, and gaue vnto the bishop of Lincolne, the mannor of Spaldwike in recompence of the iurisdiction which he before had ouer the County of Granthzioge, and so Harueis was placed in the Bysshopricke.

Lib. Elie.

Ely made a Bishops Sea.

A Comet appeared after a strange fashion, for it was risen out of the East, and ascended by words.

1110.

A great Earthquake was at Shrewsbury, and the water of Trent at Nottingham was dryed vp from one of the clocke, till three, by the space of a mile, that men might passe ouer the Channell dry shod.

An. reg. 12 Nonacens.

King Henry married Robert his bastard sonne to Mawd. daughter and heire to Robert Fitzhamon, and made him the first Earle of Glocester, who after builded the Castles of Bristow and Cardiffe, with the Priory of Saint James in Bristow, where his bodie was buried. And his sonne Earle William began the Abbey of Kensham.

Earle of Glocester. Castles at Bristow and Cardiffe. Saint James at Bristow. Kensham.

King Henry went ouer into Normandy, and made warre against the Earle of Angew, who kept Mayne against the kings will, and spoyled the Countrey, and Lewes king of France take part with Helie Earle of Mayne against ẏ king of England, and in battell he chanced to become what sequestred from his owne people, where an English knight espying him, rode into him, and caught his horse by the bridle, and called out aloud, that the king of France was taken, at

The French king escaped narrowly.

which words, the King with his sword strake him such a blow, that he fell downe and dyed, and therewithall the King said, know that at Chester the King is never taken alone.

1111. *An.reg.12* Matthew Paris. Cro. Dun.

William Baynard, under whom Eadie Inga held the title of Dunmow, by misfortune lost his Barony, and King Henry gaue it wholly to Robert Fitz Richard, the sonne of Gilbert Earle of Anjoue, and to his heires, together with the honour of Baynards Castle in London, and the appurtenances. This Robert was Cupbearer or Butler to the King. Robert Fitz Richard married Mawd de Saint Licio, Lady of Bradham, the gaue two parts of the Towne of Bradham, to the Chanons of Dunmow.

Robert Fitz Richard.

1112. *An.reg.13* Benelworth Priory and Castle founded. Lib. Ken.

About this time, Geffrey Clinton, Treasurer and Chamberlaine to King Henry the first, founded the Priory at Benelworth, of regular Chanons: Geffrey Clinton the younger, confirmed to the Chanons, all what Geffrey his father gaue them, except those Lands which his Father reserued, to make his Castle and Parke on, in Benelworth.

Mathew Paris.

This yere was a sharpe winter, great dearth and mortalitie of men, and murraine of beasts, of the field, and also of the house, and a great destruction of fowles.

1113. *An.reg.13.* Florilegen. Cro. Hauenprice. Alias warle wast.

The Citie of Worcester, the chiefe Church, the Castle, and all other buildings, one of the Monkes, with two seruants and 15. Citizens, were all burnt the 20. day of July. The Cathedrall Church of Excester was new builded, by William Warwast Bishop of Excester, he also founded the Monastery of Plimpton in Denonshire.

1114. *An.reg.14.* Mawd daughter to Henry the first, married to the Emperour.

The King subdued the Welshmen.

The King caused all his Nobles to sweare to William his sonne, whom he had by Quéene Matild. He also gaue his daughter Matild, she being but fiue yeares old, vnto Henry the Emperour, she was maried to him at Ments, and there consecrated Empresse.

Thames and Medway ogted by. Tho. de Wike. Walter Couen John Tarror. William Shepheard. Lib. Ronenſis

The tenth of October, the Riuer of Medway, by no small number of Piles, did so faile of water, that in the middest of the channell the smallest vessels and boats could not passe. The selfesame day the Thames did suffer the like lacke of water, for betweene the Tower of London and the Bridge, and vnder the Bridge, not onely with horse, but also a great number of men and children did wade ouer on foot, which defect of water did endure the space of two dayes.

Chichester burnt. A blazing Star

The Citty of Chicester, with the principall Monastery was burnt.

There was many Cozmes and a blazing Star.

Thomas Archbishop of Yorke deceased, and Thurston the kings Chaplaine is elected to plea.

1115. *An.reg.16.* Lib. Tinmarels. Knighten Gild, now Portsoken ward.

This yere through an hard Winter, almost all the Bridges in England were borne downe with yse,

Edgar sometime king of England granted vnto 13. Knights a portion of ground without the walles of the Citty of London, left void in the East part of the same City, together with a Gild which he named Knighten Gild, that now is called Portsoken ward, and now the Church of the Holy Trinitie being founded within Aldgate of London by Matild then Quéene, as is aforesheawed. The successors of those knights, to wit Radulphus Fitz Algode, Winiard le Douersne &c. gaue the foresaid lands called Knighten Gild, to the same Church: but Othowerus, Accolliuillos, Otto, and Geffrey, Earles of Cattler, Constables of the Tower of London by succession, with held by force a portion of the said Land, that is to say, Cast Smithfield nére to the Tower, to make a vineyard, and would not depart from it by any meanes, till the second yere of King Stephen, when the same was adiudged and restored to the Church of the holy Trinitie.

Geffrey Magnaille Earle of Essex.

This yere on the 19. day of April, K. Henry called a Councell of all the states of his Realme, both of the Prelates, Nobles, and Commons, to Salisbury, there to consult for the good gouernment of the Common-wealth, and the weighty affaires of the same, which Councell taking the name & fame of the French, is called Parliament.

1115. First Parliament at Salisbury.

King Henry sayled into Normandy with a great army against the King of France, who with the Earle of Flanders and other, went about to make William son to Robert Courtquice Duke of Normandy, but at K. Henries arriuall, they returned home without honour. K. Henry lay at Roane, and had great exactions out of England.

An.reg. Cro. Dun.

This yére King Henry began the foundation of the Abbey of Cercester, or Churnecester, which standeth vpon Churne River. There was in this place before the Conquest, a faire & rich Colledge of Prebends, Reimedus Chancellor to King Edward the Confessor, was Deane of this house, and buried in the body of the Church of Churnecester, as appeareth by the Epitaph on his Tombe. King Henry also builded there the Hospitall of Saint John, &c.

Cirecester Abbey first founded. Alias Remelius

The Towne of Peterbozow, with the stately Church there, was burned downe to the ground. Also the City of Bath was burnt the same yére.

Peterborough burned.

1117.

In March was exceeding lightning, & in December thunder and haile: and the Pome at both times seemed to be turned into bloud.

The Priory of Merton began to be founded in Anno 1092. by Gilbert a Norman, Earle of Surrey, Cambridge, & Huntington, this pere he put Canons regular, there vnder Prior Robert.

Merton priory. Some say there was a such Earle.

This yere in Lombardy was an earthquake, continued forty dayes, which ouerthrew many houses, and that which was marualious to bee seene, a towne was moued from his seate and set a good way off.

Terrible and Grieuous Earthquake. Florilegen.

King Henry had Morcard king of Ireland, & his successors so obedient vnto him, that they would doe nothing but what he commanded.

King Henry for his pleasure desired the wonderfull things of other Countries, as Lions, Leopards, Lices, and Camels, of the which Camels land had none, craning them from kings, with great pleasure, he had a Parke called Woodstocke, in which he kept such strange things, he put there amongst other, a beast called Sype, or otherwise called a Porpentine sent him from William of Mountpillar, which beast amongst the Africans is counted as a kind of Hedgehog couering with pricking battles, which they shot out naturally on the dogs that pursue them, &c.

An.reg.18 Woodstocke Parke.

Matild

1118. Matilde the Quéene deceaseth.

Matilde the Quéene wife to King Henry of England, deceased at West. & was there buried in the Quéerie of S. Peters Monastery. She was in her tender yeres brought by amongst the Nuns at Winchester & Rumsey, in the exercises of learning & vertue. She founded the Priory of Christ church within the East gate of London called Aldgate, with an Hospitall of S. Giles in the field, without the west part of y same citty.

Matthew Paris. Hamills Hospitall.

Bridges and a high way made ouer the Moore at Lea at Stratford.

This Matilde, when she saw the way to be dangerous for them y trauailed by the Old ford ouer the riuer of Lue (for the her selfe had beene wel washed in the water) caused 2. stone bridges to be builded, in a place one mile distant from the Old ford. Of the which, one was situated ouer Lue at the head of the towne of Stratford, now called Bow, because the bridge was Arched like vnto a Bow, a rare piece of worke, for before the time the like had neuer beene seene in England. The other ouer the little broke commonly called Channelsbridge. She made the kings high way of grauell betweene the two Bridges. Moreouer, she gaue Manors, and a mil, commonly called Wiggon mil to the abbesse of Barking for the reparing of the bridges and high waye. But afterward Gilbert de Mountfichet builded the Abbey of Stratford in the marishes, the Abbot whereof by giuing a piece of money, purchased to himselfe the Manors and Mill aforesaid, and couenanted to repaire the bridges and way. Till at length, he laid the charge vpon one Godfrey Prat, allowing him certaine loaues of bread daile, that hee should repaire the Bridges and way. Who being holpen by the ayde of trauailers, did not onely performe the charge, but also was a gainer to himselfe: which thing the Abbot perceiuing, he withholdeth from him part of the bread promised. Whereupon, Godfrey demandeth a tole of the wayfaring men, and to them that denied, he stopped the way, till at length, wearied with toyle, hee neglecteth his charge, whereof came the decay and ruine of the stone bridges and way. Now concerning these 3. stonde bridges of Lue, of the which, 2. be builded of stone, they be proper to 3. miles: whereof, one the Maister of S. Thomas of Acres in London made, the other the Maisters of the bridgehouse of London, two of them which belong to Esser, the Abbot of Stratford is bound to repaire. The third the bridgemasters of London, for the land was exchased the 37. of Henry the third.

1118. First Pope Calixtus.

An.reg.19 Knights of the Temple.

About this time, certaine Noble men of the Horsemen being religiously bent, bound themselues in the hands of the Patriarke of Hierusalem, to serue Christ after the manner of regular Chanons, in chastity, and obedience, and to renounce their own proper will for euer. Of which order, the first was the honourable man Hugh Paganus, and Gawfride de Saint Andemare: and where at the first, they had no certaine habitation, Baldwine king of Hierusalem granted them a dwelling place in his pallace by the temple, and the Chanons of the same Temple gaue them the frete thereby to build their houses of office in, and the Patriarch, the King, the Nobles, and Prelates gaue them certaine reuenues out of their Lordships. Their first profession was for safegard of the Pilgrimes, to keepe the waies, against the lying in wait of theues. About 10. yeres after, they had a rule appointed them, and a white habit by Pope Honorius, at that time, where they had beene nine in number, they began to increase into great numbers.

Afterward in the time of Pope Eugenius, they had crosses of red cloath sewed on their vppermost garments, to be known from others thereby: and in those time, because they had their first mansion hard by the temple of our Lord in Hierusalem, they were called knights of the temple.

1119. Robert Beaumount earle of Leicester.

This yeare deceased Robert Beaumount earle of Leicester, and William Earle Morton was deliuered out of the Tower of London.

Many sore battelles were fought in France, and Normandy, betweene the king of England, and of France.

An.reg.20 Peace with France.

King Henry made peace with Fulco the earle of Angeine, taking his daughter to bee wife to his sonne William, whom he had now made inheritour of all his kingdomes. After that, by the aduice of all his Lords, he made peace with the king of France, and with the earle of Flanders: in the which peace, his Sonne William tooke Normandy into his possession, to hold the same of the king of France.

1120. Earthquake.

This yere was a great Earthquake in many places of England, on the eight and twentie day of September, about the third houre of the day.

Ano. reg.21

King Henry in the euening of the 24. day of Nouember, minding to returne into England, loosed from land at Barbefleet, and the winde brought him prosperously to his kingdome.

But William his Sonne, somewhat more then 17. yéres of age, who through his fathers kingdomes, lacked nothing but the name of a king, commanded another ship to bee prepared for him, all the young Sonnes of the Nobility flocking thither for the company of him, as their play-fére: and the saylers also tipled with too much wine, in lustines bragged that they would quickly leaue the other behind, that went out before them. So in the darkenesse of the night, the youth lacking wisedome, and ouercharged with drinke, discharged the ship from the land: she sailed swift as an arrow, & cutting through the daunting floods, by the negligence of the drunken saylers, dashed vpon a rocke aboue water, not farre from land. The poore soules role with great cry, bestirred them with their pyned Oares, long labouring to get the ship from the rocke: but fortune was against them, bringing their paines to no purpose: so the ods of the ship, leaning against the rocke, cracked, and the broken sterne hung downe: now it did cast some into the Sea, and the water comming in, drowned other, when with casting out a boate, the kings sonne was taken in, and might haue beene saued by returning to land, had not his base sister the Countesse of Perche, wayling with death in the great ship, craued her brothers helpe. He moued with pitie, commanded the boate to be rowed to the ship, that he might take in his sister, and straight way the Boate

W. Malmesb. The kinges children drowned coming out of Normandy.

did take, being overladen with the great compasse that teared in, and so drowned them all, onely one cloisterman escaped, which swimming all night upon the mast, betwen all the chance of the tragedie in the morning. There was never ship in miserable to England, nor so famous abroad. There was drowned with William, Richard the kings other sonne that hee begate before his kingdome, of one of his subiects. Richard Earle of Chester, and his brother Otwele the kings sons Otto, the Countesse of Perche, the kings daughter named Marie, and his niece the Countesse of Chester, sister to Theobald, William Bigot, Geffrey Riddle, Walter de Curcie, Geffrey Archdeacon of Hereford, and also many the best knights, and Chaplaines that were in the Court, and noble mens sons fit to be knights, to the number of 160. persons, they came together to Prince the kings sonne for sport, to doe him any service they could: but they made the miser by the more, that they could not bee easily found, for searchers being placed all along upon the sea coasts, found scantly one of them. For the bodies were gone to be fed to the Porkers of the Sea.

King Henry married Adaliza, daughter to Godfrey Duke of Louan, at Cly on the third day of January, who was consecrated and crowned at London in the feast of Whitsontide.

1121. King Henry prepareth a great army against the Welshmen, and came to Powesland: which when the Lords of the land, Meredith Apblichin, and the 3. sons of Cadogan, Encon, Maduc, and Morgan saw, they sent to Griffith ap Conan prince of Northwales for succour: which he denied them, for that he had made peace with the king.

Thus they having no hope of ayde from him, purposed to defend themselues within their owne land after the best manner they could, setting men to defend the straits, whereby their enemies must needs passe. And as it chanced, the king himselfe with a small number, came into one of those defended places, for his whole army had gone a further way about, because of their carriages.

Ann. reg. 12. At whose comming, the men which kept the straits, skirmished with the kings men, and having the vantage of the ground, slew some, and wounded many, amongst the which, the king himselfe was smitten with an Arrowe on the brest, wherewith he being wonderfully abashed, sent to parley with them that kept the passage, and at length being agreed with them for 1000. head of cattell, returned into England.

Abbeying. The first Abbey founded. King Henry having suppressed an house of Nunnes in the towne of Reading, founded by Elfleda mother in law to king Edward the Martyr, founded there an Abbey of Blacke Monkes to the honour of God, our Lady, and Saint Iohn Evangelist.

1122. The Earle of Gloucester dyeth. The city of Gloucester with the principall monastery, was burnt against es it before had beene in the first yeare of this kings raigne.

Radulphus Archbishop of Canterbury, dyed at Canterbury, on the 20. of October, and on the third day after, he was buried there.

Also Iohn Bishop of Bathe, deceased, and was buried at Bathe. *An. reg. 13.*

The same yeare, Sherborne and Poxton, were ioyned together, and made an Abbey by the gift of the king, and of Roger Bishop of Salisbury. Sherborne made an Abbey.

King Henry having kept his Christmas at Dunstable, went from thence to Barkhamstead, having in his company his Chancellor named Randolph, hee had beene sicke the space of twenty yeares, and yet notwithstanding was prompt to all euill, delighting in oppressing innocents: and as he brought the king home, minding to haue lodged with him, in the very top of the hill that the kings castle stood on, he fell from his horse, and ended his life, in great misery, 5. yeares after. And Robert Blothe Bishop of Lincolne, in the moneth of January, whilest at Woodstock he sate on his horseback talking with the king, he began to shrinke downe speechlesse, and being brought to his lodging, died sodainely. 1123. Abbes Obit.

The city of Lincolne for the most part was consumed with fire, which raged in such violent and furious manner, that it deuoured sundry men, and women, and did so much harme before that no man was able to report it vnto other, this happened on the 18. day of June. The Citties Lincolne burnt. Geo. Prenbs.

William de Corboyle Priour of S. Osithe in Essex, was by the king appointed to bee Archbishop of Canterbury, and was consecrated there on the 16. day of February. The Bishoprickes of Bathe was giuen to Godfrey the Queenes chaplaine. And Alexander Archdeacon of Salisbury, was made Bishop of Lincolne.

King Henry sayled ouer the Seas into Normandy, at which time, Robert Earle of Millaine alias Pelent went from the king: Wherefore the king besieged his castle called Pount Andomer, and the same time he builded a great broad and high wall about the tower of Roane: he repaired the castle of Caine, he also fortified and made inuincible the castles of Arches, Gisors, Falace, Argentine, Dontront, Orine, Anbzos, Nanroy, Iuca, and the towne of Vernon. Roger Wend. *An. Reg. 24.* King Henry builded walles in Normandy.

He also builded the Castle of Warwike.

Henry Earle of Warwike, and Margaret his wife, founded the Colledge of S. Mary in the towne of Warwike, and Roger de Belemounde his sonne Earle of Warwike, and Gundred his wife, translated the same Colledge out of the castle of Warwike into the parish Church of S. Mary, in An. 1123. At that time were 9. parishes in Warwike, S. Sepulcher, Saint Hellens, of these twaine were made one Priorie of Saint Sepulchre: Alhallowes, S. Michaell, S. John, S. Peter, S. Lawrence, S. James, these fiue last were ioyned to Saint Maries, in Anno, 1367. Saint Nicholas. Thus much for the towne of Warwike. Warwike with the Colledge. Lib. Warce.

Robert Earle of Pellen, ioyning to him Hugh de Mountfort his sisters son, and Hugh Garuase his son, entred by force of armes into Normandy, but William de Tankeruile the kings Chamberlaine, setting his men of armes in aray, fought with them, take them, brought them to the K. who committed them to straite prison at Roane. Henry Huntington.

William Archbishop of Canterbury, as the K. commanded him passed the Seas, but to what purpose *An. Reg. 24.*

purpose mine Author doth declare not.

Money makers throughout all England, being taken with false money, had their right hands cut off, and also their priuie members. After this, by changing of the money, all things became most deare, insomuch as a right sore famine arised, and afflicted the multitude of the people euen to death. Money makers punished. 1125

Henry the Emperour died, and was buried at Spire, with his grandfather, Lotharius the 98. Emperour succeeded. Roger Wend.

Iohn Cremensis Priest cardinall by the kings licence came into England, and for the time of his abode here, lodged in the Bishops Pallace, and in Abbeyes, not without great gifts and rewards taking of them, he keeping a solemne Synode or Councell at London, when he had exercised most seuerely intreated of Priests Concubines, saying, that it was much wickednesse, to rise from an harlots side, to consecrate the body of Christ: And he himselfe the same day had consecrated the body of Christ: After the which in the euening, he was detected of whoredome, the matter was so plaine, that it could not be denyed, and thus he turned his great honour, into the greatest shame that might be. *An. reg. 26.* Cardinall: sayng a Masse after his arriuall. Priests Concubines.

Henry the Emperour being dead, Mawd the Empresse returned to her father king Henry, & dwelt with the Queene in her Chamber, because she was suspected of her husbands death. For she went away by night, and chose to line in pouerty. 1126 Mawd the Empresse returned into England.

King Henry held his Court with great magnificence in his Castle of Windsore, and there assembled all the Nobility of his Realme, where when the Archbishop of Yorke would haue crowned the King equally with the Archbishop of Canterbury, by the iudgement of all men he was repulsed. The bearer of his Crosse, together with the Crosse, was thrown out of the Kings Chappell: for it was affirmed that no Petropolitan out of his owne Pdounce might haue any Crosse before him. The Feast being ended, the King with all the States of the Realme together came to London, and there at the Kings commaudement, William the Archbishop, and the Legate of the Romish Church, and all other Bishops of the English Nation, with the Nobility, take an oath to defend against all men the kingdome to his daughter, if she survived her Father, except that before his decease he begate some sonne to succeed him. *An. reg. 27.* Bishop of Yorke with the Crosse cast out of the Kings Chappell. Mawd the Empresse.

The King also granted to the Church of Canterbury, and to William and his successors, the custody and Constableship of the Castle of Rochester for euer.

The Archbishop of Canterbury assembled a councell of Bishops, Abbots, and other Prelats at Westminster, where they determined many causes concerning Ecclesiasticall businesse: and the King with his councell confirmed them. 1128.

King Henry of England, being beyond the Sea in Normandy, had great warres against William Earle of Flanders that was his Nephew.

King Henry with a warlike Army inuaded France, because Lewes king of France did vexe and William Earle of Flanders, the Kings nephew, and lodging at Vesperune, the space of eight dayes, as safe as he had beene in his owne Realme. He kept the King of France, from giuing helpe to the sayd Earle of Flanders.

Then came a certaine Duke out of Germany, who was named Theodoricke, with a warlike power into Flanders, though the procurement of King Henry to take his part, and ioyne with him: but Earle William with a small company, through his inuincible manhood, with his bloody sword did cleane and breake their great battaile, and caused them to flie: but when this William besieged the Castle of Angew, or Alburt, (as other haue) against king Henry, so that it should haue beene perished vnto him, through one wound in his hand, hee dyed, but not without immortall Fame. *An. reg. 29.*

Randolph bishop of Durham deceased, he rayled the wals of the body of the Church of Durham, vnto the rose, he translated the bodie of Saint Cuthbert into that new Church, he compassed the Cittie of Durham with a wall, he continued diuers bankes along the riuer of Wier, and built a great stone bridge vpon the same riuer with arches. He also built a Castle vpon a Rape till called Nozham, vpon the River of Twide, to resist the enemies. He built the Hospital of Repar, and the bridge of Framwelgate. After the death of this Ranulph, the Bishoprickes of Durham was committed to two Barons, Iohn de Mandeuile, and Geffrey Excombard the elder, to the vse and profit of the king, for the space of fiue yeares and eleuen moneths. Tower of Nozham builded and the Hospitall of Repar. 1129. Lib. Dunelm.

King Henry returned out of Normandy into England.

And in the first of August, the king began a great councell at London, in the which councell by authoritie of the Pope, the Feast of the conception of our Ladie was confirmed, the which councell of the Cleargie, (through the simplicitie of the Archbishop of Canterbury) were by the king deceiued, for they granted the King to haue the execution of Iustice concerning the fecarie of Priests, for their keping of Concubines, which the Bishops afterward repented too late, but they could not helpe it. For the King take infinite summes of money of Priests, and suffered them to doe what they would.

About this time men forgetting their byrth, transformed themselues by the length of their haires into the habit of women kinde. One of the knights of the Realme, a man very proud of his long haire, at the length stricken in conscience, it seemed vnto him in his sleepe, that one did choake him with the haires of his head (for all men were shauen of their faces.) Wherefore, being awakened, he caused forthwith the superfluitie of his haires to be cut off. Which example take place throughout all England for the time, and almost all the Knights were contented to haue their haires cut off. But one yere was scarcely past, when all that thought themselues Courtiers, fell into the former vice, and Men contend with women in long haire.

so contended with women in their long haires, that when they were decayed, they knit about their heads certaine reles, and couerings being ignorant, or forgetting the Apostles saying. Let it be a reproach vnto a man, if he endeauour to haue his haires grow long. *Ann. reg.* 30

Oliey by Oxford.

This yere Robert de Oiley the second, and Edith his wife, founded the Priorie of Oliey by Oxford.

1130.

The seauenth of May the Cittie of Rochester, in presence of the K. was sore defaced with fire.

King Henry gaue his daughter Matild the Empresse, to Geffrey Plantagenet Earle of Angeuine, to be his wife. *Ann. reg.* 31.

1131.

King Henry in the moneth of August passed the sea into Normandy, where he remained for a time.

This yere King Henry returned into England. And Matild the Empresse also, the same yere, and calling a great assembly of noble men at Northampton, the former oath was renewed by them that had received it before.

A great marraine of cattell went ouer all England, so that the like had not bene seene in many yeres.

King Henry sore troubled ofte times in his sleepe, declared the same vnto Grimbalde his Phisition, the effect whereof was, that some time it semed to him, that he saw a great multitude of husbandmen with their rusticall toles stand about him, threatning him, for wrongs done by him against them: Sometimes he semed to see his knights and souldiers in armor, threatning him. Sometimes the Bishops, Abbots and Clergie, with their pastorall staues threatning him: Which sight so feared him in his sleepe, that ofte times he rose naked out of his bed, take weapon in hand, and sought to kill them, but could not find. Grimbalde his phisition being a notable wise man expounded his dreames by true coniecture, and willed him to reforme himselfe with almes and prayer, as Nabuchodonosor did by the counsell of Daniel. King Henry sore troubled in his sleepe.

In the moneth of June, when King Henry was entred his ship to returne into England with his traine, the sea was sore troubled, so that the ship was in manner ouerwhelmed with the floudes, and the winde was contrary vnto him, so that seeing death at hand, he vowed that the tribute called Dane gilt, should not for seauen yeres be exacted. He also vowed to repent him of his former life, to reconcile himselfe, and euer after to obserue iustice. King Henry in danger of drowning on the Sea. *Ann. reg.* 32

The eight of October, a Comet appeared, and was seene fiue dayes together.

1132. Bishoppick at Carlile.

King Henry made a Bishoppricke at Carlile, and made Athulphe, Priour of S. Oswald his confessor, bishop there, he placed there Chanons regular and indowed it with many honours.

Henry the second borne.

Mawd the Empresse did beare a sonne to Geffrey Plantagenet, Earle of Angeu her husband and named him Henry, which when the King her father knew, he called his Nobles together at Oxford, where he kept his feast of Easter, in his new hall with great royalty: He there ordained, that the sayd her heires should succeed him in his kingdome.

The 14. day of May, a great fire beginning at Gilberts house in West Cheape of London, consumed a great part of the same Cittie, from thence Eastward to Aldgate, with the priory of Chanons of the holy Trinity there, and many houses of office thereto belonging, and Westward to Ludgate, consuming the great Church of Saint Paul, &c. *Ann. reg.* London Saint Paules burnt.

Hospitall of S. Cros.

Henry Bloyse Bishop of Winchester, new builded the Hospitall of Saint Crosse, neere vnto Winchester, which Hospitall had of old time bene inpoyled by the Danes.

The second day of August there was great darknesse in England, the Sunne became like the Mone in the third quarter. And the same day many Starres appeared.

1133. Great Gale.

The 4. day of August early in the morning, in many parts of England an earthquake was felt, so that it was thought that the earth would haue sunke vnder the fete of men, with such a terrible sound as was horrible to heare. The king at that time of the eclipse, passed ouer the sea into Normandy: but neuer returned againe alliue into England.

Ann. reg.

In the moneth of November, the City of Worcester as oft times before, was burned and sore defaced by fire. Worcester made at diuerse times in part or in whole.

Geffery the kings chancellor was made Bishop of Durham, and Hamie the first Bishop of Ely being dead, Nigelus the kings Treasurer was made Bishop there.

Matild the Empresse brought forth a sonne named Geffery.

1134. Robert Curt. queer Duke. *Ann. reg.*

This yere, when our Lord Iesus, who willeth not the death of a sinner, had giuen vnto Duke Robert of Normandy a sufficient space of repentance, wherein to humble himselfe, that is to wit, almost 30. yeres, which time he liued in blindnesse of eyes, also in strait prison in the Castle of Cardiffe, he dyed and was buried at Glocester.

Godfrey Bishop of Bath deceased on the 16. of August. After whom succeeded Robert a Fleming by kind, but borne in Normandy. 1135.

Ann. reg. Dorchester Henry, Matthew Par.

King Henry remaining in Normandy, vpon a day did eate Lampraies, whereof he tooke a surfeit and deceased the first day of December, An. 1135. when he had raigned 35. yeres 4. monethes: his bowels, braines and eyes, were buried at Roane, the rest of his body was powdered with salt, and wrapped in Bulles hides, because of the stincke, which payloned them that stood about him. The Physition which being hyred with a great reward to cleane his head to take out the braine, with the stincke thereof died, so that he inioyed not the reward that was couenanted. Thus among a great many that king Henry slew, this Physition was the last. *In Reg.* I. Malmes. Huntingt. Roual. Doro. Rodigma.

King Henry was buried at Reading, which he had founded. He also founded the Priorie of Dunstable, he conuerted a rich Colledge of Prebends in the Towne of Cirencester, into an Abbey of Chanons regular: he also builded there an Hospitall of Saint Iohn: and new builded the Castle of Windsor vpon the hill, with a Colledge there, one mile from the old towne of Windlesor. King Edward the third builded Colledge of Windsor fou. Dod. Iohn Leyla.

builded much of this Castle, increased the number of Chanons in the Colledge, adding to the 8. Chanons, a Deane, and 15. Chanons more, and foure and twenty poore impotent knights, and other Ministers, as apparently by his Charter doth the two and twentieth of his raigne, he founded there the order of the Garter. King Edward the fourth tooke from the Colledges of Eton, and Cambridge founded by King Henry the first, almost a thousand pound by yere, and gaue to Windlesore. Hee also builded the faire new Church now vsed, sane onely the top and roofing, which was since finished by the Lord Reinold Bray, and other Knights of the Garter. In place of the old Colledge church, King Henry the seauenth builded a Chappell, where he meant to haue bene buryed: but altering his minde, left the same vnfinished, and builded his Chappell at Westminster, he made the faire causey way betweene Windsor and London. King Henry the 8. made the outer Gate-house, which is called the Exchequer of the Honour where hath bin and yet continueth a moneth Court, kept by the Clarke of the Honor and Castle, for the pleas of the Forrest and Honors. In which, amongst other things, is to be seene the yerely account, of the charges, of the planting of the Vines, that in the time of K. Richard the 2. grew in great plenty within 5 litle Parke, as also of the making of the wine it selfe, whereof some part was spent in the kings house, and some part sold to his profit, the tythes whereof were payed to the Abbot of Waltham, then Parson both of the old and new Windlesore.

King Edward the first began to bring water to the Castle: Queene Mary brought it thither in conduits, the house was before serued by wels: She also for her part, added the lodgings for the almes knights, and placed there to the number of Twelue, for there had not bene any of many yeres to fore, to wit, in the memory of men then liuing, whereby it was supposed, neuer any to haue bene there. But true it is, I haue read in the Tower of London, a Patent, granted by Edward the fourth, in the two and twentieth yere of his raigne, to one Thomas Crabbe Esquire, to be admitted one of the almes knights at Windlesore. Queene Elizabeth hath also much inlarged with buildings the said Castle. All which, whether you regard the wholsomenesse of the ayre, and beauty of the soyle, or the beauty, strength, and situation of the place, or the pleasant pastime arising out of the Forrest, chase, and fayre leaue Parkes that waite vpon it, or the good neighbourhood of the rich River of Thames that runneth by it, I haue thought it good to set downe thus much.

This Henry the first also builded the Mannor of Woodstocke, with the Parke, which he walled with stone seuen miles compasse, destroying for the same, diuers Villages, Churches, & chappels. This is the first Parke that euer was in England: he placed there, besides great store of Deare, diuers strange beasts to be kept and nourished, such as were brought or sent to him from farre Countries, as Lyons, Leopards, Linces, Porpentines, &c. By his example, Hare Earle of Warwicke, made his parke at Madgenoke, neere vnto Warwick, since called the old parke. He had issue by Matild his first wife, a Son named VVilliam, that was drowned in the Sea, and a daughter named Matild, whom with her Son he appointed to inherite the Crowne and Realme. He had also issue by his Concubines, a sonne named Richard, and a daughter named Mary, which were both drowned with their Brother William. Robert Fitz Roy whom he made Earle of Glocester, Reginald afterward made Earle of Cornwall, in the fift yere of the raigne of King Stephen a daughter married to Alexander King of Scots and other. Rad. Dedicerto W. Malmesb.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* STEPHEN.

STEPHEN, Earle of Boyton, and of Bologne, Son to the Earle of Blois, and Adele, William Conquerours daughter, and nephew to K. Henry the 1. claimed the kingdome in the moneth of December. Anno 1135. He comming into England, was repulsed by them of Douer, shut out by them of Canterbury, but receiued of the Londoners, and Peeres of the land, admitted King, and crowned at Westminster on S. Stephens day, by William Archbishop of Canterbury, Henry Bishop of Winchester, and Roger Bishop of Salisburie.

This was a Noble man and hardy, of passing comely fauour and parsonage, he excelled in martiall policie, gentlenesse and liberalitie toward all men, especially in the beginning: and although he had continuall warre, yet did he neuer burden his Commons with exactions: but iustly, and contrary to his Oath made to Mawd the Empresse, daughter to King Henry, he tooke on him the Crowne of England.

A fire kindled in the house of one Ailward neere vnto London-stone, consumed Eastward to Aldgate, and Westward to S. Erkenwalds shrine in Pauls Church. The Annales of Bermondsey say, That London-bridge was also at time burned: which might well be, for then and long before, there was a Bridge of timber, as before I haue touched. And further, to confirme the same, I finde in the Annales of Bermondsey, that in Anno Christi, 1122. the 22. yere of King Henry the first, Thomas Arderne gaue to the Monkes of Bermondsey, the Church of S. George in Southwarke, &c. with fiue shillings rent by the yere, out of the lands of London-bridge. 1136. Lib. Trinit. Lib. Bermond. London with the Bridge burnt.

Flemings

Flemmings entred into Deuonshire, and besieged the Castle of Exceter a long time, which Baldwine de Reduers held against them, but at length when they within the Castle wanted necessary things to liue by, they compounded.

Baldwine with his wife and Children are disherited and expulsed the Land. From hence king Stephen went to the Ile of Wight, and tooke it from the said Baldwine de Reduers.

Battell against the Welchmen.

A battell was fought at Gober, betwixt Normans and Welchmen, where a hundred and fiftéene persons on both sides were slaine, whose bodies lay in the fields, and were horribly torne and deuoured of Wolues.

After this were made great eruptions by the Welchmen, who destroyed Churches, Townes, Castles, corne, cattell, slew Men, Women, and Children, rich and poore, or sold them in forreine Countries.

In October a fore battell was fought at Cardigan, in the which, such slaughter of men was made, that the men (except which were ledde away captiue,) were of Women taken and ledde away, that there remained to the tenth a thousand, their Husbands with their small children partly drowned, partly brent, partly slaine, so that the Bridge being broken ouer the River of Tiuide, there was a bridge made of mens bodies and horses drowned.

Anno reg. 2. 1137.

In March king Stephen passed the Sea to subdue Normandie where he take many Cities and strong Castles, and made peace with the King of France.

The third of June, Saint Andrewes in Rochester was brent, with all the Citie, and the Bishops and Monkes stalles in the Church. And on the fourth day of June St. Peters the Archbishops Sea in Yorke, S. Maries without the walls, and an Hospitall which the Archbishop Thurstone had builded, with 19. other Churches, also the Trinity Church in the suburbes of the same City, within a small time after were brent. Also St. Peters Church at Bathe, and all the citie, the 27. day of June was brent. And the same moneth the city of Leogere was consumed with fire.

Yoodigma. Rochester burnt.

Richard Diuine.

St. Peters in Yorke burnt.

Ann. reg. 3.

England began to fall into greates troubles, which caused king Stephen to returne out of Normandie before he had finished his businesse there, so that he came ouer into England in the moneth of December.

1138.

King Stephen besieged Bedford and wonne it, then he went with a strong power into Northumberland, where he stayed not long, but went to Gloucester, where the Citizens received him with great reioycing. Miles Earle of Hereford the Kings Constable, brought him into the Kings pallace there, where all the citizens were to him sworne. From whence he went to Hereford, because that hee heard the Castle was holden against him: And on Whitsonday he sate crowned in the Church of Hereford. When they that kept the Castle saw the Kings power to increase, they yelded themselues. The king tooke also the Castle of Webbelege, which Geffrey Talbot had held against him.

King Stephen besieged Bedford.

The same day that the King departed out of Hereford, all beyond the River of Wie was brent by the sayd Geffrey.

The King returned to Oxford, where he tooke Roger the Bishop of Sarum, with the Bishop of Lincolne, and his sonne Roger: the bishop of Ely escaping, went to the Castle of Ites, and kept it against the king: but at length it was deliuered.

The same time Robert Earle of Gloucester renounced his allegeiance to King Stephen, fortified Bristow and other Castles. Also Miles the Kings constable reuolted.

Whereforee the King beliaged the Castle of Bristow, but at length being wearied, hee returned to other of the Earles castles, and seeing his enemies still increasing, hee called out of Flaunders men of warre with William de Ypres their Leader, whose counsell he chiefly followed.

Anno reg. 5.

The same yere Roger Bishop of Salisburie, a great builder of Castles and houses, departed this life. There was found in his coffers forty thousand markes of siluer, besides much gold, and diuers Iewels that came to the Kings hand, so that hee had gathered great treasure, but wist not for whom.

Iocelins, a Knight of Lincolnshire, hauing to his Sonne one Gilbert, whom for some imperfection of his limbs, hee thought vnmeet for the world, made him a Priest, gaue him a Benefice in a towne of his owne in Lincolneshire, called Semperingham. This man was author of a Religious order, which were called Gilbertines, and began in the raigne of King Stephen, hee inclosed within one House both Men and Women, but seuered them by such high walles, that the one neither saw, nor heard the other. This order in his life-time increased to tenne Houses, containing in all to the number of 700. Brethren, and 1500. Sisters.

1139.

The Nobles sent for Mawd the Empresse, promising her the possession of the Realme, according to their Oath made to her. In the meane time Dauid King of Scots, promising to recouer the Crowne of England for the Empresse Mawd his Niece, in most cruell wise inuaded Northumberland, where by Thurstone Archbishop of Yorke, the Standert being set vp at Aluerton, the Scots had an ouerthrow at Conton, more then foure miles Northwest from Alnerton, and were slaine aboue ten thousand, on the 22. day of August.

David King of Scots inuades Northumberland.

In the moneth of July, Robert Earle of Gloucester returned into England with his Sister the Empresse, and a great army, which arriued at Portsmouth. The Empresse was received into Arundel castle, by Adelize late wife to K. Henry, as then wife to William Earle of Arundel.

Earle Robert went to Wallingford, and thence to Glocester, and raised thole Countries.

The King held his siege before Marleborough but aduertised of the Empresse arriuall, hasted towards Arundell, where being by faire speech pacified, hee commanded his Brother bishop of Winchester to bring the Empresse vnto Bristow, and hee himselfe followed Earle Robert with his armie. The Empresse stayed at Bristow till October, and then went to Glouc. ster, her comming thither being knowne, Miles the high Constable, and many other Nobles tooke part

Marleborough besieged by K. Stephen.

part with her against king Stephen.

The King besieged Wallingford Castle, but profited not, and therefore raising a Tower of wood before it, stuffed it with men of Warre, and went to win the Castle of Malmesburie.

The Army of Earle Robert, won the Citie of Worcester, brent the most part of it, and laden with the spoile, departed thence.

The Sheriffe of that Citie, in reuenge hereof, destroyed the towne of Sudley, and with the spoile there returned to Worcester.

After this the king with a great Army, came from Oxford to Worcester, where he gaue the honour of high Constableship (being taken from Miles of Gloucester) vnto William, the sonne of Walter Beauchamp, Sheriffe of Worcester, and then returned to Oxford, and so to Salisburie.

Anno reg. 5.

1140.

The King went to Reading, and after with his Armie towards Elie, but the Bishop fled to Gloucester, to Earle Robert, and the king wan the Castle of Ely, and spoyled Nigellus the Bishop (who was fled to the Empresse) of all that to him appertained, and then returned.

Robert Earle of Gloucester, with a great power inuaded the Towne of Nottingham and spoiled it: the Townesmen were taken, slaine, or brent in the Churches wherunto they fled. One of them more rich then the others, was taken and led to his owne house by his takers, to shew them where his treasure lay: he bringing them into a low Sellar, whilest they were busie to breake open locks and coffers, he conueyed himselfe away, and shutting the doore after him; set fire on the house: and so the Thieues to the number of thirtie, were brent, and by reason of this fire, all the Towne was set on fire, and brent.

Nottingham brent.

Anno reg. 6.

1141.

King Stephen besieged Lincolne against Ranulph Earle of Chester, but Robert Earle of Gloucester, came with a great power, and rescued the same, chased the Kings army, and tooke him prisoner on Candlemas day, first he was had to Gloucester, and after to Bristow, and there committed to prison, and put in irons.

King Stephen discomfited before Lincolne.

The Empresse reioycing at this her good hap, departed from Gloucester, and came to Cicester, with Bishops, Barons, and other in great number, from thence thee went to Winchester, where met her Lords Spirituall and Temporall in great number, the Cittie with the Tower and Crowne of the Realme, was deliuered into her hands.

The Bishop of Winchester, that was King Stephens brother, accused all that stood against the Empresse, and blessed those that take her part. From thence she departed to Wilton, where the Archbishop of Canterbury came and saluted her. When Easter was past, she went to Reading, where she was received with all the honour that might be: thence she went to Oxford where the Castle was deliuered vnto her by Robert de Olly: then went she to S. Albons, and was received with all honor. Here the Citizens of London came and yelded their Citie to her, whereupon she went to London, and so to Westminster, where she being received with procession, remained certaine dayes, taking order for the state of the Realme, and there she gaue the Bishoprike of London to Robert de Sigello, a Monke of Reading.

King Stephens wife, and many Peeres of the Realme, made suite to the Empresse to haue the king restored to liberty, and not to the Kingdome promising to perswade with him to become a Monke, but she would not heare. The Bishop of Winchester requested her to giue vnto Eustace his nephew, king Stephens sonne, his Fathers Earledome, but it would not be. The Citizens of London required her to restore K. Edwards lawes but she being puffed vp with pride, would not grant their request, whereupon they conspyred to take her prisoner: but she aduertised hereof, fled with shame, leauing behind her all her furniture of houshold and apparell.

Henry Bishop of Winchester, talking which way to deliuer his brother, perswaded the Londoners to aide him. The Empresse got her to Oxford and from thence to Glouceter, and thence with her assured friend Miles, againe to Oxford, and because she trusted most in him, she to doe him honour, gaue him the Earledome of Hereford. And now hauing got a great army, about Lammas went againe to Winchester, and lodged on the Castle there. The Bishop abashed of her sudaine comming, departed out at one gate, as she came in at the other. He getting a great Army, with the helpe of the Londoners besieged the Cittie, and the second of August committed the Citty to the fire, with the which, the Minstrie, and houses of office, with more then twenty Churches (some waite sotty) and a great part of the Citty, with the Monastery of S. Grimbald, and the houses thereto belonging, were brought to ashes.

Mylo alias Miles Earle of Hereford.

Winchester brent.

About the exaltation of the Crosse, the Empresse being wearied of long siege, got her to horseback with her brother Reginald, Earle of Cornewall, and many other. Earle Robert followed with a great number of Lords and knights but the Bishops meta setting on them, slew and take a great number.

The Empresse fled to the Castle of Luteger-shall, heauy and almost dead for feare: from thence she was brought to the Castle of Ites, and from thence to Gloucester, bound in a horse-litter like a dead carcasse.

The Empresse fled.

Earle of Gloucester taken.

Earle Robert being pursued, was taken at Stobbridge with Earle Warren, and many other and presented to the Queene, as then new entred into Winchester.

Earle Robert was deliuered to William de Ypres, who put him in prison in the Castle of Rochester.

Earle of Hereford fled.

Miles Earle of Hereford hardly escaped, and came to Glocester almost naked.

The Bishops men brent the Monastery of Nunnes at Marwell, &c. the bookes and ornaments of the Nunnes were taken and borne away, and men slaine euen before the Altar. These things thus done, the Bishops wrath was somewhat appeased but his couetousnesse encreased, so that being prompted thereto by the Prior of the new Monasterie in Winchester lately brent

he take off the Croſſe that was burnt fine hundred pounds of ſiluer, and thirty marks in gold, three Crownes, with as many ſcales of fine Arabike gold, ſet with precious ſtones: all this he laid vp in his owne treaſurie.

King Stephen and Robert Earle of Glocester deliuer. ed by exchange. Alfredus Beu.

King Stephen and Earle Robert being ſtraitely kept, at length through mediation of friends, a peace was concluded, that they ſhould be deliuered, the King to his kingdome, and the Earle to his liberty.

Geffrey Mandeuile fortified the Tower of London: and Robert Biſhop of London was taken at Fulham by Geffrey Mandeuile.

Geffrey Biſhop of Durham deceaſed, when he had ſate Biſhop of Durham 13. yeares, he builded the Caſtle of Alnerton, which he gaue to his nephew William, whom he ioyned in marriage with the Earles neece of Albemarle.

An. reg. 7. 1142.

The King and Earle being ſet at libertie, did not onely renue but multiply their malice: the King repaired his power and expences, the Earle went ouer the Sea to Geffrey Earle of Anjow, whom hee found occupied in Warres againſt certaine of his ſubiects of Anjow, ſo that he could not come into England with him: whereupon he taking Henry, eldeſt ſonne to Geffrey Earle of Anjow, and Mawd the Empreſſe, with certaine choſen men of armes, returned into England.

The Empreſſe beſieged.

King Stephen hearing that Earle Robert was gone out of the Realme, and the Empreſſe to lye at Oxford, with a great power came and beſieged her two moneths ſpace.

Warham Caſtle beſieged. The Empreſſe flye h. Gerualius.

Earle Robert with Henry ſonne to the Empreſſe, and other his complices landed at Wareham, where he beſieged the Caſtle, which was defended by Hubert de Lucie, who at length yeelded the ſame. In the meane time, the Empreſſe ſeeing that ſhe was void of all helpe, with a womaniſh ſubtilty deuiſed the kings ſcout-watch, cloathing her ſelfe and her company, fiue in number, all in white, and vpon a night went ouer the Thames on foote, which was then hard frozen, and white with ſnow: that night ſhee went to Wallingford, and the Caſtle of Oxford was yelded to the King. After the winning of Wareham Caſtle, Robert went to viſit his ſiſter the Empreſſe, who was not a little ioyfull to ſee him and her young ſon Henrie. which Henrie remained at Briſtow for the ſpace of foure yeres and there was brought vp in learning.

An. Reg. 8. 1143.

King Stephen after the robbing of many Churches, burning and robbing of Townes and Villages by the hands of the Fleming ſouldiers, he and his brother Henrie Biſhop of Wincheſter builded a Caſtle of the Deuyſe at Wilton, to repreſſe the incurſions of them of Saliſbury. Earle Robert the firſt of Iuly, fell ſudainely vpon them

Wilton burnt. in Wilton, and ſet the Towne on fire. The King with the Biſhop fled with ſhame, the Earles men tooke the kings people, and ſackt his plate & other things: there were taken of the kingsmen very many, and among other, Wil. Wartell ſewer to king Stephen, who was ſent to Wallingford, there to be kept priſoner. Wiliam de S. Barbara was made Biſhop of Durham.

An. reg. 9. Miles Earle of Hereford dyed and his eldeſt ſonne Roger ſucceeded him.

William of Pyres, founded Boxley Abbey in Kent. *Boxley.*

King Stephen tooke Geffrey Mandeuile Earle of Eſſex, at Saint Albones: which Geffrey could not be ſet at liberty till hee had deliuered the Tower of London, with the Caſtles of Walden and Pleſey. When the Earle was thus ſpoyled of his holds, hee tooke the Church of Ramſey, and fortified it, as he beſieged the Caſtle of Burwell, he was ſmitten in the head with a dart, whereof he dyed. Robert Marmion was alſo ſlaine at Couentry, and Rendulphus Earle Mandeuiles ſonne, that held Ramſey Church as a foreſſe, after his Fathers death, was taken and baniſhed. *1144. Gerual. Dor.*

King Stephen beſieged Wallingford, but could not preuaile. The Earle of Cheſter was reconciled to the king, and was at this ſiege with him, but ſhortly after, when he came to the Court, the king lying at Northamptan, he was taken and kept priſoner, till he had rendred the Caſtle of Lincolne and other forteſſes, whereupon he was the kings enemie euer after. *An. reg. 12. 1147. Wallingford beſieged.*

Geffrey Earle of Anjow, and now Duke of Normandie, ſent foure Noblemen with furniture of warriours to Robert Earle of Glouceſter, requeſting him to ſend ouer his ſonne Henry, and if need required, he would ſend him backe againe with all ſpeed. The Earle agreeing to his requeſt, brought the young Henry to Wareham, where he take ſhipping towards his Father, of whom he was ioyfully receiued, there he abode two yeares, and foure Moneths. In the meane time Earle Robert deceaſed, and was buried at Briſtow, in the quire of the Church of S. Iames which he had founded. *An. reg. 13. 1146.* *Robert Earle of Glouceſter deceaſed.*

King Stephen entred Lincolne and there wore his Crowne, after whoſe departure from thence the Earle of Cheſter came to recouer the Town, but could not bring his purpoſe to paſſe, the Citizens ſhewed ſuch defence. The Empreſſe being wearied with the diſcord of the Engliſh Nation, went ouer into Normandy chooſing rather to ſit vnder the defence of her husband in Peace, then to ſuffer ſo many diſpleaſures in England. King Stephen baniſhed Theobald Archbiſhop of Canterbury, and the Archbiſhop interdicted all the Land that was ſubiect to the kings Dominion, till Peace betweene them was made. *An. reg. 14. 1147. The Empreſſe went ouer into Normandy.*

The D. lay at S. Auſtins in Canterburie, becauſe the was deſirous to ſee the Abbey of Feuerſham finiſhed which ſhe and her husband had begun to build: ſhe alſo builded the Hoſpitall of S. Katherine by the Tower of London, for poore brethren and ſiſters. Robert Fitz Harding ſometimes Maior of Briſtow, whoſe Father was a Dane, hauing founded the Monaſterie of Saint Auguſtine in the Towne of Briſtow, this yeare placed Chanons there, which foundation was after confirmed by king Henrie the ſecond. *An. reg. 15. 1148. S. Katherine W. Dunſtable Lib. Trinitat. London.*

In the Moneth of May, Henrie the Empreſſe ſonne, with a great company of choſen men of Armes and other, came into England, vnto whom forthwith many Caſtles and ſtrong holds were deliuered, and he made a new roine, which *1149. Rog. Hoved.*

which was called the Dukes roine, and not one Roſe, but alſo all the potentates of the Realme, as well Biſhops, as Earles and Barons, had each one his owne Roſe: but afterward the Duke did inhibit the moſt part of theſe roines. The Duke taking with him Randulph Earle of Cheſter, Roger Earle of Hereford, and diuers other he went to Dauid King of Scots, of whom hee was ioyfully receiued, and made knight. When king Stephen heard that Dauid king of Scots, with his ſtrength, and Henry ſon to the Empreſſe with his welleene Lords were together at Carlile, he came to Yorke with a great army for feare they ſhould attempt any thing againſt that Citie, and ſo lay there the moneth of Auguſt. At length the one party as well as the other departed: but Euſtacius the Kings ſonne being made knight, exerciſed many cruelties in the Lands of the Earles, that tooke part with Henry the Empreſſe ſonne.

An. reg. 15. 1150. Chron. regia

Henry the Empreſſe ſon, being made knight, ſailed into Normandy. All England was full of trouble and noyſe of warre, ſet forth to fire and rapine, through diſcord betwixt king Stephen and certaine Earles that tooke part with Henrie the ſonne of the Empreſſe.

Simon. Dunelm. An. reg. 16 1151. Chron. Pontis. Roſ. Dorob.

Robert Earle Ferrers, founded the Abbey of Periuall.

Geffrey Plantagenet Earle of Anjow, and Duke of Normandy, deceaſed, and left his ſonne Henry to be his heyre.

A diuorcement was made betweene Lewis King of France, and Elianor his Queene, becauſe they were a kin in the fourth degree. Hoyſe ouer, the was defamed of Adultery with an Infidell, &c.

Roſier Hoved.

King Stephen beſieged the Caſtle of Worceſter, which he could not win the laſt yeare, and when he ſaw now alſo that hee could not obtaine his purpoſe, he builded two Caſtles before the ſame, ſtuffing them with Garriſons, and went from thence, but by counſell of Robert Earle of Leiceſter, the Kings Caſtles were ouerthrowne and the Caſtle beſieged, deliuered from danger. *An. reg. 17*

An. reg. 17 1152.

Henrie Duke of Normandie, tooke to wife Elianor, ſole daughter and heire to William duke of Aquitaine, thee was firſt married to Lewes the ſeuenth of France, by whom ſhe had two daughters, whereof, Mary the eldeſt, was married to Henry the large Earle of Champaigne: Ales the ſecond, to Theobald, Earle of Bloys, Lewes king of France, was diuorced from Elianor, and yet was not content with this ſecond marriage, becauſe he was loath, that any other ſhould beget Sonnes by her, whereby his daughters might be diſherited.

King Stephen called a Parliament at London, declaring to Theobald Archbiſhop of Canterbury, and the other Biſhops, how hee would vtterly diſherit Henry Duke of Normandie and confirme his owne ſonne Euſtace to bee his ſucceſſor by crowning him king: but the Pope had ſent a commandement to the Archbiſhop prohibiting him to crowne king Stephens ſonne, becauſe his Father had vſurped the kingdome, contrary to his Oath. Which thing (as was thought) was brought to paſſe by the ſubtile policy of Thomas Becket, a Chaplaine borne in London.

King Stephen and his ſonne being not a little offended therewith, cauſed the Biſhops with their Primate to bee cloſed vp in an houſe, threatning with terrors to extort of them, that which with prayers nor price they could not obtaine. The Archbiſhop ſtiffely ſtanding in his purpoſe, ſome of the Biſhops through feare went from him, at length the Archbiſhop by a marualous hap eſcaping, got ouer the Thames, and ſo to Douer: and thence tranſported ouer the ſeas, eſcaped the threats of the king and his ſonne and depriued his ſonne of his conceiued honour. *Archbiſhop ſtiffely ſtanding in his purpoſe. Biſhops vp in yrons.*

Queene Mawd deceaſed at Haningam Caſtle belonging to Alberike de Vere, Earle of Oxford, and was buried at Feuerſham in Kent.

The people of Norwich obtained of the king to haue Coroners and Bayliffes: for before that time, they had no other officer but a Sergeant for the king, that kept Courts, and after this, that is to ſay, in the frauen and thirtieth yeare of Henry the third, they had licence to incloſe that Towne, with ditches got of ſundry hundreds, &c. William de S. Barbara, Biſhop of Durham deceaſed, when he had ſate Biſhop there 9. yeeres. *Norwichin-ceaſed. Chronicle of Bromholma. An. reg 18.*

Henry Duke of Normandie, furniſhed with an Army, came into England, and at his firſt comming wan the Caſtle and Towne of Malmeſburie, from thenceforth Robert the noble Earle of Leiceſter, began to take the Duties part, and to furniſh him with things neceſſary, 30. Caſtles or mo. (though his counſell, with them that kept them) ſubmitted themſelues to the Duke. At length it was decreed, that the King ſhould talke with the Duke, touching Peace to be had: and ſo they met in a place where the Thames was moſt narrow, the one ſtanding on the one ſide, and the other on the other. After long talke they returned, the Duke to his men and the King to his, and ſo laying downe weapon, euery man departed in peace. The Tower of London, and the Caſtle of Windſor, were deliuered to Richard de Lucie to be ſafely kept. *1153 Malmeſburie Caſtle and Towne won by Henry Duke of Normandy.*

Euſtace the kings ſonne was angrie with his Father, for agreeing to this peace, and therefore in a rage departed from the Court towards Cambridge, to deſtroy that Country. Comming to S. Edmundsbury, hee was there honourably receiued and feaſted, but when he could not haue ſuch money as he demanded, to beſtow among his men of warre, he went away in a rage ſpoyling the Towne in the fields belonging to the Abbey, and carried it into his Caſtles thereby: but as he ſate him downe to dinner, he fell mad vpon receiuing the firſt moſſell, and miſerably dyed, and was buried at Feuerſham. *Polycronicon, Iohn Sariſb. Iohn Trevor. Mathew Paris. Euſtace king Stephens ſon dyed.*

Elianor wife to Duke Henry, did beare him a ſonne named William, which was a name proper to the Dukes of Aquitaine and Anjow.

The Duke beſieged Stamford Caſtle, and wan it, and then hee went to Nottingham and wanne that. The King in the meane time beſieged Ipſwich, and wanne it. At length *Stamford, Nottingham, and Ipſwich beſieged. Ex chara regia*

An. reg. 19. King Stephen departed this life. 1154.

lengthy through the great labour of the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the other Bishops, the King commanded the Nobles to meet at Winchester, where the Duke being received with great joy, the King in sight of all men, adopted him his sonne, confirmed to him the principalitie of all England. The Duke received him in place of a father, granting to him all the dayes of his life to enjoy the name and seat of the Kings preheminence.

William Archbishop of Yorke, about the Feast of Pentecost, died at Yorke of poyson, as some supposed, and was buried at his Cathedrall Church of Saint Peter.

Duke Henrie in the Octaues of the Epiphany came together with the King to Oxford, where the Earles and Barons by the Kings commandement sweare fealty to Duke Henrie, sauing the Kings honour so long as he liued. This assurance being made, they departed a sunder, but shortly after they met againe at Dunstable, there to intreat of the state and peace of the Kingdome.

Shortly after Duke Henrie with King Stephen, and certaine Lords of England came to Canterbury, and from thence to Douer, where they had communication with Theodrike Earle of Flanders, and the Countesse the Dukes Aunt. When the King and the Duke had dismissed the Earle of Flanders, and were returning towards Canterbury, the slaughter of the Duke was prepared by a conspiracy of the Flemings, which enuied both the Duke and Peace: but behold suddainly the Kings yonger sonne William priuy with the Conspirators, on Barham Downe fell off his horse, and breaking his leg, he gathered all the company about him in sorrow. The Duke in the meane time vnderstanding the appointed treasons, got him to Canterbury, and escaped his enemies hands: from thence by Rochester and London, he came to the sea, and passed ouer into Normandie.

Hugo de Puteaco, Treasurer of Yorke and Archdeacon of Winchester, was made Bishop of Durham.

In October the King met the Earle of Flanders againe at Douer and talked with him.

After the Earle was dismissed, the King was taken with suddaine paine of the Iliake passion, and with an old disease of running of the Reynes, and there in the house of the Monkes died the fiue and twentieth of October, when he had raigned eighteene yeares, ten moneths, and odde dayes. He founded the Abbeyes of Coythall in Essex, of Furnesse in Lancashire, and Fenersham in Kent, where his bodie, was buried for the time, but since the suppression of that house, for the lead that inclosed his bodie, the same bodie was thrown into the next water. He founded an house for Nunnes at Carew, and an house of Nuns at Bigham, foure miles from Graueseud. He also founded an Hospitall by the West gate of Yorke, whereunto hee gaue all the Mores that had beene vsed to be gathered betwixt the Riuer of Trent and Scotland, for finding of the Kings hounds, which was foure and twenty leagues of euery plow-land by yere, he appointed the Deane and Chanons of Saint Peters Church in Yorke, to gather them to the reliefe of the said Hospitall, and caused Nigell Maior of Yorke to deliuer that place by the West wall, for to receiue the poore and lame, &c. Matild his wife founded the Hospitall of Saint Katherine by the Tower of London, in a portion of Land, which pertained to the Priory of the holy Trinitie in London, but then purchased by the Hall, by exchange of fiue pounds the yeare Land out of the Kings Manors of Stanes. He had issue first a bastard sonne named William Earle of Warren, then Mathew Earle of Beame, Mary, first Abbesse, and then a Countesse, and Eustace that dyed before his father, as also Baldwine his sonne, and Matild his daughter, wife to the Earle of Pillent, which two last named were buried in the Priorie of the holy Trinitie in London. He had also a sonne named Gernasius de Bloys, he was Abbot of Westminster xx. yeares, and was there buried, with this Epitaph.

Iliat of King Stephen.

John Flor. Hist. Abbat. Westmon.

De regum genere pater hic Gernasius ecce,
Est & defunctus, mors rapit omne genus.

Mary Abbesse of Romsey married Mathew, and in her right he was Earle of Boloigne.

Romsey.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* HENRY *the* II.

An. reg. 1.

HENRY the second, sonne of Geffrey Plantagenet and Mawd the Empresse, at the age of twentie three yeares, began his Raigne ouer this Realme of England the 25. day of October, in the yere of our Lord, 1154. he was crowned at Westminster the seuenteene day of December, by Theobald Archbishop of Canterbury: he was somewhat red of face, short of body, and therewith fat: of speech reasonable, well learned, noble in Chiualrie, and fortunate in battaile, wise in counsell, one that loued peace, liberall to strangers, but hard to his familiars: vnstedfast of promise, giuen to pleasure, and a wedlocke breaker: by his manhood and policie the crowne of England was much augmented, with the annexing of Scotland, Ireland, the Iles of Orcades, Wyttaine, Poytiers, Guyen, and other Prouinces of France.

Thomas Becket Archdeacon of Canterbury, was made the Kings Chancellor, and was now in such fauour, that he was accounted the Kings gouernor, for he was chiefly directed by him in all things.

Per

He held his Christmas at Bermond, where hauing conference with his Nobles, for the rule of the kingdome, he promised to banish all strangers. Whereupon William of Ypres, and all the Flemings that had flocked into England, fearing the indignation of the new King, departed the Land. And the Castles that had beene builded to pull the rich, and spoile the poore, were by the Kings commandement, and counsell of his Chancellour throwne downe. The King visiting the City of Yorke, in that Country received diuers Castles into his hands, namely amongst other he tooke the Castle of Scarborow, from William Earle of Albemarle.

Ypod. Neust. Doro. 155.

Matth. Paris. Reuenge of the Normans with. Ypod. Neust. Dedicere.

In March Quéene Elianor did beare a sonne at London called Henry after his father. By this Elianor King Henry had the Dukedome of Aquitaine and County of Poytiers.

King Henry was sonne to Mawd the Empresse, whose mother was Mawd the Quéene of England, wife to King Henry the first, and daughter to Margaret Quéen of Scots, who was daughter of Edward, which he begate of Agatha, the sister of Henry the Emperour.

Edward was the sonne of King Edmund named Ironside: whose father was K. Etheldred, whose father was the peaceable King named Edgar, the son of Edmund, the son of Edward the seignior, the son of Alured, &c.

Ypod. Neust. Doro.

A Councell was holden at Wallingford, where the Nobles were sworne to the King and his issue.

1156.

King Henry went ouer into Normandy, to whom when he was at Roane, came Tortous Earle of Flanders with his wife the Kings aunt that he might reconcile vnto him Geffrey his brother, which was then come thither also for that purpose: but Geffrey not accepting the portions offered by the King, they departed without any agreement, Geffrey expulling Hoele out of Britaine, tooke the Citie of Nauntz, by yeelding of the Citizens. And King Henry afterward with long siege tooke the Castles of Mirabile, and Chinon, which Geffrey his brother had held, whereupon there was a peace concluded betwixt them, that the king should giue to Geffrey, euery yeare a thousand pound of English money, and two thousand pound of Angeow; and thereupon the third Castle called Loudune was yeelded to the King, and so was the dissention appeased, and K. Henry obtained homage, and pledges of all Aquitaine, and Gascoine, and prepared to returne towards England.

This yere Quéene Elianor brought forth a daughter named Matild. And the same yere died William the kings eldest sonne, and was buried at Reading.

An. reg. 3.

King Henry coined new money, which onely was currant in this Realme, and all other coines were forbidden.

Conon Earle of Richmond comming out of England into Britaine, tooke the Citie of Redonens, expelling Eudo, which Conon afterward was received as Duke ouer almost all Britaine.

Nicholas Trc.

1157

King Henry hauing ouercome his brother Geffrey returned into England, and then with an army went against the Welshmen, where he tolled their wards, fortified the Castle of Rudland, and recouered many strong holds. Poe recouered the Castle of Basingwerke, &c. but he lost many of his men, for Henry of Essex that bare the Kings standert, as he was allailed amongst his enemies, let fall the standert to the ground, which incouraged the Welshmen in such sort, that the King being sore distressed, had much adoe to saue himselfe, and was faine to flie: of whole part, Eustace fitz John, and Robert Curcis, two worthy knights, with diuers other Noblemen and Gentlemen were slaine. After that Owen encamped and entrenched himselfe at Brantpine, and skirmished with the Kings men daily. And in the meane while that the king was fortifying the Castle of Rudland, his nauy which was guided by Madocap Meriduh Prince of Polwesse, anchored in Yan of Anglesey, and there is spoyled two Churches, and part of the Ile, but as they returned, were all slaine. In the meane time there was a Peace concluded betwixt the King and the Prince.

King Henry warreth against the Welshmen Rebellion Castles.

Henry of Essex.

Quéene Elianor brought forth a sonne named Richard, at Oxford in the kings Pallace there, which pallace was since made a Church of white Fryers.

Giral. Cam.

William Earle of Gloucester was taken by the Welshmen in the Castle of Cardiffe.

1158.

On Christmas day King Henry wore his Crowne at Worcester, where, after celebration of diuine seruice, he set his Crowne vpon the Altar, and neuer wore it after.

King Henry went into France, and at Paris was ioyfully received of King Lewes, who required to haue his daughter Margaret to bee married to his sonne Henry, which suite hee obtained, and King Henry obtained, that as Seneschall to the French King, hee might enter into Baytaine, and call afore him such as made warre one against another, and appease them, whereby he brought the Citie of Nauntz to his Dominion.

Earthquakes.

An Earthquake happened in many places through England: and the Riuer of Thames was dryed vp, that at London men might walke ouer the same dry-shod.

An. reg. 5.

Quéene Elianor brought forth a sonne named Geffrey.

Ypodigma.

1159.

A new coyne was made in England. King Henry tooke escuage of the Englishmen, the summe whereof grew to 12400. pounds of siluer. Of other Countries subject to him he gathered also an infinite exaction, and then passed toward Tholouse with an huge Army, and besieged that Citie from Midsommer till Hollontide. There were with him Malcolme King of Scots, and a certaine King of Wales, and all the Earles and Barons of England, Normandie, Aquitaine, Anjow, and Gascoigne: but Lewis the French King so defended that Citie, that the Kings purpose was frustrate, and the siege raised: and after great good peace and concord betwixt them made, a great discord shortly after followed.

Gernasius.

King Henry returned from Tholouse, and Henry the King of Englands sonne, not 7. yeares

An. reg. 6.

cio, married Margaret the French kings daughter, that was not yet 3. yeres old.

1160 Gerua. Dorob. *An. reg.* 7.

In this meane time the king although hee were much troubled with affaires, yet was not he vnmindfull of Ireland. For directing his Messengers to Rome, with his Letters of aduise, gotten at the councell of Cashell, he also obtained by their suite of Pope Adrian (an Englishman by birth) a priuiledge both to haue the dominion of the Iesh people, and also to instruct them in the ordinances of faith and Ecclesiasticall rites, after the order of the Church of England. Which priuiledge being sent ouer into Ireland, by Nicholas of Wallingford, then Prior of Maimesburie, and afterward Abbot, and also by William Fitz Adelme, Immediatly there was a Synode of Bishops assembled at Waterford, where in it was read in publike audience, with generall consent of all, by Iohn Bishop of Salisbury, afterward Bishop of Chartiers, who was sent to Rome for that purpose, and by him the foresaid Pope Adrian sent a Ring of Gold to the King of England, in token of the vnctitute, which was incontinently laid vp with the priuiledge in the Arches of Winchester. Wherefore, I thought it not superfluous to set downe here the tenure of that priuiledge, but first a word or two of Pope Adrian, because I haue said, he was an English man, his name was Nicholas Breake-speare borne at Langley in the County of Hereford, sonne to Robert a yonger brother of the house of Breake-speares, which Robert after the death of his wife, professed himselfe a Monke of Saint Albones, leauing his sonne to prouide for himselfe. This young man passed into France, was thorne a Monke, and after chosen Abbot, went to Rome, was consecrated Bishop of Alba, made Cardinall, sent Legate to the Northwales, where he reduced the Nation from Paganisme to Christianitie, and after returned to Rome, when Anastasius was dead, he was chosen Pope, by the name of Adrian the fourth, and now followeth the priuiledge.

This ordinance of Pope Adrian the fourth, to K. Henry the second to enter Ireland, out of an ancient written booke intituled, Topographia Hiberniæ &c. by Giraldus Cambrensis, and dedicated to the said King Henry the second.

Adrian Bishop, seruant of the seruants of God, to his dere sonne, the most excellent King of England, health and Apostolike Benediction, your highnesse resolution, in the laudable, and fruitfull spreading abroad your glorious name on earth, and in obtaining the reward of eternall felicitie in Heauen, while you determine like a Catholike Prince to enlarge the bounds and limits of the Church, to declare to the vnlearned and rude people, the truth of the Christian faith, and to race out of the Lords ground the plants of wickednesse; and towards the performance thereof, you require the counsell and fauour of the Apostolike seate: In which action, with how much the more graue counsell and deepe consideration you doe proceed, so much the more fortunate succeede thereon (God assisting you) we nothing doubt you shall haue, for that alwayes they are wont to attaine to a good and happie end, which take their beginning from the scale of faith, and loue of true religion. For Ireland, and all other Ilands, to the which Christ the sonne of Iustice hath giuen light, and which haue receiued the instructions of the Christian faith, there is no doubt but they doe appertaine and belong to the right of Saint Peter and the holy Church: wherefore how much the more plentifully wee doe seate in them the faithfull plant, and graft the bud acceptable to God, so much the more doe we see that shall be more strictly required of vs in our inward thoughts: You haue signified to vs (most deere sonne in Christ) that you will enter into the Ile of Ireland to subdue that people vnto lawes, and that there you will interrupt the plants of vices, and that you will pay a yeerely pension of one penny for euery house there to S. Peter, and that you will preserue the rights of the Churches there, whole and inuiolated. And we following with a great fauour your godly and laudable desire, doe gratefully accept, and willingly consent that you doe enter into that Iland, to enlarge the bounds of the Church, to restraine the course of wickednesse, to correct manners, to plant vertue, and augment the Christian Religion, and that you doe put in execution those things that shall appertaine to the honour of God and saluation of that Land, and the people there shall receiue you honourably, and as their Lord shall reuerence you, the Churches right remaining sound, and no way infringed, and alwayes reserving to S. Peter, and the holy Church the yeerely pension of euery house there. If therefore you bring that to passe, which in your minde you haue conceiued, indeauour to informe that nation in good manners, and cause as well by your selfe as by others, to instruct such as you perceiue capeable in this faith, in this word, and in this life, that the Church there may be adorned, the religion of the Christian faith may be there planted, and may there rest, and that those things that pertaine to the honour of God and saluation of soules bee so ordered and disposed of, that of God you may receiue the full measure of euerlasting reward, and in earth obtaine a glorious name for euer.

This that followeth is ioyned to the former Epistle of Pope Adrian the fourth, being an English man, written to King Henry the second.

This was obtained in Anno 1171. 2. fourth Mar. Weſt. And in An. Do 1155. but in An. 1168. before his expedition into Ireland, he caused all men from the child of 12. yeere old to the old man to obserue the Popes obedience: Mar. Weſt.

Geral. Cam.

Adrian Pope his Epistle to King Henry.

Petrus. Andreas. Iacobus. Iohannes. Thomas. Iacobus Alphei. Philippus.

I beleue in God Fadir almichty shipper of henen and earth,
And in Ihesus Crist his onkethi son vre Louerd,
That is iuange thurch the holy ghost: bore of Mary maiden,
Tholede pine vnder Pounce Pilat, pitcht on rode tree, dead and yburiid,
Liche into belle, the thridde day from death arose,
Steich into heauen, sit on his fadir richt honde God almichty,
Then is cominde to deme the quikke and the dede,

I beleeue

Pythonomeus. Hydens. Simon. Judeus. Arabiæ.

I beleue in the holy goſt,
All holy chirche.
Moone of alle hallwen: forgiuenis of sine,
Fleiſ vprising.
Lif withuten end, Amen.

Est symbolum triplex scilicet quod in primis dicitur scilicet quicunque vult. Et illud est Athanasij patriarchæ Alexandrini. Aliud quod dicitur in missa scilicet Credo in vnum deum. Et illud fuit sanctorum patrum in Niceno concilio. Tertium quod est commune omnium fidelium, & illud ex 12. Apostolorum continens 12. articulos fidei.

Pierre Comestor.

Pater noster in Anglico.

Vre fader in heuene riche.
Thi name be halid euerliche.
Thou bring vs to thi michilblisce,
Thi will to wirche thu vs wisse,
Als hit is in heauene ido,
Euer in earth ben hit also,
That holi bred that lasteth ay,
Thou send hit ous this ilke day,
Forgiue ous all that we hauith done,
Als we forgiuet vch other mon,
He let vs fallein no founding,
Ac scilde vs fro the foule thing, Amen.

Et silustri Giraldo Cambrensi. in sua Topographia Hiberniæ ad regem Angliæ Henricum 2.

Note.

But here I must truely informe the reader that this priuiledge was granted in the first yeere of the Raigne of this Henry the 2. which was in the yeere of our Lord 1155. And also therewithall know that in the yeere 1168. before his expedition into Ireland, this Henry caused all men from the childe of 12. yeeres of age vnto all persons of full threescore yeeres old to abiure the Popes obedience, reade Mathew of Westminster.

Thomas Wikes. Petrocia.

Mathew Earle of Bolonia married Mary abbesse of Rumsey, daughter to King Stephen, and had with her the county of Bologne.

Theobald Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, and the Church of Canterbury was voide one yeere, one moneth, and fourteene dayes: he had sate Archbishop 22. yeeres and was buried at Canterbury.

Mathew Paris.

King Henry caused all his subiects to sweare fidelity to his sonne Henry concerning his inheritance. Thomas the Kings Chancellour tooke his oath, first, sauing his fidelity to King Henry the father, so long as he liued. This Thomas was elected Archbishop of Canterbury and when hee was consecrated, he forthwith refused to deale any more with matters of the Court, renouncing the Chancellorship, &c.

Thomas Becket Archbishop of Canterbury.

An. reg. 8. 1162. Will. Nouo. Ralph Cogsall.

There came into England 30. Germanes, as well men as women, who called themselues Publicans: their head and ruler named Gerardo, was somewhat learned, the residue very rude. They denied matrimonie, and the sacraments of Baptisme, and the Lords supper, with other Articles. They being apprehended, the King caused a councell to be called at Oxford, where the said Gerard answered for all his fellowes, who being pressed with Scripture, answered concerning their faith, as they had beene taught, and would not dispute thereof. After they could by no meanes bee brought from their errours, the bishops gaue sentence against them and the King commanded that they should bee marked with an hot yron in the forehead, and whipped, and that no man should succour them with house-rome or otherwise: they tooke their punishment gladly, their Captaine going before them, singing, Blessed are yee when men hate you: they were marked in the forehead, and their Captaine both in the forehead and the chin. Thus being whipped and thrust out in winter, they dyed with colde, no man relieuing them. Queene Elianor brought forth a daughter at Roane, and named her Elianor, after her owne name.

Publicans whipped.

Robert de Mountfort accused his neere kinsman Henry of Esser of high treason before the nobility, affirming that he in an expedition into Wales, in a narrow and hard passage at Coleshell, most fraudulently threw away the Kings standert, and with a lowd voyce pronounced him to be dead, and turned backe those that came to the kings, succour. (Inde de the foresaid Henry of Esser was perswaded that King Henry was slaine, which vndoubtedly had come to passe, if Roger Earle of Clare had not with quicke speed come to with his retinue, and raised againe the kings standert, to the incouraging of the whole army.

An. reg. 9. 1163. Iocelinus de Brackland.

Henry withstood the same Robert and denied all his accusations, whereby, in processe of time, the matter came to bee tryed by combate. They met at Reading to fight, in an Ile neere to the Abbey. Thither also came much people, to see what end the matter would come to. And it chanced, that when Robert had manfully powred out many and heauy strokes, Henry turning reason into rage, take vpon him the part of a Challenger and not a defender, who whilest he manfully strooke, was more slowly stricken againe, and indeauouring to conquer, was conquered himselfe: hee being ouercome fell downe for dead, and when hee was thought to haue beene slaine, at the instance of such of the nobilitie as were of kinne to him, it was granted vnto the Sponkes there that his body should be buried, but afterwards he reuiued, and hauing recouered his health, became a Monke in that place.

Combat at Reading.

Henry of Esser ouercome.

Flores Historiarum.

London bridge was new made of timber, by Peter Colechurch a Priest Chaplaine.

An. reg. 10 London bridge made of timber.

Malcolme the Scottish King, and Resus Prince of Southwales, and other, did homage to King Henry and his Sonne Henry at Westminster.

A Councell was holden at Clarington, in the presence of the King, and the Archbishops, Bishops, Lords, Barons, &c. wherin was recognised, and by their oathes confirmed many ordinances, too long here to recite, Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury being sworne to the same shortly after fore repented, and fled the Realme, and went to the court of Rome.

1164. Gervasius Dorob. A councell at Clarington Which see in Mathew Paris.

*An.reg.*11. 1165. In Cambr. quake.

The 26. day of January was a great earthquake in Ely, Norfolke, and Suffolke, so that it ouerthrew them that stood vpon their feete, and made the bels to ring in the steeples.

Mathew Paris. Cestrensis. Dore.

The King hauing seazed into his hands all the Archbishops goods and rents, and banished all his kinsmen, women and children, Randole de Biot had the cuskowy of the Archbishoppricke: this man was very cruell against the Archbishop.

Ralph. Cogvvell.

The King led an innumerable army against the Welchmen, of Flemings, Scots, Picts, Britaines, and other, but with so great a multitude he could not ouercome them.

The Welchmen toke the Castle of Cardigan.

In a certaine affiege at Bridgenorth, against Hugh de Mortemere, when the King was shot at by one of the enemies, a valiant man Robert de Saint Clere Constable of Colchester, did thrust himselfe betwixt the King and the danger of the stroke, and so receiued death for him, whose onely daughter the King taking into his custody, hee gaue her in marriage to William de Longeuile, with her fathers inheritance, who begat on her a sonne, bearing the name and surname of his Grandfather.

*An.reg.*12 1166. Iuies.

The King passed ouer into Normandy, and there holding a Counsell appointed a collection to bee made through all his Countryes, two pence of the pound of moueable goods for the first yeere, and one penny the pound for foure yeeres after: the same to bee receiued likewise of arable lands, and of Mines, so that the charges and cost of them bee not reckoned. Also euery man hauing a house, and the value of a pound, shall giue a penny: and hee that hath not the value of a pound, but some office agent, shall giue a penny, this to be the reliefe of the Exil parts.

The same yeere Queene Elianor did beare a Sonne named Iohn.

*An.reg.*13 1167.

Robert Sonne to William Earle of Glocester deceased.

The warre was renewed betwixt the king of England, and the French king, for the Cittie of Thoulouse: and Mathew Earle of Bulloigne, brother to Philip Earle of Flanders manned 6. hundred ships, to haue come into England, but by such preparation as Richard Luc. gouernour of England made, he was stopped well enough.

*An.reg.*14. 1168. Iohn Texor. Gerus. Dore. Ypodigma.

Mawde King Henries daughter was married to Henry duke of Saxony.

Conan Earle of little Britaine died, and left for his heire a daughter named Constance. which he had by the King of Scots Sister, which Constance King *Henry* married to his Sonne Geffrey and trauailing earnestly to set all things at peace and quiet in Brittaine, reconciled vnto himselfe both the clearge and the lattie of that Countrie.

*An.reg.*15 1169. Sea Cro. Gerendon, Leicester and Eaton, Sea.cron.

Robert de Boseue Earle of Leicester dyed, he founded the Monasteries of Gerendon of Monkes of Leicester called Saint Mary de Prat of Chanons regular: and Eaton of Nuns, was founded by Amicia his wife, daughter of Ralph Montford.

King Henry caused the Castle of Warbricke to be builded. Gualter.Cou.

Dermucius the sonne of Morcardos, called Macke Morgh King of Lemster, being expelled out of his kingdome, came into Guyen to King Henry, humbly requiring aid for his restitution, who vnderstanding fully the cause thereof, gaue free licence to all Englishmen that would to aid the said Dermucius, whereupon he returning into England, couenanted with Richard Earle of Chepstowe, to giue him his daughter in marriage, and with her the succession of his kingdome, so that he would helpe him in the recouery of it: and shortly after he promised to Robert Fitz Stephen, and Maurice Fitz Gerald large reuenues in Ireland for the like helpe. He was called Earle of Chepstow. Robert Fitzstephen and Maurice Fitzgerald came ouer into Ireland. Earle of Chepstow ouercame the Irishmen. Giraldus Cam. Dermucius, *An.reg.*19 1173.

King Henry held his court at Nants, where the Bishops and Barons of Britaine being present, sware their fidelity to the King and to his sonne Geffrey and then the king sailed into England, but many of his company were drowned by the way. *An.reg.*18 1170. Giraldus Cr. Ypodigma.

Robert Fitz Stephen first of all Englishmen after the conquest entred Ireland the first day of May, with 390. men, and there toke Wexford in the behalfe of Dermutius. Englishmen transported into Ireland.

King Henry caused his sonne Henry borne at London to bee crowned at Westminster by the hands of Roger Archbishop of Yorke, as her kingdom thought to the great quietnesse of himselfe and his Realme, but it proued farre otherwise: the young King receiued the fealties of the Earles and Barons. Henry the kings sonne crowned. Fitzstephen and Strongbow rebellion.

Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury, by the mediation of the Pope Alexander, and Lewes the king of France, was restored to his see of Canterbury, and returned from exile.

In the month of September, Richard Earle of Chepstow, surnamed Strongbow, sailed into Ireland with 1200. men of warre, and by force toke Waterford and Dublin, and married Eue Dermucius daughter. Gualter. Cou.

Thomas Becket Archbishop of Canterbury, in his Church at Canterbury, the 28. of December was slaine by William Tracy, Baron of Baines and Boston, Reginold Fitz Vrse, Hugh Moruile, and Richard Briton knights. *An.reg.*17 1171. Death of Thomas Becket. Chro. Chol Ex Record.

There was sene at Saint Ouhes in Castle a Dragon of a maruelous bignesse, which by mouing burned houses. Ex Record.

King Henry returned from beyond the Seas, and landed at Portesmouth in the month of August.

King Henry hauing caused Richard Earle of Chepstow to giue into his hands all the land which hee had conquered in that Realme, toke ship at Penbroke, and sailed thither, where the King of Conach, Dermucius king of Cozile, Mourice king of Methe, the king of Ofiel, Duuenald king of Ossery, Duuenald king of Limericke, Machachelin, Ophelon, Machaleny, Othnerhely, Gillamehelmach, Ocadecie, Ocarnell, with other Princes, and the Bishops, submitting themselues and theirs to the King of England and his successors, builded for him a great Pallace at Dublin, where he held his Christmas. Kings of Ireland. Lords of Ireland. Geffr. Abbot. S. Albani. Regesll. Mon. *An.reg.*18. Giraldus Cru. Ral. Cogsha. Gernal Dore.

The Church of Norwich, with the houses thereto belong. The Church of Norwich burnt.

1173. thereto belonging was burnt, and the Monkes were disperced,

The King returned into England on Munday in Easter wake, and about the Ascention tide sailed into Normandy.

At Andouer a Preest praying before the Altar, was striken with the thunder and slaine.

Likewise one Larke and his brother were burnt to death with the lightning. Mr. colchest.

King Henry the sonne, with his Wife, the French Kings daughter, were both together crowned at Winchester the seauen and twenty day of August, by the hands of Rotrod Archbishop of Roane. Thus was he twice crowned, (as ye haue heard.) Giraldus,

King Henry the elder was alleyged of the death of Thomas the Archbishop vpon his oath made, that he was not paine to it, but that those Palefactors toke occasion to kill him by certaine words which the king in his anger vnaduisedly spake. *An.reg.*19 1173. Ypodigma.

King Henry married the eldest daughter of Hubert Earle of Poyton, vnto his sonne Iohn surnamed Without land.

Hee also made Mary the sister of Thomas Becke, Abbesse of Berking.

Henry the younger rebelling in Normandy against King Henry his father, many Earles and Barons fled ouer to him, whereby diuers strong battels were fought, as well in England as in Normandy, Poytow, Guyen, and Britaine. Henry the younger rebellion against his father.

There take part against the Father, Lewis king of France, William king of Scots, Henry, Geffrey, and Iohn his sonnes, Robert Earle of Leicester, Hugh of Chester, and others.

Robert earle of Leicester with three thousand Flemings comming into England, arriued at Walton, and after were receiued by Earle Hugh into Framlingham Castle, they burnt the Castle of Hagoneth, the cittie of Norwich, &c. but by Richard de Lucy the kings Iustice, both he, his wife and as many Normans and Frenchmen as were with him were taken, but the Flemings were all slaine, or drowned. This battell was fought without the Towne of Saint Edmundsbury, neere to a place called Saint Martins of Barnesham. Iohn Texor. *An.reg.*20

William King of Scots with many Flemings entring into England, wanne the Castles of Appleby, Brough, and Pardebow.

King Henry the elder, returning into England, in short time subdued his Rebels. The Cittie of Leicester by his commandement was burnt, the walles and Castle razed, and the inhabitants sparkled into other Cities. Robert de Stotenile, Radulph de Mandeuile, Barnard Bayllole, of whom Barnards Castle take the name, and William de Veteri, came to Newcastle, and after toke King William prisoner, and sent him to London, from whence K. Henry toke him and the Earle of Leicester with him into Normandy, and there impaisoned them at Roane, where King William compounded for his ransome, and after was deliuered at Yorke for 4000. pound. The Nobles of Scotland came no nerer than Penbles in Scotland to mete with their King, wherefore hee toke with him many of the younger sonnes of Noble men in England that bare him good will, and gaue them lands in Scotland, which hee take from such as were Rebels to him there. The names of those Gentlemen that hee toke with, him were Bayelliol, Brewse, Soully, Mowbrey, Saintclere, Hay, Giffard, Ramsey, Lanudell, Bisey, Berkeley, Wellegen, Boys, Montgomery, Valx, Co, Ienille, Frier, Grame, Gurlay, and diuerse other. Leicester burnt. Richards Ca. King of Scots taken prisoner Gerus. Dore. Regi. croni.

The fift day of December, Chaulks Church in Canterbury was burned, with certaine houses of office in the Court. Garus. Dore. W. Yorne. Canterbury burnt.

King Henry the sonne, with his brethren, and other, were reconciled to King Henry the Father.

The Archbishop of Canterbury, held a counsell in Saint Peters at Westminster on Sunday before the Ascention day, at which councell were present all the suffragan Bishops of his Prouince, Worcester excepted, that was sicke. and so excused himselfe, and the Bishop of Norwich which was deceased. *An.reg.*21 1175.

A brother of the Earle Ferrers was in the night priuily slaine at London, which when the King vnderstood, hee sware that he would bee auenged on the Cittizens: for it was then a common practise in the City, that an hundred or more in a company of young and old, would make nightly inuasions vpon the houses of the wealthie, to the intent to robbe them, and if they found any man stirring in the Cittie within the night, they would presently murther him, in so much, that when night was come, no man durst aduenture to walke in the streetes. When this had continued long, it fortuned that as a crew of young and wealthie Cittizens assembling together in the night, assaulted a stone house of a certaine rich man, and breaking through the wall, the good man of that house hauing prepared himselfe with other in a corner, when hee perceiued one of the theeues named Andrew Boccuinere to leade the way, with a burning brand in the one hand, and a pot of coales in the other, which hee allayed to kindle with the brand, hee slew vpon him, and smote off his right hand, and then with a loud voyce cryed theeues, at the hearing whereof the theeues toke their flight, all fauing hee that had lost his hand, whom the good man in the next morning deliuered to Richard de Lucy the kings Iustice. This thiefe vpon warrant of his life, appeached his confederates, of whom many were taken, and many were fled, but among the rest that were apprehended, a certaine Cittizen of great countenance, credit, and wealth, surnamed Iohn the old, when hee could not acquite himselfe by the Wardome, offered the King for his life 5. hundred markes, but the King commanded that he should be hanged, which was done, and the Cittie became more quiet. Rog. Houed. Night watchmen in London, did murther all they met.

The kings of England both father and sonne did eate and drinke at one table, lay in one chamber, and went together to visit the Tombe of Thomas late Archbishop of Canterbury, accomplishing indeed the peace which they had promised Gualtcouen. *An.reg.*22 1179.

mith.

Castles raced. The King caused to be raced and ouerthrowne the Castles of Huntington, Walton, Groby, Nunsbury, Bury, and Rhedil, with many other, in reuenge of the harme the Lords of them had done to him.

London bridge founded by arches of stone Lib. S. Alb. & Io. Leyland.

This yere, or rather in the yere 1173. after Rouse of Walwike, the stone bridge ouer the riuer of Thames at London, was begun to be founded, in a place where before had bin a bridge of timber, first builded and long since repaired by a Colledge of Priests, which Colledge stode where now Saint Mary Oueries Church standeth, in Southwarke. The King assisting this worke of the bridge, a Cardinall late Legate here, and Richard then Archbishop of Canterbury, gaue one thousand markes towards the same foundation. The course of the riuer for the time was turned another way about, by a trench cast for that purpose, beginning in the East about Radriffe, and ending in the West about Battersey.

This yere was compiled a booke of the orders and rules of the Exchequer, now commonly called there the Blacke booke: the author whereof (as diuers affirme) was Geruasius Tilberiensis Blacke booke in the Exchequer. nephew to king Henry the second. In this booke is described the reason and cause of the first institution of the same court, and why it was called Scaccarium, the names of the officers resident in the same, as well on the higher side, called the Chequer, as on the lower called the Receipt or Dreasury, their places and duties incident to the same, their priuileges and dignities, with diuers of their fees. The order and forme of making tayles, rolles, writs, and other like. The manner of accounts, and payments of rents vsed in these dayes, whereof some were yeelded in money, and some in victuals, prised according to the valuation of the money of that time, whereof mine Author maketh mention. For proufion of the Kings houshold vsed within his owne remembrance (as he saith) from the time of king Henry the first, wherein the officers of the Kings houshold reducing their victuailes into an estimate of money, did value for a measure of wheate to make bread for the seruice of 100. men one shilling: for the carcase of a fat Ore, one shilling: for a fat Hogge foure pence: for the prouender of 20. horses foure pence: many other especiall notes are contained in these bookes worthy of memory, which for breuity I ouer passe.

Wholesome bread for ten hundred men, xiii. pence. A fat Hogge iiii. pence.

In March the King called a Conuocation of the Clergie at London, when the Popes Legate was set, and the Archbishop of Canterbury on his right hand, as primate of England, the Archbishop of Yorke disdained to sit on the left hand, came and swapt him downe to haue thrust his taile betwixt the Legat and the Archbishop of Canterbury, which Archbishop being loath to remoue, the other set his buttocke in his lappe, but he had vneth touched him with his bumme, when the Bishops and other of the Clergie and Lattie crept to him, pulled him, threw him to the ground, and began to lay on him with fists and battes, so that the Archbishop of Canterbury (yeelding good for euil) was faine to defend the other Archbishop, who with his rent Coape got vp, and away straight to the King with a great complaint: but when the truth of the matter was once knowne, hee was well laughed at for his remedie.

Richard Strongbow Earle of Chepstow, deceased, and was buried at Dublin in Ireland. Ie Beuerle Anno reg. 17 Yodigam

William Earle of Arundell also deceased, and was buried at Wimonham.

William, Earle of Glouceter, because he had no sonne to inherit his lands, and being loath to distribute them amongst his daughters, he made John the Kings sonne his successor.

A shoure of blood rained in the Ile of Wight two houres space. Cron. Tiuens

The Church of secular Chanons at Waltam in Eſſex, founded by Harold, was by the Kings commandement new builded and regular Chanons placed there, to the number of 24. Richard the first augmented it, and so did Henry the third, with Farres and Markets, a Fayre for seauen dayes, and at Spingburg a Market euery Sunday, and a Fayre for three dayes. This Abbey at the generall surney, and surrender, was valued to dispend yerely 900. pound, foure shillings and foure pence. William Abbey. 1177. Vyodegans, Geruasius.

Rosamond the fayre daughter of Walter, Lord Clifford, Concubine to Henry the second (poysoned by Queene Elianor as some thought) dyed at Woodstocke, where King Henry had made for her an house of a wonderfull working, so that no man or woman might come to her, but he that was instructed by the King, or such as were right secret with him touching the matter. This house after some was named Labyrinthus, or Dedalus worke, which was thought to be an house wrought like vnto a knot in a garden, called a Maze, but it was commonly said, that lastly the Queene came to her by a clew of thredde, or silke, and so dealt with her, that shee lued not long after, but when shee was dead, shee was buried at Godstow, in an house of Nunnes, beside Oxford with these verses vpon her Tombe. Rosamond concubine to king Henry the 2.

Hic iacet in tumba, Rosa mundi, non rosa munda,
Non redolet, sed olet, que redolere solet.

In English thus

The rose of the World, but not the cleane flowre,
Is now here grauen, to whom beauty was lent,
In this graue full darke now is her bowre,
That by her life was sweete and redolent.
But now that shee is from this life blent, (sinke
Though shee were sweete, now foully doth shee
A mirrour good for all men that on her thinke.

After the death of this Rosamond, King Henry tooke priuily the daughter of Lewis King of France (that should haue beene married to his sonne Richard Earle of Poytow) for his Leman, and had practised for a diuorce betwixt him and Elianor his Queene: wherupon followed great discord betwixt the King of England and of France: but King Henry saying ouer into Ludouicus Viues.

into Normandy, the King of France and hee had talke together, and entred into amitie.

1178. Richard Lucy the Kings Iusticiar laid the foundation of the rounduall Church in the honour of Saint Thomas, in a place which is called Westwood, otherwise Leines, in the territorie of Rochester. rch. ation. n Liberti

This Richard Lucy builded the Castle of Angar in Essex, in the Diocesse of the Bishop of London. Anno reg. 24

The Cittie of Yorke was brent.

Kings ſisters and daughters put to Nunneries. This yere 1178. Ferry alias Fredericke the first Emperour of that name, after he had continued seauen yeres in wrathfull siege about Milaine, hee take the Cittie, slew and spoyled all sorts and sexe of people, not sparing any, sauing such silly Infants, as in simplicitie would sucke an Asse instead of a mulke, and would eate pulse instead of mulke. He vsed more cruelty and torments vnto the Milanoises then I can heere relate, besides the ruine of that glorious Cittie, and the cause why hee dealt so extreamely with them was, for that the Cittizens called him, not long before, to bee set vpon an Asse, with his face towards her taile, and holding her taile in his hand instead of a bridle, and in this fashion with as great shame and derision as they could, they sent him forth to warres. But when hee returned to the siege of Milaine he wanted neither friends nor followers nor fauourites, whose fingers pitched to be auenged of that proud Citty for her pride, contempt, and immodestly. At this destruction was present Henry Lyon, Duke of Bauarya, and Reighnold Archbishop of Collen who twelue yeres after seeing as they verily supposed the absolute destruction of that Citty, they transposed from thence the bodies of the three Kings which made their Pilgrimage to see Christ, and were directed by a Star as you may reade in the sacred Scriptures, and brought them with great reuerence to Collen. The bodies of these three Kings were first brought out of Persia into Constantinople, and from thence by a miraculous manner brought to Mylaine by Saint Eustorgius, and so from Mayland to Collen, where they now remaine, there were brought with him from Mylaine the bodies of Saint Felix, and Saint Nabor. Anno reg. 24 The bodies of the 3. Kings of Colen were shipped and are made from Mylaine to Colen. Or originall the City of Ilim.

The famous Cittie of Collen is so ancient, that it is beyond record and was of old time called Vbium of a people then called Vbyes, which inhabited round about it. And long time after that it was called Agrippina by Marcus Agrippa their gouernour. And so from that time it was possest and gouerned by the Romans vntill the time of Charlemaine the most famous French generall, who with wonderous valour wonne it, and draue out the Romans, and brought it vnder the French obedience, in the yeare of our redemption foure hundreth, and then he named it Collen: and fiue hundreth thirty and eight yeares after that, Otto the Archi-Duke of Saxonie, being then chosen Emperour and surnamed Otto the great, who raigned 30. and fiue yeres, hee won Collen from the French and reduced it vnto the Imperiall obedience, as it is at this day. Charlemaygne builded a stone bridge ouer the Reyne at Collen, but Bruno brother to this Otto, being Bishop of Collen beate downe this bridge, because no Enemies should come that way to the Cittie, reade Sebastian Munster.

On Christmas day at Dronhall, in the territory of Derlington, in the bishoprick of Duresme, the Earth lifted vp it selfe in the manner of an high Tower, and so remained from the spring of the day vnmoueable, vntill the euening, and then fell with so horrible a noyse, that it feared the inhabitants thereabout, and the Earth swallowed it vp, and made there a deepe pit, which is seene vntill this day. For a testimony thereof, Leyland saith, hee saw the pits there commonly called Hel-kettles. *An. reg. 25* 1179. Cron. Tiuens. John Leyland.

The tenth day of Aprill the Church of Saint Andrew in Rochester, with the whole towne was consumed with fire.

Richard de Lucy chiefe Iustice of England deceased in the Abbey of Leines, which hee had builded, and where he changed his habite, and was become a Monke. Richard Lucy chiefe Iustice dyed.

The nineteenth day of August at night, the Moone was Eclipsed, which was seene of King Henry and his company, as hee rode all night, to meete the King of France, comming into England, to visite the Tombe of Thomas Becket the Archbishop. The King of France came into England.

On the 21. day of August, Lewis King of France entred into England, which neither hee, nor any of his predecessors had euer done, and King Henry of England meeting him, as hee entred out of the Ship.

On the 23. of August, both the Kings came to Canterbury, where they were with due honour receiued of the Archbishop Richard, and other Bishops of England, the Conuent of Canterbury, and a multitude of Noble men. Lewis King of France offered vpon the Tombe, and to the shrine of Thomas Becket a rich Cup of gold, he gaue also that renowned precious stone, that was called the Regall of France (King Henry the eight put the same in a Ring, which hee wore on his thumbe) he gaue to the Monkes by his Charter one hundred measures or tuns of wine, to bee paid them yerely at Paris in France, hee continued all one night in watching and prayer at the Tombe, and in the morning required to bee made a brother there, and was admitted. Then King Henry shewed the said King Lewis all the treasure of his Realme, which hee and his predecessours had gathered together, but the French men refrained from taking of gifts, but taking leaue of the King, receiuing some things in token of amitie, returned to Douer, and so ouer into France. A precious stone called the Regall of France offered to S. Thomas Beckets Shrine.

Cadwallan a Prince of Males, being accused, was brought to appeare before the King, but clearing himselfe, as he went homeward vnder the Kings safe conduct, was slaine, which thing redounded greatly to the Kings dishonour, notwithstanding hee professed to be ignorant thereof. Cadwallan a Prince of Wales. *An. reg. 26*

The Trapoites or plotters in England were grieuously punished for corrupting the coyne, 1180.

the

the which beſides other vexations, were fette-red two and two together, and carried in carts to the Kings Court, there to receiue their iudge-ment.

Engelhoued. A new coyne was made in England, by com-mandement of King Henry the Father, it was made round, but not without great burden to the people: what feares at the Realme. He put all the coyners in England to great torment, for corrup-ting of the old money.

Ann.reg.27 1181. Geffrey the Kings baſtard ſonne, reſigned the Biſhoprick of Lincolne, and was made the Kings Chancellour.

Itinerarium, Cambriæ Gir. This yeare Giraldus Cambrenſis wrote his booke of the deſcription of Wales, wherein he noteth to haue happened in his time in the Pro-uince of Kemmeis, a young man (borne in thoſe parts) to bee ſo perſecuted with Toades as if all within that Countrey had come crauling toge-ther to vexe him, and when innumerable num-bers of them were killed by thoſe that kept him, and other of his friends and kinſmen, yet came they ſtill as if they had ſprung like Hydraes heads numberleſſe: at length when his friends were wearied with watching, they cauſed him in a Coffin to bee hoiſed vp into an high tree that was ſhyed of all the boughes, and made ſmoth: but there was hee not preſerued from his vene-mous enemies, which aſſaulted him, creeping vp into the tree, till they had eaten him to the bones that hee dyed, his name was Sciſſilus Elkerher (that is) long legge.

A man deuou-red by toades.

Geruaſius de rebus Anglic.

Ann.reg.28 1182. Barnewell with the Priorie, neere vnto Cam-bridge, was fired and brent.

King Henry at Waltham, in preſence of his Nobles of the Realme did liberally aſſigne to the ayde of the holy land 42000. markes of ſilver, and 500. markes of gold, which was worth in money 47332. pound, 6. ſhillings, 8. pence. This being done, hee went ouer into Normandy, at which time alſo Henry Duke of Saxony, the Kings ſonne in law, was by the Emperour baniſ-hed, and came into Normandy to the King, and brought with him the Dutcheſſe, and his two ſonnes Henry and Otho, and the King receiuing them, did liberally find them all things neceſſary for their maintenance. King Henry remaining in Normandy, made his Teſtament, giuing a-mongſt other Legacies, much to houſes of Reli-gion. Alſo to the marriage of poore maides of England, he gaue 300. marks. To the marri-age of poore maides in Normandy, 100. marks, and to the like in Angeou, 100. marks.

Ann.reg.29 1183. King Henry the Father kept his Chriſtmas at Caine in Normandy, with his three ſons, King Henry the younger, Richard Earle of Poytow, and Geffrey Earle of Britaine: there was alſo Henry Duke of Saxonie, with his wife and their children, the Archbiſhops of Canterbury and Colaine, with other Biſhops, Earles and Ba-rons in great number. Here would King Hen-ry the Father, that his ſonne Henry the young K. ſhould haue receiued homage of his brethren, Richard Earle of Poytow, and Geffrey Earle of Britaine, whereunto the Earle of Britaine did not ſtay to grant, but the Earle of Poytow vt-terly refuſed to doe it, ſaying, it was not conue-nient ſo long as their Father liued, to acknow-ledge any ſuperiority to his brother: for as the Fathers inheritance was due to the eldeſt ſonne ſo he had to claime thoſe lands which belonged to his Mother. This deniall much offended his bro-ther the young King, whereupon Richard de-parted from the Court in great diſpleaſure, and comming into Poytow, he began to fortifie his Caſtles, that he might be in a readineſſe to ſtand at defence for his ſafeguard, if his father or bre-thren ſhould come to purſue him. But not long after, King Henry the ſonne, by counſell of his father followed him, being alſo incouraged there-unto by the earles and Barons of Poytow, which for the ſharpe and cruell gouernment of Earle Richard hated him. And ſhortly after commeth their brother Geffrey with a great army in ayde of his brother the young King, in ſo much that Earle Richard not knowing how to ſhift the preſent danger, ſent to his father for ayde. Who being ſory to ſee ſuch vnnaturall dealing amongſt his ſonnes, gathered an army, and came for-ward, and did ſo much, that all the three ſonnes came to Angeres, and there ſware to bee obedi-ent to their Fathers will. Whereupon a day was appointed them to meete at Myrable. In the meane while, King Henry the Sonne obtai-ned licence of his Father to goe into Limoges, vnder pretence that he might there labour to re-duce both his brother Geffrey, and the Barons of Guyen to quietneſſe, but all was diſſembling, for that when their Father followed with an ar-my, and came to Limoges inſtead of receiuing him with honour, they ſhot at him, ſo that they peirced through his vppermoſt armour, &c. At length, when K. Henry the younger, and his bro-ther Geffrey had done againſt their Father what they could, and yet could not obtaine their purpoſe for that their power was farre vncomparable to their wils, King Henry the younger, through in-dignation and diſpleaſure, fell into a greeuous ſickneſſe, in a village called Martell, not farre from Limoges, where his Father lay at ſiege. At the firſt he was taken with an extreame Feau-er, and after followed a flure, where through perceiuing himſelfe in danger of death, hee ſent to his Father, confeſſing his treſpaſſe, requiring him of forgiueneſſe, and alſo to come to him, but the Father fearing to commit himſelfe into the hands of ſuch vngracious perſons, as were about his ſonne refuſed to come at him, ſending him his ring in token of his bleſſing, and as it were a pledge or witneſſe, to ſignifie that he had forgiuen him. The yong King receiuing it with great humilitie kiſſed it, and ſo ended his life, without iſſue. Thus was the vnobedient childe cut off, as it had beene a Weauers thred, at the age of twenty eight yeares, his bodie being wound in thoſe linnen clothes, that at his Coro-nation were imbawed with holy Oriſme, he was royally buryed at Roane, in the Cathedrall Church

King Henry the ſonne dy-ing ſent the ring to his father.

King Henry returned into England, and ſent many men of warre into Wales, for the Welſhmen imboldened by the Kings ab-ſence, had broken forth and ſlaine many Engliſh-men.

This

Glaſtenbury. The Abbey of Glaſtenbury was brent, with the whole Towne and Church of S. Iulian.

Ann.reg.31 1185. Heraclius Patriarch of Ieruſalem came to King Henry, deſiring him of ayde againſt the Turkes, but the King becauſe of the cruelty of his ſonnes, was counſelled not to leaue his Do-minions in hazard, and to goe ſo farre off: where-fore he pronoſed the Patriarke 50000. markes of ſilver.

Templum Domi. This Patriarke dedicated the Church of the new Temple, then firſt builded, in the Weſt part of London, by the Knights Templars in England, he alſo dedicated the Priory of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem by Smithfield.

Iohn the Kings Sonne Lord of Ireland. King Henry ſent his ſonne Iohn into Ireland,

Orta magna, viro maior, ſed maxima parte,
Hic iacet Henrici filia, ſponſa, parens.

The daughter, ſpouſe, and Parent eke, of *Henry* lyeth here,
Great of parentage, higher by marriage, moſt high by childbirth deere.

Ann.reg.32 1186. King Henry kept his Chriſtmas at Dancront in Normandie, and ſhortly after came to a com-munication with the King of France, at the which time he take a ſolemne oath, that hee would deliuer the Ladie Alice the King of France his Siſter (whom he had yet in his cu-ſtody) vnto his ſonne Richard Earle of Poytow in marriage.

Geffrey Earle of Britaine dyed. G. ff. e. Earle of Britaine, the Kings ſonne of England, dyed at Paris, about the beginning of Auguſt, and was there buried. He left iſſue two daughters which he had by Conſtance (daughter to Conan Earle of Britain) who alſo at the time of his death was great with child, and after brought forth a ſon named Arthur.

Mat. Paris. Houeden Trenor. A great Earthquake threw downe many buil-dings, amongſt the which the Cathedrall Church of Lincolne was rent in peices the 25. of Aprill.

Chicheſter burnt. The Cathedrall Church of Chicheſter, and all the whole Citie was brent the 20. of October: King Henry gaue Conſtance Counteſſe of Bry-taine, mother of Arthur, to Ranulph Earle of Cheſter to be his wife.

Ann.reg.33 1187. Neare vnto Oſord in Suffolke, certaine fi-ſhers of the Sea tooke in their Nets a Fiſh ha-uing the ſhape of man in all points, which Fiſh was kept by Bartlemew de Glaunuile, Cuſtos of the Caſtle of Oſord, in the ſame Caſtle, by the ſpace of fiue moneths and more for a wonder: he ſpake not a word. All manner of meates hee did eate, but moſt gredily raw fiſh, after he had cruſhed out all the moyſture. Oftentimes he was brought to the Church where he ſhewed no tokens of adoration. At length when he was not well looked to, he ſtole away to the Sea, and neuer af-ter appeared.

Saladine chiefe Prince of the Saracens won a great battell againſt the Chriſtians, and tooke Guido King of Ieruſalem with the Croſſe that Chriſt died on, and all the Chriſtians were either ſlaine or taken. There eſcaped among other The-odoricus Agaſtas of the knights Templar, not-withſtanding 230. of his brethren were beheaded that had beene taken Priſoners: beſides 40. that were ſlaine. The City of Ieruſalem was taken by compoſition euery man to giue ten beſants, e-uery woman v. euery child j. All the reſt to the number of 14000. men and women, became ſub-iect to perpetuall bondage.

Theodoricus Agaſtas of the knights Templar, eſcaped.

Ypodigma.

The Empreſſe deceaſed. Roſe of Mar. ſayth the deceaſed at Roane, in Anno 1167. and was buried in the Monaſterey of Beccoin, Normandy.

Ann.reg.34 1188. The Kings of England and of France met betwixt Giſors and Treye, where they tooke on them the Croſſe, and diuers other with them. The King of England landing at Wincheſter, haſted towards Northampton, where at Geding-ton, about 8. or ten miles from Northampton, he held a Parliament about the voyage into the ho-ly Land, where many articles concerning that voyage were concluded, and the whole Realme troubled with paying of Tithes toward the voy-age. The Chriſtians were appointed to pay a-boue threeſcore and ten thouſand pound, and the Iewes threeſcore thouſand, without any delay: but by meanes of a diſcord that fell betwixt the two Kings, that voyage was ſtayed.

Parliament at Gedington. Richard South well. Rog. Houeden Gual. Couen.

Beuerley burnt. The Towne of Beuerley, with the Church of S. Iohn there was brent, the 20. of September.

Ann.reg.35 Geruaſius. 1189. The Kings of England and of France, with Richard Earle of Poytow, the Legate, and the Archbiſhops of Canterbury, Roane, Rheines, and Burges, met at Nants the ninth day of June. There Philip the French King required, that his Siſter which had beene kept in England two and twenty yeares, might bee reſtored vn-to Earle Richard as his Wife, and Earle Ri-chard deſired the ſame, but King Henry deny-ed this requeſt, and ſo they departed aſunder, and got them to Armour. The French King, and Earle Richard purſued the King of Eng-land ſo hard, that hee was forced to yeeld to all the requeſts, as well of the French King, as of his ſonne Richard. This was done at Giſors, and ſo departing came to Agai. When all mat-ters were accorded as aforeſaid, betweene the two Kings of England and of France, the King of England required of the King of France to haue all their names deliuered him in writ-ting, which had promiſed to take part againſt him, and were ioyned as confederates with the King of France and Earle Richard, which re-queſt was granted; and when the Rowle was

Lodouicus Viues. Death of King Henry the II. Richard Carr.

presented vnto him, he found his sonne Iohn the first person that was named in the register, whereat he was so sore troubled, and displeased in his minde, that comming to Chinon he fell into such grefes of horror, that he cursed euen the very day in which hee was borne: and gaue his sonnes Godsweele and his, the which he would neuer reuoke, although hee was admonished to doe it by many Bishops and religious persons. Whereupon being brought to such extremity as he haue heard, he was taken with a grieuous sickenesse, which bringing him to vtter desperation of returning to health, hee finally departed this life on the 6. day of July, in the yeare 1189. and the 61. of his age, when he had raigned 34. yeares, 7. moneths, lacking 18. dayes, and was buried at Fontcuerard in a Sonaflerie of Nuns, which he had founded. He had also founded the Priories of Stanley, of S. Martin in Dower, and Bullingwarke, he made of an old Colledge of secular Chanons, an Abbey of regular Chanons at Waltham in Essex. He builded many Castles in England, and hee began the stone bridge ouer the River of Thames at London. He left in his treasury more then a hundred thousand marker.

By Henry and Richard his wife, and they both dyed.

Monasteries, founded by K. Henry.

Time of King Henry.

He had issue by Elianor his wife, William that dyed young, Henry that was crowned King and died before his Father, Richard that raigned next after him, Geffrey Duke of Britaine, that dyed before him (but left issue Arthur and Elianor) & Iohn that after the death of his brother Richard, toke on him the kingdome, disherriting his nephewes Arthur and Elianor the true heirs: daughters he had Matild, married to the Duke of Saxony, Helene Queene of Castile, and Ioane Queene of Sycile, and after that, to Reginald Count of Tolonsey.

This King when he was carried forth to be buried, was first apparelled in his Princely Robes, hauing his Crowne on his head, Gloues on his hands, and Shoes on his feete, wrought with gold spurres on his heeles, a ring of Gold on his finger, a Sceptre in his hand, a Sword by his side, and so was layde vncouered, hauing a pleasant countenance; which when it was told to his sonne Richard, he came with all speed to see him, and as soone as he came neere him, the blood gushed out of the nose of the dead corpes in great plenty, euen as if the spirit of the dead King had disdained, and abhorred the presence of him, who was thought to be the chiefe cause of his death, which thing caused the said Richard to weepe bitterly, and he caused his fathers body to be honourably buried at Fontcuerard as is aforesaid.

Rog. Wed.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* RICHARD *Cuer de Lion.*

An. Reg. 1.

RICHARD the first borne at Oxford, for his valiantnesse was named Cuer de Lion, or with the Lions heart, the third sonne of Henry the second, began his raigne the 6. day of July, in the yeare of our Lord, 1189. at the age of 35. yeares.

He was big of stature, with a merry countenance. To his souldiers fauourable, bountifull to his friends: to strangers a grieuous enemy: hard to be pleased: desirous of warre: abhorring idlenesse.

Elianor the old Queene, mother to Duke Richard, who at the commandement of her husband had beene long kept in prison, was set at liberty. And then the with the Lords of the Realme abode the Kings comming at Winchester, where Geffrey Ridle the pyous Bishop of Elyfell sicke, and departed this life intestate, leauing in his Coffers great treasure, to wit, 3000. marks of siluer, and 200. markes in gold, which was bestowed on the new Kings Coronation, for the Bishops rente.

Elianor the old Queene, mother to Duke Richard, who at the commandement of her husband had beene long kept in prison, was set at liberty.

Duke Richard hauing received Adelisia, or Alice his wife, (vpon suspition that he had beene dishonested whiles he was in his fathers custode, sent her home with her Dowrie: hauing concluded a marriage with Ladie Berengaria, daughter to Gernas King of Nauarre, he returned into England, and landed at Southampton the twelfth of August, and on the fourteenth was received into Winchester, with him also came his brother John, vnto whom he gaue the Earledomes of Horton, of Cornewall, Dorset Sommerset, Nottingham, Darby and Lancaster, with the Castles of Marlebozow and Ludgarshall, with the Forrest, and the appurtenances, the honors of Wallingford, Tichill, and Eye, to the value of foure thousand markes by yere. He also gaue him in marriage with Isabell his second wife, daughter to Robert Earle of Gloucester, the Earledome of Glocester, although Baldwine Archbishop of Canterbury forbad the marriage, because they were Cousins in the third degree of consanguinitie. To Robert Earle of Leicester, he restored all his lands, which had beene taken from him. He came to London, and on the third of September, was crowned at Westminster, by the hands of Baldwine Archbishop of Canterbury.

Iohn Earle of Morton.

Iohn Maior, Gentlewos in England.

Yde Tilli. Bishop of Ely diceaseth.

He commanded that no Iewes nor women should be at his Coronation, for feare of enchantments which were wont to be practised: for breaking of which commandement, many Iewes were slaine the same day. For the Iewes dwelling about the Realme, being there assembled, meaning to honour the same Coronation with their presence, and to present to the King some honorable gifte one of them was striken by a Christian, who alleadged the Kings commandement to keepe them backe, which some of the vnruly people perceiuing, supposing it had beene the Kings commandement, fell vpon the Iewes with staues, bats and stones, beate them to their houses, and after assailing their houses, set them on fire, and burnt them in their houses, or slew them at their comming out.

The Archbishoppe of Canterburie being sore offended with Earle Ioon the Kings brother, for taking to wife Isabel Countesse of Glocester his cousin in the third degree, wrote a threatning letter to the same Ioon, commanding him not to touch the Virgin, and to appeare at a peremptorie day before him to answer that matter. The 15. of December at Ielpwell, in presence of the King, Archbishop and Prelates were elected Geffrey d. Elect to the sea of Winchester, Richard Archdeacon of Ely, the Kings Treasurer, to the sea of London, Hubert Walter to Salisbury, William Longchampe, the Kings Chancellour to Ely, and Geffrey the Kings bastard brother, to the sea of Yorke.

Roger Hound.

K. Richard gaue, or rather sold, the Castles of Berwike and Roxeburgh to the Scottish K. for the summe of 15. marks sterling: he also sold to Hugo de Puteaco, B. of Durham, his owne Prouince for a great peece of mony, and created him Earle of the same, and then said in game, I am a wonderous craftesman, I haue made a new Earle of an old Bishop. He sold the Priory of Couentrie, to Hugh Bishop of Chester, for 10. C. marks, which Hugh with a power of armed men, inuaded the Priory, chased the Priors away, brat the Bonkes, lamed some, cast some into Prison, and spoiling the other, drone them away, brake the hutches of the Church, burnt the Charters and priuileges.

The King also seamed to haue lost his signet, and made a new, and then caused to be proclaimed that whosoeuer would safely enioy those things which before time they had enrolled, should come to the new Scale, whereby it came to passe, that many which could not finde him in England, went ouer the Sea, to fine with him at his pleasure.

In this time were many Robbers, and Outlawes, among the which, Robert Hood and little Iohn, renowned Theeues, continued in woods, dispoyling and robbing the goods of the rich. They killed none but such as would inuade them or by resistance for their own defence.

The saide Robert intertained an hundred tall men, and good archers with such spoiles and thefts as he got, vpon whom foure hundred (were they neuer so strong,) durst not giue the onset. Hee suffered no woman to be oppressed, violated or otherwise molested: poore mens goods he spared, abundantlie relieuing them with that, which by theefte he got from Abbeys and the houses of rich Carles: whom Maior blameth for his rapine and theft but of all theeues he affirmeth him to be the Prince: and the most gentle Theefe.

King Richard betoke the guiding of this land to William Longchamp Bishop of Ely, Chancellor of England, and the foure and twentieth day of February he toke his scrip and staffe at Canterbury, and the 6. of March toke the Sea at Douer, and transported ouer.

Gualter Chancellour of England. William Bishop of Ely. K. Rich. toke his voiage ouer to Ierusalem.

The second of July, the two Kings of England and of France, met at Dowers, and from thence set forward on their iourney towards Ierusalem.

The Towne of Sandwich in Kent, with the Minnery was consumed with fire.

Ypodigma Genesium.

The Iewes in the Townes of Norwich, Saint Edmundsbury, Lincolne, Stamford faire, and Lame, were robbed and spoyled. And at Yorke to the number of 500. besides women and children entred a Tower of the Castle, which the people assailing, the Iewes proffered money to be in safety of their liues, but the Christians would not take it: whereupon their men of law said to them, it is better for vs to die for our law, then to fall into the hands of our enemies: and they all agreeing to that counsell cut the throates of their wiues and children, and cast them ouer the walles on the Christians heads: the residue they locked vp in the Kings lodging, and burnt both the house and themselues.

Iewes slee themselues.

Geffrey Archbishop of Yorke, returning from Rome, and now consecrated, arriued at Douer with his Traine, whom Mathew de Clere by the commandement of the Kings Chancellour, entring with violence into the Church of Saint Martins, drew from the Altar, and so carried him to prison. Baldwine Archbishop of Canterbury deceased at the siege of Acres, and was there buried.

Archbishop of Yorke growne to displeasure. Mat. Paris. Rad. Cogshal.

William Bishop of Ely, builded the vtter wall about the Tower of London, and caused a deepe ditch to be made about the same, thinking he could haue caused the River of Thames to goe round about it, but hee beskowed great cost in vaine.

Ann. reg. 2. W. Dunthorn. A stickmaker about the reuerence of London.

King Richard subdued the Ile of Cyprus, and then ioyning his power with Philip the French Kings in Asia, conquered Acon, where there grew betweene the two Kings a grieuous displeasure: for which cause Philip shortly departed thence, and comming into France inuaded the Country of Normandy.

Rich South-Well. Mathew Paris Rog. Houeden. Gaffrid. Vinsal.

Iohn brother to King Richard, toke on him the Kingdome of England in his brothers absence. He raised powers of men, and with small adoe wonne the Castles of Nottingham and Tickhill.

Arbor successionis. Iohn the kings younger brother vsurped the kingdome.

Robert Earle of Leicester dyed in his iourney to Ierusalem.

K. Richard restored to the Christians the City of Ioppa, and in many battels put the Turkes to great sorrow.

Hugh Bishop of Lincolne, came to the Abbey of Fiuniues called Godstow, betweene Oxford and Woodstocke, and when hee had entred the Church to pray, he saw a tumbe in the middle of the quire, covered with a pall of silke, and set about with lights of waxe. And demanding whose Tombe it was, he was answered, that it

Honorable bishop reuiled by hypocrites to abuntious women.

was the Dombe of Rosamond, that was some-time Leeman to Henry the second of that name, King of England, who for the love of her, had done much good to that Church. Then quoth the Bishop, take out of this place the Harlot and burye her without the Church, least Christian Religion should grow in contempt, and to the end that thorough example of her, other women being made afraid, may beware, and keepe themselues from unlawfull and adulterous company with men.

Ann. reg. 3.

William Bishop of Ely, did commonly ride with 500. horses, and greeued Abbeyes by meanes of his lodging with them: he withstood Iohn the Kings brother, who said, he will not if his brother *Richard* were alive or not. To whom the Bishop answered, if King *Richard* be yet liuing, it were hatefull to take from him the Crowne. If he be dead, Arthur the elder brothers sonne, must enioy the same.

John the kings brother rebelled.

1192 Extundald. Hist. Vinc. Gianga Cant. Rog. Houeden Archbishop puts to his seales. Gerua. Doro.

King Richard exchanged Cyprus, with Guy of Lesingham, for the kingdome of Hierusalem: wherefore the King of England a long time after was called King of Hierusalem.

The bishop of Ely Legate to the Pope, Chancellour of England, and Gouernour of the Realme, was forced to take the Tower of London for his refuge, wherein Earle Iohn besieged him, at length, the Bishop getting licence to depart, went to Douer, but he was forced to sweare that hee would not depart the Realme: yet beeing in a marnalous disquietnesse of mind, hee put off his mans apparell, and put on womans, meaning so to escape, whilest hee goeth vp and downe on the shore, bearing a Web of cloth on his arme as though hee would sell it, still waiting for a Ship, a sort of women pulled off his kercheife, and threw him to the ground and after beate him, and drew him along the sands, whereupon great cry being made, the Mariners ran, and with much a doe, got him from among them, and kept him streightly till hee had obtained licence to depart the Realme.

Ann. reg. 4.

Then the Archbishop of Roane, with the consent of Earle Iohn, take vpon him the rule of the land, as Viceroy and Loue.

History of Crux Roisia, or Roiston.

A certaine Ladie named *Roisia*, daughter to Paine Peuerell, or Countesse of Norfolke (as she might be both) hauing in the Raigne of King Stephen, raised a stone Crosse in the Kings high way, on the North limits, by the which Hartfordshire ioyneth on Cambridgeshire, which Crosse was then called Crux Roisiæ of *Roisia*. Iohn Eustachius de Marke Knight, Lord of Mucelles, about this time founded thereby a Priory in honour of GOD and Saint Thomas, for Chanons Regular. After which time, there were many houses built, by meanes whereof the Towne began to rise, and by little and little to encrease, so that in place of Crux Roisiæ it is called the Towne of Roisia, or Roistowne. Vnto the which King *Richard* granted a Faire, and a Market, with other Liberties. This Priory was since renewed, and augmented by Radulph de *Roncelle*, and other: so that at the suppression, the same was valued at 80. pounds, sixteene shillings. There was an Hospitall of S. Iohn, & S. James Apostles, also suppressed and valued but at 5. li. 6. s. 10. pence.

King Richard hauing knowledge that Philip of France, inuaded Normandie, and that Iohn his brother had made himselfe King of England, made peace with the Saladine for three yeares, and with a small company returning homeward, was taken prisoner by Leopold Duke of Austria, who brought him to Henry the Emperor, & there kept him in prison, a yeare and fiue moneths. He was enuied for his valiancy, in that hee had shewed more proofe of his prowesse, then all the other had.

1193. *Ann. regni Richardi primi.*

Wolfangus Lazius in his booke de Romano Wolfan. Laz. Imperio, affirmeth that Leopold of Austria, when he had taken King Richard, for some iniury done to the house of Austria, he compelled him to build the walles about Vienna, the chiefest Citie of Austria, the which walles within our memory defended all Germany from the inuasion of the Turke. King Richard in Austria, & the Duke of Austria in England.

The rumour being spread that King Richard was taken as ye haue heard, forthwith the French King and Earle Iohn made a great conspiracy together, meaning to take the Kingdome of England, hereupon a great number of seruings were assembled at Wittsand, ready to come ouer, but their Messengers being taken, their treason was bewrayed. Earle Iohn rebelleth against Richard.

Elianor the old Quæne caused the Seacoasts to be watched ouer against Flanders, but notwithstanding Earle Iohn came secretly into England to raise the Welshmen and Scots, but the King of Scots would not ayde him. The Welshmen in the parts about Kingstone and Windsore tooke prayes abroad.

The French King entred Normandie, found small resistance, wan diuers Townes, Gisors was deliuered to him, then he hasted towards Roane, and besieged it, but through the great industrie of Robert Earle of Leicester, he profited little there, and so returned into France. Earle Iohn perceiuing his treason was discouered, fortified his Castles, and passed ouer into France, and ioyned with the French King.

King Richard sent for his Mother and the Archbyshop of Roane to come vnto him to Almain, being now in great hope to be deliuered, and in the meane time the Archbyshop of Canterbury was made Regent of England.

Ambassadors were sent from Philip King of France, and the like from Earle Iohn to the Emperour, offering great summes, vpon condition that King Richard might remaine still in Prison, vntill the Feast of S. Michael next comming, or else to deliuer him into their hands. The Emperour shewed these letters vnto King Richard, which draue him into great dispaire of deliuerance.

The Kings friends intreating for his deliuerance, his ransome was set at 100000. pound, to wit, to the Emperour 10000. marks, to the Empresse 30000. marks: and to the Duke of Austrich 20000. marks: whereupon commandement was directed from the Kings Iustices, that all Bishops, Prelates, Earles, Barons, The Kings ransome. Gerua. Doro. Rad. Cogs.

rons, Abbots, and Priors, should bring in the fourth part of their reuenewes towards the kings ransome, and besides this, the Clergie brought in their golden and siluer Chalices, and sacred their shines; all which was coyned into money.

This imprisonment of King Richard was procured by Sauaricus Bysshop of Bathe, and Glastenbury, to the intent to haue Glastenbury Abbey, to be vnited to the Seate of this Bysshoprike, for confirmation whereof, I thought good to set downe the beginning of the Certificate of Henry the third, to the Pope in this sort.

Significauit Sanctitati nostræ Henricus Dei gratia, Rex Angliæ, quod cum Filius memoriæ (regis Richardo auunculo suo in carcere in Alemania detento) sc. quondam Bathonius Episc. per ipsum cuius carcere Dominus Rex tenebatur, Abbathiam Glaston. &c.

The Order of the Cisterncies did giue their wooll for one yeare, all the money gathered for the Kings Ransome, to remaine in the custodie of Hubert Archbyshop of Canterbury, Richard Bishop of London, William Earle of Arundell, Hameline Earle of Warren, and the Mayor of London. Matthew Paris Rog. Houeden

The King was restored to liberty, the most part of his ransome being paid, and pledges left for the residue. In the meane time letters were intercepted of Earle Iohn which he had sent into England touching treason, one Adam of S. Edmond Clearke, being sent by Earle Iohn, to prouide that his Castle might be fortified against King Richard, came to London, and dined with Hubert Archbyshop of Canterbury, where hee bragged of Earle Iohns prosperitie, and familiaritie with the French King, for which being suspected, he was after dinner apprehended by the Mayor of London, who take from him his letters, and deliuered them to the Archbishop of Canterburie, who on the next morrow called a Councell of the Earles and Barons, and shewed them the letters, whereupon they all consented that Earle Iohn should be dispossessed of all his land in England, and that his Castles should be besieged. The same day the same Archbyshop and Bishops excommunicated Earle Iohn and all his fauourers, which troubled the Peace of the Kingdome. And forthwith the Archbishop besieged the Castle of Marleborow, which belonged to Earle Iohn, and take it. After this he besieged Nottingham Castle. Roged. Cano

The King taking ship at Antwerp, landed at Sandwich on the 12. of March, shortly after hee besieged the Castle of Nottingham, and won it, and after that the Castle of Tickehill, and then rode to Winchester, where hee was againe solemnly crowned on the viii. of Aprill. After this he called into his hands, all such things as hee had eyther giuen or sold by Patents or otherwise, by which meanes hee got a great summe of money. 1194. Godw. Vinc. Gerua. Doro. King Richard the second time crowned. *Ann. reg. 6.*

King Richard hearing that the K. of France had besieged Vernale, hee take the Seales together with his Mother Quene Elianor, on the tenth of May, and transported ouer into Normandie, and arriued at Harfleu with 100. ships fraught with men, horse, armour, &c. The King of France hearing hereof, plucked vp his Tents, left the siege, and departed. King Richard herewith entring the French Dominions, sent three bands of Soudiers toward Vale Ruell, and went himselfe vnto Lochis, and besieged the Castle and wonne it: about the same time Robert Earle of Leicester hauing forth of Roane in hope to worke somewhat; vnaduisedly in the of Leicester re- lands of Hugh Gourney, hee fell within danger ceiued. of his enemies, who take him prisoner with other of his company. King Richard wonne the strong Castle of Mayleborge by surrender, hee wonne by force the Cittie of Engolisme, and other holds: at length a Truce was taken for a time.

1195

King Richard being in Normandy, kept his Christmas at Roane. Whilest both the King of England and France were bent to try their matter, by dint of sword, there came Messengers to each of them from the Pope, exhorting them to Peace, but they preuailed not, for as soone as the Truce was ended, they got them to the field, King Richard drawing toward Issedune, a Towne in the confines of Buric, from whence he went to Barien, and to the Castle there, then went hee to a Towne called Nouencourt, this he besieged and it was yeelded.

In the meane time the King of France, besieged Albemarle, whereupon King Richard came to raise the siege, and there was a sharpe fight, but the Englishmen weary with trauaile of their journey, and being rashly entred into the battell, were not able to endure the Frenchmens violence, and so not without great losse, were constrained to retyre.

King Richard sent Messengers to the Pope, complayning vpon the Duke of Austrich, for misusing of him and his, as they came by distresse of weather through his Countrey: whereupon the Pope excommunicated the Duke, and enioyned him to release the Couenants that he constrained the King to make, and to send home the pledges: but the Duke refused this order, contemning the Popes authoritie; who shortly after hauing broken his leg, and in extreame anguith ended his life, and was kept vnburied till his sonne had released the English pledges which lay in hostage for the money behind of King Richards ransome, and further swore to stand to the iudgment of the Church for that offence of his Father.

Thus were the pledges released, and the residue of the money behind released, which thing to King Richard was both pleasant and profitable, for taking occasion thereof to amend his former life, into a better order, hee put away his Concubines, and toke him to his wife, whom of long time he had not knowne. Moreouer the Emperour gaue to the Cistiaux Monkes 3000. marks of siluer, parcell of King Richards ransome, to make siluer Censers in euery Church of that order, but the Abbots refused the gift, being a portion of so vngodly and wrongfull gaine: at which thing King Richard greatly marualled at the first, but after commended the Abbots in their doings, chiefely for shewing that

they were Lord of the accustomed greedinesse, that men vsed to haue bene in them.

Hugh Bishop of Lincolne gaue to the King a thousand markes for his mantle of Sables, which his predecessors were wont yearely to haue giuen them by the King. *An. reg. 7.*

Robert Earle of Leicester, offered to the King of France for his ransome, a thousand marks sterling, and to quit claime to him and his heires for euer, the right which he had to the Castle of Pasley, with the appurtenances, but for y they were still continued, there was no answer giuen. *Hee offereth money.*

King Richard hauing refreshed his Souldiers, went to Miligio, and by assault wonne it, at the first brunt, and made it euell with the ground. After this, there was a motion made for Peace betweene the two Kings, being now wearied with long Warres. Whereof when Earle Iohn was aduertised, he began to doubt, lest by agreement made, he might be betrayed by the King of France, vpon couenants passing betweene them, and therefore determined to commit his whole safety to his naturall brother: whereupon coming to King Richard, he beseought him of pardon for his offences, and though he had not dealt brotherly towards him, yet that he would brotherly forgiue him his rebellious trespas, &c. Vpon whose submission, and by the intreating of Elinor his mother, and other, in the end, King Richard did not onely pardon him his life, but vpon his oath, restored him to the Earledomes of Poictaigne in Normandy, and Glocester in England, with the honour of Eye, the Castles except, and in recompence of his other Earledomes, his brother gaue him yearely 8000. pounds of Anjow money. *Rebellion of Earle Iohn.*

King Richard pardoned Hugh Nouent Bishop of Conentry, and restored him to his Bishoppricke for the summe of 5000. marks of siluer: but Robert Nouant his brother, died in the Kings prison at Doner.

William Fitz Osbert a Citizen of London, a man of degree, euill fauoured of shape, but yet very eloquent, moued the common people to seeke libertie and freedome, and not to be subiect to the rich and mighty, by which meanes he drew to him many great companies, and with all his power defended the poore mens cause against the rich, 52000 Londoners hee allured to him, to bee at his deuotion and commandement. *W. Fitzosbert his beard. Rog. Houeden. W. Parvus. Iohn Terror. Genus. Dorobernensis. Cant. Record. Gual. Coven.*

The King being warned of this tumult, commanded him to cease from those attempts, but the people still followed him, as they before had done: he made to them Orations, taking for his Theame this sentence, *Haurietis aquas in gaudio de fontibus saluatoris*, which is to say, Yee shall draw in ioy waters out of the welles of your Sauiour. And to this he added, I am (said he) the Sauiour of poore men, yee be poore, and haue a long time long the hard hands of rich men. Now draw yee wholsome water saith of my welles, and that with ioy, for the time of your visitation is come. This William was commanded to appeare before the Kings Councell to answer for himselfe in such causes as should be layd against him, where he appeared, but with such a multitude of people, that the Lords were afraid, and remitted him with pleasant words for the time, appointing some priuily when he was alone to apprehend him. Hee take the Steeple of Bow Church in Cheape, and fortified it with munition and victuals. The Archbyshop of Canterbury then being at London, with other Iustices sent to him, and willed him to come forth of the Church and he should haue his life saued: but he refused to come forth, wherefore the Archbishop talking with the Citizens of London called together, a great number of armed men least any stirre should be made. *1196.*

This yeare 1196. as the French Chronicles affirme, at Beauvoysin betweene Campeigne and Clermont there hapned great Thunder, haile and Tempest, which was so violent, that it threw downe trees and houses, and that Rauens with fire-brands were seene flying in the ayre, and to set houses on fire, and amongst other was burned our Lady Church of Chartres, and the Castle of Chaumont. *Strange tempests. Birds flying by fire.*

The Saturday therefore being the Passion Sunday euen, the Steeple and Church of Bow were assaulted, and William with his complices taken, but not without bloudshed, for he was forced by fire and smoake to forsake the Church: he was brought to the Archbishop in the Tower, where he was by the Iudges condemned, and by the heeles drawne from thence to a place called the Elmes, and there hanged with nine of his fellowes. Where because his fauourers came not to deliuer him, hee forsooke Maries Sonne (as he termed him) and called the diuell to helpe and deliuer him. *Ralph Higden.*

This counterfeit friend to the poore, who named himselfe to be the Sauiour, perswading them against the rich, was a man of an euill life, a murderer, who slew a man with his owne hands: a fornicator, who polluted Bow Church with his Concubine: and amongst other his detestable facts, one that had falsely accused his elder brother of treason, which elder brother had in his youth brought him vp in learning, and done many things for his preferment. Yet after the death of this wicked malefactor, the simple people honoured him as a Martyr, insomuch that they stole away the Gibbet whereon he was hanged, and pared away the earth, that was bedded with his bloud, and kept the same as holy reliques to heale sicknesse. *If folke accounted of him other by other meanes and vses his gods: God mend all. by fond flatterers false apostles.*

King Richard granted licence vnto Philip his Chaplaine late made Bysshop of Durham, to coyne money in his City of Durham, which liberty none of his predecessors had enjoyed of long time before. Robert Earle of Leicester gaue Philip King of France two thousand markes of siluer, and the quite claime of his Castle of Pasley, for his liberty, and to be cleane released. *An. reg. 8. Rog. Houeden.*

Philip King of France, besieged Albemarle, and at length won it, and rased it downe to the ground, and King Richard gaue vnto him three thousand markes of siluer, for the ransome of his men of armes, and other taken in that fortresse. After this the King of France won Mountfort, & Earle Iohn tooke the Castle of Gamages *Rog. Houed. Gamages Castle.*

About

About the same time King Richard gaue vnto his nepcow Otho, the Earledome of Poyctow. Also, as the countelle of Britaine, the mother of Duke Arthur came into Normandy, to haue spoken with King Richard, Reinolph earle of Chester, her husband meeting her at Pontawlon, tooke her as prisoner, and shut her vp within his Castle of Saint Iames de Beuineman and when her sonne Arthur could not find meanes to deliuer her out of captiuitie, he ioyned with the French King, and made a great hauocke in the lands of his vncle King Richard. Whereupon the King gathered a mightie power, and inuaded Britaine, cruelly wasting that Countrey,

This yeare died William Earle of Salisbury the sonne of Earle Patrike, whose daughter and heire, King Richard gaue in marriage together with the Earledom of Salisbury vnto his base brother surnamed William Longespe. *Longespe borne to be the Earle.*

The Welshmen brake forth and did much hurt by spoyling of the Marches. The Archbishop of Canterbury calling together an army hasted hither, besieged the Castle of Polie, and take it, and chased the enemies, established peace, and returned. *1197.*

Rise ap Griffeth the Welch King departed this life: after whose departure there fell discord betweene his Sonnes for the succession, till Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury went to the marches of that Countrey, and made an agreement betwixt them.

King Richard and the Earle of Flanders confedered together. The French King entring vnwarily into Flanders, was intercepted and taken by the Earle of Flanders, but giuing pledges vpon Couenant to make peace, he was suffered to depart. *An. reg. 9.*

The eight day of September they met at Lisle, where by mediation of the Archbishop of Canterbury, they take a truce. The Archbishop of Roan returned from Rome, where he had complained on King Richard, for taking from him a plot of ground, whereon he builded a strong Castle, but at the request of the Archbishop of Canterbury, the King gaue him in recompence, the towne of Dieppe.

The Welshmen on the Marches tooke bootes and did much hurt, but Hubert the Archbishop of Canterbury, being Lord chiefe Iustice, Lieutenant, or Warden of England, found meanes to resist them, so that they being fought with, were ouerthrowne, and 5000. of them slaine. The Archbishop hauing got this victorie, returneth to London, where calling together a great number of the Nobles of the land, he resigned his office of being head Ruler, in whose place the Lord Geffrey fitz Peter succeeded in August. *1198. Deuotion.*

King Richard take of euery Carucata plough land, or hide of land through England, fiue shillings. Commissioners were appointed in euery shire, with the assistance of the Shiriffes to see the same assessed, and rated at after 100. acres of land to a hide, according to the custome. The French King was intercepted by the army of King Richard, so that with much adoe hee escaped into Cipres, his army was dispersed and almost an hundred knights taken, besides other common souldiers, without number. The Charters which the King had before made with his new seale were changed. *An. reg. 10. 100 acres of land to an hide. Matthew Paris, Collectanea ex Lambert.*

Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury through the procurement of the Monkes of Canterbury, and by the commandement of the Pope, brake down euen with the ground the Chappell or Colledge at Lambeth which his predecessours had founded, and he had finished in the honour of Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury.

King Richard turned his army against the Barons of Poictow that rebelled against him, he set their Cities and townes on fire, spoyled their Countrey, and slew many of his aduersaries cruelly, at the last came to the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and besieged the Castle of Chalne, and brought it to that, that they within offered to yeeld vpon conditions, but he would not in such manner receiue them but he would haue them by force: whereupon a certaine young man named Bertram de Gordon, standing on the Castle wall, levelled a quarrell out of a Crosbow, and smote him with a venomed dart in the left arme or shoulder: which stripe the King little regarded, but inuading the Castle, wonne it, and put the souldiers in prison. Of this wound aforesaid, he died the 6. of Aprill, in the yeare of our Lord 1199. when he had raigned 9. yeares, and 9. monethes, and was buried at Fonteuerard at his fathers feete, whom he confessed he had betrayed: his heart was buried at Roane in testimony of the loue he had euer borne vnto that City, for the stedfast loyalty he had alwayes found in the citizens thereof, and his bowels at the foresaid Chalne. *1199. King Richard wounded to death. Paulus Aemilius. Gual. Coven. Ralph Cogshall. Galfrid Vinesauf.*

This yeare 1200. beganne the kingdome of Tartars in the Region which is now called Tartarya, hauing slaine their Lord David King of India, and his whole issue except one daughter, and then forthwith they became more violent and outragious vpon all nations and chiefely vpon their Christian neighbours. David their late slaine King was sonne to Prestor Iohn, whom some say should be called Precious Iohn, by reason of his abundant wealth which hee vsually caused to be kept in his Court or presence where soeuer he became. Reade the Sea of Historyes. *The originall of the kingdom of Tartars.*

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* IOHN.

IOHN Earle of Mortoun, and Lord of Ireland, aged 34. yeares, a person of an indifferent stature, but of melancholy complexion, after the decease of King Richard, take vnto him, and reteyned al the knights and souldiers that had serued his brother, hee kept them in wages, and promised them large gifts. Moreouer, he sent Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, William Marshall, and Geffrey fitz Peter chiefe Iustice in England, to proclaime his peace to be kept amongst the rest of the Nobles of the Realme. These, when they came into England, caused all men to sweare to be true to earle Iohn, and so went forward to Northampton, where they called together all those Nobles, whom they doubted, and promised in the name of earle Iohn, that he should restore vnto them, and to all men, their right: and vpon that condition they gaue to him their fidelities. Also they sent word by Eustace de Vesey, to William King of Scots, that earle Iohn at his returne into England should content him for all his right which he claimed in England, and thereto willed him in the meane season to be faithfull to the said Earle and to keepe his peace, which he promised, by which meanes all strife and debate in England was appeased.

Whilest these things were doing in England, Earle Iohn went to Chinon, where King Richards treasure lay, which treasure, with the Castle, was deliuered to him by Robert de Turnehame. But Thomas de Furnell deliuered vnto Arthur Duke of Britaine, the Citties and Castle of Angiers, for as well by him, as by al other the nobles and peres of the Countries of Anglew, Paine, and Turon, Arthur was received as their soueraigne Lord. Moreouer, Constantia Mother to the said Arthur, deliuered him to the King of France at Turon: whom he sent to Paris to be kept, and tooke into his hands all the Castles and Citties that appertained to the said Arthur: but Earle Iohn and Elianor his mother, came with a great armie to the Citty of Mans, and wonne both it and the Castle, destroyed all the stone houses there, and carried the Cittizens away captiues. This being done Earle Iohn entring into the Countrey of Aniow held his Easter at Beaufort, and on the morrow after, he sent Du. Elianor and Marchadius vnto the city of Aniow, who with a warlike power spoyled it, and carried the Cittizens away captiues.

In which meane time Earle Iohn came to Roane, and there by the ministry of Walter Archbishop of Roane, he was girt with the sword of the Dukedome of Normandy. In the Cathedrall Church, where the Archbishop before the high Altar, did set a crowne of gold vpon his head, artificially made with Roses of gold, &c. Duke Iohn sware vpon the holy Euangelists to defend the Church and liberties therof, to see Iustice ministred to the people, good lawes put in execution, and euill lawes suppressed.

Then Iohn Duke of Normandy sayled ouer into England, and arriued at Shoreham on the fiue and twentie day of May, and came to London on the Ascention euen, where the Archbishops, Bishops, Earles, Barons, and other being present, Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury standing vp in the middest of them all, said in effect as followeth.

Your discreete Wisedomes doe know (right honourable) that by most reason none ought to succeede in the kingdome, except by vniuersall consent of the whole realme (praying for the grace of the holy Ghost) he be chosen according to the excellency of his qualities and behauiour, by the example of the first annointed King Saul, whom our Lord appointed vnto his people, not being the sonne of any King, neither of the progeme of any King. Likewise, after him, hee made Dauid King the sonne of Ishai, who was a stoutman, apt and meete for the worthy dignity of a King, and that because he was holy and humble; so that hee (whiles doth in such sort excell in prowes all other in the kingdome, ought to be chosen to gouerne the same: but if there be any of the kings linage that doth excell other, we ought to be ready to elect and choose him. This I speake touching the Noble Duke Iohn, brother to our late excellent king Richard now deceased, which had none heire proceeding of his body. Which Duke Iohn apparently plainly vnto vs, to be both wary & sout, whom therefore beseeching the holy Ghost of his grace, we doe with one consent elect and choose, as being both of the same worthinesse, and also of the same bloud and kindred that king Richard was of.

This Archbishop indeede was a man of deepe vnderstanding, a singular pillar of stability, and of incomparable wisedome, so that no man was so bolde as to make any reasoning of the matter at that time, because they knew well enough that hee did not without cause define in such sort of this thing: wherefore the Duke Iohn, and all other there present did accept of the choise crying, *Viuat Rex*. But afterwards, the Archbishop being demanded, why hee made this election he answered, and said, that by certaine Oracles, and by the gift of Prophecy, hee was certified that this Iohn should once take to himselfe the Realme and Crowne of England, and should bring to fame into great confusion: wherefore, to the end he should not haue so much occasion to bring these thing to passe, hee said, that hee was to be elected to the kingdome, though the same by succession of inheritance belonged not to him; and so hee set the Crowne vpon his head and annointed him King at Westminster on Sunday in S. Peters Church, vpon the Ascention day, which

which was the fiue and twenty day of May: he was sworne to leue the catholike Church and ordinances thereof: to keepe and defend the same harmelesse from the inuasion of euill disposed persons: to distaunt peruerse Iudges, and erect good Iudges, and according to the same to minister true iudgement throughout his Kingdome.

The same day King Iohn inuested William Marshall with the Office of the Constable of Estrigale, and Geffrey fitz Peter with the Cheefehouse of Essex, and they serued that day at the Table with their Swords girt to them. Also Hubert Archbishop of Canterbury, was made Lord Chancellor of England.

Whilest these things were in doing in England, Philip King of France with an armie, brake into Normandy, and tooke the Citty of Euereux, the Towne of Argues, and diuers other places from the English, and passing forth into Saine, recouered that Countrey. Also the Iewes, wan the townes of Gorney, Butenant, and Gerselone: they tooke also the Citty of Aumarle, &c. Which being signified to King Iohn, he went ouer into Normandy, where many submitted themselues to him: but a truce was taken betweene the King of France and him, vntill the 26. of August. In the meane time, King Philip of France made Arthur Plantagenet Duke of Britaine, knight of the field, and receiued of him homage for Anioine, Poytiers, Turon, Maine, Britaine, and Normandy: for the which the said King Philip promised by oath to ayde him in recouery thereof.

King Iohn made a law, that no tunne of Rochell wine should bee sold dearer then xx. shillings, of Aniow xv. xviii. shillings, and of France xvj. shillings, and not aboue, vnlesse the same were of such principall goodnesse, that some for their wine would giue twenty fiue shillings foure pence for the tunne, and not aboue in any sale. A gallon (by retale) of Rochell wine to be sold for foure pence, the gallon of white wine not aboue sixe pence. It was also ordained, that in euery Citty, towne and place where wine was vsed to be sold, there should be xij. honest men sworne to haue regard that this assise should not bee broken: and if that they found any Vintner that should sell any wine by small measures contrary to the same assise, his body should be attached by the sheriffe and detained in prison, till order was taken for his further punishment, and his goods seized to the Kings vse: and the like punishment was appointed for such as should sell by the tunne, hogshead, or otherwise, contrary to the assise.

1200. Philip King of France and Iohn King of England met betwixt the Castles of Waylun, and Butenant, where they agreed vpon a peace, that King Iohn should quite claime vnto the French King, and his heires for euer, all Vilgelwin, Gisors, and other Castles. Also King Iohn gaue in marriage with his neece Blanch, daughter to Alfonse, King of Castile, vnto Lewis, Sonne and heire to Philip King of France, all the Castles which the same Philip had taken in Normandy, that is to say, Vernon, Passey, Pacy, and Nonancourt, and many other Citties, Townes, Castles, &c. besides to King Philip 30000. marks. King Philip then restored Arthur to King Iohn, and received of him homage, for Britaine and Richmond, both Kings sware to obserue this peace firme with their Seale for euer.

King Iohn hauing made peace beyond the Seas, returneth into England, where hee requireth an ayd of his Realme to pay the thirty thousand markes, and edict was made, that euery euery plowland should pay three shillings, which troubled the land sore, considering the scarsage that went before, which was for euery Knights fee two marks, which before time was neuer but twentie shillings. King Iohn went ouer, and hauing payd his thirtie thousand markes to the King of France, hee was there by the hands of Helias Archbishop of Burdeaux, and the Bishops of Poytiers, and Stone, diuorced from his wife Isabell, daughter to Robert Earle of Gloucester, because of nerenesse of bloud, as touching her in the third degree: And then hee married Isabell daughter to Amerie Earle of Angolesme; which Isabell before Hugh sur-named Brune Earle of Marches had taken to wife.

This being done, King Iohn returned with his new wife, and crowned her Queene at Westminster on the eight of October. And the same day King Iohn commanded Hugh Nuell chiefe forester, and the other foresters to weene all the Bonkes of the Castiaux oder throughout England, that from the Octaues of Saint Michaell, vnto the Quindem, they should remoue all their Hoses, their Swine, and other Cattell whatsoeuer off the forrest ground: and if any were after found vpon the forrest ground, they should bee sold to the Kings vse. The Bonkes promised for themselues, and patiently bare the Kings displeasure.

The Archbishop of Canterbury sent to all the Abbots of that order, admiling them to meete the King at Lincolne on the xv. of November, that being together, by his helpe they might attempt to appease the Kings mode, they did as they were willed. The Archbishop counselled them, the next day to meete the King without the Citty, and to humble themselues vnto him, but they thought not this to bee the best way, least those that rode before the King should abuse them.

The next day King Iohn talked with William King of Scots King of Scots that was come to Lincolne, with his homage to Rorland Lord of Galloway, and many other noble men, to doe homage to the King.

The next day the Archbishop moued the King in the matter touching the Abbots, but the King willed him not to vexe his spirits, for hee meant that day to be let bloud.

On Sunday next following, the Archbishop caused the Abbots to come into the Kings presence at masse time: whereupon, after the King had heard Masse, and comming forth of the Church, the Archbishop besought him to heare their sute, and then they falling downe at the Kings fote, besought him to haue pittie vpon them: the King commanded one to bring the Abbots

into his chamber, and he with the Archbishop, Bishops, and Nobles went into the same chamber before them, where, when they had sate a while, the King rose vp, and went into an inner chamber, there to conferre with the Noble men, such as pleased him; and after comming forth, called for the Archbishop and certaine other Bishops, with whom he talked secretly: and after the Abbots being called, the King appointed the Archbishop to declare vnto them his pleasure, which was, that although the King had shewed himselfe in words to be offended with them, yet hee neuer meant to hurt to that order, and now had put away all rancor and malice towards them: herewith they fell downe on the ground, and gaue humble thanks to the King, and withall, the Archbishop inferred, that the King requested them to forgiue him: and the King herewith fell downe, watering his cheekes with teares, and they likewise at his feete. The Archbishop, after both parts were vpon their feete, said, that the King required, that by their intercession hee might bee made a brother in the chapiter of the Cisteaux, and that they would procure him to bee admitted: Moreouer, the King hee said, minded to build a house of that order, that he might be had in memory, and would be a Patron and defender of their order. The Abbots being greatly reioyced, departed, praysing God.

1201. King Iohn going into Ireland take a great piece of money there, and returning into England, was crowned together, with his Queene at Canterbury on Easter day.

King Iohn with Isabell his Queene sayled into Normandy, fell into communication with Philip King of France, where they agreed so well, that they passed together into France, where King Iohn was honourably receiued Saint Denys, and into Paris, &c.

An. reg. 3. Hugh Brune rebelleth. A Noble man of Aquitaine named *Hugh* Brune rebelling against King Iohn, inuaded diuerse parts of the Prouince, because the king had married the daughter of the Earle of Angolesme, whom the said Brune had affied, and had in his custodie, wherefore they passed ouer, and restrained the Rebells from their attempts.

Ypodigma. Trope 15. The fiue and twentieth of June, there arose a cruell tempest of Thunder, Lightning, and Hayle, with a vehement raine, that destroyed Come, Cattell, Men, and Houses, by burning them, &c.

The tenth of July, another tempest much like to the former happened, so that the Medowes could not bee mowed, and the Hay that was down, was carried away by the outragious course of waters that ouerflowed the ground great numbers of fishes through the corruption of the waters dyed, many Bridges borne downe. Come and Hay carried away and many men drowned, so that all men though a new deluge had beene come.

1201. Ralph Cogshall. *An. reg. 4.* King Iohn sharply warred vpon the Earle of March. *Hugh Brune*, and the Earle de Eue his brother, who being not able to resist, they complained to Philip King of France, as to their soueraigne and chiefe Lord, who sent off times to King Iohn, moning him to cease from hurting them, but that would not serue: wherefore he was summoned by the Nobles of France as Duke of Aquitaine and Amow, to come vnto the court of the French King, and to stand to the iudgement of his peeres, all which King Iohn denyed; whereupon the same Court adiudged him to bee depriued of all his lands, which hee or his predecessours held of the King of France, &c. King Iohn commoned in the Court of Kings Court.

King Philip forthwith assembled an armie, and inuaded the Castle of Butenant in Normandy, which king Richard had builded, he rased it to the ground. He toke the land of Hugh Gorney, and all Castles thereabout. He toke the Castle of Albemarle, with the county of Eue, and all the land to arches, none resisting him. Also Arthur Earle of Britaine being made knight by the French King whose younger daughter he had affianced, he being but fiftene yeres old, went to Hugh Brune, and Geffrey Lucingham, and with two hundred and 50. knights, besieged the Castle of Mirable, in which Queene Elianor his Aunt was inclosed: but king Iohn came with a power, and deliuered his mother from danger. He toke there his Nephewe Authure, William de Brawse. Geffrey de Lucingham, Hugh Brune, Andrew Caueny, Saluarieus de Mauleon, and diuers others. Arthur Earle of Britaine made knight.

Great thunder and lightning, with haile as big as hennes egges, &c.

The waters increased, and did much hurt in England: Arthur Earle of Britaine, from Falaise was brought to Roane, and put in the Tower vnder the custodie of Robert de Veypoint, where shortly after he was dispatched of his life, some say by the hands of his vncle Iohn. 1203.

The king of France inuaded the Castles of Normandy, toke Leisle, Dandeley, with the Castle, and the vale de Ruell, in the which were Robert fitz Walter, Sayer de Quincy, and many other. He toke the strong Castle vpon Seine, builded by king Richard, which had beene valiantly kept by the Constable of Chester.

Among many other that found themselues agreeued with the shamefull murther of Duke Arthur, some to Geffrey Duke of Britaine, king Iohns elder brothers sonne, and therefore right full heire to the crown and realme of of Englaad was Iohn Courcy the valiant Conquerour, and earle of Ulker in Ireland: Which being brought to the kings eares, hee cast the said Courcy into the Tower of London. But the matter fell out better betweene the king of France and K. Iohn (as we haue heard) so that the King of France bereft him of all the lands that hee held in the fee of the Crowne of France, and among other matters, he sent hither a mightie man, who should try that quarrell with an English champion by combat: To vndertake the which, the King moued Courcy, who stontly answered him, that in his quarell, whose murtherous vile mind, cowardlinesse, treacherous conditions, and tyrannicall gouernment deserued not the aduenture of losing one drop of bloud, he would not fight one stroke, but for the honour of the Realme, Paulus Emilius. Of Iohn de Courcy that hardy man,

Brehan, wherein many a good and honourable man lost his life to his great griefe, he would willingly haue giuen his life and therewithall accept the combat with a Gyant. But no harme was done, for the French man, as soone as he saw the mightie limmes, and fierce countenance of Courcy, went away.

King Iohn doubting treason in his owne men, in December returned into England, where he gathered great sydes of money.

Eleanor daughter to the Earle of Poitiers, that had beene wife to Lewis king of France and after to King Henry the second of England departed this life, and was buried in Fontenevraud. 1204. Cogshall. Mat. Par.

King Iohn confirmed to Aller ike de Vere the Earle Dome of Oxford, and made him Earle, by girding him with the sword. King Iohn sent Ambassadors to treate a peace with the king of France, but he because he would not with him would not agree in any wise, except Arthur might be deliuered to him alue, or if he were dead, he would haue his sister in marriage with all the lands on that side the Seas. Arthur Earle of Britaine. Cogshall. Mat. Par.

Shortly after he toke Falaise, Caen, and so forth all the Country to Barfleet Carbu. gh, Dunfront, Roane, Vernoll, and Arches: and so proud Normandy, Anioll, Britain, Maine, Poytow, and Thoraigne, were within a short time deliuered to King Philip.

King Iohn married Isne his bastard daughter to Lewlin Prince of Wales, and gaue with her the Castle and Lordship of Glingunoge now called Clifmere, in the Marches of South-wales. Brompton. Mat. Par.

Robert Fitz Parnell Earle of Leicester dyed without issue, and then Simon de Mountford, and Sayer de Quincy deuided the Earledome betwixt them, because that Sayer de Quincy, and Simon Mountford had married the sisters of the said Robert. Parnell. 1205. Cogshall. Mat. Par.

The foureteenth day of January began a frost, which continued till the two and twentith day of March, so that the ground could not be tilled, whereof it came to passe that in Summer following, a quarter of wheate was solde for a marke of siluer in many places of England, which for the more part in the dayes of King Henry the second, was sold for twelue pence: a quarter of beanes or peale for halfe a marke: a quarter of Otes for 40. pence, that were wont to be sold for foure pence. Also, the money was so sore clipped, that there was no remedy, but to haue it renewed. Annes. 7.

King Iohn gathered great armies of men to haue gone ouer the Seas, but being sailed onward of his voyage, he returned againe, and tooke escuage, two markes and a halfe of euery knights fee through England, procreeding a quarrell against his Barons, because they would not follow him into the parts beyond the Seas. Barons refuse.

1206. Cogshall Mat. Par. *An. reg. 8.* The Earle of Salisbury, the kings brother, Geffrey the kings sonne beget on a concubine, and many other knights, were gone ouer before, but all in vaine: the charges was vnestimable that had beene laid out about the preparation made for this iourney.

Great thunder and lightnings burning out of the clouds were seene, so that men thought that the day of Doome had beene come, many men and women were destroyed, beside cattell, and houses burned. The corne in the fields was beaten downe with hailestones as big as ale cages. Great thunders, lightnings, and wonders hapte.

About Maidstone in Kent, a certaine monster was found, stricken with the lightning, body like a man, and all other parts far differant from any one liuing thing. This dead body no man might vnneth come neere vnto for stench. A strange monster.

King Iohn toke the 13. part of all moueable goods, both of lay and religious through England, of which all men murmured.

The 27. day of January, a great wind ouerthrew many houses and trees, and a great snow destroyed many beasts. 1206.

The Bishop of Canterbury, by the aduise of the Pope, elected Stephen Langton to bee their Archbishop, and then Pope Innocent intending to obtaine the fauour of King Iohn towards this election, because he knew that he did make diligent search for precious stones sent him an eloquent Epistle, with diuers precious Iewelles, which were of King Iohn well accepted: and Stephen Langton was consecrated at Rome. Then the Pope sent letters to king Iohn, humbly exhorting him to receiue the said Stephen Archbishop of Canterbury, being thereunto canonically elected, the rather because he was an Englishman borne, and a doctor of diuinity, &c. But King Iohn being greatly offended with the promoting of the said Stephen, sent men in armour to expell the Monkes of Canterbury, to the number of three score and foure out of the Realme, and condemned them of treason, the Monkes went into Flanders, and their goods and lands of their Church was confiscate. Also King Iohn sent threatning Letters to the Pope, whereunto the Pope made a large answer. *An. reg. 9.* Mathew Paris.

Queene Isabell vpon the first of October was deliuered of her first sonne at Winchester, and named him Henry.

The 23. of March, William Bishop of London, Eustachius Bishop of Ely, and Malgor Bishop of Winchester by the Popes commandement executed the interdiction vpon the whole Realme, and they ceased through all England from ministring of Ecclesiasticall Sacraments, saueing to them that were in perill of death, and baptisme to children. All the bodies of them that dyed, were buried like dogs in ditches and corners: Many bishops, especially they that pronounced the interdiction, fled the Realme. 1208. Englandintersdicted. Nich. Trenet Mathew Paris, Rad. Cogshall.

The king set all the bishoprickes and abbeyes in the Realme into the custody of lay men, and commanded all Ecclesiasticall reuenues to bee confiscated. Also doubting least the Pope should excommunicate him by name, or discharge the Nobles of England of their allegeance towards him, he laid hold vpon them, specially such as he had in suspition, and toke pledges of them. King Iohn requiring to haue the sonnes of William de Brause, his wife made answere, she would not deliuer *An. reg. 11.* Mathew Paris.

deliuer them vnto him, who had already slaine his owne nephew Arthur, for which speech, both William de Braose and his wife, were fame to die into Ireland.

Philip Bishop of Durham deceased, and was buried by the hands of lay men, without the Church and Churchyard, because the land was interdicted. The Bishops that executed the interdiction, had their houses ouerthrowne, their wards cut downe, and their Pannops destroyed by the kings commandement.

W. Packington. 1209.

Richard the kings second sonne by Isabell his wife was borne.

By the procurement of Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury, lice nce was granted to the conuentuall Churches in England to celebrate diuine seruice once euery weeke, but the white Monkes had not this priuiledge, because they had disobeyed the interdiction.

Exchequer at Northampton

The Exchequer was then remoued from Westminster to Northampton by the kings commandement. He also gathered a great army, and went toward Scotland as farre as the Castle of Norham, where the king of Scots came to him, and treated a peace, for the which hee gaue 11000. marks of siluer, and deliuered his two daughters for a pledge.

Chro. Dun. Hedges burned.

By the kings commandement, throughout all the forrests of England, all the ditches were made plaine ground, and hedges brent. After this hee tooke homage of all Freeholders, and sware all men to his allegeance from 12. yeares old vpward. The Hospitall of Saint Iohn and S. Iames at Crux Rose, or Roystone Crosse, was founded the 10. yeare of king Stephen.

Homage of freeholders.

Welshmen did homage.

The welshmen came to Woolstocke, and did homage vnto the King, which was neuer heard tell of before.

Ann. 1209. 11.

A clarke at Oxford by chance killed a woman and then ranne away, wherefore his 3. chamberfellowes which knew nothing of the matter, were hanged, at the towne end, which caused three thousand maisters and schollers to forsake the Vniuersity of Oxford, so that there tarried not one in that Vniuersity, but some went to Cambridge, some to Reading, some to Maidstone to schoole, and left Oxford empty.

Oxford forsaken.

Rad. Cogshall.

A prodigious sight was seene one morning in the beginning of Lent, the cloudes seemed to fight with the Sunne, from the Sunne rising, till one of the clocke of that day.

London bridge builded of stone Ex lib. Pomis Londinensis.

The Arches and stone Bridge ouer the Thames at London, hauing beene three and thirtie yeares in building, since the foundation thereof was laid, to witte, in the yeare of CHRIST, one thousand one hundred seauentie and fiue, and the twentie two of Henry the second, was this yeare finished by the worthy Merchants of London, Serle Mercer, William Alman, and Benet Borewright. Maister Fowle a learned man, last Prior of Saint Mary Ouaries Church in his life time, reported, that at the first, being no Bridge at London, but a ferrie, the ferrier and his wife decreasing, left the same ferrie to their daughter, a Mayden named Marie, who with the goods left by her parents, and the profits which came by the said ferrie, builded a house at Sothwarke, which is the vppermost end of Saint Maries Church aboue the quier, where shee was buried. Iohn Lon. ed. vnto the which house shee gaue the ouerplus and profit of the same ferry: but afterward the house of Sisters was conuerted vnto a College of Priests, who builded the bridge of timber, and from time to time kept the same in reparations, but considering the great charges in repairing, lastly by the great ayde of the Citizens of London, and others, they builded the same of stone. King John gaue certaine vacant places in London to build on, the profites thereof to remaine towards the charges of building and repairing of the same Bridge. A Mason being maister worke-man of the Bridge, builded from the foundation the Chappell on London Bridge, of his owne proper expenses.

Saint Mary Ouaries Church.

The King commanded all the Iewes both men and women to bee imprisoned and grieuously punished, because hee would haue all their money, some of them gaue all they had and promised more, to the end they might escape so many kinds of torments as hee did put vpon them, for euery one of them had one eye at the least pulled out: amongst whom, there was one, which being tormented many wayes, would not ransome himselfe, till the King had caused euery day one of his great teeth to be pulled out by the space of seauen dayes, & then he gaue the king 10000. markes of siluer, to the end they should pull out no more.

Iewes tormented. 1210.

King Iohn at that time spoyled the Iewes of 66000. markes.

Ann. 1209.

In the moneth of June, the King led an army into Ireland, expulsed Hugh Lacy, and brought all Ireland vnder his subiection. Hee caused the lawes of England to be executed there, and money to bee coyned according vnto the waight of English money, and made there both halfe-pence and farthings: he returned with great triumph in the moneth of September, and then raised a great fare vpon all the religious in England, whom he caused to pay such a ransome, and to spoyle their Churches, that the summe came to an hundred thousand poundes, besides fourtie thousand poundes of the white Monkes.

Winchester land. Chron. Mich. Taxes.

Another fight betwixt the Sunne and the cloudes was seene.

Matild a Noble woman, wife to William de Braose, and his son and heire William, perished miserably with famine in the castle of Windsor. William her husband changing his apparell, passed ouer the sea at Shoram, and shortly after died at Gozboile, and was buried at Paris.

I. Beuerlac. Ralph Cogsh.

The Bishop of Londons Castle called Stokford, is ouerthrowne, and the Kings house at Writtle in Essex is builded.

Stratford Castle. 1211.

The King went into Wales against Lewlin his sonne in law, that had married his bastard daughter, with a great force, euen to Snowdon, and subdued all the Princes and Nobles, without any gaynesaying. He take eight and twenty pledges for their subiection, and returned. When hee came to Northampton, there met him

Brings into subiection. Matthew Paris.

him Messengers from the Pope, Pandolph and Durand, which came to make an vnitie betwixt the King and the Bishop of Canterbury with the Monkes which were banished, but the King granting their returne, denied to make them any amends for their losse which they had sustained, or to restore their goods which he had confiscated, so that the Ambassadours returned without any end concluded.

Comes from Ann. 1213

After this the King tooke of euery knight which was not with him in Wales, two Markes of siluer of euery Hyde.

great store.

Pope Innocent absolued all, both Princes and other, which pertained to the Crowne of England, from their fidelitie and subiection to King Iohn, and commanded them to eschew his company.

Peter of Pontfract.

A heard of Harts comming forth of the forrest, leapt all into the Sea at the mouth of Seuerne.

Iewes restored.

Geffrey Archbishop of Yorke, bastard brother to King Iohn, because hee would not giue his consent vnto a tare of the thirteenth penny of all mens goods, departed the Realme, in the yeare 1207. whose possessions were forthwith seized into the Kings hands, and now fiue yeares after his banishment, he ended his life beyond the seas: after whose decease the Sea was void by the space of 4. yeares.

Archbishop of Yorke banished.

William King of Scotland being aged, was not able to quiet the inner parts of his Realme, troubled with sedition, wherefore hee fled vnto the King of England, and committed himselfe, his Kingdome, and onely Sonne vnto his protection, who making the young man Knight, went into those parts with an Armie, and sending forth his men into the inner parts of that Kingdome he take Cudred Mac William Captaine of the sedition, and hung him on a paire of Gallowes, for he was of the old ancient race of the Scottish Kings, who assisted with the ayde of the Irish and Scots, did exercise long enmitie against the moderne Kings of Scotland, as his Father Donald had done before time, sometime secretly, sometime openly: for the moderne Kings of Scotland, confesse themselues to be rather Frenchmen, as in stocke or lineage, so also in manners, language, and apparell, and hauing brought the Scots vnto great seruitude, they admit onely Frenchmen into famille and seruice.

K. Bernewell.

Another Writ.

Ann. 1212.

The Welchmen take diuers Castles of the Kings of Englands, cut off the heads of all the soldiers, burned many Townes, and with a great prey returned without any harme.

Welchmen in Anglesey.

The King gathered a great Armie, minding vtterly to destroy all the Coastes of Wales, but when he came to Nottingham, hee caused eight and twenty pledges of the Welchmen to be hanged: and immediately after, whilest hee fate at meate, there came a Messenger, that brought him Letters from the King of Scots informing him, that he should be betrayed: and likewise also came another Messenger out of Wales, from the Kings Daughter, wife to Lewlin King of Wales, certifying him of the same conspiracie, that is to say, that if hee did not leaue off and desist from that hee had begun, his Nobles would either kill him themselues, or else betray him to his enemies to bee killed.

Wherefore when the King came backe to London, hee sent Messengers, to all the great men, whom he suspected to be vntrue to him, and demanded pledges of them, who daring not disobey the Kings commandement, sent to him their sonnes nephewes, and kinsfolke, to bee at the Kings pleasure.

Peter of Pontfract.

About this time in the Prouince of Yorke, there was an Hermite named Peter of Pontfract, who was also called the Wise, because he had declared into many diuers strange things that were to come. This Hermite prophecied openly of King Iohn, and said, that vpon the Ascension day next comming, there should bee no King, nor from thenceforth, but hee said the Crowne should at that day bee translated to another. Whereof, when the King heard tell, hee commanded this Hermite to bee brought vnto his presence, and demanded of him, whether the King should dye at that day, or no, or else, in what order the King should he depriued of his Raigne. The Hermite answered, know this most certainly, that at that day, thou shalt not bee King: and if I be found a lyar, then doe with me what ye will. And the King said it should bee euen so, as thou hast said, and so committed him to William de Hartcourt to keepe, and he kept him in streight Prison vntill he saw the end.

There were at that time many Noblemen in England, whose Wiues and Daughters the King had oppressed, and other some, whom with extreame exactions hee had brought into great pouerty and otherwhile, whose Parents and friends the King had banished, and had turned their inheritance vnto his owne vse: so that King Iohn had almost as many enemies as he had Nobles and great men, and the report was, that they did send their writing and Charter to the King of France, sealed with their Seales, wherein they promised him, that if hee would come and inuade England, they would receiue him, and crowne him with honour.

Archbishop of Canterbury and other Prelates of the King dome.

About this time Stephen Archbishop of Canterbury, William Bythop of London, and also the Bishop of Ely went to Rome, and informed the Pope how many enormious deeds King Iohn shoes.com with great contumacie had done against God and his holy Church; wherefore they humbly besought him to helpe and succour the Churchof England, which now was in great danger. Whereupon the Pope determined, that King Iohn should be deposed, and another more worthy set in his place: Toward the execution whereof, the Pope wrote his letters to King Philip of France, willing him to expulse the king of England, and he should for euer possesse the kingdome.

Ann. 1213.

The tenth day of July at night, a marualous and terrible chance happened, for the Citie of London vpon the South side of the Riuer of Thames, with the Church of our

A great fire in Southwarke.

...ere was a great multitude of people ... to extinguish and quench ... the South winde was also set on fire, and the people which were now passing the bridge, perceiving the same, would have returned, but were stopped by fire, and became to passe, that as they feared of pourtraied time, the other end of the Bridge also namely the South end was fired, so that the people thronging betweene themselues betweene the two fires, did nothing else else but bake for their death. Then came there to ayde them many Ships and Vessels, into the which the multitude so indiscretly pressed, that the Ships being drowned, they all perished: it was said through the fire and the ship-ragge, that there were drowned about three thousand persons. Wil. Packington writeth, that there were found in part or halfe burnt, 3. thousand bodies, besides those that were quite burned that could not be found.

W. Packington.

1213. Noblemen disherited.

King John disherited some Noblemen without iudgment of his Peeres, and he would haue destroyed Randulph Earle of Chester, for that he reproached him with this, that he should vse the wife of his brother Geffrey Earle of Britaine, whom Randulph Earle of Chester had married, and from whom Randulph was diuorced by the counsell of king Ioan, and the said Earle had married the daughter of the Earle Ferrers.

Iohn Rosseus. Guil. Neubr.

King John being now in extremitie, and minding to impute the fault to them that would not appeale his fury aforetime, reprehended sometimes one, and sometimes another of his Nobilitie as traitors, calling them iealous, whose beds (as he bragged) he had defiled, and defiowred their daughters.

Cognot Dun. Mawd the faire daughter of Robert fitz Walter.

The Chronicle of Dunmow saith, this discord arose betwixt the King and his Barons, because of Mawd called the Faire, daughter to Robert Fitz Walter whom the king loued, but her father would not consent, and thereupon ensued warre throughout England. The King spoiled especially the Castle of Baynard in London, and other holds & houses of the Barons. Robert Fitz Walter, Roger Fitz Roberts, and Richard Mount Fitchet passed ouer into France, some also went into Wales, and some into Scotland, and did great damage to the king. Whiles Mawd the Faire remained at Dunmow, there came a Messenger vnto her from King John about his suit in loue: but because she would not agree: the Messenger poisoned a boyled or potched Egge against thee was hungery, who eate of the eyed, and was buried in the quire at Dunmow.

Baynard Castle thrs...ne downe.

Robert fitz Walter fled into France.

Mawd the faire poysoned.

At this time also King John subtilly, to excuse himselfe withall, demanded and obtained of all religious persons, a writing, wherein they acknowledged, that they had willingly giuen the King all that he had with violence taken from them.

About this time, the King of France wasted the King of Englands Lands beyond the Seas, and the King of England likewise wasted his: but at length a Truce was taken, and an Army of the Sea being betwixt either Host, there was a Knight in the English host that cryed to them of the other side, willing some one of their knights to iust a course or twaine: whereupon without stay Robert Fitz Walter made himselfe ready, ferried ouer, and got on his horse without any man to helpe him, and being ready against the face of his enemie, at the first course hee strake the other so hard with his great speare, that horse and man fell to the ground, and when his Speare was broken, he went backe againe to the king of France: by Gods troth (quoth King Ioan) he were a King indeed that had such a Knight. Roberts friends hearing that, kneeled downe, and said: O King he is your knight, it is Robert Fitz Walter: and the next day hee was sent for, and was restored to the Kings fauour, and by his meanes peace was concluded, and he restored his liuings, and had leaue to repaire his Castles, &c. There the most expedite and valiant Knights of England in those dayes were Robert Fitz Walter, Robert Fitz Roger, and Richard Mount Fitchet.

Robert fitz Walter.

Robert fitz Walter restored to his liuings.

King John caused a great Armie to bee gathered at Douer in the Lent season, and gathered together a great name of Ships, and whilst hee remained about the Sea Coast with his force to withstand the French King when hee should come, there arriued two brethren of the Temple at Douer, who came to the King and in friendly manner said vnto him: We be sent vnto thee (most mighty king) in the behalfe of Pandolph, who for the commoditie of you and of your Realme desireth to haue talke with you, for he hath to propound vnto you a certaine forme of Peace, whereby you may bee reconciled to God, and to the Church, notwithstanding that you be condemned by sentence in the Court of Rome to bee deposed from the title of your Realme.

Pandolphs Legate.

When the King had considered well the message of those Templars, he gaue them commandement to cause Pandolph to come ouer vnto him. And not long after, Pandolph came to the King at Douer, and said vnto him: Behold, the most mighty King of France lyeth with an innumerable number of Shippes, and a great multitude of Knights, Horsemen and Footmen in the Hauen, ready to come ouer to inuade, and depose you, as a Rebell vnto God, and vnto the Pope: there come with him also the Bishops that of late were banished out of England, with the Clearkes and Laymen, to the end, that whether yee will or no, they hauing the French King to their Captaine, they may receiue their Bishoprickes and goods.

The King of France also doth boast that hee hath Charters almost from all the Nobles of England, of their allegiance and subiection vnto him, so that thereby hee doubteth not but to bring his purpose to passe. Now therefore at the last looke to your owne commoditie, that you may come to repentance, and make no delay to reconcile you to God, whom you haue prouoked to take vengeance vpon you. For if you make assurance, that for his sake, which humbled himselfe for you, you will

will humble your selfe to the iudgement of the Church, you may recouer your Realme: from whence, for your contumacy you be adiudged and condemned by the Court of Rome to be deposed. Now therefore that your enemies doe not reioyce ouer you, frame into your owne heart, and take heede that you doe not bring your selfe into such a distresse as you shall not be able to ridde your selfe out againe.

King John, moued to repentance.

With these words King John was moued to repentance, chiefly considering foure things. The first, for that he stood excommunicate the space of fiue yeares. The second, hee feared the comming of Philip King of France, which lay round about the Sea Coasts with a great force, prepared to depose him. Thirdly, he feared, that if hee should ioyne battell with his Enemies, the Nobles of England would either leaue him in the field, or deliuer him to his Enemies. And the fourth, which hee feared most, was because Ascention day was of hand, when according to the Prophecie of Peter the Hermite, hee should lose his life or Kingly Authoritie, both Spirituall and Temporall. For these and such like causes, King Iohn being fallen into desperation, did follow the perswasion of Pandulph, and take his oath vpon the Euangelists that in the presence of Pandulph, hee would stand to and obey the iudgement of the Church, and streteene of his Earles and Barons did sweare the same, and couenanted that if her paraduenture should repent him of his oath, they would compell him, so much as lay in them to performe it. Thus on the thirteenth of May, on Mundayy before Ascention day, the King and his Nobles, Earles, and Barons, met with Pandulph at Douer, wher with one consent they agreed vpon a forme of peace.

King John taken oath.

The Barons sweare an oath.

King John, and Pandulph, with the Nobles of the Realme, came together at the house of the Knights of the Temple, by the Colowe of Douer, on the fifteenth day of May, being the Ascention Euen, where the King, according as sentence was giuen at Rome, did resigne his crowne with the Realmes of England and Ireland into the Popes hands: whose Vicegerent at that time was Pandulph aforesaid: and when he had made this resignation, hee gaue the aforesaid kingdomes to the Pope and to his successours, and confirmed his gift with a Charter, dated the fifteenth day of May, in the fourteenth yeare of his raigne. When the Ascention day was past, hee commanded the foresaid Peter Hermite to bee fette out of the Castle of Corke, to bee bound at a Hoyse-taile, drawne through the streetes to Watham, and there both hee and his Sonne to bee hanged on a gibbet.

King John resigneth the Realme of England.

Peter of Pomfret. *An. reg.* 15

The 17. of August, Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury, and all the other that were banished, arriued at Douer, and went to Winchester to the King, who meeting them in the way, fell flat vpon the Earth before their feete, and with teares beseeched them to take pittie on him, and of the Realme of England

Stephen Lang. ton returned.

The Archbishop and Bishops likewise, with teares tooke him vp from the ground, and brought him into the Quyre of the Cathedrall Church, and with the Psalme of Miserere absolued him: then the King tooke an oath to call in all wicked Lawes, and to put in place the Lawes of King Edward. Diuine seruice being ended, the King, the Archbishop, Bishops, and Nobles, dined all at one table.

The King absolued.

Richard Prior of Bermondsey, builded an house (against the wall of the bay wood of Bermondsey,) called the Almory or Hospitall of Conuerts and children, in the honour of Saint Thomas.

Lib. Bermond. S. Thomas Hospitall.

Gilo de Braw se the sonne of William de Brawse, receiued all his fathers inheritance into his custody, together with his Nephew, till the child came to lawfull age.

Morgan Prouost of Beuerley, brother to King John, was elected Bishoppe of Durham, but hee comming to Rome to bee consecrated, returned againe without it, for that hee was a bastard, and King Henrie father to King Iohn, hadde begotten him of the wife of one Radulph Bloeth, yet would the Pope haue dispensed with him, if hee would haue called himselfe the Sonne of the Knight, and not of the King. But hee vsing the aduise of one William of Lane his Clarke, answered, that for no worldly promotion, hee would deny the Kings blood.

Morgane a bastard elected Bishop of Durham.

The fifteenth of October, was begunne by the Londoners, the ditch without the walles of London, of 200. foote broad, causing no small hinderance thereby to the Chanons of Chaulks Church neere vnto Aldgat, for that it passed through their ground.

Lib. Reemond. Dutch about London Chro. Dun.

Geffrey Fitz Peter dieth, chiefe Iustice of England, and the Bishp of Winchester in that office is placed, the Nobles of England murmuring, that a stranger borne, should bee made ruler ouer them.

Bishop chiefe Iustice 1214.

Pope Innocent sent his letters to Nicholas bishop of Tusculane his Legate, to release the interdiction which had continued fiue yeares, three moneths, and 14. dayes.

Interdiction released Nic Truet.

The second day of July, King Iohn sayled toward Britaine intending to besiege Nauntes, in the which Warres he had the ayde of Otho the Emperour, and of the Dukes of Louaine, Brabant, and Hollande, of Reignolde Earle of Boloigne, and Farrandis Earle of Flanders, so that there was a great fielde fought, in which the French King escaped narrowlie, but being rescued, hee tooke the foresaid Earles, put Hugh de Bones to flight, and droue the Emperour out of the Fielde, and then a Truce was taken betwirt King John and the King of France for fiue yeares by the Popes commandement, as some said, but as other said, this Truce was agreed by meanes of 6000. marks, which the King of England gaue, fearing to incounter with the great multitude of Frenchmen.

King Iohn sayled into Britaine

K. Iohn returned into England.

King Iohn hauing finished his warres beyond the Seas, as yee haue heard, came ouer into England, about the fourteenth of November

number. And the same time the Earles and Barons of the Realme, especially them of the North, came to talke with the king, he being then at S. Edmundsbury, but their intent was not only to talke with him, as well appeared: for after they had a long season handled the matter among themselues, they brought forth the Charter of king Henry the first, which they had receiued of Stephen the Archbishoppe, where of we haue made mention here before. And so they came together into Saint Edmonds Church, where the chiefest of them beganne, and they all sware by the high Altar, that if the king would not grant the foresaid Lawes and Liberties, they would make warres against him, and withdraw themselues out of his allegeance, untill hee did with his Seale confirme and ratifie the same. And they consented all on this to come to the king after Christmas, and in the meane season they would prouide themselues both of armour, horses, and munition.

The Barons require the Charter of Liberties.

Fishes of vnwonted shape were taken in England, for they were armed with Helmets and shields, in outward shape they resembled, and were like vnto armed knights, sauing that they were farre greater in proportion.

Almost the whole towne of Saint Edmundsbury was consumed with fire.

S. Edmundsbury burnt. Iohn Lacies, & the barons in armours.

The king being lodged in the new Temple at London, there came to him, the foresaid Noble men, in warlike order, demanding of him to confirme the Liberties of king Edwards Law and other: the king requiring respite till Easter, was faine to put in sureties, the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, the Bishoppe of Ely, and other, to satisfie all men in that behalfe, and then the Noble men returned. The king in the Church of Saint Paule at London, at the hands of William Bishoppe of London, tooke on him the signe of the Crosse of the Holy Land, by meane thereof to be in the better safeguard: the Earles of Chester and Darby did the like. In the Easter weeke the Noblemen in armour incte at Stamford, and after at Barkeley, whither came to them from the king, the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, William Marshall with others, to demand of them what they would haue confirmed, and the Nobles deliuered to them a schedule containing the olde lawes and customes, which except the king would grant, they would take the Castls of his lands, and so compell him.

1215. king Iohn crosseth to be safeguarded.

Anno reg. 17.

The seuenteenth day of May being Sunday, the Barons came to London, and entred through Aldgate, in the service time, where they tooke such as they knew fauoured the king, and spoyled their goods. They brake into the Houses of the Iewes, and searched their Coffers, to stuffe their owne purses that had beene long emptie. After this Robert Fitz Walter, and Geffrey de Mandeuill Earle of Essex, and the Earle of Gloucester, chiefe leaders of the armie, applied all deligence to repaire the gates and walles of the Citie, with the stones of the Iewes broken houses. The Tower of London yet held out, though there were few within to defend it. When it was noysed that the Barons had London, all (except the Earles of Warren, Arundell, Chester, Pembroke, Ferrers, and Saltsburie, and the Barons, William Brewer with other) went to those Barons that were against the King, who called themselues the Armie of God, whereby such a feare came on the King that he durst not passe out of Windsore Castle: at length he appointed to meet with the Barons, in a Meddow betwixt Stanes and Windsore, which appointment he obserued, and there granted the Liberties without any difficultie, the Charter whereof is dated: Giuen by our hand in Runningmede, betwixt Stanes and Windsore, the 16. of Iune, the fruenteenth of our raigne, vnto which all the whole Realme was suoone.

Matthew Paris. The king meets the Barons.

Whiles the Barons returned home, the King being left almost alone, he sent Pandolph the Legate with other to Rome, to the end that by the Apostolike authozitie, hee might make frustrate the purpose of the Barons. Also he sent Walter Bishop of Winchester and Iohn Bishop of Norwich, with other, vnto the Realmes next adioyning to procure him soldiers, promising them lands and large possessions: By meanes of Pandolph the Pope disanulled the foresaid Charter and liberties granted, and also excommunicated the Barons.

The Barons communicated. The Pope communicateth the Barons.

By the other Messengers were procured a great number of men of warre, which landing at Douer, the king forthwith besieged Rochester, coueting to burne the Bridge, that no ayde should come to the besieged: but Robert Fitz Walter defended the Bridge, and quenched the fire; neuertheless after long assault the Castle was yeelded.

Rochester besieged.

As a great number of strangers were on the Seas, minding to haue landed at Douer, to haue ayded the King against his Barons, thzough a suddaine Tempest they were all drowned, so that about the Coast of the Sea, was cast vp such a multitude of men, women and children, that the Ayre was soze infected with their putrified bodies: It was said that of 40. thousand, there escaped not one aliue. The King had promised to this people, the Countries of Norfolke, and Suffolke.

Great number of strangers drowned. Matthew Paris. Rad. Cogshall

King John diuided his Armie, the one halfe whereof he put vnder the leading of Savarike de Maulion a Poictouin, Fulco a Norman, the Earle of Salisbury his bastard brother, Gerard de Sotingham a Fleming, and Walter Buc a Brabander. Hee himselfe went against the Northerne men. Savarike besieged the Castle of Plashy, that belonged to Geffrey Mandeuill, the other gaue themselues to wake the Countrey about.

On Christmas day they spoyled the Abbey of Miltey, and carried away much treasure that there was layd vp in trust by diuers of that countrey. On new zeres day they did the like at Cogshall Abbey.

From thence they went to Saint Edmondesburie, and so to the Ile of Ely, which Ile they besieged, because diuers Knights and Ladies

Ile of Ely besieged.

Ladies were sent thither with their substance: and those robbers entering the Ile, spared neither age nor sex, but by torments compelled them to tell where their treasure lay.

About the Epiphanie Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, and other, returned from beyond the Seas, bringing with them one and fozte ships laden with Souldiers: and about the feast of the Purification of our Lady, they besieged Colchester Castle, but hearing that the Barons that were at London made haste to come and succour the Castle, they went backe to S. Edmondsbury.

Winchester returned.

The King with his Armie was long time on the Scottish Seas, and oft times inuaded the Lands of his Barons in those Coasts, burning their Castles, and spoyling their goods, in which expedition he went so farre, that it was not well knowne what was become of him, insomuch that he was noysed to be dead, and secretly buried at Reading.

King Iohn in person inuadeth the lands of his Barons.

Geffry Mandeuill dyed at London of a wound receiued in iusting: he was buried in the Pozoy of the Trinitie at London.

The Pope excommunicated the Barons by their particular names, but the Chanons of S. Paul in London, and many other Ecclesiasticall persons, with the Barons that remained at London, appealed against this sentence, taking exceptions against it, as pronounced by false suggestions.

The Barons send to Lodowike.

The Barons sent Sayer de Quincy and other, to Philip king of France, earnestly requesting him to send his sonne Lewis into this Realme, promising to make him King thereof, which the French king refused to doe, till the Barons had sent him foure and twenty Pledges of the best mens Sonnes in the Kingdome, and then he sent them ayde. Gualo the Legate was sent from the Pope into France, to forbid Lewis to goe into England, but his perswasions nothing preuailed, whereofore hee excommunicated them. Also the Abbot of Abingdon, renewed the excommunication against the Barons, the Citizens of London, and the French, which came to their ayde. About Midlent the king besieged the Castle of Colchester, and after a few dayes it was deliuered to him by the Frenchmen that kept it, with condition that they might depart free with all that belonged to them, and that the Englishmen should be suffered to depart vpon reasonable ransome, notwithstanding the Englishmen hee put in Dyuers impriso-ments. Dy vers prisoners. freight Prison. After the King had taken Bedingham Castle, belonging to Robert de Vere Earle of Oxford, hee made haste to besiege London, but the Londoners set open their Gates, and were readie to meet with the king tenne miles off the Citie: the king vnderstanding their boldnesse and multitude, hee withdrew himselfe, but Savarie de Mallone, being soberly set vpon by the Londoners, losing many of his men, was soze beaten and wounded almost to death.

1216.

Colchester taken. Rad. Cogshall

Pole besieged.

The Northren Lords recouering their strength, besieged Poske, at length receiuing aboue a thousand Marks, granted Truce to the Citizens, till the Octaues of Pentecost.

The Londoners also take the 65. ships of Pyrates, besides innumerable other that were drowned, that had besieged the Coasts on the Riuer of Thames.

In the meane time the King hauing knowledge that Lewis meant to come into England, he sent ouer to the French King, the Bishop of Winchester, William Marshall the elder, and other, to try if they could perswade the French king to stay his Sonne from that journey, but they returned without audience. The King therefore marching along the Sea Coast fortified his Castles, and getting pledges of the fiue Ports, gathered a great multitude of Shippes of Yarmouth, Linne, Dunwich, and other Hauens, fraught them with men of Warre, and determined to encounter the Frenchmen by Sea, when they came to arriue in England, but by Tempest that arose from the South, those Ships were brused, drowned, or driuen into the South parts of the Sea. Lewis hauing all his power ready at Calcis, Graueling, and Whitland, the Northeast wind comming about, hee set forward toward England, and with some difficultie, because it was a side Wind, he landed at Stonar, in the Isle of Thanet, the 21. of May. From which place he directed his Epistles of title and claime &c. King Iohn being then at Doner, because his Souldiers were strangers, durst not goe against Lewis, but fled towards Gilford.

Lewis arriued in England. King Iohn fleeth.

Ann. reg. 18

Lewis went straight to Canterbury, where hee receiued both Castle and Cittie into his subiection, and after all the other Castles in Kent, Douer onely excepted: then came hee to London, where he was honourably receiued of the Nobles and Cittizens, who altogether sware fealtie to him, and did him homage at Westminster: After this taking the Castles of Rygat, Gilford, and Fernehame, he hasted forward to take the King, who as he heard was at Winchester, and had raised vp the standard of the Dragon, as he had meant to giue battell to Lewis if hee came to offer it. But when King Iohn heard that Lewis approached, he layde downe his Dragon, set fire on foure parts of the Cittie and fled. The Cittizens quickely quenched the fire, and went forth to meete Lewis, receiuing him ioyfully into their Citty, and sware to him fealtie. Heere came to him in manner all the Earles and Barons of the realme: then taking the Castle of Odiham, and the Tower of London, he returned into Kent, and the 22. of July he besieged the Castle of Douer, and continued the same till the fourteenth of October: then Hubert de Burgh and Gerard de Scoring, being not able longer to abide the assaults, obtained Truce, that they might send to King Iohn for succour. Whilest this siege remained, King Iohn went about the Land, consuming with fire and sword the possessions of the Barons.

Douer Castle besieged. W. Packington

Alexander King of Scots hauing subdued to Lewis all Northumberland, sauing Barnard Castle, with the Barons of the North, came Lewis.

King of Scots did homage to

vnto Canterbury to Lewis, and did him homage, for that which hee ought to hold of the King of England, and as he came towards Lewis with a great armie, for feare of King Iohns power, as he passed by Barnards Castle, which was in the Fee of Guido de Bailoil, in the County of Yorkeshire, he with his Nobles of that Countrey, went round about the Castle to see whether it were weake in any place, and assaultable, and a certaine Archer within the Castle shot a dart, and smote Eustach de Vetay vpon the forehead, and pierced his braine, so that hee dyed immediately. This Eustach was a noble and mighty man, and had married the King of Scots sister, so that the King and the Noble men were sore abashed: and when the King of Scots had done his homage, he returned home into his Country.

The Vncertaine of Walter his Confession.

About this time it chanced that the Vicount of Melun a Nobleman of France, which came with Lewis into England lay very sicke in the Cittie of London, who when he knew that death approached, called to him certaine of the Barons of England, vnto whom he declared in effect as followeth: I am sorry brethren, for your subversion, and desolation, whereof you know nothing: for Lewis and fiftene of the Earles and Barons with him haue sworne, that if it bee his chance to subdue England, and to bee crowned King, he would banish out of the Realme for ever, all those which now doe take his part and persecute King Iohn as Traytors to their King, and will rote all their kindred out of the earth, and to the end you shall not doubt hereof to bee true, I which now lye here a dying, vnder perill of my soule, affirme this to bee true, and that I was one that did sweare the same with Lewis. Now therefore from henceforth prouide for your owne commodities and profit, and keepe this secret which I haue told you, and when he had said this, he dyed. The Barons perceiuing what danger they were in by Lewis, who had giuen to the Frenchmen the Lands and Castles which pertained to the Barons, and when any murmured against Lewis, he cast in their teeth that they were Traytors, &c. they beleeued what the Nobleman had told them. This did also much increase their heauinesse, that they were euery day excommunicated by name of all earthly honour, so that they were in great anguish both of Bodie and Soule: Wherefore many deuised how to returne into the allegiance of King Iohn.

Barnards Castle.

Hollywell Hill.

The King marched through Norfolke and Suffolke till he came to Lin, where the Townesmen receiued him with great ioy, and honoured him with large gifts, there he appointed Sauarike de Malton to be Captaine, who began to fortifie the Towne: but here, as (it was said) filling his belly too much, as he was thereto greatly giuen, he got a surfeite, and therewithall fell into a Flixe. Afterward taking his journey toward the North, in the Water which is called Wilstreme (they said) he lost sodainely all the Carts and Chariots, with his treasure, and precious princely vessels and furniture of his Chappell, which he set most by, for the earth opened in the midst of the waues on the Marches, and the whirlepit of the deepe so swallowed vp both men and horses, that none escaped to bring King Iohn tydings. The King with his Armie going before, escaped very narrowly, and men said that night he lay at the Abbey of Swyniled, where he remained two dayes, and there (as men supposed) hee tooke such heauinesse of heart for the losse of his treasure in the waues, that he was taken with an extreame ague, and began to bee very sore sicke: the pernicious and greedy eating of Peaches, and drinking of new Cider encreased his sicknesse, and kindled the heat of the ague the more strongly, notwithstanding in the very breake of the day, with great paine, he went to the Castle of Sleford in Lindsey, belonging to the Bishop of Lincolne. There he was let bloud (say some) but so it happened, that about this time, to wit, on the 14. of October, Hub. de Burgo and Gerard de Sotins, being not able longer to abide the assaults of Lewis and his complices, obtained of him Truce, that they might send to King Iohn for succour, which Messengers when they were come to Sleford, and had declared their case, that is, that except he would rescue them in the Castle of Douer, the same must be deliuered vp to Lewis: his disease with griefe conceiued thereat, increased much, so that on the next morning, hee could scantly on Horsebacke come to the Castle of Newarke, which Castle also belonged to the said Bishop of Lincolne, in which place the sickenesse so increased in the space of three or foure dayes, that he take the counsell of his Confessor, and receiued the Sacrament at the hands of the Abbot of Croxton, and then hee made Henry his eldest sonne, the heyre of his kingdome, causing all that were about him to sweare to him, and sent letters sealed with his owne Seale, to all the Sheriffes of England, and Castle-keepers, willing them to bee attendant and diligent to the said Henry. When these things were thus done, the Abbot of Croxton asked him if hee should chance to die, where he would haue his body buried: To whom the King answered and said, I commit my Soule to GOD, and my bodie to S. Vlstane. And afterward, to wit, in the night, which followed next after the Feast of S. Luke, he departed this life in the said Castle of Newark, from whom his Seruants taking all that was about him fled, not leauing so much as any thing (worth the carriage) as would couer his dead carkase. At the time of King Iohns death, there came to him Messengers of certaine Barons of England, to the number of foure, with Letters requiring to haue come againe to his peace and allegiance, but he lying in the extremities of death, could not giue attendance to them, hee deceased on the nineteenth of October, Anno 1216. when he had raigned 17 yeares, fiue monethes, lacking eight dayes, at the age of 51. yeares. The Constable of the Castle, caused the Kings bodie to be bowelled by the Abbot of the Chanons at Croxton, which Abbot was expert in Phisicke and also at that time the Kings Phisition, to the end it might be the more honourably carried: his bowels being powdered, were buried in the Abbey of Croxton, vnto the which Abbey

The Letters of these were written in S. Albons Chronicle, in Matthew Parisian Manuscript.

bey King Iohn had on his death-bed giuen ten pound the yeare of Land for euer, his body was honourably conueyed to Worcester, and there buried in the Cathedrall Church, neere vnto the body of Bishop Wlstane.

Thus haue I set downe the life (though much abridged) and death of King Iohn, after the writing of Rog. Windouer, Rad. Niger. Rad. Cogshall, a nameleste Chanon of Barnewell, Mathew Paris, and other, who all liued when the King raigned, and wrote for that time what they saw, or heard credibly reported. Notwithstanding, I thinke it good (as heretofore) to set downe concerning his death, as is reported by a nameleste Author, a continuer of Geffrey Monmouth, in the raigne of Edward the third, and since increased, printed by William Caxton, and thereafter called Caxtons Chronicle. This booke (I say) and other after commers report, that King Iohn was poysoned by a Monke of Swinsted Abbey in Lincolneshire, for saying that if he might liue halfe a yeare, he would make an halfe penny loafe of bread, worth twenty shillings, &c. as yee may reade in the sayd common English Chronicle. But to conclude, howsoeuer he dyed, certaine it is, that he raigned with trouble enough, as by the premises may appeare.

Issue of King Iohn.

Hee had issue two sonnes, Henrie and Richard, and three daughters, Isabell the Empresse, Elianor the Queene of Scots, and Ione: Geffrey a base sonne gotten on a Concubine, Richard and other: hee founded the Abbey of Bowley alias Bealieu, in the new Forrest in South-hamptonshire: the Monastery of Farendon, and the Monasterie of Hales Diuen in Shropshire, he reedified Godstow by Oxford, and Worcester hall by Warwicke, and increased the Chappell of Knaresborough, &c.

Farendon, Hales, Godstow, and Knaresborough. Ex charta regia Ioh. Roale.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* HENRY *the* III.

An. Reg. 1.

HENRY borne at Winchester, the eldest sonne of Iohn, of the age of nine yeares, began his Raigne the 19. of October, in the yeare 1216. hee was crowned at Gloucester on the twentyeight day of October, by Peter Bishop of Winchester, and Iocelin Bishop of Bathe, in the presence of Walo the Legate, Sylvester Bishop of Worcester, William Bishop of Couentry and many other Prelates, Isabel the Queene, Randulph Earle of Chester, William Marshall Earle of Pembrooke, William Earle Ferrers, William de la Bruere, Saualric de Maulion, Iohn Marshall, Philip de Albineto, with the Abbots and other in great number: being crowned by common consent, the gouernment of the King and Kingdome was committed to the Legate, to the Bishop of Winchester, and to William Marshall Earle of Pembrooke. These things being knowne abroad, those that were of the contrary part tooke great indignation thereat: and because there should be no hope left to the new King to preuaile against them, they take a solemne oath, and swore they would neuer hold any Land of any heire of King Iohn; but the Legate maintaining the Kings part, admonished, prayed, and commanded them that were disobedient to the King, to doe the like as hee did; hee calling a Councell at Bristow, caused the Bishops and Prelates to incline to his part: Notwithstanding, Lewis did what hee could to the contrary, spoyling their goods and possessions, yet could hee not get one of the Prelates to doe him homage, or fealtie. William Marshall Earle of Pembrooke perswaded the Citizens, Castle-keepers, and other to doe their seruices to the young King Henrie, promising them great gifts, and large possessions, whereby they serued King Henrie much more faithfully than they did King Iohn his Father, for they thought that the iniquitie of the Father ought not to be imputed vnto the Sonne. This did also greatly incourage them, when they vnderstood that euery Sunday Lewis and his complices were excommunicated: Lewis and the Barons being not able to winne Douer Castle, determining therefore to subdue the smaller Castles first, they removed their siege, and came to London where on the first of November, the Tower of London was deliuered to them. From thence Lewis with the Barons went and besieged the Castle of Hartford, from the 12. of Nouember, till the first of December, on which day the Castle was yeelded: about the same time his men had won the Ile of Ely, all,

except a Fortresse within the same, wherein the Kings people were inclosed. The Cittie of Lincolne also being won againe by his partakers, and the Castle besieged, Lewis went to Barkhamsted, and besieged the Castle there. In time of which siege, there went out of the Castle certaine Knights and Souldiers, who with violence entred upon the Barons, tooke their Chariots with their carriages, and the standard of William de Mandeuill, and returned into their Castle therewithall: but in the end, after long siege, by the Kings commandement, they yeelded the Castle to Lewis on the 2. of December.

On the next morning Lewis came to Saint Albons, and demanded of the Abbot to doe vnto him homage, which the Abbot refused, but Lewis swearing hee would sette the Abbey on fire, the Abbot after many threats, by the perswasion of Sayer de Quincie Earle of Winchester, fined himselfe and the whole Towne for 80. Markes of siluer. Which being done, Lewis returned to London: and a Truce was taken till the Octaues of the Epiphanie. The Feast of Christmas being past, the Truce yet continuing, Lewis called his Fauourers vnto a Councell at Cambridge, and the Gouernors of the King called the like Councell at Oxford. All these laboured to haue compounded vpon a Peace, or at least to haue prolonged the Truce, but when Truce could not be prolonged, Lewis besieged the Castle of Hedingham, and at one selfesame time, the said Castle, and also the Castle of Oxford, were both rendered, and in likewise were the Castles of Norwich, and Colchester, for to haue the Truce continued till a moneth after Easter: And by this meanes all the East parts of England fell to Lewis.

1217. Councels at Cambridge, & at Oxford.

Castles of Hedingham & Oxford, Norwich and Colchester yeelded to Lewis.

In this meane space to wit, on the 20. day of January, the Knights and Souldiers of the Castle of Mount-sorell in Leicestershire went out to robbe, which when the Knights and souldiers of Nottingham vnderstood, they met and fought with them, toke 10. of their Knights, 14. of their Souldiers, slew 3. of them, and returned.

Castle of Mount-sorell.

The 22. of January, Falcasius de Brent, a wicked Robber, hauing gathered a number of Ruffians out of the Castles of Oxford, Northampton, Bedford, and Windsor, came to the Abbey of S. Albones in the Euening, spoyled the Towne, the men, women, and children, and bound them very fore, and slew some, so that the Abbot to saue the Abbey and Towne from burning, was faine to giue to Falcasius one hundred pound of siluer.

The towne of S. Albons spoyled by Falcasius.

About this time the Ambassadours of Lewis, which were at Rome about his businesse there, did giue him to vnderstand, that except hee went out of England, the sentence of excommunication which Wale the Legate had pronounced against him should bee confirmed by the Pope, vpon Maundy Thursday: for this cause therefore Truce was taken betweene Lewis and King Henry vntill one moneth after Easter, all things to remaine in state as they then were.

A truce taken.

Philip King of France called his sonne Lewis by speciall commandement, to returne into France, vnto a Councell at Lions, to bee holden about Midlent, which thing the English men tooke heauily: but he receiuing an oath on the Euangelists to returne before the Truce should be expired, they were somewhat pacified. Hee being passed ouer, straight way William Earle of Salisbury, William Earle of Arundell, William Earle of Warren, and many other, reuolted to the Kings side. Also William Marshall reclaimed William his eldest sonne vnto the Kings allegiance: and thus became the part of Lewis weakned very much, and the KINGS power was greatly encreased: And being diuided into diuers places they besieged many Castles at one time, recouering the Castles of Marlebozow, Fernham, Winchester, Chichester, and other which they demolished.

In the Feast of Easter, by procurement of William Marshall the elder, Randolph Earle of Chester, William Earle of Albemarle, William Earle Ferrers, Robert de Veteriponte, Brienus de Insula, William de Entelope, alias Lentelope, Philip de Mare, Robert de Gangy, Falcarius de Brent, with his Castle-keeper and many other were gathered together, to besiege the Castle of Mount-sozell in Leicestershyre, the cheefe keeper of which Castle was named Henry de Braybrooke, who sent to Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, then at London with the Frenchmen, and requiring him to come to their ayde: whereupon the said Earle of Winchester, to whom the Castle belonged, went to Lewis, then lately returned out of France, requiring him to send some ayde to remoue the siege, and so a Power was sent out of London, fiue hundred Knights, and twentie thousand armed Souldiers; they had 60 Captaines, Earle Patricius, the Marshall of France, Sayer de Quincy, Robert Fitz Walter, and other, who marching forward, spoyled S. Albons, the Church at Ruddoyne, Dunstable, and so forth toward the North, to raise the siege before Mount sozell: but Ranulph Earle of Chester, and other left off their siege, and went to the Castle of Nottingham. The Barons aforesaid finding the siege to be remoued, they march toward Lincolne, where Gilbert de Gaunt and other had laide siege: they assaulted the Castle sharpely, but William Marshall the elder sent thither a great power, such as would bee in this place too long to write. But to be short, these with much difficultie brake the Gates of the Citty of Lincolne, and entring the Towne, they boldly smote vpon their enemies, and fought there a cruell battell, wherein the Kings part so vnhorsed the Barons, that they slew and toke the most part of them: which being done the Kings company fell vpon the Earle af Percy, and smote him through the braines, so that hee fell downe dead. Thus when the greatest part of the Frenchmen were slaine, the residue toke them to flight, the Barons on the Kings side following them that fled, toke many in the chase, amongst

Mount-sozell.

S. Albons Ruddoyne and Dunstable spoyled by Barons.

London, before spo.

King Henry and Lewis assembled vpon Barnes. *An. reg. 2.*

amongst the which was taken Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, Henry de Bohune Earle of Hertford, Gilbert de Gaunt whom Lewis had lately made Earle of Lincolne, Robert fitz Walter, Richard de Mountchensi, William de Mowbray, William de Bellocampo, William Mandute, Almaricus de Hacary, Roger de Crasse, William de Caluile, William de Rele, Robert de Reperse, Radulph Chandoise, and many more. The Kings soldiers spoyled the Citty to the bare walles. This battell was tought on th 19. day of May.

On the next morrow there came newes to the King, that the Castle of Mount-sozell was forsaken: whereupon the sheriffe of Nottinghamshire was commanded to lay the same flatte with the ground.

Castle of Mount-sozell ouerthrowne.

Lewis thought this misfortune that fell to him at Lincolne, fell in despaire of any good end to come to his purpose, and therefore sent messengers to his father, and to Blanch his wife, who forthwith dispatched to him a power: But the Coasts by William Marshalls commandement were kept. And now vpon Saint Bartholomews day the Apostle, the nany of French men were commanded to the wicked man Eustach the Moyne or Monke, to be conducted to the ayde of Lewis then being at London. These being entred into the Sea, had a faire wind, which draue them vpon the English Coast: where when they were sailed a great way on their voyage, Hubert de Burgo and they of the Posts, espying them to be twenty ships, and a great number of smaller vessells, and gallies well armed, they durst not ioyne battaile with them on the Sea, hauing themselues not past fourtie Galleies and Ships, not hauing the ayde of the Kings Souldiers, fell roughly vpon them on the backe parte, made great slaughter of them. The Englishmen also hadde Galleies with yron hookes, which gowged the shippes of their enemies, whereby they were drowned in a moment: there was a cruell fight betweene them, but the Frenchmen in short space were vtterly vanquished: Eustach le Moyne was slaine by Richard a bastard Sonne of King Iohn.

Lewis of France his power of French vanquished.

These things beeing thus done, William Earle Marshall besieged the Cittie of London round about as well by water as by land, to cause them within to yeeld: whereupon Lewis being in so great a straite, gaue vnderstanding to the Legate, and to Earle Marshall, that he would bee ruled by their Councell in all things, vpon condition that hauing his honour and auoyding slander of his meane, hee might haue peace conuenient: whereupon both parties met, and talked together; Here vnto the towne of Staines, hard by the riuer of Thames, King Henry, the Legate, the Marshall, and many other on the one part, and the said Lewis, the Barons, and noble men on the other side, where by the operation of Gods grace, they did fully agree to the same of peace on the xi. day of September. First Lewis and the excommunicate persons of his side, did sweare by the holy Euangelists, they should stand to the order and iudgement of the Church, and should be faithfull &c. Lewis returned into France. From the benefit of the absolution and peace were exempted, Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and all of the Clergie, which had borne any fauour to Lewis and the Barons, were all deprined from their benefices by the Legate.

Lewis returned into France.

The Clergy deprined of their benefices by the Legate.

Hugh Bishopp of Lincolne, gaue 1000. markes to the Pope, and one hundred markes to the Legate; whose example many other did follow.

This yeere deceased William Vernon Earle of Deuonshire. Ranulph Earle of Chester, Sayer de Quincy Earle of Winchester, William de Albeneto Earle of Arundell, William Earle Ferrers, with the Barons, Robert fitz Walter, John Constable of Chester, and William Harcourt, with a great traine, toke their iourney toward Jerusalem. Wale the Legate being sent for by the Pope to returne, departed toward Rome with an infinite quantity of money gotten by one meanes or other, and Pandolph elected Bishop of Norwich succeeded Legate. About this time King Henry did obtaine and gate the proper seale of the Realme into his custody.

1218. Barons of England goe their iourney toward Jerusalem.

An. reg. 3.

1219.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, to whom Peter Bishop of Winchester ministred all things necessary.

This yeere dyed Hugh Bishop of Hereford, Hugh Foliote Archdeacon of Salisburie, William Marshall Earle of Pembroke, Gouernour of the Kings person and Realme, and Dauid Earle of Huntingdon, brother to William King of Scots. William Marshall was honourably buried at London in the new Temple, vppon the fifteenth of Aprill, concerning whome a certaine Versifier made these verses.

William Earle Marshall dyed.

Chro. Tinc. T. Rudborne.

Sum quem Saturnus sibi finxit Hibernia: Solem Angla: Mercurium Normannia: Gallia Martem.

Hee was a noysome tamer of the Irish men, and honour vnto the English men, hee had beene a Merchant vnto the Normans, for hee had purchased many things in it: vnto the French men hee was a warrier, and an inuincible Knight. He left after him fiue Sonnes and fiue Daughters, which daughters were thus married: Mawd to Hugh Bigot, Ioane to Warren de Mounthenley, Isabell to Gilbert de Clare, Sibill to William Earle of Darby, and Eue to William de Brufe, betwixt which fiue, all his great inheritance was after diuided, for all his Sonnes dyed without issue, and were euery one after other Earles of Pembroke. After the death of William Marshall, the King remayned in the custody of the Bishop of Winchester.

Caradocus.

About the same time, Lewis sonne to Philip King of France, at the instance of his Father, went with a great army to the Citty of Tholouse, there to assayle the Heretikes called Albigenses, but he preuailed nothing at all against them.

In the siege of that Citty, Simon Mountfort

Ann. Mar. A. fore Caſtle and Captaine of Lewis army was ſlaine, and at another Caſtle not farre off, was ſlaine the brother of the ſaid Simon; for the death of theſe two noble warriers, great lamentation was made, and Lewis returned againe into France without any victory.

1220 King Henry kept his Chriſtmas at Parlebrow.

About Midlent, Pandolpe the Legate called a Councell at London, the Archbiſhops, Biſhops, Abbots, and other being preſent, the Abbot of Welles was conſecrated Biſhop of Ely. Unto the which Councell Robert ſometime Abbot of Thorney, brought the Popes Letters, which commanded his Legate Pandolpe and Stephen Archbiſhop of Canterbury, that they ſhould ſee the King to be newly crowned, becauſe his firſt Coronation, by reaſon of the troubles, was not ſo ſolemnly done as was decent: Wherenpon order was taken, and on Whitſunday her was crowned at Weſtminſter by Stephen Langton Archbiſhoppe of Canterburie.

King Henry newlye crowned.

Ralph Earle of Cheſter returned from Damata my ſiege wherof he had ſet forth himſelfe and his people, with moſt large expences, whereby he wonne praiſe and honour before God and men: But Sayer de Quincy Earle of Wincheſter, with Robert Fitz Walter and other arriving at Damata after the ſame was wonne, dyed there.

Anno reg. 5. This yeere on Whitſon Euen, was the new worke of our Ladies Chappel at Weſtminſter begun, King Henry being the founder, who laid the firſt ſtone.

All ſtrangers to depart the realme

Proclamation was made, that all ſtrangers ſhould auoid the Realme, except ſuch as came with Marchandiſe, and to make ſale of them vnder the Kings ſafe conduct.

Caſtles of Chartley and Beltone buttered.

Abbey of Delacreſſe.

Randolph the third Earle of Cheſter, Lincolne, and Richmund, and Lord of little Britaine, came out of the holy land into England, and buttred the Caſtles, of Chartley, Beltone, and the Abbey of Delacreſſe.

William of Saint Maries Church, Biſhop of London, did of his owne free will reſigne his Biſhoppricke, the morrow after the converſion of Saint Paul, Ruffaud de Fawconbridge then treaſurer of the Exchequer, was elected Biſhop of London, whoſe election was confirmed by Pandolph the Legate, and the ſame Pandolph ceaſed from executing the office of Legate, and returned from thence.

1221. Nicho. Trin. Annal. Calenſis in Briſtolia. The Frier Preachers, thirteene in number were ſent into Englande, and having to their Prior Gilbert de Fraxineto in companie of Peter de Roch Biſhop of Winchester, came to Canterburie, and there preſenting themſelues before the Archbiſhop Stephen, he commanded the ſaid Prior to preach before him, and liked him ſo well, that hee euer after loued their order. On Saint Laurence day they came to London and ſo to Oxford on the day of the Aſſumption, in whoſe honour they builded an Oratorie. And alſo thoſe Schooles which ſince were called Saint Edward Schooles, in whoſe Parith they tooke a place and there for a time remayned, and after that removed to the place without the walles, which the King aſſigned them.

King Henry ſubdued the Welſhmen which rebelled.

The noblemen granted to the King two marks of ſiluer of euery hide of land. Hoveden. Nic. Trivet.

Iſabell the Kings mother, without making her ſonne or his councell priuy to her purpoſe, went ouer into France, and there married with the Earle of March Hugh Bronne, vnto whome ſhe had beene betrothed before her firſt marriage with King Iohn. Iſabell their mother goes into France.

King Henry gaue his ſiſter Iane to Alexander King of Scots, who married her at Yorke: and Hubert de Burgh Earle of Kent, and chiefe Iuſtice of England, married the King of Scots ſiſter Margaret. William de Albeneto Earle of Arundell, dyed comming from the holy land who was conueyed into England, and buried at Wimondham, a Priorie of his foundation. *Anno reg. 6.* 1222.

A Prouinciall councell was holden at Oxforde, by Stephen Langton Archbiſhoppe of Canterburie, and his ſuffragane Biſhops and others, in the conuentuall Church of Oſney, fifteene dayes after Eaſter, where were degraded a prieſt and a Deacon, the prieſt for homicide, the Deacon for ſacrilege and theft committed. Another Deacon offending more deeply, denyed the profeſſion of Chriſtian religions and for the loue hee bare to a Iewiſh woman, cauſed himſelfe to bee circumciſed following the Iewiſh rites and cuſtomes: hee was degraded, and being left as a lay perſon and Apoſtata, was condemned and committed to the fire, by the ſeruants of Falcacius, wherein hee miſerablyended his life. There was alſo a young man and two women brought before them, the young man would not come in any Church, nor bee partaker of the Sacraments, but had ſuffered himſelfe to bee crucified, in whom the ſcars of all the woundes were to be ſeene, in his hands, head, ſide, and feete, and he reioyced to be called Ieſus of theſe women and other. One of the women being old, was accuſed for bewitching the young man into ſuch madnes, and alſo (altering her owne name) procured her ſelfe to bee called Mary the Mother of Chriſt: They being conuict of theſe Crimes and other, were adiudged to bee cloſed vp betweene two walles of ſtone, where they ended their liues in miſery. The other woman being ſiſter to the young man, was let goe, becauſe ſhee reuealed the wicked fact. Prouinciall Councell. Gualt. Cou. Nic. Trivet. Rad. Coggeſh. Ieronimites Expelled.

On Saint Iames day, the Citizens of London kept games of defence and wreſtling, neere vnto the Hoſpitall of Matilde, where they got the maſtery of the men of the Suburbes. The Bayliffe of Weſtminſter deuiſing to be reuenged, proclaimed a game to bee at Weſtminſter vpon Lammas day, whereunto the Citizens of London repaired, and when they had plaid a while, the Bailie with the meanie of the Suburbes harneſſed themſelues and fell to fighting, that the Citizens being ſoullie wounded, were foyced to runne into the Cittie, where they Wreſtlings. Mathew Paris

Anno reg. 7. ſtay'd the common Bell, and aſſembled the Citizens in great number, and when the matter was declared, euery man wiſhed to reuenge the fact. The Maior of the Citty being a wiſe man and a quiet, willed them firſt to ſummon the Abbot of Weſtminſter of the matter, and if hee would promiſe to ſee amends made, it were ſufficient: But a certaine Citizen named Conſtantine Fitz Arnulph, willed that all houſes of the Abbot and Baliffe ſhould be pulled down, which word being once ſpoken, the common people iſſued out of the Citty without any order, and fought a cruell battaile (for Conſtantine the firſt) pulled downe many houſes, and oft times with a loud voyce cryed in praiſe of the ſaid Conſtantine, The ioy of the mountaine, the ioy of the mountaine GOD helpe, and the Lord Lodowike. Commotion in London

Few dayes after this tumult, the Abbot of Weſtminſter came to London, to complaine of the iniuries done to him: which the Londoners perceiuing, beſet the houſe about, and take by violence twelue of the Abbots Horſes away, cruelly beating of his men, &c. But whiles the foreſaid Dawney laboured to pacifie the people, the Abbot gotte out at a backe doore of the houſe, and ſo by a Boate on the Thames hardly eſcaped, the Citizens throwing ſtones after him in great abundance. Theſe thinges being thus done, Hubert de Burge, Iuſtyear of England, with a great armie of men came to the Tower of London, and ſent for the Mayor and Aldermen, of whom hee enquired for the principall Authors of this faction. Then Conſtantine, who was conſtant in the ſedition, was more conſtant in the anſwer, affirming that he had done it, and that hee had done much leſſe then he ought to haue done: The Iuſticiar take him and two other with him, and in that morning early ſent them to Falcacius by water, with a great number of armed men, who brought Conſtantine to the gallowes, and when hee ſaw the rope about his necke, he offered for his life 15000. marks, but that would not ſaue him: ſo hee was hanged with Conſtantine his Nephewe, and Gallyne, that proclained his proclaimation on the firſteenth of Auguſt. Cinic Iuſtice with the cittie of London hath an aſſize. An Iudas burnt. Conſtantine with other hanged. Rad. Coggeſh. Gualt. Coven. Nic. Trivet.

Then the Iuſticiar entring the Cittie with a great army, cauſed to bee apprehended as many as he could learne to be culpable, whoſe feete and hands he cauſed to be cut off, which cruelty cauſed many to flie the Cittie. Mathew Paris. Feete and hands of many cut off. Counterfeit Mary and Child.

The King toke of the Citizens fortie pledges, which he ſent to diuers Caſtles: hee depoſed the Mayor, appointing a Gardien or keeper ouer the Citty, and cauſed a great gibbet to be made, and after heauy threatnings, the Citizens were reconciled, paying to the King many thouſand marks. Pledges of London depoſed.

Anno reg. 7. On holy Rood day was great Thunder and lightning throughout all England, and ſuch great ſhoures of water followed, with great winds and tempeſt, which continued till Candlemas, that the yeere following wheate was ſold for twelue ſhillings the quarter. Tempeſts and dearth.

On Saint Andrewes day a great Thunder ouerthrew Churches, Caſtles, and houſes, ſo that ſcarſely any body eſcaped free from harme by this Tempeſt. A knight and his wife, and eight men of his houſhold, with the fall of his houſe were ſlaine, in Pilardſtone a village in Warwickſhire. Great ruine throwe Churches and Caſtles

King Henry kept his Chriſtmas at Oxford, and after returned to London: In a councell holden at London the Archbiſhop of Canterbury and other the Nobilitie and Barons of the Realme, required the King to confirme the Liberties, for the which the warre was moued againſt his father, and that himſelfe at the departing of Lewis out of England, ſware to obſerue: whereupon forthwith the King ſent his Letters to all the Sheriffes of the Realme, commanding them to inquire by the oathes of twelue lawfull men in euery County, what Liberties were in England in the time of King Henry his Grandfather, and to ſend the inquiſition ſo made to London 15. dayes after Eaſter. 1223.

As the Biſhop of Ely was giuing orders, at Barnewell in the firſt weeke of Lent, there roſe ſuch a Tempeſt of raine and Thunder, that all in the Church were readie to fall to the ground, and ſuch flaſhes of lightning entred the Church, that each man thought it had beene ſet on fire, and ſuch a filthie ſtench aroſe withall, that many of the companie fell ſicke thereof, and hardly eſcaped death. Likewiſe whileſt the Biſhop of London was at Chelmiſford giuing orders, a great Tempeſt of winde and raine annoyed ſuch as came thither at that time: whereof it may bee gathered (ſaith mine Author) how highly GOD is diſpleaſed with ſuch as come to receiue orders, to the end they may liue incontinently, and at eaſe, of the ſtipends appointed to Church-men, and the offerings of the faithfull, giuing themſelues to banqueting, and vncleanneſſe, and ſo with vncleane and filthy bodies (but more vncleane ſoules) preſume to miniſter vnto God the Author of all purity and cleanneſſe. Rad Cogſhall & Matthew Paris write of Tempeſts & Cyclones ſeene

John de Brennes King of Ieruſalem, and chiefe maiſter of the Hoſpitall there, came into England and required ayde to winne Ieruſalem, but hauing rich gifts giuen him, he returned with ſmall comfort. King of Ieruſalem came into England.

Leolyn prince of Wales founded the Caſtle of Mountgomery, and there with certaine Engliſhmen, Hugh Lacy and his retinue, in deſpight of the King, attempted to conſtraine William Marſhall Earle of Pembroke, and others, to yeeld to them: but the whole Countrey arole in armour, and ouer came them. *Anno reg. 8* Tho. Wiker. Mountgomerie Caſtle founded.

King Henrie kept his Chriſtmas at Northampton, with the Archbiſhoppe, and a great number of Knights, but the Earle of Cheſter with other conſpirators againſt the King, kept their feaſt at Leiceſter, threatning the King and his Iuſticiars, for the cuſtodies of lands and Caſtles, which the King required of them. The Archbiſhop of Canterbury and his ſuffragane Byſhops, excommunicated all the diſturbers of 1224. Diſturbers of the King excommunicated.

or the King and Realme.

The Castle of Chester and his complices perceiuing that the King had a greater number of men of armes then they, and also fearing the excommunication, came to the King at Northampton, yeelding their Castles and honours which appertained to the Crowne. Then the King layd siege about the Castle of Bedford, that Falcasius had long kept by strength, which siege hee continued by the space of eight weekes, and tooke the Castle on the fifteenth of August, on which day hee caused to bee hanged to the number of eighteene two men of armes and other Souldiers. Falcasius de Brent, who was fled into Wales, hearing that the Castle was taken, and his men slaine, vnder the conduct of the Bishop of Conentie, came to Bedford and fell at the Kings feete, requiring mercy. The King deliuered him to Eustace Bishop of London, and the Castle was made an heape of stones. There was granted to the King throughout England two shillings for euery carucate of land.

Rad. Coggesh. Bedford castle besieged.

Carucate granted.

Grey Freyers. Regist. Fratrum minorum

The Fryers minors first arriued at Doner mine in number, fiue of them remained at Canterburie, and did there build the first Conent of Fryers minors, that euer was in England: the other foure came to London, and lodged at the Preaching Fryers the space of fifteene dayes, and then hired an house in Cornehill, of Iohn Trauers one of the Sheriffes, they builded there little celles wherein they inhabited. The deuotion of the Cittizens towards them, and also the multitude of the Fryers so increased, that they were by the Cittizens removed to a place in Saint Nicholas Shambles, which Iohn Iwyn Cittizen and Mercer of London appropriated vnto the communalty of the Citty, to the vse of the said Fryers, and became himselfe a lay brother.

An. reg. 9. William Ioynar builded their quier, Henry Wales sometime Mayor of London, the body of the Church, Walter Porter Alderman, the Charter-house: Gregorie Rokesle the Doctor: Bartholomew of the Castle made the Refectory.

1225 Fifteenth. The fifteenth part of all mens goods moueable within the Realme, as well of the Clergy as of the Laitie, was granted to the King to ayde him in his right beyonde the Seas, and the King granted to the Barons and people, the liberties which they long time had sued for: he caused charters to bee made, and sent into euery countrie twaine, one of the common liberties, and the other of the forrest.

Great charter confirmed.

Richard the Kings brother, and his vncle William Longespey Earle of Salisbury and many other, were sent into Gascoyne, who subdued the same, and recouered Poyters.

Gascoigne subdued

An. reg. 10. This yere dyed Hugh Bygot Earle of Eastangles, or Cambridgshire, &c. all whose lands and honours the King appointed to the custody of Hubert de Burgh the Iusticiar.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, from whence hee removed to Marleborow, where hee was taken with grieuous sickenesse, and lay there many dayes like to dye.

1226.

In the meane season, while the King at Marleborow recouered his sickenesse, there came to him William de Longa spata, bastard sonne to King Henry the second, that by gift of King Richard had married Ela the daughter and heire of the Earle of Salisbury, who after long and dangerous trauailes on the Seas, had with much adoe arriued in Cornewall: hee being ioyfully received of the King, made a grieuous complaint of the Iusticiar Hubert de Burgo, because, whilest hee was in parts beyond the Seas in the Kings seruice, the said Iusticiar had sent a lewde man, of base Birth, and euill race, to haue committed fornication with his wife, and would by force haue contracted an adulterous marriage with her. He said further, that except the King did throughly punish the Iusticiar for that fact, hee himselfe with disturbance to the whole Realme, would seeke to reuenge it.

Grieuous complaint made against the Iusticiar.

The Iusticiar being present, confessed his fault, and with great gifts, and other costly gifts, obtained the Earles fauour, so that hee badde the said Earle to a dinner, in the which (as men thought) the Earle secretly poysoned, went to his Castle at Salisbury, where hee lay sicke, and dyed, and was buried in the new Cathedrall Church of new Salisbury, with this Epitaph.

An. reg. 11. T. Radborne.

Flos comitum Guilielmus obyt flirps Regia: longus
Ensis vaginam cæpit habere brenem.

This yere Richard de Marisco Bishop of Durham like an old persecuter of religious persons, for the maintenance of his most filthy quarell he picked against them, came with a great rowt of men of Law towards London, and lodged in the Abbey of Peterborow, after he had daintily refreshed himselfe with costly meates, he went to bed in health, but was found dead in the next morning, hee was buried at Durham, when he had sate Bishop nine yeres. Also Benedict Bishop of Rochester, and Pandolph Bishop of Norwich deceased: vnto the which Pandolph succeeded T. de Blundeuile, Clarke of the Kings Exchequer, through helpe of Hubert de Burgo the Iusticiar.

Bishops buildings.

The same yere also deceased William Brewer Lord de lay Hithe, Lord of Ermister in Deuonshire, and was buried at Dunkeswell an Abbey which he had founded. Hee had beene a worthy Captaine in the holy land vnder King Richard.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Reading, and in the holi-dayes dyed William Earle of Esser, for whome many fayre lamented, because hee was a lustie younge man.

1227.

The King blaming the Cittizens of London, because they had giuen to Lewis the French King, (now deceased) at his departure out of England 5000. marks, hee compelled them to pay the like summe to him, beside the fifteenth part of their moueables: and of the Burgesses of Southampton he tooke one thousand two hundred markes.

King Henry fleeceth many of the Londoners

Constitutions.

First consulting at Oxford the King proclaimed, that foorthwith as he was now of lawfull age, he would take himselfe at his pleasure, and foorthwith made all the Charters of the liberties and Forrests to be fruitrate, alledging, that they were granted whiles he was vnder ward of other, and had not power of his owne body: so it followed, that who so would inioy the liberties afore granted, must renue their charters of the Kings new seale, with such a price as the Iusticiar awarded them.

An. reg. 12.

Richard the Kings brother returned into England, and was made Earle of Cornewall at Westminster. Hubert de Burgo was named Earle of Kent.

Richard Earle of Cornewall.

Earle of Kent.

Shortly after the Barons declared vnto the King, that except he would restore the charter of the liberties of the Forrest, which lately he had cancelled at Oxford, they would compell him by the sword.

Barons threat the King.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Poyke, and from thence went straight to London, but by the way, finding fault with the measures of Corne, wine, and oyle, he brake some of them, and caused other to be hand, commanding greater measures to be made: and the waight of bread to be made heauier, and the transgressors to be grieuously amerced.

1228.

Measure and weight altered.

Stephen Langton Archbishop of Canterbury deceased at his Mannor of Slindon in Sussex, and was buried at Canterbury.

This yere during all the Summer were great Thunders and lightnings, which burned many houses in sundry places, and slew both men and beasts: and in the harueste following, fell great raines which did great hinderance to the inning of the Corne.

Great tempest.

An. reg. 13 Eustace Bishop of London deceased, in whose place succeeded Roger Niger, a learned man, and of much worthinesse, a chanon of the Church of S. Paul.

Also Geffrey de Burgo Bishop of Ely deceased, he gaue two hundred acres of meade in the Marsh of Wisbich to the augmentation of the Priorie of Ely. In whose place succeeded Hugh Norwold Abbot of S. Edmundsburie.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Orford, the Nobles of the Realme being there present, where there came vnto him the Archbishop of Burdeaux being sent from the Nobles of Gascoigne, Aquitaine, and Poytow, whom the King received honourably: there came also other solemne Embassadors out of Normandy of the like errand, that was to solicite the King on the behalfe of the Noblemen of those parts, that he would vouchsafe to come thither in proper person, promising him that they would all come to him with horse, harnesse, and all other furniture, and that all the people of those Countries should stedfastly abide by him, by whose helpe he might get againe all his inheritance. The King taking no other counsell then only Hubert de Burgo his Iusticiar, gaue them answer, that he would deferre that matter till he saw a better time, and so sent away the Embassadors.

1229.

Robert de Bingham, was made Bishop of Salisbury, who did stoutly (by the helpe of God, the King and good people) prosecute the building of the new Church, which his predecessor Richard Poore lately translated to Durham, had begun.

B. Henry dubbed Knight, Iohn the sonne of Hubert de Burgo Iusticiar of England, Richard Wethersef, alias Richard the Great, Deane of Paules, was made and consecrated Archbishop of Canterbury.

This yere the Vniuersity of Paris endured great afflictions and iniuries at the Cittizens and lay-mens hands, whereupon the King wrote his Letters to the Masters and Scholers, that if they would come into England and there continue their study, he would appoint them Cities and Townes with priuiledges and liberties for their abode, as should be to their contentations, 16. of July.

About the feast of S. Michaell the Archangell, the K. gathered together at Portsmouth, all his nobility of England, Earles, Barons, and Knights, with so great a power of horsemen and footmen, as neuer any of his predecessors at any time had the like, where there came vnto him out of Ireland, Scotland, and Galloway, that the number was marueilous, thinking to haue transported ouer such a power as were able to haue won againe into his dominion all those lands that his father had lost: but when they came to take shipping, they wanted carriage for halfe the armie; wherof when the King vnderstood, he imputed all the fault to Hubert de Burgo Iusticiar, and openly called him old traytor, casting him in the teeth, that he had taken fiue thousand markes of the Queene of France, to hinder his purpose, and in his rage, drawing out his sword, would haue slaine the Iustice, had not the Earle of Chester and other runne betweene, and conueyed him away till the Kings wrath was appeased.

Great preparation on to small purpose.

Hubert de Burgo goeth the Kings displeasure called old traytor.

At that time in the same hauen arriued the Earle of Britaine, who by oath was bound to conduct the King into his land: but the said Earle and other perswaded the King to deferre that matter till Easter following, and the Iusticiar was made friends with the King.

An. reg. 14

King Henry kept his Christmas at Poyke with the King of Scots, whom he had bidden to that Feast, the Archbishop of that Citty being present, with the Earles and Barons, and a great family. This feast was royally kept three dayes: and on the fourth, when the Sermon was ended, the KING of Scottes returned homeward with diuers rich guifts, and King HENRY hasted towards London.

1230. King Henry feasted the K. of Scots at Poyke.

Vpon the day of Saint Pauls conuersion, when Roger Niger Bishop of London was at Masse in the Cathedrall Church of S. Paul, a great multitude of people being there, sodainly the weather waxed darke, that one could scantly see another in the Church, and sodainly an horri-

Matthew Paris. Darknesse in Paules church.

hopeth thereof: for light on the Church, that the same was therein as though it would haue fallen, and out of a darke cloud came such lightnings, that all the Church seemed to be on fire, and such a thunder that all men thought they should haue dyed. Thousands of men and women came out of the Church, and being astonished, fell upon the ground voide of all vnderstanding, none of all the multitude tarried in the Church, saue the Bishop and one Deacon, which tried still at the high Altar watching the will of God. And when the ayre was cleansed, the multitude came into the Church againe, and the Bishop made an end of his Masse.

Anno reg. 15. King Henry sailed into Britaine, but lost his time in no good effect.

King Henry with a great army sayled into Britaine, where, after he had ranged the Countrey, and made many spoyles, besieged the City of Nannes, and did nothing but spend great summes of treasure, the Earles and Barons also, seeing that Hubert the Iusticiar would not suffer them to doe any thing against the enemies, they made banquets and feasts as they were wont to doe in England, and tended nothing but eating and drinking: but the power fort of men, to maintaine themselues, sold all that they had, and beggered themselues for euer.

King Henry returned out of Britaine with great losse.

King Henry returned out of Britaine, and so take shipping, and on the 15. of October landed at Portsmouth, hauing spent and wasted an infinite summe of money, and giuen ouer vnto death an innumerable number of Noble men, or at the least brought them low with sickneſſe and extreame pouerty. But Gilbert Clare Earle of Glocester dyed by the way as he came homeward, & was buried at Teuksbury, whose lands and honours the King granted vnto Hubert de Burgo the Iustice.

1235. Subsidie demanded and denyed.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Lambeth, where Hubert the Iusticiar pounded all things for the Feast, which being ended, the King called the Prelates and Nobles of the realme to a Councell at Westminster, where he demanded of them a great Subsidie, which would not be granted.

Richard the Kings brother married Isabell Countesse of Glocester, late wife to Gilbert Earle of Glocester lately deceased, and sister to William Marshall Earle of Pembrooke: and the Marriage being scantly finished, the said William dyed, and was buried in the new Temple at London by his Father. His brother Richard succeeded him in the Earledome.

William Earle of Pembrooke buried in the new Temple.

Oxford and Cambridge-men their rents.

The third of May, the K. sent his Letters to the townesmen of Oxford, and Cambridge, rebuking them for their ouer high renting of their houses vpon the Schollers of the Vniuersities: commanding them therefore to temper themselues in their said rents, and that the same be rated according the auncient customs of the said Vniuersities by two Masters, and two Burgesses. Likewise the King hearing that the Vniuersities were pestered with many that fained themselues to be Schollers, the which were none indeed, he commanded the Sherriffes of Cambridgeshire, and Oxfordshire to make proclamation, that no Clarke should abide in any the said Vniuersities, except he liued vnder the discipline and tuition of some Maister of a Schoole, vpon paine of imprisonment of all such as should so remaine in any of the said Townes aboue 15 dayes after the proclamation.

Nic. Trev. *Annog.* 16.

Leoline Prince of Wales spoyled the lands of the Barons that were on the borders of Wales, whereforo the King gathered a great power at Oxford, & went against the Welshmen, and builded the Castle of Mauld, which being had bene destroyed.

Iewes Synagogue.

The Iewes builded a Synagogue at London very curiously, but the Christians obtayned of the King that it should be dedicated to our blessed Lady, and was since by the same King Henry granted to the brethren of S. Anthony of Vienna, and so called Saint Anthonies Hospitall in London, and since annexed to Windsor Colledge, by Edward the fourth, about Anno 1485. Shortly after which time, the same Church of S. Anthony was new builded by Iohn Tate Maior of London.

King Henry being informed of the hard dealing of the townesmen of Cambridge against the Schollers, in rating their houses rents, directed his Writ to the Maior and Bayliffes, remembring vnto them the multitude of Scholleers repairing to their Towne for cause of study, aswell from diuers parts beyond the seas, as at home, whereof themselues ought not to be a little ioyfull, considering also that himselfe and his whole Realme receiued thereby great honour and commoditie: And therefore in the end commanded them to measure themselues more temperately in rating their said houses, to be rated by two Masters, and two Burgesses, according to the auncient customs of the Vniuersity, behauing themselues in such wise as no further clamour came to him for that businesse.

R. Shephead. Record. Rot. claus. mem. 12. in Cedula.

1236.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, Peter Bishop of Winchester, ministring to him all thinges necessary to the said Feast, did also giue to the King, and to all them that were with him festuall garments.

Raulph Earle of Chester, Lincolne, and Huntington, deceased at Wallingford, from whence his body was carryed to Chester to be buried. Vnto this Raulph succeeded in the Earldome of Chester, Iohn the son of Dauid, the brother of William K. of Scots his sisters sonne. This Raulph had foure sisters, the eldest named Matild, married to Dauid an Earle of Scotland, by whom she had this Iohn: the second named Mabell, married to the Earle of Arundell: the third named Agnes, married to William Ferrers Earle of Darbie: the fourth named Hauisia, married to Robert de Quincy Earle of Winchester.

Although many complaints made against Hubert de Burgo, chiefe Iustice of England, the said Hubert fled to the Chappell of Wentland

Hubert the great Iustice flieth to the Tower.

land in Essex, where he was taken, and the King sent him to the Tower of London.

Great tempest.

The morrow after Saint Martins day began thunders very horrible, which lasted 15. dayes. Great harme was done in London by fire, which began first in the house of Dauid Ioret a Lumbard.

Historia Anglica. *Annog.* 17.

Ela Countesse of Salisbury widdow, founded the Monasterie of Chanons at Lacok in Wiltshire, for William Longespey her late husband, and William their sonne and heire.

1237. Pictauians placed about the King. Matthew Paris.

The King kept his Christmasse at Worcester, where he removed all his officers and Councellors, as well Bishops, as Earles and Barons, and sent for Pictauians, whom he retained into his seruice, and committed to them the keeping of his Castles and his treasures.

Three Sunnes beside the naturall Sun, of a red colour, and a great circle of crimsall colour, from the sides whereof went out halfe circles, in the diuisions wherof, the foure sunnes went forth.

There followed that yere great warre and cruell bloudsheds, and generally great disturbance throughout England, Wales, and Ireland.

Dragons.

In the moneth of Iune in the South part of England by the Sea coast were seene two great Dragons in the ayre, flying and fighting together a whole day, the one chasing the other to the Sea, and then were no more seene.

Robert and Roger Bacon.

The King being at Oxford, Robert Bacon openly preached against Peter bishop of Winchester, for that he euilly counselled the King to spoyle the Realme with Pictauians. Also, Roger Bacon his brother both earnestly and pithily perswaded the King to leaue the counsell of the said Peter. Also the Barons sent messengers to the king, requesting that he would put from him Peter bishop of Winchester, and the Pictauians, or else they would depose him from his Kingdome, and create a new.

The Barons threat the King.

Houses of Conuerts.

The King builded a faire church and many houses adioyning thereunto in the city of London, not farre from the old Temple, but betwixt the old Temple and the new: In the which house all the Iewes and Infidels that did conuert to the faith of Christ might haue vnder an honest rule of life sufficient liuing: whereby it came to passe, that in short time there was gathered a great number of conuerts, which were baptized and instructed in the lawes of Christ, and did liue laudably vnder a learned man appointed to gouerne them. He also builded the Hospitall of S. Iohn without the East gate of Oxford for sicke folke and strangers to be relieued in.

Hospitall at Oxford. Matthew Paris.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Glocester, with a very small company, because many Nobles were gone from him. At the which time there was such a frost, that the corne was destroyed in the ground, & the roots of hearbes in the gardens: this frost continued till Candlemas without any Snow, so that no man could plow the ground, and all the yere after was vnseasonable weather that barrennesse of all things ensued.

Annog. 18. Iohn Rouse. 1234. Great Frost.

Richard Marshall and Leoline Prince of Northwales, with a great force inuaded the Kings lands, and destroyed the same with fire and sword, from the coasts of Wales to Salisbury, which towne also they set on fire. By the perswasion of Edmund Archebishop of Canterbury, the King commanded Peter Bishop of Winchester to goe to his Bishoprike, and also expulsed all the Pictauians into their owne Countrey, and making peace with Richard Marshall and Leoline Prince of Wales he called againe his naturall subiects, and submitted him selfe to their counsell.

Salisbury burnt. The Pictauians expulsed.

Richard Marshall in Ireland raising a warre there, by Geffrey de Marisco, was slaine and buried at Kilkenny, Gilbert his brother succeeded him in the Earldome.

Fitz. Thomas.

This yere was a great dearth and pestilence, so that many poore folkes dyed for want of victuals, and the rich men were stricken with Couetousnes that they would not relieue them: amongst whom is to be noted, Walter Grey Archbishop of Yorke, whose corne being fiue yeres old, doubting the same to be destroyed by vermine, he commanded to deliuer it to the husbandmen that dwelt in his mannors, vpon condition to pay as much new corne after harueſt, and would giue none to the poore for Gods sake. And it fortuned that when men came to a great stacke of corne nigh to the towne of Ripon belonging to the said Archbishop, there appeared in the sheaues all ouer, the heads of Wormes, Serpents, and Toades, and a voyce was heard out of the corne-mow, saying: Lay no hands on the corne, for the Archbishop, and all that he hath, is the Diuels; to be short, the Bayliffes were forced to build an high wall round about the corne, and then to set it on fire, least the venemous Wormes should haue gone out and poysoned the corne in other places.

Matthew Paris. Couetous Archbishop.

Corne full of vermine.

Annog. 18.

The same yere dyed Hubert Foliote bishop of Hereford, vnto whom succeeded maister Robert de Maydenstone, a famous learned man.

1235.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster in presence of the Bishops and Nobles of the realme.

Iewes stole a child at Norwich.

The same yere was brought before the K. seauen Iewes, which at Norwich had stolen a boy, and kept him from the sight of the Christian people, by the space of one whole yeare, and had circumcised him, minding also to haue Crucified him in the solemnitie of Easter, as themselues confessed before the king, and were conuicted thereof, whereforo their bodyes and goods were at the Kings pleasure.

Isabell the Kings sister married to the Emperour.

Fredericke the Emperour married Isabell the Kings sister. The Emperour sent to K. Henry three Leopards, in token of his regall shield of Armes, wherein three Leopards were pictured: he also afterward sent him a Camell.

Camell.

The same time K. Henry tooke Carriage,

that is to say, two marks of siluer of euery knights fee, towards the marriage of his said sister Isabel to the Emperour, with whom he came 30000. marks, besides her ornaments, Crowne, and other goods of inestimable value.

Richard heyre to the Earledome of Gloucester, married the daughter of Hubert de Burgo Earle of Kent.

Walter Brune a Citizen of London, & Rosia his wife, founded the Hospitall of our Ladie without Bishopsgate of London, a house of such great receite to the poore, that there was found standing at the suppression a hundred & fourescore beds for the poore well furnished, and the lands there of were then valued at 4. hundred, seuenty and eight pounds, 6. shillings, and 6. pence by the yere.

St Mary Spittell. An. reg. 20

1236. King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester with great ioy and solace, looking for the returne of certaine Messengers whom hee had sent into Prouence to contract a marriage with Elinor the daughter of Raymond Earle of Prouence: she was married at Canterbury by Edmond Archbyshop of Canterbury, & crowned at Westminster the 20. day of January. To this coronation resorted so great a number of all Estates, that the City of London was scarce able to receiue them. The citie was adorned with silkes, and in the night with lamps, cressets, and other lights without number, besides many pageants, & strange deuises which were shewed. The citizens rode to meet the King and Queene, being clothed in long garments, embrodered about with gold and siluer of diuers colours: their horses finely trapped in array, to the number of 360. euery man bearing golden or siluer Cups in their hands, and the Kings trumpeters before them sounding. The Archbishop of Canterbury did exercise the office of Cozonation. The Citizens of London did minister wine as butlers. The citizens of Winchester take charge of the kitchen, and other Citizens attended their charges.

Matthew Paris Hist. Aurea. W. Packington King Henry married the Earle of Prouences daughter, Elianor.

The Citizens of London Butlers at the cozonation

Ioan the kings Sister, wife to Lewlin prince of Wales, died at Hauering in Esser, and was buryed at Tarent in Dosset.

About this time fell such abundance of raine the space of two months, that the Thames ouerflowed the bankes, causing the Marshes about Wilbich to be all on a Sea, whereon the boats and other small vessels were carried vp the streame, so that besides cattell, the greatest number of men, women, and children inhabiting those parts were drowned: in the great palace of Westminster, men did row with wherries in the middest of the Hall, and they rode on Horsebacke to their Chambers.

High waters.

An. reg. 21 A Parliament at Parton, wherein were made the Statutes of Parton.

Statutes of Parton.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

1237. Richard Pore Bishop of Durham, after he had sate Bishop twelue yeeres, a man of great vertue and profound learning, deceased: he was first Bishop of Chichester, then of Salisbury, and then of Durham: he deliuered the last named from the debt which Richard de Marisco his predecessor had bound him vn, for the summe of 40000. markes. Hee also did translate the Church of Salisbury from a barren dry place, neere to the Castles Castle, vnto a more competent place, and by the aduise of his excellent Artificers, whom he fetcht out of farre Countries, layd a wide and large foundation of a new Church in a more plentifull soyle. To the furtherance of which worke not onely the Bishop, but also the King, and many Noble men did put their hands. More, hee builded an house of Nunnes named the Charnell at Tarent in Wiltshire, and gaue it to the Queene, in which she chose her Sepulture. Hee also founded an Hospitall for the poore, by the Colledge of Vault in Salisbury.

Fryers Eremits of Salisbury.

John surnamed Scot Earle of Chester was poysoned by his wife, Daughter to Leoline Prince of Wales, and dyed thereof. The county came to the KING for lacke of heyres.

County of Chester came to the Kings hands.

Otho Cardinall, by the commandment of King Henry came into England as Legate from the Pope, the Nobles of the Realme not knowing thereof till his landing: wherefore many conceiued great indignation against the King, and said hee peruerteth all thinges, hee breaketh promise, law and faith, in all points, and hath married a stranger without our consent, or knowledge of his friends, and naturall subiects: now hee glueth a thing, and by and by reuoketh it againe: and now secretly hee hath called in the Legate. It was said, that Edmund Archbishop of Canterbury did blame the King especially for calling in the Legate, whereby he knew that great prejudice of his Dignitie would ensue, to the great detriment of the whole Realme, but the King not regarding the Archbishops counsell or any other his Subiects, would by no meanes call backe what he had intended.

An. reg. 22

Matthew Paris. Tower of London. Prodigma.

Murmuring against the King.

This yere passed on a stormy and troublesome weather, and very vnhealthfull, so that no man could remember so many folkes to be sicke of the Ague.

Simon de Mountfort, Sonne to Simon Earle of Mountfort, for doubt that Queene Blanch, Mother to the French king was offended with him, fled into England, and was made Earle of Leicester, and Steward of England by King Henry.

Simon Mountfort the younger Earle of Leicester. 1238.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, and on the morrow after S. Stephens day, hee gaue in solemne marriage to Simon de Mountfort, Elianor his sister, King Johns daughter, widow of William Marshall, Earle of Pembroke.

Richard de Clare tooke to wife Matild, the daughter of John Lacy Earle of Lincolne.

Mathew Paris. Prodigma.

O Sobone being lodged in the Abbey of Dorney, the Schollers of Oxford slew his Master, tooke, who was also the Legates brother, and the Legate for feare gate him into the steeple of the Church, where he held him till the kings Officers comming from Abingdon, conueyed him to Wallingford, where he accused the same Doctors.

Legate puts his Chirgs.

Schollers of Oxford taken prisoners.

Otho de Kilkenny, as standert-bearer of the Schollers, was taken with twelue other, & cast in prison, and long after went from S. Pauls church in London to the Legates house (which was Durham place) vngirded without gowne bare headed and bare footed, whereby they asked him forgiuenes, and then the Legate restored them to their Vniuersitie.

King to Oxford.

A scholler of Oxford hauing himselfe mad, enterprised to haue slain the king in his chamber at Woodstocke: but he was taken, & long imprisonment plucked in peeces with horses at Coventry.

An. reg. 23. Mat. Paris.

1239. Simon de Mountfort, whom the King had made Earle of Leicester (after he had agreed with his elder brother Earle Almericus for the same Earledome) being also Steward of Gascoigne, induced the king of England to recognise, that he would hold of the King of France the land of the Basetes, the chiefe town whereof is Bayon, & was in times past a kingdome of it selfe, and so by acknowledging to be of the fee of the king of France, excluded the king of Castile, who challenged the said fee to belong to the King of Spaine.

An. reg. 24

The Tower of London was fortified, which the Citizens fearing left it were done to their detriment, complained to the King, who answered, that he had not done it to their hurt, but (saith he) I will from henceforth doe as my brother doth, in building and fortifying of Castles, who beareth the name to be wiser than I am.

Queene Elianor bare a sonne named Edward at Westminster, the 22. day of June.

1240. The King kept his Christmas at Winchester, where he made Baldwine de Riparis knight, and also earle of Deuonshire and Lord of the Ile of Wight, in presence of Richard earle of Cornwall, in whose custody Baldwine had beene many yeeres, and had married him to his wiues sisters daughter, the Lady Amicia de Clare.

Mathew Paris. Bulwarks by the Tower.

Richard Earle of Cornwall the kings brother, tooke his journey toward Jerusalem, with many other noblemen of England. Vpon S. Georges night, the stone gate and bulwark which the King had caused to be builded by the Tower of London, was shaken with an earthquake, and fell downe, but the king commanded the same to be builded againe stronger then before. Leoline Prince of Wales deceased, & then betwixt his bastard sonne Griffin, and his legitimate sonne Dauid, Nephew to the King of England by his sister, great and grieuous destruction rose for the principalitie, but at length Griffin being taken by his brother, was committed to Prison.

Monstrous fishes.

Many strange & great fishes came ashore, whereof eleuen were Seabuts, & one of huge bignesse passed vp the riuer of Thames, through the Bridge at London vnhurt, till he came as farre as the kings house at Woodstake where he was killed.

An. reg. 25. Prodigma.

1241. King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, & many noble men with him, where, when the solemne seruice was done in the Church, the King dining in the great hall of Westminster pallace, did there place the Legate in the most honorable place of the table to wit, in the midst (whose the Noblemen did take in euill part) the King sate himselfe on his right hand, and the Archbishop of Yorke on the left (for the Archbishop of Canterbury Edmond was dead) and then all the Prelates and Nobles according to their degrees, for so the King would haue it, and did himselfe set the Cheefs.

Henry 3. Gate.

The fourth day after Christmas the Legat was by the Pope called home to the Court of Rome: whereupon taking his leaue of all the Prelates, he take his journey towards the sea, whom the King with great pompe and an innumerable company of the Nobles, with trumpets sounding before them brought to the Seas; so that on the morrow after the twelfth day, the Legate (after the King with great sorrow for his departure, had vnbared him) take shipping at Douer, at whose departure no man was sorry but the King, and such as the Legate had vnriched.

About the same time Peter of Sauoy, vncle to the Queene of England, to whom the King had giuen the Cardedome of Richmond, came into England.

Peter of Sauoy Earle of Richmond.

The Iewes were constrained to pay 20000 marks, at two termes in the yeare or else to be kept in perpetuall prison.

Gilbert Marshall Earle of Pembrooke, died without the Towne of Hertford, being hurt in a Turnament, and was buried at London in the new Temple. Walter his brother hardly obtained the Earledome, because he procured that turnament contrary to the Kings will and pleasure. This Walter dying without issue, his heritage was diuided betwixt the sonnes of his fiue sisters.

L. Bouerie. Gilbert Marshall buried at the new temple Nic. Triuet.

Bulwarks by the Tower. Mathew Paris.

The walls and bulwarkes that were newly builded about the Tower of London (in the building whereof, the King had bestowed more then twelue thousand markes) were againe vnrecouerably throwne downe, as it were, with an earthquake, for which chance the citizens of London nothing sorry, were much amazed, for they were threatned, that the said walls and bulwarkes were builded in despight of them, to the end, that if any of them would presume to contend for the liberties of the City, they might there be imprisonned and to the end that many might be laid in diuers prisons many lodgings were made there, that no one should speake with another.

The same yere Gilbert Basset, through the stumbling of his Horse, fell in a certaine wood, as he went a hunting in y harueſt time, and brake all his bones and sinewes, whereof in a few dayes after he dyed, and shortly after his onely sonne being but a child, dyed, whereby his inheritance came to Fulco Basset deane of Poyke, brother to the said Gilbert.

Gilbert Basset dyed.

Also about the same time John Byseth chiefe forrester of England departed this life.

The Templars in London in great glory.

The Templars in London, at this time in great glory, entertained the Nobility, forraine Embassadors, and the Prince himselfe very often, insomuch, that Mathew Paris cryeth out on them for their pride, who being at the first so poore, as that they had but one horse to serue two of them (in token whereof they gaue in their Seales two men upon one horse backe) yet sodainly they waxed so insolent, that they disdained other Orders, and sorted themselues with Noble men.

An. reg. 26. Roger Ranulphus Niger, Bishop of London deceased, a man of worthy life, excellently well learned, a notable Preacher, pleasant in talke and countenance, liberall at his Table: hee fell sicke at his Manno; called Bishops-hall in the parish of Stepen-heath, one mile East from London, and there dyed, and was buried in the Cathedrall Church of St. Paul in London. Fulco Basset Deane of Yorke succeeded Bishop of London.

1242. King Henry kept his Christmas in the great hall at Westminster, at which time, when tydings came of Richard Earle of Cornewals comming home into England, Peter of Sauoy Earle of Richmond, vpon New-yeares day, like a discreet man, resigned into the Kings hands, the most famous Castles of England, considering he had taken more vpon him then he was able to beare, least any disturbance should arise in the realme by any complaints: he asked licence of the King to goe into his owne Countrey, but before he had taken shipping, the king sent for him with speed to returne, and against his will he receiued the Castle of Douer to keepe.

Peter earle of Richmond keeper of Douer Castle.

Nicho. Trivet. Ypodigma. King Henry sailed in to Normandie.

King Henry with a great army sailed into Normandy, purposing to recouer Poyteirs, Guyen, and other Countries, but after many bickerings, to the losse of Englishmen, he treated a peace.

Eleanor daughter to Geffrey Earle of Britaine, and Sister to Arthur, ended her life prisoner in the Castle of Bristow, famished to death.

Hugo de Albaneto Earle of Arundell dyed, and his inheritance was diuided among foure Sisters, hee was buryed at Wimondham.

An. reg. 47 Gerua. Dorob. Hubert de Burgo dyed.

Also Hubert de Burgo Earle of Kent dyed at his manno; of Banstede in Surrey, & was buried in the Church of the Friers Preachers at London, which Church was then in Holborne, vnto the which Church he gaue his noble pallace at Westminster, which afterwards Walter Geffrey the archbishop of Yorke bought of them, & made it his Inne, since commonly called Yorke place, now white hall.

Great floods.

The Thames ouerflowed the banks about Lambeth, and drowned houses and fields, the space of fiue miles, and in the great hall at Westminster men toke their horsebackes, because the waters ran ouer all.

1243. King Henry kept his winter in Burdeaur, being so deluded by the Pictauians, and Gascoines, that he was greatly impouerished, notwithstanding all the fouage he had extorted, and treasures that were giuen him, all was spent without profit, for he had lost all his lands and honours as well in Pictauia as in Gascoigne.

King Henry hauing set all things in order beyond the Sea in Gascoigne, toke shipping and arriued at Portsmouth on the 25. day of September.

Boniface sonne to Thomas Earle of Sauoy, brother to Peter Earle of Sauoy, and vncle to the Queene Elianor, was confirmed archbishop of Canterbury, and was consecrated at Lions.

Beatrice Countesse of Prouance and Bargone, mother to the Queenes of England and of France, a comely, wise, and craftie woman, being sent for by the King, arriued at Douer, sumptuously and costly apparelled, and in great estate, whom the Nobles of England receiued with great honour: also the Citty of London was gorgiously prepared against her coming: she brought with her, her daughter Cincia, to be married to Richard earle of Cornewall the kings brother, which marriage was celebrated at Westminster vpon the 23. of Nouember, with great royalty, and company of Noble men, insomuch that there were told 3000. Dishes of meate at his dinner. At the which feast by the deuise of the King, and the said Earle his brother, the brides name was turned, and of Cincie, was called Scientia.

Richard Earle of Cornwall, brother to wife Cincia.

An. reg. 28. 1244.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Malmsbury, where he finished the bridall feast of Earle Richard his brother, to the which were bidden almost all the Nobles of the Realme.

Rainulph de Noua Villa, Bishop of Chichester, and Chancellor of England deceased on the first of February in his Noble pallace at London which he had builded from the ground, not farre from the new Temple, and the house of Conuerts.

Lincolne Inne.

Griffin the eldest sonne of Leoline Prince of Northwales, which was kept prisoner in the Tower of London, deuised subtilly how to escape: whereupon one night hauing deceiued the watch, made of the hangings, sheetes, towels, &c. a long line, and put himselfe downe from the top of the Tower: but as he was sliding a good pace, with the weight of his body, being a very big man & a fat, the rope brake, and he fell on his necke, whose miserable carcasse in the morning being found by the tower wall, was a pittifull sight to the beholders, for his head and necke were driuen into his breast betweene the shoulders: the king hearing hereof, punished the watchmen, and caused Griffins son that was imprisoned with his father to be more streightly kept.

Miserable death of Griffin. Mathew Paris.

The King toke of the cittizens of London 1500. marks for that they had receiued into their citty againe Walter Bokerell, who had bin banished twenty yeares, notwithstanding the cittizens had proued that before that time the said Walter & his brother Andrew by their suite to the King, had gotten him to be reconciled and restored to the kings fauour. Robert Grosted Bishop of Lincolne, with other Prelates complained vnto the King of wast made of the Church goods, by aliant Bishops and Clearkes of this land, whereupon they were shortly boulted.

Cittizens of London fined to the King.

Robert Grosted.

An. reg. 29. 1245. King Henry kept his Christmas at London with great solemnity, many Nobles being present.

On the fiftenth day of January, Queene Elianor brought forth another Sonne named Edmond.

Isabell Balbecke Countesse of Oxford deceased, and was buried in the preaching Fryers Church at Oxford, because she was the foundresse there. Also Baldwine de Riparis Earle of Deuonshire, deceased in his nonage.

The Popes Wardrobe in the City of Lyons was burned, with all that was therein: and many men did say that the detestable Charter of the Tribute of England, which King IOHN did make, was burnt in that fire.

Thom. Sprott. W. Thorne. The Popes Wardrobe burnt.

King Henry being at London, made Richard de Clare sonne to Gilbert de Clare, (so called, because he was borne at Clare in Suffolke, who was already Earle of Glocester) knight, and to the number of forty. The same Richard de Clare toke to wife the sister of the Earle of March, by whom he had issue Gilbert de Clare.

Gilbert de Clare Earle of Glocester.

This Family issued forth Earle of Glocester and Hereford.

An. reg. 30 The King inlarged the Church of S. Peters in Westminster, pulling downe the old walls and steeple, and caused them to be made more comely.

Robert Ros otherwise called Fursan, being made a Templar, died, & was buryed at London in the new Temple.

Walter Marshall Earle of Pembrooke deceased, and was buried at Tintarne, and shortly after his brother Anselme that succeeded him in the inheritance deceased also without issue: and so all the fiue sonnes of William Marshall being dead, their heritage was diuided amongst their sisters.

Sauoy palace builded. Peter Earle of Sauoy vncle to the Queene, whom the king had made Earle of Richmond, builded a sumptuous house by the Thames at London, which place after his name was called, and is to this day, Sauoy, now an Hospitall founded by King Henry the seuenth.

1246. King Henry kept his Christmas at London, accompanied with many Nobles, who had bin with him in Wales.

Bigot Earle of Norfolth made Marshall. This yeare by much intreaty the office of the Marshallship, and the honor thereunto belonging, was giuen to Roger Bigot Earle of Norfolke, by reason he married the eldest daughter of the great William Marshall.

King Henry keeping his Easter at London, dubbed knight Harold King of Man, who had done him homage. And at this time certaine of the noblest Welshmen came into the kings allegiance.

Harold King of Man.

Hermofrodite Monstrous. In the diocesse of Lincolne, there was a woman of noble birth, well-fauoured and beautifull: which was maried to a rich man, and had bears him children; shee also got another gentlewoman with child, & begate 36 sons of her one after another, of euer it was knowne: the womens names were Hauisia and Lucia, as Henry Knigneton affirmeth.

This yeare 1246. the City of Lubeck was destroyed and consumed by fire vpon Saint Barnabas day, and from that time it was ordered that they should not couer their houses any more with thatch or straw, but with tyle or such like: the very same common danger caused London to tyle all their houses, shortly after, especially such as stood close together & in the high streets, for at this time Cheap-side was no maner of street, but a faire large place commonly called Crowne field, and was so called of an Inne or Yoshrie being their the signe of the Crowne at the East end thereof, neither were there then but few streets in London paued, nor in two hundreth yeares after this, except Thames street, and from Ludgate to Charing-crosse, neither was the great City of Paris paued vntill the yeare 1186. where vpon some Chroniclers faintly and foolishly write that the City was from that time called Paris, which before of old time was called Lutetia as I haue said before vpon iust occasion: and in the yeare 1313. was builded the great Pallace in Paris, which was about an hundreth yeares after.

The Citty of Lubecke burnt by fire.

London streets lay vnpaued and vnpaued.

The City of Paris stood also vnpaued vntill necessitie compelled it.

The Pallace of Paris. *An. reg.* 31.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester, and dined with the Bishop on S. Stephens day. 1247.

Earth-quake. Vpon S. Valentines Euen, there was a great Earth-quake in many places of England, especially at London, about the bankes of the Thames.

Three halfe brethren to King Henry. There arriued here in England, the three halfe brethren to the King, to wit, Guy de Lusignan, William de Valence, and Athelmar a Clearke, with their sister Alice: this was the Issue of Isabel sometime Queen of England, Countesse of March, which she had by Hugh Brune Earle of March. These being weary of tarrying in Pictauia, which the Frenchmen had taken, the King went out to meete them, promising them great gifts and possessions, which he after performed more largely then he promised.

The Lady Ione daughter of Gwarin de Montchency was married to William de Valencia the Kings brother on the mothers side, for the said Lady was heire to Gwaren, and was a rich marriage. And Alice daughter to the earle of March, the kings sister on the mothers side, was married to Iohn Earle Waren.

King Henry made William de Valence knight, and gaue him the Castle of Hertford, and the honor thereunto belonging with great treasure.

Castle of Hertford giuen to Wil. Valence.

The copie was so soze clipped, that it was thought good to change the same, and to make it base: Whereupon stampes were grauen, of a new incision or cut, and being sent to the Abbey of Bury in Suffolke, to Canterbury, Dunelen, and other places, forbidding to vse any other stamp then was vsed in ỳ Exchange or Mynte at London, all the old stamps were

Base copies. Record of Bery.

called in.

Pestilence. Matthew Paris. *Anno* 33

A great Plague was in England, so that in September there was euery day nine or ten buried in the Church-yard of Saint Peter at Saint Albons: William Earle Ferrers and Ag. his wife deceased, and William his Son succeeded.

1248. King Henrie kept his Christmas at Winchester. Beatrice the widow of Raimond sometime Earle of Prouance, came into England, with Thomas of Sauoy, sometime Earle of Flanders, to get some reliefe of the King.

Parliament at London. A Parliament was called at London, wherein a subsidie was demanded, but denyed as before it had beene diuers times.

Robert Bacon. Walter Mancklarke sometime Bishop of Carlile, Robert Bacon, and Richard Filacle, all preaching Fryers dyed this yeare, which were the best learned in Diuinitie, and other sciences at that time in England.

Parliament at London. The Parliament began againe at London, wherein the King declared that he would not at the appointment of the Nobles admit a Treasurer, Chancellor, or Iusticiar, whereunto the Nobles answered, neyther would they impouerish themselues to enrich strangers their enemies, and so the Parliament brake vp. Where through the King for want of money was faine to sell his Plate and Iewels, greatly to his losse: and when the King demanded who had bought it; and being answered, it was sold at London, he said, I know that if Octauians treasure were to be sold, the Citie of London would sup it vp, and by it those rusticall Londoners (quoth the King) abound in wealth, and call themselues Barons.

King Henry forced to sell his plate and Iewels.

Anno 33 New Castle burned. The Towne of Newcastle vpon Tine, for the most part, with the Bridge was burned with an vnquenchable fire.

Earthquake. Foure dayes before Christmas was a great Earthquake in England, so that the tops of houses were shaken and thrown downe, walls did cleaue, and the heads of chimnies & towers were shaken, but the bodies and foundations stirred not.

1249. King Henrie kept his Christmas at London, in which solemnitie, Richard Earle of Cornewal, went to Wallingford, where with great number he celebrated that Feast. And Richard Earle of Glocester, not farre from Glocester, with no small glory kept the like Feast. But the King (the feast of circumcision drawing neere) demanded of the Citizens of London new guifts, &c.

Matthew Paris. A Mart at Westminster. This King deuising how to erect money from the Citizens of London, made a Part at Westminster to last fifténe dayes, and commanded that all trade of Merchandize should cease in the Citie those fifténe dayes, which the Citizens were faine to redeeme with two thousand pounds. Besides this, the K. toke victuals and wine, where any could be found and paid nothing for it.

Matthew Paris, Strangers robbed and prisoners hanged. Two Merchants of Brabant complained to the King at Westminster, that they had beene robbed by men of that country, who had taken from them to the value of 2. hundred marks, which Theeues they had seene in the Court, whereupon such as were suspected, were taken to be tryed, but the Country purged them by oath, because they were for the most part all inlaced and giuen to thencrease: the Merchants therefore continuing their suite, said, that if they could not haue iustice, they would stay so much of English Merchants goods in Brabant. Then the King caused 12. men of Winchester to be chosen, who also did quit them that were accused: which thing when the King did see, he caused those twelue to be imprisoned, and sware, that in short space they should be hanged as accessary and periured, & caused other twelue to be empanelled, which last Quest found all, and appeached many especially of Hampshire, which were hanged.

Discord at Cambridge. Great dissention arose in Cambridge betwixt the Schollers and Townesmen, so that houses were broken downe and spoyled, and many men were wounded and slaine.

Anno 34 In the Moneth of June fell great raines, especially about Abingdon, which carried away many Trees, Houses, Beasts, Pils, Bridges and one Chappell not farre from Abingdon.

1250. King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester with great solemnitie.

Matthew Paris. The Fryers Augustines began to inhabite at Woodhouse in Wales.

Matthew Paris. Boniface Archbishop of Canterbury in his visitation came to the Priorie of Saint Bartholomew in Smithfield, where being receiued with procession in most solemne wise, he sayd he passed not vpon the honour, but came to visite them, vnto whom the Chanons answered, that they hauing a learned Bishop, ought not in contempt of him to be visited by any other; which answere so much mislyked the Archbishop, that hee forthwith fell on the Subprior, and smote him on the face with his fist, saying: Inward, inward, doth it become you English traytors so to answer me? Thus raging with others not to be recited, he rent in pieces the rich coape of the Subprior, trode it vnder feete, and threw him against a pillar of the Chancell, that he had almost killed him; but the Chanons seeing that their Subprior was almost dead, they ran and plucked off the Archbishop with such a violence, that they ouerthrew him backewards, whereby they might see that he was armed and prepared to fight.

Archbishop of Canterbury visited S. Bartholomews in Smithfield, beateth the Subprior and Canons, &c.

The Archbishops men seeing their master downe (being all strangers and their masters countrymen borne in Prouance) fell vpon the Chanons, beat them, tore them, and trod them vnder their feete: at length the Chanons getting away as well as they could, ran bloudy and myrie, rent and torne, to the Bishop of London, to complaine, who bade them goe to the king at Westminster, and tell him therof: whereupon foure of them went thither, the rest were not able they were so sore hurt: but when they came at Westminster, the King would neyther heare nor see them, so they returned without redresse.

In the meane season the whole Citie was in an vproare, and ready to haue rung the common Bell, and to haue hewed the Archbishop into small peeces, but he was secretly got away to Lambeth.

The Friers of y order of preachers through Christendome, and from Ierusalem were by a common conuocation assembled together at their house in Holborne by London, to intreat of their estate, to the number of foure hundreth, hauing meat and drinke found them of almes, because they had no possessions of their owne. The first day the king came to their chapter, found them meat and drinke, and dined with them. Another day the Queene found them meat and drinke, and afterwards the Bishop of London, then the Abbot of Westminster, the Abbot of S. Albons, the Abbot of Waltham, and so of other.

English Iewes. The King taking inestimable summes of money of all the rich men in his realme, toke of one Aaron a Iew, borne in Yorke 14000. marks for himselfe, and 10000. marks for the Queene, and before he had taken of the same Iew so much as amounted altogether to 30000 marks of siluer, and 2000. marks of gold to the Queene.

A marke of gold or siluer was 2 pounces.

Tempests on the Sea. In October the Sea flowing twise without ebbe, made so horrible a noyse, that it was heard a great way into the land. Besides this, in a darke night, the sea seemed to be on a light fire, and the Waues to fight one with another, so y the Mariners were not able to saue their Ships: and to omit to speake of other, in one hauen called Hurburne, besides smal vessels, thrée noble and famous ships were swallowed vp of the Waues. And at Winchelsea, besides cotages for salt, and fishermens houses, Bridges, and Pilles, aboue thrée hundreth houses in that Town, with certain Churches, through the violent rising of the Sea, were drowned.

Winchelsea drowned.

Anno 35 A great Earthquake at S. Albons on S. Lucies day.

1251. King Henrie kept his Christmas at Winchester without any great royaltie: and the same Christmas day at night great lightning and thunder happened in the Bishopricke of Norwich.

Athelmare the Kings brother was made bishop of Winchester, although he were neither of learning, or age sufficient.

Wales brought to bee subiect to the lawes of England. In this season Wales was brought to bee subiect vnto the English lawes, and that part which ioyneth to Cheshire, was committed to the custodie of Alan de Zuche, the which gaue for the same to farme it 1100. marks, whereby he supplanted Iohn de Grey, which should haue had it for 500. marks.

Hailes Abbey. The Abbey of Hailes was dedicated, which was founded by Richard Earle of Cornewall, the building whereof had cost him 10000. marks: at this dedication was kept a solemne feast, at the which was present, the King, the Queene, and almost all the Nobility of England, Spirituall and Temporall.

Great tempest of thunder and lightning. On S. Dunstanes day a marueilous tempest of thunder and lightning to the terrour of many, beat downe to dust the chimney of the chamber, wherein the Queen and her children then were, the whole house was soze shaken in the Castle of Windsor, where also in y parke, Oakes were rent asunder, & turned vpwards, mils with their millers, sheepe folds with their shepheards, and ploiwmen were beaten downe and destroyed.

Anno 36. High waters. About the same time the Sea on the coasts of England rose with higher tides then the naturall course gaue, by the height of fiue foote.

Iudings at Rochester. On the eight of December, at a sitting holden at Rochester, the strangers were put to the woorse, and well beaten by English men of armes, so that the dishonour which they did to the Englishmen at Warhely, was now recompenced, whereof sprang great hatred betwixt the Englishmen and the strangers.

Shepheards pretend a pilgrimage to Ierusalem. The Shepheards of France and England take their journey toward the holy Land, to the number of thirty thousand, but their number vanished in short time.

1252. King Henry kept his Christmas at Yorke, whither came Alexander King of Scots, and was there made knight by King Henry. And on Saint Stephens day, he married the Lady Margaret, daughter to the King of England: where was kept a sumptuous feast, the number of knights that were come thither on the Kings part of England, were reckoned to bee about a thousand. The King of Scots had 60. knights, and a great number of other Gentlemen, and did homage to the King of England; this assembly was no small charge to the archbyshop, in feasting them, and their traines, for it was reported that he spent at y first course of one dinner 60. fat Oxen.

King of Scots toke to wife Margaret, daughter to King Henry of England.

60. fat Oxen spent at a dinner.

Lib. Elie. The Cathedrall Church of Ely was dedicated, which the Bishop of that Sea, named Hugh de Norwood, had now builded of his owne proper costs, together with the Pallace there, the King and the Peeres of the Realme, both spirituall and temporall being present, who were all feasted in plentifull manner. This Hugh Norhood builded the Bishops Pallace in Ely, and fortified diuers mannors belonging to that house in other places. Hee builded the new worke of the Church of Ely, toward the East, euen from the foundation, called the Presbytery, which was finished in the space of seuenténe yeares, with the expenses of 2350. pounds, 18. s. 8. pence. He also builded the new Tower of Timber neere to the Galilean.

Church of Ely *Anno* eg. 37.

1253. King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

John Texter. The King tooke forty shillings of euery Knights fee, to make his eldest Sonne knight. He purchased the terme of all Spirituall lizenings at the Popes hands for fiue yeares, as it had beene in eyre of the holy land, but indeed it was to make his Sonne Edmond King of Naples and Sicill. The Liberties of London

Liberties of London for sale

London were seated by the means of Richard Carle of Cornewall, who charged the Maior that he tooke not to the Bakers for their sises of bread, so that the Citty was forced to please the earle with 600. marks, and were restored.

The King imprisoned the Sheriffs of London in the Tower a moneth and more, and after deposed them of their office, because of the escape of Iohn Offeom, a clarke conuict, that was vnder their ward in Newgate, for the death of a Priest that was the Kings allie.

Ypodigma.

Great flood. *An.reg.38* A great flood happened in Holland, otherwise called Hoyland, Lindsey, and Holdernes, Countries of England, the tenth of October, which came into Alingham, where though, a great portion of land, with houses and people were drowned.

Rob. Grosted.

Robert Grosted Bishop of Lincolne, in Greeke, Latine, and other Languages, did by an Epistle reprooue Pope Innocent, affirming that the preaching Freyers, & minorite Freyers were infected with heresies.

Now called Kingsbery.

This Robert Grosted deceased at his mannor of Bugedenam: he was an Englishman borne in Suffolke, whose learning (in Hebrew, Greeke, Latine, and other languages) ioyned with vertue, and good life, won to him perpetuall commendation: he was a manifest blamer of the Pope, and King, a reproouer of Prelates, a corrector of Symonie, a diuelor of Priests, an instructer of Clarkes, a Sustainer of Schollers, a Preacher to the people, a persecuter of vnchast liuers, a diligent Searcher of the Scriptures, a Pallet to such strangers as sought preferment in ỹ realme by ỹ Popes promotions. In house-keeping liberall, in couragall refection plentifull, and in minnistring Spirituall food, deuout and godly affected: in his Bishops office diligent, reuerend, and neuer wearied, he gaue his bookes to the Freyers minors in Oxford.

William de Vescie a noble Baron of the North, died in Gascoigne.

1254. King Henry kept his Christmas in Gascoigne and the Queen kept her Christmas at London, where she lay in childbed of a daughter named Katherine, and was purified on the Euen of the Epiphany, making a royall feast: at the which were present the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Ely, the Earles of Cornewall and Glocester: and many other Nobles: at which time they sent ouer to her husband for a New-yeares gift, the sum of fiue hundred markes out of her reuenues, toward the maintenance of his warres.

The Queenes new-yeres gift to the King.

Edward the K. eldest son.

Edward the kings eldest sonne wedded the kings daughter of Spaine Elianor: his father gaue him the Earledome of Chester, and the gouernance of Guyen and Ireland.

Peter de Egeblanke Bishop of Hereford in the Court of Rome, feigning himselfe Procurator for the Cleargy of England, bound the small houses of religion in one hundred or fiue hundred markes the peece, the greater houses in three hundred, or fiue hundred marks the peece: Saint Cosmesbury was bound in seauen hundred markes, to be paid to certaine Merchant strangers, and all this mony was collected to expulse Manfred out of Naples, Apulia, and Sicill, which the Pope had giuen to Edmond Sonne to King Henry of England.

Rudul. de Dr. retto.

An.reg.39

After King Henry had continued certaine dayes at Bologne, he tooke the Seas and returned into England, landed at Douer in Christmas Weeke. This journey into Gascoigne was right costly, and to little purpose, for the Kings charges amounted to the summe of seuen and twenty hundred thousand pound, besides lands and rents which he vnaduisedly gaue to those which little deserued. In two iourneyes that King Henry made the one into Poytow, which Countrey he left, the other into Gascoigne, which he hardly kept, hee spent more treasure (saith mine Author) then a wise Gouernour would haue giuen for them both.

1255. The charges of Gascoigne.

The 1ift of June the King by his Writ commanded the Sheriffe of Cambridgeshire to see a due obseruation of all such ordinances and prouisions as he before had granted to the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, by his letters patents, for the assise of bread and ale, for house rents, for imprisonment of Clarkes, and deliuery of them against the Chancellors commandement.

Lewis King of France sent vnto K. Henry of England, for a present, an Elephant, a beast most strange and wonderfull to the English people, for that seldome or neuer any of that kinde had beene seene in England before.

An Elephant sent into England.

The twenty two day of November were brought vnto Westminster, 102. Iewes from Lincolne, that were accused for the crucifying of a child of 8. yeares, named Hugh, in despite of Christs Religion, these were vpon examination sent to the Tower: the murther came out by the diligent search made by the mother of the child: 18. of them that were to brought vp to London, were hanged, the other remained long in prison.

Iewes hanged.

The Earles and Barons of England, with assent of the Prelates, caused proclamation to be made through all England, that the Charters of liberties and forrests should be kept, & at their instance Boniface Archb. of Canterbury accursed all those that should breake thē. Lewlin prince of Wales, gathering a mighty band of men, inuaded Chesshire, which the K. had lately giuen to his sonne Edw. and destroyed all things with fire and sword till he came to the gates of the City of Chester: to repelle whose violence, a valiant and famous knight called Stephen Bancan, was sent of the King with an Army, who entring the Lands of a Nobleman of Wales called Rise, surnamed Vaghan, that is, little, being circumuented and beset of his enemies in marish grounds, was slaine, the remnant of his Army likewise eyther slaine, or taken aliue and put in bands, few excepted that escaped by flight.

Nic. Triuet. *An.reg.40*

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester: King Henry made Magnus Rex of Man knight, and bestowed on him great gifts.

Magnus King of Man.

1256.

Alexander

Alexander King of Scots with Margaret his Queene came into England about the beginning of August, who found the King of England at his Manner of Woodstocke, where the King of Scots spented himselfe for a season, & had the lands of the earledome of Huntington restored vnto him, and here he did homage to King Henry. On the Feast of the decollation of S. Iohn, the two Kings and Quenes came to London, where they were honourably receiued and conueyed to Westminster. Iohn Mansil the Kings Chaplain besought the two Kings & other States to dine with him, whereunto they granted; where they were entertained with marueilous cheere, there were 700. dishes serued vp, but the multitude of ghests was such, that vnneth the same sufficed, nor the house could receiue the, so that tents were set vp abroad, the like dinner had not beene made by any Chaplaine before.

King Henry came into the Exchequer, and there set downe order for the appearance of Sheriffes, and bringing in of their accounts, there was fine marked set on euery Sheriffes head for a fine, because they had not distrained euery person that might dispend fifteen pound land by yeare, to receiue the order of Knighthood, as was to the same Sheriffes commanded.

This yere the new worke of Pauls, to wit, the croslle Ile was begun to be new builded.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London, and on Childermas day came Messengers to Richard Earle of Cornewall, who declared vnto him that he was elected King of Almaine.

Hugh Bigot chiefe Iustice of England, and Roger Thurkelby kept their Courts in the Guild Hall of London, and punished the Bakers vpon the Tumbrell, and did many other things against the lawes of the Citie. Richard Earle of Cornwall went ouer into Almaine, and was there crowned King of Almaine at Aquisgraine.

The 6. day of July fell such aboundance of raine, that many houses, bridges and trees, were borne downe. The King caused the walls of the Castle of London, which were sore decayed and destitute of Bulwarkes, to be repayred in more comely wise than afore they had beene.

An.reg.42

Great scarcitie of beues and horses in England whereof they were wont to haue many thousands out of Wales yerely, and all the Marshes were made as it were a Desert.

1258. King Henry kept his Christmas at London with great solemnitie.

For so much as the King had oftentimes promised the restitution of certaine ancient lawes which he neuer performed, the Lords murmuring against him, held a Parliament at Oxford, which was after called the mad Parliament, because many things were there enacted, which turned to the death of many nobles. In confirmation of these acts were chosen twelue Peeres, which had authority to correct the breakers of them: the king his brother, the Noblemen and Barons, taking their oath to see the same obserued. Shortly after, they banished William of Valence, Galfride, Guydon and Aymer the elect of Winchester, all foure brethren to the king on the mother side, and other strangers.

Strangers banished.

Great dearth followed the wet yeare passed. A quarter of wheat was sold for 15. shillings, and 20. shillings, but the worst was, there could be none found for money, whereby though many poore people were constrained to eate horses flesh, and barkes of trees, but many starued for want of food: 20000. in London as it was said.

Dearth of corne.

Cro. Euesham.

A Iew at Oxkesbury fell into a privy vpon the Saturday, and would not for reuerence of his Sabbeth be plucked out, whereupon Richard of Clare Earle of Glocester, kept him there till Sunday, at which time he was found dead. The said Richard Clare Earle of Glocester died, and also his brother William, by poyson as was thought.

A Iew drowned.

An.reg.43 Ex Record. Thom. Wikes.

King Henry kept his Christmas at London with great solemnitie.

1259.

Richard Gray Constable of Douer, & Lord Warden of the ports was this yere removed by the Lord chiefe Iustice Hugh Bigot, who take into his owne hands the custodie of the said Castle and Ports.

This yere a great mortalitie of pestilence reigned, whereof died many thousands of Christian people, amongst whom deceased Fulco Basset Bishop of London, and was buried in Pauls Church at London.

Great pestilence.

In a Parliament at Westminster, the ordinances made at Oxford with certaine other articles annexed, were read, and ratified by a curse pronounced against the breaker of these statutes, or any of them. In the same Parliament was granted to the King a taske, called Scutage, to wit, forte shillings of euery knights fee throughout England, the which extended to a great summe of money: for as diuers writers affirmed, there were in England in the possession of spirituall & temporall persons more then 40000. knights fees, some say 60000. knights fees. Iohn Rouse sayth, that in the 15. yere of William Conquerour, there were found in England, 60211. Knights fees, &c. King Henry had now taken Scutage since his Coronation 11. times.

Parliament at Westminster.

Scutage taken.

The king commanded a generall assembly at Pauls Crosse in London, where he in proper person commanded the Maior that vpon next day following, he should cause to be sworne before the Aldermen, euery striping of twelue yeres of age and vpwards, to be true to the K. and his heires Kings of England, and that the gates of the City should be kept with harnessed men.

Pauls Crosse in London.

Oath to the Maior.

King Henry of England kept his feast of Christmas at Paris in France. Two Romans striuing for Prebends in Pauls Church at London, the one killed the other.

An.reg.44 1259.

Iohn Duke of Brytaine married Beatrice, King Henrys the third his daughter, and was made knight, and with him Baldwin de Reders

wers Earle of the Ile of Wight.

Hugh Spencer chiefe Iustice. W. Packington.

This yeare Sir Hugh Spencer was made chiefe Iustice of England, and Nicholas de Ely Chancellor to the King, and the Abbot of Peterborow Treasurer of the Exchequer, by ordinance of the Barons.

The King repenting that he had at Oxford granted such large Lawes and Liberties to the Nobles and people of the Realme, by counsell of Edward his sonne, and Richard his brother, he sent to the Court of Rome to be absolued of his oath. The Barons & nobles of the realme, held a Parliament in London, in the new Temple, and the King held himselfe in the Tower of London.

Parliament.

Reignold de Moun, Earle of Somerset, and Lord of Dunster, founded the Abbey of Newsham in Deuonshire.

Ann. reg. 45. Newham.

This yeare great strife befell at Cambridge betweene the Schollers and townesmen: and likewise betweene Schollers and Schollers of the North, and South parts. Wherefore the K. sent thither Walt. Giles of Argenton, Ma. Henry of Wotham and Walt. Laurence Broke the twenty fourth of November, authorized by his Commission to appease those tumultes: lest they vsing ouermuch extremitie to one part, and fauour to another, that Commission was shortly after reuoked, and a new charge giuen to Walter Nicholas at Tower, and Nicholas Handlo, two of his Iustices Itinerants for ceasing of those debates. The contention still continuing at Cambridge betweene the schollers and the townesmen in most hatefull manner, many of the Scholl[illegible] by agreement among themselues, departed to Northampton, and there raised a new Vniuersity by y kings consent, which continued not aboue 4. yeares, before it was altered, and the Vniuersitie returned home to their old place at Cambridge.

Cambridge.

1262. King Henry kept his Christmas at Windsore, with his wife the Queene of England, and his daughter the Queene of Scots.

Vniuersitie of Cambridge remoued to Northampton.

In the Moneth of Februarie contention continuing betweene the schollers of Cambridge, and the townesmen, many of the scholl[illegible] agreed among themselues to depart frō thence, to the Towne of North-hampton, and there to raise a new Vniuersitie. Whereunto the K. gaue his consent, and granted them passport, but it was not long ere the Vniuersitie returned to the old place.

King Henry comming to the Tower of London, fortified it greatly, and caused the gates of the Citie to be warded, sending forth commandement to his Lords to come to the Tower, and there to hold a Parliament, which they denyed to doe.

Ann. reg. 46. The Barons discharged Sir Hugh Spencer, of his office of chiefe Iustice, and placed in his roome, Sir Philip Basset without the Kings consent.

The Barons discharged the Sheriffes and Iustices which the King had appointed, and they placed other in their roomes.

1262. King Henry with his Queene and Councell, kept his Christmas in the Tower of London.

On the second Sunday in Lent, K. Henry caused to be read at Paris Cros. a Bull obtained of Pope Vrbane the fourth, as an absolution for him, and for all his that were sworn to maintaine the articles, made in the Parliament at Oxford: then he with the Queene sayled into France, to make a finall concord betweene him, and the King of France for Normandy, where the composition was, that Normandy should remaine to the King of France, paying to the King of England and his heyres yearely 3 0000. pounds Tournois, which is 3000. pound sterling.

The barons of England (Simon de Mountfort being their cheefetain) armed themselues against the King, and all this yeare houered about London, and other places, without any notable act of rebellion, sauing that they robbed aliants, and such other persons as they knew to be against their purpose, especially they slew the Iewes in all places. There was slaine Iewes at London to the number of 700 the rest were spoyled, and the Synagogue defaced, because one Iew would haue forced a Christian man to haue paid more then two pence for the vsury of xx.s. a weeke.

Iewes slaine in London.

Richard of Clare Earle of Glocester, son of Gilbert of Clare being with King Henry in France, deceased, and was buried at Tewkesbury, and Gilbert his sonne succeeded him.

W. Rishanger. Ann. reg. 47.

King Henry with his Queen and Councell landed at Douer on S. Thomas day, and kept his Christmas at Canterbury.

1263. Sir Macy de Besile, a Frenchman, was by the King made Sheriffe and Constable of Glocester, whereunto the Barons being offended, they chose to be Sheriffe, and placed there a knight of that country, called Sir William Tracy, which Sir Wil. keeping Court vpon a day in the Towne of Glocest. Macy the Frenchman with a number of armed men came suddenly vpon him, drew him to the ground, and to the Castle, and cast him in prison: whereof when the Barons understood, they sent Roger Clifford, & Sir John Gifford with a great power to Glocester, who besieged the castle, burnt the bridge, and entred at the last, where they take the said Macy, with all his company, and for that a Carpenter from the Castle with a quarrell, had slaine an Esquire of the Barons partie, Sir John Gifford made the same Carpenter to leape from the top of the Castle, where though he was crushed to death. Sir Roger Clifford take the keeping of the Castle vpon him, and sent Macy into the March. Sir John Gifford take all Macies goods at Shereston, and else where.

Maior of Glocester taken prisoner. Glocester Castle taken by the Barons.

Peter de Egblanuch a Frenchman, bishop of Hereford, was drawn out of his Cathedrall Church by Thomas Turberuill, and other, and sent to the Castle of Ercley, where he & Sir Macy were both committed to safe ward: his treasure was spoyled and his Chanons sent to prison, and thus were Frenchmen serued through the land where they might be found, by them that were on the Barons part.

Bish. of Hereford a Frenchman.

Simon

Simon de Mountfort with the Barons, pitched their tents in Iselewoorth, or Thistlewoorth Parke. The Mannor of the same Iselewoorth belonging to Richard King of Almain, was burnt by the Londoners. They also burned another house of his neere to Westminster.

Yse, Wikes.

In this meane while, the King and Quéene remained in the Tower of London, and when the Queene would haue gone by water vnto Windsore, the Londoners getting them to the bridge in great numbers, vnder the which she must passe, cryed out on her, vsing many vile reprochfull wordes, threw dust and stones at her, that she was constrained to turne againe to the Tower. The Citizens fortified the Citie with yron chaines, drawne ouerthwart their streets, munited the Citie, and did marueilous things.

The Queene chased. Nich. Trineu.

There was a Peace concluded betwirt the King and the Barons, with these conditions, That Henry, son to the King of Almaine, that tooke the Barons part, and was in Prison, should be deliuered, that all the kings Castles through England should be put into the Barons hands, that the prouisions of Oxford should be kept, and that all strangers within a certaine time should depart the land, those except, whose abode the faithfull persons of the Realme with one assent should accept: lastly, that the English men borne, and such as were faithfull men to the Kingdome, should order and rule the businesse of the Land vnder the King. But this notwithstanding, certaine knights of the kings part fortified the Castle of Windsore with victuals and armour. Edward the Kings son came to Bailow, where discord rose betwirt his knights & the townesmen, so that the Townesmen were minded to haue besieged the Castle: which when Edward vnderstood, he sent for Walter Bishop of Winchester that tooke the Barons part, that in his company he might goe to the Court of his Father, promising to perswade his father to peace. Hereupon going forth with the Bishop, till they came to Windsore, hee entred the Castle, to the great mistiking of the Bishop: but Edward shortly returned, and went to meet Simon Earle of Leicester, who with his adherents were comming to besiege Windsore castle. Edward the Kings son met with the said Simon about Kingstone, and offred meanes of peace: but Simon trusting to Bishop Walters counsell, detayned Edward with him, and would not suffer him to depart till the castle was yelded, they that were within, hauing liberty to depart whither they would: and the Strangers that minded to passe the Seas, had safe conducts granted them. Lewlin Prince of Wales confederate with Earle Simon, in the meane time wasted the country of Chester, and the marches of the same, and ouerthrew to the ground the castles of Diffard and Gannoke. After this a Parliament was holden at London, in the which, many that had held with the Earle, went to the Kings part, as Henry of Almaine, Sonne to Richard King of Romans, and other. The Kings part being increased, hee went to Douer, and endeauoured to haue gotten that Castle out of the Earles hands, but he trauailed in vaine.

Peace concluded betwirt the King and his Barons.

Ann. reg. 47.

Tower of London chained. Annales of Hyde.

Iewes fined for Vsury.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at London with the Quéene, the King of Almain and many other great estates.

1264.

Lewis King of France, through procuring of Boniface Archbishop of Canterbury (who in politike Sermons at Paris, as well at the Fryers preachers, as minors, declared the doings betwirt the K. of England, and the Earle of Leicester) toke vpon him to make a peace betwixt them: whereupon the K. of England, with his sonne Edward, and diuers other of the English nobilitie, came to Paris about the twenty two of January, but the Earle of Leicester, fearing the French kings displeasure for his Mothers sake, or some other cause not knowne, staied at home in England and proceeded in his businesse: wherfore Roger Mortimer began to destroy the possessions which the Earle of Leicester held, against whom the Prince of Wales went, and besieged the castle of Radnore, and brought it to yeld.

The Schollers go and Burgesses fight one against another.

Edward the Kings sonne, after his returne from Paris, about Lent, take his iourney toward the March, and passing by Oxford, the Burgesses shut vp their gates against him, whereby he was forced to lie at the Kings hall without the Towne till the next morrow and then departed. The Schollers of Oxford being shut within the Towne, brake vp the gate that leadeth toward Beaumont, for which deed the Maior sent some of them to prison: and not long after, while the Schollers were at dinner, the Maior and Commons with banners displayed, thought to haue spoyled the Clarkes ere they had beene aware, but being espyed, the schollers ranne together, and with bowes and other weapons, slew and wounded the Burgesses and Commons, brake vp many houses, spoyling the goods, and set the houses of the Poytriues (William Spicer and Geffrey Hencley) on fire, on the South side of the towne. Moreouer, because the Maior (Nicholas Kingstone) was a Vintener, they brake vp the Vintrie, drawne the wines, and spoyled them, for the which fact the King caused the Clearkes and Schollers to be banished the Vniuersitie.

Clarkes of Oxford banished.

Edward the Kings sonne take the Castle of Hayand Huntington, belonging to y Earle of Hereford, & the castle of Bacon alias Brecknock, being also rendered to him, he deliuered to Roger Mortimer to keepe, with the territorie adiacent. Robert Ferrers Earle of Darbie (who tooke part with Earle Simon) besieged Worcester, & entring by the old castle, spoyled the Citizens of their goods, and compelled the Iewes to be Christened. The towne of Glocester, that before was taken by y Barons, was Glocester now assailed by Edward the kings sonne, who besieged, entred the castle by great force, and in the next morning by meanes of the Bishop of Worcester, and Reignold Abbot of Glocester, a truce

Worcester besieged.

R was

was taken betwixt the Barons in the towne, and the Kings sonne in the Castle: but shortly after the Barons fled, and the Burgesses submitting themselues, were some of them hanged, the residue cast in prison, grieuously ransomed, and the towne destroyed, from whence the Kings sonne departed, spoyling and wasting the country (contrary to his oath made to the Barons) till he came to Oxford, where he lodged in the house of the Frier preachers, and ioyned his power with the king his father who was lately come thither to make his offering to Saint Frideswide (not fearing the superstitious opinion, that if any king entered that towne, the virgin there would be auenged on him.) The King hauing now with him his brother Richard king of Almaine, his sonne Edward, William de Valence his brother on the mothers side, and Iohn Cumyn of Scotland, with a multitude of Scottishmen, Iohn de Bailliol Lord of Galloway, Robert le Bruse Lord of Anandale, Roger de Clifford, Philip de Marmion, Iohn de Vallibus, Roger de Laborne, Henry Percy, Philip Basset, Roger de Mortimer, with an armie went and besieged Northampton, & the 29th of Aprill breaking the wall, tooke the towne, and in it fifteene knights bearing banners, Simon Mountfort the yonger, William de Ferrers, Peter de Mountfort, Baldwine Wake, Adam de Newmarch, Roger Bartrand, Simon Fitz Simon, Berengario de Wateruile, Hugh Gubion, Thomas Maunsell, Roger Bonteuileyn, Nicholas Wake, Robert de Newenton, Philip de Derby, Grimbald de Pauncefoote: of whom Simon the yonger was sent to Winchester, the residue to other places to be safely kept. Other knights of meaner degree were taken to the number of sixtie, and not a few Esquires: from thence the King went toward Nottingham, wasting with fire and sword the Shyre places of the Barons, and there he gathered his Lords and great men.

Northampton besieged.

Earle Simon went to London, & from thence to Rochester, which Iohn Earle Warren defended, the bridge and first gate whereof when he had won, being informed that the K. was comming towards London, he left the siege and went backe to meet him: but the King turning his way from London tooke the castle of Kenington or Kingston, which was the earle of Glocesters, and then going to Rochester, chased away some that remained at the siege, but slew many moe: from thence he went to Monbzidge, the castle whereof he tooke, and ỳ countesse of Glocester within it: leauing a garrison there, he went to Winchester, where he receiued them of the 5. ports to his peace, and passing further to Lewis, was receiued into the priory, and his sonne into the castle, where whiles he remained, the Barons writ to him Letters, as ye may reade in Mathew Paris, & Nicholas Triuet: but they taking no effect, the Barons in armes approached towards Lewis, minding the Kings people that were gone forth for forrage, whereof the King being warned, hasteth forth to meet them with his Armie diuided into three parts: The first was led by Edw. the Kings sonne, hauing with him William de Valence Earle of Pembzoke, and Iohn de Warren Earle of Surrey and Sussex. The second was guided by Richard King of Almaine with his sonne Henry. The third the king himselfe had in gouerning. The Barons army was diuided into foure wards. The first led Henry de Mountfort, with the Earle of Hereford. The second led Gilbert de Clare with Iohn fitz Iohn, and William de Mountchance. The third in which the Londoners were, Nicholas Segraue. The fourth Earle Simon himselfe led with Tho. de Pelueston. Edward the Kings son with his battell beate on his enemies, ỳ made them to giue back, of whom many were drowned.

Rochester besieged.

Castle at Kingstone or Kenington taken.

Castle of Tonbridge taken.

Battell at Lewis.

The Londoners were put to flight, whom whilest the Kings sonne pursued for the space of 4. miles, he made great slaughter, but being separate from the rest of the armie, he weakened his part soze.

In the meane time many of the kings battell were slaine, and the King of Almaine take in a Wind-mill by sir Iohn de Beuis, so was Robert le Bruis, and Iohn Cumyne, which had brought the Scots. King Henry also hauing his horse slaine vnder him, yeelded to the Earle of Glocester, who sent him prisoner to the Priory. Edward returning, is receiued with sharpe battell, and the Earle Warren, William de Valence, Guy de Lusignan, the Kings halfe brethren, Hugh Bigot, with men of armes to the number of 400. harbergeons got then the castle of Pemsey, and when many were slaine on eyther side, the Lord Edward riding about the Towne, found his Father in the Priory.

Three K. of Almaine taken.

King Henry taken.

In the meane time an assault being giuen to the Castle, which was valiantly defended, the Barons withdrew them: whereupon the Lord Edward being greatly incouraged, and hauing gathered his people about him, would haue made a new battell, so that the Barons sued for peace, which by the meanes of the Fryers preachers and Minors, was brought to passe, that on the Friday following, the Lords Edward and Henry, for their fathers, of England and Almaine Kings, deliuered themselues to Earle Simon, vpon hope of quietnesse & peace that might be concluded. On the Saturday the king licenced them that were about him to depart to their houses, and writ vnto them that were in Monbzidge Castle, that they should not molest ỳ Barons, as they returned homewards: but they notwithstanding being in armes, when they heard that the Londoners which were fled from ỳ battell were receiued into Croyden, they hasted thither, and sleeping many of them got great spoyles. From thence they went to Bistlowe, where they remained till Edward the Kings sonne was deliuered. There were slaine in the battell at Lewes, (which was fought on the twelfth of May) about 4500. men. About that time a great part of Westcheape in London was brent by treason.

Edward the K. sonne taken.

Rob. of Glocester in London burnt.

Earle

Earle Simon led the King and his son Edward about with him, till he had got all the strong Castles of the Land into his hands, and then put Richard King of Almaine in the Tower of London, and Edward the Kings sonne in Douer Castle.

K. Richard.

In the meane time, Roger Mortimer, James Audley, Roger Leyborne, Roger Clifford, Haymo Lestrange, Hugh de Turbeuile, with many other, rose against Simon, who to restraine their boldnesse, affectating to him the Prince of Wales, entred the Castle of Hereford, and caused Edward the Kings sonne to be brought thither from Douer: after this he won the Castle of Bery, which belonged to the Earle of Hereford, and tooke the Castle of Ludlow, and after walking the lands of Roger Mortimer goeth towards Mountgomery, and there taking pledges of peace of the said Gentles, he turneth to the South parts, to meete the power, which was said to come out of France to the Kings ayde.

Castle of Ludlow taken.

Pope Vrbane sent a Legate and Cardinall, the Bishop of Sabzine into England, but they might not enter the realme, the fiue ports prohibiting them: whereupon they called certaine English Bishops first to Amience, and after to Bologne, to whom hee committed the sentence of Excommunication to be pronounced against the Citie of London, the fiue ports, and all those that troubled the King of Englands peace: but the Bishops dissembled the matter.

This yeare about the 20. of June a notable blazing Starre appeared, such a one as had not beene seene in that age, which rising from the East with great brightnesse vnto the midst of the Hemisphere drew his streame, it continued till after Michaelmas.

Blazing Starre. Matth. Trinet. lib. of Glocest.

Ann. reg. 49 1265.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Woodstocke, and Simon Earle of Leicester kept his Christmas at Kenilworth.

The first of February, the King reuoked his graunt of the new Vniuersitie of Northampton, by reason of great discommoditie thereby ensuing to the Vniuersitie of Oxford, whereof all the Bishops of the Realme had giuen him aduertisement by their writing.

The Earle of Glocester forsaketh the Earle of Leicester.

Betwixt Simon of Leicester, and Gilbert of Glocester strife arose, for that Simon not onely kept the King and other as prisoners, but also to take to himselfe the reuenues of the Kingdome, &c. which should haue beene equally diuided amongst them, so that Gilbert of Glocester departing, ioyned to him in league the noble Knights of the Marches, whom Earle Simon had commanded to auoyd the Realme: but Iohn de Warren Earle of Surrey & Sussex, and William de Valence Earle of Pembzoke, had brought a great power by Sea in the West parts of Wales, and arriuing at Pembzoke, Earle Simon leading the King with him, went to Hereford, where he gathered a great power, to oppresse the said knights: but while the Prelats laboured for peace, Edward ỳ Kings son being in the castle of Hereford, is permitted to exercise himselfe on horsebacke in a meadow without the citie by his keepers, where after he had wearied diuers horses, and mounting on a freshe appointed for that purpose, hee rode quite away, and passing the riuer of Wey, with two Knights and foure Esquires, was followed hard by his keepers: but when they were aduised of the Standarts of Roger Mortimer and Roger Clifford comming to his reliefe, they returned, and he escaped to Wigmore. And this chanced in the Whitsun weeke. Lord Edward being thus escaped, gathered an army, confederateth and submitteth to him the countries of Hereford, Worcester, Salop, and Chester, with the townes, cities, and castles: he also winneth by force the Citty of Glocester, which Earle Simon had lately fortified, the Townesmen fled to the Castle, who 15. dayes after yeelded it, and departed. The Earle of Leicester wonne the castle of Monmouth, and layd it flat with the ground, and entring into the land of the Earle of Glocester called Glamorgan and meeting with the Prince of Wales comming to his ayde, they destroyed all with fire and sword.

Castle of Monmouth raced.

Edward the Kings son hearing that many of Earle Simons partakers were come to the castle of Kenilworth, taking with him ỳ earle of Glocester, he departed from Worcester, and came vpon them at a sodaine, where he take the Earle of Oxford, Sir William Mountchalsie, Sir Adam Newmarch, Sir Walter de Solenie, and other: and Simon the sonne of Earle Simon hardly escaped in the castle. The Earle of Leicester hating the king with him, returned out of South Wales, & on Lammas day came to Kemsey, a place of the Bishop of Worcester, and there tarried the next day: Edward the Kings son returned from Kenilworth to Worcester, whose returne being knowne, earle Simon departing from Kemsey by vnhappie chance stayed in the towne of Euesham, for on the morrow being the second of August, Edward the Kings son departed from Worcester, passing the River more to the towne called Clue, closed vp the passage betwixt Earle Simon and Simon his sonne, who was at Killingworth. In the next morning L. Edward approached neere to Euesham on the one side, and Gilbert Earle of Glocester on the other side, and Roger Mortimer on the two other sides, whereby Earle Simon was so enclosed, that he must either fight or yeld: on Friday therefore the fift day of August, their armies encountred each other in a large field without the towne, where the Earles part had the worst: The Earle was killed in the field, and Henry sonne to Earle Simon, Peter de Mountfort, Hugh Spencer Iustice of England, William de Mandeuile, Ralph Basset, Walter Creping, William de Yorke, Robert de Tregoze, Thomas de Hostile, John de bello-campo, Guydo de Baylolle, Roger de Roulens, with Sir John de Saint John, Sir William de Verence, Sir John de Inde, Sir William Troffell, Sir Gilbert Einefield, and other of meaner sort in great number, especially of Welshmen, for almost none of them escaped

Battell at Euesham.

Simon de Mountfort slaine.

Lords taken. Two Bish.

thence, but they were slaine at Tewkesbury. Lords taken at Euesham, sir Vmfrey de Bowne, sir John Saint John, sir Simons sonne, sir Guy, sir Bawdwyn Wake, sir John Vetty, sir Henry Hastings, sir Nicol. Segraue, sir Pierce and sir Robert, Mountforts sonnes, and many other. Simon de Mountfort the sonne comming too late to meete his Father at Euesham, turned backe againe to Kenilworth Castle, and the first of September he released the same, and the first of September he released the

The body of Simon Mountf. and Henry his son, hugh Spencer by Diuine iudgement slaine by the King were buried in the Abbey of Euesham.

King of Almaine deliuered.

King, and the next day following departed with his brother Sir Reginald fitz Pierce, and many other.

Simon Mountfort being slaine, his fauourers tooke the castle of Warwike, brake downe the walls, tooke William Mauduit, and Alice his Countesse, and sent them prisoners to Kenilworth Castle, where they remained till they had paid 1900. marks.

1 parliament at Winchester.

A parliament was holden at Winchester, where all the statutes made at Oxford, were disannulled, and all the goods of them that were against the king, seised. London was in great danger to haue beene destroyed by the King, for displeasure he had conceiued against the citizens, but the citizens wholly submitted both liues and goods vnto him. Eight persons carrying the same submission toward Windsore, met sir Roger Lesborn knight at Colbrooke, who turned them backe againe, and after they had discoursed the whole matter vnto him, he willed them to deliuer to him their submission and he would meete the King in it, which thing they did. After fiue dayes this knight returned to the City, and said the King had receiued their writings, willing them first to take away all the chaines that were in y streetes of the citty, and pull the posts out of the ground that the same were fixed in, and bring both chaines and postes to the Tower of London: then the Maior with fourty citizens should the next day following attend vpon the King at Windsore to confirme their writing, and they should goe and come safe: in witnesse whereof he deliuered them the kings letter and seale, for y space of foure dayes. The next day the Citizens being at Windsor, attended at the gate vntill the K. came from hunting, at which time he would not once looke on them. After the King was entred, they would haue followed, but they were forbiden: shortly after they were called into the Castle, where they were locked vp in a tower with homely entertainment: the next day the king gaue vnto Prince Edward the Maior, and foure Aldermen, there left were committed to seuerall prisons.

Anno reg. 50

1266. Pierce Longston. Robert Brunton.

King Henry with Queene Elianor his wife, Richard King of Almaine, and Ochobone the Legate, kept his Christmas at Northampton.

King Henry came to Westminster, & there gaue vnto diuers of his houshold seruants about the number of three score housholds and houses within the Citie, so that the owners were compelled to agree & redeeme their houses and goods, or else to auoyd them: then he made Custos of the Citie, Sir Othon Constable of the Tower, who chose Bayliffes to be accountable to him, Iohn Adriar, and Walter Harny. After this the king tooke pledges of y best mens sonnes of the citty, the which were put in the tower of London, and there kept at the costs of their parents. By great labour & suite made at the foresaid persons which were in Windsor Castle, eight onely except, were deliuered, and the king agreed with the Citizens for 20000. markes to be paid, for the leauying of which fine, were taxed as well seruants as houholders, and many refused the liberties of the citty to be quit of the charge.

The Castle of Deuer was yeelded to Edward the kings sonne, into the which her put Guy de Mountfort to be kept.

The Countesse of Leicester, wife to Simon Mountfort, yeelded the castle of Pemsey to K. Henry her brother, who forthwith banished her the realme of England for euer. About Alhalowntide the Queene of England returned from beyond the Seas, with her came the Legate, named Ochobone, who shortly after his comming, in councell holden at Northampton accursed all the Bishops and Priests that had ayded Earle Simon against the K. especially he cursed by name Walter of Worcester, Henry of London, and Stephen of Chechester, and the Bishop of Lincolne. Worcester shortly after deceased, the other three went to Rome, and were assoiled. The Legate also published the Popes bull, for the tenthes of Churches to be payd to the King for three yeere. Sir Simon the younger fled from Kenilworth castle to the disherited knights, who then were in the Ile of Ouholme, where he remained not long, for through messengers with faire promises, and hostages giuen by Edw. the kings sonne, hee forsaking them went to London to the K. and his Nobilitie, but being priuily warned of their guile, he made an escape and got ouer into France.

King Henry banished his brother.

Rob. of Glocest.

The keper of Guy Mountfort, about Easter being bribed, let him goe, and went with him into France: this Guy went into Tuscane, and serued Earle Rufus, in whose warre waring famous, hee obtained to haue his daughter in marriage.

Robert Ferrers Earle of Darbie, Henry Hastinges, Baudwyne Wake, Iohn Daruile, and other with their power being in y Towne of Chesterfield in Darbyshire, there came against them Iohn earle Waren, Sir Henry of Almain, Sir Waren of Basingborn, and many other knights, who on Whitson-euen met without the towne on hunting. Sir Baudwyne Wake, Sir Henry Hastings, Sir Gregorie Caldwell, Sir Iohn Clinton, Sir Roger Mandeuil, sir Ric. Caldwel, and to the number of 22. knights all vnder one speare, all which they chased and put to flight: whereof when Sir Iohn Daruill being in the towne had vnderstanding, hee with a small company rode out, pierced through the host, wounding many and escaped. Earle Waren entring the towne slew many a man, and tooke the Earle Ferrers, who was sicke of the Gout, and had that day beene letten blood: him they sent to the

Kenilworth castle besieged.

Baptistes Chesterfield.

the Tower of London, from whence but lately he had beene deliuered. Henry Hastings and his company comming to Kenilworth, found there Sir Iohn de Emuil, and many other valiant knights. Sir William de la Knowe, and Sir Iohn de la Ware, had well stored the Castle of all things necessary. King Henry hasting thither, began his siege the morrow after Midsommer day, which siege continued till Christmas after, for they within the Castle, not fearing his force which was great, set open their gates, and neuer closed them day nor night, come who so would they came to their roll, so that many a man was slaine on both sides, and many were taken and ransomed. At length the Legate, the Archbishop, and two other Bishops, came to make accord betweene the King and the disherited, and also them of the Castle: but the disherits, nor they of the Castle would grant to the Kings will, wherefore the Legate accursed them, and all that were of their accord: but they of the castle not regarding the Legate nor his cursing, in mockage therof, clothed a priest their surgeon, Philip Porpeis, in a coape of white, and setting him on the Castle wall, as a white Legate against the red, made him to curse the King, the Legate, and all their partakers. Whiles this businesse lasted at Kenilworth, the disherites take the Isle of Ely, and strengthened it in such wise, that they held it long: they robbed Norfolke, Suffolke, and Cambridge-shire, they spoyled the citie of Norwich, and ransomed y rich men at their pleasure. At Barthol-mewtide the K. held a Parliament at Killingworth, wherein by his Barons were chosen 6. persons, which being sworne, chose to them other fiue, these fiue, to make an accord betweene the K. and the disherites: the first fiue were, Walter Gifford Bishop of Bath, Nicholas of Ely, Bishop of Worcester, and Walter bishop of Ereseter, Roger de Sumercote, Robert Walrond, and Alaine de la Souch. Barons: these fiue chose to them Gilbert Earle of Glocester, Humfrey Earle of Hereford, the Bishop of S. Dauids, Sir Iohn Baylol, Sir Philip Basset, and Sir Waren de Basingborne: if these fiue could not agree, the Legate, and Henry forne to Richard King of Almaine should be Umpiers, these met and agreed at last.

The Legate accursed those in Kenilworth castle, and they in the castle accursed him.

The city of Norwich spoiled.

Parliament at Killingworth.

Anno reg. 51 By the Kings commandement, the Bishops, Abbots, Priors, Earles, Barons, and knights of the realme were assembled at Northampton on the Tuesday next before Alhalowndaye, there to vnderstand and confirme by statute what the fourenamed twelue states had decreed for the state of y kingdome, which was for the Barons, that none should be disherited but the Mountforts and the Ferrers; the other should redeeme their lands with money, at the hands of them who had the same in possession of the Kings gift, so that none payd aboue fiue yeares value, nor vnder three yeares value, which was the least. and this shall be alleged according to the quantity of their trespasse. The siege of Kenilworth yet continuing, they within the Castle began to be sore troubled with the fire, and also were without hope of succour to come to them, whereupon on Saint Thom. day before Christmas they yeelded the Castle to the King, with condition to depart with life and limbs, without losse of goods, or imprisonment, and not to be disherited.

Kenilworth Castle besieged.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Oxford. 1281.

Such of the disherited persons, as liked not the ordinance of Kenilworth, whose Captaine was Iohn Cumi after they had taken the citie of Lincolne, and spoyled the Iewes, they fled againe to the Isle of Ely, whose comming abroad when the King with a great army had stopped, Edward the kings sonne with bridges made of hurdles and boords, in place conuenient, as the inhabitants there about had instructed him, hee entred vpon the Isle, some of them within yeelded them to him, the other being dispersed by flight. While these things were doing a new trouble began, for the Earle of Glocester taking part with the disherites, came with an army gathered in Wales. Glocester tooke into London the 7. of Aprill: therein he built the citie of bed bulwarkes, cast ditches and trenches in diuers places.

The Earle of Glocester tooke London.

The King gathered an army at Windsor, and the 5. of May, he with an 109. Enlignes came towards London, he pitched his tents at Stratford, and tarried there the space of one month, where many intreated to make peace.

Annales of Hyde.

The 6. of June, the Earle of Glocester in peaceable manner reduced the Citie vnto the King againe, and then many that were disherited were reconciled, at the instante of the Legate and the said Earle. Foure that bare the cognisance of the Earle of Darby, were put in sackes and cast into the Thames. Thomas Fitz Theobald and Agnes his wife, sister of Thomas Becket Archbishop of Canterburie, gaue to the matter and bzethren of the hospital called St. Thomas of Acres beyond the Seas, all the land with the appurtenances that some times was Gilbert Beckets, father to Thomas Becket, in which land the said Thomas Becket was borne, to make there a Church.

Worcestershire p. 81.

About Michaelmas the K. came to Shrewsbury, to passe into Wales, there to vanquish the Prince of Wales, Lewline, who had aided Simon Earle of Leicester, but he sending to the K. granted him 32. M.l. sterling to haue his peace, and by the Legates meanes there was reclaimed to the Prince, the land of foure Cantreders, which by law of armes the King had taken from him.

Nicho. Triuet.

Peace with the Prince of Wales.

An. reg. 52.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster. 1282.

Ochobone the Legate calling a councell at London, obtained many things in reformation of the English Church. In which Councell, he absolued Simon de Mountfort Earle of Leicester, and other which had beene excommunicate by reason of the troubles past.

Variance fell betweene the fellowship of Goldsmithes and Taylors of London, causing great rustling in the Citie, and many men to be slaine, for which cyot thirteene of the Captaines were hanged.

Tryot in Lon-don.

Parliament at Marleborow.

The King held a Parliament at Marleborow, in the which were made the Statutes of Marlborow.

Ann.reg.35

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster.

1269. Great frost.

The River of Thames was so hard frozen, from Saint Andrewes tide, to Candlemas, that men and beasts passed on foot from Lambeth to Westminster, the merchandize was carried from Sandwich, and other hauens to London by land.

Edmond the Kings sen married Auelina, the daughter of William de Albemarle Earle of Holdernes, she was heyre both to her father and mother, by reason whereof, he was to haue with her, the County of Deuonshire, and the Lordship of the Ile of Wight; but he deceased before both the father and mother, and left all.

A discord was raised betweene Edward the Kings sonne, and Gilbert de Clare, Earle of Gloucester, because of the ouermuch familiarity, which the sayd Edward was sayd to haue with the wife of the sayd Earle. And shortly after, the Earle of Glocester take one at Cardiffe, that went about to haue poysoned him.

Ann.reg.54 The thirteenth of October, King Henry did translate with great solemnity, the body of King Edward the Confessor, that before lay in the side of the quire, where the Monkes did sing at Westminster, into a new Chappell at the backe of the high Altar, which he had prepared for him of a maruellous workmanship, bestowing on him a new Tombe, or Shrine of gold, on the day of his translation.

1270. King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester. The Priory of Wimondham was the Kings Treasurer, Nicholas Leucanor keeper of his Wardrobe, and Roger de Wanton was Marshall.

The Nobles of England, by the kings commandement, assembled at London to treate of diuers matters, amongst the which one was, that all men should before the Iustices shew by what right they held their lands, which matter did much molest the people, vntill Iohn Warren Earle of Surrey appeared, who being asked by what right he held his lands, he drew sodainly out his sword, and said, by this I hold my Grandfathers lands, and with this I will keepe them. Upon multiplying of words, the Earle made an assault vpon Allen de la Zouch Lord chiefe Iustice of Ireland, before the other Iustices of the bench, and cruelly wounded him, whereof he dyed. And shortly after the same Iohn Earle of Surrey by the oath of 25. Knights at Winchester, affirmed, that he did not commit that fact vpon any pretended malice, neither in contempt of the King, and so for the summe of 1200. marks was reconciled.

Annales of Hyde.

Edn. Campis

Tho. Wikes. 1270. Allen de la Zouch slaine.

Ann.reg.55. Edmond, and many other Nobles sayling into Asia against the Infidels, by his policy and manly acts so demeaned himselfe, that oftentimes he put the Turkes to great discomfiture, for despite whereof they subomed a Sarazene to wound him with a venemous dart, wherof he was long sicke. Henry sonne to Richard K. of Almaine as he went through Tuscane, at Viterbe was slaine by Guy de Mountfort.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Winchester.

1271. The steeple of Bow in Cheape fell downe and slew many people, men and women, that then were in the Church, or dwelled neere there about. Wil. Rishanger

The 28. of January, Richard King of Almaine and Earle of Cornwall, brother to king Henry, deceased in the castle of Barkhamsted and was buried at Hailes an Abbey of his foundation. His sonne Edmond succeeded in the inheritance of his Earledome.

An.reg.56. Diuers bournes sodainly brake out of the hollow places of the earth, and ouerflowed a great part of Canterbury citie, the streame wherof was so swift and violent, that it bare downe buildings and houses, and drowned many people. The. de Wikes W. Thorn. Lib. Kenilw.

Philip Basset Baron deceased.

1272. In June began a great ryot in the Citie of Norwich, through the which the Monastery of the Trinity was burned, whereupon the King rode downe, and making enquiry for the chiefe doers thereof, caused xxx. of them to be condemned, drawen, hanged and burnt. W. Rishanger. Riot at Norwich.

An.reg.57 King Henry being sicke, called before him Gilbert de Clare, Earle of Gloucester, and caused him to be sworne to keepe the peace of the land, to the behoofe of Edward his Son, and then dyed the fifteenth of November, in the yeare 1272. when he had liued 65. yeares, and raigned 56. yeares, and 28. dayes, he was buried at Westminster, which Church hee had newly builded, he left issue by Elianor his wife, Edward his eldest sonne, vnto whom he had giuen the Earldome of Chester, who succeeded him in the Kingdome, Edmond his second son vnto whom hee had giuen the Earledome of Lancaster, and after the death of Simon Mountfort and Robert Ferrers, the Earledomes of Leicester & Darby: and two daughters, Beatrice and Margaret. Lib. Trinitat. I. Trokloa.

The 47. of Hen. 3. March 6. the K. wrote to the sheriffe of Kent, commanding him to restore to the citizens of Canterbury all their liberties which the King had seized into his hands for their offences offered to Hermonde Braderue, sometimes the Kings seruant, and certaine messengers of the Duke of Brunswick comming to the K. vpon his commandement, because the said citizens had already payd 20. l. to master Henry of Gaunt the keeper of the Kings wardrobe.

Anno 53. *H.* 3. The citie of Bourdeaux was committed to Hugh the sonne of Otho, and the Tower of London to Edward the Kings eldest sonne.

Note whereas in Holinsheds Chronicles & others, they say that the Iustice itenerants began in E. 1. time. I find them in Ar. 11. *H.* 3.

Anno 30. *H.* 3. *S.* Archdeacon of Chester receiued the Kings Seale at Westminster on Sunday in the midst of Lent, after dinner.

The 49. of *H.* 3. the K. wrote to a release of

of Hakirton to be certified by her of the liberties belonging to the Stewardship of England touching the County of Leicester.

The warre at Grisham 14. August. 49. H. 3.

1273 June 16. Queen Eleanor. 1272. Wife had ringed yeares and moneth, before fay that widow the first of the nobles Sir Ion and Iude 08.

H. 3. died on Wednesday, in the feast of Edward ỹ Confessor in the night, and in the morning 16 Kirkeby deliuered the same Kings seale vnder his owne seale of Peter of Winton keeper of ỹ Warderobe, to Willia Archbishop of Pozke, R. Agnilus and the rest of the counsellours, in the presence of the said Counsellours.

In the second yeare of E. 1. dated the 9. of December from Northampton the King directed his commandement to the Maior and Sheriffs of London to make publike Proclamation in London that all Merchant Aliens within 20. dayes after the date of those the Kings letters should depart out of the said citty and out of England vpon forfaiture of their bodies and goods, and if any stayed after that time, then to arrest and attach their bodies and goods.

The 23. of E. 1. the King granted libertie to John de Lentur Citizen of London to be freed from all manner of tallages, impositions, watchings &c. and that he should not bee made Maior, Sheriff, Escheator, Cozoner, Alderman nor other officer, &c.

Anno 48. H. 2. Richard the King of Almaine had the custody of England, the 7. January, 20. January, and 25. of February.

The 49. of H. 3. was the first warres of the Barons Anno 1263.

The 7. of the Ides of June, the dominicall letter G. An 49. H. 3. was the peace concluded be. twixt the king and the Barons. See the matter of it.

P. the Bishop of Hereford was taken and brought to Ordely: the conflict at Lewes was the 8. of March, 48. H. 3. 55. H. 3. the Priory of Rauenstone was founded by the King of the gods of Peter de Chacepork then dead. He was Treasurer of England.

Anno 53. H. 3. the King committed to Edward his sonne the custody of the Tower of London 17. Feb. Stephen Eddeworth had the keeping of it before. The 50. of H. 3. 20. of April the King confirmed their liberties and graunted them liberty to elect some discreet man of the city who stood not against the K. before to be Sheriff of London and keeper of the city, &c

The 50. of H. 3. 7. of Aug. William Filius Ric. Custos Ciuitatis London & vocatur vicecomes London. 27. Aug. Anno Eodem.

The 50. yeare of H. 3. the Citizens of London fined with the King in 2000. marks for his good will and fauor again, for which he forgaue them all their trespasses and outrages which they did to him, and Prince Edward his sonne, and to the King of Almaine in the strife and hurly burly in England. Teste Rege apud Westminster 9. Febr.

The Burgesses of Oxford fined fiue hundred marks to Edward the Kings eldest sonne for which the King pardoned them.

50. H. 3. 3. Apr. apud Westminster.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* EDVVARD LONGSHANKE.

An. reg. 1.

EDward the first after the Conquest, sonne to Henry the third borne at Westminster, surnamed Lógshank, being aged 33. yeres, began his raigne the 16. day of Nouember, in the yere of our Lord 1272. being then in the parts beyond the Sea towards Ierusalem. Of stature he was tall and mighty of body, nothing grosse: his eyes somewhat blacke, and in time of anger fierce, of such noble and valiant courage, that he neuer fainted in most dangerous enterprises: of excellent wit and great towardnesse.

1272 Bishops dyed ceased.

An.reg.2. The Pope granted to king Edward ỹ tenth of all Ecclesiasticall benefices, as well temporall as spirituall for one yeare, and the like to his brother Edmond for another yeare, in recompence of their expences made in the Holy land.

1274. King Edward with Elianor his Queen kept his Christmas in Gascoigne.

Robert Stichell bishop of Durham deceased when he had sate Bishop fourteene yeeres, he founded the Hospitall of Githam. Unto who succeeded Robert de Insula: Laurence bishop of Rochester deceased: unto who succeeded Walter Merton, the Kings Chancellor, that founded Merton Colledge in Oxford. Also William Bishop of Bath and Welles deceased: unto whom succeeded Robert Burnell. Henry the Kings Sonne deceased, and was buried at Westminster. Auelicia wife to Edmond, brother to King Edward, Countesse of Albemarle deceased, and W. de Howeton Abbot of Croxton deceased, who amongst other gifts to that house, gaue a Bible in nine tomes faire written and excellently well gloged by Salomon Archdeacon of Leicester, and payd for it fiftie markes sterling.

The second day of August King Edward came into England from the Holy land, and on the fifteenth of August, he with Elianor his wife were crowned at Westminster by Robert Kilwarby Archbishop of Canterbury. At this coronation 500. great horses were turned loose, catch them who could.

Alexander King of Scots did homage to King Edward.

The king caused Leoline Prince of Wales to be summoned to his Parliament at Westminster, but he would not come, saying, he remembred the death of his father Griffin.

On S. Nicholas Euen were great Earthquakes, lightnings and thunder, with a huge Dragon, and a blazing starre, which made many men sore afraid.

Eltham. Iohn Rouse.

In a Parliament at Westminster Mary was forbidden to the Iewes, that they might be knowne, the king commanded them to weare a tablet the breth of a palme vpon their outmost garments. The king also commanded the treasurer and chamberlaine of his Exchequer, to deliuer out of his treasure vnto Gilbert Andeward 200. marks, towards the worke of the ditch about the Tower of London, of the fines taken of diuers Merchants or Mercers of London. He also ordained, that Bakers making bread lacking weight, assigned after the pace of Corne, should first bee punished by losse of their bread: the second time by imprisonment: and thirdly by the pillory: millers for stealing of corne, to be chastised by the Tumberell.

Anno reg. 3.

1275. First rot of Sheepe. H. of Leicester. T. Walsingham.

A rich man of France brought into Northumberland a Spanish Ewe, as big as a calfe of two yeares, which Ewe being rotten, infected so the Country, that it spread ouer all the realme. This plague of murrein continued 28. yeare ere it ended, and was the first rot that euer was in England.

King Edward went toward Chester, which is in the borders of Wales, that thither Leoline prince of Wales might haue more free access vnto him: But he denying to come to do his homage, the king gathered an host of men minding to expell the Prince out of his heritage. He builded the Castle of Flint, strengthened the Castle of Ruthland, and other, against the Welshmen.

J. Rouse. Castle of Flint

An. reg. 4. Borland.

Amicia Countesse of Deuonshire, and Lady of the Ile, founded the Abbey of Borland, for Gilbert Clare Earle of Glocester and Hereford her Father, Isabel her mother, and Baldwine Earle of Deuonshire.

John Briton the skilfull Lawyer, who was become Priest and Bishop of Hereford, deceased, he compiled a Booke of the Lawes called Briton.

1275. Earthquake.

The eleuenth day of September, there was a generall Earthquake, by force whereof, the Church of S. Michael of the Mount without Glastenbury, fell to the ground, and peeces of many famous Churches in England fell, by meanes of the same Earthquake.

Cant. Record. Preaching Friers church founded by Raynards Castle, before which time, there Church was in Holborne.

Gregory Rokesly, and the Barons of London, granted and gaue to the Archbishop of Canterbury Robert Kilwarby, two lanes or wayes next the street of Raynards Castle, and the Tower of Puntifichet to be destroyed, in the which place, the said Robert builded the late new Church of the Blacke Friers with the rest of the stones that then were left of the said Tower.

Edmond Earle of Lancaster the kings brother, married the Queene of Nauarre.

An. reg. 5.

Elianor the Queene brought a daughter named Beringaria.

The statute of Mortmaine was enacted.

Michael Tony was hanged, drawne and quartered for treason.

1277.

King Edward caused the Barons of the Orchequer, and Iustices of the Bench to remoue from London to Shrewsbury, that hee might the better bring neare to the Welshmen tame them. He also sent a great army into Wales vnder the leading of Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne: at which time the king himself led an Army toward Suffolke and Norfolke, and kept his Easter at Norwich, returning from thence to London by the Sea Coast of Suffolke and Essex, and shortly after Midsommer carried almost all the Soldiers of England into Wales, as farre as Gamron, and to the Anglesey, whither Leoline came to redeeme it. Finally, a peace was made: king Edward builded a Castle at Aberistwith, and returned into England with great honor, hauing received Leoline Prince of Wales with a kisse of peace, brought him vp to London, where after he had kept his Christmas with the king at Westminster, he departed toward his owne Country.

Anno reg. 6.

The same yeare the king gaue to Roger Mortimer, the Land of Harry, and Radnor, with the Castle of Dolwozon, the which castle Leoline had founded.

Lib. Kenilw.

Toward the charges of these warres, the twentieth part of all mens goods was granted to the king.

1278.

Leoline Prince of Wales toke to wife the daughter of Simon de Mountford at Worcester.

Lib. Kenilw.

In the month of Aprill, the King, the Queen, and the Archbishop of Canterbury with their traines, take their iourney toward Glastenbury, and there sojourned, where the king caused the Tombe of Arthur to be opened, whose bones he caused to be removed out of the said tombe, to behold the length and bignes of them and then returned toward London.

Arthurs bones remoued.

An. reg. 7. Parliament. Glocester.

King Edward held his Parliament at Glocester, in the which parliament were certaine statutes made, which vnto this day are called the statutes of Glocester.

Walter Merton Bishop of Rochester deceased and was buried at Rochester.

Bishops deceased.

Reformation was made for clipping of the Kings coine, for which offence 267. Iewes were put to execution.

Iewes executed.

1279 Round table. at Rilling-worth. I. Rouse.

The worthy soulder Roger Mortimer, at Killingworth, appointed a knightly game, which was called the Round Table, of 100. knights, and so many Ladies, to the which, for the exercise of armes, there came many warlike knights from diuers kingdomes.

John Peckham a Frier Minor borne in Sussex besides Lewes, after the resignation of Robert Kilwarby, was made Archbishop of Canterbury.

Walter Gifford Archbishop of Yorke deceased, and was buried at Yorke, to whom succeeded William Wickwaine Chancellor of the same Church.

The Iewes at Northampton crucified a Christian boy vpon Goodfriday, but did not throughly kill him, for the which fact many Iewes at London after Easter were drawne at horse tailes and hanged.

Iewes hanged

Whereas before this time, the penny was wont to haue a double crosse, with a cresse, in such

First halfe pence and farthings round,

such sort, that the same might easily be broken in the middest, or into foure quarters, and so to be made into halfe pence or farthings: which order was taken in the yeare of Christ

Matt. Paris.

1106. the 7. of H. the 1. it was now ordained, that pence, halfe pence, and farthings, should be made round, whereupon was made these verses following.

Robert Brune.

Edward did smite round pony, halfe peny farthing.
The crosse passes the bond of all throughout the ring:
The Kings side was his head, and his name written,
The cresse side, what Citie it was in, coyned or smitten.
To poore man, ne to Priest, the peny fraises nothing,
Men giue God aye the least, they feast him with a farthing:
A thousand two hundred, fourescore yeares add mo,
On this money men wondred, when it first began to goe.

The old money was not forbidden to goe with the new: and besides these monies, there was coyned groates, containing foure pence the peece.

Regist. of Bury

The pound of esterling money at this time containing 12. ounces, to wit, fine siluer (such as men take into foyle or leaues, and is commonly called siluer of Gutherom lane) 11 ounces, 2. esterlings, and one sterling, and the other 17. d. ob. q. to be alay. Also the pound ought to wey of money, 20. s. 3. d. by account, so that no pound ought to be aboue 20. s. 4. d. nor lesse then 20. s. 2. d. by account. The ounce to wey 20. d. The peny to wey 24. graines, &c.

This yere was inclosed the first great Parke at Plumsted by the Abbot of Lesnes: the other part of the same Parke was inclosed fourtéene yeares after in the yeare 1293.

Edward 8.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Winchester, He caused his fathers Sepulture at Westminster to be richly garnished with precious stones of Iaspar, which he had brought out of France for that purpose.

1280.

Nicholas de Ely Bishop of Winchester deceased, and was buried at Maunarley, vnto whom succeeded Iohn de Pontessere. Also Iohn Chesbule Bishop of London deceased: vnto whom succeeded Richard Gravesend Archdeacon of Northampton: Walter Goade bishop of Exester deceased, vnto whom succeeded Peter of Exester a Chanon of the same Church.

Bishops deceased.

The morrow after Lammas day, and in the night following was made such an inundation or flowing of the waters, that therewith many men, women, and children were drowned, besides beasts in the fields, Mylles, bridges, houses and trees were ouerthrowne: the hay and grasse was spoyled.

Water floods.

On S. Martins Euen a great thunder ouerthrew many houses and trees in England, to the marualling of many.

The clergie of England gaue to the king a fifteenth of all their goods for three yeares.

Edmond Earle of Cornwall founded a new house for students of the order of Cistercians at Hayles, he brought thither Monkes from Thame, and for the first gift gaue them the mannor of Erdington. Robert Burnell Bishop of Bath and Welles the kings Chancellor dedicated that Church, and that day the Earle laid the foundation of the new Church of North Oliney.

An. reg. 9.

North Oliney.

King Edward celebrated the feast of Christmas at S. Edmundsbury.

Dauid Lloyd of Denbigh being reconciled to his brother the Prince Leoline (against whom he had bin a traytor) vpon condition he should neuer after serue the king of England, but become his vtter enemy, layd siege to the Castle of Haywarden and toke therein sir Roger Clifford (a noble knight) slaying all that resisted, and after spoyling all the Country, he with his brother the prince layd siege to the Castle of Ruthland. The King hearing this, hasted thither with a great army to raise the siege, and in his iourney he celebrated the Feast of Easter at the Tile in the Diocese of Salisbury, from thence he went to Ambresbery there to visite his mother, who remained in that Monastery. Which being done, he hasted after his army into Wales, whose comming being heard of, the Prince retired with his army. But in the meane time Ryce the Sonne of Maglon, and Griffyth ap Meridith ap Owen, with other Noblemen of Southwales, take the Castle of Aberistwith, the castle of Flint, of Ruthland, and diuers other, spoyling the Kings people that inhabited thereabouts. Whereupon Iohn Peckham Archbishop of Canterbury after he had visited his whole Prouince, considering the great warres betweene the king and Leoline, he trauailed for the appeasing thereof, first to the King being at Ruthland, then to the Prince being at Snowdon: which his whole trauaile therein, with the griefe, and causes of those warres, he particularly set downe word by word in the said Archbishops records: all which I receiued at the hands of Doctor Yale, when he was Deane of the Arches.

1281. Dauid Lloyd of Denbigh reconciled. Wales rebell. *An. reg. 8.* King Edward went into Wales.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Worcester. From this Christmas till the purification of our Lady there was such a frost and snow, as no man living could remember the like, whereethrough, fiue arches of London bridge, and all Rochester bridge were borne downe, and carried away with the streame, and the like hapned to many bridges in England. And not long after men passed ouer the Thames betweene Westminster and Lambeth, and likewise ouer the River of Sedway, betweene Shroude and Rochester day-shoot. Fishes in pooles, and Birds in woods died for want of food.

1281. Bridges borne downe.

This yere 1282. there was a Fish taken in

A fish like a Lyon.

in the Sea in all respectes like a Lyon and was presented vnto Pope Martin the fourth at Orbeyent: the fishermen reported that the fish gaue many fightfull fierkes and cries when it was taken, and at this time there fell a great discord betweene the Englishmen that were Students in Paris and those of Picardy that stayed there likewise, their diuision was so terrible as it could hardly be appeased.

Discord betweene the French and English scholers in Paris.

King Edward did celebrate his feast of Easter in the Abbey of Aberconway in Wales.

Pirates of Zeland and Holland about Yarmouth and Donwich, did spoile and rob whosoeuer they met, slew many men, and carried away not a few Ships, with all the goods in them.

T. Rudborne. Yarmouth and Donwich spoyled.

The king entred Wales with an army, appointing his seruants to occupie the enemies in sight, whiles his horsemen in a wing set on the rereward: himselfe with a power kept his place, where he pight his golden Dragon, vnto the which as to a Castle, the wounded and weary might repaire: but Dauid fearing, the king with his power followed, & as he passed by a ward, there issued out of the same a foure thousand Welchmen, which inuaded the Kings army, made great slaughter: but at length the king marching through by strong hand, entred the castle of Dee, and tooke Anglesey, where he left Sir Lucas Thany, sir William Lindley, William de Awdly, Roger Clifford the younger, and 12. other of his chiefest Captaines, 17. yong gentlemen and two hundred footemen.

W. Rishanger. W. Packington.

The Iewes Synagogues destroyed.

John Peckham Archbishop of Canterburie sendeth commandement to the Bishop of London, to destroy all the Synagogues of the Iewes within his Diocesse.

T. Walsingham. W. Rishanger. Nic. Bromfield.

Leoline Prince of Wales came downe from the mountaine of Snowdon, to Montgomery, and was at length taken at Buelth castle, where vsing reproachfull words against the Englishmen, Roger le Strange ran vpon him and cut off his head, leauing his dead body on the ground. Sir Roger Mortimer caused the head of Leoline to be set vpon the Tower of London crowned with Iuie. This was the end of Leoline, betrayed by the men of Bluth: and this was the last Prince of the Britaines bloud, that bare Rule and Dominion in Wales.

Anno reg. 11 Leoline prince of Wales slain.

The Nobleman Roger Mortimer dyed at Kingsclemne.

Elianor Quéene of England was deliuered of a daughter named Elizabeth, at Ruthland, or Rudland.

1285. The tenthes granted to the relefe of the holy land, the King tooke to his owne vse.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Ruthland in Wales. He tooke the whole treasure of the tenthes which were granted vnto the Pope, to the relefe of the Holy land into his hands, and to his owne vse, which had beene laid vp in diuers places of England, but hee caused the lockes of Chests to be broken open wherein the money had beene kept.

After the death of Leoline Prince of Wales his brother Dauid taking his flight, the rest of the Welshmen, as well nobles as other, yeelded themselues vnto the King, and then the King subdued all Wales euen to the sea coasts toward Ireland, and all the castles were peopled vnto him, then he stablished there the lawes of England, and did place Iustices of the peace and other Ministers. Also he placed the Exchequer for Wales at Chester. In the meane time, Dauid being destitute of helpe, wandring in vncertaine places, at length he returned to his owne confusion: for he was taken with one of his sonnes, Packington saith 2. of his sonnes and 7. daughters, at S. Mores: all which were brought before the King, by whose commandement he was committed to the castle of Chester. And afterwards in a Parliament at Shrewsbury the said Dauid was conuicted of treason, and was iudged to be hanged and quartered, which was done accordingly. Then the King builded two strong castles, the one at Conway, (after he had remoued the Abbey at Aberconway to another place:) the other Castle he builded at Carnaruan. He gaue diuers Castles to Englishmen. He diuided Wales into shires and hundreds: and so the King passed through all Wales, and annexed it to the crowne of England.

Walsingham. Wales diuided into Shires and hundreds.

King Edward founded the Abbey of Vale Royall in Cheshire for Cistercian Monkes. *Anno reg.* 12.

King Edward held a Parliament at Acton Burnell, wherein were made statutes, named of that place. Parliament at Acton Burnell.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Ruthland in Wales. On S. Stephens day was great thunder and lightnings very strange. And likewise on Easter day the 9. of April was the like thunders and lightnings, such as men could scarce stand on their feet. 1284. Trapelles.

On Saint Markes day, or the 25. day of April, at Carnaruan in Wales was borne the Kings sonne named Edward vpon this occasion: King Edward albeit he had brought all Wales vnder his subiection, & a statute made at Ruthland, in the twelfth yere of his raigne, incorporated and united the same vnto England, yet could he neuer win the good wils of the common people of the Country to accept him for their Prince, vnles he would remaine himselfe in that country among them, neither could he bring them to yeeld obedience to any prince, except he were of their owne nation. For the Welshmen hauing experience of the gouernment of the English officers, and knowing that the King would rule the Countrey by his Deputies, could not abide to haue any Englishman to be their ruler: wherefore oftentimes, vpon the Kings motion they answered, that they were contented to take for their Prince any man whom he would name, so he were a Welshman, and other answer could he neuer get of them by any meanes. Whereupon, hauing secretly sent for the Quéene being then great with childe, caused her to remaine at Carnaruan: and when she was nigh her time of deliuerance the K. being at Ruthland, sent for all the Barons and best men of Wales, to come to him to consult concerning the weale publike of the Country; and when they Edward the first borne at Carnaruan.

Policie of king Edward to win the Welshmen

they were come, he deferred the consultation, vntill he were certified that the Quéene were deliuered of a sonne: Then sending certaine Lords to the chiefetaines, he called the Welshmen together, declaring vnto them, that where as they were oftentimes suters vnto him to appoint them a Prince, he now hauing occasion to depart out of the Country, would name them a Prince, if they would allow and obey him whom he should name. To the which they answered, that they would so doe, if he would appoint one of their Nation. Whereunto the King replied, that he would name one that was borne in Wales, and could speake neuer a word of English, whose life and conuersation no man was able to detect. And when they all had granted, that such a one they would obey, he named his owne sonne Edward borne in Carnaruan Castle, a few daies before. Then the King hauing the Country at his will, gaue Lordships and Townes in the middest of Wales vnto English Lords, as the Lordship of Denbigh to Henry Lac. Earle of Lincolne: the Lordship of Ruthen to the Lord Reginald Grey, second sonne to Iohn Grey of Wilton, &c. 10 20

Lord of Carnaruan borne of Wales.

Anno reg. 13

Lawrence Ducket Goldsmith of London, was murthered in Bow Church of Cheape, for the which fact 28. men were hanged, and one woman burned.

1285. King Edward kept his Christmas at Rhiflowth.

And this yere was finished the new worke of the Church of Westminster, vnto the end of the quire: by which reason it appeareth to haue beene needfying aboue the space of fortie fiue yeres since the third yeare of King Henry the third. 30

Westminster Church finished

Scutage paid

King Edward tooke scutage forty shillings vpon euery knights fee, toward his charges in his voyage against the Welsh.

About the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist began a parliament at Westminster, wherein were made the statutes called Additamenta Glouc. 40

Parliament at Westminster.

Anno reg. 14. 1286.

William Wickwaine Archbishop of Yorke deceased, vnto whom succeeded Iohn Romaine prebender of Lincolne.

S. Kensham.

King Edward with Elianor his Quéene, kept his Christmas at Oxford, where he remained fifteen dayes, he caused Alfred Major of the Citie, and foure other to be hanged, and Iohn Picot to be imprisoned, for the death of Walter Leahelade.

After the Purification of our Lady, King Edward held a great Parliament at Westminster. 50

Parliament at Westminster.

King Edward entred the sea at Douer toward Gascoigne, on the 13. of May, passed ouer into France, came to Amiens with an honorable company, where the King of France Philip le Bewe, for honors sake met him: and after King Edward did to him homage at Paris, and was present at the Parliament.

Hugh Balsam bishop of Ely deceased in his Manno; of Dowenham, vnto whom succeeded Iohn Kyrkby the kings Treasurer, & Meane of Winbourne: Walter Bishop of Salisbury deceased, and Henry Brantestone Deane of the same succeded.

William Warrensonne and heyre of Iohn Warren Earle of Surrey, in a turneament at Croyden, was by the Challenger interrupted, and cruelly slaine. *Anno reg.* 15.

King Edward of England kept his Christmas in the Ile of Oliron in Gascoigne. 1287.

On Newyeares day at night, as well through the vehemency of the wind, as violence of the Sea, the Monastery of Spalding, and many churches were ouerthrowne and destroyed, not onely at Yarmouth, Donwich, and Ipswich, but also in diuers other places of England, adioyning to the Sea, especially in y parts called Holland in Lincolneshire, all y whole country was for the most part turned into a standing pole, so that an intollerable multitude of men women and children, were ouerwhelmed with the water, especially the towne of Bostone or Buttolphs towne, a great part thereof was destroyed by reason of wrongs done by Payne Tiptor. Rice ap Meridith rebelled in Wales, and did much hurt, against whom came Edmond the Kings brother: and at the siege of Dursian Castle vndermining of the Walles, with the ruines were slaine William Mountchensey, Gerard de Insula, banneret, Humfrey Hastings bachellor, and diuers other. Great inundation or waters flouds.

On the second of May, all the Iewes in England were apprehended by precept from the King being then at Burdeaux, for what cause, it was not known, but they redeemed themselues for 12000. pounds of siluer. And at that time the Iewes had a Synagogue at Canterbury. Iewes apprehended. W. Thorne.

A Iusts was proclaimed to bee holden at Buttolphs towne or Boston, in the faire time whereof one part of the Iusters came as Challengers in the habite of Monkes, the other as defendants in the habit of Chanoris, both these sorts of Iusters had couenanted, after the Iusts to spoyle the Faire: for atchieuing whereof they fiered the town in three seuerall places, on the morrow after Saint Iames day that they might more freely spoile & sacke the residue. and whilest the Merchants were busie to saue their goods and quench the fire, they were slaine downe by the said Iusters, and their partakers: by this fiering the black Friers Church was burnt, and almost the whole towne, so that, as it was said streames of gold and other mettals molten, ran into the sea, as it was moreouer said, that all the money in ready coine within England would vnneth recompence the losse then sustained. The captaine of which mischiefe was Robert Chamberlaine Esquire, who was afterward hanged but would neuer confesse his fellowes. Iusts at Boston and that towne burned.

This yere 1288. being the fifteenth yere of Rodolphus the first Emperour of the Romanes, and the third yeare of Pope Honorius the fourth, the Grecians renounced and forsooke their obedience and subiection to the See of Rome, and chose vnto themselues a new Pope and Cardinall. The Grecians forsooke the Pope of Rome

Or

An.reg.16 On a day as the king and quene sate togeather in a Chamber, a thunderclap entring by the window passed betwixt them both, & slew two of their houshold seruants, which stood in their presence.

1288. King Edward kept his Christmas at Burdeaux in Gascoigne.

An.reg.17 The summer was so exceeding hot this yere that many men dyed through heate, and yet wheate was sold at London for three shillings fource pence the quarter when it was dearest, and in other parts abroad the same was sold for twenty pence, or fifteene pence the quarter yea for twelue pence the quarter, and in the west and north parts for eight pence the quarter, barly for sixpence, & oats for foure pence ỹ quarter, & such cheapenesse of beanes & pease, as the like had not beene heard.

1289. King Edward of England kept his Christmas at Belegard in the land of Bierne.

King and Q. returned out of Gascoigne nere three yeres and more. The King and Quæne after three yeares, two monethes, and odde dayes being beyond the Seas in Gascoigne, arriued at Douer on the fifth of August and remaining a while in Kent, he with his traine lay at S. Augustins from whence he passed ouer into Essex and on S. Lambertes day came to Saint Edmundsbury in Suffolke: fro thence he went into Norfolke and from thence sailed by the Ile of Ely to London, where he was honorably receiued.

T. de Weyland Iustice, committed and committed to the Tower. Thomas de Weyland the Kings chiefe Iustice, being in the Kings lower Bench indited and by inquisition conuicted, vpon the discouery of certaine of his seruants which had slaine a certaine person before, and fearing to yeeld himselfe to the Kings mercy, went to the Fryers Minors at Babwell nere vnto Saint Edmundsbury, where the king fo commanding, for certaine dayes he was diligently kept by men of that Country: he take on him the habite of a grey frier, whereupon the king caused him to be better looked vnto, so that at length, after two moneths siege, when all the Fryers almost were first dispersed into simdry places, he forsaking his Friers cowle, went out & was taken and sent to the Tower.

An.reg.18. Great haile fell in England, & after ensued great raine, that the yeare following, wheate was raised from three pence the bushell, to sixteene pence, and so increased yerely till it was lastly sold for twenty shillings the quarter.

City of Carlile burned. The City of Carlile, the Abbey, with all the houses belonging to the Fryers minors was consumed with fire.

William de Brassa called the Senior, deceased at Fyndon, and was buried in the Monastery of Sele.

1290. King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster with great solemnitie.

Iust. executed. Adam Mer. Chron. Dun. Rad. Baldoke. Scr. Cro. I. Rouse. King Edward held a Parliament at Westminster, wherein the transgressions of diuers Iustices were tryed out and punished accordingly: some lost their goods, and then were banished: some, as well of the bench, as of the assizes, were sent to the Tower, which with great summes of money obtained liberty. Sir Thomas Weyland had all his goods, both moueable and vnmoueable confiscate, & was banished, sir Ralph Hengham, chiefe Iustice of the higher Bench, offered seuen thousand markes, sir Iohn Louetot Iustice of the lower Bench, three thousand markes, sir William Bromtone Iustice, fiue thousand markes. Of their Clarks for their redemption: of Robert Littlebarie 1000 markes: of Roger Leicester 1000. markes: of sir Salomon Rochester, chiefe Iustice of Assizes, 4000. marks: of sir Richard Boylond 4000. marks: of sir Thomas Sodentone 2000. markes: of sir Walter de Hopton 2000. marks: of Robert Preston 1000. markes: of sir William Saham Iustice 3000. markes: of a certaine Clarke of the court called Adam de Stratton 3200. marks of old money and new, besides iewels without number, and pretious vessels of siluer, which were found in his house, and a Kings crowne, which men said was King Iohns. Moreouer, the King constrained the Iustices to sweare, that from thencefoorth they should take no pension, fee, or gift of any man, except onely a breakefast, or such like present.

All Iewes banished out of England. He banished all the Iewes out of England, giuing them to beare their charges, till they were out of his realme: ỹ number of Iews the expulsed, was 15060. persons, whose houses being sold, the King made a mightie masse of money.

Record. The Scots by their Charter deliuered to King Edward the Kingdome of Scotland, wt the castles, rights and customes the fourth day of June, that vpon due discussing the matter, it might be knowne who was lawfull heire thereunto,

The Cleargy granted to the King, a tenth of all their goods for one yeare: the King also tooke a fifteenth of the temporalitie throughout England.

The last day of Aprill Gilbert de Clare Earle of Glocester and Hereford, tooke to wife, Ioan of Acres daughter to king Edward, at Westminster.

The same yeare Iohn Duke of Brabant tooke to wife Margaret daughter to King Edward of England.

King Edward tooke his iourney toward Scotland, there to decide of the right betwixt Scotland as superiour Lord of that land. But as he approached to the confines of Scotland, the Quæne his wife being taken with a grieuous sickenesse, departed this life at Perdiby a Towne nere vnto Lincolne, on the eight and twentieth of Nouember, whereupon her returned to conuey the Corps towards London, which he did with great sorrow, for he bewailed the losse of her all the dayes of his life: she was in her lifetime a vertuous Lady, modest, pittifull, a louer of the English nation, and as it were a pillar of defence to the whole realm: her bowels were buried at Lincolne, & a tomb erected there, with the armes of Castile thereupon, in our Lady Chappell: her body was brought to Westminster, and there buried on the seuententh day of December. In euery towne and place in which the body of the Q. was

Queene Eleanor buried. was staied in the bringing vp to London and to Westminster, the King caused a stately Crosse to be erected, euery one of them being garnished with the Image of ỹ same Quæne, also with his armes and hirs. The Crosses erected were at Charing by Westminster, in Westcheape of London, at Waltham in Essex, at Saint Albones in Hartfordshire, at Dunstable, at Stony Stratford, and so to Northampton, without the towne south, at Woborne, Grantham, &c. Moreouer king Edward gaue vnto Walter Abbot of Westminster, and to his successours, the mannors of Knoll, and Graiton, with the Hamlets, Culpath, Burley, Hulwerly, Wichlakefield, Bonnewaldshey, or Downewaldshay, Nutchurst, Longdon, and Dodington: all which were appointed for the keeping of yeerly obites for the said Quæne, and for money to be giuen to the poore that should come.

Charing Crosse and other like. Cl. Chifford.

1291. K. Edward kept his Christmas at Athyate an Hermitage in Buckinghamshire, founded by Edmond Beufore Earle of Cornewall.

After the feast of Easter King Edward going into Scotland when he came to Roche, he tarried there a while, and then Rice ap Meredor before taken in Wales and brought thither, was by iudgement condemned, drawne through the Citty to the gallowes, and there ended his life. On the 11. of May was borne

An.reg.20 Lib. Reinham Gilbert de Clare, after, Earle of Glocester & Hereford at Theokesbury. The same yeare deceased Elianor the Kings mother, and was buried at Ambresbury, where she was vailed.

After this, the King going into Scotland appointed all those that claimed any right to the Realme of Scotland, that in the feast of S. Iohn Baptist next ensuing, they should appeare before him, to declare plainely by what right they claimed the Kingdome.

1292. King Edward at Westminster kept his Christmas, but Gilbert de Clare earle of Glocester with the Countesse his wife, Ioan of Acres the kings daughter, kept their Christmas at Clare in Suffolke.

The Pope granted vnto the King of England, a tenth of all Ecclesiasticall goods of Religious persons, onely Hospitallers and Templars excepted, for 6. yeares, towards the recouery of Jerusalem: wherupon a new taxation was made, through England, Scotland, Ireland and Wales.

Isabell de Douer, Countesse of Assise, deceased at Chitham in Kent, and was buried in Christ Church in Canterbury.

Roger Bacona Franciscane, or Fryer Minor, a learned man of Oxford deceased and was buried in the grey friers Church in Oxford. He compiled and wrote more then fourescore bookes, as Bale testifieth.

After the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, King Edward comming into Scotland and receiuing the allegiance of them which chalenged the Realme of Scotland, deferring his finall sentence vnto the feast of Saint Michaell next ensuing. The Messengers of Erick King of Norway, made their request otherwise then in their petition was declared, which was read before them, and day was giuen them till Wednesday next after the feast of S. Martin: but in the end, to wit, on the eighteenth day of Nouember, King Edward sate in his Tribunall seate at Berwick, and hauing heard the Affertions of the Competitors of the Crowne of Scotland, hee adiudged Iohn Baillioll to be true heire of Scotland, and therefore to enioy the same whole kingdome, with the appurtenances, and assigned him to doe him homage, which was performed at Norham the twentieth day of Nouember.

An.reg.21 Iohn Baillioll doth homage for Scotland. Records.

1293. King Edward kept his Christmas at Newcastle vpon Tine, whither came to him the King of Scots, Iohn Baillioll by name, did homage to King Edward.

Iohn Peckham Archbishop of Canterbury deceased the 8. day of January and was buried at Canterbury, when hee had sate Archbishop 13. yeares, foure and twenty weekes, and two dayes: hee was a very diligent Preacher, and carefull of worldly fauour: hee founded a Colledge at Wingham in Kent, foure miles and a halfe from Canterbury.

Cranthridge burned. The 9. of July a great part of the towne of Cranthridge, with Saint Maries Church was consumed with fire.

Diuinity Lectures first read in Cantabrige. The Carmelites or white Fryers, that had first planted themselues at Chesterton, then at Newenham, this yere came to Cambridge, and builded them a new Church in the parish of Saint Iohn in Sylnestraite, and then a Fryar of that house named Humfrey obtained licence of W. de Luda Bishop of Ely there to begin a reading of diuinity, and so he read solemnely in his schooles of that house.

At the same time also the Chanons of the order of Sempelingh, were diligent in lectures and disputations: these had their being at S. Edmundes Chappell, many houses were destroyed in Towne of Cambridge for ỹ setting vp of these Colledges, and of the Augustines.

Friars offshe. Also about the same time, a certaine order of friars called de pœnitentia Iesu Christi, began to build them a Church, and other officers ouer against Saint Edmunds Chappell: these brethren de sacco gathered together many good Schollers, and multiplyed exceedingly vntill the counsell at Lyons, in the which it was decreed, that from that time forth, there should no more orders of friars beggars be admitted, but the Preachers, Minors, Carmelites and Augustines, and so from that time the begging friars decreased, and grew to nothing saue them afore named.

Counsell at Lyons, when was it quere.

King Edward lay two dayes and two nights in the Castle of Cambridge, as before that time neuer any King had done that could be remembred of. The King had then a great stable of horse at Barnewall, Adam de Risbon being maister there.

lay in the castle of Cambridge.

Edmund earle of Leicester & Lancaster, brother to K. Edw. founded an house of nuns of the order of S. Clare, called Pinnoites in ỹ parish of S. Buriolphs without Aldgate of London.

The twentieth of September William earle

Lib. Kenilham. of Barre take to wife one Elianor the Kings daughter of England at Walsoth.

Anno reg. 22 King Edward layd hardly to the charge of the Archbishop of Yorke, for that hee had excommunicated Anthony Bec Bishop of Durham, being then in the Kings service, and one of his Councell; the Archbishop put himselfe to the Kings grace, and was pardoned for 4000. markes.

1294. King Edward kept his Christmas at Cantorbury.

Three men had their right hands cut off in Westcheape for releasing of a prisoner, arrested by an officer of the City of London.

King Edward sent Anthony Beke Bishop of Durham, to moue Radulph the Emperour to ioyne with him in league. Hee also commanded an army to be made ready at Portsmouth, from thence to passe into Gascoine, appointing his nephew Iohn de Brytaine Earle of Richmond to be chiefe taine ouer the same, ioyning to him Iohn de Saint Iohn, and Robert Tipto: prudent knights. Moreouer, to the keeping of the sea, he set forth three seuerall fleets, appointing the Admirals, to them of Yarmouth and those parts, Iohn de Botetart: to them of Portsmouth, William de Leiborne: to the Westermen and of Ireland, an Irish knight.

A graunt to the King. There was granted to the King for aide in these warres, the one halfe of all the goods of the Cleargie, a first part of the Cittizens, and a tenth of the commons goods: the Abbey of Saint Augustine at Canterbury was charged and paid 596. pounds 7. shillings, and 10. pence, and also was charged with 6. horses and all their furniture, towards the keeping of the sea coasts. There was in all leuied of the cleargy at that time, to the summe of threescore hundred thousand pounds, according to the account, and as it was valued in Gascoine, to wit, 8. s. siluer to the pound.

A power sent into Gascoigne. The kings army passing from Portsmouth, arrived at S. Mathews in Brytaine, they entred the mouth of the riuer Giron towards Burdeaux, they tooke two goodly walled townes, Burgo, and Bleya, and passing before Burdeaux, they came to Lyons, where the towne being deliuered to them, they bring their horses to land.

King Edward entred Wales. In the meane space the Welshmen making them Captaines, Madoc, and Malgon, they burnt the castle of Carnaruon, slaying a great number of English men. King Edward entring Wales, called back his brother Edmond earle of Leicester and Henry Lacy earle of Lincolne into Wales who were ready to haue passed into Gascoigne. The Welchmen with great strength came against them, and expulsed the Earles.

An reg. 23 Lib. Kenilham. Priories alians taken to the kings vse. King Edward tooke into his hands all the Priories alians throughout England, with all their lands and goods any way arising, committing the same to officers vnder him, allowing to euery monke eightene pence the weeke and all the ouerplus of their reuenues was appointed toward the charges of the kings wars reteining also to his treasury, the pensions or annuities due to the principall houses. Also in the same Parliament, he obtained against the Cleargy and religious persons a loane of money, to the value of halfe their goods and lands, according to the former exaction of the tenthes, which loane amounted to 100000. pounds, whereof the Abbot of Bery paid 655. pounds eleuen pence farthing.

King Edward in his expedition into Wales kept his Christmas at Aberconway. The 19. of January, together with the night and day following by the rage of winde with vehement showres and stormes, such as the like had not beene seene in one hundred yeares before, all the winter fœdes were consumed, as well in Holland as in Scotland. At which time the water of Thames ouerflowed the bankes, and a great breach was made at Radarhith besides London, and all the grounds about Bermondsey, Lambeth, and Bathill was ouerflowed.

Great Tem.

1295.

Breach at Radarhith.

The last of February there sodainely arose such a fire in the castle of Windsor, that many officers of the same house were therewith consumed, and many goodly images made to beautifie the building, were defaced and defored.

Castle of Windsor burnt.

The king passing the water of Conoway, & so forth into Wales with an army against the Welshmen, builded the castle of Beumarith, in the Ile of Anglesey. The Welshmen were consumed by famine, their woods were felled, and many castles fortified, their cattaine was taken and brought to London, and so for that time the warres ceased.

Castle of Beumarith.

The Frenchmen arriued at Douer, spoiled the towne, and burnt a great part thereof, amongst other they slew Thomas of Douer, a Monke of great holinesse.

Douer spoiled.

The king caused all the monasteries in England to be searched, and the money in them to be brought vp to London. Hee also seized into his hands all their lay fees, because they refused to pay to him such a taxe as he demanded. Moreouer, he caused the wooll and leather to be staped in England, and there followed great dearth of coine and wine.

W. Packing. Monasteries searched. W. Stephenel.

Where rose a great discord at Oxford, betweene the clarkes and lay men, and at because of two barlets of diuers countries, which fell out about a small matter, for vpon that occasion, some tooke one part, and some another, and so all were diuided into parts, insomuch, that learned and lewd by flockemeale ranne to the fight, and when the schollers and clearks were gone out of their hostles, the layty perceiuing either none, or else very fain, to be remaining at home, entred the clarkes lodgings, and carried away a great deale and many kinds of stuffe, to the great and vnrecouerable damage of the schollers. In this skirmish was slaine sir Fulke of Neyzmouth, parson of Pichlesthoine, and many other on either side. The king hearing thereof, sent Iusticiars to restore the peace and to condemne the murtherers, which when they came, forced the Townesmen to pay the Schollers 200. pounds for

Discorde betwixt the clerkes and townesmen of Oxford.

for damages done vnto them.

Anno reg. 24 Gilbert de Clare Earle of Glocester and Hereford deceased at Monmouth, and was buried at Tewkesbury amongst his progenitors on S. Thomas day the Apostle.

1295. King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at S. Albones.

About the Conuersion of S. Paul, Edmond the Kings brother Earle of Lancaster, with Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne, the Earle of Warwicke, Robert fitz Walter, and a mighty army taking shipping at Plimmouth in Cornwall, with 360. ships sayled into Gascoigne. Edmond the kings brother dyed there and was brought ouer and buried at Westminster. After whose death the English army constrained through want of victuals, departed, and brake vp siege.

W. Packington T. Walingham. Iohn surnamed Romaine, Archbishop of Yorke, deceased, to whom succeeded Henry de Newarke, Deane of that Church.

King Edward vanquisheth Baglas of Scotland. Iohn Balliol King of Scots, contrary to his allegiance rebelled, wherefore King Edward hasted him thither, and won the castles of Barwicke, and Dunbar: hee slew of the Scots 25000. He conquered Edenborough, where he found the regall ensignes of Scotland, as Crowne, Sceptre and cloth of estate, &c. In his returne he called a Parliament at Barwicke, where he received the fealties of all the great men of Scotland, and their homages.

Anno reg. 25 William de Valence Earle of Pembroke was slaine by the French at Baion.

Lacke of Wine in England. This yere was a great famine in England, chiefly a default of Wine, that the same could scarcely be had to minister the Communion with in the Church.

1297. King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Ipswich.

Canon law brought in Cambridge. Simon a monke of Walden, being notably learned, began to teach the Canon law in the Vniuersity of Cambridge.

King Edward offred to S. Edward at Westminster, the Chaire, Sceptre and Crowne of gold of the Scottish king.

The K. increased the tribute of the Wolls, tasking forty sacke 40. shillings, where before that time they payd but halfe a marke.

Anno reg. 26 The Scots by the instigation of William Walleis rebelled, and put the Englishmen to much trouble, and losse of many men. In the feast of St. Bartholomew King Edward tooke the sea at Winchelsey toward Flaunders, and landed at Swyn, he went to relieue Guy their Earle, which was grieuously oppressed by the French King, so that he had wonne much of his lands, but shortly after a peace was concluded for two yeere.

1298. King Edward kept his Christmas at Gaunt in Flaunders, and returning into England arriued at Sandwich on the xij. of March.

Kings palace at Westminster burnt. The 29. of March, a vehement Fire being kindled in the vpper hall of the Kings palace at Westminster, the flame thereof being driuen with the wind, fiered the monasterie adioyning which with the palace were both consumed.

The King preparing to represse the rebellion of the Scots, remoued the Barons of the Exchequer, and Iustices of the Bench vnto Yorke, calling a parliament thither, he appointed his subiects to be ready with horse and armour at Rokesbozow on Midsummer day.

Parliament at Yorke.

King Edward wonne the battell of Faukirke in Scotland, vpon St. Mary Magdalens day, in which battell was slaine more then twenty thousand Scots, and William Walleis their Captaine fled. Anthony Beke, Bishop of Duresme had at this battell such a retinue, that in his company were two and thirty Banners. The towne of St. Andrewes was destroyed, no man there resisting.

Nich. Trisset. T. Walsingh. Sea. Cron. Battell at Faukirke in Scotland.

The citizens of London hearing of the great victorie obtayned by the King of England against the Scottes, made great and solemne triumph in their Citie euery one according to their craft, especially the Fishmongers, which with solemne Procession passed through the Citie, hauing amongst other Pageants and shewes foure Sturgeons gilded, caried on foure horses, then foure Salmons of siluer on foure horses: and after fine and fortie knights armed, riding on horses, made like Luces of the Sea: and then Saint Magnus with a thousand horsemen: This did they on S. Magnus day, in honour of the Kings great victorie, and safe returne.

Chron. Dun.

This yere the King payd to the Merchants of Gascoigne 150000. pounds sterling, for his brothers expences there.

An. reg. 27

This yere deceased William Beauchampe, Earle of Warwicke, and William de Luda, Bishop of Ely, vnto whom succeeded Randolph Walpole.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Cadingham neere vnto Beuerley, after which time hee removed toward the South parts of his kingdome. 1299.

Humfrey de Boune Earle of Hereford deceased, and was buried at Walden.

Also Iohn Gifford deceased.

In the beginning of Lent K. Edward held a parliament at Stepenheath by London, in the house of Henry Walleis, then Maior of London, where being required by the Earles and Barons, that hee would confirme the Charter of liberties, according to that he had promised in Scotland, after certaine delayes, he agreed to their instance, with this addition: The right of our Crowne saued: which words of addition the Earles liked not, and therefore departed. But being sent for againe, about the Assumpcion of Our Lady, all things were granted to them at their desire. Whereupon the perambulation of Forrests through England was committed vnto three Bishops, 3. Earles, and foure Barons, that they might see the execution of Iustice done.

Parliament at Stepenheath.

This yere was made an Act of common councell for prices of victuals to bee sold at London, by consent of the King and Nobilitie, concerning the price of Poultry. A fat Cocke for three halfe pence, two pullets for three halfe pence, a fat Capon for two pence halfe penie, a Goose 4. pence, a Mallard three halfe pence,

Price of poultry.

a Partridge for three halfepence, a Feasant 4. pence, a Heron sixe pence, a Plouer one penie, a Swanne for three shillings, a Crane for twelue pence, two Woodcockes for three halfe pence, a fat Lambe from Christmas to Shrouetide sixe pence, and all the whole yeare after for foure pence.

Rob. of Gloc. A sodaine fire inclosed the Monastery of Gloucester: the cloister, belfrey, the great chamber, with other buildings was consumed.

W. Packing. King Edward married. For the establishment of the peace betweene England and France, on the 10. of September King Edward tooke to wife Margaret sister to Philip le Bewe then K. of France: they were married at Canterbury, and the feast was kept there in the great hall of the Bishops palace. The King imprisoned his sonne Edward, because that Walter Langton Bishop of Chester had complained, that the foresaid Edward through counsell of Pierce of Gauestone, an esquire of Gascoigne, had broken his Parkes, and that Edward was led and gouerned by the foresaid Pierce, wherefore the King did exile the said Pierce for euermore.

An. reg. 28. Henry Newarke Archbishop of Yorke deceased, and was buried at Yorke, Thomas Corbridge succeeded him in the Archbishoprike.

Oliuer Sutton Bishop of Lincolne also deceased, into whom succeeded Iohn de Adarley, Chancellor of the same Church.

King Edward commanded that all the manacles and chaines of yron that might be found within the whole Realme, to an inestimable multitude should be brought into the Tower of London, the cause whereof was vtterly vnknowne to his subiects.

1300. King Edward kept his Christmas at Berwicke, and the Quéene at Windsore, within the solemnitie of which feast, to wit, vpon S. Stephens day, King Edward forbade diuers false monyes, as Crokards, Pollards, Rosaries, and others; copned in parts beyond the seas, and vttered here for Sterlings, so that many thereby were deceiued. These moneys the King at the first commanded to be currant for halfe-pence, which was but halfe the value they were copned for: but on Easter euen next following, the same moneyes were forbidden throughout all England, and after called in, and new sterling money copned into the Kings great aduantage. This sterling money was so called of the Easterlings that were the first copners of siluer of that sinenelle in England.

Sterling money.

A great part of Scotland subdued by K. Edward.

King Edward made his voyage against the Scots, wherein he subdued a great part of the land, tooke the castle of Estreueline, with other, and made the Lords sweare to him fealty and homage. In the meane while, the Quéene on the first of July was deliuered of a Sonne at Wotherton in Yorkeshire, not farre from Pontfract, and therefore was he named Thomas of Wotherton. Afterward the Quéene was conueyed to London, whom to méete, the Citizens to the number of 600. rode in one liuerie of red and white, with the Cognisance of their mysteries broidered vpon their sleeues, and receiued her foure miles without the City, and so conueyed her to Westminster.

Citizens of London ryding to meet the Queene.

The first of October, Edmund Earle of Cornewall deceased without issue, by meane wherof his Earledome fell to the kings hands.

The King gaue the principalitie of Wales and the Earledome of Chester to his eldest Sonne Edward.

King Edward kept his Christmas with his Quéene Margaret at Northampton, and after held his Parliament at Stamford. (some say at Lincolne) to the which the Barons came with horse and armour, for the purpose as was reported, that they might get of him by force the execution of the Charter of the Forrest. *An. reg.* 29. 1301.

A Turnament at Dunstable, *Ad carnif. priuum.* Lib. Dunem.

In the feast of Penticost, the truce ended that had bin taken with the Scots, whereupon, about the feast of St. Iohn Baptist, the King of England went with a great army into Scotland, where he spent the end of Summer, and also the Winter following, and left many horses there for want of forrage. King Edward inuadeth Scotland.

The Church of Lanthony was brant.

Quéene Margaret was this yere deliuered of her second sonne, named Edmund of Woodstocke, the 5. day of August. *An. reg.* 30.

The 5. of October was borne Thomas the sonne of Ranulph de Mounthermer, Earle of Gloucester, and Ioane of Acres the Kings daughter.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Lithcole in Scotland with a puissant army, but afterward through the earnest suite of Philip King of France, whose sister he had lately married, he granted a truce with the Scots, till the feast of all Saints, and then he returned to London, and about Midlent, called a parliament, where in he demanded a fifteene, and also sixty thilinas of euery knights fee. 1301. Parliament at London.

Elizabeth the Kings daughter of England, Countesse of Holland, and Zealand, was ioyned in marriage to Humfrey de Bohun, Earle of Hereford, and Essex, son and heire to Humfrey Bohun late deceased.

Turnies, Iusts, barriers, and other warlike exercises, which young Lords and Gentlemen had appointed for their pastimes in diuers parts of the Realme, were forbidden by the Kings proclamations. Turnaments forbidden.

After the feast of All Saints, when the truce began to faile with the Scots, King Edward sent Iohn Segraue Knight with an army into Scotland, committing to him the custody of that land as Warden their. *An. reg.* 31.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster. 1303.

The Scots rebelling against K. Edward, made William Wales their leader, wherefore the King hauing his army ready, passed by the castle of Striuelings, ouer the whole land, none offering them battell, but fleeing before the sword. T. de la More. Ex Record.

Richard Gravesend Bishop of London, deceased, who is reported by some to haue renewed the charters and liberties of the citie of London, *An. reg.* 33. Fabian. Mori.

Gravesend Bishop of London. 1304.

London, in the yere of our Lord 1302. in the twenty yeare of King Richard the second. The vntruth whereof I know thought good thus much in this place to note. Ralph Baldock Deane of Paules succeeded him in the Bishoprike.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Dunfermeline in Scotland, with the English nobilitie, & when winter was past, he went and besieged the Castle of Striueline, which William Clifford kept the space of 50. dayes with sundry valiant assaults: but being able no longer to resist, they put all their horses, & with halters about their necks came forth of the castle and fell prostrate before the king, committing both liues and limbs to his mercy, whom the King pardoned of life, but sent them prisoners into England. T. de la More.

Courts of K. Bench and Exchequer to Yorke. The King returning out of Scotland by the City of Yorke, commanded the Courts of the Kings Bench and the Exchequer, which had now remained at Yorke 7. yeeres, to be remoued to their old places at London.

Iohn de Waren Earle of Surrey and Sussex deceased, after whom succeeded his sonne also named Iohn who tooke to wife the kings niece by his daughter Elianor, whom the earle of Barre had married. Also Thomas Corbridge Archbishop of Yorke deceased at Lanham, a singular Diuine, hee was buried at Southwell, to him succeeded William Greenfield, a Chanon of Yorke, and chancellor to the King, an eloquent man and pithie in counsell.

King Edward taking a talliage of all cities, Boroughes, and Townes, the Iewes of Bristow gaue him 400. pound for a fine, out of their treasure. *An. reg.* 33. Lib. Kenilworth. 1305. Parliament at Lincolne. Adam Meri.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Lincolne with the Quéene his wife, and there he ordained Iustices of Trailbastone against intruders into other mens lands, trucebreakers, extortioners, murderers, & such like offenders, by which meanes the K. treasure was maruelously increased. Roger Brabazon and Robert de Reuer sate at the Guild Hall in London to heare the complaints made concerning the foresaid Articles of Trailebaston.

Prohibition to the Bishop of Lincolne. Plac. Parlia. Record.

The Citizens of Norwich made petition vnto the King, that like as it had pleased him heretofore to grant them his helpe and licence certaine yeares for the walling about of their Towne, which Tearme was now expired, to grant them a longer time the same being not yet finished: whereupon fiue yeares were granted by him and his Parliament at Westminster.

Iohn Leyland. Iohn Leyland writeth that a Merchant of Norwich (whom he nameth not) builded a great part, almost halfe of that wall.

Pillers of the Sacke. Robert fitz Walter requested the king that the Friers of the Sacke (commonly called De penitentia Iesu) in London, might assigne to the said Robert one Chappell of old time called the Synagogue of the Iewes, néere adioyning to the place of the said Robert, which request was granted. Robert Fitz Walter his house was then in place where now standeth the Exchequer hall, & the synagogue of the Iewes was in place, where now is a wine Tauerne called the Windmill in Lothbury. These friers liued altogether by begging, and had of late multiplied in number greatly, vntill the Councel at Lions, wherein it was decreed that Friers beggers should receiue none into their order, except Grey and white Friers. They were also licensed to enter into Religion of larger rule, from the which time forth all mendicant Friers began to decrease, and were in short time brought to nothing, except the preaching Friers.

Synagogue of the Iewes. Parliament.

William Wales which had oft times set Scotland in great trouble, was taken and brought to London with great numbers of men and women wondring vpon him: he was lodged in the house of William Delecé a Citizen of London, in Fanchurch street. On the morrow being the Euen of Saint Bartholomew he was brought on horseback to Westminster, Ioan Segraue and Geffrey, knights, the Maior, Sheriffes and Aldermen of London, and many other both on horse-backe and on foote accompanying him, and in the great Hall at Westminster, he being placed on the South bench crowned with Lawrell, for that he had said in times past, he ought to beare a Crowne in that Hall (as it was commonly reported) and being appeached for a traytor, by Sir Peter Mallore the Kings Iustice, hee answered that he was neuer traytor; to the K. of England, but for other things whereof he was accused, he confessed them, and was after headed and quartered. There was opened to the king a conspiracy, wrought by the Archbishop of Canterbury and diuers Earles and Barons against him at such time as he was in Flanders. The Earle Marshall being examined of this, and being not able to purge himselfe, made the King his heyre, and put him in possession of his Lands to haue his grace, and thus doing, the King gaue him againe 1000. pound land by yeare during his life. W. Wales hanged, drawen, and quartered. Fabian. Record. Adam Meri. Fabian. Mori. *An. reg.* 34.

King Edward kept his Christmas at London. 1306.

Robert Bruse an Englishman, presuming by the right of his wife to vsurpe the Kingdome of Scotland, called a Parliament of the Nobles of Scotland within the Church of the Friers Minors in Dumfries, where he slew Iohn Comin, because he would not agree to his treason: and shortly after, to wit, in the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady, in the Abbey of Scone, he caused himselfe to be solemnely crowned King by the Bishops of Glasco and Saint Andrewes sirst, and the third day after by the Countesse of Bowan, because her brother the Earle of Fife to whom by right of inheritance that office belonged, was then absent in England.

This yere 1306. vpon sundry complaints of the Clergy and Nobility resorting to the City of London, touching the great anoyance, and danger of contagion growing by reason of the stench of burning Sea-coale, which diuers fire makers in Southwarke, Wapping, and

Sea coale forbidden to be burned within London or neare London.

Cast Smithfield now vsed to make their common fires because of the cheapnes thereof, ꝫ to forbeare the burning of barnes, and fire coale.

1306. The K. expressly commanded the Maior and Sheriffs of London forthwith to make proclamation, that all those fire makers should cease their burning of Sea coale, and make their fires of such fuell of wood, and coale as had bin formerly vsed. Thus much I found in the Record, the which I thought very necessary to set downe, to shew the difference of former time, with the necessity of that fiering to be now so generally vsed, which at y time was so much misliked and annoyed, not onely of the better sort, but euen of the common people, whereas at this day, viz. in the yeare 1612. and the 10. yeare of the raigne of King *James*, at which time I wrote this booke, the foresaid Sea coale, and pit coale is become the generall fuell of this Britaine Iland, vsed in the houses of the Nobility, Clergy, and Gentry, in London and in all the other Cities, and Shires of this kingdome, as well for dressing of meat, washing, brewing, dying as otherwise. The greatest ruine and destruction of wood, in this Kingdome, hath beene the late making of Iron, and Glasses, besides the iust occasion of spending timber in building extraordinary Ships as well in number as in bignesse, besides the vnspeakable daily increase in building of houses boats, Barges, Waggons, coaches, carts, and many other things for houshold vses, the which together with the want of conseruation and planting of Woods within these last fourescore yeares, are the true reasons of the great scarcitie of Timber and sweet fuell in England.

In the feast of Pentecost king Edward honored his eldest sonne Edward of Carnaruan with the degree of Knighthood, and with him also moe then a hundred noble young men, at Westminster.

About the feast of the Natiuity of our Lady, the King went againe into Scotland with a great army, hauing sent his son Edward with Aymer de Valence Earle of Pembroke, Robert Clifford, Henry Percie, and many other noble knights and Gentlemen, at Whitsuntide before, also he sent before him his iustices Traylebaston of Traile Baston, two and two together, into euery city and place into which he would come giuing them power to kill traytors, draw and hang periured persons, burne such as woorke deceit, destroy the wicked, and set Englishmen in their places: and there were taken by them in the space of two months by inquisition of Iuries, hundreds & thousands, breakers of peace and conspirators, amongst the which Nigellus de Brotherton brother to Robert de Brute was drawne through Berwike and hanged: moreouer [illegible] and John Seyton brother were hanged: y Countesse of Boloan was closed in a Cage, whose breadth, length, height and depth, was eight foote, and hanged ouer the walles of Berwike: the Bishop of Saint Andrewes and of Glasco with the Abbot of Scone, were sent to seuerall prisons in England.

King Edward besieged Simon Frisell in Lisiche, and take him and sent him to London Tower, where he found many Scottish Lords in fetters of yron, amongst whom was Thomas Morham, with Herbert his son, and Thomas Roys his Esquire, who were all beheaded: Simon Frisell was hanged, drawne and quartred: Earle Iohn de Athol because he was of the Kings blood and an Englishman, was not drawne, but hanged and headed: Sir Iohn Wallers was sent to the Tower of London ꝫ after hanged and headed: Laurence de Megos Esquire was taken at Dower and there beheaded. The Earle of Stratherne yeelded to king Edward who condemned him to remaine during his life in yron fetters in the Castle of Rochester.

At this time and long after, King Edward had Scotland in such good obedience, as hee gaue of the lands thereof to his seruants and subiects in England, with Markets, Fayres, and Marcns: amongst others I haue seene vnder the broad seale of the said king Edward a manno⁊ called Kethes in the County of Ferfare in Scotland, and neere the furthest part of the same nation Northward, giuen to Iohn Eure and his heires, ancestor to the Lord Eure that now is, for his seruice done in those parts, with Market euery Sunday, Fayre for three dayes euery yere, at the feast of Saint Michel and free Warren for the same, dated at Lancercost the 20. day of October, Anno reg. 34. Exchequer roll. Lord Eure.

This yere Margaret Queene, second wife to Edward the first, began to build the Quire of the church of the grey Friers in London, to the building whereof in her life she gaue two thousand markes, and an hundred markes by her Testament: Iohn of Bayraine Earle of Richmond builded the body of the church: Lady Mary Countesse of Pembroke, Gilbert Clare earle of Glocester, Margaret Countesse Lady Elianor le Spencer, & Lady Elizabeth de Burgh, sisters to Gilbert de Clare, gaue great sums of mony towards the same: Richard Whitington, sometimes Alderman & Maior of London, founded the Library there, in Anno 1421. Regist. fract. Antiq. 35

King Edward held his Christmas at Carlile, with a great number of English people, and in the moneth of January next following, he called a great Parliament to be holden at Carlile vpon the Octaues of Saint Hillary, to treat of matters concerning the state of Scotland, whereunto were summoned many Lords both of the spirituality and temporalty, who either appeared in person or else by proxie. 1307. Parliament at Carlile.

Yee shall haue seene and read an ancient Regiſtre of good authority, containing the names of 87. Earles and Barons 20. Bishops, 61. Abbots and eight Priors, besides many Deanes, Archdeacons, and other inferiour Clearkes of the Conuocation. The master of the knights of ỹ Temple, of euery shire two knights, of euery City two Citizens, and of euery borough two Burgesses, &c. Parliament roll.

Bishops.

Torre.
Holmecoltham.
Welbecke.
Hales.
New Monasterie.
Ierevall.
Fountaines.
Bella land.
Melsa.
Kyrkested.
Rupe.
Rughford.
Valedeu.
Grendon.
Stanley in Arden.
Pipwell.
Combe.
Busingwerke.
Crokesden.
Croyland.
Werdon.
Wimondham.
Wauerley.
Chertesey.
Quarrera.
Leteley.
Hyde.
Wendon.
Saint Agathe.
Swineshed.
Stanley in Wiltshire.
The Maister of the Knights of the Temple in England.

Barons.

EDward, Prince of Wales.
Henry Lacy, Earle of Lincolne.
Ralph Mounthermer, Earle of Glocester and Hereford.
Thomas, Earle of Lancaster.
Humfrey Bohun, Earle of Hereford and Essex.
Iohn Warren, Earle of Surrey.
Edmond, Earle of Arundale.
Iohn Brytain, Earle of Richmond.

Bishops.

ARchbishop of Yorke.
Of Lincolne.
London.
Chichester.
Excester.
Hereford.
Salisburie.
Landaffe.
Bangor.
Saint Dauids.
Couentrie and Lichfield.
Bathe and Welles.
Norwich.
Rochester.
Durham.
Carlile: and Ely.
Worcester.
Winchester.

Abbots.

Of Saint Augustine in Canterburie.
Of Saint Edmond.
Saint Albane.
Westminster.
Waltham.
Euesham.
Saint Mary at Yorke.
Peterborow.
Ramsey.
Winchecombe.
Glocester.
Bristow.
Malmesburie.
Glastenburie.
Selby.
Cyrcester.
Reading.
Furneys.
Sawley.
Alnewike.
Saint Osith.
Barling.
Tupholme.
Biley.
Dale.
Newhus.
Croxton.
Cokersand.
Saint Radegound.
Tichfield.

Guy Bello Campo, Earle of Warwicke.
Robert Vere, Earle of Oxford.
Gilbert Vmframuil Earle of Angeos.
Henry of Lancaster
Aymer of Valence.
Iohn Ferrers.
Henry Piercie.
Hugh Spencer.
Robert Fitz Walter.
William Latimer.
Robert Clifford.
Robert mount Alto.
Iohn Hastings.
Iohn le Mare.
Iohn de Ripaurs.
Iohn de Mohun.
Petrus de Malolacu.
Rupart Fitz Pagani.
Hugh Courtney.
Edmond Deyncourt.
Iohn Saint-Iohn of Lageham.
Galfride de Geynual.
Thomas Furnival.
Robert Tony.
Thomas Berkeley.
William de Bruse.
Peter Corbet.
William Marton.
Thomas Multon.
Iohn ap Adam.
Iohn Kyme.
Iohn Segraue.
Robert Fitz Roger.
Hugh Vere.
Walter Faulconbridge.
Ralph Basset of Draiton.
Roger la Warre.
Iohn Paynell.
Alexander Wallicio.
Hugh Poynts.
Roger Montomere.
William Rithre.
Reignald Grey.
Walter Muncy.
Robert Scales.
Adam Welles.
Almarice de Amando.
William Cantalupo.
Iohn Engaigne.
Gilbert Pechy.
Iohn Clavering.
William Leyburne
Iohn Bello Campo of Somerset.
William Grandstone.
Iohn Extuens.
Iohn de Insula.
Iohn Sudley.
Simon Mountacute.
Walter Tey.
Edmund Hastings.
Iohn Lancaster.
Iohn Saint-Iohn.
Henry Tregoz.
Iohn Lovel of Tichmerch.
Alan la Zuche.
Henry Teyes.
Nicholas Segraue.
Fulco Fitz Waren.
Iohn Fitz Reignald
Geffrey Camvile.
William Vauasor.
William Ferrer.
Robert Grendon.
Edmund Baron of Stafford.
Ralph Fitz William.
Thomas de la Roche.
Theobald de Verdon the younger.
William Tuchet.
Henry Hussey.

In this Parliament many complaints were made of the oppression of Churches and Monasteries, by the Popes Chaplaine named William Testa Archdeacon of Traine in the Church of Couentrie. The same Clarke was forbidden to vse any more such extortions, and diuers Statutes were ordained touching Religious persons which had their principall houses in other Realmes.

There came to this Parliament, sent from the Pope, a Cardinall called Petrus Hispanus, to treate of a marriage betwixt Edward Prince of Wales, and the French Kings daughter.

The course of Fleet dike at London foze decayed, which sometime bare ships of small burthen to Holbourne-bridge, to the great commoditie of the Citie in that West part. T. Walsingh.

And amongst many other suites made there, Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne complained, that whereas in times past, the course of water running at London vnder Holborn-bridge, and Fleet-bridge into the Thames, had borne of such large breath and depth, that tenne or twelue ships at once with Merchandises were wont to come to the foresayd bridge of Fleete, and some of them to Holborne-bridge: now the same course (by filth of the Tanners and such other) was foze decayed. Also by raising vp of Wharffes, but especially by turning of the water, which they of the new Temple made to their milles without Baynards castle, and diuers other perturbations, the sayd Ships now could not enter as they were wont, and as they ought; wherefore he desired, that the Maior of London with the Sheriffes, and certaine discreet Aldermen might be appointed to see the course of the said water, and that by oath of honest men all the foresaid hinderances might be remoued, and to be made as it was wont of old time, &c. Which was answered and recorded, that Roger le Bramzon, the Constable of the Tower, with the Maior and Sheriffes are assigned, that taking with them other honest and discreet men, they make diligent search and inquirie, how the sayd Riuer was in old time, and that they leaue nothing that may hurt or stop it: and to keepe it in the same state that it was wont to be.

King Edward remaining all the winter and summer at Carlile, disposed many things of Scotland at his pleasure: but in the meane time Robert le Bruse going about the Countrey, slew many that would not obey him, and he sent with part of his army two of his brethren, Thomas that was a Knight, and Alexander a Priest. Deane of Glasco into another part of the Countrey, that they might allure the people vnto them by gentle perswasions, which (by the comming of Englishmen vpon them) were taken, led to the Justices, condemned, hanged and headed at Carlile.

Ioane of Acres Countesse of Glocester deceased.

King Edward sent messengers into England commanding all that ought him seruice to be ready at Carlile, within three weekes after the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist: but himselfe being vexed with the bloody flixe, bee sent vnto his sonne that he should come with speed, to heare his last wozdes, whom, among other thinges he did counsell to be mercifull, iust and constant in all his wozds and deeds: hee commanded him not to be too hastie to take vpon him the Crowne of England, vntill he had reuenged the injuries done by the Scots, but rather lay in those parts, and to cause his fathers bones (being closed in a chest) to be borne about with him, till he had gone throw all Scotland and ouerrome his aduersaries. He also commaunded him to honour his Mother, and loue his two Brethren, Thomas Earle Marthall, and Edmond Earle of Kent. Moreouer, he charged him on his curse, that he should not presume to call home Pierce of Gauestон, by common decree banished, without common fauour: He declared to him also, that he had taken on him the Crosse, for the seruice of the Holy land, to the which hee had determined to haue gone in person, but troubled with the new and diuers attempts of Robert le Bruse, he was hindered of his purpose, and was constrained, omitting that businesse, to turne the warre into Scotland, 32000. poumds of siluer (sayd hee) I haue prepared for the charges of an hundred knights to goe honourably thither with their retinues, because it is not my hap to perfoome in proper person what I intended, let them yet take my heart and carry thither; which if they doe, I trust in my God that all things shall prosper with them. Therfoze (saith he) doe straightly commaund thee in paine of my curse, that am thy Father, that the sayd money be not otherwise spent.

The King also called vnto him Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne, Guy Earle of Warwick, Aymer de Valence Earle of Pembroke, and Robert Clifford Baron, desiring them to be good to his Sonne, and that they should not suffer Pierce of Gauestон to come againe into England, to set his son in ryot; and the seuenth of July he departed his life at Burgh vpon the sands, in the yeare 1307. when he had raigned 34. yeares 7. moneths, and odde dayes, and was 68. yeares of age, he was buried at Westminster. W. Packingt.

He had issue by his first wife Elianor, daughter to the King of Spaine, fiue sonnes, to wit Henry, Iohn, and Alionse that dyed without issue, Edward that succeeded him in the Kingdome, and Henry that dyed without issue, and tenne daughters, to wit, Elianor Countesse of Barre, Ioane of Acres Countesse of Glocester, Iulian that dyed young, Margaret Dutchesse of Brabant, Alice that dyed young, Elizabeth Countesse of Hereford, Elizabeth Countesse of Holland, Mary that was a Nun at Ambresbury, Beatrice that dyed young, Blanch that dyed young; He had issue by Margaret daughter to Philip King of France his second wife, two Sonnes, to wit, Thomas of Brotherton, and Edmond of Woodstocke Earle of Kent, and one Daughter, named Elianor that dyed young.

THE

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* EDVVARD *of* CARNARVAN.

Ex. Reg. Ia.

EDVVARD the second, son to the first Edward, borne at Carnaruan, began his raigne the seuenth day of July, in the yeare of Christ 1307. he was faire of body, but vnstedfast of manners, and disposed to lightnesse, haunting the company of vile persons; and giuen onely to the pleasure of the body, not regarding to gouerne his common weale by discretion and justice, which caused great variance betweene him and his Lords. He tooke to be of his Councell Patricke Earle of Lincolne, and Ochode Gransone with other. He ordained Walter Reignald to be his Chancellour, and caused Walter Langton Bysshop of Chester, Treasurer of England, to bring the Kings his Fathers body from Carlile to Waltham Crolle, and then to be arrested by Sir Iohn Felton Constable of the tower, and sent to Wallingford, there to be shut vp in prison, and his goods confiscate, because in his fathers lifetime he had reproued him of his insolent life, &c. Hee also called out of exile Pierce of Gauestон a Granger borne, which lately in his fathers dayes, had for certaine causes beene banished this land. He gaue to the said Pierce the Earledome of Cornwall, the Ile of Man, and the Lordship of Wallingford, otherwise assigned to Queene Isabell.

Hoo. Dun.

Pierce of Gauestон called out of exile. Ro. Hautemp. W. Packin.

Parliament at Northampton

A Parliament was holden at Northampton wherein it was ordained, that his Fathers coyne, which was counted base, should not be refused vpon paine of life and lim, and that a fifteenth of the Clergy, and twentieth part of the goods of the Laitie should be giuen to the King.

K. Edward the first buried.

The 27 of October, King Edward the first was buried at Westminster, at the head of Henry the third his Father, vnto the which Church he had giuen Lands to the value of 100. pound by yeare, twenty pound thereof yerely to be distributed to the poze. Anthony Becke patriarke of Jerusalem and Bishop of Durham doing the exequies.

1308.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Wyre in Kent, with a great traine of houshold.

Knights of the temple, appre-hended. Tho. de la More.

After the Epiphany of our Lord, all the templers in England were apprehended and committed to prison in diuers places.

The king went ouer into France, and married Isabel the daughter of Philip the faire king of France, at Boloigne, the 22. of January. There were present at that marriage Philip king of France, his son King of Nauarre, the King of Almaine, and the King of Sicile, with many other. And on the 24. day of February King Edward with his Queene were crowned at Westminster, by Henry Bysshop of Winchester, being admitted so to do by Robert Archbishop of Canterburie. The King offred first a pound of gold made like a King holding a ring in his hand, and after he offered a mark of gold which is 8. ounces, made like a pilgrime putting forth his hand to receiue the ring. Sir Iohn Blackwell knight, was drawn to death at his Coronation.

Adam Mari.

King Edward ordained.

The king gaue vnto Pierce of Gauestон all such gifts and iewels as had bin giuen to him, with the crownes of his Father, his ancestors treasure and many other things, affirming that if he could, he should succeed him in the kingdome, calling him brother, not granting any thing without his consent. The Lords therefore enuying him, told the king, that the father of this Pierce was a Traytor to the King of France, and was for the same executed, & that his mother was burned for a witch, and that the said Pierce was banished for consenting to his mothers witchcraft, and that he had now bewitched the King himselfe. They besought the king to heare therefore their petitions, which should be both for his owne honor, and for the wealth of his people.

Chron. Dun. Pierce of Gauestон called vnto the King at his pleasure

First, that he would confirme and vse such ancient Lawes and customes, as are contained in the Charters of the kings his predecessors: and for that they would grant him the twentieth part of their goods, and be his true subjects. 1

Secondly, that hee would take nothing of any man, but at the price of the owner, & same to be paid for to the vttermost. 2

Thirdly, that whatsoeuer was alienated from the crowne since his fathers death, might be restored thereunto againe. 3

Fourthly, that he would obserue the oath he made before his Father, as of the reuoking of Peirce Gauestон, the prosecuting of the Scottish warre, and that all that was amisse should be amended, lest his enemies reioyce at it, &c. 4

That Iustice and Iudgement might bee done in the Land, as well to the rich as to the poore, according to the antient and old approued Lawes and Customes of England, and that no man should be restrained by the kings Writ, from prosecuting his right, or defending himselfe by law. 5

Then the King taking counsell of Pierce, Hugh Spencer the Treasurer, the Chancellor, and others, he appointed to answere the Barons at the Parliament on Hoctay. The Barons being departed out of London, the Citty gates were shut vp and chained, great watch kept, and Hugh Spencer made Constable of London. The King with Pierce of Gauestон went towards Wallingford castle with a great company of Soldiers, as well Strangers as English, and Hugh Spencer tarried still at London. The Parliament on Hoctay was kept, the King and Barons being there when they decreed that the same Pierce should be banished the land to depart on the morrow after Midsummer

Hugh Spencer Constable of London.

Midsommer day neuer to returne again. The king gaue him two and thirty Mewnes, and so many Castles in Gascoigne, and great sums of money out of the Earledome of Cornwall during his life. The king accompanied him to Bullow, sent him into Ireland, assigning him the whole gouernment and reuenues of that country.

Gaueston Earle of Cornewall banished.

The manner of the puppefition of the Knights templers in England and Ireland: and the confirmation of the new order of Knighthood.

It is ordayned by the king and his counsell that vpon wednesday next after the Epiphany all the brethren of the order of Knights Templers in euery Shire of England should by the Sherifs of ỹ same countries be attached by their bodies, and that all their lands, tenements, & goods, as well Ecclesiasticall as Temporall should be seised and taken into ỹ kings hands, with all their charters, and writings to them belonging, and their persons to keepe in safe custody, although not in vile and hard prison, vntill the king shall otherwise ordaine, which ordinance the king caused to bee executed in this manner: first of all he directed Writs to all the Sheriffes of the seuerall Counties in England, that they should warne a certaine number of free-holders in their seuerall Counties, viz. ten or twelue in euery Shire to bee at a certaine place within the said County vpon paine of forfaiture of all they had which they might forfeit to the king, and that the Sheriffe, in proper person, should be there present in the same place, vpō penalty of the same forfaiture: viz. vpon Sunday, after the said feast of the Epiphany, pretending some matter touching the Kings peace, and whatsoeuer else the Sheriffe should find contained in the said writ: and after that the king sent two or three Clarkes together with the said writs containing the former decree, to take an oath of the said Sheriffs before they should breake open the said writs, and whatsoeuer they should find contained in the said Writs they should not make knowne vnto any, vntill the execution of the said writs were to be performed: and also to take the like oath of those 10.0312. persons before mentioned, viz. that they should not discouer the premisses, vntill the time of execution, and then to doe it sodainly, and the K. also commanded, that the like execution bee fully done in Ireland, so as all the brothers which should happen, to be found in Ireland, should be attached by their bodies in one day, by the Iustices of Ireland and by the treasurer of the Exchequer at Dublin, and that all their lands and tenements, should be taken and seased into the kings hands, the execution thereof was done, in manner and forme as it was done in England: these writs beare date at Bitart, the 20. of December 1307. being the first yeare of king Edward the second.

An. regni 2.

And in the 17. yeare of this Edward the 2. it was ordained, by the king and the Parliament of England, that the knights of the order of Saint Iohn of Jerusalem, lately called the knights of Rodes, should haue all the lands of the late Templers, in such sort as the Templers had them, read the records.

In the feast of Saint Michael, Gilbert de Clare Earle of Glocester tooke to him to wife Maud, daughter to Richard Brugh Earle of Vlster, at Waltham: the same day Iohn de Brugh, sonne to Earle Richard was made knight by the king, and tooke to wife Elizabeth sister to the said Earle Gilbert, in the same place.

1309. K. Edward kept his Christmas at Windsore with great solemnity.

The king sent William Lord Latimer with an hundred horsemen, to fetch Henry Lacy Earle of Lincolne; but he being forewarned, kept himselfe in his Castle, and so preuented their purpose, onely the Lord Latimer and his talked, and so departed.

The king intended to giue Gascoigne to the French king, Scotland to Robert Bruse, Ireland and Wales to others, hoping thereby to haue ayd against his Barons.

King Edward against his Barons.

Robert Archbishop of Canterbury returned from Rome, and was restored to all his goods.

The king sent for Pierce of Gauelston out of Ireland: he landed at Carnaruan, on ỹ Euen of Saint Iohn Baptist, the king met him at the Castle of Flint with great ioy: and gaue to him the Earle of Glocesters sister in marage, they were maried at Barkhamsted, which caused him againe to rise in pride, scorning the Nobles of the Realme, and to abuse the king, as before he had done, in conueying the treasure of the realme into forraine countries, amongst the which treasure, he conueied the table and trestles of gold from the treasure of Westminster, and deliuered them to one Armery of Frisconband to be conueied into Gascoigne. The Barons therefore declared to the king, that except he would expell ỹ said Pierce from his company, they would rise against him as against a pertined Prince: whereupon by ỹ aduise of Pierce of Gauelton, the king sent for ayn into Gascoigne, to the Earle of Fois, and the Vicount of Henoy, and they came with 3. hundred horsemen through France, but Philip the French king imprisoned the chiefe, and slew and hanged the other. Also, the King of England had word from Robert Bruse of Scotland, and from Robert fitz Thomas of Ireland, that they would not take part with the King against his Barons, whereupon the King being wroth, fortified Windsore castle, and began to build Towers and other strange things.

Tde la Mare, Iohn, Tatlon, Gaueston sir for by the king and returned.

Cro. Pet. Ca. The Barons threaten the king.

Cro. Dun.

The Abbot of Saint Denis in France, being sent Legate from the Pope to demand the Legacy that king Edwards father gaue to the holy land, did earnestly request king Edward to remoue from him Pierce Gauelton, with whose conuersation all the world was as it were infected. The ỹ king appointed a Parliament at Northampton, determining from thence to passe into Scotland: the Barons came to this Parliament well furnished, but the King sent word he would not come there, yet at the last he came to Stone Stratford, whither were sent to him by the Barons, the Earles of Warwik and Clare, who requested him to come for his own profit & the cōmodity of

Annal. 3.

of the realme: at length he went in the habit of a squire, and the Barons met him without armor, and in the end they louingly embraced and were made friends, and the voyage to Scotland was rejourned till another time. After Michaelmas the Parliament was holden at London vnto the which Parliament came Lewes the French kings brother, with the Bishop of Poytow from the king of France, to intreat vnity between the king & his Lords: and there were diuers good ordinances made. And once againe though sore against the Kings mind, he caused Pierce to abiure, vpō condition added by the Barons, that if he were found again in any land subiect to the kings dominion, he should be taken as a common enemy, & condemned. Thus being done, he passed into Flanders, and from thence to other countries, seeking rest which he could not find.

Parliament at London.

Pierce of Gaueston abiured the land.

1310. The king kept his Christmas at Windsor, where Walter Langton Bishop of Chester, and the Bishop of Saint Andrewes in Scotland were released out of prison.

Annal. 4. Tempest at Middleton.

The second day of September at night, an horrible Tempest of Thunder hapned, so that hedges and trees lost their greennesse, & the Church of Middleton in Dorsetshire, with the Steeple, Bels, Ornaments, and all other monuments of that place, were consumed with the lightning, the Monks being at Mattens.

K. Hen. mangonnel of finely detained by bad pen, and such deferred no ommunce for pennes in pen.

Henry Earle of Lincolne, Constable of Chester, and Custos of England, died at London, in his house called Lincolnes Inne, in Holborne: he was buried in the new Wirke (whereof he was founder) of Saint Pauls. Church, betwixt our Ladies Chappell, and S. Dunstans Chappell, where a faire monument of stone was raised for him, with his Picture in armour crosse legged, as a Templar bowed for the defence of the holy Land, and Citty of Jerusalem.

R. Rouse, Templers condemned, Tho. Dele.

A Prouincial Councell was holden at London against the Templers in England, vpon heresie and other articles, whereof they were accused, who denied the fact, saying one or two of them: notwithstanding all did confesse, that they could not purge themselues, & therefore were condemned to perpetuall penance in seuerall monasteries, where they behaued themselues very well.

Pierce of Gaueston returned into England.

At Paris in France, 54. of the Templers were brent, by the iudgement of Philip the French king.

Pierce of Gauelton conceiuing an affiance in the fauour of king Edward, & of the young earle of Glocester, whose sister he had maried, taking with him many strangers, returned into England, & a little before Christmas came to the Kings presence, whom the king, forgetting all oathes and promised pacts, receiued as a heauenly guift.

1311. K. Edward kept his Christmas at Yorke, where Pierce of Gauelton was present with his Outlandish men, the king rejoycing, and being in a great iolity because he had receiued him in safety, all the Court and Queene being sorrowfull, because they saw the king not very

Annal. 5.

found. The mighty men of the land therefore sought how they might set an end to the trouble at hand, for they feared to raise warre, and durst not disquiet the king, yet the peril being weyed, they found that so long as Pierce liued, there could be no peace in the Kingdome nor the king to abound in treasure, nor the Queene to enioy the kings true loue. Thus after they had long considered the perils past, present, & to come, they determined rather to try all extremities, then to be despised and set at naught by a Stranger: they chose a Captaine then for their busines to come, Thomas of Lancaster, noble in lineage, valiant in armes, excellent in fame for his manners and iustice, he was son to Edmond Earle of Lancaster, and therefore by inheritance earle of Lancaster, Leicester, & Ferrers. In proces of time he married the only daughter of the Earle of Lincolne, to wit, Henry Lacyes daughter, wherevpon after the Earles decease, of a great man he was made a greater, for he was earle of Lincolne, and of Salisbury, besides the liberties of Pickering, and the honor of Cockermore, and other great lands in Wales, and the earledome of Artoys in France.

Anthony Beke Patriarch of Jerusalem, and Bishop of Durham, deceased at Eltham, on the 28. of March: after he had sate Bishop 28. yeares, and was buried at Durham. He encalculated the ancient manno; place belonging to the Bishops of Durhā at Aukland, he made there the great hall, wherein be diuers pillers of blacke marble, speckled with white, and the great chamber with other buildings there, he also made the exceeding goodly Chappell at Aukland of well squared stone, & founded there a Colledge with a Deane and prebends, and a quadrant in the Southwest side of the Castle, for Ministers of his Colledge: he builded or repaired castle Barnard, Gainsforth and Cunclife: he also builded Somerton Castle in Yorkeshire, which castle he gaue to the K. and the manno; of Eltham in Kent, which he gaue to the Queen. The king shortly after gaue the Castle of Somerton to Henry Beaumont. The castle of Alnwike which William de Veley had giuen vnto him by the said Bishop, trusting in him, that he would preserue it to the vse of the bishops yong bastard, and deliuer it to him, when he came to mans estate, he tooke money therefore, and sold it to Henry Percy; he had the Isle of Man during his life by the Kings grant: Kellow was elect Bishop of Durham.

Colledge at Aukland. Somerton Castle.

Mannos of Eltham.

King Edward with Pierce Gauestō his cōpanion went to Yorke, where the King was lodged in the pallace of the Archbishop, and Pierce in the Castle: they caused the City to be fortified, and the walles to bee repaired, and sent to Robert Bailliol of Scotland for aide against his Lords, but Robert made answer he would not forth of Scotland, neither would he disquiet any man: the like answere was made by the Welchmen. The earles assisted at Bedford, Gilbert the younger Earle of Glocester being one of them, was made Custos of

England

Cornwall, they came to London, and obtained the Scot to be kept, least strangers should enter in to ayde the King.

Lib. Roffensis. Gaveston taken. Gaveston Pierce of Gaveston taken.

After Easter Barram nephew to Pierce Gaveston was taken in Cornewall with great treasure which he had conveyed out of ỹ kings Treasurie: his ship being tossed with tempest on the Sea, was driven where it was taken, & the treasure was brought to London in Carts.

About this time king Edward for his recreation took the sea, leaving Pierce of Gaueston at Yorke, whereupon the Barons brought their power, and therewithall entered the Citty of Yorke, but Pierce fled to Scarborough: then the Barons besieged Scarborough, where they tooke him, and committed him to the custody of Aymer de Valence earle of Pembroke, who brought him to the mannor of Deddington which is betwixt Oxford and Warwike, and there left him to be kept safe, but the next day in the morning Guy earle of Warwike with a company of armed men tooke him from thence, & brought him to Warwike castle: after deliberation taken the earles of Lancaster, of Warwike and of Hereford, caused in their presence in a place then called Blacklow, since Gaversheath, the 19. of June, his head to bee stricken off: his body by the Frier preachers was conveyed to Oxford and there kept more then two yeares, till the king caused the same to be translated to his mannor of Langley and there in the Fryers church (which he had builded) to be buried.

Tho. Trillow, Pierce of Gaueston beheaded. *Ann. Reg.* 5.

1312. M. Isabel was delivered of her first son, named Edward, at Windsor, the 13. day of Nou. *Ann. reg.* 6. Tabula More. The Rhodes won by the Christians.

K. Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor. The Knights of the order of Saint Iohn Baptist, called Saint Iohn of Ierusalem, put the Turkes out of the Isle of Rhodes, and after that won vpon the said Turkes daily for a long time after. This religion was greatly preferred by the fall of the Templers, whose possession was given to them by a councell holden at Vienna.

Thola More. Hugh Spencer the younger.

Robert de Bruse got againe almost all Scotland, the Castles with munitions (the English Garrisons being cast out) he tooke againe into his power. This yeere therefore by consent of the Prelates, and certaine Nobles, Hugh Spencer the sonne was appointed the Kings Chamberlain in place of Pierce of Gaueston, whom they the rather preferred, because they knew the King hated him: neuertheless not long after, by his great diligence, he brought himselfe into the Kings fauour. The father of this Hugh being olde, was yet living, a Knight of great vertue, in counsell wise, in armes valiant, whose confusion and shamefull end he won vnto himselfe by naturall lone though disordinate towards his son, who was in body very comely, in spirit proud, and in action most wicked, whose couetousnes and ambition, by the disheriting of Widowes and Strangers, brought the death of the Nobles, the fall of the King, with the vtter destruction of himselfe and his father.

1313. King Edward kept his Christmas at London.

King Edward gathering a great power, marched towards Scotland, to breake the siege of Striueling Castle, and lodged himselfe and his people thereabout in the field on the Euen of S. Iohn Baptist: neuer afore that time was seen the like preparation, pride and cost in the time of warre, as affirmeth Robert Patton, a Carmelite Frier, being present, and taken of the Scots, which he sorrowfully bewailed in his Heroicall Verse whiles he was prisoner. The first night (saith he) ye might haue seene the Englishmen bathing themselues in wine, and casting their gorges: there was crying, howling, wallaling, and drinking, with other rioting far aboue measure. On the other side, ye might haue seene the Scots, quiet, still, and close, fasting the Euen of Saint Iohn Baptist, labouring in loue of the liberty of their Country. On the morrow, the Scots hauing gotten the most conuenient place in the field for victory, made ditches in the ground three foote deepe, and the like in breadth, from the right wing of the Armie, vnto the left, covering the same with weake twigs or Yerdles, and againe ouer with the Turfe and grasse, which was not of strength to beare horsemen. The army of the Scots being diuided into certaine troupes, stood not far off from this dike, which was betwixt them & the Englishmen. On the other side, the army of the Englishmen comming out of the West, the Sunne rising, casting his beames on their golden Targets, bright helmets, and other armour, gaue such a reflection, as was both wonderfull and terrible to behold. In the first ward were the light horsemen and heauy coursers. In the second, were the Archers and other footemen, who were appointed for the chase of the aduersaries. In the third was the King with his Bishops, and other Religious, amongst whom was Hugh Spencer. The horsemen of ỹ first front making vpon their enemies, foundered with their forefeet into the ditch, & there tumbling, abiding the cruelty of the Scottes, who comming vpon them, slew some, and tooke a great many rich men for ransome. There was slaine Gilbert de Clare Earle of Gloucester, (whom the Scottes would gladly haue kept for ransome, if they had knowne him, but he had forgotten to put on his coat of armes:) with him was slaine sir Edmond Manly, sir Robert Clifford, sir Paine Tipcoft, sir William Marshall, sir Giles Dargenton, and many other Knights, and Esquires.

Tabula More. Robert Bruse. Gilbert Earle of Gloucester, and other Gentlemen slaine in Scotland.

There was taken Humfrey de Bohun earle of Hereford, Iohn Segraue, Iohn Clauering-ham, William Latimer, sir Roger Northbrooke, bearer of the Kings shield or Seale: but sir Ralfe Mountchermer that had married Ioane of Acres Countesse of Gloucester, the Kings sister, being taken, found such fauour that his ransome was pardoned, and he returning into England, brought backe with him the Kings shield or Seale: but sir Edmond Manly the Kings steward drowned himselfe in Banockesborne.

Almost

Almost three hundred men at armes were slaine in that place, our Archers killing many of them, who seeing the Scottes cruelly bent vpon our Horsemen fallen into the Ditch, shot their Arrowes with a high compas, that they might fall betwixt the armour of their Enemies, which was all in vaine: and when they shot right forth, they slew some of the Scots, by reason of their armed breasts, but many of the Englishmen, by reason of their naked backes.

The King with the Bishoppes, and Hugh Spencer betooke themselues to flight; in which danger of flying, the King vowed to GOD, that hee would build vnto the poore Carmelite Friers an house, in the which hee would place twentie foure brethren, to the Students in Diuinitie, which he afterward performed in Oxford.

White Friers in Oxford.

Robert de Bruse caused his prisoners to be ciuilly intreated, and honorably kept, he sent the bodyes of the earle of Glocester, and of the Baron of Clifford to the King of England remaining then at Wetwike, to be buried at his pleasure, demanding no reward for restoring of them. The earle of Glocester was buryed at Tewkesburie, his inheritance was diuided betwixt 3. sisters of the sayde Earle; the first whereof Hugh Spencer had to wife, the second Hugh Audley (whom Pierce Gaueston before had maried) the third Roger de Tamary (whom before Iohn de Bon had and heire, to the heyre of Vlster in Ireland had married) and so the inheritance of that Noble Earledome was deuided into three Baronies.

1314. King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsor, with many Prelates of the land.

Chron. Tinc. Ralph Bradocke Bishoppe of London deceased, who in his life time gaue 2000 markes of siluer, toward the building of the newe worke of the Chappell on the South side of our Ladies Chappell in the East end of the church of S. Paule in London, and left much by his Testament to the same worke: and this is to bee noted, that in digging the foundation of this worke, was found more then 100. heads of oxen and kine, which tyring confirmed ỹ opinion of those which haue reported, that of olde time it had beene called the Temple of Iupiter, and that there was the sacrifice of beasts.

New worke of Paules Church.

The King calling to him the Archbishop of Canterburie, 4. other Bishops and manie Abbots and ecclesiasticall persons, hee caused the body of Pierce of Gaueston to be translated and honorably buried at Langley, but yet there were not many of the Nobles at his buryal.

This yeere 1314. Margaret Countesse of Holland was brought to bed of three hundred thirtie foure and three children, all beyng alme of the biggenesse of new hatched Chickens, they were all baptized & then died: this Countesse was proud and scornefull by nature, shee daily mocked such women as had more then one child at a birth, saying, who so brought forth more then one childe at one birth, the rest had seuerall Fathers. And vpon a time a poore woman that had foure children at a burthen humbly prayed her charity, vnto whom she answered, goe get thee hence thou harlot, thou shalt neuer make me beleeue, but those thy brattes had foure Fathers, thou inhabitate frumpet: whereat the poore woman being sore vexed, kneeled downe and with feruent agony of spirit, prayed God that she might bring forth as many at one burthen for her euerlasting shame, as many children as there be dayes in the yeare: of this you may reade more in Guy de Bardon, and many other authentike authors, & also to this day there remaines a memorable monument of her in Holland.

A Countesse brought to bed of 365. children. They were baptized by a Bishop. Pope to the reformation of shamefull abhominable fruition.

The morrow after Candlemas day there assembled a Parliament at London, to treate of the state of the Kingdome, and how to bring downe the prices of victuals, that were now growne to be so deare, that the common people were not able to liue. It was therefore ordained, and the Kings Writs were published for prices of victuals, that no Ore stalled ox corne-fed, be sold for more then foure and twenty shillings: no grasse fed Ore for more then fiftene shillings: a fat stalled Cow at twelue shillings: another Cow at ten shillings: a fat Mutton corne-fed, or whose wooll is well growne, at twenty pence: another fat Mutton thorne, at fourteene pence: a fat Hegge of two yeares old, at three shillings 4. pence: a fat Goose, at two pence halfepenny, in the Citie at three pence; a fat Capon at two pence, in the Citie two pence halfe peny: a fat Hen at one peny, and in the City three halfe pence: two Chickens a peny, in the City three halfe pence: foure Pigeons for one peny, in the City three for foure Pigeons for a peny; foure and twenty egges a peny, in the Citie twenty egges a peny, &c. Parliament at London. Victuals prised. *Ann. reg.* 8.

Notwithstanding, the statutes of the last Parliament, the Kings Writs, &c. all things were sold dearer then before, no flesh could bee had, Capons and Goose would not bee found, Egs were hard to come by, Sheepe dyed of the rot, Swine were out of the way: a quarter of wheat, beanes, and pease, were sold for twenty shillings, a quarter of Malt for a Marke, a quarter of Salt for thirty fiue shillings, &c. T. Walsingh. Thomas prece Chr. 5. Albans

King Edward kept his Christmas at Cheyston in Sherwood. 1315.

John Poydras, a Tanner sonne of Exceter, in diuers places of England, named himselfe the sonne of Edward the first, and said, that by a false Surie he was stolne out of his Cradle, and Edward that now was King, put in his place; but shortly after he was conuict of his untruth, and confessed that he did it by the motion of a familiar spirit which he had in his house in likenesse of a Cat, whom he had serued three yeares, for the which seruice he was hanged betwixt Northampton and Killingworth, in a place called the Copiothorne. A Tanners son claimed to be king.

The King in a Parliament at London, gaue the Rod and Office of Marshall vnto Thomas W. Patten. T. Walsingh.

of Rycherton Earle of Norfolke his brother. He also reuoked the promotions before made for selling of Victuals, and permitted all men to make the best of that they had: neuertheleſſe the dearth increased through the abundance of raine that fell in Haruest, ſo that a quarter of Wheate, or of Salt, was ſolde before Midſommer for thirty ſhillings, and after 40. ſhillings.

Anno reg. 9. Mortalitie of men.

There followed this famine, a grieuous mortality of people, ſo that the quicke might vnneath bury the dead.

Robert Fitz Payn deceaſed, and was buried at Shirebourne. Alſo Guido de Bello campo Earle of Warwicke deceaſed, and was buried at Warwicke.

The beaſts and cattell alſo by the corrupt graſſe whereof they fed, dyed, whereby it came to paſſe, that the eating of fleſh was ſuſpected of all men, for fleſh of beaſtes not corrupted was hard to finde. Horſe-fleſh was counted great delicates: the poore ſtole fatte Dogges to eate: Some (as it was ſayd) compelled thereto through famine, in hidden places, did eate the fleſh of their owne Children, and ſome ſtole others which they deuoured. Theeues that were in priſons did plucke in peeces thoſe that were newly brought amongſt them, and greedily deuoured them halfe aliue. A gallon of ſmall ale was at two pence, of the better 3. pence, and the beſt 4. pence.

Dogs fleſh good meate.

Children were eaten.

Theeues in priſon deuoure one another.

The Londoners conſidering that Wheate made into Malt, was much conſumed, ordained, that from thenceforth it ſhould be made of other graine, and alſo, that a gallon of better Ale ſhould be ſold for three halfe-pence, and of ſmall ale for a penie, and not aboue.

Wheat forbid to be made into malt.

The K. according to the ſtatute of London, ſent his Writs through the Realme, commanding, that as well within the Liberties as without, in Cities, Boroughes, Townes, and Villages, a gallon of Ale ſhould be ſold for a penie, and from thenceforth no Wheat ſhould be made into malt: which if he had not the ſooner cauſed to bee proclaimed, the greateſt part of the people ſhould haue periſhed through famine.

Earle Waren was excommunicated by the Biſhop of Chicheſter for Adultery, whereupon the ſayd Earle came to the Biſhop with armed men, and foure more haſty then the reſt, threatned the Biſhop, whereupon the Biſhops men fell on them, and tooke the Earle and the reſt, and impriſoned them.

Chron. Dun. Earle Waren excommunicated.

1316. King Edward kept his Chriſtmas at Clipſton in Shirewood, as he had done the yeare before.

Richard Killow Biſhop of Durham deceaſed, vnto whom ſucceeded Lewes de Beaumount by the Kings appointment, a man meanely learned, and lame on both feete. The King alſo made Thomas Cobham Biſhop of Worceſter, that Sea being voyd by the death of Walter de Maydenſtone. Alſo Adam de Orleton, was made Biſhop of Hereford, that Sea being voyde by the death of Robert de Swinsfield. Elizabeth Counteſſe of Hereford, daughter to K. Edward the firſt, deceaſed, and was buried at Walden.

Biſhops deceaſed.

The ſame yeare the King tooke of euery towne in England, a man to ſerue in his wars of Scotland, and foure markes of money towards his charges, hauing no reſpect to the greatnes or littleness of any towne, which ſeemed to be vndiſcreetly done.

There arriued in England by the Kings requeſt Gauſtelinus and Lucas de Fliſco, two Cardinals, to make peace betweene the realmes of England and Scotland, and to reconcile vnto the King Thomas Earle of Lancaſter. They brought Bulls from the Pope to excommunicate the Scottes except they returned vnto peace with the King of England. Theſe Cardinals went into the North parts, to eſtall Lodowick Beomond, to whom the Pope (at the Kings inſtance) had giuen the Biſhopricke of Durham: and when they came neere vnto the Towne of Derington, certaine robbers breaking out of a valley, Gilbert Middleton and Walter Selby being their Captaines, ſodainely ſet vpon the familie of the Cardinals and of Lodowick, on Wigelſeden Mooze, robbed them of their treaſure, and carried Lodowicke Biſhop of Durham to Mooreth, where they conſtrained him to pay a great ranſome: They brought Henry Beomond his brother to the caſtle of Kintford, and there kept him till he had payed a great ranſome: but the Cardinals came to Durham, where they tarried a few dayes for anſwere of the Scots, and ſo vnder the Kings conduct they returned to Mooke, and left their buſineſſe which they came for vndone. Gilbert Middleton after many damages done to the Priorie of Tinmouth and other, was taken in his owne caſtle of Pitford, by William Felton. Thomas Hetton, and Robert Horneclife, carried to London, and there in the preſence of the Cardinals drawne and hanged.

Two Cardinals robbed.

Anno reg. 10.

The 14. day of Februarie, the King by his charter granted to the ſcholliers of the Vniuerſitie of Cambridge, that whenſoeuer the Maior of the towne ſhall take his accuſtomed oath, he ſhall be ſworne in preſence of the Chancellour of the Vniuerſitie, to vphold and maintaine the liberties and priuiledges of the Vniuerſitie, and the ſame ſhall not maliciouſly or vnduti fully impugne, and ſo lacke thereof, the oath to be of no force, but to be againe miniſtred to that effect.

The Cardinals vnder certaine conditions, made peace betwixt the K. and Thomas Earle of Lancaſter, which conditions ſhortly after were vniuſtly broken.

Sir Goſſeline Deinuile and his brother Robert, with two hundred in the habite of Fryers, did many notable robberies, they ſpoiled the Biſhop of Durhams pallaces, leauing nothing in them but bare walles, for the which they were after hanged at Mooke.

Theeues in the habite of Fryers.

King Edward kept his Chriſtmas at Weſtminſter, at which feaſt, few of the nobles were preſent, because of diſcord moued betwixt the King and them, for that he would not obſerue the

1317

the Articles ſo often demanded and promiſed.

Margaret daughter to Phillip ſon to Lewes king of France, write vnto Edward the firſt, deceaſed the 14. of Februarie, and was buryed in the middle of the quier of the Grey Fryers Church at London.

Edward de Bruſe the King of Scottes brother, who by the ſpace of three yeares had affaulted Ireland, and had crowned himſelfe King, was taken by Engliſhmen, and was beheaded at Dandalke.

Ioh. Trekelow. Edward de Bruſe beheaded.

In that battell were ſlaine 29. Baronets of Scotland, and fiue thouſand and eight hundreth other, the primate of Armath being chiefe captaine for the King of England.

The 18. of March the King ſent his letters to the Pope for the 22. confirmation of all the ancient priuiledges of the Vniuerſitie of Cambridge, which the Chancellor and Scholliers had of long time enioyed, by the benefit of the Popes his Predeceſſors, and alſo of his owne predeceſſors the Kings of England: whereunto the Pope aſſented, as appeareth by his bull granted in the Moneth of June following.

Early harueſt cheape corne.

This yeare was an early Harueſt, ſo that all the corne was inned before S. Giles day. A buſhell of wheat that was before for 5. ſhillings was ſold for ten pence: and a buſhell of oates that before was eight ſhillings, was ſold for eight pence.

Anno reg. 11.

Earle Waren take the wife of the Earle of Lancaſter, & ſhut her vp in his Caſtle, for that he ſaid ſhe was betrothed to him before ſhee was married: the Earles had either of them a wife, but neither of them cared for them.

1318. K. Edward kept his Chriſtmas at Beuerley with many Prelates, Lords, and Barons, at which time he prouided himſelfe of a great armie, that he might bring downe the pride of the Scots, if by any meanes it were for him profitable, & to deliuer England frō their eruptiōs.

Berwike betrayed.

About Midlent the towne of Berwike was betrayed to the Scots, through y treaſon of Peter Spalding, and other Engliſhmen, whom the King of Scots cauſed to be hanged for being traytors to their country. The Caſtle held out till for want of victuals they within were conſtrained to deliuer it into the Scottiſhmens hands, who won alſo at the ſame time, the Caſtles of Harbotel, Mark, and Midford, ſo that they poſſeſſed the more part of all Northumberland, euen to Newcaſtle vpon Tine, ſauing certaine Caſtles that were defended againſt them.

The Scots inuaders of England. Rich. Southw. Ioh. Trekelow.

In May they entred further into the land, burning all before them, till they came to Ripon, which towne they ſpoiled, and tarrying thee daies, they receiued 1000. marks of thoſe that were got into the Church, becauſe they ſhould not put the towne to the fire, as they had done the townes of Northallerton, and Boroughbridge, &c.

In their returning backe, they burnt Knaresburgh, and Skipton in Crauen, and all other afore them, carrying into Scotland a marueilous multitude of cattell, beſides priſoners men and women.

The Yorkeſhire men gathered together, to the number of 10000. met with the Scottes at the Downe of Hilton, ten miles by North-weſt from Yorke, where they loſt 3000. men, and were ouercome by the Scots. Which when the King heard tell of, he left the ſiege of Berwike, and haſted to meet the Scots, but they returned another way.

T. Walſingh. W. Packin. *Anno reg. 12*

The Pope obtained that Perſons ſhould haue but one benefice a peece: whereupon Patrons ſtreight preſented new Parſons to the reſidue.

A great murrein of Kine hapned, which were ſo mortally infected, that dogs and rauens eating of the carrion of the Kine, were poyſoned, and did ſwell to death, ſo that no man durſt eate any Beefe.

Murrein of Kine.

The King being at Yorke, the Scots entred England, came to Yorke, and burnt the ſuburbs of the City, tooke ſir Iohn de Boytaine Earle of Richmond priſoner, with many other.

The Scots burne the ſuburbs of Yorke Adam Murl.

Many Herdſmen and certaine women of England, and of other parts of the world, gathered themſelues together, and would goe ſeeke the holy land, to kill y enemies of Chriſt, as they ſaid: but becauſe they could not paſſe ouer the great Sea, they ſlew many Iewes in the parts of Tholouſe and Gaſcoigne, wherfore many of them were taken and put to death.

Herdmen and women goe toward Ieruſalem.

King Edward kept his feaſt of Chriſtmas at Wincheſter. 1319.

Iohn Sandall Biſhop of Wincheſter deceaſed, vnto whom ſucceeded Reignald de Aſſer the Popes Nuntio. Alſo Iohn Dalbred biſhop of Lincoine deceaſed, and Henry Burwaſh nephew to Bartholomew Badleſmere was choſen to his Sea.

This yere the pope granted to the K. of England, the tenth of all Eccleſiaſticall goods for one yeare as before he had done the like. *Anno reg. 13.*

In the moneth of June K. Edward went ouer into France, and came to Amiens, where he met with the King of France, and receiued of him the countie of Pontow.

The 15. of October the clarks of the Exchequer went toward Yorke with the booke called Domes day, and other Records and proviſion that laded 21. carts, but within the ſpace of halfe a yeare in the Kalends of March they did returne againe to London. Exchequer kept at Yorke. W. Paſton.

The ſame yeare the Kings Iuſtices ſate in the Tower of London, whereupon Iohn Giſors late Maior of London and many others fled the City, for things they had preſumptuouſly done, and knew themſelues guiltie.

This yeare y Lepars were diffamed through all Chriſtendome, for that they had couenanted with the Sarazens to poyſon the Chriſtians in all places, which in diuers parts they brought to paſſe, putting poyſon into Welles, Fountaines, pits, and other places; vpon the which diuers of them in Prouance, and in other parts of France were burnt, and the Iewes were detained in priſon for conſenting herein to them, there dyed in Almaine for

Iewes and Lepars poyſoners. Comeſtor. Mendenſis.

this cause (after some Authors) aboue 12000. Iewes.

1320. King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster with great honour and glory.

The Earle of Hereford bought of Sir Will. Bruse knight, a portion of land in the Marches of Wales called Gowers.

Roger Mortimer the vncle, and Roger the Nephew, not knowing of the foresaid bargaine, had also bought the said ground of the said William Bruse. Also the Lord Mowbray who had married the Daughter and heire of the said William claimed it by inheritance of his Wife. Last of all, Hugh Spencer the younger had bought that land, and put them all out, wherethrough the foresaid Nobles were sore moued, and chiefly Earle of Hereford complained to Thomas Earle of Lancaster, which two Earles allured almost all the other Earles and Barons to take their part. Thomas Earle of Lancaster being their Captaine, they came to Sherborne, and from thence with Banners displayed to Saint Albanes: from thence they sent to the King being at London, requiring him to banish the two Hugh Spencers, which were condemned by the communalty in many articles: which when the King would not grant, the Barons came to London, where at length the King granted their petition, so that Hugh Spencer the elder was banished, but the younger Hugh fell to spoyling on the Sea, taking out of two Dromidos about Sandwich, goods to the value of 40000. pounds.

The Barons in armour.

Anarg. 14. The elder Spencers banished. T. de la More.

About the Feast of S. Michael, Isabel the Queene came from Canterbury to the castle of Leeds in Kent, purposing to haue lodged there that night, but she could not be permitted to enter.

Leedes Castle besieged.

The King herewith being offended, as being done in contempt of him, calling to him the commons of Eſſex and London, beſieged the Caſtle, which belonged to Bartholomew de Badeſl mere, who hauing left his wife and children therein, was gone with the reſt of the Noble men to the ranſacking of the Spencers goods.

In the meane time they in Leeds Caſtle deſpairing of their ſafeguard: the Noble men with their army came to Kingſton in the Hill of Saint Simon and Iude, demanding (by the Biſhops of Canterbury and London, and the Earle of Pembrooke, who were ſent betweene them) that the King would giue ouer his ſiege, promiſing, that they after the next Parliament would deliuer the Caſtle into the Kings hands: and become obedient vnto him: but the King would not grant the Noble mens petition, who being returned into other parts, the King with much labour obtained the Caſtle, and hanging fiue of the cheefe of thoſe whom he found therein, he ſent the wife and children of Badelſmere to the Tower of London.

1321. King Edward held his Chriſtmas at Cirecester, and after Chriſtmas leauing Glocester and Worcester, he with his Army went to Shrewsbury and Bridgenorth. Both the Mortimers meeting the King, reuerently and peaceably ſubmitted themſelues vnto him: but the King ſent them both to the Tower of London. Mortimers ſent to the Tower.

Maurice Barkeley, and Hugh Audley in like ſort ſubmitting themſelues, are ſent to Wallingford Caſtle.

Humfrey Earle of Hereford, Gilbert Talbot, Raufe Damary, and their adherents, fled into the North to the Earle of Lancaster.

About the latter end of February the King gathered an hoſte and went againſt the rebels, and at Burton vpon Trent put them to flight. The King purſuing them, the 16. of March, the hoſtes met againe at Boroughbridge, where Humfrey de Bohune (by a certaine Welſhman, who fled vnder the bridge) being thruſt into the fundament with a ſpeare, dyed. There were taken in the field Thomas Earle of Lancaſter, with the Lords, knights, and other to the number of 65. the reſt ſauing themſelues by flight. The battaile of Burroughbridge.

Thomas Wyke. Walſingham.

These by the iudgement of Andrew Harkely were condemned

On the two and twenty of March Thomas of Lancaſter was beheaded: Waren de Lile, William Tocher, Thomas Mandvit, Henric Bradebourne, William Fitz Wil. the younger, and William Cheyney, Barons hanged and quartered at Pontfract: Io. Mowbray, Roger Clifford, Goceline Deinvile, drawne and quartered at Yorke: Bartholomew Badleſmere at Canterbury: Henry de Mountfort, Henrie Wilington at Bittlow: Iohn Clifford, Roger Elinborough at Glocester: William Kerdiſe, Henry Chies at London: Francis de Aldham, at Winſor: Thomas Culpeper at Winchelſey, Hugh de Audley the younger, Iohn de Willington, Robert Talbot, Iohn Maidut, Edmond Hechide, Iohn de Sapy, Robert de Wachevile, Philip de Labeche, Iohn de Beeke, Henry de Layboarne, theſe ten & 18. knights more were beſtowed in diuers priſons. The Earle of Lancaster beheaded, and many other executed. Iohn Tribbow W. Packing.

The Iuſticiars of Trailebaſtō in Eſſex, ſate vpon all complaints, except Aſſiſes touching pleas of feode lands, and others, in the Kings Bench to be pleaded, who did abſtaine their hands from all kinds of guifts, And would not be called to the Feaſts and banquets of any man. Eltren Dun, Iuſticeof Trailebaſton.

This yeare 1322. about the Month part of Holland there was ſæne vpon the Shoze a ſtrange ſily o? Sea monſter, playing earneſtly with little ſtones, which certaine fiſhermen eſpying left their Nets & came ſecretly on ſhoze, when this Monſter perceiued them to be neare vnto him, and that he was preuented from running into the Sea, becauſe they were betweene him and the water, he began to run any way, but he was quickly ouertaken; his head, face, breſt, armes, legs, and all his other limbs & members in all reſpects like vnto a man. his fingers, nimble enough, they taught him to Spin, he would not ſpeak, but ſigh often, in 5. daies ſpace he would eat no meat, whereupon they ſuffered him to go to ſ ſea ide to ſee what he would do, and Fiſhers like vnto men and wo? men.

and ſtanding ſtill a while, when he ſaw his mates were t. Ie from him, he ranne into the ſea, and was ſeene no more; but on the next day following there came after the manner of an Eele: there was after this another taken, a female, who was not longer, and taught to Spin very orderly, but ſhe ſpake not, and ſtole away into the Sea againe: there was an Herald taken after both theſe vpon the coaſt of Bretaine, he had but two fingers vpon a hand, and two toes vpon a foote, he was more dull and ſullen then the other, he would not eate like the reſt.

The third weeke after Eaſter, a Parliament was gathered at Yorke, where Hugh Spencer the father was made Earle of Winchester, vnto whom the King gaue the caſtle and honour of Dunnington, which was parcell of the Caſtleborne of Lincolne. T. de la More. Parliament at Yorke.

About the feaſt of S. Iames, the King with a great armie entred Scotland, but the Scots hauing deſtroyed all afore, were retired beyond the Scottiſh ſea. So that the King being oppreſſed by famine, returned into England, whom the Scots followed, and in a place of the foreſt of Blackmore they ſet on the King, ſo that he hardly eſcaped. T. de la More. Walſingham. Iohannes Nichol. Trivet. Anarg. 15

There was taken the Earle of Richmond, and the Lord of Shirace, the French Kings Embaſſadour, and many other: whereupon the Scots ſpoyling all the Country, and burning euen to Yorke, they burned Ripon, and ſlew many Priests of the Colledge there: but in Beuerley they hurt not a man, for the Biſhop and Chanons did redeeme the ſame with 400. pounds of ſterling money. And ſo the Scots by reaſon of winter made returne, being laden with ſpoyles. The Scots inuade the Kingdome of Yorke.

This yere the King made Sir Andrew Harkley Earle of Carlile, and gaue him lands in the Marches of Scotland. Andrew Harkley Earle of Carlile.

This yere the Steple and the Monaſterie at Elſtell downe in the night, but hurt no perſon: which Steple was afterward 20. yeares and more in building ere it were fully finiſhed, and coſt in the time of Abbots the foreſt of that Church, 2400. pounds 16. ſhillings and eleuen pence: which Steple is built in Architecture 8. ſquare of timber, vpon 8. Pillars of ſtone, and called the Lanthorne. There accompted one of the foure famous things that commendeth the Ile and Church: the other three being the Chappell of our Lady, the Well, and the Vineyard. Alicia Lady of the Ile, third wife to Robert Fitz Walter deceaſed, and was buried a gh to her parents in the Church of the Fryers preachers of Cambridge. Commendations of the Ile of Ely.

1322. King Edward kept his Chriſtmas at Yorke, diſſembling his iniuries lately received at the hands of the Scots.

About the feaſt of the Purification of our Lady, Andrew de Harkley late made Earle of Carlile, vnder colour of peace, fayned that he would marry Robert Bruſe his ſiſter. Whereupon the King reputing him a Traytor, cauſed him to be taken by his truſty friend Sir Anthony de Lucie, who ſent him in yrons ſtraight to London, where he was iudged before Sir Anthony de Lucie, in this manner. He was led to the Barre as an Earle worthily apparelled, with his Sword girt about him, hoſed, booted, and ſpurred, &c. Vnto whom Sir Anthony ſpake in this manner. Sir Andrew (quoth he) the King, for thy valiant ſeruice hath done thee great honour, and made thee Earle of Carlile, ſince which time, thou, as a traytour to thy Lord and King, ledeſt his people that ſhould haue holpe him at the battell of Beighland, away by the Country of Copland, and thoughe the Earledome of Lancaſter, by which meanes, our Lord the King was diſcomfited there of the Scottes, thoughe thy treaſon and falſeneſſe, whereas if thou hadeſt come betimes, hee had had the victorie: and this treaſon thou committeſt, for the great ſumme of gold and ſiluer that thou receiueſt of James Dowglaſſe, a Scot, the Kings enemy. Our Lord the King will therefore, that the order of Knighthood, by the which thou receiueſt all thine honour and worthip vpon thy body, be brought to nought, and thy ſtate vndone, that other knights of lower degree, may after thee beware, and take example truely to ſerue. Earle of Carlile degraded.

Then commanded he to hew his Spurres from his heeles, then to breake his ſword ouer his head which the K. had giuen him, to keepe and defend his land therewith, when he made him Earle. After this, he let vncleath him of his furred Tabard, and of his Hood, of his Coat of armes, and alſo of his Cirkle: and when this was done, ſir Anthony ſayd vnto him, Andrew (queth hee) now art thou no knight but a knaue, and for thy treaſon, the King will that thou ſhalt bee hanged and drawne, and thine head ſmitten off from thy body, thy bowels taken out of thy body and burned before thee, and thy body quartered; and thy head being ſmitten off, afterward to bee ſet vpon London bridge, and thy foure quarters ſhall be ſent vnto foure good townes of England, that all other may beware by thee. And as Anthony Lucie had ſayd, ſo was it performed and done in all things, on the laſt day of October. Anarg. 2?

In the moneth of May, the Maior and communalitie of Cambridge, roſe in great multitude againſt the Scholliers: In which tumult diuers Scholliers were maymed, and ſome ſlaine, and the Charters of their Priuiledges torne and thꝛowne into the mire in miſerable ſort: whereupon the King ſent thither Maſter Henry Spigernell, Maſter Robert de Malberthorpe, and others, with commiſſion to punniſh the offence.

The 2. day of Auguſt, the two Mortimers were adiudged to bee drawne and hanged at Weſtminſter, for diuers robberies and murthers which the King layd againſt them, but no execution of that iudgement was done, by reaſon of a writ that the King ſent to Sir Richard de Swardſtone then Conſtable of ſ Tower, to ſtay the iudgement, and the K. granted them their liues, to be in perpetuall priſon. The two Mortimers condemned to priſon.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Yorke with great glory.

The 30. day of April Aymer de Valence Earle of Pembroke, Hugh Spencer the younger Robert Baldocke Archdeacon of Lincolne, sir William Hart knight, William de Ayremin Chancellor, Goffride de Scroop, were for King Edwards England sent vnto Newcastle vpon Line, where they met with William Bishop of St. Andrewes, Thomas Randall Earle of Murray, Ioan de Mowbray, Robert de Lundey, y father, knights, and maister Walter de Troyne Clearke, for the King of Scotter, there to talke of a finall peace: but when that would not be, they fell to a truce, which they agreed vpon for thirteene yeares, which was proclaimed about the eleuenth of June, dated at Thorpe neare vnto Pomfret.

Peace with Scotland.

This yere Philip King of France, died, and his brother Charles succeeded him.

About the beginning of August, K. Edward being at Pocklington, there came Ambassadors from the new French King, the Lord Beaumont and sir Anselme de Florence, to cite the King to come to doe homage for Gyen, Aquitaine, and other lands (which) he held of him: and though Hugh Spencer the sonne, Lord Chamberlaine, and Robert Baldocke Lord Chancellour, had procured the said Ambassadors, not to declare their message vnto the King, yet when they should depart, they did it, admonishing him to come.

And the said sir Andrew de Florentia being a Notarie, made a publike instrument of the said citation and admonition.

Reginald de Asser Bishop of Winchester, deceased, and Iohn de Stratford succeeded in that Bishoprick.

The French King made a processe against the King of England. And Charles de Valois vncle to King Charles of France a mortall enemy to Englishmen, did raise on the Lake-dome of Angolesme, the county of Poyctiers to the vse of his nephew the King.

Tale la More.

An. reg. 17

At the time in going forward to the towne of Vyall, he to whom it well belonged by Edmond of Woodstock Earle of Kent, before whom a fine truce being taken, to continue vntill such time as it should be determined between both the Kings as concerning peace, and the towne being yeelded vp, both y armies departed home.

1324. King Edward kept his Christmas at Nottingham castle with great magnificence, glory and ioy of people.

The next Lenten a Parliament holden at London, Adam Tarleton Bishoppe of Hereford was accused of treason, but by the Archbishoppes of Canterbury, Yorke, and Dublaine, and their suffragan Bishoppes, he was taken from the barre and had away: notwithstanding inquisition being made by lawfull men of that Countrey, they found that he had ayded the Mortimers with horse and armour against the King, whereupon all his temporalties were seized into the Kings hands.

Hen. Blanford, Parliaments, London.

In this Parliament the King granted a petition of the Prelates, that all the bodies of the Nobilemen that were hanged on gallowes, should be taken downe, and buried in Ecclesiasticall sepulture.

The King also asked a subsidie of the clearge and people, for the redeeming of Iohn Brytaine Earle of Richmond.

Adam Tarleton Bishoppe of Hereford, being depriued of all his temporall goods, did hate the Spencers deadly, so did Henr. Burwash of Lincolne (whose temporalities by the space of two yeres had beene detained in the Kings hands) of whom and of other were made these verses.

Nostri cornuti, sunt consilio quasi muti,
Et quia non tuti, nequeunt sermonibus uti, Hen. Blanford.
Sunt quasi confusi, aceeto legis abusi,
Sic perit ecclesiæ, legis & ipsa vie.

Our horned Prelates, in counsell are dumme,
And for feare of displeasure dare not say mum
They are so confounded, with abuse of the law
That Church, & right way, are brough vnder (awe.

In this Parliament, the lands, Lordships, and possessions of the Templers were giuen to the Hospitallers of Saint Iohn of Ierusalem, though the whole realme, to be by them possessed for euer, for the defence of Christendome against the Infidels.

Mortimer. Mortimer his imprisonment both out of the Tower.

In Lammas day, Roger Mortimer of Wigmore, by making a solemne banquet to sir Stephen Segraue constable of the Tower of London, and the other officers, and giuing to his keepers a dope-drinke, escaped out of the Tower, breaking through the wall, and comming into the kitchin were adorning to the Kings lodgings, and getting out of the coppe thereof, came vnto a warde of the Tower, and so with the cords knit ladder-wise prepared afore hand by a friend of his, got to another warde, and so with great feare got to the Thamis, and with his helper and 2. more of his counsell passed the ruer, and auoiding the high wayes came to the Sea, and there finding a ship at Pocheseller, he passed ouer into Fr. nce to the king there, where he tarried long, hoping when he might be reconciled to the K. of England: his vncle Roger being still kept in filthy prison, the space almost of fiue yeres very vnmercifully, at length he dyed, and was buryed at Bathlowe: for the escape of the younger Mortimer, the King being sore offended, put sir Stephen Segraue out of his constableship of the tower. About the feast of S. Martine where the Burgesses of London and of other townes attached by a clarke named Thomas Nebiggin g. who purchased a commission of the King, and by force thereof accused many, obiecting against them, that they hadde conference with sir Roger Mortimer, maintaining and sustaining him, on the other side the Sea, and that they aided and counselled him to escape out of the Tower, of which indisements

T. de la More.

indisements the good people did purge themselues, by all the course of law, before the Kings Iustices, whereby that Clearke was counted a wicked man, and imprisoned as a false traytor. The K. & Q. sent Ambassadors

1325. to the French King, the Bishoppes of Winchester and of Norwich, with Iohn of Brytaine Earle of Richmond, to take order for the Dukedome of Aquitaine, who after long debatings take a certaine forme of peace with the King.

King Edward kept his feast of Christmas at Nottingham very nobly and roiall. After that the truce had bin confirmed at Pocklington betwixt the Englishmen and the Scots, by the graue and wise persons of both the realmes.

The Queene sent into France.

King Edward sent the Queene his wife vnto to her brother the French King, to stablish the peace, who went ouer with a small company. By her mediation a peace was fully finished, to wit, that the King of England should giue vnto his eldest sonne Edward the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and the Earledome of Pontiue, & that the French King should receiue homage of him: whereupon Edward the kings sonne went ouer with a competent houshold about the feast of Saint Mathew and did homage vnder certaine protestations, to his vncle the French King.

King Edward ratified his Queene and their sonne.

Whiles the Queen with her sonne remained in France longer then the Kings pleasure was and would not come again without Roger Mortimer and other Nobles that were fled out of England, and especially for the paine she bare to y two high Spencers, the Kin displeasure banished them both, and all other that did their parts: whereupon many fled ouer the seas to the Queene, amongst y which was one, a subtill knight, sir Roger Waspre who flaying the Constable of Cosse Castle, broke from thence, where he had long laine prisoner.

Oliver Ingham. *An. reg. 18* *An. reg. 19*

Sir Oliver Ingham knight, a man of the yong Duke Edward had made keeper of Aquitaine, gathered a great army, and that y the Prince of Aniow (which the French King contrary to couenants did withheld) and brought it wholly into the Dominion of England.

Moreouer, the kings nauy take 100. ships of the Normans and brought them into England, for which cause great hatred grew betwixt the two Kingdoms and their realmes.

The Queene perceiuing that the nobles of France were corrupted with guifts sent out of England so that she could trust none of them, secretly conueyed her selfe and her sonne to the Earle of Haynalde, desiring ayde of him: who receiued and intreated her very honourably, so long as she remained there.

1326. William Stratford and others beheaded.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Saint Edmundsbury, sore afraide of the Queenes returne and of those exiled persons that were with her, left they should with a power of Aliens put him downe from his kingly dignity, wherefore he ordained his Castles as well in Wales as in England, to be furnished with munitions, and meanwhile also let more his riuers and coasts of y sea, whereof the men of y Cinque ports take the charge to defend. He also commanded that in euery City, borough, towne corporate, hundred and liberty of England, musters should be made, and their men to be exercised in armes both on horseback and on foote, to that they might at all times be ready when any hue and cry should be made, to pursue the Aliens if any came into England. And to this purpose, he ordained Bekenings or Beacons to be set vp, that the same being fired might be seene farre off, and thereby the people to be raised.

Bekenings set vp.

Also the Queene made a marriage betwixt her eldest sonne Edward, and Philip the daughter to William Earle of Haynald, & then with her sonne Edward, Edmond of Woodstocke Earle of Kent, the Kings brother, Roger Mortimer, and many other noble men that fled out of England, & tooke brother to William Earle of Haynald being Captaine, with stipendary Knights out of Almaine and Haynald, she tooke the seas with all her power, which were to the number of two thousand seuen hundred fiftie and seuen men well armed, and arrived at Orewell or Odwell hauen besides Harwich in Essex, about the Epiphanias, whither immediately the Earle Marshall, the Earle of Leicester, the Bishops of Lincolne, Hereford, and Dunelme, and Ely came, and being ioyned to the Queene, made a great army: the other Bishops specially of Canterbury, ayded her with money. When she had refreshed her army at Saint Edmundsbury, she went forwards pursuing her enemies, whose goods she applied to her owne vse.

An. reg. 20 Queen Isabel returned.

The King requested aide of the Citizens of London, who made him answere they would with due obedience honour the King & Queene and their sonne, who was lawfull heire to the realme, and that they would shut their gates against all forreine Brayters of the realme; but they would not goe out of their Citie to fight, except they might accepting to their liberties, returne home againe the same day before the Sunne set: which when the King heard, he fortified the Tower of London, & left there his yonger sonne Iohn of Eltham: he caused also to be proclaimed that euery man should resist them that were arrived, and to murder them to the vttermost of their powers (the Q. & the Mortimers with her sonne Edward, and the Earle of Kent his brother onely excepted) and whosoeuer could bring the head of Roger Mortimer, should haue 1000. pounds.

The King requested aide of the Citizens of London.

Proclamation by the King.

Proclamation by the Queene.

On the other side it was proclaimed in the Queenes behalfe, that all men should haue aide & peace except the Disherers of the realme, to wit, the Spencers the Father and the sonne, Robert Baldocke Bishop of Norwich, the Kings Chancellor, and their fauourers and whosoeuer did bring to the Queene y head of Hugh Spencer, should haue 1000. pounds. The Citizens of London without respect of any, beheaded such as they knew to be the Queenes enemies, among y which they beheaded one of their Citizens named Iohn Maydan because he was familiar with Hugh Spencer the yon-

Disherison of London made void by the Queene.

ger.

Hugh Spenser beheaded.

They tooke also master Walter Stapleton Bishop of Excester, and on the fifteenth day of October beheaded him and two of his seruants, a squire and a yeoman named William Atwall, and Iohn of Padington at the Standerd in Cheape, because (as the saying was) he had gathered a great Army to withstand the Queene: they did also wrest the keyes of the Tower of London out of the Constables hands, and deliuered all the prisoners.

The Ile of Lunday.

The King, Hugh Spencer the yonger, and Robert Baldocke, determined to flee into the Ile of Lunday, which is in the mouth of the Riuer Seuerne, two miles in length euery way abounding with pasture grounds and oates, very pleasant, it bringeth forth Conies very plentifull, with Pigeons and other Fowles, which Alexander Necham calleth Gannimedes Birds, hauing great nests. Also it ministreth to the inhabitants fresh springing waters flowing out of Fountaines, although it be on euery side enuironed with the salt Sea: it hath onely one entrance into it, in the which two men together can scarce goe in a front: on all the other parts, there is an high hanging ouer of a great rocke, which letteth the passage to this Iland as we haue said: it aboundeth altogether with victuals, and is very full of wines, oile, hony, corne, bragget, saltfish, flesh, and sea or earth coale.

T. de la More. Ile of Lunday described. Al. Necham.

The King being desirous to saile thither, a contrary wind did altogether withstand him, whereupon he scarce auoiding the cruell tempests of the sea, arriued at Glamorgan, & went to the Abbey of Neth, where trusting too much to the promises of the Welshmen, he did priuily lurke.

The Queene being now of great power vnder her sonnes banner (persecuting his father) commanded the host to goe forward in pursuing the King till at length they were come to Oxford; where, before the whole Uniuersity, the Queene, the young Duke of Aquitaine, Roger Mortimer, and other Noblemen and Souldiers, the chiefe deuiser of so wicked a dissention, named Adam Orleton Bishop of Hereford made a publike sermon touching the Queenes comming, and cause of the army, taking for his Theame, My head grieueth me, which authority he brought to such a question, that a vaine and slothfull head ought necessarily to be taken away from the administration of a kingdome, neither ought it to be bound with any hurtfull bands of an hypocrite, &c.

Queen Isabel came to Oxford.

Adam de Orleton preacheth at Oxford.

After this the Queene with her people came to Glocester, from whence she went vnto Bristow, where Hugh Spencer the elder committed himselfe and all his vnto the mercie of the angry and outragious woman; who commanded the Earle to be bound, and without question or answere to be drawne and hanged in his armour, taken downe aliue and bowelled, his bowels burned, then his head smitten off, and his bodie hanged vp againe, and after foure dayes to be cut all to peeces and cast to dogges to be eaten, but his head was sent to Winchester. The Queene went to Hereford. The King with Robert Baldocke, and Simon de Reding, being taken on the sixteenth of Nouember, was committed to the custody of Henry Earle of Lancaster, who brought him to Monmouth, to Ledbery, and so to Kenilworth castle, where he remained the space of one winter, ordered for his diet no otherwise then a King.

Hugh Spencer submitted himselfe to Queen Isabel.

Hugh Spencer the elder executed.

King Edward taken.

The Queene being at Hereford, Edmund Earle of Arundell, Iohn Daniell and Thomas Mochelden were beheaded. Afterward Hugh Spencer the sonne Earle of Glocester, was by certaine Welshmen, brought bound before the Queene, and without sentence or iudgment, was drawne, and hanged on a gallowes thirtie foot high, and after beheaded and quartered on the foure and twentieth day of Nouember, whose head was sent to London bridge, his quarters to foure parts of the Realme: Simon Reding was drawne and hanged on the same gallowes, but ten foot lower: Rob. Baldocke, after many opprobrious words was brought to the Bishop of Herefords Prison, where he liued miserably vntill the Purification, and then he was remoued to London, and cast into Newgate, where he was so hardly dealt with, that shortly after he died there.

Hugh Spencer the yonger executed.

1327.

These things being done, the Queene with her sonne Edward, Roger Mortimer and other went to Wallingford Castle, a little before Christmas, and before the Twelfeday they came to London, where the Queene with much ioy and great rewards was receiued: for all the nobility of the realme did assemble there being first summoned to come to the Parliament, to be holden the morrow after the feast of the Epiphany, where they all iudged that the old K. was not worthy to beare the crowne, but for diuers causes was to be deposed: And that his eldest sonne Edward was to bee chosen King with one whole consent, which consequently was done and the election openly in Westminster pronounced.

The Archbishop of Canterbury did consent to the election, as all other the Bishops did the like: whereupon the Archbishop ascending into the pulpit, preached a Sermon, taking for his Theame, Vox Populi, Vox Dei, exhorting all the people to pray vnto the King of Kings for the K. they had elected. The Sermon being ended, and the people departed, as soone as the Queene vnderstood that her sonne was elected King, and her husband deposed, she seemed to be full of sorrow, as it were almost besides her wits; her sonne also lamented his mothers heauines, and sware, that against his fathers will he would neuer take the Crowne. Therefore by common decree on the behalfe of the whole Realme it was ordained, that three Byshops, two Earles, Henry of Leicester, and Iohn Earle Waren, two Abbots, Glastenbury and Dor, two Barons, Roger Grey, and Hugh Courtney, two Iustices, Sir Geffrey Scroope, and Iohn de Stanton, two Barons of the Ports, foure Burgesses of London, 4. knights for the commonaltie of the land, &c. should

should be sent to the King being in Kenilworth castle, where they ordained as followeth: Iohn Stratford bishop of Winchester, Adam de Arleton bishop of Hereford, and Henry Bishop of Lincolne were sent.

The Bishop of Winchester and the Bishop of Lincolne went before the rest, and talked secretly with the King together with his Keeper the Earle of Leicester, these three craftily compassed him, counselling him to make resignation of the crowne to his eldest sonne, promising him no lesse honor & renowne after the deposition of his royall dignitie, then his princely estate was woont to haue of all men before. They added also, what a great reward it should be at the hands of GOD, for the peace & quietnes of his subiects, for him to refuse the gouernment of a temporall kingdome, In the other part, they threatned him that if he would not make resignation, the people withdrawing their homage and obedience, faith and friendship from him, his sonnes also being forsaken, they would crowne another king, none of the royall blood. With these and other promises and threates, the king (not without sobbes and teares) agreed to the aduertisements of the Bishoppes. Finally, that mischieuous Embassador Adam de Orleton Bishoppe of Hereford, brought to the Castle, wherein the king was shut vp, the kings other enimies, whome he placed orderly according to their dignities in the kinges chamber, reseruing vnto himselfe the things which hee had sought long time before. At length the King comming forth of his secret Chamber, being clothed in a mourning gonne, shewing himselfe to his seruants, knowing the busines, for which they came, for very sorrow, being as it were, distraught of his wittes, sodainelie swounded, the Earle of Leicester and the Bishoppe of Winchester did take him vp, being almost dead, and being called to his senses, Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford declaring the cause of the messengers comming, did adde, that the King should make resignation of the Crowne and realme to his eldest sonne, or else after that himselfe was refused, he should suffer them to choose to their king another fitter man, whom they thought good for the defence of the kingdom.

The King hearing this, with much mourning answeared, that he was verie sorie that the Commons had conceiued such wrath and indignation against him, that they disdained to be gouerned vnder his rule, for the which hee asked them forgiuenesse, & finallie added that he would be very glad, if they would receiue his sonne to be their King. This resignation was made on the 25. day of Ianuarie in the yeere of Christ after the accomptes of the Historigraphers (who beganne their yeere at Christmasse) 1327. after the accompt of the church of England: 326. And forthwith in this Castle, those messengers did renounce (as touching the realme) all homages and duties due to Edward of Carnaruan late King of Englande by the hand of William Trussell knight, hee in the presence of the aforesaid Lords, had these words following. Unto thee, O King, I William Trussell, in the name of all men of this land of England, and prolocutor of this Parliament, resigne to thee Edward the homage that was made to thee sometime, and from this time forth deprive thee of all kingly power, and I shall neuer bee attendant vnto thee as King after this time. Then Thomas Blunt knight and Steward of the kings houshold, by the breaking of the Rod, resigned his office, and shewed that the kings houshold had free liberty to depart.

King Edward resigned the Crowne.

After this the messengers returned to the Parliament at London, declaring the resignation that was made, and the kings answere more fully then it was made. The commons of the Realme despising old things, willingly receiued EDWARD of Windsore eldest Sonne to EDWARD of Carnaruon. Also such a great dowrie was assigned to Queene Isabell, that scarce the third part of the reuenues of the Crowne were left for her Sonne, and his wife Queene Phillip. Moreouer, Queene Isabel, the Bishop of Hereford, and Roger Mortimer did appoint for expences to Edward of Carnaruon, 100. markes the moneth.

This Edward of Carnaruon, now deprived of his royall Crowne and dignity remained with Henry Earle of Leicester his kinsman, lacking nothing but liberty, where hee being shut vp, led his life, as if hee had beene a Monke. But the fierce and cruell woman troubled with many things, taking counsell of her wicked Schoole-master Adam de Orleton Bishop of Hereford, shee had an answere of him, which did not grieue her a little, that was, that the Earle of Leicester did take pittie vpon Edward his cosin. Moreouer, there was talke throughout the land, that there were couenants made amongst many to take king Edward by force out of the Castle of Kenilworth, to the which, one fryar Preacher, named Thomas Dunhed, and one Clearke were assenting, for which cause hee and other were imprisoned at Yorke. It was therefore decreed by the cruell woman the Queene, through the subtill deuise of her said Schoolemaster, that Thomas of Gurney, and Iohn Maltrauers Knights, hauing receiued him from the keeping of the Earle of Leicester should carry Edward the old King about whither they would, so that none of his well willers should haue accesse vnto him, or vnderstand where he made any long abode.

And to these two wicked Traitors, authority was giuen by the highest sort, that into whatsoeuer part of the kingdome they went themselues, that all gouernours and keepers of the Castles should suffer them to enioy their offices and Roomes during their pleasure, vpon paine of forfeiture of goods, lands, and life, if any should deny them. By meanes of which authoritie Henry Earle of Leicester, through commandement of king Edward the third, deliuered the old King by Indenture

Indentures to Sir Thomas Barkeley, and Sir John Maltrauers, and they brought him from Kenilworth, to the Castle of Corffe, then to Bullow, where for a season hee was kept shut vp in the Castle, vntill it was vnderstood by certaine Burgesses of the towne, who for his deliuerance conueied themselues ouer Sea. Wherefore in a darke night, the Keepers of Edward conueyed him thence to Barkeley.

Offences of K. the second.

These tormentors of Edward exercised towards him many cruelties, vnto whome it was not permitted to come, vnlesse it were by night, neither to see any man or to be seene of any. When hee rode, they forced him to bee bareheaded: when he would sleepe, they would not suffer him, neither when hee was hungry would they giue him such meate as he desired, but such as hee loathed: euery word that hee spake, was contraried by them, who gaue it out most slanderously, that hee was madde. And shortly to speake, in all matters they were quite contrary to his will, that either by cold, watching or vnwholesome meates, for melancholy, by some infirmity he might languish and die. But this man being by nature strong to suffer paines, and patient through Gods grace to abide all griefes, he endured all the deuises of his enemies, for as touching poysons, which they gaue him often to drinke, by the benefit of nature he dispatched away.

Edward the second crowned with hay.

These Champions hying Edward towards Barkeley, being guarded with a rabble of hellhounds, along by the Grange belonging to the Castle of Bullowe, where that wicked man Gurney making a crowne of hay, put it on his head, and the Souldiers that were present, scoffed and mocked him beyond all measure, saying, That auaunt sir King, making a kinde of noise with their mouthes, as though they had farted: they feared to be met of any that should know Edward, they bent their journey therefore towardes the left hand, riding along ouer the Parish grounds lying by the riuer of Seuerne. Moreouer, deuising to disfigure him that hee might not bee knowne, they determined for to shaue as well the haire of his head, as also of his beard: wherefore, as in their journey they trauailed by a little water which ran in a ditch, they commanded him to light from his horse to bee shauen, to whom, being set on a moale hill, a Barber came vnto him with a bason of colde water taken out of a ditch, to shaue him withall, saying vnto the king, that that water should serue for that time. To whom Edward answered, that would they, nould they, hee would haue warme water for his beard, and, to the end that hee might keepe his promise, hee began to weepe, and shed teares plentifully: At length they came to Barkley Castle, where Edward was shut vp close like an anchorite. Isabell his wife taking it grieuously that her husbands life (which they deadly hated) was prolonged, made her complaint to her Schoolemaster Adam de Orleton, fayning that she had certaine dreames, & interpretation whereof she misliked, which if they were true, she feared least, that if her husband be at any time restored to his old dignity, that hee would burne her for a Traytor, or condemne her to perpetuall bondage. In like sort the Bishop being guilty in his owne conscience stood in the like feare. The like feare also stroke the hearts of other for the same offence, wherefore it seemed good to many of great dignity and blood, as well spirituall, as temporall, both men and women, that all such feare should bee taken away, desiring his death: whereupon there were letters colourably written to the Keepers of Edward, greatly blaming them, for looking so kinderly to the King, suffering him to haue such liberty, and nourishing him too delicately.

Moreouer, there is a privy motion made vnto them, but yet in such sort, as it might seeme halfe done, that the death of Edward would not be misliking vnto them, whether it were naturall or violent. And in this point, the great deceit of Sophisters stood in force, set downe by the Bishop who wrote thus.

Edwardum occidere nolite timere bonum est,
Kill Edward doe not feare is a good thing:
Or thus:
To seeke to shead King Edwards bloud
Refuse to feare I count it good.

King Edward mured.

Which sophisticall saying is to be resolued into two propositions, whereof the first consisting of three words, to wit, *Edwardum occidere nolite*, doe not kill Edward, and the second of other three, that is, *timere bonum est*, feare is a good thing, doe seeme to perswade subtilly from murthering of the King: but the receiuers of these letters, not ignorant of the writing, changed the meaning thereof to this sence, *Edwardum occidere nolite timere* to kill Edward doe not feare: and afterwards these words, *bonum est*, it is good, so that they being guilty, turned a good saying into euill.

The Bishopp being thus determinately purposed touching the death of Edward, and warily pronuding for him selfe, if by any chance hee should bee accused thereof, craftily wresteth that the authozitie which hee gaue by writing, might seeme to bee taken erpcellely contrary to his meaning, by reason of accenting and pointing of the same.

To conclude, the murtherers of Edward, hoping to haue found both Isabell and the Bishopp to bee their trustie friends, they found them earnest persecutours of their enterprise quite denying whatsoeuer they had deuised against Edward, yea, they were greatly buised in deuising most cruell death for them, so that the murtherers being quite dismayed, wist not what to doe: but shewed the Letters of Isabel, the Bishoppe, and other conspiratours, being confirmed with their owne handes and seales, which the Bishop refused not, but confessed to be his and others, but construed them to another sence, accusing them to be false interpreters of his Letters. & of his owne

King Edward murthered.

clwne authority threatned them, vntill he forced them to runne away. Thus much touching the Letters.

Now when King Edward was brought vnto the Castle aforsaid, he was courteously receiued by Thomas Barkely then Lord of the fee, who was allowed 100. shillings the day for the time: But after the tormenters had receiued their letters of gouernment ouer the Castle, the said Thomas is commanded to vse no familiaritie with Edward: wherefore Thomas Barkeley with heauy cheere departeth thence to other his dwelling places: And Edwards persecution continuing to his death began to take effect. For after this he was shut vp in a close Chamber, where, with the stench of dead carkasses, lading a Cellar vnder him, he was miserably tormented many dayes together, in such sort that he was well nigh suffocated therewith. And that the paine was almost intolerable vnto him, it appeareth by the complaint he made on a certaine day at the chamber windowe, certaine Carpenters then working on the right side thereof, hearing the same. But these tirants perceiuing that this terrible stench was not of a sufficient force to cause the death of this valiant man Edward, one night being the twenty two of September, they came rushing in vpon him sudainly, as he lay in his bed, with great and heauy featherbeds, being in weight as much as 15. strong men could beare, wherewith they oppressed and strangled him by smothering. Into whom also they thrust a plummers soldring yron being made red hot, vp into his bowels, through a certaine Instrument like to the end of a Trumpet or glisterpipe, put in at the fundament, burning therby his inward parts, prouiding thereby least any wound being found in the Kings bodie, might cause his tormentors to answere for committing open treason, and therefore suffer iust punishment. In this sort was this stout knight oppressed, crying out with a lowd voyce, so that many as well within the Castle, as without, heard it, perceiuing it to be the cry of one that suffered violent death, which caused many of Berkley, and also of the Castle (as themselues affirmed) to take compassion thereof, and to pray for the soule of him that was then departing the world. And thus was the end of Edward of Carnarnan, being betrayed as is aforsaid: but to colour the matter that they might seeme guiltles in this case, Isabel and the Bysshop of Hereford laboured to cleare themselues by banishing and outlawing of Thomas Gorney, and John Maltrauers, laying as it were all the fault vpon them.

This Thomas Gorney flying to Parris, and there lying hid priuily the space of three yeares, was at length espyed and taken, and as he was brought towards England, for to haue receiued iust worthy punishment for his deserts, he was beheaded on the sea, fearing y^t he had bin brought into England, he would haue accused diuers other great personages. The other, to wit, John Maltrauers, liuing in great contrition and repentance, spent a long time in Dutchland. Thus farre out of Thomas de la More, a worshipfull Knight, that then lined and wrote in the French tongue what he saw with his eyes, or heard credibly reported by them that saw, and some that were actors. All which was (at the said sir Thom. de la Mores request) translated, and more orderly penned in the Latine tongue, by Walter Baker, alias Swinborne, Canon of Oseney besides Oxford.

Now to conclude this History, of the raigne and end of King Edward the second, called of Carnaruan, for that he was borne there: he was deposed on the twenty fiue of Januarie, in the yeare of Christ 1326. when he had raigned nineteene yeares, fiue moneths and odde dayes, and was murthered on the twenty one of September next following, being the Feast of S. Mathew the Apostle, in the yere of Christ 1327. whose death was not published till after the Feast of all Saints, and he was buried at Gloucester on the Feast day of S. Thomas the Apostle, or 21. of December. He had issue by Isabel his wife, Edward, which was elected King: and to whom he resigned in his life: John of Eltham Earle of Cornwall that died at the Towne of S. Iohn in Scotland without issue: Ioane of the Tower, Queene of the Scots, and Elianor Countesse of Guelder, that died young.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *King* EDVVARD *the* III.

King. 1.

EDVVARD the third born at Windsor, about the age of 14. yeares, after the deposing of his father, began his raigne the 25. day of January, in the yere of our Lord 1326. after the account of the Church of England. He was crowned at Westminster, on the first day of February, by Walter Reignalds Archbishop of Canterburie. This Prince was endued with passing beautie and fauour, of wit prouident, circumspect, and gentle of nature: of excellent modestly and temperance. He aduanced such persons to dignities, as did most excell other in innocency of life. In feates of armes he was very expert, as the noble enterprises by him atchieued doe well declare. At the beginning of his raigne he was chiefly ordered by his mother Isabel.

T. de la More. Gual. Baker of Swinbrooke.

The

Regist. of Bury John Prigon, & Abbey of Bury spoyled.

The inhabitants of the Towne of Bury in Suffolke, assembled themselues in warlike manner on S. Lukes day last before passed, in the twentieth yeare of Edward the second, and besieged the Abbey of Bury, brake the gates, braue and wounded the Porters, bare out of the Abbey all the gold, siluer, ornaments, bookes, Charters, and other writings, with the assay of their coine, stampes, and all other things pertaining to their Mint: and all other goods, as Vessell, Pewter, Iron, Lead, &c. They also bent many houses about the Abbey, and in the Towne, pertaining to the Abbot, with his Manors in Berton, Packenham, Rugham, Mildhall, Horningbury, Newton, Whipsted, Westle, Risby, Ingham, Fernham, Redwell, Haberdon, and others, with all the coyne in the same Manors, and drawe away the horses, oxen, kine, swine, sheepe, &c. They drew the Monkes out of their Abbey and put them in Prisons, and after brought them againe to their Chapter house, where they forced them to seale Charters at their pleasure, &c. For the which facts, the Malefactors were this yeare by vertue of the Kings Commission directed to Thomas Earle of Norfolke, Marshall of England, Thomas Berdolfe, and others, apprehended and conuicted: nineteene of them were hanged, and one pressed to death. After this, the whole inhabitants of the towne, for to that they had not stayed the Malefactors of their enterprise in the beginning (as they might haue done) were amerced to pay the Abbot toward his damnages 140000. pound. Nouertheless the Abbot and Conuent at the Kings request (who was there present with his Nobility) forgaue and remitted to them 122333. pound, fiue shillings eight pence of the summe, and for the rest shed such fauour, that if they truely paid 2000. markes in twenty yeares following, and obserued their couenants for good order and quietnesse, they forgaue them all the rest.

1327.

Commons of Bury persecuted

Bury amerced

Record. Eccles. Christ, Cant.

About this time, the like stirre was made against the Monkes of Canterbury: whereof I find recorded as followeth.

King Edward prepared an army into Scotland, commanded the Bailiffes and Citizens of Canterbury, to furnish him twelue Horsemen, and send them to Newcastle, toward which charge the Citizens required ayde of the Monks: who answered them, that without the assent of the King and their Archbishop, they would not agree thereunto, for so much as the Kings of England had founded their church in free and perpetuall almes. Whereupon William Chilham Bayliffe, and many Commons of the Citie, assembled themselues in the Preaching Fryers Churchyard, conspired and sware against the Monkes as followeth.

1 That they would ouerthrow the pentises, windowes, and mine, belonging to the Monkes.

2 That no Citizen should dwell in any house belonging to the Monkes.

3 That all rents belonging to the Monkes of Canterbury, should be gathered to the vse of the Commons.

4 That no man should send or sell to the Monkes any victuals.

5 That they should sell all the horses and beastes that came into the Citty with carriage to the Monkes.

6 That all such Monkes as came forth of their house should be spoiled of their garments.

7 That a trench should be made to stop all men from going in or comming out.

8 That euery Pilgrime should at his entring, sweare that he should make no offering.

9 Also, that euery of those commons aforesaid should weare on their finger a ring of gold of those that belonged to Thomas Becket.

Sir John the Earles brother of Henault, came to helpe Edward the third against the Scots, with fiue hundred men of armes: which Henawders and the Englishmen fell out by chance on Trinity Sunday at Poyke, where eighty of the Lincolneshire men were slaine, and much of the Citty of Poyke was burned: and the Englishmen slaine were buried vnder a stone in Saint Clements Churchyard in Folegate.

Queen Q.

The King went against the Scots that were entred England, as farre as Stanhope Parke in Wardale, where they were besieged three dayes, but they escaped. James Douglas one night secretly entring the English Campe, came neare to the Kings tent to haue taken or slaine him, but his Chaplaine being a bold man and well armed, with some other being slaine, he with much adoe got backe vnhurt.

Yorke the Scotland.

This yeare also King Edward the second was murdered on the 22. of September, as is before declared.

This yeare died Charles King of France the third brother, which was brother to the Ladie Isabel Duerne of England, mother to King Edward the third: by whose death the succession of the Kingdome of France came to the said Edward, but it was usurped and possessed by Philip de Valois vncle to the said Charles, who did intrude himselfe by force.

King Edward married Philip daughter to William Earle of Holland and Henault, at Yorke the fine and twentieth of February: she was sisters daughter to Philip de Valois aforesaid.

Edward the third married

A Parliament was holden at Northampton, in which a shamefull peace was made betwixt the Englishmen and Scots, so that Dauid the sonne of Robert Bruse, scarce seuen yeares old, married Ioane of the Tower King Edwards sister, at Berwike the twelfth of July. Also the King made the Scots Charters, the tenour where of was vnknowne to the Englishmen: but all was done as it pleased the old Duerne, Roger Mortimer and James Dowglas. The Scots made many taunting rimes against the Englishmen, for the fond disguised apparell by them at that time vsed: amongst the which this was fastened vpon the Church doores of Saint Peter toward Stangate.

Parliament at Northampton.

Peace with the Scots.

Long

Scottish rymes.

Long Beards heartlesse,
Painted Hoods wirelesse,
Gay Coates gracelesse,
Makes England thriftlesse.

Walter Reignalds Archbishop of Canterbury, deceased after he had sate Archbishop 13 yeares, 9. moneths, and 20. dayes, and was buryed at Canterburie, to whom succeeded Simon Mapham Doct. of Diuinitie. Thomas de Cobham Bishop of Worcester, also deceased, to whom succeeded Adam de Orleton, in that Bishopricke.

Parliament at Salisburie.

In a Parliament at Salisburie, the King made three Earles, Iohn of Eltham his brother, Earle of Cornewall, Roger Mortimer Earle of March, and Iames Butler of Ireland Earle of Ormond. From this Parliament the Earle of Lancaster, the Lord Wake, Henry Beamond, Earle Marshall, and other Noble men did absent themselues, not being farre off from thence in armour, for the which the King was highly displeased: Notwithstanding in Sommer following, they submitted themselues vnto the Kings mercy, seeking his fauour.

Certaine men of this land, to the intent to try what friends they had in England, craftily deuised, that Edward the second K. of England was aliue in the castle of Corfe, but not to be seene in the day time, and therefore they vsed many Knights to make shewes and masking with dancing vpon the towres and walls of the Castle, which being perceiued by people of the Country, it was thought there had beene some great King vnto whom they did these great solemnities: this rumor was spred ouer all England; to wit, that the old King was aliue: when it came to passe, that the Earle of Kent sent thither a Fryer preacher, to try the truth of the matter, who (as it was thought) hauing corrupted the Porter of the Castle with rewards, is let in, where he lay all the day in the porters lodge very close: and when night was come, hee was willed to put on the habite of a Lay man, and then was brought into the hall, where he saw (as hee thought) Edward the father of the king sitting royally at supper, with great majesty. This Fryer being thus perswaded, returned againe to the earle of Kent, and reported as he thought what he saw: whereupon the Earle said and affirmed with an oath, that he would endeauor by all the meanes he could to deliuer his brother from prison.

King Edward the second yet liue.

1328.

Parliament at Winchester.

The same yeare at the earnest request of some, the King held a Parliament at Winchester, where, by the procurement of the old Duerne, and Roger Mortimer the sayd Earle of Kent, and many other Noble men and religious persons, to wit, the Prouincials of the white Carmelite Fryers, and of the blacke preaching Fryers, and Fryer Richard Wilton were accused of conspiracy, touching (as it was said) the delinery of the Kings Father: Which matter although it were but deuised fantasie and a meere lye, yet the sayd Earle for certaine confessions which he made and for certaine Letters which were found about him, was there beheaded. The other, to wit, the Prouincials of the Predicants and Carmelites, were banished: but the Bishop of London was set at liberte. Robert de Hauston Priest, and foure certaine Carmelite Fryers and Predicants, were condemned to perpetuall prison. The death of the said Earle was the lesse lamented, because his families and seruants had aboue measure afflicted the Commons, in taking vp things (as they trauailed) at the kings price, paying nothing or very little for it.

Earle of Kent put to death by the king's procurement.

Anno reg. 2.

There was a Parliament holden at Nottingham, where Roger Mortimer was in such glory and honour, that it was without all comparison. No man durst name him any other then Earle of March: a greater route of men waited on his heeles, than on the Kings person: he would suffer the king to rise to him and would walke with the King equally, key by key, and chaire by chaire, neuer preferring the king, but would goe foremost himselfe with his officers: He greatly rebuked the Earle of Lancaster, cousin to the King, for that without his consent he appointed certaine lodgings for Noble men in the Towne, demanding who made him so bolde, to take vp lodgings so nigh vnto the Quene: with which iniuries the Constable being greatly feared, appointed lodging for the Earle of Lancaster one mile out of the towne: and likewise were lodged the Earle of Hereford, Iohn de Bohune of Essex, high Constable of England, and others. By which meanes, a contention rose among the Noblemen, and great murmuring among the common people, who said, that Roger Mortimer the Quenes Paragon, & the Kings Father, sought all the meanes he could to destroy the Kings blood, and to vsurpe the Regall Majestie: Which report troubled much the kings friends, to wit, William Montacute, and other, who for the safegard of the King, sware themselues to be true to his person, and drew vnto them Robert de Holland, who had of long time beene keeper of the Castle, vnto whom all secret corners of the same were knowne. When vpon a certaine night, the King lying without the castle, both he and his friends were brought by torch-light through a secret way vnder ground, beginning farre off from the sayd Castle, till they came euen to the Quenes chamber, which they by chance found open: They therefore being armed with naked swords in their hands, went forwards, leauing the King also armed without the doore of the Chamber, least that his Mother should espy him: they which entred in, slew Hugh Turpinton knight, who resisted them, Maister John Neuell of Hoine, by giuing him his death wound. From thence, they went towards the Queene mother, whom they found with the Earle of March ready to haue gone to bed: and hauing taken the sayd Earle, they ledde him out into the Hall, after whom the Quene followed, crying; *Bel filz, bel filz, ayes pitie*

1329.

Parliament at Nottingham.

Roger Mortimer murthered.

W de

de genvil Mortimer, Good sonne, good sonne, take pity vpon gentle Mortimer: for the sus-pected that her sonne was there, though shee saw him not. Then are the keyes of the Ca-stle sent for, and euery place with all the furni-ture is yeelded vp into the kings handes, but in such secret wise, that none without the Ca-stle, except the kings friendes, vnderstoode thereof. The next day in the morning verie early, they bring Roger Mortimer, and other his friends taken with him, with an horrible shout and crying (the earle of Lancaster then lead, being one of them that made the shout for hope) towards London, where hee was committed to the Tower, and afterward con-demned at Westminster, in presence of the whole Parliament on Saint Andrewes euen next following, and then drawne to the Elmes and there hanged on the common Gallowes, whereon hee hung two dayes and two nights by the Kings commandement, and then was buried in the Gray Friers Church. Hee was condemned by his Peeres, and yet neuer was brought to answere before them, for it was not then the custome, after the death of the Earles of Lancaster, Winchester, Glo-cester, and Kent: wherefore this Earle hadde that law himselfe, which hee appointed for o-ther.

The causes of his death laide against him, were these:

First, that he was consenting to the mur-dering of the kings father:

Secondly for that he hadde receaued a great summe of money, whereby the kings honour was greatly abated at Stanhope Parke, where hee gaue a signe vnto the Scots that they should flee.

Thirdly, for that hee caused certaine auncient bookes and Charters to be burnt, wherein the king of Scots stood bound vnto the King of England: and especially for that hee had caused a contract to be made betwixt the Kings Sister, and David the sonne of Robert le Bruse.

Fourthly, for that hee hadde vnprofitable continued a great deale of treasure which hee found in the kings treasurie, and in the treasu-rie of the Earle of Winchester and Glo-cester.

Fiftly, for appropriating vnto himselfe the wardes and marriages of all England.

Sixtly, for being an euill Counseller to the king, and to the Queene mother, and for be-ing ouermuch familiar with her. There dyed with him his friends Simon de Bartord knight brother to sir William Burford that was Iu-stice, and Iohn Deuerell Esquire, who was desirous to haue made open confession of the Kings fathers cruell death, but he could not bee suffered so to doe. Iohn Maureuers was attaint for the death of Edmond earle of Kent. Thomas Gurney, William Ogle, for murthe-ring King Edward the second. Maureuers re-stored the twentie fine of Edward the third, and the heires of Mortimer in the 28 of y same King.

King Edward, the Bishop of Winchester, William Mountacute, and verie few others passed ouer Sea, like as they had beene Per-chants, hauing with him scarce fifteene Horse-men. Hee left Iohn of Eltham his brother, Protector of the Realme. He returned againe about the beginning of Aprill, and then held a great Turnament at Dertford in Kent. The fifteenth of June was borne vnto King Edward his first sonne at Woodstocke, who was after named Edward the blacke Prince. The King tooke into his hands all the lands assigned to his mother, and onely left her a thousand pound the yeere. About the feast of Saint Mar-tin, there was very solemne Iusting of all the stout Earles, Barons and Nobles at London in Cheape, betwixt the great Crosse, and the great Conduite nigh Soper lane, which lasted three dayes, where the Queene Philippe, with many Ladies sell from a stage, notwith-standing they were not hurt at all: where-fore the Queene tooke great care to saue the Carpenters from punishment, and through her prayer (which shee made on her knees) he pacified the King and Councell, where-by shee purchased great loue of the peo-ple.

Anno reg. 4. 1330.

Turnament at Dertford.

Edward the blacke Prince borne.

Turnament in Cheapeside London.

Adam Mers. Ro. Aunsherie.

Such a wet Sommer, with exceeding raine was this yeere, that the corne in the field could not ripe, so that in many places they beganne not Haruest till Michaelmas. The house of Croyton got not in their wheate till Hallon-tide, and their Pease not before Saint An-drewe tyde. The Ponkes on Alhallown day and Partlemas day, were serued with Pease greene in the cods, in stead of Peares and Ap-ples.

Late Haruest. W. Shep.

King Edward held a solemne Christmasse at Wels in Somersetshire, which he contin-ued till the feast of the Epiphanie, where were many strange and sumptuous shewes made to pleasure the King and his guests.

An. reg. 5. 1331

In the beginning of August, Edward Bailiol, sonne and heire to Iohn King of Scots, came into England which Edward hadde beene be-fore that time banished out of Scotland. At his comming, he declared what right he had in the kingdome. Henry Beamont Earle of Bohune, Gilbert Vmfreuill Earle of Angus Dauid earle of Athels, Richard Talbot, Ralph Baron of Stafford, Fulk Fitz Williams, with many other noble men, affirming they had right of inheritance in Scotland, desired licence and ayde of the King of England, to recouer the saide kingdome and landes due to them, but the King hauing regard of the peace lately made, and also for his sisters sake queene of Scotts, would not suffer them to leade an armie through his land, wherefore the saide Lords getting a fleete of shippes, entred the sea, and sayling towards Scotland, landed at Kinkhorne, where the earle of Fife and Ro-bert Bruse, bastard son to Robert Bruse, with ten M. Scots resisted them neere vnto Dun-fermeling: but the English-men put them to flight, and slewe manie. Afterwarde, to wit, on Saint Laurence day, they hadde a fore conflict

conflict at Old-dismore, where two thousand Englishmen ouercame fourty thousand Scots. By reason of the great tyding of the multitude amongst themselues, fiue Earles, and many o-ther were thronged to death. On the morrow, the Englishmen tooke the towne of Saint Johns with furnished with victuals.

The seauen and twenty of September, Ed-ward Bailioll was crowned King of Scots, but afterward he resigned it to King Edward of England, and remained vnder his protection many yeares after.

Edw. Bailiol resigned the Crowne of Scotland to King Edward of England.

Henry Earle of Lancaster and Leicester, high Steward of England, founded the new Hospitall by the Castle of Leicester, wherein were one hundred poore impotent people prou-ded for with all things necessary.

Hospitall at Leicester.

Edward Bailiol, and the aforesaid Lords and Nobles continued the warres in Scotland, vn-to whom came many other Noblemen of the Realme of England voluntarily, serving of their owne charges, and seyzed on Ber-wike.

Iohn Mandeuill

An. reg. 6. 1332.

The King of England gathered a great po-wer, and besieged Berwike, which at length was yeelded for want of victualles. During this siege, the Scots sought many wayes to remoue the same, leauying a great Armie ouer all Scotland, but comming to the siege they could not bring their purpose to effect, yet still prouoking the Kings Army to battell: where-vpon at length the two Armies appointed to fight, and setting out vpon Halidowne hill, there commeth forth of the Scots Campe a cer-taine stout Champion of great stature, who for a fact by him done, was called Turnebull: he standing in the midst betwixt the 2. armies, chalenged all the Englishmen, any one of them to fight with him a Combat: at length, one Robert Viuile Knight, a Scottish man, requesting licence of the King, being armed, with his sword drawne, marcheth toward the Champion, meeting by the way a certain black mastiffe Dog, which waited on the Champi-on, whom with his sword he lodainly strake, and cut him off at his ioynes, at the sight wher-of the Master of the Dog slaine, was much abashed, and in his battell more warie and fearefull: whose left hand and head also after-ward, this worthy Knight cut off. After this Combate both the Armies met, but they figh-ting scarce halfe an houre, certaine of y Scots being slaine, they closed their Armie (which was in three) all into one battell, but at length flying, the King followed them, taking and chasing them into lakes and pits, for the space of fiue miles. There were slaine of them 8. Earles, 1300. horsemen, and of common soul-diers 35000. at a place by Berwik, called Bo-thull neare vnto Halidown.

Challenge of combate by Turnbull.

Turnbull a theefe ouer come in cobate

Battell at Hal-lidowne hill.

In the meane season the Scottes hadde be-sieged the Castle at Bambugh, in which at that time the Queene was: but when they heard of the victory aforesaid, they left the siege and fledde. The Towne-men of Ber-wike perceiued to the King of England both the Castle and the Towne, who placing garri-sons there, he sent Edward Bailiol, and other Nobles to keepe the Realme of Scotland. Earle Patricius in the next Parliament holden at Yorke, made fealty and did homage vnto the King by oath, who receiued of the King for yeel-ding vp of Berwike vnto him, many honours and preferments: notwithstanding this Earle returned againe to rebellion, who holding Dun-bar against the King, was besieged by William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Wal-lingford: and immediately after, the Queene was deliuered of a daughter named Isabell at Windsstocke.

Ann. reg. 7. 1333.

The King summoned a Parliament to bee holden at Yorke, the same to begin on Mon-day the second Weeke of Lent: to the which Parliament, the King of Scots (called Con-querour) although he were warned to be there, yet he came not, but sent Messengers to excuse him, to wit, Henry de Beliemount, & William Mountacute Earles, and certaine other Ba-rons and Knights, who signified, that the King of Scottes Conquerour could not bee there without great danger, for that certaine Scottes lay in the Ilandes readie to doe him damage.

Parliament at Yorke.

At the Feast of S. Iohn Baptist, the said King of Scots Conquerour did his homage to King Edward of England at Newcastle vpon Tine, and not long after that King Edward tooke ho-mage of the Duke of Britaine, for Iearledome of Richmond.

King of Scots and homage.

In a Parliament at London it was told the King, that the Scottes hadde taken Richard Talbot, and fire other Knights, and had slaine many fo'emen: wherefore the King tooke a fifteenth of the Laitie, and a tenth of the Cleargie, to the intent the malice of the Scots might

Parliament at London.

U 2

de gentil Mortimer, Good sonne, good sonne, take pitty vpon gentle Mortimer: for he suspected that her sonne was there, though shee saw him not. Lo here are the keyes of the Castle sent for, and euery place with all the furniture is yelded vp into the kings handes, but in such secret wise, that none without the Castle, except the kings friendes, vnderstode thereof. The next day in the morning verie early, they bring Roger Mortimer, and other his friends taken with him, with an horrible shout and crying (the earle of Lancaster then blind, being one of them that made the shout for hope) towards London, where hee was committed to the Tower, and afterward condemned at Westminster, in presence of the whole Parliament on Saint Andrewes euen next following, and then drawne to the Elmes and there hanged on the common Gallowes, whereon hee hung two dayes and two nights by the Kings commandement, and then was buried in the Gray Fryars Church. Hee was condemned by his Peeres, and yet neuer was brought to answere before them, for it was not then the custome, after the death of the Earles of Lancaster, Winchester, Gloucester, and Kent: wherefore this Earle hadde that law himselfe, which hee appointed for other,

The causes of his death laide against him, were these:

First, that he was consenting to the murdering of the kings father:

Secondly for that he hadde receaued a great summe of mony, whereby the kings honour was greatly abated at Stanhope Parke, where hee gaue a signe vnto the Scots that they should flee.

Third y, for that hee caused certaine auncient deedes and Charters to be burnt, wherein the king of Scots stod bound vnto the king of England: and especially for that hee had caused a contract to be made betwixt the Kings Sister, and David the sonne of Robert le Bruse.

Fourthly, for that hee hadde vnprofitablie consumed a great deale of treasure which hee found in the kings treasurie, and in the treasurie of the Earle of Winchester and Gloucester.

Fiftly, for appropriating vnto himselfe the wardes and marriages of all England.

Sixtly, for being an euill Counseller to the king, and to the Quene mother, and for being ouermuch familiar with her. There dyed with him his friends Simon de Burford knight brother to sir William Burford that was Iustice, and Iohn Deuerell Esquire, who was desirous to haue made open confession of the Kings fathers cruell death, but he could not bee suffered so to doe. Iohn Maureuers was attaint for the death of Edmond earle of Kent. Thomas Gurney, William Ogle, for murthering King Edward the second. Maureuers restored the twentie fine of Edward the third, and the heires of Mortimer in the 28 of y same King.

King Edward, the Bishop of Winchester, William Mountacute, and verie few others passed ouer Sea, like as they had beene Merchants, hauing with him scarce fifteene Yoseemen. Her left Iohn of Eltham his brother, Protector of the Realme. He returned againe about the beginning of Aprill, and then held a great Turnament at Dertford in Kent. The fiftenth of June was borne vnto King Edward his first sonne at Wadlocke, who was after named Edward the blacke Prince. The King tooke into his hands all the lands assigned to his mother, and onely left her a thousand pound the yere. About the feast of Saint Martin, there was very solemne Iusting of all the stout Earles, Barons and Nobles at London in Cheape, betwixt the great Crosse, and the great Conduite nigh Soper lane, which lasted thre dayes, where the Quene Philippe, with many Ladies fell from a stage, notwithstanding they were not hurt at all: wherefore the Quene tooke great care to saue the Carpenters from punishment, and through her prayer (which shee made on her knees) the pacified the KING and Councell, whereby shee purchased great loue of the people.

Such a wet Sommer, with exceeding raine was this yeere, that the corne in the field could not ripe, so that in many places they begaune not Haruest till Michaelmas. The house of Croxton got not in their wheate till Hallontide, and their Pease not before Saint Andrewe tyde. The Ponkes on Allhallow day and Partlemas day, were serued with Peasegreene in the cods, in stead of Peares and Apples.

King Edward held a solemne Christmasse at Wels in Somersetshire, which he continued till the feast of the Epiphanie, where were many strange and sumptuous shewes made to pleasure the King and his guests.

In the beginning of August, Edward Bailiol, sonne and heire to Iohn King of Scots, came into England which Edward hadde beene before that time banished out of Scotland. At his comming, he declared what right he had in the kingdome. Henry Beamont Earle of Bohune, Gilbert Vmfreuill Earle of Angus Dauid earle of Athels, Richard Talbot, Ralph Baron of Stafford, Fulk Fitz Williams, with many other noble men, affirming they had right of inheritance in Scotland, desired licence and ayde of the King of Englande, to recouer the saide kingdome and landes due to them, but the King hauing regard of the pence lately made, and also for his sisters sake queene of Scotts, would not suffer them to leade an armie thyough his land, wherefore the saide Lords getting a fleete of shippes, entred the sea, and sayling towards Scotland, landed at Kinkhorne, where the earle of Fife and Robert Bruse, bastard son to Robert Bruse, with ten M. Scots resisted them nere vnto Dunfermeling: but the Englishmen put them to flight, and slewe manie. Afterwarde, to wit, on Saint Laurence day, they hadde a foze conflict

conflict at Glodesmore, where two thousand Englishmen ouercame fourty thousand Scots. By reason of the great throng of the multitude amongst themselues, fiue Earles, and many other were thronged to death. On the morrow, the Englishmen tooke the towne of Saint Johns well furnished with victuals.

The seauen and twenty of September, Edward Bailiol was crowned King of Scots, but afterward he resigned it to King Edward of England, and remained vnder his protection many yeares after.

Edw. Bailiol resigneth the Crowne of Scotland to king Edward of England.

Henry Earle of Lancaster and Leicester, high Steward of England, founded the new Hospitall by the Castle of Leicester, wherein were one hundred poore impotent people prouided for with all things necessary.

Hospitall at Lancester.

Edward Bailiol, and the aforesaid Lords and Nobles continued the warres in Scotland, vnto whom came many other Noblemen of the Realme of England voluntarily, serueng of their owne charges, and feyfed on Berwike.

Iohn Mandeuill

The King of England gathered a great power, and besieged Berwike, which at length was yelded for want of victualles. During this siege, the Scots sought many wayes to remoue the same, leauying a great Armie ouer all Scotland, but comming to the siege they could not bring their purpose to effect, yet still prouoking the kings Army to battell: wherevpon at length the two Armies appointed to fight, and setting out vpon Haldowne hill, there commeth forth of the Scots Campe a certaine stout Champion of great stature, who for a fact by him done, was called Turnebull: he standing in the midst betwixt the 2. armies, challenged all the Englishmen, any one of them to fight with him a Combat: at length, one Robert Vmfraile Knight, a Northfolke man, requesting licence of the King, being armed, with his sword drawne, marcheth toward the Champion, meeting by the way a certain black mastiffe Dog, which waited on the Champion, whom with his sword he sodainly strake, and cut him off at his ioynes, at the sight whereof the Master of the Dog slaine, was much abashed, and in his battell more warie and fearefull: whose left hand and head also afterward, this worthy knight cut off. After this Combate both the Armies met, but they fighting scarce halfe an houre, certaine of the Scots being slaine, they closed their Armie (which was in three) all into one battell, but at length flying, the King followed them, taking and chasing them into lakes and pits, for the space of fiue miles. There were slaine of them 8. Earles, 1300. horsemen, and of common souldiers 3500. at a place by Berwik, called Boothull neare vnto Haldowne.

Anno reg. 6. 1332.

Challenge of combate by Turnbull.

Turnbull a christen man come in combate

Battell at Haldowne hill.

In the meane season the Scottes hadde besieged the Castle at Bambrugh, in which at that time the Quene was: but when they heard of the victory aforesaid, they left the siege and fledde. The Towne men of Berwike yelded to the King of England both the Castle and the Towne, who placing garrisons there, he sent Edward Bailiol, and other Nobles to keepe the Realme of Scotland. Earle Patricius in the nert Parliament holden at Yorke, made fealty and did homage vnto the King by oath, who receiued of the king for yelding vp of Berwike vnto him, many honours and preferments: notwithstanding this Earle returned againe to rebellion, who holding Dunbar against the King, was besieged by William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury.

King Edward, the Bishop of Winchester, *Annreg.* 1330.

Turnament at Dertford.

Edward the blacke Prince borne.

Turnament in Cheapeside London.

Adam Mur. Ro. Autbert.

This yere William Elsing Mercer of London (obtaining the kings licence) made a new Hospitall of an old house of Nuns by Cræplegate within the wall of London, and placing Chanons Regular there, he became their first Patron, endowing the same with lands for the relefe of the poore and impotent.

Elsing Spittle. Iohn Leyland Lib. Trinit.

Also Simon Mepham Archbishop of Canterburie deceased about the fourteenth of October, after he had sate fiue yeares 4. months and was buried at Canterbury. Vnto whom succeeded at the kings request Iohn Stratton Doctor of Law Ciuill, Bishop of Winchester. And on the first of December, Adam de Orleton, first Bishop of Hereford, then of Worcester, was translated to Winchester.

Late Bpricks. W. Sbrp.

Edward Bailiol King of Scottes, held a Parliament at Galloway, to the which came ye Noble men of England, and made claime for their Lands and possessions which they had in Scotland, and so returned peaceably into their Countrey.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Malingford, and immediately after, the Quene was deliuered of a daughter named Isabell at Wadstocke. *Ann. reg. 7.* 1333.

The King summoned a Parliament to be holden at Yorke, the same to begin on Sonday the second Weeke of Lent: to the which Parliament, the King of Scots (called Conquerour) although he were warned to be there, yet he came not, but sent Spellengers to excuse him, to wit, Henry de Bellemount, & William Mountacute Earles, and certaine other Barons and Knights, who signified, that the King of Scottes Conquerour could not bee there without great danger, for that certaine Scottes lay in the Ilandes readie to doe him damage. Parliament at Yorke.

At the Feast of S. Iohn Baptist, the said King of Scots Conquerour did his homage to King Edward of England at Newcastle vpon Tine, and not long after that King Edward tooke homage of the Duke of Baptaine, for Pearledome of Richmond. King of Scots did homage.

In a Parliament at London it was told the King, that the Scottes hadde taken Richard Talbot, and fiue other Knights, and had slaine many Gentlemen: wherefore the King tooke a fifteenth of the Laitie, and a tenth of the Cleargie, to the intent the malice of the Scots Parliament at London:

de gentil Mortimer, Good sonne, good sonne, take pitty vpon gentle Mortimer: for the suspected that her sonne was there, though thee saw him not. Open are the keyes of the Castle sent for, and every place with all the furniture is yeelded vp into the kings handes, but in such secret wise, that none without the Castle, except the kings friendes, vnderstoode thereof. The next day in the morning verie early, they kinge Roger Mortimer, and other his friends taken with him, with an horrible shout and crying (the earle of Lancaster then blind, being one of them that made the shoute for hope) towards London, where hee was committed to the Tower, and afterward condemned at Westminster, in presence of the whole Parliament on Saint Andrewes euen next following, and then drawne to the Elmes and there hanged on the common Gallowes, whereon hee hung two dayes and two nights by the Kings commandement, and then was buried in the Gray Friars Church. Her was condemned by his Peeres, and yet neuer was brought to answere before them, for it was not then the custome, after the death of the Earles of Lancaster, Winchester, Glocester, and Kent: wherefore this Earle hadde that law himselfe, which hee appointed for other.

The causes of his death laide against him, were these:

First, that he was consenting to the murdering of the kings father:

Secondly for that he hadde receaued a great summe of mony, whereby the kings honour was greatly abated at Stanhope Parke, where hee gaue a signe vnto the Scots that they should flee.

Third y, for that hee caused certaine auncient deedes and Charters to be burnt, wherein the king of Scots stood bound vnto the king of England: and especially for that hee had caused a contract to be made betwixt the Kings Sister, and David the sonne of Robert le Bruse.

Fourthly, for that hee hadde vnpossitable summes of great deale of treasure which hee found in the kings treasurie, and in the treasurie of the Earle of Winchester and Glocester.

Fiftly, for appropriating vnto himselfe the wardes and marriages of all England.

Sixtly, for being an euill Counsellor to the king, and to the Quene mother, and for being ouermuch familiar with her. There dyed with him his friends Simon de Burford knight brother to sir William Burford that was Iustice, and Iohn Deuerell Esquire, who was desirous to haue made open confession of the Kings fathers cruell death, but he coulde not bee suffered so to doe. Iohn Maureuers was attaint for the death of Edmond earle of Kent. Thomas Gurney, William Ogle, for murthering King Edward the second. Maureuers restored the twentie fine of Edward the third, and the heires of Mortimer in the 28 of y same King.

King Edward, the Bishop of Winchester, William Mountacute, and verie few others passed ouer Sea, like as they had beene Merchants, hauing with him scarce fifteene Persons. Her left Iohn of Eltham his brother, Protector of the Realme. He returned againe about the beginning of Aprill, and then held a great Turnament at Dertford in Kent. The fifteenth of Iune was borne vnto King Edward his first sonne at Woodstocke, who was after named Edward the blacke Prince. The King toke into his hands all the lands assigned to his mother, and onely left her a thousand pound the yere. About the feast of Saint Matthie, there was very solemne Iusting of all the stout Earles, Barons and Nobles at London in Cheape, betwixt the great Crosse, and the great Conduite nigh Soper lane, which lasted thee dayes, where the Quene Philippe, with many Ladies fell from a stage, notwithstanding they were not hurt at all: wherefore the Quene toke great care to saue the Carpenters from punishment, and through her prayer (which shee made on her knees) she pacified the KING and Councell, whereby shee purchased great loue of the people.

Such a wet Sommer, with exceeding raine was this yeere, that the corne in the field could not ripe, so that in many places they beganne not Harueste till Michaelmas. The house of Croyton got not in their wheate till Hallontide, and their Pease not before Saint Andrewe tyde. The Ponkes on Allhallown day and Partlemas day, were serued with Peare grene in the cods, in stead of Peares and Apples.

King Edward held a solemne Christmasse at Wels in Somersetshire, which he continued till the feast of the Epiphanie, where were many strange and sumptuous shewes made to pleasure the King and his guests.

In the beginning of August, Edward Bailiol, sonne and heire to Iohn King of Scots, came into England which Edward hadde beene before that time banished out of Scotland. At his comming, he declared what right he had in the kingdome. Henry Beamont Earle of Bohune, Gilbert Vmfreuill Earle of Angus Dauid earle of Athels, Richard Talbot, Ralph Baron of Stafford, Fulx Fitz Williams, with many other noble men, affirming they had right of inheritance in Scotland, desired licence and ayde of the King of Englande, to recouer the saide kingdome and landes due to them, but the King hauing regard of the pences lately made, and also for his sisters sake queene of Scotts, would not suffer them to leade an armie thyough his land, wherefore the saide Lords getting a fleete of shippes, entred the sea, and sayling towards Scotland, landed at Kinkhorne, where the earle of Fife and Robert Bruse, bastard son to Robert Bruse, with ten M. Scots resisted them nere vnto Dunfermeling: but the Englishmen put them to flight, and slewe manie. Afterwarde, to wit, on Saint Laurence day, they hadde a foze

conflict at Glodesmore, where two thousand Englishmen ouercame fourty thousand Scots. By reason of the great thyong of the multitude amongst themselues, fiue Earles, and many other were thyonged to death. On the morrow, the Englishmen tooke the towne of saint Iohns well furnished with victuals.

The seauen and twenty of September, Edward Bailoll was crowned King of Scots, but afterward he resigned it to King Edward of England, and remained vnder his protection many yeares after.

Henry Earle of Lancaster and Leicester, high Steward of England, founded the new Hospitall by the Castle of Leicester, wherein were one hundred poore impotent people prouided for with all things necessary.

Edward Bailoll, and the aforesaid Lords and Nobles continued the warres in Scotland, vnto whom came many other Noblemen of the Realme of England voluntarily, serving of their owne charges, and soyled on Berwike.

The King of England gathered a great po- ... besieged Berwike, which at length ... ed for want of victuailes. During ... the Scots sought many wayes to ... same, leauying a great Armie ouer ..., but comming to the siege they ... ing their purpose to effect, yet still ... the Kings Army to battell: where- ... length the two Armies appointed to ... and setting out vpon Halidowne hill, ... commeth forth of the Scots Campe a cer- ... stout Champion of great stature, who for a fact by him done, was called Turnebull: he standing in the midst betwixt the 2. armies, challenged all the Englishmen, any one of them to fight with him a Combat: at length, one Rowe Vernale Knight, a Northe man, requesting licence of the King, being armed, with his sword drawne, marcheth toward the Champion, meeting by the way a certain black mastiffe Dog, which waited on the Champion, whom with his sword he lodainly strake, and cut him off at his knees, at the sight whereof the Master of the Dog slaine, was much abashed, and in his battell more warie and fearefull: whose left hand and head also afterward, this worthy knight cut off. After this Combate both the Armies met, but they fighting scarce halfe an houre, certaine of the Scots being slaine, they closed their Armie (which was in three) all into one battell, but at length flying, the King followed them, taking and chasing them into lakes and pits, for the space of fiue miles. There were slaine of them 8. Earles, 1300. horsemen, and of common souldiers 15000. at a place by Berwik, called Boothull neare vnto Halidown.

In the meane season the Scottes hadde besieged the Castle at Bambugh, in which at that time the Quene was: but when they heard of the victory aforesaid, they left the siege and fledde. The Towne men of Berwike perceiued to the King of England both the Castle and the Towne, who placing garrisons there, he sent Edward Bailiol, and other Nobles to keepe the Realme of Scotland. Earle Patricius in the next Parliament holden at Yorke, made fealty and did homage vnto the King by oath, who receiued of the King for yelding vp of Berwike vnto him, many honours and preferments: notwithstanding this Earle returned againe to rebellion, who holding Dunbar against the King, was besieged by William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury.

This yere William Elmy Mercer of London (obtaining the kings licence) made a new Hospitall of an old house of Nuns by Creplegate within the wall of London, and placing Chanons Regular there, he became their first Prior, endowing the same with lands for the relieefe of the poore and impotent.

Lewes de Beamount Bishop of Durham deceased on the 28. of September, and was buried at Durham, he builded a wall of stone about the City of Durham, and a Hall with a Chappell at Middleham vnto him succeeded Richard de Bury by the Kings appointment.

Also Simon Mepham Archbishop of Canterburie deceased about the fourteenth of October, after he had sate fiue yeares 4. months and was buried at Canterbury. Vnto whom succeeded at the Kings request Iohn Stratford Doctor of Lawe Civill, Bishop of Winchester. And on the first of December, Adam de Orleton, first Bishop of Hereford, then of Worcester, was translated to Winchester.

Edward Bailoll King of Scottes, held a Parliament at Gallowey, to the which came ỹ Noble men of England, and made claime for their Landes and possessions which they had in Scotland, and so returned peaceably into their Country.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Wallingford: and immediately after, the Quene was delivered of a daughter named Isabell at Woodstocke.

The King summoned a Parliament to bee holden at Yorke, the same to begin on Monday the second Weeke of Lent: to the which Parliament, the King of Scots (called Conquerour) although he were warned to be there, yet he came not, but sent Messengers to excuse him, to wit, Henry de Bellemount, & William Mountacute Earles, and certaine other Barons and Knights, who signified, that the King of Scottes Conquerour could not bee there without great danger, for that certaine Scottes lay in the Ilandes readie to doe him damage.

At the Feast of S. Iohn Baptist, the said king of Scots Conquerour did his homage to King Edward of England at Newcastle vpon Tine, and not long after that King Edward tooke homage of the Duke of Aquitaine, for Pearledome of Richmond.

In a Parliament at London it was told the King, that the Scottes hadde taken Richard Talbot, and five other Knights, and had slaine many footemen: wherefore the King tooke a fifteenth of the Laitie, and a tenth of the Cleargie, to the intent the malice of the Scots might

ought be holden.

University of Stamford for divers. This yeare in the moneth of November diuers Maisters and Scholers of Oxford withdrew themselues to Stamford, minding there to haue begun an Vniuersitie, without licence of the King obtained in that behalfe: whereat the King being offended, did by proclamation vtterly forbid it, and suppressed it.

King Edward entreth Scotland. King Edward went toward the Marches of Scotland, and wintered in those Coasts, but vnderstanding that the Earle Dafeis was trayterously turned to the Scots, and Henry Bellemount besieged by the Scots, he entred Scotland, and raised the siege, and then kept his Christmas at Roxborow, which Castle he repayred. Presently after the Feast of the Epiphanie, the French King sent Messengers to King Edward, to wit, the Bishoppe of Aurenges, and certaine Lords, to treat a Peace for the Scottes, who wanted for an answere in England till Midlent, and then at Nottingham a Truce was granted vnto them till the Feast of Saint Iohn next comming, that in the meane time a Parliament might be holden of matters concerning peace, and the state of both the Kingdomes: in which Parliament holden at Yorke, it was decreed that the King should passe with his army through Scotland, beyond the Scottish Seas, the which thing was quickly performed and done: but the Scottes destroyed to fight a Field, they feigned that they would haue Peace, to obtaine the which many came about the Feast of Saint Michael, and chiefly the Earle of Dafeis: whereupon it came to passe, that afterward the Earle of Moreie being taken prysoner at Edenborough was sent to be kept prisoner in England, and Richard Talbot was ransomed for two thousand fiue hundred Markes, but the Earle of Dafeis willing to shew that he was truely reuolted to the King of England, rode against the Scots at a siege of a certaine Castle, and falling into the hands of his enemies, because he would not yeelo, he was slaine with 13. of his men.

An. reg. 8. 1344.

Parliament at Yorke.

After the Feast of Saint Michael, the King continuing still in the Marches of Scotland, was daily entreated by Messengers from the French King, concerning some Peace to be made.

Edward Bohun drowned. About the Feast of Saint Martine, Edward Bohune a Noble man, was drowned in the Marches of Scotland: for as he was driuing a bootie of Cattell ouer a River, hee felt himselfe in danger, causing his guide to ride before him through the water, where though the smoothnesse of the stone whereon the water ran, his guide not being able to take sure footing fell downe, with his Master being armed, and before any helpe could come, they were drowned in the bottome of the Channell.

John Archbyshoppe of Canterbury went ouer the Sea to Philippe de Valoys King of France, requesting of him the continuance of Peace and amitie betwixt the two Kingdomes to be maintained.

Secondly, that all Townes and Castles taken before time by his Father, should be restored to the King of England.

Thirdly, that the said French King should sweare, neuer to giue ayde to the Scots against the King of England: vnder which conditions, the two Kings of both Realmes should prepare to trauaile towards the holy Land, and to fight against the enemies of Christ. But the French King accounted the King of England not worthy of his friendship, so long as he continued Warres against the Scots his friends, whom he said were iust men. Vnto the second petition he would not otherwise consent thereunto, than if all charges were repaid againe which his father Charles de Valoys layd out in the Warres of Gascoigne. Thirdly, he said, that he was a friend and louer of iustice and equitie, which he would neuer swarue from, neither for friendship, nor affinitie, but he would by all meanes he could, molest and vexe all breakers of the Peace of the Kingdome of Scotland: for (saith he) there shall neuer be perfect peace and quietnesse among Christians, before the King of France sit in place of Iudgement for the right of the Kingdomes of France, England and Scotland.

High waters. Vpon Saint Clements night through abundance of waters but especially in the Thames, all the cattell and beasts neare thereunto were drowned, and the land made vnfruitfull by salt waters.

An. reg. 9. 1335. King Edward had a tenth of the Clergy, and also of the Burgesses, and a fifteenth of the Commons.

Parliament at Northampton. About the Feast of Pentecost, hee held a Parliament at Northampton, where (during the Prelates, States and Commons debating about matters, himselfe secretly rode to Berwike, and there talking with him a few men of Armes, he went to S. Iohns Towne, which he strengthened with trench and Rampire, and sent his Carles with the King Contrey, to make an inrode vpon the Countrey, and to see what Scots they could finde would resist them: but none durst abide their comming, but hid themselues in Hils, Woods and Parishes, and in the meane time many Earles and Barons came, and submitted themselues to King Edward vpon conditions as followeth.

T. de la More. Ro. de Avesbury.

These bee the points agreed betwixt the Councell of the Kings of England and Scotland on the one party, and Alexander Mowbrey, Geffrey Mowbrey, Godfrey de Roos, William Bullocke, and Eustace de Loreyne, hauing full power from Dauid Seravulgi Earle of Dafeis, and Robert Steward of Scotland, to treate, accord, and affirme all points enterparled and to be enterparled betwixt the sayd Kings, and the Earle, and Steward, as appeareth by the Letters Patents of either partie.

First it is accorded that the said Earle Dafeis, the great men, and all other of the communalty of Scotland, which shall come in the same

same conditions, shall haue life and member, Lands & tenements, Fees and Offices within Scotland, which they ought to haue by inheritance or right, those except, which shall be surpassed by common assent.

Item, that they shall be pardoned of imprisonment and of all manner trespasses by them in the Realmes of England and Scotland, from the beginning of the world, vnto the date of these presents.

Item, the Earle Dafeis, and Alexander Mowbrey, shall haue Lands, tenements, possessions, and fees in England, which they had at their departure, after the homage done at Newcastle vpon Tine.

Item, that the Franchises of the Church in Scotland, shall be maintained, after the auncient vsage of Scotland.

Item, that the lawes of Scotland in Borough Townes, and Shiriewikes, within the lands of the King of Scotland, be vsed after the ancient vsage and custome of Scotland, as they were vsed in the dayes of King Alexander.

Item, that the offices of Scotland be ministred by people of the same Nation, yet notwithstanding, that alwayes the King of Scotland may put such officers in as shall please him, of what Nation soeuer they be.

Item, that all those that within the conditions of the Earle Dafeis haue lands within the lands of the king of England in Scotland, shall haue againe the same Lands, Tenements, possessions, Offices and fees, as they had them at their departure, after their homage done at Newcastle vpon Tine, except those that shall be forepriued by common assent.

Item, that if they be impleded for their lands and tenements aforesaid, that they haue their defences and recoueries in Court where they ought to haue.

Item, as touching the demand which the Earle Dafeis claimeth, that the King of England ought to acquite his lands in England which he hath in gage for 8. hundred markes, the King neither ought nor will doe it; but as touching the Spanno of Byphingoone, which the said Earle sayd to pledge for two hundred and fiftie pounds, it is accorded that if the said Earle doe come within one yeare, after the date of these presents, and will acquite the Spanno, the king shall cause that he haue the same Spanno.

Item, as touching the Castle and lands of Chillam, it is accorded that the sayd Earle doe in the same point that he was before at his departure, and haue his recouerie by Law, and the King promiseth in good faith, that he will cause that hee may haue the Land, without delaying eyther partie. And touching the Lands which the sayd Earle claymeth to haue in Norfolke, of the which he hath Charters, it is accorded that his Charters being seene of the Kings Councell, he will doe reason.

Item, that in case any man surmise treason vpon the said earle, he may defend himselfe by his body, according to the lawes and vsages of Scotland, and on the Marches, and that all those that be within these conditions, haue the like grant.

Item, as to the pardon which William Ramsey knight demandeth for the trespasse by him done to William Lord Mountague, to wit, for beating downe his Castle of Haghtondowne, the same William shall be ready to doe according to that that shall be aduised by the Kings of England and Scotland.

Item, that the said Stacie de Loraine haue his Lands and tenements which hee ought to haue within the Realme of Scotland, and if any man haue trespassed towards him, hee shall haue his recouerie by law. Written at Saint Johns Towne in Scotland the 18. of August, Anno 1335.

Philip Duene of England did beare her second sonne named William, at Patfield, who thortly after died.

An. reg. 10. About the Feast of the Epiphany, the King and the Archbishop returned out of Scotland, to the Buriall of Iohn of Eltham, Earle of Cornewall, brother vnto the King, who deceased at Berwike in the moneth of October, and was buried at Westminster. At which time, the King kept a Parliament at London, which began on the Sunday after Saint Matthies day: and on the first Sunday in Lent, he made his eldest sonne Edward earle of Chester, and Duke of Cornewall. He made also fiue other Earles, Henry of Lancaster (Son to Henry Earle of Lancaster) Earle of Derbie, Hugh Audley Earle of Glocester, William Bohune Earle of Northampton, William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, William Clinton Earle of Huntingdon, Robert Vfford Earle of Suffolke; to the which Robert he at that time gaue the Spanno of Wales-court, in the Parish of Saint Giles without Creeplegate of London, commonly called to this day the Barbicane, because in olde time the same had beene a Burgekening, or watch-Tower for the Citie.

Parliament at London. Dukes and Earles created. W. Shepehead. T. de la More.

1336. Barbican at London.

The same day, the King made 20. knights, to wit, sir Edward Mountacute, sir Thomas Somerton, sir Isle, sir Darcy Richard, Sir Damvory, sir Iohn Poulteny, sir de Mere, Roger Banant, Roger Hilary, sir Bolingbroke, sir Butterell, sir Simon Swanland, William Scotte, William Basset, Robert Sodington, William Zouch, sir Cogshall, Roger Sangravile, Thomas de la More, mine Author, & Iohn Strache.

W. Shepehead. King Edward maks knights. T. de la More.

In the same Parliament it was enacted, that no Woll growing within the Realme of England, should be transported out of the same but that it should be made into Cloth in England, and that all Fullers, Weauers, and Clothworkers of euery degree, being sufficiently instructed, and cunning in their Art, from what country soeuer they came into England, should receiue and enjoy certaine priuiledges, yea and moreouer should lius at the KINGES charges out of the Exchequer, vntill they had prouided commodiously to liue by their Art. Although this Statute

Woll forbidden to be conueyed ouer the Seas. Priuiledges giuen to Clothworkers.

seemed at the beginning to be nothing profitable, yet in short time the art of clothing increased so much thereby, that it was twenty times more vsed than before.

Also it was enacted that no man should after that time, buy any cloth that was made beyond the sea, and that none should weare any furres, but such as might dispend one hundred pound by yeare.

The 20. of March the King granted by his Letters Patents power to the Chancellor of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, to receiue in his name yearely the oathes of the Maior, Bayliffes, Aldermen, and Burgeſſes of the Towne: which euer since hath so continued.

T. de la More. After the Feaſt of Saint Michael, a Parliament was holden at London, and a Conuocation was assembled by the Archbyshop, wherein the Clergie granted a tenth to three yeares, and the Commons a fifteenth, in consideration of the Kings warres which was not in Scotland, and also to resist the French King, who made great bragges, and shewed great cruelties; for he outlawed, slew, and imprisoned all Englishmen, and confiscated the goods and Cattels, of all that were found in his Kingdome of France, threatning that hee would bee reuenged for his Friends the Scots.

An. reg. 11. Moreouer, he let not to much as one towne or Castle in the Counties of Aquitaine, or of Poyters, that was not seized into his hands: whereupon King Edward sent into Brabant, to take vp all the wols which Merchants had brought thither, and made sale thereof for readie money. He also wrote Letters to the French King, exhorting him, that he would continue his old amitie. Sir Walter Many being the Ambaſsadour for the King of England, and desirous to reuenge the bloud of two Englishmen that were slaine comming aland for fresh water, in a certaine Iland, called the Ile of Agnes, nigh vnto Flaunders, he caused all that he found in that Iland to bee put to the sword, and take prisoner the Earle of Flaunders brother, who was Captaine of the Ile.

1337

T. Walsingh. Certaine of the Iland men being fled into a Church, were burnt, to the number of three thousand, with the Church and all, by the Welshmen.

The warres being thus as aforesaid begun betwixt the two kingdomes, the rumour thereof came vnto the Court of Rome, whereupon the Pope sent two Cardinals for the reformation and ordering of the Peace betwixt the two kingdomes: who comming to Westminster, declared before the King the cause of their comming: whereunto the King answered, that although without all reason they did seeme to restraine him of right and equitie, for that he ought to succeed into the kingdome of his foreFathers, the which his aduersarie Philip de Valois did deny him, expelling, murthering, and imprisoning his people, and taking away the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and Earledome of Poyters without cause, maintaining the Scots and other Rebels against him, yet those iniuries notwithstanding, he was content if they could take order for the quiet enioying of Aquitaine, and other fees belonging vnto him, which his Predecessours did injoy.

Moreouer, for the dismissing of all ayde that the French King should giue vnto the Scottes at any time of rebellion, for the which he offered his money, and also the marriage of his eldest sonne, and also to resigne all such rites and interest that he had to the Kingdome of France.

The Cardinals being greatly comforted with this answer, departed, hoping that all warres were now ended. They tooke with them Iohn the Archbishop of Canterbury, Richard Bishop of Durham, and Geffry Lord Scrope, who altogether went on message with y kings answere to the French king, hauing full authoritie to treat and conclude a peace.

These being to reasonable offers, could not pacifie the furious mind of the French King, who reposed great trust in the Scots, hoping by them, and through their meanes, quite to dispossesse, and to disinherit the King of England of all the title he had.

This yeare on the 7. of October, K. Edward began the foundation of his Colledge in Cambridge, that since was called the Kings Hall, but now with Michael house, and Physicke house, all made into one by King Henry the 8. is called Trinitie Colledge. Kings Hall Cambridge.

Also this yeare because of the warres with France, King Edward caused to be confiscated all the goods of the Priories aliens in England, that is to say, such Priories as were Celles to any Monasteries in Fraunce. He let out the Priories to Farme, with all their lands and tenements, and rented them at his pleasure, for the space of three and twenty yeres: in the which time diuers of those priories were purchased of the King, made free, and againe (as it were) new founded by Englishmen, as Tiburie in the Castle, and other: the residue not changed were in the fiue and thirtieth yere of King Edwards raigne againe restored to their lands: as shall be shewed when I come to it. Priories aliens in England their goods confiscate. *An. reg.* 12.

The King tooke Woll, to a certaine number of sackes, at a low price in euery Country: the number that was set vpon Staffordshire was 6. hundred sackes, price nine markes the sacke of good Wooll: but nothing was payd. First, the Woll was vniuersally taken. Secondly, for the halfe, in whose hands soeuer it were found, as well Merchants as other. And the third time the King tooke a fifteenth of the Communaltie, to be paid in woll, price of euery stone (containing fourteene pound) two shillings. 1338.

The King appointed also all the come and glebe lands to serue for his warres.

About S. Margarets day, King Edward, with Quéene Philip his wife, and a great Armie passed the seas with a Nauy of 5. hundred saile K. Arthure.

saile of ships into Flaunders, & so to Cullen.

South-hampton & Sandwich and other by the French Pyrats. The fourth of October, fifty Gallies well manned and furnished, came to South-hampton about 9. of the clocke, and sacked the towne: the townesmen running away for feare: by the breake of the next day they which fled, by helpe of the countrey thereabout, came against the Pyrats, & fought with them: in the which skirmish were slaine to the number of three hundred Pyrats, together with their Captaine a young Soudier, the King of Scils sonne. To this yong man, the French King had giuen whatsoeuer hee got in the Kingdom of England: but hee being beaten downe by a certaine man of the country, cried Rancon, notwithstanding the husband-man laid him on with his club, till he had slaine him, speaking these words: yea (quoth he) I know well enough thou art a Francon, and therefore shalt thou die, for he vnderstood not his speech, neither had he any skill to take Gentlemen prisoners, and to keepe them for their ransome: wherefore the residue of those Gennowaies, after they had set the Towne a fire and burnt it vp quite, fled to their gallies, & in their flying certaine of them were drowned. And after this the inhabitants of the towne compassed it about with a strong and great walle.

The King still maintaining his warres in France, on Sunday in the Annunciation of our Lade, 11. gallies approaching to the towne of Harwich, they cast fire therein: the force whereof, by a contrary wind was stayed, so that no great harme was done thereby. Furthermore, in the same yere about the feast of Pentecost, certaine Pyrats of Normandy & Genoa (shipped in gallies & Pinnaces) made a shew on the sea about South-hampton, as they would haue come aland, & threatned soze to spoyle the town againe, but perceiuing the townesmen readie to resist them, they returned to ẏ Ile of Wight but entred not, being put backe by the inhabitants: whereuppon they sayled about the Sea coastes seeking to land in places lesse defended, and after came to Hastings, where they burnt fishers cottages, with their boats, & slew many men. Also they made great shewes many times against the Ile of Thanet, Douer, and Fulkestone, but in those places they did little harme, except to poze fishermen: thence they sailed about to the hauens of Cornewall and Deuonshire, doing in all places much harme to the fishermen, and such ships as they found vnmanned, they fiered. At length they entred Plimmouth Hauen, where they burnt certaine great shippes, and a great part of the towne: these were met by Hugh Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, a knight of fourescore yeres old, being accompanied with many souldiers of his countrey, who hauing lost at the first front a few of his men which were slaine by the quarels of the French, ioyned to fight with them hand to hand. and slaying many of the Pyrates vpon dry land, chased the residue which fled to take their gallyes, and being not able to come nigh them by wading, they were drowned in the sea to the number of 500. Mewes being brought to the Ile lying in Brabant, that diuers Poores of England were spoyled with the Pirates, he declared to his friends, to wit, the Marquis of Iuliacense, and a certaine Cardinall, what great causes he had to reuenge himselfe vpon them, and in the end, was answered by the Cardinall as followeth. The French men spoyle the Isle of Wight.

The kingdome of France (said he) is compassed about with a hedge of Silke, which cannot be broken, by all the strength of the kingdome of England, wherefore my Lord King you must stay for the comming of the Dutchmen, and other your friends and confederates, the greater part whereof you now lacke. The King taking great disdaine, hereat, staying nothing at all, sayd; That he would ride into the land of France with banner displayed, and that there he would loke for that mighty power of the French-men, and that he would either winne the same against any man that should withstand him, or else honestly dye in the field.

King Edward wintered at Antwerpe, where Quéene Philip was deliuered of her third Son Lionel, after Earle of Ulster. The King tooke vpon him to be Lieutenant of the Empire from the Duke of Bauare, who held himselfe as Emperour. K. Edward made Vicegerent of the Empire.

The first day of the assumption of our Lady, a suddaine inundation of water at Newcastle vpon Tine, surmounted the wall, and bare downe a peace of the Towne wall, a fire peaches in length neere to a place called Walinew, where 160. men, and seauen Chaplens and women were drowned. Li. C. Matth. ebor. Rich. South. Newcastle drowned.

In the Vigil of S. Matthy, King Edward began to ride with banner displaied, and twelue thousand men of armes, against the French king, burning townes and castles where soeuer he came. In the first night being very darke, Geffrey Lord Scrope one of the Kings Iustices, ley one of the Cardinals, to wit, Bertrand de Mount Faventine, of the title of our Ladie, vp into an high Tower, shewing him the whole land about toward France, for the Compasse of fiftene leagues, to be in euery place on fire, (saying these words,) Sir, doth not this fiftene shard where with France is compassed, seeme to you to be broken? the Cardinall answering nothing, fell downe as dead for sorrow and feare. *An. reg.* 13 King Edward inuadeth France. 1339

In this sort King Edward made iourneyes into France daily; continuing the space of 5. weekes, and caused his armie to trauell in such sort, that they destroyed the whole Countrey of Cambray, Mourney, Vermoden, and Landenelw, excepting those Cities which were swone to him, with Churches and Castles. The inhabitants of the Countrey fled, neither was there any man that durst resist his enterprises, although the French King had gathered great armies within the walled Cities, himselfe lying in the strong towne of Saint Quintines, what time the Brabanders had determined to returne home againe, and were entred into their iourney, being forced thereunto, partly for want of victuals, and part-

ly by the coldnesse of Winter which grew on fast.

The French King vnderstanding thereof, began to moue himselfe with his army toward the Campe of the King of England, who gladly looking for his comming, called backe againe the Brabanders, and hauing receiued Letters from the French King, that hee would ioyne battell against him, he sent him word backe againe, that hee would stay for him three dayes, wherefore on the fourth day the King looking for the French Kings comming, which would come no nearer then two miles off, breaking bridges, and felling of trees that the King of England might not follow him, hee fledde to Paris, whereupon King Edward returned by Hanonia into Brabant, where hee continued almost the whole Winter.

William de la Poole made knight banneret by the good fortune of the King. Record.

This William was father to Michaell Lord Wingfild earle of Suffolk and Knight of the Garter, who had issue Michaell Earle of Suffolke, who died at Bartelew 1415. left issue two sons Michaell earle of Suffolke that died at Angecourt the 3. of Henry 5. without issue & William L. Marques and afterward Duke of Suffolke beheaded the 26. of Hen 17 the 6.

This thirteenth yere on the seauenth of September King Edward, at Marteine in France, gaue vnto William de la Poole for the succour of money frankely by him lent, and freely brought vnto him in the coasts of Brabant, so as thereby his honour was preserued, which otherwise was in danger greatly to haue bene embased, to bee honoured with the Militarie girdle, appointing him to keepe, and continue the state and honour of a Banerett: and he gaue him the mannors of Burstwike, and Skyp, with the appurtenances of two hundred and fozty markes, in part of fiue hundred markes Land-yere-ly, more conuenently to maintaine the same estate. And 200. Parkes, yearely to be receiued of the Customes in the port of the towne of Kingstone, vntill he were prouided of two hundred and thzescore markes land of yeerely reuenue. Finally, because William had deliuered him, laying his owne goods and lands in gage, for recouering the Kings right in France, the King graunted, that if he recouered the rights of inheritance in France, he would further within the realme of France (in some competent place) giue to him and to his heyres, a thousand Parkes sterling by yeare.

In this Winter time, King Edward grew into great friendship with the Flemings, who prepared at all times to shew their selues as good Subiects vnto him, swearing to doe homage and fealtie, vpon condition that hee would call himselfe King of Fraunce, and in token thereof, would from thenceforth giue armes with Flowerdeluces, for otherwise they durst not obey him, for feare of the Popes curse, which was to be layd vpon them, if at any time they rebelled against the King of France. Wherefore by the counsell of the Flemings, and consent of his Noblemen, he agreed thereunto, and tooke vpon him both the Name and Armes of the King of France. Hee also tooke Flanders vnder his gouernment, the people whereof long after in all matters were to him obedient, as vnto the King of Fraunce Conquerour. Touching the title and Armes aforesaid, the French King sayd to certaine Englishmen sent vnto him: Our cousin (quoth hee) doth wrongfully beare quartered the Armes of England and France, which matter notwithstanding doth not much displease vs, for that hee is descended from the weaker side of our kinne, and therefore as being a bachelour, we would bee content to graunt him license to beare part of our armes of France: but whereas in his Seales and Letters Patents he nameth himselfe as well King of England as of France, and doth set the first quarter of his armes with Leopards, before the quarter of Lilies, it doth grieue vs very much, making apparant to the beholders, that the little Iland of England, is to be preferred before the great kingdome of France. To whom Sir Iohn of Shoydich knight, made answere; That it was the custome of men in those dayes, to set the tytle and armes of their progenitors, before the armes and tytle of the right descending of their mother: and thus of dutie and reason (sayd hee) doth my Lord the King of England prefer his Armes.

Sir Iohn of Shoydich his answere to the French King.

King Edward being thus vsed, he kept his Christmas at Gaunt: The Mariners of the Cinque Ports, embarked themselues in Pinaces and small boates well appointed, who after the feast of S. Hillarie, arriued at Bononie vpon the Sea coast, the weather being so cloudie and darke, that they could scarcely bee perceiued to bee in the hauen: they bzent in the lower Towne nineteene Gallies and foure great Ships, and twenty small boates with all their tackling, and all such houses as were situate nigh to the Sea coast, amongst which was one great house full of Dares, sayles, weapons, and other necessaries, sufficient to furnish nineteene Gallyes, and men for them: at the length in a skirmish bitwixt the Townesmen and the Englishmen, many of the land men were slaine.

An. reg. 14

Wight on vpon Fraunce French.

About the beginning of Februarie, King Edward returning into England, came vnto Gaunt, where the Queene lay in Childbed of her fourth sonne named Iohn: he held a Parliament at Westminster, wherein the Temporaltie granted him euery ninth sheafe of Wooll, euery ninth Lambe, and euery ninth sheafe of all sorts of Come, and the Clergie gaue him a new tenth.

Iohn of Gaunt Parliament Westminster.

1350.

Immediately after Easter, the Earles of Saliburie and Suffolke, being accompanied but with a few men gaue an allault vnto the Towne of Lile in Flanders, which Towne was confederate with the French King, but they chasing the Frenchmen to farre within the gates, the Portcolices being let fall, they were beset with a multitude of men of armes, and being taken, they were conueyed into France, fettered and hackled with yron, although they had sworne to bee true Prisoners: they were drawne in a Cart through the middest of euery Citie, Towne, village and hamlet, with great howles and cryes, raying on them: and at length being brought to the presence of the French King, he would haue most shamefully slaine them, had he not beene otherwise perswaded by the counsell of the K. of Bohemia.

The seuenth day of May the King gaue to William Marquesse of Iuliers, and to the heires of his body, the Earledome of Cambridge, with the Towne and castle, and twentie pounds by yare in fee, and created him at Westminster by the girding of a sword, whereof he also made him his charter with the gift of one thousand poundes yearely rent.

King Edward, kept his Whitsontide at Ipswich, for that he intended from thence to take his passage into Flaunders, but being certified that the French King had sent a great nauie of Spanish shippes, and also the whole fleete of France, to stoppe his passage, hee caused his shippes of the Cinque Ports and other to be assembled, to that he had in his fleete great and small two hundred and thzescore ships.

Wherefore on the Thursday before the Nativitie of Saint Iohn Baptist, hauing a prosperous wind he began to saile, and the next day in the euen of the said feast they descried the French fleete lying in Sloine hauen. Wherefore the King caused all his fleete to come to anker.

The next day being the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, early in the morning, the French fleete diuided themselues into three parts, and remoued themselues as it were a mile, approaching towards the Kings fleete.

Which when the King perceiued, about nine of the clocke, hauing the wind and sunne on his backe, set forward and met his enemies as he would haue wished, wherewithall the whole fleete gaue a terrible showte, & a showe of arrowes out of long wooden bowes so powred downe on the French men, that thousands were slaine in that meeting, at length they closed and came to hand blowes, with pikes, polaxes, and swordes, and some threw stones from the tops of ships wherewith many were brained.

The greatnesse and height of the Spanish shippes caused many Englishmen to strike many a stroke in vaine. But to be shoze, the French shippes being ouercome, and all the men spent of the first part, the Englishmen entred and take them.

The French shippes were chayned together in such sort, that they could not be separated one from another, so that a fewe Englishmen kept that part of the fleete: wherefore they set vpon the second warde, and with great difficultie gaue the charge, which being done, was soone ouercome then the first, for that the French men leauing their shippes, many of them leapt ouer boord.

The Englishmen hauing thus ouercome the first and second part of the fleet, and now hauing night drawing on, partly for want of light, and partly for that they were wearie, they determined to take some rest till the nexte morning, wherefore that night thirtie shippes of the third ewe fledde away, and a great ship called the Iames of Dieppe, thinking to haue carried away a certaine ship of Sandwich belonging to the Prior of Canterburie was stayed, for the Sailers so stoutly defended themselues by the help of the Earle of Huntingdon that they saued themselues, and their ship from the Frenchmen. The fight continued all the night, and in the morning the Normans being ouercome and taken, there were found in the ship foure hundzeth men slayne. Moreouer, the King vnderstanding that thirtie shippes were fled, hee sent foztie shippes well appointed to follow them, ouer the which hee made Iohn Crabbe gouernour, but what good speede he had is not knowne.

In the first company of shippes that were taken they found these conquered shippes, the Denis the George, the Christopher, and the blacke Cocke, all which shippes were taken by the Frenchmen at Sluce, and caried into Normandie.

The number of shippes of warre that were taken, was about two hundzed, and thirtie barges: the number of enemies that were slaine and drowned were aboue fiue & twentie thousand, and of Englishmen about foure thousand, among whome were foure Knights Sir Thomas Mortimer the Kings cosin, Sir Thomas Latimer his sonne, Sir William Butler of Scotthorne, and Sir Thomas Poynings.

About the same time the Scots came with a great power into England burning & spoyling all the Parches by fire and sword, and when they were returning with a great bootie of cattell, the common people set vpon them, tooke their booty, slew many of them and tooke moze then fourescoze Scots of good reputation whom they kept for ransome, for the which fact the Noblemen of the Parches were highly displeased.

The French pyrates assault the Ile of Wight.

About Lammas certaine French pyrates gaue an allault to the Ile of Wight & Sodaine, ly entred it, but sir Peter Russell Knight, meeting them with the people of that Ile, put them back againe, and made them to flee, slaying many of them, in the which skirmish the said Knight was wounded, whereof he dyed. These pirats sayled thence toward the coasts of Deuonshire, and comming to Teignmouth, they set fire on the Towne and burnt it vp: from thence they sayled towards Plimouth, which towne was so defended, that they could not hurt it, but burnt the farmes and faire places nigh adioyning, and tooke a Knight prisoner, whom they tooke along with them.

King Edward besieged Cowrie.

The same yere King Edward besieged Courney, but vpon intreatie made by the French, a truce was taken from Michaelmas till Midsummer, whereofore the King coming to Gaunt in Flaunders, staied there looking for money out of England, which came not.

King Edward returned secretly into England, and remained there two Monthes.

King Edward with eight of his men, fayning that hee would ride abzoad for his pleasure, secretly came into Zeland, where taking shippe, after hee had sayled thzee dayes and thzee nights, on S. Andrewes day at night about the houre of the Clocke crowing, he entred the Tower of London by water, being waited on by the Earle of Northampton, Nicholas Cantilopo, Reignald Cobham,

Cobham, Giles de Bello Campo, John de Bello Campo Knights, William Killesby, and Philip Welton preests: early in the morning he sent for his Chancellour, Treasurer, and Justices then being at London, and the Bishop of Chichester being his Chancellour, and the Bishop of Couentry his Treasurer, he put out of Office, mynding also to haue sent them into Flaunders, to haue borne pledges for money he owed there: but the Bishop of Chichester declared vnto him what danger might ensue to him, by the Canons of the Church: whereupon the King dismissed them out of the Tower: But as concerning the high Justices, to wit, Iohn Lord Stoner, Robert Lord Willowby, William Lord Scharshell, and especially Nicholas de la Beech, who before that time was Lieutenant of the Tower of London, and Sir Iohn Molens Knight, with certaine Merchant men, as Iohn Poulney, William Poole, and Richard his brother, and the Chancellours chiefe Clearkes, to wit, Maister Iohn de Saint Paul, Michaell Wathe, Henry Stafford, and certaine of the Exchequer, as Maister Iohn Thorpe, with many other more, the King commaunded to be imprisoned, some in one place, some in another, neyther would he suffer them to be discharged thence, vntill he were throughly pacified of his anger conceiued for not sending the money which should haue serued at the siege of Tourney.

Wil. Poole and Richard his brother.

This yeare about Christmas, Henry Bishop of Lincolne, and Geffrey Lord Scrope, chiefe Justice to the King and his chiefe Counseller, dyed at Gaunt.

Anueg. 15 King Edward kept his Christmas at Wilsford, and after that a great Justing at Reding.

Justing at Reading and at Langley.

Also at Candlemas, he kept a great justing at Langley, for the honour of the Noblemen of Walconia, which he trayned vp there in feates of warre. He made Robert de Bourlier knight, Lord Chancellour of England, and Robert Parnike knight Treasurer, the one to succeed the other. Also hee sent out Iusticiers that should sit in euery Shire, to inquire concerning the Collectors of the tenthes and fifteenths and of Woolles, and to ouersee all Officers. And because the Cite of London would not suffer that any such Officers should sit as Iustices within their Citie as inquisitors of such matters contrary to their Liberties, the King prouided that those Iustices should hold their Sessions in the Tower of London, to make inquisition of the damages of the Londoners: but because the Londoners would not answere there, vntill their Liberties were fully confirmed, neyther any such confirmation could be had eyther of the King, or his Chancellour touching Writs and Charters in the Tower, there rose thereof such a great tumult, that the Iustices appointed there to sit, 1341. fained that they would hold no Session, till after Easter. Whereupon the King being highly offended for the said tumult, and desirous to know the names of them that had raysed it, could not vnderstand but that they were certaine meane persons, who claymed their liberties: wherevpon the King being pacified of his troubled minde, forgaue all the offences committed by the Londoners, the Iustices breaking vp all their sitting touching the said place.

Justice of Cattle-bastion forbidden to sit in London.

This yeare within the quindene of Easter a Parliament was holden at London, where in the Carles and Nobles of the Realme, with the Commons requested, that the Charter called *Magna Carta*, and *Carta Foresta*, with all other Liberties belonging to the Church and Kingdome should be obserued, and that the Officers and chiefe Rulers of the Kings house should be chosen by the Peeres of the realme, in the Parliament: But these petitions the King would not confirme, nor could abide to heare talked of. Parliament at London.

About the beginning of the moneth of July King Edward, receiued Letters from Lodowicke Duke of Bauary, vsurper of the Romane Empire, in the which pretending friendship betwixt him and Philip the French King, hee signified that those warres which the King of England had begun in France did greatly mislike him, and therefore desired that there should be concord and amitie betwixt the Kings of both realmes; the which to be performed, he offered to bestow some labour, requesting King Edwards letters of authoritie thereof, to treate and to conclude a truce for one yeare or twaine, toward the end of which letter hee addeth these words: The deputation and lieutenantshippe which wee gaue vnto you, wee doe for diuerse and sundry causes reuoke againe. Dated at Frankford the fourteenth of June in the seuen and twentieth of our raigne, and of our Empire the foureteenth. To the which letters King Edward wrote an inscription, in soste as followeth.

To the renowned Prince Lodowike, by the grace of God Romane Emperour, alwaies Augustus, Edward by the same grace King of France and England, Lord of Ireland &c.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Kenington besides Lambeth. *Anuegist* 1342.

This yere Iohn Maluerne, Fellow of Oriall Colledge in Oxford, made and finished his booke intituled, The Visions of Pierce Plowman.

King Edward gaue the Earledome of Cambridge to Iohn of Henault, vncle to Queene Phillippe, and after kept his feast of Saint Katherine at Newcastle, and his Christmas also. Vntill this time Dauid King of Scottes threatned to leuie an armie, and to enter the land, whereupon King Edward entred Scotland, and followed after Dauid, who fledde before him beyond the Scottish Sea, wasting and spoyling all as hee went, except Castles and Parishes, in the which the Scottes together with Dauid their King hid themselues. And William Mountacute Earle of Salisburie, hauing gotten a great fleete, entred an Iland belonging to Scotland, where most victoriously hee conquered it, and the same Ile called T. de la Moor made Earle of Cambridge. W. Montacute Earle of Salisbury.

tailed the Ile of Man, the King gaue it to the Conqueror frankely and freely to be possessed, and caused him to be called and crowned King of that Ile. Then King Edward returning towards the South parts, kept solemne turnements at Dunstable, being accompanied with two hundred and thirty Knights. Conquered & crowned King of Man.

The same yeare was a Parliament at Westminster, wherein the Archbishop of Canterbury, was reconciled to the King, before whom the Archbishop swore, that although the King by his counsell and consent had done homage to the French King for the Dukedome of Aquitaine, and the Earledome of Poytow, yet he neuer consented thereto as to be any hurt or prejudice to the King, or that by his counsell he might incurre fauour, or seeke to please the French King, but for that present time hee thought it best to be done, both for the obtayning of peace, and also for the profit of the King and Realme. Parliament at Westminster.

After this Parliament the King commanded florences of gold to be made at the Tower of London, that is to say the peny of the value of fiue shillings eight pence, the halfe peny of the value of three shillings foure pence, a farthing worth twenty pence. Florences of gold.

In a Parliament at Westminster, in the moneth of May, the religious men that were possessours of Lands, granted to the King, towards the maintainance of his warre, all their Iewels and Plate, as well siluer as gold, horses carts and waggons, wherevpon the Kings treasure was notably enriched. *Anuegist* 1343.

The same yeare authority was giuen to the Kings Ecclesiastors, to enquire and certifie the Councell of all such persons, which held of the King any lands in capite, or by any other fee, to the value of one hundred shillings, and that the names of all such should be enrolled and giuen vp for record. Also certaine other were put in authority to signifie how many sufficient and able bowmen were in euery Shire: also to what other sufficient men were able to beare armour for the defence of their Country, and to see them practised with such kind of weapon wherein they had best skill: and being thus assembled in all parts of the Realme, specially such as were at lawfull age, commandement was giuen out, they should be ready at the Kings commandement to fight against their enemies. A generall Lore by the Kings prerogatiue of England.

King Edward and his nobles perceiuing the derogation that was done to the Realme by such reseruations, prouision and collations of benefices, as the Pope practised here in England, wrote to him, requiring that sith the Churches of England had beene founded and endowed by noble & worthy men, to the end the people might be instructed by men of their own land, and that he being so farre off, could not vnderstand the defaults, yet his predecessours, and he more then had beene vsed by diuers reseruations, prouisions, and collations made to diuers persons, some strangers, yea, and some enemies to the Realme, whereby the money and profits were carried forth, their cures not prouided for, according to the founders minds, they therefore vpon due considerations signified to him, that they could not suffer such enormities any longer, and besought him to reuoke such reseruations, prouisions and collations wholly to auoyd such slanders, mischiefes and harmes as might ensue, and that the ayres might be committed to persons meet for the exercise of the same, beseeching him further without delay to signifie his intention, with they meant to bestow their diligence to remedy the matter, and see that requeste might be had. Giuen in full Parliament at Westminster, the eight teenth of May, in the yeare of our Lord 1343. Pope Avesbu-Gualt Hegelword:

Many being called to ayde the King against the Scots, but not being ready, contributed their money, wherewith the King might hire Soudiers in place of them that remained at home. This yeare saith one written booke in French, King Edward held a great Feast at Windsor of 300. Knights, and as many Ladies, with great outrage of expences and costs.

King Edward caused to be called together a great many of Artificers, to the Castle of Windsor, and began to build an house which was called the round Table, the forme whereof, from the Center or middle point into the compasse, was an hundred foote, and the whole Diameter two hundred foote, and the circumference thereof is fiue hundred foote and three quarters. *Anuegist* 1345. T. Walsingham. Round table at Windsor.

The same time Philip de Valoys King of France, builded a round Table in his Countrey, to the end that he might allure the men of Warre of Germany and Italie, and so to keepe them from the King of Englands round Table. Round table in France. Sea. Abbey

King Edward in succour of Iohn Mountfort Duke of Britaine, and of his wife and children, who then remained in the Kings custody, sent the Earles of Northampton, and of Oxford, Hugh Spencer, and Richard Talbot knights, and Maister William Killesby Clarke, euery one of them hauing vnder them many men of Armes and Archers, into Britaine, who entred therinto, in despight of all their enemies which resisted them, making many conflicts. They tooke as well walled Townes as other, with diuers fortresses and Castles, both by assault and surrender, by which meanes they had the whole Countrey vnder their subiection, conquering till they came to the Towne of Nosiels, where Charles de Bloys met them with a great Army. Therefore in the champaine ground nigh vnto Nosiers, the two Armies made a great and most stout battaile, wherein the worthinesse of both sorts did full well appeare: for they fought so stoutly, that in the first conflict it chanced as the like had not beene seene: for the chiefe Captaines Charles de Bloys to whom the French King had giuen the Dukedome of that Countrey, and William de Bohurr Earle of Northampton, who for the defence of the right of Iohn de Mountfort, naturall heire and Duke of that T. de la Moor Battaile at Nosiers.

that land, the King of England had made a Generall ouer the Armie of the Englishmen, fought so long with hand stroakes in the field that day, that no man but a liar could giue anoze praise to the one then to the other. Three times that day they being wearied on both sides, withdrew themselues to take breath, and then fell to it againe with speare and shield, and sword and target: but in the end the right worthy and Noble Charles de Bloys, his men fleeing away, was also forced to yeeld himselfe, whereupon after many flame on both sides, the victory fell to the Englishmen.

An. reg. 19 King Edward sent ouer Henry Earle of Derby, sonne to the Earle of Lancaster his cousin, with more then fiue hundred men of armes, amongst whom was the Earle of Pembroke, and Walter de Many, with many Archers into Gascoigne, with Ralph Baron of Stafford Seneschall of Gascoigne, who being come thither, the said Earle made fiftie Knights of his Army, and after won many walled Townes and Castles, making many worthy skirmishes, and at length won the Towne of Dagulowne by assault, to the keeping whereof they appointed Ralph Stafford, afterward they appointed three iourneyes toward other Townes, as especially to Bigorreche (so called for the strength thereof, and also called the Chamber of France) and also to the Towne of St. John de Laurell, and to many other great and strong Townes well fortified, which with great toyles and diuers dangerous assaults they won: where the Earle of Derby and his soldiers vndermining the Towers and Walls of the said towne were very soze assaulted by them which defended it.

R. Avesbury. 1345.

Thus he conquered Cities, townes, Castles and fortresses, to the number of one hundred and fiftie, bringing a great part of Gascoigne vnder subiection, euen to Tolouse, vnto the which City he did no damage, neyther to the inhabitants thereof, but that he made the wonderfully afraide: as certaine of them told me (saith mine author) their feare was such, that the religious people were constrained to beare armour, and the Prior of the Carmelite Friers of our Lady of Tolouse, hauing a banner of our Lady in gold set in a field of siluer, displayed the same, prouoking thereby many to take armour.

T. de la More.

About the second Sunday in Lent the Earles being fully fraught with botty, prisoners, gold and siluer, they returned towards Burdeaux, where John de Valois, eldest sonne to the French King, being accompanied with a great number of hired Dutch Souldiers, besieged the Towne of Agnilowne, and the Captaines thereof the Earle of Stafford and other, so entrenched the same Towne, that without great danger the Englishmen could haue no accesse vnto them, but the Earle of Derby beate away them that besieged the City and destroyed new victualled the same: notwithstanding they were not able to raise the siege, because they had so intrenched themselues without the Towne, who refusing to fight in the fields, would answere, they came not to pitch a field, but to besiege a Towne, wherefore they continued the same siege vntill the decollation of Saint Iohn, but vnderstanding then that the King of England chased his Father Philip very soze to Crecie, and fearing that he should come very late to the ayde of his Father, hee gaue vp the siege, setting all his Tents on fire, and fled in the darke, but the Earle of Stafford with his power pursued them, cut off their taile, took a great many of their horses, and returned.

After this certaine Botwmen are mustered in England, appointed to be sent ouer sea, who comming ouer are layd in garrison for defence of the Country. Also twentie thousand sacks of woollare granted to the King. Boyecour of Bouchegrau Geffrey de Harecourt a Normain, came to the King, requiring ayde against the French King, who wrongfully withheld his lands from him: at his first comming he did fealtie, and sweare homage to King Edward, but afterward he reuolted.

20000 sacks of wooll granted to the King.

Richard de Bury deceased at Aukland, when he hadde late Bishoppe of Durham eleuen yeares, two moneths, and odde dayes, and was buried at Durham: vnto whom succeeded Thomas af Hatfield the Kings Secretary, by meanes of the Kings letters to the Pope: And when certaine of the Cardinals said, that the said Thomas was a light person, and a lay man: the Pope answered, truely if the King of England at this time hadde made his request for an Asse, hee should haue obtained it. But Richard Bury in somewhat to bee remembred for example to other, hee was borne neare Saint Edmundsbury, by his Father Sir Richard Angarvill Knight, and his vncle Sir Iohn Willoughby his gouernour, hee was first set to Grammer Schoole, and after sent to Oxford, from whence he was called to teach Edward of Windsore then Prince: afterward this Richard was made principall receiuer to Edward the second in Gascoigne, at such time as young Edward with his Mother fled to Paris, whose expences beginning to faile, the said Richard came to them priuily with a great summe of money, for the which cause he was pursued to Paris, where he lay hid in a Steeple by the space of seuen dayes. After this hee was made Cofferer to Edward the third, then Treasurer of the Wardrobe, then Clarke of the Pinne Seale by the space of fiue yeares, in the which time, twice hee went to Pope Iohn. In the fiue and fortieth yeare of his age hee was consecrated Bishoppe of Durham, then was he made Treasurer of England, and after Chancellour, since the which time hee was sent thaile to the French King to claime the Kingdome of France, and after that, to Antwerpe and other places in Brabant in Embassage by the space of nine yeare he was greatly beloued in the company of Clearkes, and had alwayes many of them in his family, among whom were Thomas Bradwardine, afterward Archbishop

Richard de Bury, Bishop of Durham dyed in The yeare of our Lord 1345.

Archbishoppe of Canterbury, Richard fitz Ralph Archbishoppe of Armacham, Walter Burley, Iohn Mandit, Robert Holcot, Richard Kilwington, all of them Doctors of Diuinitie, Richard Wentworth or Benworth Bishoppe of London, and Walter Segraue Bishop of Chichester; euery day at his Table, he was accustomed to haue some reading: and after Dinner daily he would haue disputation with his priuate Clearkes, and other of his house, except some vrgent cause had let him. At other times he was occupied, either in seruice of God, or at his Bokes. Weekly he bestowed for the reliefe of the poze eight quarters of wheat made into bread, besides the ozdinary fragments of his house. Boyecour, in comming and going from Newcastle to Durham, he bestowed sometimes twelue Markes in almes, from Durham to Stockton eight Markes, from Durham to Auckland fiue Markes, from Durham to Sydeham an hundred shillings, &c. He was so delighted in Bokes, that he had more (as was thought) then all the Bishops of England besides, he bestowed many rich ornaments on the Church of Durham, he builded an Hall or house in Oxford, induing it with reuenewes neerhull for his Schollers. And also prouided in a Librarie great store of Bokes, for the vse of the whole Vniuersitie, as the said Bishop witteth himselfe in his booke entituled, Philobiblon, and appointed the Maisters of the Hall to attigne fiue Schollers for keeping of the common Library, &c.

Charitie of Richard de Bury.

Couenton Library in Oxford.

The same yeare dyed Adam Tarleton Bishop of Winchester that had beene long time blind, after whom succeeded William Edendon Treasurer of England.

Wil. Edendon.

This Edendon founded the Monastery of Edendon, the religious brethren whereof were called Bonhomes.

The same yeare dyed Henry Earle of Lancaster, father to Henry Earle of Derby, and was buried at Leicester, in the Monastery of Chanons, the King and both the old and young Quenes being present, with Archbishops, Bishops, Earles, and Barons, in manner of all the land, whose comme was then in Gascoigne doing chiualrious acts.

Henry Earle of Lancaster buried.

Scots entred England.

This yeare the Scots, to the number of thirtie thousand, William Dowglas being their Leader, entred into Westmerland, and burnt Carleile, Penreth, with many other Townes, whereof the Bishoppe of Carleile, with Thomas Lucy, Robert Ogle, and a great number compassed them in the night season, and with lights and noyse so disquieted them, that they neuer durst goe out for victualles, nor giue their bodies to sleepe, but at the last Alexander Scragan stoutly prepared to goe out for victualls, whom the Bishoppe and Robert Ogle met, and with a Speare thrust him through the body, so that the Scottes were some after ouercome and slaine.

Scots ouercome.

An. reg. 20. The Earle of Northampton, and the other Lords in Brytaine committed certaine Castles won by them in Brytaine, to the safe keeping of the faithfull Captaines and Souldiers, and then returned into England.

Chapleines to the Bishop of Durham, and their exercise.

1346. King Edward prepared to make a voyage into Normandy, his Nauy being ready to tran- spoze him from Portesmouth and Portchester, with the Earles of Northampton, Arundell, Warwike, Harecourt, Huntingdon, Drenford, and Suffolke, the Bishop of Durham, and Sir Walter William Killesby Clearke: euery one of these leading a great Army of Souldiers well appointed, were imbarqued, and waited for the Winde, from the first of June, to the fifth of July, and then hauing a good Winde, they began to make saile with the same number of one thousand Shippes of burthen and Pinaces, and on the thirteenth day of July, they landed at Hogges in Normandy, where on the Shoze of the Sea, King Edward, made his eldest Sonne Knight, and also Prince of Wales, and immediately the Prince made Knights, Mortimere, Montacute, Role, and other.

King Edward passeth into Normandy.

T. de la More. T. Walsingh. R. Avesbury.

The Kings sonne made Prince of Wales is apparently by his Parent that he was made Prince of Wales and Earle of Chester the 3. yeare of this fathers raigne.

That night the King lodged in the Towne of Hogges, and the next day the Towne was burnt by the army.

Hogges in Normandy burnt.

The night following King Edward lodged in Percels, where he stayed fiue dayes, during which time, all the Country, with the Towne of Barbefleete, was by his men confumed with fire. From thence they departed to Meloigus, which they set on fire: then they went to Senetcomb de Mount, which is nigh the Sea, and to Garantam, thence to Serius and to Saint Lewes, passing along vnto the Towne of Tourney, wasting all with fire, and that night the King lodged at Carmaline; then to Cerine, being a Religious house belonging vnto Cane, leauing nothing behind them vnspoyled.

Afterward they made an assault and entred the City of Cane, making their entrance by a bridge which was strongly defended.

Cane in Normandy besieged by Edward the third.

There were slaine an hundzeth 3. and fourty Knights, among the which was taken the Earles of Eye, and Camberlin de Tankeruill, with diuers other captaines, and of them of the Citie, were slaine aboue one thousand three hundzed.

At this City the Army remayned 6. dayes, and the spoyle thereof they sold to those Marriners which followed the Coast as the R. went. Then they went to the Monasterie of Sprouard, a very strong thing and well defended. Afterward, they came vnto Argons by night, burning still as they went, till they came to the Citie of Litens, where they found the Cardinals of Clarimount, and of Naples, and one Archbishop, who offered the King a treaty of Peace, and there the king continued three dayes, refusing to treat of Peace. Then they went to Lakentnolaud, and to the Towne of Bzine, and lodged at New Burge, and after at Selesele vpon Sayne, and there the Wellshmen swum through the water of Segan, and being resisted by the inhabitants, they slew many of them. Then they passed nigh

nigh to the towne and castle of Mount Darch, being strong places and not assaultable. This night he lodged at Ruy vpon Segan, nigh vnto the good Towne of Louers, which they vnburne. After, the passed by the Towne and Castle of Gaion, which they take, and burnt, and lodged at Lingeux, which is nigh the good Towne and Castle of Vernon, which they touched not, and there they first entred into France, and the same night they burnt the Castle of Roche-Blanch, which standeth on the other side of Segan, and lodged at Frenible vpon Segan. After that they passed by the Towne of Haunt, lodging that night at Dopme. On ynert day they passed to Frigmas, and the next day to the good Towne of Poeete, where being a bridge to passe ouer the Riuer of Segan, the French had spoyled it, but the King caused it to be redified: and the next day they came to Amias, where were thre Armies appointed to keepe the King from passing that way: but hee slew thre hundred of them at the first charge, put the residue to flight, and spoyled their tents, burning thre hundreth and two Carts and Wagons laden with Crosbowes, quarrels, Armour, and victuals: the King staying there two dayes, they went to Oresile nigh vnto Pountoys, then to Antell: the next day they passed by the Citty of Wenoys, which they touched not, and so by Trosolours at the water of Some, where they lodged.

The next day they won the towne of Poys, and burnt the Castle. From thence they went to Aregnus, then to Acyen, where they lodged. The next day they came to Doell vpon the sea side, the Frenchmen of Dabuile and the Countrey came to the fords side to hinder their passage, with whom the King had a sore conflict, but the enemies were put to the worse, and more then two thousand slaine, and the towne of Croytoy taken and burnt, and aboue thre hundred Germaines slaine.

The next day they followed the King on the Riuer of Some, and on the banks side (where the King with his horse were lodged) came trauailing Philip de Valoys the French King, with the Kings of Boheme and Malegre, leading an Army of men innumerable, diuided into eight great battailes. King Edward sent to the French King, offering him free passage ouer the ford, if he would come and chuse a place apt to fight a field in, but this Philip went to another place of passage.

On the morrow King Edward removed to Oresfield, where the army of the French king met him. The King therefore set his Sonne the Prince of Wales to gouerne the vaward. The middle ward the Earle of Noath-hampton. The third hee tooke to guide himselfe.

The Armie of the Frenchmen were diuided into nine Troupes. The vaward was committed to the King of Boheme. The French King commanded his banner called Auntiflame to be set vp, after which time it was not lawfull vnder paine of death to take any man to saue his life.

This banner, that it might differ from his standert, had in it Lilies of gold very broad.

On the other side, King Edward commanded his banner to be erected of the Dragon, which signified fiercenesse and cruelty to be turned against the Lillies.

These Armies being thus appointed, lay in the field from one of the cloche vntill the Euening. About the Sunne setting, after the Armies had ioined, they began by the sound of Trumpets to giue signe of battaile, but they themselues felt the force of the English Archers, and as for their quarrels, they fell short a great way. Moreouer, their footmen being placed among their owne Horsemen, were by them (when they were gauled with English shot of arrowes) ouerrunne and troden vpon, that a great outcry was made as it were to the starres, and the whole forme of the array was broken, and they fighting with the English armed men, are beaten down with polaxes.

In this so terrible a bickering, the Prince of Wales being then but fiue teene yeares old shewed his wonderfull towardnesse, laying on very hotly with speare and shield. This battell dured thre parts of the night, in the which time the Frenchmen gaue fiue great assaults against our men, but at the length they being conquered, ran away.

On the morrow there came foure Armies of fresh Souldiers to the French side, and making semblance as though their part had suffered no harme, they came against the Englishmen, and gaue them a freely battaile. On the other side, the Englishmen withstood them very stoutly, and after a sharpe Conflict they forced their foes to flye, and in chasing of them together with them that were slaine in the conflict, they slew thre thousand men in the said two dayes. There were slaine in the battaile of Cressie, the Kings of Boheme and of Majorica, the Archbishop of Zanrinus, the Bishop of Noyone, the Dukes of Loraine and Burbon, the Earles of Alanson, Harecourt, Awmarle, Sauoy, Nois, Pountbilliard, Niuars, and of Flanders, with the grand Prior of the Hospitall of France, and 4000. men of armes beside common Souldiers without number.

The third day after, King Edward passed by the Abbey of Pountney, and the next day they came to the towne of Pountney, and from thence to the Nunrie of Saint Ioice, and after they passed ouer a ford, and came to Newcastle, where they stayed two dayes, and from thence they came to Caleis, which presently they entrenched to besiege, being the fourth day of September.

The French King in this meane time sent a number of Genowayes, and other hired Souldiers, vnto David King of Scottes, earnestly requesting him, that hee would inuade England with all his force: wherefore about the 7. of October, hee with a mighty power entred England, passing along by Berwike, which was strongly defended by the Englishmen, and so ranging ouer the forest of Alnewike, they wonne a certaine Mannor place called Haden, belonging to the Lord Walter Mannie, who yeelded himselfe on condition to be ransomed, where (Selby a knight being seruous by law of armes to saue his life) he was taken, which when it was knowne to David, he commanded him to be slaine: but Selby intreated for him, that he might be brought aliue to the presence of David, who hauing obtained his request, hee falsely downe before David, requesting his life for ransome, but hee was againe adiudged to die. The malice of the tyrant was such, that hee commanded two of the children of the poore Knight to be strangled in the sight of their Father, and afterwards himselfe being almost mad for sorrow, was beheaded.

From thence the Scots passing forward, wasting along the Countrey, wherein were many Mannors belonging to the Bishoprick of Durham, and comming within two miles of Durham, they take certaine of the Monkes which they kept prisoners for their ransome, making couenant with the residue, for a certaine summe of money and corne to redeeme their Mannors from spoyling. The English men of the Marches hearing before the face of the enemy, William de la Zouch, Archbyshop of Yorke, Vicegerent to the King in the Marches, calling together the Bishop of Carleile, the Earle of Angusie, the Lord Mowbray, the Lord Henry Percy, the Lord Ralph Nevell, Roger Hastings, with all their ayde, together with the archers of Lancashire went towards the armie of the Scots, and on the Euen of Saint Luke, met them at a place called Newye Parke, neare Neuils Crosse. The Scottish nation not accustomed to fight, withstood them stoutly, and hauing head-peeces on their heads, and targets on their armes, passing fore vpon the Englishmen, they abode the brunt of the Archers: but the men of armes which were in the foreffronts, gaue their enemies many deadly wounds. The Marshall of the Scots, Earle Patrike, who had the charge of the rereward, when he perceiued his men to be beaten down, he fled away with other that were privy to his cowardlinesse: hee being fled, the residue of the Scottes continuing faithfully with their King, stood about him like a round Tower, keeping him in the middle, who so continued till there were scarce forty of them left aliue, of the which not one of them could escape aliue.

At length David their King valiantly fighting and sore hurt, an Esquire of Northumberland, named Iohn Copland stoke him, who with eight of his seruants rode Thwart out of the field with the King, and so rode fifteene leagues from that place, to a Castle called Dagraise, the residue about him being taken or slaine, the Englishmen pursued the chase after them which were fled, slaying and taking them as farre as Mardiholm and Cockridge. In this great battaile were taken David de Bruse King of Scottes, the Earle of Pentife, the Earle of Fife, the Lord Malcolin Flemming, the Earle Wirton, William Dowglas, William de Leminge stone, Walter de Halliburton, John Dowglas, David de Anade, John de Saint Clere, William Mowbray, David fitz Robert, William de Ramsey, Adam Moygne, John Steward, Roger de Kirkpatrike, John Hume, and William Morrey Knights, James Sudeiflowre, James Loren, Henry Delker, Baronets. There were slaine in this battaile, the Earle of Mosse, the Earle of Straterne, also Alexander Stragy, Iohn de Halliburton, Henry de Ramsey, Nasoe de Ramsey, Adam Nilkenfor, Thomas Boid, Iohn Stiward, Allan Stiward, David de la Hay, Edward de Keth, John Crawford, John de Kindesley, Philip de Maldren, Henry Ramsey, Alexander Morrey, Humfrey de Boys, Gilbert Inchmarter, Robert Maltallent, and his brother Humfrey, Kirkepatrike, John Stange, and Patrike Hearing Knights. There were many slaine in the chase, but there were no more coate armours found in the maine battell then we haue reckoned.

This battell was fought on the seauenteenth of October. The prisoners were conueyed to London about Christmasse, David de Bruse except, which might not trauaile by reason of two deadly wounds in his head with arrowes, but the second of January hee was brought vp, and conueyed from Westminster to the Tower of London, in sight of all the people, and there lodged in the blacke noake of the said Tower, neare to the Constables guard, there to be kept. About the feast of S. Mathew the Apostle, the Earle of Fife was at London drawne, headed and quartered, his head set on London bridge, his quarters set vp in foure parts of the Realme.

John Copland, that take David de Bruse King of Scots at the battaile of Durham (for so it is called in the Record) for his seruice King Edward made him a banneret, and gaue him for his maintainance in that state, fiue hundred pounds by yeare, after this manner: to wit, foure hundred pounds out of the Custome of the Citie of London, and one hundred pounds out of his custome of the Towne of Barwike vpon Twide, vntill such time as fiue hundred pound lands by yeare were giuen to him and his heyres for ever. And more for his good seruice with one hundred men of armes, one hundred pound the yeare out of the custome of the Kings port of Newcastle vpon Tine till the said Iohn had purchased for him and his heyres one hundred pound land by yeare.

While these things were done in England, the King was busied at the siege of Caleis, which Towne was situate in the Marches of Artoys, being closed about with a double Wall and a double Ditch, hard on the shore of the English Sea, right ouer against the Castle of Douer. And there is belonging to the same Towne an Hauen, wherein shippes may lie very safe without danger. This towne

Tide la More. — Wydall of Oresse. — The French banner of Auresiame signified no mercy more then fire and sworde. — Edward besieged Caleis. — Sir Walter Mannie and his company taken prisoners by the Scots. — King of Scots taken by Iohn Copland Esquire. — The regester of Dunelm. — Iohn Copland King of Scots at the battaile of Durham (for so it is called in the Record) for his seruice Record. — *An. reg.* 21. 1347. — Tide la More. — Caleis besieged.

was sometime with the Castle thereof very stronglie built by the force and valauntnesse of the Romains, for after that Iulius Cæsar had brought all France vnder his subiection, hee built Calcis in Artoys, and the Castle of Chepstow in Venedocia, or Southwales, and the Castle of Douer in Kent, what time hee hadde conquered Brytaine, (as saith mine Author.) King Edwa dealt a Ditch about his Campe, and layd his Nauy of Ships against Calcis hauen, to the intent that the Frenchmen should make no inuasions vpon his Souldiers, neyther they within receiue any victuals by water. The Norman Pyrats at sundry times tooke fiftene of his ships, whereof some of them they carried away for their owne occupying, the other they burnt, and Sir Thomas Hacluit with Sir William Borton Knights, as they were sayling into England, were taken Prysoners on the Sea. King Edward hauing fortified the siege, lay without giuing any assault, knowing that it was not possible to fight with his enemies, without great losse of men, considering the depth of the Ditches, and height of the Wals, neyther would he erect any engines against the Towne, for they wanted firme ground whereupon to place them. Besides that, if hee should beate downe the Walles, yet were the Ditches so deepe, and full of salt water let in on euery side, that they were able to withstand all the world, with little strength and defence. On that side of the Towne on which the Souldiers were wont to victuall Calcis, that is along on the Sea side, and especially when the Shippes could not bee suffered to passe the Sea, but alongst the shore with small boates, the Earle of Northampton made a Rampire, wherewith hee kept away, and beate backe such boates; and afterward, when the Admirall of France hadde purposed to come with his Ships of Warre to fight against our English Shippes that lay at the siege, thinking that in the meane time whilest they were fighting, the small boates should passe to Calcis with victuals, the said Earle of Northampton meeting with him valauntly, put him to flight.

This siege during in such sort, from the feast of the Natiuity of our Lady, all the whole Winter, with a great part of the summer, and still waxing stronger and stronger. And monday next after the Feast of Saint Iames, the French King came to the Castle of Guisnes, with his eldest sonne Iohn, and the Kings sonne of Boheme: and a great power to haue remoued the siege from Calcis. Also the Emperour (promising by oath, that he would remoue the siege either by Warre or peace, or at the least, he would victuall them that were besieged) came with his Army towards the English Campe, and lodged scarce a mile from thence, requelling by Messengers a treatie of Peace. Hee sent the Duke of Detenes, and the Earles of Bulone and Darminake, who parlying with the Duke of Lancaster, the Earles of Northampton and Huntington, touching a truce, could not obtaine their consent, where, vpon after they had exercised a little warlike iusting, they returned to their Tents.

Caleis built by the Romãs

Castles of Chepstow in Wales and Douer in Kent built by the Romains.

A Rampire builded at Calcis.

The French King came to raise the Siege of Calcis.

The second day following, the French king offered the king of England a day of Battaile, which the King on certaine conditions accepted very gladly. In the meane season, they which were besieged, made knowne their Rate to the French king by signes and tokens, for at his first comming, they within the Towne set vp his Ancient on the chiefest Tower of the Castle, and also they set out banners of the Dukes and Earles of France, and a little after the shutting in of the Euening, they made a great light on the top of one of the highest Towers, which was towards the Army of the Frenchmen, and therewithall they made a great shoute and noyse with Trumpets and Drummes. The second night they made the like, but somewhat lesse. The third night, a very small fire, giuing forth therewith a sorowfull voyce, signifying thereby that their strength touching the keeping of the Towne, was quite spent and done. And the same night they tooke in all their flags and Ancients, except their Standard. At the last, the day of battaile drew on, against which time, there came out of England and Dutchland, toward the helpe of King Edward 7000. fighting men, whereupon the French King betimes in the morning on the second day of August, making fire in his Tents, fled, whose taile the Duke of Lancaster and Earle of Northampton cutting off, they slew and take many of them.

The French king offered battaile.

The French King fleeth. W. Norwell.

When they of Calcis perceiued this, they take their Standard downe, and with great sorowe cast it from the Tower downe into the Ditch, and on the Saterday following, Iohn de Vienna their Captaine, a man very skilfull in warlike affaires, opening the Towne, came out to the King of England, sitting on a little Nagge, for that he being lame on his feete, could not well goe, with an halter about his necke, with the other Burgesses and souldiers following on foote, bare headed, and bare footed, hauing halters about their neckes.

Calcis yeelded

The other how Calcis yeelded.

The Captaine comming thus before the King, offered him a warlike sworde, as vnto the chiefest Prince of armes amongst all Christian Kings, and as one that had taken that Towne from the mightiest Christian King by noble Chiualry. Then he deliuered to him the keyes of the Towne. Thirdly, he requesting of him pitty, asked pardon. and deliuered him the sword of Peace, wherewith he should giue right iudgement, spare and forbeare the humble and lowly, and chasten the proud hearted.

The King receiuing that which was offered him, sent the Captaine with fiftene Knights, and as many Burgesses into England, enriching them with large guifts. The common sort of people, and such as hee found in the Towne, being somewhat refreshed with the Kings almes, he commanded to be safe conducted to

Guisnes

to the Castle of Guisnes.

After the taking of the towne of Calcis, the Souldiers at the kings commandement take the Hauen of Marke and of Hoy, and with great difficulty they built in them Forts, setting in other where walles wanted, Hoggesheads filled with stones against the enemies, whilest the wals were a building within. Immediately after the taking of Calcis, there began in those parts a generall pestilence of the fire, comming from the East parts, into many other parts of the world, whereupon it came to passe, that a great multitude of people dyed. This pestilence gaue occasion that certain Cardinals were sent on the behalfe of the French King, to craue a truce from that time, vnto the Feast of Saint Barnabe next following, which was agreed vpon on the eight and twenty of September.

Marke Hoy.

Bloudy flixe.

The truce being taken as afore is sayd, King Edward built a Castle at Risbanke, betwixt the Towne of Calcis, and the Hauens mouth, to the intent to keepe off all the enemies force of Ships, from the said Towne: and he made Captaine of the towne Sir Iohn Mongomery. And thence comming the Quéene and his eldest sonne, with a great company of noblemen, he take his journey towards England by water, and being on the Sea, he was beaten with such a Tempest, that he lost many of his Shippes, and hardly escaped himselfe, notwithstanding hee came on land the fourteenth of October, and so to London.

Castlenet Wales bathe builded.

King Edward returneo from Calcis into England, not without great danger of drowning.

An. reg. 22. This peace being made, it seemed through England as a new Summer had followed, because of the plenty of all things, for there was no woman of any name, but she had some of the prizes of Caue and Calcis, or of other cities beyond the Seas, whereof the matrons being proud did brag in French matrons apparell.

Commodities of Peace.

1348 At the Feast of Easter, Iames Dowglas, who was taken at Durham in the Warres, and brought to London with the King of Scots, was licenced to depart home againe, swearing to the King peace and fealtie, who afterward liuing peaceably in the Marches, and being requested by William Dowglas to ride a hunting with him, was by him comming behind his backe most trayterously slaine.

After Easter, the King held a councell, wherein it was decreed, that none of his seruants should take vp any victuals of any man against his will, nor but that he payd for it ready money, vpon paine to be punished and banished the Court. Richard Talbot high Steward of the Kings house, being appointed to see execution of that proclamation.

The Earle of Stents was racked, arraigned and conuicted, for that contrary to his faith and homage he swore to the King of England, he did against him beare armes against him, and for that fact he was drawne, hanged, and quartered. To this councell came two Earles, and two Clearkes sent from the Princes Electours, signifying that their Election was made to the King, for the dignity of the Kingdome of Almaine. These Messengers the King receiued with due honour, but answered them, that he would not take so great honour vpon his shoulders, vntill he had the Crowne of France, due vnto him, in peaceable possession.

The King Edward ejected King of Almaine.

A little after Easter, there were great Iusts Iusting at holden at Lincolne, by the Duke of Lancaster, Lincolne. father, where were present many Ladies, with the Countesse and also certaine Messengers sent from the King of Spaine, for the Lady Iane daughter to the King, that should be married to their master the Kings sonne, whom her husband meeting, the dyed of the great pestilence, so that he followed her to the graue.

The same yeare, King Edward with his eldest sonne, the Earle of Warwike, and the Bythop of Winchester, went to Calcis, from whence the King sent the Duke of Lancaster to Denemere, to receiue in his behalfe fealtie and homage of the Earle of Flanders, which thing was by the said Earle performed. Iohn Stratford Archbishop of Canterbury deceased vnto whom succeeded Iohn Vffard Doctor of Law.

There began amongst the East Indians and Tartarians a certaine Pestilence, which at length waxed so generall, infecting the middle region of the Ayre so greatly, that it destroyed the Sarracens, Turkes, Syrians, Iacobites, and the Gaetans, with a wonderfull, or rather incredible death, insomuch that those peoples being ereeedingly dismayd with the terrour thereof, consulted among themselues, and thought it good to receiue the Christian Faith and Sacraments, for they had intelligence that the Christians which dwelt on this side the Caspian Sea, were not so greatly (more then the common custome was) troubled with sickneese and mortality. At length this terrible slaughter passed ouer into those Countries which are on this side the Alpes, and from thence to the parts of France, which are called Hesperia, and so by other along into Germany and Dutchland. And the seuenth yeare after it beganne, it came into England, and first beganne in the Coastes and Ports ioyning on the Sea coasts, in Dorsetshire, where, euen as in other Countries, it made the Country quite voyde of inhabitants, so that there were almost none left aliue.

T. de la More. Great Pestilence. T. Walsingh.

From thence it passed into Deuonshire, and Somersetshire, euen vnto Wilshire, and raged in such sort that the Gloucestershiremen would not suffer the Wilshire men to haue any accesse vnto them or into their Countrey by any meanes: but at length it came to Gloucester, yea and to Oxford, and London, and finally it spread ouer all England, and so wasted and spoyled the people, that scarce the tenth person of all sorts was left aliue: when Churchyards were not sufficient and large enough to bury their dead in, they chose certaine Fields appointed for that purpose.

Gaalter Mainy, Lord of Mainy, borne in Ca-

Records of the Garters.

haye, who serued in company of Henry Duke of Lancaster in his great acts of Gascoigne and Guyen, after this time made a Knight of the Garter in England, hauing a respect to the danger that might fall in time of this Pestilence then begun in England, if the Churches and Church-yards in London might not suffice to bury the multitude, he purchased a peece of ground called Spittle Croft (for that it belonged to the Master and brethren of S. Bartholomew Spittle) containing 13. acres and a rod, without the barres of West Smithfield, and caused the same to be inclosed and dedicated by Ralph Bishop of London, in the which place in the yeare following, was buried more then fifty thousand persons, as is affirmed by the Kings Charters which I haue seene, and also by an inscription fixed on a stone crosse in the same place. And in memory hereof, the same Gualter Mainy caused vpon the same ground a Chappell to be builded, and founded the same to be an house of Charter house Monkes, in the yeare 1371.

Register of the Charter house. Ex Charta. Charter house Churchyard by London.

An. reg. 23 1349.

Also about the same time, one John Cory parsonne of Nicholas, Prior of the Church of the holy Trinity here vnto Aldgate, one foot of ground neare vnto Salt Smithfield, for the buriall of them that dyed, that it might be called the Church-yard of the holy Trinity, which ground he caused to be enclosed, and dedicated by Ralph Stratford Bishop of London, in the which place King Edward the third, by consent of the said Prior and Couent, founded the Abbey of S. Mary of Grace in the yeare 1359. placing therein an Abbot and Monkes of the order of Cisteaux, which were white Monkes, and named the place Tall minster.

Ro. Auesberie. Charter house at London founded. New Abbey by the Tower of London founded. Lib. tran. Lon. Lib. Eastminst.

All suites and pleadings in the Kings Bench, and other places for a season ceased.

Very few Noble men dyed, among whom departed Iohn Montgomery, and his Ladie: the Lord Clifford Captaine of Caleis dyed at Calcis, and was buried at the white Friers at London. Of the common people, together with Religious and Clearkes, there dyed an innumerable sort, for no man but God onely knew how many. There dyed from the first of January, to the first of July, in the City of Norwich 57104. persons, besides Ecclesiasticall Mendicants and Dominikes. There was buried in the Church and Church-yard of Parmouth, in one yeare 7052. men and women, before which time the Parsonage there was worth seuen hundred markes by yeare, and afterwards was scarce worth forty pound the yeare. This note was certified to King Henry the seuenth in the 22. of his raigne, and the same is written on the gates of the Church of Parmouth. This great pestilence began at London about the Feast of All Saints, in the yeare 1348. What time this Pestilence had wasted all England, the Scots greatly rejoycing, mocked and sware oft times by the vile death of the Englishmen: but the sword of Gods wrath slew and consumed the Scots in no lesse numbers, then it did the other. It also wasted the Welshmen, and within a while passed ouer into Ireland, where it destroyed a great number of English people that dwelt there, but such as were right Irishmen borne, that dwelt in the hilly Countries it scarcely touched, so that few of them dyed thereof. This Plague continued some time in one place, sometime in another, vntill the yeare of our Lord 1357. the same yeare for a [illegible] all peace to be concluded, the Bishop [illegible]rdwich, the Earle of Northampton, the Earle of Stafford, Richard Talbot, Walter Mayny knights, sayled ouer the Sea into France, whom the Frenchmen met peaceably, but they would not agree to a finall Peace, vnlesse that Caleis were restored to them againe, which would not be granted: and the Truce which was taken for a yeare was so continued. But the Earle of Flaunders, who would not in any case receiue conditions of Peace, vnlesse the French King were quite forsaken, notwithstanding his solemne oath, not long after entred into Flaunders with a great power of Frenchmen, burning and killing where euer he came: but the people of the Countrey with a few Englishmen withstood him stoutly, and gaue him a sore skirmish, in the which, beside that many Frenchmen were slaine, the Earle himselfe was forced to flye, for the which worthy act, many knights were made, amongst the which was Iohn de Filebert, an English man.

In the Feast of the Nativity of S. Iohn, the Queene was purified at Windsor, where were solemne Iusts, and running at the Tilt, at the which, Dauid King of Scots was present, and the Earle of Ewe, the Lord Tankervil, Lord Charles de Valois, and many other strangers captiues, who by the Kings licence were permitted to run also at the Tilt, at the which passtime, the praise of the field was adiudged to the Earle of Ewe. After in Summer season, these strangers passed their time in hunting, in the company of the King, and other Nobles of the realme, at Clarington in Wiltshire nigh Salisbury, and in diuers other Forests.

Iusts at Windsor.

Whiles the King was thus occupyed, the Frenchmen notwithstanding the Truce, entred the Parishes of Brytaine, but the townes of Sabater, with a few other, who went out a foraging, tooke Thomas Dagworth knight, a man of great experience, who but with a few men, to wit, fifteene armed men entred the Wood against these Robbers, and inuaded them, slaying to the number of three hundred, but at the length being stricken fiue times in the face with quarrels, all his men being first slaine, he himselfe was thrust through the body with a sword.

Sir Thomas Dagworth slaine.

About the Feast of Saint Michael, more then 120 persons of Scaland, and Holland, coming through Flaunders into London, sometime in the Church of S. Paul, sometime in other places of the City, twise in the day, in the sight of all the people, from the loynes vnto the heeles, couered in linnen cloth, all the rest of their

R. Auesbury. Adam Mem.

their bodies being bare, hanging on their heads hats with red crosses before and behind, euery one in their right hands a whip with 3. cords, each cord hauing a knotte in the middest, beate themselues on their bare bloudie bodies going in procession, 4. of them singing in their owne language, all the other answering them.

Bloudy processions of penitents.

The same yeare the Earle of Lancaster, the Barons of Stafford and Greylocke, also the heires of the Lord Percy and Neuell, and the Lord Furnuall with Bartholomewe Burwash, and diuers other, about the feast of all Saints, passed ouer sea into Gascoigne to delay the furious proyse that Iohn de Valois son to the French King hadde made in that Dukedome, greatly spoyling and wasting the same. Also the Kings councell ordained, that none of the Kings iustices during the time of their offices, should receiue any fee, gift, or reward of anie man, except it were of the King himselfe.

Also this yeare in the Countie of Deuonshire nigh vnto a Towne called Chippingmorton, there was found a serpent hauing two heads, and faces like women, one being shaped after the newe type of that time: another after the manner of the ould attire, and it hadde greate wings, after the manner of a Flindermouse or Batte. Thomas Bradwarden Archbyshoppe of Canterburie deceased, Simon Islip succeeded.

Serpent with two heads in Deuonshire.

Thee tenth of September this yeare 1349. there hapned a great Earth-quake in Italy: & other kingdomes, but especially in Ieal, where it was so violent, that in Rome it threwe down many houses, and part of castles, steeples, and Churches, and in Naples it threw downe parte of the Archbishoppes Church, and many other stately buildings of that citie, it also ouerthrew many strange Towers and goodly Pinnacleries, the citie of Aquila at this time was almost quite destroyed, by reason it ouerthrew most of their Churches, and chiefe buildings, and did therfore more slaughter of people then in any other particuler place, the citizens and strangers durst not stay day nor night in their lodgings nor houses, but kept themselues in the wide market-places, or open fields during the fury of this strange Earthquake, which continued full eight dayes space, and was oftentimes so extreame and terrible in diuers places, that people were not able to stand vpon their feete vpon plaine ground, it did so much spoyle vnto Churches, Castles, Towers, Pinnacleries, and other lofte buildings, that the ruines thereof in many Prouinces are very sufficient testimonies vnto this day. Also at this time there was an vniuersall Pestilent plague throughout the world, and such as were infected the eleuenth, began to spit and vomit bloud, and so dyed sodainely or within two or three dayes space: this cruell pestiferous mortalitie began in the yere 1346. and continued vntill the yeare 1350. this is the third vniuersall Plague that hath hapned since the deluge, as you may read a little before, and in the yere 1352. the famine began to be wonderous great in Barbary & Morocco, whereupon many Christian Nations vpon hope of inordinate gaines carried thither so much Coyne, that the famine became farre greater in Italy, France, Spaine, and other Prouinces of Europe, so as at the most there was but three ounces of bread a day to be allowed for a man. And presently after this, there hapned as well in many Christian Nations as otherwise, many Inundations, with strange flouds and tempests, and after vniuersall plagues vpon the world by sinne.

A terrible Earth-quake which deuoured 8. townes with other things of note.

Great dearth.

Cauetous men will serue the diuell for gaine.

Note Gods iudgements for sinne.

An vniuersall plague which began first in the East parts of the world & by degrees spread it selfe ouer the world.

A great famine

Strange fruits and tempests.

This calamitable time was com monly called the Company, and one of the best conuersations was to France, Spaine, and Italy. and attempting English men

to perfourme the like outrages in Lombardy, where they were ouerthrowne, Iohn Acute alias Iohn of the Gules, as the Italians called him, a famous man at armes was an Englishman, and one of their cheefe, valiantest and most expert Leaders. Of this time and of the valiant actes and fortunate Conquests of King Edward, and of his sonne the blacke Prince, the Chroniclers of Germany, Italy, France, and Spaine, haue written farre more plentifully and pleasantly then the English, expressing in grad termes the excesse of sinne of all kindes and of all degrees of people in France, as Pride, vsure, symonie, &c. and how GOD did therefore visite them with sundry punishments, as by Plague, famine, ciuill dissention, drought, and by bringing in vpon them a small Nation, to conquer and commaund them, when they held themselues secure, and in all conditions strong, and able to resist and inuade the whole world.

Wonderous dreadfull mortalitie of bleeding to death.

The French Chronicles record that this yeere 1349. at Auignon in France, there was so extreame, strange, and terrible mortalitie, that the people died bleeding at nose, mouth, and fundament, and the riuers ran with bloud, and that from the graues and Sepulchers of the dead there issued streames of bloud: this mortality and other Gods visitations for sin, was foretold thirtie yeares past by Fryer Robert a Iacobin, who plainely told them GOD would shortly punish the Cleargie, for their pride, symonie, sloath, and Courtoulines.

King Edward saileth towards Flaunders.

About the feast of All Saints, K. Edward being accompanied with the Earles of Lancaster, and Suffolke, and diuers others, passed ouer the Seas into Flaunders, and thence leading his army towardes France, the French men made meanes vnto him to renue their truce: and now the Earle of Flaunders submitted himselfe the third time vnto the Kings mercy and dominion. When the King returning toward England, to solemnizate the translation of Saint Thomas the Confessour and Bishop of Hereford, did with his presence and Nobilitie honour the same, to the great expences of Nicholas Carnulopus Baron, and cousin to the sayd Saint Thomas: during which feast and solemnitie, it was signified to the King by the Secretaries of Emericus of Padua, who was a fede man to the King of England, that on the fourteenth day of January next comming, Geffrey Charney Knight, and many other Frenchmen should be receiued into Caleis, vnto whom the sayd Towne was sold by the said Emericus: but the Towne being presently resaued by King Edward, the said Emericus of Padua with other Genowayes continued in Caleis, being maintained there at the costs of the French King against the King of England, when he besieged it, who also after the yelding of it to the King of England, being pardoned both of life and limbe, from thencefoth continued and dwelt as a fede man of the Kings in the said towne for the defence thereof. At that time the said Geffrey was L. of Patas, a man more skilfull in warfare then any French man in France. Wherefore he was greatly esteemed, euen to the time of his death. This craftie deuiser indeuoured by his letters, wherein he made promise of large gifts of gold, and other sophisticall perswasions, quite to subuert the faith and loyaltie of the said Emericus.

Caleis like to haue beene betrayed.

Finally, this craftie deuiser agreed with this false man, that for 20. thousand French Crownes he should let in the French men to the Towne, and as much as lay in him, deliuer vp to the French men both the Towne and Castle. This bargaine being most traiterously made, by oath and breaking of the Sacrament betwixt them, yet all this notwithstanding, he wrote letters vnto the King, touching the state of the whole matter, but very priuily, how that he was ready to shew friendship to the French men, yet meaning to make frustrate their purpose, whereby they should be conuicted of breaking the truce, and also many of them should be taken to be ransomed: wherefore King Edward sperily passed ouer, being accompanied with his eldest sonne, the Earle of Marth, and a few other, comming before the time appointed for the yelding of y towne certaine dayes. Therefore being come to Caleis, he layd certaine men of armes within the Vaultes which were betwixt the outter gate and the inner part of the Castle, building a thinne and slender wall before them newly set vp, noe made of playster, but of counterfeit matter, which ioyned to the other wall, craftily deuised and made like the old worke, so that no man would iudge that any were enclosed therein.

Also, he caused the maine postes of the draw bridge to bee sawed almost in sunder, yet in such sorte, that armed Horse men might ride ouer it: and for the purpose hee hadde a great stone, which was laide vppe in a hole made in forme of an Arch, being in the forepart of the Tower hanging ouer the Bridge, in which hee appoynted a faithfull Souldier should bee in due time to throwe downe the said stone vpon the bridge, that with the fall thereof, y Bridge being halfe cutte in two, should bee broken in sunder, and so that hole where the stone was laid, should be wrought in such sorte, that hee within should perceiue throughly the hole how many did enter in: fewe were made priuie to this practise, neither did many knowe of the Kings presence or of the Prince of Wales, who when they had wrought this feat, secretly conueyed themselues into the towne.

The day before the time of deliuerie of this Towne, Geffrey Charney sent fiftéene of his faithfullest men with the greatest parte of the goulde which was to be payde, who should also trie the faith of Emericus, and the order of the Castle; who searching euerie where, in euery Tower and corner which they could find open, could perceiue nothing contrary to their liking; whereuppon on the next day in the morning, they set vp the French Kings Standarde in the highest Tower of the Castle, and the ancients also of Geffrey, and of the Lords vpon the other Tower

Towers and places. Then the people of the Towne who kept common watch and ward, not knowing of this secret deuise, were greatly terrified therewith, in so much that they taking weapon in hand, began to giue a charge against the Castle: by and by the French men who had entred the day before, take Thomas Kingstone, then fleeing away, quite ignorant of that which was deuised, and forceably they set him in the stockes. Then certaine of them being sent out to the Frenchmen their companions and maisters, who lay without in ambushes, shewed them the auauncents and standard set vp, and all to be well, euen as they would haue it, hastening them forward to come to the defence of the Castle, against the townes men: wherefore they rising from their lurking places, aduanced themselues in pride and bragging, and came by heapes in at the gates of the Castle. The townes men perceiuing this, had much adoe to forbeare their handes from them, had not their cheefe leaders withdrawne them from it, least some danger should haue happened to them that lay hiddie and by those that lay hid closed vnder the Arshes of the walls, prepared themselues to breake out vppon their enimies. In like sort also he that with the great stone was shut vppe in the hole, after that he saw so many entred in, considering that his fellowes were sufficient to ouerthrowe them, with that great stone put to his cuttoby he brake the drawe bridge, by y which the enemies had entered in, but beeing once in could not goe that way out againe: when the stone was thus downe, and had discharged the thing for the which it was laid vp, the French men deceaued by that pollicie, they were inclosed safe enough. At the noyse of this stone, and the bridge that brake, these armed men of who before I spake, breaking downe their counterfaite wall, behinde the which all the deceite was hid, they presently set themselues in order to inuade the French men, bidden to a bitter breakefast. The conflict was sharpe for a good season, but at the length the enemies beeing ouercome, yelded them selues to the pleasure of the Conquerours. They which were without and had not entred, as soone as they perceiued their companions to be deceiued, fled, after whom the King with scarce fiftéene men of armes & as many Archers followed apace: the runawayes not knowing what company would follow them, many in this chase were wearied, and many more slaine, and in a small time the King ouercame dangerous and great labours: but at length, when it was vnderstood by them that fled, how fewe there were that chased them, fourescore armed men turned them against the King. I dare not ascribe this T. de la More. boldnesse of the King in chasing of his enemie, to his wisdome, but onely to the stoutnesse of his mind, the which is well knowne through Gods grace to be brought to good effect by his meanes, though y danger were neuer so great: for when he perceiued that the French menne had turned themselues to withstand him, hee cast away the seabard of his sword, and comforting his menne about him, setting them in good order, exhorted them to play the menne lustily. The Archers being placed in the marish against the sides of the enemies, stood on bye hilles, which were compassed about with quagge myres and foggie places, that neither Horse men nor foote men might approch them, but they should rather be drowned in mud then come neere to hurt them: these also did y King comfort, saying to them (doe well you Archers) play the men lustily, and know that I am Edward of Windsore. Then y presence of the king, and necessitie of the matter, stirred vp their hearts to doe well: the Archers vncouering their heads, stripping vp their sleeues, bent themselues to bestowe their arrowes in such sort that they might not bee lost: and as the French men drew towards them, they sauted them after with their arrowes. The armed men of both parts stood in order to fight vpon a long and narrowe causeway, y breadth whereof was not able to receiue scarce twentie men of armes in a front, hauing on both sides thereof the Marish, in the which the Archers were placed, who galled and wounded their enemies on the sides, fleeing as thicke as haile. The king and his men beeing with his archers on the side, slew and take a great manie: and manie of them stode stoutly to it, till at the length by the comming of the prince of Wales the French were put to flight: after a long chase in pursuing the enemyes, they returning backe againe to Caleis, numbred those which were fled, as well as those which were taken, and they found, that for the taking of the Castle (as the prisoners reported) there came a thousand men of armes, and fiue hundred armed men, but they which serued, were about three thousand: among them which were taken, was Geffry Charney, and his son, Edward de Renty, Robert Danquile, Otto de Grilo, the Baron of Stactingham, Baldina Sailly, Henry de Piees, Garinus Baylofe, Peter Renell, Peter Dargemole, Eustace de Riplemount, and many other, Lords, Knights, and Baronets, who were chased and ranne away with their auncients, as the Lord de Moonmarice, also Launday, who married the Lady Saint Paul Countesse of Pembrooke in England, also the Lord Fenas, the L. Plancke and another Eustace de Riplemount. There were slaine in the skirmish the Lord Henry de Boys, the Lord Archibald, and many others, whose names the Conquerours were not able to certifie. Thus by pollicie and deuised treason, the authors thereof came to death and destruction: neither Eustachius himselfe escaped scotfree from his snares, for hee within a while after being taken by the French men, was burned aliue with a hot yron, and degraded from the order of knighthood, by the cutting of his spurs from off his heeles, and depriuing of his tongue by abscision: afterward, hee was hanged vp, and last of all beheaded and quartered, receiuing iust punishment for his treason and false forswearing. *An. reg.* 24 1350

This yeere the Lord Furniuall giuing a rash enterprise

enterprise vpon his enemies, was taken prisoner in Gascoigne. Not long after King Edward prepared to make a voyage into France, but the Earle of Lancaster, returning out of Gascoigne, signified that there was a Truce taken by him, by reason whereof, the passage prepared by the King was laid aside.

T. de la Mare. This yeere on Saint George's day, the king held a great and solemne feast at his Castle of Windsor, where he had augmented the Chappel which Henry the first and other his progenitors Kings of England had before erected of eight Chanons, he added to those 8. Chanons, a Deane, and xiij. other Chanons more, and twenty foure poore and impotent Knights, with other ministers and seruants, as appeareth by his Charter, Dated the two and twentieth of his raigne. Besides the King, there were other also that were Contributors to the foundation of this Colledge, as followeth.

T. de la Mare. Great feast at Windsor of S. George.

T. Walsingh. Ex charta regia.

First seruice of the noble order of the Garter.

R. cords of the Garter.

1 The Soueraigne King Edward the third.
2 Edward his eldest Sonne Prince of Wales.
3 Henry Duke of Lancaster.
4 The Earle of Warwike.
5 Captaine de Bouch.
6 Ralph Earle of Stafford.
7 William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury.
8 Roger Lord Mortimer of March.
9 Sir Iohn de Lisle.
10 Sir Bartholomew Burwash.
11 Sir Iohn Beauchampe.
12 Sir Iohn de Mahune.
13 Sir Hugh Courtney.
14 Sir Thomas Holland.
15 Sir Iohn Grey.
16 Sir Richard Fitz Simon.
17 Sir Miles Stapkton.
18 Sir Thomas Walle.
19 Sir Hugh Wrotheſly.
20 Sir Nicholas Loring.
21 Sir Iohn Chandos.
22 Sir Iames de Audley.
23 Sir Othes Holland.
24 Sir Henry Emc.
25 Sir Sechet Dabridgecourt.
26 Sir William Panell.

T. de la Mare. All these together with the King were clothed in gownes of Russet, pondered with garters blew, wearing the like garters also on their right legges, and mantels of blew, with scutcheons of S. George. In this sort of apparell they being bareheaded, heard Masse, which was celebrated by Simon Islip Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Bishops of Winchester and Exceter, and afterwards they went to the Feast, setting themselues orderly at the table, for the honour of the Feast, which they named to be of S. George the Martyr, and the ryalling of the Knights of the Garter.

First feast of S. George

In the Summer following, variance rising betweene the fleets of England and Spaine, the Spaniards beset the Britaine Sea, with 44. great ships of warre, with the which they smitten English ships comming from Gascoigne towards England, after they had taken and spoyled them, and thus their former iniuries being reuenged, they entred into Sluce in Flanders.

King Edward vnderstanding hereof, furnished his Nauy of fifty Ships and Pinaces, forecasting to meet with the Spaniards in their returne, hauing in his company y Prince of Wales, the Earles of Lancaster, Northampton, Warwike, Saltsbury, Arundale, Huntington, Glocester, and other Barons and Knights with their seruants and Archers, and vpon the Feast of the decollation of S. Iohn, about Euensong time, the Nauies met at Winchelsea, where the great Spanish vessels surmounting our Ships and Foysts, like as a Castles to cottages, tharpely assailed our men, the stones and quarels flying from the tops, sore and cruelly wounded our men, who no lesse busie to fight aloft with Launce and Sword, and with the forward manfully defend themselues, at length our Archers pearced their Kybalisters with a further reatch then they could strike again, and thereby compelled them to forsake their place, and caused other fighting from the hatches to shade themselues with tables of the Ships and compelled them y threw stones from the tops, to to hide them, that they durst not shew their heads, but tumbled downe: then our men entring the Spanish vessels with Swords and Halberds, kill those they meet, within a while make voyd the vessels, and furnish them with Englishmen, vntill they being beset with darknesse of the night, could not discerne the 27. pet remaining vntaken: our men cast anker, studying of the hoped battaile, supposing nothing finished, whilest any thing remained vndone, dressing the wounded, throwing the miserable Spaniards into the Sea, refreshing themselues with victuals and slepe, yet committing the vigilant watch to the armed band. The night ouerpassed, the Englishmen prepared (but in vaine) to a new battaile, but when the Sunne began to appeare, they viewing the Seas, could perceiue no signe of resistance, for 27 ships flying away by night, left seauenténe spoyled in the Euening, to the KINGES pleasure, but against their will.

R. Avesbury. Battaile on the Sea.

The King returned into England with victory and triumph, the King preferred there 80. Noble ymped to the order of knighthood, greatly bewayling the losse of one, to wit, Sir Richard Goldesborough Knight.

Philip French king dyed

This yere Philip de Valoys the French King, deceased, and his eldest sonne Iohn was crowned.

Combat to fore King Edward.

Two hyred souldiers of the King of Armenia, came into England, into the presence of the King, where they shewed the letters of the foresaid King of Armenia, wherein it was signified that the one of them, to wit, Iohn de Viscount, a man borne in Cipres, had slanderously charged the other, that is, Thomas de la March, a French man borne, and Bastard sonne to Philip late King of France, saying that the said Thomas should haue receiued of the Turkes, a certaine summe of gold, for the betraying

betraying the army of the Christians vnto the Emperour of the Turkes: and for the proofe of this slander, this Iohn challenged a combate with the said Thomas, to be tryed by the iudgement of Edward King of England, and that by him (as by a most worthy Prince) all strife should be ended. For this therefore were these 2. worthy souldiers appointed to fight, which they performed within the lists of the Kings pallace at Westminster, on mundayuent following after the feast of Saint Michael, where Thomas, in declaration of his innocency, in that he was accused of, ouercame his enemie, but yet killed him not, for he could not, because he was not able to wound him being so armed with any kinde of piercing weapon, except it were in his face, which was bare. For after that they had runne at the Tilt, and fought on foot, as they were running together on the ground with certaine pikes both short and sharpe, then called Gadlings, being closed in the ioynts of his right gauntlet, the said Thomas stroke the said Iohn in the face, and sore wounded him: but on the other side Iohn had no such short kinde of weapon, wherewith hee might hurt Thomas face, and therefore cryed out aloud most horribly, whereupon by the Kings commaundement the Combate was ended, and the victorie adiudged to Thomas, who gaue the said Iohn, being thus ouercome to the Prince of Wales for a Captiue, and offered vp his owne armour to Saint George, in Saint Pauls Church at London, with great deuotion. These matters being thus finished, the Cipres man is manumitted and set at liberty as a free man againe. And Thomas thinking boldly to goe into the presence of his brother the French King, tooke his journey thither, and at his comming, found the said King and the Nobilitie of France, greatly offended, and in indignation against him, for that hee agreed that the combate should be tryed before the King of England. Wherefore Thomas thinking secretly with himselfe how to winne the false friendship of his brother, being desirous to shew that therein hee had done well, among all other things he greatly praised the Nobility of Edward: his worthy fame spread ouer all the world, and also the iustice which hee vsed in iudging, not accepting the person of the man of Cipres, (yea though he loued the King himselfe very well) neither suffered him to bee preferred before mee, which am a French man, and brother, and friend to thee my Lord King of France, iudge ouer the said King Edward my aduersary. Also the Earle of Ewe highly praised the King of England, for that he had receiued great comfort and commodities at his hands during the time of his captiuitie in England, shewing also how farre that good King had banished enuy and hatred from his heart, who at a time of iusting, being in the field at that exercise, and the King also, was commanded by the K. himselfe to beare away the prize and pack from them all. These commendations did the French King enuie at, and for indignation, hee most wickedly commanded the setters forth of those praises to be beheaded. And for to colour the matter the better, hee fained that the Earle vsed too much familiaritie with the Queene his wife, and that his brother was guilty of treason against the King of France, because he committed his cause and the combate to bee thus tryed by the iudgement of the King of England. After hee had thus murthered his brother, he tormented his wife to death by famine, who was daughter of the Noble King of Boheme, lately slaine in battell by Geffrey.

Groates and halfe groats.

William Edington Bishop of Winchester, and treasurer of England, a wise man, but lo, using the Kings commodity, more then the wealth of the realme and common people, caused a new coyne called a Groate, and halfe Groate to be coyned: but these were of lesse weight then the pence, called Sterlings, by reason whereof victuals and merchandize became the dearer thorow the whole realme.

T. Walsingh. Historia Aurea

Parliament at Westminster. 1351.

After the Octaues of the Purification of our Ladie, in a Parliament holden at Westminster, Henry Earle of Lancaster was created Earle of Lincolne, Leicester, Derby, Grosmount and Ferrers, and Duke of Lancaster, vnto whom also was giuen great priuiledges, such as neuer any Earle had before his time. Also Lionel of Antwerpe the Kings sonne is made Earle of Vlster in Ireland, Iohn of Gaunt his brother is made Earle of Richmond, & Ralph Baron of Stafford, is made Earle of Stafford. Iohn Mautrauers, one of the murtherers of Edward the second, was this yere restored to his lands.

In the Lent following Walter de Maine, and Robert Herle Captaine of Caleis, rode into France, making great preyes and doing great damage, brought away great store of beasts, Sheepe, and Swine, so that at Caleis a fat Cow was scarcely sold for fiftene pence sterling. About Easter the Duke of Lancaster departing from Caleis marched alongst the sea coasts of Artoys and Picardie, burnt the suburbes of Bulloigne, but assaulting the towne he preuailed not, for that onely the ladders were too short. Therefore he wasted the Cities of Turwin, and the hauen, also the townes of Faconbridge and Staples, and in the same hauens hee brent about 120. Ships of diuers moulds. After this burning the Champion countrey, he rode vnto Saint Omers, and winning by force many fortresses, with a great prey and many prisoners he returned to Caleis. About the feast of Saint George things prospered well in Gascoigne, for the Marshall of Frauunce, with a great number of armed men spoyled the Countrey about Saint Dangel, where Edmond Rose a Norfolke man was Captaine, who with the Garrison, valiantly encountred the enemies, slew many of them, and take the said Marshall and many other Nobles of France, chasing aboue 400. knights.

A fat Cow fiftene pence.

The same yere the Spanish ships by a treaty of peace came into England, where the last yere they were restrained, but now a truce was

was taken for xx. yeares, betwixt England and Spaine, and a time betwixt England and France for one yeare, which the Frenchmen brake, by reason of taking the Castle of Guisnes, as in the next leafe shall be shewed.

About this season the olde coyne of golde was changed into a newe, the olde Noble was worth much above the rated rate of the newe, and therefore the Marchants bought the olde and conueyed them out of the Realme, to the great losse of the king & kingdome, to the which there was a remedie pounded, by changing of the stampe.

Anno. 26. 1352. About the beginning of January, the French men being occupied about the repayring of the wals of Guisnes towne, being afore that time destroyed by the Englishmen, some menne of armes of Calais vnderstanding their doings, deuised how they might ouerthrow the worke, in this sort. There was an Archer named Iohn Dancaster, in prison in the Castle of Guisnes, before that time taken, who not hauing wherewith to pay his ransome, was let lose, with condition that hee should worke there among the Frenchmen. This fellowe chanced to eye where beyonde the principall ditch, from the bottome of the ditch, there was a wall made of two fote broade, stretching from the rampiers, to the brimme of the ditch, within forth, so that being couered with water it coulde not bee seene, but not so drowned, but that a man going aloft thereon, should not be wette past the knees, it being made for the vse of Fishers: and therefore in the maydest it was discontinued for the space of two fote: and the Archer (his Harlot shewing it to him) measured the height of the wall with a thread. These thinges thus knowen, one day slipping downe from the Wall, he passed the ditch by that hidden Wal, and lying hid in the marish till euening, came in the night nere vnto Calais, where tarrying for the cleare day, he then went into the towne (for else he might not) there he instructed them that were greedie of prey and to scale the Castle, how they might enter the same, they caused ladders to be made to the length by the Archer appointed. Thirtie men conspiring together, clothing themselues in black armour without any brightnesse, went to the castle by the guiding of the said Iohn de Dancastre, and climing the wall with their ladders they slew the watchmen, and threwe them downe headlong beside the wall: after this, in the Hall they slewe many whome they found vnarmed, playing at the Cheese and Hazard. Then they haste into the Chambers and Turrets vppon the Ladies and Knights that lay there asleepe, & so were made masters of all that was within: & shutting all their prisoners into a strong chamber, being bereft of all their armor, they toke out the English-men that had bene taken the yere before and there kept in prison, and after they hadde relieued them well with meate and drinke, they made them guardeins ouer them that had them in custodie: & so they wan all the fortresses of the castle, vnknowne to them that were in the towne, (appointed to ouersee the repayring of the broken walls) what had happened to them with in the castle. In the morning they commanded the workemen in the towne to cease from their worke, who thereupon perceiuing that the castle was wonne, strait-waies fledde, and the newe Castellans suffered the Ladies to depart on Horsebacke, with their apparell, writings, and Gunniments, where they ought to hold their fees: and the same day there came from Calais to their ayde such persons as they sent for, by whose ayde they kept the Castle: and about 3. of the clocke there came 2. Knights, sent from the Earle of Guisnes, who demanding a truce, willed to know of them that were thus entred the Castle, who they were, to whom they belonged, and by whose authoritie they kept the castle so taken in the time of truce: whereunto they answered; that being intruded, they would not declare to any man their purpose, till they had tryed a longer possession: and therefore on S. Maurice day, the Abbot (the king being busie in Parliament) to the Frenchmen being sent from the said Earle of Guisnes, declared, how in preiudice of the truce, the said castle was taken and therefore by right of mutuall faith it ought to be restored vnto them. The king answered, that without his knowledge that enterpraile was made, and therefore hee gaue commandement to his subiects, that none of them should deteine the Castle of Guisnes, but deliuer it vnto the lawfull Lords thereof. The messengers being returned home, and reporting what they had done, the Earle of Guisnes commeth to the Castle, demanding of them within, as at other times, in whose name they kept it. Who constantly affirming that they kept it in the name of Iohn Dancaster, hee required to know if the same Iohn were the king of England, liegeman, or would obey him: who answering that hee knew not what messengers had beene in England: the Earle offered for the Castle, besides all the treasure found in it, many thousands of crownes, or possessions for exchange, and a perpetuall peace with the king of France. To this they answered, that before the taking of that Castle they were Englishmen by Nation, but by their demerites banished for the peace of the king of England; wherefore the place which they thus held, they would willingly sell or exchange, but to none sooner then to their naturall king of England, to whom they said, they would sell their Castle, to obtaine their peace: but if he would not buy it, then they would sell it to the king of France, or to whomsoeuer would giue most for it.

The Castle of Guisnes gotten by the English.

The earle being thus shifted off from them, the king of England bought it indeed, and so had that place which he greatly desired: whereupon king Iohn of France, charged the king of England to haue broken the truce: vnto which king Edward answered, saying that he had done nothing against the truce, nor against any article thereof, because (quoth he) there is not any article that prohibiteth trafficking together,

ther, or intercourse of Merchandize. The Fortresse was went to stop up the Passage into the higher Countrey, giuing to some great hurety from the Foragers, that were to issue forth of Calais. The Councell of France therefore wishing to haue that Castle againe, or to build another of like vtility for the defence of the Countrey thereabouts, they sent for Geffrey Charnie late preferred out of English captiuity, with authority to build and fortifie as followeth.

Balbasty fortified.

To them that trauaile from Guisnes to Calais, there was a place on the left hand strong, but decayed, hauing a Church, in which certaine Nuns were resident, and it was called Balbastie: this place was soneare to Guisnes, that the Englishmen hauing without the gate of their fortresse might shut to it. This Monastery of Nunnes might easily be made defensible, for it had high Walles like a Castle, and a high Tower, and very large for a steeple, and being situate in a marish ground, it might with small labour be compassed with a Ditch. This place the Englishmen had spared for deuotion sake, vntill that the foresaid Geffrey in breach of truce, with a mighty power besieged Guisnes, and removed the Nunnes from the Church, making a Castle of the Church, and fensing the Walles with Rampire and ditch: and this was about Pentecost, in which season the waters not impeaching him, his people might worke in the Marish. They within the castle therefore being besieged were vnneth able to come abroad with their Boates by the ditches that were full of water, for the marish vnpassable and also full of Water, neyther they of Calais could vnto them by any manner of meane, by reason of the siege and warding that was kept at Balbastie. They that were thus besieged, oft times sallyed out and fought with them of Balbastie, but fewe by few, sometime with arrowes, and sometime with other weapons: at length, vpon a day appointed, the Caitifians, with them of Dye, and Markes on the one part, and they within Guisnes on the other part, metten at their enemies, slew many, chased many, & finally burnt vp Balbasty, & dismantling the walles, made all plaine with the ground.

Balbasty burnt and raced.

This yeare the Duke of Lancaster going into Spaine, by the aduise and ordinance of the King, his daughter was espoused in England vnto William Duke of Zeland, eldest Sonne to Lewis Duke of Baiure, that intruded vpon the Roman Empire.

Walter Bentley and Robert Knolles make a voyage into France.

About the fifteenth of August, Walter Bentley Captaine, Robert Knolles, and other, in the Marches of Britaine, valiantly encountred their enemies, where in a fight doubtfull for a good while, were slain the principall Marshall of France, also the Lords of Quintyn, of Curignole, of Richmont, of Mount Albon, of Legeuel, of Launoy, of Montbech, of Vile Chastel de la March, and other Knights, in number 120. and Bachelers, to the number of 500. Who coate armours were brought away: the number of commons were not counted. There were taken the Lord of Rusebeke, son of the Marshall Bertram, also Lodwike de Maleis, the Lord of Haletret, the Viscount of Comaine, Geffrey de Graues. With many la Vall, Charles Dorchefil, Ioan de Blare, and other Knights, with Bachelers aboue 130. This Army of the French-men, vnder the conduc of the said Marshall, of purpose deuised by him, was so beset on the backe halfe, with the trayncsse of a Mountaine, that hee they could not, to the end that hope of flight being taken from them, their courage to fight might y more encrease. There were many of those Knights surnamed of the Starre, who in their yeares of Knights of the Starre. on had conspired neuer to turne their feasefull backes vpon their enemies, of which number of knights, there were among them slaine and taken, numbred 45. From that dangerous encounter scaped vnhurt, and among other, the foresaid Walter Bent, Captaine was foze wounded, who commanded 30. Archers to be condemned, for that in the greatest heat of the fight they fled.

The Castle of Stafford also entred into Gascoigne, where encountring with a great Army of the French-men that were clued with the Fortresse of Gagent, he discomfited, tooke, and chased them: there was taken that valiant Knight is the Gaude and seuen knights of the Starre. Shortly after, died Iohn de Charsfeles, and Thomas Wale, Knights of great valour.

The same yeare, it being heard that Pirats troubled the Seas, there were seauen Ships of warre ordained, certaine Pinaces, attending vpon them: ouer the which were Admirals, Tho. Cooke, & Richard Totesham Knights, who secured the seas about y coast of Picardy and Normandy, but before the Feast of Saint George, they returned as they wished.

Whilest these things were a doing by Sea and Land, Otto sonne to the Duke of Bunis with chain wike, the French Kings feed man, sent letters geth to combat to the Duke of Lancaster, being returned out of Spruce, by the tenor whereof he accused him, before the affirming that as hee returned out of Spruce French King by Colein, he maliciously informed the Colo- at Paris. ners, that the said Otto went about by stealth to haue taken him prisoner, & to haue presented him to the French king, adding hereunto that because he neuer meant any such taking of him he was ready in declaration of his good name, by a singular combat only in the French kings Court, to proue the Duke of Lancaster a lyer touching the said Article. The letters were not sealed, and therefore, least it might haue beene thought folly to haue giuen credit to the letter, deliuered by a Seruant, the Duke sent vnto Otto two Knights to learne the cause of the chalenge, and to demand thereof his letters patents, sealed with his seale of armes, which knights accomplishing the effect of their iourney, and returning with speed the Duke sent to the French king for a safe Conduct for himselfe and his men, and with much adoe obtayning it, hee went to Paris, where in the Lists, in presence of the French King & the

the King of Nauarre, and the Duke of Burgoine, with many Peeres, and other of the Realme of France, he mounted on his steed in armour, ready in all things, without delaie to trie the combat, and so stood till his aduersarie was ready, and the voyce of the Herault and Canton to be had by their common oath, for the assurance of his word, and to obey the Law. On the contrary side, the said Otto scarcely was set on his horse, and was not able decently to set on his helmet, and to weld his Speare (verie hardlie) whose inableness being perceiued by the French King, the King of Nauarre, and other, the King tooke the quarrell into his hands, whereupon Otto was commanded still to depart the lists, and so went his way, but the duke abode still within them.

Anno reg. 27. 1353. After this, by commandement of the French King, Otto swore that he should neuer after that day appeach the Duke of Lancaster of that article: and so from thence the Duke returned home by Zealand.

Parliament at Westminster.

After the Epiphany, a Parliament was holden at Westminster, wherein an ordinance was made at the instance of the Londoners, that no knowne Whore should weare from thenceforth any hood, except tryed or striped of diuers colours, nor Furre, but garments reuersed or turned the wrong side outward, vpon paine to forfeit the same.

A precise ordinance for Harlots.

Corne brought out of Ireland into England.

This yeare, the dearth of Corne by them of Ireland, and the Irish men that brought in Corne to sell vnto diuers hauens of the realme was allwaged, to the great releefe of the people.

S. Stephens Chappell at Westminster. Ex Charta.

King Edward altered the Chappell, which his progenitors before had founded of S. Stephen at Westminster, into a College of 12. secular Chanons, twelue Vicars, and other ministers accordingly, and endued it with reuenues to the summe of fiue hundred pound by yeare.

Staplers of Wooll to be kept in England.

The morrow after Saint Mathies day began a Parliament, wherein it was ordained, that the staple of wooll before kept in Flanders at Bruges, should from thenceforth be holden in diuers parts of England, Wales & Ireland, as at Newcastle, Yorke, Lincolne, Canterburie, Norwich, Westminster, Chichester, Winchester, Excester, Bristow, and Carmarden.

The Earle of North-hampton went into Scotland with a great company of armed men, and Archers, where he rode through the Marches, and enforced the Castle of Loghmaban, and other fortresses to yeld and took the Scots that were layd in ambushes. He also held a treaty of Peace with the Scottes, who gladly would haue redeemed their King, and made a perpetuall peace with the English-men, but yet so as the King of Scots should not hold his land of the King of England.

Treaties of Peace.

Innocent the first, for the desire of peace, sent the Cardinall Bonoine to Caleis, to heare the treaty of the finall peace betwixt the kingdomes of England and France, to whom repayred the Councellors of both Realmes, with full authority to treat and constitute the conditions of the same peace, and at length they agreed vpon this point, that the King of England should resigne all his right that he had to the realme of France, and remit it to the French King, and should haue therefore the Dutchy of Aquitaine, and the Countries of Artoys and of Guisnes, for him and his successors Kings of England, without that he should hold y same of the French kings in any maner of wise. To these conditions the king of England gaue his consent, and for the assurance of the couenants, Embassadours are sent to the Sea of Rome from eyther Realme. On the K. of Englands behalfe went the Bpshop of Norwich, the Duke of Lancaster, the Earle of Arundell, and other Knights, who going to Auinion, there came to them the Archbishop of Rohan, the Duke of Burgoine, Gaffrey Charney, and other of the French Kings Councell: all these were received in great honor: many Cardinals and Bishops met the Duke of Lancaster, who brought him for the space of two miles vnto Auinion, and to the Popes pallace: at length in the consistorie of the Pope, he with the Cardinals and Embassadours being present, the causes of their message was declared, and the Embassadours of England requested to haue the couenants confirmed, which had beene concluded at Caleis: to whom the French-men answered, that gladly they would haue peace, but touching Aquitaine, and the foresaid Countries, as they said, the French King could not, nor they might giue their assents that the same should be alienated from the entire bodye of the kingdome, y which, as well the King as they had taken an oath to maintaine, but yet they could be contented that the profitable dominion of the said Dutchy and Countries should be deliuered, and come to the King of England, as his Ancestors had Aquitaine, but to yet as the regality of the crown of France should euer be reserued. The English-men requested that the'e said Dominens should be absolutely, and without any condition restored to the king: answer also was made to the reason of the French-men touching the oth of their King and themselues, whereby they were bound to conserue the integrity of the honour of their kingdome, to wit, that the Pope for the benefit of peace might absolue them frō the said oath, and this as to certaine Articles premitted, it should be very well done: but yet nothing was done that might be of force to the furthering of y peace. And so the Embassadors without effect returned home, the Bpshoppe of Norwich excepted, that deceased, and was buryed there, to whom succeeded Thomas Percy.

The King of Nauarre though a bpple raised, slew Charles de Spaine Marshall of France, whereupon to auoyd the displeasure and punishment of the French King, he fled into his owne Countrey, sending his Uncle vnto the duke of Lancaster with letters humbly beseeching him that he would come into Normandy to his aides & defence, & to receiue an oath of fidelitie

fidelitie and amitie of him against all men. The Duke therefore getting licence of the King, assembled together a great Nauy at South-hampton, where when the Duke was ready to haue made saple, knights that he had sent into Normandy, came backe to vnderstand the truth of this businesse, by whom it was vnderstood to the Duke, that the said K. of Nauarre his cousin was reconciled to the King, and so the Dukes voyage was stayed.

Anno reg. 28. 1354.

Fryer Augustines Church in London. Ex Record.

The Fryers Augustines Church in London was rectified by Henry Bonneuile Earle of Hereford and Essex, whose body was buried in the quire of the same Church.

Dissention at Oxford. Ex Hist. Ambrosii Autor.

A great dissention fell in Oxford, betweene a Scholler and a Vintner for a quart of Wine, so that the Scholler powred the Wine on the Vintners head, and beate his head with the pot, by reason whereof, a great conflict was made betwixt the Schollers of the Vniuersity, and the laymen of the towne, in the which, many lay men were wounded, and about twenty slaine. These frayes continued the space of two dayes, and then the religious men of the towne laboured to make peace. The Laymen pursued a Scholler, & wounded him to death, yet that day the tumult was appeased, but on the morrow, the people of the Villages about Oxford, being confederate with the laymen of the towne, came in great force & erected a blacke banner, whereupon the Schollers fled to their Colledges, but the lay men breaking vp the doores, slew many of them, and threw them into their Priuies: they cut and rent their Bookes, and boze away what they liked. By this meanes the Vniuersitie was dissolued, the Scholliers (saunig of Merton Colledge) went vnto their friends, and so continued more then a peare. Many, both Scholliers and Laymen were indited by the Kings Iustices, amongst the which, 4. Burgesses that had bin Maiors of Oxford, were sent into the Tower of London.

Citizens of Oxford punished.

Parl. Annal.

About the twentieth of November, King Edward held a Parliament at Westminster, in the which was granted towards the recouery of his title in France, fifty shillings of euery sacke of Woll to be transported ouer the seas for the space of fiue yeres then next following, by meanes whereof, the king might daily dispend during the said 6. yeares, more then one thousand markes sterling, for by the common opinion, there were more the an hundred thousand sacks of Woll yerely into forraine lands transported, so that during those fiue yeres, the said grant extended to 150000. pounds sterling.

Anno reg. 29. 1355

Iusting at Woodstocke.

King Edward held a great Iusting at Woodstocke, for honour of the queene, who was then purified of her sonne Thomas.

Parliament at Westminster. K. Aversbury.

After Easter in a Parliament at Westminster, the King take the quarrell of Ospon into his hands, and sauing euery man his right, he forgaue the Scholliers all the whole trespas, so that in the Summer following, the Vniuersitie beganne againe to flourish, and the King gaue to the Chancellour of Oxford the onely view of the assise of bread, Ale, and Wine, and all other victuals, excluding the Maior vtterly from that office. The communaltie of the Towne gaue to the Vniuersitie two hundred and fifty pounds for amends, sauing vnto them neuertheless the actions which they had vnto euery singular person of the Towne.

Vniuersitie of Oxon priuiledged.

In this Parliament the proceese of the iudgment made against Roger Mortimer Earle of March, was reuoked, deemed erronious and false, so that the young Roger Mortimer, sonne to Edmond Mortimer, Son and heire to Roger Mortimer, was restored to the title and possessions of the Castle dome of March, as cousin and heire to his grandfather. Ex Record.

King Edward being about Sandwich, on his journey towards France, and the Prince of Wales at Sutton in Deuenshire, on his voyage toward Aquitaine, looking for a prosperous Wind, by y space of 40. dayes or more, all things else being ready. The French King had his Armies diuided in sundry places about in the Hauens of Normandy and other parts to impeach the landing of the King and Prince, and so long they lay there, that the French-men with their hyred Souldiers did sorely waste their owne Countrey, and consumed so many thousands of Crownes out of the French Kings Coffers vainely, that in the end he being ouerpayed not his people, and so he was forsaken of them, that when King Edward wasted France, the French King durst not men to encounter him, but fledde before him, as he followed, burning his owne townes, and destroying victuals, that the King found finde neyther harbour nor meate. King Edward sayled into France.

After the Moneth of August, the King of England, and the Duke of Lancaster, with seuen thousand armed men, and their retinue, entred France, and by the space of nine dayes journey as they went, wasting all by fire that came in their way, and returning to Caleis, the King heard that the Scots entred by stealth and had taken the Towne of Barwike, the Baron of Graystocke being in the army with the King, to whom the charge of that Towne had beene committed, whereupon the king hasted vnto Barwise, and within fiftene dayes recouered the Towne againe, being deliuered vnto him, life and liberty to depart being giuen vnto them that were found therein. Barwike taken by the Scots.

Barwike taken by the Englishmen.

After this he passed through Scotland vnto the Scottish Sea, but because victuals sayled for his Army, the King giuing them licence, they all returned towards England. There followed on the taile of the Army, by the space of twelue miles, Robert Herle, Almerike de Saint Edmond, Robert de Hildesley, & other whom the Scots in the night season found asleepe & at rest, doubting not lying of any misaduenture, wherefore they gaue a cruell assault vpon them, with an hideous noyse and cry, where, after long resistance Robert de Hildesley, and Iohn Brancester, Knights, were taken Prysoners, Robert Herle and Almericke hauing much adoe to escape, for the said

kingdom perceiuing the Scots to be too strong for them, thought with themselues, that their Lords being Barons, of whom they held in fee, would redeeme them, and so with withdrawing, deliuered them from the Scots captiuitie.

Henry Duke of Lancaster being appointed chiefe Admirall of the English Nauie, landed at Hogges, about the Feast of S. Bartholomew, and from thence rode towards Normandy, being accompanied with Philip, brother to the King of Nauarre, who desired ayde of the said Duke, and requested him to come to helpe him. At this season, the French King hauing the King of Nauarre, Geffrey Harecourt, and diuers other Noblemen in great suspicion touching the realme and kingdome, bid them all to a Feast, where he tooke the said King of Nauarre, and cast him in Prison, and murthered the rest of the Noblemen, sauing Geffrey Harecourt, whom he caused to be beheaded with an Axe.

The King of Nauarre being thus imprisoned, his brother Philip seized many Castles and holds into his hands, which were in Normandy and thereabout, strongly fortifying them with men and victuals, though the helpe of the Duke of Lancaster, being manned all well with Englishmen, as with the men of the same countrey, to withstand the Frenchmen.

The same time when the King passed ouer to Caleis and France, his eldest sonne Prince of Wales, hauing with him the Earles of Warwike, Suffolke, Salisbury, and Oxford, tooke shipping in the beginning of October at Sutton hauen in Denonshire, and luckily sayled, and landed at Burdeaux, where he was honourably received by the Bishop and Clergie, being accompanied with all the commō people in the first Sunday of the month: The Sunday following, the Prince going out, lodged two miles from Burdeaux, in the Castle of Arnoun. On the next day he passed through a streight Wood, and so through the middle of the Towne of Lougan, sometimes walled, but now defaced, and so passing on a long journey he lost many hosses, and came at length to the strong Castle of Dandret. On Thursday he came to the City of Belas, hauing in it a Cathedrall Church, and a Conuent of Fryars Prinos. On Fryday proclamation was made in the Army, that euery man should beare the armes of Saint George. and it was said that his enemies bare the same also. On Saturday he passed to the Castle of Aax, were stand 2. Castles of thee Lords, whereof one sheweth a farre off.

On Fryday the twelfth of that moneth, his army passed the Lands of Wodiur, which are belonging to the Earle of Flure: this dayes journey being long and tedious, he lost many of his hosses in the wast ground called the Launds. Two miles from the town of Aurule, he displayed his banners, and diuided his armies in diuers troupes. In the Vward, wherein was 2. thousand men of armes, were the earle of Warwike high Constable, Reignold Cobham, Lord Barthall, Lord Beauchampe, a Somersetshire man, the Lord Clifford, and the Lord Thomas of Hampton, belonging to the Ancients, and with them seauen Barons of Gascoigne. In the middle Ward, wherein were seauen thousand men of armes, besides Clarks and Pages, there was the Prince himselfe with a double Ancient, the Earle of Oxford, the Lord Bartholomew Burwash, the L. John de Lile, the Lord Willowby, the Lord le Ware, the Lord Maurice Barkely, sonne to Thomas Lord Barkely, then living, very old, the Lord John Bourlers, Lord John Rose, the elder of Burdeaux, Captaine de la Butch, the Lord Camount, the Lord Mountferrant with their Ancients. In the rereward was 4. thousand men of armes, committed to the charge of the Earle of Suffolke, the Earle of Salisbury and the Lord Nemers, who led the Bernences: In y whole Army was of mē of armes, Clarks Pages, Archers, Brigants, and other, aboue 60000. men, and this day was Jenken Barefort, and diuers other made knights, and the village of Aurule, with 3 other villages (where of William Lord Raymond was Captaine) were deliuered vp vnto the Prince, wherein he lodged his Army, and resting there two dayes, as many as would were suffered to goe out, and take victuals, and burnt their enemies Country. On Tuesday, they lodged in the towne of Mount-Clere, where the Castle belonging thereunto was giuen vp to the Prince, & after he left it againe to the Frenchmen, by reason of fire which brake vp in the towne, whereupon the Prince went out into the field, & lodged in his Tents, euer after refusing to lye in any Towne. This day hauing taken 3. Townes and burning them, he made knights Gilotus de Straton, and diuers other. Also John de Lile stricken with a quarrell at Auttage, died. On Wednesday and Thursday he lay still, and on Fryday he came before the strong Towne of Lesegron, where he lodged in his Tents. On Saturday he came before Placence, a very faire town, & a strong, the inhabitants whereof fled away into the Castle, where the Earle of Pelesni, & many knights, were taken by Captain de la Bouch, and the Lord Mountferrant, and de Lonchis, who was that day made knight. On Sunday S. Luke's day, they stayed at Cwant, & taking y foat of Galian by force, they set it on fire and burnt it. On Munday casting fire in the town of Placence they passed along, leauing the towne of Beal Marchi on the right hand, and lodged before the Towne of the Archbyshop of Anser, called Le Vale. On this day Richard Stafford brother vnto the Earle of Staffort, led his men with his Ancient towards the Towne: and on the next day being Tuesday, the towne was yelded vnto him, & because it belonged to the Church, the prince would not suffer any man to enter into it, excepting certaine persons appointed of purpose, for the deliuering of victuals. On Wednesday they leauing the faire town of Estamount, on the left hand, they came before the Noble Towne of Perand, belonging to the Earle

Earle of Comenge, which was full of armed Souldiers, and the Prince lodged in the great Monastery of Barons, in the which Abbey, there was not so much as one liuing creature found. On Thursday they lay still doing no harme to the said Abbey. On Friday they went out of the faire and rich Country of Armenake, and entred the Country of Auserike, through the which, the passage was very hard and hilly, and lodged at Saraunt a towne, they set it on fire, contrary to the commandement of the Prince.

All that day and three dayes following, they passed alongst by the high hils of Aragen. On Saturday they came to the Towne of Saint Poze, where the rereward of the Army lodged in a great Monastery of blacke Monkes, which were all fled away: the middle ward at Villrankes, and the Vward at Tremaine: these villages being very rich and full of victuals, had no man in them, for all the inhabitants were fled.

Sunday the fourth and twentieth of October, they passed a certaine Ford, and entred into the Lands of the Earle of Comenge, which reached vnto Tolouse, but these Countries were walled with fire and sword, and leauing on the left hand the towne called Sanneters in Auserike, they passed by the strong Citie of Wimbers, where Pope John the two and twentieth removing the blacke Monkes, erected a Bishops sea, and they were lodged in a great & rich Towne called Sotance, belonging to the Earledome of Comenge, where was a Conuent of Fryers Prinos: and burning this Towne on Munday they passed through a goodly wide countrey, very plaine, & streams to the Townes of Saint Foy, and Saint Lity. On Tuesday they rested: and on Wednesday being the feast of Simon and Iude, the Army passed through the Riuer of Geronne, being a water very fierce, stony, and terrible: and against the same day, through the Riuer of Arage, much more dangerous, and came vnto Tolouse: before that time, neuer durst any Horseman passe ouer these waters, wherefore the people of this country being wonderfully made afraid, could not tell what to doe, for being sodainly taken, they could not flie: that night the Prince lodged at Falgard, a little towne, one mile from Tolouse. On Tuesday they came vnto the faire and great Towne called Saint Gillard, being part of the inheritance of the Lord Amerike de la Fossad. the which towne the French King had taken from him, because he was the King of Englands feed man. Fiue by the sayd towne were twelue Wind-mils, the which they set on fire all at once. There were taken two Espies, they certified the Prince that the Earle of Armeniake was at Tolouse, and the Constable of France at Mount Haban, foure Leagues from Tolouse. On Fryday, they passed on towards Auinion, by the good towne of Valige, and the Towne called Franke, and the whole Army lodged at the great towne called Auionet, and the middle Ward and rereward lay in one side of the Suburbes, and the Vward lay on the other side of the Towne which the Townes-men perceiuing, fled euery one.

There were about this towne 20. Wind-mils, which they set on fire. On Saturday the 28 of October, they lodged in the great towne called Castelnanner, where a Church of the Chanons, a Conuent of Fryers Prinos, and another of Carmelites, with an Hospitall, and a Village called Les Mauns de Pucels, with a Conuent of Fryers Augustine, were all consumed with fire. On Sunday the feast of All-Saints, the Army rested, out of the which Army, certaine going to take Butties, they tooke a little Towne, the inhabitants whereof to be spared from spoyling, gaue them ten thousand florens of gold. On Munday they marched along by the townes of S. Mathele Poze, and the great Towne called Milkapinch, and from thence, they entred the Country of Carkaion, and the Prince lodged at a little village called Alse. On Tuesday they came to Carkaion, a faire Towne, rich and well built, bigger then London. Within the Walls, betwixt the towne of Sanburge, and the City being double walled, there ran a goodly water, which passed vnder a faire stone bridge, at the foot whereof, were 4. Conuents of Religious, of the which, the Fryars ran not away, but the other fled into the City. The whole Army was lodged in the towne, which abounded with Victuals and all other delicate victuals. This day, the sonnes of the Lord Libret, and Walter Daller, with Rowland Daues, and many other, were made knights.

On Wednesday and Thursday, the Army lying still in the towne, & hauing made a truce, they parled with them of the City concerning a Peace, the Cittizens offering for saueing the Towne from burning two hundred and fifty thousand of golden Souses: the Prince answered, he came not for gold, but to take Cities and Townes, together with their inhabitants, and the next day commanded the Towne to be brent. Carcaies in France burnt.

On Friday, the Towne being brent, the Army departed, leauing on the left hand the castle of Botenake vntouched, passing through the Champion Countrey, burning Townes called la Rustican, and all the Country thereabout.

On Saturday they trauailed through a great Wind and dust, leauing on the left hand a great pole of fresh water, being in compasse about xxx. leagues, and is called Cabon. They came to a Towne called Silony, which was yelded to the Prince, and therefore neuer fouthed: and the Prince was lodged that night at a good Towne called Canet. On Sunday the eight day of November, they passed the Water of Sander, partly at the ford called Chastell de Terre, and partly ouer a Bridge, and so trauailed betwixt high hils, vnto the great City of Narbon, whereof that Country taking his name, is called Gallia Narbonensis. The City was very strong and well walled, hauing in it a great Cathedrall Church also a

notable Caſtle, belonging to the Biſhop, a very ſtrong Tower for the Earle of the ſame Towne. It had alſo a Suburbe called a Borough, much bigger and better built, then the Bozough of Carkaſon.

In the Bozough were foure Couents of religious perſons. Betwixt the Bozough and the Citie, there runneth a water called Aude, comming from Carcaſon, and runneth into the Breakiſh Sea. Betwixt the City and the Borough are two Bridges of ſtone, and the third of timber, built with ſtore-houſes for diuers Merchandizes. The Prince was lodged in the houſe of Carmelite Friars. On Tueſday the Bozough being ſet on fire, the army paſſing by the waters ſide went ouer it in diuers places. From thence, they went and lodged at the Towne and Caſtle of Arobion. On Wedneſday they trauailed an eaſt iourney, & hurtfull to the horſe for lacke of water. On Thurſday Theodorike Dale, porter of the Princes Chamber, was made Knight: thence the army paſſed by a good Towne called Ulmes: the middle ward paſſed vnto the good towne of the Earle of Ile, called Amile, where they lodged that night. The Prince lay at the Friars Minors, where was great abundance of muſkadell, being prouided for the Counteſſe of the Ile, which was all ſpoyled. This day alſo, the good Towne of Pipions was deſtroyed, with the Caſtle thereof called Redote. On Friday the Army paſſing by a long ſtony Way, lodged at Lanian. On Saturday, returning back toward Gaſcoigne they left on their right hand the great pole of Eſbone, and Carkaſon, and all the iourney that they went before, and the rereward lodged at a good Towne called Aiuer, and the middle-ward at Puchfiances, where a Caſtle being defended, withſtood them a ſeaſon, but at the length was wonne, and the Prince lay beyond the Bridge, by a faire running water, on both ſides whereof, the Countrey was ſpoyled with fire, together with the good Towne of Pelaunce, where the Vaward was lodged that night. On Sunday they trauailed a long iourney, becauſe the Prince ſhould be lodged in the great Abbey of our Lady de Prolior, where in ſeuerall Cloyſters did liue one hundred predicants, whereunto the Prince was deuoutly receiued. In the day the armie ſet on fire the Towne of Lemins, where there was farre greater Couents of religious, than at Carcaſon. Alſo they burnt the fayre Towne called Falanges, vnto which Town belonged one and twenty Windmilles. They burnt alſo the townes of Vnlard and Serre, with all the whole Countrey lying thereabouts. On Munday the middle ward lodged at the good towne called Dealpuhon, which long time was defended, but at length gotten by force, the Caſtle whereof yeelded, vnto the which Towne and Caſtle, the Prince commanded, that no harme ſhould be done by fire. On Tueſday, early paſſing ouer the River of Beſeile, they entred into a Countrey which was broad. About one a clocke, they came before a great Abbey called Bourghbon, where the Earle of Flurens with great ioy receiued the Prince, he being newly eſcaped out of Priſon from Paris, where he had laine by the ſpace of two yeares, and the ſaid Earle remayned from that time faithfull to the Prince. This day they rode in the Lordſhips and Seignories of the ſame Earle, by the Townes of Paſell and Colmon, and on the right hand they paſſed by the great town of Saint Canole, and the high Caſtle called Hautripe: but on this day they beent nothing for reuerence of the foreſaid Earle and his vineyards, but paſſed againe ouer the water of Arage, leauing alſo Tolouſe as they did at the firſt, but then one mile on the left hand, and now foure leagues on the right, and the middle ward was lodged in the great Towne of Permount, which together with the Caſtle was beent. On Wedneſday, they paſſed by the caſtle of the Earle of Flurs called Mounthane, at the foote whereof, all the Horſemen paſſed ouer the great Water Geround, and there take the Towne and Caſtle of Soyth, then leauing the River of Geround on the left hand, and ſo paſſed vnto the Towne of Pazconaiu, which they take, then they returned ouer the River againe, and take the ſtrong Towne of Carbone. On Thursday the army reſted. On Friday woyd was brought to the Prince that the French were vp, and had gathered a great force, which they had diuided into 5. great battailes, being in the field not farre from them, whereupon our men ſet themſelues in battell array, about one mile from the place where they lodged, and being now ready to fight, ſome one of the Souldiers by chance ſtart a Hare, whereupon a great ſhout was made, which the enemies hearing, they ſent out 40. light horſemen to ſee what was the cauſe thereof, who drawing nigh to the Engliſh army, and perceiuing them to be ſet in battaile array, returned back again, and declared what they had ſeene: whereupon preſently the whole army of Frenchmen fled with great feare. The ſame day Bartholomew Burwaſh, Iohn Chandos, & Iames de Audley, with 24. light horſemen were appointed ſcouts and comming to the tayle of the French men, they take priſoners 32. Knights and Gentlemē, amongſt whom they took the Earle of Roememe, alſo they ſlew many Carters and Wagoners. The Prince lodged in the Towne of Poiwoſe. On Saturday they marched to the Caſtle of Dzadzay, in which Caſtle the prince lodged, and in the morning they burnt it. On Sunday the two and twentieth of Nouember, about Euening, they perceiued that their enemies were on the other ſide of the great Hill hard by the great towne of Gemount, ſo that the Engliſhmen being benighted, ſent out 8. light Horſemen, and certaine Bowmen vnto the right hand of the Towne called Auremount. Where finding foure hundred men of armes of the Conſtable of France, they chaſed them out of the town, and ſlew and took many: the middle ward lodged at Auremont, and the Vaward at Colimont. Early in the morning the Wagoners being commanded to remaine

in the towne of Auremount, all the reſtue being diuided into troupes, went into the field, wayting for the comming of their enemies, all in vaine: for the Prince taking the towne of Damount, was told that his enemies fled away at midnight. On Tueſday the army lodged in the field, and for lacke of water, their horſes were faine to drinke wine, whereupon it came to paſſe, that the next day their horſes were ſo drunke they could not goe right forth, and many of them dyed. On Saint Katherines day, with much adoe they came to water, and leauing the towne of Florence on their right hand they paſſed to the great towne called Silard, and the middle ward was lodged at a towne called Realmount, which they take by maine force, and therefore burnt it. On Thurſday they reſted. On Friday they trauailed a long iourney, by walled townes and ſtrong Caſtles, the middle ward lodged at Serde. On Saterday they paſſed ouer a certaine Water with great difficulty, and through woods, till they came to a good towne called Peſin. On Sunday the Prince reſted, and take homage and oaths of the townesmen. On Munday S. Andrewes day, trauelling a long iourney, they came to the towne of Tolouſe, where were three Caſtles. On Tueſday the Prince trauelled to the caſtle of Pelan, where he lodged. On Wedneſday
Anno reg. 30. the prince came to Regla, where his horſes and Wagons paſſed through the riuer of Geronde. In this towne of Regla, the Prince appointed diuers Barons and ſuch like to winter in diuers places of the Marches, to the intent they ſhould keepe the inland parts of Gaſcoigne againſt the French men.

The Prince of Wales touching theſe matters aforeſaid, and for other conſiderations alſo, cauſed a new coyne of gold to be made in Gaſcoigne, being buſied himſelfe about the
1356 repairing of ſuch things as were decaied and throwne downe. And in this ſeaſon, there ſprang vp a lolliy fantaſie in the Frenchmens heades, that the King of England was come into Normandy, the cauſe of which rumour roſe vp, for that the Duke of Lancaſter, after that he had fortified the ſtrong places belonging to the King of Nauarre, which were in the Ile of Conſtance and other places, did direct his iourney towards Bytaine, whereof he was newly made chiefe Captaine. Another cauſe was this, Philip brother to the King of Nauarre, came into England, & earneſtly craued aid of the King againſt the French King, who kept his brother in priſon, that he might by force of armes reſtore al ſuch lands vnto him as were wrongfully withholden from him. whereupon he offering to doe homage and fealtie, had (of the Kings appointment) Miles Stapleton a man of great integrity, and in martiall affaires very skilfull, him (I ſay) the King appointed to be his faithfull fellow. Theſe men with two thouſand men well appointed trauelling through Normandy, tooke Townes and fortreſſes, burning diuers of them, paſſing along till they came to a caſtle 9. leagues diſtant from the Citty of Paris: neither did they aſlake their trauell, vntill they had forced their enemies to enter into a yeerely truce. By this meanes a great report & no leſſe feare filled the hearts of the Frenchmen, which report at length came to the eares of the Prince lying at Regla, wherefore hee gathering all the power he had with him in his Dukedome, to the intent to meet his Father, which he muſt doe by trauelling through France, hee came at length to Buzetat, where hee was certified that the Earle of Armenia, would after his departure haue ſpoyled the Countrey, and for that intent had prouided a great band of men: wherefore he ſent backe to the Gouernour of Gaſcoigne vnto Barnard de Libret, and other. From thence the Prince went into France through the coaſtes of Barny and Limon, ſtill encouraging his men againſt their enemies, ſending before him Iohn Chandos, Iames Dawdeley, and other complices, to try out the ſtate of their enemies Country, leaſt perhaps ſome crafty ambuſhment might ſodainly aſſault our men afore they were aware. He himſelfe remouing his campe euery day, and now being entred into Pictauia, his eſpies brought word that the French King had gathered a great army, being now in Aurelian, who alſo knew of the Princes comming, for he ſent out eſpies to diſcouer our army, amongſt whom Griffin Mico of Chambly, petit Captaine of two hundred men, meeting with other eſpies, came to his coaſt: for our eſpies take thirty of them, and ſlew the reſidue, ſo that there was not one of them left to carry word what was become of their fellowes. Our eſpies proceaded towards Romerentine, where meeting with the Lord Creſſe, and Lord Briſgand, they ſet vpon them and ſlew them, their chiefe Captaines being forced to flie to a Caſtle, and hauing taken vp their lodging in a Towne, the Prince commaunded that on the morning a great aſſault ſhould be giuen to them of the Caſtle.

The day following our men being all armed, paſſed through the ditches, and came vnto the walles of the Caſtle, ſome applyed to ſcale the wall with ladders, ſome burne the gates, and entring, ſlew a great many of the chiefe men, but the Lords before named fledde vnto the principall tower of the Caſtle: but the Prince determined not to depart, till they that were beſieged, were either taken or pelled: At length the Caſtle bridge vndermined, the men beſieged, with all humilitie pelled vp the Caſtle. After this the ſpyes declared that the French King was come downe to Turon, to prouide armies to goe againſt the Prince, of the which tydings the Prince being glad, he pitcht his tents againſt the French King, but could not paſſe the riuer of Leger, by reaſon of great floods, and the French King had broken all the Bridges, to the intent there ſhould bee no paſſage betwixt the Prince and the Duke of Lancaſter, whoſe armies might well euery night perceiue each others fires in the Campes: but the Prince following alongſt the riuer of Legers Eaſtward, hee pitcht his tents neare vnto Turon,

where lyking for the French King foure dayes, hoping to fight with him, for that hee was distant but one league off, hee vnderstood that the French King was retyred backe to Blamia, tenne leagues off: passing ouer by a Bridge the River of Leyers at a place vsed be-twixt two strong Townes, and so toward Poyters. This retiring of the French King certified, the Prince returned backe, intending to haue met him in the way, which hee could not doe: yet crossing ouer all, as hee imagined the neerer way, he set vpon the taile of his enemies, and cut from them the Earles of Inyni and Vinters, & also the Marshal of Burgony, these being taken, died, as was thought, through the great toyle they had taken: night drawing on, our men gaue themselues to rest in a wood, intending the next day to take their journey toward Poyters, and by the way they were certified that the French King, with great poumpion prepared himselfe to battell, & drew nigh to our rents: the Prince therefore committed the vaward of the armie to the Earles of Warwicke & Oxford, the middle ward was guided by the Prince, and the rereward was led by the Earles of Salisburie and Suffolke. In all the whole armie of the prince there was not aboue foure thousand men of armes, one thousand armed Souldiers, and two thousand Archers. The pompous nobility of the Frenchmen drew nigh, greatly disdaining the small company of the Englishmen, for they had in number eight thousand fighting Souldiours, they had also seuen Ancients. At this matter a great many of our men murmured because of late a great part of our army was sent to defend Gascoigne. There was among the Frenchmen a certaine Scot called William Douglas, a man of great force and practise in the warre, this man did the French King make knight, and because hee knew he would bee a deadly enemie to the Englishmen, he gladly hearkned to his aduices. This William was Captaine ouer two hundred Scots: these men vnderstood well that it was the custome of the English men in those dayes to fight on foote, in which point they followed the Scots, and the Scot also prouoked the French king and other French men to fight in like manner. The French K. obeying his foolish counsell, gladly agreed vnto his sayings, whereupon hee sent light horsemen into the Citie, that they should suffer no man to make any chase, but onely fiue hundred horsemen well appointed to come out against the archers, in the beginning of the conflict, and to ruine them ouer and treade them vnder their horse feete: but these performed not that which was commanded them, as it appeared by the sequele thereof. The armies being set in a readinesse on both sides for to fight early on Sunday in the morning which was notable sayre, behold there came the Cardinall of Petragozen, & charged the Prince, in the name of God who was crucified, that it might please him to deferre warre for a time, both for ecclesiasticall peace, & also for the sparing of Christian blood, and to the end there might bee a treaty had of peace, the which hee promised should bee performed with great honour on both sides. The prince neither feared nor refused peace, but modestly agreed to the request of this Father. All this day now being appointed for the obtaining of peace, the army of the Frenchmen encreased by the number of a thousand men of armes, and also of other. On the morrow after, the Cardinall came againe from the French King, in his behalfe to request a truce, which should endure for one whole yere, the which the Prince denied, yet at the importunate suite of the Cardinall he granted a truce to continue til Christmas next comming. Therefore the Cardinall returning to the French King, requested him of pledges for the truce, but the Marshall Dawdenam, Geffrey de Charney and Douglas the Scot, perswaded him that by common reason it could not come to passe that the Englishmen should at that time preuaile, and especially, because they were but few, and in a strange Countrey, and wearied out miserably with their toyle in trauell, and therefore not able to withstand so great a number of the Frenchmen of France, who stood in defence of their own land. The Prince of Wales being certified, that the Captaines of the French, would haue no kind of peace, but such as they could get by force of armes, and calling his men together, he made to them an Oration first in generall, & then to his Archers as followeth: your manhood (saith he) hath beene alwaies knowne to me, in great dangers, which theweth that you are not degenerate from true sonnes of Englishmen, but to be defended from the blood of them which heretofore were vnder my fathers Dukedome and his predecessors Kings of England, vnto whom no labor was painfull, no place inuincible, no ground impassable, no hill (were it neuer so high) inaccessible, no tower inscaleable, no army impenetrable, no armed souldier, or whole hosts of menne was formidable. Their liuely couragiousnesse tamed the Frenchmen, the Cipriens, the Spartanians, the Calabriana, & the Palestines, and brought vnder the stiffe necked Scots, & vnruly Irrishmen, yea, & the Welchmen also which could well endure all labour. Occasion, time, & dangers, maketh of fearefull very strong & stout, and doth many times of dull witted men make witty: honour also, and loue of the country, and the desire of the rich spoile of the Frenchmen, doth stirre you vp to follow your fathers steps. Wherefore follow your Ancients, and wholy bee intentius to follow the commandement of your Captaines as well in minde as in body, that if victory come with life, we may still continue in firme friendship together, hauing alwaies one will, and one mind: but if enuious Fortune (which God forbid) should let vs at this present, to runne the race of all flesh, and that we end both life and labour together, be you sure that your names shall not want eternall fame and heauenly ioy, and we also with these gentlemen our companions, will drinke of the same cup that you shall doe, vnto whome it shall bee an eternall glorie and name, to haue wonne the

Battaile of Poyters.

Prince of Wales his Oration.

the Nobility of France: but to bee ouercome (as God forbid) is not to bee ascribed vnto the danger of time, but to the courage of the men. Hauing spoken these words he perceiued that there was a hill hard by which was planted on the top with hedges and ditches, the midle whereof was very plaine, and a pasture field on the one side thereof, with many rough bushes, and on the other side it was all planted with vines, and the reddine was plain in the top whereof he did imagine the armie of the French to lye betwixt our men and the Hill. There were great and low valleys, and a piece of Marish ground. One company of the Prince finding out a narrow passage, entred the valley and take the hill, where among the bushes they hid themselues, taking the aduantage of the place. The field wherein our men lay, to wit, the vaward and middle ward was deuided from the plaine where the French army lay, with a long hedge and ditch, the one end whereof did reach down to the marish aforesaid: that of the hill nere the Marish, the Earle of Warwicke kept, Captaine of the vaward. In the vpper part of the hedge, toward the hanging of the hill, there was a great gap, from the which a stones cast it did our rereward, ouer the which the Earle of Salisbury was Captaine. Our enemies perceiuing our Princes Ancient to be displaced, and oftentimes to be remoued from place to place, & by reason of the hill to bee sometime quite out of sight, they iudged that the Prince fled. yet Dowgle the Scot and Marshall Clarimount said that it was not so, but marshal Dawdenam being deceiued in his owne opinion, thought otherwise, crying out still to follow and chase the Prince now fleeing, & with him also Dowglas, to the intent to get preferment and a worthie name of his new warfare: But Clarimount to wash away the euill opinion which was conceiued of him touching his fidelitie, was the more behement to perswade them forward, for vnto them the charge of the vaward was deputed: before these went out, the fashion was, certaine to chase and to kill, against whom certaine that were vnder the Hill of our vaward came to meete Marshall Dawdenam, who staying to see the end of the iusting, kept himselfe from encountring. In the meane time Clarimount thinking to come out by the gap in the hedge, and so to come at the backe of our vaward, and to compasse them in, met with the Earle of Salisbury, who perceiuing his comming and purpose, suspected his whole intent, and so they which gouerned our rereward, making haste to take the gap and keepe the enemie from passing that way, sustained the first charge of the battell. Then began a terrible meeting betwixt the armed men, who laid on load with swords and speares. neither did the Archers slacke their duty, but lying in safe trenches, cast vp aboue the ditch and shot ouer the hedge, preuailing more with their arrowes then they did that fought in armes: thus our rereward slaying the enemies, who came straggling to the gap, and the vaward which lay on the hanging of the hil toward the Marish being gouerned by the Earle of Warwike, were alwaies ready and met with the Frenchmen, beating them downe. The Archers of the vaward were placed in the marish out of danger from the Horse-men, yet for all that they did preuaile there somewhat, for the Horse-men were appointed to no other purpose, but to ouerrunne the Archers. The Earle of Oxford considering the discommodity that might ensue thereof, departed from the Princes warde, and leading with him the Archers, set them on the one side of the French men, commanding them to shote at the hinder parts of the Horses, by meanes whereof the Horses being gauld and wounded, fell to tumbling with them that sat on their backes, or els turned back and ran vpon them that followed after, making great slaughter vpon their owne masters. The Horsemen being thus beaten backe, the Archers retired towards the place from whence they came, shooting & gawling the sides of the Frenchmen which fought right ouer against them: by this time the force and heate of the battell began to be in prime, when as the Earles of Warwik and Salisbury, like fierce Lyons, endeuoured of purpole which of them should dung the land of Poytiers most with Frenchmens blood. Neither was the wise Counsellour Thomas Duke of Suffolke idle at that season, who right worthily in all his acts behaued himselfe, being expert and skilfull in actuarie. For he continually running fro ward to ward, and into all troupes and companies, comforted & stirred them vp with good words to doe well, hauing a great regard that the youthfull sort of lustie Souldiors being to bold vpon their good hearts and courage, should not without regard goe out too farre, and placed the Archers at sundry times to great aduantages, and oftentimes as leasure would suffer him, hee would encourage vp the minds of the souldiers. Clarimount was slaine, William Douglas also being wounded fled, hauing with him a few Scots of his band, with Archebald Douglas his brother: our men retiring put themselues in good aray, and our vaward and middle ward ioyned themselues together. By and by there marcheth forth a new army of the Frenchmen the which the eldest sonne of the French King Dolpain of Vienna, brought forth. The order and arrayof this army was more terrible and fierce then the shew of that which was last oppressed, yet for al that could it not make our men afraide, who were sharpe set, and very desirous of honour, and also of reuenge, both for themselues, and their fellowes, which a little before were slaine and wounded. And therefore boldely they goe to it on both sides, making thwrtes and noyses, crying out, Saint George to borrow, or Saint Denis bee for vs. Within a while they were come to fight man to man, and euery man ready to die, fight now to saue their liues, neither doth the Lyon make the wolfe more afraid, or the Tiger is more terrible to the simple beast, then our lusty gentlemē were to their enemies

who

who chaſed them, & ſlue them like as ſhe wolues chaſe & kill ſheepe. And though that this battell with ſtood our men moze then the firſt, yet, after they had loſt a great many of their men, they had ſuch a deuile, that they ſaued manie & returned by running away, but by a faire retreat which the Frenchmen are accuſtomed to vſe. But our men conſidering, that the victory of the field was doubtfull, as long as the French King might be in preſence with his armie, who lay there halfe hid in a Valley, they would not afterward when they had chaſed any that fled, goe out of the field, but the worthy man Maurice Berkeley, ſonne of Thomas Barkley, had no regard thereunto, who for the ſpace of two houres together with his men neuer ſpared, but would be ſtill in the foreſront of the battell inuading his enemies with the ſwo. This Maurice being in the middeſt of the Dolphins guard ſolued blowes among them, firſt with a ſpeare, then with a ſwoꝛd, and at length being all alone compaſſed with the multitude, & ſore ly wounded, he was taken priſoner. In the meane time our men carried thoſe which were wounded at their campe, and laid them vnder buſhes and hedges out of the warre, other hauing ſpent their weapons take the ſpeares & ſwoꝛds from them whom they had ouercome: and the archers lacking arrowes, made haſte to draw them from poze wꝛeches that were but halfe dead, there was not one of them all, but either he was wounded oꝛ quite wearied with great labour, except 400. men who keeping the chiefe ſtandard, were appointed to meete the French King. The Dolphin being thus put to flight, came to the French K. and ſaid, my Lord K, the field is fallen to the Engliſhmen, & your eldeſt ſon hath withdꝛawn himſelfe: vnto whom the French K. anſwered with an oath, y he would not that day foꝛſake the field vnleſſe he were taken oꝛ ſlaine, and ſo by that meanes carried away by force: wherefoze y ancient-bearers are commanded to march foꝛwards, after whom followed two great companies of armed men into a wide field, ſhewing themſelues to our men, and ſtroke a great feare into their hearts, in ſo much that they were out of hope to conquer any moze. The which thing a man of great wiſedome ſtanding by & prince ſignified with a ſobbing voyce, (ſaying, alas we poze wꝛetches are ouercome,) but the prince hauing a great truſt and faith in Chriſt checked him ſaying, thou lieſt thou daſtardly fellow, foꝛ thou canſt not ſay ſo we can be ouercome as long as I liue. Captain de la Buche, a noble man in all affaires, as ſone as he perceiued the armies of y French K. marching foꝛth of their tents, aſking licence of the prince departed away with 12. ſouldiers, and a hundꝛed Archers whom many of our men thought to haue fled away, therefoze our ſouldiers, (expecting the chiefe Captaines) being quite out of hope of victoꝛy, committed themſelues wholy to the mercy of God. Then the Prince commanded his Ancient beaꝛer Sir Walter Woodland to march foꝛward toward his enemies, and with a few freſh men hee ioyned battell with the great army of the French King: by and by they ſeuered their trumpets, one giuing anſwere to another, they made ſuch a noyſe, that the walles of Poytiers ſounded with the Eccho thereof like a wood, in ſuch ſoꝛt that a man would haue thought that the hils had bellowed out to the vallies, and that the cloudes hadde giuen foꝛth a moſt terrible thunder, ſo the which there wanted no cruell lightnings, whileſt the aꝛme ſhone on the bꝛight armour & ſpeares daſhing againſt ſhining hernels. Then came on the cruell company of croſſbowmen making a darknes in the ayꝛe with the multitude of quarrels which they ſhot, againſt whom came a woꝛthy company of Engliſh bowmen: out flies alſo dartes of Aſh which met with the enemie a faꝛ off: but the French army being full of diuers troupes, & many armed men defending their bꝛeſts with their ſhields, pꝛoceed foꝛward againſt their enemies: wherefoze our Archers hauing emptied their quiuers in vain, being armed only with ſwoꝛds and targets, are faine to encounter with them that were laden with armour. Then beſtirreth himſelfe the woꝛthy Prince of Wales, cutting & hewing the Frenchmen with a ſharpe ſwoꝛd. In the meane time Captain de la Buche marcheth a compaſſe about, vnder the hanging of the hill, which he with the Prince a little before foꝛſoke, and priuily compaſſing about the field, at the length commeth cloſe vnder the place where the French campe lay, from thence he aſcended to the toppe of the hill that way, which the Frenchmen had beaten with their trauaile, and ſo ſodainly bꝛeaking foꝛth vnlooked foꝛ, and ſhewing by the enſigne of S. George that he was our friend, the Prince with great courage giueth a freſh charge on the French army, being deſirous to bꝛeak their rankes, before the Captaine aforeſaid, ſhould ſet on the ſide of the battayle. The Prince luſtily encountring with his enemies goeth into the middle of the thꝛong, and where he ſeeth moſt company, there he layeth about him on euery ſide.

In the meane time on euery ſide, his friends which ſerued with Captain de la Buche, were at the backes of the enemies, beating downe and killing without pitie, and the Archers alſo placed foꝛ the purpoſe that ſo thicke, wounding the backes and ſides of the Frenchmen, in ſuch ſoꝛt, that the foame of the battaile was quite ſpoiled, neyther could they put themſelues in oꝛder oꝛ array any moze. This was the courage of the Prince, who at the length thruſteth thoꝛow the thongs of them that guarded the French King; then ſhould you ſee an Ancient beginne to nod and ſtumble, the beaꝛers of them to fall downe, the blood of Knaues and Princes ran mingled together into the waſters which were nigh. In like ſoꝛt the Boye of Cornewall rageth, who ſeeketh to haue none other way to the French Kings ſtandard, then by blood onely: but when they came there, they met with a company of ſtoutmen to withſtand them, the Engliſhmen fight, the Frenchmen alſo lay on, but at length God hauing ſo diſpoſed, the Prince preſſeth foꝛward on his enemies

enemies, and like a fierce Lyon beating downe the pꝛoud, hee came to the yeelding vppe of the French King. The Frenchmen being ſcatteꝛed abꝛoad in the fields of Poytiers, pꝛeceiuing that the ſtandard with the flowꝛdelice was beaten downe, fled with all ſpeede towards the Towne, which was not faꝛre off: the Engliſh menne pꝛeceiuing them to bee flying, though their owne liues were either ſoꝛe wounded oꝛ wearied, followed them in chaſe euen to the gates of Poytiers, where in a great ſtꝛaunge and very dangerous, they ſlew a great number of Frenchmen. At the laſt our men being called backe by retreat with the ſound of trumpet, and aſſembling together, there were diuers pauilions and tents ſet vp in the fields, and the whole company being thꝛoughly comfoꝛted with this victoꝛy, gaue their whole endeuour to pꝛeuide foꝛ them that were wounded, foꝛ the quiet reſt of them that were wearied, foꝛ ſafe keeping of them that were taken priſoners, and foꝛ the refreſhing of them that were almoſt famiſhed, vntill they had full vnderſtanding who and how many were wanting: Among them which were found halfe dead, was ſeene the Lord James Dawdley by reaſon of his broad buckler, and being carried in the armes of his ſouldiers, was bꝛought to the Princes lodging, and the Prince himſelfe roſe from his ſupper, and came to him, and cauſed him to be ſtripped and laid in a ſoft bed, and being ſomewhat better come to his remembꝛance, the Prince comfoꝛted him, ſweaꝛing to him that he had the French King pulled into him: which newes when the languiſhing Noble man heard, he ſtraightwayes reuiued. The Prince returning to the French King, willed him not to deny that to be a woꝛthy deed of his, that roſe from his ſupper to comfoꝛt him that was almoſt dead, who ſpared not his owne blood to purchaſe victoꝛie. After that they hauing had ſome talke concerning the warres which Iames Dawdley made, y French King ſaid that amongſt all other ſtout Champions which valiantly that day behaued themſelues, he did greatly wonder at the noble deeds of that Knight, and he ſpake not much moze in all his ſupper. But what he ſpake to the Prince, who comfoꝛted his Noble pꝛey. Such like woꝛds, it is ſaid that the French king ſpake: Although it be our chance to fall into an euerlaſting ſoꝛow, yet foꝛ all that wee thought it good to refraine from the ſame by a kind of meaſure, foꝛ though we be vnder ſubiection by law and right of warre vnder our noble couſin, yet are we not as raſcals, oꝛ faint hearted runnawayes, oꝛ taken lying hid cloſe in a coꝛner, but after the manner of the field by the end and ſucceſſe of warre, where we were as ready to die as to liue foꝛ iuſtice ſake. And in the ſame field were many rich men taken, whoſe liues were reſerued foꝛ ranſome, the faint-hearted and lewd chaſed away, but the woꝛthieſt and ſtouteſt were ſpoyled of their liues. This battell of Poytiers was fought on the nineteenth day of September.

The next day after the battell, all the pꝛyſoners were numbꝛed, to wit, the French King alſo Philip his ſonne, the Archbiſhop of Senan, the Earle of Pontue, the Earle of Longuile, the Earle of Ewe the Earle of Tankeruile, the Earle Daunter, the Earle of Vendodour, the earle of Slaun eꝛ, the earle of Vademount, the Earle of Vandome, the Earle of Iuyny, the Earle Don Martin, the Earle of Solabuſſe, the Earle of Sanſe, Vicount Nerbon, the Lord Daubeny, Marſhall Daubenam, the Lord Guinſchard de Angoliſme Seneſchal de Seintong, the Lord Pozes Sainmemet, the Lord Leonard de Guthoy, the Seneſchall of Poytiers, the Lord great Parker, the cheiſe Maiſter of the hoſpitall of Spaigne, the Lord of S. Tigre, the Lord Damboyd, Seneſchall of Anner, the Lord Tower, the Lord Dars, the Lord Duruall, the Lord of the tovvne of Ermel, the Lord Paugeler, the Lord Plamke, the Vicount de Belimount, and the Lorde of Suly: there were alſo the bodies found of many that were ſlain, as the Duke of Burbone, the Duke Dafines, the Conſtable of France, Marſhall de Garmmont, the Lord Geffrey de Charney, the Lord Pounce, the Biſhop of Chaloner, the Lord of Launday, the Lord Ripemount the Lord Chauency, the Lord Ioſle, the Lord Role, the Lord Aunger, the Lord de Sercant Iohn, the Lorde Dargenton, the Lord Cyme, the Lord Kuas, the Lord Rocheſurche ward. the Lord de Vllem. The Prince bought all the pꝛiſoners and captiues of them that kept them and carried them with him to Burdeaux, there to remaine in ſafe cuſtody, duting his abode there.

An. reg. 31. 1357. Edward the blacke Prince returned with the priſoners into England.

Edward Prince of Wales returning into England with Iohn the French King, Philip his ſonne, and many other priſoners, arriued at Plimmouth on the firſt of May, and the foure and twentieth of May entred London with them, where he was receiued with great honour of the Citizens, and ſo conueyed to the Kings pallace at Weſtminſter, where the K. ſitting in his eſtate in Weſtminſter hall, receiued them, and after conueyed the French King to a lodging, where hee lay a ſeaſon: and after the ſaid French King was lodged in the Sauoy, (which then was a pleaſant place belonging to the Duke of Lancaſter.) In the winter following were great and royall Iuſts holden in Smithfield at London, where many knightly fights of armes were done, to the great honour of the King and Realme, at the which were pꝛeſent, the Kings of Englande, France, and Scotland, with many noble eſtates of all thoſe kingdomes, whereof the moze part of the ſtrangers were priſoners.

Iuſts in Smithfield.

After this taking of King Iohn of France, Beards of Engliſhmen (which before were beardleſs) and the hayze of their heads ſhoꝛt rounded) then wed long hayze on their heads, and their beards to be ſhauen.

Beards of Engliſh men ſhauen.

Henry Picard Vintner, Maioꝛ of London, in one day did ſumptuouſly feaſt Edward King of England, Iohn King of France, the King of Cipres (then arriued in England) Dauid King of Scots, Edward Prince of Wales, with many

The Maioꝛ of London feaſteth foure Kings.

many noble men and other, and after the sayd Henry Picard kept his hall against all comers whosoever, that were willing to play at dice and hazard. In like manner the Lady Margaret his wife did at her lodge her Chamber to the same intent. The King of Cypres playing with Henry Picard in his hall, did winne of him fifty markes, but Henry boring very skilfull in that art, altering his hand did after winne of the same King, the same fifty marks and fifty markes more, which when the same King began to take in ill part, although he dissembled the same, Henry said unto him, Sir Lord and King be not agreeued, I count not your gold but your play, for I have not bidd you hither that I might grieue you, but that amongst other things I might try your play, and gaue him his money againe, plentifully bestowing of his owne amongst the retinue: besides, he gaue many rich gifts to the King and other Nobles and Knights, which dined with him, to the great glory of the Citizens of London in foure dayes.

About Hallowntide, Dauid le Bruse King of Scot. was deliuered from the long imprisonment of xi. yeeres, in the castle of Odham, his ransome being set 100000. markes to be paid the next ten yeres following.

Normandy and Britaine were sore spoyled and wasted by Philip the King of Navars brother, Iacob de la Pipe, and Robert Knowles, with many other Englishmen which were captaines of that company, who raged in warlike sort in those Countreis, the space of 3. yeres and more, contrary to the King of Englands pleasure. This Robert Knowles being a meane man of birth became Captaine of many Souldiers, and did many marueilous acts. *Anno reg. 32. 1358. T. Walsingham. Robert Knowles.*

Isabell daughter to Philip the Faire, King of France, and wife to King Edward the second, deceased, *apud Risinges iuxta London*, the xxii. of August, and was buried in the middest of the grey Friers quire at London, in a tombe of Alabaster. *Registrum fratrum minorum.*

This yere King Edward begaun the new building in the Castle of Windsore, where he was borne, for which cause he procured to adorne that place with larger and more beautifull buildings: he appointed surueiour of this worke William Wicham a prudent and discreet man. But the keepe then called the round Table was begun (as afore is shewed) in the 18. yere of his raigne. The same yere dyed the noble and famous personages, to wit, Sir Roger Mortimer Earle Marshall of the Kings hoast, and one of his especiallest priuy Counsellors in Burgundy, in the towne of Roneray, he was buried at Wigmore, Thomas Earle of Oxford, Iohn le Grey steward of England, Geffry de Say, and many other. And in the Kings army that was beyond the Sea, there dyed aboue a thousand men of account. Also Geffrey de Northbrigges Bishop of Chichester deceased, and Robert de Straton succeeded. *Castle of Windsore enlarged.*

Iohn of Gaunt the Kings sonne (by dispensation) take to wife Blaunch daughter of Henry Duke of Lancaster his kinswoman. *Anno reg. 33. 1359.*

Iohn Beauchamp Constable of Douer, warden of ye portes, Knight of the Garter (sonne to Edward de Beauchampe, Earle of Warwike and brother to Thomas also Earle of Warwike) deceased, and was buried on the South side of the middle Ile in the body of S. Pauls Church in London: a faire monument of him remaineth there, by many ignorant people, mistaken, to be of Humfrey Duke of Glocester, who lyeth honorably buried at S. Albons. *Iohn Beauchamp Constable of Douer, warden of ye portes, Knight of the Garter, buried in Paules.*

The French K. vnder colour of peace, offered to K. Edward Flaunders, Picardie, Aquitaine, and other lands, which the Englishmen had ranged through and spoyled, for the performance whereof, messengers were sent into France, but the Frenchmen would not performe the offer, wherefore King Edward being angry, with a nauy of ships passed ouer Sea to Caleis, where diuiding his army into three parts, he committed one company to Henry Duke of Lancaster, another to Prince Edward, and the third he reserued to himselfe, and so passed into Burgundy. *King Edward inuadeth Burgundy.*

In the Lent season, the Normans with a small nauy arriued at Winchelsey, and partly burnt the towne, and slew such as did withstand them: wherefore the Prelates of England assembled from all parts in armour to withstand them. but when they had prepared themselues to battell, the French were gone, leauing behind them two of their ships, which stucke fast in the land, and two hundred of their men. *Forrein enemies driuen backe.*

King Edward with his power rode through France, by Picardy, Artois, Roan, Champaine, and so to Britaine, destroying the countrey before him. And here is to be noted, that the 14. day of Aprill, and the morrow after Easter day, King Edward with his hoast lay before the City of Paris, which day was full darke of mist and haile, and so bitter cold, that many men dyed on their horsebacks with the cold, wherefore vnto this day it hath beene called the Blacke Munday. The King of Nauarre vexed sore the marches of Normandy. Thus was the Realme of France miserably beset on all sides. At the last, a finall peace was concluded on this condition, that King Edward should haue to his possession, the countries of Gascoigne, Guyen, Poytiers, Limosin, Baleule, Erantes, Caleis, Guines, and diuers other Lordships Castles, Townes, and all the lands to them belonging, without knowledge of any soueraignitie or subiection for the same. This peace being confirmed by writing and by oath, King Edward came into England, and so straight to the Tower to see the French King, where he appointed his ransome to be three millions of Florences, and so deliuered him of all imprisonment, and brought him with great honour to the Sea, who then sayled ouer into France. *Anno reg. 34. 1360. A great tempest. French King released.*

King Edward the foure and twentieth of January began a Parliament at Westminster, *Anno reg. 34. 1361.* where

where the forme of the agreement was read, and allowed of all estates, where the King on the last of January caused the nobles to sweare to hold and keepe the sayd agreement, especially those, as well Prelates as other that were not at Caleis, where he, Nowe, and other that were there with him.

And on the first of February following, the King restored to the Bishops all their houses lands, tenements, &c. as by his patents may appeare in effect as followeth. Edward by the grace of God King of England, Lord of Ireland, and of Aquitaine, to all by these presents &c. Although the priory of Pontacute, in the County of Somerset (by reason of the warres betweene vs and France) with all the lands, tenements, fees, aduowsons, together with the goods and chattels belonging to the same, hath beene of late taken into our hands, and by vs farmed and rented forth, as appeareth by diuers patents. Now therefore, since peace is betwixt vs & the Noble prince, our most deare brother, the King of France, woe for the honour of God, and holy Church, restore to the sayd Prior, the Priory, with all the lands, tenements, fees, aduowsons: and whatsoeuer else belonging to the same, to hold the same, in as free manner as they held it before. And withall, forgiue and release all arrearages of rents which might be due vnto vs, by reason of any former grants. In witnesse, &c. the first of February the 35. yere of our raigne. *Restitution of the Priory of Pontacute. Record.*

The like letters of restitution had the bishoppes (in the patent) vndernamed, to wit, Worthampton, Arundel, Cameringham, Dritton, Pattewell, &c. to the number of one hundred and ten in England, besides them in Ireland, Normandie, & the parts of France. All which houses were cleane suppressed and dissolued, with many more by king Henry the fift.

A great dearth and pestilence happened in England, which was called the second pestilence, in which dyed Henry Duke of Lancaster in March, at London, and was buried in Leicester, in the Collegiate Church which he had founded, with a Deane, twelue Chanons, Prebendaries, as many Vicars, and other Ministers accordingly: and one hundred weake and sicke persons, fifty men, and fifty women, and ten other women to tend vpon them that were sicke and weake, so that the same College and Hospitall, at the suppression by King Henry the eight was valued by the yeare in Lands fiue hundred ninety and fiue pounds, seuen shillings, and fiue pence. *The second pestilence.*

There dyed also Reignald Lord Cobham, and Walter fitz Warren, valiant and famous knights, and fiue Bishops, to wit, Reignald of Worcester, Michaell of London, Thomas of Ely, Iohn of Lincolne, and Robert of Cicester. Le Worcester was preferred Iohn of Barnet: to London, Simon Sudbury: to Ely, Simon Langham: to Lincolne, Iohn Bokingham: to Cicester, William Lyniner. *Lichfield.*

Leonell Earle of Vlster by his wife, a sonne to King Edward, went into Ireland to encounter the Irishmen that vexed the English.

Edward Prince of Wales toke to wife by dispensation the Countesse of Kent, daughter vnto Edmond Earle of Kent, brother to King Edward the second: she had beene before wife vnto Thomas Holland, and before that, she was wife to the Earle of Salisburie, & diuorced from him.

A rent of the great company of the Englishmen were commanded to depart out of France and they discomfited in Auuerne the Frenchmen, and toke diuers prisoners of the nobles of France that had beene afore taken of the Englishmen, and there was taken Iaques de Burbor, and the Countie of Salzing. Also a rout of Britains, part of the great company aforesaid, were discomfited in Limosin alias Garret, by Wil. Felton Knight of England, & at that time Steward of the country for K. Ed.

The King held his Christmas at Windsor and the day following, a sore and vehement Southwest wind blew forth, so hideous, that it ouerthrew in high houses, Towers, steeples, and trees, and ouerthrowed them, that the residue which fell not but remained standing, were the weaker. *Sore tempest of wind. Anno reg. 36. 1369.*

The first fiue dayes of May at London in Smithfield were Iusts holden, the King and Queene being present, and the most part of ye Cyualry of England and France, and of other Nations, to the which came Spaniards, Cypriots, and Armenians, lustily requesting the King of England and against the Pagans that had inuaded their confines. The people of Wales notwithstanding the oath receiued of the King of England, and other great men of the land, is sent to Caleis. *Iusts in Smithfield.* *First fayle of woole to Caleis.*

In the feast of the Apostles Peter and Paul King Edward at Westminster by his charter, gaue to the Abbot of Westminster, and conuent to flags of his venison, yearely to be taken in the Forrest of Windsor.

Edward Prince of Wales, about the feast of Saint Margaret, at Westminster, in presence of the great men of the Realme, receiued of his Father the Principality of Aquitaine, fealtie and homage first made to him, but yet he lift not the Principality of Wales, the Duchy of Cornewall, the Countries of Chester and Kent. *Edward the Prince of Aquitaine.*

Simon Islip Archbishop of Canterbury did ordaine, y more there should not be giuen to Priests for their yearely stipend, then three pounds, six shillings, and eight pence, which caused many of them to steale. *Priests dreams cheapes for lacke of stealing.*

The first day of October, began a Parliament at London which continued till the Feast of Saint Brice. the thirteenth of November, which day the King was borne, hauing now accomplished the fiftieth yeare of his age, whereupon, he pardoned such as were guilty of treason to his person, released prisoners, reuoked outlawes, and at the petition of the commons, he commanded pleas to be vsed in English and not in French, as they had continued since the conquest. He made Leonel his sonne Earle of Vlster, then being in Ireland, Duke of Clarence, and his sonne Iohn *Parliament at London. T. Walsingham.* *The lawes to be pleaded in the English tongue.*

Castle of Richmond, he made Duke of Lancaster: and Edmond of Langley his sonne, he made Earle of Cambridge, the Marquesse Iuliers before receyued, being dead without issue of his body.

Record.

In the sayd Parliament was granted to the King for three yeares following, five and twenty shillings, and eyght pence, of euery sacke of Woll to be transported beyond the seas.

Subsidie of woolls.

Ioane Queene of Scots, and wife to Dauid Bruse, and sister to King Edward the third, died in the Castle of Hartford, and was buryed in the gray Fryers Church at London by her mother.

Sea. croi

Sir Iohn Cobham Knight, founded the College of Cobham in Kent, valued at the suppressing at eyght and twenty pounds the yeere.

Cobham College.

Anno reg. 27 King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsore.

The Kings of Cyprus and Scots come into England to speake with King Edward, who receiued them with great honour, and gaue them great gifts: the kings of Cyprus and of Scotland returned home shortly, but the French King fell sicke at London whereof he shortly after died.

The French King dyed at London.

1363. Gemm. Anglic. Adam Merim. Cron. Col. reg. 203.

A frost in England lasted from the middest of September, to the moneth of Aprill.

This yeere the Castle of Dunbrough was buylded by King Edward.

Ann. reg. 38. King Edward kept his Christmas at Windsore.

1364. The ninth day of Aprill dyed Iohn King of France, at the Sauoy besides Westminster, through griefe of mind, that the Duke of Angiow one of his pledges had broken him, and came not into England, according as he had promised and bounde: His corps was honourably conueyed to Douer, and so to S. Denis in France where he was buryed.

Charles de Blois with 3600. men of warre fel sodainly vpon Iohn de Mountfort and William Latimer, whilest they lay in siege before the Towne and Castle of Dauary, and had scarcely with them 1600. of Englishmen, Britaines, & other nations, & giuing battell one to another, without deliberation, there were slaine on the Dukes side onely seauen men, and of Charles part were slaine Charles himselfe, the Lord Rochford, and William Vinge, and Knights and Esquires almost a thousand, there were taken two Earles, and 27. Lords, and of Scots valiant men of armes 1500.

Ann. reg. 39. 1365 Prince Edward had a sonne borne at Angoulesme, called after his Fathers name Edward, but he lined not long, for hee dyed about the age of seuen yeares, and yet not to some, as it was said.

Prince Edward had a sonne borne at Angoulesme, called after his Fathers name Edward, but he lined not long, for hee dyed about the age of seuen yeares, and yet not to some, as it was said.

Iustices put to ransome.

The same yeere King Edward arrested his Iustices Sir Henry Greene, Sir William Scot, and many other, for their enormious wastfull dealings, and tooke of them great fines for their redemption.

Peter-pence forbidden.

The King commanded that Peter-pence should no more be gathered nor paid to Rome. Saint Peters pence is the Kings almes, and all that had thirty peny worth of goods, of one manner cattell in their house of their owne proper houshold giue that peny at Lammas: it amounted in all through England to 300. markes of siluer.

Simon Islip Archb. of Canterbury deceased, and was buryed at Canterbury: this Simon Islip founded a Colledge in Oxford, and called it Canterbury Colledge. Simon Langham B. of Ely was translated to Canterbury. In the first yeare of whose translation Pope Vrban the first made a decree against the heaping together of many benefices or spirituall promotions by one man, for the execution whereof, he sent commandement to the Archb. of Canterbury, and by him to all his suffragans, to certifie in writing the names, number & qualities of euery Clarke, benefices or liuings within their seuerall diocelle. And it was found, that at that time the clergy of England exceeded all other Nations in bearing of offices about the king and common weale, in place of iustice and other, as appeareth by one certificate, which ỳ B. of London then made, of many benefited men at that time abiding within his diocelle, some of them had xx. benefices with cure, and some moze, & some of them thẽ had xx. prebends besides other great dignities. As Wil. Wicham who that yeare at the death of Wil. Edington, B. of Winchest. was made a generall administrator of spirituall and temporall things pertaining to that Bishoppicke, and the next yeare was made B. of Winchest. this Wicham, besides the Archdeaconry of Lincoln, and promotship of Welles, and the parsonage of Panibant in Oxonshire, had twelue prebends.

Priests exempted to the King.

Simon Langham Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancellor of England.

Iohn Barnet Bishop of Bathe and Treasurer of England.

William Wicham Archdeacon of Lincolne keeper of the priuy seale.

David Wechar parson of Somerham, master of the Rolles, serning King Edward in the Chancery fozty yeares and moze.

Ten benefited Priests Ciuilians, and masters of the Chancery.

William Mulle Deane of Saint Martines le Grand, chiefe Chamberlaine of the Exchequer, receiuer, and keeper of the kings treasure and Iewels.

William Askeby Archdeacon of Northampton, Chancellor of the Exchequer.

William Dighton prebendary of S. Martins, Clearke of the priuy seale.

Richard Chesterfield, prebend of S. Stephens, treasurer of the kings house.

Henry Snarch parson of Axon, or Dundall, master of the Kings Wardrobe.

Iohn Newenham Parson of Fenistanton, one of the Chamberlaines of the Exchequer, and keeper of the Kings Treasury and Iewels.

Iohn Ronceby parson of Pardwike, surueyor and controller of the Kings works.

Thomas Britingham parson of Asbey, treasurer to the King for the parts of Guisnes and

and the marches of Caleis.

Anno reg. 42. 1366. Iohn Troys treasurer of Ireland, diuers wayes benefited in Ireland. All these were certified in the diocelle of London at that time.

Iohn Barnes translated from Bath to Ely, and Iohn Harwell made bishop of Bathe.

The third of Aprill was borne at Bardeaux, Richard sonne to Edward the blacke prince, which Richard was after king of England by the name of Richard the second.

William Wickam bishop of Winchester. Iohn Forster.

There was then a priest in England, called William Wicham, who was also great with the K. that all things were done by him, and without him nothing was don. And so when ỳ Bishoprick of Winchester was void, the K. of England at the desire of the said priest, wrote to the Duke of Burbone that hee would for his sake require the Pope Vrban, that his chaplein might haue the bishoprick of Winchest. promising the Duke in his bonds, to intreat him right courteously for his imprisonment and bollage. When ỳ Duke of Burbon saw the K. of Englands messengers & his letter, hee was therof right ioyous: & hewed all the manner to the French K. who counselled him to go to the Pope for ỳ same, & so he did for he went to Auignion to the Pope, who was not as then gone to Rome, & so the Duke made his request to the Pope, ỳ he granted him, & gaue him ỳ Bishoprick of Winch. at his pleasure, so that the K. of England would be fauourable to him in the composition for his deliuerance that he fozsaid Wil. Wicham should haue the said Bishoprick. Then the Duke of Burbon returned into France, & so into England and there treated with ỳ king and his councell for his deliuerance, so he would then his buls from ỳ Pope. The K. of England loued so wel this priest, that the Duke of Burbon was deliuered quite, and paid 20000. Frankes. And so sir William Wicham was B. of Winchester and Chancellor of England.

The 4. of May the king made a composition in his Parliament betweene the two Vniuersities of ỳ one part, and the 4. orders of friers mendicants abiding within ỳ same Vniuersities on the other part, which before had continued many yeres in strife, to the great decay of learning, & much other hurt to both parties.

Anno reg. 41. 1367. T. Walsingham. Edward Prince of Wales, taking compassion of Peter king of Spayne, who was driuen out of his kingdome by Henry his bastard brother, entred Spayne, with a great puissance and in a battle at Nazers the 3. of Aprill, put to flight ỳ forsaid bastard, ouercame his power, & slew 6000. of his men, where there were taken 60. persons of name, and 2000. of the common souldiours, which done, hee restored the said Peter to his former dignitie, and returned home with great triumph and victory, but not long after, Henry the bastard, with K. Peter sate at a table, sodainly thrust him through with a speare, & inuaded the land by treason, which by open warre he could not doe.

The Bastard his brother driues Peter out of the land.

The Bastard slaine by treason.

Anno reg. 42. 1368. The Frenchmen tooke diuers townes and castles, in Poytow, that belonged to the king of England, and to the end they might the more effectually deceiue the king of England, the French K. sent him word, that he was readie to pay the residue of his fathers ransome, and to performe the conditions of peace: also hee sent him Mines out of Boheme and other presents, in token of loue: but it fortuned whiles the embassadors were in the kings presence, ỳ lamentable newes were brought of the fozcible inuasion of the Frenchmenne in Poytow which when the K. heard, he commanded the embassadors to get them home with their deceitfull presents, to their deceitfull Lord, whose mockes he would not long leaue vnreuenged. The Embassadors returning home, were met by the men of Caleis, who tooke their mules and other goods from them.

Subtilties of Frenchmen.

In the month of April, Leonel Duke of Clarence, with a chosen company of the English nobilitie went towards Millane, there to marry with Violentis the daughter of Galeacius the second of that name Duke of Millaine, of which marriage Paulus Iouius writeth thus, vpon the life of the said Galeacius: by meanes of peace being obtayned, and Barnabe (his) no lesse earnest endeuour labuing by fozce and armes to recouer the Principeome of Genoune as taken from him by fraud, and detained by iniury, Galeacius desired to fozstifie him elie vñ fozraine affinitie, glozious in deed, in princely pompe, but in euent to him and his vnfoztunate, matching his sonne Iohn Galeacius with Isabel daughter to Charles the French king, and his daughter with Leonell Duke of Clarence, son of the K. of England, to whom hauing receiued 200000. Flozences of gold for a dowry by the mariage of Violentis, ỳ cities of Mons regalis, and Alba Pompeis submitted themselues. And Isabel which came to ỳ Vsurp was so troublesome to her father in law, ỳ she cost him 200000. Flozences although ỳ yeelding of the Towne of Pictures, and the title of ỳ most honozable name had beene giuen to her new husband in part of her dowrie. Moreouer at the comming of Leonell, such abundance of treasure was in most bountcous manner spent, in making of most sumptuous feasts, setting fozth stately sights, and honouring with rare gifts aboue two hundred English men, which accompanied his son in law, as it seemed to surpasse the greatnesse of most wealthy Princes: for in ỳ banquet wherein Francis Petrarch was present, amongst the cheefest guestes, there were aboue thirty courses of seruice at the table, & betwixt euery course, as many pesents of wonderous price, intermixed, all which Iohn Galeasius, cheefe of the choise youth, bringing to the table, did offer to Leonel.

Marriage of Leonell.

Most sumptuous feast.

Costly gifts giuen.

There were in one only course seuenty goodly horses, adorned with silke and cluct furniture: and in the other siluer vessels, falcons, hounds, armor for horses, costly coates of mayle, breastplates glistering of maslie steele, helmets, & cozselets decked with costly crestes apparelled distinct with costly Iewels, sondry girdles, & tastly certaine gemmes, by curious art set in gold, and purple, and cloth of gold for mens apparrell in great abondance.

Frequents of a feast sufficient to serue three hundred men.

And such was the sumptuousnesse of that banquet, y^t the meats which were brought from the table, would sufficed thy hane serued 10000. men: but not long after, Leonell living with his new wife, whilest after the manner of his owne countrey, as forgetting or not regarding his change of aire, he addicted himselfe ouermuch to intimate banquettings, spent and consumed with a lingering sickenesse, died at Alba. Afterward Violandis was married to Otho Marquise of Montferat in Italy, who hadde no better successe then the other being in the hide of Pauie, stabbed through of a base horsekeeper, where he likewise died obscurely.

Anno reg. 43 1369.

The third mortalitie or pestilence was this yere, wherein died Blanch Duchesse of Lancaster, and was buried in Pauls Church at London.

The third pestilence. Dearth of corne

This yeere was a great dearth of Corne, so that a bushel of wheat at London was sold for two thillings sixe pence, of Barley twentie pence: of Oates twelue pence.

The 15. of August died Quéene Philip wife to Edward the third at Windesore, and was buried at Westminster.

Staples of Wooll.

Quéene Borough, Kingstone vpon Hull, and Saint Botulphs, *alias* Boston, were made Staples by Parliament.

The Kings sonne Iohn Duke of Lancaster, and Humfrey Bohan Earle of Hereford, with a great armie went into France where they little preuailed, because an huge Army of Frenchmen had pitched their Tents vpon the toppe of Chalke hill, neere vnto Caleis, so strongly, that they could not be set on without great losse and damage: but shortly after, Thomas Beauchampe earle of Warwicke arriued at Caleis with a number of chosen souldiers, at whose coming the Frenchmen leauing their tents and victuals, fled away, neuertheless he passed forth, spoyling and wasting the Ile of Caine with fire and sword, but as he returned to Nardis Caleis, he fell sicke whereof he died, and the other of the captains returned without honour.

Anno reg. 44 1370.

The K. borrowed great summes.

King Edward borrowed of the Prelats and other, many great summes of money, saying, hee would bestow the same in defence of the Church and realme, but about Midsomer hee sent a great army into France, whereof Sir Robert Knowles was generall, a man, who before time had valiantly handled ye beyond seawards, so long as they were ruled by his counsell: but toward winter, the young Lords sith they ought not to be subiect to him who was not so noble of birth, as they, and so deuiding themselues into diuers companies, Sir Robert Knowles departed into Britaine to his owne Castles which he had conquered: The Lords being so deuided, the Frenchmen set vpon them, take prisoners whom they listed, and slew the residue.

A great part of Gascoigne fell frō the prince, because of the strange exactions hee laid vpon them: also sickenesse encreasing vpon him, he returned into England with his wife and his sonne Richard, and resigned into his fathers hands the gouernment of Gascoigne.

The monasterie of Abingdon, fiue miles from Oxford, was spoyled by them of Oxford, together with the artificers of Abingdon.

Anno reg. 45. 1371.

In a Parliament at Westminster in ye first weeke of Lent, it was ordained that the great Charter and Charter of the forrest, should bee kept in all points. Also in the same Parliament, the Clergy of the realme granted to ye K. an ayd for ye wars in France, of fiftie thousand pound to be payed in the same yeere, vnto the leuying of which summe, Shauntrie pieces were taxed, according to the summe y^t they receiued by the yeere, also small benefices which were neuer taxed, &c. And the Lay of the Lords & commons also granted to the King the like summe of fifty thousand pound, in aid of the same warres, to bee leuied of all the parishes of England that is to wit, that euery parish should pay 23. shillings 4. pence, the great parishes helping the lesse: supposing (according to the common opinion) that there hadde bin so many parishes in England, that would haue sufficed in such manner to the said summe. By which meanes writs were directed to all the shires of England, to certifie vnto the King of all the Churches in euery shire, which also made the number of Churches to be examined. And it was found that the said summe of fiftie thousand pound, might not be leuied in manner as was thought. Whereupon ye King summoned a great councell at Westminster, against ye fifth weeke of Easter next following, & there was ordained that euery parish should pay fiue pound 16. shillings, the greater helpe the lesser. And then also was set downe the names of shires, with the number of Churches in euery shire, and the summe that euery shire should pay as followeth.

Parliament at Westminster.

The common opinion reproued concerning the name of Parish Churches in England.

Shirers.	Parishes.	What euery shire did pay,
1 Kent.	393	2279. pound 8. shillings.
2 Surrey.	118	684. pound 8. shillings.
3 Sussex.	284	1657. pound 4. shillings.
4 Southhampton.	230	1334. pound.
5 Wiltshire.	239	1386. pound 4. shillings.
6 Summersetshire.	391	2267. pound 16. shillings.
7 Dorsetshire.	237	1374. pound 12. shillings.
8 Deuonshire.	381	2149. pound 16. shillings.
9 Cornwall.	194	1125. pound 4. shillings.
10 Glocester.	354	2473. pound 4. shillings.

11. Hereford-

11 Herefordshire.	144	834. pound, 4. shillings.
12 Shropshire.	114	661. pound, 4. shillings.
13 Staffordshire.	100	580. pound.
14 Oxfordshire.	200	1160. pound.
15 Barkshire.	156	904. pound, 16. shillings.
16 Bedfordshire.	121	701. pound, 16. shillings.
17 Buckingham.	200	1160. pound.
18 Northampton.	303	1757. pound. 8. shillings.
19 Rutlandshire.	44	255. pound, 4. shillings.
20 Warwike.	183 10	1061. pound. 8. shillings.
21 Leicestershire.	209	1212. pound, 4. shillings.
22 Nottingham.	164	951. pound 4. shillings.
23 Darbishire.	96	556. pound, 16. shillings.
24 Lincolnshire.	627	3636. pound 26. shillings.
25 Northumberland.	60	348. pound.
26 Westmerland.	32	185. pound, 12. shillings.
27 Cumberland.	96	556. pound, 16. shillings.
28 Lancashire.	58	336. pound, 8. shillings.
29 Norfolke.	286	3674. pound, 16. shillings.
30 Suffolke.	515 20	2926. pound.
31 Cambridgeshire.	172	997. pound, 8. shillings.
32 Huntington.	62	535. pound, 12. shillings.
33 London.	110	637. pound.
34 Middlesex.	63	365. pound, 8. shillings.
35 Kent.	400	2259. pound, 18. shillings.
36 Hertfordshire.	136	730. pound, 16. shillings.
37 Essexshire.	542	3071. pound, 12. shillings.
38 Worcestersh.	139	805. pound, 4. shillings.
39 Durham.	61 30	553. pound, 16. shillings.

W. Smith.

Sum of all the shires in England, without the Citty of London, and the Bishoppricke of Durham be 377. and of Parish Churches, 8600. and all the money amounted vnto 51181. li. 8. s. &c. Of the which was in the bishoppricke 718. li. 8. s. &c. By reason that Parishes in the County of Suffolke payd but 12. shillings, 7. ob. And the Parishes in the County of Deuonshire, paid but 112. shillings 10. d. farthing, for their great pouerty, and so was the King answered 40 50000. pound.

Cheshire a Countie Palantine came not to this Parliament.

In the Citty of Chester are 10. parish Churches, and in the shire without the Citty are 87. Parish Churches besides Chappels.

The Bishops were removed from the Offices of Chancellour, Treasurer, and privie Seale, and lay men put in their stead.

Sir Walter Manny deceased.

This yeare deceased the gentle Knight Sir Walter de Maine in the Citty of London, whereof all the Barons of England were right sorry, for the truth and good counsell that they had alwayes fame and heard in him: he was had alwayes fame and heard in him: he was buryed with great solemnitie in the Monastery of Charterhouse Monkes, which he had founded besides London, and at the day of his Obsequie, there was present the King and all his children, with the Prelats, Barons, & Knights of England. His lands both in England and beyond the sea fell to the earle of Penbroke, who had to wife the Lady Anne, his daughter and heyre. Also the valiant Knight Sir Willi. Molineux, who long serued in France, and was made Knight Banneret by the black Prince, at the battaile of Nazares, now returning out of France dyed at Canterbury, about the feast of S. Iohn Baptist. Also Sir Iohn Mandevile Knight, a man worthy the memory, borne in S. Albones, deceased, this man from his tender yeares so addicted himselfe to study, that therein he ac-counted a great part of his ioy & felicity to consist, for he reckoned that his worshipfull parentage little auayled, vnlesse he enabled the same by learned skill and literature, by vsing thereof so well furnished his minde with knowledge in the Scripture, he dired. his study to Physicke, being an art very seemely and worthy a gentlemanlike nature, but among all other things, his desire was very great to see Asia, and Africa, being two mighty portions of parts of the world, furnishing himselfe therefore, he like another Vlisses, being knowne of very few of his old acquaintance set forward.

Sir Iohn Mandeuile.

Sir William Molineux deceased.

In this his voyage he painefully visited the Countries of Scythia the greater & the lesser, Armenia, Aegypt, both the Countries of Lybia, Arabia, Syria, Iewry, Mesopotamia, Persia, Grecia, Illyricum, Tartaria, and other Kingdomes: finally hauing attained the knowledge of diuers tongues, least the variety and wonders of so many and so great things as he had seene with his eyes & knowne alway by memory, shou'd be vtterly drowned in oblivion, he wrote exactly in the Latine, French, and English tongues, these workes following, viz. his Itinerarie of 33. yeares, of the Marualles of the world, and the description of Countries: being returned into England, and noting the euill abuses of that his age & time, the godly Gentleman would say in these our times now it may bee trulyer sayd than euer before that vertue is layd aside, the Church is troden down, the Clergy erreth, the ciuell raigneth, simony beareth sway, &c.

I. Bale.

At length he died at Leiden, the 17. of November 1371. and was buried in the Abbey of the Williammites, thus farre Bale. To the confirmation whereof Abraham Ortelius in his *Itinerarium*, profelling to haue there yet monument of the knight Sir John Mandeuile in the citie of Leiden, setteth downe the inscription thus.

Epitaph of Sir John Mandeuill.

Heere lieth the noble man Sir Iohn de Mandeuile, otherwise surnamed knight at the beard, Lord de Campd, borne in England, a professor of Phisicke, a very deuout man in prayer, and a moste bountifull bestower of his goods on the poore, who after he had trauailed almoste ouer the whole world, ended his life at Leiden, the yere of our Lord 1371. the 17. of Nouem.

This is the inscription of the stone, sayeth Ortelius, in which there is grauen, the Image of an armed man, with a Lion at his feete vpon a two tailed beard, at his head a hard bleffing, with these wordes in French, *Pou that paste by, for charitie say prayere for me.*

The shield of his armes was voyd, they said there was within a plate, and his armes ingrauen therein, to wit, a Lion Argent, with a red crescent at his breast in a blew field, with a border indented Or: there was shewed his knines, his furniture for horse and his spurs, which he vsed in his trauailes through the world.

Anno reg. 46. 1372.

John Duke of Lancaster, & Edmond Earle of Cambridge, returning out of Spaine, brought with them two daughters of Peter late king of Spaine, whome afterwards they tooke to be their wiues: the Duke maried the elder, named Constance, and from that time lyued himselfe king of Castile.

Battell on the Sea.

The Englishmen fought a battell on the Sea with the Flemings, and tooke fiue and twentie ships laden with salt.

The French men besieged Rochell, to the removing whereof was sent the Earle of Penbroke, with a number of men of armes, vpon whom fell the Spanish nauye in the Hauen of Rochell, who slew and tooke the Englishmen, and burnt their Nauie. The Earle and manie noble men were carried into Spayne, together with the Kings money. King Edward with a great Nauie entred the Seas towards Rochel, to haue rescued the same, but the winde being contrarie, with heauie cheere hee returned againe, hauing spent in this preparation (as it was sayd) nine hundred thousand pound.

Earle of Penbroke taken prisoner.

Anno reg. 47. 1373. T. Walsing.

John Duke of Lancaster entred France with a strong power, and passed through the Realme without battle, but in the deserts and mountaines of Auuerne, for lacke of victuals, many of his armie died: from thence he went to Burdeaux, and brought scantly forty horses backe with him: it was commonly talked that he lost thirtie thousand horses in that vnluckie voyage. It was a great misery to see the poore state of the men of warre, such as were knights of great wealth in their Countrey hauing lost men and horses, were glad to begge from doore to doore and found no reliefe, for the Countrey was destroyed, and not manured, by reason whereof, such dearth was in that Countrey, that victualles could scant bee gotten for any money: The Duke yet wintered there. The tenth of April following, a day of battell was appointed betwixt him and the Duke of Anion at Tholouse. In the meane time, truce was taken till the twentieth of May next following, but the King of England knew nothing of it: When the day came, a great power of armed men for the French appeared, the which the Duke of Anion had assembled, but yet that day passed without battell, to the great shame and reproch of the English, for the French-meane said, they were readie in field the day appointed to iustice for their comming, that came not at all, wherefore they spake many reprochful words against the Englishmen, calling them false cowards, and heartlesse. And such was the ende of that iourney.

Parliament.

In a Parliament it was graunted that the Cathedrall Churches should enioy their elections, and that from thenceforth the King should not write against the elected, but should by his letters helpe towards their confirmation, but this statute tooke small effect: but the Clergy graunting a tenth, and the laitie a fifteenth, it was paid. John Thursby Archbishop of Yorke deceased, he began the new quire of y cathedrall church of Yorke, vnto the which in y laying of the first stone, he gaue 500. markes, and euery yere after whilest hee liued 200. pound to the same worke. Hee also adorned the Ladie chappell there with a maruelous worke-manship: he sate one and twentie yeres, he died at Thorpe and was buryed at Yorke, vnto whom succeeded Alexander Neuell Canon of Yorke. Also John Barnet Bishoppe of Ely deceased at Bishopes Hatfield, and was buried at Ely, vnto whom succeeded Thomas Arundell, son to Richard Earle of Arundell. Also William Line Bishoppe of Winchester deceased, vnto whom succeeded Henry Wakefield.

Christ church of Yorke repayred and builded.

Anno reg. 48. 1374.

John Duke of Lancaster with all his traine of Earles, Barons, knights, &c. returned out of Gascoigne into England in the moneth of July, after whose departure almost all Gascoigne fell from their allegiance, which they had couenanted of with the King of England, sauing Burdeaux and Bayon.

This yere dyed William Wittelsey Archbishop of Canterburie, at Lambeth, and was buried at Canterburie: the Monkes of Canterburie (by the Kings licence) made their election, but choosing the Cardinall of England, the King was so offended that he meant to outlaw them, and they were forced to purchase his fauour with a great price. Then Symon Tibalde, *alias* Sudburie, (Sonne to Nigellus Tibalde Gentleman of Sudbury in Suffolke) Doctour of both lawes, Bishoppe of London, was from thence translated to Canterbury, and William Courtney Bishop of Hereford, was translated to London, and y Bish. of Wangor, to Hereford.

John Duke of Lancaster, William Earle of Salisburie, Reignold Lord Cobham, with Simon

Simon Sudbury and other, assembled at Bridges to treate a peace betweene the Realmes of England and France, where met with them the Duke of Arnow, Guaine and other nobles of France. This treatie continued almost two yeres, and ended without conclusion of peace, but on a truce, which scantly continued one yere.

Anno reg. 49. 1375.

The same time Robert Wafield Bishop of Salisburie dyed, after whom succeeded Ralph Argay. Edward le Spencer deceased in the Castle of Cardiffe, & was buried at Thocketsbury. Also John Hastings Earle of Pembroke, who was taken of the Spaniardes, 4. yeres since was deliuered by Henry the bastard King of Spayne vnto Bertram Cleyken Constable of France, for a certaine some of money, which the said Henry did giue to the said Bertram, who when he was brought to Paris, and the summe of his ransome was limited to be 6. thousand Franks, the Lombards in Bridges became sureties therefore, and promised payment therefor, but he began to be sicke, so that the Frenchmen fearing least he should die in their hands, or euer they should get his ransome, made haste to bring him to Calays, notwithstanding he died before hee came there, and the French-men were deceiued of their purpose.

The Ile of Constantine was deliuered to the French King, to the great detriment of England, for which cause afterward Sir I. Anstey appeached Thomas Carrington of treason. A great heat was in England, so that many both men and women dyed thereof.

The Lord Latimer.

Good Parliament.

A Parliament commonly called the good parliament, was holden at Westminster, in the which, when a subsidie was demanded, answere was made by Peter de la More, Prolocutor of the Parliament, that the King nedeth not the subsidie of his poore Subiectes, if hee were well and faithfully gouerned, which he offered to proue effectually, and promised that if it were found that the King had erde, his subiectes should be readie most gladly to helpe him according to their power.

Anno reg. 48. 1347.

1376.

The Knights required to haue the Lord Latimer with other, removed from about the King whome they saide did giue him euill counsell, which being done, certaine Prelates, Earles, and other, were appointed to gouerne the King, who then was an olde man, but this endured not long. The commons also requested to haue remoued out of the Kinges house, a certaine proud woman called Alice Pierce, who by ouermuch familiaritie that she had with the King, was cause of much mischiefe in the realme, the exceeding the maner of women, late by the Kings Iustices, and sometimes by the doctors in the Consistories, perswading and disswading in defence of matters, and requesting thinges contrary to lawe and honestie, to the great dishonour of the King.

Alice Pierce.

Adam Burie late Bishop. Richard Lions late Sheriffe, Goldsmith.

Also Richard Lions and Adam of Burie, Citizens of London, were accused by the commons, of diuers fraudes and deceiptes, which they hadde done to the King: Richard Lions for money did wisely compound and escaped, the other conueyed himselfe into Flaunders.

Walch Prior deceased. Adam Bishop.

The 8. day of June, Prince Edward departed out of this life in the Archbishops pallace in Canterburie, who was in his time the Glory of Chiualrie: he was in the feast of S. Michael the Archangell, with great solemnitie buryed at Canterburie in Christs Church, & then king Edward created Richard Son of Prince Edward Earle of Chester, Duke of Cornewall, and Prince of Wales.

This yere in the moneth of June, the seruants and tenants of the Earle of Warwicke maliciously rose against the Abbey & conent of Euesham, and their tenants doing their worst to destroy the same for euer, beating their seruants, and killing some of them, & comming to the Yeamoris of the Pooles, they brake downe the pales of their parkes, & burnt the. One their Deere, they brake the hedges of the ponders and fish poles, let out their water, took the fish, and did many other damages, minding to haue destroyed the house, & ouerthrowne the walls: but the King had not sent commaundement to the earle to restraine their malefactors, & troublers of the peace, thus for feare of the king & motation of friends, a peace was made, but no sufficient recompence, for the damage was much more then y parties were able to make amends for: because of this presumption of the Earle, the king put him out of his councell, and would not be governed by the other Lords that were appointed thereto by parliament, but hee sent for the Duke of Lancaster against to governe the realme, by which occasion all they y before were banished the Court, came againe, as the Lord Latimer, Alice Pierce, and other, whose counsell he followed euen to the end of his life. The foresaid Alice is made so familiar with y king, as also her companions, that is to say, y Lord Latimer, and Sir Richard Stirie, that at their becke, the K. promised all matters of y Realme to bee disposed, whereupon they being desirous to bee reuenged vpon their accusers, ceased not vntill by the kings & dukes authority they had gotten sir Peter de la More, to y Kings court, whome without any answere, as gainst all iustice, they sent to the castle of Hewarke, there to be imprisoned. The Duke now laboured against Wil. Wicham Bi. of Winchester, & taking occasion by all waies and meanes he possibly could to indomage him, at y last amongst other thinges that hee obiected against him, hee charged him to haue beene false vnto the king, at what time he was Lord Chancellor, & although the Bishop in declaring of his innocetis was ready to bring forth for himselfe both sufficient reasons and witnesses, yet notwithstanding he caused him to bee condemned without making answere, William Skipwith being Iustice, & by the kinges authority tooke from him all the temporall goods of his Bishopricke, and that hee might gette the peoples fauour, he moued the king to giue the said goods to the Prince called Richard of Burdeaux, and so he vsed the young Princes name for his owne helpe. Furthermore, in the Kinges name, he forbad the bishop to presume to come

P. de la More imprisoned.

The Duke in Bishop of Winchester.

Wicham Bishop of Winchester deprined of his temporall goods.

within xx. miles of the Kings presence.

How the earle of March and the deceit of the Duke of Lancaster.

In the meane time the Kings sickneſſe increaſed, and Phyſitions began to diſpaire of his recouery, although they haue named Alice together with Isabell her daughter did lie by him euery night. The Duke now who determined all matters of the Realme, commaunded Portmer Earle of March to go to Calais, where hauing ſet all things in order, he ſhould diligently view all the other caſtles more thereabout, but the Earle as he was a man of a good wit, conſidered that it was a dangerous time, and for the Duke had an old hatred againſt him, more he called to remembrance, how the Duke had vniuſtly impriſoned Sir Peter de la more his ſteward, and had oppreſſed the Biſhop of Winchester whome he had exempted from priuiledge of the kings pardon, and deſired to doe the like to him, if he could: he choſe therefore rather to loſe the rod, than his life, wherefore he reſtored the rod of his Marſhalſhippe vnto the Duke, ſaying: hee would not for a ſmall commoditie wrappe himſelfe into ſo great danger.

M. Percy made Marſhall of England.

The Duke reioycing that hee might with ſome honour reward Sir Henry Percie, preſently gaue vnto him the rod, and made him Marſhall of England, and by this meanes Sir Henry Percie was ioyned to the Duke but incurred as much hatred of the whole Communalty, as he had gotten fauour and loue of the Duke.

Matt. reg. 51.

The king kept his Chriſtmas at Hauering Abowe, where then for the great infirmitie of his body in his armes he lay ſicke.

The Duke vſing the kings authority, directed warrants to all the Lords and Barons of the Realme, that after Chriſtmas on Monday, 15. dayes after S. Hillary, they ſhould come to the Parliament at London, wherein the matters of the realme were to be talked of. To this Parliament came Richard of Burdeaux the prince, with a great number of noble men & Knights, to whom the Londoners at his comming preſented with diuers honorable gifts, and the Duke of Lancaſter alſo, ſeemed to honor him aboue the reſt, placing him in the Kings ſeate, and taught him to demaund of they would giue the 12. tenth in one yeere, or els of all the marchandiſe ſold in the realme of England for one yeere xii d. of euery pound. of euery firſthouſe one penny, & of euery knights fee, one pound of ſiluer, and eſpecially the Duke proſecuted the demand, ſaying that of neceſſity one of theſe points ought to bee graunted, for that the enemies had now proclaimed warre and would inuade the realme. The knights of the Parliament, whom the Duke had made at his pleaſure, deſired reſpite they might deliberately anſwere him, for all the other knights in the laſt Parliament had ſtoutely ſtod with the communalty, he had cauſed to be remoued, except twelue whome he could not remoue, a day was appointed them. Of the greater part, maiſter Hungerford was elected to deliuer their anſwere, who was a knight very familiar with the Duke, and was his Steward. Thoſe few whom wee haue ſaid to haue remained, endeauored that Sir Peter de la More might deliuer their anſwer, and alſo to anſwere all obiections that ſhould bee laid againſt him in preſence of the Lords. And further, if he ſhould be found faulty, to ſubmit himſelfe to the iudge, mind of the noble men preſent, but the knights preuailed nothing in their ſuite. For when one of the Knights urged the matter more then other, he was willed to hold his peace, otherwiſe it might coſt him his life. Whilſt theſe things were in handling, a ſubſidie was demanded for the King of the whole Cleargie. They therefore treating of this matter, firſt made a common complaint before the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, of the iniury offered vnto their brother William Wicham Biſhop of Winchester, which was alſo iniury vnto them all, and to the whole liberty of the Church whereſoeuer they affirmed they would not treat of other matters, vntill all the number of the Cleargie were together, for they pitying his fall, were moued againſt the Archbiſhop, thinking him a great hyred man for the Duke, and notwithſtanding the Archbiſhop affirmed, the aforeſaid Biſhop to be prohibited by the King not to come neare vnto his preſence, yet leaſt he ſhould be compelled, he ſent a commandement for him, that he ſhould come vp to the Conuocation of the Cleargy at London, who making no delay, came with a ſmall number of ſeruants, that before time was thought to excell all other in multitude attending vpon him, he was ioyfully receiued of his fellow Biſhops.

The Cleargy regardeth the infortunate of the Biſhop of Winchester.

In the meane time the Duke ceaſed not to his followes to imagine how hee might bring to paſſe, which he had long conceiued in his mind: for he ſaw it would be hard for him to obtaine his purpoſe, the Church ſtanding in his full ſtate and very dangerous to attempt publikely to do thoſe things, the lawes and cuſtomes of London being in force, whereſoeuer he laboured firſt to ouerthrow as well the liberties of the Church as of the City: for which cauſe he called vnto him a certaine Diuine, who many yeares before in all his acts in the Scholes, had inueyed againſt the Church, for that he had beene deprined by the Archbiſhop of Canterbury from a certaine benefice that he vniuſtly (as was ſaid) was incumbent vpon within the Citie of Oxford, his name was Iohn Wicliffe, who with his Diſciples, were of the common people called Lollards, they went bare-footed and baſely clothed, to wit in courſe ruſſet garments downe to the heeles, they preached, eſpecially againſt Monks, and other religious men that had poſſeſſions, &c. Amongſt other things he denyed the Biſhop to haue authority to excommunicate any perſon, and that any Prieſt might abſolue ſuch a one as well as the Pope.

The Duke ſeeth for Iohn Wicliffe.

T. Walſingh.

That neither the King, nor other ſecular Lord could giue any things perpetually to any perſon of the Church.

That (as he affirmed) in the time of William Rufus it was practiſed in England, for whom as for other Kings of the Realme (notwithſtanding he tooke away the Church goods) the church of England prayeth, which if the doe

law fully, then doth well: and to ſay that doth it vnlawfully, were abſurd.

That the temporall Lords (if they hadde power) might lawfully take the goods of ſuch religious perſons, to relieue their neceſſities, &c. when he had taught theſe and many other, not only in the Scholes at Oxford, but alſo had preached them publikely in London, that he might thereby get the fauour of the Duke & others, whome he had found prone to heare his opinions, not onely Lordes, but alſo certaine Citizens of London, (for he was not only eloquent, but alſo learned to contemne temporal goods, for the loue of eternall riches, & therefore his converſation was with thoſe religious that had no poſſeſſions, and adorned himſelfe into the begging Fryars, approuing their poouerty & extolling their perfection) The Duke I ſay, and Sir Henry Percy, commended highly his opinions, and indeuoured to extoll his learning and honeſtie of life aboue all other. Who therefore being thus ſet forth with their fauour, feared not to ſpread his doctrine, much more then before, going from church to church, and preaching his opinions. Whereuppon at length, th. Biſhoppes wakened their Archbiſhop, who ſent for this John to come & anſwere to thoſe things that were ſpoken of him. And the Duke hearing thereof, ſent for 4. Doctors of Diuinitie, one of euery order of the begging fryars, aduertiſing them, that with a natural and olde hate, hee purſued the religious perſons that had poſſeſſions, neyther was it difficult to compell the willing Fryars to ayde him in this point.

Wicliffe in Paules church in London.

John Wiclife was to appeare before the biſhops on Thurſday the nineteenth day of February there to be conuicted, for words that he had ſpoken, who, after the ninth houre, the Duke and Sir Henry Percy, and diuers others aſſiſters going before him, was brought forth, not only by the comon ſergeants, but alſo by ſir Henry Percy himſelfe, who was chiefe Marſhall of England, being by the way animated by his fauourers, not to feare the Biſhops, neither the concourſe of the people, ſaying that hee was walled in with ſo many Knights and other: he was brought into S. Pauls Church, where ſuch a multitude of people were gathered together to heare him, that it was hard for the noble men to paſſe through, & that he might eſcape death intended him by many Biſhops. And firſt a diſſention being raiſed between the noble men and Biſhoppes, it was thought his anſwere ſhould haue been deferred. But when the people being gathered round together, ſtaied to giue place vnto the noble men, Sir Henry Percy abuſing his authoritie, pricked forwardes the people, which the Biſhop of London ſeeing, prohibited him to exerciſe ſuch authoritie in the Church, ſaying that if he had knowne he would haue vſed himſelfe ſo there, he ſhould not haue come into the Church, if he could haue letted him. Which the Duke hearing, and being offended, proteſted, that hee would exerciſe ſuch authoritie, whether hee would or not. When they were come into our Ladies Chappell, the Duke and Barons, with the Archbiſhop and Biſhops, ſitting downe, the foreſaid John was alſo ſent in by Sir Henrie Percy, and by him willed to ſit downe, for becauſe (ſaid he) he hath much to anſwere, he hath need of a better ſeate. On the other ſide, the Biſhop of London affirmed it to be againſt reaſon, and alſo contrary vnto Law, th. thee ſhould ſit, who there was cited to anſwere before his ordinarie: hereupon very contumelious words did arife betwixt Sir Henry Percy, & the Biſhop, ſo that the whole multitude began to be troubled, and then the Duke began to reprehend the Biſhoppe with ſtout words, and the Biſhop to turne the like to the Duke againe: whereuppon the Duke being angrie that hee could not in this ſtate reuenge, ſware that he would pull downe both the pride of him, and of all the Biſhops in England, and added then ruſtell (ſaid he) in thy parents, who can profite thee nothing. The Biſhop answered, I truſt not in my parents, nor in the life of any man, but in God, in whom I ought to truſt: then the Duke whiſpering in his eare, ſaid, he had rather draw him forth of the Church by the haire of the head, then to ſuffer ſuch things at his hand.

Concerning a loude boyce.

London & Duke.

The Londoners hearing theſe words, with a loude boyce cryed out ſwearing they would not ſuffer their Biſhop to be thus iniuried, and that they would rather loſe their liues then their Biſhop ſhould be diſhoneſtly vſed in his Church, or pulled out as was threatned. Their furie was the more increaſed againſt the Duke, for that the day before in the Parliament in Weſtminſter, the Duke being preſident: It was requeſted in the Kings name that from that day forward there ſhould be no more Maior of London, according to the auncient cuſtome, but a Captaine ſhould be appointed, and that the Marſhall of England, as well in the citie as in other places, might arreſt ſuch as offended, with many other things, which were manifeſtly againſt the liberties of the Citie: which being once heard Iohn Philpot a worthy Citizen arofe, and anſwered, &c.

The morrow after, the Londoners aſſembling themſelues together, take counſell vpon ſuch demands as the day before the Lords L. of Woodſtocke, and Sir H. Percy had had concerning the creation of a Captaine in the Citie, & of the pr. of the Marſhals office, &c. Beſides of the iniurie that was offered to their Biſhop, and other matters: and whilſt there was great adoe and long talke about theſe things, there entered into the Cittie the Lord Fitzwalter, and Guido Brian, whether to know their minds, or for otherwiſe vncertaine, but the commons ſcarcely hold their handes from beating them that came vncalled for till at the length they had ſworne their comming was not for any hurt vnto them or to the Citie. The Lord Fitzwalter hauing gotten fauour at the Citizens hands, began his Oration, the effect whereof was, that he being by ancient inheritance Standerd-bearer to the citie, was to take iniuries offered vnto them, as to

himſelfe,

himselfe, and therefore willing them to looke to their defence, they presently tooke armor, and ranne with great rage to the Parthalls Inne, they brake vppe the gates, and doores, brought out a prisoner gyues and all, wherin his feare were sathed, intending to burne them in the midst of the Citie. Sir Henry Percie is sought for, the armed men ran vp and downe, but all in vaine, for that day he and the Duke were to dine with one Iohn of Ippe, but the Londoners knewe it not: for they thought that he and the Duke had beene at the Sauoy, and therefore with all haste posted thither, but one of the Dukes knights seeing these things, in great haste came to the place where the Duke was, and after that he had knocked and could not get in, hee said to Hauerland the Porter, if thou lone my Lord & thy life, open the gate, with which wordes, he got entrey, and with great feare he tolles the Duke, that without the gate were infinite numbers of armed men, and vnlesse hee tooke great heede, that day should be the last. With which words, when the Duke heard them, he leapt so hastily from his oysters, that hee hurt both his legges, against the fourme: some was offered to his oysters, but hee would not drinke for haste, he fledde with his fellow Sir Henry Percie, no manne following them, and entring the Thames neuer stinted rowing vntill they came to a house neere the Sauoy in Kenington (beside Lambeth) where at that tyme the Princesse was, with the young Prince, before whom he made his complaint. The Princesse hauing heard their talke, comforted them, promising that she would make a finall end of all those matters.

The common people of the cittie not knowing that the Duke was fled, in great fury hasted to the Sauoy, & against chaunting to make them, asked some what that busines meant, Whereunto he was answered, that they went to take the Duke and the Lord Percie, that they ought to be compelled to deliuer to them Sir Peter de la More whome they vniustly kept in prison: the priest saide that Peter de la More was a traytor to the king, and was worthie to be hang'd. With which words they all cryed, this is Percy, this is the traytour of England, his proper beloyayeth him, though hee be disguised in apparell: then ranne they all vpon him, striuing who should giue him his death's wound; after they had wounded him, they caried him to prison, where he dyed. The Bishop of London, William Courtney, hearing that the Citizens hasted to the Sauoy, left his dinner and met with them, admonishing them to be mindfull of the holy time (for it was Lent) and for the loue of Christ to leaue off from such seditious doings, affirming ỳ he would bring all things ỳ were don against them to good end. And doubtlelle had not the Bishop allwaged their madde mindes, the Duke and the Lord Percie had that day lost their liues, but by the Bishops meanes the matter was pacified for the time, and euery man got him to his owne house. Then were the Dukes armes hanged vp reuersed in signe of treason, in the most principall stretes of the cittie, vncertaine by whom: all that ware the Dukes signe or colors, were fayne to hide them, conueying them from their necks, into their bosome. The Pucelle (wife to Edward late deceased) desirous to make peace, sent into London these knights, Albert de Vere, Simon Burley, and Lewes, Clifford, to perswade them, to make peace vnto the Duke, vnto whom the Citizens made answere, that they would doe for her honor, what soeuer she had commanded, but yet they enioyned the knights, to will the Duke, that hee should suffer the bishop of Winchester to come to his answere, and to be tryed by his Peeres, and also to permit Peter de la More to answere for himselfe, after the custome of the law; and as for the third, they said they would account a traytor, wheresoeuer he should be found. The said knights no other wise then they had heard of the Citizens, reported vnto the Duke with full mouth, whereby they made the Duke very wofull, for whereas they had spoken of a traitor, this (said he) they speake of me, though it be not true.

The Londoners hauing held a counsell about this matter, sent of their chiefe Citizens, eyther to inquire, or to excuse that which had happned, who suing long to come to the Kings presence, being kept backe by the Duke, at the length the Duke tolde them that the king was very euill at ease, and that his sickenes might be increased, if that he were moued to anger, by their speech. But the citizens, whose chiefe man & speaker was John Philpot, answered the Duke, that they were not come by any meane to augment the Kings sickenesse, but rather to mitigate his griefe, that he might be strong to defend them. Moreouer, they sayd they were charged not to communicate those matters which they had in commission from the Cittie vnto any other then vnto their liege Lord the King. At length hauing gotten accesse, they shewed vnto the King, how it had beene published in the Parliament, that it was his will, that contrary to their liberties, the Sayo should be depaled, and a Captaine created, and other matters in the Parliament, which sounded against their liberties. Also they excused themselues of diuers things which had beene done, during the tyme of the commotion of the comonaltie of the citie, saying they were not priuie to any such doing, but that amongst so great a multitude, some lewd people had done such things, neither so great a multitude could be moued by the exhortation of the Sayo, when they were once vppe together. The King being a little cheered vp with their comming, answered, that he would not the diminishing of their liberties, no, he was rather readie, if neede were, to augment them, neither did any such resolutions euer come out of his mouth, & therefore, he willed them not to feare, but to returne and appease ỳ citizens, and to keepe them in peace.

In the meane space some men ceased not to make rimes in reproch of the Duke, & to fasten them

them in diuers places of the Citty, whereby the greater fury of the people might be kindled, the dukes fame blotted, & his name had in detestation. Which tyning when the Duke heard, hee requested the Bishops to pronounce sentence of excommunication vpon all those that by such rymes maliciously did hurt his fame. The Bishop of Winegor therfore (the Aldermen of the city assisting him) publikely excommunicated all those that defamed the Duke &c.

A few dayes after the Duke went vnto the Parliament, that for the causes expressed had beene pretermitted: the Duke and noble men being set, they demanded an answere of the knights of the shires, of these things which had bin demanded of them: who answered, that they would to help their soueraigne Lord the king grant, not of euery house one peny but of euery person, man or woman aboue the age of fourteene yeres one groat throughout England, so that the money should be gathered into the hands of certaine Earles and Barrons vntill they saw how such a summe should be spent. The clergie also granted the like subsidy, to help of the king of euery head, as well religious men as women, as secular Priests one groat, if they were not promoted, but of euery religious person promoted twelue pence.

The Duke hauing obtained as he desired, the rate of all the heads of the whole realme, was not yet quiet, for the iniury done against him by the Londoners: wherefore he caused the K. to send for the Sayo, Aldermen and Shiriffes of London, who being brought into the kings chamber of presence, (being then at his mannour of Shine) they found the King placed in a chaire, not able well to speake, for the greife of his sickines, and the Archbyshop, with other Bishops, the Duke and the kings sons with many Lords and men of honour sitting about him. Where after due reuerence made, and silence commanded, Sir. Robert Alton began an oration, perswading the citizens to confesse their great & heinous offences against the K. and Duke, and to submit themselues to their mercy. Whereunto the Londoners answered that they had not conspired against the Duke, neither had there beene any shamefull thing spoken or done against him that they did know of, or consent vnto, which thing they were ready to proue before their soueraigne Lord the King, & the duke himselfe: Yet notwithstanding they affirmed, that they could not stay the folly of the comon people, by whom that which had chanced was committed: wherefore the said Citizens requested the king that he would not punish these that were innocent and ignorant of the fact: but they for reuerence of the King, promised the duke that they would indeuour themselues to bring in the common people, and to compell them by law to make due satisfaction; and more (sayd they) we are not able to doe for the Duke, that maybe to his honor. And at this word, with the Kings will, they were dismissed, full merry when they saluted the Court with their backes.

After this the King sent vnto them, secretly commanding them to call all the Citizens together, and to make one ware Candle or Taper with the armes of the duke his some in the same Taper, and carry the same in solemne procession to Saint Paules Church, there continually to burne before the Image of our Lady, continued at the charges of the Citie. The ware Taper therefore being made, the Citizenes by voyce of the crier, are generally called together, at which call, they come to heare the cause of their calling, the communaltie and those of the proper state contemned to bee present at such a procession, and therefore with indignatiō euery one departed home to his house, only the wealthpfull and best sort of the Citizens make the procession, placing the Taper of ware where they were commanded. But the Duke not contented with this satisfaction, he threatned the Citizens, and said, that that which they had done was nothing grateful vnto him, nay said he, it rather recounteth to my great shame, chiefely, for that while he was alive and in good healthy, they had in such sorte offered his armes wrought in a ware Taper.

On the other side the Citizens affirmed that they had expressely done that which pertained to a father had commanded them, and would haue done any thing that might haue pleased him. To whom the Duke answered, that they knewe his mind, and were not ignorant how to make satisfaction: with which wordes the Citizens were much troubled, (for quoth they) an ongst themselues, hee would haue vs to proclaime him king: but that shall neuer be done, and so they parted, more friends then they were before. And the Duke ceased not till he had put downe Adam Stapl. Sayo, in whose place Nicholas Brembar was elected, & on the nine and twentith of March tooke his oathe at the Tower of London, Also the Aldermen were depos'd and other set in their places.

Sir Iohn Minstarworth Knight who had traiterously forsaken the English armie, at that time when Sir. Robert Knowles was sent to inuade France, was drawne, hanged and quartered on the 12. of Aprill, his head was set on London bridge, & his foure quarters were sent to foure principall citties of England.

In the meane time William Wicham Bishop of Winchester, seeing the lawes of the land to bee handled, not according to iustice, but as it pleased certaine persons, and being destitute of all mens helpe, he turned himselfe to womankind, promising not onely for himselfe, but also for the oppression and losses of his Church. Therefore knowing ỳ Alice Piers could doe all things that shee would, and there was not any man that would in any thing resist her will, hee requested her helpe, hee offered her money, he promised her great friendship, if she could helpe his Bishoprick forth of such troubles: she promised easily to dispatch his cause and not refusing that which was offered, went to try if any sparke of loue yet remained in the King. She therefore that long had bin taken with her loue, enclosed with her speech, supposed nothing to be denied her

A procession of the Citizens of London.

1377.

Maior and Aldermen of London depos'd.

John Minstarworth.

W. Wicham Bp of Winchester.

Her recouerith his temporalties by meanes of Alice Piers.

her now that she asked: against ỹ Dukes will. he commanded his temporalities to bee giuen vnto him againe, and so the Bishop by right, and wrong, recouered that was lost.

Countesse of Pembrooke dieth.

The fourteenth of Aprill died the Lady Mary of S. Paule, Countesse of Pembrooke, a woman of singuler example, for liuing to the honor of God, and glory of her house, in relieuing poore mens necessities, thee spent her goods, that to ỹ Dukes and Princes she bestowed examples of good workes: and dying she gaue all her substance, either to her seruants, or to diuers Churches, but especially to poore people: shee founded Pembroke Hall in Cambridge, and named it *Aue Maria Vaincola Anno.* 343.

Chaucer and other sent into France.

About the same time the Earle of Salisbury, and Sir Richard Anguishon a Poyton, the Bishop of Saint Davids, the Bishop of Hereford, Geffery Chaucer, (the famous Poet of England,) and other were sent into France to treat a peace, or at the least a truce for two yeeres or more, but they could not obtaine any longer truce, then for one moneth, which they vtterly refused. Whereuppon they stayed in France about these things, and some thinking they might safely haue passed betwixt Calcis, and Douer, about fiftie taking shippe, were forthwith intercepted by the Galleyes, and were all slayne, two men and two women onely escaped, euen in the very sight of ỹ Townsmen of Caleys, they being not able to giue them any ayde: Sir Hugh Caueley being at that present time Captaine of Caleys, take this so great an iniury in verie euill part especially for that it was done, whilest they were yet treating of peace, but hee could not helpe it, wherefore forthwith hee take with him a number of the best and chosen out men, and purposing to reuenge this iniury, made a roade into France, killing a great number of men, and brought backe with him a great booty of artillery and cattell, the messengers returned into England, and brought nothing backe with them, but rumors and warre.

Hugh Caueley Captaine of Calcis.

Alice Pierce leueneth king Edward.

King Edward feebled (as it were) with the disease of the Annuly (which time was giuen him of God to the vse of penitence) had almost sodainely died, neglecting the benefite of time ỹ God had giuen him, like as hee should neuer haue died: trusting the fond fables of the oft named Alice, when she affirmed, he should recouer his health, so ỹ at that time he talked rather of hawking, & hunting, then of any thing ỹ pertained to the sauing of his soule, onely he granted pardon of death for offences, throughout his kingdome to the inhabitants. Being now sodainely taken with the daye of his death he began to haue manifest signes thereof: what Alice Pierce then did, any man may iudge, although we set them not downe in writting, for all one as she saw the king had set foote within deaths mase, she bethought her of slight, yet before she went, that all men might perceaue that she loued not the king for himselfe but for that which was his, she take the rinages from his fingers, which for the royaltie of his Paiestie he was wont to to weare. Thus yelding him such thankes for his benefites, she bade him adieu, and so withdrew her selfe from him.

The King being thus at the point of death, was left not onely of her the said Alice Piers, but of other the knights and Esquires, who hadde serued him, allured more with his gifts then his loue. Amongst a thousand there was only present at that time a certaine Priest, (other of his folkes applying the sporte of what they could lay hands on) who lamenting the Kings misery, and inwardly touched with griefe of heart, for that amongst so many Counselliers which he had, there was none ỹ would minister to him the word of life, came boldely vnto him, and admonished him to lift vp the eyes, as well of his body as of his heart vnto God, & with sighes to aske mercy of him, whose maiestie he well knew he had grieuously offended, whereupon the king listening to the words of the priest, although he had alittle before wasted the vse of his tongue, yet then taking strength to him, seemed to speake what was in his mind, and then what for weaknesse of his body, contrition of his heart, and sobbing for his sins, his voyce and speech failed him, and scarce halfe pronouncing this word Iesu, hee with this last word made an end of his speech, & yelded vp the Ghost at his manner of Shine (now Rich mount) on the 21. day of June, in the yeere of our Lord 1377, and the 51. yeere of his age, when he had reigned 50. yeeres, foure moneths and odde dayes, whose body was afterwards solemnely buried at Westminster.

This king surpassed all his predecessours, through vertue granted to him from aboue, in a certaine excellency of magnanimitie of heart: hee neuer feared any thing or changed countenance for any misfortunat chances whe they happened, a noble warrier and fortunate, for as well by land as by sea, in warlike conflicts he obtained the victorie, gentle, familiar and courteous as well towards strangers, as his owne Countrey-men and subiects, deuout in Gods seruice, for hee had the Church and Ministers thereof in great reuerence. In worldly carestractable, prudent in counsell, and discreet, in sweetnesse of language affable and meeke, in gesture and manners well ordered and ripe, hauing compassion of the afflicted: in bestowing of benefits very liberall, in abundance of wealth modest enough, in creating of buildings marueilous curious, bearing losses patiently, giuen much to hawking, & hunting, to the which, whilest he had time, as the season of the yeere gaue, he applyed himselfe greatly, he was liberall in gifts, and prodigall in expences, proper of person, in stature neither such as excelled the meane bignes of men, nor yet of the lowest sort, hauing a countenance more reuerent, then was commonly in men, but rather like an Angell, in which did shine such a marueilous grace, that such as beamed of him, hoped the day following for good lucke, he gouerned his kingdome euen till his old yeres valiantly, wisely & royally. But yet he did not restraine riotous lust, carnall concupiscence, nor motions, of the flesh, euen in his extreame age, and so (as was thought) for his intemperancie ended his life the sooner.

Issue of K. Edward the third.

He had Issue by the Lady Philip his wife, seauen Sonnes, Edward the Blacke Prince, William of Hatfield that dyed young, Leonel Duke of Clarence, John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, Edmond of Langley E. of Cambridge, & Duke of Yorke, William of Windsor that dyed without issue, Tho. of Woodstocke Earle of Buckingham, and D. of Glocester: and fiue daughters, Isabel married to the Lord Couey, Earle of Bedford, Ioane Quene of Spaine, Blanch that dyed young, Mary married to Iohn Mountfort D. of Britaine, and Margaret Countesse of Pembrook. He founded Calkuinster, commonly called new Abbey, neere vnto the Tower of London, wherein he placed white Monks of the order of Cisteaux, to the honour of God, and our Lady of grace, according to a vow by him made, being on the seas in great perill, by meanes of a tempest: he founded an Abbey for Nunnes at Dertford in Kent, he founded the Kings hall in Cambridge for poore scholliers, (which Hall with others was suppressed by King Henry the eight, for the foundation of Trinitie College there) he also founded an Hospitall for the poore, and named it Maison de Dieu, or Gods house, in the towne of Calcis, he redified or new builded S. Stephens Chappell at Westminster, altering the same into a colledge of a Deane, 12. secular Chanons, 12. Vicars, and other ministers and seruants, and indued it with reuenues to the value of 500. pounds by the yere. He also redified or almost newly builded the Castle of Windsor. He also augmenting the Chappell there, which his progenitors Kings of England, had before erected of 8. Chanons, he added to them a Deane and 15. Chanons, 24. poore and impotent Knights, & other Ministers. Quene Mary was the first that brought water to that castle by Conduite, which before was wayered by welles. It remaineth of record which I haue seene, that thee hath beene payed at Windsor for wine pressed out of grapes, that were wont to grow in the little Parke there.

Calkuinster founded by King Edward the third.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF KING RICHARD THE SECOND.

An. Reg. 1.

RICHARD the Second, borne at Burdeaux, the Sonne of Prince Edward being but eleuen yeres old began his raigne the 21. day of June in thepeere of our Lord God 1377. In beauty, bountie, and libra lity, he far palledall his progenitors, but was ouer-much giuen to rest and quietnes, louing little deds of armes, and for that he was yong, was most ruled bypoung counsell, and regarded nothing the counsels of the sage and wise men of the Realme, which thing turned this land to great trouble, and himselfe to extreame misery, as is by these verses declared.

Vox clamantis in Io. Gower.

When this King first began to raigne,
the Lawes neglected were,
Whereforé good fortune him forsooke,
and th'earth did quake for feare,
The people also whom he pol'd,
against him did rebell,
The time doth yet bewaile the woes,
that Chronicles doe tell.
The foolish counsell of the lewd,
and young he did receiue,
And graue aduice of aged heads,
he did reiect and leaue,
And then for greedy thirst of Coyne,
some subiects he accused,
To glide their goods into his hands,
thus he the Realme abused.

On the 16. of June, before the old King was departed, the Londoners hauing certaine knowledge, that he could not liue any season, sent the chiefest and most worthy citizens of their citie, vnto Kenington, where the Prince and his mother remained, to declare vnto the said Prince their ready willes, and god will to accept him for their true and lawfull King and Gouernour, John Pulpot being especially appointed to doe the message, began his Oration thus.

John Philpot his Oration to the Prince

Wee bring newes, most excellent Prince (which without great sorrow wee cannot report) of the vndoubted death of our most inuincible King Edward your Grandfather, who hath kept and gouerned vs, and this Kingdome (as I may say) a long time in quiet peace: and now by the manifest tokens of death in him, he hath ceased to be our Gouernour: wherefore wee beseech you on the behalfe of the Citizens, and City of London, that you will haue recommended to your good grace, the Citie your chamber, whom wee knowledge chiefly to be our King, to whose rule we onely submit our selues, and bow to your will and pleasure vnder your dominion to serue in word and deede. And that wee execute further our message, your reuerence knoweth, your City to be vnspeakably troubled for that you haue withdrawne your presence from it, which is knowne to be so much at your deuotion, that the Citizens are not only ready to spend their goods for your sake, but also to ieopard their liues. Therefore we come to your presence, to beseech you that it may please you to remaine there, both to the comfort of vs your Citizens

As and

and also to the subuersion & solace of your selfe. We further beseech you most noble Prince, that you would vouchsafe to make some good and profitable end of the discord, which lately hath risen through the malice of some, and not to the commodity of any, but to the hinderance and discommodity of many, betwixt our Citizens, and the Duke of Lancaster. To these and other like words uttered by the said John Philpot, it was answered by the Prince, and his Councell, that he would doe his endeauour to satisfie their desire in all things, and so being sent away, they returned bringing glad tidings to their fellow Citizens.

The next morrow there was sent to London, on the Kings behalfe, the Lord Latimer, Sir Nicholas Bond, Sir Simon Burley, and Sir Richard Adderberry, which in name of the new King, saluted the Cittizens with their message of the new Kings towardnes, who promised to loue them and their citie, and to vse to them as they had requested: they also told the Cittizens how the King had spoken to the Duke for them, and how the Duke in all things had submitted himselfe to the Kings will, that they also should submit themselues in the same manner: and then the King would endeuour himselfe that peace should be concluded, to the honour and commodity of the Cittizens: but the cittizens fearing such forme of peace as might happen, answered, that they would not in any wise so do, especially because they knew the King to be but young, & weake to helpe them in such a troublesome businesse, and that their cause should not be discussed by him, but by their deadly enemies, and so they should bee punished at their pleasure, if they consented to the Kings request in that Article. At length after talke had vpon this businesse, fiue houres together or more, they light vpon this point, that if the said Knights would be bound to the Cittizens, that their submission should not redound to the temporall losse, or bodily harme of any cittizen, or preiudice of their citie, they would gladly obey the Kings commandement. The Knights desirous to satisfie the Kings desire, and to prouide for the quietnes of the Cittizens, vndertake by oath of fidelity, and their Knighthod, that it should not be to their dishonour, but to their commodity, if they would submitte themselues. This surety received, the cittizens take their iourney towards Shithe, where they found the new King with his mother, the Duke and the Dukes brethren: there were also many Bishops gathered about the dead body of the late King: The comming of the cittizens being knowne to the King, he straight commanded them to be called before him, the which cittizens as before, besought him to reforme the iniuries betwixt the Duke and them, affirming that they were ready in all things to submit themselues vnto his will and pleasure, not as though they confessed they had made any fault against the Duke, but as men that came at this time for the benefit of peace, and honour, aswell to the King, as the Duke, to pacifie the hearts and mittigate the displeasure of both.

The Duke of Lancaster and the Citizens of London make friends.

The Duke seeing them in this manner to haue submitted themselues to the King, though (as it was said) hee had other matters in his head, yet fearing that hee should not afterward come to so honourable conditions, if hee refused this forme of peace, fell downe at the Kings feete, and beseeched him to take the cause in hand betwixt the forme, that the Londoners had oppressed, desiring therewith, that they which had beene imprisoned for any dishonour offered him, might be by the Kings fauour released and set at liberty: And so hee did forgiue the Cittizens whatsoeuer they had committed against him, and receiued them into his full fauour, in the presence of the King, affirming with an oath, that hee would be their friend, and as carefull for their commodities as for his owne, and in token of an vnfained peace, hee kissed euery one of them before the King, and so with quietnesse, the Cittizens returned home, praising God, that had brought the Duke to such humilitie, who a little before had demanded in great pride of the Cittizens for his fauour, one hundred Hogsheads of wine, and an infinit number of precious stones. The Friday next following, the Duke and Cittizens came to Westminster, where was proclaimed the vnion and agreement betweene them.

The King accepteth the Duke and Bishop of Winchester.

The young King desirous at his entring to the Kingdome, to haue an vnity amongst his subiects in euery place, brought the Duke and the Bishoppe of Winchester to be at one, and wheresoeuer hee knew in his Realme any discord and variance to be risen, he take the quarrells in his hands, promising to make a good and fruitfull end for both parties. He also deliuered Peter de la More, (a Knight of Herefordshire) out of the Castle of Nottingham, where he had long beene emprisoned, and by his letters patens, released him of all things whatsoeuer, in the name of the King, might be layde vnto him.

Peter de la More set at liberty.

Vpon the feast day of Saint Peter and Paul, the Apostles, in the morning, the Frenchmen, with fiue vessells, great and small, inuaded the Towne of Rye, and with small labour, tooke the Towne, albeit, the Towne dwellers vpon confidence of strength, had taken order that none should remoue their goods from the towne, that at the least wise for loue of their goods, they might with more courage abide the conflicte: yet notwithstanding, they turne their backes in the time of battell, whereupon it came to passe, that by their want of heart and courage, the Towne was taken with all their goods.

The French men take the Towne of Rye, and burne it.

The Abbot of Battayle hearing of so lamentable a report, put his men in armour to defend the billages nigh adioyning, and one of the enemies going forth for forage, being taken by one of the Abbots men, declared that the French-men purposed to keepe the said Towne for ten dayes, whereupon the Abbot removed with his power to the towne of Winchelsey, which towne, (as the prisoner reported) the French purposed to assault, but when they saw the Abbot and his men armed in that Towne, dispairing of further entrance into that Cemetrie, they beginne to set fire on the Towne of Rye, and within fiue houres brought it wholly vnto ashes, with the Church that then was there of a wonderfull beauty, conueying away, foure of the richest of that Towne prisoners, and taking 66. left not aboue eyght in the Towne: 42. hogsheads of wine they carried from thence to their ships, with the rest of their booty, and left the Towne desolate.

The Towne of Rye consumed with fire.

King Richard the second. Foure Earles, Knights made.

King Richard was crowned with great solemnity at Westminster, by the hands of Simon Sudbury, Archbishop of Canterbury, on the 16. day of July. At this coronation King Richard created foure new Earles, Thomas of Woodstocke, King Edwards youngest sonne Earle of Buckingham and Northampton, to whom hee gaue 1000. markes, yerely, out of his treasury, till hee had prouided him Land to that value. Thomas Mowbery of Apilehme, alias Archilme, Earle of Nottingham, Guilchard, or Gifford Angolisme, Knight of Gascoigne, and Master to the King, Earle of Huntington, to whom he likewise gaue 1000. marks yerely out of his treasury, till hee had prouided him lands to that value. And Henry Percy, Earle of Northumberland. He also made 9. Knights, to wit, Edward, Sonne to Edmond, Earle of Kent, John, sonne to Thomas Roos of Hamelake, Richard de Gray of Rotherfield, Richard, sonne to Gilbert Talbot, Gerard, sonne to Warine de Lisle, Michael, sonne to Michael de la Pole, Richard de Poynings, Robert de Harrington, and Thomas de la More.

Michael, sonne to Michael.

Sir John Burleigh Knight, the Kings Chamberlaine, Custos of Nottingham Castle, was also for terme of life by patent, made keeper of the forrest of Sherwood. And Simon Burleigh Knight, his brother, was made Constable of Windlesore Castle, Wigmore, Guilford, and the Mannor of Kenington, and also Maister of the Kings Falcons at his Mues neere Charing crosse by Westminster; this Sir Simon Burleigh had his house in London, in Thames street, betweene Paynards Castle and Paules wharfe, which house sometime belonged to the Abbey of Fiscampe, and by reason of the wars in France, came to the Kings hands.

Mues for the Kings Falcons.

About the same time, Henry Percy, Marshall of England, and Earle of Northumberland, resigned the rod of his office, and went home to his Countrey, in whose place, Iohn of Arundale, brother to the Earle of Arundale, was sent, who valiantly resisted the French men, when they assailed the Towne of South-hampton, and manfully kept them off from entring the Towne, being chased to the Sea.

About the same time, of a small cause, discord rose in the forge of Rochesborough, betwixt the English men and the Scots, and certaine on both sides being slaine, the Scots were put to the worse. Whereupon, being turned into a fury, shortly returning to the Towne with the Earle of Dunbarre, they entred in the night, slew the Townesmen, spoyled their goods, and committed the towne to the fire: which thing being knowne, the new Earle of Northumberland sorrowing inwardly euen at the heart for the death of the slaine townes-men, determined to reuenge their death vpon the enemies entring into Scotland with 10000. men, he toke paines in the land of the Earle of Dunbarre, for the space of 7. dayes together, burning by all that came in his way, & returned with his people.

The Towne of Rochesborough burned by the Scots.

The 21. of August, the Frenchmen take the vnwinable (that I may so call it) Ile of Wight more by craft, then by force, which Ile had not been taken by any men, if the same had beene well kept with diligent watch, but the euer assured security of the Iland men, brought on them their destruction, and to the French vnhoped-for victory. Indeed the French-men being driuen on the shore by tempest, attempted to enter the Ile, supposing the Iland men had not beene aware of their comming: but the purpose of the French was not vnknowne to the watchmen, and therefore they suffered them to enter on the land, to the end, that after so many were come on land, as they supposed they might deale with, the residue should be kept off, but it chanced otherwise then they thought, for as was said, some being entred, when the Wight-men would haue stopped the other, the Frenchmen pressed forward with such force, that they repulsed the Iland men from their ground, so that they were driuen to seek refuge by hiding themselues.

Frenchmen win the Ile of Wight.

The French therfore hauing thus gotten this Iland, did much hurt in slaying the inhabitants burning certain townes, & taking the substance from the people: at length coming to the castle, & thinking to haue won it with small ado, they finde there a pyck of incredible sharpenes, for Sir H. Tirel keeper of the said castle, boldly coming to encounter them, made great slaughter among them, by reason whereof they left from assayling that castle, & from thencefoorth thinking it not good to dwell so neere a serpent, they gathered together what spoyle they might of the Ile, and constrained the Islanders to get of their friends without the Ile, 1000 marks of siluer for the sauing of their houses from burning & for the residue of their goods. Whereuer taking of them an oath of fidelity, not to resist them for the space of one peare, whensoeuer it should please them to land there, they departed thence to their gallies, and againe coasted the shore about till they came to the town of Winchelsey, where vnderstanding the Abbot of Battell was come to defend it, they sent him word to redeeme the towne, vnto whom the Abbot answered, he needed not to redeeme the thing that was not lost, but willed them to desist from woorking the towne vpon paine of that which might follow. The French enraged therewith at his answere, requested him that if hee would not haue peace, hee would send forth to fight man to man, or more in number if hee would: to try the matter in view of armes: but neyther would the Abbot admitte the one request or the other, saying, hee was a religious man, and therefore not to admitte such

The French betray Winchelsey. The Abbot of Battell defendeth it.

petitions, and that he came not hither to fight, but to defend and preserue the peace of the country. These things being heard, the Frenchmen supposing that the Abbot and his people wanted courage, they assaulted the Towne with such instruments of warre, as cast forth stones farre off, not ceasing from noone till euening, but by the laudable prowes of the Abbot, and such as were with him, the French preuailed nothing, but left it as they found it.

Life of gun-s.

The towne of Hastings burnt.

In the meane time whilest they were busie thus at Winchelsey, they sent part of their company vnto Hastings, where finding the Towne almost empty, they burnt it.

Payot of Lewes taken by the French.

The same yere the Frenchmen comming by ar Rattingdon in Sussex, neere to the Towne of Lewes, the Payot of Lewes with a small company met them, and was taken by the Frenchmen, that came vpon him, and carried to their ships with 2. knights, to wit, S. John Fallesley, and S. Tho. Cheyne, and an Esquire, called Ioh. Brokas, amongst other a certaine Esquire that had bin long in seruice with the Payot of Lewes a French-man by nation, fought so manfully against the Frenchmen, that his bowells falling from him to his feet, he yet pursued them. There was slaine in that battell about 100. Englishmen, and the Frenchmen returned home with all their Nauy, which was 37. Gallets, and 8. Caruels of Spaine, and certain Barks: straight waies therefore as they came to land, some of them went vnto the siege, that was about Arde, and by reason which alwaies is familiar to them, the keper of the Castle being an Almaine, to wit, the Lord of Gunney deliuered to them the Towne, they straight got the Castle also, for the which, the same keper being taken by Sir Hugh Calueley, keper of Caleis, was sent into England, and committed to prison.

Parliament at London.

The same time, a Parliament was assembled at London, which continued from Michaelmas till Saint Andrewes tide. In the which Parliament were almost all those Knights, with the said Peter de la More, which so nobly had stood forth in the Parliament, which rightly was called the good Parliament, for the increase of their country, and profit of their kingdome. Thus therefore taking in hand against the petions in the same place, as they left them, they earnestly stood in their matter, to haue Alice Pierce banished, who contemning the Statute of Parliament, and the oath which she had taken, durst take on her to enter the Kings Court to compell him, and to haue of him what pleased her; who although she had corrupted many of the Lords, and all the Lawes with money, the which not onely secretly, but openly pleaded for her; yet by the diligence and wisedome of the said Knights, she being conuict by her owne mouth, was banished, and her moueable goods confiscate to the Kings vse: but in the yere next following, to wit, the second yere of King Richard, the said Alice Pierce, then wife to William Windsore Knight, was pardoned, and in the 7th yere of the same King, her goods before confiscate by Parliament, were againe restored and recompenced.

Alice Pierce banished.

There was granted to the King of the Clergy two tenths to be payed that yere, with condition, that from henceforth the King should not extort from his Subiects by such petitions or demands, but like of his owne, and continue his warre, for as it was answered there, his owne goods pertaining to the Crowne, sufficed both to the finding of his houle, and maintaining of his warres, if the same were bestowed by fit Ministers, and for the keeping of the money, two Cittizens of London were appointed, William Wallworth, and John Philpot. The Englishmen hearing of a number of Spanish ships, to remaine at Sluce for want of winde, assembling a great company of armed men, and a great Nauy, meant to take the Seas: their chiefe Captaines, were Thomas of Woodstock, Earle of Buckingham, the Duke of Lancaster, the Lord Latimer, the Lord Robert Fitz-Walter, Sir Robert Knowles, and many other valiant personages, who being entred the Sea, tasted fortune disfauourable: for by a tempestuous winde that rose, their shippes were scattered in sunder, their masts were broken down, their sailes rent, and many of the small vessells that were victuallers were drowned: at length the ships got together againe, and arriued in England, and being now rigged ecstsones fraught with men, and to the Sea they goe. About the same time, Sir Hugh Calueley making a iourney towards Bulloigne, found a Barge in the Hauen of the Towne, that bare the name of the Towne, and another that was the French Kings, and 24. other vessells more and lesse, all the which, with a great part of the fabrubes of Bulloigne, he caused to be dispoyled, taking with him whatsoeuer was thought to be desired, with certaine prisoners: he droue afore him a great booty of sheepe and oxen, which he found pasturing neere the Towne, which might well serue to victuall Caleis for a great time: he recouered the same day, the Castle of Marke, which through negligence before had beene lost.

Two tenths granted by the Clergy.

Hugh Calueley his iourney toward Bulloigne.

King Richard kept his Christmas at Windesore. 1378.

The English Fléete, whereof we spake, returned without any great good successe, they take an eight Spanish shippes in the Brittish coasts, neer to Bzest, and more had taken if their businesse had beene as well done, as was pretended: and therefore the Fléete returned home, so tossed with stormes and contrary weather, and after with intestine discord, that it seemed there wanted amongst them Gods fauour. The Lord Percy (this Fléete remaining for the mending of his shippes, whilest the other was abroad) went now to the Sea, with a great ship, and some small vessells, and meeting with 50. ships laden with French wares and Merchandize, of which some were of Flanders, some of Spaine, he set on them all, who beholding his bold enterprize, and thinking that he had some aydes at hand, gaue ouer to make resistance, and so 25. escaping by slight, 22. yelded themselues to the said Tho. Lord Percy. Sir Hugh Calueley, with a power secretly armed, went to ỹ town of

Staple, where the faire was then, to the which were come many Marchantmen from Bulloigne, Mutterell, Amiens and Paris, where he falling on them that were vnarmed, slew many, tooke many to be put to their ransomes, sacked all the goods, and set fire in the Towne, so that it was wholly consumed, few places excepted. This done, he returned to Caleis with his men in safety, bringing from that Faire, wares which returned to the great profit of the Calisians many yeres after.

Sir Hugh Calueley goeth to the towne of Staple.

The men of Winchelsey and Rye saile into Normandy, and spoyle the towne of Peters-Hauen.

The men of Winchelsey and Rye, gathered a great number of people together, and imbarked themselues towards Normandy, desirous to requite the losses which before they had receiued, and so in the night arriuing in a Towne called Peters-Hauen, entred the same, slaying so many as they met, and those whom they thinke able to pay ransome, they carry to their ships: they spoyled the houses with the Churches, where they found many rich spoiles, which sometime had bin by the French men set from Rye, and especially the bells, and such like, which they shipped, set the rest on fire, and then they land at Wilet not farre from thence, where they practised the like cheuance, and so with their rich spoile turned home.

The men of Rye fetch their bels out of Normandy.

About the same time, Iohn, Duke of Lancaster requested that the mony granted to the King by the Clergy and Laity, might be committed to his custody, affirming that hee would keepe the enemies off from the coasts of England, by the space of one yere with that money, and moreouer bring to passe some further great commodity, to whose importunate petition, the Lords, although against their wills, agreed. They appoint thereto se the first day of March to meete in Councell, in which, every of those should goe forth on his iourney: and lest the Sea should in the meane time want those that should keepe it, there were nine shippes hyred of them of Baion to defend the Sea and Land from incursions of the French and others. These shippes being furnished with sufficient numbers of armed men, within a short time coasting the Seas, met the Nauy Marchandize of the Spaniards, and entering battell with them, in short time take fourteene of their ships laden with wines and other Marchandise, and returned into England ioyfully: vnto Sir Robert Knowles, Captaine of Bzest, they gaue the first fruits of their prey, 100. tun of their best wines, as they passed by him homewards.

Robert Knowles.

In the meane time, Henry the bastard, calling himselfe King of Spaine, hearing that they of Baion had done such harme vnto his people, and that the Duke of Lancaster had prepared a great number to enter the Sea, he was sore afraid, thinking that he minded not only to defend the Sea, but rather to seeke his kingdome, which by right of his wife the lawfull inheritor of Spaine, he meant to challenge: wherefore the said Henry commanded a Nauy to be prepared of all his Land, that hee might stay the said Duke from entering his Countrey, and if hee might, to take him prisoner, which happily they had done, if the King of Portugale with almost an innumerable number had not entred the kingdome of Spaine, the selfe-same time that the bastard Henry prepared himselfe against the Duke, deferring his iourney from day to day: they that were appointed Captaines ouer the Nany with certaine men of warre, got them to Sea, there to stay for the Dukes coming, esteeming it more glorious to liue on the Sea by preyes, taking from the enemies, then to liue by spoyling of their owne Country-men at home.

When they had certaine daies watted vp and downe the Seas, the Spaniards met them with an armed company, so that either part in hope of prey, ioyned together in fight; but our men hauing the wind and weather contrary to them, lost the victory to their enemies, some escaping by flight, and some being taken, amongst the which Sir Hugh Courtney, a noble Knight was one.

Mercer a Scot tooke ships of Scarborow.

About the same time, Iohn Mercer a Scot, gathering together no small number of French men, Scots and Spaniards, set vpon certaine ships of Scarborow, tooke them and led them into Scotland, this her did in reuenge of his fathers iniury, who was before taken by the Englishmen, and kept prisoner in the Castle of Scarborow.

John Philpot a Citizen of London, a man of iolly wit, and very rich in substance, considering the want of the Duke of Lancaster, and other Lords, that ought to haue defended the Realme, and lamenting the oppressions of the inhabitants, hired with his owne money, to the number of a thousand Souldiours, the which might take from the said Iohn Mercer, both his ships and goods, which hee had by roying taken, and defend the Realme of England from such incursions: and it came to passe within a small time, that his hired men tooke the said Io. Mercer with all his ships, which he had violently taken from Scarborow, and 15. Spanish ships that were laden with much riches, and were with him in aid at that present. There was great ioy made among the people, all men praysing that worthy mans bountifulnesse, and loue towards the King. The Earles and Barones seeing so laudable an act, atchieued by Io. Philpot, tooke it grieuously, although they knew themselues guilty: first they secretly lie in wait, to doo him some displeasure, and after they speake against him openly, saying, it was not lawfull for him to doe such things without the counsell of the King and Realme; certaine of the Lords, but the chiefe being Hugh, Earle of Stafford, that rehearsed these things thus against him, were answered by the said Iohn Philpot: Sir, know (sayeth he) that I neither sent my money nor men to the danger of the Seas, that I should take from you or your fellowes the good renowne of Chiualry, and winne it to me, but being sorrowfull to see the peoples misery, in my Countrey, which now through your slothfulnesse, of the most Noble Lady of Nations, is brought to lie open to the spoyling of euery bilest Nation, when there is not one of you that doth put his hand to the defence thereof. I haue

John Philpot of London. Ann. Reg.

therefore set forth my selfe and mine, for the saving of my Nation and Countrey: the Earle had not to answer.

Murther in the Church of Westminster. Tho. Walsing.

The 11th day of August, certaine wicked persons of the Kings house being armed, at night season time entred the Church of Westminster Abbey, and there set upon two valiant Esquires, Iohn Schakell and Robert Hawley, which had escaped out of the Tower of London, to the said Abbey, for refuge of Sanctuary: they slew the said Robert Hawley in the Quire before the Priors staff, and slew a Monke which intreated them to spare the said Robert in that place. Sir Ralph Ferreis, and Sir Alan Buxule. Captaine of the Tower (some say the Lord Latimer) were the Captaines of this mischiefe.

The foresaid two Esquires, Robert Hawley, and John Schakell, in the battell of Nazers in Spaine, tooke the Earle of Denepriloner, who deliuered vnto them his Sonne for a pledge: and because they would not present the said Earles sonne to the King, who would giue them little, or nothing for him, the foresaid Alan Buxule, with other were sent to doe this mischiefe, who slew the one, and cast the other in prison.

1379. Tho. Walsing. Werwicke Castle taken by the Scots

The Scots began to rebell, and a Squire of theirs, called Alexander Ramsey, with forty persons, in a night tooke the Castle of Berwick, but the ninth day following, the Earle of Northumberland recouered it, and slew the Scots that were therein.

The Marchants of London wickedly slew a rich Marchant of Genoa, for that he would carry to a better market the spices that he had promised to bring into this Countrey, the doers whereof were after apprehended, and some for that fact executed, as after shall appeare.

So great a mortality of men happened in the North parts of England, as neuer had beene seene before, which the Scots seeing, ranged thorow, and slew with the sword them that were sicke of the plague, and so pursued them that had not the plague, that they drove out of the Countrey, almost all the able men.

Pestilence in the North. Tho. Walsing.

Care.

In a Parliament at London it was decreed, that euery Duke should pay tenne marks to the King, the Archbishoppes the like, Earles, Bishoppes, and mitered Abbots should giue fiue marks, and euery Monke forty pence, no Religious person, man nor woman, Parson, Vicar, or Chaplein escaped this Tare. Iohn Mountfort, Duke of Byptaine returned to his Countrey, where hee was received with great honour.

An Regr. Wheat and Wine cheape. Tho. Walsing.

A Bushell of Wheat was sold for 6. pence: a gallon of white Wine 6. pence, and a gallon of red Wine for 4. pence.

Sir Iohn Arundale drowned.

Iohn of Arundale, brother to the Earle of Arundale, was sent to helpe the Duke of Byptaine, with many other Noble Knights, and Esquires, who beginning their voyage from Plimmouth with spoyling their owne Countrey, rauishing wiues, widdowes, and virgins, and robbing of Churches, were by Tempest driuen on the Rockes of a certaine Iland in Ireland, where they were all most miserably drowned, with their Treasure and prouisions which was of inestimable value. Sir Thomas Banister, Sir Roger Trumpington, Sir Nicholas Kiriell, Sir Thomas Dale, Sir Iohn Sentcler, and sir other Knights, and many other perished there, besides threescore women, whom they had throwne into the Sea, to lighten their ships, and this was done on the 16. of December.

Cro. maiorit. Lon.

In a Parliament at London was granted to the King a tenth of the Ecclesiasticall persons, and a fifteenth of the secular, vpon condition, that no other Parliament should be holden from the Calends of March, till Michaelmas.

1380. Parliament at London.

A combat was fought at Westminster in the Kings presence, betweene Io. Ansley, Knight, and Thomas Cartington Esquire, whom the foresaid Knight had appealed of treason, for selling the Castle of Saint Saulours, which the Lord Chandos had builded in the Ile of Constantine in France, and the Knight ouercame the Esquire.

A combat at Westminster.

Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham, Thomas Percy, Hugh Calueley, Robert Knowles, Lord Basset, Sir Iohn Harlestone, William of Windsore, appeached and tryed Knights, were sent with a great power to ayde the Duke of Byptaine, who were conueyed to Caleis, and from thence rode about thorow France, spoyling the Countrey, and slaying the people to the borders of Byptaine, and entered the same without losse, either of man or beast.

In this iourney, Sir Iohn Philpot, Cttizen of London, deserued great commendations, who hired ships for them of his owne charges, and with his owne mony released the armie which the fouldiours had gaged for their victuals, more then a thousand in number.

Iohn Philpot, his good seruice.

The Scots entred Cumberland, Westmerland, and the Forrest of Engleswood, slew the inhabitants, drowe away the Cattel, and robbed the Parket and Towne of Pearesh, and whiles the Earle of Northumberland prepared to haue beene reuenged, the King sent Letters to the contrary. Iohn Vian Knight, with the French Kings Gallies, tooke the Towne of Winchelsea, put the Abbot of Battell to flight, and tooke one of the Monkes that came thither armed.

An. 1380. Frenchmen robbe Winchelsea.

Hee also burnt the Townes of Apledor, and Rye, Hastings, and Portesmouth, about the feast of Saint Laurence.

The 8. day of September, foure Galleies of Genes, came to Grauesend, and burnt a great part of the towne, returned with great spoiles, not receiuing any hurt.

The Towne of Grauesend and part burnt by the French.

About this time, saith Polidor, the making of Gunnes was found, by a certaine Almaine, who hauing the powder of Brimme-stone in a Mortar which hee had beaten for a medicine, and couered with a stone, as hee strooke fire, a sparke chanced to fall into the powder, whereby a flame out of the Mortar raised the stone a great height, which after hee had perceiued, hee made a pipe of yron, and tempered the powder with oyle, and so finished that deadly engine,

Gunnes inuented. Polidor. Sebastian. Munst.

Blondus. R. Valaerā.

gine, as reporteth Blondus and R. Valaeranus. The first that vsed that to their behalfe and profit, were the Venetians against the inhabitants of Genoa: but sure it was long before this time.

Parliament at Northampton.

During the Parliament at Northampton, beginning the first of November, was hanged Iohn Kirby, that slew the Marchant of Genoa, whom wee spake of before.

Great Taxe.

In this Parliament, an exceeding great tare was demanded, which afterwards was cause of great disturbance: of all Religious persons, men and women fiue shillings eyght pence, secular Priests as much, and euery person, man or woman foure pence to the King, which was payd. It was also ordained, that euery couple wedded should pay 2. shillings for euery foote of heath, and also homegeld, but this was neuer asked.

1381. T. Walsing.

After the feast of Christmas, a Councel was holden at London, in the which, Sir Thomas Brantingham, Bishop of Exceter, was discharged of the Office of Lord Treasurer, and Sir Robert Hales, Prior of Saint Johns Hospitall of Jerusalem in England, was placed in his roome, a Noble and valiant Knight, and a hardy person, but such a one as pleased not the Commons.

Carickes fraught with wine came to Southampton.

About the same time, came vessels, called Carickes, to South-hampton, fraught with all kinds of Spices, Wines, and other Marchandizes, which greatly inriched the inhabitants of the whole Realme, but especially them that inhabited thereabout.

John Wicliffe

The same time, Iohn Wicliffe, parson of Lutterworth in Leycester-shire, laboured in his preaching, to proue, that after the consecration in the Masse made by the Priest, very bread and wine were there present as before, Christ being there assistant, as in euery place, but more specially, and the same bread not to be more worth then other bread, except onely for the blessing of the Priest, and therefore he affirmed that Christians were deceiued in honouring of the said bread, which was a thing without life, for any thing that had life, was better then that which lacked life.

An army sent to ayde the King of Portugale.

A great Army was assembled and sent to the ayde of the Duke of Lancaster, against the King of Spaine, for the said Duke affirmed, that it was expedient for this Realme, that an host of men, with abundance of money should be sent to the king of Portugale, that he might thereby be bound to ayde the King of England, and stop the passage of the Straits of Gibaltare, or of Soyor, from the Galleis, that must of necessity passe by the same straits, to come to infest the British, or English Ocean, for so should England be safe, and France should be deceiued: Captaines appointed to this Army, were Edmond of Langley, Earle of Cambridge, William, Lord Beauchampe, the Lord Boeterax, Sir Mathew Gourney, and many other Knights, the which passed the Seas, and prosperously came to Lisbone, and were thankefully receiued of the King, but these were not able to assaile the King of Spaine, yet greatly profitting Portugale, they defended the confines, and stopped the Spaniards that they should not enter the Countrey as enemies: our men oft times inuaded the Spaniards, and boldly abode in that land, vntill a greater number of warriers might be sent into them out of England.

A great rebellion in England, and the causes thereof.

In this meane time, the Realme of England, appointed to be punished for her sinnes, was suddenly plagued in such sort, that if God had not sooner suppressed the same, both the gouernment had beene vtterly destroyed, and the whole Realme made a laughing stocke and scorne to all Nations.

In the last yere (as is aforesaid) was granted to the King a grieuous tare, or tollage of his Subiects, both spirituall and temporall, through the which was raised in England, a shipwracke of great troubles: for diuers Courtiers desirous to enrich themselues with other mens goods, informed the King and his Court, that the tillage was not gathered by faithfully to the Kings vse by the Collectours: whereupon they offered to the King, that they would pay a great summe of money for the farme, of that which they would gather, ouer and besides that which had beene payd, if they might be by the King thereunto authorized. And some of them getting the Kings Letters and Authority, sate in diuers places of Kent and Essex, and handled the people euery sore and vncourteously, almost not to be spoken, for the leuying of the said summe of money, which some of the people taking in euill part, they secretly tooke counsell together, gathered assistants, and resisted the ernators, riling against them, of whom some they slew, some they wounded, and the rest fled.

Commissioners sent into Essex to Tho. Bampton.

The King therefore ordained certaine Commissioners to enquire, how they were leuied, amongst the which, one was sent into Essex to Thomas de Bampton, being sitting one day before whitsontide, at Brentwood, enquiring how the Collectors had leuied the subsidy before said, all the people of Fobbing answered, they would not pay one penny more then they had done, whereof they had his acquittance, whereupon the said Thomas did grieuously threaten them, hauing with him two Sergeants at Armes of the Kings, whereupon they of Fobbing, of Curringham, and of Stanford, assembled to the number of more then one hundred, went to T. Bampton, and gaue him that answer, that they would neyther treate with him, or pay any such money as was demanded: wherefore the said Bampton commanded the Sergeants to arrest and put them in prison, but the Townsmen made them all to fly towards London, to the Kings Councell. Whereupon Sir Robert Belknape, chiefe Iustice of the common Pleas, was sent downe with commission of Trailbaston, and before him sundry inditements of those men; who comming before him, called him traytor, to the King and Realme, and furthermore compelled him to sweare vpon a booke, that hee would no more sit in any such Sessions: and to cleare to them the names of the Iurors, whose heads they chopped off as they found them.

Fobbing. Curringham. Stamford in Essex.

Sir Robert Belknape Iustice.

Iurors heads chopped off.

them and destroyed their houses, which made Sir Robert Belknape in haste to ryde his house. This done, the Commons assembled before Twightlintide to a great number: those tooke all the Clerkes of the said Thomas Bampton and chopped off their heads, which they carried before them on poles. At that same time, the great Prior of Saint Iohn of Jerusalem by London Prior of Iohns Canons. hauing a goodly and delectable Pannot in Esser, where him was obtained victuals, and other necessaries, for the vse of a Chapiter Generall, and great abundance of faire stuffe, of Wines, Arras, clothes, and other prouision for the knights brethren: The Commons entered this Pannot, eat vp the victuals, and prouision of Wine, three tunne, and spoyled the Pannot, and the ground with great dammage: then they sent diuers Letters into Kent, Suffolke, and Northfolke, to rise with them, and departing themselues into diuers companies, committed many outrages: shortly after, to wit, on Monday after Whitsuntide, a Knight of the Kings house, named Sir Simon Burley, hauing in his company two Seriants at armes, of the Kings, came to Grauesend, where hee challenged one to be his bondman, for whom, men of the towne did greatly intreat him to shew fauour, but Sir Simon would not take lesse then 300. pound of siluer for his manumission, and therefore arrested him, and sent him to Rochester Castle, whereupon the Commons of Kent beganne to rise, for which the King sent a Iustice of Tralybalon, with Iohn Legge a Seriant of Armes, there to sit, hauing with them many Inditements, but as they would haue sate at Canterbury vpon there commission, they were resisted by the Commons, who daily grew to a great multitude, and being without a Captaine, came to Dartford, where they tooke counsell, and appointed that none which were dwelling within twelue miles of the Sea, should goe with them, but keepe the coast of the Sea from enemies, saying there were moze Kings then one, which they would not suffer, nor haue any other but King Richard. On the Friday after, they came to Rochester, and there ioyned with the Esser rebels, who together strongly besieged the Castle, and deliuered the man of Grauesend with other: then they made Wat Tighler of Maidstone their Captaine, who with his company on Sunday after Trinity Sunday, came to Canterbury, where they commanded the Monkes to chuse them an Archbishop, for hee that now is, (quoth they) is a traytor, and shall be beheaded. Then they swoze the Maioz, Baliffes and Commons of the Towne to be true to King Richard, and the lawfull Commons of England. They beheaded three men of that Towne, and then taking with them 500. men of that Towne toward London, left the rest to keepe the said Towne. This tumult thus begunne in Kent, by meanes of Sir Simon Burley, was also increased by diuers other actions in other places, amongst the which, as I haue noted in a Chronicle sometimes belonging to the Monastery of Saint Albons, one of the Collectors of the grotes, or polle money, comming to the house of one Iohn Tylar, in the Towne of Dartford in Kent, demanded of the Tylars wife, for her husband, her selfe, her seruants, and for their daughter (a young maiden) euery one of them a grote; which the Tylars wife denied not to pay, sauing for her daughter, whom she said was but a child, not to be counted a woman: quoth the Collector, that will I soone wit, and taking the maiden, turned her vp to search whether shee were vndergrowne with hayre, or not, (for in many places they made the like triall) whereupon her mother cryed out, neighbours came running in: and her husband being at worke in the same Towne, tyling of an house, when hee heard thereof, caught his lathing staffe in his hand, and ranne reaking home, where reasoning with the Collector, who made him to bold, the Collector answered with stout words, and strake at the Tylar, whereupon the Tylar auoyding the blow, smote the Collector with his lathing staffe, that the braine flew out of his head, where-through great noyse arose in the streetes, and the poore people being glad, euery one prepared to support the said Iohn Tylar. Thus the Commons being drawne together, went to Maidstone, and from thence backe againe to Blacke-heath, and so in short time, they stirred all the Countrey, in a manner, to the like commotion, and forthwith diserting the wayes that lead to Canterbury, arrest all passengers, compelling them to sweare: first, that they should keepe their allegiance vnto King Richard, and to the Commons, and that they should accept no King that was named Iohn, for enuy they bare vnto Iohn, Duke of Lancaster, who named himselfe King of Castile, and that they should be ready whensoeuer they were called, and that they should agree to no Lare to be leuied from thencefoorth in the kingdome, nor consent to any, except it were a fifteene.

Sir Simon Burley by a commission in Kent arrested one of Grauesend, sent him to Rochester Castle. Commons of Kent began to rise.

Rochester Castle besieged, prisoner set out.

The Commons went to Canterbury and sware the Maioz to the King and them.

Lib. S. Albons.

The fame of these doings spread into Sussex, Hertford, Essex, and Cambridgeshires, Northfolke, Suffolke, &c. and when such assemblings of the common people daily tooke increase, and that their number was now made almost infinite, so that they feared no man to resist them, they began to shew some such Acts as they had considered in their minds, and take in hand to behead all men of Law, as well Apprentizes, as Vtterbarristers and old Iustices, with all the Iurers of the countrey, whom they might get into their hands, they spared none whom they thought to be learned, especially if they found any to haue pen and inke, they pulled off his hoode, and all with one voyce of crying, Hale him out, and cut off his head.

Iustices, Lawyers and Iurers beheaded.

They also determined to burne all Court-Rolls, and old Monuments, that the memory of antiquities being taken away, their Lords should not be able to challenge any right on them, from that time forth. These Commons had to their Chapleine or Preacher a wicked Priest, called Sir Iohn Ball, who commelled them to destroy all the Nobility, and Clergy, so that there should be no Bishop in England, but

Lib. Eboum.

Sir Iohn Ball a wicked Priest, Chaplein to the rebels.

but one Archbishoppe, which should be himselfe, and that there should not be aboue two religious persons in one house, and their possessions should bee diuided among the lay men, for the which doctrine they held him as a Prophet. They going towards London, met diuers Lawyers, and twelue Knights of that countrey, whom they forced to sweare to maintaine them, or else to be beheaded: this being knowne to the King, on Wednesday following, hee sent messengers to demand the cause of their rising. Who answered, that they were gathered together for his safety, to destroy those that were Traytors to him and his kingdome: The King by messengers replyed, that they should cease their assemblies, vntill hee mought speake with them, and all matters should bee amended. Whereupon the Commons requested the King to come and see them on the Black-heath, and the King the third time sent word that hee would willingly come to them the next day. At what time the King being at Windsore, removed in all haste to London, whom the Maioz met, and safely brought to the Tower, whither the Archbishop of Canterbury Chancellor, the Bishop of London, the Prior of Saint Iohn Treasurer, the Earles of Buckingham, Kent, Arundale, Warwicke, Suffolke, Oxford and Salisbury, and other of the Nobility, and Gentlemen to the number of fiue hundred did come, and on Corpus Christi eue, the Commons of Kent came to Blacke-heath, three miles from London, to warre with the King, hauing displayed before them two Banners of Saint George, and three score persons. The Commons of Esser came also on the other part of the Riuer Thames, to haue also answer from the King, at what time the king being in the Tower, commanded Barges to be made ready, and taking with him his Councell, and foure Barges for his retinue, was rowed to Greenewich, where the Chancellor and Treasurer perswaded the King, that it were great folly to goe to a number of men without reason, and thereupon hee stayed. The Commons therefore sent to him, requiring to haue the heads of Iohn, Duke of Lancaster, and fifteene other Lords, whereof fourteene were present with him in the Tower, to wit, Simon Sudbury, Chancellor, Sir Robert Hales Treasurer, the Bishoppe of London, Iohn Fordham, Clerke of the priuy Seale, Robert Belknape, chiefe Iustice, Sir Ralph Ferers, Sir Robert Plesington, chiefe Baron of the Exchequer, Iohn Legge, Sergeant at armes, Thomas Pampton, and others, whereunto the King would not assent, but willed them to come to him at Windsore, on Munday next, where they should haue sufficient answer to all their demands. The Commons had a watch-word which was this: With whom hold you? and the answer was with King Richard, and the true Commons, and who could not that watch-word, off went his head. The King being warned, that if he came to the Commons, hee should be carryed about by them, and

The King sent messengers to the rebels, to demand of them the cause of their rising.

King Richard came to the Tower of London.

The Commons of Kent came to the Black-heath.

The Commons of Esser came also on the other side the Thames.

Watch-word of the commons.

John Tylar of Dartford slew one of the Collectors of monney.

The Commons of Esser went to Southwarke, brake vp the prisons.

The Commons of Esser spoyled the Archbishoppes house at Lambeth.

The Commons of Esser burnt the Manor of Highbury.

The Commons of Kent brake downe the Stewes.

The Commons entered the City of London.

The religious were in prayer and procession

The Citizens pay through nothing from any man, but bought all things at a full price: and if they found any man with their wiues, they beheaded him. Now talking with the simple Commons of procuring them liberty, and apprehending traytors (as they termed them) especially the Duke of Lancaster, they shortly got all the poore Citizens to conspire with them: and the same day, after the Sunne was got on some height, that it waxed warme, and that they had tasted all their pleasures of diuers wines, whereby they were become as drunke, (for the rich Citizens had set open their sellers to enter at their pleasure) they beganne to talke of many things, amongst the which, they exhorted each other, that going to the Sauoy, the Duke of Lancasters house, to the which there was none in the Realme to bee compared in beauty and Kateliuesse, they mought set fire on it, and burne it; this talke pleasing the Commons of the City, they straight ranne thither, and setting fire on it round about, applyed their trauell, to destroy that place: and that it mought appeare to the communalty of the Realme, that they did not any thing for couetousnesse, they caused proclamation

forced to grant them their requests whatsoeuer, hee returned toward London and entred the Tower about three of the clocke: The Commons being certified that the King was gone, they on the same day toward euening came to Southwarke, where they brake downe the houses of the Marshalsey, and loosed the prisoners, amongst other, they brake downe the house of Iohn Inworth, then Marshall of the Marshalsey, the Kings Bench, and all the houses of the Iurors, and Questmongers, containing that outrage all the night: At what time, the Commons of Esser went to Lambeth, a Mannor of the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, entred the house, spoyled and burnt all the goods, with the Bookes, Registers, and Remembrances of the Chancery. The next day being Thursday, and the feast of Corpus Christi, or the thirteenth of June: the Commons of Esser in the morning, went to the Pannot of Highbery, two miles from London, North, this mannor belonging to the Prior of Saint Iohn of Jerusalem, they wholly consumed with fire. On which day also in the morning, the Commons of Kent brake downe the fewe houses neere London Bridge, at that time in the hands of the frowes of Flanders, who had farmed them of the Maioz of London. After which, they went to London Bridge, in hope to haue entred the Citty: but the Maioz comming thither before, fortified the place, caused the Bridge to be drawne vp, and fastened a great chaine of yron a crosse, to restraine their entry. Then the Commons of Surrey, who were risen with other, cried to the wardens of the Bridge to let it downe, whereby they mought passe, or else they would destroy them all, whereby they were constrained for feare to let it down, and giue them entry, at which time the religious persons were earnest in procession and prayer for peace: the Commons passed through the Citty, and did no hurt, they tooke at a full price: and if they found any man with their wiues, they beheaded him. If they tooke any with theft they beheaded them, but destroyed nothing to the Citizens and Iurors houses, they burnt the Sauoy, but referred nothing to themselues.

clamation to be made, that none ſhould preſume to loſe his head, ſhould reſtore to the owner it to his owne by any thing that there was to be found, but that they ſhould bring ſuch plate and veſſell of gold and ſilver as were in that houſe in great plentie, and ſmall peeces, and throw the ſame into the flames, or in ſome priuie; cloſets of gold, ſilver, ſilke, and beſides, they ſhould finde Rings and Jewells ſet with precious ſtones, they ſhould bring in worſe, that the ſame might be to no vſe &c. And ſo was it done: Henry Knighton writeth, that when the rebells burnt the Sauoy, one of them (contrary to the Proclamation) tooke a goodly ſiluer peece, and hid it in his boſome, but another that eſpied him, told his fellowes, who forthwith fiercled him and tooke peece of plate into the fire, ſaying, hee be zealous of truth and iuſtice, and not theeues, or robbers. After this, they getting a rich garment of the Dukes, (commonly called a Jacke, or Jerkin) ſetting it on a ſpeares point, for a marke, they ſhot at it with their bowes and arrowes, but when they could, that way, doe it little hurt, they tooke it downe, and laying it on the ground, with their knees and arces, they all to broke it. To the number of two and thirty of thoſe rebells entred a ſeller of the Sauoy, where they dranke ſo much of ſweete wines, that they were not able to come out in time but were ſtaid in with wood and ſtones that mured up the doore, where they were heard crying and calling ſeuen daies after, but none came to help them out till they were dead.

In this meane time, the commons of Kent brake by the Fleete, and let the priſoners goe where they would: they deſtroyed and burnt many houſes, defaced the beauty of Fleetſtreete, from thence they went to the Temple to doe the like, and plucked downe the houſes, tooke off the tyles of the other buildings left, burnt to the Church, tooke out all the bookes, and euidences that were in cheſts of the Prentiſes of the Law, carryed them into the high ſtreete, and there burnt them: this houſe they ſpoyled for wrath they bare to the Prioreſſe of Saint Johns, vnto whom it belonged: after a number of them had facked this Temple, what with labour, and what with wine, being ouercome, they lay downe vnder the walles and houſing, and were ſlaine, like ſwine, one of them killing another for old grudge, and hatred, and others alſo made quicke diſpatch of them. A number of them that burnt the Temple, went from thence toward the Sauoy, deſtroying all the houſes that belonged to the Hoſpitall of S. Johns: and after they went to the place of the Biſhop of Cheſter, by the Strand, where John Fordham remained elect of Durham, they entred his ſeller, rouling out the tunnes of wine, drinking exceſſiuely, not doing any more harme. Then they went towards the Sauoy, burning many houſes of cruſtmongers. At the laſt, they came to the Sauoy, brake the gates, entred the houſe, came to the wardrobe, tooke out all the clothes they could find, which they ſet on fire, and with them burnt all the feather-beds, couerlets, (whereof one with armes was eſtemed worth 1000. marks) and all other goods that they might finde, with the houſes, and buildings belonging thereunto which were left by the Commons of the Citty of London. And (as it was ſaid) they found three barrells of gunne-powder, which they thought had beene gold, or ſiluer, thoſe they caſt into the fire, which moſt ſuddenly then they thought, blew vp the Hall, deſtroyed the houſes, and almoſt themſelues: from thence they went to Weſtminſter, burning diuers houſes, and amongſt other the houſe of Iohn Buterwike vnder-Shrieue of Middleſex, they brake the priſon at Wiſtminſter, and returned to London by Holborne, and before the Church of Saint Sepulchre, burnt the houſe of Simon the Poſtler and others, they brake the priſon of Newgate, let forth the priſoners, &c.

The ſame Thurſday, the ſaid Commons went to Saint Martins le Grand in London, and take from the high Altar in that Church one Roger Legat, chiefe ſlaue, (or queſtmonger) led him into Cheape, and cut off his head: at that time alſo they beheaded 18. in diuers places of the City. During which time, diuers of the Commons went vnto the Tower, there to haue ſpoken with the King, but could not be heard, wherefore they beſieged the Tower on that ſide towards Saint Katherins. The other Commons that were in the Citty, went to the Hoſpitall of Saint Iohn, and by the way burnt the houſe of Roger Legat lately beheaded, they burnt all the houſes belonging to Saint Johns, and then burnt the fayre Papyay of the Hoſpitall of Saint John, cauſing the ſame to burne the ſpace of ſeuen dapes after. At what time, the King being in a Turret of the Tower and ſeeing the flamnes of Sauoy, the Papyay of Saint Johns Hoſpitall, and other houſes on fire, hee demanded of his Councell what was beſt to doe in that extremity, but none of them could counſaile in that caſe. The King there in a Tower, towards Saint Katherines, made Proclamation, that all people ſhould depart to their homes peaceably, and hee would pardon them all their treſpaſſes: but they with one voyce cryed, they would not go before they had the trypayes within the Tower, and Charters to free them from all ſeruice, and other matters which they would demaund: this the King granted, and cauſed a Clerke to write in their preſence, as followeth:

Richard, King of England, and of France, doth greatly thanke his good Commons, becauſe they ſo greatly deſire to ſee and hold him for their King, and doth pardon to them all manner of treſpaſſes, miſprizions, and felonies done before this time, and willeth and commandeth from henceforth, that euery one hasten to his owne dwelling, and ſet downe all his greuances in writing, and ſend it vnto him, and he will by aduice of his lawfull Lords, and good counſell, prouide ſuch remedy as ſhall be profitable to him, to them, and to the whole Realme. Whereunto hee ſet his ſignet in their preſence, and ſent it vnto them by two Knights, one of them

H. Knighton.

The Commons burnt one of their fellowes.

H. Knighton. Others ſay 20. Rebells were ſlaine by an Archer.

The Walſingham.

The Rebells burne the Priory of Clerkenwell, and many houſes in Fleetſtreete, burne the Temple, and ſpoile the Records, and burne the Records of the Law.

The Rebells murther one another.

The Rebells thanke by the Kings Charter for burning the Temple, and burning the houſes of Lawyers, but the ſame ſhould be their owne houſes, if they had not ſtayed them.

The Rebells burne the Sauoy, and many houſes of Cruſtmongers, in the ſpoile of which one of their fellowes had like to haue been ſlaine.

them ſtanding by in a chayre aboue the reſt, that euery one might heare. During which time the King remained in the Towre, to his great griefe, for when the Commons heard the writings, they ſaid it was but a mockery, and therefore returned to London, proclaiming throw the Citty, that all the men of Law, all they of the Chauncery, and of the Exchequer, and all that could make any Writ, or Letter, ſhould be beheaded, whereſoeuer they might bee found. The whole number of the common people, were at that time diuided into three parts, of the which one part was attending to deſtroy the Sauoy of Highberry, and other places belonging to the Priory of S. John: An other company lay at the Miles end, Caſt of the Citty: The third kept at the Tower-hill, there to ſpoyle the King of ſuch victualls as were brought towards him. The company aſſembled on the Miles end, ſent to command the King, that hee ſhould come to them without delay vnarmed, or without any force, which if hee refuſed to doe, they would ſurely pull downe the Tower, neyther ſhould he eſcape alue; who taking counſell of a few, by 7. of the Cloſke, the King rode to the Miles end, with his mother, in a whirlicote (or chariot as we now terme it) and the Earles of Buckingham, Kent, Warwick, and Oxford, S. Thomas Percy, S. Robert Knowles, and the Maior of London, with diuers other Knights, & Eſquires Sir Aubery de Vere, bare the Kings Sword. Thus with a few vnarmed, the King went towards the rebells in great feare: and ſo the gates of the Tower being ſet open, a great multitude of them entred the ſame. There was the ſame time in the Tower, 600. warlikemen furniſhed with armor and weapon, expert men in armes and 600. Archers, all which did quatle in ſtomacke. For the baſeſt of the ruſtickes, not many together, but euery one by himſelfe durſt preſume to enter the Kings chamber, or his mothers, with their weapons, to put in feare each of the men of warre, Knights or other: many of them came into the Kings priuy chamber, and played the wantons, in ſitting, lying, and ſpoyling them on the Kings bed: and that more is, inuited the Kings mother to kiſſe with them, yet durſt none of thoſe men of warre (ſtrange to be ſaid) once withſtand them: they came in and out like Maſters, that in times paſt were ſlaues of moſt vile condition. Whileſt therefore, theſe ruſtickes fought the Archbiſhop with terrible noyſe and fury, running by and downe, at length finding one of his ſeruants, they charge him to bring them where his Maſter was, whome they named traytor, which ſeruant, daring doe none other, brought them to the Chappell; where, after Maſſe had beene ſayd, and hauing received the communion, the Archbiſhoppe was buſie in his prayers, for not vnknowing of their comming and purpoſe, hee had paſſed the laſt night in confeſſing of his ſinnes, and in deuout prayers. When therefore hee heard they were come, with great conſtancy, hee ſaid to his men, let vs now goe, ſurely it is beſt to dye, when it is no pleaſure to liue, and with that the tormentors entring, cried, Where is the traitor? The Archbiſhop anſwered, behold, I am the Archbiſhop who n ponſeeke, not a traytor. They therefore layd hands on him, and drew him out of the Chappell, they threw him out of the Tower gates, to the Tower-hill, where, being compaſſed about with many thouſands, and ſeeing ſundry about his head drawne in exceſſiue number, threatning to him death, he ſaid vnto them thus: what is it deare brethren you purpoſe to doe, what is mine offence committed againſt you, for which yee will kill mee, yea were beſt to take leaue, that if I be killed, who ſhall your Paſtor, there come not on you, the indignation of the iuſt reuenger, or at the leaſt, for ſuch a fact all England bee put vnder interdiction: hee could vnneath pronounce theſe words, before they crept out with an horrible noyſe, that they neither feared the interdiction, nor the Pope to be aboue them. The Archbiſhop ſeeing death at hand, ſpake with comfortable words, as hee was an eloquent man, and wiſe, beyond all wiſe Legiſlatours of the Realme: Laſtly, after forgiuenneſſe granted to the executioner that ſhould behead him, he kneeling downe, offered his necke, to him that ſhould ſtrike it off, being ſtricken in the necke, but not deadly, hee putting his hand to his necke, ſaid thus, a ha, it is the hand of God, hee had not removed his hand from the place where the paine was, but that being ſuddenly ſtricken, his fingers ends being cut off, and part of the arteries, hee fell downe, but yet he dyed not, till being mangled with 8. ſtrokes in the necke, and in the head, he fulfilled moſt worthy martyrdome. There lay his body buried all that Friday, and the morrow till afternoone, none daring to deliuer it: his body to the ſepulture, his head theſe wicked take, and napling thereon his hoode, they fixe it on a pole, and ſet it on London Bridge, in place where before ſtod the head of Sir John Mainſterworth. This Archbiſhoppe, Simon Tibald alias Sudbury, Sonne to Nicholas Tibald gentleman, borne in the Towne of Sudbury, in Suffolke, Doctor of both lawes, was 18. yeres Biſhop of London, in the which time, hee builded a goodly College, in place where his fathers houſe ſtood, and endued it with great poſſeſſions, and furniſhed the ſame with ſecular Clerkes and other Miniſters, valued at the ſuppreſſion 122. pound, 18. ſhillings in lands by yeere. Hee builded the vpper end of S. Gregories Church at Sudbury. After being tranſlated to the Archbiſhoppicke of Canterbury in An. 1375. he re-edified the walls of that Citty, from the Weſt gate (which hee builded) to the Northgate, which had beene deſtroyed by the Danes before the conqueſt of William the baſtard. Hee was ſlaine as yee haue heard, and afterwards buried in the Cathedrall Church of Canterbury. There dyed with him Sir Robert Hales, a moſt valiant Knight, Lord of S. Johns, & treaſurer of England, and Iohn Legge, one of the Kings ſerieants at armes, and a Franciſcan Frier, named William

Proclamation by the commons in London.

The Rebell went to murther and burned many houſes.

Priſon of Newgate broken vp.

Therebells command the king, and he going to them on the Miles end. Whirlicote.

Roger Legat beheaded in Cheape, and 17. more in other places.

The rebells enter the Tower.

Tower of Londonbeſieged.

All the houſes of common ſtewes burnt. Hoſpitall of S. Iohn by Smithfield burnt.

The Kings Proclamation.

The Kings Charter to the Commons.

Archbiſhop of Canterbury beheaded.

College of Sudbury founded.

Place of S. Johns beheaded.

William Ashcdore the Kings Confessor. Richard Lions also a famous Lapidary or Goldsmith, late one of the Shreiffes of London, was drawne out of his house and beheaded in Cheape. There were that day beheaded many as well Flemings as Englishmen, for no cause but to fulfill the cruelty of the rude Commons: for it was a solemne pastime to them, if they could take any that was not sworne to them, to take from such a one his hod with their accustomed livery, and forthwith to behead him: neither did they shew any reverence vnto sacred places, for in the very Churches did they kill whom they had in hatred, they fetcht 13. Flemings out of the Augustine Fryars church in London, & 17. out of another church, and 32. out of the Mintre, and so forth in other places, of the Citie, and in Southwarke, all which they beheaded, except they could plainly pronounce bread and cheese, for if their speech sounded any thing on bread or cheese, off went their heads, as a sure marke they were Flemings.

Jeffrey Chaucer commended.

Flemings beheaded.

The King comming to the Miles-end, the place before recited, was sore afraid, beholding the wood commons, who with froward countenance required many things which they before had put in writings to be confirmed by the Kings letters patents.

The first, that all men should bee free from servitude and bondage, so as from thenceforth there should be no bondsmen.

The second, that he should pardon all men of what estate soever, all manner actions and insurrections committed, and all manner treasons, fellonies, transgressions and extortions, by any of them done, and to graunt them peace.

The third, that all men from thence-forth might bee infranchised to buy and sell in euery Countie, Citie, Borough-towne, Fayre, Market, and other place within the Realme of England.

The fourth, that no Acre of land holden in bondage or service, should be holden, but for 4. pence, and if it had beene holden for lesse afore-time, it should not hereafter be inhaunced.

These and many other things they required: moreover they told him, he had beene euilly gouerned till that day, but from that time he must be gouerned otherwise.

Esser men returned home ward.

The King perceiuing he should not escape peece pt he granted to their request yeelded to the same. And because the Chancellor was beheaded, the King made the Earle of Arundell for the time Chancellor, and Keeper of the great Seale, and also made diuers Clarkes to write Charters, patents, and protections granted to the Commons, for the forfeite matters, without taking fine, for the Seale, or writing thereof; and so toward euen, the King craving licence departed from them. The next day being Saturday and the 15. of June, a great number of the Commons came to the Abbey of Westminster, and there found John Inworth Marshall of the Marshalsey, and maister of the Kings prisoners there, imbracing a Marble pillar of Saint Edwards shrine for his defence, against his enemies, they plucked his armes from the pillar, and led him into cheape, where they cut off his head. In which time they take out of Newgate one John Greenfield, led him into cheape, and cut off his head, notwithstanding that the King had at this time made Proclamation throughout the citie, that euery one should peaceably go into his countrey, without doing further euill, whereunto they would not assent.

John Inworth Marshall of the Kings Bench beheaded.

John Greenfield beheaded.

The same day after dinner, about two of the clocke, the King went from the wardrobe, called the Norall in London toward Westminst. attended on by the number of 200. persons, to visit Saint Edwards shrine, and to see if the Commons had done any mischiefe there: The Abbot and conuent of that Abbey, with the Chanons and vicars of Saint Stephens Chappell, met him in rich copes with procession, and led him by the charnel-house into the Abbey, then to the church, and so to the high Altar, where he deuoutly prayed and offered. After which he spake with the Anchoze, to whom he confessed himselfe, then he went to the Chappell called our Lady in the peire, where he made his prayers: Which being done, the King made Proclamation, that all the commons of the countrey, that were in London should meete him in Smithfield, which was done accordingly, and when the King was come with his people, he rode towards the East, neere to S. Bartholm. Priory, and the commons towards the West in forme of battaile. The K. therefore sent to them, to shew them that their fellowes the Esser men were gone from thence-forth to liue in peace, and that he would grant to them the like forme of peace, if it would please them to accept thereof. Their chiefe captaine named Wat Tyler of Maidstone, he, I say, being a crafty fellow, of an excellent wit, but lacking grace, answered that peace he desired, but with conditions to his liking, minding to feede the King with faire words, till the next day, that he might in the night haue copalled his peruerse purpose, for they thought the same night to haue spoyled the citie, the King first being slaine, and the great Lozdes that cleaued to him, and to haue burnt the city, by setting fire in foure parts thereof, but God that resisteth the proud, did roadily disappoint him. For where the forme of peace was in three seuerall Charters written, and twice sent to him, none of them could please him: wherefore at length the King sent to him one of his Knights called Sir John Newton, not so much to command as to intreat him (for his pride was well enough knowne) to come and talke with him about his owne demandes, to haue them put in his Charter, of the which demands, I will put one in this Chronicle, that it may the more plainly appeare, the other to be contrary to reason. First, he would haue a commission for him and his, to behead all Lawyers, Escheters, and other whatsoeuer, that were learned in the law, or communicated with the law, by reason of their office, for he had conceiued in his mind, that this being brought to

Our Lady in the peire.

The King & the commons was in Smithfield

Sir John Newton sent to Wat Tyler.

Tyler of Wat Tyler.

to passe all things afterward should be ordered according to the fancy of the Common people: and indeede it was said, that with great pride, he had but the day before said, putting his hand to his lips, that before foure daies came to an end, all the lawes of England should proceed from his mouth. When Sir Ioh. Newton was in hand with him for dispatch, he answered with impudence, if thou art so hasty, thou mayest get thee backe againe to thy Master, I will come when it pleaseth mee: notwithstanding, he followed on horseback a slow pace, and by the way there came to him a butcher-maker of London, named John Ticle, who had brought to the Commons 60. dublets, which they bought and ware, for the which dublets he demanded 30. markes, but could haue no payment, Wat Tyler answered him, Friend, appeale thy selfe, thou shalt be well payd of this thy dublet-maker. any time, and then, keepe thee more mee, I will be thy creditor: And therewith hee spurred his horse, departed from his company, and came so neere the King, that his horse head touched the crope of the Kings horse, and the first word he said, was this, Sir King, seest thou all yonder people? yea truely, quoth the King, wherefore said thou so? because said he, they be all at my commandement, and haue sworne to me, faith and truth, to doe all that I will haue them. In good time, said the King, I will well it be so. Then said Wat Tyler, beleeuest thou King, that these people, and as many more as be in London at my commandement, will depart from thee thus, without hauing thy letters? No said the King, yee shall haue them, they be ordained for you, and shall be deliuered to euery each of them, with which words, Wat Tyler seeing the Knight, Sir John Newton, neere to him on horseback, bearing the Kings Sword, was offended, and said, it had become him better to be on foote in his presence. The Knight (not hauing forgot his old accustomed manhode) answered, that it was no harme, seeing himselfe was also on horseback: which words so offended Wat, that hee drew his dagger, and offered to strike at the Knight, calling him traitor: the Knight answered, that he lyed, and drew his dagger likewise. Wat Tyler not suffering such a continuely done to him before his rusticks, made, as if hee would haue runne on the Knight. The King therefore seeing the Knight in danger, to auoyde the rigor of War, for the time, commanded the Knight to light on foote, and to deliuer his dagger vnto the said Walter, and when his pryde minde could not be so pacified, but he would also haue his sword, the Knight answered, it was the Kings sword, and quoth hee, thou art not worthy to haue it, nor durst thou aske it of mee, if here were no more but thou and I. By my faith said Wat Tyler, I shall neuer eate till I haue thy head, and would haue runne on the Knight: and with that came to the King, William Walworth, Maior of London, and many Knights and Esquires on the Kings side, affirming that it were great shame, such as had not beene heard of, if in their presence, they should permit a noble knight so shamefully to be murthered according to the fancy of the Common people: and indeede it was said, that with great pride, he had but the day before said, putting his hand to his lips, that before foure daies came to an end, all the lawes of England should proceed from his mouth. When Sir Ioh. Newton was in hand with him for dispatch, he answered with impudence, if thou art so hasty, thou mayest get thee backe againe to thy Master, I will come when it pleaseth mee: notwithstanding, he followed on horseback a slow pace, and by the way there came to him a butcher-maker of London, named John Ticle, who had brought to the Commons 60. dublets, which they bought and ware, for the which dublets he demanded 30. markes, but could haue no payment, Wat Tyler answered him, Friend, appeale thy selfe, thou shalt be well payd of this thy dublet-maker. any time, and then, keepe thee more mee, I will be thy creditor: And therewith hee spurred his horse, departed from his company, and came so neere the King, that his horse head touched the crope of the Kings horse, and the first word he said, was this, Sir King, seest thou all yonder people? yea truely, quoth the King, wherefore said thou so? because said he, they be all at my commandement, and haue sworne to me, faith and truth, to doe all that I will haue them. In good time, said the King, I will well it be so. Then said Wat Tyler, beleeuest thou King, that these people, and as many more as be in London at my commandement, will depart from thee thus, without hauing thy letters? No said the King, yee shall haue them, they be ordained for you, and shall be deliuered to euery each of them, with which words, Wat Tyler seeing the Knight, Sir John Newton, neere to him on horseback, bearing the Kings Sword, was offended, and said, it had become him better to be on foote in his presence. The Knight (not hauing forgot his old accustomed manhode) answered, that it was no harme, seeing himselfe was also on horseback: which words so offended Wat, that hee drew his dagger, and offered to strike at the Knight, calling him traitor: the Knight answered, that he lyed, and drew his dagger likewise. Wat Tyler not suffering such a continuely done to him before his rusticks, made, as if hee would haue runne on the Knight. The King therefore seeing the Knight in danger, to auoyde the rigor of War, for the time, commanded the Knight to light on foote, and to deliuer his dagger vnto the said Walter, and when his pryde minde could not be so pacified, but he would also haue his sword, the Knight answered, it was the Kings sword, and quoth hee, thou art not worthy to haue it, nor durst thou aske it of mee, if here were no more but thou and I. By my faith said Wat Tyler, I shall neuer eate till I haue thy head, and would haue runne on the Knight: and with that came to the King, William Walworth, Maior of London, and many Knights and Esquires on the Kings side, affirming that it were great shame, such as had not beene heard of, if in their presence, they should

Wat Tyler his answer to the dublet-maker.

Wat Tyler his words to the King.

Wat Tyler to Sir John Newton who did beare the Kings sword.

William Walworth Maior of London arrested Wat Tyler, and wounded him.

permit a noble knight so shamefully to be murthered before his face, wherefore he ought to be rescued speedily, and Tyler to be arrested. Which thing being heard, the King, although hee were but tender of yeres, taking boldnesse vnto him, commanded the Maior of London to set hand on him. The Maior being of an incomparable boldnesse and man-hode, without any doubting, straight arrested him on the head, Wat Tyghler furiously stroke the Maior with his dagger, but hurt him not by meane he was armed, then the Maior drew his hasclard, and grieuously wounded Wat in the necke, and gaue him a great blow on the head, in which conflict, an Esquire of the Kings house, called John Cauendish, drew his sword, and wounded him twice or thrice, euen vnto death, and Wat Wat Tyler. spurring his horse, crped to the commons to reuenge him, his horse bare him about foure foote from thence, where he fell downe halfe dead, and by and by, they which attended on the King inuironed him all about, whereby hee was not seene of his company, and other thrust him in with their weapons, in diuers places of his body, and then they drew him from amongst the peoples sight, into the Hospitall of S. Bartilmew: which when the Commons perceiued, they cryed out, that their Captaine was trayterously slaine, and heartening one another to reuenge his death, bending their bowes, the King hearing both wisdome and courage, pricking his horse with his spurres, rode to them, and said: What a worke is this my men, what meane you to doe, will you that our King be not quarrellous, nor sorry for the death of a traytor and ribald: I will be your King, I am your Captaine and Leader, follow mee into the field, there to haue whatsoeuer you will require.

John Cauendish drew his sword.

Hen. Knighton.

This the King did, lest the Commons being set in a bitternesse of minde, should set fire on the houses in Smithfield, where their Captaine was slaine. They therefore followed him into the open field, and the souldiers that were with him, as yet not knowing whether they would kill the King, or be in rest, and depart home with the Kings Charter.

In the meane time, the Maior of London, onely with one seruant, riding speedily into the Citty, began to cry, yee good Citizens, helpe for a power, your King that is to be murthered, and succour mee your Maior, that am in the like danger, or if you will not succour me, yet leaue not your King destitute; when the Cittizens had heard this, in whose hearts the loue of the king was ingrafted, suddenly, seuerely prayed, to the number of a thousand men tarryed in the streetes, for some one of the Knights to lead them to the King, and by fortune, Sir Robert Knowles came in that instant, whom they all requested to be their leader, left comming out of order, and not in good aray, they mought easily be broken; who gladly brought part of them: Sir Parducase Dalbart, and other knights brought the rest to the Kings presence. When the Maior came to Smithfield, and did not find Wat Tyghler, (as hee left him wounded) he

The Maior of London rescued and succoured the King.

Record. R. 2.

greatly marueiled, demanding where the traytor was, and it was told him that he was carried into the Hospitall of Saint Bartlemew and laid in the Maisters Chamber; the Maior went straight thither, and made him to be carried into Smithfield, and there caused him to be beheaded, his head to be set on a pole, and borne before him to the King, then remaining in the field, and the King caused it to be borne there vnto him, therewith to abash the Commons, greatly thanking the Maior for that act.

Wat Tyler beheaded by commandement of the Maior.

The King, and those that were with him, Knights and Esquires, reioycing at the vnhoped for comming of the Maior, and those armed men, suddenly compassed all the multitude of the Commons.

There might a man haue seene a wonderfull change of Gods right hand, how the Commons did now throw downe their weapons, and fall to the ground, beseeching pardon, which lately before did glory, that they had the Kings life in their power, now they hid themselues in caues, ditches, cornefields, &c. The Knights therefore coueting to be reuenged, besought the King to permit them to take off the heads of an hundred or two of them, but the King not condescending to their request, commanded the Charter which they had demanded, written and sealed, to be deliuered vnto them for the time, to auoyde more mischiefe, knowing that Essex was not as yet pacified, nor Kent Hayde, the Commons and Rusticks of which Countries were ready to rise againe, if hee satisfied not their pleasure the sooner. The Commons hauing got this Charter, departed home, but ceased not from their former euill doings.

The rude people being thus dispersed and gone, the King commanded Will. Walworth to put a basenet on his head, for feare of that which might follow, and the Maior requested to know for what cause hee should so doe, sith all was quieted, the King answered, that hee was much bound to him, and therefore hee should be made Knight; the Maior againe answered, that hee was not worthy, neyther able to take such estate vpon him, for he was but a Merchant, and to liue by his Merchantdize, notwithstanding, at last, the King made him put on his basenet, and then tooke a sword with both his hands, and strongly with a good will, strake him on the necke, and the same day hee made three other Cittizens Knights for his sake in the same place, which were John Philpot, Nicholas Brembar, and Robert Laund, Aldermen, and Sir John Candish in Smithfield was Knighted. The King gaue to Sir VVilliam VValworth 100. pound land, and to the other 40. pound land, to them and their heires for euer: vpon the Sand-hill towards Islington, were created the Earles marshall, and Pembrooke, and shortly after, Nicholas Twiford, and Adam Francis Aldermen, were also made knights. Sir Robert Knowles his good seruice in the Citty, was by the Kings commandement, made a free man of the Citty.

William Walworth Maior London knighted, & other.

Aldermen of London knighted.

Earles created.

Aldermen knighted.

The King, with his Lords, and all his company, orderly entred into the City of London with great ioy. The King went to the Lady Princesse his mother, who was then lodged in the Towre-royall called the Queenes Wardrobe, and there she had remained two dayes and two nights right sore abashed, but when shee saw the King, her Sonne, she was greatly reioyced, and said, Ah faire Sonne, what great sorrow haue I suffered for you this day? The King answered, and said, certainely, Madame, I know it well, but now reioyce, and thank God, for I haue this day recouered mine inheritage, and the Realme of England, which I had neer haue lost.

The Tower-royall in London.

The Archbishops head was taken downe off the Bridge, and Wat Tylers head was set in that place.

Durelong it were in this booke to set downe the troubles at Saint Albons, by the bondmen there against the Abbot, and other, for liberties which they claimed, as the like did in other places, committing many abominable acts, but somewhat to speake of them within the parts of Suffolke and Norfolke.

The Saterday, whereof we haue before spoken, that the tempest might seeme to be generall, God sent his wrath into the parts of Suffolke and Norfolke, by sending Officers men to moue the people that lined in quietnesse, to raise like commotions, and to turne the hearts of the bondmen, or seruants against their Lords. The which making to their Captaine a most vngracious Priest, named John VVraw, who had beene at London the day before, and was instructed by VVat Tyler, cassly assembled a multitude of those common people. These according to the manner of them at London, ouerthrew houses and Mannors of great men, and of Lawyers, slew the Students of the Law, and catching Sir John Cauendish, a Iustice of the Realme, some say, Lord chiefe Iustice, beheaded him, and set his head on the pillory in the Towne of Bury. Sir Iohn of Cambridge, Prior of Bury, they caught and strooke off his head, his body was left naked in the field the space of three dayes, none presuming to bury it, for feare of the Rusticks. his head was set on the pillory by the head of Sir John Cauendish. Then entred they the Cloyster of the Monastery, take Sir John Lakingnith, keeper of the Barony, balled him out with great noyse, in the Market place they strooke off his head with eyght strokes, and left it on the pillory, they compelled the Monkes that remained (for their Abbot, Edmond Bromfield, was in prison at Nottingham) to grant them Charters, &c.

John Wraw. Captaine in Suffolk and Norfolke.

Sir Iohn Cauendish. Lord chiefe Iustice, the Prior of Bury and other beheaded by the Rebells.

No small multitude of Commons beeing got together vnder the leading of a certaine Dyer of Norwich, called Iohn Liststar, began to worke such malkerie, as in other places had beene put in practise, putting their hands vnto robbery, so that no place might be free from them: they thought to haue got to them VVilliam de Vfford, Earle of Suffolke, that they might

John Liststar of Norwich.

William Vfford, Earle of Suffolke, lacked.

might do their businesse vnder colour of his authority, but the Earle being warned of their comming, suddenly rose from supper, and taking his iourney towards woods and defarts, came to Saint Albons, and from thence to the King, layning himselfe to be the Lacky of Sir Roger de Boys, and bearing a Wallet behinde him. The Commons thus deceiued, forthwith feased vpon the houses of other Knights, and finding them, compelled them to bee sworne to ride thorow the Countrey with them, which if they had denyed, they had dyed for it.

The Knights that were thus compelled, were the Lord Schales, Sir William Morley, Sir Iohn de Brues, Sir Steuen de Hales, Sir Robert de Sale, which Sir Rob. blaming their doings, was smitten into the braine by one of his bondmen. The other perceiuing that they must dissemble, or dye a shamefull death, determined to say all things was well. Whereupon being brought in fauour with Liststar, (who named himselfe King of the Commons) those Sir Steuen Hales (because hee was a comely Knight) to carue before him, and to take the assay of his meates, and to the other he appointed other offices.

Sir Robert Sale slaine by the bondmen.

John Liststar King of the Commons and serued by Knights.

Now the Commons sent two Knights, Sir VVilliam de Morley, and Sir John Brewes, with three of the Commons, in whom they especially trusted, vnto the King at London, or else-where, for to purchase of him a Charter of manumission and pardon, the which that it might be more speciall then other, they deliuered vnto the said messengers a great summe of money, which they had received of the Cittizens of Norwich, vnder pretext to saue their Citty from burning and murther. The Knights with their companions, when they came to a Towne, named Ignigham, not farre distant from New-market, they met with the Bishop of Norwich, Sir Henry Spencer well armed: for as hee was at his Mannor of Burley, neere Ockam Castle, not farre from Stamford, hee heard of the Norfolke men, and determined to goe against them, hee had not at that time past an eight speares, and a small number of Archers, yet beholding the Knights, and some of the Commons, hee commanded them vpon their allegiance, to tell him if there were any of the Kings traytors. The Knights for feare of the Commons, dissembled to answere, the Bishoppe willed them boldly to goe to, and if there were any of the Kings traytors, to deliuer them to him: the Knights taking courage, answered, that two of the chiefest Rurrers among the whole company were present, and that the third was gone forth to prouide their dinner, and heerewith they shewed the cause of their iourney. The Bishop straightwayes commanded these two to lose their heads, and the third, his himselfe went to seeke, whose head also he caused to be cut off, and their heads were see vp at New-Market. Then the Bishoppe with the Knights, haste towards Norfolke, meaning to come to a place called Norwalsham, where the Commons were determined to stay for the Kings answer.

The end of John Liststar.

In passing the Countrey the Bishops number increased, for diuers Knights and many gentlemen of the countrey that lay hid for feare of the Commons, seeing the Bishop in Armour, they came forth and ioyned with him. The Bishop therefore when he came to the said place, hauing about him a seemely company, he found that the Commons had entrenched themselues after the manner of warre, and set vpon the rampier of their trench, timbowes, bowes, tables, bordes, with pales for their defence: behind them they had placed their carts, as if they meant not to flee, and forthwith the Martiall Bishop commanded his trumpets to sound, and taking a speare in his hand, set spurs to his horse, and so carried forth vpon them, with such a courage, that (by swift race he got the trench of them) as he had beene a young boy, rode amongst the enemies where they were thickest, driuing this man through, & felling that man downe and ceased not till the company following, had got the trench were ready to fight, those of the Bishops retinue therefore fought very sharply, and so likewise, did the Commons, till at length the Commons flee, but the Bishop stopped them, knocking them downe, till the chiefe stirrers of the tumult being taken with their King John Liststar (so many as pleased him being saued alive) he got the full victory. The Bishop brought the said John Liststar vnto drawing, hanging, and heading: and so the countrey was in peace.

Thus hauing throwed a few things, which were done in Norfolke, I passe ouer to write of the rest done in that and other Countries, but what they ment against the King, the confession of Iacke Straw declareth, who was chiefe amongst them, next to Wat Tiler. This man being taken, when at London hee should by iudgement giuen by the Maior, lose his head; the Maior spake openly to him thus. John (quoth he) behold thy death is at hand without all doubt, and there is no way through which thou mayst hope to escape, wherefore for thy soules health, without making any lye, tell vs what you purposed amongst you to haue done, to what end did you assemble the Commons? And when hee had stayd a while as doubtfull what to say, deterring his answere, the Maior added, Thou knowest surely, O John, that the things which I demand of thee, if thou doe it, the same shall redound to thy soules health, &c. He therefore animated with kayre promises, began as followeth.

Iacke Straw his confession at the Gallowes to the Maior and citizens.

Purpose of the Rebells.

Now saith he, it boteth not to lye, neither is it lawfull to vtter any vntruth, especially vnder standing that my soule is to suffer more straiter torments if I should so doe, and therefore I hope of two commodities by speaking the truth, first that these things that I shall speake may profite the Common-wealth: and secondly, after my death, I trust by your suffrages to be succoured, according to your promises (which is to pray for me) I will speake faithfully without deceipt.

The same time (saith hee) that we came to

Conspiracie of the rebels.

Blackheath, when wee sent for the King, we purposed to haue murdered all the knights Esquires and gentlemen that should haue come with him, and to haue led the King royally vsed vp and downe, that with the sight of him all men (especially the common people) might haue come vnto vs the more boldly, and when wee had got together an innumerable multitude, we would haue sodainly put to death in euery Countrey, the Lords and maisters of the common people, in whom might appeare to bee either counsell or resistance against vs: and specially wee would haue destroyed the knights of Saint Johns, lastly we would haue killed the King himselfe, and all men that had béene of any possession, Bishops, Monkes, Chanons, Parsons, to be briefe, we would haue dispatched: only begging Fryers should haue liued, that might haue sufficed for ministring the Sacraments in the Realme, for we would haue made Kings W Tyler in Kent, & in euery other shire one. But because this our purpose was hindred by the Arch-bishop, wee studied how to bring him shortly to his end.

Against the same day that Wat Tyler was killed, wee purposed that euening (because that the poore people of London séemed to fauour vs) to set fire in foure corners of the Citie, & so to haue burnt it, and to haue diuided the riches at our pleasures among vs. Hee added that these things they purposed to haue done, as God should helpe him at the end of his life.

Iacke Straw beheaded.

After this confession made, hs was beheaded and his head set on London Bridge by VVat Tilers and many other.

Principall Captaines.

The principall Leaders of the Commons were VVat Tyler, the second Iohn Straw, the third John Kirkby, the fourth Alen Threder, the fift Thomas Scot, the first Ralph Rugge: these and many others were leaders of the Kentish and Essex men. At Mildenhall and Bury in Suffolke was Robert VVestbrom, that made himselfe King and was most famous after: John Wraw, who being a priest would not set crowne vpon crowne, but left the name of King and crowne to the said Robert. At Norwich John Litistar a dier, exercised the name and power of a King, till he was taken and hanged for his paines.

VVat Tyler being killed, Iacke Straw and other their principall Captaines hanged or headed, the hope and confidence of the Commons decayed, but because the minds of the King & the nobles was yet wauering, séeing the people ready to mischiefe, they granted to them Charters of manumission and suffered them to depart, the which being done, the K. caused an army to be assembled from London, and sent into all countries, that those who were his friends should make haste to come to him to London, furnished with horse and armour, and it came to passe that within three dayes he had a xl. thousand horsemen about him in seemely sort armed, hee mustred them on Blackheathe, himselfe riding on a great courser, with his standard borne before him, when therefore so mighty an army was assembled, the king was aduertised that the Kentishmen had ditsoones conspired, whereupon he forthwith set forward, but by the mediation of the Nobles & great men of Kent that vndertooke for them, hee was staid and pacified with them, and then first Iustices were sent to séeke and enquire of malefactors, and that Countrey became quiet at the sight of them. Then the Maior of London sitting in iudgement, caused the malefactors to be tryed, as well of the City as also of Kent, Essex, Southsex, Norfolk, and Suffolke and other Countries that might bée taken within the liberties of the Citie, and all those whom he found guiltie of the foresaid treason, hee caused to hop headlesse, among the which were Iacke Straw, John Kirkeby, Alen Threder, &c. also Iohn Searling of Essex, that glozied to haue beheaded the Archbishop, was beheaded himselfe.

Maior of London caused malefactors of the Citie, of Kent, Essex, Sussex, Norfolke and Suffolk that might be taken, to hop headlesse.

The King remained now at London, now at Waltham, with a great army of armed men, considering what was to be done for the commoditie of the Realme. At length the Counsell thought good to send the Kings commission into euery Shire, for the resisting of the disquieters of the peace of the Kingdome. These commissions did much comfort the faithfull subiects, and troubled the false, for they were now compelled to séeke corners, that before tooke vpon them to doe all things abroad. Lawyers now durst come forth of their dennes and those which before fled from the tyranny of the time, looked for those that now feared iudgement and iustice to be done on them.

An. Reg. 5.

The Commons being thus feared, but not in all places alike, they of Essex gathering a new multitude together at Bylleric, a village néere to Hatfield Peuerell, decréed either to inioy liberty gotten by force, or to die in fighting for the same, they sent to the K. then being at Waltham messengers to know if hee thought good to permit them to enioy their permitted liberty, like to their Lords, and that they should not be compelled to come to courts, but onely to great Léets twise in the yeare, vnto the which the K. answered thus. Oh miserable and hatefull both to land and sea, not worthy to liue, doe yée require th be equall to your Lords? Ye were worthy to be put to most shamefull death: but sith yée are come as messengers, ye shall not die now, to the end yée may declare our answeres to your fellowes: declare to them therefore on the K. behalfe, that as they were husbandmen & bondmen, so shall they remaine in bondage, not as before, but more vile without comparison.

Commons of Essex gathered together at Billerica, send messengers to the King.

Answere of the King to the Commons of Essex.

Whilest we liue, & by Gods sufferance shall gouerne the kingdome, with wit, strength and goods, wée will endeauour our selues to kéepe you vnder, to that the dutie of your seruice, may be an example for posteritie, & that your matches both present, and that shall succéede, may euer haue before their eyes, as it were in a glasse, your miserie, & to you matter to curse, and feare to commit the like. When the messengers were gone, there was sent straight wayes into Essex, Thomas of Woodstocke,

Earle

Earle of Buckingham, and Sir Tho. Percy, brother to the Earle of Northumberland, to represse the boldnesse of the said commons.

These commons had fortified themselues with ditches & carriages: neuertheless, although there was a great number of them, with small businesse, they were scattered into the woods, where the Lords inclosed them, lest any of them might escape: and it came to passe that fiue hundred of them were slaine, and 8. hundred of their horses taken, the other that escaped this slaughter being gotten together, hasted to Colchester, and began to stirre the townesmen to a new tumult, and when they possessed not there, they went to Sudbury, but the Lord Fitzwalter and Sir John Harlestone followed them, and slew as many of them as they list, and shut vp the rest in prisons. The K. came to his Manor of Hauering at Bowre, and after to Chelmesford, where he appointed Sir Robert Trisilian his Iustice to sit and enquire of the malefactours, wherefore he men séeing the euill that hung ouer their heads, there came aboue fiue hundred humbly to the King bare-foted and bare-headed, beséeching him of pardon and mercy. To whom pardon was granted, with conditions, to deliuer the stirrers of the said trouble. It came therefore to passe, that many were committed to ward, vpon whom the Iustice charged foure & twentie men of their conscience to say the truth, and many being condemned, were put to execution, by drawing and hanging, nine or ten being hanged on one beame. The Iustices that before had sit in Essex, Kent, London, and other places, for all the multitude that were to bée executed, vsed to head the Commons. till now it séemed not a kinde of death answerable to so many and manifest crimes. These things were done in Essex, the King being present, the like by his Iustices was done in other countries.

Robert Trisilian Iustice sate at Chelmesford.

Sir John Ball taken & brought to Saint Albones.

The tenth of July John Ball Priest being taken at Couentry and brought to S. Albones, was there before the King condemned, and had iudgement giuen him by Sir Robert Trisilian Knight a most skilfull Iustice, as a traytour to be drawne, hanged, headed, & bowelled, whose death was respited vntill the Munday at the intercession of William Bishop of London, who being carefull for his soules health, obtained that space for his repentance. This man a twenty yéeres together and more, preached in diuers places those things which hee knew to be liking to the common people, flattering alwell ecclesiasticall persons, as secular Lords, séeking thereby, rather the benevolence of the common people, then merite towards God: he taught that tithes were not to bee giuen to the Churchmen, except the partie that should giue the same were richer then the Vicar or parson that should receiue it. Also that tithes and oblations were to bée withdrawne from Curates, if the Parishioners or Parishioner were of better life then the Curate. Also that no man was méete for the Kingdome of God, that was not borne in matrimony, hée taught

Doctrine of John Ball by him taught.

many other things too long to rehearse, for the which hee was prohibited of the Bishops in whose diocelles he had attempted these things, that hée should not preach from thence-forth in any Church: hée went forth therefore into the stréetes and wayes, and into fields to preach, & there wanted not of the commons that came to heare him, whom hee euer sought to allure to his Sermons, by detracting of the prelates. At the length being excommunicated, and yet not desisting hee was committed to prison by Simon the Arch-bishop of Canterbury, & William Bishop London, where hee prophesied that hee should bée deliuered by twentie thousand of his friends, which came so to passe in the forsaid time of troubles, when all prisons were broken vp, and the prisoners out of them, and when he was so deliuered, hee followed them, inflagating them to commit much euill, and preaching that so it ought to be done. And that his doctrine might infect the more number of people, at Blacke-heath, where there were many thousands of the commons assembled, he began his Sermon in this manner.

When Adam dolue and Euah span,
Who was then a Gentle-man?

John Ball his Sermon.

And continuing his begun Sermon, hee fought by the word of that Prouerbe which hee tooke for his Theame, to introduce, & proue, that from the beginning, all were made alike by nature, and bondage & seruitude was brought in by vniust oppressio of naughty men, against the will of God: for if it had pleased God to haue made bond-men, hée would haue appointed them from the beginning of the world, who should haue béene slaue, and who Lord. They ought to consider therefore, that now there was a time giuen them by God, in the which, laying aside the yoke of continuall bondage, they might, if they would, enioy their long wished for libertie. Wherefore he admonished them, that they should be wise and after the manner of a good husband that tilled his ground, and did cut away all noysome weeds that were accustomed to grow and oppresse the fruite, they should make haste to doe now at this present the like. First, the Arch-bishop & great men of the Kingdome were to be slame: after, Lawyers, Iusticiars, & Questmongers: lastly, whomsoeuer they knew like hereafter to be hurtfull to the commons, they should dispatch out of the land, for so might they purchase safety to themselues hereafter, if the great men being once taken away, there were among them equall libertie, all one nobilitie and like dignitie, and semblable authoritie or power. These, and many such mad deuises hee preached, which made the comon people to esteeme of him in such manner, as they cryed out, hée should be Archbishop of Canterbury & Chancellor of the Realme, for he onely deserued the honour. Moreouer, he had sent to the borders of the comons in Essex a Letter full of riddles or darke sentences, exhorting them to proceede in their begunne enterprises, which letter was

after found in the budget of one that should bee hanged, the tenour whereof was thus.

Lithel. Iohn Ball. John Shepe, sometime Saint-Mary Priest of Yorke, and now of Colchester, greeteth well John namelesse, and John Miller, and John Carter, and biddeth them that they beware of Gilliingbrough *alias* Citenbrough, and standeth together in Gods name, and biddeth Pierce Ploughman goe to his worke, and chastice well Hob the robber, and take him with 10. Trueman, and all his fellowes, and no more: John the Miller hath ground small small, the Kings sonne of heaven shall pay for all, beware or ye be woe, know your friend from your foe, haueth enough, and saith hoe, and doe well and better, and seeketh peace, and seeke it, and holde therein, and so biddeth John Trueman and all his fellowes.

This letter John Ball confessed himselfe, that he had written and sent to the commons: moreover, he confessed to William then Bishop of London, to Walter Lee knight, and John Fersoor Notarie, that a certaine company of his sect, were confederate to goe round about all England, and to preach their points which he had taught, naming LVVNALB. masters of Arts. Whereupon he added, that except remedy were had, they within 2. yeres space would destroy the whole Realme, and this confession under a certaine forme was brought into a publike instrument. This Sir John Ball was hanged and headed at Saint Albones on the 15. of July, the King being present, and his body being quartered was sent to 4. Cities of the Realme: some other Epistles of the said Ball haue I seene, which also I thinke good (as afore) here to insert.

Sir John Ball hanged.

Epistle of Iohn Ball.

John Ball Saint Mary Priest, greeteth well all manner of men, and biddeth them in name of the Trinitie, Father, Sonne, & holy Ghost, stand manlike together in truth, & helpe truth, and truth shall helpe you: now raigneth pride in price, coustise is holden wise, letchery without shame, gluttony without blame, envie raigneth with reason, and sloath is taken in great season, God doe bote, for now is time. Amen.

Iacke Miller. Iacke Miller, asketh helpe to turne his mill aright, he hath ground small, small, the Kings sonne of heaven shall pay for all: looke thy will goe right with foure sailes, and the post stand in stedfastnes with right and might, with skill and will, let might helpe right, and skill before will, and right before might, then goeth our Mill aright: and if might goe before right, and will before skill, then is our Mill mistright.

Iacke Trueman. Iacke Trueman doeth you to vnderstond,
That falsenesse & guile hath raigned too long:
And trueth hath beene set vnder a locke,
And falsenesse raigneth in every flocke.
No man may come truth to,
But he must sing, *si dedero*.
Speake, spend and spad quoth Iohn of Bathon,
and therefore,
Sinne fareth as wilde floud,
True lcue is a way that is so good.
And clarkes for wealth witcheth them woe,
God doth boote, for now is time.

I leaue out Iohn Carters Epistle, a libell, so named, &c.

A great number of the Commons being indited, and hauing iudgement, at S. Albons fiftene of them were hanged, and and fourscore imprisoned, and afterward by pardon released, and on the twentieth day of July the King removed to Berkhamstead.

Truce with the Scots.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster that a little before these troubles began, was gone Northward to be at the day of truce of march, as the manner was every yeere, when he heard of the hurling of the commons, in the time that they had the vpper hand ouer their Lords, he was meruellously amazed, and forecasting what might follow, thought it best, with speed to make peace with the Scots, which was done before those tumults came to the eares of the Scots, & by them confirmed by oth for 2. yeares truce, that they would faithfully keepe the same.

Willi. Courney Archebishop of Canterburie.

William Courtney son to Hugh Courtney, Earle of Deuonshire, Doctour of Law, first Bishop of Hereford, since Bishop of London, was now translated to the Arch-bishoprick of Canterburie on the ninth of September. And Robert Braybrooke succeeded in the Bishoprick of London.

Durham Colledge founded.

Thomas Hatfield Bishop of Durham deceased, he founded Durham Colledge in Oxford, he also builded Durham place, betwixt London and Westminster. Iohn Fordham Bishop of Ely was translated to the Bishoprick of Durham.

Parliament at London.

About the feast of All Saints, a Parliament was begunne, which indured long, to small purpose, by reason of contention among the Lords, especially the Duke of Lancaster, and the Earle of Northumberland, whose quarrell in the end was taken vp by the King, and then the Lords proceeded to treate of the Kings businesse and the Realmes, but they lingered so long in vaine, that when some effect was thought should haue succeeded, newes came of the comming to Calais of the new Quéene. The King had made his choyce before to haue this woman, and had bought her with a great price and much labour, for he gaue to the Emperour ten thousand pound, beside other great expenses, to make this marriage. Although the Daughter of Barnabe Duke of Millan was offered vnto him with an inestimable summe of golde. This Quéenes comming therefore being vnderstood, the Parliament was prorogued, to begin againe after Christmasse. There were diuers of the Nobles sent to méet the Bride, and she was conueyed with all the glory of the world into Douer, many both of her Countrey, and also of England, attending on her.

1382.

After the Feast of the Epiphany, also, the Nobilitie of the Realme assembled at London, to be present at the Kings Marriage, and to do their service according to the custome of euery one in ancient time vsed. This Virgin named Anne,

Anne, the daughter of Vesclaus King of Boheme, is at Westminst. consecrated the Kings wife, and by the Arch-bishop of Canterbury is crowned Quéene. There were iustes kept for the honour of such a solemnization, certaine dayes together, in which, both the Englishmen shewed their force, and the Quéenes Countrymen their prowesse.

The King married.

Piked shoes high heads, & long-tailed gowns, with women riding astride first vsed in England.

In this Quéenes dayes, began the detestable vse of piked shoes, tyed to their knees with chaines of siluer and guilt. Also noble women vsed high attire on their heads, piked hornes, with long trained gownes, and rode on side saddles, after the example of the Quéne who first brought that fashion into this land, for before women were vsed to ride astride like men. The solemnitie of the marriage being ended, the Parliament is now begun again, in which, many articles are proposed & decreed, to wit, of admitting strangers to sell personally their wares, without impeachment of the merchants of England: of the abrogating of furres, and siluer garnishing of girdles &c. of the price of wines, that is, that the tun should not exceed fiue markes, &c.

William Vfford Earle of Suffolke dyed suddainly.

William Vfford Earle of Suffolke, in this Parliament, being elected by the knights of the shires, to pronounce on their behalfes the businesse of the Realme, the very day and houre in which hee should haue executed the businesse hee had taken in hand, as he was going vp the staires that leade into the Chamber where all the Nobilitie of the Realme sate, hee sodainly fell downe, and among his mens hands that were wont to hold him, he yelded vp the Ghost, although being very merry, and feeling no euill a little before, as euen at that instant hee had entred Westminster Hall, of whose sodaine death, not onely all the Nobles of the Realme were greatly amazed, but all the meaner sort, for in all his life time he had shewed himselfe amiable to all men.

Custome of woolles, &c.

After his death the Parliament was ended, after the marchants of England had granted to the King a subsidie, and fiue customes of woll for foure yeares next ensuing, which the Commons called le Maltot.

In this Parliament, the Lords and Commons requesting it, Sir Richard Scrope knight was ordained Chancello, as the man which in excellent knowledge and inflexible iustice, had not his like for his calling in this Realme. Sir Hugh Segraue knight, was made Lord Treasurer.

An. reg. 6. Mortimer E. of March deceased.

Edward Mortimer Earle of March departed this life in Ireland, after he had brought that land all in manner vnto peace and quietnesse, hauing gouerned it most nobly and wisely.

About the feast of S. Iohn ante port latine, all the Nobles of the Realme were called to London, and other that of custome were wont to be called, although the Lent before there had béene another Parliament, as before we haue shewed, in which, by the petition of the knights of the shires, Iohn Wraw Priest, that was leader of them that did rise at Mildenhall and

Iohn Wraw hanged.

Bury, was adiudged to hanging and drawing, though many beleeued that he would haue béene redeemed with money.

Earthquake.

The one and twentieth day of May was a great Earth-quake in England at nine of the clocke, fearing the hearts of many, but in Kent it was most vehement, where it sunke some Churches, and threw them downe to the earth.

Hist. Aurea.

There followed also another Earth quake the xviii. of May in the morning, before the Sunne rising, but not so terrible as the first. Sir Richard Scrope is deprived of the Chancellorship, which he had gouerned laudably, and Robert Braybroke Bishop of London, is made Chancellor.

There arrived in a great tempest, a Ship called a Carricke, at Sandwich, an huge bessell, and so freought with riches, that he might haue furnished the want of all the land, if the enuie of the inhabitants would haue permitted, but the marchants of London hauing much old wares, as fruits, spices, apples, and such like, they compounded with the Genowayes to forsake the hauen and to passe ouer into Flanders, and to for the conetousnes of a few, the whole Realm suffered great hindrance.

Sir Io. Burghley, Sir Sim. Burghley, Rich. Burghley Knight.

King Richard gaue to Sir Simon Burghley, his chamberlaine the keeping of his Forrest of Wolmoze in Southamptonshire, for the time of his life: he also gaue to Iohn Burghley, Simon Burghley, Rich. Burghley knights, and Gawdwine de Radington Esquire, all the manner of Parroke nigh to Graues-end.

Great flod.

About the Feast of Saint Thomas the Apostle, great raynes and inundations of waters chanced, so that the water rose seuen times more in height then before, drowning vp Villages and Cattaile, destroying Bridges and Milles.

1387.

Bishop of Norwich.

About the moneth of May, the Bishop of Norwich taried ouer the Seas into Flanders, with a great power, where he won the Townes of Graueling, Bzugh, Dunkerke, and Newport.

Whilest these things are thus doing in Flanders, the King of England and his Quéene, with their Bohemians visited the Abbeyes of this Realme, to the intent their comming was very chargeable, for they came with an excessiue number, all which came to take, but not to giue.

An. reg. 7. The Scots entred Northumberland.

The Scots taking occasion of the time, for that a great number were gone ouer with the Bishop of Norwich, entred into Northumberland, and did much hurt to the inhabitants, taking preyes in every place, and leading away the people prisoners, and carrying them into Scotland: they take the castle of Warke vpon the riuer of Twede, and burnt it.

Parliament at London.

About the feast of All-Saints, a Parliament was holden at London, in which, the halfe of a fiftene was granted vnto the King by the Lapitie, and shortly after the helpe of a tenth by the Cleargie, a portion of which money, the Lords of the North demanded, because in this Parliament they were appointed

to defend those parts against the irruptions of Scotics, to whom answere was made by Sir William Wickham Bishop of Winchester, that they were made for that cause, of poore men, rich men and Lords, that they might the more frankly keepe the Scottes, and that the King and Lords of the South parties should bee the lesse troubled. And because the Scots came not to this parliament, according to couenant, and beside that, did displeasures vnto the inhabitants of the North-parts, it was decréed by this Parliament, that vnto faith-breakers, faith should be broken againe, and that a chosen power should be sent thither, forth of England, vnder the leading of Thomas of Woodstocke, to witte, a thousand Lances, and two thousand Archers, to restraine their attempts.

Thomas of woodstocke sent against the Scots.

These things being knowne, the Scots being afraid of themselues, in the end of the parliament came, and were desirous to intreat of peace or truce, but the Englishmen hauing lately their faithed so oftentimes, would neither treat nor compound with them, but commanded them to returne home, and warned them to saue their heads as well as they might, and to defend their rights. The Scots being returned, the Lords of the North take vpon them to defend the Countrey, till Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham was readie to come with a greater power.

Temporalties of the Bishop of Norwich seized.

In this Parliament the king toke the temporalties of the Bishop of Norwich into his hands, because he was disobedient to his commandement, when he sent to haue stayed him from his iourney into Flanders, & the knights that went ouer with him were put in prison, till they were redéemed with gold.

1384. King Richard held his Christmas at his Manor of Eltham, and with him his Quéene Anne.

Truce with the French.

After Christmas, John Duke of Lancaster which before Christmasse went ouer into France to treat of peace betwixt the Realms, returned into England, bringing with him an assurance of warre till the feast of S. Io. Baptist, at what time he was to returne to treate againe, and to confirme the peace if it might be agréed vpon betwixt the kings.

Lightning and thunder Iohn North-hampton alias Combertown.

The night of the Purification of our Lady, great lightnings and thunder happened, that put men in great feare: and shortly after Iohn Northampton, other wise called Combertown, that had béene the yeere before Maior of London, that with his seditions had filled the city full of comber, attempted new troubles, for in contempt of the Maior that was elected for that yeere, Sir Nicholas Brembar, knight, he went vp and downe with a multitude of seditious people to guard him, not once, but oftentimes, to the terrour of many. And when the said Brembar Maior would haue withstanded his attempts, the fauourers of the said Iohn Combartowne were turned into such a fury, that a cobler sewer of Newmarket, take vpon him as it were to be Maior, and required the voyces of the communaltie: for which cause, by the counsaile of Sir Rob. Knowles knight he was driuen out of his house, and cen mitted to prison as a stirrer of insurrection, which let not the time staid the commotion of the Commons, that were said to haue conspired, to haue murthered the elect Maior, and many other worthy men.

John Duke of Lancaster went toward Scotland.

When Lent approached, John Duke of Lancaster, with his brother Thomas of Woodstocke, Earle of Buckingham, & an innumerable number of knights, Esquires, and Archers went toward Scotland, but staid in the North vntill all the victuals in the Countrey were all consumed: he did more hurt to the inhabitants then the Scots had done before. At length about the feast of Easter, he entred Scotland, but did little good.

John Wicliffe died.

This yere maister Iohn Wickliffe sometime student in Canterbury College in the Vniuersity of Oxford, parson of Lutterworth in Leicester shire, hauing béene vexed with a palsy by the space of two yéeres, died, on the last of December, and was buried at Lutterworth. This man whiles hee liued, as also long after his death, was greatly fauoured by the students of that Vniuersity, as may appeare by letters testimoniall, made more then twenty yéeres after his decease, as followeth.

Letters testimoniall of the Vniuersity of Oxford of the life of Iohn Wicliffe.

To all children of our holy mother the church, vnto whom these presents shall come, the Chancellor and company of maisters of the Vniuersity of Oxford, sendeth greeting in our Lord euerlasting. For as much as it is not decent to compasse with continuall silence, the acts of the baliant, nor the landes and merits of the good, but that the same should be manifested to the world by true fame, for a witnesse of it selfe, and example of others, for that also the prudent discretion of humane nature, weeping mans cruelty, hath ordained this manner of remembrance, and this buckler of defence, against the blasphemous insulting of others, that when a testimony by word cannot alwaies be ready, a penne to write may supply: therefore it commeth to passe, that we hauing conceiued a special good mind, & tender care ouer the childe sometime of our Vniuersity Iohn Wicliffe professor of holy theologie, according to his deserts of his manners, doe testifie with heart, word, and writting, that his conditions, while hee liued, were commendable, whose honestie of manners, profundity of iudgement, and pleasantnes of flourishing fame, we count so much the more to bring to the knowledge of faithfull people, as the perfection of his conuersation, the diligence of his writings might be the more euidently knowne to tend to Gods glory, the wrale of his neighbor, & profit of the Church, wherefore we publish vnto you by these presents, that his conuersation from his tender yéeres continued till the time of his decease, hath béene héere right good & honest, so as there was neuer any motion or note of sinister suspition or infamie cast abroad of him, but in answering, reading, preaching, and soluting, hath behaued himselfe praise-worthy, like a stout Champion of the faith, vanquished by sentences of Scripture, like a Catholike man all those blasphemers of Christs Religion by their wilfull beggery. And therefore was not the foresaid Doctor condemned of heretical prautie, or yet by our prelates to be burnt after his burial. God defend therefore that our Prelates should haue condemned so good a man for an heretike, which in Logike, Philosophy, in Theologie, in Moralities, & Speculatiues, among all that hath written (as we thinke) in our Vniuersitie, without pere. All which things we desire to bring to the knowledge of all and singular persons vnto whose hands these presents may come, to the intent that the said Doctors fame may the oftner be had in remembrance. In witnesse whereof, we haue caused these our letters testimoniall to be sealed with our common seale.

Giuen at Oxford in our congregation house, the fifth day of the month of October. Anno 1406.

All this notwithstanding afterward (being excommunicated by Thomas Arundale Archbishop of Canterbury) his bones, by a Doctor of Diuinitie of Oxford, named Richard Fleming Bishop of Lincolne, were taken vp and burnt, and the ashes throwne into the next water nere vnto Lutterworth 41. yéeres after his decease, in Anno 1425. by commandement of Pope Martine the fifth. Thus much for Wickliffe.

The custody of the Castle of Douer being voyd by the death of Robert Ashton, was then appointed to Simon Burley, who was made Constable there.

Simon Burley Constable of Douer. Parliament at Salisbury Iohn Duke of Lancaster accused.

After the Quindene of Easter the Nobles came together to a Parliament at Salisbury, whither a certaine Irish Fryer of the order of Carmelites, a Batchelor of Diuinitie named Iohn Latimer, hastes in an euill hower, for he had written a certain cedule in the which was conteined many horrible practises deuised (as he said) by the Duke of Lancaster, for it was in that cedule expressed, that the said Duke had determined lodainly to oppresse the king, and to take vpon him the kingdome, there was assigned the time, place, and other circumstances that might make euident proofe of the thing. The Fryer obtaining accesse into the kings presence, take the cedule to his owne hands, sweuring by the Sacrament of the bodie and blood of Christ, which that day he had receiued, that all written in that cedule was true. The Duke therefore being called to the king, ans hauing the cedule delinered into his hands, declared the king, that the Fryer might be put in safe keeping, till the day that he should shew the cause of those things which he had propounded against him, and belought the king, that Sir Io. Holland might haue speciall charge of him. This Ioh. Holland was the 2. brother by his mother, the sonne of the L. Tho. Holland, who gladly for the loue of his brother the Duke, did willingly accept the Fryer into his custodie. The night before the day giuen to the fryer to make his answere, I. Holland, & mother knight, called Sir Hen. Greene taking the Fryer, put a cord about his neck (some say about his armes) and with the same cord tying his eyes, hanged him vp from the ground, hauing a stone of weight of lead vpon his belly of such weight, that it might both torment him by streining him, as also kept his breath, & breake his backe bone, also a great fire was made vnder the soles of his feet, that might end his life, not with one kind, but with diuers kinds of torments, with violence whereof, the fryer being ouercome, died, but would neuer reuoke what he had said. The morrow after they caused the Fryers body to be drawne through the Towne as a traitor, that they might put away all suspition, that he were put to death wrongfully: but it is to be wondred at, that neither Esquire, Yeoman, nor Grome, or any other of mean estate, would harme the Fryer, but the knights did it themselues, they were Iudges, Officers, & executioners, and this was the fruit of this parliament, except that the king asked and had of the Laity halfe a fifteenth, & of the Cleargy halfe a tenth.

He had married the D. of Lancasters daughter and by whom he had children.

A Fryer tormented to death.

Irruption of the Scots Ann. reg. 8.

About this time, because the Scots ceased not to doe diuers damages to the Northumbers, the E. of Northumberland Henry Percy, prepareth to inuade Scotland. and to requite damage for damage, which enterprise accomplished, the Earle was no sooner returned, and sent home his armie, but that the Scots came againe, and heaped vp damage vpon damage in the countrey.

Sir Iohn Philpot deceased.

This Sommer, Sir Iohn Philpot a most faithfull knight, and Noble Citizen of London, that had a long time trauelled for the commodity of the Realme more then all other, and both with expences laid forth, and good affection borne, (for he had oftentimes relieued the king) departed this life, leauing none behind him, his like in good affections.

John Duke of Lancaster goeth into France.

About the beginning of August, the Duke of Lancaster went into France to treate with the French-men of peace, or else of truce to be had: the D. with his company of noble-men remaining long there, when it was thought that he should haue brought glad and ioyfull newes to his countrey, he returned with knowledge of warres, to follow the beginning of the next Sommer, the truce to endure but till the first of May, and so he returned, after he had spent 50000. Markes of siluer.

John Northampton rebuked, and committed to perpetuall prison.

Many of the Nobles assembled at Reading, to represse the seditious stirres of Iohn Northampton, late Maior of London, that at temptes ted great and haynous enterprises of the which he was conuict, his owne chaplein vttering many things that he went about and had deuised as well to the hinderance & harme of the king, as of the City of London, and when sentence should haue béene pronounced against him, the king being present, the wicked man made exclamation, & maintained that such iudgement ought not to passe in absence of his Lord the D. of Lancaster, but yet the iustice vsed such words, Iohn (saith he) the naughty deeds that are obiected against thee, thou oughtest to refell by battel, or els by the lawes of the land to be drawne, hanged, & quartered. And when he

London tale, nor would utter one word, it was decreed that he should be committed to perpetuall prison, and his goods to be confiscate to the K. vse, and that he should not come within one hundred miles of London during his life, & hee was sent therefore to the Castle of Tintagell in the confines of Cornewall, and in the meane space the Kings seruants spoyled his goods, Iohn More, Richard Northbery, and other, were likewise there conuict, and condemned to perpetuall prison, and their goods confiscate to the King, for certaine congregations by them made against the Fish-mongers in the Citie of London.

Parliament at London.

About the feast of Saint Martine, a Parliament was holden at London in the which nothing was done worth the memory, but that which still was in hand, and erecting of money of the clergy and common people, to maintaine the men of warre. And besides this, about the feast of Saint Andrew there was a combate fought in lists at Westminster, betwixt an Esquire of England named Iohn Welch of Grimesby, and one of Nauarre, called Mortileto de Vilenos, that had accused the English Esquire, of treason to the King and Realme, but the effect was, that when he was Captain of Cherbrough, he forced the wife of this Nauarois, as the said Nauaroys being afterward ouercome, and being ready to suffer death, did openly confesse, for the which cause, by the Kings iudgement, he was drawne and hanged, although the D. and many other did make earnest intercession to haue his life saued.

Combate at Lists.

Werwicke yeelded and won Calaise.

The Parliament was not yet ended, when newes came out of the North of the taking of Werwicke Castle by the Scots, the custodie where of the Earle of Northumberland, Sir Henry Percy did possesse, by right of his predecessors. The Scots by mediation of money, got entrance into that castle, by one that was put in trust with keeping of it; the Duke of Lancaster that loued not the Earle, was glad of this hap when hee knew it. It came to passe therefore by the Dukes procurement, that the Earle was condemned by iudgement of the Lords there present, the which execution was within a short while after released. The Earle of Northumberland, through the kings fauour restored to his life and possessions, without any long delayes, prepareth all furniture of war to besiege and win the said Castle of them that were within it, and after hee had gathered a mighty army, he lodainly besieged it, and after hee had laine about it a certaine time, it was compounded betwixt them without, and them within, that they within should forsake the Castle, and haue their liues and moueable goods, and for surrendring the Castle, they should haue of the Earle two thousand markes of English money, and by this meanes did the Earle recouer the Castle forth of the Scottish mens hands. King Richard kept a solemne feast of Christmas at Oltham with Queene Anne his wife, whom he solemne suffered to go from his face, there were at that feast the Bohemians, the Queenes Countreymen, that hauing once tasted the sweetnesse of this Iland, forgetting their owne country, like vnthankefull guests, would not goe home againe.

1385.

T. Walsing. hom.

Through certaine young men brought vp with the king, there arose great dissention betwixt him and the Duke of Lancaster, who departed from the Court, and went to his Castle of Pomfret, which he had fortified, but by meanes of the Kings Mother, this discord was appeased for a time.

The same time the conjunction of two of the greatest planets chanced, to wit, of Iupiter and Saturne, in the moneth of May, after the which a great mutation of Kingdomes followed.

The third of May was an Earth-quake.

The K. entred Scotland.

King Richard with a great Army entred Scotland, but the enemies would not shew themselues, wherefore hee burnt the countrey and returned.

The eighteenth of July there was an earthquake. Sir Iohn de Vienne that serued the French king, was sent into Scotland with a great multitude of shippes and men of warre, that ioyning with the Scots, they might infest all England, and that whilest they might draw the power of this Realme that way forth, the French king, with his Nauy and army, might the more at liberty enter other parts of the Realme, few or none being left at home to prohibite them their entry. The arrinall of this said Iohn being knowne in England, the King with all the Nobility prepared themselues to make a iourney thither: there came flocking vnto the K. such a number of knights, esquires, and Archers, as the like had not beene heard of in those dayes, in so much, as the number of hoyses amounted to three hundred thousand, as they were iudged, very large; the King reioyced hereat (as well he might) but the reioycing was shortly darkened at Yorke, by the fiercenesse of Sir Iohn Holland, the kings brother, that slew the Lord Ralph Stafford, son to the Earle of Stafford, in the way as he went to the Queene, whose seruant of houshold hee was, and greatly in fauour with her, and hee was no lesse beloued of the king, as hee that had beene brought vp with him, and beene his play-fellow from his tender age, where the king taking great indignation determined to pursue the said Sir Iohn Holland: hee caused therefore his goods to be confiscate. But Sir Iohn Holland fled to Beuerley, to enioy the liberties of the Church. The Lady Ione the kings mother, sent to intreat him for her other Sonne, and his brother, but when the messengers were returned to Wallingford, and that the Mother could perceiue no hope of grace to bee gotten in that behalfe, of the King, shee tooke it heauily, and fell sicke, and within foure or fiue dayes departed this life, her body being seared and cloſed in Lead, was kept at Wallingford, till the KING returne forth of Scotland, then to bee buried at Stanford, in the Church of the Fryers Pinors.

The K. retireth from Scotland.

Ralph Stafford slaine. An. reg. 9.

La. Ione the Kings mother died, buried at Stanford.

In the moneth of August, the K. of England with

with a mighty power entred Scotland, with whose force the Scots and Frenchmen perceiuing themselues not able to match, they seeke to get them into the woods and places where they might be out of the way. The English army, then the which there hath not beene seene a fayrer, stronger, or greater, rideth through the Countrey, that was destitute of inhabitants, body of Cattell, and wanting victuals, for the Land was left desolate (as our men confessed) that they saw not so much as a bird, Owles only excepted. They found green corne on the ground, very faire and plentifull, which they either eate vp with their hoyses, or tread downe with their feete, but the enemies fleeing battell, our men did nothing to be accounted of, but burned the Abbey of Melrois, and the Towne of Edenborough, with such houses as they found by the way. When our army was come to Edenborough, and that victuals failed them, many of them beganne to waxe sicke, and some to die for hunger: whereupon the King returned with his army into England. While King Richard was in Scotland, the Scots and Frenchmen entred into England, burning Townes, taking spoyles, and leading away many prisoners, returned home into their Countrey.

Melrois and Edenborough burnd.

The Scots spoyle in England.

The souldiers of Caleis went secretly forth into France, and got a booty of foure thousand sheepe, and three hundred head of great beasts, which they drew to their holds.

About the feast of Saint Martine, there was a Parliament at London, in which, the Laytie granted to the King a fifteenth and a halfe, with a condition, that the Clergy should giue a tenth and a halfe. William Courtney, Archbishoppe of Canterbury standing there against, said, the Church ought to be free, and in no wise to be taxed by the Laytie, yea, he would rather put his head in danger for this cause, then to suffer the English Church to be brought into such seruitude: which answer so much moued the Knights and Commons of the Shires, with some of the Nobles of the Realme, that they in great rage made request, that the temporalities might be taken from the Clergy and Church-men, saying, that the Church-men were growne to such pride, that it was a deede of charity, and almes, by taking away their temporalities, to compell them to bee more meeke and humble: this they cryed out for, this they presented in writing to the King, and such was their labour in this point, that they were in hope to bring it to passe. Here mought you haue seene the Knights pleasant and merry, talking of these things, euen as the temporalities of the Church had beene aligned to their abusing, this man promising himselfe thus much of that Monastery, that man of another, I heard my selfe (saith Thomas Walsingham) one of the Knights deepely sware, that of the Abbey of Saint Albones, hee would haue a thousand markes by yeere of the temporalities: But to such a mad will the King consented not, for hearing the inordinate crying out of the one side, and the iust answers on the other, hee commanded that bill to be cancelled, and such inordinate petitions to cease, saying, that hee would preserue the Church during his time, in as good state as he found it, or better: with the which answer, he so liked the Churchmen, that hee was thought worthy of great recompence, and of good law-men, also this answer was much commended. The Archbishop therefore, hauing made the Clergy pray, went to the King, and declared that he and his Clergy of their whole consents and free wills had promoted for his vse a tenth, which grant the King so gladly heard, and thankfully received, that hee openly affirmed, hee had rather haue this free grant, then any other foure times double the value, that was to be constrained; and so for that time, the vnsatiable couetousnesse of the enemies, to catch other mens goods, was made frustrate.

Bill put in against the Clergy for their temporalities.

Ralph Stafford slaine. An. reg. 9.

The eleuenth of November, Robert Vere, Earle of Oxford, was made Marquesse of Dluelin in Ireland, and the King gaue him Lands to the value of a thousand markes by yeere, that belonged to the Lord Audley; he also made him Lord Iustice of Chester, he gaue to him the Castle of Flint in Wales, and also he gaue to him Iohn of Brittons, sonne and heyre to Charles de Bloys a prisoner, for whom he had 20000. pounds. Thomas of Woodstocke was made Duke of Glocester, and his brother Edmond Earle of Cambridge, Duke of Yorke. Michael de la Pole, Chancellor of England, was made Earle of Suffolke, and had giuen him by the King, a thousand marks by the yeere. In the Parliament, the Earle of March, Mortimer, was proclaimed heire apparent to the Crowne, which Earle was shortly after slaine in Ireland by the wilde Irish. Also, King Richard at the earnest requests of the Bishops, restored to the Bishop of Norwich his temporalities which hee had holden from him many yeeres. King Richard, with Queene Anne his wife, kept their Christmas at Eltham, whither came to him Lion, King of Ermony, vnder pretence to reforme peace betwixt the Kings of England and of France, but what his comming profited, hee onely vnderstood: for beside innumerable gifts that hee received of the King and of the Nobles, the King lying in the Royall at the Queenes ward, one in London, granted to him a Charter of a thousand pounds by yeere during his life. Yee was (as hee affirmed) chased out of his Realme by the Tartarians, and for that cause, hee got great gifts of the Christian Princes. About the feast of Easter, Iohn, Duke of Lancaster, with the Lady Constance his wife, & a great company of Knights, Esquires, and Archers came to take their leaue of the King and Queene, at whose departing the King gaue to the Duke a crowne of Gold, and the Queene gaue another like crowne of Gold to the Dutchesse. Moreouer the King commanded his people to call them King and Queene of Spaine, and giue them kingly honour. And shortly after, the Duke prepared to goe into Spaine, which was due to him by the inheritable right of his wife, the Lady Constance, daughter

Michael de la Pole Chancellor created Earle of Suffolke. Lib. Vescol.

The King of Ermony came into England.

Iohn, Duke of Lancaster King of Spaine.

1386.

daughter sometime to Peter, King of Castile, and Lion, to that now hée went to challenge it, eyther with consent of the inhabitants, or by law of Armes. Hee with a great power, tooke the Seas at Plimmouth, and landed in Spaine, at the Hauen of Gioyne, on the éuen of Saint Laurence, with all his Nauy in safety.

Hee had with him twenty thousand chosen people, of whom was 3000. armed men, and 5000. Archers. Hee appointed for Admirall of his whole Fléete, Thomas Percy, Sir John Holland, brother to king Richard, by his mothers side, after created Earle of Huntington (and had married one of the Dukes daughters) was ordeined Constable of the hoste: Sir Richard Burghley, Marshall, and after him, Sir Thomas de la Molenceaux was Marshall, Sir John Marmion Chamberlaine, &c.

This peere, rumours were raised of the French Kings purpole to beséege Caléis; many baltant men therefore were sent out of England to résist his force, among whom was Sir Hen. Percy, a young Gentleman, in whom the proofe of all prowesse and chiualry did shine, which after hée had stayed about Caleis idlely, taking indignation, declared that hée hated such idleneśse, and before this, whilest hée was Captaine of Barwicke, hee compelled the bnquiet Scots to be quiet, for which cauls, they called him Henry Hotespurre: This Henry assembling his companions, maketh inuasion vpon them about Murwin, and else-where in Picardie, taketh prayes, exercising laudable facts, and when he vnderstood that the French King meant not to beséege Caléis, but rather to inuade England, he returnes home, that he might here incounter them.

Henry Percy went to Caleis.

An.Reg.10. The Londoners vnderstanding that the French King had got together a great Nauy, assembled an army, and set his purpose strmely to come into England, they trembling like Leuerets, fearefull as Mise, séeke darting holes to hide themselues in, euen as if the City were now to be taken, and they that in times past, bragged they would blow all the Frenchmen out of England, hearing now a baine rumour of the enemies comming, they runne to the walls, breake downe the houses adioyning, destroy and lay them flat, and doe all things in great feare, not one Frenchman yet hauing set foote on shipboord, what would they haue done, if the battell had beene at hand, and the weapons ouer their heads?

The Londoners vnderstanding that the French King had got together a great Nauy, assembled an army, and set his purpose strmely to come into England, they trembling like Leuerets, fearefull as Mise, séeke darting holes to hide themselues in, euen as if the City were now to be taken, and they that in times past, bragged they would blow all the Frenchmen out of England, hearing now a baine rumour of the enemies comming, they runne to the walls, breake downe the houses adioyning, destroy and lay them flat, and doe all things in great feare, not one Frenchman yet hauing set foote on shipboord, what would they haue done, if the battell had beene at hand, and the weapons ouer their heads?

About the feast of Saint Michael, the Nobles came to the Parliament at London with great numbers of armed men, to the end they might bée ready to withstand the Frenchmen, who were supposed to be comming. Michael de la Pole, Earle of Suffolk, and Chancellor of England, caused to be called almost forth of every part of the Realme, men of armes, and Archers vnto the marches about London, that being ready, they might beat backe the Frenchmen with their King, if they had come. Rochester bridge was beaten downe by the Londoners, to be the more sure. But being wearied with long waiting, they were at length sent home againe, with great misery for want of money to buy them victuals.

Rochester bridge beaten downe.

In this Parliament, John Fordham, Bishop of Durham, was discharged of the Treasurership, and in his place was set, Iohn Gilberta, Frier Preacher, Bishop of Hereford. Also Michael de la Pole was put from his Chancellorship, and in his place was set, Thomas Arundale, Bishop of Ely, by consent of the whole Parliament. This being done, Michael de la Pole, was charged with many crimes and committed to prison in Windsore Castle, from whence he was sone delinered by the King: all the possessions of de la Pole purchased whilest he was Chancellor, to the yerely value of 1000. pounds, were for euer by the iudgement of the Parliament, confiscate to the Kings coffers, and further, to restore to the King the value of 12000. pounds, which he had gained by lingering his affaires, as they said. They chose also 13. Lords which should haue the ouersight vnder the King of the whole Realme. Of which, 3. were the new officers, to wit, the Bishop of Ely Chancellor, the Bishop of Hereford Treasurer, and Sir John Waltham Keper of the priuy Seale, and 10. other, which were William, Archbishop of Canterbury, Alexander, Archbishop of Yorke, Edmond Langley Duke of York, Thomas of Woodstocke, Duke of Glocester, William Wikham Bishop of Winchester, Thomas, Bishop of Exceter, Nicholas Abbot of Waltham, Richard, Earle of Arundale, Iohn, Lord Cobham, S. Richard Scrope and S. Iohn Curofe, Knights, to these they gaue full power to determine caules from the time of king Ed. the third, vntill that present, as well within the Realme, as without, &c. They granted to the King a tenth of the Clergy, and a fiftenth of the Laytie: they granted him 3.s. of euery Tunne of wine comming into the Realme, and of euery pound of merchandise going out, or comming in 12.d. wull, leather, and fell excepted.

The French King hauing in the meane time, laid in Flanders, ready to spoyle the Realme of England, if God had not stopped his purpole; from the first of August, till the Euen of All-Saints there never blew winde for his passage, but only for a few houres of that very Euen, the wind rising, they loosed anchors, hoysed vp sailes, and set forth of the Hauen: but when all the ships were in the Sea, 20. miles from the hauen, the wind came contrary, drone them backe, that diuers of their vessels entring the hauen of Sluce were broken, by which occasion England was deliuered out of danger, and the French King returned home. The number of his ships in that Nauy, were reckoned 1200. Froisart saith, the ships were 1287. hee had there with him of Dukes 16. of Earles 26. of Knights 3500. and of fighting men 100000. King Richard, with his wife, Quéene Anne, and the Bohemians, as hée had béene accustomed, kept his Christmas very solemnly at Westminster.

The French King hauing in the meane time, laid in Flanders, ready to spoyle the Realme of England, if God had not stopped his purpole; from the first of August, till the Euen of All-Saints there never blew winde for his passage, but only for a few houres of that very Euen, the wind rising, they loosed anchors, hoysed vp sailes, and set forth of the Hauen: but when all the ships were in the Sea, 20. miles from the hauen, the wind came contrary, drone them backe, that diuers of their vessels entring the hauen of Sluce were broken, by which occasion England was deliuered out of danger, and the French King returned home. The number of his ships in that Nauy, were reckoned 1200. Froisart saith, the ships were 1287. hee had there with him of Dukes 16. of Earles 26. of Knights 3500. and of fighting men 100000. King Richard, with his wife, Quéene Anne, and the Bohemians, as hée had béene accustomed, kept his Christmas very solemnly at Westminster.

The French Kings comming into England hindred.

After Christmas, William Beauchampe took 1387
14. ships of the French King, going toward Sluce, whereof one was laden for the most part with hoises, and another with torches

of ware, and such other necessaries, which the French King had prepared, for his entrance into England.

Barley sold for 11.d. the quarter.

In the beginning of this yéere, at Leicester an hundred quarters of Barley, were sold for an hundred shillings.

About the beginning of March, according to the decree of the late Parliament, Richard Earle of Arundell, Admirall of the fléete, adioyning vnto him the Earle of Deuonshire, and Thomas Moubrey Earle of Nottingham, went to the sea in a happy houre, for within a small time they met with their enemies on the Vigill of our Lady the Annunciation; a great Nauy of Flanders, France and Spaine fraught with men of warre, and diuers engins, was discouered; with whom the Earles encountred, and tooke of them 100. ships and more, the which contained 1111. tunnes of wine, they brought to diuers parts of England whereby wine was then sold for thirtéene shillings foure pence the tunne.

Rochel wine taken.

Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland forsooke his wife, a young Lady, noble and faire, borne of the Lady Isabell daughter to the noble King Edward, and married another that came with Quéene Anne forth of Boheme: the was called in the vulgar tongue of her countrey Lancecrona. The Lords take indignation herewith, especially the Duke of Glocester, vncle to the young Lady that was forsaken. The Duke of Ireland studied how to take the D. of Glocester out of the way. Easter was now past, the time in which the Duke of Ireland should haue transported into Ireland, but left there should be too much stirre in the Realme among the Lords, the King as if were to bring him to the water side, goeth with him into Wales, as not to leaue him, but there to keepe him, that they might deuise how to take away the D. of Glocester, the Earles of Arundell, Warwicke, Darby, & Nottingham, with other. There were with them the Earle of Suffolke, Michael at Pole, Robert Trisilian Iustice, and many other, which no more slowly then the D. of Ireland conspired the death of the sayd noble men. After a great time was passed, the King, as if the Duke of Irelands iourney had béene forgotten, returned with him and the other forth of Wales, to the Castle of Nottingham, there to treat of the death of the said noble men: there therefore he sent for diuers from London, whom he knew would be ready to which way soeuer they should be moued: hee called thither also all the Sheriffes & Iustices of the Realme, & there interdicted the Lords of many crimes which the King had imagined against them. In the meane time the rumour of this doing came to the Lords eares, whereupon first of all the Kings vncle, Duke of Glocester, that hee might mitigate the Kings displeasure, before the Bishop of London, and many other Nobles, sweating vpon the Euangelists, tooke it vpon his oath, that he neuer had imagined any thing to the Kings hinderance, or done any thing to his displeasure, except that he had not giuen good countenance to the D. of Ireland, nor would hereafter giue him any, who had dishonested his kinswoman, the which he firmely had determined to reuenge.

An.reg.11.

The D. of Glocester calling together secretly the Earles of Arundell, Warwick, & Darby, that were in like danger of condemnation, if they prouided not the more speedily, he discouered to them the matter: they therefore gathered their armies together, determined to talke with the K. vpon the premises. Contrarily the K. for his party did deliberate how he might take each of them by themselues out of the way, and first he sent to the Castle of Rigate, where the E. of Arundell lay, the E. of Northumberland with many other to arrest him, who perceiuing a great number of men of war about him, fearing to do that he was commanded, departed without doing his errand for which he came. After whom there were sent many that by night should haue taken him, as haue saine him, but a messenger sent from the D. of Glocester, prsuented their coming, that caused him to ride all night, so that in the morning he was come to Yaringey, hauing passed with his army 30. miles, not without great trauaile, where he found assembled the D. of Glocester, and the E. of Warwicke, with a great power of men. The K. being informed of this assembly in Yarneley wood, as is said, demanded of his familiars what was to be done in this case, but in the end, by the mediation of them that came betwixt them, the matter was brought to this issue, that the Lords should come to Westminster to receiue answere before the K. of those things, the Bishop of Ely with many other men of worthy credite, taking an oath for the K. part, that no fraud, deceit, or perill, should be prepared. When the Lords had prepared themselues according to the couenant, the foresaid mediators for peace sent them word, that treason was deuised by an ambush layd for them, in a place called the Newes, nere to Charing Crosse, and therefore willed them not to come, but with sure hand, whereupon they stayed there: & the K. demaunding why the Lords kept not couenant, the Bp. of Ely answered, because (saith he) there is an ambush laid of a thousand armed men or more in such a place, contrary to the couenant, and therefore they neither come, nor repute you to be faithfull: the King moued forthwith, ware he knew of no such thing, and therefore commanded the Sheriffes of London, that going to the Newes, they should kill, if they found any assembled there for that cause: but Tho. Trinet, and Nicholas Brembar knight, had secretly sent away the armed men to London; the K. therefore sent againe to the Lords, who straightwayes came to Westminster with a strong power, against whole comming, the K. adorning himselfe with Kingly robes, with crowne and scepter, entreth West. hall, where the B. of Ely L. Chancellor, speaking for the K. demanded the cause of their assembling of such a power, whereunto the Lords answered, that it was done for the Kings profit, and the

realmes, to pluckе from him the traytoꝛs which he kept about him, whom they named to be Robert de Vere D. of Irelmo, Alexander Neuell Archbi. of Poꝛke, Michael at Pole E. of Suffolk, Robert Trisilian, a falſe Juſtice, Nicholas Brembar a falſe Knight of London, & thereupon they threw downe their gloues, ſwearing that they would proſecute it by battell: nay, ſaith the K. it ſhall not be ſo, but in the next parliament which was appointed to be holden the moꝛrow after the purification of our Lady, all this was pacified foꝛ that time.

Strange likeneſſe of fire. Henry of Leiceſter.

A maner of exhalation in likeneſſe of fire, appeared in the night in many places of England, which went with men as they went, and ſtayed as they did, ſometime like a wheele, ſomtime like a barrell, ſomtime like a timberlogge, but when many went together, it appeared to be farre off.

Battell at Radcote Bꝛidge.

The Lords departing from the King, notwithſtanding kept together, which ſeemed great wiſedome in them, foꝛ the Duke of Ireland in the parts of Cheſter and Wales had aſſembled a great number, whoſe Captaine was the Conſtable of Cheſter, Thomas Moleneux, a man of great wealth, and hardy. The Duke of Ireland with ſuch a multitude haſted towards London, that iourning with the Londoners, he might make them both as it were an invincible army. But the D. of Ireland riding forth in ſtately and glorious array with the Army of 5000. men, thinking none durſt haue encountred him: Neuerthelelle in the vigill of S. Tho. the Apoſtle, when he came to Radcote Bꝛidge in Oꝛfoꝛdſhire were vnto Farendon vpon Thamis, not paſt foure miles from Cheping-Noꝛton, which bꝛidge, if he could haue paſſed, he had bin out of danger, ſodainly, as he looked on the one ſide, he beheld where the hoſt of the Lords was ready not far from them tarrying his comming, in the midſt of the valley, with which ſight his heart ſtraightway failed: and he ſaid, friends I muſt fly, foꝛ a greater puiſſance ſeemeth to be yonder, againſt you they haue no quarrell, ſo that I being ſhifted away, ye ſhall eſcape well enough, and forthwith ſetting ſpurres to his hoꝛſe, he ſtaſht away. There was then the foreſaid Thomas Moleneux that prepared himſelfe to the battell, foꝛ the Lords were not yet all come to that place, who when he had fought awhile, being wearied, entred the riuer which was therebe. Among other Sir Thomas Mortimer Knight exhoꝛted him to come vp, oꝛ elſe he would ſhoot him thꝛough in the riuer: if I doe come vp, ſaith Thomas Moleneux, wilt thou ſaue my life? I doe make no ſuch pꝛomiſe (ſaith he) but either come vp, oꝛ thou ſhalt ſtraight die foꝛ it. To whom hee anſwered, ſuffer me to come vp & let me fight either with thee oꝛ ſome other, and die like a man. As he came vp, the Knight caught him by the helmet, and pinched it off his head, and ſtraightwayes with his dagger ſtrucke him into the braines.

Thor: Mouleneux ſlaine.

The Duke of Ireland ſeeing, came to the riuer of Thames, and foꝛced his hoꝛſe to enter, in the which being made of an hoꝛſeman a ſwimmer, he got to the other ſide: his hoſe, helmet, gantlets and breaſt-plate came to the ſhare of the Lords, ſo that he was thought long after to be dꝛowned, but he got ouer into Flanders.

Archbiſhop of Poꝛke fled.

The Arch-biſhop of Poꝛke fled, and Robert Triſilian, and Michael de la Poole got him to Caleis. The Lords being returned from the battell, which had bene nere to Burford, ſaſt by Wallack, made great iop foꝛ the ouerthꝛow of their enemies, but much lamented the eſcape of the Duke of Ireland.

A head of earth was made at Oxford by Art of Negromancy, that at a time appointed ſpake theſe woꝛds, *Caput decidetur*, The head ſhall be cut off: *Caput eleuabitur*, The head ſhall be lift vp: *Pedes eleuabuntur ſupra caput*, The feet ſhall be lift aboue the head.

Diſſenſion fell at Oxford betweene the Southerne and Welchmen on the one part, & Nogtherne Scholleꝛs on the other, wherethꝛough many were ſlaine, and the moꝛe part went to their countries, whereſoꝛe the Chancellor was depꝛiued, & Doct. Nicholas Brightwell Deane of Pewarke in Leiceſter was made Chancellor.

Diſſenſion at Oxford betweene the Southern & Nogtherne Scholleꝛs.

The Lords haſted to London, where the K. kept his Chriſtmas in the Tower of London, they having aſſembled an army of nere hand foꝛty thouſand, the moꝛrow after Chriſtmaſſe day came to London, and muſtred in the fields, where they might be ſeene of them in the towꝛer: the Londoners were then in great feare, weeping diuers perils, as the Kings diſpleaſure, if they opened their gates to the Lords, and if they ſhut them foꝛth, the indignation of the vndiſcreet multitude.

1388. The Lords came to London.

The Duke of Glocester with other entred the Tower, and having a little talke with the King, they recited the conſpiracie, whereby they had bene inuited, and they ſhewed foꝛth alſo the letters, which hee had ſent vnto the Duke of Ireland, that he ſhould aſſemble an army to their deſtruction, &c. in the end the King promiſed on the next moꝛrow to come to Weſtminſter, and there to intreat at large foꝛ reformation of all matters.

The Lords came to & being then in the towꝛer of London.

In the moꝛning the King came to Weſtminſter, where, after a little talke, the Nobles ſaid, that foꝛ his honour and commodity of his kingdome it was behouefull, that the Traytoꝛs, whiſperers, flatterers, and vnpꝛofitable people were remoued out of place, and that others might be placed in their roomes.

The King commeth to Weſtminſter.

The King, although loꝛe againſt his mind when hee ſaw how the Lords were bent, and that he wanted power to withſtand them condeſcended to doe what they would haue him, and to conclude, the King at the requeſt of the Lords commanded the ſuſpected perſons of his Court, and family, to be auoided to priſon, to anſwere at the next Parliament, which perſons were ſir Simon Burghley ſir William Elmham, ſir Nicholas Dagworth, ſir John Golefare, which was not yet returned out of Fꝛance, all theſe being Knights,

Sir Simon Burghley & many other committed to priſon.

Richard Clifford, & a Prieſt called Nicholas Slake Deane of the Kings Chappell were appointed to Nottingham Caſtle. To the Caſtle of Dower were appointed Sir John Beaucham of Holt Steward of the Kings houſe, Sir Thomas Triuet, Sir John Salisbury, & John Lincoln. To the Caſtle of Bꝛiſtow ſames Berners, and Richard Medford Clearke. To the Caſtle of Rocheſter was appointed Alexander Neuell Arch-biſhop of Poꝛke, but he was cauſed as ye haue heard, and Michael de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, which was ſtrd. To the Caſtle of Glocester were deputed Robert Triſilian chiefe Juſtice of England, which was not yet found, & Nicholas Brembar who found ſureties to ſtand to the lawes of the Realme.

Many perſons remoued out of the K. court.

Theſe were remoued alſo from the Court, but not ſent to priſon, John Fordham Biſhop of Durham, the Lord Beaumont, Lord William de la Souꝛch of Harnewoꝛth, the Lord Burnell, Sir John Loudl, the Lord Thomas Camoys, Thomas the ſon of the Lord Clifford with Baldwin Burſoꝛde, Thomas Ruſhoke a Frier, Biſhop of Chicheſter the Kings Confeſſour, Aubery de Vere, R Aberbery, John Woꝛth, the Lady Mait. ,ye Lady Poines, and the Lady Molineaux, all which were to anſwere at the next Parliament.

Parliament that wrought wonders.

The third day of Febꝛuary, the Parliament began at Weſtminſter, which parliament continued till the 12. of June next following, except from the Nigil of Palme-ſonday, until the Octaues of Eaſter; this Parliament was named the Parliament that wꝛought wonders. The Lords came to this Parliament with a ſufficient army foꝛ their owne ſureties. The firſt day of this Parliament were aꝛreſted as they ſate in their places, all the Juſtices, except Sir William Skipwith, & ſir Roger Fulethorpe ſir Robert Belknape, ſir John Carey, ſir John Holte, ſir Wil. Boꝛow, and John Aleſton the K. Serieant at law, all beſides theſe were ſent to the Towꝛer, and there kept in ſeuerall places.

The Juſtices aꝛreſted as they ſate in Parliament.

The cauſe was foꝛ that where in the laſt Parliament diuers Lords were made Gouernours of the Realme both by aſſent of the Parliament, and alſo by the aduice and counſell of all the Juſtices, and yet notwithſtanding, the ſaid Juſtices, in a counſell holden at Nottingham, did the contꝛay, whereupon it was now determined that they ſhould make anſwere to their doings. Moꝛeouer, in the beginning of this Parliament were openly called, Robert Vere Duke of Ireland, Alexander Neuell Aꝛch-biſhop of Poꝛke, Michael de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, Sir Robert Triſilian Lord chiefe Juſtice of England, and Nicholas Brembar whom the K. had oft times made Maioꝛ of London againſt the will & aſſent of the Citizens, to anſwere before Tho. of Woodſtocke D. of Glocester, Richard Earle of Arundell, Thomas Beauchampe Earle of Warwicke, Henry Earle of Darby, and Tho. Earle of Nottingham, vpon certaine articles of high treaſon which theſe Lords did charge them with: & foꝛaſmuch as none of them appeared, it was ordained by the whole aſſent of the Parliament, that they ſhould be baniſhed foꝛ euer, & their lands & goods to be foꝛfeited and ſeized into the Kings hands, their lands entailed excepted, which ſhould deſcend to their heyꝛes. The pꝛoceſſe againſt theſe fiue Lords are compꝛiſed in eight and thirty Articles, which I ouꝛpaſſe in this place.

Rob de Vere D. of Ireland, the Arch biſhop of Poꝛke and other baniſhed.

The foreſaid Lords being fled as is afoꝛeſaid, Robert Triſilian a Corniſh-man, Lord chiefe Juſtice to the King, had hid himſelfe in an Apothecaries houſe in the Sanctuary nere to the gate of Weſtminſter, where he might ſee the Lords going to the Parliament, and comming foꝛth thereby to learne what was donne, foꝛ all his life time he did all things cloſely, but now his craft being eſpied was turned to great folly. Foꝛ on Wedneſday the ſeuenteenth of Febꝛuary he was betrayed of his owne ſeruant, & about eleuen of the cloke before-noone, being taken by the Duke of Glocester, and in the Parliament preſented, ſo that the ſame day in the afternoone he was dꝛawne to Tyborne from the Towꝛer of London thꝛough the Citie, & there had his thꝛoat cut and his bodie was buried in the gray Fꝛyers Church at London. This man had diſfigured himſelfe, as if he had bene a poore weake man, in a fuſtie coat, all old and torne, and had artificially made himſelfe a long beard, ſuch as they called a Paris beard, and had defiled his face, to the end he might not be knowne but by his ſpeach. On the moꝛrow, was executed ſir Nicholas Brembar, who had done many oppꝛeſſions, & cauſed ſeditions in the Citie, of whom it was ſaid, that whileſt he was in full authoꝛitie of Maioꝛaltie he cauſed a common paire of Stocks in euery ward, and a common axe to be made to behead all ſuch as ſhould bee againſt him, and it was foꝛther ſaid, that he had indited 8000. men of the beſt and greateſt of the Citie, but it was ſaid that the ſaid Nicholas was beheaded with the ſame Axe hee had pꝛepared foꝛ other: this man if he had liued, had bene created Duke of Tꝛoy, oꝛ of London by the name of Tꝛoy.

Chiefe Juſtice taken and executed at Tyborne.

Sir Nicholas Brembar executed.

On the fourth of March Thomas Vske, Undertheꝛiue of London, & John Blake Eſquire, one of the Kings houſhold, were dꝛawne from the Towꝛer to Tyborne and there hanged and beheaded, the head of Thomas Vske was ſet vp ouer Newgate, to the oppꝛobꝛy of his parents, which inhabited thereby. The goods of the Biſhop of Chicheſter were confiſcate, and on the eleuenth of March the Parliament was pꝛoꝛogued vnto the quinden of Paſch.

Sim. Burghley beheaded.

The firſt day of May Sir Simon Burghley Conſtable of Douer, and Chamberlaine to the King, an intollerable pꝛoud man and a great oppꝛeſſoꝛ of the poꝛe, &c. was condemned of treaſon, but the King diſpenſed foꝛ his dꝛawing and hanging, ſo that he was with his hands bound behinde him led thꝛough the Citie of London, and had his head ſtricken off vpon the Towꝛer hill on the xxtenth day of May, his heires were by Henry the 4. reſtoꝛed in blood & inheꝛitance, except the lands giuen to the new Abbey on the Towꝛer hill, to S. Stephens at

Westminster, and to the Fryers at Langley. This man might by inheritance dispend twenty markes by yere, but in few yeares hee so grew in service of the King, that he attained to value of 3000. markes of yerely reuenues, of whom it was said that hee gaue at Christmas for liueries of Knights & Esquires, yeomen & others as well of the Kings Court as of his owne family, sometime forty clothes, sometime 160. clothes, and sometime 220. of great price, as of Scarlet, &c.

Also on the 12. of May Iohn Beauchampe of Holt Lord Steward of the K. house, whom the King had thought to haue made Baron of Bridge-north, was condemned to be drawne, and hanged, but by the Kings fauour, he lost his head on the Tower hill.

Sir Iohn Bernes Knight of the Kings Court a lusty young man, was in the same place beheaded, Sir Iohn Salisbury Knight was drawne from the Tower to Tyborne and there hanged.

There were condemned also in the same Parliament these Iustices, sir Robert Belkape, Sir Io. Carre, sir Io. Holte, sir Roger Fulthorpe and Sir William Brough, Iohn Locton Serieant at the Lawe, Richard Gray Iustices, with the Lords before fled, were all banished.

Subsidy of wooll.

There was granted to the K. of the Clergie halfe a tenth, and of the Laity halfe a fifteenth, and of the Merchants twelue pence of the pound, three shillings of the tunne, three and fifty shillings foure pence of the sacke of Wol. The Duke of Glocester, and Sir Iohn Cobham asked pardon of the Abbot of Westminster for violence done in the Sanctuary of Westminster, in the taking of the Iustice Trisilian. The last saue one of May there were deliuered out of the Tower W. Elmham, T. Triuet, and Nicholas Dagworth Knights. Also the first of Iune, Iohn Holland the Kings brother was created Earle of Huntington.

K. Richard renewed the Oth which he had taken at his Coronation.

The third day of Iune, the K. in the Church of Westminster renued the oth, which hee toke when he was crowned, and all the Lords sware homage and fealtie to him, and all the Bishops did excommunicate all those that would goe about to hinder the Statutes of this last Parliament, or the great Charter.

An. reg. 12.

After Whitsun-tide Richard Earle of Arundale, with a company of baliant men went to the sea, and fought with certaine ships of his enemies, taking, drowning, or burning foure score ships, hee entred into the Ile of Weas, which he spoyled and brent.

The Scots inuade the North-parts of England.

The same yere the Scots prepared themselues, that as soone as the truce was expired they might bee readye to inuade the North parts, and with a great army entred England, committing great slaughters of people and take bootes in euery place, and led away many prisoners, and burned Townes, and approched to New-castle vpon Tine, and pitcht their tentes not farre from thence. There was then in the same Towne Sir Henry Percy, the younger, and Sir Ralph his brother, both destrous of warlike renowne, and soge enemies vnto the Scots. This Sir Henry came vpon them on the sodaine, and assailed them in the Campe, making great slaughter of them. William of Iames Douglasse, after Froisart also chiefe Captaine of the Scottes, beholding the thing that a thousand times he had wished, that is, Sir Henry Percy within his campe, rideth against him, but was slaine by the said Henry; then commeth the Earle of Dunbarre with an excellent number of Scots, and take the said Henry with his brother Ralph, slaying many English-men to the number of 1100. in that place at the which time there were innumber 30000. put to flight, and take the water at Otterborne: but yet the Scots lost many of their best men. This battell was at Otterborne, the sorest fought that euer was between Englishmen and Scots, saith Froisart.

Battell at Otterborne.

Thomas Arundell Bishop of Ely, brother to Iohn and Richard Earles of Arundell, and sonne to Richard Arundell, was translated to the Archbishopricke of Yorke. This Thomas Arundell, late Bishop of Ely fourtéene yeres fiue monethes, and 18. dayes. Hee beautifully builded anew the palace at Ely: he likewise builded his mannors in diuers places, especially in Holborne by London, bee did not only repaire, but rather new builded his manor place there, and also augmented it with a very large pont, gate-house, 03 forefront toward the stréete by high way: hee gaue to the Church of Ely, a Table gilt, set with precious stones to the value of 200. markes. Iohn Fordham, was translated from Durham to Ely, & Walter Shrelaw Bishop of Bathe was translated to Durham, Rich. Scrope was made Bish. of Chester, Ralph Erkam translated from Salisbury to Bath, and Io. Waltham Clerk of the priuie Seale was made Bishop of Salisbury.

Iohn Belancline. Iohn Maior. Iohn Froisart. T. Rudborne.

Bishops translated.

The ninth day of September a Parliament begun at Cambridge, in the which were diuers Statutes ordeined, especially one for labourers.

Parliament at Cambridge.

In the time of this Parliament, to wit, on the first day of October, as Sir Tho. Trinet going with the King to his lodging at Barnes well besides Cambridge, feared his horse to much with the spur, his horse fiersly and beareth in a manner all the inner parts of his rider, who yet liued vntill the next morrow, which time was given him of God to repentance, if he would accept it, for he was a man of an hauty stomache, and not beloued of the common people.

Thomas Trinet slaine by a fall of his horse.

Alexander Neuell, after his banishment, Archbishop was by Pope Vrban translated to the see of S. Andrew in Scotland, but serued in Louaine in place of a parish Priest, by the space of three yeeres before his death, where in the first yere of his exile he died, and was buried in the Carmelite Fryers there.

of Yorke translated to Saint Andrewes in Scotland.

King Richard kept his Christmasse in solemne manner at Woodstocke with his Quéene Anne.

1389.

About the beginning of Lent, the Scots entring

Cruelty of the Scots.

tring the West parts of England destroying men, and women and children, sucking babes, and such as lay in childe-bed, in the countie of Gilofland in the Dominion of the L. Dacres, and shutting vp of the poore of houses full of people, they burnt the vp without mercy to the number of two hundred in some one house. Against these was sent Thomas Moubray Earle of Nottingham with 5. hundred speares to reuenge their attempts, but for that his power was so small in comparison of theirs, hee preuailed little against them.

On the Thursday before Easter, the Lord Beamount captaine of Carlile entred Scotland by 40. miles, and spoyled the market of Fowike, preying and spoyling at his pleasure, and led many prisoners into England.

King Richard discharged the old officers of his Court, and also his Councellers, appointing other at his pleasure: he toke the seale from Thomas Arundal Arch bishop of Yorke, and deliuered it to William Wickam Bishop of Winchester, and made him Chancellour: the Bishop of Ercester his Treasurer, hauing taken that office from the Bishop of Hereford, and Edmond Stafford keper of the priuie seale, and made many new officers, putting downe the old, he remoued from off the Counsell, the Duke of Gloucester, the E. of Warwicke and other worthy men, and put in their places such as pleased him.

Wickham Chancellour of England.

A truce was granted for three yéres betwixt England and France Iohn Clanbow Knight, and Richard Routhall clerke taking oath before the French King.

A fighting among Gnats at the Kings mannour of Shine, where they were so thicke gathered, that the ayre was darkened with them, they fought and made a great battell. Two parts of them being slaine, fell downe to the ground, the third part hauing got the victory flew away, no man knew whither. The number of the dead was such that they might bee swept vp with besomes and bushels filled with them.

Fight of gnats at Shine.

Michael de la Poole beheaded.

Michael de Poole sometime Earle of Suffolke, and Chancellor of England deceased at Paris in France, whose riches that hee had there, came to the hands of his companion Robert de Vere that fled thither with him.

An. reg. 13.

John Duke of Lancaster returned into England.

In the moneth of Nouember, Iohn Duke of Lancaster came from the parts beyond the Seas into England, after hee had bidden in Spaine & Galcoigne, three yéres space, who in Spaine first tasted great mis-fortunes, yet in the ende brought his matters to very good case not with the force of men, but by the fauour of God: for when hee came first to the parts of Spain with an army sufficient enough, through want of victuals, they first dyed through hunger, and after through sure, so that 1000. famous Knights of his Army dyed miserably, the residue leaning the D. fled to the French Armie.

1390. King Richard with his Quéene Anne helde their Christmasse at Woodstocke, and the Duke of Lancaster in the Castle of Hertford.

The same time, Iohn Hastings Earle of Penbroke, he was destroyed to Iust, hee was stroken about the pitme parts by the Knight that came against him, called Sir Iohn Saint Iohn where he died. King Richard caused the Castle of Canterbury to be repayred.

Reco. To

In a parliament at London it was ordained that none should purchase prouisions at the Popes hands: there was granted to the king vl. shillings of euery sacke of wol, and of the pound fiue pence.

Parliament at London.

John Duke of Lancaster was made Duke of Aquitane by the robe and bonet, which the King gaue him, & Edward the Duke of Yorkes sonne was made Earle of Rutland, to whom the King gaue the Castle of Oham. The Earle of Huntington was made the Kings Chamberlaine, &c.

John Duke of Lancaster made Duke of Aquitane.

An. reg. A great pestilence

A great pestilence was in the North parts of England, so that in a little space eleuen hundred were buried in the Citie of Yorke.

the North

A merchant of Dertmouth waged the naule of shippes of the Ports of his owne charges, and take foure and thirty Ships laden with wine, to the summe of fiftéene hundred tunne.

A warre at Oxford betweene Southerne & North Schollers.

A woefull variance rose in Oxford, for the Welch and Southerne Schollers assaulted the Northern, whereby many murders were done on each side, and a field was appointed, but by the helpe of the Duke of Glocester it was appeased, and the Welchmen banished.

Iusting in Smithfield.

The tenth, eleuenth and twelfth of October the King held a great Court at London in the Bishops palace and a great iusting in Smithfield, to the which Court came many straungers south of France, Almaine, Zealand, and many other parts, bringing with them horses and armour, in which pastimes there was giuen strok of the badge of the white Hart with golden chaines and crownes. And vpon S. Edwards day the King held his Feast in his Regalibus, sitting crowned at Dalle with his Scepter, &c. and likewise the Quéene, and they sate likewise at the table of Kennington crowned, at which solemnitie were present the Earle of S. Paul, and his wife Mawd Courtney Sister to the King of England, and the Earle of Ostreuant who was made Knight of the Garter.

1391.

The D. of Glocester tooke his iourney toward Spaine, but being tossed with vnfortunate stormes, driuen now hither, now thither, was so farre distant of hope, that he despaired of life, & at length after he had passed the Barbarous coasts of Denmarke, Norway & Scotland, he arriued in Northumberland, and came to the Castle of Tinmouth where hauing refreshed himselfe certaine dayes hee tooke his iournay towards his Mannor of Plecy, bringing great ioy to all the Kingdome.

An. reg. 15 The Sunne appeared red like blood.

This yére on the ninth of July, the Sunne appeared red, though certaine thicke and fil thy cloudes, giuing as it were no light from none till the sunsetting, & afterwards in manner for the space of 6. weeke, cloudes did abound about none dayes, sometimes continuing both day and night, not vanishing at all. And the

greet pestilence.

same time such a mortalitie increased in Norfolke, and in many other Countries, that it was not unlike the great pestilence, for that I may keepe silence of other Cities and townes, within short time in the Citie of Norke, there were 11000. corpses buried.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland was called home from Calcis, and was made Warden of the Marches of Scotland, and Robert Moubrey was made Lieutenant of Calcis.

Parliament at London.

On the Friday next after the Feast of all Saints, a Parliament began at London, in the which halfe a tenth, and halfe a fifteenth was granted to the King, which money he should have for the treaty to be had for peace with the French-men, which treaty the Duke of Lancaster should procure. Also conditionally was granted to the K. a full tenth, & a whole fifteenth, if that peace he made any journey against the Scots, & this was the fruit of this Parliament.

Dearth of Corne, and provision made by the Maior of London for remedie therof.

This yeere passed to poore and meane people very hard and sore, for dearth of corne now almost continued for two yeres, whereby it came to passe, that when the time of fruits, as nuts, apples, &c. came, many people through unrefreshing thereof caught the Flixe, and died of the same, & the dearth had been farre greater through famine, if the commendable diligence of Adam Baume then Maior of London had not relieved the Commons, who with continuall care provided, that from the parts of beyond the Seas, corne was brought to London to the reliefe of the whole realme, whereas otherwise without doubt, neither had the Countrey sufficed the Citie, nor the Citie have holpen the Countrey. To the furtherance of this good worke in relieving the poore, the Maior and Citizens of London tooke out of their Orphanes chest in their Guild-hall two thousand markes to buy corne and other victuals, from beyond the Seas, and the Aldermen each of them laid out twenty pounds to the like purpose of buying of corne, which was bestowed in diuers places, where the poore might buy it at an appointed price, and such as lacked money to pay downe, to put in surety to pay in the yere following: in the which yere when Haruest came, the fields yelded plentifull increase, and so the price of Corne began to decrease.

Sir Hugh Calueley was made Warden of the Iles of Jernsey, Gernesey, Norke, Aurney, &c.

A Jew baptized at London.

This yeare a certaine Jewe at London became a Christian, & was baptized by the name of William Piers, and had two pence the day for terme of his life given him by the King, as appeareth of record in the Tower.

1392.

King Richard with Quéene Anne his wife, foure Bishops, as many Earles, the Duke of Norke, many Lords, and fifteene Ladies, held a royall Christmas at Langley nere to S. Albons. The same Christmas day a Dolphin came forth of the Sea & played himselfe in the Thames at London to the bridge, foreshewing happily the tempests that were to follow within a weeke after, the which Dolphin being seene of Citizens, and followed, was with much difficulty intercepted, and brought againe to London, shewing a spectacle to many, of the height of his body, for he was tenne foote in length. These Dolphins are fishes of the sea, that follow the voices of men, and rejoice in playing of instruments, & are wont to gather themselues at musicke. These when they play in riuers, with hasty springings or leapings, doe signifie Tempest to follow. The Seas containe nothing more swift nor nimble, for oftentimes with their skips, they mount ouer the sailes of Ships.

A Dolphin of the Sea came vp to London Bridge.

The King sent to the Londoners requesting to borrow of them one thousand pound, which they flatly denyed, and also euill entreated, beat and neere-hand slew a certaine Lumbard that would have lent the King the said summe, which when the King heard, he was maruellously angried, and calling together almost all the Nobles of the land to Stamford on the fine and twentieth day of May, he opened to them the malitiousnes of the Londoners, and complained of their presumption, by which noble men gaue counsell that their insolencie should with speede be repressed, and their pride abated. By the Kings iudgement therefore was the Maior of London and the Sherrifes, with other the best Citizens arrested to appeare at Nottingham, where on the eleuenth of June, Iohn Hinde Maior was deposed, & sent to Windsor Castle, the Sherriffes were also deposed, and sent the one to the Castle of Wallingford, the other to the Castle of Odiham, and the other Citizens to other prisons, till the King with his Councell had determined what should be done with them. And there it was determined, that from thencefoorth the Londoners should not chose nor haue any Maior, but that the King should appoint one of his Knights to be ruler of the citie: their priuileges were reuoked, their liberties disanulled, and their lawes abrogated.

T. Walsingham.

The Maior of London and Sherrifes deposed and committed.

The King then on the one and twentieth of June first appointed to be Warden of the Citie a certaine Knight called Sir Edward de Dalingrige, but he was quickly deposed by the King, because (men said) he fauoured the Londoners, and Baldwin Radington was constituted in his place.

An. Reg. 16.

In the meane time, through suite of certaine Knights, but specially of the Duke of Glocester, the King is somwhat pacified, and by little and little abateth the rigor of his purpose, calling to mind the diuers honors, and the great giftes hee had receiued of the Londoners, whereupon he determineth to deale more mildly with them, and to call them to some hope of grace and pardon, he sendeth commandement to them to come to Windsore, there to shewe their priuiledges, liberties and lawes which being there shewed, some of them were ratified & some condemned, but they could not obtaine the Kings full fauour, till they had satisfied the King for the iniuries which was said they had done. The King at this assembly at Windsor had

The Londoners called before the K. at Windsor.

had got together almost all the Lords, and to great an armie, that the Londoners had cause to be afraid thereof, about the which preparation he was at great charges, for the which it was sure that the Londoners must pay. They therefore not ignorant that the end of these things was a mony matter, submitted themselues to the Kings pleasure, offering ten thousand pound. They were yet dismissed home to returne againe, uncertaine what satisfaction and sum they should pay.

When the Citizens were returned, and that the Nobles and others were gone home: the King hearing that the Londoners were in heauinesse, and dismayed, he said to his men, I will goe (saith he) to London, and comfort the Citizens, and will not that they any longer despaire of my fauour, which sentence was no sooner knowne in the Citie, but all men were filled with incredible ioy, so that euery of them generally determined to make him, and to be as liberall in gifts, as they were at his coronation. The King therefore as he came from Shine in Surrey to London, with Quéene Anne his wife on the 29. of August, the principall Citizens all in one liuery to the number of 400. horsemen rode to meet them at Wandsworth, where in most lowly wise, they submitted themselues vnto his grace, beseeching him of his speciall pardon, in all such things, as they before had offended him, and the Recorder of the Citie, in the name of the whole citizens, instantly required him, that he would of his great bounty take such paine vpon him as to ride through his chamber of London, to the which request hee graciously consented, to be held on his iourney till he came to S. Georges Church in Southwarke, where they were receiued with procession of Robert Braybroke Bishop of London, and all the Clergie of the citie, who conueyed them through London, the Citizens of London, men, women, and children in order meeting the King at London-bridge, where he was by them presented with 2. faire white steedes, trapped in cloth of gold, parted of red and white, hanged full of siluer belles, the which present he thankfully received, and after he held on his way through the Citie toward Westminster.

The K. riding toward London, receiued by the Citizens.

And as they passed the Citie the streets were hanged with cloth of golde, siluer and silke. The Conduite in Cheape ran with red and white wine, and by a childe Angel-like he was presented with a very costly Crowne of gold, and the Quéene with another. A table of the Trinitie in gold was giuen to the King, valued worth eight hundred pound, and another to the Quéene, of Saint Anne, because her name was Anne, with diuers other gifts, as hozles, trappers, plate of gold and siluer, clothes of gold, silke, veluets, Basons and Ewers of gold, also gold in coyne, precious stones, and Jewels so rich, excellent, and beautifull, that the value and price might not well bee esteemed, and so the citizens recouered their ancient customes and liberties, and then the Kings Bench from Norke, and the Chancery from Nottingham, was returned to London. And it was granted to them that they might choose them a Maior as before time they had done. The Londoners beleeued that by these gifts they had escaped all danger, and that from thencefoth they should be quiet, but they were deceiued, for they were compelled to giue the King after this 10000. pound, collected of the Commons in great bitternesse of minde, for the which summe, the King became benevolent to the Citizens, and forgaue them all trespasses, by his patents dated at Westminster the 23. of February, and so the troubles of the Citizens came to quietnesse; which trouble the Dolphin in Thamis at Christmas last past did happily signifie a farre off. A fabulous booke compiled by a nameless Author, but printed by William Caxton (and therefore called Caxtons Chronicle) reporteth these troubles to happen through a Frap in Flétrétte, about an hose-loafe which was taken out of a Bakers basket, by a Woman of the Bishop of Salisburies, & that the same troubles were pacified, and their liberties were again restored by meanes of Richard Grauesend Bishop London, in reward whereof the Citizens repaire to the place of Burtall in the middle Ile of Saint Paules Church, &c. But all that is untrue, for at this time Rob. Braybroke was Bishop of London, and Richard Grauesend had been Bishop, and deceased in the time of Edward the first, in Anno 1303. almost 90. yeres before this time. After whom succeeded in the Bishopricke Ralph Baldoke, Gilbert Segraue, Richard Newport, Stephen Grauesend, Richard Wentworth, Ralph Stratford, Michael Nothbroke, Simon Sudbury, William Courtney, and Robert Braybrooke that late Bishop of London from 1381. untill the yere 1403.

A great fable reported.

Moreouer, the place of buriall in S. Pauls, whereunto the Maior and Citizens of London haue repayred, is of William who was Bishop of London in the time of William Conqueror, who purchased the first Charter of the said King William, for the same citie, as I haue before declared.

Robert de Vere Earle of Oxford died in great misery, hee pined and died.

Robert de Vere, sometime Earle of Oxford that by many degrées had mounted to the name of Duke of Ireland, died at Louaine in great anguish of mind, and miserable penury, which young gentleman was apt to all offices of worthinesse, if in his child-hood hee had not wanted discipline.

1392.

After the Feast of Christmas, a Parliament was holden at Winchester, in the which was granted to the King by the Clergie halfe a tenth, and by the Commons halfe a fifteene, for the expences of the Duke of Lancaster and Glocester, that were to goe into France to create a peace betweene the kingdomes.

Parliament at Winchester.

The French King in danger to be burnt by meanes of his traitorous brother.

At the which time the French King, whilest that he was daunsing in the Hall with foure Knights of his household, being disguised like a wilde man, hauing a short garment about him dressed with pitch and rosen, that the flare which was fastened to his strait coate might see better abide, and shew it selfe more plaine,

Westminster, and to the Fryers at Langley. This man might by inheritance dispend twenty markes by yere, but in few yeares hee so grew in service of the King, that he attained to value of 3000. markes of yerely reuenues, of whom it was said that hee gaue at Christmas foz liueries of Knights & Esquires, yeomen & others as well of the Kings Court as of his owne family, sometime forty clothes, sometime 160. clothes, and sometime 220. of great price, as of Scarlet, &c.

Also on the 12. of May Iohn Beauchampe of Holt Lord Steward of the K. house, whom the King had thought to haue made Baron of Wildge-north, was condemned to be drawne, and hanged, but by the Kings fabour, he lost his head on the Tower hill.

Sir John Bernes Knight of the Kings Court a lusty young man, was in the same place beheaded, Sir John Salisbury Knight was drawne from the Tower to Tyborne and there hanged.

There were condemned also in the same Parliament these Iustices, sir Robert Belkape, Sir Io. Carre, sir Io. Holte, sir Roger Fulthorpe and Sir William Brough, Iohn Locton Serieant at the Lawe, Richard Gray Iustices, with the Lords before fled, were all banished.

Subsidy of Wool.

There was granted to the K. of the Clergie halfe a tenth, and of the Laity halfe a fifteenth, and of the Merchants twelue pence of the pound, three shillings of the tunne, three and fifty shillings foure pence of the sacke of Wol. The Duke of Glocester, and Sir Iohn Cobham asked pardon of the Abbot of Westminster for violence done in the Sanctuary of Westminster, in the taking of the Iustice Trisilian. The last saue one of May there were deliuered out of the Mower W. Elmham, T. Triuet, and Nicholas Dagworth Knights. Also the first of Iune, Iohn Holland the Kings brother was created Earle of Huntington.

The third day of Iune, the K. in the Church of Westminster renued the oth, which he tooke when he was crowned, and all the Lords sware homage and fealtie to him, and all the Bishops did excommunicate all those that would goe about to hinder the Statutes of this last Parliament, or the great Charter.

K. Richard renewed the Oth which he had taken at his Coronation.

An. reg. 12.

After Whitsontide Richard Earle of Arundale, with a company of baliant men went to the sea, and fought with certaine ships of his enemies, taking, drowning, or burning foure score ships, hee entred into the Ile of Weas, which he spoyled and brent.

The Scots inuade the North-parts of England.

The same yere the Scots prepared themselues, that as soone as the truce was expired they might bee readye to inuade the North parts, and with a great army entred England, committing great slaughters of people and tooke holds in euery place, and led away many paisoners, and burned Townes, and approched to New-castle vpon Tine, and pitcht their tentes not farre from thence. There was then in the same Towne Sir Henry Percy, the younger, and Sir Ralph his brother, both destrous of warlike renolune, and sone enemies vnto the Scots. This Sir Henry came vpon them on the sodaine, and assailed them in the Campe, making great slaughter of them. William of Iames Douglasse, after Froisart also chiefe Captaine of the Scottes, beholding the thing that a thousand times he had wished, that is, Sir Henry Percy within his campe, rideth against him, but was slaine by the said Henry; then commeth the Earle of Dunbarre with an excedine number of Scots, and take the said Henry with his brother Ralph, slaying many English-men to the nnmber of 1100. in that place at the which time there were innumber 30000. put to slight, and take the water at Otterborne: but yet the Scots lost many of their best men. This battell was at Otterborne, the sozest fought that euer was betwixt Englishmen and Scots, saith Froisart.

Battell at Otterborne.

Thomas Arundell Bishop of Ely, brother to Iohn and Richard Earles of Arundell, and sonne to Richard Arundell, was translated to the Archbishoprick of Yorke. This Thomas Arundell, late Bishop of Ely fourténe yeres fiue monethes, and 18. dayes. Hee beautifully builded anew the palace at Ely: hee likewise builded his mannors in diuers places, especially in Holborne by London, hee did not only repaire, but rather new builded his manor place there, and also augmented it with a very large port, gate-house, or forefront toward the stréte of high Holborne: hée gaue to the Church of Ely, a Table gilt, set with precious stones to the value of 200. markes. Iohn Fordham, was translated from Durham to Ely, & Walter Skirlaw Bishop of Bathe was translated to Durham, Rich. Scrope was made Bish. of Chester, Ralph Erkam translated from Salisbury to Bath, and Io. Waltham Clerk of the priuie Seale was made Bishop of Salisbury.

Iohn Belsandine. Iohn Maior. Iohn Froisart. T. Rudborne.

Bishops translated.

The ninth day of September a Parliament begun at Cambridge, in the which were diuers Statutes ordeined, especially one for labourers.

Parliament at Cambridge.

In the time of this Parliament, to wit, on the first day of October, as Sir Tho. Triuet going with the King to his lodging at Barnet-well besides Cambridge, forced his horse to much with the spur, his horse falleth and breaketh in a manner all the inner parts of his rider, who yet liued vntill the next morrow, which time was giuen him of God to repentance, if he would accept it, for he was a man of an hauty stomache, and not beloued of the common people.

Thomas Triuet slaine by a fall of his horse.

Alexander Neuell, after his banishment, was by Pope Vrban translated to the sea of S. Andrew in Scotland, but serued in Louaine in place of a parish Priest, by the space of three yéeres before his death, where in the fift yére of his exile hé died, and was buried in the Carmelite Fryers there.

Archbishop of Yorke translated to Saint Andrewes in Scotland.

King Richard kept his Christmasse in solemne manner at Windsocke with his Quéene Anne.

1389.

About the beginning of Lent, the Scots entring

Cruelty of the Scots.

fering the West parts of England destroying men, and women and children, sucking babes, and such as lay in childe-bed, in the countie of Gildesland in the Dominion of the L. Dacres, and shutting vp of the doores of houses full of people, they burnt the sp without mercy to the number of two hundred in some one house. Against these was sent Thomas Moubray Earle of Nottingham with 5. hundred speares to reuenge their attempts, but for that his power was so small in comparison of theirs, hee preuailed little against them.

On the Thursday before Easter, the Lord Beamount captaine of Carlile entred Scotland by 40. miles, and spoyled the market of Fowike, preying and spoyling at his pleasure, and led many paisoners into England.

Wickham Chancellour of England.

King Richard discharged the old officers of his Court, and also his Counsellers, appointing other at his pleasure: he toke the seale from Thomas Arundal Arch bishop of Yorke, and deliuered it to William Wickam Bishop of Winchester, and made him Chancellour: the Bishop of Ercester his Treasurer, hauing taken that office from the Bishop of Hereford, and Edmond Stafford keper of the priuie seale, and made many new officers, putting downe the old, he remoued from off the Counsell, the Duke of Gloucester, the E. of Ma[illegible]ke and other worthy men, and put in their [illegible] as pleased him.

[illegible]ruce was granted for thrée yéres be[illegible] England and France Iohn Clanbow [illegible]t, and Richard Routhall clerke taking [illegible]efore the French King.

[illegible]ghting among Gnats at the Kings man[illegible]r of Shyne, where they were so thicke gathered, that the ayre was darkened with them, they fought and made a great battell. Two parts of them being slaine, fell downe to the ground, the third part hauing got the victory flew away, no man knew whither. The number of the dead was such that they might bee swept vp with besomes and bushels filled with them.

Michael de la Poole deceased.

An. reg. 13.

Michael at Poole sometime Earle of Suffolke, and Chancellor of England deceased at Paris in France, whose riches that hee had there, came to the hands of his companion Robert de Vere that fled thither with him.

John Duke of Lancaster returned into England.

In the moneth of November, Iohn Duke of Lancaster came from the parts beyond the Seas into England, after he had bidden in Spaine & Gascoigne, thrée yéres space, who in Spaine first tasted great mis-fortunes, yet in the ende brought his matters to very good case not with the force of men, but by the fauour of God: for when hee came first to the parts of Spain with an army sufficient enough, through want of victuals, they first dyed through hunger, and after through slure, so that 1000. famous Knights of his Army dyed miserably, the residue leauing the D. fled to the French Armie.

1390.

King Richard with his Quéene Anne helde their Christmasse at Windsocke, and the Duke of Lancaster in the Castle of Hertford.

The same time, Iohn Hastings Earle of Penbroke, he was desirous to Iust, hee was stroken about the prime parts by the Knight that ranne against him, called Sir John Saint Iohn where he died. King Richard caused the Castle of Canterbury to be repayred.

Reco. To

Parliament at London.

In a parliament at London it was ordained that none should purchase prouisions at the Popes hands: there was granted to the King 11. shillings of euery sacke of wol, and of the pound fiue pence.

John Duke of Aquitane and Lancaster.

Iohn Duke of Lancaster made Duke of Aquitane by the robe and bonet, which the King gaue him, & Edward the Duke of Yorkes sonne was made Earle of Rutland, to whom the King gaue the Castle of Okam. The Earle of Huntington was made the Kings Chamberlaine, &c.

An. reg. 14.

A great pestilence was in the North parts of England, so that in a little space eleuen hundred were buried in the Citie of Yorke.

A great [illegible] the Lords

A merchant of Dertmouth waged the naule of shippes of the Ports of his owne charges, and toke foure and thirty Ships laden with wine, to the summe of fifténe hundred tunne.

A wofull variance rose in Orford, for the Welch and Southerne Schollers affaulted the Northern, whereby many murders were done on each side, and a field was appointed, but by the helpe of the Duke of Glocester it was appeased, and the Welchmen banished.

Variance at Oxford between the Southerne & Northern Schollers.

Iusting in Smithfield.

The tenth, eleuenth and twelfth of October the King held a great Court at London in the Bishops palace and a great iusting in Smithfield, to the which Court came many straungers fouth of France, Almaine, Zealand, and many other parts, bringing with them horses and armour, in which paslimes there was giuen first of the badge of the white Hart with golden chaines and crownes. And vpon S. Edwards day the King held his Feast in his Regalibus, sitting crowned at Dalle with his Scepter, &c. and likewise the Quéene, and they sate likewise at the table of Remington crowned, at which solemnitie were present the Earle of S. Paul, and his wife Mawd Courtney Sister to the King of England, and the Earle of Ostreuant who was made Knight of the Garter.

1391.

An. reg. 15.

The D. of Glocester tooke his iourney toward Spaine, but being tolled with infortunate stormes, driuen now hither, now thither, was so farre distant of hope, that he despaired of life, & at length after he had passed the Barbarous coasts of Denmarke, Norway & Scotland, he arriued in Northumberland, and came to the Castle of Timmouth where hauing refreshed himselfe certaine dayes hee tooke his iourney towards his Duchy of Pleey, bringing great ioy to all the Kingdome.

The Sunne appereth red like blood.

This yére on the ninth of Iuly, the Sunne appeared red, though certaine thicke and fil thy cloudes, giuing as it were no light from none till the sunsetting, & afterwards in manner for the space of 6. weeke, clouds did abound about none dayes, sometimes continuing both day and night, not vanishing at all. And the

he had beene sodainly burned to death (if good helpe had not chanced) through the falshood of the Duke his brother that did aspire the kingdome; for as the King led the dance, one that was hired thereunto bowing downe his torch, set fire on the towe, which being kindled burnt the strait garment, where finding matter meet to feede on, to wit, pitch & rosen, burnt so fiercefully, but a Lady seeing such danger toward the Kings person, ran to him and pulled him from the dance, by which meanes the King was saued, but the foure Knights could not by any meanes be holpen till their skinnes and flesh were scolpered, and they yelded up the Ghost.

This yere the Kings Bench and Chaunterie were removed from London to Poyke, for the Arch-bishop of Poyke being Lord Chancellour did with the commodity of his Citie, but the noueltie lasted not long, for with the same facilety that they were removed to Poyke, they were brought backe againe to London.

Kings bench and Chancerie removed from London to Poyke

An. reg. 17. Willi. Scrope purchased the Ile of Man.

The same yere Aubery de Vere Uncle and heire to Robert the late Duke of Ireland was restored in bloud, and created Earle of Orford. John Deuereis, Knight, Constable of Douer, and the Kings steward, died sodainly, in whose roome, Thomas Percy, that before was vice-chamberlaine, was made Lord Steward, and Thomas Beaumond was made Constable of Douer, and William Scrope was made vice-chamberlaine, who about the same time bought of William Mountacute Earle of Salisbury the Ile of Man, with the regalitie thereof, for the Lord of this Iland is called King, to whom it was lawfull to weare a crowne of gold. Thomas Percy the younger was made Warden of Berdeaux.

The Dukes of Lancaster and Gloucester passed ouer into France, to make somewhat of the truce, or to conclude a finall peace betwixt the kingdoms: but it was not so brought to passe, as it was wished, by reason of the French Kings sickenesse.

Great thunder and lightning.

In September, lightnings and thunders, in many places of England did much hurt, but especially in Cambridge-shire, the same burnt houses and corne neere to Tollewoske, and in the towne it burnt terribly.

Great water 1393.

Such abundance of water fell in October, that at Bury in Suffolke, the Church was full of water, & at Newmarket it bare downe wals of houses, so that men and women hardly escaped drowning. The same yere Lord Thomas de Ros, as hee returned forth of the Holy land, in the citie of Paphos in the Ile of Cyprus, through intemperancie of the ayre departed this life there. In the Octaues of S. Hilary, a Parliament was holden at London, in which a subsidie was demanded for the K. that was minded to goe into Ireland, wherefore the Clergie granted to him a full tenth if he would passe thither, and if he went not, then granted they but halfe a tenth. Certaine Lords of Scotland can e into England to get worship by force of armes. The Earle of Marre challenged the Earle of Nottingham, to iust with him, & so they rode together certaine courses, but not the full chalenge, for the Earle of Marre was cast both horse and man, and 2. of his ribbes broken with the fall, so that hee was borne out of Smith-field, and conueyed toward Scotland, but dyed by the way at Poyke. Sir William Darel Knight, the Kings bannor-bearer of Scotland, challenged Sir Pierce Courtney Knight, the Kings Bannerbearer of England, and when they had runne certaine courses, they gaue ouer without conclusion of victorie. Then Cockborne Esquire of Scotland challenged Sir Nicholas Hawberke Knight, and rode fiue courses, but Cockborne was borne ouer horse and man. The seuenth of June Quéene Anne dyed at Shine in Southry, and was buried at Westminst. The King tooke her death so heauily, that besides cursing the place where she dyed, he did also for anger throw downe the buildings into the which the former Kings being wearied of the Citie, were wont for pleasure to resort.

Iusting in Smithfield.

Queen Anne deceased. *An. Reg. 18.*

Thus the King, the Duke of Lancaster, and his son the Earle of Darby, were widowers all at one time: for the Lady Constance Dutchesse of Lancaster, daughter to Peter King of Spaine, was but lately deceased, whilest the Duke her husband was in France. And the same time also deceased the Countesse of Darby, wife to Henry Earle of Darby. Moreouer, this yere deceased Isabel Dutchesse of Poyke, that was halfe sister to the Dutches of Lancaster, being borne of one mother, and shee was buried at Langley in the Fryer Church there by the Kings commandement.

Constance Dutchesse of Lancaster deceased.

Sir John Haukwood.

Also this yere deceased that famous Knight, knowne to the world, Sir John Haukwood, whose deeds (saith Thomas Walsingham) require a speciall Treatise. I finde by good record, that this John Haukwood was borne in Essex, in the Parish of Hingam Sible, the sonne of Gilbert de Haukwood Tanner, in his youth he was bound as an apprentice with a Taylor in the City of London, & from thence was preft in the musters for service of King Edward the third in the warres of Fraunce, wherein he served first as a common soldier in the towne of an Ferher. Afterward hee was made a captaine and had some charge committed vnto him, which he so well performed, as he was aduanced to the order of Knight-hood, and stood in good perfection to haue growne to great preferment by those warres, if they had indured: for when the peace was concluded at Bretaine, beside Chartiers, in the yere of Christ 1360. he was then a poore knight, and had reaped small commodity of those warres. Wherefore he ioyned himselfe with the companies, called the late comuers, who assembled in great numbers, a fine or sixe-thousand English horsemen, and seeking after better gaine, made great spoyle of all the East parts of the Kingdome of France, passing through Champaine, Burgondy, and Dauphin, euen to the very gates of Auignion in Prouence, where

his acts, life, and death.

Clement

Clement the seuenth, Bishop of Rome, then held his residence and Court of Cardinals: from whence he departed in to Lombardy, hauing the leading of that part of the companies, which was called the white hand, with whom he serued valiantly in the warres of Ioh. Marques of Mount-ferrato. But when Leonell Duke of Clarence, sonne to Edward the third King of England came into Italy, to marry the Lady Violent, daughter of Galasius, Viscount Lord of Millaine, he forsooke that seruice, and attended the Duke to that Marryage.

At which time Barnabe the brother of Galasius had great warres with the territorie of the State of Mantua, and obtained of the duke of Clarence, that Sir John Hawkwood being a Captaine, and principall man of his retinue might come to aide him in his warres, for Barnabe being himselfe a warlike Prince, had a great desire to make some tryall of the discipline and prowesse of the English-men. Sir John Haukwood therefore hauing in sundry skirmishes with great courage, and consideration, happily taken aduantageable occasions of victorie, & the Englishmen demeaning themselues worthily with their bowes and arrowes, did draw Barnabe into that admiration of them that he commended the discipline of this Nation, and greatly regarded the prowesse and discretion of Sir John Haukwood. And in short time after, to wit, the first yeare of K. Richard, good liking increasing betweene them by entercourse of fauours and courtesies, he desired to haue him his sonne in law, and gaue him in marriage the Lady Domnia his Daughter, whom he had begotten of a Noble woman, named Porra, with the value of ten thousand Florens of yerely reuenew, and after that time he married not any other.

This aliance being made in respect of his valour in warre, was the occasion of the increase both of his pay, and of the renowme of the English-men throughout all Italy: That a most puissant Prince in warre, had not without sufficient cause to inforce him, conceiued so good opinion of the valour of a man that was a stranger, and for this cause his seruice was required by the Princes and free Cities of Italy. For at that time all martiall affaires amongst the Italians were managed by forraine forces and Captaines.

It fortuned that vpon some displeasure conceiued, the Englishmen that were left at Alba, where the Duke of Clarence dyed, for the alliance past, made a sodaine reuolt frō the friendship of Galasius and Barnabe, and ioyned themselues with their enemies, by which change of affections, many of the Townes of Lombardy came to be wasted, by the outragious spoyles of the English-men, amongst other they tooke the Towne of Faera, & Banacanallo, whereof he solde one to the Marques of Este for 20. thousand Crownes, and the other he kept, and after that Sir John Haukwood, hauing both his forces & pay increased, determined to take new hopes, and new aduentures. He went first to the ayde of Pope Gregorie the twelfth, and hauing with great commendation recouered the Cities of Prouence that had reuolted from him, for his seruice therein, was worthily rewarded with the dominion of fiue Townes. From him, he went to the Florentines, who proffered great pay, and from them, not long after to the Pisanes, and then againe to the Florentines, vnder whom he serued with such a number of our Nation both horse-men and foote-men, that all Italy reared him, with that successe and increase of his commendation, and glorious renowme, that he was easily reputed to be the best Souldiour of that age, for he had learned by his long experience in the warres, hauing an exceeding ripe and quicke conceipt, to force occasions, to frame his resolutions, and to make speedy execution, being alio, as occasion required, both hot in his fights, and notable for his delayes, in so much as sundry great Captaines, who were afterward highly renowned, proceeded out of his Schole, as from an exact Master of martiall affaires. The exploytes that he had atchieued, with good successe, were accounted for sure grounds & principles of Discipline, as well amongst his very enemies, as also amongst his owne followers.

After infinite victories, obtained, and incomparable renowme amongst all men for the same, he deceased at Florence, being then an olde man, and was most honourably buryed in the great Church of the same Citie, where after his death, the Senate in rewarde of his good deserving, bestowed vpon him the honor of a Tombe, with the Image of a man on horse-back, as great as a mighty Pillar, for a Monument and testimony of his great prowesse in warre, and exceeding fidelitie to their state. Notwithstanding his executours, & afterwise his friends here in Engl. to wit, Robert Rockeden senior, Robert Rockeden iunior, and Iohn Coe, raised a Monument, or Tombe arched ouer, and ingraued to the likenesse of Paukes flying in a web, in the Parish Church of Hyngham-sible where he was borne, and founded there for him a Chantrie, and another in the Priory of Pyngham Castle, to remember Iohn Hawkwood Knight, Iohn Oliuer, and Thomas Newenton Esquires.

About the moneth of August Proclamation was made that all Irish people should auoyde the Realme, and get them home before Candlemas. The feast of the nativity of our Lady, vpon paine of life.

Irish people to auoid England.

King Richard went ouer into Ireland, and the Duke of Glocester with him, & the Earles of Arech, Salisbury Arundell, Nottingham, and Rutland. The Irish-men being afraid of such preparation as was made, durst not shew themselues openly, but with secret assaultings they often troubled the Kings army, yet when the English-men preuailed, many of the Lords of the land submitted themselues to the King, of which some the King held with him, least they should attempt some new stirre.

K. Richard went into Ireland.

And

1395. The King held his Christmas at Dublin in Ireland, and after that feast held a Parliament there: also the same time the Duke of Yorke, the Lord Warden of England, called a Parliament at London, to the which came (being sent forth of Ireland) the Duke of Glocester, the which before all the states shewed the Kings need, who had now spent his treasure amongst the Irishmen, so that a tenth was graunted by the Cleargie, and a fiftenth by the Laity.

Parliament at London.

The same time the fauourers of Wickliffes opinions, set vp on the gates of Saint Pauls Church in London, and on the gates of Saint Peters Church at Westminster, vehement accusations of the Cleargie, and conclusions such as had not not beene heard of, among the which were these verses following.

Libels against the Cleargie.

Plangunt Anglorum gentes, crimen Sodomorum,
Pauis fert, horum sunt facta causa malorum.
Surgunt ingrati, corrupto semine nati,
Alemem prelati, hoc defensare parati,
Qui Reges estis, populis quicunque praestis,
Qualiter his gestis, gladius prohibere potestis.

They were maintained in this their doing, by some Nobles men and Knights of this land, among which as chiefe were Sir Richard Stury, Sir Lewes de Clifford, Sir Thomas Latimer, Sir John Mountague, which did instigate them to confound if they might, the religious men: whereuppon the Arch-bishop of Yorke, the Bishop of London and other, as messengers from the whole state of the cleargy passed ouer into Ireland, where to the King they made a grieuous complaint, beseeching him that he would returne with speed, to helpe the faith and Church that was now incredibly afflicted by Lollards, (as they termed them) how they might take away all the possessions of the Church, and that worse was, how they might take and destroy all Canonicall sanctions. King Richard hearing these things, determined to returne home the sooner. And when he was returned, he called before him, and rebuked certaine of the Nobles bitterly, threatning them, if they from thenceforth fauored these Lollards, or in any wise did comfort them, he would extreamly punish them: he tooke an oth of Sir Richard Stury, that from thence forth, he should not hold such opinions, which thing being done, the King said, and I sweare to the that if thou euer violate thine oth, thou shalt die a shamefull death; other hearing such roaring of the Lion, plucked in their heads and lay close.

Sir John Froisart of S. Patricks Purgatorie.

About this time Sir John Froisart Chanon of Chimay in the Carledome of Heynalt, as himselfe reported, came into England, he demaunded of Sir William Lisle (who had been with the King in Ireland) the manner of the hole that in Ireland is called Saint Patricks Purgatory, if it were true that was said of it, or not: who answered that such a hole there was, and that himselfe and another Knight had beene there while the King lay at Dubline, & said they entred into the hole, and were closed in at the Sunne set, and abode there all the night, and the next morning issued out againe at the Sunne rising: he said, that when he & his fellow were entred and past the gate that was called the Purgatory of Saint Patricke, and that they were descended and gone downe three or foure paces, as into a cellar, a certaine hote vapour rose against them, and strake so into their heads, that they were faine to sit downe on the staires which were of stone: and after they had sate there a season, they had great desire to sleepe, and so fell into a slumber and slept there all night. In the which sleepe they had maruellous dreames, otherwise then they were wont to haue in their Chambers: but in the morning after they had issued out, they had cleane forgotten their dreames and visions.

King Richard sent messengers the Earle of Rutland, the Earle Marshall, the Arch-bishop of Dublin, the Bishop of Ely, Lewes Clifford, Henry Beaumount, Hugh Spencer, and many other to Charles the French King, to treat with him for a marriage to be had betweene the King of England, and the French Kings eldest Daughter named Isabell of eight yeres old, who was already promised to the Duke of Bitons sonne, by a Treaty that was made at Toures in Touraine. This was hard to be broken, for the French King and his Uncles had sealed with the Duke of Britaine.

K. Richard sent messengers to treat of a marriage with the French K. daughter.

Now sometwhat of the former voyage of King Richard into Ireland, as the same was reported to Sir John Froisart, by an Esquire of England, named Henry Christall. Sir John (quoth he) it is not in memory, that euer any King of England made such prouision for any iourney into Ireland, nor such a number of men of Armes nor Archers. The King was a nine moneths in the marches of Ireland to his great cost, and charge to the Realme, for they bare all his expences: and the marchantcities, & good Townes of the Realme thought it well bestowed, when they saw the King returne home againe with honour. The number that he had thither, were foure thousand men of armes, and thirty thousand Archers, well payed weekly. But to shew the truth, Ireland is one of the euill countries of the world: to make warre vpon or to bring vnder subiection, for it is closed strongly and wildly with high forests, and great waters and marishes. It is hard to enter to doe any of the countrey any damage: nor ye shall find no Towne, nor person to speak withall. For the men draw to the woods, and dwell in Caues or small Cottages, vnder trees and among bushes, like wild and sauage beasts: and when they know that any man maketh warre against them, being entred into their Countries, then they draw together to the straits & passages to defend them, so that no man can enter into it ouer. And when they see their time they will soone take their aduantage on their enemies, for they know the Country, and are light people. For a man of armes, being neuer so well beseen, shall run on foote as fast as he, and ouertake him, yea, and leape by vpon his horse behinde him, and throw him from his horse: for they are strong men in their armes, and haue sharpe weapons with large blades, two edged, wherwith they will slay their enemie, whom they neuer repute to be dead till they haue cut his throate, & opened his belly, and taken out his heart, which they carry away with them, some say they eate it, and haue great delight therein: they take no man to ransome. And when they see that they be ouer-matched, then they will depart & hide themselues in bushes, woods, and caues, so that no man shall finde them: Sir William Windsore, who had most vsed the warres in those parts of any other English man, could neuer learne the manner of the Countrey. They be hard people, and of rude wit: and they set nothing by lollity, nor fresh apparell, nor by noblenesse, for though their Countrey be soueraignely gouerned by Kings, whereof they haue many, yet will they abide and continue in their rudenesse.

Ireland somewhat described.

Truth it is, that 4. of the principall Kings, and most puissant after the manner of the countrey, are come to the obeysance of the King of England, by loue and faire meanes, and not by battell, or constraint. The Earle of Ormond, who marcheth vpon them, hath taken great paine, and hath so intreated them, that they came to Dubline to the King, and submitted them to him, to be vnder the obeysance of the Crowne of England, wherefore the King and all the Realme reputeth this for a great & honourable act. For King Edward did neuer so much vpon them, as King Richard did in his voyage. The honour is great, but the profite is but small, &c. The names of the foure Kings were these, first, the great Oneale King of Neth, the second Otrine of Thomond, King of Mhoumond, the third Arthur of Mackquemur King of Leinster, the fourth Ocomor King of Cheueno & Dzape, they were made Knights by King Richard in the Cathedrall Church of Dublin: these 4. Kings watched all the night before in the Church, and the next day at high Masse time, were made Knights, and with them Sir Thomas Orphew, Sir James Pado, and Sir John Pado his cousin.

The cōquest of Ireland by K. Richard.

These Kings sate that day at the Table with King Richard, they were regarded of many people, because their behauiour was strange to the manner of England.

When Sir John Froisart desired to know how it came to passe, that foure Kings of Ireland were so sone brought to the obeysance of King Richard, when King Edward the Kings Grand-father, who was so valiant a Prince, could neuer subdue them: Sir Henry Christall answered, he could not tell, but as men said, the great puissance that the King had ouer with him, and remaining there nine moneths, abashed the Irishmen. Also the Sea was closed from them on all parts, whereby their marchandises might not enter into their countries, though they that dwell farre within the Realme

cared little for it, yet such as liue on the marches of England and by the sea coast, vse feate of merchandise.

King Edward in his time, had to answere so many warres in France, Britoine, Gascoigne, and Scotland, that his people were diuided in diuers places, wherefore he could not send any great number into Ireland. But when the Irishmen saw the great number of men of warre that King Richard had in this last iourney, they aduised themselues, & came to obeysance.

Edward the Confessor his seruice.

Moreouer, there was of old time in England a King named Edward, who is canonized as a Saint: This King in his time subdued the Danes, and discomfited them by battell on the Sea three times: This Edward the Irishmen loued, & dread him much more then any King of England that had beene before. And therefore King Richard this yere past, when he was in Ireland, in all his armories and deuises, he left the bearing of the armes of England, as the Leopards and Flower-deluces, and bare the armes of Saint Edward, that is, a Crosse patent gold and gules, with 4. white Partelets in the field, whereof it was said, the Irishmen were well pleased, and the sooner inclined to him, and haue done to him faith and homage in like manner as the Predecessors sometime did to King Edward. Thus haue I shewed the manner how King Richard had this yere accomplished his voyage in Ireland.

In this meane space the English Lords rid from Caleis to Amiens, and to Claremont in Beauuisyn, and so to Paris, where they were lodged about the Croste of Tyreuer, they were fiue hundred horses. The French King was lodged at the Castle of Loubre, and the Queene with her children at the house of S. Paul vpon the riuer Saine. The Duke of Berrey at the house of Nelle, the Duke of Burgoine at the house of Arthois, and the Duke of Burbon in his owne house, the Duke of Orleans, the earle of S. Paul, and the Lord Cowsey at their owne houses.

The King had assembled there all his councell, to the intent to make the better answere to the Embaillodors of England. He commanded euery day to be deliuered to these Embaillodours 200. Crownes, for their small expences, and for their horses. And the chiefe, as the Earle Marshall, & the Earle of Rutland, were oftentimes with the King and dined with him. These Lords desired euer to haue answere, and hauing beene at Paris 22. dayes, and their charges paid by the French King, a reasonable answere was giuen them, so that they were put in great hope to bring about that they came for, howbeit the French men sayd it could not be done shortly, because the Lady was so young and also that she was affianced to the Duke of Britaines eldest son, wherefore they must treat to breake that promise, or they could proceede any further, and thereupon the French King should send into England the next Lent, to shew how the matter went. With which answere the Englishmen were contented, they

take their leaue and departed from Paris to Caleis, and so to England, the King was ioyous of their comming, and well contented with their arriuere.

The Duke Lancaster returned out Gascoigne.

About Michaelmas the Duke of Lancaster returned out of Gascoigne into England, for that hee had not beene received in Gascoigne, as hee thought hee should haue beene, for the people there did vtterly reiect him, from bearing gouernment ouer them. The King made him good cheere, and all the Winter following oft times sent to the French King, concerning the marriage, and was well enclined to haue peace, these pursuits and treaties toke such effect, that their matter drew neere to a point, so that such Embassadours as were first sent out of England into France, and were againe lodged in Paris, were in number fiue hundred, and soiourned in Paris more then three weekes.

T. Walsingham. Pirates of Denmarke rob the English.

This yere England suffered great losse by pyrats, that belonged vnto the Queene of Denmarke, who spoyled mariners and marchants, especially the men of Norfolke that assembled a multitude together, and toke vpon them to fight with them, but the enemies preuailing many of them were slaine, and very many taken prisoners, were reserued for ransome with the losse of twenty thousand pounds, which they had aboord with them to make their marchandise.

Bishop of Salisbury another deceased.

This yere deceased Iohn of Waltham Bishop of Salisbury, Treasurer of England, who had pleased the King so greatly, that (though many murmured at it) he commanded him to be buried at West-minster among the Kings. After him Roger Walden the K. Secretary and treasurer of Caleis, was made Treasurer. Iohn de Metford Bishop of Chichester was translated to Salisbury, and the Arch-bishop of Diuelin to Chichester. Also Thomas Brantingham Bishop of Exceter deceased, after whom succeeded Edmond Stafford bearer of the priuy Seale. Henry Wakefield Bishop of Worcester deceased, vnto whom succeeded at the Kinges request, a Monke of Chester, called Tideman a Physitian.

Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland.

In the moneth of November King Richard caused the body of his deare friend Robert de Vere Duke of Ireland, to be brought from Louane, and after to be buried in the Priory of Colin in Esser, with solemne funerals, which he honoured with his presence, and caused the Coffin of Cipres, wherein his body being embalmed lay, to be opened, that he might behold his face, and touch him with his fingers, openly shewing his loue to the dead carcasse, which he bare him when he was aliue; there were at the same funerals with the King, the Countesse of Oxford, mother to the deceased Duke, the Arch-bishop of Canterbury, many other Bishops, Abbots, Priors, and other religious men, but yet there were few of the Nobles, for they had not digested the hatred they had conceiued against him.

Froissart.

The Embassadours of England being at Paris with the French King, their matters tooke such effect, that it was fully agreed that the King of England should haue in marriage Isabell the eldest daughter of King Charles, & by vertue of procuration, the Earle Marshall affianced and espoused her in the name of the King of England, and so from thencefoorth shee was called Queene of England. The Englishmen toke their leaue and departed to Caleis and so into England. The King was glad of their returne, and so were other, but wholsoeuer was glad of this marriage, the Duke of Glocester vncle vnto the King made no ioy thereof, for hee saw well that by reason of that Marriage and alliance, peace should be betweene the Kings, and their Realmes, which grieued him, and of this matter he would oftentimes speake with his brother the Duke of Pozke, and dzone him as much as he could to his opinions, for he was but a soft Prince. But to the Duke of Lancaster his eldest brother, he durst not speak ouer-largely, for he saw well that he was of the Kings opinion, and was well pleased with the Kings Marriage.

This yere the King helde his Feast of Chrismas at Langley, whither came to him the Duke of Lancaster, and hee receiued the Duke with honour, but not with loue, as was thought, hee therefore taking leaue of the King, departed from the Court toward Lincolne, where Catherine Swinford then lay, whom after the feast of the Epiphanie, (all men wondering at the strangenesse of the deed) he toke to wife. This woman was borne in Henault, daughter to Sir Paine Ruit, a Knight of that countrey, she was in her youth brought by in the Duke of Lancasters house, and attended on his first wife Blanch the Dutchesse of Lancaster: and in the dayes of his second wife the Dutchesse Constance of Spaine, she kept the said Catharine to be his concubine, who after was married to a Knight of England named Swinford, that was now deceased. Before shee was married, the Duke had by her 4. children, three sonnes, and a daughter, one of the sonnes hight Iohn Bewford, the second Thomas de Bewford, & the other Henry, who was brought vp at Aton in Almaine, proued a good Lawyer, and was after Bishop of Winchester, and Ioane a daughter: for the loue the Duke had to those his children, he married their Mother the said Katherine Swinford, being now a widow, as before is said. The great Ladies of England, as the Dutchesse of Glocester, the countesse of Darby, the countesse of Arundell, and others descended of the blood royall, greatly disdained that shee should be matched with the D. of Lancaster, and by that meanes accounted second person in the Realme, and be preferd in rome afore them; and therefore they said they would not come where the should be present, for it should be a shame to them, that a woman of so base birth, that had beene concubine to the D. should goe and haue place before them.

1396. John Duke of Lancaster marryed Katherine Swinford.

Hector Boet.

This yere during the peace, many Noblemen of England frequented Scotland, and many

many Scots frequented England, through the which, ofttimes, many honourable turnaments were done betwixt Englishmen and Scottes, in defence of their honours & glory in Armes: Among whom was not a little praised the honourable victory gotten by Dauid Crauford on the Bridge at London, against the Lord Welles in this manner: The Lord Welles was sent Embassadour into Scotland, concerning certaine high matters betwixt the two Kings of England and Scotland, and when hee was at a solemne Banquet, where Scottishmen and English-men were communing of deedes of armes, the Lord Welles said, Let vs (sirs) haue no place, if ye know not the chiualry and valiant deedes of English-men, appoint vs a day and place when ye list, and ye shall haue experience. Then said Dauid Earle of Crauford, I assent, and incontinently, by consent of either partie, a day and place was assigned. The Lord Welles chose the Bridge of London for the place, and S. Dauid chose S. Georges day for the time. Thus departed the Lord Welles toward London. After the day Earle Dauid came with thirtie persons well appointed to London: As soone as the day of battell was come, both the parties were conueyed to the Bridge, and soone after by sound of trumpet, the two parties ran hastily together, on their barbed Horses, with square grounden speares to the death. Earle Dauid notwithstanding the valiant dint of speares broken on his helmet, and visage, fate so strongly, that the people moued with vaine suspition cryed, Earle Dauid contrary to the law of armes, is bound to the saddle: Earle Dauid hearing this murmure, dismounted off his horse, and with out any support or helpe ascended againe into the saddle. Incontinent they rushed together with the new speares, the second time with burning ire to conquer honour: but in the third course the Lord Welles was sent out of his saddle, with such a violence, that hee fell to the ground: Earle Dauid seeing his fall, dismounted hastily from his horse, and tenderly embraced him that the people might vnderstand, hee fought with no hatred, but only for the glory of victory: and in signe of more humanity, hee visited him euery day, while he recouered his health, and then returned into Scotland.

Justing on London-bridge.

Froissart.

The same season was sent into England from the French King, Valerian Earle of S. Paul with certain articles concerning the treaty of the peace. The King received him ioyously, and heard well his message, and said vnto him apart. Faire brother, as to the treaty of peace betweene me and my Father of France, I am right well inclined thereunto, my brethren, and two vncles of Lancaster & Pozke incline right well thereunto: but mine vncle the Duke of Glocester, who is a right perilous man, letteth it as much as he can. Sir, quoth the Earle of Saint Paul it behoueth you to win him with fayre words, and giue him great gifts. In the name of God (said the King) ye say well, and thus shall I doe. The Earle of Saint Paul said, the French King with his Vncles should come to Saint Omers, and bring with him his daughter, so that the King of England would come to Caleis, and so betweene Saint Omers and Caleis the two Kings should meete and speake together, whereby should increase loue and amity: And if they could not conclude on some peace, yet at the least the truce might be prolonged to endure for thirty or forty yeeres, betweene the two Realmes and their allies: this deuise seemed good.

K. Richard sailed to Caleis.

And so when euery thing was readie, the King and the Earle of Saint Paul sailed ouer. And the K. of England with his Vncles came to Caleis, with many Lords and Ladies: and the Duke of Burgoyne one of the French Kings vncles came to Saint Omers, and from thence to Caleis, to the King of England, and there consulted together on certaine articles of the peace, whereunto the K. of England lightly inclined. The Duke of Burgoyne & Earle of Saint Paul returned to S. Omers, &c. And the King of England with his vncles into England, leauing their wiues at Caleis, till their returne.

Ann. regni 20.

William Courtney Arch-bishop of Canterbury, deceased on the first of August, after hee had sate Arch-bishop of Canterbury 15. yeres and more: this William Courtney vpon the dissolution of the Hospitall, called *Nouum operis* at Maidstone, erected there a Colledge of secular priests, the matter to be a Prebend, which Colledge at the generall suppression was valued in land by yere at 139. pounds 7. shillings five pence: he builded much at Maidstone: he gaue by Testament 1000. markes towardes the amendment of the bodie of the Church of Christ in Canterbury, where hee was buryed. Thomas Arundell brother to the Earle of Arundell succeeded him in the Archbishoprieke of Canterbury, he had beene first Bishop of Ely, where hee had much large building in the palace, he gaue to the Church there a table of gold and precious Stones, valued at 3. hundred markes, he built the great gate house of his Inne in Holborne of London: hee was from thence translated to Pozke, where besides his great building and rich ornaments giuen, hee gaue to that Church, of plate two great basons of siluer and gilt, two great censers, 2. other basons of siluer, and two cruses, he gaue to the vse of the Vicars a siluer cup of great weight, and a bole of siluer of an higher price, for the vse of the Chapter, &c. and was now translated to the see of Canterbury, he forthwith renoured his office of Chancellor, whereunto was admitted Edmond Stafford Bishop of Exceter.

Courtney & Arundell Arch-bishops of Canterbury deceased.

Pe haue heard how the King of of England, Parliament. was returned from Caleis into England, and at Westminster there remained till Michaelmasse, that the parliament at Westminster should beginne. In the meane season great preuision was made at Caleis, & Guisnes, for the King & his Lords sent from the ports of England on that coast, also great prouision was had of Flanders, all which came by sea to Caleis. And likewise for

the French King and his brother the Duke of Orleans, and his Uncles and other Prelates and Lords of France, great provision was made at Saint Omers, at Ayre, at Tyrwin, at Arde, Hesdin, Montoire, and at all other houses & Abbeyes thereabout, there was nothing spared on either part, especially the Abbey of S. Bertine was well replenished of all things to receive the kinge.

The Parliament beganne at Westminster at Michaelmasse, & it was ordained to endure eight and fortie dayes, but it was abridged; for the King would not tarry there more then five dayes, wherein he declared the thinges pertaining to the Realme, especially such matters as touched himselfe, and the cause why he came from Calets. Which things being dispatched, the King returned againe to Calets, with his Uncles of Lancaster and Glocester, and other Prelates and Lords of England. The Duke of Yorke tarried still in England with the Q. of Darby to governe the Realme in the Kings absence. Assoone as the French King knew that the King of England was returned to Calets, he sent to him the Earle of Saint Paul to shew him what order was taken in France concerning his marriage, which the king liked well.

When the Duke of Lancaster and his son, the Duke of Glocester and his sonne, the Earle of Rutland, the C. Marshall, Earle of Huntington, the Kings Chamberlaine and many other Lords and Knights, Esquires and Ladies, rode with the Earle of S. Paul to Saint Omers, where they were well received of the Duke of Burgoine, and of the Dutchesse, the D. of Britaine and other. All the chere that could bee devised was made to the English Lords and Ladies: there was the Dutchesse of Lancaster, her sonne, and two daughters, there was great gifts given of plate, of golde and silver, nothing was spared, insomuch that the Englishmen had marvell, especially the Duke of Glocester, who said to his Counsell, I see well there is great riches in the Realme of France, there was much given to him: he take ever all their gifts, but allwayes he ranne in his heart: which the D. of Burgoyne well perceived. When the Lords and Ladies of England had beene royally feasted, then was communication had how the two Kings should meete and speake together, and how the Lady should be delivered, whereupon appointment was made, and leave taken on all parts. The English part returned to Calets to the King, and shewed what chere they had, and what Presents had beene given them, which newes pleased well the King.

Anone after the French King came to S. Omers, having the Duke of Britaine in his company, where it was ordained that the three D. Berry, Burgoyne, and Burbon, should goe to Calets to speake with the King of England, where they were joyously received, and had as good chere as could bee devised. The 3. Dukes had secret communication with the K. and his Counsell, from whence they returned to Saint Omers to the French King, & shewed how they had sped. Then the French King went to the Basted of Ard. the Duke of Burgoyne to Hountoire, the Duke of Bytaine to the Towne of Esquie, and the Duke of Berry to Balingham. In every part about, there were pitcht by tents and pavilions, and all the Country full of people, what of France and of England. The King of England came to Guisnes with the Duke of Lancaster, & the Duke of Glocester to Hames.

Thus on the eve of Simon and Jude, about ten of the clocke in the foze-noone, the Kings departed out of the tents, the which were pight not farre a sunder, and came unto the one to the other, & met at a certaine place appointed, on the one side there was araigned 400. knights of France, armed with their swords drawne: And on the other part, 400. knights of England in like manner, so the two Kings passed thozow them.

The Dukes of Lancaster and of Glocester ledde the French King, and the Duke of Berrey, and of Burgoyne ledde the King of England, thus came forth the 800. knights, all which knights, when the two Kings came iust together, kneeled downe, the two Kings met together bare-headed, and a little inclined, and tooke each other by the hands, then the French king led the king of England into his tent, which was noble and rich, and the foure dukes tooke each other by the hands, and followed the 2. Kings, & other knights after, the Frenchmen on the one side, and the Englishmen on the other side: and so they stood regarding each other till all was done. So the two Kings hand in hand entred the French Kings tent. Then the 4. Dukes kneeled downe before the Kings, and they raised them up and so talked together: then the two Kings went a little apart, & talked a certaine space. In the meane time wine and spices were brought, the Duke of Berry served the French King of spice, and the Duke of Burgoigne of wine: And the dukes of Lancaster and Glocester served the K. of England, and other Knights and Esquires served the other Prelates and Lords. This businelle done, the two kings take leave each of other, and so returned to their tents, and take their hozses and rode, the King of England to Guisnes, the Dukes of Lancaster and Glocester to Hames, and the other to Calets: the French king rode to Cozdie, & the Duke of Orleans with him, the duke of Berrey to Dozman, and the duke of Burgoyne to Hountoire.

On Simon & Judes day, about 11. a clocke, the king of England & his Uncles and other Lords came to the French king into his tent, where they were received right honourably. Then tables were set up, & the 2. kings sate at one table alone, the French king on the right hand, the Dukes of Berrey, Burgoyne, & of Burbon served the two Kings. This dinner was taken in the French kings tent, and after wine & spices taken, the yong Q. was brought forth accompanied with a great number of Ladies

Meeting of the King of England & of France.

dies and damosels, and there she was delivered to the King of England, and every man toke their leave to depart. The young quéne was set in a rich litter, and there went no more French Ladies with her but the Lady of Coloyn, there were Ladies of England, the Dutchesse of Lancaster, Yorke, Glocester, the lady Namure, the Lady Poynings, and many other, who received the Quéne with great ioy. Thus the K. of England and his yong Quéne, with their company rode to Calets the same night. And the French K. and his company to Saint Omers.

After the Kings returne to Calets, ere Allhallowne, day in solemne wise, he married the Lady Isabell in the Church of S. Nicholas at Calets, the Arch-bishop of Canterbury doing the office, at the which time there was a great feast and great larges.

K. Richard married Isabell the French K. daughter.

On the next morow the Dukes of Orleance and Burbon came to Calets, to see the King and the Quéne, and on the next morow they toke their leave, and departed to S. Omers to the French King, and the same day the King and the Quéne toke their ship, & had faire passage: for within 3. houres they arrived at Douer, notwithstanding by tempest they lost their tents and houshold-stuffe: from Douer they rode to Rochester, to Dertford, to Eltham, & so to London, whereof the Citizens being warned, made out certaine horsemen well appointed, all in one liuery of colour, with devises imbroidered on their sleeves, that every company might be known from other, the which with the Maioz and his brethren, clothed in Scarlet wrate the King & Quéne on the blacke Heath, and there doing their duties, and attended upon them till they came to Newington, where the King commanded the Mayoz with his company to returne, for that he was appointed to lodge that night at Kennington.

Q. Isabell Crowned.

The 13. of November, the young Q. was conveyed from Kennington, through Southwarke, with great pompe unto the Tower of London, at which time there went such a multitude of people to see her, that upon London bridge nine persons were crowded to death, of whom the Mayoz of Triptoz in Essex was one, and a worshipfull Matron that dwelt in Cornhill was another. The morow after she was conveyed to Westminster, and there crowned with all the honour that might be devised.

Parliament at London.

1397.

The 22. of January, a Parliament began at London, in the which the Duke of Lancaster caused to be made legitimate, the issue which he had begotten of Katherine Swinford, before she was his wife. And the same time John son to the said Duke of Lancaster and the said Katherine, was created Earle of Somerset, and the Duke gaue him to surname Sir Bello Forto or Bowfort. It was ordained in this Parliament, that Justices should not haue to sit with them any as assistant: there was a tenth granted by the Cleargy to the King. At this time K. Richard contrary to his oath, revoked Robert Belknape, John Holt, William Brugh Knights of the Wath, and Justices forth of Ireland.

Knights of the Bathe.

This yere when the Realme of England seemed to enioy the chiefest peace that might be, by reason of the K. marriage, and the great riches that were heaped up together by the same, and by the reason of the truce of 30. yeers established, and the presence of so many Noblemen, as the like no forraine Realme was able to shew, sodainly all things were troubled and brought into a turmoyle, whiles the K. at Plashy in Essex, upon a sodaine tooke his uncle the D. of Glocester by force of armes, he suspecting no such thing, and caused him to be conveyed to Calets, there to be kept in prison, and caused the E. of Warwicke to be arrested and imprisoned, the same day that he had bidden him to dinner, notwithstanding that he shewed him very good countenance, and had promised him great friendship: beside that he deceived the Earle of Arundell with faire words (who was well able to have defended himselfe, & to have delivered his friends, the Duke of Glocester and the E. of Warwicke) and notwithstanding he yelded himselfe quietly, hee sent him to the Ile of Wight, there to be imprisoned untill the parliament. And to the end there should be no commotion among the commons for the imprisoning of the nobles, he caused to be proclaimed that the apprehension of them, was not for any old displeasure, but for new transgressions committed against the K. thereby after he caused the said nobles to bee indited at Nottingham, & subpoened such as should appeach them in the next Parliament, to wit, Ed. Earle of Rutland, Thomas Moubrey Earle Marshall, Thomas Holland Earle of Kent, Io. Holland Earle of Huntington, John Beawford Earle of Somerset, John Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, & Tho. Spencer, Wil. Scrope the K. Chamberlaine. And in the meane season the King assembled together to guard his person, many malefactors of the County of Chester which kept watch and ward both day and night about him. Then the King caused a great and generall parliament to be summoned at Westminster, where he caused a great Hall to bee builded in the midst of the Pallace betwixt the clocke tower, and the doze of the great Hall: This Parliament began about the fifteenth of September, at the beginning whereof Edward Stafford Bishop of Exceter L. Chancellor, made a proposition or sermon, in the which he affirmed that the power of the King was alone and perfect of it selfe, & those that impeached it were worthy to suffer paine of the law: to this Parliament all the Nobles came with their retinue in armes, for feare of the King: the proclocutors were Knights, in whom no goodnesse at all could be found, but a naturall covetousnesse, unstiable ambition, intolerable pride, & hatred of the truth, their names were I. Bushy, William Bagot, and Thomas Greene. These required chiefly to have the Charters of pardons revoked and disanulled: and Bushy said to the King, because we are charged to say what they bee that have committed any offence against your maiestie, and regall authoritie, we say that Thomas Duke of Glocester and

Parliament at Westminster.

T. Walsingham.

Bushy, Bagot, and Greene.

Richard Earle of Arundell, in the 18. yere of your raigne, have trayterously compelled you, by meane of the new Archbishop of Canterbury then Chancellor, to graunt to them a commission to governe your realme, & to dispose of the Rate thereof, to the prejudice of your maiestie and royalty. The same day was that commission disanulled with all articles depending thereupon. Also the generall pardon granted after the great Parliament by them procured, and one especiall pardon for the Earle of Arundell were revoked.

Also there was petition made by the commons, John Bushy speaking for them, that the generall pardon procured and got forth, by the Archbishop of Canterbury then Chancellour procuring it, should be disanulled: and he to be judged a traytor, for granting to it: whereupon the Archbishop rose and would have answered, but the King said, to morow, to morow: but he came not into the Parliament house againe: the King said, that he would deliberate of the Commons petition.

Also it was established, that any traytour confessed to stand against the Kings regality, should be adiudged worthy to suffer punishment to be appointed for such offence.

Fower thousand archers compassed the Parliament house, ready to shoote.

And it was enacted, that criminall causes from thenceforth should be determined in every Parliament, and then licence being had to depart, a great stirre was made as is bled, whereupon the Kings Archers, in number 4. thousand, compassed the Parliament house, thinking there had bin in the house some bzyple or fighting, with their Bowes bent, their Arrowes nocked, and drawing, ready to shot, to the terror of all that were there, but the King herewith comming, pacified them. On the next day, the Prelates were inioyned, upon paine of losing their temporalties, that they should the same day agree upon some procurator, to consent in their names to all things in that parliament, to be dispatched, and the King had these words: Sir John Bushy, because many desire that I would explaine the fifty persons exempted in the generall pardon, I will briefly: that what man soeuer beareth this, is worthy of death: first because he sweth: secondly, because I have excepted those that are to be impeached in this parliament: thirdly, because other of their associates hearing them appealed, would be afraid where no feare is. On the next day, the Arch-bishop of Canterbury commeth to the Pallace to appeare in the Parliament, but the King commanded him by the Bishop of Carlile that hee should returne to his house, & from thence forth he appeared not. The Prelates made Thomas Percy the Kings Steward of Lousholde, their procurator, to consent in all things in this Parliament to be done. Also sir John Bushy had these words, our Soueraigne Lord the King, because the second article in the Parliament is for punishment to be appointed for such as violate the Kings royall authoritie, I beseech your grace that you will authorize me by way of appealing, of accusing, or any casing, with licence to make declaration from one to the rest so often and when to me and my fellowes it may seme expedient, & it be granted: then Bushy had these words, I accuse Th. of Arundell, Archbishop of Canterbury, of three fold treason.

First, of the commission in granting the regiment or gouernement of the Realme to Thomas Duke of Glocester, and to Richard Earle of Arundell at his instance, who rather because he was your Chancellor, should have refused it.

Secondly, for that under pretence of that commission, they trayterously usurping the iurisdiction of your royall authority, held a solemne parliament traiterously in prejudice of your regalitie.

Thirdly, because that by the said usurping, Sir Simon de Burley, and Sir James Barnes Knights, & faithfull Leiges to you, were trayteronsly murthered, and put to death, of which things, we your commons demand iudgement, worthy of so high treason, to be terribly pronounced by you, and because the Arch-bishop is a man of great consanguinity, affinity, power, & most politike wit & cruell nature, for the preservation of your estate, & the whole kingdomes, by the petition of this present Parliament, I require that he may be put into safe custody, until the final execution of his iudgement.

The King hereunto answered, that for the excellence of his dignitie he would take deliberation till the next morow, and all other that were put into the same commission, he pronounced them to be his faithfull Liege people, and void from that treason, and especially Alexander Neuell, late Arch-bishop of Yorke, & then Sir Edmond of Langley, D. of Yorke, Uncle to the King, and Sir William Wickham Bishop of Winchester, that were put into the same Commission, with teares fell downe on the ground before the King, & gaue him humble thankes for that grace and benefite bestowed on them.

Also on S. Matthewes day, Edward Earle of Rutland, the Erles of Kent, Huntington, Nottingham, Somerset, and Salisbury, with the Lords Spencer and Scrope, in a suite of red gownes of silke garded, and bordered with white silke, & embroidered with letters of gold, propounded the appeale by them to the King at Nottingham, before set forth: in the which, they accused Thomas Duke of Glocester Richard Earle of Arundell, Thomas Earle of Warwicke, & Thomas de Mortimer knight, of the premised treasons, and of an armed insurrection of Haringey Park, traiterously attempted against the King, and putting in sureties for the prosecuting of their appeale. Richard Earle of Arundell was arraigned in a red gowne, and a Scarlet hood, and faithfully the Duke of Lancaster said to the Lord Neuell, take from him his girdle and hood, and so it was done, and herewith the Articles of appeale being to the said Earle declared, with a baliant and a bolde minde, hee denyed that hee was a Traytour, and required of Arundell the benefite of the pardon, protesting that arraigned he

he would not go from the fauour of the King & his grace. The D. of Lancaster said to him, thou traytour, that pardon is reuoked. The Earle answered, truely thou lyest, I was neuer traytour. Also, the Duke of Lancaster said, why diddest thou purchase thy pardon & the Earle answered to escape the tongues of mine enemies, of whom thou art one, and verily, as farre forth as toucheth treason, thou hast more need of pardon then I. The King said, make answere unto thine appeale. The Earle answered, I see well that these persons have accused me of treason, shewing the appealements, but truely they all lie, I was neuer traitour, but I aske allwayes the benefite of my pardon, the which your grace graunted to me within these fiue yeres now last past, being of full age, and of your franke good will and proper motion. Then said the King, I did so grant it that it should not be against mee: then said the Duke of Lancaster, then the graunt availeth not. The Earle answered, truely of that pardon I knew lesse then thy selfe, that was then on the further side the Seas. Then said Sir John Bushy, that pardon is reuoked by the King, the Lords, and by his faithfull people: the Earle answered, where be those faithfull people? I know thee well and thy companie, how pe are gathered together, not to deale faithfully, for the faithfull people of the realme are not heere, and therefore the people doe lament for me, and well I know that thou hast beene euer false. And then Bushy and his fellowes cryed out. Behold soueraigne Lord and King, how this traytour goeth about to raise sedition betwixt vs, and those people that are at home. The Earle answered, ye pe, I am no traytour. Then rose the Earle of Darby and said, diddest thou not say thus to me at Huntington, where wee were first assembled together to rise, that it was the best, afore all things to take the King. The Earle said to the Earle of Darbie, thou lyest on thy head, I neuer thought of my Soueraigne Lord the King, but that that was good, and for his honour. Then said the King, diddest not thou say to me in time of thy Parliament, in the Bathe behind the White-Hall, that Sir Simon de Burley was worthy of death for many causes? and I answered, that I knew no cause of death in him, and yet thou and thy fellowes diddest trayterously put him to death, and then the Duke of Lancaster pronounced Iudgement against him in this manner: Richard, I Iohn, Steward of England, Iudge thee to be a Traytour, and I condemne thee to be drawne and hanged, to bee beheaded and quartered, and thy landes tayled and not tayled, from thee and from thine heires of thy body descending, to bee confiscate: then thy King for reuerence of his blood, commanded him onely to bee beheaded, and then was he led to the Tower-hill, and there beheaded: the Augustine Fryers in London tooke vp his body and buried it in their Church, on the North side of their Quire; and after on his graue a sumptuous Tombe was set of Marble stone. Also the same day, the King appointed the Lord Cobham (accused by the commons) to be arraigned. Also vpon the Saturday, Sir Thomas de Mortimer was summoned vpon paine to bee banished as a Traytor, within fiue monethes to come to be tryed in iudgement: and then said the King, peraduenture the Earle of March cannot take him, and therefore I will so long stay for his certificate out of Ireland.

Earle of Arundell beheaded.

Richard E. of Arundell arraigned.

Also, a declaration was made, that all benefices or gifts, granted or alienated by those that were already condemned, or after were to be condemned in this Parliament, and other whatsoeuer, granted sithence the tenth yere of this Kings raigne, should be reuoked. Also, on Monday following, the certificate giuen in of the Earle of Nottingham, then Captaine of Calets, in whose custodie the Duke of Glocester was, that the same Duke might not be brought to be tryed in iudgement, because hee was dead in his custody at Calets, at the petition of pet of the said appellants, the same sentence was pronounced against him which had beene pronounced earst against the E. of Arundell.

D. of Glocester condemned to die after he was dead.

Also the Archbishop of Canterbury, first his temporalties being confiscated was banished the realme. On the Tuesday, Rikell one of the Kings Iustices, borne in Ireland, read certaine confessions drawne in writing vpon the said treasons, affirming that the same were the confessions of the said D. by him put from body or discouered, and written with his owne hand.

Archbishop of Canterbury banished.

Also, the Carledome of Chester was annexed to the honor of a principalitie, by annexing thereto the lands of the said Earle of Arundell confiscate.

Also, the same day, John Earle of Salisbury made request to haue a *Scire facias* granted to him against the Earle of March, for the Lordship of Denbigh in Wales, and the King answered thereupon that he would take deliberation. Also, on the Wednesday, it was ordained that the lands of the said Earle of Arundell, annexed to the Dutchie of Chester, should enioy the liberties of the same Dutchy, excepted that to the twelfthmen of those parts, their old lawes & customes should still remaine & be continued.

The Castle of Lyons with the Seigniory of Bromfield, & Yale, to the said Castell belonging. The Castell of Chirke with the Seigniory of Chirkland to the said Castell belonging. The Castle of Oswalds stracte, with the Towne well walled with stone, with the hundred, and the eleven townes to the said Castell belonging. The castell of Isabell, with the seignioy to the same, belonging to the Castell of Dallilay, with the appurtenance in the Countie of Shropshyre, and the reuersion of the Seignioy of Clone with their appurtenances, which Edward Earle of Rutland then held for terme of his life. All which Townes, Castels, and Seignories aforesaid were belonging to Richard late Earle of Arundell, and which by force of the iudgement giuen against the said Earle in the said Parliament, forfeit to our Soueraine Lord the King, and

The castle of Lyons with the Seignioy of Bromfield & Yale, &c. 1397

Ireland.

shall be from henceforth answered to the principality, or Dukedome of Chester. Also it was ordained that such as gave either counsell, ayde, or favour to the children of them that were condemned, or that should be condemned in this Parliament, should be punished as Traytors.

Archbishop of Canterbury banished the Realme.

On Friday, the King appointed a prefixed day to the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, to wit, the third of the first weeke, to depart the Realme.

Also it was ordained, that all the Lords spirituall and temporall, should sweare inviolably to observe whatsoever in this Parliament were enacted, and that the censures of the Church should be pronounced by the Prelates against all those that should goe against the same.

E. of Warwicke arraigned.

Also, the Earle of Warwicke was arraigned, and his hood being taken off, and the appeale read, as hee had beene some miserable old woman, confessed all things contained in appeale, weeping, wayling, and howling, to be done traytorously by him, and submitting himselfe to the Kings grace in all things, forrowing that ever hee had beene affociate vnto the appellants. Then the King demaunded of him by whom he was allured to ioyne with the n, and hee answered, by Thomas Duke of Glocester, and the Abbot of S. Albones, & a Monke recluse in Westminster, & besought the King of grace and mercie, and the King granted him life to be led in perpetuall prison out of the Realme, his goods moueable and vnmoueable to be confiscate, as the Earle of Arundels had beene, and the King commanded that hee should be had to the Tower of London, and after, to bee conueyed ouer to the castle within the Ile of Man, vnder the wardship of William Scroope, then Lord of the said Ile, to remaine there in perpetuall prison, and on the morrow, the K. granted to him and his wife fiue hundred markes yeerely, during their liues. Also, the writ of *Scire facias* was granted to the Earle of Salisbury, against the Earle of March, for the said Lordship of Denbigh, fifteene dayes respite being given to put in an answere. Item, it was ordained, that those which ought money to Rochester Bridge, should be put in execution for the payment, to the vse of the same Bridge.

Dukes created.

Also, Henry Bolenbrooke Earle of Derby, Sonne and heyre to John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, was created Duke of Hereford, Edward Earle of Rutland Constable of England, was created Duke of Aumarle: Thomas Holland Earle of Kent, Duke of Surrey: the Earle of Nottingham, Duke of Norfolk. John Holland Earle of Huntington, Duke of Exceter. John Earle of Somerset, Constable of Douer Castle and the fiue ports. Marquesse of Dorset: Thomas Lord Spenser, Earle of Glocester: The Lord of Westmerland: named Dan Rauy Neuell Earle of Westmerland: Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester: W. Scroope, Lord Treasurer, Earle of Wiltshyre: Sir John Mountacute, Earle of Salisbury. The King added the armes of K. Edward the Confessor to his, and bare them together parteperpale, and the Parliament was prorogued till the octaues of S. Hillary, then to be holden at Shrewsbury.

Rec. Tower.

Rec. Tower.

Westminster hall repayred.

K. Richard caused the great Hall at Westminster to be repayred, both the walles, windowes, and roofe, with a marueilous worke, and great costs, which he leuied of strangers banished out of their countries, who obtained licence to remaine in this country, by the K. Charter which they had purchased with great summes of money.

Parliament at Shrewsbury.

This yere King Richard kept his Christmas at Lichfield, where he spent in the Christmas time 200. tunns of wine, and 2000. oxen with their appurtenance, and then take his iourney toward Shrewsbury, where the parliament lately prorogued, began again, in the which it was ordained, that all Statutes ordained at Westminster in the ri. yere of the Kings Reigne, should be reuoked and disanulled, and all the Articles of the same, and the heyres of them that were adiudged in the said Parliament, should be reconciled, and restored to all their lands, inheritances, and possessions: excepted, that they should haue no claime against the withholders of the profits, and reuenues of those lands in the meane time. On the morrow it was ordained that the heires of them which were iudged and conuicted in the foure Articles of high treason, should not enioy the landes, nor any possessions of their progenitors, but should be excluded from all and euery action and clayme for euer.

The first Article of high treason was this, if any man of what condition soeuer he were, did imagine the Kings death.

The second Article was if any man should haue an imagination to depose the King.

The third, if any man did ride armed within the Realme of England in manner of warre against the King.

The fourth was, if any man disclaimed the Kings homage.

Also the same day the Lord Cobham was arraigned, to make answere vnto the two Articles of high treason.

The first was, that the said Lord Cobham was in counsell to make one commission against the state of the King: and likewise that hee vsed the same commission in doing iudgement against the Kings will, and to the preiudice of him.

The second, that he sate in iudgement to iudge Sir Simon de Burley, and Iames Barnes Knights of the Kings: in his absence, & against his will: and vpon this, hee was conuict and iudged to perpetuall prison within the Ile of Jersey.

Henry Duke of Hereford accused Thomas Mowbray D. of Norfolke, of certaine words by him spoken, as they rode betweene London and Bainsford, tending to the dishonour of the Kings person, which the Duke of Norfolke bitterly denyed to haue spoken: whereupon a combate was granted them

A combat is granted at Couentry.

them by the K. to be fought at Couentry, vpon the seuenteenth of September.

A fifteenth and a halfe was granted, and fyue cuttomes of Woolles, fifty shillings of euery Sacke of euery Englishman borne, and three pound of euery Stranger.

This Parliament ended, the King visited many places in the West part of England, as Worcester, Hereford, Bristow, Glastenbury and Bath.

An. reg. 22.

After this also, the K. caused a Theatre to be made at Bristow, for a combate to be fought betweene two Scots, to wit, the one being an Esquire appellant, and the other a Knight defendant, and the apellant was ouercome and hanged: but after this time, he made a great and marueilous strong Theatre at Coventry for the Combate betwixt the D. of Hereford and the Duke of Norfolke, and gaue them day for the fight, the 16. of September, to wit, the feast day of S. Edith, at which day and place, a great concourse and assembly of people was there gathered out of all parts of England. When the said Champions appeared in the Lystes, ready to fight, the King commanded them to be quiet and not to fight, and then the king sitting in his royall apparell within his tent girt with his sword, hee commanded his decree to be proclaimed, & this was the Kings decree, that Henry Duke of Hereford, for his disobedience towards the King, should be banished for tenne yeres, and likewise the Duke of Norfolke to be banished for euer out of England, taking of his reuenues a thousand marks by yere, till the towne of Calcis were repayred.

Dukes banished.

At the feast of S. Michael, the King caused seauentene Counties in East England to be indited, and laid to their charges, that they had bene against him, with the Duke of Glocester the Earles of Arundell and Warwike, wherefore he sent honorable men to indite the Lords both spirituall, and temporall, to make a submission by writing, sealed with their owne hands, acknowledging themselues to be traytors to the King, though they neuer offended him in word or deed. Moreouer, he compelled all the religious gentlemen and commons, to set their seales to blankes, to the end he might as it pleased him, oppresse them seuerally, or all at once: some of the Commons paid 1000. markes, some 1000. pounds, &c.

Blanke Charters.

Vnaccustomed othes.

Also, he ordained through euery prouince in England, that all gentlemen, and men of substance, should be sworne firmely to maintaine according vnto their possible power, all the Statutes, Articles and constitutions ordained in the last Parliament.

1399. Great Iustings and feastings.

This yere the K. kept a most royall Christmas, with euery day iustings and running at the tilt, wherevnto resorted such a number of people, that there was euery day spent xvbii. or xvbi. oxen, and three hundred sheepe, besides foule without number. Also the king caused a garment for himselfe to be made of gold, siluer and precious stones, to the value of 3000. markes.

On Newyers day, there vnto Lodelow, a very deepe water which ranne betwixt the Townes of Dwell one and Harselwood flood sodainly still and dryed it selfe, so that by the space of three miles, the bottome remained dry, which wonder many a one thought, did signifie the diuision of the people, and falling away from the king, which happened shortly after.

E. of March & Ulster in Ireland.

Roger Mortimer Earle of March, and of Ulster in Ireland, lying there in a Castle of his, there came on him a great multitude of wild Irishmen to assaile him, and hee issuing out, fought manfully, till he was by them slayen to peeces, whose death the king determined to reuenge.

Cr. Per. Collidge. Wi. Wyllums.

D. of Lancaster deceased.

The third of February died John of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, at the Bishop of Elies Inne, in Holborne by London, and was honourably buried in Saint Paules Church at London by Blanch his first wife, his son Henry Duke of Hereford being then beyond the Seas.

K. Richard saileth into Ireland.

About Whitsontide, King Richard with a Nauy of 200. shippes, sailed from Milford haven, towards Ireland, and arriued at Waterford on the last day of May, from whence, he marched with an army of 30000. to Kilkenny, fourescore miles within the country, and there remained fourtene dayes, tarrying for Edw. Earle of Rutland Duke of Aumarle, that kept not the right course.

An. reg. 23.

On Midsomer euen he went from thence towards the Countrey of Mackmur, who remained amongst the Irish with 2000. men, right hardy, and such as seemed but little to feare the Englishmen. At the entring of the woods, the King commanded fires to be vsed, so that many a house, and many a village was burnt, and there the king made Henry the D. of Hereford son knight, who was afterward King Henry the fifth, with tenne other, 2500. pioners were appointed to fell the woods, and make wayes for the Englishmen. The Irishmen feared greatly the shot of the Englishmen, but yet with their darts they assailed, and slew diuers as they caught them at aduantage. The vncle of Mackmur came in & yeelded himselfe to the King, with a wyth about his necke, and many other naked and bare legged, did the like, all which the king pardoned. After this, the King sent to Mackmur, promising him, that if he would come in as his vncle had done, with the wythe about his necke, he should be pardoned: but he vtterly refusing, said, he would fight to death in defending his right, for hee knew the English-men wanted victuals, and more then they had brought with them could not be bought for siluer or gold. There was already such scarcity, that there were some some, some fyre, that had but a small loafe of bread to line by the day, and some that eate not a graine in fiue dayes together. In this estate they remained eleuen dayes, many of their horses were lost for lacke of meate. In the meane season yet came three shippes from Dublin fraught with victuals, for the which was great strife and presse especially for the

The Vncle & of Mackmur submitted to Richard.

wine of Offery and Spaine. The morrow after the Kin: departed from thence, keeping the hye way toward Dublin, mangre all the noise of the enemies: at what time Mackmur sent a meſſenger with notice to the King that he would be his friend and aſke him mercy, or els if it pleaſed him to treat of peace, to ſend ſome noble men to him, whereupon the Earle of Glocester was ſent, who led with him the reverend whereof he was Captaine, being two hundred launces, and a thouſand archers, betwixt two woods farre from the ſea in the declining of an hill they met with the Iriſh. Mackmur himſelfe rode on a white horſe without ſaddle or other furniture, that coſt him (as was ſaid) foure hundred kine, which horſe he ran downe the hill, that the beholders reported they never had ſeene Hare nor Deere to haue runne ſo ſwiftly. In his right hand he bare a Dart great and long, which he threw exceeding well. He was a mighty ſtrong man of perſonage. There the Earle and he talked a good while, about the murthering of the Earle of March, and after of other things, but agree they could not, and ſo departed.

Mackmur a good horſeman.

The Earle adverriſed the King what he had found, which was nothing, but that the enemy would cry mercy, ſo as he might be ſure to haue peace without other griefe, otherwiſe he would (ſo long as he lived) defend himſelfe: where, the K. (in his wrath) not knowing what ſet might happen, ſware, that he would never depart Ireland, till he had him either alive or dead. The hoſte diſlodged for lacke of victuals, they were a thirtie thouſand of them comming over, that lay then at Dubline fifteene dayes, the King forthwith dividing his army into three partes, ſent them out to ſeeke Mackmur, promiſſing an hundreth markes to him that he could bring him in, which offer was well hearkened vnto, for it ſounded well, but he could not be caught: and the ſame day Edward Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumale Conſtable of England, arrived with an hundred ſailes, of whoſe comming the King was very glad, though he indeed had tarried long, and might haue come much ſooner.

They remained five weekes at Dubline, and heard no newes out of England, the paſſage was ſo dangerous: the wind being contrary and tempeſts ſo great, at the length came a ſhip with heauy newes, how the Duke of Hereford, and now by the deceaſe of his father, D. of Lancaſter, was arrived in England at Ravenſpore faſt by Birdlington beſides Wadlington in Yorkſhire, and had beheaded William Scroope Earle of Wiltſhire, Treaſurer of England, John Buſhy, Henry Greene and other, and had cauſed Thomas Arundell Archbiſhop of Canterburye to preach againſt K. Richard, who alſo ſhewed a Bull procured from Rome, promiſſing remiſſion of ſinnes to all thoſe which ſhould aide the ſaid Henry, in conquering of his enemies & after their death to be placed in paradiſe, which preaching moued many to cleaue to the Duke.

The Duke of Hereford returned into England.

Upon this newes the King being perſwaded to make haſte over, the Duke of Aumarle ſaid, it was better to ſtay till his ſhippes might be brought together, for there were but an hundreth ready to make ſayle, whereupon John Mountacute E. of Salisbury was ſent with a power, whileſt the King going to Waterford might gather his fleete, who promiſed within five dayes to haue followed him. The Earle of Salisbury landed at Conwey, where hee was ſoone aduertiſed how the Duke had taken the more part of England, and that all the Lords were got to him, with more then threeſcore thouſand men. The Earle of Saliſbury, cauſed to ſummon the Welch-men and them of Cheſhire, to come to him, ſo that (hauing the King had beene arrived at Conwey) within foure dayes there were come together forty thouſand men, ready to goe againſt the Duke of Hereford, where they ſtayed fourteene dayes, but when they ſaw the King came not, they ſtealed away, & left the E. of Saliſbury, in maner alone, ſo that vnneath he had an hundred men with him. The D. of Hereford aduanced towards the E. of Saliſbury, who wiſhed him to Conwey. The K. through euill Counſell ſtaid after the Earles departure 18. dayes, and then arrived at Milford Hauen, with the Dukes of Aumarle, Exceſter, & Surrey, & diuers other of the Nobility, with the biſhops of London, Lincolne, & Carliſle, and many other that hee might with an Army meete the Duke before he had gotten his aſſiſters together, but after his comming into England, and vnderſtanding the Dukes preparation, hee let fall his courage to giue battell, knowing for certaine that the people aſſembled againſt him would rather die then giue place, as well for the hatred as feare, which they had conceiued of him: whereſore leauing his army with the Earle of Rutland, Duke of Aumarle, Conſtable and chiefe gouernour of his Army at Milford, went from thence priuily about midnight following, diſguiſed like a Prieſt, for feare to be knowne, with fourteene perſons onely, who went to Conwey, thinking the Earle of Saliſbury had there ſtaid the field. There were with him the Dukes of Exceſter and Surrey, & the Earle of Glocester, that continued faithfull vnto the laſt houre.

K. Richard returned out of Ireland and landed at Milford hauen.

There were three Biſhops alſo, of which, two did not like good men, the Biſhop of Lincolne, and S. Dauids, but the third continued faithfull, that was the Biſhop of Carliſle.

He had alſo two Knights, Stephen Scroope, and William Firby, and Ianico a Gaſcoigne. The King rode ſo warily by nights, that he came to Conwey at the breake of a day. Great ſorrow and lamentation was made by the K. and the Earle at their meeting, for that the Earles hoſte was diſperſed and gone, ſome to the Duke, and ſome other wayes.

The Duke of Aumarle, Conſtable and chiefe gouernour of the Kings army at Milford immediately when the Kings departure was knowne, ſaid vnto the ſouldiers, let vs ſhift for our ſelues maſters, for the King is fled, whereupon euery man truſſed and away. Sir

Thomas

Thomas Percy Steward of the houſhold, talking with the Conſtable alſo departed, and take their way through Wales.

The Welchmen ſeeing ſuch diſorder, aſſembled them together, and ſpoyled the Engliſhmen of all their goods, and ſent them packing in their dublets, with white ſtaues in their hands, for there rode, here tenne, here twenty, here fifty, here an hundred, and ſo the Welchmen comming downe the mountaines, the Engliſh loſt that they had. The King had many horſes of the beyond Sea brode, and great riches in apparell and iewels, which was in the keeping of S. T. Percy, who with the Conſtable came to D. Henry of Hereford, and more then 500. of their company, all naked, whom the Welchmen had diſpoyled, and beaten well.

The K. being at Conwap in great diſcomfort, ſent the Dukes of Exceſter & Surrey, to Henry D. of Hereford and Lancaſter, to know what his meaning was, himſelfe remaining ſtill at Conwey in great perplexity, and with him the E. of Saliſbury, the B. of Carliſle, Sir William Ferebe Knight, S. Stephen Scroope mine author, and another Frenchman, in all but 16. perſons, then was newes brought to the K. how his Conſtable had demeand him, & likewiſe his Steward, that had caried his riches to be brought a land, and going through Wales with it, the Welch-men had taken it.

The King then by the aduiſe of the Earle of Saliſbury departed from Conwey vnto Beawmarels, a ten miles off, and from thence, hee went to Carnarnan. Beawmarels was a ſtrong Fortreſſe if it had beene manned and victualled. Carnarnan is a fayre Towne, and a ſtrong Caſtle, but thoſe were vnprouided of all things, ſo that for fiue or ſixe nights he lay very hard and baſe, & for victuals ſhe was none: whereſore he returned againe to Conwey, where he ſore lamented his eſtate. The Dukes of Exceſter and Surrey entring the City of Cheſter, which Duke Henry had taken, were brought ſtraight to the Caſtle to the Duke, who was glad to ſee them, as he profeſſed, & forthwith aſked the Duke of Exceſter what newes, who told him from point to point what ſhame and diſhonor it would be to him, if he dealt ſo vnkindly toward his Prince, and that through him he were depoſed: he therefore demanded anſwere with ſpeed, but the Duke of Lancaſter was as ſlow to diſpatch him, and told him he ſhould not goe ſo one waye from him, & that the K. was not well aduiſed to ſend him: & his fellow, being men of ſuch calling, ſith he had other inough of meaner eſtate to do the meſſage: ſo they remained to their great diſcomfort. The D. of Exceſter D. Henry ſtill kept his company, but the D. of Surrey was comitted to ſafe keeping within the caſtle of Cheſter.

There is a Caſtle fiue miles from Cheſter, called Beſton Caſtle, builded on a rocke, very ſtrong by ſituation, therein were 100. men of armes choſen and able men, but not baſtant by faithfull to King Richard, for they deliuered it to the Duke, where they might well enough haue kept it, the aſcending is ſo ſteepe: it was victualled for fiue yeares. There was found within it coyne better worth then an hundred thouſand markes, beſide other iewels which King Richard cauſed to be kept, to the value of two hundred thouſand markes, all which Duke Henry tooke with him, and returned to Cheſter, and there taking counſell of his friends what was beſt to be done, the Archbiſh. of Canterbury tooke vpon him to ſpeake, and ſaid: that ſith the King was in Wales, which was a countrey ſtrong by reaſon of the Mountaines, ſo that it was impoſſible for an army to paſſe with bagge and baggage, he thought it beſt to ſend vnto King Richard and to make him beleeue that he ſought nothing but peace and a Parliament to be made, where in, thoſe that had offended in putting to death his vncle the Duke of Glocester, ſhould be puniſhed, and ſo from thenceforth the King & the Duke to be good friends, and that it ſhould bee at the Kings pleaſure to appoint the day & place for this Parliament; for without this ſhift, ſhould it be impoſſible for the D. to get him into his hands, for he might depart to ſea when he would, hauing retained at Conwey ſhips for that purpoſe.

All the other Lords aſſenting to this counſell the D. appointed the Earle of Northumberland to goe to the King with foure hundred launces, and a thouſand Archers, which Earle, when hee came to Flint caſtle, had it deliuered to his hands: from thence he haſted to Rudland, which was alſo giuen ouer to him: this Rudland is but tenne miles from Conwey, where the King was, greatly marualling, that hee heard nothing of his brother the Duke of Exceſter being now eight dayes ſince he was ſent to the Duke of Hereford. The Earle of Northumberland laid vnder a rocke, nere to the Caſtle of Rudland two great ambuſhments of his people, with commaundement to keepe that paſſage. Then hee went with fiue other in his company and went by the ſea-coaſt, till he came before the towne of Conwey, and then he ſent an Herault to the King for a ſafe conduct, to come to his preſence, to declare his meſſage frō the D. about an agreement, which ſafe conduct being granted, he paſſed the water, and entred the Caſtle of Conwey, where he found the King and the Earle of Saliſbury, he declared to them that peace would be made if he would be a good Iudge and a true, and cauſe thoſe that ſhould be named, to be tryed by Iuſtice at a certaine day of Parliament at Weſtminſter, which he and the D. ſhould hold together, and that the D. might keepe his place of high Iudge as his father and other anceſtors before him had done, for the ſpace of one hundred yeres. Thoſe that he would haue to be tryed by the law, were the D. of Exceſter, the Duke of Surrey, the Earle of Saliſbury the Biſhop of Carliſle and Thomas Marke, which fled, had giuen the King counſell to put his vncle the Duke of Glocester to death, and then if it ſhould pleaſe him to pardon the Duke his wrath, he would be ready to come to him on his knees to aſke him mercy, and

to

so they might goe to London together, or the one one way, and the other another. The Earle offered to sweare that all this should be performed, and that the Duke had assured him by oath to stand to it. The King liking well that it should be at his liberty to go either in company with the Duke, or alone vnto London, purposed to take the offer, and so to pretend some excuse of his going alone, after hee should meete with the Duke: as lacke of victuals or such like, & so to take a by-way through Wales, and there to raise a power, for he promised the Lords neuer to suffer them to come to iudgement, discoursing with them, how hee would auoid all the danger, and surely hee reuenged vpon his enemies, namely on Duke Henry of Lancaster, who with the rest should die for it, hee accorded to goe to the Duke, and then (Maisse being celebrated) the Earle of Northumberland sware vpon the hoast, that the Duke should hold all that hee had told the King. The Earle hasted the King forward to horseback, but the K. prayed the Earle to goe before vnto Rutland, there to prepare dinner. The Earle rode apace vntill hee came where he might see his people vnder the mountaine, whom hee much commended for obserning his commandement.

K. Richard betrayed.

The King passing the water rode a foure miles before the came to the rocke, where when hee saw the ambushes hee was sore abashed, knowing well he was betrayed by the Earle, for hee was in such a place as he could not escape. The sea beating on the one side, and the rocke keeping him in on the other, and if he should haue fled backe, they would haue caught him, ere he could haue come to Conwey, for he had not past three and twenty in all of his company. The King descending the rocke, the Earle came, and kneeling downe excused the matter, saying, he had caused those people to come to guard his person, but the King told him fewer would haue serued, and that it was contrary to his oath, for he had promised to haue but fiue in his company, and said therefore that hee would goe backe to Conwey, but the Earle answered, that now sith he had him, hee would leade him to the Duke as he had promised ten dayes since, and so he caused bread and wine to bee brought and offered the King, who durst not refuse it, and after leaping on horse-backe againe they rode to Rutland to dinner, and after to Flint, where they lay that night.

Rutland. Flint.

The morrow being the two and twentieth day of August, the King got him to the Castle walles, where he beheld the Duke with all his hoste of an hundred thousand men comming by the lawes: there came before, that were departed from the army, the Arch-bishop of Canterbury, Sir Thomas Percy, and the Earle of Rutland, from whom the Duke had taken the office of Constable, more for a colour then for displeasure, for they bare the Dukes owne, and not the heart, in hich was the Kings, the Arch-bishop entred first, and after the other with a great traine, they went vp to the dungeon and then the King came downe from the walles, vnto whom they did reuerence lowly on their knees; the King tooke them vp, and drew the Arch-bishop apart, and they two talked long together, but the Earle of Rutland kept him aloofe. They tooke horse againe, and rode towards the Duke that now was approching nere.

The King went vp againe to the walles, lamenting sore when he saw the Dukes hoste within two bow shoots of the Castle, who compassed it round about downe to the Sea. The Earle of Northumberland went forth to the Duke, who after long talke concluded that the Duke should not enter the Castle before the King had dined, for he was talking: so the Earle returned, and the K. was set to dinner, with whom sate his assured friends the Earle of Salisbury, and the Bishop of Carleile, Sir Stephen Scrope, and Feribe, they sate long and eate little, for they had no haste to rise.

After dinner the Duke entred the Castle all armed, his basenet excepted. King Richard came downe to meete the Duke, who as soone as he saw the King, fell downe on his knees, and comming nere vnto him, hee kneeled the second time with his hat in his hand, and the King then put off his hood, and spake first; faire cousin of Lancaster ye are right welcome: the Duke bowing low to the ground answered, my Lord, I am come before you sent for me, the reason why I will shew you. The common fame among your people is such, that ye haue for the space of twenty or xxii. yeeres, ruled them very rigorously, but if it please our Lord I will helpe you to gouerne better. The King answered, faire Cousin of Lancaster, sith it pleaseth you, it pleaseth me well.

The Duke spake as ye haue heard to K. he spake also to the Bishop of Carlile, to Sir Stephen Scrope, and to Feribe, but to the Earle of Salisbury he spake not, whereby the Earle perceiued that the Duke hated him deadly.

The Duke with a high sharpe voyce, badde bring forth the Kings horses, and then 2. little nagges not worth forty Franks, were brought forth, the King was set on the one, & the Earle of Salisbury on the other: and thus the Duke brought the King from Flint to Chester, where he was deliuered to the Duke of Glocesters sonne, and to the Earle of Arundels sonne that loued him but a little, for he had put their Fathers to death, who led him straight to the Castle. Chester

The third day they went from Chester to Nantwich, and the next day to Newcastle, and there the Earle of Warwickes son met them, and so iourneying forth, the next day they came to Stafford, and after they departed to Lichfield, where the King thought to haue escaped, slipping downe into a Garden out of a Window of a great Tower, but he was espied and thrust into the Tower againe: from Lichfield the Duke went to Couentry, but before they could come hither, the Welchmen did them much

much harme & slew many of them, and the Englishmen, when they by great chance could take any of the Welchmen, they tied them to their horse tayles, and drew them after them, through wayes full of stones, and caused them to die miserably.

The Duke passed from Couentry to Deintris, the next day to Northampton, from thence to Dunstable, and then to Saint Albons, and a fine, or fiue miles before his comming to London, the Maior and the Companies in their liueries, with great noyse of Trumpets met the Duke, doing more reuerence to him then to the King, reioycing that God had sent them such a Prince that had conquered the Realme within six moneths space.

When the Duke came within two miles of the Citie, the Duke caused the host to stay, and then said to the Commons of the Citie: My Masters, behold here your King, consider what ye will doo with him. They answered, they would he should be led to Westminster, whereupon he was deliuered vnto them, and they led him to Westminster, and from thence by water to the Tower of London.

The Duke entred into London by the chiefe gate, and rode through Cheape to Saint Pauls where hee was after lodged in the Bishops Pallace fiue or sixe dayes, and after at Saint Johns without Smithfield, where he remayned fifteene dayes, from thence hee removed to Hertford, where he abode three weekes, & then came backe to London, to holde the Parliament that began the first Wednesday of October in Westminster hall, which they had hung and trimmed sumptuously, and had caused to be set vp a royall chaire, in purpose to chose a newe King, nere to the which the Prelates were set, and on the other side sate the Lords, and after the Commons in order, first sate the Duke of Lancaster, then Edmond of Langley Duke of Yorke, the Duke of Aumarle, the Duke of Surrey, the Duke of Exceter, and the Marques Dorset then in order the Earles of Arundale, Norfolke, March, Stafford, Penbroke, Salisbury and Deuonshire, the Earles of Northumberland & Westmerland sate not, but went vp and downe, and oftentimes kneeled as it fell in doing their offices. Parliament in Westminster Hall.

The Arch-bishop of Canterbury made a Sermon and tooke for his Theame. *Habuit Jacob benedictionem à patre suo*, which Sermon being ended in Latine, a Doctour of the Law, stood vp and read an Instrument, in the which was contained, that King Richard had by his own confession disabled himselfe to be worthy to raigne, & that he would resigne the Crowne to such a one as was sufficient to rule. This Instrument being reade, the Arch-bishop perswaded them to proceed to the election of a new King, and perceiuing they were all contented, (for there were not past 4. persons that were of King Richards part, and they durst say nothing) he asked each of them whom they would haue to their King, whether the D. of Yorke or not: and they answered no: he asked if they would haue his eldest sonne the Duke of Aumarle: and they said no: he asked if they would haue his youngest sonne, and they said no: and so of diuers other: then staying a while, he asked if they would haue the Duke of Lancaster: and then they answered they would none other. This demaund being made thrice, they drew certaine Instruments and Charters, and read them in presence of all that were there. Then the Arch-bishops comming to the Duke, fell on their knees, declaring to him how he was chosen K. and willed him to take regard if he would consent thereto. Then the Duke being on his knees, rose and declared that hee accepted the Realme, sith it was obtained by God. Then the Arch-bishop read what the new King was bound vnto, and with certaine ceremonies signed him with the crosse, then hee kissed the Arch-bishop, and they take the ring, with which the Kings he wedded to the Realme, and bare it to the Lord Percy, that was Constable, who receiuing it shewed it to all the assembly, and then put it on the Kings finger, the King then kissed the Constable, and then the Arch-bishops led him to the siege Royall, and the King made his prayers on his knees before it, and after spake vnto them all, first to the Prelates, and then to the Lords and all other, and so set him downe in the seat: and thus he was inuested, and King Richard put downe, he sate a good while and kept silence, and so did all the rest: for they were in prayer for his prosperity in his gouernment, and when they had ended, where the offices were void, the King created the Lord Percy Constable, and take him the staffe: Then was chosen Ralph Earle of Westmerland Marshall, John Scirle, or Serle Chancellor, Sir Richard Clifford Keeper of the priuie Seale, and many other officers were newly confirmed. After this the Arch-bishop spake certaine things in latine, praying for the Kings prosperity, and the Realmes, and after spake in English vpon this following: *Vir dominabitur in populo. reg. 9. &c.* And then exhorting all there present to pray the like, euery man sate downe. Then the King rose and made his eldest sonne Prince of Wales, then the Lords were sworne to be true to the Prince as before they had done to his father: his second sonne was there made Duke of Lancaster. Thus Robert Iewes K. Richard deposed, when he had raigned scale. 22. yeers, 2. moneths, and odde dayes, in such sort as ye haue heard, whose royalty had beene such, that wheresoeuer he lay, his person was guarded by 200. Cheshire-men, he had about him 12. Bishops, besides Barons, Knights Esquires, and other moe then needed, insomuch that to the houshold came euery day to meate 10000. people, as appeared by the meates told out of the Kitchin to 300. seruiters, &c. He was murdered on the 14. of February next following, as shall be shewed in place conuenient, and was buried first in the Church of the Friers Preachers at Langley besides S. Albons. And after by commandement of King Henry the fift, remoued to Westminster.

Henry

The Life and Reigne of King HENRY the FOVRTH.

An. Reg. 1. HENRY Plantagenet, borne at Bolingbroke, in Lincolneshire, sonne to Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster was crowned King of England, more by force then by lawfull succession or election: hee began his Reigne the 29. of September, in the yere of our Lord God 1399. Reco. Tower. He forthwith made new officers, to wit, Thomas his second son Steward of England: Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Constable of England: Ralph Neuill Earle of Westmerland, Marshall of England: Sir John Scerle Chancellour of England, Sir Richard Clifford Keeper of his priuie seale: Iohn Norbury Esquire Treasurer, Thomas Chaucer Constable of Walingford Castle, & other officers, and then was crowned at Westminster the 13. of October, by Thomas Arundale Archbishop of Canterbury: The Dukes of Yorke, Surrey, Aumarle, and the Earle of Glocester bare the Canopie ouer him, Sir Thomas Dimmocke was champion, and rode three times about the Hall. This was a noble and valiant Prince, and after the ciuell warres were appeased, shewed himselfe louing to his subiects.

After the solemnitie of the coronation, the Lords and commons straight proceeded to the parliament. In which it was inquired out of the death of the D. of Glocester, & how he had beene murthered at Calais by the D. of Norfolke, vpon the kings commandement. King Henry created his eldest son Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornewall, Earle of Chester, and D. of Aquitaine. In this Parliament it was ordained that the Statutes made in the Parliament holden in the 21. yeare of King Richard at Westmin. & after prorogued vnto Shrewsbury, with all the circumstances to be disanulled, reuoked, made voyde, and vtterly blotted out. Also that the Parliament holden at Westminster, in the 11. yere of King Richard, be holden firme and stable. Also that the Lords and other persons which were iudged forth in the Parliament holden the 21. yere of King Richard, and their heyres that be dead, should be wholly restored to their possessions without any suing liuery thereof to be made, excepted that the Lords and other shall haue nothing of the issues receiued in the meane time. The King gaue to the Earle of Northumberland the Ile of Man, to be holden of the King by seruice, to beare the sword with which he entred into England. And to the Earle of Westmerland he gaue the countie of Richmond. Also iudgement was giuen against the Appellants of the Duke of Glocester in this manner: the Lords in this present Parliament by the Assent, iudge that the Dukes of Aumarle, Surrey, and Excester now present and were appellants, shall lose their names of Dukes and honours from henceforth, together with the dignities, of Dukes, and that the Marques Dorset that is present, lose his name of Marques, and the Earle of Glocester which is, lose his name for him and his heires, as the above named persons doe theirs, and that all the Castles, possessions or mannors which they had of them that belonged to those whom they appealed from the day of the arrest of the Duke of Glocester, and the other Lords, or after at any time, simply and without fauour or mercy, they shall lose them: and that all other Castles, possessions, Mannors, Lordships, Dominions, and liberties, which they held of the Kings gift that day or after should rest in the Kings grace from that houre, and that all Letters Patents and charters, which they or any of them had of the said names Castles, Dominions, possessions, and liberties, should bee surrendred vp into the Chancery, there to be cancelled, & that they stand in state which they had in name and possession before the said day of the said arrest.

Dukes lose their names and honors.

The King to shew to all men in all Countries about by what right and title he had taken vpon him the crowne & realme, sent Embassadours to Rome, Iohn Trenecant Bishop of Hereford, Iohn Cheyne Knight, and Iohn Cheyne Esquire. Into France he sent Walter Tricklow Bishop of Durham, Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, and William Heron. Into Spaine Iohn Trenor Bishop of S. Dauids, and Sir William Par Knight: Into Almaine the Bishop of Bangor with other.

Messengers sent into diuers Countries, to declare the confession of K. Richard.

The Scottes in time of the Parliament taking occasion by the absence of the Northerne Lords, and because the same time the Northparts were sore oppressed by a great pestilence entred as enemies, & tok the castle of Warke, and kept the same a certaine time, but at length spoyled and vtterly ruinated it, & many other mischeifes they did in the Countrey. Thomas Moubrey duke of Norfolke, which was exiled, died at Venice, in his returne from Jerusalem. Also the Duches of Glocester died, and her son and heyre Humfrey died of the pestilence when he was sent for forth of Ireland.

Castle of Warke taken by the Scots.

D. of Norfolke deceased.

1400. The King held his feast of Chrismasse in his Castle of Windsor, where Iohn Holland late Duke of Exceter and Earle of Huntington, Thomas Holland late Duke of Surrey and E. of Kent, Edward late Duke of Aumarle and E. of Rutland, son to the Duke of Yorke, Iohn Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, Thomas Spencer, Sir Ralph Lumly, Sir Thomas Blunt, Sir Benedic Cely Knights, with others that fauoured King Richard, conspired against K. Henry, & appointed priuily to murder him, vnder the colour of Iusting & other pastimes pretended. And the time approching of their purpole, they sent messengers to London with letters to the Duke of Aumarle, that he

Conspiracie against king Henry.

should not faile to come at that day appointed with his company, to helpe to doe the feate whereunto he was sworne: but his minde being altered, he dare the Letters straight to his Father the D. of Yorke, who caused a number of his men forthwith to carry his sonne to the King, where hee shewing his letters, the King, would not beleeue them: but the same morning came the Maior of London to the Court, and informed him of the matter, whereupon the King made no tarriance, but got him forth toward London, in company of the Maior and other. But before the King could get London on his backe, his enemies came to Windsore, and there entred the Castle with an armed band of 400. men on the fourth of January at night, where vnderstanding that the King was escaped their hands, being sore amazed, they with-drew from Windsore, vnto Sunning, a certaine Mannour neare to Reading, where the Quéene wife to King Richard then lay, where they perswaded her household, that King Richard was escaped out of Pomfret Castle, and they would goe to him: from thence they went to Wallingford, and after to Abingdon, mouing the people to take armes vpon them, and to goe méete there King Richard. After this they came to Faringdon, in the Vale of White Horse in Barkeshire, and the same day to Circester, on the xii. day late in the euening, and there harboured, with a great number of men of armes and many Archers: there they buted that K. Richard was escaped forth of prison, and that he was there with them, and to make their words to haue the more credite, they had got a Chaplein of K. Richards called Maudelen, so like to him in all proportion and fauour, that one could hardly be discerned from the other: many times (saith mine Authour) I haue seene him in Ireland ride with the K. his Master: so faire a Priest and goodly a person, I had not lightly seene. They put him in armour with a crowne on his Helmet, so as all men might take him for King Richard. On the morrow being Wednesday, the people of that towne misliking of their proceedings, fought against them, and at length toke the chiefest of them, and led them to the Abbey there, and put them in a faire chamber, vnder safe custodie. And on Thursday the said Lords, fearing the people, imagined how to escape out of their hands, and caused some of their seruants to set fire on certaine houses in the towne, thinking that thereupon the people would depart from them, and seeke to saunch the fire: but it chanced contrary, for the people turned into marueilous rage against them, ran vpon them with great violence, and drew them into the market-place, and there they beheaded Iohn Holland the Duke of Exceter, Thomas Holland Duke of Surrey, and the Earle of Salisbury, the third day after the Epiphanie: their seruants that were with them were by and by taken, and as prisoners bound, and brought to Oxford, and on Monday following were beheaded in the Castle there to the number of 26. Persons. Also Sir Thomas Blunt Knight was beheaded with them. The Weeke next following was beheaded Thomas Spencer Earle of Glocester at Bristow: not long after was Sir Barnard Brocas beheaded at London, and a Priest named Iohn Maudelen, that was like King Richard, and another Priest called William Feribe. The Bishop of Carlile was attached and condemned of conspiracie, but was pardoned.

Maudelen a Priest counterfeited K. Richard.

Dukes of Surrey and of Excester executed.

Maudelen Priest and other executed.

The first day of February King Henry caused the blanke Charters, made to King Richard, to be burnt, at the Standart in Cheape of London.

Blanke charters burnt.

King Richard was imprisoned in Pomfreit Castle, where by dayes and nights they vexed him with continuall hunger, thirst and cold, and finally bereft him of his life, with such a kinde of death as neuer before that time was knowne in England (saith Sir Iohn Fortescute.) He died the xviii. day of February, whose body was brought to the tower of London, and so through the City to Pauls Church bare faced, where he stood three dayes for all beholders, and had seruice, where King Henry was present. From thence he was carried to Langley, and there buried in the Church of the Friers Preachers. Vpon his death the famous and excellent Poet Iohn Gower, wrote certaine verses, which may be englished thus,

O Mirrour for the world meete,
which should in gold be set,
By which all wife men, by foresight,
their prudent wittes may whet.
Lo, God doth hate such rule-rs, as
heere viciously doe liue:
And none ought rule, that by their life,
doe ill example giue.
And this King *Richard* witnesseth well,
his end this plaine doth shewe:
For God allotted him such ende,
and sent him so great woe,
As such a life deserud: as by
the Chronicles thou mayst knowe.

Here vnder shut verses in Latine in his booke called Vox clamantis.

The King with a great armie went into Scotland, spoiled the countrey and returned to Yorke, where 2. Knights, the one a Frenchman, the other an Italian challenged to fight within lists against Sir Iohn Cornwall, and Sir Iohn Cornewall obtaining the Kings fauour, married the Kings Sister, that had béene wife to Sir Iohn Holland Earle of Huntington.

K. Henry inuadeth Scotland. 1400.

Challenge of combate at Yorke.

The Welchmen taking occasion by the Kings absence when he was in Scotland, began to rebell, by the setting on of Owen Glendouerdew Sonne to Griffith Vicham an Esquire of Wales, and so called Glendour, because his dwelling was in a place called Glendowdwy, for Glyn in Welch is a vale, and Dor is water, because the place was in a dale, at the side of the water or riuer of Dew in the parish of Corwen in the county of Merioneth in Northwales. He serued King Richard, at the time of his oppression by Henry Duke of

The Welchmen rebell. Owen Glendouerdew.

Lancaster at Flint Castle.

The first cause of this stirre was about a piece of land in controuersie betwixt him and the Lord Reignold Gray of Ruthine, for when he saw his cause not fauoured, first hee began to spoile the lands of the said Lord Gray, wherof the King being certified, went with an Armie into Wales: but the Welchmen fled to the mountaines, the King burnt the Countrey, slue the people with whom he met, and returned with a great prap of cattell.

Geff. Chaucer a notable Poet of England. Newe time.

The famous Poet Geffrey Chaucer, Esquire, the first illuminer of our English language, deceased. This was a worthipfull Gentleman, and of faire possessions, whose abode was chiefly about Woodstocke (where he had a faire Mannor) and New Clme (in Oxfordshire) which also was his, with diuers other Mannors: he was oft-times imployed by K. Edward the 3. as Ambassador into France, and into other forraine lands: he had to wife the daughter of Paine Rocte *alias* Guian King at armes, by whom he had issue Tho. Chaucer who married Mawd Daughter to Sir Bartholomew Borwash, by whom he had issue, Alice Chaucer, first married to Sir John Phillips knight, after to the Earle of Salisbury, and thirdly to Wil. Duke of Suffolke, who at his wiues request founded an hospital called Gods house, by the parish Church of New-Clme, which Church he also builded, in this Church lieth buried Tho. Chaucer the last heyre male, in an high marble tombe in a faire chappell on the South side of the Quire, with this Epitaph *Hic iacet Tho. Chaucer armiger, dominus istius ecclesiæ, qui obiit* 18. *die mensis Nouembris, anno dom.* 1434. *Et Matildis vxor eius, quæ obiit* 28. *die mensis Aprilis anno dom.* 1426. William D. of Suffolke was buried at Wingfield a College in Suffolke, Alice surviued, and was buried in the parish Church of New-Clme on the South side of the high altar in a rich tombe of Alablaster, with an Image in the habit of a Woweste crowned lying ouer it with this Epitaph: *Ora pro anima ieremiæ, principis Alicia Suffolciæ, huius ecclesiæ patronæ, & primæ fundatricis huius elemosynariæ, quæ obiit* 20. *die mensis Maij, anno dom.* 1475. Of which Dutchesse Iohn wrote in Henry the 6. the 28. of his raigne but our first named Chaucer the Poet, by what occasion I know not, was buried at Westminster, his workes for the most part are extant, first published in print by William Caxton, sometime a Mercer of London, the man that first brought the Art of Printing into this land since whose largely collected into one volume, by Wil. Botcuil, *alias* Thin, Esquire, chiefe Clearke of the Kitchin, and master of the household to King Henry the 8. vnto whom he dedicated the fruite of that his labour *Anno Christi* 1540. The which Volume was since againe, to wit in *Anno* 1560. by diuers of diuers written copies corrected by himselfe, the author of this historie, who at that time also corrected and added diuers workes of the said M. Geffrey Chaucers never before imprinted, and againe in the yeare 1597, further increased with other his workes, as also his life, preferment, issue and death, collected out of records in the tower and elsewhere by my selfe, and giuen to Tho. Speight to be published, and was performed. Besides the history of Oedipus and Iocasta, with the siege of Thebes, translated and made into English verse, by Don Iohn Lidgate, a disciple of the said Chaucers.

John Gower a famous Poet.

Not long after deceased the like famous Poet M. Iohn Gower, a man not much vnlike the other in excellency of wit, learning, or possessions, he builded a great part of S. Mary Ouries church in Southwark, then new re-edified; On the North side of the which Church, he prepared for his bones a resting place, where somewhat after the old fashion he lyeth right sumptuously buried in a tombe of stone with his Image also of stone lying ouer him, the haire of his head awburne long to his shoulders, & curling vp, a small forked beard, and on his head a garland or Chaplet of roses rso, 4. in number an habit of purple damaskt downe to his feet, a Coller of Esses gold about his necke, vnder his head the likenes of 3. bookes, which he compiled: the 1. *Speculum meditantis* in French, the 2. *Vox clamantis* in Latin, the 3. *Confessio amantis* in English, which last named booke is extant in print, the 2. I haue faire written, but the 1. I haue not seene, his tombe archeo was beautified with his armes, & the likenes of Angels with posies in latine. Besides in the wall were painted three virgins crowned, one of the which was written Charity, & held this deuice, *En toy qui fils de Dieu tu pro saunse soit, qui gist subs ceste pierre.* The 2. Percy with this deuice, *O bon Ieſu fait ta merche aime dont le corps gist ioy.* The 3. Pitie, with this deuice. *Pour tapite Ieſu regard, Et met ceſte alme in saunegarde.*

Isabel, late wife to K. Richard returned into France.

All which is now washed out, and the image defaced, by cutting off the nose and striking off his hands. *An. reg.* 2.

Emperour of Constantinople, came into England.

The Emperour of Constantinople came into England, to require ayde against the Turkes, whom the King with sumptuous preparation met at Black-heath, vpon S. Thomas day the Apostle, and brought him to London, and paying for the charges of his lodging, presented him with gifts worthy for one of so high degree.

1410.

Newe stirre came newes, that the King of Leco had slaine in battle Basilicke the sonne of the noble Balthazaradan, and destroyed Jerusalem, and all the Countrey round about. And because he had by Gods grace so ouercome contrary to his opinion, he became christened and 60000. men of his sect.

Parliament at London.

The Emperour of Constantinople hearing this, was very glad, and departed out of England, being honoured by the King with precious gifts. A Parliament was holden at London, after the feast of the Epiphanie, in the which Parliament a statute was enacted for Lollards, that wheresoeuer they were knowne to preach their false & corrupt doctrine (so termed at that time) they should be taken & deliuered to the B. of the diocelle, before whom if they would presume stoutly to defend their erro-

mions, they should be disgraded, and committed to the secular iurisdiction to be executed which law was first put in practise vpon a Priest named Will. Sawtry, which was burnt in Smithfield, in the presence of many a man. Simon Burley, *alias* Beuerley was restored in blood and inheritance, except the Lands giuen to the Abbey of Grace, by the Tower of London, to S. Stephens at West, and the Friers at Langley.

The 8. day of Aprll deceased Thomas Beawchampe Earle of Warwicke, and shortly after deceased Iohn Botilsham Bishop of Rochester.

The fiue and twentieth day of July Isabell late wife to K. Richard not yet 12. yeres of age, departed from Douer towards Calcis, & so into France to her father, wel and honorably accompanied. Where when she was arriued, Huguenell that had beene sent for her into England, aduertised the comissioners then remaining at Boloigne. She was conueyed from Calcis by the Englishmen that accompanyed her to Lalingham, where the Earle of Saint Paul met her, and the French Ambassadours: she alighted from her horse beneath Lalingham, the French Ladies came to her, and brought her to the Chappell, before the Ambassadours of both Realmes, and there Sir Henry Percy protested, that the King of England his master had sent her to be deliuered to her father cleare of all bonds of Marriage or otherwise, and that he would take it on his soule, that she was found and intire, euen as she was the same day she was deliuered to King Richard, and if any would say to the contrary he was ready to proue it against him by Combat, but the Earle of S. Paul, saying hee beleeued it to be true, the Lord Percy take her by the hand and deliuered her vnto the Earle, and the Commissioners of France deliuered certaine letters of acquitall.

K. Henry escaped great danger. Tho. Wal. Additions to pol.

Owen Glendouerdew with his Welchmen did much harme to the Englishmen, and returned without receiuing any harme.

There was found in the Kings bedclothes an yron with three sharpe pikes, slender and round standing vpright, laid there by some traytor, that when the K. should haue laid him downe, he might haue thrust himselfe vpon them.

This time was vsed exceeding pride in garments, gownes with deepe and broad sleeues commonly called poke-sleeues, the seruants ware them as well as their maisters, which might well haue beene called the receptacles of the deuill, for what they stole, they hid in their sleeues, whereof some hung downe to the feete, and at least to the knees, full of cuts, and tagges, whereupon were made these verses.

An. reg. 3. Now hath this land little neede of Broomes,
to sweepe away the filth out of the street:
T. Hoccline. Sen side sleeues of pennilesse groomes,
will it vp licke be it dry or weete.
O England stand vpright on thy feete,
so foule a waste in so simple a degree:
Banish, or it shall sore repent thee.

The Conduit vpon Cornehill in London was made, which before time had beene a prison, called the Tun in Cornehill, whereunto, night-walkers that were taken in suspition of felony, or other trespasses were committed.

From the Feast of the Epiphany til the midst of Aprill appeared a blazing Star, first betwixt the East and the North, and last of all putting fiery beames toward the North, foreshewing peraduenture the effusion of blood, about the parts of Wales and Northumberland.

1402. Owen Glendouerdew with his Welchmen, wasted the lands of the said Reignald Gray, tooke him prisoner, and slew many of his people.

Certaine men affirmed King Richard to be aliue, and that he should shortly shew himselfe openly, and reward them that were faithfull vnto him. But after a certaine Priest was taken at Maidwicke, who had written the names of many, which were the Authors of these troubles, both the hope and feare of this conspiracie vanished. The Priest was drawne hanged and quartered. Also Walter Waldocke late Prioure of Land a Priorye in Leicestershire, because he confessed he knew euill against the King and did conceale it, was likewise hanged and headed. Moreouer certaine gray Friers were taken, of the which one Richard Frisby Doctour of Diuinitie, being asked what he would doe if King Richard were present, answered, that he would fight in his quarrell against any man, euen to the death, wherefore hee was condemned, drawne, and hanged in his Religious habite and weede.

Conspiracie against K. Henry.

A Frost frozen.

At Danebury in Esser, vpon *Corpus Christi* day, the deuill appeared in likenesse of a gray Frier, who entring the Church, raged infolently, to the great feare of the Parishioners: and the same houre with a tempest of whirlewind and thunder, the toppe of the Steeple was broken downe, and halfe the Chauncell scattered abroad.

The diuell appeared in likenes of a Frier.

Shortly after Sir Roger Claringdon knight a bastard sonne of Edward the blacke Prince, and with him a Squire and a Yeoman were beheaded, and eight gray Friers hanged and beheaded at London, and two at Leicester, all which had published King Richard to be aliue. All Priories alians with their Possessions were resumed and seized into the Kings hands, except such houses as were conventuals.

Owen Glendouerdew, with a company of Welchmen inuaded all the Shires that bordered neere vnto him, whereof Sir Edmond Mortimer with many Knights and Esquires went out to encounter with Owen; stronger then he was of the Country; but when it came to martiall affaires, their owne Archers turned their handes against them whom they should haue defended. There was slaine a bone eleuen hundred of our men. Sir Edmond Mortimer was taken, and the Welch women, when the battaile was done lying the dead carcasses to shamefully to be spoken, would not suffer them to be buried without

Owen Glendouerdew tooke Sir Edmond Mortimer.

great ransome. This battaile was fought at Prlate in Wales. The K. was not hastie to purchase the deliuerance of the Earle of March because his title to the Crowne was well knowne, but suffered him to remaine in prison.

K. Henry went into Wales to pursue Owen Glendouerdew.

The king went with a great power into Wales to pursue Owen Glendouerdew, where hee profited nothing, but lost much, for the Welshmen conueyed themselues into vnknowne places: wherefore the king constrained by necessitie, returned into England, after he had spoyled and burnt the countrey.

Edmond of Langley Duke of Yorke deceased, and was buried at Langley, with his wyfe, more vnto his wife daughter to king Peter of Spaine.

The Scots entred England.

The same time the Scottes cruelly entred into England, for they supposed all the Lords beyond Humber to be occupied in the parts of Wales: but the Earles of Northumberland, Henry Percy, and his son Henry with the Earle of Dunbar, (that a good while agone hauing forsaken the Scottes, had sworne to be true to the King of England) with a number of armed men and plentie of archers, sodainly came to resist the Scottes, as they would haue returned home, after they had spoyled and brent the Countrey: but now vpon a sodaine their way was forestalled, so that they must needes abide and take a place to fight vpon: they chose therefore a mountaine neere to the towne of Wooler, called Halydowne hill, in the which they place themselues with their armed men and archers, which when our men beheld, leauing the way in which they stood against the Scots, they clime the hill that stood ouer against the Scots, and without delay of time, our Archers placed in the valley, set their arrowes against the Scottes battell, that they might by some meanes force them to come downe: on the other side, the Scottish archers let flie at our men, who yet after they felt the grieuous waight, & as it had beene a shower or tempest of arrowes, shot by the Englishmen, they stedde. The Earle Dowglas perceiuing his men so to flie (for he was their generall leader) take his speare, and manfully with a multitude came downe the hill, trusting doubtlesse in his armour, and armour of his complices that had beene three peeces in making, and forced himselfe to run vpon the archers, which when the archers saw, they stepped backe, and shotte so fiercely, that they pierced the armed mens bodies, stroke through their Helmets, riued their speares, and rent their armour with light aboe. E. Douglas himselfe was wounded in fiue places, the residue of the Scots that were not come beside the hill, turning backe frō the arrowes, stedde away, but their flight nothing auayled them whilst the archers followed them, that they were compelled to yelde themselues. Earle Douglas also was taken, and many drowned in the riuer Tweed, whilest they knew not the foordes, to the number of fiue hundred (as was said.) In this battell no Lord, nor Knight, no esquire, gaue any stroke to the enemies, but onely God gaue the victorie to the English archers, the Lords and armed men being onely lokers on.

Mortell at Halidowne hill.

That day the flowre of the Scottish Chiualry was taken, to wit, the Earle Dowglas, Murdake the eldest sonne of the Duke of Albanie, that was heyre apparant to the Realme of Scotland: the Earles of Murrey, Angus, and Orkeney, the Lords of Mountgomery, Erskeyne and Gram, with many other knights to the number of fourescore, besides Esquires, and yeomen, whose number was not knowne. There were slaine of Barons, the Lord Gordon, the Lord Iohn of Swinton that was false to both the realmes, &c. This battell was fought on the fourteenth of September.

Edmond Mortimer which before was taken by Owen Glendouerdew, now professed to take Owens part against K. Henry, and did contract marriage with the Daughter of the said Owen. *An. reg. 4.*

In the month of May died Katherine dutches of Lancaster, & is buried in Lincolne Minster.

Parliament at Kordon.

In a Parliament at London, which began the morrow after Michaelmas day, and lasted seuen weekes, there was granted to the King a tenth and a halfeof the clergie, a tenth of the boroughtownes, and a fiftenth of the communs through the Realme.

1403. K. Henry marrieth the Lady Ioane de Nauarre.

The messengers that had bin sent for Ioane, late wife to Iohn of Mountford Duke of Britaine returned with her in to England, and landed at Falmouth in Cornewall. The King met with her at Winchester the 7. of Februarie, where they were married in the Church of S. Swithen.

The 26. of Februarie, she was crowned at Westminster.

Monstrous sights at Bedford.

In the summer following, by the Townes of Bedford and of Bickleiward, monsters were seene oft-times mornings and euenings to come out of the woods, vnder diuers colours in the likenesse and similitude of men of warre, which met one with another, and seemed to fight cruell battels, which although they that were a farre off might see, yet they that were nere hand could not find, which thing deceiued many that coueted to approch and come nere.

Henry Percy the younger, did sodainly shew himselfe to be the Kings enemie, vnto whom ioyned Thomas Percy Earle of Worcester, vncle to the said Henry: and to make their conspiracy excusable, they did write vnto the shires about, that they pretended nothing against the allegiance nor fidelitie which they ought to the King, neither to gather to any other end an armie, but onely for the sauing of their persons, and for the better gouernment of the commonwealth, because the payments and talkes granted to the K. for the safe custodie of the realme, were put to such vses as they ought not to be, and were vnprofitably consumed and wasted.

Moreouer, they complained: that because of the cruell slaunders which their enemies had made of them, they durst not personally appeare in the K. presence, vntil the prelates and Barons had intreated for them, that they might bee

he permitted to purge themselues before the K. and be lawfully iudged by their peres, so that many that saw these letters, did praise their diligence, and extoll their fidelity towards the common-wealth. But the King being disquieted with these doings, that he might appease the communaltie, he wrote to them, that he marueiled much, that seeing the Earle of Northumberland, and Henry his son had receiued the most part of the payments and sums granted to him by the clergy and communaltie, for the defence of the marches of Scotland, what occasion they had to make such manifest slaunders, &c. But the young Henry Percy putting his confidence in the aide of Owen Glendouerdew, and Edmond Mortimer Earle of March with the Welchmen, and men of Cheshire, published that king Richard was aliue, and was with them, whom if any man would see, they should without delay come in armour vnto the Castle of Leicester, which declaration made diuers variable motions in the hearts of many, and caused them to wauer.

Shrewsburie besieged.

King Henry considering all things wisely, gathered together as many as he could, & came sodainly into the parts where the rebels kept their rage, and when they saw vpon a sodaine the Kings banner, and was euen ready to haue scaled the towne of Shrewsbury, he straightwayes desisted from the assault of the towne, & said to his men, we must now needes turne our weapons vpon them that come against vs: ye see the Kings standert, neither can we, though we would, scape any flatting-hole: stand to it manfully therefore, for this day shall either bring vs all to promotion and honor, if we ouercome, or else if we be ouercome, it shall deliuer vs from the Kings malice. For it is a more comly thing to die in battell for the common-wealth, then after battel to die by the sentence of condemnation by the enemie: and with that, 14000. of the best men that were with Henry, made vow and promise to stand by him so long as breath would serue, & they take the field that was commodious for them, & the K. and his men law in the field right against them. The bowmen of H. Percy began the battel, whose arrowes fell not vpon the ground, but vpon the bodies of the Kings soldiers, and the K. Archers shot as fiercely against their enemies, so that on both sides many were slaine, and many thousands fled, thinking the King had beene slaine, but the Earle of Dunbar withdrew the K. from the place that he stood in, which was a good turne for him, for the aforesaid Henry Percy & E. Dowglas the Scot (then whom was neuer man more stout) raged so that the K. standert was ouerthrowne, and those about it slaine, among whom was slaine, Edmond E. of Stafford, Sir Walter Blunt the K. standert bearer, Sir Nicholas Langford, sir Iohn Cokayne, sir Iohn Caluerly, sir Iohn Massy, Baron of Podington, sir Hugh Mortimer, sir Iohn Clifton, and the two Worthen Nicholas and Robert Generels, with many other Knights & Gentlemen, and of the Commons on both sides about 500. slaine. Henry the Prince was wounded in the face with an arrow. In the meane season Henry Percy whilst he went before his men in the battell, pricking vpon his enemies, was sodainly slaine, which being knowne, the Kings enemies fled, but the E. Dowglas was taken, & also Thomas Percy E. of Worcester, with Sir Richard Vernon, and the Baron of Kinderton, and many other were taken. This battell was fought on Mary Magdalens euen nere vnto Shrewsbury, in a place called Oldfield, *alias*, Bulfield, not farre from a place called Barwike. On the Monday following, were condemned and beheaded at Shrewsbury, the Earle of Worcester, the Baron of Kinderton, and Sir Richard Vernon. The body of Henry Percy was deliuered to the Lord of Furniuale to be buried, but the King caused the same body to be taken vp, and to be reposed in twelue tunne Millions in the Towne of Shrewsbury, there to be kept with armed men, and afterward to be beheaded and quartered, commanding his head and quarters to be carried vnto diuers cities of the kingdome.

T. Walsingham.

The E. of Northumberland with a strong power was comming toward his son and his brother, (as men thought) ot at the least towards the King; but the Earle of Westmerland, and Robert Waterton, had gathered a great army, and had entred on their way to wrste him sodainely, but for taking none of them both to be his friends, returned vnto the castle of Warkworth.

When all thing were set in a stay at Shrewsbury the King went to wards Yorke, where, when he was setled, he sent to the Earle of Northumberland, commanding him to dismisse his company, and to come to him, and the Earle came to him on the morrow after S. Laurence day, but the King receiued him not friendly, but as one that sued for pardon, and pardoning him of his life, committed him to safe custodie.

Plimouth spoyled by the Britons. *An. Reg. 5.*

The Britons Armorikes, the Lord of Caskeis being their leader, inuaded the towne of Plimmouth, spoyled and brent it and went their way free, but immediately the westerne nauie, vnder the consent of William Wilford Esquire in the coast of Briton, take fortie ships laden with pyon, oyle, sope & wine of Rochell, to the number of a thousand tunne, and in returning backe againe, he brent 40 ships, & at Penarch the said William arrined with his men, and burned Townes and Lordships the space of fiue leagues, and set the towne of S. Mathew on fire, and their Villes about the said towne.

1404. French men inuade the Ile of Wight.

A little before Christmasse the French-men came into the Ile of Wight, boasting that they would keepe their Christmas there, and when a thousand of the French-men were entred into the Iland, and diuiding flockes of Cattell toward the Sea, sodainly there came vpon them a company of the Iland men, that forced them to leaue their pray behinde them, and to get them gone (with shame

pnough to their ships, with no small losse of their men.

Parliament at Lon on and a great assaile.

In a parliament holden at London after the Octaues of the Epiphany, the Earle of Northumberland was restored to his former estate and dignity. And in this Parliament, was granted vnto the King an vnaccustomed taske, very heauy and painfull for the inhabitants, the manner of which taske, the granters thereof would haue to be kept secret for euermore: and vnder the condition only it was granted, that it should not be any example to them that should come after, and that there should remaine no record thereof, but the same forthwith to be burnt.

Frenchmen come to the Isle of Wight.

The Frenchmen, about that time, came before the Ile of Wight, with a great Nauy, and sent certaine of their men, to demand in the name of King Richard, and of Quéene Isabell, a tribute, or subsidy of the inhabitants: who answered, that King Richard was dead, and the Quéene, sometime his wife, was sent home to her parents, without condition of any tribute: but if the French mens minde were to fight, they willed them to come vp, and no man should let them for the space of fiue houres to refresh themselues, but when that time was expired, they should haue battell giuen them, which, when the Frenchmen heard, they went away and did nothing.

Dertmouth spoiled by the French.

The Lord of Cassells in Brittaine, arrested at Blackepoole, two mile out of Dertmouth with a great Nauy, where of the principall people whom he euer beheld, he was slaine. There were taken that day, three Lords, and twenty knights of name, and the vplandish people presenting their captiues vnto the King, returned with their purses full of gold.

In the moneth of Aprill, the Clergy granted vnto the King a tenth.

Owen Glendowerdew.

All the summer following, Owen Glendouerdew, and his Welshmen, rob, burne, and destroy the countries adioining vnto them: hee tooke many captiues, and slew many English men: he laid fiue certaine Castles that he had taken, and some he kept for his owne defence.

The Flemmings and Brittaines take certaine ships of ours, laden with merchandizes, and slew, or hanged all the Mariners.

The Countesse of Oxford reported K. Richard to be aliue.

The old Countesse of Oxford, mother to Robert de Vere, Duke of Ireland (who, as we said before, died at Louaine) did cause such as were familiar with her, to bruite throughout all the parts of Ester, that King Richard was aliue, and that he should shortly come and challenge his old estate and dignity. Shee caused many hearts of siluer, and some of gold to be made for badges, such as King Richard was wont to beare on his knights, Esquires, and friends, that distributing them in the Kings name, thee might the sooner allure the Knights, and other valiant men of the country, to be at her will and desire.

William Serle faigneth King Richards death to be aliue, and to haue returned vnexpected.

Also, the same and bruite which daily was blased abroad, by one William Serle, some-time seruant of King Richards chamber, that the same King Richard was in Scotland, and tarryed with a power of French & Scottishmen, caused many to beléeue that he was aliue. This William Serle had forged a priuie Seale in the said Richards name, and had sent diuers comfortable letters vnto such as were familiar with K. Richard, by which meanes, many gaue the greater credit to the Countesse, insomuch, that some religious Abbots of that country did giue credit vnto her tales, who afterward were taken at the Kings commandement and imprisoned, because they did beléeue and giue credit to the Countelle in this behalfe, and the Countesse had all her goods confiscate, and was committed to close prison: and William Serle, was drawn from Pomfret, through the chiefest Cities of England, and put to death at London.

About the feast of S. Iohn Baptist, at the Kings commandement, the Earle of Northumberland came to Pomfret, and brought with him his Nephewes and Nephewes sonnes, by which doing he mitigated the mindes of many which thought that hee had giuen the young men counsell to rebell. There came also with him Willi. Clifford knight, who brought with him that William Serle K. Richards chamberlaine before spoken of, whom by a wile he had apprehended, by which doing, the K. pardoned him, for that he had kept the Castle of Barwike against the Kings will and pleasure.

An. reg. 6. The Lay-mans Parliament at Couentry.

About the feast of Saint Faith, the King called a parliament at Couentry, & sent proclame to the Sheriffes that they should chose no Knights nor burgesses that had any knowledge in the Lawes of the Realme, by reason whereof it was called the Lay-mens Parliament. These picked-out Knights and Burgesses could deuise no other way to releéue the Kings lacke of money, but to depriue the Cleargie of their temporall lands and goods; by this occasion ginen, arose great alteration and variance between the clergie and the laitie. The knights affirming that they had oftentimes going forth with the King against rebels and enemies, not onely spent largely their goods, with, and for the King, but also had set their bodies in great danger and ieopardies, where in the meane season the clearkes sate idle at home, and helped the King neuer a whit. But Tho. Arundell Arch-bishop of Canterbury made answere, that the cleargie did alwayes giue the King as much as the lay people did, considering that they did oftner giue the King tenths, then the laytie gaue fifteenes. And moreouer, that more of their tenants did serue the King in his warres, then the tenants of the Laytie. And besides this, they prayed day and night for the prosperitie of the King, and of all them that faithfully serued him.

The Knights and Burgesses, require the temporall goods to be taken from the Clergie.

Tho. Arundell Arch-bishop of Canterbury his answer to the Burgesses.

And when the speaker of the parliament named Iohn Cheyney, said with a loude voyce and angry countenance, that he little regarded the prayers of the Church, the Arch-bishop of Canterbury answered: Oh (quoth he) now I perceiue plainly to what end the fortune of this Realme will come, when the Suffragues of the Church are excluded and little set by wherewith the goodhead is wont to be appeased: surely the kingdome neuer continueth firme & stable,

ble, that is boyd of prayers deuotion: notwithstanding, thou which settest at naught the religion of the Cleargie, thinke not without punishment to take away the possessions of the Church, for if the Arch-bishop of Canterbury liue, thou shalt haue euill taking of any thing that is his. Then the Arch-bishop considering that the K. did winke at these things, rose vp, and kneéled downe before the K. desiring him to consider how gratiously, and by Gods fauor, hée had attained the kingdome, that he would consider his first promise, which was that hee would preserue vnto euery man their right and title so far as lay in him. He also willed him to remember the oath which hee voluntarily made, which was, that he would honour and defend the Church, and would cherish and maintaine the ministers thereof: he required him to consider the danger and dishonour of breaking an oth, wherefore he desired him to permit and suffer the Church to enioy the priuiledges and liberties, which in time of his predecessors it did enioy, and to feare that K. by whom all Kings do reigne. When the Arch-bishop had said these and like words, the King commanded him to goe againe to his seate, and said, that his intent and purpose was to leaue the Church in as good state or better then he found it. And then the Arch bishop speaking to the Knights and Burgesses, said: You, and such like as you be, haue giuen such counsell vnto our King and to his predecessors, to confiscate the goods and lands of the Cities which the French-men and Normans did possesse in England, and said, that by them he should heape vp great riches, as moued they were worth many thousands of gold. Notwithstanding, it is most true that the King at this day is not the richer thereby of halfe a marke; for you haue extorted, or at the least begged them out of his hands, and haue appropriated the said goods vnto your selues, so that it may be conceiued that your request to haue our temporalties, is not for the Kings profite, but for your owne couetousnesse: for without doubt, if the King (as God forbid he should) fulfill your wicked purpose, he should not bée one farthing the richer the next yeare following: and surely, I will sooner let my head be cut off, then that the Church should be destitute of the least right that pertaineth to it.

The Arch-bishop to the King.

Against to the Knights and Burgesses.

The Knights of the parliament hearing this saying of the Archbishop, and seeing the constancy of their Metropolitan, held their peace, but yet perséuered in minde to haue their purpose: which the Archbish. perceiuing (hauing his eye on each side to marke what was done) laboured to disappoint their doings, that he wanne the fauour of certaine of the temporall Lords to assist him, who constantly auouched by their consents, that the Church should neuer be spoyled of the temporalties. And here they acquite the Arch-bishop and Prelates, one pleasure for another, wich they had done for them before. When the commons in this Parliament required that all such lands and reuenues as sometime belonged vnto the crowne, and had beene giuen away, either by the King, or by his predecessors King Edward or Richard should againe be restored vnto the Crowne. Vnto which request the Arch-bishop and other the Prelates would in no wise condescend: and so it came to passe, that there was no more mention made afterwards of any exactions of the Temporalties But contrariwise, the knights of the Parliament, who had shewed themselues so importunate in that errour, confessed vnto the Arch-bishop their faulte and malice, desiring him to forgiue them.

The Answer of the Arch-bishop.

Moreouer, they gaue him thanks, for that through his stout courage the Church at that time recouered strength, reciting the saying of the Ethnike, That a vnder an hard Prince, and an euill time, art bold to doe good. Besides many things that were granted to the King in this Parliament, the Lay-people granted him two fifteenes, vpon condition, that the Lord Furnivall should receiue all the money, and see it to bee spent in the Kings warres.

Two fifteens granted to the King.

Also the Letters Patents that were giuen to sundry persons, for yeerely reuenewes by King Edward, and King Richard, were called in again, the knights of the parliament to adiudging it, although it redounded to the Kings dishonour. The Cleargy granted the King a tenth and a halfe.

A tenth and a halfe granted to the King.

The same time such abundance of Water brake ouer the banks in Kent sodainly, as was neuer séene the like in these parties, whereby were drowned beasts and cattell without number, neither did England onely bewaile their losses, but also Zealand, Flaunders and Holland, sustained the like by the great excesse of waters.

Great waters & floods.

This yeare dyed William Wickam Bishop of Winchester, by whose charges and trauell, the Cleargie of England was much increased, for he builded a Noble Colledge in Oxford, for the increase of learning, where hee placed the warden and his company, to the number of lxx. besides children, seruants, and ten Priests, to héepe daily seruice, endowing the said company with sufficient lands.

William Wickham Bishop of Winchester, his College in Oxford.

He began the foundation of a new Colledge at Winchester, and in fiue yeres finished the same, where he placed the like number of Schollers to learne their Grammar, and other principles, to be sent afterward to his other College at Oxford. These two Colledges are called, the new Colledges, dedicated to our blessed Lady.

His colledge in Winthester.

He builded the great body of the Church of Saint Swithens in Winchester, where the sermons are made, and where his bodie is entered, a very Princely worke: neither did he for all this diminith any thing of his ordinary houshold charges, and fed (as the writing ensueth) and cloathed the poore. He deceased at the age of lxx. yéres. He died rich, for beside that he gaue to his kinsfolke and to the poore, he gaue somewhat to euery Church in his Dioces. Hee gaue many

Saint Swithens in Winchester the Church for the most part new builded by William Wikeham.

things to the King, and to his owne seruants, and to his Colledges: neither doe I doubt but that is that the Lord is now with God, who I beseech to raise vp many like Bishops in England.

William Wickham borne at Wickham in Hampshire.

This William Wickham was borne at Wickham in Hampshire, of which place hee tooke his surname, I was of some called Long, because he was a tall man: one maister Woodale of Wickham brought him vp at Scholes, where he learned his Grammar, and to write faire. After this, the Constable of Winchester castle, at that time a great ruler in Hampshire, got Peter and Wickham of Wodall, and made them his Clerkes. Edward the third comming to Winchester castle, liked Wickham, & tooke him to seruice, and vnderstanding that he had minde to be a priest, made him first Parson of S. Maruins in London, and then Deane of S. Martins le Grand, and then Arch-deacon of Buckingham. He made him also surueyor of his buildings, as of Windsore, Dumbojew in Kent, & other places. After this, for preferment to be bearer of his great Seale, maister of the Wards and Forrests, and Treasurer of the Kings reuenues in France, Arch-deacon of Lincolne, then Bishop of Winchester, Chancellour and Treasurer of England.

Banishment of Wickham out of the Realme.

¶ This banishment out of the Realme whereof some haue written, I find no mention therof in Thomas Walsingham, Henry Knitton, and other Authors at that time liuing, nor more of his troubles, but only that by meanes of I. of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster, his goods were by Edward the third confiscate, and giuen to Richard Earle of Arundell and Surrey, and to Richard the sonne of the blacke Prince, in An. 1376. and by the meanes of Alice Pierce were againe restored to the said Bishop in the yeare next following, to wit, in Anno 1377 as more at large in those Annales I haue set downe: wherefore it is manifest, that if he had sustained the losse, all his goods, and seuen yeares banishment (as some haue fabled) it should haue beene hard for him, or rather impossible to haue bestowed so many great workes to perfection, as the world can witnesse to haue beene done at his charges. To him in that Bishopricke, succeeded Henry Beaufort, Sonne to John of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster, by his wife Katherine Swinford, he was translated from Lincolne to Winchester, & Philip Repyngdon Abbot of Leicester, was at the Kings request made Bishop of Lincolne.

His goods confiscate, and restored to him a-gaine.

Henry Beaufort Bishop of Winchester.

The King kept his Christmas at Eltham in Kent.

About the Feast of Saint Valentine, the leaues of the Castle at Marth were taken out of the Castle of Windsore, and led away into Holland to Owen Glendourdew, but shortly after were recouered againe. The Smith that had the keyes, by the which they that conueyed them, got into them, had first his hands, and then his head cut off.

The Lady Spencer, Sister to the Duke of Yorke, and widow of Thomas Lord Spencer, beheaded at Bristow, being apprehended and committed to prison, accused her brother the Duke of Yorke to be chiefe Author in stealing away of the Earle of Marches sonnes, wherefore the said Duke was kept by Sir John Pelham in the Castle of Pemsey till the next Parliament.

After the feast of the Purification of our Lady, the King assembled his Barons at London, to treat of the gouernment of the Realme and to haue ayd of money to be giuen, but the Nobles would not at that time obey his request. In the Lent following therefore, the King caused the Cleargie and the Barons to assemble at S. Albones for the matter aforesaid, but by reason the Nobles stroue against him, there was nothing done, and so departed on Palme Sunday.

About the 19. of March, in a fight betwixt the English-men and Welch-men, the Sonne of Owen Glendourdew was taken, and 1500. with him were taken or slaine.

Conspiracy against King Henry by the Arch-bishop of Yorke and other.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, Richard Scroope Arch bishop of Yorke, Thomas Moubray Earle Marshall, Thomas L. Bardolph and other, conspiring against King Henry, assembled together the Citizens of Yorke, and many other, to stand with them for the commoditie of the Realme. And to animate the commons to be readier vnto this businesse, they set Articles vpon the doores of the Monasteries and Churches of the same Citie, written in English against the King, because he had put downe King Richard, offering themselues for those Articles to liue and dye, which caused great number of people to resort to them: but Ralph Neuell Earle of Westmerland that was not farre off, together with John Duke of Lancaster, the Kinges Sonne, being informed of these things, gathered an armie with speede to goe against the Arch-bishops company, but all was in vaine, for the Arch-bishops power was farre greater then theirs, whereuppon the Earle of Westmerland sent messengers, to enquire of the Archbishop the cause of so great an assembly in armour, contrary to the K. peace: whereunto the Arch-bishop answered, that he tooke nothing in hand against the Kings peace, and he was in armour, and munited with men onely for feare of the King whom he could not safely come vnto to speake: but his purpose (he said) was good and commodious both for the King and the realme, if happily they would know it: & then he shewed a Scedule, in which the Articles were contained, which when the E. of Westmerland had read, he with good and countenance praised the Bishops holy and vertuous intent, and promised, that he and his would prosecute the same with the Archbishop.

The Arch-bishop being glad of this, beleeued the Earles words, and perswaded the Earle Marshall, being vnwilling thereunto, to goe with him to a place appointed to talke together to whom he p with like number came, and the writting with the Articles was read ouer: straightway the Earle and they that were with him

him gaue their assent to these Articles: then said the Earle being subtiller than the rest, behold the labour that we haue taken in hand is come to such end as we would haue it, and the people hath now beene long in armour, let some of your men beare word vnto the people to goe their way home, and to lay downe their armour, and euery man to fall to his occupation and accustomed labour: in the meane season, we, in token of concord will drinke together, that the people on both sides shall see it, and without delay, after they had taken each other by the hands, a Knight was sent on the Archbishops behalfe, to beare word to the people that it was peace, and to command euery man to lay downe their armour, and to goe to their owne home.

The people beholding signes of peace, and the Lords drinking together, being wearied with the vnaccustomed trauell of warre, turned the reines of their bridles homewards, and so it came to passe, that when the people of the Archbishops side went away, the number of the aduersaries increased, as before it was appointed, and the Arch-bishop did not perceiue that he was betrayed, vntill such time as the Earle arrested him: he arrested the Marshall also, and many other with him, to all which it was promised that they should haue no harme, but that promise was not kept, for both the Archbishop and the Earle Marshall were brought to Pontfract to the King, who in the meane while was aduanced thither with his power, and from thence he went to Yorke, whither the prisoners were also brought: others say that the King sojourning at Bishops Thorpe, the Archbishop was brought thither, where Sir William Fulford Knight learned in the lawes, sitting on an high stage in the hall, gaue iudgement that the Arch-bishop should be beheaded: he was therefore set on an ill fauoured Jade, with his face toward the horse taile, and carryed with great scorne and shame enough, to a field there beside, where with fiue strokes his head was smitten off on the morrow after Whitsonday: with him were condemned and executed the Earle Marshall, Sir John Lamplough, and Sir Robert Plompton. After the King had ransomed and otherwise punished by grieuous fines the Cittizens of Yorke, he departed from Yorke with an army of 17000. fighting men furnished with all prouision, marching northward against the Earle of Northumberland. At his comming to Durham the L. Hastings, the L. Falconbrige, Sir Iohn Colvile of the Dale, and Sir Io. Griffith, being conuicted of the conspiracie, were beheaded. The E. of Northumberland perceiuing the K. intent, got himselfe to Berwicke with 300. horse, and from thence into Scotland. The K. being bent against the Earle of Northumberland, went to Berwike, from whence the Earle fled into Scotland, and the Lord Bardolph with him, whom Dauid, Lord Fleming the Scot received in alliance. The K. vnderstanding that the Earle was fled, he commanded them in the Castle to render it vnto him, which when they refused to doe, the K. caused a great gun to be shot, which ouerthrew part of a Tower, whereupon they of the Castle gaue ouer, and submitted themselues to the King, who caused some of them to be beheaded, and the residue to be sent to prisons. After this, the Castle of Alnewike, and the rest of the Castles were with small adoe restored to his hands: with which successe the K. being incouraged, went straight into Wales, where contrariwise nothing prospered with him, wherefore he returned losing Chariots, Carts, and Wagons, to the number of fiftie, with his treasure, so that comming backe to Worcester, he sent for the Archbishop and Bishops, and declared to them his mis-fortune, desiring them to helpe him: to whom the Archbishop answered, that hee would talke with the Cleargie in that matter. In the meane season, the French-men came to succour the Welsh-men with 140. ships: they landed in Milford hauen, hauing lost almost all their horses for lacke of fresh water. The Lord Barkley and Hen. Pay burned fiftene of those ships in the same Hauen. These French-men besieged the Towne of Carmarden, and take it, graunting to the inhabitants all their moueable goods, and to goe whither they would.

French-men relieue the Welch-men.

The same time the foresaid Lord Barkeley, Thomas Swinborne, and Henry Pay take 14. ships of the French, in the which they take the Steward of France and eight Captaines more.

An. reg. 7.

The Towne of Cruce Rolle or Roylon in Hartfordshire was brent.

Roylon brent.

This yere all the weares in Thamis from the Towne of Staines in the West, vnto the water of Medway in the East, by the Maior & communaltie of London, were destroyed, and the trunkes brent, for the which great plea and discord followed betweene Thomas Arundell Arch-bishop of Cauterbury, and other Lords and Knights of the one partie, and the Maior and communaltie on the other party, but the Cittizens preuailed by vertue of their Charter and Statutes. Roger Walden Bish. of London deceased.

Weares in the Thamis and Medway destroyed. 1406.

Archbishop of Yorke beheaded.

The first of March a Parliament began, which lasted nigh one whole yere, for after the Knights of the Parliament had long delayed to grant to the King a subsidie, yet in the ende being ouercome, they graunted the Tare demanded. The priests and the Friers that lined of Almes, were forced euery one to pay halfe a Marke. By decree of this Parliament the Britons that serued the Queene were expelled the Realme, and two of her daughters were also sent with them.

Nicholas Babwith. Parliament.

A great tare.

Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, and the Lord Bardolfe, by the counsell of David Fleming fled into Wales, for hee had declared to them, that the Scottes had resolued to deliuer them vnto their owne King, in exchange for other prisoners: and for this doing of David Fleming, the trayterous Scots slew him, and stirred such a ciuill warre amongst themselues, that in the end they were

conspiracie

constrained to request truce for a yere, which when they had obtained, the Scots sent James King of the sonne of Robert King of Scots, being but six yeres old, towards France, there to be brought vp, and to be instructed in the pleasant eloquence of the French tongue, whom certaine Mariners of Cloe in Norfolke take on the Seas, and with him a Bishop, and the Earle of Orkney, to whom his father had committed him (and they brought him into England, and deliuered him to the K. who forthwith burst out into a laughter, and said, surely the Scots might haue sent him to mee, for I can speake French. The Bishop escaped and fled, but the Earle of Orkeney, and the said James the young lad, was sent to the Tower of London, where he remained Prisoner till the seconde yere of Henry the first, which was about 18. yeres.

James taken by the French.

Henry Spencer Bishop of Norwich deceased, to whom succeeded Alexander Pyrot of that Church.

The French men came to helpe Owen Glendouerdew with 38 ships, whereof eight were taken full of armed men, the rest escaped into Wales, but not long after were taken 15. ships laden wine and ware.

The French men came to the Owen Glendouerdew.

Whilest the Parliament, yet continued, the Duke of Yorke was restored to his olde dignitie, whom many men thought to haue bene dead in person.

Edmond Holland Earle of Kent, married the Lady Lucie the Duke of Milaine Barnabes daughter, in the priory of S. Mary Ouery in Southwarke, where he the same day received 100000. duckats for her dowry. *An. reg. 8.*

Walter Skirlaw Bishop of Durham, after he had sate 18. yeres in that Bishoprick, deceased: he new builded the bridges of Shincley, Parrow, and Auclaud: he bestowed on the cloyster at Durham, 600. pounds, on the Dormitory 330. marks, and 400. pounds by his testament: he builded the steeple at Holme, borne downe by force of water rising: he repaired the Church and the Hall of the Manno there: he builded a great part of the steeple called the Lanterne of the Monastery at York: he builded a faire Chappell at Swine in Holderneste, where hee was borne, &c. Thomas Langley succeeded him in the Bishoprick of Durham.

Henry Pay, and other with him of the fine Ports, with fifteene ships, take an hundred and twenty ships which lay at anchor in the sea of Britaine, laden with yron, salt, ople, and Rochell wine. T. Walsingham.

This summer through corruption of the ayre so great a Plague was shed vpon mens bodies as was not seene the like in many yeres in this land, so that men might say. Pestilence.

The South winds warme did blow with heat pestiferous,
And pestilence did beare great rule in Cities populous.

For at London in short while it consumed about 30000. men and women, and in the countrey Townes great mortalitie fell among the Husbandmen, so that great housholds died cleane vp, and the houses were emptied.

In the time of this pestilence the King durst not come nere to the Citie of London, wherefore being at the Castle of Leedes in Kent, he departing from thence, take shipping at Quinborow in the Ile of Sheppey, to saple ouer into Offer, and so to goe to Platley, there to passe the time til the mortality were ceased.

K. Henry in perill to haue bene taken on the sea by the French.

But as the K. was on the sea, certaine French Pirates which lay lurking at the Thames mouth to watch for some prey, got knowledge of the K. passage, and thereupon, as he was in the midst of his course, they entred amongst his Fléte, and take foure vessels next to the Kings ship, and in one of the same vessels Syr Thomas Rampton, the Kings bee-Chamberlaine, with all his chamber stuffe and apparell. They followed the King so nere, that if his ship had not bene swift, he had landed sooner in France, than in Essex: But such was his good hap that hee escaped, and arrived at his appointed Port.

Bishops translated.

Henry Bewet Bishop of Bathe, was translated to the Arch-bishoppricke of Yorke, and Robert Halam was made Bishop of Salisburie, Richard Clifford was translated from Worcester to the Bishoppricke of London, and Thomas Powell from Landaffe to the See of Worcester.

About the fifteenth day of August deceased Sir Robert Knowles Knight, at his Manno of Sconethorpe in Norfolke, he was brought to London, and there honourably buryed by the Lady Constance his wife, in the white Fryers Church which he had newly re-edified and builded. Sir Robert Knowles. John Leiland.

This Sir Robert Knowles hade beene a most valiant captaine in the warres of France during the raigne of Edward the third, and Richard the second, whose force the Realme of France both felt and feared, so did the Duke dome of Byptaine, and all the people from hence to Spaine. Of him in his life were made Register of Bermondsey. verses in Latine, which may bee Englished thus.

Verses.

O Robert Knowles, most worthy of fame,
By thy prowesse France was made tame:
Thy manhood made tye Frenchmen to yeeld
By dint of sword in towne and field.

College & Hospitall at Pontfrait.

This Sir Robert Knowles founded in the Towne of Pontfrait a Colledge to the honour of the holy Trinitie, with an Hospitall toyned thereunto. In the which Colledge was placed a maister, and fiue or seauen Priests, and in the Hospitall 13. poore men and women. He was once minded to haue made this Colledge at his Manno of Sconthorpe, but at the request of Constance his wife (a woman of meane birth, and sometime of a dissolute life afore her mariage) he turned his purpose, and made

made it in the very place of Pontfrait, where she was borne, endowing the same with 180. pound land by yere. He also builded the faire new great bridge at Rochester, ouer the riuer of Medway, with a Chappell and a Chaunterp at the east end thereof. In the which Chappell was sometime a Table hanging, wherein was noted the benefactors to that Bridge, as followeth.

Rochester bridge.

A great part of this bridge was builded by Iob. Lord Cobham.

Sir Robert Knowles founder of the Trinitie Chappell at Rochester Bridge, Constance wife to Knowles.

Sir Iohn Cobham Lord, principall Benefactor to the making of Rochester bridge: Margaret wife to Cobham.

Thomas Boucher Cardinall.
John Morton Archbishop.
Henry Chicheley Arch-bishop.
Thomas Langley Bishop of Durham.
Iohn Langedon Bishop of Rochester.
Thomas Arundell Arch-bishop.
Sir Iohn Cornwall Lord Fanhap.
Richard Whittington Maior of London.
William Cromer Draper, Maior of London.
Geffrey Boleine Maior of London.
John Darby Draper, Alderman of London.
William Midleton Mercer of London.
Iohn Martin Iustice.
Sir William Nottingham chiefe Baron of the Exchequer.
William Wangford.
John Buckingham Bishop of Lincolne.
Iohn Kempe Bishop of London.
Sir William Richall.
Sir Iohn de Pole.

All these had given money or lands towards the building and repayring of the said Bridge.

Notwithstanding this Table, I finde in record as followeth: The bridge betwixt the Citie of Rochester, and the village of Strode was in the fourth yere of King Richard the second, sore decayed or broken downe by tempest of weather, and inundation of the riuer of Medway, whereupon William Basing master of the Hospitall at Strode, and Nicholas Hering, were licensed by the King to repaire the same. And in the eleuenth yere of the same K. Richard the second, Iohn Cobham and Robert Knowles begamne their charge towards the building of the said bridge, and in the eightenth yere of the same Richard, the said Io. Cobham founded a Chauntry in the chappell there of three Chaplaines, and gaue lands to the Bridge in the twenty-two yere of Richard the second: And thus much of the Record haue I noted.

An. reg. 9. I finde further by John Leiland, that one John Warner a Merchant of Rochester made the new coping of Rochester-bridge. And William Warham Arch-bish. of Canterbury made the yron pikes and barres aboue the same coping. But some say it was done by the Arch-bishop that made the yron workes.

Hospital at Rome for Englishmen.

This Robert Knowles, was also one of the founders of an Hospitall in the city of Rome, in manner following: for that there was no Nation of the world, but had some kinde of Hospitality in Rome, saue onely the people of England, certaine Englishmen being in Rome, procured license of the Pope to build an Hospitall, in place where Thomas Becket Archbishop of Canterbury had sometime builded a Chappell of the holy Trinitie. In this Hospitall which they builded, was to be relieued, a Gentleman three dayes, Bread, Wine, and Ware: a commaner eight dayes and nights, meate, drinke, and lodging. And if any Woman happen to be nigh her time of deliuerance, so that shee dare not take her iourney, shee to be honestly kept till she be purified: and if shee bs of power, to take her Child with her, if not, to bee kept there vntill it were seauen yeres old.

The founders of this Hospitall were Sir Robert Braybroke Bishop of London, Thomas Brampton Bishop of Rochester, Sir Iohn Philpot and his wife, Sir Robert Knowles, Sir Hugh Calueley, Sir John Hankwood, Sir Iohn Thornam, Knights, John Twiforde, John Shepard and Alice his wife, Robert Cristall and Agnes his wife, Robert Windleront, Walter Withers, Robert at Pyne, Adam Steple Henry Line Draper, and other Citizens of London in the yere of our Lord 1380. in the Raigne of King Richard the second: which Hospitall was againe new re-edified and made a goodly house in the yere of our Lord 1449. towards the charges whereof, was money gathered in euery Parish in England, but that came to small effect, the charges of collecting and conueying was such, that, there came towards the worke not past one thousand Duckets in one whole yere.

In November a parliament being called at London, a Tax of money was leuied of the whole Realme. Parliament at London.

This yere was a sore and sharpe Winter, and such aboundance of snow, which continued December, January, February, and March, so that almost all small birds died through hunger and colde. Whiles the King held a great Councell at London with the Nobles of the Realme, Henry Earle of Northumberland, and Thomas Lord Bardolfe came against into England, who after long tourneying, when they came to the Towne of Thirske, they caused to be proclaimed, that who so would haue libertie, should take vp armour and weapon and follow them, whereuppon much people resorted to them: but Sir Thomas Rokesley Sheeriffe of Yorkshire, with other Knights of that country went against them, and at Bramham Moore nere to Halewold, fought with them a great battell, and slew the Earle, whose head was straight-wayes cut off. The Lord Bardolfe was sore wounded and taken aliue, but died shortly after. This battell was fought on the viii. day of February. The Earls head was put on a stake, and carryed openly through the City of London, and set on London-bridge. The Bishop of Bangor was taken with the Lords, but pardoned of his life, because hee was not found in armour. The King went to Yorke, there conuemned such as transgressed, 1400 *An. Reg. 10.*

Cons

confiscated their goods, pacified the countrey, hanged the Abbot of Hayle, who had beene in armour, and returned to the South parts againe.

Edmond Holland E. of Kent wounded to death.

Upon the seuenth of September there were such floods of raine, as the old men of that age had neuer seene before. Edmond Holland Earle of Kent whilest he besieged the castle of Bytaine in Britaine, he was wounded with an arrow of a Crosse-bow in the head, notwithstanding he take the castle and destroyed it to the ground, and not long after his braines rotted, and he died.

The Countesse of Kent that was Daughter to Barnabe Viscount Lord of Millan, hauing no issue by her husband, was now moued by the King, after her husbands death to marry with his baſtard brother, the Earle of Dorset, but she chose for her husband, Henry Mortimer, a goodly young Bachelor, by whom she had issue Anne married to Sir John Aubemound.

About the feast of All-Saints the Cardinals of Burges came into England being sent from the Colledge of Cardinals to informe the King and Clergy of the inconstant dealing of pope Gregory, as also he had informed the French King and his Clergie and Realme, to the end that those two Kings might set to their helping hands, to induce the said Gregorie to obserue the oath he had made, and that by the magnificence of those 2 Kings, concord might be made in the Church, vnto the which busines the French King had gladly granted, and sent messengers vnto pope Gregorie, who notwithstanding was obstinate.

The King of England when hee vnderstood the Cardinalls message, he commanded that courteous and gentle entertainment should be giuen to him, and offered to beare his charges so long as hee would abide in England.

1409. The King with his Queen kept their Christmasse at Eltham in Kent.

After the feast of the Epiphany, the Archbishop of Canterbury caused to assemble at London, all the Clergie of the Realme, to chose personages meete to goe to the generall Councell holden at Pisa, whereunto were chosen Robert Holam Bishop of Salisbury, Henry Chiseley Bishop of S. Davids, and Thomas Chillingdon Prior of Christs Church in Canterbury, and the King had sent before John Colvile Knight, and maister Nicholas Rixton Clearkes, with letters to bee giuen to them. And in the letter to the Pope it was written.

K. Henry writeth to the Pope.

Most holy Father, our humble recommendations in filiall wise premised. The inscrutable wisedome of the high God doth sometime dissemble in some sort the sinnes of men, if at length they will yet amend, though not through feruent feare, but by their filiall conscience mouing or pricking them. And how much the longer he deferreth his ire in this life, so much the more grieuously will he punish in the life to come, as is to be feared. Wee therefore in our minde reuolving the long, and as it were the inueterate Schisme now in the Church of God being very hote, truely we feare, as by likelihood is to be feared, that it ought to bee imputed to all Princes of the Christian Religion before God and man, vnto a loathfull negligence, the cruelties of such an errour, nourished thus long: Therefore specially because the Clergy of euery Kingdome, either feare, or the blindnesse of auarice causing them, doe couer this wicked Schisme vnder the vaile of deuotion, and holinesse, so that those Princes, to whom the materiall sword is committed, for the defence and safegard of the Church, about this foresaid schisme, to be vtterly, extirped, they neither goe about to shew any great instance of courteous perswasion, nor to put in practise the sword for the purpose. Wherevpon, hauing heard often-times of many, and vnderstand now a good while agone by letters of the most reuerend in Christ, our Fathers the Lords Cardinalls of your Colledge, and by the report of the reuerend in Christ, the Lord Cardinall of Burdeaux our friend, worthily beloued on the behalfe of the Colledge, comming to the presence of vs, and of our first begotten sonne the Prince of Wales, and of the prelates and priors of our Realme, how that not onely hee, but also the Cardinalls of your said Colledge, by occasion of the continuance of this Schisme, contrary to the bowe and oath made by your holinesse, to renounce the Papacie, haue withdrawne from you all their obedience, and doe determine to hold a generall Councell in the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady now next to come at the Citie Pisa, a place indeed fitte, as it is taide, and honest, and by your holinesse commended for meete and conuenient, as it is affirmed, that this may be done, especially by force of a certaine obligation for occasion of the schisme to be extirped by your holinesse, whilest you were yet in minoritie, of your owne accord, and solemnly entred or made in the Conclaue with the Cardinalls afore-said, and after that you were receiued to the Papall dignity, by the superscription of your holy hands, openly roborated and confirmed, as by the view of a certaine publike instrument before vs and the states aboue-said exhibited, as it plainely hath to vs appeared, not knowing how the vnion of the Church may bee come vnto by any other way more commodiously. Whereupon the said Cardinall hath requested vs, vpon consideration of the premises, and other reasonable causes by him openly expressed, and in the same Letters euidently comprehended, which indeede greatly moued both the consciences of vs, and of the said States, that we should take care to imploy our Councell and ayde about the premises, to the said Colledge for the respect of the godly zeale and loue which thereto we beare, together with other Catholike Princes, and that we should send our Ambaſſadours and Prelates of our Realme by themselues, or by procurators to the said Councell. Wee therefore, desiring

to

to shew the zeale and intent which wee beare and haue to the same vnion, and noting with more heed the wholsome and holy intention of the same Colledge in the premisses, as other princes doe note the same, as we feare at this present, willing also to farreas in vs lyeth, to the honour of GOD, and that wee may auoyd the sword-edge of his wrath, to doe our parts about the reformation of the same state of the Church, hauing taken with our said Sonne, and also with the Prelates and Nobles aforesaid, ripe deliberation, wee beseech with all humility and in the bowels of Jesus Christ, exhorting, doe require your clemencie, whole state and honour vpon diuers causes as a deuout Sonne of the Church, so farre as with GOD wee might, wee haue euer embraced, and doe embrace by the expresse and whole assent of the states aforesaid, that as well for the auoyding of the manifest slaunder of the Church, as of the Apostolike Sea, and for the desirefull consernation of your estate and honour, and also for the desire of the faithfull procurators that will come to the said place and day together, and with all quietnesse, for the respect of him especially that giueth grace to the humble, that yee will vouchsafe to bee present at the day and place before mentioned, in the Spirit of humblenesse, to fulfill the bowe together, and such manner othe effectuallly, as we trust you will. For wee holde for certaine, that as wee are informed, the Cardinals of both Colledges haue come together in one and the same consonancie of minde about the premisses, and as it were all the princes Christians sette forth themselues with glad mindes in their fauour and ayde, howeuer they seeke from else-where starting holes, the same Cardinalls by Gods helpe assisting them, shall obtaine the effect of such an vnion: neither doth it seeme to vs, or to the inhabitants of our Realme expedient, that wee should disagree from othe Catholike Princes in so holy a purpose in any thing, but rather that wee should cause our Ambaſſadours and Prelates of our Realme by themselues or their procurators, as we beleeue that other will doe the like, that the vniuersall Church may be nourished with the pleasant taste of a withfull vnion. Moreouer, most blessed Father, if the prouidence of the Apostolike Sea would vouchsafe to attend and marke, what great harme and danger is sprung vp throughout the whole world, not onely of bodies, but also of soules, redeemed by Christs bloud, haue hitherto chanced vnder pretence of the continuation of the said Schisme, and specially the slaughter of Christian people, which aboue the number (as men say) of two hundred thousand, are perished by the raging of diuers warres that haue risen in sundry parts of the world, and euen now of late, to the number of thirtie thousand, which (by reason of the dissention had vpon the Election of Rome betwixt two which doe striue and contende, the one in the authoritie of the true Pope, and the other by the authority of the anti-pope) were in slaughter field (a lamentable thing to bee spoken) slaine and destroyed. Truely, the Apostolike sea would be in great heauinesse of heart, and would rather forsake the honour of the Apostolicall Sea, then to see from henceforth such wicked slaughter to be committed, and would take example of the true mother, who before King Salomon, rather chose to giue place, than that the child should be cut in pieces. And albeit by the creation of the nine Cardinalles, against pont oath (that wee may vse other mens wordes) lastly by you made, of the which act a behement cause of admiration is rayſed, it may in some wise be presumed, that as is like to bee thought, your intention doth not bende to the ende of extirping the Schisme, yet God forbid that your holinesse should circumspectly be noised of such inconstancie of minde by any manner of person, wherevpon the lasse errour may be accounted worse than the first, not onely to be execrated of euery Christen soule, but also to be expulsed with all indeuour. These thinges which we write, of a pure heart and vnfained faith do proceede: and therefore, (be nigne father) if it please you, let these things with due consideration be well ved (most blessed father) let him incline your heart, and corroborate the same in this holy worke, happily to bee executed, who for peace sake when he was the King of all, endured the forme of a seruant. Written vnder our Signet, in our pallace at Westm. the 12. day of November.

Thus I set downe the Epistle which the king sent to the Pope, that it may appeare vnto all men how modestly he at length writeth vnto the Pope to performe his vow and th, to the end the fault should not appeare to be in him, that the vnity of the Church was not reformed.

According to appointment the Cardinalls of both Colleges, towit, of Greegory, and of Benet met at Pisa, effectually to intreat of the reformation of agreement, where almost all the Prelates of the whole Latin world, met together, and honorable men were elected to helpe the Cardinalls in this case, who calling for the grace of the holy spirit, agreed in one, and chose one to be head of the Church, refusing the other two, and called his name Alexander the fifth, and reiected both Gregory, and Benedict.

A great play at Skinners Well.

This yeere was a great play at the Skinners Well, more vnto Clerken Well, besides London, which lasted eight daies, and was of matter from the creation of the world: there were to see the same, the most part of the Nobles and Gentles in England: and forthwith after, began a royall Iusting in Smithfield, betweene the Earle of Somerset, and Seneschal of Hennault, Sir John Cornewall, Sir Richard of Arundell, and the sonne of Sir John Cheyney, against other Frenchemen.

Iusting in Smithfield.

Thomas Bewfort, Bysshop, sonne to John of Gaunt, was made Chancelor, and Hen. Scroope was made Treasurer.

Owen Glendouerdew, though he was par- *An. reg. 11.*
doned by the King, at the request of David

Ff Holbech,

Owen Glendowre ouerthrow by the Englishmen.

Holbech Esquire: yet being now driuen to such miserie, that in maner despairing of all comfort, he fled into desert places and solitary caues, where, being destitute of all reliefe and succor, hreading to shew his face to any creature, and finally, lacking to sustaine nature, for pure hunger miserably pined away, and died.

A Parliament.

In a Parliament holden at London, in the Lent season, the Lords and Burgesses presented to the King a bill in this forme: To the most excellent Lord, the King, and all the Nobles in this present parliament assembled, your faithfull commons humbly do shew, that our Soueraigne Lord the King, may haue the temporall possessions and lands, which by the Bishops, Abbots, and Priors, are prouidly spent, and wasted in this Realme, which should suffice to find 15 0. Earles, and 1500. Knights, 6200. Esquires, and 100. hospitalls, more then now be, &c. But when they went about to declare out of what places those great summes were to be leuied, whereby the forsaid States should be endowed, they waxed in their account: wherefore the King commanded them, that from thencefoorth, they should not presume to vtter any such matter.

1410. A bill put vp against the Clergie to take from them their temporall possessions. T. Walsingham.

Sir Robert Vmfreuile sent against the Scots.

Sir Robert Vmfreuile Vice-admiral of England, annoyed the countries, on the sea coasts of Scotland: for comming into the Frith with ten ships of warre, and lying there 14. daies together, landing euery day on the one side of the Riuer, or on the other, taking preyes, spoyle, and prisoners notwithstanding the Duke of Albany, and the Earle Douglas, were ready there with a great power to resist him: he burnt the Cauet of Scotland, (being a ship of great account) with many other vessells lying the same time at the Blackneste ouer against Lithe. At his returne from thence, he brought with him 14. good ships, and many other great prizes of clothes, both woolen and linnen, pitch, tar, woad, meale, wheat, and rie, which being sold abroad, the markets were well holden thereby, and therefore he had giuen him the name of Robin Mend market: and shortly after his returne from the Sea, he made a roade into Scotland by land, hauing with him his Nephew, young Gilbert Vmfreuile Earle of Angus, being but 14 yeres of age, they spent at that time Jedworth, and the most part of Tiuidale.

Robin Mendmarket.

An. reg. 12. Vpon the euen of Saint Iohn Baptist, Thomas and Iohn, the Kings Sonnes, being in Cate-cheape at London, at supper, after midnight, a great debate hapned betweene their men, and men of the Court, lasting an houre, till Maior and Sheriffes, with other Citizens ceased the same.

This yere, King Henry founded a College at Batt. li-field in Shropshire, in the place where he ouercame Sir Henry Percy, and other, suppressed the second of Edward the first, valued by the yere fifty foure pounds, two shilling and two pence.

1411. Iohn Wonderguift, Knight, and William Long, kept the Seas from Pirats and Rouers, so that the passage on the Sea was quiet, but by the ill writers, they were accused of theft and robbery themselues, wherevpon the Knight tooke Sanctuary at Westminster, where he could not haue an house or cottage to hide his head, for that the same was forbidden by the King, so that he was forced to lie in a tent which he set vp in the Church-porch, and to haue men to watch him in the night season for feare of his enemy: but his fellow William remained on the Sea, vntill the Admirall had prepared ships ready, and went in person to fetch him, which he could not doe till he promised him by his fidelity, that he should haue no harme, which promise notwithstanding, William was imprisoned in the Tower of London.

The Realme of Fraunce being disquieted with the 2. factions of the Duke of Burgoyne, and the Duke of Orleance, sonne to the Duke of Orleance lately slaine (at Paris) by the procurement of the Duke of Burgondy, the Kings of Nauarre, and Arragon, the Dukes of Bitturia, and Brittaine, the Gascoyners, and Aquitaines, the Earles of Hyms and Armenake, & many other ayding the D. of Orleance therein. The Duke of Burgoyne, whom the French King, and his eldest sonne, called the gouernour of France, fauoured, seeing that the contrary part was very strong, sent Ambassadours into England, desiring the Kings ayde against the Duke of Orleance, and promised many things, amongst the which, he promised his daughter in marriage to the prince and a great summe of Gold with her. To whom the King answered: we aduertise you not to fight with your enemie in this case, who iustly seemeth to vexe you, for the death of his Father by you procured: but as much as in you lieth, endeuour your selfe to mitigate the young mans wrath, and promise to make him reasonable satisfaction according to the accuse of your friends. And if then he will not cease from persecuting you, get you into the strongest place of your dominion, and there gather such power as may be able to put off his force. If then after this he will make warre against you, you shall haue the iuster occasion to fight with him, and in such case, we will shew you such fauour, as ye haue demanded. Thus there were sent ouer to his ayd Thomas Earle of Arundell, Gilbert Vmfreuile Earle of Angusse, or Earle of Ryme, Sir Robert Vmfreuile vncle to the said Gilbert, Sir John Oldcastle, Lord of Cobham, Sir Iohn Grey, and William Porter with 12. hundred Archers, they tooke shipping at Douer, and landed at Calice, from whence they went to Arras, where they found the Duke of Burgoyne, of whom they were ioyfully receiued, and from thence he appointed them to Parowne, where he assembled a power of his owne subiects, marched toward Arras, and so to Sanguion, where he lodges his Flemings. The Duke of Orleance had thirty thousand fighting men, drawing towards him, and laid siege about one part thereof, there were many skirmishes, but finally they within the towne abandoned it, and the Flemings destroyed it. From thence the Duke went to Noelle, and it was destroyed euen as it were passing by it, from thence

they went before Roy, in Vermondois, which yeelded to them, from thence to Montdiden, &c. The Duke of Burgoyne went to Arras, from thence to Roy, from thence to Betaune, and after to Beauuais, the Earle of Arundell was with him in his aide, with 500. Englishmen, from thence hee went to Poitoise, from thence to Meulent to Paris. The Duke of Orleance was lodged at Saint Diones, and at Saint Clow, with a great power. About the tenth of November, Iohn, Duke of Burgoyne, issued out of Paris, and went to Saint Clow, where putting his people in order, the Earle of Arundell, and his people made a great assault, so that they within, were driuen to yeld to the will of the English men, wherefore they were bountifully rewarded by the Duke of Burgoyne, and then returned into England.

An. reg. 13. King Henry created his brother, Tho. Bewfort, Earle of Dorset, and his sonne, Thomas of Lancaster, that was Steward of England, and Earle of Annarele, he created D. of Clarence.

A Squire of Wales, named Rice ap Dee, which had long time rebelled against the King, was brought to London, and there drawne, hanged and quartered.

Parliament at London. New coyne of golde.

After the feast of All-Saints, a Parliament was begun at London. The King caused a new kind of Nobles to be made, which were of lesse value then the old by 4. pence in the Noble, so that 50. Nobles should weigh a pound of Troy weight.

1412. Colledge at Fodyngbey.

Edward, Duke of Yorke, this yere, began the foundation of the Colledge of Fodyngbey in Northampton-shire, for a Maister, 12. Preists, 8. Clerks, and 13. Choristers: Henry the fifth, gaue Lands thereunto of Priors aliens by him suppressed, and nought dispend yerely (as was valued at the suppression) 400. and nineteene pounds, eleuen shillings.

John Duke of Burgoyne, hauing now the gouernment, both of the French King and of his Realme, he so persecuted the Duke of Orleance and his complices, that at the last, the said Duke Charles was forced to send into England certaine persons, as his procuratours, to offer in his name vnto King Henry, and to his Sonnes, certaine conditions, which were concluded the eight day of May. The said Charles Duke of Orleance besought the King of England to send vnto him 8 thousand men to ayde him against the Duke of Burgoigne and his complices, which dayly procured the French King to make warre vpon them.

King Henry courteously entertained the messengers, and vpon consideration had of their offers, which seemed to make greatly both for his honour and profite, as Duke of Guyen, he take vppon him to succour and defend them against all men, as their Lord and Soueraigne, and so sending away the messengers, promised to send them ayde very shortly.

K. Henry nimbled a voyage into France.

Then said the King to the Arch-bishop of Canterbury, Lord Chancellor, doe you not see how the Almighty hath disposed for vs, behold now the acceptable time, let vs goe into France, to winne with small adoe, that which is our right: And surely it was thought hee would haue recouered France, at that time, if strength of body had beene answerable to his mind, but being oppressed with great sickneste, he could not endure, neither to goe nor ride, yet he commanded all those to come to him that held of him by Knights seruice, as if he had meant to goe ouer the sea, but the Lords of the Realme perswaded him to commit that iourney vnto his second sonne Thomas.

T. Otarborne

In the meane time Henry the Prince, sonne to the King, offended with certaine of his fathers family, which were said to sowe discord betwixt the Father and the Sonne, wrote vnto all the parts of the Realme, endeauouring himselfe to refell all the practises and imaginations of such detractors, and slaunderous people, and to make the matter more manifest to the world, he came to the K. his Father about the feast of Peter and Paul, with such a number of his friends and well-willers, as a greater had not beene seene in those dayes. Hee was straight-way admitted to his Fathers presence, of whom this one thing hee besought him of, that if such as had accused him might bee conuicted of vniust accusation, that they might be punished, not according to their deserts, but yet after their lies were proued against them, they might somewhat taste of that which they had meant, although not to the vttermost: to the which request the King seemed to grant, but hee told him that hee must tarry a parliament, that such might bee tried and punished by iudgement of their Peeres. Thus farre Thomas Otarborne. To the same effect (but in more ample manner) writeth the translator of Titus Liuius (who wrote an Historie of Henry the fift, and dedicated it to Henry the first) as he was informed by the Earle of Ormond, an eye-witnesse of the same, as followeth: During the sickneste of the King (saith hee) some euill disposed people laboured to make dissention betwixt the K. and the Prince his sonne, by reason whereof, and by the acts of youth which he exercised more then meanly, and for the great recourse of people vnto him, of whom his Court was at all times more abounddant than his Fathers, the King suspected that hee would presume to vsurpe the Crowne, hee being aliue, which suspicious iealousie was occasion, that he in part withdrew his affection, and singular loue from the Prince: but when the Noble Prince was aduertised of his fathers iealousie and mistrust, by some of his secret friendes of the Kings counsaile, he disguised himselfe in a gowne of blue Satten, or Damaske, wrought full of eyelet-holes, and at euery eyelet the needle wherewith it was made, hanging still by the silke: and about his arme hee ware a dogges Collar set full of S. S. of gold, and the streets of the same also of fine gold. Thus strangely apparelled, with a great company of Lords, and other Noble-men of his Court, he came to the King his Father who at that time lay at Westminster, where at his comming (by commandement of him) not one of his company

Tit. Liuius.

Hen. Prince of Wales strangely disguised weareth his owne collar.

pany aduanced himselfe further then the fire in the Hall, notwithstanding that they were greatly and oft desired to the contrary, by the Lords and great estates of the LYONS Court: and this they did not onely because the weather was colde, but because the Prince had so commanded them, to giue the lesse occasion of mistrust to the King his Father, but hee himselfe only accompanyed of the Kings Houshold, passed forth to the King his Father, to whom (after due salutation) hee desired to shew the intent of his minde in secret manner. Then the King caused himselfe to be borne in his chayze into his secret chamber (because he was diseased and might not goe) where in the presence of three or foure persons, in whom the King had most confidence, he commanded the Prince to shew the effect of his mind: Then the Prince kneeling downe before his father, said to him these words. Most redoubted Lord and Father, I am this time come to your presence, as your liegeman, and as your Sonne naturall, in all things to obey your grace as my Soueraigne Lord and Father. And whereas I vnderstand ye haue mis suspect of my behauiour against your grace, and that ye feare I would vsurpe your crowne against the pleasure of your highnesse, of my conuersation your grace knoweth that if ye were in feare of any man, of what estate soeuer he were, my duty were to the endangering of my life to punish the person, thereby to rase that feare from your heart: and then how much rather ought I to suffer death to bring your grace from the feare of that ye haue of me that am your naturall Sonne, and your liegeman. And to that intent I haue this day by confession of my sinnes and receiuing the Sacrament, prepared my selfe, and therefore most redoubted Lord and Father, I beseech you in the honour of God, for the easing of your heart, here before your knees to slay me with this dagger, and at that word with all reuerence hee deliuered to the King his dagger, saying, my Lord and Father, my life is not so deerous to mee, that I would line one day displeasure, nor I couet not so much my life as I do your pleasure and welfare, and in your thus doing, here in the presence of these Lords, and before God at the day of Iudgement, I clerely forgiue you my death. At these words of the Prince, the King taken with compassion of heart, cast from him the dagger, and imbracing the Prince, kissed him, and with effusion of teares said vnto him, My right deere and heartily beloued Sonne, it is of truth that I had you partly suspect, and as I now perceiue, vndeserued on your partie: but seeing this your humilitie and faithfulnes, I shall neither slay you, nor from henceforth haue you any more in mistrust, for any report that shall be made vnto me, and thereof I assure you vpon mine honour. Thus by his great wisedome was the wrongfull imagination of his fathers hate vtterly auoyded, & himselfe restored to the K. fauour grace and fauo.

Ouerborne. John Prendergest with thirty Skippes hee-

ping the sea, take Wines and other victualls from the French, which though it pleased the Noble men little, yet did great ease to the common people, who had all such things farre the better cheape. About the 19. of August, K. Henry by determination of the Councell, sent his second sonne Thomas Duke of Clarence, Edward Duke of Yorke, and Thomas Earle of Dorset, and many baliant men, with a strong power to helpe the Duke of Orliance, against the Duke of Burgoyne, or euer all the other were returned, which a while agoe went ouer with the Earle of Arundell to ayde the Duke of Burgoyne, so that many men marueiled at the sodden change, that in so small a time the Englishmen did ayde the two contrary parts: notwithstanding the Nobles went forward and arriued in Normandie, where when the Duke of Orleance did not waite them at the time appointed, they burnt his townes, and spoyled the country, taking many holdes: at length, though late, the Dukes of Clarence, and Orliance met & talked together, and the matter was so entreated of betweene them, that our men should desist from ranging through the country, and refraine from robbery, which when our men had granted, they departed into Aquitaine, to winter there, and the D. of Orliance went home to his country.

T. Walsingham. K. Henry gaue ayde to the Duke of Orliance, against the D. of Burgoyne.

About this time the Lord Helle Marshall of France with many other Noble men, and men of armes, to the number of 4000. besieged a certaine hold in Aquitaine, which was in the keeping of John Blunt Knight, who with 300. that ayded him put to flight the whole armie of the French men, and toke of them 12. men of name, and other gentlemen to the number of 120. amongst other the said Monsier de Helle Marshall of France was one, who was sent ouer into England, and put in the Castle of Wisbich in Cambridge shire, but escaping thence, he got ouer into France, where he serued the Duke of Orliance, at the battaile of Agincourt, and was there slaine. *Amyot. lib.*

King Henry kept his Christmas at his manor of Eltham, being so sore sicke, that sometime men thought that he had beene dead: notwithstanding it pleased God that he recouered strength a little, and as ioyfully as he could, he celebrated that feast of Christmas. 1413.

After Christmas hee called the Nobles of England to a Parliament at London, which began the morrow after Candlemasse day, but hee liued not to the end thereof, for hee dyed shortly after in a Chamber belonging to the Abbot of Westminster, called Jerusalem, whereby the prophesie was fulfilled, as hee said, that he should die there. In the time of whose languishing the King gaue to the Prince his Sonne diuers notable doctrines & ensignements, that not onely of him, but of euery Prince are to be holden and followed: among the which erudition one is this: The King lying grieuously diseased, called before him the Prince his Sonne, and said vnto him: My Sonne, I feare me soze, after my departure from this life, some discord shall grow and arise by-

Parliament at London.

K. Henry his counsell to his sonne Henry.

betweene thee and my brother Thomas Duke of Clarence, whereby the Realme may bee brought to destruction and misery, for I know you both to bee of great stomache and courage, Wherefore I feare, that he through his high minde will make some enterprize against thee, intending to vsurpe vpon thee, which I know thy stomache may not abide easily. And for dread hereof as oft as it is in my remembrance I soze repent mee, that euer I charged my selfe with the Crowne of this Realme. To these words of the King, the Prince answered thus: Right vndoubted Lord and Father, to the pleasure of God your grace shall long continue with vs, and rule vs both: but if God haue so prouided that euer I shall succeed you in this Realme, I shall honour and loue my brethren aboue all men, as long as they bee to me true, faithfull and obedient, as to their Soueraigne Lord: but if any of them fortune to conspire or rebell against me, I assure you, I shall assone execute iustice vpon one of them, as I shall vpon the worst and most simplest person within this your Realme.

The King hearing this answere, was therewith maruellously reioyced in his minde, and said: My deare and well-beloued Sonne, with this answere thou hast deliuered me of a great and ponderous agony: and I beseech thee, and vpon my blessing charge thee, that like as thou hast said, so thou minister Iustice equally, and in no wise suffer not them that bee oppressed long to call vpon thee, for iustice, but redresse oppressions, and indifferently and without delay, for no perswasion of flatterers, nor of them that bee partiall, or such as haue their hands replenished with giftes, deferre not Iustice till too morow, if that thou maiest doe Iustice this day, lest (peraduenture) God do Iustice on thee in the meane time, and take from thee thine authority: remember that the wealth of thy body, and thy soule, and of thy Realme, resteth in the execution of Iustice; and doe not thy Iustice so, that thou bee called a Tyrant, but vse thy selfe meanely betwixt Iustice and mercy in those things that belong to thee. And betweene parties doe Iustice truely and extreamely, to the consolation of thy poore Subiects that suffer iniuries, and to the punition of them that bee extortioners and doers of oppressions, that other thereby may take example: and in thus doing, thou shalt obtaine the Fauour of God, and the loue and feare of thy Subiects, and therefore also thou shalt haue thy Realme more in tranquilitie and rest, which shall be occasion of great prosperitie within thy Realme, which Englishemen naturally doe desire: for so long as they haue wealth and riches, so long shalt thou haue obeysance: and when they bee poore, then they be alwayes ready at euery motion to make insurrections, and it causeth them to rebell against their Soueraigne Lord: for the nature of them is such, rather to feare loosing of their goods and worldly substance, than the ieoparding of their liues. And if thou thus keepe them in subiection mixed with loue and feare, thou shalt haue the most peaceable and fertile Countrey, and the most louing faithfull and manly people of the world, which shall be cause of no small feare to thine aduersaries. My Sonne, when it shall please God to call me to the way decreed for euery worldly creature, to thee (as my Sonne and heyre) I must leaue my Crowne and my Realme, which I admise thee not to take rainely, and as a man elate in pride, and reioyced in worldly honour, but thinke that thou art more oppressed with charge, to purueye for euery person within the Realme, than exalted in vaine honour of the world. Thou shalt be exalted vnto the Crowne, for the wealth and conseruation of the Realme, and not for thy singular commodity and auaile: My Sonne, thou shalt be a Minister to thy Realme to keepe it in tranquillity, and defend it. Rule as the heart in the middest of the body is principall, and chiefe thing in the body, and seemeth to count and desire that thing that is most necessary to euery of thy members, so (my Sonne) thou shalt be amongst thy people as Christe, and Principall of them, to minister, imagine and acquire those things that may be most beneficiall for them. And when thy people shall be obedient to thee, to ayde and succour thee, and in all things to accomplish thy commandements, like as thy members labour, euery one of them in his office, to acquire and get that thing that thy heart desireth, and as thy heart is of no force and impotent without the ayde of thy members, so without thy people, thy raigne is nothing. My Sonne, thou shalt feare and dread God aboue all things, and thou shalt loue, honour, and worshippe him with all thy heart, thou shalt attribute and ascribe to him all things wherein thou seest thy selfe to be well fortunate, be it victorie of thine enemies, loue of thy friends, obedience of thy subiects, strength and activeness of body, honour, riches, or fruitfull generations, or any other thing, whatsoeuer it be that chanceth to thy pleasure. Thou shalt not imagine that any such thing should fortune to thee, by thine act, nor by thy desert, but thou shalt vnderstand that all commeth onely of the goodnesse of the Lord. Thus shalt thou with all thine heart, prayse, honour, and thanke God, for all his benefits that he ghostly vnto thee. And in thy selfe eschew all vaine glory, and elation of heart, following the wholesome Counsell of the Psalmist, which saith, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis, sed nomini tuo da gloriam*, which is to say, Not vnto vs, Lord, not vnto vs, but to thy holy name be giuen laud and praise. These and many other admonishments and doctrines this victorious King gaue vnto this Noble Prince, his Son, who, with effect followed the same, after the death of his father: whereby he obtained grace of our Lord, to attaine to great victories and many glorious and incredible conquests, through the helpe and succour of our Lord, whereof hee was neuer destitute. The King his Father, drawing to his end, after due thankes giuen,

and supplication made to God, gaue his benediction to the Prince his sonne, and so yalded to God his spirit, the twentieth of March, which was then violent Sunday. Anno 1412. after the account of the Church of England, the yere of his age 46. when hee had raigned thirteene yeres, fiue monethes lacking tenne dayes. His body was conueyed by water to Feuersham, and from thence by land to Canterburie, there buried by the Lady Mary his first Wife. in the Monastery of Christs Church vnder a pillar in the North Ile. This King Henry, with Thomas Arundell Archbishop of Canterbury had bene great benefactors to this Church in building a good part of the body thereof anewe: hee had Issue by Mary Daughter to Humfrey Bohune Earle of Hereford and Northampton, Henry that succeded him, Thomas Duke of Clarence, Iohn Duke of Bedford, Humfrey Duke of Glocester, Blanch Dutchesse of Bauiere, and Philip Queene of Denmarke: for by Ioane his second Wife, hee had no Issue. Issue of K. Henry.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *KING* HENRY *THE FIFT.*

HENRY the Fift borne at Monmouth, began his Raigne the twentieth day of March in the yere 1412. This Prince exceeded the meane stature of men, he was beautifull of visage, his necke long, body slender and leane, and his bones small: neuerthelesse hee was of marueilous great strength, and pasting swift in running, insomuch, that he with two other of his Lords, without hounds, bow, or other engine, would take a wilde Bucke or Doe in a large parke: hee studied at Oxford in the new Colledge, vnder the gouernment of Henry Bewfort his Vncle on the fathers side, then Chancellour of Oxford, after Bishop of Winchester: he delighted in songs, meters, and musicall instruments, insomuch that in his Chappell among st other his priuate prayers, he vsed our Lords prayer, certaine psalmes of Dauid, with diuers hymnes and canticles, all which I haue seene translated into hexameter English meeter, by Iohn Lydgate Monke of Bury. Hee liued somewhat insolently, insomuch that whileste his father liued, being accompanyed with some of his young Lords and gentlemen, he would breake in disguised array for his own receiuers to distraine them of their money: and sometimes at such enterprises both he & his company were sorely beaten: and when his receiuers came to him there complaints how they were robbed in their comming vnto him, he would geue them discharge of so much money as they had lost, and besides that they should not depart from him without great rewards for their trouble and vexation, especially they should bee rewarded that best had resisted him & his company: and of whom he had receiued the greatest and most strokes, and for example Sir Thomas Elliot willeth thus. The renowned Prince K. Henry the fift, during the life of his father, was noted to be fierce, and of wanton courage. It happened that one of his seruants, whom he fauoured, was for felony by him committed, arraigned at the Kings Bench, whereof the Prince being aduertised, and incensed by light persons about him, in furious rage came hastily to the Barre where his seruant stood as prisoner, and commanded him to be vnginued and set at libertie, whereat all men were abashed, reserued the chiefe Iustice, who humbly exhorted the Prince to be ordered according to the ancient lawes of the Realme, or if he would haue him saued from the rigor of the lawes, that he should obtaine if he might of the K. his father, his gracious pardon, whereby no law or Iustice should be derogate. With the which answere the prince nothing appeased but rather more inflamed, indeuoured himselfe to take away his seruant. The Iudge, considering the perillous example and inconuenience that might thereby ensue, with a valiant spirit and courage commanded the prince vpon his allegeance to leaue the prisoner, and to depart his way: with which commandement, the prince being set all in a fury, all chafed, and in a terrible manner came vp to the place of iudgement, men thinking that he would haue slaine the Iudge, or haue done to him some damage, but the Iudge sitting still without moouing, declaring the maiestie of the Kings place of iudgement, and with an assured bold countenance, had to the Prince these wordes following: Sir, remember your selfe, I kepe here the place of the King your soueraigne Lord and father, to whom you owe double obeysance, wherefore eftsones in his name I charge you desist off your wilfulnesse and vnlawfull enterprise, and from henceforth giue good example to those which after shall be your proper subiects: and hold for your contempt and disobe- T. Elliots gouernour. William Gascoigne was chiefe Iustice of the Kings bench from the 1st of Henry the Fourth vnto the third of Henry the Fift.

dience, go you to the prison of the Kings bench, whereupon I commit you, and remaine you there prisoner, vntill the pleasure of the King your father be further knowne. With which words, being abashed, and also wondering at the marueilous grauity of that worshipfull Iustice, the prince laying his weapon apart doing reuerence, departed, and went to the kings bench as hee was commanded, whereat his seruants disdaining, came and shewed to the King, all the whole affaire. Wherat he a while studying, after, as a man all rauished with gladnesse, holding his hands and eyes towards heauen abraid with a lowd voice: O merciful God how much am I bound to thy infinit goodnesse, especially, for that thou hast giuen me a Iudge, who feareth not to minister Iustice, and also a son, who can suffer semblably, and obey Iustice. Now (saith Thomas Elior) heere a man may behold three persons worthy memory: first, a Iudge, who being a subiect, feared not to execute iustice on the eldest Sonne of his Soueraigne Lord, and by the order of nature his successor. Also a Prince, and sonne and heyre of the king in the midst of his folly, more considered his euill example, and the Iudges conscience in iustice, than his owne estate, or wilfull appetite. Thirdly, a noble king, and wise father, who contrary to the custome of parents, reioyced to see his sonne and the heyre of his Crowne, to be for his disobedience by his subiect corrected: wherefore I conclude, that nothing is more honorable, or to be desired in a Prince or Noble man, than placability, as contrariwise, nothing is so detestable or to be feared in such a one, as wrath and cruell malignity. Thus much of his youthfulnesse, but after the decease of his father (as he that should succeed in the kingdome) he called to him a certain monk of holy conuersation, to whom he confessed himselfe of all his offences, trespasses, and insolences past, and after his counsell in all things, at that time, hee reformed his life and manners, so that after his fathers decease, was neuer no youth, or wildnesse that might haue place in him, but all his acts were suddenly changed into gravity and discretion.

To this noble P. (by assent of the Parliament) all the estates of the Realme, after three dates, offered to do fealty before he was crowned, or had solemnized his oath, well & iustly to gouerne the common weale, which offer, before was neuer found to be made to any P. of Eng.

The King gaue them all generall thankes, for their good mindes towards him, and therewith exhorted them to the zeale of the publike prosperity and honour of the Realme. If any man had offended him, he pardoned their trespalle, and desired heartily of God, that he should rule, and doe all things well, to the honour of God, and the prosperous commodity of the Realme, that then God would suffer him to be crowned but if his fortune should be to doe otherwise, that then God should take him to his mercy, and suffer him rather to be buryed, than to interprise the charge of the Realme.

The ninth day of Aprill, he was crowned at Westminster, by Thomas Arundell, Archbishoppe of Canterbury, after which Coronation, hee called vnto him all those young Lords, and Gentlemen, that were the followers of his young acts, to euery one of whom he gaue rich and bounteous gifts, and then commanded that as many as would change their manners as he intended to doe, should abide with him in his Court, and to all that would performe their former light conuersation, hee gaue expresse commandment, vpon paine of their heads, neuer after that day to come in his presence.

Hauing auoyded these young and suspicious company from his presence, hee then attended to ghostly and worldly businesse. And first, hee commanded to edifie his royall mannor, that then was called Shene (and now Richmount) hee also founded two Monasteries vpon the Thames (not far from the said mannor royall) the one of the religion of the Carthusiens, which he named Bethlem: the other of religious men and women, of S. Brigets order, and that hee named Sion. In this house, there were 60. Sisters, 3. priests, 4. Deacons, & 8. lay brethren, those neuer wore linnen, but woollen, which two conents had but one Church in common, the Nuns had their church aloft in the roofe, and the brethren beneath vpon the ground, each conent seuerally incloled, and after their profession, might neuer come out, except by the Popes speciall licence: these ought to haue sufficient dowrie to sustain them without begging, he indowed them with rents and reuennues taken from the priores aliens, which he suppressed. Richmond, Shene and Sion built. T. Walsingham.

Hee, by the best aduisement hee could, prouided, and ordained in euery part of his Realme, Iudges, and other officers, such as hee beleeued to be true and iust, and others that were known or suspect of couetousnesse, or partiality, hee cleerely auoyded from their former offices, and roomes. He also (as King Henry his father had done) vsed for cuil come euery day, when no feaste was kept, at after dinner, to haue a cushion laid on the cupboord, and there to leane the space of an houre or more, to receiue Bills, and heare complaints of whomsoeuer would come, and in those daies, if the King sate in the chamber, the steward of the houshold sate alway in the hall, vnder the cloth of estate, the same being rolled vp aboue his head, and such Knights sitting with him, as at that time waited on the King.

He also caused the corps of King Richard the second to be taken from the earth, whom King Henry the fourth had intumulated in the friers Church of Langley, and with due obseruance, to be from thence translated to the Abbey of Westminster, where, after solemne exequies for him done, hee was buryed in Saint Peters Church, in the said Abbey, on the south side of Saint Edwards Shrine, by Queene Anne his wife, as he himselfe in his life had desired, and had prepared his Monument in the 18 yeere of his raigne, B. and Godfrey of Woodstreete goldsmithes, made the Moulds and Images of King Richard and Queene Anne layd on them, the charges of gilding of them, exceeded 400. markes, King Henry founded perpetually one The body of Richard the second taken vp and buried. T. Clifford.

day euery worke, a memorie to be celebrate for the said King Richard, and vpon each day fiue thillings eight pence, to be giuen to the poore people, and once euery yere vpon the day of his anniuerse 20. P. in pence to be dealt to the poore.

About this time Thomas Duke of Clarence, the Kings brother, came from the Coasts of Aquitaine, who (as we said before) was sent to ayde the D. of Orliance against the Duke of Burgoine.

Part of Norwich with the Friers there burned.

A great part of the Citie of Norwich was brent sodainly with fire, with all the house of the Friers Preachers and all to them belonging, and also two feries of that house.

T. Elsham.

Upon Trinitie sunday, the solemne srequies for King Henry the fourth were celebrated at Canterbury, King Henry his sonne being present at the same.

Tho. Wal.

The same time the fauourers of Wiclifes doctrine, did naile vp scrodules vpon the church doores of London, which scrodules contained that there was an hundred thousand men ready to rise against all such as could not alway wish their lest, for meed (saith Wallingham) they trussed to the force, power, and wit of a certain knight called Iohn Old-Castle, of Cowling in Kent, who for the honour of a marriage which he had contracted with a kinswoman of a Noble-man, the Lord Cobham, obtained the name of the said Lordship, or seignorie of Cobham: this Iohn was a strong man, and a meetely good man of warre, but he was a most peruerse enemie to the state of the Church at that time. In a synod therfore being holden at London, the said Sir Iohn Old-Castle for diuers points touching the sacrament, before the archbishop of Canterbury, the bishops of London, Winchester and other, was conuict, and committed to the tower of London, out of the which he brake ouer the walls in the night, and escaped about the feast of Simon and Iude.

1414. Conspiracie gainst the K.

The K. keeping his Christmas at his manor of Eltham (seuen miles from London) was warned that certain had conspired against him, either to haue taken or sodainly slaine him and his brethren on Twelfth day at night, whereupon the King sent word to the Maior of London, that hee should arest all suspitious persons: the Maior therefore called euery Alderman in his warde to keepe great watch, and about ten of the clocke at night went himselfe with a strong power, to the signe of the Are without Wilhops-gate, where they apprehended the man of the house called Iohn Burgate carpenter and seuen other, one of them being an Esquire belonging to Sir Iohn Old-castle, and sent them to Eltham, where they confessed before the King that they were confederate with Sir Iohn Old-castle, to fight against him and his Lords in S. Giles field about Holborne. On the morrow after the twelfth day, the K. remoued priuily to Westminster, and because he had heard tell that the rude peoples intent was, if they did preuaile, first to destroy the monasteries of Westminster, Saint Albons, and Saint Pauls, and all the houses of friers in London: he minding to preuent such a mischiefe

K. Henry kept the field by S. Giles without Holborne.

contrary to the minds of all that were about him, went into the field when it was little past midnight, with a great armie, for he was warned that Sir Iohn Old-Castle, and Sir Roger Acton, would in be the same field on the next day following with 25000. people: and the same night were taken more then fourescore men in armor of the same faction, for many that came from far, not knowing the Kings campe to be in the field, were taken by the same and sent to prison, and being demanded whom they sought, made answere the Lord Cobham. The rumour of this, comming to the eares of the captaines that were the Kings enemies, they were wonderfully discouraged, and that the more, because none came to them out of London, from whence they looked for many thousands, whereuppon they fled to saue themselues, and the Kings men following them take some, and slew others, but where their captaine was become would not be knowe, notwithstanding that the King by Proclamation promised to whomsoeuer could bring him forth, a thousand markes besides liberties to the Cities and Townes that would discloze him: but there was not one found that would detect him, so greatly was he fauoured. Also the K. being told of an ambushment gathered in Harengay parke, sent thither certaine Lords, who take many, among whom, was one William Murle, a rich mault-man, or brewer of Dunstaple, who had his two horses trapped with gold following him, and a paire of gilt spurs in his bosome, for hee thought to haue beene made Knight on the morrow by the hands of Sir Iohn Old-castle. The 12. of January, 69. of them were condemned of treason at Westminster, and on the morrow after 37. of them were drawne from the Tower of London to Newgate, and so to Saint Giles, and there in a place called Fickets field, were all hanged, and seauen of them brent, gallowes and all. The 17. of January, were drawne and hanged Sir Iohn Beuerley Preest, Iohn Burgate carpenter, a text-writer in Saint Iohns stræte and a glouer on London-bridge, and shortly after, Sir Roger Acton knight was taken, who on the tenth of Februarie, was drawne, hanged, and buried vnder the gallowes.

Many men hanged and some brent in Fickets field.

The twentieth of February deceased Thomas Arundell Arch-bishoppe of Canterbury. Henry Chicheley borne at Higham Ferries in Northampton-shire succeeded, being translated from Saint Dauids in Wales.

The King taking compassion vpon Henry Percie a young man (who by his grand-father Henry Percie Earle of Northumberland, was carried into Scotland, after the death of his father, who was slaine in the battell of Shrewsbury, when this young man was then but a child) commanded them that were of his kinred, and neere ffrien.s, to solicite for his reclaiming home againe out of Scotland, minding not onely to honour him by calling him home againe, but also to make him Earle of Northumberland.

T. Elsham. K. Henry builded at Kenelworth.

King Henry kept his Lent in the Castle of Kenel-

kenelworth, and caused an harber there to be planted in the marish, for his pleasure, amongst the thornes and bushes: where a fore had harbored, which fore he killed, being a thing then thought to prognosticate, that he should expell the craftie deceit of the French King, before which also hee there builded a most pleasant place, and caused it to bee termed Le pleisant maries or the pleasant marsh. King Henry the eight bestowed great cost in repairing Kenelworth Castle, caused the said banketting house to be taken downe, and part of it to be set vp in the base Court at Killing-worth. In this Lent season, whilest the K. lay at Kenelworth, messengers came to him from the Dolphin of France named Charles, with a present of Paris balles, for him to play withall, but the K. wrote to him, that he should shortly send to him London balles, with the which he would break downe the roses of houses.

Tit. Liuius. Roger Wall. *An. reg.* 2.

King Henry, after that all dissentions and commotions in England, Ireland, Scotland and Wales were appeased, so that concord and vnity were made and established in all parts of the Kings dominion, the King deliberated vpon the recouery of the Realme of France, which by iust title of inheritance was descended vnto him, and at that time was iniuriously withholden from him by the French K. And because hee would nothing proceede against the pleasure of God, he first demaunded aduice and counsel of all the discreet and learned men as well of the spiritualitie in both Vniuersities, as of the temporalitie through all his Realme, if he wought without offence to God lawfully recouer by Armes his Realme of France. Who after long deliberation thereupon among them had, of one assent, made report vnto the King, that in so iust a quarrell he wought lawfully vse armes, if he might by none other wayes attaine his purpose, and right of inheritance: whereupon the King, in all things insuing the aduice of his Counsell, sent Ambassadors into France, there to demand his right in the Councell of the French, & if peraduenture they would deny to accomplish his desire, his Ambassadors should giue them knowledge that hee would seeke his right by armes. These Ambassadors were honourably received in France, and for answere of their message there denounced, they brought with them nothing to report, except that within short time, the French-men would send their Ambassadors into England, to declare their intent to the K. of England vpon his demand.

Shortly after arrived in England William Bouratier Arch-bishop of Bourges, the Earle of Wandosme, Perce Frennall bishop of Liesur the Lords Iuery, and of Braquimount, Walter Cole Secretary to the French King, Ambassadors of France, these were men of great authority: amongst them the Arch-bishop was the chiefe, who in like manner were here receiued with great honour. At a time limited, the Arch-bishop of Bourges proposed their message, and in the end, offered to the K. lands, and a great summe of money with the daughter of

Answere the 25th. Bourges.

the King their master in marriage, so that hee would desist from that warre that hee then intended to make in France. After which proposition and offer made, the Ambassadors dined with the King: and at another day limited, the King of England, by the mouth of the Arch-bishop of Canterbury made to them answere, to this effect: The proffers made, he said, were not sufficient recompence for the Kings rightfull inheritance in France, vniustly detained from him, wherefore for a finall answere, he would demand his right by force of armes in the best manner that he could, and that as briefly as to him were possible. Then the Arch-Bishop of Bourges, after licence obtained, said O King, with reuerence be it spoken, thinkest thou vniustly to depose the most Christian King of France? Thinkest thou that hee hath offered to thee these lands and money, with his owne daughter to wed thy wife, for any dread hee hath of thee? nay not so, but the same our Lord, indued with pitie, as the louer of peace, hath made to thee this offer, to the intent, that innocent blood be not spilt and destroyed: and therefore by the ayde of God, hee shall at all times defend himselfe, his lands, and subiects, from thy vniust inuasions. And as to vs that be his Ambassadors, wee desire thee, to make to vs safe conduct without damage through thy Realme, and also that thou write to our soueraigne Lord, this thine answere entirely vnder thy seale, and signe manuell: which request the King granted vnto them, and they returne into France.

In the moneth of May a Parliament was begun at Leicester, in the beginning whereof, there was a porter of the Tower of London, drawen, hanged, and headed, whose head was sent to London, and set ouer the Tower gate, for consenting to one that brake out of the Tower, named Whitlocke.

Parliament at Leicester. Porter of the Tower executed.

In this Parliament Iohn the Kings brother was made Duke of Bedford, Humfrey his brother Duke of Glocester, and Richard brother to the Duke of Yorke was made Earle of Cambridge. The priories aliens in England were giuen to the King, all their possessions to remaine to the King and to his heyres for euer, except land granted to the College of Fotheringhay, & after all priories were suppressed to the number of more then one hundred houses, Gold waights were appointed.

Priories suppressed to the number of 100.

In this Parliament were deuised diuers meanes to gather money of all the Commons of England, therewith to sustaine the Kings warres, and to make prouision of all things necessarie for the same, the summe whereof, leuied and gathered of the spiritualtie and temporalitie amounted to the summe of 300. thousand markes English. And hereuppon order was taken to gather a great host of men throughout all the Kings Dominions.

On Mary Magdalens day, in London, Iohn Nianser Esquire, with nine of his men, set vpon and slue Iohn Tibbey clarke, Archi-deacon of Huntington, and Chancellor to Q. Ioane late wife to Henry the fourth, for the which fact, the

The Q. Dowager of Naile.

said

saide Esquire, and foure of his men fled to S. Annes Church within Aldersgate, where they were moued by with dread, and watched day and night till the 21. of August, on the which day they sodeine the land, and passed through the City towards Calice in their shirts & breches, each of them hauing a Crosse in his hand, and a purse about his necke, &c.

Our Ambassadours the Bishops of Durham and Norwich, returning now the second time out of France, declared to the King, that the French-men did but vse fraud and deceits, wherefore the King being stirred vp into anger, and also knowing well the discord betwixt the great Lords of France, whereof hath somewhat béene said before, determined to abate their leasings, and to teach them to vnderstand their folly in awaking of a sleeping dog: and forthwith the King commanded all the Prelates and Nobles of the Realme, to come to London, there to intreate of waighty affaires concerning the Realme. at the which time, the Arch-bishop of Canterbury helde a great councell, in the which were chosen certaine of the Clergy of England, to go to the generall Councell that should be holden at Constance, a City of Germany, and so there were sent the Bishops of Salisbury, Bathe, and Hereford, and with them the Abbot of Westminster, and the Prior of Worcester, and many other wise men, in company of the E. of Warwicke, whose presence did them much honour.

1415. Three schismaticall Popes put downe.

Ann. reg. 3.

In that Councell was put downe three schismaticall Popes, to wit, Balthasar Cossa late Pope, Iohn 23. of that name: Peter de Luna, called Clement the 13. and Ægelus Corraris, called Greg. the 12. which being done, one Otho Colombe a Noble Romane borne, was elected to the Papacie, and was named Martin the fift.

In the meane space the King like a prudent Prince thought good to take order for the resisting of the Scots, if according to their old manner, they should attempt any thing in his absence, and therefore hee appointed the Earle of Westmerland, and the Lord Scrope, the Baron Greystocke, Sir Robert Vmfreuile, and diuers other baliant Captaines to kéepe the frontiers and marches of Scotland: which Sir Robert Vmfreuile of the day of Mary Magdalen, fought with the Scots at the towne of Gedering, hauing in his company onely 300. Archers, and 140. men of armes, where after a long conflict hee slew of his enemies 60. and od, and tooke 360. prisoners, and put to flight 1000. and moe, whom he followed in chase aboue 12. miles, and so laden with preyes and prisoners, returned to the Castle of Rockesborough, whereof he was then Captaine. When the King had gathered his Nauie together, appointed his Archers, and men of armes, prepared his engines, and all things necessary for the warres, he leaning behind him for gouernment of the Realme, the Quéene his mother in law, he commaunded all that should goe with him, to be ready against the feast of S. Iohn Baptist, and to meet him at Hampton.

The eighteenth day of June, King Henry with many Lords and others rode from London towards South-hampton, the Maior, Aldermen, and crafts of the City accompanying him on his way to the Towne of Kingston vpon Thames: whilest the King lay at South-hampton, where he abode for his retinue, and stuffe belonging to the warres, fastings, prayers vnto God, and almes déedes of the King, and other supplications of the clergie and commons had before, hée mustered his vniuersall hoste vpon the sea bankes. In the which muster or view, on the last of July was discouered a great and perilous conspiracie against him by three Lords, in whom of all the rest, hee put greatest trust and confidence, the chiefest of them was Henry Scrope, Lord Treasurer: the second Richard Earle of Cambridge, brother to Edward Duke of Yorke, and Sir Thomas Gray, a Knight of the North, these had made Edmond Earle of March to sweare vpon a Booke, not to disclose their counsell, and then told him that they thought to slay the King, and to make the said Edmond King, the which if he refused to take vpon him, they would slay him: whereupon, the Earle prayed them to giue him one houres space to take aduisement what was best to doe, which being granted, the Earle went secretly and told the King thereof, who caused them forthwith to be apprehended, and brought before him, where they confessed the treason, for the which on the first of August they were arraigned in the Kings presence, and the same day all three beheaded. The Earle was buried head and all, but the other heads were sent, the one to Yorke, the other to Newcastle vpon Tine, and there set vp. It is to bee noted, that whatsoeuer hath béene reported of the confession of the Earle of Cambridge, certaine it is that hee was indighted by the name of Richard Earle of Cambridge of Conesburghe in the County of Yorke Knight, and with him Thomas Gray of Heton in the County of Northumberland Knight, for that they the twentieth day of July in the third yéere of King Henry the fift, at Southampton, and diuers other places within the Realme had conspired together, with a power of men to them associate, without the Kings licence to haue led away the Lord Edmond Earle of March into Wales, and then to haue procured him to take vpon him the gouernement of the Realme, in case that King Richard the second were dead: and herewith had purposed to set forth a Proclamation there in Wales, in the name of the said E. of March, as heyre of the Crowne against King Henry, by the name of Henry of Lancaster the vsurper, to the end that by such meanes they might, draw the more number of the Kings Liedge people vnto the said Earle. And further to haue conueyed a banner of the Armes of England, and a certaine crowne of Spaine set vpon a pallet, and laid in gage to the said Earle of Cambridge, by the K. together with the said E. of March into the parts of Wales aforesaid. And further that the said Earle of Cambridge, and Sir Thomas Gray had appointed certaine of the Kings liege people to repaire

Tit. Liuius.

Conspiracie discouered.

Indictement of the Earle of Cambridge.

paire into Scotland, and to bring from thence, one Tho. Trumpington, also another resembling in shape, fauour and countenance K. Richard, and Henry Percie, together with a great multitude of people to fight with the K. and him to destroy in open field: besides this, that they had meant to win certaine Castles in Wales, and to kéepe them against the King, and many other treasons they had contriued, as by the inditement was specified, to the end they mought destroy the King and his brethren the Dukes of Bedford, and of Glocester, and other the great Lords and Péers of the Realm. And Henry Scrope of Waltham of Flaxlot, in the County of Yorke, was likewise inuited, as consenting to the premises, so that it appeareth their purpose was well enough then perceiued, although happily not much bruited abroad, for considerations thought necessary to haue it kept husht.

Roger Wall. Tit. Liuius.

King Henry hauing assembled his hoste at Southhampton, as is aforesaid, to the intent to passe the seas, for conueyance of whom, and of his victuals and artillery, were prouided and brought thither for his wages out of Holland and Zealand, shippes, hulkes, and other vessels to such a number, that his whole Nauie at his departing from the land amounted to sixtéene hundred sailes.

K. Henry saileth into Normandy.

On the thirteenth of August the King tooke shipping, and entred the Sea, and on the rising at night arriued at Redicaur in Normandie, which is betwixt Harefleete, and Honfleete, of whose comming, all the Cities, and States of those parts being aduertised, were stricken with great feare. The King, the Dukes of Clarence and of Glocester his Brethren, the Duke of Yorke his vncle, the Earles, Barons, Knights, gentlemen, and Souldiers, cast their Ankers there, and tooke land without any resistance, and the King forthwith falling to the ground vpon his knees deuoutly prayed to God that to his honor he would giue him iustice of his enemies. He had at his landing in his hoste fiue thousand speares, and 24. thousand footemen, besides gunners, and other engineers, artificers, and labourers, of whom the King had great abundance.

Tit. Liuius.

The King gaue to diuers gentlemen the order of Knighthood, and assigned the bearing of his Standards and banners to such men, as he knew to be of great strength and policie. All things being set in good order and array, the King with all his hoste ascended to the top of an high hill there nigh, and there hée rested the next day.

On the 16. day of August, the Duke of Clarence, leader of the forward in good ordinance entred his iourney toward a Towne called Harefleete, distant from Redicaur scarcely three leagues, where he lodged his hoste in a field before the Towne. The King at his comming, lodged himselfe nigh to the first ward, not far from the Towne in a plaine field. The Earle of Suffolke, Michaell at Poole, chiefetaine of the rereward, lodged on the other side before the Towne. Other Noblemen that had the conduct of the two wings, lodged them, one on the right hand, the other on the left hand of the whole hoste. Then the King commanded to be proclaimed through the hoste, that vpon paine of death, all Churches should be kept inuiolate, vnspoyled and vnharmed, that no man should presume to take any vessell or ornament whatsoeuer from the Church, that they should not hurt any man of the Church whom they found without armour, nor any woman or childe, and then forthwith were sent to the townemen of armes in great number, to see the setting thereof, who shortly returned with a great prey of Cattell, and informed the King all his demands.

Proclamation in the K. hoste.

Herfleete is the key of the Sea of all Normandie, and is situated vpon the Seaside, by the riuer Seine, betwixt two hils, and through the middle thereof runneth a Riuer, which not farre from the same Towne entreth into the Séene, and from thence, both those Riuers in one entered into the Sea. Whereas a great and goodly Hauen is, belonging to the same town, which hauen is garnished with the defence of two faire and strong towers: and in the same Hauen at right great Nauie of ships may ride in safety: and if the inhabitants of this towne in close and kepe within the Towne the course of the foresaid River by their sluces, as they may right well doe, then the River riseth without the Towne so high, that it forceloseth all entries to the wals, so that no man may approach the towne on that part. This Towne is also defended with high and thick walls and Towers, and is also enuironed with broad and déepe ditches. To this towne also belongeth only two gates for entries, the one called Caltaurances, the other Hostellier. In this towne, besides the inhabitants thereof, for the defence of the same, were some hundred men of armes deputed in garison, amongst whom were these Lords, Lord Dieuteuille, chiefe Captaine of the Towne, Lord Bianuile, Lord Hequeuile, Lord Harmanuile, Lord Bancourt, Lord Gaillard Bos, and diuers other Lords and men expert in Warre. These Lords caused their people to breake downe the causeway betwixt Hostrentiers and Herefleete, to impaire and hinder the Englishmens passage. Neuertheleste the Englishmen at their comming, by the good conduct of their King, were not so sore oppressed, by breaking of the causeway, but that they came so nigh as to lay their siege before the towne. When the King and all his hoste was come before the towne, all his tents and pauilions were set in the plaine fielde, wherewith that part of the towne was intirely inclosed: he also caused his great hall to be set vpon an hill, at the backe of his hoste, to serue as a Church, there to honor and serue God. This done the King commanding the Duke of Clarence to assiege the towne, he endeuored to conuey his people ouer the riuer, in the village where of he had a great skirmish with the inhabitants of the towne, but at the last his aduersaries being put to flight, recoiled within the walles. The D. conueyed ouer the River all his

Description of Herefleete.

Engynement.

his ward and company, and because the River diuided the Kings campe from the Dukes, they ordained a ready and sure passage ouer the same riuer, betwixt both the Camps, to the keeping whereof, certaine Gentlemen were appointed, so that their enemies might not endomage them neither by water nor land.

Enguerant. In this meane time befell a great misaduenture to the French men, that were besieged, for the gun-powder and shot that was sent vnto them by the French king, was incountred vpon the sea by the English-men, and taken to their great displeasure and damage.

Tit. Liuius. The King gaue the charge of the field to his Brother Humfrey Duke of Glocester. On the same side and riuer that the King lay, was the Duke of Yorke, high Constable of England lodged with his band. When euery man was placed, the Towne was so straitly alleged, that all entries and issues of the Towne were stopped, so that they of the Towne were in despaire to haue any succour from the Realme of France. Many engins were raised by the English, which in short time should haue beene the destruction of the wals, if they of the towne had not the sooner stopped the riuer of the same Towne within, whereby the water gathered and raised without the towne betwixt the King and the Duke of Clarence, to the semblance of a little sea, which caused the Englishmen to withdraw their gunes; and other engins, whereby at that time the wals were rased. Then the King caused to be made vnder the water three great mines vnto the wals of the towne, which in like manner had beene the cause of their ruine, if the inhabitants had not countermined them, and letted their purpose.

Tit. Liuius. The inhabitants of the town perceiuing themselues thus foresighte assaged, as well by land as by sea, conuersed all their ships within their hauen, and bound them together with chaines and in the two towers that were made for the defence of the hauen, they put certaine garrisons and armed men, who oftentimes attempted to inuade the Kings nauy, but at all times they were by his ships beaten, and constrained to retire still within their Hauen: at the last, the Captaines and inhabitants considering that by such skirmishes (as well vpon the land as vppon the Sea) they gained nothing, tooke this appointment with the King, that if they were not refeued by the French men within certaine dayes limited, they should then deliuer into his hands the Towne, with thirty persons of the greatest and most noble within the towne, such as the King would desire, to be order'd at the Kings pleasure; and all the residue, as well men of warre, as the inhabitants of the same Towne, without armour, and leauing behind them their goods, should freely goe where they would, for the surety of which appointment to be kept, they deliuered vnto the King twelue of their greatest personages for pledges. The Captaines and inhabitants of the Towne seing their day of appointment to approch, and themselues vtterly desperate of any succours of their people, ordained to performe their couenant at their day prefixed, which was the xvii. of September, on which day came Sir Lionell Braquemount, Gouernour of the towne, vnto the King, and kneeling before him, said: Most victorious Prince, behold here the Keyes of this Towne, which after our promise I yeld vnto you, with the Towne, my selfe and my company. Then were brought to the king, the Lord Corcuile, the Lord Gangcourt and other to the number of 30. al the rest of the as well soldiers, as inhabitats, were suffered vnarmed to depart. When the gates of the towne were opened, and that the king approched vnto them, in purpose to enter Harlowne, he descended from his horse with out the gate, and from thence, without hosen or shoes in great deuotion, he went immediately to the Church of Saint Martine, Metropolitane of that towne, and there he made his prayers, and praised God his creator, for his good fortune: then he commanded to be brought before him, all those Lords and gentlemen that were yelded to him for prisoners, whose names he caused to be put in writing, and vpon their othes to yeld themselues prisoners at Calice vpon Saint Martins day next following, and so they were deliuered out of the town of Harflew, at the which day according to their appointment, they came to Calice, where they were receiued as prisoners, and after raunsomed at great finances. After the deliuery of this Towne, the foresaid two Towers that defended the hauen, and resisted the Kings power ten dayes space, at the end whereof, because they were in despaire of succour, yelded them to the King, and all the soldiers and inhabitants both of the Towne and Towers, were suffered to goe freely vnarmed, whither they would. The king constituted Captaine of the Towne Sir Thomas Beauford E. of Dorset his vncle, to whom he also committed two thousand Soldiers, chosen men of his hoste. Then considering that winter drew on, as also the losse of their men by reason of the fire then raigning amongst them, by which infirmity died Michael la Poole, Earle of Suffolke, the Bishop of Norwich, the Lord Beawmont, and others, and of the commons to the number of two thousand and aboue. King Henry created the son of Michael at Poole, E. of Suffolke, who liued not long after.

Tit. Liuius. After King Henry had remained at Harflete fiftéene dayes, after the deliuery of the Towne, and of the Towers, he departed from thence towards Calice, wherof, when his enemies were aduertised, and also by what way her intended to passe, all the people of the countrey, Cities, and Townes were marueilously oppressed with feare, wherefore they fained them to dee nobile places, and other that were apt to warre, tooke them to their hostes, and assembled them together in great number, with no smal company of footemen, and in all that they might they oppressed the English.

The Kings hoste kept an easie pace, without making any hast, and when they approched

ched the Towne Eine, their enemies assailed them in the fields with great force and noyse, where on both parties it was foughten fore and bigorously: but the French-men reculed to the Towne, where they were in good sorety. From thence the King departed, and came to a passage of the riuer of Some, which the French-men call Blankebelloke, or Blanchtache. This passage, at the comming vnto it, was fired with sharpe stakes by their enemies, so that they could not passe there, but were constrained to goe further, seeking their passage, vntill they came directly to haue the City of Amiens, and the Castle of Gozby on their left side, where they of the said City began with them a new fight: but they were some forced by the English to returne to their Citie againe. The nineteenth of October the King passed the riuer of Some, at the passage of Vienna, and Bethew court, and went then to lodge him at Pouch-legach, from whence he aduanced him towards the River of Piraumont. In the meane time, the French King and the Duke of Guyen his sonne, then Dolphin, purposing to resist the English-men, came to Roane, from whence, they sent three Herraults to the King of England, to giue vnderstanding that he should not escape without battaile: vnto whom the King answered, All things be done at the pleasure of GOD, I will keepe the right way towards Calais: if our aduersaries doe attempt to disturbe vs in our iourney, wee thinke they shall not doe it without their owne great danger and perill. From thence King Henry remoued to a village called Forceuile, aduancing his hoste towards the River of Piramont, and the next day they passed by the Cheue, and the King lodged that night at Bonyers-leschallon. The next day the King remoued vnto Bangy. The next day late in the night the King came to a village named Agencourt, Enguerant saith Maisenicelles, where they lodged distant from the French hoste not aboue two hundred and fiftie spaces. The French-men fired their banners and standerts with the banner royall, whereof the Constable had the conduct in the field by them deuised and chosen, which was in the country of Saint Paul, in the ground of Agincourt, by which the day following, the Englishmen should passe to goe to Calais.

The battell of Agencourt. Tit. Linham.

The 25. of October, after prayers and supplications of the King, his Priests and people, done with great deuotion, the King of England in the morning very early set forth his hoste in array: he commanded that his Horses and other carriages should bee left in the village where hee had lodged. The order of his field was thus: The middle battell where of the K. was conducte, was set in the midst of the field, directly against the middle battell of his aduersaries. On the right side was the first Battell, and therewith the right wing: and on the left side of the last Battell, and the left wing. And these Battels ioyning nigh together, by the prouidence of God, prouided vnto this King a defensible place for his host, for the village wherein hee was lodged before, defended his hoste from all inuasions on the backe, and the field wherein hee was, was defended on both sides with two small riuers.

This Noble King was armed with sure and right beautifull armour: on his head a bright helmet, whereupon was set a Crowne of gold repleate with pearle and precious stones, marueilous rich: In his shield he bare the armes both of England and France. And thus armed, hee was mounted vpon a goodly great horse, and after him were led certaine noble horses, with their bridle and trappers of Goldsmithes worke, and vpon them also were beaten the armes of England and of France. Thus this victorious King prepared to battaile, encouraged his people to the field that approched at hand.

The night before this cruell Battell, by the aduice and councell (as it is said) of the Duke of Yorke, the King had giuen commandement through his host, that euery man should pursuey him a stake sharpe at both ends, which the English-men fired in the ground before them in the field, to defend them from the oppression of horsemen. The French-men had such confidence in great multitude of their people, and in their great horses, that many of their great Princes and Lords leauing behind them their souldiers, standerts and other ensignes, came towards the Englishmen in right great haste, as if they had beene assured of victorie.

The King of England forthwith aduanced his banners and standerts towards the French host, and he in person with his battaile in the same order wherein hee stood, followed, exhorting and encouraging euery man to Battell, notwithstanding he went to inuade his enemies, yet kept his accustomed order, that is, that the first battell went before, the second battell followed, and the third came immediately after. Hee commanded his Priests to abide in prayers, and diuine supplications, and his heraults in their cotes of armes to attend to their offices. Then euery man fell prostrate to the ground, and committed themselues to God, euery of them take in his mouth a little peece of earth, in remembrance that they were mortall, and made of earth, as also in remembrance of the holy Communion. Thus all their cariages and baggages left behind, onely charged with their harneys, weapons, and stakes, they marched toward their enemies, with great ioyit and noyse. They sounded their trumpets, and stroke vp their drums, which greatly incouraged the hearts of euery man. Their enemies seing them approach, aduanced themselues also, and met them in the fielde, betwixt whom was begunne a maruelous fierce and cruell Battell. The Battell of the English-men was as long as the fielde wherein they fought, which was greatly to their aduantage, for by that their enemies were letted to come vpon them at

the sides and backe of the hoste. The Frenchmen had ordained their battels with two sharp fronts, like unto two bowes, which allwayes backeward was broader and broader: their sharpe Battels set upon the English middle ward, intending to have rome through the whole fielde, but the French-men were slaine and wounded by the English Archers, and by the helpe of the stakes, which the English men had fixed before them in the ground, whereby the horsemen were constrained to returne, or else to runne upon the stakes, where many of them were overthrowne and wounded, and many both horses and men slaine. The Battell and fight increased marvellously, by the space of three houres, in all which time no man was taken Prisoner, but an innumerable number were slaine, upon whose dead bodies they that followed were throwne and slaine.

Thus after a long and cruell battell, by the demerits of their great pride there approched no man of the French to battell, but to death, of whom after that an innumerable company were slaine, and that the victory surely remained to the English men, they spared to slay, and take prisoners of the French, both Princes and Gentlemen in great number. In this mortall battell, the Noble King of England never failed his men, for no danger of death, but fought with his enemies with an ardent heart, as a fauntlesse Lyon for his pray, receiving on his helmet and on the residue of his armour, many and great strokes.

In this field, as the puissant Prince Humfrey Duke of Glocester the Kings brother, fought with great courage and force, hee was sore wounded in the bonnches with a swoode, and overthrowne, insomuch, as he lay as halfe dead in the fielde, his head toward the Englishmen, and his feete towards his enemies: upon whom the King having a brotherly compassion, bestrode him, and with most strong battell and labour, not without his owne great perill, like a brother he defended, and succoured his brother from the enemies, and made the Duke to be borne out of the field amongst his owne men.

At the last, the victory obtained, and the great hoste of the French-men overcome, slaine, wounded, taken and vanquished, forthwith an other hoste of Frenchmen no lesse than the first, supposing the English-men to be wearied by their long travell and fight, dispoled them to beginne againe the battell anew. When the English-men (which had many moe prisoners than they were of themselves in number) saw this new field assembled to give them battell againe, fearing in this new fielde, lest they should fight both against their prisoners, and their other enemies, they put to death many of their said prisoners, both noble and rich men, among whom the Duke of Brabant, who at that field was taken prisoner, was one.

Tit. Livius. The prudent K. of England seeing the resemble of his adversaries sent his heraults unto them, commanding them, either forthwith to come to battell, or else immediately to depart the fielde, and if they delayde to depart, or to come to battell, both those of their company already taken prisoners, and also all they that should thereafter bee taken, without mercie or redemption should be put to death: which message when the French-men heard, fearing the strength of the English-men, and also the death, both of themselves, and also of their friends before taken prisoners, with great heaviesse, and with shame, they forthwith departed. Then the King of England being assured of the victorie, gave the greatest laud and prayse to God that might bee.

In this battell were slaine on the French part, the Noble Dukes of Alanson, of Bar, and Bauere, and the Lord Hely, the Lord Labret chiefe Constable of France, the Arch-bishop of Saunce, eight Earles, an hundred & one Barrons, 15. hundred knights, and above 10. thousand of all estates, whereof scarcely fifteene hundred were soulders or labourers, the rest were of coates armour (saith Enguerant:) but Thomas Emham saith, Archbishops, one, Dukes, three, Earles five, Barons, and such like, fourescore and twelve, Knights, fifteene hundred, of Esquires and Gentlemen, seven thousand, whereof hee nameth the Arch-bishop of Saunce, the Dukes of Barbant, Alanson, and of Bauere, the Earle of Nuers, Dampmartin, Marlenes, Grantper, Saunis, and of Dankemontense, the Lord of Bret, Constable of France. Frenchmen slaine.

T. Elmham.

In this battell were taken prisoners of the French-men, the Dukes of Orleance, and of Burbon Arthur Brother to the Duke of Brittaine, the Earles of Vandosme, of Ewe, and Richmount, and Sir Bomcicault Marshall of France, and many other to the number of 1500. Knights and Esquires: And of the English partie were slaine Edward Duke of Yorke, buried at Fodringhey, Michael de la Poole Earle of Suffolke, buried at new Elme, and to the number of an hundred persons in the vantgard, and of all estates in the English partie were not found dead above five hundred in the field. When night approached, the King of England returned with his hoste into the village, wherein they had harboured the night before, wherehe found his horses, and other baggages and carriages that he left behind him there before the field, to bee stollen and carried away by the Frenchmen: where amongst many other Jewels of great price, was stollen away a sword of great value, adorned with gold and pretious stones, which was after given to Philip Earle of Charlops sonne and heyre to John Duke of Brittaine. Frenchmen taken prisoners.

King Henry having gathered his army together, gave thankes to Almightie God for his so happy a victory, causing his Preists, and Chaplaines to sing the Psalme, *In Exitu Israel de Aegypto*, and commanding every man to kneele downe on the ground at this verse, *Non nobis Domine, non nobis, sed nomini tuo da gloriam.*

which

which done, he caused *Te Deum*, with certaine Anthems to be sung, giving laud and praise to God, not boasting of his owne force or any humane power. This night when the K. sate at his refection in the aforesaid village, hee was served at his bord, of three great Lords and Princes that were taken in the field. That night the King appointed good and sure watches throughout his hoste, for feare of sodaine invasions, but the French-men were utterly divided and gone without making or intending any new businesse, whereby the English men were suffered in peace to take their rest.

On the next day the King with his people entred his journey toward Calice: and as they passed through the fields, where they had fought the day before, they found all the dead bodies dispoyled, as well of their harneise, as of their array, by the inhabitants of the countrey, notwithstanding the bodies that might bee knowne for English-men of any reputation, the King caused to be interred according to their estates, and so continuing his journey, the King came to the Castle of Guines, and from thence he went to his Towne of Calice, with all his hoste and his prisoners, where he was received of his liege men, with great joy and due honour. After the Kings hoste was somewhat refreshed with meate, drinke, and sleepe, the King conferred with his wise counsellers, if it were good now to returne into France, and to pursue his enterprise begun, or els to returne with his hoste into England, there to refresh his people, among whom it was considered that the number of his people was right small, and many of them hurt with the flire, many sore grieved of their wounds which they had received at the field. Moreover, that their long staying at Calcis should cause scarcity of victuals there, whereas otherwise in their owne country the people should at more ease refresh themselves, and also be better cured of their wounds: finally, considering the time had not bene hitherto unfortunate, but that with honor they might returne with great game, which they had conquered, they doubted not, but by the ayde of God, the K. should right well obtaine his desire in time to come, for which causes they all condiscended upon their returne into England.

Then with all diligence the Navie was prepared, and by the Kings commandement, the Lords and great estates of the prisoners of France unto a great number, were brought into that ship, wherein the King was determined to passe the Sea. At this their passage the Sea was marvellously boysterous and rough, insomuch as two of the English shippes were perished in the floods, by reason whereof the French prisoners were so incombred and hurt, that the day of their passage seemed to them no lesse bitter and terrible, than that day wherin they were taken at Agincourt, nay they could not marvell enough, how the King should have so great strengthes, so easily to resist and induce the rage and boysterousnesse of the Sea, without accombrance and disease of his Navie. When the King had passed the Sea, and was come to arrive and to take land at Dower, innumerable people of religion, priests, and Noblemen, and of the Commons came running to mete the King in every way: and when hee was arrived on the 27. day of November, hee above at Dower by certaine dayes, to refresh and rest his Lordes, and his prisoners, after his troublesome passage and from thence he tooke his journey to ride the Citie of London, whereto the Maior of London, with the Aldermen and crafts, to the number of 4. hundred riding in red, with hundred and white, met with the King on the Blacke heath comming from Eltham, and so brought him through London to Westminster, with all his prisoners of France. Arrived at Dower.

The gates and streetes of the Citie were garnished and apparrelled with pretious clothes of Arras, containing the victories, triumphs and princely Acts of the Kings of England his progenitors, which was done to the end that the King might understand, what remembrance his people would to their posterity of these his great victories and triumphes. The Conduits through the City ranne none other but good sweete wines, and that abundantly. There were also made in the streetes many Towers and stages, adorned richly, and upon the height of them sate small children, apparelled in semblance of Angels, with sweete toned voyces singing prayses, and laudes unto God: for the victorious King would not suffer any Ditties to bee made and sung of his victory, for that hee would wholly have the praise given to God: neither would he suffer to be carried before him, nor shewed unto the people his helmet, wherupon his Crowne of gold was broke, and depoyed in the fielde by the violence of the enemie, and great strokes that hee had received, nor his other armour that in that cruell battaile was so sore broken, but as the faithfull constant Champion of God, hee eschewed all occasions of vaine glory, and refused the vaine praises of the people. On the next morrow, the Maior, Aldermen, and 200. of the commoners, presented the King with a 1000. l. in two basons of gold, worth 500. pound.

The first day of December, by the Kings commandement, a great number of the Bishops and Abbots of the Realme, were assembled at London, there to celebrate and keep the exequies for Edward late Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Suffolke, and of other both English and French, which died in parts beyond the sea: unto these solemnities came from Harflew, the Captaine of the same Towne, the kings uncle C. of Dorset, who a little before had made a roade into the borders of the Countrey next adioyning, and had put them to slight, and taken prisoners 800.

This yere the King kept his Christmas at Lambeth. 1416.

In the feast of the Purification, seven Dolphins of the sea came up the river of Thamis,

and playde there whiles foure of them were hilde.

Halfe-pence of Jenua forbidden.

In a Parliament begun the 15. of March at Westminst. the halfe-pence of Jamua (commonly called Gallow halfe-pence) were forbid to be vsed as lawfull payment among the English people.

In the late warres in France betwéen King Henry the fift of England, and Charles the 7. of France: The French armie being in diuerse, one Captaine La-Hire a French-man was sent to declare vnto the said French-King the estate and affaires of the warre, and how for want of victuals, money, and other necessaries, the French had lost diuers Townes and battailes to the English. The French King being dispased to vse this Captaine familiarly shewed him such thinges as himselfe was delighted in, as his Buildings, his Banquets, faire Ladies, &c. and then asked the Captaine how he liked them: Truste me Sir, quoth the Captaine, speaking his minde freely, I did neuer know any Prince that more delighted himselfe with his losses then you doe with yours.

A carelesse King.

An. reg. 4. The first of May, Sigismond the Emperor landed at Doner, and the seuenth of May, the Maior, Aldermen, and crafts of London receiued him at Black-heath, and the King with his Lords met him at Saint Thomas Waterings, and so brought him through London to Westminster. The Emperour returned out of England the xvi. of August, after hee had laboured but could make no peace betwéne England and France.

Tho. Wal. Rodman beheaded.

John Bence Wol-man, who had in London scattered Scedules full of sedition, was drawne, hanged, and beheaded on Michaelmas day. The viii. day of October, was a Parchmentmaker of Trill-mell stréete, drawne, hanged, and headed, for that he had harboured Sir Iohn Old-castle.

King Henry of England, immediately after his returne from Caleis, sent his Legates to Constance, where was kept the generall councell, as yée haue heard, which with all other Legates, the Emperour being there present, laboured for the vnity and peace of their Mother the Church, and to reforme the Schisme that had long continued of the Popes, which councell tooke effect in this manner. The first deposed all the Popes, by whom the schisme was continued, and they with the Cardinals elected into the Papacie, the Cardinall of Colompne, borne in Rome, and was named Martin the fift, whose armes were a pillar of siluer crowned with gold, in a fielde gules. At this councell, by the assent of all nations there present, it was authorized, and ordained, that England should obtaine the name of a nation, and should be said one of the fiue nations, that owe their deuotion to the Church of Rome, which thing vntill that time, men of other nations, for enuy, had detained and letted.

The King-dome of England one of the fiue nations. *T. Elmham.*

In the Parliament at London, Thomas Bewfort Earle of Dorset was made Duke of Exeter, and had 1000. l. the peare giuen him.

King Henry kept his Christmasse at Kenelworth, at which time there was treason wrought against him, by a certaine Esquire of the complices of Sir Iohn Oldcastle. 1417.

The morrow after Christmas day, certaine seditious persons spread abroad purposed his raysing against all estates of the Church, almost in euery great house, and hospitall of the Townes of Saint Albans, Northampton, Reading, &c. but no man would be knowne to be the author of them: also one by his counterfeit name, called Fryer Tucke, with many other malefactors, committed many robberies in the countreys of Surrey and Sussex, whereupon the King sent out his writs for their apprehension. Record fryer Tucke.

On Easter-day in the afternoone, at a Sermon in Saint Dunstons in the East of London, a great fray hapned in the Church, whereby though many people were soze wounded, and one Thomas Perwarden Fish-monger, slaine out of hand, wherefore the Church was suspended, and the beginners of the fray (which was the Lord Strange, and Sir Iohn Tussell Knight, through the quarrell of their 2. wiues) were brought to the Counter in the Poultrie: the Archbishoppe of Canterbury caused them to be excommunicate, as well at Pauls Crosse, as in all other Parish-Churches of the Citie. Therri. of Aptill, the said Arch-bishop sate at S. Magnus, to enquire of the authors of that disorder, where he found the fault to be in the Lord Strange and his wife, who vpon the first Lord of May following, in Pauls Church before the Arch-bishop, the Maior of London, and other, submitted themselues to penance, which was iniopned them, that immediately all their seruants should in their shirts goe before the Parson of S. Dunstons, from Pauls to Saint Dunstons Church, and the Lord bare-headed, with his Ladie bare-foted, Reignold Kenwood Arch deacon of London following them, and at the hallowing of the Church, the Ladie should fill all the bellelles with water, and also offer an ornament of tenne pound, and the Lord Strange should offer a pire of fiue pound. *An. reg.* 5. A fray in S. Dunst. Church. Records of Cant. The Lord Strange and his wife doe pennance.

Carle Douglas of Scotland came into England, and promised amitie to the King, the which he assured by oath and writing sealed, yet notwithstanding hee after turned to the French, at the Battaile of Vernol in Perch, fought by the Duke of Bedford as shall bee shewed.

King Henry prepared his nauie, ordinance, and victuall for his people, and generally all other things behouefull for the warres, he assembled through England such men, as well Dukes, Earles, Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, and commons as he knew were good both for warre and peace: which being done, vpon Saint Markes day the Euangelist, hee tooke his iourney towardes Hampton, in purpose, when the wind and sea were fauourable, to goe into France: he rode through London, till he came at Paules, where he alighted and made Titus Liuius.

made his offering, and in like manner hee offered at Saint Georges in South-warke, and in all his way hee gaue the farewell to euery man, praying them all to pray to God for him.

In this meane time the French men, made couenant with the Citizens of Geane (a Citie in Italy) whereby the Italians were bound, at a certaine price for euery Caricke lented for the French-mens money, to prepare and furnish with armed men, as many of their greatest Carickes as the French should desire, and so prepared they should send them to the ayde of the French-men, against the English-men; many of there Carickes thus prepared, were of marueilous greatnesse, yea greater then euer were seene in those parts before that time, they sayled into the mouth of the Seine, where they strongly alleged Heresiarke by Water, whereof when the King of England was aduertised, he deliuered to goe into them in his owne person, to remoue them from this siege, but from that purpose hee was letted, by the aduise of his counsaile, wherefore he gaue that iourney to the right puissant Iohn, Earle of Huntington, who entred the Nauie, departed from the land, and had such fauourable winde, that in short time he was brought vnto the enemies, who assailed each other by great vigor and strength. Their Ships were grapled and fought together, the more part of a Sommers day, but at the length the Italians oppressed by the strength of the English-men, were vterly discomfited and ouercome, their greatest Carickes, and also the greater part of their men were taken, the residue of the Genowaies seeing their fellowes slaine or taken, were stricken with feare, and their chaines or cables broken, or brewed asunder, they departed their Carickes from the English ships, and escaped by helps of the wind and streame. This victorie obtained, the Noble Earle returned to Hampton, whereof when the King was aduertised, he gaue laud and praising for this victorie vnto God: and for the fauor he inhanced the Earle his Nephewe with honour, and also with rewards, hee had fought with nine Carickes and taken foure of them with their Patrons, and the Admirall of them all that was called the Bastard of Bourbon, with all the treasure that they all should haue béene waged with for a quarter of a yere.

The xviii. day of July the puissant King Henry (his Nauie of 1500. ships being prepared) assembled his armie to passe the Seas, of his owne company and purueyance 16400. armed men, and besides that number came to him to Douer, Lords and Gentlemen with their retinues, and the day and place for the same prefixed: first the D. of Clarence with 240. speares, and 720. Archers in his retinue: and the Duke of Glocester with 100. speares, and 300. Archers, and Sir Carles with 4. hundred and 70. speares, and 1410. Archers, to wit, the Earle of Marche 100. speares, and 300 Archers, the Earle of Warwicke 100. speares, 300. Archers, the Earle of Huntington 40. speares, and 120. Archers, the Earle of Suffolke 30. speares, and 90. Archers, and the Earle of Salisbury 100. speares, and 300. Archers, and after these Earles followed 13. estates of the Realme, with 506. speares, and 1590. Archers, that is to say, the Lord Burgoumy, the Lord Matrauers, the Lord Fitz-Hughe, the Lord Clifford, the Lord Gray, the Lord Willoughby, the Lord Talbot, the Lord E. Courtney, the Lord Boureher, the Lord Rosse, the Lord Loue, the Lord Ferrers of Chartley, the Lord Harrington.

After came 87. Knights, and their retinue, 940. speares, and 2852. Archers. Of Carpenters and other artificers the K. had with him in wages to the number of a 1000. and so the Kings whole hoste besides labourers and Artificers amounted to the number of 25527. fighting men, of whom euery fourth man was a horseman. Those things thus ordered, and the Nauy for their conueyance ready apparelled, the King entred his ship, which was royally and sumptuously adorned: the sale thereof was of purple silke, right beautifully embroydered, both with the armes of England and of France, and this ship they called the Kings chamber. He had also another the second, a Caricke of like apparell, which by the Kings commandement they called the Kings Hall, and these two he ordered to be the principall of all the Nauy. Before he departed the Realme, he constituted Iohn Duke of Bedford his brother, to be protector of his Realme of England in his absence.

On the first day of August, the whole fléete arriued in Normandie, not farre from the Castle of Touque, where the King dubbed fortie eight Knights, such as were worthy of that order. Now; when all the ships were discharged of their carriages, the K. sent them againe into England, except such ships as were deputed for the carriage of guns, and other engins and habiliments of warre.

This being done, the King sent men of armes on horse-backe to spie the situation & strength of the Castle of Honflew, and other nigh vnto those parts, which Gentlemen with warie prisoners returned, and great preyes of beasts. Their enemies stricken with feare, euery man conueyed their goods and beastes into the Cities, Townes, and Castles, not knowing which the King would first besiege: they strengthened their Townes and Walles with stones, guns, and other things necessary for their defence. The King toke his enterprise to assiege the Towne of Touque, whose Castle was marueilously defensible, the assiege whereof was giuen to the Duke of Glocester, chiefetaine of the Kings auant guard, who constrained the French-men so soze, what with assaults, with gunnes and other engines, that within short time, to wit, the fourth day of the fréate, and the ninth day of August, they yeomsed to yéeld the Castle to the Duke, if the same were not shortly relieued by the French: but when they heard no word of succour, they yéelded the Castle to the King, and he made Sir

Castle of Touque taken by the English.

John Kikeley Captaine there.

Caſtle of Dumbelliers ſeized to the Engliſh.

Alſo the Earle of Salisbury conductor of the Kings ſecond battell whiles the Duke of Gloceſter, aſſieged the Caſtle of Conque, wanne the Caſtle of Dumbelliers, and put out the Frenchmen thereof, which Caſtle ſo taken, with all that belonged thereunto, the King gaue to the ſame Earle. And thus this Noble Earle was the firſt that had any land giuen vnto him of the KINGS liberalitie in this Conqueſt.

K. Henry beſerged Caen.

The Earle Marſhall was ſent to the Caſtle of Louers, which in thoſt time he ſubdued, and after it was giuen to him be the King.

The eighteenth day of Auguſt, the King placed himſelfe with his Army before the Citie of Caen, on the South ſide neere vnto the Monaſtery of Saint Stephen, and the Duke of Clarence the Kings brother was ſent before with one thouſand horſemen to ſcape the ſuburbes of the Towne, that the Townſmen ſhould not burne them, the Duke thus lodged on the North ſide, by the Monaſtery of Nuns of the holy trinitie: the Earle Marſhall lay on the left hand of the King, and the Lord Maltrauers hard by him, and by him were placed the Lords Talbot and Vrſtreule: and next to them the Lords Neuill and Willoughby. On the right hand of the King lay the Earle of Warwicke and the Lord John Grey, and by them the Earles of Huntington and of Salwbury, and the Lord Gren-Cornewall.

The Kings Armie thus placed and ſet in order: the Abbey of Saint Stephen being manned with Frenchmen, when they ſaw themſelues too weake to reſiſt the Kings force, they tooke and carried away both victuailes and Jewelles of the houſe, and brought them into the Towne next adioyning, and deuiſed how they might ſet the Abbey on fire: but a certaine Monke of the place boldly put himſelfe in jeopardy in the dead ſeaſon of the night, to creep on handes and feet till he came to the D. of Clarence, whom he found lying in compleate harneſſe, in a garden vpon the graſſe, with his head vpon a ſtone, whom he beſought to preuent the ruine of his place, which elſe ſhould be deſtroyed. For, ſaid he, it doth ſpecially pertaine to you to preſerue our Monaſtery, which are deſcended of the K. which founded our place, builded it, and indued it with poſſeſſions, wherefore take mine aduiſe and I will bring you into the place, and the Duke following the Monks counſell, take ſcaling ladders, and came to the ſide of the Abbey, which the Monke knew was not manned. The Duke hauing by this meanes gotten the place, brought the King into it. Not farre diſtant from this place was another monaſtery of women, right ſtrong and defenſible, which alſo that worthy Duke had receiued vnder his tuition.

The fourth day of September at the breake of the day, the King cauſed all his trumpets to be ſounded, and forthwith the ladders were raiſed to the walles of the Towne, they fell to ſcaling them with great diligence, but many of them were caſt backe-wardes into the Ditch, their ladders with them: the French caſt great ſtones vpon the Engliſhmen, they powred on their heads ſcalding water, molten lead, boyling pitch, and oyle, all which could not make the Engliſhmen forſake the aſſault, amongſt whom Edmond Springes lately made Knight, in his armour went vpon the walles of Caen, and fought very ſore, bothgiuing and receiuing many wounds, and yet at length was ouercome and yeld. Notwithſtanding the Kings men ceaſed not to aſſault and ſet vpon the enemies ſo fiercely, on that one ſide, that they that were on the other ſide the Towne to keepe and defend the ſame, were forced to leaue their ſtanding, and to come to that ſide that the King aſſaulted. And thus when that ſide of the Towne was voyd of defence, the Duke of Clarence, in the place which was thoughtmoſt ſafe, ſcaled the walles and came vpon the backes of the Frenchmen, which ſo ſodainly aſtonied them, that they knew not whether it were better to goe on forward againſt the King, or to turne backe to withſtand the Duke.

Caen in Normandy ſwon by K. Henry.

Thus great deſtruction and ſlaughter was made of the Frenchmen, for the King meeting them in their forward, and the Duke of Clarence comming on the Rereward, tooke all hope of ſafegard from them, and thus the King gotte the Towne, and entered the ſame by the gates, that the Duke had opened for him. After which entry of the King, he went with great deuotion to the principall Church of the Towne being of Saint Peter, there to giue laudings and prayſes to the Almighty God, for the obtaining of this ſo great a victorie. All they that intended to prayſes were maruelouſly inriched, for the inhabitants of that Towne were men of great ſubſtance: but there was no man ſo hardie that durſt preſume to robbe any Church, for feare of the Kings Iuſtice which was extreame in that caſe, no women in the Towne were rauiſhed by the Engliſhmen, but ſhortly after the King commaunded all women and children to be auoyded out of the Towne, and ſo the Towne was inhabited of new poſſeſſors. The King made Sir Gilbert Vmtreuile Earle of Ayme, captaine there and Sir Gilbert Talbot, and Sir Iohn Popham Bayliffes. Neuer theleſſe the Caſtle of Caen was not yet gotten, they held it three weekes after the taking of the Towne. After the taking of this Towne of Caen, the ſiege yet enduring before the Caſtle, the Puiſſant Prince the Duke of Glocester, with his battell before Bayeux, they of the Towne and caſtle yelded vnto him.

The 20. day of September the Caſtle of Caen was deliuered vp to King Henry: and in thoſt time the Engliſhmen had taken the citie of Liceux, and the caſtle of Pewbr: and not long after all the fortifications, were it Town, Caſtle, or City, within a great circuit about them, were taken and reduced to the Kings obeyſance.

Thomas Walſingham.

Whileſt theſe things were in doing in Normandie, the fauourers of Sir John Old-caſtle began

begunne to rage in England, who with great proffers and promiſe of money, ſtirred vp the Scots to inuade the Realme in the Kinges abſence, affirming that the ſame would be eaſily wonne, and it was ſayd that Sir Iohn Old-caſtle talked with William Dowglas the Scot at Pontfract, promiſing him a great ſumme of money, to perſwade the people to come with him, and to bring with them, him, who was falſely called King Richard, and to ſet him out as King. Alſo indentures, and other writings were found, made betwixt Sir Iohn Old-caſtle and the Duke of Albany, in the which the Scots were inuited to beſiege Rorbrough and Berwike: whereupon the duke of Albany beſieged Berwike by water and land on each ſide: and the Earle Dowglas did alſo beſieg Rorbrough tarrying there 15. dayes, vnderminting to ouerthrow the walles, but it happned at the ſame time Thomas Beauford duke of Exceſter, came to Biddington vpon deuotion to that place, who ſtraight wayes aſſoone as he heard tidings thereof, went into thoſe parts, gathering by the way as he went men of armes and Archers. On the other ſide Iohn Duke of Bedford protector of the Realme, and other Nobles, to wit, Ralph Earle of Weſtmerland, and Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, with 6000. warriers, the Arch-biſhoppe of Yorke Henry Bewer, which for great age might not indure to ride vpon an horſe, cauſed himſelfe to be brought to the Engliſh hoſte in his chaire, there to comfort and encourage the hearts of the people, that there ſhould more ardently defend their Countrey, his Clearge being there with him, and other, remoued thoſe ſieges: for the Scots in the night leauing their tents, ladders, and other engins, with ſhame returned in Scotland.

T. Otterborne.

The Scots beſieged Berwike & Rorbrough.

When theſe things were in good ſuretie toward the North, the Duke of Exceſter with a choſen company of men of warre, tooke his ships, and ſayled into Normandie, where he landed, and tooke his iourney towards Roane to the Kings, in the which iourney, hee wan the City of Gyſors.

The Lantus

King Henry hauing deputed in all his townes and forces, Captaines and gouernours, into whoſe hands all the French men that ſhould returne into the Kings obeyſance, ſhould giue their othes of true allegiance. The firſt of October he departed from Caen with his people, leauing behinde him a ſufficient garriſon, and tooke his iourney to the Caſtle of Courſey which on the third day after was yelded vnto him. The 6. of October he went to aſſiege Argentine, which towne was very defenſible and ſtrong with a Caſtle of great ſtrength, but the inhabitants of this towne anſwered the Kings Heraulds, that if they were not ſuccoured by the Frenchmen by a certaine day limited, they would deliuer both the Towne and Caſtle vnto the King vnder condition, to depart with their goods: and when the time limited was come, the Towne and Caſtle were deliuered. After this, daily reſorted to the King much people of Normandie, to do fealty vnto him, and to liue vnder his Empyre. The city of Sees which was right well peopled, and wherein were two Abbots marueilous ſtrong and defenſible, yeelded vnto the King: likewiſe many other Townes in that Prouince yeelded them vnto the K. without aſſault or battell. Theſe things thus done, the King take his voyage toward Alanſon, to recouer into his dominion the Towne of Semule, in which iourney hee ſent a great part of his hoſt to 2. ſtrong Abbeis, whereof the one was called Bonnitunne, and the other Effey, which, if they had made reſtrance, hee commanded to bee taken by force, but they ſubmitted themſelues to the Kings authoritie. The King came to Alanſon on the 15. of October, where he firſt cauſed his brother Humfrey Duke of Glocester to pitch his tents before the Caſtle, & the reſt of the towne himſelfe aſſieged. This Towne and Caſtle was likewiſe yelded to the King in manner as the reſt. The Engliſh men after this tok the Towne of Boloine, and the Towne and Caſtle of Freſney: and ſhortly to recount, all the countrey by a great circuit, cities, townes and caſtles were brought vnder the Kings ſubiection. I this time, the Duke of Britteine accompanied with many great eſtates of his countrey, came to K. Henry, with whom he accorded a peace from the 17. day of October, vntill the laſt day of September, in the yere following. The Dolphine of France alſo deſired to treat with the King of England for peace, to whoſe Ambaſſadors the King appointed the Towne of Conque, whereunto they might ſafely reſort for the ſame treaty, but there was no good done.

The King beſieged Phalbeys, which the French, to their power reſiſted right manfully, and made with them many battailes, and ſkirmiſhes: but in the end the inhabitants, ſeeing the Engliſhmen more coueious of honour then weary of paine, made couenants with the King. That if by the ſecond day of January they were not holpen or reſcued from the ſiege, they ſhould freely deliuer into the King their Towne. In this meane time was taken in England Sir Iohn Old-caſtle, in the territories of the Lord Powes, not without danger and hurt of ſome that tooke him: neither could hee himſelfe be taken before he was wounded. At the which Parliament time all the eſtates of the Realme were called to a Parliament at London, there to prouide the K. of a ſubſidie and aide of money, who tooke great paines beyond the Seas. Theſe Lords and other when they heard tell that the publike exchequer was taken, they agreed all, not to diſſolue the Parliament vntill he were examined, and heard to anſwere in the ſame: wherefore the Lord of Powes was ſent to fetch him vp with power, who brought him to London in a litter, wounded, and alſo a Clearke with him that was of counſell in all his ſecrets. As ſoone as the ſaid Sir Iohn Old-caſtle was brought into the Parliament before the Duke of Bedford, Regent & gouernour of the realme, and the other eſtates, his inditement was read before him, of his facible inſurrection againſt

T. Walſingham.

Sir Iohn Old-caſtle taken.

at London.

the King in Saint Giles fielde, and other treasons by him committed, the question was asked how he would excuse himselfe, and shew why hee should not be deemed to die: but he seeking other talke, began to preach of the mercies of God, and that all mortall men that would bee followers of God, ought to preferre mercie aboue iudgement, and that vengeance pertained only to the Lord, and ought not to be practised by them that worthily God, but to be left to God alone: with many other words to detract the time, vntill the chiefe Iustice admonished the Regent not to suffer him to spend the time so vainely, in molesting of the nobles of the Realme: whereupon the Earle of Bedford Regent commanded him to answere formally vnto the matter laid to his charge. The said Sir Iohn being thus urged, at the last after deliberation taken, he said, it is the leaſt thing that I account of, to be iudged by you, as of mans iudgement: and againe, he began not to talke, but nothing to the purpose, vntill the chiefe Iustice commanded him againe to answere finally, and to informe them if he could, Answere of Sir Iohn Oldcastle. why he should not suffer death. To the which he stoutly answered, that he had no Iudge amongst them, so long as his liege Lord King Richard was aliue, no in the Realme of Scotland, which answere when he had made, because there needed no further witnesse, hee was commanded to be drawne and hanged vpon a gallowes, and to be burned, hanging vpon the same, which iudgement was executed vpon him on the xiiii. day of December in S. Giles field, where when many honourable persons were present, the last words that he spake, was to Sir Thomas Erpingham, admiring him, that if he saw him rise from death to life againe, the third day, he would procure that his sect might be in peace and quiet: he was hanged by the necke in a chaine of iron, and after consumed with fire.

1418. King Henry kept his feaſt of the Nativitie of Christ at Vaiaur in Normandy, where when the day limited was come, they of Pharois, with gates open deliuered the Towne to the King, and shortly after the Castle was yelded to him also.

The D. of Clarence with his armed power conquered in this time the Townes and castles of Harecourt, Fagnon, Mewit, Caumpise, Coneton and diuers other, and also the strong Abbey of Bikilroun, all which places, the mightie Duke, with assieges, assaults, oppressions, and large promises, especially obserued, in short time hee subdued, to the Kings Empire.

The Duke of Glocester was sent to the Ile of Constantine, in the first entry of which ouney, he obtained the strong Castle of Cauey, from whence he went to the Towne and Castle of Aire, the inhabitants whereof yelded them with all their goods, to liue vnder the Kings obedience: the Castle of Mouney yelded to the Duke: the Towne of Lew, the Castle of S. Sauiour le Vicount, Valeiges, Breckcourt, & Mhy: all these submitted them to the Duke for the King.

King Henry during this time, sent of his owne company the Earle of Huntington to suruey certaine defensible places, which in short time he manfully reduced vnder the Kings obeysances. The King sent also the Earle of Warwike with another company of men of warre, to assiege the Castle of Donfront, which Castle vnto him was deliuered on the 22. day of June.

When the Duke of Glocester (after he had done with the King) had repised his iourney towards Sharbrough, the Captaine of the same hauing knowledge of his purpose, and other Noblemen that were deputed by the French-men, for the defence of that place, assembled out of all parts the strongest men of warre, in marueilous great number, for the resistance of the Englishmen, and for the defence of the Towne: the Duke approached nigh vnto the Towne, but ere vnto he laid his siege, but not in all places, for the inhabitants had broken the bridge without the Towne, whereby the Englishmen were depriued of their passage ouer.

Now to returne to the King, who had persevered the whole Lent, and also the solemnitie of Easter in prayers, fastings, vigils, almes-deedes, and other workes of mercy, within the towne of Vaiaur: from whence after Easter he went to Caue, where he solemnized the feaſt of Saint George, at which feaſt he made 15. Knights of the Bathe, fiue of them were Sir Lewes Robsart, Sir Roger Saluine, Sir Iohn Stewart, Sir Iohn Shotebroke, and Sir Iohn Montgomery, whom he sent to beliege diuers places thereabouts. This being done, hee deliuered to go to Roane, the chiefe and principall Citie of Normandie, notwithstanding that his company was greatly minished by the absence of the Duke of Glocester, that then lay at Sharbrough, as is afore shewed, and of the E. of Warwicke that then besieged the castle of Donfront. Neuertheleſſe the King departed from Caue the ninth of June, and take his voyage withall his people towards the citie of Roan: in which iourney, because it was not farre out of his way, he first laid siege to the Towne of Louars, and compelled them within to yeld to him vpon conditions, on the eucn of S. Iohn Baptist.

Then the King on the 22. of June, remoued his armie towards Pontlarche, where he laid his siege on the other side of the Towne, by the middle whereof, the riuer of Seine hath his course, but could haue no passage ouer thether to lay siege on the other side; for the bridge which was without the Towne was defended with a strong Tower and a garrison: but King Henry commanded to make boats of wickers, and those to bee closed in hralls skinnes, by which boates on the 31. of July, the Duke of Clarence with his company passed ouer secretly in great number, and then besieged the other side of the Towne: but because the riuer of Seine diuided his hoste, whereby if either part should haue need of other, they could not come together for the River, the King caused to bee made so many small square boates of the wicker aforesaid, that being tyed together, and cast into the riuer, hee made of them a bridge. When the inhabitants and garrisons perceiued themselues thus enuironed in all parts, they agreed with the K. that if within fiftene dayes they were not deliuered from this siege, they should deliuer to the King the Towne and Castle, and when the day was come, they performed promise: and this was the first bridge ouer the riuer of Seine that the King subdued to his power.

K. Henry besieged Roane.

After the King had thus obtained that bridge ouer the River of Seine, and that there was none other riuer or flood might let his iourney, with all the haſt hee might, hee entred his iourney towars Roane. The Citizens hearing the approch of their enemies, and fearing leſt they should be lodged in the suburbs, which were much larger then the Citie was within the walles, and was also much replenished with Monasteries, Churches, and Towers, burned the same, and made all euen with the ground. To this Citie on the 30. day of July this victorious King approched, against whom came the Citizens with their garisons and men of warre, where the more part of all that day they continued in battell, and fought sore on both parts, but the French-men were faced to seeke their succour within the walles of the Citie, whom in their recoile the King pursued still before the Citie, where he ordered his siege in this manner. First, the King with a Noble company of young and hardie menne lodged himselfe before the gate of S. Hilarie. The Duke of Clarence with his power was lodged before the gate of Caulx. The Duke of Excester, after he was come to the King, was lodged with his people before the gate of the Castle, called Beauuice. Earle Marshall was lodged before the gate called Martenuile. The Earle of Warwicke, after he was come from the castle of Donfrount, was lodged vpon the hill, where the strong Monastery of S. Katherine was. The Earles of Salisbury and Huntington, were lodged there vpon the other side of the riuer of Seine: vpon whom their enemies made many assaults: and because the riuer of Seine diuided the English hoste in two parts, the King caused to bee made a strong bridge of timber ouer the same riuer, that when need should require, they might haue free passage on foote and horse: and because their enemies should not approach vnto it, with their Ships or gallies, the King caused to be made a great chaine to be drawne ouer the riuer, betwixt the Citie and the bridge. At that time the King of Portugale cousin to the King of England, sent a Nauie of ships well manned vnto the Kings aid, whom the King commanded to lie betwixt the City and the Sea, to enclose the Citie from all succours by Water. The Towne of Caudebecke fearing the danger of the time, couenanted with the King of England, that when the Citty of Roane were taken and deliuered into the Kings obeysance, they in like manner would yeld them to him, without any assault, and vnder the same appointment accoyed with the King, fourteene other defensible Towns and Castles that were nigh borderers vnto Roane. After many cruell battels and assaults, the Cittizens fearing at length to be famished, daily put out of the Citie a great number of poore people and other, but the hunger increasing, they were forced to eat their Horses, Dogges, Cats, Rats, and Mise: and when such and other like thinges were consumed and eaten, then the plague of famine entred the Citie, so that the people for default of reliefe died, that the liuing might scarcely bury the dead, whereby that Noble Citie was brought into so much misery, that it was not lesse marueil than pittifull to heare.

In this meane time during this Siege of Roane, the Duke of Excester besieged the City of Cherops: also about the fourthy of August King Henry had three marueilous victories in Normandie. The first was that 300. Englishmen tooke three great Lodes at a place called Billebuse, and put to flight 1800. persons besides. The second was 400. of his enemies entred within the suburbes of the Towne of Cheresens, and 11. Englishmen chased them away and tooke twelue of them, and slew twelue, and tooke fortie of their horses. The third was, the enemies would indeed haue taken the Towne which was called Louers, but the Captaine of the same with an hundred of our men went out against 1500. of them, and ouercame them, and take 180. Gentlemen of the enemies. About this time also Captaine de la Bouche take the Towne of Pontoyse by Paris.

When the Citizens of Roane, perceiued themselues maruelously afflicted by famine, (as is before shewed) and also to bee in despaire of succour, from the French-men, now after halfe a yeres siege and more, vpon certaine conditions, they deliuered to the King of England their Citie, Castle, Tower, Abbeyes, Churches, Houses, Citizens, Captaines, Garrisons, and generally all things that were within the Citie, whatsoeuer they were. The xix. day of January, there had dyed within this Citie (as was said) for default of victuals during this siege, more than thirty thousand people. This Noble King the rather to relieue this oppressed Citie, ordained the same to be the chiefe chamber of all Normandie, and ordained his Exchequer, his Treasurie, and his coinage to be kept in the same; he also edified a strong Tower behinde the Castle. Whilest the King ordered his businesse at Roane, he sent diuers Lords with strong puissance of people, to receiue the Castles and Townes bordering vpon Roane, amongst whom the Duke of Clarence in short time reduced to the King, the mighty Castle of Galiard, the Towne of Vernon, the Towne of Maunt, the Castle of Bandoncunt, and many other strong places and holds.

The Earle of Salisbury, with the garrison to him assigned tooke the towne of Pounsloy, the

Tit. Liuius. K. Henry besieged Pontlarche.

1419. An. reg. 7.

the towne of Mounstrell de Oistlers, the towne of Crewe, the Towne of Gurney, the new Castle, and generally all the places in that port.

This yere Qu. Ioane mother to the Duke of Britaine, and the Kings step-mother being defamed of some wicked practise, by Witchcraft or Sorcery, that shee had deuised the K. death, by the counsell of Iohn Randolph Doctor of Diuinitie, of the order of the Fryars minors, then of the conent of Shrewsbury, her confessor, forfeited all her lands and goods by Parliament; and hauing all her seruants put from her, was committed to the custodie of I. Pellam, and by him sent to the Castle of Leeds in Kent, he appointed nine seruants to attend her, and to bring her into the Castle of Pemsey, there to bee governed vnder his prouidence. Fryar Randolph, being apprehended in the Ile of Jersey, was conueyed to Thirlyngthe and there imprisoned, and from thence was sent to the tower of London, where at length to wit, in the yere of Christ, 1429. on the 6th of June, hee was flame by the Parish of S. Peters Church in the tower, talking out at words with him, and after Qu. Ioane was deliuered of her imprisonment.

King Henry sent his brother Humfrey Duke of Glocester, accompanyed with the Earle Marshall, and a great power of armed men, to lay siege before the Towne and castle of Ivory, which towne after many assaults and battels the Duke tooke by force: but the Castle therof was not yelded, till the thirteene of May. The King also sent the Earle of Huntington with a power from Mount, to the Towne of Pontois, by which, if it were taken, he might haue the more sure and safe passage to Paris. Those which were sent, at the entry of the night were come nigh vnto Pountois, where, in a Wood they left their horses, and that done, in the darknesse of the night they went on foot to the ditches of the Towne, which then were drie, where part of them lay on the bankes of the ditches, with their ladders in their hands ready to scale the walls, when time would serue, and the residue lay them in the vines, where they might be ready to enter the Towne at the opening of the gates. At the breake of the day, they of the Towne changed their watch, at the which change, the Walles were left without watches for the time. But the English-men seing time to accomplish their intent, rapsed their ladders, and scaled the walles, and by that means entred the Towne: where, some of them forthwith brake the gate, and made entry for the rest of their company, which when the Garrisons of the Towne perceiued, as men amazed, they turned them selues to slight. But not long after, they armed them, and assayled their enemies, but to the English-mens great auaile, the Earle of Huntington with his company set spurs to their horses, and hasted them to the succour of their first company, whereby the French men as all discouraged and in despaire to saue the Towne, at the sight of these new resreues that came to the Englishmen, leauing behinde them all their riches & substance, endeuoured themselues to escape by slight, and so the townes of Pointois, auoided of all French men, was free to the English. After these enterprises thus atchieued, the King with all his company came to the Towne of Pointois, where hee abode a certaine time, from whence hee sent the Duke of Clarence with a chosen power of men to Paris, to view the situation & strength therof, before which Citie, when hee had tarried certaine dayes, and had seene all that him liked, and that none of the Frenchmen would issue out of the City to fight with him, hee returned to the King, and ascertained him of all that he had seen.

On the xviii. of August, King Henry with all his hoste departed from Pointois. And Wokmuillers yelded.
because the Castle of Wokmuillers had done certaine inhumane cruelties to the kings lawes that bordered thereabout, to the intent to repelle their malice, the King lodged himselfe not farre from thence, & sent certaine to assault the same castle, where both the inhabitants and garrisons feared so much the King, that as men desperate of all succours, they yelded both castle and goods. And then all the Townes, Castles, and holdes within a great circuite, without abiding battaile, yelded them to the King: but that strong and mighty Towne of Gysors, whereof the Castle is much more defensible than the Towne, would not submitte to the King, wherefore on the last day of August, the King with all his hoste tooke his iourney thither, and enclosed the Towne with his pauilions and tents. Betwixt him and them of the Towne, were many that pe battailes and cruell assaults, but at all times the Englishmen put the Frenchmen to slight, wherefore the inhabitants and garrisons of the Towne and Castle deliuered the same to the king in the xviii. day of September.

In the meane time the Dolphin assembled Enguerant.
an host of 20000. men at Monstrey Faulcien, in purpose to fight with the English-men, & for the same by his letters he sent to Troyes in Champeigne for the Duke of Burgoine, desiring him to haue his company in his iourney. At whose request the same Duke incontinent vpon sight of his letters, and vpon the suretie of the Dolphins oath, falsely to goe and come, came vnto him to the place afore said, where notwithstanding his former oath, against both Gods Law and mans law, the Dolphin caused him at his comming, abhominably and cruelly to bee murdered. After whose death the Dolphins seruants dispoiled him of his array, and cast his naked body into a vile pit. The Duke being thus murdered, Phillip his Sonne, who had married the Lady Micquiell the Dolphins sister, entred into all his Fathers possessions: and shortly after, hee ioyned in amity with the king of England, promising him in marriage his sister in law the Lady Katherine, and to bee heire to king Charles: king Henry promised to deliuer to him so many of thew as were pitty of his Fathers murthering, as came into his hands, and the Dolphin should bee for euer excluded Titus Liuius.

excluded from all title to the crown of France. The Earle of S. Paul was Gouernour of Paris although he were but xviii. yeres of age, hee gouerned the Citie wisely, to the Duke of Burgoines behoofe, who had put him into that charge. The Dolphin would haue excused himselfe of the murder lately committed, but could not, for he was ruled and governed by them that had committed it. Emonde diuers of them had their friends killed, in the murder of Paris, when the Earle of Erminake and the other prisoners were killed there, and therefore to be reuenged on the Duke they cared not in what danger they put the Realme, nor in what blame the Dolphin came, who notwithstanding hee put them from him, and they went out of the Realme, all this would not appease the matter, nor reconcile the Dolphin to the Duke Philip.

King Henry with his whole Armie returned to Maunts, where, of his hoste hee made three battailes, whereof the one hee deliuered to the D. of Glocester, whom hee sent to subdue the strong towne called S. Germaines, which after many battailes and skirmishes, in short time was yelded to him for the King. The second battaile he sent to the Castle of Mount Dye, which in like maner fearing the English mens puissance, yelded them to the King. And with the third of the said battailes, the King in his owne person went to allege Meulance which aboue all other was most strong. The situation of this Towne was in a plentious Ile, betwixt two armes of the Sea, no man mought approch nigh to assault it by land, but onely by the bridge: and by water no beseell might come nigh vnto it, for the infinite multitude of piles that were fixed and hid in the riuers. This Towne was also defended with high and strong walles, within it also there were people in great number, as well of the inhabitants as of garrisons of men of warre, that were purposely deputed for the defence thereof. Wherefore the King considering the strength, and defence of this place, assembled diuers ships and other small vessels, wherein by right great labour, he first auoided and cleansed the riuer of the foresaid piles, which being done, he made all those vessels to be fastened together with chaines, and then he commanded to be made certaine small Castles & Towers of timber, which when they were finished, he entended by strength of men in those ships to assault the walles of the Towne, but the garrisons and inhabitants being feared at the sight of these towers, before they were all finished, they sent their Captaines to the King to treate with him for peace, which was granted them vpon condition, that if they were not ayded by the last of Nouember, by the French-men, they should deliuer the Towne to the King, and when the day came they according to couenant deliuered the Towne to the King, and then the King returned to Maunt, and sent the Duke of Excester to besiege the Castle of Galiard, which to him was yelded the twenty of December.

King Henry, solemnized the feast of the Natiuity of our Lord, in the City of Roane: hee sent the Earle of Salisbury to take the Towne of Fresca, which in short time was deliuered to him. The Earle Marshall, and the Earle of Huntington, were sent to subdue the Prouince of Shenen, where the Dolphine had deputed 8 Captains with a strong power, which Captaine met the two Earles, and gaue them battell, but the Englishmen remained Conquerours, and thus the two Earles subdued the Prouince of Shenon, without any great resistance. 1422.

Whilest these and, many other victories were atchiued, the King continuing in the City of Roane, landing God, the Ambassadours of Charles, King of France, and of Philippe, Duke of Burgoygne, came to treate of peace, where, of the King they were honorably receiued, and he sent backe with them to the French King, and the Duke of Burgoygne, his Ambassadors, with full authority to conclude this long sought peace, of which Ambassadours, the Principall was the Earle of Warwick in compuny of certaine Bishops, and other discrete men, accompanyed with a strong power of armed men. These Ambassadours were first brought to the Duke of Burgoygne, because hee was next vnto them, and after they tooke their iourney, vntill they came to the City of Troys, where they found King Charles of France, with the Queene his wife, and that beautiful Ladie Katherin their Daughter: And entering into communication of peace with the Kings Councell of France, the way of peace was found betwixt those two Kings by aliance, that is to say, by a marriage to be made betwixt the most victorious King of England, and the Lady Katherine, daughter to the King and Queene of France: but because they perceiued that many things might not be done, without the presence of the King, as well for the apposition of their Seales, for the ratifying of the Articles of this peace, as for the solemnization of the matrimony, and also that King Charles was a man of many yeeres, they condescended that the King of England at a certaine day amongst them limited, should come to the foresaid Citty of Troyes, with as great an armed power as he would: at which day appointed, if hee failed to be there, all his communication of peace should be as voyde. These things thus concluded, and set downe in writing, the Earle of Warwicke, with his company returned to the King of England, to whom they declared by order, what they had done, who was content in all things to perfourme their appointments, and prepared for his iourney. Hee called together Knights, men of armes, and Archers to the number of sixteene thousand, of them the more part were Archers: and when the time came, that hee would depart towards Troys (as hee was customed) hee deuided his people in three parts and battells, and two wings, and in that manner the eighth day of May, hee entred his iourney towards Troys in Campaigne where hee was mette by the Duke of Burgoygne accompanyed with many Noblemen, Acts reg. 8.

men, two leagues without the Towne, whom hee receiued with great honor and due obseruance. Then this most victorious King accompanied both of English and French-men of euery estate and degree, entered the foresaid City of Troys, the streets whereof without any abiding hee passed vntill hee came to the Kings pallace, where King Charles and the Quéene his wife abode the comming, of whom he was receiued goodly and after a Princely manner. When the King of England was thus royally receiued, after the due reuolutions on his part made to King Charles and the Q. hee departed from them, and by the Duke of Burgoine and other great estates as well of England as of France, he was conueyed to his lodges. The Cittie was diuided into two parts, whereof the one halfe was assigned to the French men and Burgonians, and the other halfe to the English-men: and because that part assigned to the English-men, sufficed not to receiue them all within the walles, but that a great part of them must be lodged in the suburbes, the King of England, because his people lie on that part should haue free concourse together, he caused the wall on that part of the City where he was lodged, to be cast downe to the ground. K. Charles gaue authozitie and power to Isabel his wife and Quéene, to Philip Duke of Burgoine, and to certaine other of his Counsell vlterarily to conclude the peace with King Henry, for him, and for his Realme of France, vnder such conditions as should be deuised, and also to proue, ratifie, and confirme the same, by oath solemnised in the person of King Charles, without fraud, in all things to be obserued vnto the said King Henry, his heyres and successors, by the said King Charles his heyres & successors, &c. In the 21. of May, in the vi. yeere of the raigne of King Charles, in the Cathedrall Church of Troys, the King of England with the Duke of Clarence his brother, and other Dukes, Earles, Bishoppes, Barons, Lords of estate, and other prelates of England, and Isabel the Quéene of France, with the Duke of Burgoigne, and other of the Kings Counsell of France, and in that part his speciall Commissioners, for and in the name of the King of France, and also for themselues, and in their proper names, in a great assembly of the three estates of France, vulgarly called their Parliament, concluded a peace betwixt the two Realmes of England and France, and the same ratified and approued with the conditions and Articles that in part shall follow, whereupon writings were made, sealed with the broad seale of the said King Charles. Then immediately Isabel the Quéene and the Duke of Burgoigne, in the name of King Charles, made a solemne oath vpon the holy Euangelists that the same Charles his heyres and successors should obserue and kéepe, without fraud, the peace made betwixt the two Realms. And the same oath the Quéene and the Duke of Burgoigne in their own names and for themselues, their heires and successors, made vnto the King for him, his heyres and successors, and after them as many as were there present both of the K. Counsell, and also of the Parliament, as Bishops, Lords, Knights, and Commons, made the same oath to the King. And the 23. and 24. day of May the Chancellor of France, and many other Lords, Bishops, Prelates, and Noble-men gaue the like faith and oath to K. Henry of England. Roger Wall.

The third of June, being present the Counsell of King Charles, Isabel Quéene of France, the Duke of Burgoigne, and the Parliament of France, and also the Duke of Clarence, with many Bishops, Lords, and Knights of England, with King Henry, the Matrimonie was solemnized betwixt the most victorious K. Henry of England, and the excellent and the glorious Lady Katherine, daughter to Charles of France and Isabel his Quéene. The peace that was confirmed betwixt the said two K. and their Realmes was read as followeth.

King Henry from now-forth during the life of King Charles, shall not name or write himselfe King of France, nor shall not suffer himselfe of his people so to bee named or written. After the death of King Charles, King Henry shall bee King of France peaceably with his heires and successors. And because K. Charles by reason of his infirmity is vnable to gouerne the common weale, King Henry during the life of Charles, shall rule and gouern the realme of Foyce, to the profit and honour of the same King Charles. King Charles in all his writings shall name the same King Henry our sonne and heyre of France, during the life of the said King Charles. King Henry shall bée written, Henry king of England, and heyre and regent of France, and in the like manner he shall write himselfe in all things that shall be authorised vnder his owne seale. King Henry shall call King Charles his Father, and Quéene Isabel his mother, and shall honour them. Nor King Henry shall not prohibite, withhold, nor defeate K. Charles his Father of the Crowne of France, nor the iiues or reuennes thereof. And the Quéene his mother at all times during her life hee shall kéepe in due estate as belongeth to her maiestie, &c. with diuers other articles, which for brenitie I set not downe in this place.

After the finall end and accomplishment of this marriage, couenants and conditions, ratified in all parts, King Henry accompanied of King Charles and of his counsell, of the two Quéenes Isabel and Katherine, and of the Duke of Burgoigne, departed from Troys, and tooke his iourney to Paris, and from Paris not many dayes after they all went to lay siege to the Cittie of Sens, which was to them contrary, but before the whole hoste were settled in their places, the captaine, Cittizens and garrisons submitted their bodies and Cittie with all that they had to the King. Then they hasted to Monstreau, which Towne they tooke by force. K. Henry besieged Sens. T. Walsingham.

On the 10. of July, they went to the City of Melune, and entrenched the same with a strong siege, for there were the Kings of England,

land, of France, and Scotland, the Dukes of Burgoigne, Lanier, Clarence, Bedford and Exceter, the Earles of Marth, Warwike Huntington, and Somerset, &c. This siege continued fourtéene weekes and od dayes, from the feast of Mary Magdalen, to the feast of All Saints, not without, in a manner euery day, a conflict and sore skirmish, but at length for want of victuals the besieged yelded themselues to the Kings of England and France from whence the foresaide Kings with a great part of their army went to Paris.

1421. Titus Liuius. King Henry kept his Christmas in the City of Paris, in the Castle of S. Anthony. And after he had holden a Parliament there he went to Roane, and there with his Normans, and Englishmen held a Parliament. And then when he had established sure guard for his Realme of France, and Duchy of Normandy, he passed through Picardy to Calcis, and so to Douer, where with his Quéene he landed on Candelmas day.

The 14. of February Quéene Katherine was Crowned at Westminster, vnto whom the king assigned to her dowry 10000. marks: also hee consented to the deliuery of the K. of Scots, who had béene long prisoner into England, with condition, that before his departure out of England, he shall take to wife the Duke of Somersets sister, néece to the Cardinal of Winchester.

An. reg. 9. The 22. of March being Easter éeue, Thomas Duke of Clarence, the Kings brother, the Lord Hale Marshall, and his brother Gilbert Vmfranuile Earle of Kime, and Iohn Gray made Earle of Tankeruill in Normandy, with many other Lords, were slaine beyond the water of Leire in France, and many Lords were taken prisoners, of the which were the Earle of Huntington and the Earle of Somerset and his brother the Lord Fits Walter, and other, the bastard of Clarence, with strength, got his fathers body, brought it into England and buried it at Canterbury, besides King Henry the fourth his father.

In a Parliament at Westminster it was ordained that no man should proffer gold paiment, but if it held waight whereof were ordained balances and weights. The King suppressed the French houses of religious monks and Fryers, and such like in England, because they thought ill of the conquest ouer France, their lands were giuen by him and Henry the first, to Monasteries and Colledges of learned men. French Denizens in England suppressed.

In this Parliament was demanded a subsidy. The Bishop of Winchester lent the K. 20000. pound to restraine the matter. The King hauing disposed all things in order concerning the Realme of England and the warres in Scotland, leauing in England his Quéene with a great power, to the number (after Enguerant) of thirty thousand, returned into France, where after he had visited the King and Quéene of France at Paris, hee tooke the castle of Dreux by assault. And when he heard that his enemies prepared themselues to battaile, he approched the flond of Loyre, about which flond it was sayde his enemies were: but against him came no man. Titus Liuius.

Wherefore the King led his host to lay siege to the City of Sens, commonly called the Kings new towne, which towne for lacke of victuals yelded themselues and the towne to the King.

John Lord Mortimer brake forth of the tower of London, and being afterwards taken, he was drawne and hanged: as shall be shewed in the 2. yeere of the raigne of King Henry the first.

In the moneth of October, when King Henry had deliuered the City of Paris from all annoyances, he with his host went to besiege the City of Meaux in Brie, to which City nigh adioyning, is a place called the Market of Meale, betwixt which two places floweth the riuer of Marne, which also enuironeth both the same places. Titus Liuius.

This City was besieged all the Winter, wherein were so many, and so great stormes and floods of raigne, that the Kings host was often annoyed with hunger and cold.

The first of December, at 4. of the clocke in the afternoone, Lady Katherine Quéene of England, brought forth her first begotten son in the Castle of Windsore, and his name was giuen him Henry: for there receiued him at the font, Iohn Duke of Bedford his vncle, Lord Warden of England, and Henry the Kings vncle Bishop of Winchester, and Iaquelyn Dutchesse of Holland that remained then in England. Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Canterbury, doing the office of Baptisme.

King Henry helde his feast of Christe Natiuitie at the siege before Meaux, for he would not giue ouer his siege. 1422.

In the moneth of February the knights that were in garrison, and the principall of the City of Meaux perceiuing that the sommer comming should cause the siege to be more light, and lesse painefull to the Englishmen, and difficill vnto themselues, departed the City, and went into that place, that is called the Market of Meaux. An. reg. 10. as to the more defensible hold, after whose departing the common people hauing none ability to resist the Kings power, yelded themselues and the City to the King. After this in the moneth of May, when the King had sore beaten the foresaide Market of Meaux, he constrained the Frenchmen that were besieged, to condescend vnto certaine couenants, and to deliuer the place vnto him: and thirtie after were deliuered to the King the Towne of Dzepp in Valois, the Castle of Pier Pount-meralaw Offemount and many others. After the rendring of these Townes and Castles, the King sent ouer into England prisoners 150. which landed at Hampton on the first of July, from whence they were brought in carts to the Tower of London, and the King returned to Paris.

In the moneth of Aprill Katherine Quéene of England shipped at Hampton, and sayled ouer into France with a strong power, vnder the conduct of Iohn Duke of Bedford the Kings brother, Humfrey Duke of Glocester being appointed Warden of England, in the Duke of Bedfords place: when the comming of Quéene Katherine sailed into France.

Quéene Katherine was knowne to King Henry her husband, and to Charles King of France, both these Kings, and with them the Quéene of France, accompanied with many great Lords and estates as well of England as of France, went to méete her at Boys de Vincenne, where she was joyfully received of them, as if she had beene an Angell sent from God. The 30. day of May the two Kings of England and France, with their Quéenes departed from Boys de Vincenne, and went to Paris: the King of England and his Quéene were lodged in the Castle of Loure, and the King of France and his Quéene were lodged in the pallace of S. Paul.

King Henry returneth to the siege.

King Henry hearing that the Dolphin with a great power besieged the towne of Gulney, he determined to go himselfe to the raising of the siege, and so came to the Toune of Corbeil, and to Senlis, where he waxed so sicke, of an hot burning ague, with a vehement flixe, that he was constrained to tarry and send his brother John Duke of Bedford, Thomas Beawford D. of Exceter, the Earles of March, and Warwicke, to reskew them of Gulney: but the Dolphin raised his siege and departed thence. King Henry his disease increasing, made his Testament, appointed his treasure and iewels to be solde, his debts to be payed, as well to the pleasance of his souldiers as to other unto whom he ought god, either in England or in France: he ordained his brother John Duke of Bedford to be Regent and Governor of France and Normandy, and committed the keeping of Henry his son, to Henry Beawfort Bishop of Winchester, and to Thomas Pewfort, Duke of Exceter, he departed this life in the Castle called Boys de Vincenne, not farre from Paris, on the last of August, in the yere 1422. when hee had raigned nine yeres, fiue monethes, & od dayes. There was present at his death, King Charles of France and the two Quéenes: but before his death this most prudent King disposed the guard of the young Prince his sonne, and the defence of the Realme of England, to his brother Humfrey Duke of Glocester, but the custody of the body of this young Prince, the King committed to his vncle the Duke of Exceter, to méetre him in all good manners: and the reuenues of the Dutchy of Normandie, he bequeathed to his brother John Duke of Bedford, for the gouernance of the saine Dutchy and of the Realme of France: he appointed his debts to be paid out of his treasurie, and of his Iewels. In his life time he réedified the Castle of Kenelworth, he builded there a most pleasant place, and called it to be termed le pleasant marish. King Henry the eight, caused the saide banqueting house to be taken downe, and part of it to be set vp in the base Court at Kenelworth: he réedified his royall manor that then was called Sheene, now Richmond: he founded two Monasteries vpon the Thamis not far from Richmond, the one of Carthusians, which hee named Bethlem, the other religious men and women of Saint Brigets, and that he named Sion. He founded Garter, principall King at armes of all Englishmen, and also the brotherhood of S. Giles without Creples gate of London. He gaue 1000. marks to the Workes of Westminster Church, more he gaue to the same Church a faire Pialter, within another booke called *Flores Historiarum*, both very faire written, and enlumined, and a royall Sceptre of gold for the Quéene. The King that King Richard the second gaue vnto Saint Edwards Shrine, being taken away, this King Henry restored againe, in the which ring there was a Ruby, esteemed worth a thousand markes in value: he gaue to the Colledge of Windsore, a Chappell of Knights, of Saint George and of the Garter, an Image of massy siluer to the honor of our blessed Virgin Mary, the Mother of Christ. Executors of his Testament were Henry Fitz Hugh, Walter Hungerford, Walter Bewchampe, Lewes Robsart, William Porteil, and Robert Rabthorpe Knights, and John Woodhouse, and John Lauenthorpe Esquiers: his goods, cattels, iewels, and money came to 40000. marks, as appeareth by the record of Henry the first, the first yeare. Shortly after his departing, his bowels were enterred in the Church of S. Pons de Fosseo, and his corps well enbaulmed and seared, was closed in lead: and accompanied with all the Lords, estates, and commons of England that were there present, with also many Lords and great estates, as well of France, Normandy, Burgondy, and Picardy, was brought with great honour to Paris, and set in the Church of our Lady, where were done for him right solemne exequies, with distribution of money and great almes to the poor. From thence he was brought to Roane, where hee abode long. When all things necessary were prepared for the conueyance of the dead King into England, his body was laid in a Chariot which was drawne by foure great horses: and aboue the dead corps they laid a figure made of boiled hides or leather, representing his person as nigh to the semblance of him as could be deuised, painted curiously to the similitude of a liuing creature: vpon whose head was set an Imperiall diademe of gold and precious stones, on his body a purple roabe furred with ermine, and in his right hand he holde a Scepter royall, and in his left hand a Ball of gold, with a crosse fixed thereon. And in this manner adorned was this figure laid in a bed in the said Chariot, with his visage vncouered toward the heauens: and the couerture of his bed was red like beaten with gold: and besides that when the body should passe through any good towne, a Canapy of marueilous great value, was borne ouer the Chariot, by men of great worship. In this manner accompanyed of the King of Scots, and of all Princes, Lords, and knights of his house, he was brought from Roane to Abuile, where the corps was set in the Church of Saint Ostrane. From Abuile he was brought to Vedin, and from thence to Mentkreuil, so to Bulloigne, and to Calice. In all this iourney were many men about the Chariot clothed all in white, which bare in their hands Torches, burning, after whome followed al the household seruants in blacke, & after them the came Princes, Lords,

John Rouse.

Lords, and estates of the Kings blood, adorned in beriall mourning: and after all this, from the said corps the distance of two English myles followed the Quéene of England right honorably accompanyed. In this manner they entred Calice, from whence after a few dayes they departed, and continued their iourneyes by water and land vntill they came to London, where they arrived about the tenth of November, and so were conueyed by London bridge, through Cheape to the Cathedrall Church of S. Paule vpon the couering of the formost of the foure horses, that conueyed the Chariot, were imbrodered the ancient armes of England: vpon the couerture of the second horse were the armes of England and France, in one shield quarterly: vpon the couerture of the third horse was imbrodered the armes of France, without any manner of difference: and on the foure horse were the Armes of King Arthur, which was thre crownes gold in a field azure. When his exequies were solemnized at Saint Pauls Church in London, he was brought from thence to bee interred in the Abbey of Saint Peter at Westminster amongst his Noble ancestors, at the feet of King Edward the Confessor, a royall Image of siluer and gilt was laid vpon his Tombe, which Quéene Katherine his wife caused to bee made for him, but about the latter end of King Henry the eyght, the head of the Kings Image being of massie siluer, was broken off, and conueyed cleane away, with the plates of siluer and gilt that conered his body. Thus this most victorious and renowned King entred the way decreed for every creature. In the flower and most lusty time of his age, to wit, but fiue and thirty yeres old, when hee had raygned nine yeres, ten monethes, and odde dayes. The first of Henry the first, Quéene Katherine had assured for her iointer, Castles, lands, tenements, named and deliuered vnto the summe of 40000. scuts, euery two scuts worth a noble.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *KING* HENRY *THE SIXT.*

An. reg. 1. Thes Louis

HENRY the first, borne at Windsore being an infant of 8. monethes olde, began his raygne the last of August, in the yere 1422. continuing the time of his youth, the gouernance of the Realme was committed to Humfrey Duke of Glocester, and the guard of his person to Thomas Duke of Exceter: and to John Duke of Bedford was giuen the regiment of France, who right wisely and nobly ruled the same so long as he liued. This Henry was of nature gentle and meeke: he loued better peace than warre, quietnesse of minde than businesse of the world: honesty than profit: rest and ease, than trouble and care: all iniuries that euer happed to him, which were many, he suffered patiently, and reputed them to be worthily sent of God for his offences.

Bishop of Lyons Duke of Orleance. Charles le bieu King of France dyed.

The 21. of October, Charles King of France passed out of this world, and was buried at Saint Denis in France, after hee had béene crowned King 46. yeres. He was greatly beloued of his people all his life time, and therefore was called Le Roy Charle le bieu ame: but he had a sickness the more part of his raigne, that being out of his wit, hee would fréthe all that came nére him: it tooke him first in the City of Pans shortly after hee had béene in Flanders to reuoke the Flemings to obedience. There was by reason here of great trouble in France, because those that were nére to him in linage, sought euery one to haue the chiefe gouernment in their hands. When hee thus dyed, the Realme was left in miserable state, for people of each strange Nation were gouernors in the Realme. First, the Englishmen had conquered a great part, and sought to haue the rest: and the Duke of Burgoigne, with many other great Lords alied with him, sought to conquer all, for the young King Henry of England, who claimed then to be King of France, and likewise in all the money that was coyned, the armes of both Realmes were quartered. The Crownes that were stamped in the time of Charles, and all other money more, were forbidden to bee current, and called to the Mint. King Henry caused a péece to bee stamped called a Salus, worth two and twenty shillings, and Blans of eight pence a péece, and so in no place of France where King Henry was obeyed, any other money was receiued, but such as had the armes of France and England stamped on it.

King Henry of England and France.

Charles Duke of Touraine the Dolphin, sonne to King Charles le bieu ame, claiming to

claimed King of France. The Kings of France Henry and Charles.

be right inheritor to the Realme of France by the ancient edicts and customes of the saide Realme, as was alledged, proclaimed himselfe King after the decease of his Father, notwithstanding, by the agreement made at the marriage of his sister to the King of England. It was otherwise concluded (as before is recited) and so there were two Kings in France, Henry and Charles, both which strowng for the crowne, the Realme was in wap of perdition.

A Parliament at Leyster.

A Parliament at London began the ninth of November, wherein was granted to the King a subsidy for three yeres, five nobles of every sacke of wooll that should passe out of land.

1423.

King Charles of France began now to advance himselfe into the Duke of Burgoignes lands, and the Constable of Scotland, accompanied with many Lords and men of warre of King Charles side, laid siege to the Towne of Carnens, but the Marshall of Burgoigne assembled men of warre to rayse the siege, with whome went Thomas Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, a valiant man, and now being come together, fought with their enemies, won the field, toke the Constable, whose sonne was slaine in the field. Many of King Charles men were slaine and taken to the number of seven or eleven hundred god men of war. After which victory, the Earle of Salisbury laid siege to Pontagnillon in Champaigne, and continued there an eight moneths before he could have it rendred, and then caused the same to be raced and thrown downe. Then the Earle of Salisbury besieged the Castle of Gonnes, which at length was yeelded to him, this Castle he also raced and beat downe, which was the strongest place in all Champaigne, it was after repaired by King Charles.

The Earle of Salisbury wan diuers holdes in France, and raced them. *Ann. Reg.* 2.

Duke of Bedford married the Duke of Burgoines sister. Phil. Com.

About the same time the Duke of Burgoine gaue his sister the Lady Anne in marriage to the Duke of Bedford, and so the alliance was made more strong betweene the English and the Burgonians.

Phillip de Comines writeth, that John Duke of Bedford, Regent of France for the Englishmen, his monthly allowance in that office amounting to twenty thousand Crownes at the least.

Thomas Langley Bishop of Durham was made Chancellor of England.

The Dukes of Burgoyne, Bedford, and Baytaine, met in the towne of Amiens, there was also the Earle of Richmont, brother to the Duke of Baytaine, and many other great Lords, which Earle of Richmont had married Margaret, the Duke of Baytaines eldest sister, sometime wife to the Duke of Guyen, and Dolphin of France. These three Dukes were five or six dayes together in Amiens, in great friendship and reuerence each to other, promising perpetuall amitie to continue. After this, the Duke of Baytaine returned into his countrey, the Duke of Bedford (regent of France) to Paris, and the Duke of Burgoine to Arras: but within a while after, the Earle of Richmont revolted to King Charles, upon some mislliking he had conceiued against the Duke of Bedford: King Charles received him topfully, and made him Constable of France.

About the same time the Duke of Bedford caused Crotoy to be besieged both by Water and by land, which after foure or five moneths siege, was both Towne and Castle deliuered to the Duke, where he ordained Ralph Butler to be Captaine. At that time the Duke of Bedford was obeyed as regent in all places beyond Vimeu, Pontieu, and Picardy, from Paris to Reins, Chalons, and Troyes vp to the water of Loyre.

About the feast of Saint Andrew the Captaines of King Charles assembled their forces about le Fere, and Nelle, and toke by night the Towne of Campeigne, and spoyled the inhabitants of all their goods. Shortly after came the Duke of Bedford to Pontoidier with twelue hundred fighting men, and requested the Lord of Saueuses to lay siege to Campeygne, and he would finde him men and money to wage them, whereunto hee granted, and after fifteene dayes siege had the same deliuered.

In this meane time, to wit, about 17. of November, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein the young King was set in his maiestp among his Lords. And the 27. day of November the King with the Queene removed from Westminster vnto Waltham holy Crosse, and from thence to Hertford, where he held his Christmas, and the King of Scots with him: and the saide Parliament was adiourned vnto the twentieth day after Christmas: In the which Parliament, among other acts, was ordained that what prisoner that for grand or petty treason was committed to ward, and after wilfully brake or made an escape from the same, it should be deemed pettie treason, and the goods of him so escaping should be forfeited to the Lord of the soyle that they were found in.

Parliament at Westminster.

1424.

In the moneth of Februarp, James Stewart the young King of Scots, who was taken by the Englishmen in the eight yeere of King Henry the fourth, and had remained in England prisoner till this time, was now according to couenant, deliuered out of Pomfret Castle vpon pledges, to wit, Dauid Okliffe sonne to the Earle of Athole, Alexander Earle of Crawford, Alexander Lord of Gordon, John de Lyndesey, Patricke Donne and heire to Sir John Lyon, Andrew Grey of Sonles, Dauid de Ogleby, Sir William de Rothie, Dauid Mogresse, and William Olifant: the same King of Scottes was then married in the priory Church of Saint Mary Queries in Southwarke, to the Lady Ione the Duchess daughter of Clarence, by her first husband John Earle of Somerset, cosin to King Henry, and they kept their marriage feast in the Bishop of Winchesters place, by the saide Church of S. Mary Queries.

King of Scots released of imprisonment.

The 14. day of Februarp, the foresaid Parliament being againe holden at Westminster, for breaking of the foresaid act of escaping out of

of prison, Sir John Mortimer was accused, by a yeoman named William King of Wilmelton in Kisdale, in Yorkeshire, seruant vnto Sir Robert Scot Knight, Lieutenant of the Tower of London, of diuers points of treason as followeth: First, that hee counselled with the saide William King, to the end to breake out of prison, and promised to him for the same ten pound in his purse, an habergeon, and a doublet, the verely value of forty pound land, and in prouesse an Earledome. Also, that the said Mortimer should say, that hee would goe into Wales, vnto the Earle of the Marches, and there hee would raise forty thousand men, and with that power hee would enter the land, and strike off the heads of the Lord Protector, and of the Bishop of Winchester, to the intent that he might tell or play with some of his money. And furthermore he accused him, that the said Mortimer should say, that the Earle of March was but a dawe, saue that hee was the greatest, noblest, and worthiest of bloud, and should bee King by right inheritance, and that he himselfe was next rightfull heire to the said Crowne after the said Earle of March, wherefore if the said Earle would not take vpon him the Crowne and rule of the land, he saide that he els would. And ouer this, the saide William alleaged to the saide Sir John Mortimer, that hee should say, that if he failed of his purpose, and might not ioyne vnto the Earle of Marches, that then he would ioyne vnto the Dolphin, and ayde and take his part, where hee knit well he should be accepted, and haue god ayde of him to bring about his purpose. All which matter this William would proue vpon the same Mortimer with his body: or as the Lords and commons should award. Which John Mortimer, after the Statute aforesaid escaped out of the tower, and was taken againe vpon the toiner wharfe sore beaten and wounded, and on the morrow brought to Westminster, and by the authority of the saide Parliament, he he was after drawne to Tyborne, hanged, and headed, of whose death (saith Hall) no small clamor arose: his body was buried in the gray Fryers Church.

Mortimer accused of treason for escaping out of the Tower.

The Lord Stanton and the Lord Hoo created.

Richard Wooduill was created Baron Wooduill: John Sturton Knight, Baron Sturton for him and his heires: and Thomas Hoo Knight, Baron Hoo and of Hastings.

The battell of Vernole in Perch.

King Henries people besieging the Castle of Dury in the marches of Normandy, they within compounded to yeld at a day assigned, if the Englishmen were not fought withall before the same day by the Frenchmen: whereupon as well King Charles as the Duke of Bedford made great leuies of men to keepe the day appointed, and herewith they drewe both towards Durie. But when King Charles heard how the Duke of Bedford was comming towards him with such a puissance, hee was counselled to draw backe, and so he did towards Vernole in Perch, whome the Duke of Bedford followed, so that hee found his army neere to Vernole. And when either army was in sight of the other, they put themselues in order of battell, and the Englishmen made a lodge of their horse behind their battell, because the French should not strike in among them on the backes: and the Frenchmen ordered themselues in battell array, making a great battell of footemen, in the which they put the flowre and chiefest men. They appointed their horsemen to set on the Englishmen a trauerse, the battels on foote came vpon and ioyned, where was a sore fight betwixt them, continuing two houres together that no man might Iudge which way the victorie would incline: but at length, the men of King Charles beganne to breake, and then the Englishmen beganne to thrust in among them, and did so much, that they discomfited their enemies. There were slaine the Earle Dowglas Duke of Turon, Iames Dowglas, Earle of Wightor, John Earle of Bougham, with the Vicomt Nerbon and many other, to the number of tenne thousand (saith Fabian) foure thousand saith mine Author; (a Frenchman) who sayeth, that the Duke of Bedford bare himselfe most valiantly, fighting with an axe so fiercely, as he had the praise of al other. The Earles of Salisbury and Suffolke governed themselues also right valiantly. Rob. Fabian.

The Lord of Dosby and other Lords of Normandie, which before had taken part with the Englishmen, this day turned to the French, hoping that the Englishmen should have lost the battell. True it is, that the Frenchmen would neuer suffer their King Charles to be present in person at any battell, but when they thought to pitch a field, they sent him into some strong Towne. By the losse of this battell fought on the seuenteenth of August before Vernole in Perch, King Charles was put to great hinderance, so that he was not able in puissance to giue the Englishmen any battell hauing enough to doe to defend and keepe his townes and fortresses against them. *Ann. reg.* 2.

The Duke of Bedford returned into Normandy, where hee punished many that fledde from him in the day of battell. Then went hee to Paris, where he found the Duke of Burgoyne, who received him, and the Dutches of Bedford his wife, the said Duke of Burgoynes sister, right ioyfully, and made to them a great feast, at which feast also were the Earles of Salisbury and Suffolke, the old Queene of France, mother to King Charles, and many other great estates, diuers Nations, resort amongst the which, the Dutchesse of Bedford was holden for the most gallantest Lady of all other, and with her, the Countesse of Salisbury a very fayre Lady. The Duke of Bedford that had never lusted before, lusted there.

The Duke of Burgoyne and Countesse of Salisbury, wherof came great displeasure and losse to England, by the breach of amity between the Burgoignons.

The Duke of Burgoyne was a very godly and amiable man of personage, doing excellently well whatsoeuer hee toke in hand, and especially in daunsing and iusting he exceeded all other of his country. At this feast, he became destrous of the Countesse of Salisbury, & some messages passed betwixt them, which came to the Earle of Salisburies eare, whereof he was

be right inheritor to the Realme of France by the ancient edicts and customes of the saide Realme, as was alledged, proclaimed himselfe King after the decease of his Father, notwithstanding, by the agreement made at the marriage of his sister to the King of England, it was otherwise concluded (as before is recited) and so there were two Kings in France, Henry and Charles, both which striving for the crowne, the Realme was in way of perdition.

A Parliament at London.

A Parliament at London began the ninth of November, wherein was granted to the King a subsidy for three yeres, five nobles of every sacke of woll that should passe out of the land.

1438.

King Charles of France began now to advance himselfe into the Duke of Burgoignes lands, and the Constable of Scotland, accompanied with many Lords and men of warre of King Charles side, laid siege to the Towne of Carneus, but the Marshall of Burgoigne assembled men of warre to rayse the siege, with whome went Thomas Mountacute Earle of Salisbury, a valiant man, and now being come together, fought with their enemies, won the field, tooke the Constable, whose sonne was slaine in the field. Many of King Charles men were slaine and taken to the number of seven hundred good men of warre. After which victory, the Earle of Salisbury laid siege to Montaguillon in Champaigne, and continued there an eight moneths before he could have it rendred, and then caused the same to be raced and thrown downe. Then the Earle of Salisbury besieged the Castle of Gerbroy, which at length was yeelded to him, this Castle he also raced and beat downe, which was the strongest place in all Champaigne, it was after repaired by King Charles.

The Earle of Salisbury doth diuers holdes in France, and raseth them. *Am. Reg.* 2.

About the same time the Duke of Burgoine gaue his sister the Lady Anne in marriage to the Duke of Bedford, and so the alliance was made more strong betweene the English and the Burgonians.

Duke of Bedford marries the Duke of Burgoines Sister. Phil. Com.

Phillip de Comines witteth, that John Duke of Bedford, Regent of France for the Englishmen, his monthly allowance in that office amounting to twenty thousand Crownes at the least.

Thomas Langley Bishop of Durham was made Chancellor of England.

The Dukes of Burgoyne, Bedford, and Bytaine, met in the townes of Amions, there was also the Earle of Richmont, brother to the Duke of Bytaine, and many other great Lords, which Earle of Richmont had married Margaret, the Duke of Bytaines eldest sister, sometime wife to the Duke of Guyen, and Dolphin of France. These three Dukes were five or six dayes together in Amiens, in great friendship and reuerence each to other, promising perpetuall amitie to continue. After this, the Duke of Bytaine returned into his countrey, the Duke of Bedford (regent of France) to Paris, and the Duke of Burgoine to Arras: but within a while after, the Earle of Richmont revolted to King Charles, upon some misliking he had conceiued against the Duke of Bedford: King Charles received him topfully, and made him Constable of France.

About the same time the Duke of Bedford caused Crotoy to be besieged both by Water and by land, which after foure or five monethes siege, was both Towne and Castle deliuered to the Duke, where he obtained Ralph Butler to be Captaine. At that time the Duke of Bedford was obeyed as regent in all places beyond Vimeu, Pontieu, and Picardy, from Paris to Reins, Chalons, and Troyes vp to the water of Loyze.

About the feast of Saint Andrew the Captaines of King Charles assembled their forces about le Fere, and Nelle, and toke by night the Towne of Campeigne, and spoyled the inhabitants of all their goods. Shortly after came the Duke of Bedford to Pontoiser with twelue hundred fighting men, and requested the Lord of Saueuses to lay siege to Campeygne, and he would finde him men and money to wage them, whereunto hee was granted, and after fifteene dayes siege had the same deliuered.

In this meane time, to wit, about 17. of November, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein the young King was set in his majesty among his Lords. And the 27. day of November the King with the Queene removed from Westminster vnto Waltham holy Crosse, and from thence to Hertford, where he held his Christmas, and the King of Scots with him: and the foresaide Parliament was adiourned vnto the twentieth day after Christmas: In the which Parliament, among other acts, was ordained that what prisoner that escapeth or petty treason was committed to ward, and after wilfully broke or made an escaped from the same, it should be deemed petite treason, and the goods of him so escaping should be forfeited to the Lord of the soyle that they were found in. Parliament at Westminster. 1439

In the moneth of February, James Stewart the young King of Scots, who was taken by the Englishmen in the eight yere of King Henry the fourth, and had remained in England prisoner till this time, was now according to couenant, deliuered out of Pomfret Castle vpon pledges, to wit, David Okliffe sonne to the Earle of Athole, Alexander Earle of Crauford, Alexander Lord of Gourdon, John de Lyndesey, Patricke Sonne and heire to Sir John Lyon, Andrew Grey of Sonles, David de Ogleby, Sir William de Rothie, David Mogresse, and William Olifant: the same King of Scottes was then married in the priory Church of Saint Mary Queries in Southwarke, to the Lady Ione the Duches daughter of Clarence, by her first husband John Earle of Somerset, cosin to King Henry, and they kept their marriage feast in the Bishop of Winchesters place, by the same Church of S. Mary Queries. King of Scots released of imprisonment.

The 14. day of February, the foresaid Parliament being againe holden at Westminster, for breaking of the foresaid act of escaping out of prison, Sir John Mortimer was accused, by a yeoman named William King of Wimolton in Kisoale, in Yorkeshire, seruant vnto Sir Robert Scot Knight, Lieutenant of the Tower of London, of diuers points of treason as followeth: First, that hee counselled with the saide William King, to the end to breake out of prison, and promised to him for the same ten pound in his purse, an habergeon, and a doublet, the yerely value of forty pound land, and in prouende in Carlesome. Also, that the said Mortimer should say, that hee would goe into Wales, vnto the Earle of the Marches, and there hee would raise forty thousand men, and with that power hee would enter the land, and strike off the heads of the Lord Protector, and of the Bishop of Winchester, to the intent that he might tell or play with some of his money. And furthermore he accused him, that the said Mortimer should say, that the Earle of March was but a daw, sauc that hee was the greatest, noblest, and worthiest of bloud, and should bee King by right inheritance, and that he himselfe was next rightfull heire to the said Crowne after the said Earle of March, wherefore if the said Earle would not take vpon him the Crowne and rule of the land, he saide that he els would. And ouer this, the sayde William alleaged to the sayde Sir John Mortimer, that hee should say, that if he failed of his purpose, and might not ioyne vnto the Earle of Marches, that then he would sayle vnto the Dolphin, and ayde and take his part, where hee writ well he should be accepted, and haue good ayde of him to bring about his purpole. All which matter this William would prooue vpon the same Mortimer with his body: or as the Lords and commons should award. Which John Mortimer, after the statute aforesaid escaped out of the tower, and was taken againe vpon the tower wharfe fore beaten and wounded, and on the morrow brought to Westminster, and by the authority of the saide Parliament, he was after drawne to Tyborne, hanged, and headed, of whose death (saith Hall) no small clamor arose: his body was buried in the gray Fryers Church. Mortimer accused of treason for escaping out of the Tower.

The Lord Sturton and the Lord Hoo created.

Richard Wooduill was created Baron Wooduill: John Sturton Knight, Baron Sturton for him and his heires: and Thomas Hoo Knight, Baron Hoo and of Hastings.

King Henries people besieging the Castle of Dieppe in the marches of Normandy, they within compounded to yeld at a day assigned, if the Englishmen were not fought withall before the same day by the Frenchmen: whereupon as well King Charles as the Duke of Bedford made great leuies of men to keepe the day appointed, and herewith they drewe both towards Dieppe. But when King Charles heard how the Duke of Bedford was comming towards him with such a puissance, hee was counselled to draw backe, and so he did towards Vernole in Perch, whome the Duke of Bedford followed, so that hee found his army neere to Vernole. And when either army was in sight of the other, they put themselues in order

The battell of Vernole in Perch.

of battell, and the Englishmen made an hedge of their hosle behind the battell, because the French should not strike in among them on the backes: and the Frenchmen ordered themselues in battell array, making a great battell of footemen, in the which they put the flowre and chiefest men. They appointed their horsemen to set on the Englishmen a trauerse, the battels on foote came vpon and ioyned, where was a sore fight betwixt them, continuing two houres together that no man might Iudge which way the victorie would incline: but at length, the men of King Charles beganne to breake, and then the Englishmen beganne to chase in among them, and did so much, that they discomfited their enemies. There were slayne the Earle Dowglas Duke of Turon, Iames Dowglas, Earle of Wightan, John Earle of Boughan, with the Vicount Nerbon and many other, to the number of tenne thousand (saith Fabian) foure thousand saith mine Author (a Frenchman) who sayeth, that the Duke of Bedford bare himselfe most valiantly, fighting with an axe so fiercely, as he had the praise of al other. The Earles of Salisbury and Suffolke gouerned themselues also right valiantly. Rob. Fabian.

The Lord of Scalz and other Lords of Normandie, which before had taken part with the Englishmen, this day turned to the French, hoping that the Englishmen should haue lost the battell. True it is, that the Frenchmen would neuer suffer their King Charles to be present in person at any battell, but when they thought to pitch a field, they sent him into some strong Towne. By the losse of this battell fought on the seuenteenth of August before Vernole in Perch, King Charles was put to great hindrance, so that he was not able in puissance to giue the Englishmen any battell hauing enough to doe to defend and keepe his townes and fortresses against them. *Am. reg.* 2.

The Duke of Bedford returned into Normandy, where hee punished many that fledde from him in the day of battell. Then went hee to Paris, where he found the Duke of Burgoyne, who receiued him, and the Dutches of Bedford his wife, the said Duke of Burgoynes sister, right ioyfully, and made to them a great feast, at which feast also were the Earles of Salisbury and Suffolke, the old Queene of France, mother to King Charles, and many other great estates, diuers Nations, whist the amongst the which, the Dutchesse of Bedford was holden for the most gallantest Lady of all other, and with her, the Countesse of Salisbury a very fayre Lady. The Duke of Bedford that had neuer inlked before, inlked there. The Duke of Burgoyne enamoured with the Countesse of Salisbury, wherof came great displeasure and losse to England, by the breach of amity betwixt the Englishmen and the Burgoignons.

The Duke of Burgoine enamoured with the Countesse of Salisbury.

The Duke of Burgoyne was a very godly and amiable man of personage, being excellently well whatsoeuer hee take in hand, and especially in dauncing and inlking he exceeded all other of his country. At this feast, he became deuteous of the Countesse of Salisbury, some messages passed betwixt them, which came to the Earle of Salisburies eare, whereof he was

nothing contented with the Duke, and therefore sought to doe him displeasure afterward.

This feast being ended, the Duke of Burgoyne went into his country of Burgoyne, and there take to wife the Dutchesse of Neuers which had bene wife to his uncle the Duke of Neuers, and had by her two children. Shee was halfe sister to the Duke of Burbon, but she lived not long with him. The Duke of Burgoyne also gaue his sister, the youngest, named Agnes, in marriage vnto Charles de Burbon Earle of Clermont, for the which, the Duke of Bedford and other Englishmen were wroth, for that he made such aliance with the enemies without their accord.

The second cause of breach of amity betwixt England & Burgoyne.

This yeere the Frenchmen repayred the Castle of Pount in Campaigne, which had bene a little before destroyed by the Englishmen, and now it was well stuffed with victuals and men, which began to make some war to the countrey, but shortly after the Earle of Salisbury besieged them, and with him Mesire John de Luxenburg, who did so much, that the Castle was yelded to him. The Duke of Bedford with his wife the Dutchesse, lay for the most part in Paris, leading there a pleasant life with the Lady whom he greatly loued, and was lodged in the house of the Tournelles nere to the Castle of S. Anthony, where he made faire buildings, and his men still made some warres against the French towards the riuer of Loyre, and other places, vpon base Normandie, and toward the Dutchie of Alanson.

Earle of March sent into Ireland.

This yere in England Edmond Mortimer Earle of March with many other Lords, and a great retinue, were sent into Ireland, where the saide Earle of March ended his life without issue, whose inheritance descended to Richard Plantagenet, Son and heire to Richard Earle of Cambridge, beheaded at Southampton, as is afore shewed.

Iaqueline Dutchesse of Henault.

This yere the warres began in Henault, by reason of Iaqueline Dutchesse of Henault, daughter to Duke William of Henault, vncle to Phillip Duke of Burgoyne, and also daughter to Duke John of Burgoynes sister, wife to the forenamed William, and so double cosin german to Phillip, Duke Phillip now liuing. This Iaqueline was married to John duke of Bzabant her cosin german, and cosin german also to duke Phillip of Burgoyne, and before that, shee was married to the Earle of Pontione, sonne to King Charles le bien aime, eldest brother to King Charles now liuing, but notwithstanding that shee was thus married to the Duke of Brabant, yet was shee conueyed by Sir Robert sart Knight, and brought into England to the Duke of Gloucester, and there married to the said Duke of Gloucester: and so she had two husbands alliue at once, Bzabant and Gloucester, a thing thought vnreasonable, both against God, the world, and the Church, for they had bene foure or fiue yeres in company with the Duke of Brabant, but there had fallen some variance betwixt them, and so she was come from him into Henault.

Iaqueline married to the Duke of Gloucester.

About the last of Aprill began a Parliament at Westminster, wherein was granted a subsidy of twelue pence in the pound of all manner marchandize comming in, or passing out of this Realme, three thillings of a tunne of Wine for the terme of three yeres to be holden. And furthermore it was enacted, that all marchant strangers should be set to an English hoste, within fifteene dayes of their comming to their port sale, and to make no sale of any marchandize ere they were so lodged: and then within forty dayes following to make sale of all they bzought, and if any remained vnsold at the said forty dayes end, that then all such Marchandize vnsold to bee forfeited. Also that all strangers that carried any wooles out of this land, should pay three and forty thillings foure pence for a sacke custome, where the English marchants and denizons payed but fiue Nobles, &c.

Rob. Fabian. Parliament at London. Subsidy payed.

Bi strangers to be lodged within England.

After the marriage had bene solemnized betweene the Duke of Gloucester, and Iaqueline Dutchesse of Holland, as is aforesaid, within a moneth after the Duke of Gloucester assembled an army of twelue hundred fighting men at the least, all Englishmen, and taking the Dutchesse with him in company, passed ouer to Calice, and straight from thence to Lens in Artois, and so into Henault, making no outrage as he passed through Duke Phillips countreyes. At their comming into Henault, many Townes obeyed them, and other refused so to doe: likewise were the Nobles diuided.

The Duke of Gloucester.

Holland.

The duke of Burgoyne hearing of this, was sore offended for the iniury done to his cosin of Bzabant, the dishono; of his cosin the dutchesse Iaqueline, and the euill dealing of the Duke of Gloucester, and therefore, to ayde the Duke of Bzabant hee appointed many of his Captaines with twelue hundred fighting men of Picards, to goe against the Duke of Gloucester. The duke of Bzabant was a man but of weake complexion, and therefore by the Councell of Bzabant it was ordained, that his ponger bzother Phillip Earle of Saint Pol, should bee chiefe Captaine of the warre against the duke of Gloucester. He had a great army, as the more part of the Nobles of Bzabant, of Henault, and of Burgoine, in all fifty thousand. Piere de Luxenburg, Earle of Conuarson, his nere kinsman, had the leading of the army, for himselfe was but young. The Duke of Gloucester had put off his men in garrison within the Towne of Bzayne, in the county of Henault, who made soze warre to the countrey about, but the Earle of S. Pol, and Conuarson did come and besiege Bzayne, continuing alwaies it twelue dayes before they within yelded, compounding to depart with bodies and goods saued. These hauing wonne Bzayne, destroyed it vtterly, and that done, take the field with all puissance, which was great, and the Duke of Gloucester likewise came into the fields, so that they approched nere together, and the vantcurrers skirmished, but the battell ioined not. The Duke of Gloucester had sent his Herault,

Rob. Fabian.

Iohn duke of Bedford.

Third cause of the enmitie to be broken betwixt England and Burgoyne, and the yeres of many townes in France.

Herault, and written to the Duke of Burgoyne, calling him traytor, and disloyall to the King of England and France, for that he had sent men in ayde against him in ayde of the Duke of Bzabant, and therefore offered him the combate: whereunto the Duke of Burgoyne answered, that he would accept the combat willingly, denying that euer hee had failed of his promise: but contrariwise, that the Duke of Gloucester had done great wzong to the Duke of Bzabant to haue bereft him of his wife, contrary to the ordinance of God, and of holy Church, and for other words which the Duke had vttered against the Duke of Burgoines honour, he gaue him the lie, and so for the matter went in wozds betwixt them, that the day was appointed for the combate, and the Duke of Burgoine chose for iudge of the combat, the Emperor of Almaine, and the Duke of Burgoyne sent the Duke of Gloucester a safe conduct, to depart safely into England, to prepare himselfe of things necessary for the combat, whereupon both the campes brake vp: the Duke of Gloucester went to Pons in Henault, to the Dutchesse his wife (so termed) and gaue her to vnderstand that he was desirous to trie the combate with the Duke of Burgoyne, and many other things he told her, which hee performed not; for within foure dayes after, he take all his power with him, and returned into England, doing no hurt by the way to the Duke of Burgoynes countries, and left the Dutchesse in Pons, finally accompanied with the people of that country. Shortly after his departure the Duke of Burgoyne sent the Lord Lilladem to the towne of Pons to receiue Iaqueline the Dutchesse, who being deliuered vnto him, he conueyed her to Gant, where the Duke and she made great semblance of loy together, she promising to be gouerned alwayes by his aduise, but to goe to her old husband the Duke of Bzabant she would not: but what semblance soeuer she made, she had another thought in her head, as it appeared afterwards, for when she espyed her time, shee stale away into her countrey of Holland, where she was well receiued of many Lords, and began forthwith to maintaine war against Duke Phillip of Burgoyne, and sent to the Duke of Gloucester for ayde, who sent to her a thousand fighting men, vnder the conduct of the Lord Fitz waters, who landed them in a place called Bzewers hauen. During these troubles in Henault, diuers Lords of the countrey, held with the Duke of Gloucester, and therefore had their lands soze wasted. Also Mesire Englebert Denguien held on the party of Phillip Duke of Burgondy: and hee, when he take any of the Englishmen, would cause one of their thombs to be cut off, and so sent into England.

Humfrey Duke of Gloucester challengeth the combate with Phillip Duke of Burgoine.

The Duke of Burgoyne fearing lest Iaqueline would deliuer the country of Holland into the possession of the Duke of Gloucester, he assembled his power, and went into Holland, to put the countrey into obeysance. At his comming thither, Iaqueline accompanyed with many Nobles of the countrey, and the Lord Fitz waters, would haue defended his landing, but notwithstanding all the defence they could make, he entred vpon them, and there neare to the Towne of Bzielles, they ioyned in battell, the Duke of Burgoyne and his people against the Englishmen and Hollanders, taking the Dutchesse Iaquelines part: there was a fierce battell on all sides, but in the end, the Hollanders and Englishmen were all discomfited, and there lyed in that place aboue seuen or eight hundred, besides those that were taken prisoners: the Lord Fitzwaters hardly escaped.

After this battell got by the Duke of Burgoyne, diuers Townes of the country reuolted to him against Iaqueline the Dutchesse, as Doozdrecht Sericzee, and many other. Shortly after, the Duke of Burgoyne leauing garrisons in those Townes that obeyed him, to make resistance against the Dutchesse that lay in the Towne of Gaut hee returned into his countrey of Flanders and Artois, there to prepare such abilliments as were necessary for him to vse at the combate appointed betwixt him and the Duke of Gloucester. The Duke of Gloucester likewise in England made his prouision of his abilliments and furniture, but the Duke of Bedford bzother to the Duke of Gloucester, tooke great paines to make them friends: and also the counsell of the yong King of England, were nothing content with this variance, doubting lest it might bee occasion that the Duke of Burgoyne might withdraw himselfe from their amitie, whereby their business in France should be hindered. The Duke of Bedford therefore take his iourney from Paris to Calice, and so into England, to the end to agree the saide Duke.: hee take with him the Dutchesse his wife, and not past a foure or fiue hundred men.

1425.

About Michaelmas Peter duke of Coimbze, Prince of Poztugall came into England, and was honozably receiued and feasted by the Kings vncles, and was also elected into the order of the garter. An. Reg. 4.

When Humfrey Duke of Gloucester vnderstood that Pope Martine the fift had giuen sentence, that the first marriage with the duke of Bzabant and Iaqueline was good and effectuall, and the second espousalles celebrated with the Duke of Gloucester and the sayd Iaqueline to be vnlawfull, he began to waxe weary of her, by whom he neuer had profit, but losse, and tooke to his wife by a second marriage Elianor Cobham, daughter to Reignold Cobham Lord of Sterbozow, which Elianor before was his yonker paramour, to his great repzoch, as was then noted. Humfrey D. of Gloucester married Elianor Cobham.

The morrow after Simon and Iudes day, when the Maior of London had bene at Westminster to take his charge, as the custome is, at such time as he was, holding his great dinner, he was by the duke of Gloucester Lord protector sent for in speedy manner, and when he came to his presence, he gaue to him commandement, to see the City were surely watched in the night following and so it was done. Rob. Fabian. Debate betweene the Duke of Gloucester and the Bishop of Winchester.

On the next morrow about 9. of the clocke, certaine seruants of the Bishop of Winchester, vnto whom the said Protector, would haue entred the City by the Bridge, but the warders or keepers thereof, kept them out by force, as before they were commanded, wherewith they being grieuously discontented, gathered to them a greater number of Archers, and men of armes, and assaulted the gate with that and other meanes of war, insomuch, that the commons of the City shut in their shops, and sped them thither in great number, so that great bloudshed would haue followed, had not the wisedome of the Maior & Aldermen stayed the matter in time.

The Archbishoppe of Canterbury with the Duke of Quinbze called the Prince of Portugall and other, toke great labour vpon them to pacifie this variance betwixt the Vncle and the Nephew, the Protector and the Bishop, insomuch, that they rode betweene them eight times, ere they might bring them to any reasonable conformitie, and lastly they agreed to stand to the rule of the Duke of Bedford, Regent of France, or of such as he would assigne, whereupon the City was set in more quiet, and the Bishop of Winchester wrote a letter to the Duke of Bedford, Lord Regent, as followeth.

Right high and mighty Prince, and right noble, and after one lowest earthly Lord, I recommend me vnto your grace with all my heart: and as yée desire the welfare of the King our soueraigne Lord, and of his Realmes of England and of France, and your owne weale, with all yours, hast you hither, for by my troth, and ye tarry long, we shall put this land in ieopardy with a field, such a brother yée haue here, God make him a good man. For your wisedome knoweth well, that the profit of France standeth in the welfare of England. Written at London, the last of October.

Bishop of Winchesters letters to the Duke of Bedford.

On the tenth day of January next ensuing, the said Duke of Bedford with his wife, came vnto London, and with them also came the said Bishop of Winchester, and the Maior and Citizens receiued him at Berton, and conueyed him through the City vnto Westminster, where hee was lodged in the Kings pallace, and the Bishoppe of Winchester was lodged within the Abbots lodging. On the morrow following, the Maior presented the Regent with a payre of basins of siluer, and ouer-gilt, and in them a 1000. markes of golde. The twentie one of February, began a great Councell at Saint Albons, which was afterward remoued to Northampton; but for that no due conclusion might be made, on the 15. of March, was called a Parliament at Leicester, the which endured till the 25. day of June. This was called the Parliament of Battes, because men being forbidden to bring swords or other weapons, brought great battes and staues on their neckes, and when those weapons were inhibited them, they take stones and plomets of lead. During this Parliament, the variance betwixt the two Lords was debated, insomuch,

1426. Parliament at Leicester.

that the Duke of Glocester put a bill of complaint against the Bishop, containing fiue articles, all which articles, were by the Bishop sufficiently answered, and finally, by the counsell of the Lord Regent, all the matters of variance betweene the fayde two Lords, were put to the examination and iudgement, with the assistance of the Lords of the Parliament, Henry Archbishop of Canterbury, Thomas Duke of Excester, John Duke of Norfolke, Thomas Bishop of Durham, Phillip Bishop of Worcester, John Bishop of Bathe, Humfrey Earle of Stafford, Ralph Lord Cromewell, and maister William Alenewike, then keper of the priuy seale, which Lords made a decree and award, so that either party toke other by the hand with friendly and louing words, none hauing aduantage of other. Vpon Whitsonday following, was a solemne feast holden at Leicester aforesaid, where the Regent doubbed King Henry Knight, and then forthwith the King dubbed Richard Duke of Yorke, that after was Father to King Edward the fourth, and other to the number of forty.

The Earle of Cambridge was made Duke of Yorke, and the Earle Marshall D. of Norfolke.

After the Parliament, the King went to Killingworth Castle.

On Saturday the euen of Saint Michaell the Archangell, in the morning before day, betwixt the houres of one and two of the clocke, began a terrible earth-quake, with lightning and thonder, which continued the space of two houres, and was vniuersall through the world, so that men had thought the world as then should haue ended, and the generall doome to haue followed. The vnreasonable beasts roared and drew to the Townes, with hideous noyse. Also the fowles of the ayre likewise cryed out: such was the woorke of God, at that time to call his people to repentance.

An. reg. 5. John Audley in earth-quaking two houres.

On New-yeres day Thomas Beawford the Duke of Excester deceased at Ozenewich, and was buried at S. Edmondsbury in Suffolke. Thomas Beawchampe Earle of Warwike was made maister & gouernor vnto the King during his nonage. 1425.

About the purification of our Lady, the Duke of Bedford Regent of France, with his wife and family passed the seas vnto Caleis, and so through Picardy into France: but ere he departed from Caleis, to wit, vpon the feast day of the Annunciation of our Lady, the Bishop of Winchester, within the Church of our Lady of Caleis, was created Cardinall, and after the solemnity done, the Regent take him on his right hand, and so conueyed him vnto his lodging. 1426.

This yere was vnseasonable weathering, for it rained most part continually from Easter to Michaelmas. Ro. Gagu.

This yere the Duke of Alanson, that before was taken prisoner at the battell of Vernoile in Perch, was deliuered for a raunsome of 200000. scutz of gold, which was 50000. marks sterling. Rob. Fabian.

This yere also, the Earle of Salisbury accompanied with the Earle of Suffolke, the L. Talbot, and other, laid a strong siege vnto the

City of Orleance, and held the Citizens very straight, and maugre the Duke of Orleance, and the Marshall of France, the Englishmen wanne from them diuers strong holdes adioyning to the City, and forced them to burne a great part of their suburbes: but one day as the saide Earle of Salisbury, Thomas Mountagew, rested him at a bay window, a gunne was leuelled out of the City, the shot whereof thiered so the bars of the pyon grate, that one of the same barres stroke the Earle on the head, bearing away one of his eyes, and the one side of his cheke. Sir Thomas Gargraue was likewise stricken, and dyed within two dayes. The Earle was conueyed to Meun on Loyre, where, after eight dayes he likewise departed the world, whose body was conueyed into England with all funerall pompe, and buried at Bisham in Barkeshire by his progenitors, leauing behinde him one onely daughter named Alice, married to Richard Neuill Son to Ralph Earle of Westmerland. The domage that the Realme of England receiued by the death of this notable man manifestly appeared, in that immediately after his death the prosperous god successe which the Englishmen had hadde, began to decline. In his place was appointed the Earle of Suffolke to bee Lieutenant and Captaine of the siege, ioyning with him the Lord Scales, the Lord Talbot, Sir John Fastolph, and diuers other valiant Captaines.

An. reg. 6. Earle of Salisbury slaine.

Parliament. Subsidy.

In a Parliament at Westminster was granted to the king a subsidy of euery tunne of wine three shillings, and of other marchandise, except Woll, fell, and cloth, twelue pence of the pound. Also of euery Parish through the Realme (exceptrd Cities and Boroughs) the benefice being in value ten markes, ten of that Parish should pay fiue shillings and eight pence, euery man eight pence: and of euery benefice that were ten pound, ten parishioners to pay thirteene shillings and foure pence, and so rate and rate-like of euery benefice from the lowest to the highest. And for the inhabitants of Cities and Boroughs, euery man being in value twenty shillings, aboue his houshold stuffe, and the apparell of him and his wife, should pay foure pence, and so after that rate vnto the richest. 1427. 1428. An. reg. 7.

Verses of stout dames to checke a great Duke in open Parliament.

In this Parliament there was one mistris Stokes with diuers other stout women of London, of good reckoning, well apparrelled, came openly to the vpper Parliament and deliuered letters to the Duke of Glocester, and to the Archbishops, and to the other Lords there present, containing matter of rebuke and sharpe reprehention of the Duke of Glocester, because he would not deliuer his wife Iaqueline out of her grieuous imprisonment, being then holde prisoner by the Duke of Burgondy, suffering her there to remaine so vnkindly, and for his publike keeping by him another adultresse, contrary to the law of God, and the honourable estate of matrimony: but what good successe their labours toke, my Author reporteth not.

Cardinall of Winchester.

On the first of September the Cardinall of Winchester being returned from beyond the seas, was met by the Maior and his brethren, and certaine citizens of London on horsebacke without the City, and so brought to his pallace in Southwarke.

Duke of Norfolke escaped drowning.

The night of November the Duke of Norfolke was like to haue bene drowned, passing from S. Mary Ouery stayres through London bridge, betwixt foure and fiue of the clocke at night, his barge being set vpon the piles ouerwhelmed, so that to the number of 30. persons were drowned, and the Duke with two or three other that escaped were drawne by with ropes. 1429.

King Henry kept his feast of Christs nacluitie at Eltham.

The 21. of February Richard Neuill was made Earle of Salisbury.

King Henry kept his Easter at Hartford.

So it fell out, that in the Lent season, diuers ordinance and artillery about Orleance began to ware scant in the English campe, wherefore the Earle of Suffolke appointed Sir John Fastolph, Sir Thomas Rampstone, and Sir Philippe Helle, with their retinues, to ride to Paris to the Lord regent, to informe him of that lacke, who incontinent prouided victuall, artillerie and munitions necessary, and loaded therewith many Chariots and Carts: and for the safe conueyance of the same, he appointed Sir Simon Morbrier prouost of Paris, with the guard of the City and other, to accompany Sir John Fastolph to the army lying at the siege of Orleance: they were in all to the number of 1500. men: these with great difficultie came to the English Campe before Orleance, where they were ioyfully receiued, & commended for their valiant withstanding of enemies by the way, as they marched. The Earle of Suffolke being thus victualled, continued the siege, and euery day almost skirmished with the Frenchmen, who at length offered to create to saue themselues and their City from Captiuitie, they submit the City, themselues and all theirs vnder the obeisance of the Duke of Burgoine, because he was extract out of the blood royall of France. The Duke with thankes certified them againe, that he would gladly receiue them, if the Duke of Bedford Lord Regent would therewith be contented. Whereupon messengers were dispatched to the Regent, who thought it neyther conuenient nor honourable, that a City so long besieged by the King of Englands power, should be deliuered to any other forraine Prince. Whereupon the Regent answered the Burgonian Ambassadors, that sith the King of Englands had bene at all the charges about the siege and winning of the Citie, it was not consonant to reason, that the Duke should enioy the fruits of another mans charge: hereof followed a double mischiefe to the English proceedings in the Realme of France, for both the Burgoine conceiued an inward grudge against the Englishmen, for that he supposed them to enuy his glory: and againe,

a time, the Englishmen left the siege of Orleance, which by this treaty they might have recouered out of their enemies hands, and putte their friends in possession of it.

While this treaty was in hand, Charles of France studied daily how to prouide a remedy by the delinery of his in Orleance out of present danger. And euen in the same time, a monstrous woman, named Ieanne la pucelle de Dieu, was presented vnto him at Chinon, whereas then he solourned, of which woman, her birth, qualities, and estate, the French Hystories make mention at large, but to bee short, so much credit was giuen vnto her, that she was honoured as a Saint, and so she handled the matter, that she was thought to be sent from God to the ayd of the French K. Charles, the seuenth of that name. This woman being armed at all points like a valiant Captaine, rode from Poictiers to Bloys, and there found men of warre, victuall and munitions ready to bee conueyed to Orleance. Here was it knowne that the Englishmen kept not so diligent watch as they had beene accustomed to doe, and therefore this Maid with their French Captaines, comming forward in the dead time of the night, and in a great rayne and thunder, they entered into the City with all their victuall, artillery, and other necessaries. The next day the Englishmen boldly assaulted the towne, but the Frenchmen defended the walles so, as no great feate chaunced that day betweene them. The Bastard of Orleance gaue knowledge to the Duke of Alanson in what danger the towne stood without his present helpe, who comming within two leagues of the City, gaue knowledge to them within, that they should be ready the next day to receiue him, which accordingly was accomplished: for the Englishmen suffered him and his army to enter. On the next day in the morning, the Frenchmen all together issued out of the Towne, and wanne the bastell of Saint Low by assault, and set it on fire. And after they likewise assaulted the tower at the Bridge foote, and toke it ere the L. Talbot could come to the succours, in the which William Gladesdale also Captaine was slaine, with the Lord Molins and the Lord Poynings also.

The Maiden by God so called by the French.

Lord Molins slaine.

The French men with this good lucke, fetched a compasse about toward the bastell, which was in the keping of the Lord Talbot, the which like a good Captaine, without all feare issued forth against them, and gaue them a sharpe encounter, that they fled againe into the City with great losse of men and small artillery: of Englishmen were lost in the two battelles to the number of fiue hundred men, of there about. The Earle of Suffolke, the Lord Talbot, the Lord Scales, and other Captaines assembled together in councell, where it was amongst them determined to leaue their fortresses and bastels, and to assemble in the plaine fielde, there to abide all the day to see if the French men would issue forth to fight with them. But when the Frenchmen durst not come forth, the Englishmen set fire on their lodgings, and departed in good order of battell from Orleance. And the next day which was the eight of May, the Earle of Suffolke rode to Iergeaux with foure hundred men, and the Lord Talbot with another company turned to Pewn: and after he had fortified that Towne, he went to the towne of Louale, and wan it together with the Castle.

The siege of Orleance broken vp.

Thus when the Englishmen seuered themselues into garrisons, the Duke of Alanson, the Bastard of Orleance, Ieanne la pucelle, the Lord Sancourt, and diuers other Captaines of the Frenchmen came on the 12. of June before the Towne of Iergeaux: where the Earle of Suffolke and his two brethren solourned, and gaue to the Towne so fierce an assault on three parts, that Poiton de Sentrailes perceiuing another part voyde of defence, scaled the walles on that side, and without difficulty toke the Towne, and slew Sir Alexander Poole, brother to the Earle, and many other to the number of two hundred, but the French lost three hundred good men. Of the Englishmen were taken 40. with the Earle of Suffolke and his brother Iohn. The Frenchmen as they went to Orleance, slew their prisoners all sauing the Earle and his brother. Shortly after the same French army came to Mahun, where they toke the Tower at the bridge foote, and put therein a garrison: from thence they remoued to Bangeney, and constrayned them in the Towne to yeeld. At this place there came to the Duke of Alanson, the new Constable Arthur of Britaine, and the Lord Dalbert with other, also the Earle of Tankeruile came to them, so that they were now ioyned to the number of 23000. men, the which shortly after fought with the Lord Talbot, neere to a village in Beause, called Patay, at which battell, the Lord Talbot was sore woonded at the backe, and taken, and the rest put to flight: in which fight were slaine aboue 1200. and sixty taken, of whom the Lord Talbot, the Lord Scales, the Lord Hungerford, and Sir Thomas Ramston were chiefe. This ouerthrow did so much abash the Englishmen, that immediately thereupon the Townes of Januile, Mahun, Fyst, and diuers other returned from the English part and became French. Charles the French King perceiuing fortune to smile vpon him, determined to conquer the City of Reimes that he might be there Crowned, in his iourney thitherward he besieged the City of Aurerre, and had it. From thence hee went before Troyes which was deliuered to him, and then Chalons, &c. In semblable deede they of Reimes yeeld themselues: in the which Towne the said Charles (in the presence of the Dukes of Loraine, and Barre, and of all the Noble men of his faction) was sacred King of France, by the name of Charles the seuenth.

Alexander Poole slaine. Earle of Suffolke taken by the French.

The Duke of Bedford aduertised of all these doings, assembled his power about him, and hauing together 10000. men, besides Normans, departed out of Paris in warlike fashion, and passing through Vry to Monstereau Fault Yone, sent by his Herault Bedford, letters to the French King, signifying to him, that where he had contrary to his finall conclusion, accepted otherwise his brother King Henry the first, and King Charles the first, by allurement of a diuelish witch, taken vpon him the name, title, and dignity of the king of France, and further, had by murther, death, craft, and deceitfull meanes diuelently gotten, and wrongfully kept diuers Cities and Townes belonging to the King of England his Nephew: for proofe whereof he was come downe from Paris with his army, into the country of Vry, by dint of sword to proue his writing and cause true, willing his enemies to chose the place, and in the same he would giue him battell. The new French king being come from Reimes to Dampmartine, studying how he might compasse them in Paris, was halfe abashed at this message, but yet to set a good countenance on the matter, he answered the Herault that hee would sooner seeke his master, than his master should neede to pursue him. The Duke of Bedford hearing this answere, marched toward the King, and pitched his field in a strong place. The French King though at the first he meant to haue abiden battell, yet when he vnderstood that the Duke was equall with him in number of people, he changed his purpose, and turned with his army a little out of the way. The Duke of Bedford perceiuing his faint courage, followed him by Hils e Dales, till hee came to a Towne not farre from Senlis, where he found the French King and his army lodged: wherefore he ordered his battels, setting the Archers before, and himselfe with the Noble men in the maine battell, and put the Normans on both sides for wings. The French King also ordered his battels to the most aduantage. Thus these two armies lay two dayes and two nights, either in sight of other without any great doing, except a few skirmishes. At length in the dead of the night, as priuily as might be, the French King hyde by his campe, and fled to Vry. The Duke of Bedford had much adoe to stay his people in the morning from pursuit of the French Kings army: but for that he mistrusted the Parisians, he would not depart far from that City: and so returned thither againe.

An. Reg. 8.

In this season Pope Martine the fift, meaning to subdue the Bohemians that dissented from the Church of Rome in matters of faith, and religion, appointed Henry Bewford Bishop of Winchester, Cardinall of S. Cussby to be his Legate in an army to inuade the kingdome of Bohemie, and to bring a power of men with him out of England, and because the warre touched the Religion, he licensed the Cardinall to take a tenth of the spiritualitty, the Bishop gathered the money, and assembled 4000. men and more. As this Bishop was come to Douer, ready to haue passed the Seas into Flanders, the Duke of Glocester (hauing receiued Letters from the Duke of Bedford, containing an earnest request to release him with men of warre) writ to the Bishop of Winchester, willing him to passe with all his army toward the Duke of Bedford. The Cardinall, lest hee should runne into the note of infamy, if he refused to ayde the Regent of France, passed ouer with his power, and brought the same into his coasts to the City of Paris, where he remayned not long, but passed on his iourney towards Boheme, from whence in short time he returned into England.

The first of November, King Henry being about the age of 9. yeres, was solemnly crowned in Saint Peters Church of Westminster, at whose Coronation were made 26. Knights of the Bath, and after solemnization in the Church finished, an honourable feast in the great hall of Westminster was kept, whereof pee may read a large discourse in Robert Fabian. After which feast great preparations was made for the Kings iourney into France.

King Henry crowned.

Richard Duke of Yorke was constituted Constable of England in absence of Iohn Duke of Bedford Regent of France, hee was made Constable, for, and because of a battell to bee fought betweene Iohn Vpton, and Iohn Downe; he was confirmed Constable of England for terme of life, so that he did no wayes derogate Iohn Duke of Bedford, that was beyond the sea, dated the 22. of January. 1430.

Combat fought in Smithfield.

The foure and twentieth of January a battel was done in Smithfield within the lists before the King, betweene two men of Feuersham in Kent, Iohn Vpton notary appelant, and Iohn Downe Gentleman defendant; Iohn Vpton put vpon Iohn Downe, that he and his compiers should imagine the Kings death, the day of his Coronation: when they had long fought, the King tooke vp the matter and forgaue both parties.

The 27. day of April the King tooke shipping at Douer, and landed the same day at Caleis, hauing in his company the Dukes of Yorke and Norfolke, the Bishops of Bath, Ely, and Rochester, the Earles of Huntington, Stafford, Warwicke, Oxford, Deuonshire, Pontaine of Ewe, and of Dymond, and Barons, the Lord Boucher, Beaumond, Typtoft, Fitz water, Roos, Arundale, Audley, Fauconbridge, Gray, Cordner Scroope, and Wels.

While the King remained at Caleis, many skirmishes were fought betweene the English men and the French in diuers parts of France, and the Frenchmen preuailed greatly by helpe of a woman which they named, The Mayden of God. So that lastly shee with her company came to the towne of Champaigne, to the end to remoue the siege laide thereunto by the Duke of Burgoyne and other of the English Captaines, and the 22. of May shee gaue battell to the Englishmen, and fought with them a long time, but in the end by the manhood of a Burgonian Knight named Sir Iohn Luxemborough, shee was taken aliue, and her company discomfited, shee was conueyed to the citty of Roane, and there kept a season, where shee fayned her selfe to be with child, but when the contrary was knowne, shee was condemned and burnt.

La pucelle de Dieu.

After this, King Henry by small iourneyes into

into France, came to Paris, where hee was honorably received of the Citizens and taken for their soueraigne Lord and King, whiles he there remained (saith Gagwine) the Frenchmen wanne many holdes of the Englishmen, and the Burgonians in the countrey of Bry.

The third of August died Ioan Countesse of Armond, and was buried at Saint Thomas of Acres in London:

Iohn Duke of Norfolke take againe the Townes of Dampmartine, and the Chace Mongay with diuers other townes. The Earle of Stafford take the towne of Bryn, County Robert, and from thence foraged all the countrey to Sens, and after take Duesney in Bry, Grand Pury, and Rampilon.

1431. Conspiracie at Abington.

Some after Easter the Lord Protector was warned of an assembly of certaine lewde persons, vnder pretence of religious minded men, to bee assembled at Abington, wherefore hee sent thither certaine persons, and also rode thither himselfe, and there arrested the Baily of the Towne named William Mardeuil a weauer, the which was appointed for a Captaine, who had named himselfe Iacke Sharpe of Wigmore laud in Wales, who being examined, confessed that he meant to haue done many misse chiefes, especially against Priests, so that he would haue made their heads as cheape as sheepes heads (that is to say) three or foure a penny (or as some write, ten for a penny): many of his complices were taken and sent to diuers prisons. Their Captaine was drawne, hanged, and headed at Abington, and his head was sent to London, and set on the bridge: his other fautors were executed in diuers places and countries to the terror of other. Also the thirteene of July, Richard Russell Woolman, was drawne, hanged, and quartered for that he would haue made Dukes and Earles at his pleasure.

They ordered many things against the clergy to make them odious.

Richard Roos Lord Boucther deceased, and was buried at Westminster.

King Henry remaining still in France, the Earle of Arundale accompanyed with 2000. Englishmen, sent certaine of his company vnto a Towne, called Beaumont, to prouoke the Frenchmen to issue out of the Towne, which small company, when Boyssicant and Sentrailes then Captaines beheld, they with their souldiers sped them forth to take the said Englishmen, the which by little and little gaue backe, till they had coiled the Frenchmen a good space from the Towne, and then set vpon them with a stout courage, and held them on hand till the Earle with his company rescued them: then betwixt them was a cruell fight, but in the end the Frenchmen were chased and the said Sentrailes with many soldiers of the said Towne were slaine.

In the moneth of November, King Henry by small iournies went into France, remoued from Roan to Monteuile, and so to S. Dionesse, and from to Paris, where he was received with great honour by the Citizens, and taken for their soueraigne Lord and King. There were in his company of his owne nation, his vncle the Cardinall of Winchester, Iohn Kempe Cardinall and Archbishop of Yorke, the Dukes of Bedford, of Yorke, and Norffolke, the Earles of Warwicke, Salisbury, Oxford, Huntington, Dymond, Pointaine, and Suffolke. Of Gascoigne there were the Earles of Longueuile, and March, besides many Noble men of England, Gwine, and Normandie: and the cheefe of the French Nation, were the Dukes of Burgoyne and Lewes of Luxemburg Cardinall and Chancellor of France for King Henry: the Bishops of Beauoys and Noyne both peeres of France, besides the Bishop of Paris, and diuers other Bishops, the Earle of Vantemount and other Noble men. And he had a guard of 3000. Archers some on horsebacke, some on foote. To speake of the honour, wherewith he was receiued into the City of Paris, what pageants were prepared, and how richly the gates, streets, and bridges on euery side were hanged with costly clothes of Arras and tapestry, it would be too long a processe.

On the seuenth day of December King Henry was Crowned in Paris, by the Cardinall of Winchester, at the which Coronation was present, the Duke of Burgoyne, the Duke of Bedford Regent, and diuers other Nobles of France. After the solemnity of this feast was ended, the King departed from Paris, and so came to Roane, where he held his Christmas, and that done he returned to Caleis, where when hee had soiourned a season, hee take shipping and returned into England, and landed at Douer the eleuenth of February, and then riding toward London, hee was met on Barham Downe, betwixt Douer and Canterbury, by a great company of Gentiles and commons of Kent, all clad in a liuery with red hoods, the which accompanied him till hee came to Blackheath, which was on the one and twentieth day of February, where he was mette by the Maior of London, who rode in a Gowne of crimson Veluet, his Aldermen in scarlet, and the Citizens all in white gownes and red hoods, with diuers workes or cognisances broidered vpon their sleeues after the faculty of their mysteries or crafts: and after due obeysance and saluting of the King, they rode on before him towards the City. And when the King was come to the bridge, there was deuised a mighty Giant, standing with a sword drawne in his hand, hauing written certaine speeches in meeter of great reioycing and welcomming of the King to the City, on the middest of the bridge, and in diuers other places of the City, were diuers faire and sumptuous pageants replenished with goodly and beautifull personages, the order and speeches whereof, are set downe by Robert Fabian in his Chronicle. Thus being conueyed to his pallace at Westminster, the Maior with the Citizens returned to London, and on the 24. day of February, the Maior and Aldermen rode to the King, and presented him with a Bampire of golde, and therein a thousand pound of Nobles.

King Henry crowned at Paris. 1432.

This

This yeere, by reason of the souldiers of Caleis, a restraint was made there of the Wooll, for they were not content of their wages: wherefore the Duke of Bedford, Regent of France, came downe thither in Easter weeke, at which time, many souldiours were arrested: and rode againe to Dirwine. And hauing not long since buried the Lady Anne his late wife, Sister to the Duke of Burgoigne, hee married there the Lady Iequet, the daughter to Peter, Earle of Saint Paul, and shortly after, returned to Caleis, where he caused foure of those Souldiours to be beheaded on the 11. of Iune, and 120. souldiours to be banished the Towne, besides, 120. that were banished before that time. And vpon Mid-sommer eeuen, the Lord Regent, with his new wedded spouse came to London, and remained there till the latter end of August, and then returned againe to Paris.

The Duke of Burgoigne was nothing pleased with this new aliance contracted by the Duke of Bedford, with the house of Lutzenbourgh, but the marriage was consummate ere hee could finde any meane to preuent it.

The Frenchmen raised a crue, and suddenly take the Towne of Saint Valary in Normandy, neere to the Riuer of Some, and another army vnder the leading of Sir Ambrose de Lore, walled all the Countrey about Caue.

The Duke of Bedford not minding to be idle, sent the Earle of Arundel, Henry the Earle of Warwicks sonne, the Lord Lisle, Adam Partball of France for King Henry, and 1200. men at war, with ordinance and munitions to beseege the Towne of Laigny vpon the Riuer of Parne, the Earle with the shot of a Canon, brake the Arch of the bridge, and got from the Frenchmen their bulwarke, and set it on fire, diuers assaults were made, but the Towne was well defended by eight hundred men of armes, besides other souldiours. The Duke of Bedford hereof aduertised, gathered an army of 6000. men, whereof were Captaines, Robert, Lord Willoughby, Sir Andrew Ogard, Chamberlane to the Duke, Sir Iohn Saluaine, Bayliffe of Roane, Sir Iohn Mountgomery, Bayliffe of Caux, Sir Philip Hall, Baliffe of Vernanele, Sir Richard Ratcliffe, deputy of Caleis, Sir Ralph Neuil, Sir Ralph Standish, S. Ioh. Handford, Sir Richard Enthin, Sir Richard Harington, Baliffe of Eureux, Sir William Fulthrope, Sir Thomas Griffith of Ireland, Dauid Hall, Thomas Strangwish, Leonard Ormstone, Esquires, and Thomas Gerard. The Duke of Bedford with his Army came to the siege before Laigny, where hee made a Bridge of Boats, and brought his Ordinance to neere the Towne, that to all people it seemed not long able to resist: but the bastard of Orliance Earle of Dunops, with other hardy Captaines, valiantly defended it. At the length, the French King perceiuing this Towne to be the Key betweene the Territorie of Burgoigne, English and French, and that the losse thereof should returne him to irrecouerable damage, sent the Lord of Rieux, Poyton, the Hire, the Lord Gawcourt, and 6000. men, with plenty of victuals, to the intent, either to raise the siege, or at the least to victuall the Towne. The Frenchmen framed themselues in order of battell, as though they would doe much, but did nothing in effect: but that whilest part of them maintained a Skirmith, another part conueyed into the Towne thirty Oxen, and other victuall. In that Skirmith were slaine diuers valiant Frenchmen, and the rest considering how the English men were planted, being now the beginning of August, they remooued and went into Foyt vnder Perre, where, by a Bridge made of empty pipes, they passed into the Ile of France. The Duke of Bedford not minding to lose the moze for the lesse, raised his siege, and returned to Paris, nothing moze minding, then to trie his quarrell by dint of sword against his enemies, if they would thereto agree. And thereupon, he sent Bedford his Herault to the Lord Gawcourt and other Captaines of the French army, offering them battell within a conuenient time, and where they would appoint. To which Officer at armes, the Captaines answered, that battell they feared not, nor the English force they much regarded, but they said there was time to gaine, and time to lose, of the which they doubted not, to espie the one or the other, to their gaine or losse.

Anno Reg. 1

The 25. of November, the Lord Fitzwater was drowned on the Sea, and many other harmes were done by tempest.

The Regent, sent Peter of Lerenbourgh, Earle of Saint Paul, and Robert, Lord Willoughby, with a competent number of men to beseege the Towne of Saint Valary, which the French men a little before had taken, theis valiant Captaines inuironed the Towne with a strong siege. Within the Towne, were Sir Lewes de Vicount, Sir Philip de la Towre, and Sir Reignold de Verseiles, Captaines, with three hundred good fighting men, which by the space of three weekes, manfully defended the same. But then perceiuing the fiercenesse of the English-men, and the weakenesse of themselues, and hauing no hope of reliefe, rendered the Towne, their Horse and Harneise, onely saued.

1433.

After this Towne was thus gotten, the Earle of Saint Paul, and the Lord Willoughby returned to the Regent, where they were well welcommed, and after the said Earle departed from Paris, to lay siege to the Castle of Monches, but being incamped neere to the Towne of Blangy, hee by a sudden malady finished his daies, and departed this life, leauing his seignories to Lewes his sonne and heyre.

On the 8th day of July, King Henry began his Parliament at Westminster, continued it till Lammas, and then adiourned it vntill Saint Edwards Tide. Parliament.

This yeere, in the South-West appeared a blazing starre.

During the raigne of this King Henry the first, were Lieutenants ouer the Realme of Ireland, Edmond, Earle of March, and Iames Earle of Ormond his vncle: Iohn Sutton

Iz Knight

Knight, Lord of Dudley, and Sir Tho. Strange his deputy: Sir Thomas Stanley, and Sir Christopher Planket his deputy: Lyon, Lord Welles, and the Earle of Ormond his deputy: James, Earle of Ormond, the Kings Lieutenant by himselfe: John, Earle of Shrewsbury, and the Archbishop of Dublin, Lord Justice in his absence: Richard Plantagenet, Duke of Yorke, father to Edward the fourth, and Earle of Ulster, had the Office of Lieutenant by Letters Patents, during the space of ten yeeres, who deputed vnder him at seuerall times, the Earles of Dublin, Richard Fitz Eustace, Knight, James, Earle of Ormond, and Thomas Fitz Morris, Earle of Kildare: to this, Richard then resident in Dublin, was borne within the Castle there, the second Sonne, George, Duke of Clarence, afterward drowned in a Butte of Malmesey.

1434. John, Lord Talbot.

John, Lord Talbot, gathered a crew of chosen men of warre in England, to the number of 800. and about the beginning of the moneth of March, sayled into Normandy, and passed by Roane towards Paris, and in his way, hee tooke the strong Castle of Jeing, betweene Beaubois and Gysors, and caused all the Frenchmen within, to be hanged on the walls, and after rased the Castle, and came to the Regent, Duke of Bedford at Paris. The presence of which renowned Captaine, so encouraged the hearts of the English-Nation, that they thought nothing able to resist their puissance, and so discouraged the hearts of the French-men, that they were in doubt, whether it were better to fight or to flie, for hee was a chosen Captaine, and in martiall feats fully instructed. When this hardy Baron had communed with the Regent, hee departed from Paris with his army, and besieged the Castle of Beaumont vpon Oise, whereof was Captaine Sir Amadour de Vigulolies, brother to the Hire: which Castle was soone rendered vpon condition. After that, he recouered, without long siege, the Townes of Creile, the Bridge of Saint Varens, the new Towne of Cmay, Crispy in Valoys, and Clearmount in Beaubois: and so with great riches, and rich prysoners, hee returned againe to Paris.

The Towne of Saint Denis, which is within two English miles of Paris, was gotten by the practice of one John Norice, a Knight of Picardie, from Matthew Gougly, *alias* Gowgh, and Thomas Kiriel, Captaines, they slew there many Englishmen, and tooke many prisoners, but soone after, the Captaines with strength taken from Paris, layd such a strong siege about Saint Denis, that finally they agreed to deliuer the Towne to the English men.

In the same season, the Earle of Arundell tooke the Castle of Boneline, and raced it to the ground: and after tooke the castle of Dorle, and from thence came to Saint Selerine, where the Lord Ambrose de Lore was Captaine, issued out and fought with the Englishmen so eagerly at the first, that hee drove them backe an arrow shoot: but the Earle so incouraged his men, that they tooke new courages to them, and set so fiercely on the Frenchmen, that they slew a great number, and drove the remnant into the Towne. After this victory, hee besieged Louiers, whereof was Captaine the Hire, and his brother, which rendered the Towne without stroke. Then the Earle environed the Towne of Saint Selerine with a strong siege, when hee had lyen heere almost 3. moneths, euery day attempting somewhat, for the performance of his enterprise: in conclusion, at the three moneths end, hee gate so fierce assault, that by force he entred the Town, and slew John Almaine, and Guilaam Saint Aubine the chiefe Captaines, and 8. hundred of their men of warre, and the children of Loire were taken prisoners: he replenished the towne, and made Captaine Sir John Cornewall. Then he besieged the strong Towne of Silly, and the inhabitants deliuered pledges vpon condition, that if the Towne were not rescued within 30. daies, they should render the Towne into his possession: which offer was taken, and when the time was expired, the Towne was deliuered, where leaving a Garrison, the Earle departed to Pons, and in the meane way tooke the Castle of Pelley and Saint Laurence.

The Lord Willoughby, and Sir Thomas Kiriell returning with great victories out of the parties of Burgoigne, tooke in their way the Towne of Louiers, and furnished it both with men and munition.

The Earle of Arundell intending to haue besieged the Towne of Rey, was there slaine with Ralph Standish: the Earle of Arundell was buried at Beaubois, in the gray Fryers there.

The Earle of Arundell wounded to death.

Anno Reg. 13. Great frost.

Through a great frost, that lasted from the 25. of November, vnto the tenth of February, the Thames was so frozen, that the marchandise which came to the Thames mouth, was there landed, and carryed thorow Kent, to London.

1435.

When the Pope Eugenius the fourth, and his Cardinals after long labour could make no peace betwixt King Henry of England and France, and Charles, also named K. of France, they at length made a peace betwixt the said Charles, and Philip, Duke of Burgoigne whereby the said Duke of Borgoigne became bitter enemy to the King of England, and soone after, the said Duke began the order of the Lilly, and the golden fleece, and ordained certaine Knights of that order, and made thereunto many statutes, whereof some of them were like vnto the statutes of the Garter.

The Duke of Bedford dyed. E. Hall. Anno Reg. 14.

This yeere, on the 14th of September, dyed John, Duke of Bedford, Regent of France, a man as politike in peace, as hardy in warre, and yet no more hardy then mercifull, when hee had the victory, whose body was with all solemnitie pompe, and solemne exequies buried in the Cathedrall Church of our Lady in Roane, on the North side of the high Altar, vnder a sumptuous and costly Monument: which Tombe when King Lewes the 11. by certaine vndiscreete persons was counselled to deface, affirming that it was a great dishonour, both to the King

King and to the Realme, to see the enemy of his father, and theirs, to haue so solemne and rich memoriall: he answered, saying, what honour shall it be to vs, or to you, to breake this Monument, and to pull out of the ground the dead bones of him, whom in his life time, neither my father nor your progenitors, with all their puissance, were once able to make flie one foote backeward: but by his strength, wit, and policie kept them all out of the principall dominions of the Realme of France, and out of this Noble Dutchy of Normandy: wherefore I say, first, God saue his soule, and let his body now lie in rest, which when hee was alive, would haue disquieted the proudest of vs all: and for the Tomb, I assure it you, is not so decent, nor conuenient as his honour and acts deserued.

I worthy saying of a King against defacers of monuments.

Richard, Duke of Yorke, made Regent of France.

After the death of the Noble Prince, the Duke of Bedford, the Frenchmen began not onely to withdraw their obedience, which they had by oth promised to the King of England, but also tooke sword in hand, and expelled the Englishmen: but the Englishmen appointed for Regent in France, Richard, Duke of Yorke, sonne to Richard, Earle of Cambrige (beheaded at Hampton.) This Richard, now Regent, was so disdained of Edmond, Duke of Somerset, being cousen to the King, that by all meanes possible hee sought his hinderance, by reason wherof, ere the Duke of Yorke could get his dispatch, hee was constrained to linger till the City of Paris, and diuers other the chiefest Townes of France, were gotten by the French King.

1436.

The Duke of Yorke perceiuing his euill-will, openly dissembled that which he inwardly minded, and thus either of them wrought things to the others displeasure, till at length, by mortall warre they were both consumed, with almost all their whole lines and of-springs.

The Normans of the Countrey of Caux, being heartned by the death of the Duke of Bedford, began a new rebellion, slew diuers Englishmen, robbed many Townes that were vnder the English obeysance, and tooke the Towne of Harfleet by assault, and diuers other Townes. But the new Lord Regent being aduertised, sent forth the Lord Scales, Sir Thomas Kiriell, and the Lord Hoo, which so afflicted those rebels of Caux, that they slew aboue 5000. persons, and burnt all the Townes and Villages in the country, not being walled, so that in that part was neither habitation nor tillage, for all the people fled into Britaine, and all the beasts of the Countrey were brought to Candebecke, where a good Sheep was sold for an English penny, and a Cow for twelue pence. Daily was skirmishing in euery part, in so much, that the Lord Scales discomfited at the Rye beside Roan, the Bird, and 1500. valiant Frenchmen, of the Irish, aboue three hundred were taken prisoners, beside 7. goodly fayre courtiers. Amongst other of the prisoners, were Sir Richard Reignald de Fountaines, Sir Alaine Gerund, Alaine de Mounfey, and Geffrey Gram, Captaine of the Scots. But yet this victory and others the like, stayed not the Frenchmen from working treason daily, in so much, that diuers Townes turned to the part of King Charles, and some were taken by practice: as Drappe, Boys de Vincent and other.

3 Cow for 12. pence, and a Sheep for a penny

Here is one chiefe point to be noted, that either the discorde among the chiefe Peeres of the Realme of England (as we haue heard) or the negligence of the Kings Councell, was the losse of the whole dominion of France, betweene the River of Seine and Marne, and in especiall of the Noble City of Paris: for where before were sent ouer thousands for defence of the holds and fortresses, now were sent hundreds, yea, and scores, some rascalls, and some not able to draw a Bow, or beare a Bill: for the Lord Willoughby, and the Bishoppe of Terromanne, which had the Gouernment of the Cittie of Paris, had in their company not passe 2000. Englishmen. Which weaknesse King Charles well perceiuing, hee appointed the Constable, Arthure of Baytaine, the Earle of Dunoys, the Lords De la Roch, and Lisle Adam, with other valiant Captaines, and men of warre, as well Burgonians as French, to goe before Paris, trusting by fauour of certaine Citizens with whom hee had intelligence, thoitly to be Lord of the City, without great losse or battell: so these Captaines came before the City of Paris, but perceiuing that all things succeeded not according to their expectation, they returned to Mount Martyr, and the next day set on the Towne of Saint Diones, where they slew two hundred Englishmen, and vpon composition, permitted the other to depart to Paris.

Thomas Lord Beaumont taken prisoner.

Thomas, Lord Beaumont, which of late was come to Paris with 800 men, issued forth of the City with 600. souldiours, intending to view the doings and number of the French Army, but being espied, hee was suddenly compassed about, so that hee was discomfited and taken, and with him 80. prisoners, besides 200. which were slaine in the field, and the remnant chased to the gates of the City. The Partisans, especially the Master of the Hals, and some of the Vniuersity, and Michael Lellier, and many other Burgesses of the City, perceiuing the weakenesse of the Englishmen, and the force of the Frenchmen, signified to the French Captaines their minds, willing them with all diligence to come, that they might receiue so rich a prey to them to be deliuered. The Constable delaying no time, came with his power, and lodged by the Charterhouse, and the Lord Lisle Adam, approaching to the walls, shewed to the Citizens a Charter, sealed with the great Seale of King Charles, by the which hee had pardoned them their offences, and granted them their old liberties, so that they would be to him true and obedient: which being to them declared, they ranne about the Towne, crying Saint Denis: Viue King Charles. The Englishmen perceiuing this, determined to keepe the gate of S. Diones, but the chaines were drawne, and women and children cast downe stones and scalding water on their heads, and the Citti-

zens slew them, the Bishop of Tirwin, the Lord Willoughby, and Sir Simon Morniher, withdrewto the battle S. Anthony whileft this rumour was in the Towne, the Earle of Dunois, and other scaled the walls, and some passed the River by boats, and opened the gate of Saint James by the which the Constable with his banner displayed, entered. The Bishop, and the Lord Willoughby, defended their fortresse ten dayes, and yeelded. Thus was the Citty of Paris brought into the possession of Charles the French King, &c. Now when Paris, Saint Denis, Saint Germaine, and diuers other Townes in France were taken for lacke of succo, the Duke of Yorke, Regent of France, came ouer into Normandy, with 8000. men, and in his company the Earles of Salisbury and Suffolke, the Lord Falconbridge and other, but this Regent never did good in France, as appeareth by the histories.

Paris yeelded to the French.

The 19. day of July, the Duke of Burgoyne, with a great multitude of Burgonians and Flemmings, appeared before Caleis, and there pight his Pauilions and Tents, at which season was Lieutenant of Caleis, Sir John Ratcliffe Knight, and of the Castle was Lieutenant the Baron of Dudley: this siege endured about three weekes. in which season many knightly Acts were done and exercised on both parts.

Caleis beseeged by the Duke of Burgoyne.

On the second day of August, the Duke of Gloucester, Protector of England, with 500. saples (as some write,) landed at Caleis, and entended vpon the third day following, to haue issued out of the Towne, and to haue given battell to the Flemmings, but (as our English writers testifie) so soone as the Duke of Burgoyne was ware of the great power of the Lord Protector, he tooke with him of his ordinance that hee might lightly carry, and the other that were cumbersome hee left behinde. When the Duke with his hoste was thus fled, the Lord Protector with his people followed him into the Countrey by the space of eleuen daies, in which season, he brent the two townes of Popering and Bell, and returned to Caleis, and so into England.

This yeere, was the Castle or Towne of Rockesborough in Scotland, beliegd by the King of Scots, but when hee heard that Sir Ralph Gray, Knight, was comming thither with a competent number to remoue the siege, an on hee departed, leauing some part of his ordinance behind him, to his great shame and dishonour.

Anno reg. 15.

The third of January, Queene Katherine late wife to Henry the fift, and Mother to King Henry the first, departed out of this transitory life at Bermondsey, and on the eighth of February, her body was brought to Saint Katherins by the Tower, from thence to Saint Pauls, and so was buryed at Westminster in our Ladies Chappell, and her Coopes being taken vp againe in the raigne of King Henry the seuenth when hee laid the foundation of his new Chappell there, shee was neuer since buried, but remaineth still aboue ground in a Coffin of

1437. Queene Katherine deceased.

boords, behind the East end of the Quire. This Queene Katherine (saith Hall) after the death of King Henry the 5th her husband, being young and lusty, following more her owne appetite, then friendly counsell, and regarding more her priuate affection, then her owne honour, take to husband (saith he) a goodly Gentleman, named Owen Tewther, by whom shee conceiued and brought forth three sonnes, Edmond, Iasper, and another which was a Monke of Westminster, and a Daughter which liued not long. After whole death, King Henry, because they were bis brethren, of one wombe descended, created Edmond, Earle of Richmond, and Iasper Earle of Pembrooke: which Edmond had by Margaret, Daughter and sole heyre to John, Duke of Somerset, Henry, which after was King of this Realme, called King Henry the seuenth.

Shee procured him 100. marks a yeere to liue vpon: read the Records of the Tower, and after, that he had much more gotten land.

The Dutches of Bedford, Sister to Lewes, Earle of Saint Paul, without counsell of her friends, married a lusty Knight, called Sir Richard Wooduile, to the great displeasure of her Uncle, the Bishop of Turwine, and the Earle her brother. This Sir Richard, was made Baron of Riuers and after Earle, and had by his Lady, many Noble sonnes, and faire daughters, whereof one was Lady Elizabeth, after Queene of England, married to King Edward the fourth.

This yeere the 14. of January, at none, the great stone gate at London Bridge, with the Tower vpon it, next to Southwarke, fell downe in the Thames, and two of the fairest arches of the same Bridge, and yet no man perished in body, which was a great worke of God.

Ralph, Lord Cromwell, and Matild his wife, erected a Colledge of the Trinity at Tatshall in Lincolnshire, which Colledge at the suppression in the 28. of Henry the eighth, was valued to spend yeerely, 384. pounds, fiue shillings.

College of Tatshall founded.

Also this yeere the 9th of July, Iane, late Queene of England, and before Dutches of Bytaine, Daughter to the King of Nauarre, and wife to King Henry the fourth, died in the Mannor of Hauering, a Bowre in Esser, from whence shee was remooued to Bermondsey, and from thence conueyed to Canterbury, where shee was solemnly enterred by King Henry the fourth her husband.

Queene Iane deceased.

This yeere, the King gaue licence to Humfrey, Duke of Glouceste, and Elianor his wife, to build and embattell his Mannor house, at Greenewich, to enclose two hundred acres of ground, parkes, wood, and heath, and to embattell his Tower in the same parke, &c.

Receyte. Tower of Greenewich.

In the meane time, John, Duke of Somerset, accompanied with the Lords of Fauconbridge, Talbot, Sir Francis Surien, Arragonois, Mathew Gough, Thomas Powlet, Thomas Hattington, Walter Limbroke, John Geding, William Vatton Esquires, and Thomas Hilton, Bayliffe of Roan, with a puissance of the English party, belieged the Towne of Partlew, both by water and by land. The Captaine

taine within the Towne was called Sir John de Stocuile, and Sir Robert his brother, with other, to the number of 600. fighting men. The Assaylants made trenches, both to assault the Towne, and to let the French from succours, that they should neyther approach nor aide the Towne: men belieged: diuers assaults were giuen, and great ordinance was laid before the gate of the Towne, which ouerthrew buildings: the siege endured long, to the great discomfiture of them within, whereof they aduertised the King, who sent thither the Earle of Ewe, the Earle of Dunoys, the bastard of Burbon, the Lord Gaincourt and other, with 4000. men, these passed the River of Some betweene Amias and Corby, came before the Towne, and daily skirmished with the Englishmen, but nothing preuailed, and therefore returned. The Captaines of the Towne rendred the Towne to John, Duke of Somerset, who made Captaines there, Thomas Pawler, William Limbrike, Christopher Barker, and George S. George, which, many yeeres, had manfully defended the Towne and Hauen, but afterward when the said Duke was Regent, hee not onely lost the Towne, but also the City of Roane, with many other Cities.

This yeere was a Parliament holden at Westminster, in which were diuers notable conclusions ordained, as well for the preseruation of peace at home, as for the maintenance of warre in outward regions: and an act was made for buying and selling by strangers, very profitable to the publike weale, if it were obserued.

Parliament at Westminster. Anno Reg. 16.

On the first of Nouember, the Earle of Warwicke, as Regent of France, passed the Sea, after hee had beene seuen times shipped and vnshipped, and landed at Harflew. with 1000. fresh souldiers, and came to Roane, and then the Duke of Yorke returned into England.

1438. The Earle of Warwicke hearing, that the Duke of Burgoyne belieged the Castell of Croytie, sent the Lord Talbot, the Lord Fauconbridge, Sir Thomas Kiriell, Sir John Mountgomery, Thomas Limbroke, Thomas Chandos, Dauy Hall, and other Knights and Esquires, and in all 5000. men. When the Duke of Burgoyne was enformed of the approach of the Lord Talbot, and other, he with all his power, sauing 400. left in a bastle by him there newly builded, fled to Abbeuile, which battle was soone gained, and the men either slaine, or taken. After this, the Lord Talbot sent to the Duke of Burgoyne, signifying to him, that except hee would come forth, and giue him battel, hee would vtterly waste his countrey of Picardy, and according to his promise, hee brent townes, spoyled and slew many people in Picardy, but for all this deings, the Duke of Burgoyne appeared not, but got him from Abbeuile to Ambois, so that the Lord Talbot abode twenty daies in Picardy and Artois, destroying all afore him, and returned without impeachment.

Owen Tewther fouly hurting his keeper, brake out of Newgate, but was taken afterward by the Lord Beaumond, and brought againe to Newgate, and againe escaped. This Owen was thus imprisoned by the Duke of Gloucester, for that hee had foure children by Queene Katherine, late wife to Henry the 5th, as is afore shewed. This Owen was many yeeres afterward taken at a skirmish about Wigmore, and brought by Sir Richard Vaghan, Grandfather to great Vaghan the Sergeant at armes, to Hereford, and there beheaded, and buried: but afterward Iasper, sonne to Owen, suddenly tooke Sir Richad Vaghan in his house, or as some say, at Cheptstow Castle, and caused his head to be smitten off. In the moneth of June, the Earle of Huntington (as Steward of Guine) who with two thousand Archers, and foure hundred Speares, was sent into Gascoigne, as a supply to the Countrey and Commons of the same. Also Sir Richard Wooduile, Sir William Chamberlaine, Sir William Peres, and Sir William Story with 1000. men, were sent to succour the Townes in Normandy, which at that time, had need of great helpe, for the French captaines had small confidence in the Normans, and not so much in some of their owne Nation, for bribery with couetousnesse ran fast abroad with French crownes, that vnneth any creature could hold his hands close, or purses shut.

Owen Leuelan her husband and after beheaded.

1439. Rich. Beauchamp Earle of Warwicke deceased.

This yeere, the Towne of Wico Malbanke, or Nantwich, in the County of Chester, was pitifully consumed with fire. Anno Reg. 17. The Town of Nantwich burnt.

This yeere, by reason of great tempests, immeasurable waues and raines, there rose such a scarsity, that Wheat was sold in some places for two shillings six pence the bushell, Wine for twelue pence the gallon, bay salt for foureteene pence the Bushell, &c.

In this moneth followed such a frost, and after that so deepe a snow, that all the ground was couered therewith, and all the ditches frozen, which weather put the English-men in hope to recouer again the Towne of Pontheise, by the French King gotten before, by corrupting with money diuers Burgesters of the Towne, wherefore the Englishmen being clothed all in white, with John, Lord Clifford their Captaine, came in the night to the ditches, and passed them without danger, by reason of the frost, scaled the Walls, slew the watch, and tooke the Towne, with many profitable prisoners.

After the regaining of the Towne of Pontheise, Richad Beauchamp, Earle of Warwike, Lieutenant Generall of France, and of the duchy of Normandy, died in the Castle of Roane in Normandy on the last of April, the yeere of his age 58. And on the fourth of October next following his Corpes was honourably conueyed, as well by Water, as by Land, from Roane in Normandy, to Warwicke in England, and was laid with full solemnities in a faire chest made of stone in the West doze of the Colledge of our Ladies Church, by his Noble ancestors, till a Chappell by him deuised in his life were made, which Chappell founded on the rocke, and all the members thereof, his executors did fail

ly make and aparrell, by the authozity of his said last Will and Testament: And there after by the said authozity, they did translate the said body into the vault above said, where hee is intombed right Princely, and pozttured with an Image armed of Copper and gilt, hooped ouer with staues of Copper and gilt, like a Chariot.

About the beginning of Lent, John, Duke of Somerset, and the Lord Talbot, with other Captaines and men of warre, to the number of 2000. marching towards Picardy, passed ouer the River of Some, and thozow the Towne of Monterueill, came before the fortresse of Fullueuill, which the Duke besieged, whilest the Lord Talbot entred further into the Countrey. After that the Duke had mounted his great artillery, and began to batter the hold, the Captaine within being slaine with a shot thereof, and the battery being still continued, the place was peeled in the which the Duke left a competent garison of souldiours, which afterward sore indomaged the countrey.

This done, the Duke followed the Lord Talbot, who was already entred a good way within the countrey of Sauthois, and now inopening their powers together, they came to a Fortresse called Lyhons in Sauthois, which was also rendered vnto them, after they had brent the Church, which the countrey people kept against them, and would not yeeld it, till they were fired out, and brent, and slaine, to the number of 300. The fortresse being by composition delinered into their hands, the Duke with his power, lay there about ten daies, sending diuers troupes of his men abroad into the countrey, which spoyled the same, tooke the fortresse of Barbonners, and the Lord thereof within it, who for his ransome, and to haue his subiects and house saued from spoyle and fire, compounded with his takers for 1000. saluz of gold, which he payed to them: finally, after the Duke of Somerset, and the Lord Talbot, with their power, had tayne in Lyhons about ten daies, they returned into Normandy without any impeachment.

1440. This yeere, Wheat was sold at London for three shillings the Bushell, Malt for thirteene shillings the quarter, Oates for eight pence the bushell, which forced men to eat Beanes, Pease and Barley, more then in an hundred yeres before: wherefore Stephen Browne Maior of London, sent into Pruse, and caused to be brought to London, many ships laden with Rie, which did much good to the people, for bread corne was so scarce in England, that poore people made them bread of Ferne roots.

Parliament at Reding. In a Parliament at Reding, it was ordained, that all Marchant straungers should goe to host with Englishmen, and to make sale of their merchandises, and buy againe what they would within the space of fire moneths, giuing their hosse for euery twenty shillings worth two dence, except the Osterlings. And that euery poulholder that was alien, should pay to the King thirteen pence the yere, and euery seruant alien fire pence.

Order for straungers.

King Henry created Edmond Hamden, Earle of Richmond, and Iaspar de Hatfielde, Earle of Pembrooke, these were the Kings brethren by mothers side: Iohn Sutton Knight, was created Baron of Dudley, the last day of the Parliament at Reding. Sir Richard VVich, Vicar of Hermetlworth in Esser, or Middleser, sometime vicar of Dertford in Kent, who had before abiured, was brent on the Tower hill the 17. of June. After whose death was great murmure among the people; for some said hee was a good man, and an holy, and put to death by malice: and some said the contrary, so that many men and women went by night to the place where hee was burnt, and offered their money, images of ware, and other things, making their prayers, kneeling and kissing the ground, bare away with them the ashes of his body for holy reliques, &c. This endured eight daies, till the Maior and Aldermen ordained men of armes, to restraine the people, who apprehended many, and sent them to prison, amongst whom, was taken the Vicar of Working Church beside the Tower, in whose Parish all this was done, who had received the offering of the simple people. And to excite them to offer the more feruently to the fulfilling of his false couetousnesse, hee had meddled ashes with the powder of spices, and strewed them in the place where the Priest was burnt, and so the simple people were deceiued, weening the sweete sauour had come of the ashes of the dead Priest: all which the said Vicar of Working Church confessed in prison. This haue I noted the more at large, because some haue written the Vicar of Working to be brent, which is false, for he was not brent, though hee beter deserued then the other. Richard Wich brent on the Tower hill.

After the death of the Earle of Warwicke, the Duke of Yorke was againe made Regent of France, which being accompanied with the Earle of Dxford, the Lord Bourcher called Earle of Eue, Sir Iames of Dymond, the Lord Clinton, Sir Richard Wooduile, and diuers other Noble men, on the fifteenth of May shipped at Portesmouth, and sayled thence into Normandy, before whose arriuall, the French King sore grieued with the Towne of Pontoise, assembled a great Army, and besieged the said Towne himselfe in person, enuironing it with bastiles, trenches, and ditches, beating the walls and bulwarke with the shot of great ordinance, giuing thereunto diuers other assaults, but Iohn, Lord Clifford, like a baliant Captaine defended the Towne so manfully, that the Frenchmen rather lost, then won. The Duke of Yorke Regent of France.

The Duke of Yorke at his landing, sent for the Lord Talbot, and a great number of souldiours, and so came neere to the Towne of Ponthoise, and there incamped himselfe, and sent word to the French King, that, thither he was come to giue him battell, if hee would come out of his strength and bastiles, but the French King determined not to venture his person with men of so base estate, but meant to keepe his ground, bidding the Lord Regent to enter at his perill: and in the meane season, did what he could to stop the passage of the riuer Dise,

Dise, so that no victuall should be brought to the English army by that way.

The Duke of Yorke perceiuing that the French king minded not to fight, purposed to passe ouer the riuer of Dise, and so to fight with him. Whereupon he remoued his campe and appointed the Lord Talbot and other to make countenance, as they would passe the riuer by force at the port of Beaumont, and appointed another company in boates of timber and lether, and bridges made of cords and ropes to passe ouer beneath the abbey, Whilest the Lord Talbot made a crie as though he would assault the gate, certaine Englishmen passed the water in boates, and drew a bridge of cords ouer, so that great number of them were got to the other side, ere the Frenchmen were aduised what had hapned, When they saw the chance, they ran like mad-men to haue stopped the passage, but it was to late, for the most part of the Englishmen were got ouer, insomuch, that they chased their enemies backe, and slue Sir Guilliam de Castell, and diuers other. The Frenchmen seing their euill hap, returned to their king, and tolde him what had happened, whereupon he doubting to be assailed to his disaduantage, thought not good longer to tarry, but with all speede, removing his ordinance, into the bastile of Saint Martin, which hee had newly made, dislodged in the night from Pontoyllon, and went to Poysle, leauing the Lords de Cotigni Admirall of Fraunce with 3000. men, to keepe the bastile. The Englishmen the next day come before the towne of Ponthois, thinking there to haue found the French king, but he was gone, and in his lodging they found great riches, and much stuffe, which hee could not carrie away for feare of the sodaine inuasion. The Duke with his power entred the towne, repaired the wals, and diuers times assaulted the bastile of the Frenchmen. After this the Duke intending once againe to offer the French king battell, left behinde him at Ponthois, Sir Geruais Clifton, Sir Nicholas Curdet, Henry Chandos, and a thousand souldiers, and therewith removing with his whole army, came before Poysle where hee set himselfe and his men in order of battell ready to fight. There issued out some Frenchmen, but to their losse: for diuers of them were slaine, and fowre valiant horsemen taken. The Duke perceiuing the Frenchmen durst not encounter in field with the English power, dislodged from Poysle, and came to Maunt and from thence to Roan.

An. reg. 19. When the Regent and the Lord Talbot were returned againe into Normandy, the French king considering how much it should redound to his dishonour to let rest the towne of Ponthois, in his enemies hands, hee ettsones returning sodainly againe vnto Pouthois, hee first by assault gat the Church, and after the whole towne, take the captaine and diuers other Englishmen, and slue to the number of three hundred, amongst the which Sir Nicholas Burdet chefe butler of Normandy was one. Sir Nicholas Burdet slaine.

After this, King Henry, and King Charles agreed to send Ambassadors to commune of peace: King Henry sent Henry Beufort Cardinall of Winchester, with diuers other Noble men to Caleis, with whom was also sent Charles Duke of Orliance yet prisoner in England, to the end he might bee both author of the peace, and procurer of his owne deliuerance. The French King sent the Archbishoppe of Reimes, and the Earle of Dunois, and the Duke of Burgoigne sent the Lord de Creue-Cure, and diuers other: all these met at Caleis where the Duke of Orliance curteously received the Earle of Dunois (his bastard brother) thanking him greatly for his paines taking in gouerning his lands and countrey, during the time of his captiuitie and absence. Diuers communications were had, as well for the deliuerance of the Duke, as for a finall peace, but nothing was concluded, sauing that another meeting was appointed. The Duke of Orliance was set at libertie, paying for his ransome 300000. crownes.

The 26. of November was a challenge in armes done before King Henry within lists, in Smithfield, betweene Sir Richard Wooduile, a Knight of England, and a Knight of Spaine, but the King toke vp the matter into his hands, after the third stroke.

The Kings College in Cambridge. This yeere king Henry being of himselfe alwayes naturally inclined to doe good, and fearing lest hee might leaue vnthankefull to Almighty God for his great benefits bestowed vpon him, since the time he first toke vpon him the regiment of his Realme, determined for his primar notable worke, to erect and found two famous Colleges in the honour and worship of his holy name, and for the increase of vertue, the dilation of cunning, and establishment of Christian faith, whereof the one in Cambridge, to be called his Colledge Royall of our Lady, and Saint Nicholas: and the other at Eaton, beside Windsore, to bee called his Colledge of our Blessed Ladie. And for the performance of this his deuout purpose, he enfeoffed certeine Bishops with other noble and worshipful personages, by his letters pattents, with lands and possessions, parcell of his inheritance of the Dutchie of Lancaster, to the cleere value of twelue score pound and 30. hundred pound by yere, which letters pattents he after confirmed by his acte of Parliament, declaring also by his will vnto his said Feoffes, his intent and meaning: how the same should be imployed vpon the edifications of his saide two Colledges, whereof in my iudgement the deuice is so excellent, and the buildings so princely and apt for that purpose, as I cannot omit to set forth vnto you the very plat of the whole Colledge in Cambridge, euen as I finde mentioned, almost Verbatim, in his said will, supposing, that if the rest of the house had proceeded according to the Chappell already finished (as his full intent and meaning was) the like Colledge could scant haue beene found againe in any Christian land. This Colledge was begun in his time, and finished so farre, that in

Anno. 1443, (which was the 21. of his raigne) the cemitery or Church-yarde, the alter, &c. (as the manner was) were consecrated by the Bishoppes of Salisbury and Lincolne. The wordes of the Will are thus: As touching the dimensions of the Church of my said Colledge, of our Ladie and Saint Nicholas of Cambridge, I have deuised and appointed, that the same Church shall containe in length 288. foote of assise, without any Iles, and all of the wideneese of foztie foote. And the length of the same Church from the West ende vnto the altars at the Quire doze, shall containe 120. foote And from the Pzouosts stall, vnto the greece called Gradus Chori, 90. foote, foz 36. stals on either side of the same Quire, answering to xx. fellowes, and ten pziests conduits, which must be de prima forma, And from the saide stals vnto the East ende, of the said Church, 22. foote of assise. Also a Rerdoselle bearing the rodloft, departing the Quire and the body of the Church, containing in length foztie foote, and in breadth fourteene foote. The wals of the same Church to bee in height ninety foote embattelled, bauted and Charerofed, sufficiently buttreraed, and every buttreace fined with finials. And in the east ende of the same Church shall be a windowe of nine dayes. and betwixt every buttreace a windowe of fiue dayes. And betwixt every of the same buttreaces in the body of the Church, on both sides of the same church a closet with an Altar therein, containing in length twentie foote, and in breadth tenne foote, vaulted and finished vnder the soyle of the Isle windowes. And the paument of the Church to be enhanced foure foote aboue the ground without. And the height of the pauement of the Quire one foote and a halfe aboue the pauement of the church. And the pauement of the Altar three foote aboue that. And on the North side of the Quire a Vestrie containing in length fiftie foote, and in breadth, twentie two foote, departed into two houses beneath, and two houses aboue, which shall containe in height twentie two foote in all, with an entrie from the Quire vaulted. And at the West ende of the Church a Cloyster square, the East pane containing in length, 175, foote and the West pane as much. The North pane two hundred foote, and the South pane as much, of the which the Deambulatozie thirteene foote wide, and in height twentie foote, to the Cozbill table, with cleare Zoyles and Butteraces with finiales, vaulted and embattelled. And the ground thereof, foure foote lower than the Church ground. And in the middle of the West pane of the Cloyster a strong tower square, containing foure and twentie foote within the walls. And in height one hundred and twentie foote to the Cozbill table. And foure small Turrets ouer that fined with Pynacles. And a dooze into the sayde Cloyster inward, but outward none. And as touching the dimentions of the housing of the sayde Colledge, I haue deuised and appointed in the South side of the said Church, a Quadzaunt, closing to both ends of the same Church, the East pane, wherof shall

The Chappell.

The body of the Church.

The Quire.

The Rood-loft.

The height of the Chappell.

The East window.

The side Chappell.

The Vestry.

The Cloyster.

The Steeple

The vaile couert.

The East pane.

contain two hundred and thirtie foote in lengh, and in breadth within the Wals two and twenty foote. In the same panes middle a tower foz a Gatehouse, containing in length thirtie foote, and in breadth two and twentie, and in height foztie foote, with thze Chambers ouer the Gate, euery one ouer the other. And on either side of the same Gate, foure Chambers, euery one containing in length fiue and twentie foote, and in breadth two and twentie foote. And ouer euery of these Chambers, two chambers aboue of the same measure oz moze with two Towers outward, and two Towers inward.

The South pane shall containe in length 238. foote, and in breadth two and twentie foote, within in which shall be euen Chambers, euery one containing in length nine and twentie foote, and in breadth two and twentie foote with a Chamber parcell of the Pzouostes lodging, containing in length fiue and thirtie foote, and with a Chamber in the East corner of the same pane, containing in length fiue and twentie foote, and in breadth two and thirtie foote. And ouer euery of all these Chambers, two chambers, and with fiue towers outward, and three towers inward. The West pane shall containe in length 230. foote, and in breadth within 24. foote, in which at the ende toward the Church shall be a Library, containing in length 110. foote and in breadth foure and twentie foote. And vnder it a large house foz reading and disputations, containing in length fourtie foote: And two Chambers vnder the same library, each containing nine and twentie foote in length, and in breath foure and twentie foote. And ouer the said library a house of the same largenes foz diuers stuffe of the said Colledge. In the other endof the same pane a hall, containing in length 100. foote, vpon a vault of twelue foote high, ozdained foz the cellar and buttrie: and the breadth of the hall fire and thirtie foote, on euery side thereof a bay windowe. And in the neather end of the same hall towards the middle of the same pane a pantrie and butterie, euery of them in length twentie foote, and in breadth seuentene foote, and ouer that two chambers foz officers. And at the neather end of the hall toward the west, a goodly kitchin. And the same pane shall haue inward two towers, ozdained foz the wapes into the hall and Library. And in euery corner of the said quadzant shall be two corner towers, one inward, and one outward moze then the towers aboue reharsed. And at the vpper end of the hall the pzouests lodging, that is to wit, moze then the chambers foz him aboue specified, a parlour on the ground, containing foure and xxtie foote in length, and two and twentie foote in breadth, and two Chambers aboue of the same quantitie. And westward closing thereto a kitchin foz him, a larder house, stables and other necessery housings and grounds. And westward beyond these houses, and the said kitchin ozdained foz the hall, a bake-house, a brewhouse, and other houses of office, between which there is left a ground square of

The East pane.

The South pane.

The West pane.

The Library

The disputation house.

The warderobe.

The hall.

The pantrie and butterie.

The Colledge kitchin.

The Pzouosts lodging.

The bake-house and brewhouse

foure foote in euery pane, foz wood and such stuffe. And in the middle of the said large quadzant shall bee a conduit, goodly deuised foz ease of the same colledge. And I will, that the edification procede in large forme of my saide colledge cleane and substantiall, setting apart superfluity of too great curious wozkes of entaile and busie moulding. And I haue deuised and appointed that the precinct of my said colledge, as well on both sides of the garden from the colledge to the water, as in all other places of the same precinct, be inclosed with a substantiall wall, of the height of 14. foote, with a large Tower at the principall entrie against the middle of the East pane out of the high strate. And in the same Tower a large gate, and another Tower in the middle of the West end at the newe bzidge. And the same wall to bee crefted, embattelled, and foztified with Towers, as many as shall bee thought conuenient thereunto. And I will, that my said colledge be edified of the most substantiall and best abiding stuffe, of stone, lead, glasse, and yron, that may best be hadde and pzouided thereto.

The Goodyard.

The Waterconduit.

The precinct of the colledge

The Water gate.

Thus much I haue inlarged by occasion of reading this good Kings will: the cunning deuise whereof I leaue to the considerate iudgement of such as be expert in architecture, heartily desiring almighty God to put into the heart of some noble Pzince of this land, one date to make perfect his royall wozke so charitably begun.

1441. A combate was fought at Totehill betweene two theues, the appealer and defendant, the appealer had the fielde of the defendant within three strokes.

Roger Bolinbrooke a great Astronomer, with Thomas Southwell a Chanon of Saint Stephens Chappell at Westminster, were taken as conspiratours of the Kings death, foz it was said, that the same Roger should labour to consume the kings person by way of Negromancie, and the said Thomas should say Masses in the lodge of Harneseypark beside London, vpon certaine instruments, with the which the said Roger should vse his craft of Negromancie, against the faith, and was assenting to the said Roger, in all his wozkes. And the 5. and twentith day of July being Sunday, Roger Bolinbrooke, with all his instruments of Negromancie, that is to say, a chayre painted wherein he was wont to sit, vpon the 4. cozners of which chayre stode foure swozdes, and vpon euery swozd an image of copper hanging, with many other instruments: he stode on a high Scaffolde in Paules Churchyard, before the crosse holding a swozd in his right hand and a sceptet in his left, arrayed in a mertellons attire, and after the Sermon was ended by maister Low Bishop of Rochester, he abiured all articles longing to the crafte of Negromancie oz misbowning to the faith, in presence of the Archb. of Canterbury, the Cardinall of Winchester, the bishop of London, Salisbury, and many other.

Roger Bolinbrooke.

On the Tuesday next following, dame Eleanor Cobham, daughter to Reginald Cobham Lozd of Sirbzough, Dutchesse of Glocester, stode by night into the Sanctuary at Westminster, which caused her to be suspected of treason.

Eleanor Cobham appeales herselfe.

In the meane time Roger Bolinbrooke, was examined before the Kings Counsaile, where he confessed that he wrought the saide Negromancie at the stirring and procurement of the said Dame Elianor, to know what should befall of her, and to what estate she should come, wherupon she was cited to appeare before Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Canterburie, Henry Beaufort bishoppe of Winchester Cardinall, John Kempe Archby. of Yorke Cardinall: William Alcocke bpshop of Salisburie, and other in Saint Stephens Chappell at Westminster, there to answere to certaine Articles in number 28. of Negromancie, witch-craft, sozceric, heresie, and treason, where when she appeared, the foresaide Roger was brought foth to witnes against her, and said, that she was cause and first stirrer him to labour in the sayd Art. Then on the 11. of August, she was committed to the ward of Sir John Steward, Sir William Wolfe Knights, John Stanley Esquier, and other, to be conueyed to the Castle of Ledes, there to remaine till 3. wekes after Michaelmas.

Shortly after, a commission was directed to the Earles of Huntington, Stafford, Suffolke and Northumberland, the treasurer sir Ralph Cromwell, John Cornwall Lozd Fanhope, sir Walter Hungerforde, and to certaine Iudges of both Benches, to enquire of all manner of treasons, sozceries, and other things that might be hurtfull to the Kings person, before whome the sayde Roger, and Thomas Southwell, as principals, and Dame Elianor as accessary, were indicted of treason in the Guilde Hall of London.

There was taken also Margery Gurdemaine a witch of Eye besides Westminster, whose sozcerie and witchcraft the said Elianor hadde long time vsed and by her medicines and drinkes enforced the Duke of Glocester to loue her, and after to wedde her, wherefoze, and foz cause of relapse, the same Witch was brent in Smithfield, on the twentie-seuen day of October. *An. reg. 20.* The witch of Eye brent.

The 21. of October, in the Chappell before-said, before the Bishops, of London Rob. Gilbart, of Lincolne William Ainewike, of Norwich Thomas Brouns, the sayde Elianor appeared, and Adam Molins Clarke of the Kings Counsell read certaine articles obiected against her of Sozcerie and Negromancy, wherof some she denyed, and some she confessed.

The three and twentith of October, Dame Elianor appeared againe, and witnesses were brought foth and examined: and she was conuict of the saide Articles: then was it asked if she would say any thing against the witnesses, whereunto shee answered, nay, but submitted her selfe. The 27. day of October shee abiured the articles, & was adiopned to appeare againe

the

the ninth of November. In the meane tyme, to wit, on the 26. of October Thomas Southwell yped in the Tower of London, as himselfe had prophesied that he should neuer die by Iustice of the Law.

Elianor Cobham, did penance.

The 9. of November Dame Elianor appeared before the Archbyshop and other, in the sayde Chappell, and receiued her penance, which thee performed.

On Monday the 13. of November, she came from Westminster by water, and landed at the Temple bridge, from whence with a taper of ware of 2 pound in her hand, she went through Flete-streete, Fludsselle (saue a Kerchefe) to Pauls, where she offered her taper at the high Altar. On the Wednesday next she landed at the Swan in Thamis streete, and then went through Bridge-streete, Grace church streete, straight to Leaden Hal, and so to Christ church by Aldegate. On Friday she landed at Queene Hyue, and so went through Cheape to Saynt Michaels in Cornehill, in foyme afozesaid: at all which times the Maioz, Sherifes, and crafts of London, receiued her and accompanied her. This being done she was committed to the ward of sir Thomas Stanley, wherein she remained during her life in the castle of Chester, hauing yerely 100. markes assigned foz her finding, in the 22. of Henry the first, she was remoued to Kenilworth, there to be safely kept whose pride, false couetise, and lechery, were cause of her conuiction.

The 18 of November Roger Bolingbroke, with Sir Iohn Hum prieste, and William Woodham Esquier, were arraigned in the Guild hall of London, where the said Iohn and William hadde their Charters, but Roger Bolingbroke was condemned, and had iudgement of sir Io. Hody, chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, and the same day he was drawne from the Tower to Tyborne and there hanged and quartered: and when the said Roger should suffer, he said that he was neuer guilty of any treason against the Kings person, but hee had presumed to far in his cunning, wherof he cryed God mercy: and the Iustice that gaue on him iudgement, lined not long after.

Henry Beauchampe Earle of Warwicke.

Henry Beauchampe succeeded in his fathers inheritance, who being kept two yeres in the Kings handes, was restored to all his liuings with great glory, foz he was crowned, king of Wight, by the Kings owne hands, and nominated chiefe Earle of England.

The Duke of Orliance being deliuered (as afoze shewed) and speaking now better English than French, after his arriuall in France, repaired to the Duke of Burgoigne, and according to his promise, married the Lady Mary Cleue in the towne of S. Omers, on whom hee begat a sonne, which after was French King by the name name of Lewes the twelfth.

Richard D. of Yozke regent of France and gouernoz of Normandy, sent the Lozd Willoughby with a great number of souldiers to destroy the county of Amiens, and Iohn Lozd Talbot appointed to besiege the towne of Diepe: and the regent himselfe, accompanied with Edmond Duke of Somerset, set fozward into the dutchie of Aniow. The Lozd Willouby entred the country of his enemies vpon such a sodaine, that a great number of people were taken ere they could withdraw into any place of safegard. The Frenchmen in the garrisons adioyning, astonied with the clamos and crie of the people, issued out, and man-fully fought with the Englishmen, but in the end the French men slaine in the foze-front, they turned their backes and fled, the Englishmen followed and slew many, and such as escaped the swoz were robbed by the Earle of Saint Pole, which was comming to aide the Englishmen: in this conflict were slaine aboue 600. men of armes, and a great number taken.

The Dukes of Yozke and Somerset entred into Aniow and Maine, and there destroyed townes, and spoiled the people, and with great prayes and prisoners repaired againe into Normandy, whither also the Lozd Willoughby withdrew after his enterprise atchieued. The Duke of Somerset entred into the marches of Britaine, and toke by assault a Towne named la Gorch, appertaining to the Duke of Alanson, spoyling and burning the same, from thence he went to Pontray, where hee soiorned two moneths, sending foozth daily bands of war, to destroy the countries of [illegible] Britannois, and Chatragonnois. The French King sent the Marshall Loyacq with foure thousand men to resist the inuasions of the Duke of Somerset, but the Duke discomfited him, slew 100. of his men, and tooke 67. prisoners of the best of them. The Duke after this incounter toke the Towne of Beaumont le Vicount, and manned all the foztresses on the frontiers of his enemies, and with rich bootes and prisoners returned to the Duke of Yozke.

1442.

In the meane time the Lozd Talbot besieged the towne of Diepe, enuironing it with deepe trenches and rampiers, building also vpon the mount Pawlet a strong bastile, but at length perceiuing the towne to be strongly defended, he deliuered the custody of the bastile to his bastard sonne a valiant yong man and departed to Roan foz aide, money and munition.

The French King sent his sonne the Dolphin of Vienne with the Earle of Dunois and 15000. men to raise the siege from Diepe: thze dayes they assailed the bastile, on the which sir hundzed Englishmen were inclosed: at length the Frenchmen wan it, and take the bastard Talbot prisoner with Sir William Poitow, and Sir Iohn Reply which thozly after were redeemed. The other Englishmen, seeing the bastile won, but the Frenchmen stood a day in order of battaile, and in the night following returned to Roan.

Whilest these things were in doing, Philip Duke of Burgoigne made sharpe war against the Earle of Saint Pole in taking from him townes and Castles, so that hee was constrained to renounce his allegiance, promised ans swoone to the King of England, and returned to the French party.

The

1 combat in Smithfield.

The 26. of January, a challenge was done in Smithfield within lists, before the King, the one, Sir Philip de Beawie of Aragon a Knight, and the other an Esquire of the Kings house, called Iohn Ansley oz Astley, these comming to the field, toke their tents, and then was the Knights sonne made Knight by the King, and so brought againe to his fathers tent. Then the Heralds of Armes called them by name to doe their battell, and so they came both all armed with their weapons: The Knight came with his sword drawne, and the Esquire with his speare, which speare the Esquire cast against the Knight, but the Knight auoyding it with his sword, cast it to the ground, then the Esquire toke his ore, and went against the Knight suddenly, on whome hee stroke many strokes, hard and soze vpon his basenet, and on his hand, and made him loose and let fall his arc to the ground, and drasf vp his bubez thze times, and caught his dagger, and would haue smitten him in the face, foz to haue slaine him in the field: and then the King cryed hw, and so they were departed, and went to their tents, and the King dubbed Iohn Astley Knight foz his valiant foznes, and the Knight of Aragon offered his armes at Windoz.

Acts Reg. 21. Duke and Earle created.

John Beauford, Earle of Somerset, was made Duke of Somerset: and Lozd John Talbot foz his approoued pzowesse shewed in France, was created Earle of Shzewsbury, and his sonne Lozd Talbot, and then with a company of 300. men sent againe into Normandy, foz defence of that Countrey the 25. of May.

1443. Commotion at Norwich.

The Citizens of Norwich vpon against the Pzioz of Thetfs Church, within the same City, and would haue stored the Pziozy, they kept the Towne by strength, against the Duke of Norfolke, and all his power, wherefoze the King sent thither the chiefe Iudge, Iohn Fortescue, with the Earles of Stafford and of Huntington, who indicted many Citizens, and the Pzioz also. The liberties of the City were seised into the Kings hand, and Sir John Clifton made Captaine there, and many of the Citizens fled ouer the Seas, and into vnknowne places.

John Holland, Earle of Huntington, at Windsoze was created Duke of Exceter, Iohn Beauford, Duke of Somerset deceased, and was buryed at Winborne.

College and hospitall at Bigham Ferres.

Also this yeere deceased Henry Chicheley, when hee had sate 29. yeeres Archbishoppe of Canterbury. This Archbishop in his life time, to wit, in Anno 1425. began the foundation of a godly College and Hospitall at Bigham Ferres in Northamptonshire of eight secular Pziests fellowes, foure Clerkes and fiue Choristes: And an Almes-house, oz Hospitall foz pooze people, and obtained many godly benefits and preferments, which hee gaue to the said Towne, which house foz the pooze by him founded, his brethzen, Robert Chicheley and William Chicheley, Aldermen of London, augmented with godly legacies, foz the sustentation of the pooze, which Colledge at the suppression, was valued by the yeere in Lands 156 pound, two shillings, &c.

This Archbishop also founded two Colledges in Oxford, the one All soules Colledge (vnto the which, King Henry the first gaue Lands lately belonging to the Pziozs aliens, to wit, foure Pziozies, Alberbery in Salop, Rumney in Kent, Langtuinth in South Wales, and Wooden Pinkney in Northamptonshire, and therefoze the said King in the Charter, is called founder:) The other Barnard Colledge, since suppressed by King Henry the eight, now by Sir Thomas White againe reedified, repaired and named Saint Johns Colledge. He also reedified the new Library at Canterbury, and furnished the same with bookes, builded a great part of their steeple, repaired their Church, and gaue to the extent of the church many ornaments and rich Iewels: he caused his owne Tombe in the same Church to be builded, during his life, he was the new builder, oz speciall repairer of the faire large Parish Church of Croodolme, as appeareth by his armes grauen on the Walls, Steeple, and Porch of the same Church.

John Stafford, borne at Yoke, in the Parish of Abbotesbery in Dozsetshire, Doctor of Lawes, Deane of Saint Martins le Grand in London, after Bishop of Bath and Wels, about the 12th of Henry the 6. made Chancellour of England, was by Eugenius the fourth, made Archbishop of Canterbury. Annals Eliz.

Also Lewes Luthebrughe, Bishop of Ely, deceased at his Mannoz of Hatfield, and was buried at Ely, to whom Thomas Bourchar succeeded, being translated from Worcester.

Anno Reg. 22. All Christian Princes labour to appease the troubles in France,

Whilst England was disquieted, and France by spoyle defaced, all Christendome lamented the continuall destruction of so noble a Realme, and the effusion of so much Christian blood: wherefoze to agree the two puissant Kings, all the Princes of Christendome trauelled so effectually by the Oratozs and Ambassadozs, that a diet was appointed to be kept at the City of Towys in Towaine, where, foz the King of England appeared, William de la Pole, Earle of Suffolke, Doctour Adam Molins, Bishop of Chichester, keeper of the Kings priuy Seale, Sir Robert Ros, and other: and foz the French King, were appointed Charles, D. of Oliance, Lewes de Borbon, Earle of Vandosme, great Maker of the French Kings houshold, Pierce de Bresse, Steward of Poytowe, and Bartran Bearnan, Lozd of Precigni.

There were also sent Ambassadozs from the Empire, from Spaine, from Denmark, from Hungary, to be mediatozs bet wixt the 2. Princes, many meetings were about this business, but no finall concozd could be agreed vpon, more then a certaine tzce foz 18 moneths, which after was prolonged to pze 1449. but in the meane time broken, as pze shall heare afterward.

In this treaty, William de la Pole, Earle of Suffolke, imagining with himselfe, that the next way to come to a perfect peace, was to inioyne some marriage bet wixt the French kings kinswoman, the Lady Margaret, daughter to Reyner, D. of Aniow, and B. Henry of England: this Duke Reyner named himselfe King of Sicill, Naples and Ierusalem, hauing only the Title of

those

thole Realmes, without any profit. This marriage was at the first made strange to the Earle, and one thing seeming to be a great let to it, to wit, because the King of England possessed a great part of the Duchy of Anjow, & the whole Countrey of Maine, which pertained (as they said) to Duke Reyner. The Earle of Suffolke condescended, that the Dutchie of Anjow, and the County of Maine should be delivered to the Duke, demanding with his daughter for her marriage nothing. And to the intent that of this truce might ensue a finall concord, a day of enterview was appointed betweene the King and the Duke, in a place convenient, betweene Chartres and Roane.

When these things were concluded, the Earle of Suffolke with his company returned into England, where he declared what an honorable truce hee had taken, through the which there was great hope of a finall peace, by meanes of the honorable marriage which he had concluded. But though this marrige pleased well the King, and diuers of his Councell, yet other some were against it. For the performance of the conclusions, the French King sent the Earle of Vandosome, great Master of his house, and the Archbishop of Reims, first Pere of France, and diuers other into England, where they were honourably entertained, and after that the Instruments were sealed, and delivered on both parts; the said Ambassadours returned with great rewards.

When these things were done, the King created Humfrey, Earle of Stafford, Duke of Buckingham: and Henry Beauchamp Earle of Warwicke, King Henry heartily tendering him for his Parents sake, bestowed upon him the Dukedome of Warwicke: vnto whom also the King gaue the Castle of Bridlow, with all the appurtenances, which King John had kept in his hands, and his successours after him: he gaue vnto him also the Iles of Gernsey and Jarnsey, Serke, Orne, and Aurney, with all the Pryories Aliens in the same. The Earle of Dorset was created and made Marquesse of Dorset, and William de la Pole. Earle of Suffolke, was created and made Marquesse of Suffolke: also Iohn Talbot Knight, sonne of John, Earle of Shrewsbury, was created Viscount Lisle, for him and his heyres males, on the 26. of July.

Dukes, Marquesses and Earles created.

Anno Reg. 23.

In the moneth of November. William de la Pole, Marquesse of Suffolke, with his wife and many honourable persons, both men and women richly apparelled, sayled into France, for the conueyance of the Lady Margaret, nominated Queene in the Realme of England. This Nobles company came to the City of Towers in Touraine, where they were honourably received and entertained, both of the French King, and of the Duke Reiner, where the Marquesse of Suffolke as Procurator for King Henry, espoused the said Lady in the Church of Saint Martin. At which marriage were present, the father and mother of the bride, the French King which was vncle to the Duke Reiner, and the French Queene Aunt, to the Dutches his wife: there were also the Dukes of Orleance, of Calabre, of Alanson, and of Bretaine, seuen Earles, twelue Barones, twenty Bishops, besides Knights and Gentlemen. When the Feast, Triumphs, Banquets and Iusts were ended, the Lady was delivered to the Marquesse of Suffolke, which in great estate conueied her thorow Normandy vnto Diepe, where a while they remained.

1445.

On Candlemas euen, in diuers places of England, was great weathering of wind, hayle, snow, raine, thunders with lightning, whereby the Church of Baldock in Hertfordshire, and Church of Walden in Esser, and diuers other were sore shaken, and the Steeple of S. Pauls in London, about two of the clocke in the afternoone was set on fire in the middest of the Shaft, first on the West side, and then on the South, and the people espying the fire, came to quench it in the Steeple which they did with vinegar, so farre as they could find, so that when the Maior, with much people came to Pauls, to haue holpen if nede had beene, they returned againe euery man to his home, trusting to God, all had beene well, but anon after, betwen eight and nine of the clocke, the fire brake against out of the Steeple, more feruent then before, and did much hurt to the Lead and Timber thereof, but the Maior and much people came thither, and with vinegar quenched the fire that was feruent, so that no man was perished. The Steeple of Waltham in Esser, and of Kingstone in Surrey, was also fired by the same lightning. The fire at Pauls being quenched, a Standart of tree being set vp at Leaden Hall, in Cornehil of London, made fast in the midst of the pauement, and decked with Holme and Iuy, for disport of Christmas, to the people of the City, it was tayne and cast downe with such violence, that the stones of the pauement were cast about in the streete, and into diuers mens houses, to the great terrour of the people that never had seene so strange a tempest.

The Lady Margaret being transported from Diepe, landed at Portchester, from whence she was conueyed by water to Hampton, and rested there in a place called Gods house, from thence she went to Southwicke, and was married to the King in the Abbey of Tichfield on the 22. of Aprill, and from thence she was honourably conueyed by the Lords and estates of this Land, which met with her in sundry places, with great retinues of men in diuers liueries, with their sleeues imbroydered, and some beaten with gold-smiths worke in most costly manner and especially of the Duke of Gloucester, who met her with 500. men in a liuery, and so was conueyed to the Blacke-Heath, where she was met by the Maior, Aldermen and Sheriffes of the City in Scarlet, and theycrafts of the same, all riding on horse-backe, in blue goownes, with imbroydered sleeues, and red hoods, on the 28. of May, who conueyed her with her traine thorow Southwarke, and so thorow the Citty of London, then beautified with pageants of diuers Histories, and other showes of welcome, marueilous costly and sumptuous, which

I ouerpasse saue onely to name a few, At the bridge foote toward South warke, a pageant of peace and plenty, *Ingredimini, & replete terram*, and certaine verses in English. Noes thy vpon the bridge, *Iam non amplius in sicca super terram* verses in English. At Leaden Hall, madam Grace Chancelor de Dieu, verses in English. At the tunne in Cornehill, of Saint Margaret, verses in English. At the great Conduit in Cheape of the fiue wise and the fiue foolish virgins, verses in English. At the crosse in Cheap, of the heauenly Jerusalem verses. At Paules gate, of the generall resurrection and iudgement, with verses accordingly, all made by Iohn Lydgate.

Queene Margaret crowned.

On the 30. of May she was solemnly crowned at Westminster. This woman excelled all other, as well in beautie and fauour, as in wit and policie, and was of stomacke and courage not inferiour to any: her badge was the daisie flower. This marriage seemed to many both vnfortunate and vnprofitable to the Realme of England, and that for diuers causes: first, the King had with her no dowry, and for the fetching of her, and other charges about her, the Parques of Suffolke demanded a whole fifteenth in open Parliament: and also there was deliuered for her the Dutchie of Anjou, the City of Mans, and the county of Maine. Furthermore, the Earle of Armiake toke such displeasure with the King of England for the marriage, that he became bitter enemie to the Realme of England, and was the chiefe cause that the Englishmen were expulsed out of the Dutchie of Aquitaine.

An. reg. 24. Parliament. 1446.

A Parliament was summoned, in the which it was concluded, that by good foresight Normandy might be so furnished for defence before the end of the truce, that the French King should take no aduantage through want of timely prouision: hereupon money was granted, and an armie leuied, the Duke of Somerset appointed to be Regent of Normandy, and the Duke of Yorke discharged of that office.

The Parques of Suffolke in the second of June in the first session of this Parliament, before the Lords spirituall and temporall in the high house assembled, eloquently declared his paine and diligence sustained in his legacy as well for the concluding an abstinence of warre, as in making of the marriage, opening also to them, that the saide truce expired the first of Aprill next comming, except a finall peace, or a further truce were concluded in the meane season, and therefore hee aduised them to foresee and prouide things necessarie for the warres, lest happily the French perceiuing them vnprouyed, would take the aduantage, and agree neither to peace nor amitie. Likewise on the next morrow, he descended into the common house, accompanied with certaine Lords, and there declared the same matter to the Knights, and bourgesses, praying the commons for his discharge, that as well all his doings and proceedings in the Kings affaires, beyond the sea, as also his aduertisements and counsaile opened to the Lords and commons now together assembled, might be by the King and them enacted, and enrolled in the records of the Parliament. Whereupon on the next morrow William Burley then speaker, and the company of the lower house, repayred to the Kings presence then sitting amongst the Lords, and there humbly required that the request of the Parquesse might be granted, and so likewise the Lords made the like petition, kneeling on their knees, and the king condescended to their desires, and so the whole matter was enacted and recorded for his acquitall.

Henry Beauchamp Duke of Warwike, chiefe Earle of England, Lord Spencer and Burgauenie, king of the Ile of Wight, & Cornsey and Jarnsey, and Lord of the Castell of Bridlow, married Cicely daughter to Richard Neuill Earle of Salisbury, and had issue a daughter named Anne, who died at the age of fiue yeere, hee at the age of 22. yeres died in the Castell of Hanley, and was buried at Theorbury.

Lib. Theaurs. bury Duke of Warwick deceased.

This yere 1446. at a wedding neare Zeghebuic there died of extreame forfeiting by drinking, nine score persons as well women as men, and Prince Otto Duke of Bromswick and Luneburg died suddainely, and this yere in the month of August died the Lady Dolphines of France, and the Queenes of Portugall Spaine and Scotland.

A warning to drunkards.

Fower great Princes died in one Month.

John Dauid appeached his master William Catur, an armour dwelling in S. Dunstons parish in Fletstreet, of treason, and a day being assigned them to fight in Smithfield, the master being welbeloued, was so cherished by his friends and plied so with wine, that being therewith ouercome, was also vnluckely slaine by his seruant: but that false seruant (for he falsely accused his master) liued not long vnpunished, for he was after hanged at Tyborne for felony, let such false accusers note this example, and take no better end, without speedie repentance: my selfe haue had the like seruant that likewise accused me of many articles, he liueth yet, but hath hardly escaped hanging since, God make him penitent.

A combat in Smithfield. A false accuser of his master was hanged.

Thomas fitz Thomas Prior of Kilmaine appeached sir Iames Butler Earle of Ormond of treasons, which had a day assigned to fight in Smithfield, the lists were made, and the field prepared, but when it came to the point, the king commanded they should not fight and take the quarrell into his hands, which was done at the instance of certaine preachers and doctors of London, as master Gilbert Worthington, *An. reg.* 25. and Doctor of S. Andrewes in Holborne and other.

Pope Eugenius sent a golden Rose to the king of England, expressing the property and application of the same, with the ceremonie that is yerely vsed on Palme Sunday, touching the same Rose, exhorting the king against the Turkes. Which Rose Lodouicus Cordona doctor of diuinitie did present to the king in S. Stephens chappell at Westminster vpon Saint Andrewes day in presence of the Dukes of Yorke & Excester, Cardinal Kempe Archbishop

Record Eccles. Cantz.

of Poyk, and John Stafford Archbishop of Canterbury, Chancellor of England. King Henry kept his Christmas at S. Edmondsburie, and remayned there till Easter. In which meane space, to wit on the 10. of February began a Parliament at S. Edmondsbury in Suffolke, at which time for feare of the Duke of Glocester, all the wayes about the same towne were kept with armed men both day and night, so that many died with colde and waking. Humfrey, Duke of Glocester, being at the Castle of the Vies in Wiltshire, came from thence to the Parliament, and was lodged in the hospitall, where shortly after hee was arrested by John, Lord Beamount high Constable, the Duke of Buckingham, the Duke of Somerset and other, who appointed certaine of the kings houshold to wait upon him: but on the 24. day he died for sorow, as some saide, that hee might not come to his answere: his body was shewed to the Lords and commons, and seemed to die of a palsey, or of an impostume: he was honourably buried at S. Albons: 22. of his principall servants were arrested and sent to divers prisons and five of them were arraigned at London, and condemned, whose names were sir Roger Chamberlaine knight, Richard Middleton, Thomas Herbert, Arthur Tursey Esquires, and Richard Nedam gentleman, which were all five drawn from the Tower of London to Tyborne, and there hanged, let downe quicke, stript naked, marked with a knife for to bee quartered, and then a charter shewed for their lives by the Duke of Suf. but the yeoman of the crowne had their liverie, and the hangman had their cloths, or wearing apparrell. The Pardon for lives was obtained though the earnest sute and labor of master Gilbert Worthingchon, then parson of S. Andrewes in Holborn, a doctor of Divinitie a famous man and a great preacher in those daies, Thomas Wild of Greenwich Esquire serving the saide Duke being, amongst other, pardoned, the course of his pardon in the patent runneth to this effect, for being amongst many other traytors against the king with Humfrey Duke of Glocester, they went about and practised to deliver Elianor, late wife to the Duke from out of prison, and gathered a great power, and number of men, to come to the Parliament at Bury, and there to have practised the destruction of the King, &c. Ia. Fines Knight was created Baron of Say and Sele, John Beauchamp, Baron of Powike, and Richard Woodeuile Baron and Lord Rivers at Bury, Henry Beauford Bishop of Winchester, Cardinall of the title of S. Eusebii, after he had set Bishop 43. peres deceased on the 11. of Aprill: he founded an house of almes (adioyning to the hospitall of S. Crosse in Winchester) with a master, 2. chaplaines, 35. poore men, and 3. women, & gave lands thereto, at that time valued 158. pound 13. shillings, 4. pence, as appeareth by the patent, more he gave them, the hospitall of S. John de Fordingebridge: William Wamflet professe of Canon, succeeded in that Bishoprick.

Parliament at Bunie. 1447.

The Duke of Glocester arrested and sent after.

Five men hanged and after pardoned.

Record. 16. of H. 6.

Thom. Wild his pardon.

Record. 16. of H. 6. Bishops created.

Record. Paint.

The 5. of August deceased John Holland Duke of Exceter, and was buried in the hospitall of S. Katherin nigh to the Tower of London. About the same time deceased the reuerend father in God, named Doctor Gilbert Worthingthon, parson of S. Andrewes in Holborne, a most famous preacher, and greatly voted for his good life. Also about the same time, to wit the 24. of October deceased William Lichfield Doctor of Divinity, Parson of Alhallowes the More in Thamis street, the which was counted a good and holy man, he made in his daies 3083. sermons, as appeared and was found in his bookes of his owne hand writing, besides many bookes that he compiled of Diuinitie pertenant especially one in a fine verse intituled, The complaint of God to man, and Answere of the penitent to God, &c.

Duke of Exceter deceased.

Parson of Alhallowes in Themis street.

An. reg. 26.

In this 26. yeere of the raigne of this King I finde no great matter worth the recitall, but that the Marques of Suffolke, by great favor of the King and Queene, was created Duke of Suffolke, which dignity he long enioyed not: for Richard Duke of Yorke being greatly allied by his wife, to the chiefest Peeres and the States of the Realme, ouer and besides his owne progenie, perceiuing the King to bee a ruler, and not to rule, but the whole burthen of the realme to rest in the ordinance of the Queene, and the Duke of Suffolke, began secretly to allure his friends of the nobilitie, and priuily declared vnto them his title to the Crowne, and likewise did hee to certaine gouernours of Cities and Townes, which priuie attempt was so politikly handled and secretly kept, that his proution was ready before his purpole was opened.

1448. William de la Pole Marquess of Suffolke made Duke of Suffolke

John Sturtun was made Baron of Sturton.

After the death of Henry Beauford Bishop of Winchester, the affaires in France were neither well looked to, nor the gouernours of the countrey well aduised, for an English Captaine, called sir Frances surnamed de Aragonoys, tooke a towne named Fogars, vpon the borders of Normandie belonging to the Duke of Byptaine. For the which he complained him to the French King, and hee at the said Dukes request sent vnto the King of England, to aske restitution of the harme. The which messengers were answered of the Kings Counsell, that the deede was right displeasant vnto the King, and that sir Frances of Aragon had enterprised the feat of his owne presumption. Whereupon it followed shortly after, that the French by like policie tooke the Towne and Castell of Pountallarche, and after that many other, so that the taking the foresaide towne of Fogiars by the Englishmen, was the occasion by the which the French after got all Normandie.

Anreg. 28.

This peere the Frenchmen got many Townes in Normandie out of the possession of the Englishmen. Also the Citie of Roane was yelded to the French with condition that the Captaines and garrisons might depart with armour and goods, and not long after was rendred (with the like condition as of Roane) the townes of Harflewe, and Honnflewe. A knight of

1447. Roan yeelded to the French.

of France called Sir Lewis de Breyll, challenged an Esquire of England, named Ralph Chalons, of certaine feats of warres, the which to prowe, a day to them was given to meete at a Towne in France, named Paunce, where the French knight at that day was present: but Chalons ranne the French knight thorow the body with his speare, whereof the said Lewis dyed.

An. Reg. 27.

About the same time also began a new rebellion in Ireland, but Richard, Duke of Yorke being sent thither to appease the same, so asswaged the fury of the wilde and sauage people there, that hee wan such favour among them, as could neuer be separated from him and his linage.

Richard, Duke of Yorke wan favour of the Irish.

Barons created.

John, Vicount Beamount, was made Chamberlaine of England, Henry de Bromefield, Lord Vescy, William Bourcher, knight, Lord Bunuile, William Beauchampe, Lord S. Amond, Thomas Percy, Lord Egremonde, these were created the 6. of November.

The French King assembled an army royall, and comming before Cane, besieged it on all sides, and assaulted the walls, but the Duke of Somerset, and the other Captaines within the Towne, manfully withstood their enemies, beating backe the assalants. The French King with his great Ordinance shot daily at the walls, and did some hurt, but to the Castell which stood on a rocke, and in it a dungeon, vnable to be beaten downe, bee hid no harme at all: Though the Duke of Somerset were the Kings Lieutenant, yet Sir Dauy Hall, as Captaine of this towne, for his Master, the Duke of Yorke, owner thereof, tooke vpon him the chiefe charge: Sir Robert Vere was Captaine of the Castle, and Sir Henry Radford, Captaine of the dungeon: daily the shot was great, but more terrible then hurtfull, saving that one day, a stone shot into the Towne, fell betweene the Dutches of Somerset and her children, which being amazed with this chance, besought her husband, kneeling on her knees, to haue mercy and compassion of his small infants, that they might be deliuered out of the Towne in safety. The Duke moued with the sorrow of his wife, and loue of his children, rendred the Towne, with condition to depart with all their goods. Sir Dauy Hall, with diuers other departed to Cherbrough, and from thence sailed into Ireland, to the Duke of Yorke, making relation to him of all these doings, which thing kindled so great a rancour in the Dukes heart, that he never left persecuting the Duke of Somerset, till he had brought him to his fatall confusion After the obtaining of the strong towne of Cane, the Earle of Cleremont, besieged the Citie of Silesiur. Whereof was Captaine Mathew Gough, with 300. Englishmen, who in the end deliuered the Towne vpon condition to depart. Then was Falaise besieged, whereof were Captaines, for the Earle of Shrewsbury that was owner, Andrew Tropole, and Thomas Cotton Esquires, which agreed to deliuer it on conditions. The Towne of Donfront was likewise rendered, so that there rested now onely English, the Towne of Chirburgh, whereof was Captaine, one Thomas Gonuile, which as long as victuals serued, defended the Towne right manfully, but in the end, vpon composition yeelded the Towne, and went to Caleis, where the Duke of Somerset and many other English-men then soiourned. Thus was Normandy lost clearely out of the English mens hands, after it had continued in their possession, the space of 30. yeeres, by the conquest of Henry the fift. In which Dutchy were an 100. strong Townes and fortresses to be kept and holden, besides them that were destroyed by the warres, and in the same is one Archbishoppicke, and five Bishoppricks. Whilest the French made these conquests in the Dutchy of Normandy, the common people make exclamations against the Duke of Suffolke, affirming him to be the onely cause of the deliuery of Anion, and Mayne, the chiefe procurer of the Duke of Glocesters death, the losse of Normandy, &c. Whereupon the Queene doubting not onely the Dukes destruction, but also her owne confusion, caused the Parliament begunne at Westminster, after Christmas adiourned to the Blackefriers in London, then to be adiourned to Leycester, thinking there to haue suppressed the malice conceiued against the Duke and her, at which place, few of the Nobility would appeare: where it was againe adiourned to Westminster, where was a full appearance. In the which session, the commons of the nether-house put vp to the King and the Lords, many articles of treason, impittion, and euil demeanour against the Duke of Suffolke, as ye may read in Hall. The Queen therefore, doubting some commotion to arise, caused the said Duke to be committed to the Tower, where he remained not past a moneth, but was restored to the kings favour. This doing so much displeased the people, that in sundry places of the Realme, they assembled together in great companies, and chose to them a Captaine, but were ouercome, as shall be shewed.

Cane deliuered to the French.

Normandy lost from the English.

Parliament adiourned.

1450.

The ninth of January, Adam Molins, Bishop of Chicheller, Keeper of the Kings priuy Seale, through the procurement of Richard, Duke of Yorke, was by Shipmen slaine at Portesmouth.

Bishop of Chicheller murthered.

The ninth of February, Thomas Thany, otherwise called Bluebeard a fuller, was taken beside Canterburry, for raising a rebellion, who was hanged and quartered.

Bluebeard.

After this little rage asswaged, about the Octaues of Easter, the Parliament was adiourned to Leicester, whither came the King and Queene in great estate, and with them the Duke of Suffolke, as chiefe Counsellour, where the commons of the lower house, besought the King that such persons as assented to the release of Anion, and deliverance of Mayne, might be duely punished. And to be privy to that fact they accused as principall, the Duke of Suffolk with John, Bishop of Salisbury, sir James Fines, Lord Say, Daniel Trimilian, and other whom they inoited of treason, and many other matters touching the King, and his commons, as it appeareth by the verdict of their inquest, to

to the number of a thirtie persons, whereupon the king to appease the commons, first depriued the Lord May, being treasurer of England, and other from their offices, and names, and after banished William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke, for fiue yeres, who taking ship, at Ipswich in Suffolke, on the third day of May, sailed towards France, but was encountred with a ship of warre, appertayning to the Duke of Exceter, Constable of the tower of London, called the Nicholas of the tower. The Captaine of which barke, with small fight entred into the Dukes ship, and perceiuing his person present brought him to Douer Roade, and there on the hoof of a coche boate, rased his head to be stricken off, and left his body with the head lying there on the sands, which corps being there found, by a chaplaine of his, was conueyed to Wingfield colledge in Suffolke, and there buried saith Hall: but Thomas Walsingham saith that he was buried in the Charterhouse of Kingston vpon Hull.

William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke slaine and buried.

Alice wife to William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke.

Alice William de la Pole Duke of Suffolke and Alice his wife, daughter to Thomas Chaweer, sonne to Geffrey Chawcer the famous Poet, translated and increased the Manor place of Ewelme, in Oxfordshire: they builded a new the Parish church of Ewelme, a comely peece of worke standing on an hill, and also hard adioyning to the west end of Ewelme parish church, they founded a prety hospitall or almes house for two priests chalt of bodie and deuoute in soule, and thirteene poore men to dwell and bee sustayned in for euer, one of the priests to bee master of the almes house, and almes people, them to instruct as well by his sound doctrine, as good life, the other priest a schoolemaster, freely to teach the children of the tenants of the said Lordship of Ewelme and other Lordships pertayning to the saide Lordshipe of Ewelme, and other Lordshipps pertaining to the said almes house their Grammer, and either of these two priests to haue fourme pound the yere. One of the thirteene poore men to bee called minister, to present the faultes of the other to the maister, and to ring their common bel to service, and to haue sixteene pence the weeke, the other twelue poore men to haue euery of them fourteene pence the weeke. This house hath to name Gods house or the house of almes, vnto the which he gaue diuers Manors, Rentrige in Hampshire, Combridge, in Oxfordshire, and Hertlie in Buckinghamshire, with their appurtenances, all which at this present was valued but 20. pound the yere, for large pennyworth was then made by such as meant to purchase.

Liber fundationum.

The death of the Duke of Suffolke brought not the Realme in quiet, for these that fauoured the Duke of Yorke, and willed the crowne vpon his head, procured a commotion in Kent in this manner.

Iacke Cade Captaine of the rebellion in Kent.

In the month of May, the commons of Kent in great numbers assembled, hauing to their captaine Iacke Cade, who named himselfe Mortimer, referring to the Duke of Yorke: as he was named of some John Amendall: this captaine brought a great number of people to the Blacke heath, and there kept the field more then a moneth, pilling the country about, to whome the City of London at that time was full fauourable. And the saide Captaine (as I finde recorded) sent for such Citizens of London as it pleased him to command to repayre vnto him, vnder letters of safe conduct as followeth.

The safegard and signe manuell of the Captaine of Kent, sent to Thomas Cocke *draper of London, by the Captaine of the great assembly in Kent.*

BY this our writing sealed we grant and will permit truely, that Thomas Cocke of London draper, shall come in good surety and in safegard to our presence, without any hurt of his person, and to auoid from vs againe at his pleasure, with all other persons assigned at his denomination with him comming in likewise.

The commandement by the Captaine of Kent, sent vnto Thomas Cocke *aboue said.*

FOr your instruction, first ye shall charge all Lumbards and strangers, being marchants, Jenewes, venetions, Flozentines, and other this day to draw them together, and to ordaine for by the Captaine 12. harnisses, compleat of the best fashion, 24. brigandines, 12. battaile axes, 12. glaues, fir hogles with saddle and bridle completely harnessed & 1000. markes of ready money: and if this our demand bee not obserued and done, we shall haue the heads of as many as we can get of them.

What answer to this demand was returned I finde not, but like it is the same was granted and performed, for I finde not the said Captaine and gentlemen, at their being in the City, to haue hurt any stranger.

In the meane time the King sent notable men to the said Captaine and his fellowship, to know the purpose and the cause of their insurrection: vnto whom the Captaine answered, that hee and his company were assembled there to redresse and reforme the wrongs that were done in the Realme, and to withstand the malice of them that were destroiers of the common weale, and to amend the defaults of them that were chiefe Counsellors to the King, and shewed vnto them the Articles of complaints touching the misgouernement of the Realme, wherein was nothing contained but seemed reasonable, wherevpon a copie was sent to the parliament holden that time at Westminster, with also one other Bill of requestes by them made, of things to be reformed, and to haue answere thereof againe, but hee had none. The bill of Articles they intituled.

The complaint of the commons of Kent, and causes of the assembly on the Blackheath.

1. Inprimis, it is openly noysed that Kent should be destroyed with a royall power, and made

made a wilde Forrest, for the death of the Duke of Suffolke, of which the commons of Kent were neuer guiltie.

2. Item, the King is stirred to liue onely on his commons, and other men to haue the reuenewes of the crowne, the which hath caused pouerty in his excellency, and great payments of the people, now late to the king granted in his Parliament.

3. Item, that the Lords of his royall blood haue bin put from his daily presence, and other meane persons of lower nature exalted and made chiefe of his priuy counsell, the which stoppeth matters of wrongs done in the realme from his excellent audience, and may not bee redressed as law will, but if bribes and gifts be messengers to the hands of the said counsell.

4. Item, the people of his realme be not paid of debts owing for stuffe and purueiance taken to the vse of the kings houshould, in hindering of the saide people, and the poore commons of this Realme.

5. Item, the kings meniall seruants of houshould, and other persons, asked daily goods and lands, of suspeached or indited of treason the which the king graunteth anon, ere they so endaungered, be conuict. The which causeth the receiuers thereof to enlarge labours and meanes applied to the death of such people so appeached, or indited, by subtile meanes, for conuise of the said grants: and the people so impeached or indited, though it be vntrue, may not be committed to the law for their deliuerance, but held still in prison to their vttermost hindering and destruction for couetised of goods.

6 Item, though diuers of the poore people and commons of the Realme, haue neuer so great right, truth and perfect Title to their Land, yet by vntrue claime of inselfement, made vnto diuers Mates, gentiles, and the Kings meniall seruants in maintenances against the right, the true owners dare not hold claime, nor pursue their right.

7 Item, it is noysed by common boyces, that the Kings Lands in France, haue bene aliened and put away from the Crowne, and his Lords and people there destroyed with vntrue meanes of treason, of which it is desire, enquiries thzough all the Realme to be made, how, and by whom, and if such traytours may be found guilty, them to haue execution of Law, without any pardon, in example of other.

8 Item, Collectors of the 15. peny in Kent, be greatly hered and hurt in paying great summes of money in the exchequer, to sue out a writ, called Quorum Nomina, for allowance of the Barons of the ports, which now is desired that hereafter in the lieue of the Collectors the Barons aforesaid may sue it out for their ease, at their owne costs.

9 Item, the Shrieues, and vnder-shrieue, let to ferme their offices and Baylimikes, taking great surety therefore, the which causeth extorcion done by them and by their Bayliffes to the people.

18 Item, simple and poore people that vse not hunting, be greatly oppressed by inditements fained and done by the said Sheriffes, vndersheriffes, bayliffes, and other of their assent, to cause their increase for paying of their said ferme.

11 Item, they returne in names of Enquests in writing into diuers courts of the Kings, not summoned nor warned, where thzough the people daily lese great summes of money, well nye to the vttermoste of their liuoing: and make leuy of amercements, called the Greene Wax, more in summes of money, than can be found due of record in the Kings bookes.

12 Item, the Ministers of the court of Doner in Kent, ber and arrest diuers people thzough all the Shire, out of Castle ward, passing their bounds and liberty vsed of old time, by diuers subtile and vntrue meanes and actions falsely fained, taking great fee at their lust in great hurt of the people in all the Shire of Kent.

13 Item, the people of the said shire of Kent, may not haue their free election in the chosing knights of the Shire, but letters haue bene sent from diuers estates to the great rulers of all the Countrey, the which enforceth their tenants and other people by force to chose other persons then the common will is.

14 Item, whereas knights of the Shire should chose the Kings Collectors indifferently, without any bribe taking: they haue sent now late to diuers persons notifying them to be Collectours, whereupon gifts and bribes be taken, and so the Collectours office is bought and sold extortionously at the knights inne.

15 Item, the people be sore vexed in costs, and labour, called to the Sessions of peace in the said Shire, appearing from the farthest, and vttermost parts of the West into the East, the which causeth to some men fiue daies iourney, whereupon they desire the said appearance to be diuided into two parts, the which one part to appeare in one place, another part in another place, in relieuing of the grieuance and intollerable labors and vexations of the said people.

The requests by the Captaine of the great assembly in Kent.

INprimis, desireth the Captaine of the Commons, the welfare of our Soueraigne Lord, the King, and all his true Lords, spirituall and temporall, desiring of our said soueraigne Lord, and of all the true Lords of his Councell, he to take in all his demaines, that he may raigne like a King royall, according as he is borne our true Christian King anoynted, and who so will say the contrary, we all will liue and dye in the quarrell as his true liege-man.

2 Item, desireth the said Captaine, that hee will auoyde all the false progeny and affinity of the Duke of Suffolke, the which hath bin openly knowne, and they to be punished after the custome and Law of this Land, and to take about his Noble person, the true Lords of his royall blood of this his Realme, that is to say, the High and mighty Prince, the Duke of Yorke,

late exiled from our said soueraigne Lords presence (by the motion and stirring of the traiterous and falſe diſpoſed the Duke of Suffolke and his affinitie) and the mighty Princes and Dukes of Exceſter, Buckingham, and Norfolke, and all the Earles and Barons of this land: and then ſhall he be the richeſt King Chriſtian.

3. Item, deſireth the captaine and commons punniſhment vpon the falſe traitors, the which contriued and imagined the death of the high and mightfull excellent Prince the Duke of Glouceſter, the which is too much to rehearſe, the which Duke was proclaymed as traitour. Vpon the which quarrell, wee purpoſe all to liue and die vpon that it is falſe.

4. Item, the Duke of Exceſter, our holy father the Cardinall, the Noble Prince Duke of Warwicke, and alſo the Realme of France, the Dutchy of Normandy, Gaſcoine, and Guien, Anioy and Maine, were deliuered and loſt, by the meanes of the ſaid traitors, and our true Lords, Knights, and Eſquiers, and many a good yeoman loſt and ſolde ere they went, the which is great pitie to heare, of the great and grieuous loſſe to our ſoueraigne Lord and his Realme,

5. Item, deſireth the ſaid Captaine and commons, that all the extortions vſed daily among the common people, might bee layed downe, that is to ſay, the graine May the which is falſely vſed, to the perpetuall deſtruction of the kings true commons of Kent, Alſo the kings-bench, the which is to greeteuill to the ſhire of Kent without prouiſion of our ſoueraigne Lord and his true Counſell. And alſo in taking of wheat and other graines, beefe, mutton, and all other victuall, the which is impoſtable to the ſaid commons, without the brefe proviſion of our ſaid ſoueraigne Lord, and his true Counſell, they may no longer beare it. And alſo vnto the ſtatute of labourers and the great extortioners, which is to ſay, the falſe traitors, Sleg, Crowmer, Iſle and Robert Eſt.

These Bils when the Counſell had well peruſed, they did not onely diſalow and condemne them and the Authors, as proud and preſumptuous, but alſo perſwaded the King rather to ſuppreſſe theſe rebels by force, than by faire promiſes, Whereupon the king remoued from Weſtminſter vnto Greenewich, from whence he would haue ſent certaine Lords with a power to haue diſtreſſed the Kentiſh men, but the men ſaid to their Lords, they would not fight againſt them that labour to amend the Common-weale: whereupon the Lords were driuen to leaue their purpoſe. And becauſe the Kentiſhmen cried out againſt the Lord Say the kings chamberlaine, he was by the king committed to the tower of London.

Then went the king againe to London, and within two daies after went againſt the kentiſhmen with fifteene thouſand men well prepared for the warre, but the ſaid kentiſhmen fled the night before his comming into the wood countrie neere vnto Senocke, whereupon the King returned againe into London, and ſent Sir Humfrey Stafford knight, with Wil. Stafford Eſq. his kinſman (faith Pigot,) other Gentlemen, to follow the kentiſh-men, who finding them at Senocke, ſet vpon the rebels, and fought with them a long time, but in the end both the Staffords were ſlaine, with many other of their people, When Iacke Cade had thus ouercome the Staffords, hee forthwith apparelled himſelfe with the knights apparell, and after he had refreſhed his people, he returned to the Blacke-heath, and there pight againe his field, and lay there from the 29. of June till the firſt day of July, in which ſeaſon came vnto him the Archbiſhop of Canterbury and the Duke of Buckingham, with whome they had a long communication, and found him right diſcreete in his anſwers. Howbeit they could not cauſe him to ſubmit himſelfe and lay downe his people, except the King would doe Iuſtice, executing thoſe traitors, whereupon the K. cauſed the L. Say to be arreſted and brought to the Tower by the Duke of Exceſter.

King Henries power ouercome.

In the meane while, the King and Queene hearing of the increaſing of his rebels, and alſo the Lords fearing their owne ſeruants, leſt they would take the Captaines part, remoued from London to Killingworth, leauing the citie without ayde, except onely the Lord Scales, which was left to keepe the Tower, and with him a manly and warly man named Matthew Gough. Then the Captaine of Kent thus hauering at Blacke-heath, to bring himſelfe the more in fame, that he kept good Iuſtice, beheaded there a pettie Captaine of his named Paris, for ſo much as he had offended againſt ſuch ordinances as he had eſtabliſhed in his hoſt: and hearing that the King and his Lords were thus departed, drew him neere vnto the Citie, ſo that vpon the firſt of July, hee entred the Borrough of Southwarke, then being Wedneſday, and lodged him there at the Hart, for hee might not bee ſuffered to enter the Citie.

King Henry went to Killingworth.

Captaine of Kent enabis Kentiſhmen entred into Southwarke.

And vpon the ſame day, the commons of Eſſex in great number pight them a field vpon the plaine of Miles end.

Rob. Fabian. Rebels of Eſſex pight their field on the Miles end.

And vpon the ſecond day of the ſaid moneth, the Maior called a common counſell at the Guildhall, to puruey for the withſtanding of theſe rebells, in which aſſemblie were diuers men of ſundry opinions, ſo that ſome thought good that the ſaid rebells ſhould be received into the Citie, and ſome otherwiſe. Among the which Robert Horne Stockfiſhmonger then being an Alderman, ſpake ſore againſt them that would haue them enter. For the which, the commons were ſo mooued againſt him, that they ceaſed not till they had him committed to Newgate. And the ſame after none about fiue of the clocke, the Captaine with his people entred by the bridge, and cut the ropes of the draw bridge aſunder with his ſwoord. When he was paſſed into the Citie, he made in ſundry places thereof Proclamations in the Kings name, that no man in payne of death ſhould rob or take any thing without paying therfore; By reaſon whereof, he wanne the hearts of the com-

commons, but all was done to beguile them. After as he came from London-ſtone, he ſtrake it with his Sword, and ſaid: Now is Mortimer Lord of this Citty, and then ſhewing his minde to the Maior for the ordering of his people, he returned into Southwarke, and there abode, as he before had done, his people comming and going at lawfull houres when they would.

On the morrow, the third of July, the ſaid Captaine againe entered the Citty, and cauſed the Lord Say to be ſet from the Tower to the Guild-hall, where hee was araigned before the Maior, and other the Kings Iuſtices, and Robert Horne Alderman before named, ſhould haue bene likewiſe arraigned, but that his wife and other freinds, for fiue hundred markes gat him reſpited to his liberty. The Lord Say declining he might be tryed by his Peres, was by the rebells forceably taken from the Officers, and brought to the Standard in Cheape, where they ſtrake off his head, pight it on a pole, and bare it before them, and his body they cauſed to be drawne naked at a horſe taile vpon the pauement, from Cheape into Southwarke, to Saint Thomas of watering, and there hanged and quartered.

Also a Squire called Crowmer, that was then Sheriffe of Kent, that had wedded the ſaid Lord Sayes daughter, by commandement of the Captaine, was brought out of the Fleete, that was committed thither for certaine extortions that hee had done in his Office, and led to Mile end without London, and there without any iudgement his head was ſmit off, and the Lord Sayes head and his, were borne vpon two long poles vnto London bridge, and there ſet vp.

The ſame day, the Captaine went vnto the houſe of Philip Malpas, draper, and Alderman, and robbed and ſpoyled his houſe, taking from thence great ſubſtance, and returned into Southwarke. On the next morrow, he againe entered the City, and dined that day in the Parith of Saint Margaret Pattns at one Gherſtis houſe, and when he had dined, like an vncourteous gueſt hee robbed him, as the day before he had Malpas. For which two robberies, although the poore people drew to him, and were partners in the ſpoyle, yet the honeſt and wealthy commoners caſt in their minds the ſequele of this matter, and feare leſt they ſhould be dealt with in like manner. Then the Maior and Aldermen, with aſſiſtance of the worſhipfull commoners in ſafegard of themſelues and of the City, take their counſell how they might driue the Captaine, and his adherents from the City, for the performance whereof, the Maior ſent vnto the Lord Scales, and Mathew Gough, then hauing the Tower in their gouernment, requiring their ayde and aſſiſtance, which they promiſed.

On the firſt of July, the Captaine being in Southwarke, cauſed a man to be beheaded there, and that day entred not the City. When night was come, the Maior and the Cittizens, with Mathew Gough, kept the paſſage of the bridge, and defended the Kentiſhmen which made great force to enter the Citty. Then the Captaine ſeeing this bickering, went to harneis, and aſſembled his people, and ſet ſo fiercely vpon the Cittizens, he draue them backe from the troups in Southwarke, ouer Bridge gate, vnto the drawbridge, in defending whereof, many a man was drowned and ſlaine. Among the which was Iohn Sutton, Alderman, Mathew Gough a Squire of Wales, and Roger Hoſland, Cittizen. This ſkirmiſh continued all night till nine of the cloche on the morrow, ſo that ſometime, the Cittizens had the better, and ſometimes the other, but euer they kept them vpon the bridge, ſo that the Cittizens neuer paſſed much the bulwarke at the bridge gate, nor the Kentiſhmen no farther then the draw-bridge. Thus continued the cruell fight to the deſtruction of much people on both ſides, laſtly, after the Kentiſhmen were put to the worſt: a truce was agreed for certaine houres, during which truce, the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, then Chancellour of England, ſent a generall pardon to the Captaines for himſelfe, and another for his people, by reaſon whereof, hee and his company withdrew them by little and little, and their Captaine put all his pillage and goods that hee had robbed in a Barge, and ſent it to Rochester by water, and himſelfe went by Land, and would haue entered into the Caſtle of Quinborow with a few men that were left about him: but he was there let of his purpoſe: wherefore he fled into the wood Country beſide Lewes in Suſſex. The Captaine and his people being thus departed, not long after, proclamations were made in diuers places in Kent, Suſſex and Surry, that who might take the foreſaid Captaine aliue or dead, ſhould haue 1000. markes for his trauell.

Captaines and Rebells pardoned.

The Copy of the Writ and Proclamation by the King, for the taking of the ſaid Cade *and his fellowſhip.*

HENRICUS Dei gracia Rex Angliæ & Franciæ, & Dominus Hibernia, vniuerſis & ſingulis ciuibus, &c.

For as much as one Iohn Cade, borne in Ireland, which called himſelfe Iohn Mortimer, and in ſome writing calleth himſelfe Captaine of Kent, the which Iohn Cade the laſt yere before had his dwelling in Suſſex with a Knight, called Sir Thomas Dagre, ſlew there a woman with childe, and for that cauſe, fled the priſon of the Church, and after for that cauſe, forſware the Kings Land: the which, Iohn Cade, alſo after this, was ſworne to the French part, and dwelled with them, which hath now of late time (to the intent to enrich himſelfe by robbing and diſpoyling of the Kings liege-men, as it is now openly knowne, to bring himſelfe to great and high eſtate) falſely and vntruely deceiued many of the Kings people, and vnder colour of holy & good intents, made them to aſſemble with him againſt the Kings regality and his Lawes, and nought ſetting by the Kings Grace

and pardons granted, and not oncle to him, but al the kings subiects, the which by his deceite haue assembled with him, the which hee with great reuerence, receiued on Monday last passed, and so did all that were assembled with him: notwithstanding, all this, hee laboureth now of new to assemble the kings people a-gaine, and to that intent, beareth them on hand that the kings letters of pardon granted to him and them, be not anaileable, nor of none effect, without authority of Parliament: where as the contrary is true, as it is openly knowne by that, that the king grants from time to time his Charters of pardon to such as him list, of all manner of crimes and offences, both generall and speciall.

The king therefore willeth and commandeth, that none of his subiects giue faith nor credence to the said false informations of the said false traytour, nor accompany with him in any wise, nor comfort, nor sustaine him nor his with victuall, nor with any other things. But will whosoeuer of the kings subiects may take him, shall take him, and that whosoeuer taketh him, and bringeth him quicke or dead to the king or his Councell, shall haue a thousand markes for his labour truly paide him, without faile or delay, by the prouision of the kings Councell. And whosoeuer taketh any of those that from this day forth accompany with him, shall haue 5. markes for his reward, truly to be payd in manner and forme aboue said.

And ouer this, commanding all Constables, Ministers, and Officers of the said Shire, that none of them on paine of death, take vpon them to execute any commandement by word or writing sent or made vnto them by the said Cade, calling him Mortimer, and Captaine, be it to reare any people or to any other intent: but to arrest, and make to be arrested, such as take vpon them to bring any such commandement by writing or by word. *Et hoc nullatenus omittatis. Teste me ipso apud Westminster*, 10. *die Iulij. Anno regni*, 28.

Captaine of Kent taken and beheaded.

After which proclamation thus published, a Gentleman of Kent, named Alexander Eden awaited so his time that he tooke the saide Cade in a garden in Sussex. And there he was slaine at Hothfield, and brought to London in a Cart, and there quartered, his head set on London-Bridge, and his quarters sent to diuers places in Kent.

Bishop of Salisbury murthered.

This yere the commons also in diuers parts of England: as in Sussex, Wiltshire, and other places, did much harme to vnruly persons, among the which on the 29. of June, Will. Ascot, Bishop of Salisbury (after he had said masse at Edington) was by his own tenants drawne from the Altar, in his Albe with his Stole about his necke to the top of an hill, and there by them shamefully murthered: so they cleaued his head as hee kneeled on his knees in his prayers, and after spoyled to the naked skin, and then they renting his bloody shirt, took every man a piece, and made boast of their wickednesse: and the day before, his Chariot was robbed of his treasury, *An. reg.* 29. to the value of ten thousand markes.

Alexander Eden Esquire, Sheriffe of Kent, for his good seruice against the said rebells, is made Custos, or keeper of the Castle at Rochester. Alexander Eden.

In the moneth of September, Tresham, that was speaker in the Parliament, was beheaded in Northamptonshire.

After Michaelmas, Richard, Duke of Yorke comming out of Ireland, tooke Ioh. Sutton, Baron of Dudley, and Reginald, Abbot of S. Peters at Glocester, and shortly after, he tooke Ioh. Gargraue, keper of the Kings bench at London, and sent them to the Castle of Ludlow.

The 6. of Nouember, began a Parliament at Westminster, and the first of December, the Duke of Somerset, which was newly come out of Normandy, was put vnder arrest, and his goods by the commons was lowly despoyled and borne away from the Blackfriers. After which riot, on the next morrow, proclamation was made throw the City by the Duke of Yorke, and the Duke of Norfolke, that no man should spoile or rob, vpon paine of death: and the same day at the Standard in Cheape, was a man beheaded for doing contrary to the Proclamation. Parliament at Westminster.

The 4. of December, the King and his Lords rode throw the City of London, with a great Army of men, well appointed, and diuided into three battells. Also the Citizens armed stood in the stretes of the City, where, throw the King passed, which altogether made the greatest shew of armed men that had been seene in London within the memory of any man then liuing. King Henry rode into Kent with an army.

The 18. of Ianuary, the King, with certaine Lords, and his Iustices, road towards Kent, and there iudited and araigned many, whereof to the number of 26. were put to death, 8. at Canterbury, and the residue in other Townes of Kent and Sussex. And the King returning out of Kent on the 23. of February, the men of that country naked, saue their shirts, in great numbers, met him on the Blackheath, and there on their knees asked mercy, and had their pardon. Then the King rode royally throw the City of London, and was of the Citizens toyfully received, and the same day against the Kings comming to the City, nine heads of the Kentish-men that had been put to death, were set on London bridge, and the Captaines head that stood there before, was set in the midst of them. 1451. Rebells in Kent and Sussex executed.

The malice begunne, increased betweene the Lords of the Land, and especialy, against the Duke of Somerset, and other of the Queenes Councell, for the losing of Normandy, whereof the chiefe City of Rome was lost or giuen by by appointment, the yeere proceeding (as witnesseth Gagwine) vpon condition, that the Duke of Somerset, with his wife, and English souldiers, should with such goods as they might carry, depart freely from the City: For which free passage he should pay vnto the French king 56. thousand Scutes, which amount to 14000. marke sterling. And also he was bound to deliuer into the French K. possession, all townes and castles that at that day were in the possession of Englishmen within the duchy of Normandy: for the Robert Gagwine.

the performance of which couenants, the Lord Talbot was sent for one of the pledges, and so by one Floquet, all the Townes and Castles were to the French Kings vse received, Harfleet only excepted, whereof the Captaine named Curton, with the assistance of Sir Thomas Auringham in despite of all the French Kings power laid both by Sea and Land, held the same a full moneth or more, and then for lacke of rescue, gaue it vp by appointment.

Richard, Duke of Yorke, pretending a Title to the Crowne, and heyre to Lionell, Duke of Clarence, came this yeere out of Ireland vnto London, in the Parliament time, there to consult with his especiall friends, Iohn, Duke of Norfolke, Richard, Earle of Salisbury, and Richard his sonne, which after was Earle of Warwicke: Thomas Courtney, Earle of Deuonshire, and Edward Brooke, Lord Cobham, &c. After long deliberation and aduice taken, it was concluded to keepe their chiefe purpose secret, and that the Duke should raise an Army of men, vnder a pretext to remoue diuers counsellours about the King, and to reuenge the manifest iniuries done to the Common wealth by the same rulers, of the which as principall, the Duke of Somerset was namely accused, both for that hee was greatly hated of the Commons for the losse of Normandy, and for that it was well knowne, that hee would be altogether against the Duke of Yorke, in his challenge to be made to the crowne when time should serue: Therefore, when the Duke of Yorke had thus framed his foundation of his long intended enterprize, he assembled a great host, to the number of 10000. in the Marches of Wales, publishing openly, that the cause of this his gathering of people, was for the publike wealth of the Realme, for affirming the same to be true, hee wrote his letters in forme as followeth. Richard, Duke of Yorke, his declaration of truth as he find. *An. reg.* 30.

Richard, Duke of Yorke, pretended Title to the crown.

For asmuch as I Richard, Duke of Yorke, am informed, that the king my Soueraigne Lord, is my heauy Lord, greatly displeased with me, and hath mee in distrust by sinister informations of mine enemies, aduersaries, and euill-willers, where, God knoweth, from whom nothing is hid, I am, haue beene, and euer will be, his true liege-man, and so haue I before this diuers times, as well by mouth, as by writing, notified and declared to my said Soueraigne Lord. And for that this notice so common vnto me, of the displeasure of my said Soueraigne Lord, is to me so grieuous, I haue prayed the reuerend father in God, the Bishop of Hereford, and my Cosin, the Earle Shrewsbury, to come hither, and heare my declaration in this matter. Wherein I haue saide to them, that I am true liege-man to the King, my Soueraigne Lord, euer haue beene, and shall be to my dying day. And to the very proofe that it is so, I offer my selfe to sweare that, on the blessed Sacrament, and receiue it, the which I hope shall be my saluation, at the day of doome: And so for my speciall comfort and consolation, I haue prayed the said Lords to report and declare vnto the Kings Highnesse my said offer. And to the end and intent, that I will be ready to doe the same oath in presence of these three Lords, such as shall please the Kings Highnesse to send hither to accept it. In witnesse whereof, I haue signed this schedule with my hand manuall, and set thereunto my signet of Armes. Written in my Castle of Ludlow, the 9. of Ianuary, the 30. yeere of the raigne of my Soueraigne Lord, King Henry the sixt. 1452.

The 27. of May, 1452. the glorious City of Constantinople, was taken by Mahomet, the seuenth Prince of Turks, whose Souldiers entred it with all extremity, and omitted no manner of cruelty, or violence, either to virgins, aged persons, nor sucking Babes, yea, such was the inordinate practice of their Turkish tyranny vpon this imperiall City, as it exceeded the damage, Rapes, and spoyles of other Cities: they also beheaded Constantine the Christian Emperour thereof, and put his head vpon the top of a Launce, and with derision, caused it to be borne throughout the Turkish campe: this renowned City was at first chiefely reedified, and dignified by an Emperour, whose name was Constantine, and his mothers name Helen, and was latly lost, and bereft of all Christian Religion by a Constantine, whose mothers name was likewise Helen, in the yeere 1460. Constantinople taken by the Turke. Particulars concerning the same taken out of Chalcondilas.

In Constantinople there happened a horrible tempest of thunder and lightning, which burned almost eight hundred houses, and spoyled three thousand people, at the taking of this City by the said Mahomet. The Turkes found therein so much treasure, that they wondered that the Cittizens would not spend it vpon Souldiers for their owne defence, but so lauishingly to spare the true spending thereof, to become an entising pray to their barreconcileable enemies.

The 16. of February, King Henry accompanied with the Duke of Somerset, and many other Lords, tooke towards the Marches of Wales, for as much, as he was credibly enformed, that the Duke of Yorke, assisted with diuers other Lords and men of name, had in those parts gathered a strong power of people, and with them was entering the Land, and so held on his iourney towards him: but when the Duke had witting of the Kings great power, he returned from the way which was taken by the kings host, and pressed towards London. And when hee had receiued knowledge from the City, that hee might not there be receiued, he went ouer Kingstone-Bridge, and so into Kent, and there vpon Ascent-Heath, neere vnto Dertford, he pight his field, where of the King hauing knowledge, shed him after, and lastly came vnto Black Heath, and there pight his field. When both the hosts were thus readie pitched, mediation of peace was made betweene them, for furtherance whereof, to the Duke were sent the Bishoppes of Winchester and of Ely, to the Earles of Salisbury and Warwicke. To whom it was answered by the Duke, that he nor none of his company intended any hurt to the Kings person, nor to any of his Councell, being louers of the Common wealth, and of him and his Land: but he vnder-

in'ent and purpose was to remoue from the king a few euil disposed persons, by whose meanes the common people was grieuously oppressed, and the communalty greatly impouerished, of whom he named the Duke of Somerset to be the Principall, &c. And further to vnderstand of the Dukes meaning, by this his forcible entring of the Realme (as himselfe pretended) may appeare by certaine letters by him written to the king, and also the kings answer to the same; both which, I thinke good here to set downe as I finde them recoyded.

Richard, Duke of Yorke, his letters to King Henry.

Please it your highnesse to conceiue that since my departing out of this Realme by your commandement, and being in your seruice in your Land of Ireland, I haue bene informed, that diuers language hath ben said of me to your most excellent estate, which should sound to my dishonour and reproach, and charge of my person: how beit, that I aye haue beene, and euer will be, your true leage-man and seruant: and if there be any man that will, or dare say the contrary, or charge me otherwise, I beseech your right wiseneselle to call him before your high presence, and I will declare me for my discharge as a true knight ought to do, and if I doe not, as I doubt not but I shall, I beseech you to punish me: as the poorest man of your Land: and if he be found vntrue in his suggestion and information, I beseech you of your Highnelle, that he be punished after his desert, in example of all other. Please it your excellence to know, that as well before my departing out of this your Realme, for to go into your Land of Ireland, in your full Noble seruice, as since, certaine persons haue lyen in awaite for to hearken vpon me: as Sir John Talbot, knight, at the Castle of Holt: Sir Thomas Stanley, knight, in Cheshire: Pulforde at Chester: Elton at Worcester: Brooke at Gloucester: Richard, groome of your Chamber at Beaumarres, which had in charge, (as I am informed) for to take me, and put me into your Castle of Conway, and to strike off the head of Sir William Oldehall, knight, and to haue put in prison Sir William Deuereux, knight, Sir Edmond Mallo, knight withouten enlarging, vntill the time that your Highnelle had appointed their deliuerance.

Item, at such time as I was purposed for to haue arriued at your Hauen of Beaumarres, for to haue come to your Noble presence to declare me your true man and subiect, as my duty is, my landing was stopped and forbarred by Henry Norres, Thomas Norres, William Bulkley, William Gruft, and Bartholomew Bould, your Officers in North-Wales, that I should not land there, nor haue victuall, nor refreshing for me and my fellowship, as I haue written to your excellence hereberore, to farre forth, that Henry Norres, deputy to the Chamberlaine of North-Wales said vnto me, that he had in commandement, that I should in no wise haue landing, refreshing, nor lodging, for men, nor for horse, nor other thing that might turne to my worship or ease, putting the blame vpon William Say, Vsher of your Chamber, saying, and affirming that I am against your intent, and as a Traytour, as I am informed: and moreouer, certaine letters were made and deliuered vnto Chester, Shrewsbury, and to other places, for to let mine entrie into the same.

Item, aboue all wrongs and iniuries aboue said done vnto me of malice, without any cause, I being in your Land of Ireland, in your honorable seruice, certaine commissions were made and directed vnto diuers persons, which for the execution of the same, sate in certaine places, and the iurors impanelled and charged, to the which iuries, certaine persons laboured instantly to haue me indited of treason, to the intent for to haue vndon me and mine issue, and corrupted my blood, as it is openly published: beseeching your Maiestly royall, of your righteousnelle, to examine these matters, and thereupon to doe such iustice in this behalfe, as the cause requireth: for mine intent is fully to pursue to your Highnelle for the conclusion of these matters.

Answer of King Henry to the Duke of Yorke.

Cousin, we haue seene the Bill that ye take vs late, and also vnderstand the good humble obedience, that ye in your selfe shew vnto vs, as well in word as in deed, wherefore our intent is, the more hastily to ease you of such things as were in your said Bill. Yowbeit that at our more leysure we might answere to your said Bill, yet we let you to wit, that for the causes aforesaid, wee will declare you now our intent in these matters: sith it is that a long time among the people hath bene vpon you many strange language, and in especiall anone after your discolnate and vnlawfull slaying of the Bishoppe of Chester, diuers and many of the vntrue ship-men and other, said in their manner, words against our estate, making menace to our owne person by your sayings, that ye should be fetched with many thousands, and ye should take vpon you that, which yee neither ought, nor as we doubt not, yee shall not attempt, for farre forth that it was said to your person by diuers, and especially we remember of one Waines which had like words to vs. And also there was diuers of such false people, that went on, and had like language in diuers of our Townes of our Land, which by our subiects were taken and duely executed: wherefore we sent to diuers of our Courts and places to hearken and to take heed, if any such maner of comming were, and if there had beene, for to refell it: but comming into our Land, our true subiect as yee did, our intent was not that ye, nor lelle of estate of our subiects, nor none of your seruants should not haue beene letted nor warned, but in goodly wise receiued: Yowbeit, that peraduenture your sudden comming, without certaine warning, caused our seruants to doe as they did, considering the causes aboue said. And as to the enditement that ye spoke of, we thinke verily, and hold for certaine, that there was none such. And if yee may truely proue, that my person was there about, the matter shall be demanded as the cale shall require; to that bee shall know it is to our great displeasure. Vpon this for the easings of your heart in all such matters, wee declare, repute, and admit you our true and faithful subiect, and as our welbeloued Cousin.

Richard, Duke of Yorke to King Henry againe.

Please it your Highnesse tenderly to consider, that great murmure and grudging is vniuersally in this our Realme, in that Iustice is not duly ministered to such as trespasse, and offend against your Lawes, and in speciall, of them that be indited of treason, and other, being openly noysed of the same, whereby great inconueniences haue fallen, and great is like to fall hereafter in your said Realme, which God defend, but if by your Highnesse prouision conenable be made, for due reformation and punishment in this behalfe. Wherefore I your humble subiect and true leageman, Richard, Duke of Yorke, willing, as effectually as I can, and desiring the sucetie and prosperitie of your most royall Person, and the welfare of this your Noble Realme, counsell and aduertise your excellency for the conseruation of good tranquility and peaceable rule among all other subiects, for to withdraine and prouide, that true iustice be had, against all such that so be indited or openly named, wherein I offer my selfe, and will put my endeuour, for to execute your commandement in the premises, for the punishing of such offenders, and redzelle of the said misrule, to my might and power. And for the hasty execution hereof, like it your Highnesse to addzelle these letters of prinp seale, and writs to your officers and ministers, to do, take and arrest all such persons so noysed and indited, of what estate, degree, or condition soeuer they be, and them to commit to the Tower of London, and to other of your prisons, there to abide without baile or mainprise, vntill the time they be otterly tried, and determined after the course of your Lawes.

Answer of King Henry to the Duke of Yorke.

Cousin, as touching your bill last put vp to vs, we vnderstand well, that ye of good heart, counsell, aduertise vs to the setting vp of iustice, and to the spedy punishing of some persons indited or noysed, offering your seruice to bee ready at commandement in the same, sith it is, that for many causes, mooning vs to haue determined in our soule, to stablish a fast and a substantiall Councell, giuing them more ample authority and power, then euer we did before this: in the which we haue appointed you to be one. But sith it is not accustomed sure, nor expedient, to take a conclusion and conduse by aduice or counsell of one person by himselfe for the conseruation, it is obserued that the greatest and the best, the rich and the poore, in liberty, vertue, and effect of your voyces be equall: we haue therefore determined within our selfe to send for our Chancellour of England, and for other Lords of our Councell, yea, and all other, together within short time, ripely to commune these and other our great matters, in the which communication, such conclusion by the grace of God shall be taken, as shall sound to his pleasure, the weale of vs and our Land, as well in these matters, as in any other.

At length it was agreed by the King, that the Duke of Somerset, should be committed to warde there to abide, and answer such articles as the Duke of Yorke would lay against him, vpon which promises so made by the King to the Duke, who saw that the people of kent, and of other places came not to him as they had promised, and that they were not strong enough, for the Kings part was much more then his, he brake vp his field on the first of March, and yelded himselfe to the King at Dertford, where, contrary to promise before made, he found the Duke of Somerset chiefe about the King. Then was the Duke of Yorke sent before to London, and holden partly as prisoner, and straighter should haue bene kept, but it was noysed that Sir Edward, Earle of March, sonne to the said Duke of Yorke was comming toward London with a strong power of Welshmen, which feared so the Queene and Councell, that the Duke was set at full liberty. And on the tenth of March, the said Richard, Duke of Yorke, made his submission, and tooke his oath to be true faithfull, and obedient subiect to King Henry the first, king of England, in Saint Pauls Church at London, there being present, the King, and most of his Nobility, that is to say, the Dukes of Buckingham, Northampton, and Somerset: the Earles of Warwick, Arundell, Salisbury, Shropshire, Deuonshire, Wiltshire, Northumberland, Stafford and Dorset, Viccounts of Beaumount and Wells: Barons Fitz Warren, Saimond, Cobham, Douglas, and other Bishops: the Cardinall, Archbishop of Yorke, and Canterbury, Winchester, Ely, and London in these words following.

Richard, Duke of Yorke, his submission and oath to Henry the sixt.

I Richard, Duke of Yorke, confesse and beknow, that I am, and ought to be humble, subiect, and liegeman to you my soueraigne Lord, King Henry the 6. and owe therfore to beare you faith and truth, as to my soueraigne liege Lord, and shall do all dates vnto my liues end, and shall not at any time will or assent, that any thing be attempted or done against your most Noble person, but wheresoeuer I shal haue knowledge of any such thing imagined or purposed, I shall with all speed and diligence possible to me, make that your highnes shall haue knowledge thereof, and ouer that, doe all that shall be possible to me, to the withstanding and let thereof, to the vttermost of my life: I shall not any thing take vpon me against your royall estate, or obeysance that is due thereto, nor suffer any other man to do, as far forth as it shall be in my power to let it: And also shall come at your commandement whensoeuer I shall be called by the same, in humble and obeysant wise, but if I be letted by any sickness, or impotence of my person, or by such other cause as shall be thought by you my soueraigne Lord, reasonable. I shall neuer hereafter take vpon me, to gather any rowt, or to make any assembly of your people, without your commandement or licence, or in my lawfull defence, in interpretation, or declaration of the which my lawfull defence, I shall report me at all times to your Highnesse, and if the cale require, to my Peeres, nor any thing attempt against any of your subiects, of what estate, degree, or condition

condition that they be. But whensoeuer I find my selfe wronged and agrieued, I shall sue humbly for remedy to your Highnesse, and proceede after the course of your Lawes, and in none otherwise, sauing in my owne lawfull defence in manner aboue said, and otherwise haue to your Highnesse, as an humble and true subiect ought to haue to his Soueraigne Lord. All these things aboue said, I promise you truely to obserue and keepe, by the holy Euangelists conteined in the booke that I lay my hand heere vpon, and by the holy Crosse I heere touch, and by the blessed Sacrament of the Lords body, that I shall now with his mercy receiue. And ouer, I agree wee, and will, that if I any time hereafter, as by the grace of our Lord God I neuer shall, any thing attempt by way of feate, or otherwise against your royall Maiestie and obeysance that I owe thereto, or any thing take vpon me otherwise, then is aboue expressed, I from that time forth be vnabled held, and taken as an vntrue and openly forsworne man, and vnable to all manner of worship, estate, and degree, be it such as I now occupy, or any other that might in any wise grow vnto me hereafter. And this I haue here promised and sworne, proceeded of mine owne free desire, and frée volunte, and by no constraining or coaction. In witnesse of all the things aboue written, I Richard, Duke of Yorke aboue writ, subscribe with mine owne hand and Seal.

An. Reg. 31. This oath he also tooke at Westminster, and at Couentrie, at sundrie times, although his little obseruing thereof, as by the sequell may appeare.

This yeere deceased Iohn Stafford, Archbishoppe of Canterbury, late Lord Chancelour of England, and was buried at Canterbury. After him succéeded in the Archbishoprick, Iohn Kempe, borne at Wy in Kent, Doctour of Lawes, first Bishop of Rochester, then of Chichester, then of London, then Archbishop of Yorke, Chancelour of England, and Cardinall of Saint Albin: and now Archbishop of Canterbury, and Cardinall of Saint Rufine, and was inthronized at Canterbury on the 11. of December.

1453. On the 25th day after Christmas, the King holding his Christmas at Westminster with great solemnitie, made his two brethren by the mothers side Knights.

The Earle of Kendall, and the Lord Lespare came Ambassadours from the chiefest Magistrates of the City of Burdeaux, which signified to the Councell, that if they would send an Army into Gascoygne, the people of the countrey would reuolt from the French part, and againe become Englishmen. This newes sore troubled the heads of the Councell, which caused them, lest inward sedition might hinder outward victory, set the Duke of Yorke at liberty, and permitted him to goe to the Castell of Wigmore in the Marches of Wales, by whose absence, the Duke of Somerset rose in such high fauour, both with the King and the Queene, that his word was onely heard and regarded: the Councell hoping now to haue the City of Burdeaux, with the Countrey round about, appointed Iohn, Lord Talbot, Earle of Shrewesbury, to goe thither with an Armie, who arriuing in the Ile of Garoze, passed forth with his power, being scant three thousand men, and tooke the strong Towne of Fronsake, and diuers other Townes and fortresses. Burdeaux yeelded to the Englith.

The inhabitants of Burdeaux hearing of the Earles arriuall, sent to him messengers in the darke night, requiring him with all speed, to come and receiue the City. The Earle hastened forth, and came before that City, ere the Frenchmen within vnderstood any thing of the Citizens purpose. But when they heard that there was a gate set open for the Englishmen to enter, they thought to haue escaped secretly by a posterne, but they were pursued, slaine, and taken by the Lord de Lespare, and other of the English Army.

After the regaining of Burdeaux, there arriued at Blay, the Bastard of Somerset, Sir Iohn Talbot, Lord Lisle, by his wife, sonne to the said Earle of Shrewesbury, the Lord Molines, the Lord Harington, the Lord Cames, Sir Iohn Howard, Sir Iohn Mountgomerie, Sir Iohn Vernon, with 2200. men, victualls, and munition.

In the moneth of March, was the Towne of Harflew won by the Frenchmen, and shortly the City of Bayons was giuen vp by appointment, that the Souldiers should leaue their armour behinde them.

When the Earle of Shrewesbury was furnished, as is aforesaid, first hee fortified Burdeaux with Englishmen, and store of victualls, and artillery, then hee rode into the Countrey abroad, where hee obtained Cities and Townes, without stroke, amongst other Townes, the Towne and Castle of Chastillon in Perigort was to him deliuered, the which he fortified.

In the meane time, the French King being aduertised of these things, raised an Army to resist the inuasion made by the Earle, and first hee appointed his Captaines to beseege the Towne of Chastillon, to the rescue whereof, the Earle hasted forward, hauing in his company eight hundred horsemen, vnder the leading of his sonne, the Lord Lisle, the Lord Molins, the Lord Cameis, Sir Ed. Hull, Sir Iohn Howard, and Sir Iohn Vernon: hee appointed also 5000. foote-men, vnder the conduct of the Earle of Kendall, and the Lord de Lespare to follow him with speed. In his way, hee tooke a Towne, which the French-men had before taken, and slew all that he found therein, and after by the way, hee met fiue hundred Frenchmen a foraging, of whom he slew the more part, and chased the other to the campe.

The French men that lay at the siege, perceiuing by these runners away, that the Earle approched, left the siege, and retired in good order into the place which they had trenched and fortified. The Earle aduertised how the siege was remooued, hasted forward toward his enemies, doubting lest they would haue beene fled and gone before his comming, but they abode

abode the Earles comming, and so receiued him, that though by manly courage hee first wanne the entrie at their campe, yet at length they compassed him about, and thoting him thorow the thigh with a hand gunne, slew his horse and finally killed him, lying on the ground. There died also Sir Iohn Talbot, Lord Lisle his sonne, and his Bastard sonne, Henry Talbot, and Sir Edward Hull, and thirty other men of name, the Lord Molens was taken prisoner with threescore others. The residue of the English people fled to Burdeaux, and other places, of whom in the fight were slaine aboue a thousand persons.

John Earle of Shrewsbury slaine. Lord Molins taken.

Thus at this battell of Chastillon fought the twentieth of July, ended his life Iohn, Lord Talbot, and of his progeny the first Earle of Shrewesbury, after that hee had valiantly made warre in seruice of his Prince 24. yeeres: he was buried at Whitchurch in Shropshire.

An. Reg. 32. After this, the Towne of Saint Millar, Libourne, and all other Townes which the Earle of Shrewesbury had conquered, rendred themselues to the Frenchmen, Burdeaux only excepted. The which City being the last refuge of the English people, the French King in person inclosed with all his puissance, and in conclusion, constrained both the garrison and inhabitants to yeeld, so that the Englishmen and Gascoygnes might safely depart with all their substance.

Thus was the Duchy of Aquitaine, which had continued in the possession of the Englith from the yeere of our Lord, 1155. vnto this yeere, 1453. which is neere hand 300. yeeres, by the marriage of Elianor, daughter and heyre to William, Duke of Aquitaine, wife to King Henry the second, finally reduced and brought againe to the French obedience and seruitude. Description of Aquitaine. Within that Duchy, be foure Archbishops, foure and twenty Bishops, fifteen Carledomes, two hundred and two Barons, and aboue a thousand Captainships, and Bayliffewicks, whereby ye may perceiue what a losse this was to the Realme of England.

The thirteenth day of October, the Quéene at Westminster was deliuered of her first borne sonne, whose name was Edward. 1454.

When the warres were ceased in foraine parts, ciuill dissention beganne againe to renew within the Realme, being diuided into two seuerall factions: for King Henry descended of the house of Lancaster, claiming the Crowne from his Grandfather, King Henry the fourth: and Richard, Duke of Yorke, as heire to Lionell, Duke of Clarence, third sonne to King Edward the third, wrestled for the game, by reason whereof, the Nobles as well as the common people, were into many parts diuided, to the vtter destruction of many a man, to the great ruine and decay of this Realme. For while the one part studied to destroy the other, all cars of the common wealth was set aside, iustice and equity clearely exiled.

Practises of the Duke of Yorke.

The Duke of Yorke aboue all things, first sought meanes how to prouoke the malice of the people against the Duke of Somerset, imagining that hee being made away, his purpose should shortly come to conclusion.

Hee also practised to bring the King into the hatred of the people, for that hee was not a man of stomacke sufficient to supply the roome which he held. Many of the high estates not liking the woorke, and disallowing the acts and doings both of the King and his Councell, determined to practise how things might come to some alteration: which when the Duke vnderstood, he chiefely entertained and wan the fauour of two the Neuills, both named Richards, the one Earle of Salisbury, the other Earle of Warwicke: the first being the Father, and the second the sonne. This Earle of Salisbury, was second sonne to Ralph Neuill, Earle of Westmeland, whose Daughter the Duke of Yorke has married, and the said Richard was espoused to Lady Alice, the onely child, and sole heyre of Thomas Mountacute, Earle of Salisbury, slaine at the siege of Orleance, of which woman he begat Richard, Iohn, and George, Richard the eldest sonne, espoused Anne, the sister and heyre of the entire blood to Henry Beauchampe, Earle, and after Duke of Warwicke, in whose right and Title, hee was created Earle of Warwicke.

An. reg. 32. Edmond, Duke of Somerset sent to the Tower, and Articles put against him by the Duke of Yorke.

The Duke of Yorke with his friends, wrought so effectually, and handled his businesse so politikly, that the Duke of Somerset was arrested in the Quéene great Chamber, and sent to the Tower of London, where hee kept his Christmas without great solemnity, against whom, in open Parliament, were layd diuers articles, beginning thus: These articles and Petitions following, giue and minister, I Richard, Duke of Yorke, your liege-man, and seruant vnto your Highnesse, summarily proposing and declaring them, against Edmond, Duke of Somerset, for the great welfare, and the common auaile, and increase of your Maiestie royall, and of this your Noble Realme, as well to bring to knowledge and vnderstanding the meanes and causes of the great mischiefes and inconueniences, which late befell vnto this your Noble Realme, as in losse of your liueload beyond the Sea, and otherwise in punishment of deseruiters, and cause of innocency, and also in putting aside and eschewing of the great and vnspeakable hurt and preiudice which hath béene like, without that purueyance be had of remedy, to succeed in short time. To the which articles of euery of them, I the said Duke of Yorke, desire of your Reguall, and indifferent right vnseuerlie, that the said Edmond answer by his faith, and truth, the Sacrament of his oath, thereupon made duely and truely, as Law and Conscience requireth, &c.

The King at that time hauing layne long sicke at Clarendon, was conueyed to London, by reason whereof, no finall determination passed in this waighty cause, but all was put in suspence, till the next assembly of the High Court of Parliament.

Wheat sold for 12 pence the quarter.

This yeere, Wheat and other graines were in such plenty, that a quarter of Wheat was commonly sold for 12. pence, and 14. pence: a quarter of Maulte for 16. pence, and 17. pence at the most, and not above. A certaine Farmer dwelling in the Towne of Cruse Royse or Rose Towne in Hartfordshire, wanting money, sold 20. quarters of Wheat the best, for 20. shillings.

Archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

John Kempe, Archbishop of Canterbury, deceased, and was buried at Canterbury. This Kempe was borne at Wy in Kent, whereupon, when hee was Archbishop of Yorke, hee made the Parish Church at Wy, a Colledge, whereof the gouernour was a Prebend, and the other were ministers for diuine service, and to instruct youth in Grammer & learning according to his foundation. Which Colledge, at the suppression the 26. of Henry the eighth, was valued 93. pounds, two shillings by yeere. The father of this Archbishop Kempe, lieth buried in the said Church of Wy, with this Epitaph following.

Hic iacent ossa, Thomæ Kempe *marmore fossa,*
Cuius opus pronum, se probat esse bonum:
Dum vixit lætus, Jnit & benitate repletus,
Munificus vigilet, pauperibus tribuit:
Jungitur hus: Satrix, virtutum sponsa Beatrix,
Quæ partitur opes, sponte manans inopes.
Ex his procedit, vt ramus ab arbore crescit,
Cleri præsidium, dux sapiens eminens:
Christo lectores, mens cunctis supplices horis,
Vt patris dictas, luminet has animas.

Idem *Thomas* obijt Anno Domini, 1428. 30. die Mensis Maij.

Unto this John Kempe, succeeded in the Archbishopricke of Canterbury, Thomas Bourcher, brother to Henry, Earle of Eser, Deane of Saint Martins, first Bishop of Winchester, then of Ely, and then Archbishop of Canterbury, and Cardinall of Saint Ciriac, and William Grey was made Bishop of Ely, and Richard Neuill, Earle of Salisbury, was made Lord Chancellour of England.

Whilest King Henry lay sicke, Richard, Duke of Yorke, bare all the rule, and gouerned as Regent, and did now discouer the sparks of his hatred hid vnder dissimulation, against the Duke of Somerset: but when the King had recouered his strength againe, and resumed to him his Princely gouernment, he caused the Duke of Somerset, to be set at liberty, and preferred him to be Captaine of Calois, wherewith not onely the Commons, but many of the Nobility, (fauourours of Richard, Duke of Yorke) were greatly grieued and offended, saying, that hee had lost Normandy, and would lose Calois.

Edmond, Duke of Somerset, Captaine of Calois.

1455. The Duke of Yorke raiseth a power, and marcheth toward London.

The Duke of Yorke and his adherents, perceiuing that their accusing of the Duke of Somerset preuailed not, determined to reuenge their quarrell, and obtaine their purpose by open warre: and so he being in Wales accompanied with his especiall friends, the Earles of Salisbury and Warwicke, the Lord Cobham, and others, assembled a power of warlike persons, and marched towards London.

The King being informed thereof, assembled likewise an host, and meaning to meete with the Duke, rather in the South parts, then about London, where it was thought hee had too many friends, with great spede, being accompanied with Humfrey, Duke of Buckingham, and Humfrey his eldest sonne, Earle of Stafford, Edmond, Duke of Somerset, Henry Percy, Earle of Northumberland, James Butler, Earle of Wiltshire, and of Ormond, John Beawford, Earle of Dorset, Iasper Tewder, Earle of Penbroke, brother to the King: Thomas Courtney, Earle of Deuonshire, Thomas, Lord Clifford, the Lords, Sudley, Barnes, Rose, and others, being in all, aboue 2000. men of warre, departed from Westminster the 21. day of May, towards Saint Albans, to meete with the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwicke and Salisbury: the King lodged that night at Madesord, or Watford on this side Saint Albans, and on the morrow in the morning, early hee came to Saint Albans. And about the same time, were there assembled Richard, Duke of Yorke, John, Duke of Norfolke, Richard, Earle of Warwicke, Richard, Earle of Salisburie, William, Lord Fauconbridge, Edward, Lord Cobham, and many other Knights and Esquires the Kings enemies, in a place called Reysield, beside Saint Albons. The king hearing of the Dukes comming with the Lords aforesaid, pight his banner in a place called Gotelowe, which place was sometimes called Sandforth in Saint Peters Stréte, and commanded in strong manner to keepe the wards and barriers of the same towne. The Duke of Yorke knowing the strength made against him, abiding in the field aforesaide, from seuen of the clock in the morning, vntill it was almost ten of the clock without any stroke smitten on either part, by the aduise of his counsell sent vnto the King vnder these words following.

Please it vnto your excellent Grace, Richard duke of Yorke, to take him as your true liege man and humble subiect, and to consider and tender at the reuerence of God, and in the way of charity, the true intent of my comming, and to be good and gracious Soueraigne vnto mee, and all other your true liege men, which that with all their power and might will bee ready to liue and dy with you in your right, and to doe all things as shall like your Maiesty royall to command vs, if it be to the worship of the Crowne of England, and the welfare of this your Noble Realme. Moreouer, gracious Lord, please it vnto your Maiesty royall, of your great goodnesse, and rightwisenesse, to incline your will to heare and feele the rightwise part of vs your true subiects, & liege men. First praying and beseeching to our soueraign Christ Iesus, of his high and mighty power to giue the vertue of prudence, & that through the prayer of the glorious Mary, Saint Albons

Words in writing by the Duke of Yorke, vnto the King.

bons giue you very knowledge of your trothes, and to know the intent of your assembling at this time: For God, that is in heauen, knoweth our intent is rightfull and true: And therefore wee pray vnto that mighty Lord in these words: *Domine sit clypeus defensionis noster:* wherefore gracious Lord, please it your Maiesty Royall to deliuer such as wee will accuse, and they to haue like as they haue deserued. And this done, you to be honourably worshipped, as most rightfull King, and our true Gouernour. And if wee should now at this time be prouided, as afore this time is not vnknowne haue beene prouides broken, which haue beene full faithfully promised, and thereupon great oaths sworne, wee will not now cease for no such promises, nor oath, till wee haue them which haue deserued death, or else wee to dye therefore.

The answere by the King to the Duke of Yorke.

I King Henry, charge and command, that no manner of person of what degree, or estate, or condition so euer he be, abide not, but that they auoyde the field, and not to be so hardy as to make resistance against me in my own Realme: For I shall know what traytour dares be so bold as to raise any people in my owne Land, where through I am in great disease and heauinesse: by that saith I owe vnto S. Edward, and vnto the Crowne of England, I shall destroy them euery mothers sonne, and eke they to be hanged & drawne, and quartered, that may be taken afterward of them, in example to make all such Traytours to beware, for to warde any riling of people within mine owne Land, and so traiterously to abide their King and Gouernour. And for a conclusion rather then they should haue any Lord that here is with me at this time, I shall this day for their sake in this quarrell my selfe lose and dye.

The first battell at S. Albons.

The words of the Duke of Yorke to all Gentlemen & and other assembled with him.

Sirs, the King our Soueraigne Lord will not be reformed at our beseeching we pray, nor will not in no wise vnderstand the intent wherefore wee be heere assembled and gathered at this time, but onely to intent purpose to destroy vs all, and thereupon great oath hath made, that there is none other way, but that hee with all his power will pursue vs, and if wee be taken, to giue vs a shamefull death, leesing our liuelode and goods, and also our heyres shamed for euer. Therefore Sirs, now sith it will none otherwise be, but that wee shall hitterly die, better it is for vs to die in the field, then cowardly to be put to an vtter rebuke and shamefull death, for the right of England stameth in vs. Considering also in what perill it standeth at this time, and for to redresse the mischiefe, whereof let euery man helpe to his power this day, and in that quarrell to quite vs like men to the Crowne of England, praying and beseeching vnto that Lord, the which is Eternall, that raigneth in the glorious Kingdome celestiall, to keepe and saue vs this day in our right, and through the gifts of his holy grace, wee may be made strong to withstand the great abhominable and horrible malice of them, that purpose to destroy vs and the Realme of England, and put vs to a shamefull death: pray wee therefore vnto that Lord to be our comfort and our defender, saying these words, *Domine sit clypeus defensionis nostræ.* And when these words were said, the Duke of Yorke, and the Earles of Warwicke and Salisburie, with their host, betweene eleuen and twelue at noone breake in, to the fore seuerall places of the said Stréte. The King then being in the place of Edmond Westbyes Purueyder of the said Towne of Saint Alban, hearing of the said Dukes coming, commanded his host to slay all manner Lords, Knights, Squires, Gentlemen and Peasants, that might be taken on the party of the foresaid Duke of Yorke. This done, the Lord Clifford kept so strongly the barriours of the same Towne, that the foresaid Duke of Yorke might in no wise with all the power, that hee had, enter, nor breake into the said Towne. The Earle of Warwicke knowing thereof, tooke and gathered his men together with him, and brake in by the Garden side into the said Towne, betweene the Signe of the Key, and the Exchequer in Holywell Stréte: and anon as they were within the said Towne, they blew the Trumpet, and cryed with an high voyce, a Warwicke, a Warwicke, that maruaile it was to heare. And till that time, the Duke of Yorke might neuer haue entry into the Towne, and then with strong hand, they brake vp the Barriers, and fought a fierce and cruell battell, on the which were slaine on the Kings party, Lords of name: Edmond, Duke of Somerset, Henry, Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Stafford, the old Lord Clifford, Sir Robert Vere, Berten Entewell, Williams Chamberlaine, Richard Fortescue, and Ralph Ferrers, Knights, Oliuer Maleuery, Oliuer Alterton, Gilbert Scaresbrooke, John Gath, Thomas Packington, Roger Morecroft, William Tarwin, John Bensted, John Alford, Reginald Griffith, Humfrey Acworth, Henry Hawlin, the Queenes Messenger, Richard Chantellar, Porter to the King. Alexander Breakespeare, Gilbert Hilding, Porter to the King, William Souche, John Boteraux, Ralph Babthorpe, Sewer to the King, and Ralph his sonne, the Kings Attorney, William Coruin, William Cotton of Conington, in Huntington shire, Receiuer of the Duchy of Lancaster, Gilbert Faldingar, John Dawes, Ellis Wood, Robert Woodward, and Ralph Vvloughby, Esquires, Hawling the Kings Porter, and William Butler, Yeoman, John Apthiken, John Daw, John at Heath, Hughe North, William Porter, John Page, Thomas

Barker, John Taylor of Henley, Robert Purton, and Henry Himingley, Yeoman of the Crowne, Nicholas of the Pantrie, John Cocks, William, Fishmonger to the Duke of Buckingham, Allen Sutton, Clarke Chapleine, and many other slaine, to the number of 5000. and on the other part were slaine about 600. persons, of them that were slaine, were buryed at Saint Albons eight and forty persons. And at that battell were wounded Lords of name, the King shot into the necke with an arrow, Humfrey, Duke of Buckingham, and the Lord Sudley in the visages with arrowes, Humfrey, Earle of Stafford, in the right hand with an arrow, the Earle of Dorset was so sore hurt, that hee might not goe, but was faine to bee carried home in a Cart, and Sir John Wenloke, Knight, likewise hurt, and carried from thence in a Chaire, and divers other Knights and Esquires sore hurt, and the Substance of the Kings host despoyled of their harnesis, at their owne request, made delivery to the Dukes host for salvation of their lives, and fled. The Earle of Wiltshire, and Thomas Thorpe, Lord chiefe Baron of the Exchequer, with many other fled, and cast away their harnesis in ditches, and woods. This done, the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwicke and Salisbury, came unto the King where he was, and besought him on their knees, of grace and forgivenesse of that they had done in his presence, and besought him of his highnesse to take them to his grace, and as his true liege-men. The King desired them to cease their people, that there should be no more hurt done, and to obey his commandement, did cause to be proclaimed in the Kings name, that all manner of people should cease of their malice, and not to smite one stroke more, and so ceased the battell. And upon the morrow after, the King, and the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwicke and Salisbury, came to London, and was lodged in the Bishops Pallace of London, where they kept their Whitsontide with great joy and solemnity, concluding there to hold a Parliament, the same to beginne on the ninth of July, next following.

This yeere, in the moneth of June, appeared a Comet, or Starre, called *Stella Cometa*, bestwirt the North and the East, extending his beames towards the South.

The Parliament beganne at Westminster on the ninth day of July, as was appointed, in the which Session, the Duke, Humfrey, of Gloucester, late deceased at Bery in Suffolke, was openly declared to have beene a true subject to the King and Realme: besides this, it was inacted, that no person should judge or report any point of untruth of the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Salisbury and Warwicke, or of any Knight, Esquire, Archer, or other comming in warrelike arap, against the King at Saint Albons, considering their enterprize was onely to see the Kings person in safegard. And all the blame was put upon the Duke of Somerset, Thomas Thorpe, Baron of the Exchequer, and William Iolceph, Esquire, the Kings collaterall companion, because they upon malicious purpose kept a certaine Letter from the Kings knowledge, and would in no wise suffer it to be delivered unto him, notwithstanding the same made to the advancement of some good assured peace, if it had beene thoroughly and advisedly read, waged and considered: in which Letter they declared that as humble and faithfull subiects, they onely required that it would please the King, whose honour, health suerty and preservation they chiefely wished, not to give credit to their adversaries malicious suggestions, till their coming to his presence, unto the which they humbly besought him, that they mought be admitted, as his faithfull liege-people, to shew the intent and purpose of their comming, which was to none other end, then to enlarge their fidelity, and allegeance towards his most dread person, intending to put themselves with as much diligence, industry and travell, in all things that might preferre and advance his honour, surety and safegard, as any subiect he had living. The keeping backe of this Letter, did minister matter sufficient to the Parliament, to colour and institle for well done, all transgressions committed in the late battell at Saint Albons.

In this Parliament was the Duke of Yorke made Protector of the Realme: the Earle of Salisburie was made Lord Chancellour, and had the great Seale to him delivered: And the Earle of Warwick made Captaine of Calcis, and the Territories of the same. And thus the Rule of the Realme rested in the Duke and Chancellour, and all the war-like affaires remained principally in the Earle of Warwicke. And so amongst them it was agreed, that King Henry should still raigne in name and dignity, but neyther in deed nor in authority, not minding to destroy him, lest they mought suddenly provoke the fury of the Common people against them, because that of the Common people hee was for his holinesse of life, and abundant Clemency, much favoured and highly esteemed.

Now that the Duke of Yorke, and his adherents, had wrested the whole rule and government into their hands, all such persons, as either loved, or the Queene favoured, were put beside the privy Councell, such put in their places, as were knowne to favour the house of Yorke.

Also all Officers were changed throughout the Realme at the will of the Protector, Chancellor and Captaine of Calcis, so that they constituted and ruled all things at their owne will: but they were noted with an execrable offence, of divers spirituall persons, and namely, of the Abbot of Westminster, and his Monks, for that they tooke out of the Sanctuary at Westminster, John Holland, Duke of Exceter, being repugnant to the order taken in the last Parliament, and conveyed him to the Castle of Pont fracte. Duke of Exceter fet out of Sanctuary, and fent to Pontfract Caſtle.

But Henry Beauford, newly inuested *An. reg. 34.* Duke of Somerset, and Humfrey, Duke of Buckingham,

Buckingham, who had lost his Sonne in the same battell, and other Lords and men of authority, favouring the party of King Henry, and bewailed the unsure estate of the same King, because they perceived wherevnto the cloked courtesie, and dissembled manner of the Duke of Yorke did draw, thought it necessary to purvey for a remedy ere the mischiefe happened: hereupon they consulted with the Quen, and by her advice was a great Councell called at Greenwich, where the Duke of Yorke was discharged of his Protectorship, and the Earle of Salisbury deprived of his office of Chancellourship, which change amongst the Nobility, caused sudden alterations and seditious attempts to spring in the commonalty, especially in the City of London.

1450. Ro. Fabian.

In the moneth of May, an Italians servant walking through Cheape of London, with a Dagger hanging at his Girdle, a Parchants servant, that before time had beene in Italy, and there blamed for wearing of the like weapon, challenged the Stranger, how he durst be so bold to beare weapon, considering hee was out of his native Countrey, knowing that in his Country no Stranger was suffered to weare the like: To the which question, such answere was made by the Stranger, that the Mercer tooke from him his dagger, and drake it upon his head, whereupon the Stranger complained to the Maior, who on the morrow sent for the young man to the Guild-Hall: wherefore after his answer made to his complaint, by agreement of a full Court of Aldermen, he was sent to ward: and after the Court was finished, the Maior and Sheriffes walking homeward through Cheape, were there met by such a number of Mercers servants and other, that they might not passe, for aught that they could speake or doe, till they had delivered the young man, that before was by them sent to prison.

And the same day in the afternoone, suddenly was assembled a multitude of lewd and poore people of the Citty, which without head or guide, ranne into certaine Italians houses, and especially into the Florentines, Lukeses and Venetians, and there tooke and spoyled what they found, and did great hurt in sundry places, but most in foure houses standing in Broad-street ward, whereof three stood in Saint Bartholomewes Parish the little, and one in the Parish of Saint Benets Finke.

The Maior, Aldermen, and worshipfull Commoners of the City, with all their diligence resisted them what they could, and sent divers of them to Newgate: and finally, not without shedding of blood, and maiming of divers Citizens, the rumour was appeased. The young man, beginner of all this busnesse, tooke Sanctuarie at Westminster, and not long after, the Duke of Buckingham, with other Noble-men, were sent from the King, into the Citty, who there charged the Maior by vertue of a Commission, that inquiry should be made of this rout, and so-called an oyer determiner at the Guild-Hall, where sate for Judges, the Maior, as the Kings Lieutenant, the Duke of Buckingham on his right hand, the chiefe Iustice on the left hand, and many other men of name, where, while they were empaneling their inquests, the other Commons of the City, many of them secretly put them in armour, and meant to have rong the common Bell, so to have raised the whole force of the Citty, and so to have delivered such persons as before for the robberry were committed to ward.

But this matter was discreetly handled by the Councell, and labour of some discreete commoners, which appeased their neighbours in such wise that all this fury was quenched: but when word was brought to the Duke of Buckingham, that the commonalty was in harnesse, he with the other Lords tooke leave of the Maior, and departed, and so ceased the enquiry for that day.

Upon the morrow, the Maior commanded the Common Councell, with the Wardens of fellowshippes, to appeare at the Guild-Hall, where by the Recorder in the Kings name, and the Maiors, was commanded every Warden, that in the after-noone eyther of them should assemble his whole fellowship at their common Halls, and there to give straight commandement, that every man see the Kings peace kept within the City. After which time, the Cittizens were brought to such quietnesse, that after that day, the enquiry was duly perused, and three persons for the said rout put in execution, and hanged at Tiborne, whereof two were Sanctuary men of Saint Martins le Grand, the other a shipman; for of robbing Anthony Mawricine, and other Lumbards. *An. Reg. 35.*

The French nation hearing of the civill dissention within the Realme of England, thought to worke some domage to the English people, in revenge of old iniuries, whereupon were two Navies appointed to invade the Townes standing upon the rivage of the Sea. The Captaine of the one fleete, was William, Lord Pomyars, and of the other Sir Piercy Brelly, Captaine of Depe. These two Captaines taking their course out of the mouth of Seyne, severed themselves, the one Westward, and the other Eastward, which was Sir Peter Brelly, this lustie Captaine saying almost all the coasts of Sussex, and Kent, durst not once take Land, till hee arrived in the Downs, and there having perfect notice, that a little before, the chiefe Rulers of the Downe, were departed from thence to asspyde the plague which then there raigned, entred the Hauen with fifteene thousand men, and their ships all Landing at Sandwich, wherof seven thousand entred the Land, the space of three miles, and there kept and defended the Towne, untill their owne company might come to them, at what time they killed the Maior, the Bailifes, and the other Officers of Sandwich, with divers other Gentlemen of the Countrey, and spoyled and robbed the town, leading and carrying away 1457. Sandwich ſpoiled by the French.

Carts of furniture, and other riches to their ships, and moreouer, robbed and spoyled two great Gallies, or Ships laden with marchandise comming to London.

The Towne of Fowy hyens.

The Lord Pomyars likewise take his course Westward, and by night, brent Foway, and other certaine Townes in Deuonshire, in the moneth of August, and with his pillage returned into Britaine.

The Scots also entered Northumberland, and burned certaine cottages and houles, but hearing that the Duke of Yorke was marching thitherward with a great army, they with all hast returned into Scotland.

Rob. Fabian.

In this yeere was a great fray in the Northcountrey, betweene the Lord Egremond, and the Earle of Salisburies sonnes, whereby many were maimed and slaine, but in the end, the Lord Egremond, was taken, who was by the Kings Councell found in great default, and therfore condemned in great summes of money, to be payed to the Earle of Salisbury, and in the meane time committed to Newgate.

Register of Blaior.

Not long after this Sir Thomas Percy, Lord Egremond, and Sir Richard Percy his brother being prisoners in Newgate, condemned in a great summe to the Earle of Salisbury, as is aforesaid, brake out of prison by night, and went to the King: the other prisoners tooke the Leads of the gates, and defended it a long while against the Sheriffes, and all their Officers, in so much that they were forced to call more ayde of the Cittizens, whereby they lastly subdued them.

An. reg. 36.

The Queene secretly thirsting the ouerthrow of Richard, Duke of Yorke, and his faction, perceiuing that they could attempt nothing against him more to the Citty of London, because the Duke was had more in estimation among the Cittizens, then eyther the King or Queene, and therefore she caused the King to make a progresse into Warwickshire, for his health and recreation, and so with hawking and hunting, came to the Citty of Couentry, where diuers waits were studied to compasse the Queenes desire: for the accomplishing whereof, the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Salisbury, and Warwicke, were sent for to Couentrie by the Kings Letters, vnder his priuy Seale, to which place the said Lords resorted: but being admonished by secret friends what was intended against them, they auoyded that danger, and so not saying farewell, they departed from the Court, the Duke vnto Wigmore, in the marches of Wales, the Earle of Salisbury to the Castle of Middleham in the North-countrie, and the Earle of Warwicke sayled to the Towne of Caleis; thus were they separated in bodies, but in mindes and hearts knit together in one, hauing alwaies messengers with Letters, walking betwixt them, to communicate their deuices.

Robert Ponings sume time for-ster and Carter to Iacke Cade proclaimed a traytor.

In this meane time, many were apprehended for rayling of seditious tales, among other sayeth the Record, one Robert Ponings, late of Southwarke in the County of Surry Esquire, which was sometime a companion and adherent, to the most horrible, wicked and heynous traytor and tyrant, Iohn Cade, in time of his insurrection, being then his caruer, and sword-bearer, what time hee had his robberie and tyrannie in the Citty of London, and in many other places, the which Robert, stirred the greatest part of such as were adherents, &c. For all which doings being pardoned, he hath still persuered in his wickednesse, and oflate, to wit, in the 31. the 32, &c. of our raigne hath assembled numbers of men at North Cray, and Framingham in Kent, &c. Wherefore we proclaime him to be a Traytour, and to be apprehended, &c.

Reginald Pecocke, Bishop of Chichester.

Reginald Pecocke, Bishop of Chichester, a secular Doctour of Diuinitie, that had laboured many yeres to translate the holy Scripture into English, was accused to haue passed the bonds of Diuinity, and of Christian beliefe in certaine Articles, of the which he was conuict before the Archbishop of Canterbury, and other Bishops and Clerks, and after, vtterly abiured, reuoked, and renounced those Articles openly at Pauls Crosse in his mother tongue, on the fourth day of December, as followeth: In the name of the Trinity, Father, Sonne, and holy Ghost, I Regnald Pecocke, Bishop of Chichester, bniworthy, of my owne power and will, without any maner of coertion or dread, confesse and knowledge, that I haue before this time, presuming of my naturall wit, and preferring my iudgement and naturall reason before the new and the old Testament, and the authority and determination of our mother holy Church, haue held, writen and taught otherwise than the holy Romane, and Vniuersall Church teacheth, preacheth, or obserueth. And one is against the true Catholike and Apostles Faith, I haue written, taught and published many, and others, perillous Doctrines, Bookes, Workes, and Writings, containing Heresies and Errors, contrary to the Faith Catholike and determination of holy Church, and especially these Heresies and errors following, that is to say,

Impimis, *quòd non est de necessitate fidei credere, quòd Dominus noster Iesus Christus post mortem descendit ad inferos.*

Item, *quòd non est de necessitate salutis credere sanctorum communionem.*

Item, *quòd Ecclesia vniuersalis potest errare in his quæ sunt fidei.*

Item, *quòd non est de necessitate salutis credere, & tenere illud quod concilium generale & vniuersalis Ecclesia statuit, approbat, seu determinat in fauorem fidei, & ad salutem animarum est ab vniuersis Christi fidelibus approbandum & tenendum.*

Wherefore I miserable sinner, which herebefore long time haue walked in darknesse, and now by the mercy and infinite godnesse of God reduced into the right way, and light of truth, and considering my selfe grieuously to haue sinned, and wickedly haue infected and infected the people of God, returne and come againe to the Vnity of our Mother holy Church, and

and all heresies and errors written and contained in my sayde bookes, workes and writings, here solemnly and openly renoke and renounce, which heresies and errors, and all other spices of heresies I haue before this time before the most Reuerend father in God, and my good Lord of Canterbury in diuers and lawfull some iudicially abiured, submitting my selfe, being then and also now at this time a very contrite and penitent sinner, to the correction of the Church and of my said Lord of Canterbury.

And ouer this, exhorting and requiring in the name and vertue of almightie God, in the saluation of your soules and mind, that no man heer after giue faith and credence to my saide pernitious doctrines, heresies and errors, neyther my said Bookes keepe, hold, or read in any wise, but that they all such Bookes, workes, and writings suspect of heresies, deliuer in all goodly hast vnto my said Lord of Canterbury, or to his Commissioners and Deputies, in eschewing of many inconueniences and great perils of soules, the which else might be cause of the contrary. And ouer this in declaration of my conuersion and repentance, I here openly assent, that my said Bookes, workes and writings, for declaration and cause aboue rehersed, be deputed vnto the fire, and openly brent in ensample and terror of all other, &c. After this, he was deprined of his Bishoppicke hauing a certaine pencion assigned vnto him for to liue on in an Abbey, and some after he died. His Bookes were intituled:

1 Of Christian Religion, and a Booke perteyning thereunto.
2 Of Matrimonie.
3 Iust apriling of holy Scripture, deuided into three parts.
4 The Donet of Christian Religion.
5 The followers of the Donet.
6 The Booke of faith.
7 The Booke of filling the foure Tables.
8 The Booke of Worshipping.
9 The Prouoker of Christian men.
10 The Booke of Councell.

King Henry a louer and seeker of peace at the handes of his rebels.

In the moneth of January died the Earle of Deuonshire, in the Abbey of Abingdon, poysoned (as men said) being there at that time with Queene Margaret. King Henry and his adherents perceiuing that the Duke of Yorke lay still and stirred not, returned to London, and there called a great councell, openly declaring that the French and Scots, emboldned by the ciuill discord within the Realme, would attempt to annoy the same, as of late they shewed apparant tokens of their malicious meaning, and would not cease vpon occasions to doe further displeasures, till they perceiued a perfect concord, and vnfained amity to be concluded betweene him and his friends, and those of the contrary part and confederacie. And to the intent, he would be the author of peace, he promised so to entertaine the Duke of Yorke, and his fautors, that all old grudges being not onely inwardly forgotten but outwardly forgiuen, should be the cause of perpetuall loue and assured amitie. This deuise was of all men present well taken, and adiudged for the best. Whereupon diuers graue persons were sent to the Duke of Yorke, and all other the great estates of the Realme, which since the battell of Saint Albons neuer met or communed together, commanding them for great causes to resort to the Kings pallace without delay. At whose commandement came to London, the Earle of Salisbury on the 15. of January with 500. men, and was lodged in his owne house called the Herber: and on the 26. day came Richard Duke of Yorke with 400. men, and was lodged at Bainards Castle being his owne house. Then came the Dukes of Excester and Somerset with 800. men, and were loged without Temple barre, and the Earle of Northumberland, the Lord Egremond, and the Lord Clifford came with 1500. men and lodged without the Citie. And on the 14. of February came the Earle of Warwicke from Caleis with 600. men all in red iackets, embrodered with ragged staues before and behinde, and was lodged at the grey friers. And on the 17. of March, the King and Queene with a great retinue came to London, and were lodged in the Bishops pallace. And because no notorious attempt or bickering should be begunne betweene any of the parties of their retinues, the Maior of London Godfrey Boloinge, and Aldermen of the Citty kept great watch, as well by day as by night, riding about the Citty, by Holborne and Fleetstreet with 200. men well armed, to see good order and peace to be kept. The Lords which lay within the Citie held a daily councell at the blacke Friers. The other part sojourning without the walles, assembled likewise in the chapiter house at Westminster.

At the length by the diligent trauaile, good exhortation, and prudent aduice of the Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and other learned and vertuous Prelats, both parts were perswaded to come to a communication, where after long debating of their grieuances, they were accorded, promising to forget all olde rancours, and to bee friends each to other, and obedient to the King, whereof writings were made and sealed. The principall points whereof, the King being reputed as whole arbitrator, consisted herein.

First, that of the costes and expences of the Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Warwicke and Salisbury fiue and fortie pounds yearely rent should be giuen vnto the Monastery of Saint Albons, to bee imployed for Edmond late Duke of Somerset, Henry late Earle of Northumberland, and Thomas Clifford, which being slaine in the late battell of Saint Albons were buried in the Abbey Church. The same Duke of Somerset, Earle of Northumberland and Lord Clifford, were declared for true liege men to the King at the day of their deaths, as well as the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of Warwicke and of Salisbury. Yorke, the Duke of

of Yorke should giue to Elianor Dutchesse of Somerset, and to Henry Duke of Somerset her sonne, the summe of fiue thousand markes, &c. The Earle of Warwicke should giue vnto the Lord Clifford the summe of one thousand markes: diuers other awardes betwixt parties were there made, which I am forced to omit, passe for brenities sake,

For the outward publishing of this topfull agreement, there was vpon our Lady day in Lent, or fiue and twentieth day of March, a solemne procession celebrated within the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paule in the City of London: at the which the King was present in his Imperiall robes with the Crowne on his head, before him went bare in hand, the Duke of Somerset, the Earle of Salisbury, the Duke of Exceter, and the Earle of Warwicke, and so one of the one faction, and an other of the other. And behinde the K. the Duke of Yorke, and the Queene with great familiarity to all mens sights, whatsoeuer was meant to the contrary, which appeared afterward.

The. Queenes Attorney slaine.

The thirtenth day of Aprill there was a great fray in Fletestreete, betweene men of court, and the inhabitants of the same strete, in which fray the Queenes Atturney was slaine. For this cause, the King committed the principall gouernours of Furnivals, Cliffords, and Barnardes Inne to prison in the Castle of Hertford, and William Tailor Alderman of that ward with many other, were sent to Windsor Castle the seuenth of May.

Iusting in the tower of London.

On Thursday in Whitsun weeke, the Duke of Somerset with Anthonie Rivers and other foure, kept iustes before the Queene in the Tower of London, against three Esquiers of the Queenes: and in like manner at Greenwich the Sunday following.

The Earle of Warwicke takes Spanish ships.

On the Trinitie Sunday or Monday, certaine ships appertayning to the Earle of Warwicke, met with a fleete of Spaniards, and after long and cruell fight take fire of their ships laden with yron and other merchandise, drowned, and chased to the number of 26. not without shedding of blood on both parts, for of the Englishmen were slaine 100. and many more wounded and sore hurt.

An. Reg. 37. The 9 ninth day of November fell a great debate, betweene Richard Earle of Warwicke and them of the kings house, insomuch, that they would haue slaine the Earle: and vnneth hee escaped to his barge, and went after to Caleis, for he was not long before made Captaine thereof by authority of the Parliament. Soone after, the young Duke of Somerset by stirring of them that hated the Earle of Warwicke, was made Captaine of Caleis, and a ship scale directed to the Earle for to discharge him of the Captaine ship: but the Earle, forasmuch as he was made by Parliament, he would not obey the prime scale, but continued forth in the said office.

James Earle of Wiltshire was made treasurer of England after Walter Hungerford knight.

The noble Science of Printing was about this time found in Germane at Paguince by one Io. Cuthenbergus a Knight: one Conradus an Almain brought it into Rome: William Caxton of London Mercer brought it into England about the yere 1471. and first practised the same in the Abbey of S. Peter at Westminster; after which time, it was likewise practised in the Abbeis of S. Augustine at Canterbury, S. Albons, and other Monasteries of England. 1459. Printing first inuented.

The Earle of Warwicke Admirall, Captaine of Caleis with a fourteene well appointed ships, sailed abroad to scower the seas, and by chance met with fiue great ships, whereof three were Carickes of Gene, and the other two were of Spaine, bigger in height and length, than the Carickes. The Earle though he were vnneth able to deale against them, yet he baliantly encountering them, there was a sore battaile fought betwixt them, for it lasted almost the space of two daies, yet in the ende the English bare the victorie: so that two of those ships being forced to saue themselues by flight, the other 3. were taken, which the Earle brought to Caleis, with all the marchandise aboard in the same, the value whereof in wine, oyle, wax, yron, cloth of golde, and other riches, was estemed to the value of ten thousand pound and better, by reason whereof, those wares were solde wonderfull cheape, there were taken a great number of prisoners, besides a thousand persons slaine in the fight, and of the Earles part about the number of fiftie.

Now in this meane time after that the Earle of Warwicke was departed the Realme and gone ouer to Caleis, the Duke of Yorke, and the Earle of Salisbury falling to consultation, it was agreed betwixt them, that the said Earle of Salisbury with a warlike company should march toward the King, and signifie to him by way of complaint, both the manifest iniury done to his sonne, and also the vncourteous breach of the lowne amitie and late agreement, in which sute if he preuailed, he should not then let passe the occasion given for reuenge of displeasures to him done, both by the Queene and her counsell. The Earle of Salisbury therefore remoued from Pidleham Castle with foure or fiue thousand men, taking his way through Lancashire towards London.

In the meane season the Queene assisted by the Dukes of Somerset and Buckingham, hauing a diligent eye to all her busines, imagined that the Earle of Warwicke had kindled this fire, to intent, to let the Crowne on the Duke of Yorkes head: wherefore she appointed Iames Twichet Lord Audley (because his power lay in those parts) to raise an host of men, and to giue battaile to the same Earle, if he saw cause and place conuenient: the al led vnto her all the Knights and Esquiers of Chestershire for to haue their fauour: the helde open household among them, and made her sonne the Prince to giue a liuerie of Swans to all the gentlemen of that countrey, and to many other through the land, striuing through their strength to make her sonne K. making pretence meanes to soure of the Lords to moue the King to resigne the crowne to her sonne, but she could not bring it to passe.

King Henry gaue to Owen Tewdar 100. l. the yeere out of his Manor of Folkestone, Walton, Banetted with the appurtenances in the shire of Kent, &c. Owen Tewdart.

The 21. day of September, Richard Earle of Salisbury hauing gathered a well appointed army, take his way toward Ludlow, where at that time the Duke of Yorke lay, to the intent that they both together would haue ridden to the King to Colshill in Staffordshire, to haue excused them of certaine articles laide against them by malice of their enemies, as they saide. Whereupon those that were about the King, and also the Queene, who lay at Eglishall, moued him to assemble a great power whereof Iames Twichet Lord Audley was made chiefe, and had the leading of them int othe field called Blozeheath nere vnto Puckiestone, by the which the said Duke and the Earle must needs passe, and there both hostes met and fought a mortall battell, wherein the Lord Audley was slaine with Hugh Venables of Kinderton, Thomas Dutton of Dutton, Richard Molineux of Sefton. William Trowtbecke, John Legh del Bothes, John Donne of Utkington, and John Egerton of Egerton knights, Richard Donne of Croxton, Iohn Dutres Esquires, and many other, in all to the number of 2400. persons, but the greatest losse fell to them of Chestershire, that had received the Princes liuery of Swans: but there were taken prisoners the Earle of Salisburies two sonnes Thomas and Iohn, and Sir Thomas Haringtcon, which were sent to Chester, but some after deliuered. After this discourture at Blozeheath, the Duke of Yorke perceiuing his destruction to be intended, and his priuie intents throughly disclosed to the King and Queene, he thought good no longer to linger his busines, but with all diligence to display and aduance his banner, and therefore sending for the Earls of Salisbury, after long communication, they determined to raise an armie, and by fine force either to die, or winne their purpose. Hereupon were men forthwith assembled, both out of the North, and of the Weleh, which gathered to the Parches of Wales, determining there to abide their enemies, or to meet them as occasion serued. There came to him from Caleis the Earle of Warwicke, bringing with him a great number of expert men in martiall feates whereof two Captaines of great experience, the one called Andrew Trolope, the other Iohn Blunt. Blozeheath field. Richard Molineux.

The King hauing aduertisement of the Dukes doing, sent forth Commissioners to leuie a power in all parts of the realme, where he thought to haue any faithfull fauourers, by reason whereof a great number of men were assembled, then the K. accompanied with the Dukes of Somerset and Exceter, and other that fauoured the house of Lancaster, marching forward came vnto Worcester, where he staied for a time, and sent to his aduersaries a messenger, to wit the bishop of Salisbury Richard Beauchampe, to offer vnto them a free generall pardon for all trespasses whatsoeuer, if they would giue ouer their enterprise and become true and obedient subiects. To whom they answered by the mouth of the Earle of Warwicke, in three points: First, that as concerning the pardon they durst not truste vnto it. Secondly that not withstanding such pardons, those that were about the King were vnruly, and cared not to breake the Kings commandement. Thirdly, alt. ough every Lord being called to the Parliament, ought freely to come, and safely to depart, yet the said Earle of Warwicke, at a certaine counsell holden at Westminster, was in danger of death, if the Lord aboue had not the better prouided for his escape, for the which cause he seeth the Kings pardon may be likened to a buckler of glasse, or a staffe of reede, of the which there is no trust: we dare not commit our selues vnto the defence of such pardons.

The King receiuing such an answer was nothing contented therewith, therefore commanded his standarts to be aduanced: but before he came to the place where the said Lords were incamped, they wrote a letter to the King, whereof the tenour was thus.

Most Christian King, right high, and mighty Prince, and our most dread soueraigne Lord, after as humble recommendations to your high excellency as will suffice. Our true intent to the prosperity and augmentation of your high estate, and to the Common weale of this Realme hath beene shewed vnto your highnes in such writing as wee make thereof. And ouer that an Indenture signed by our hands in the Church Cathedrall of Worcester, comprehending the pzaise of the truth and dutie that (God knoweth) we beare to your said estate, and to the preheminence and pzerogatiue thereof we sent vnto your good grace by the pzior of the said church, and diuers other Doctors, among other by Master William Linwoode Doctor of diuinity, which ministred vnto vs seuerally the blessed sacrament of the body of Iesus, whereupon we and euery of vs deposed for our sayd truethand duety, according to the tenour of the said Indenture. And since that time we haue certified at large in writting and by mouth, by Garter King of armes, not onely to your saide highnesse, but also to the good and worthie Lords being about your most noble presence, the largeneste of our said truth and duety, and our intent and disposition, to search all the motions that might serue conuenientlie to the affirmation thereof, and to our perfect sureties from such inconuenient and vnrecuerent iopardies as we haue beene put in diuers times heretofore. Wherefore we haue cause to make, and ought to make such exclamation and complaint, not without reason, as is not vnknowne to the said worthie Lords, and to all this land, and will offer vs to your high presence, to the same intent, if we might so doe without the said surety, which onely causeth vs to kepe such fellowship as we doe in our lawfull manner. And here to we haue forborne and auoided

Doctor Linwood wrote the glose vpon the Constitutions of the Church of England.

thinges that might serue to the effusion of Christian blod, of the dread that we haue of God, and of your royall Maiestie: and haue also eschewed to approach your said most noble presence, for the humble obeisance and reuerence wherein we haue, and during our life will haue the same. And yet neuertheless we feare, that we be proclaimed and diffamed in our name vnrightfully, vnlawfully, and saying your high reuerence, vntruely, and otherwise (as God knoweth) than we haue giuen cause, knowing certainely that the blessed and noble intent of your saide good grace and the righteousnesse thereof is, to take, repute and accept your true and lawfull subiects, and that it accordeth neyther with your said intent, nor with your will or pleasure, that we should be otherwise taken or reputed. And ouer that, our Lordships and tenaunts haue bin of high violence robbed and spoyled, against your peace and lawes and all righteousnesse. Wee therefore, as we suffice, beseech your said good grace to take repute, and receiue thereunto our said truenes and intent, which to God is knowen, as wee shew it by the said tenour of the same Indenture, and not apply your said blessednes ne the great righteousnes and equity wherewith God hath euer indued your high nobilitie, to the importune impatience and violence of such persons as intend of extreame malice to procede vnder shadow of your high might and psence, to our destruction, for such inordinate counsise (wherof God is not pleased) as they haue to our lands, offices, and goods, not letting or sparing therefore, to put such things in all lamentable and to sorowfull ieopardy, as might in all wise take effect, by the mystery of Gods will and power: nor not hauing regard to the effusion of Christian blod, ne any tenderness to the Noble blod of this land, such as serue to the tuition and defence thereof, ne not waighing the losse of your true liege menne of your said Realme, that God defend, which knoweth our intent, and that wee haue auoyded therefrom, as farre as wee may with our sureties, not of any dread that wee haue of the said persons, but onely of the dread of God and of your saide highner, and will not dise our sayde defence vntill the time that wee be pronoked of necessity, whereof wee call Heauen and Earth into witnesse and record, and therein beseech God to be our Iudge, and to deliuer vs according to our said intent, and our said truenes and duety to your sayd highnesse, and to the said Commonweale. Most Christian King, right high, and mighty Prince, and most dread soueraigne Lord, wee beseech our blessed Lord to preserue your honour and estate, in ioy and felicity. Written at Ludlow the 10. day of October: R. Yorke, R. Warwicke, R. Salisburie.

After their excusation contained in this letter sent to the King, they withdrew them, and went into diuers parts beyond the seas, for the more surety of their persons. The Duke of Yorke went into Ireland, where he was honourably receiued: the Earle of March, Salisbury, and Warwick, not without great ieopardy and peril, as well on the land as on the sea, went to Caleis and abode there.

Parliament at Couentry. Duke of Yorke and other attaint.

Then was a Parliament holden at Couentry, wherein were attaint of treason, Richard Duke of Yorke, Edward Earle of March his sonne and heire, Richard Earle of Warwicke, Edmond Earle of Rutland, Richard Earle of Salisbury, Iohn Lord Clifford, Lord Clinton, sir Thomas Harrington, sir Iohn Wenlocke, Thomas Neuill, Iohn Neuill sonnes of the Earle of Salisbury, Iames Pickering, Iohn Conyers, Thomas Par, William Oldhall, and Henry Ratford, Knights, Iohn Bowser, Thomas Cooke, Iohn Clay, Richard Gyton, Robert Browne, Edward Bowser, Thomas Vaughan, Iohn Roger, Richard Grey, Walter Decreuex, Walter Hopton, Roger Kynderton, William Bowes, Foulke Stafford, the Lord Powis, and Alice Countesse of Salisburp, their goods and possessions escheted, and their heires disinherited vnto the ninth degree, their tenants spoyled of their goods, bee maimed and slaine, the towne of Ludlow longing to the Duke of Yorke, was robbed to the bare walles, and the Dutches of Yorke spoiled of her goods.

Ludlow spoyled.

In this moneth of October, Henry the young Duke of Somerset, Henry Lord Roos, and Lord Audley, with menne of armes sailed to wardes Caleis, to the intent the Duke should haue bene Captaine there; but when he came to land, they of Caleis would haue taken him, so that bee hardly escaped to the Castle of Gwines, his souldiers were stripped out of their harnesse, and let go. The Lord Audley was taken into Caleis, and the Lord Roos fled into Flanders, and after returned into England.

Duke of Somerset fled to Gwines. The Lord Audley taken into Caleis. The L. Roos fled into Flanders.

Not long after, Richard Lord Riuers was sent to Sandwich, to keepe the towne and certaine great shippes which lay there at anker: but when the Earle of Warwicke saw time conuenient, he sent some of his men to Sandwich by night, the which take the said Lord Riuers and Anthonie Wooduile his son in their beds, and led them ouer to Caleis, with all the great shippes saue one called Grace de Dieu, the which might not be had away because the was broke in the bottome. Sir Baudwine Fulford vndertooke on paine of losing his head, that he would destroy the Earle of Warwicke, but when he hadde spent the King a thousand markes in money, he returned againe. Then was the Duke of Exceter Admirall sent to the sea with a great Nauy for to disseuer the Earle of Warwicke and his Nauy, he sailing from Sandwich to Dertmouth, for lacke of victuals and money his souldiers forsoke him there. And betwixt Sandwich and Dertmouth he met the Earle of Warwicke comming out of Ireland that had bene there for to speake with the Duke of Yorke, and brought with him his mother that was fled thither for dread, and led her to Caleis: but the Duke of Exceter durst not set vpon the Earle of Warwicke, nor the Earle would not distresse him, because he was Admirall, and of the Kings blood, but let him passe by.

The L. Riuers and his sonne Anthonie Wooduile taken by force carried from Sandwich.

1460. Sir Baudwin Fulford his enterprise. The Duke of Exceter sent to the seas.

In the moneth of Iune 500. men were sent

Captaine Mountfort slaine. Articles sent from the Duke of Yorke, and the Earles, to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and to the commons.

to conduct the D. of Somerset from Gwines into England, but abiding the wind in the Port of Sandwich, the Earle of Warwikes men spoiled them of their harneis, killed their Captaine Mountfort and many other. The Earles at Caleis sent to the Archbishoppe of Canterburp, and at large to the Commons of England certaine articles in writing, beginning thus: Worshipfull Sirs, wee the Duke of Yorke, the Earles of March, Warwike, and Salisbury, sued, and offred to haue come vnto the King our soueraigne Lords most noble psence, to haue declared there afore him for our duety to God and to his highnes, and to the prosperity and well fare of his noble estate, and to the common weale of of all his land, as true liegemen, the matters following, that is to say.

Inprimis, the great oppression, extortion, robbery, murther, and other violence done to Gods Church and to his ministers thereof, against Gods and mans law.

2 Item, the pouerty and misery that to our great heuinesse our soueraigne Lord standeth in, not hauing any liuelode of the Crowne of England, whereof he may kepe his honourable household, which causeth the spoiling of his said liege men by the takers of his said household, which liuelode is in their hands that haue bene destroyers of his said estate, and of the said common weale.

3 Item, how his lawes be partially and vnrightfully guided, and that by them that should most loue and tender his said lawes, the saide oppression and extortions is most fauoured and supported, and generally, that all righteousnes and Iustice is exiled out of the said land, and that no man dreadeth to offend against the said lawes.

4 Item, that it will please his sayd good grace to liue vpon his owne liuelode, whereupon his noble progenitors haue in daies heretofore liued as honorably and as worthily as any Christian Princes, and not to suffer the destroiers of the said land, and of his subiects, to liue thereupon, and therefore to lacke the sustenances that should be belonging to his said estate, and finde his household, vpon his poze commons, without payment, which neither acordeth with Gods nor mans law.

5 Item, how oft the said commons haue bene greatly and merueilously charged with taxes and tallages, to their great empouerishing, whereof little good hath eyther growen to the King or to the said land, and of the most substance thereof the King hath left to his part not halfe so much: and other Lords and persons, enemies to the sayd common weale, haue to their owne vse, suffering all the old possessions that the King had in France and Normandy, Aniow and Paine, Gascoigne and Gwien, won and gotten by his father of most noble memory, and other his noble progenitors, to be shamefully lost or sold.

6 Item, how they cannot cease therewith, but now begin a new charge of impositions and tallages vpon the said people, which neuer afore was seene, that is to say, euery Towneship to find men for the Kings guard, taking ensample thereof, of our enemies and aduersaries of France, which imposition and tallage, if it be continued to heire, heires, and successors, will be the heauest charge and most ensample that euer grew in England, and the foresaid subiects, and the said heirs and successors in such bondage as their ancestors were neuer charged with.

7 Item, where the King hath now no more liuelode of his Realme of England, but onely the Lins of Ireland, and the Townes of Caleis, and that no King Christened hath such a land and a Towne without his Realme, diuers Lords haue caused his highnes to write letters vnder his priuy seals, vnto his Irish enemies, which neuer King of England did heretofore, whereby they may haue comfort to enter into the conquest of the said land, which letters the same Irish enemies sent vnto me the said Duke of Yorke, and marueled greatly that any such letters should bee to them sent, speaking therein great shame and villany of the sayde Realme.

8 Item, in like wise the King by excitation and labour of the same Lords, inote other letters to his enemies and aduersaries in other lands, that in no wise they should shew any fauour or good will to the Towne of Caleis, whereby they had comfort enough to procede to the winning thereof. Considered also that it is ordained by the labour of the sayd Lords, that no where victuall nor other thing of refreshing or defence should come out of England, to the succour or reliefe of the said Towne, to the intent that they would haue it lost, as it may openly appeare.

9 Item, it is deemed and aught greatly to be deemed, that after that the same Lords would put the same rule of England, if they might haue their purpose and intent, into the handes and gouernance of the saide enemies.

10 Item, how continually sith the piteous, shamefull, and sorowfull murther to all England, of that noble, worthy, and Christian Prince Humfrey Duke of Glocester the Kings true vncle, at Bury, if hath bene labored, studied, and conspired, to haue destroyed and murthered the said Duke of Yorke and the title that it pleased God to send me of the royall blod, and also of vs the saide Earles of Warwicke and Salisbury, for none other cause but for the true heart that God knoweth wee euer haue borne, and beare to the profit of the Kings estate, to the common weale of the same realme and defence thereof.

11 Item, how the Earles of Shrewsbury and Wiltshire, and the Lord Beaumont, our mortall and extreame enemies, now, and of long time past, hauing the guiding about the most noble person of our saide soueraigne Lord, whose highnes they haue restrained and kept from the liberty and freedome that belongeth to his said estate, and the supportors and assurers of all the premiles, would not suffer the Kings said good

god grace to receiue and accept vs, as he would haue done, if he might haue had his owne will, into his said presence, dreading the charge that would haue beene laid vpon them, of the misery, destruction, and wretchednesse of the sayde Realme, whereof they be causes, and not the King, which is himselfe as noble, as vertuous, as righteous and blessed of disposition, as any Prince earthly.

12. Item, the Earles of Wiltshire and Shrewsbury, and the Lord Beaumont, not satisfied nor content with the Kings possessions & his goods, stirred and excited his said highnes to hold his Parliament at Coventry, where an act is made by their prouocation and labour, against vs the said Duke of Yorke, vp sonnes March and Rutland, and the Earles of Warwicke and Salisbury, and the sonnes of the said Earle of Salisbury, and many other Knights and Esquiers, of diuers matters falsely and vntruely imagined, as they will answere afore Almighty God in the day of doome, the which the said Earles of Shrewsbury and Wiltshire, and the Lord Beaumont prouoked to be made, to the intent of our destruction and of our issue, and that they might haue our liuelode and goods, as they haue openly robbed and dispoyled all our places and our tenements, and many other true men, and now proced to hanging and drawing of men by tyranny, and will therein shew the largenes of their violence and malice as vengeably as they can, if no remedy be prouided at the Kings highnesse, whose blessednesse is neither assenting nor knowing thereof.

We therefore seing all the said mischiefes, hearing also that the French King maketh in his land great assembly of his people, which is greatly to be dread for many causes, purpose yet againe with Gods grace to offer vs to come againe to the said presence of our said soueraigne Lord, to open and declare there vnto him the mischiefe aboue declared, and in the name of the land to sue, in as reuerent and lowly wise as we can, to his said god grace, to haue pitie and compation vpon bs his said true subiects, and not to suffer the same mischiefes to raigne vpon them. Requiring you in Gods behalfe, and praying you in your owne therein to assist vs, doing alway the duety of liegemen in our persons to our said soueraigne Lord, to his estate, prerogatiue, and preheminence, and to the surety of his most noble person, whereunto we haue euer beene, and will be as true as any of his subiects alive, whereof we call God, our Lady Saint Mary, and all the Saints in heaven vnto witnes and record.

The Earle of Wiltshire and other spoiled Newberry.

In the meane time, the Earle of Wiltshire treasurer of England, the Lord Scales, and the Lord Hungerford went to Newbery, which longed to the D. of Yorke, and there made inquisition of all them that in any wise had fauoured the said Duke, whereof some were found guilty, and were drawen, hanged and quartered, and all the inhabitants of the towne were spoiled of their goods. From thence the Earle of Wiltshire went to Southhampton, where vnder colour to take the Earle of Warwike, but especially to scale out of the Realme, as he appeared afterwards, he armed fiue great carickes of Jene, and stuffed them with souldiers taking victualles of the Kings price without payment, and put a great part of his treasure into the said caricks, and after sayled about in the sea, and at last scale into Dutchland, sending backe againe his souldiours into England. The Earle of Wiltshire scale ouer the seas.

Then were the Kings privy seales directed to all bishops, abbots, priors and other states spirituall and temporall to lend the King money, therewith to wage souldiers to keepe the sea coasts: but the commons of Kent dreading the like vengeance to be taken vpon them, as was done vpon them of Newbery, sent priuily messengers to Caleis to the foresaid Earles, beseeching them in all hast possible to come to their succour, whereupon the said Earles sent ouer into Kent the Lord Fauconbridge, to know if their deds would accord with their words and anon the people of Kent and other shires adioyning resorted to the said Lord Fauconbridge in great number, and made long proclamations, containing diuers articles and causes of their assembly, all which hers I ouerpasse. When the Earles knew the wilful hearts of those people, they prepared to come into this land, against whose comming, a long ballet was fired vpon the gates of Canterbury, made in fauor of the Duke of Yorke and the sayde Earles, beginning thus, In the day of fast and spirituall affliction, The celestiall influence of bodies transitorie, &c. The Earles of Marche, Warwicke, and Salisbury, arriued at Sandwitch, where met with them Thomas Bourcher Archbishop of Canterbury, who with his crosse borne before him, and a great number of other people, accompanied them to London, into the which City they entred on the second day of July: with them came the Popes legats, to treat of a peace, if need were. Pyllage Scales for money. The men of Kent send to Caleis for the Earles. The Earles entred into London.

Then was a conuocation of the Clergy holden in Saint Pauls Church, where the sayde Earles being present, the Earle of Warwicke recyted the cause of their comming into the land, with the misgouernments thereof, and then made open oth vpon the crosse of Canterbury, that they had euer borne true faith and allegeance to King Henry, Then the Earles of Marche and Warwike, with the Lords Fauconbrige, Clinton, Bourcher called the Earle of Ewe, the Pryor of Saint Johns, Audley, Burgauenny, Say, and Scrope, the Archbishop, the Popes legate, the Bishops of Exceeter, Ely, Salisbury, and Rocheester, addressed themselues with to the King at Northampton, leauing the Earle of Salisbury to be gouernour of the Citie in their absence. The Lord Scales and Hungerford, that before the comming of the Earles were in the Citie of London, and would haue had the gouernance thereof, went to the tower of London, and with them the Lords Vesty, Louell, Delaware, Kendale a Gascoigne: Knights, Sir Edmond Hampden, Thomas Brune sherife of Kent, Iohn Bruin of Kent, Gernais Clifton treasurer of the kings house, Thomas

Tower of London besieged.

Thomas Tyrell, the Duches of Exceeter and many other. Then was the Tower of London besieged both by water and land, that no victualls might come to them. And they that were within the Tower rasht wild fire into the City, and shot many small gunnes, whereby they brent and slew men women and children in the stretes: also they of the City layd great guns on the further side of the Thames against the Tower, and brake the walls in diuers places.

The King lying in the Friers at Northampton, ordained a strong and mighty field in the medows beside the Nunry, hauing the riuer at his backe. The Earles with their power coming to Northampton, sent certaine Bishops to the King, beseeching him to admit the Earle of Warwicke to come to his presence, to declare their innocency: which request being denied by the Duke of Buckingham, the Earle sent an Herald of armes, desiring to haue hostages for his safe comming and going, but they might not be heard. The third time the Earle of Warwicke sent words to the King, that at two houres after none he would speake with him, or dye in the field. The Bishop of Hereford, a white Frier, the Kings confessor, incouraged the Kings part to fight, wherefore after the battell hee was committed to the Castle of Warwicke, where he was long prisoner.

Battell at Northampton.

The tenth day of July, at two of the clocke after none, the Earles of Marche and Warwicke let cry throw the field, that no man should lay hand vpon the King, ne on the Common people, but on the Lords, Knights and Esquires: then both hosts incountred and fought halfe an houre, the Lord Edmond Gray of Ruthen that was the kings baward, brake the field, and came to the Earles party, and was a great helpe to them in obtaining the victory: many of the Kings side were slaine, and many that fled were drowned in the Riuer, the Duke of Buckingham, the Earle of Shrewsbury, the Lord Beaumount, and the Lord Egremont were slaine by the Kings Tent, with many Knights and Esquires: the Kings Ordinance of guns might not be shot, there was so great raine that day.

When the field was done, and the Earles had the victory, they came to the King, he being in his Tent, and said in this wise: Most Noble Prince, displease you not, though it haue pleased God of his grace, to grant vs the victory of our mortall enemies, the which by their pernenous malice haue vntruly stirred and moued your Highnes to exile vs out of your Land, and would haue vs put to finall shame and confusion: we come not to the intent for to inquiet, ne grieue your said Highnesse, but for to please your Noble Person, desiring tenderly the high welfare and prosperity thereof, and of all your Realme, and to be your true leag-men while our liues shall endure.

The King with these words was greatly recomforted, and anon was led to Northampton with procession, where he rested three dayes, and came to London the fifteenth day of July, and was lodged in the Bishops Palace.

The nineteenth day of July, they that were in the Tower of London, for lacke of victualls, yeelded and came forth, of the which diuers were drawne and headed.

The Lord Scales, late in an euening, entred a Wherry with three persons, and rowing toward Westminster, there to haue taken Sanctuarie, was espyed by a woman, and anon the Wherry-men fell on him, killed, and cast him all and besides Saint Mary Queries. Lord Scales murthered in a Wherry neer the Chaunel.

When Queene Margaret heard that the King was taken, she with her sonne, and 8. persons fled to the Castle of Hardlag in Wales, and was robbed by the way in Lancaster shire of all her goods to the value of ten thousand marke: from thence she went into Scotland.

The tenth of August, Iames, King of Scots, besieging the Castle of Rokesborough, was slaine with a gun that brake in his caunpe.

The 21. of September, the Duke of Somerset came from Gwines into England. An. reg.

The eighth of October, a Parliament was begunne at Westminster, into the which came Richard, Duke of Yorke, that a little before was come out of Ireland, and being lodged in the Palace, the King being there, he brake vp the doores of the Kings chamber, to the King giuing him place, tooke another Chamber. Then the said Duke, as right heyre by lineall descent from Richard the second, challenged the Realme, purposing to haue beene crowned on Allhallowne day next following, and herewpon sent to the Parliament in writing his said claime, Title and Pedigree. The which claime after diligent deliberation had and approoued, by the said Parliament, peace and concord betweene the King and the Duke, on the digill of Allhallow was established and concluded, as in Articles followeth. Parliament. The articles betwixt King Henry and the Duke of Yorke.

Blessed be Iesu, in whose hands all bounty resteth, and is the peace and vnity betwixt Princes and the weale of euery Realme: I know by whose direction agreed it is appointed and accorded, as followeth: Betwixt the most high and most mighty Prince, King Henry the sixth, King of England and of France, and Lord of Ireland on the one party, and the right high and mighty Prince, Richard Plantagenet, Duke of Yorke, on that other party, vpon certaine matters of variance, mooued betwixt them, and especially vpon the claime and Title vnto the Crownes of England and of France, and royall power, estate, and dignity appertaining to the same, and Lordship of Ireland opened, shewed and declared by the said Duke, afore all the Lords, spirituall and temporall, being in this present Parliament.

First where the said Richard, Duke of Yorke, hath declared and opened, as aboue is said, Title and claime, in manner as followeth.

That the right Noble and worthy Prince Henry, King of England the third, had issue and lawfull got, Edward, his first begotten sonne, borne at Westminster the fifteenth kalends of July, in the yere of our Lord, 1239 and Edmond his second sonne, which was borne on S. Marcells day, in the yere of our Lord, 1245. the

which Edward, after the death of King Henry his father, intituled and called King Edward the first, hadde issue Edward his first begotten Sonne, called after the decease of his father, King Edward the second, which hadde issue, Edward the third: which Edward the third had issue, Edward Prince of Wales, William of Hatfielde his second sonne, Lionell the third Duke of Clarence, John of Gaunt the fourth, Duke of Lancaster, Edmond of Langley the fift, Duke of Yorke, Thomas Woodstocke the sixt, Duke of Glocester, and William of Windzore the seuenth. The said Edward Prince of Wales, which died in the life time of his father, had issue Richard, which succeeded Edward the third his Grandfire: Richard died without issue: William of Hatfielde the second sonne of Edward the third, died without issue: Lionell the third Sonne of Edward the third, Duke of Clarence, hadde issue Phillip his Daughter and heire, which was given inmatrimonie vnto Edmond Mortimer Earle of March, and hadde issue Roger Mortimer Earle of March her Sonne and heire, which Roger hadde issue Edmond Earle of March, Roger Mortimer, Anne and Elianor: which Edmond, Roger, and Elianor, died without issue: And the said Anne coupled in matrimony to Richard Earle of Cambridge, the Sonne of Edmond of Langley, the fift Sonne of Edward the third and had issue Richard Plantagenet, commonly called Duke of Yorke, John of Gaunt the fourth Sonne of Edward, and the younger brother of the said Lionell, had issue Henry Earle of Darby, which incontinent after that King Richard resigned the Crownes of the Realmes and Lordshippe of Ireland, vnrightfully entred vpon the same, then being aline Edmond Mortimer Earle of March Son to Roger Mortimer Earle of March, sonne and heire of the saide Phillip, daughter and heire of the sayde Lionell, the third sonne of the said King Edward the third, to the which Edmond the right and title of the sayde Crownes and Lordshippe by law and custome belonged. To the which Richard Duke of Yorke, as sonne to Anne daughter to Roger Mortimer Earle of March, sonne and heire of the sayde Phillip daughter and heire of the sayd Lionell, the third Sonne of King Edward the third, the right, title, dignity royall and estate of the Crownes of the Realmes of England and France, and the Lordshippe of Ireland, pertayneth and belongeth afore any issue of the sayde John of Gaunt, the fourth son of the said king Edward. The said title notwithstanding, and without preiudice of the said Richard Duke of Yorke, tenderly desiring the wealth, rest, and prosperity of this land, and to set apart all that might be trouble to the same, and considering the possession of the saide King Henry the sixt, and that he hath for his time bene named, taken, and reputed for King of England and of France, and Lord of Ireland, is contented agreed and consenteth, that he be had, reputed, and taken for King of England and France, with the royall estate, dignity and pzel eminence belonging thereunto, and Lord of Ireland during his naturall life. And for that time, the sayde Duke without hurt or preiudice of his said right and title shall take, worshippe and honour him for his soueraigne Lord.

Item, the said Richard Duke of Yorke, shall promit and bind him by his solemne oath, in manner and forme as followeth.

The othe of Richard Duke of Yorke.

In the name of God Amen: I Richard Duke of Yorke, promise and sweare by the faith and truth, that I owe to almightie God, that I shall neuer consent, procure, or Eir, directly or indirectly, in priuy or apart, neither (as much as in me is) shall suffer to be done, consented, procured, or stirred, any thing that may sound to the abridgement of the naturall life of King Henry the sixt, or to the hurt or diminishing of his raigne or dignitie royall, by violence or any otherwise, against his freedome or liberty: but if any person or persons would doe or presume any thing to the contrary, I shall with all my might and power withstand it, and make it to bee withstode, as far as my power will stretch thereunto, so helpe me God and his holy euangelists.

Item, Edward Earle of March, and Edmond Earle of Rutland, sonnes of the said Duke of Yorke shall make like othe.

Item, it is accorded, appointed and agreed, that the said Richard Duke of Yorke, shall be called and reputed from thencefoorth bery and rightfull heire to the Crownes, royall estate, dignitie and Lordship aboue said, and after the decease of the said King Henry, or when he will lay from him the said Crownes, estate, dignity, and Lordship, the said D. and his heires shall immediately succede to the sayde Crownes royall, estate, dignity and Lordship.

Item, the said Richard Duke of Yorke shall haue, by authority of this present Parliament, Castles, mannors, lands and tenements, with the wardes, marriages, reliefes, seruices, fines, amercements, offices, auoidons, fees and other appurtenances to them belonging, whatsoeuer they be, to the yerely value of tenne thousand markes ouer all charges and repziles, whereof fiue thousand markes shall bee to his owne state, three thousand fiue hundred markes to Edward his first begotten Sonne Earle of March, for his estate, and one thousand pound to Edmond Earle of Rutland his second Sonne, for his yerely sustentation, in such considerations and such intent as shall bee declared by the Lords of the Kings Counsell.

Item, if any person or persons imagine or compasse the death of the said Duke, and thereof probably bee attaint, of open déde done by folkes of other condition, it be deemed and adiudged high treason.

Item, for the more establishing of the saide accord, it is appointed and consented that the Lords spirituall and temporall, being in this present Parliament, shall make othes to accept, take, worship, and repute the said Richard Duke of Yorke, and his heires, as afore is rehearsed

rehearsed, and keepe and obserue, and strengthen as much as appertaineth vnto them, all the things afore said, and resist to their power, all them that would presume the contrarie, according to their estates and degrées.

Item, the saide Richard Duke of Yorke, Earles of March and Rutland, shall permit and make other to helpe, ayde, and defend the saide Lords and euery of them, against all those that will quarrell, or any thing attempt against the sayde Lords or any of them, by occasion of agréement or consenting to the saide accord, or assistance giuing to the Duke and Earles, or any of them.

Item, it is agréed and appointed, that this accord, and euery article thereof, bée opened and notified by the Kings letters patents, or otherwise, at such times and places, and in manner, as it shall be thought expedient to the sayde Richard Duke of Yorke, with the aduice of the Lords of the Kings Councell. The King vnderstandeth certainely, the sayde title of the sayde Richard Duke of Yorke, iust, lawfull, and sufficient, by the aduice and assent of the Lords spirituall and temporall, and the Commons in this Parliament assembled, and by authoritie of the same Parliament declareth, approueth, ratifieth, confirmeth and accepteth the saide title iust, good, lawfull, and true, and thereunto giueth his assent and agrément of his free will and libertie. And ouer that, by the sayde aduice and authoritie declareth, entitleth, calleth, stablisheth, affirmeth, and reputeth the saide Richard Duke of Yorke, bery true and rightfull heire to the Crones, royall estate, and dignity of the Realmes of England and of France, and of the Lordshippe of Ireland aforesayde, and that according to the worshippe and reuerence that thereto belongeth, he bée taken, accepted, and reputed in worshippe and reuerence, by all the States of the sayde Realme of England, and of all his subiects thereof, hauing and ordaining by the same authority, the King to haue the said Crones, Realme, royall estate, dignitie, and preheminence of the same, and the said Lordshippe of Ireland during his life naturall. And furthermore by the same aduice and authority willeth, consenteth and agréeth, that after his decease, or when it shall please his highnes to laye from him the sayde Crones, estate, dignitie, and Lordship, the said Richard Duke of Yorke, and his heires, shall immediately succede him in the said Crones, royall estate, dignitie, and worship, and them then haue and enioy, any act of Parliament, statute or ordinance, or other things to the contrary made, or interruption or discontinuance of possession notwithstanding. And moreouer, by the sayde aduice and authoritie stablisheth, granteth, confirmeth, approueth, ratifieth, and accepteth the sayde accord, and all things therein contained, and thereunto freely and absolutely assenteth, agréeth, and by the same aduice and authority ordaineth and establisheth, that if any person or persons imagine or compasse the death of the said Duke, and probably be attaint of open déde done by folkes of that condition, that it be deemed and adiudged high treason. And furthermore ordaineth and establisheth by the said assent and authority, that all Statutes, ordinances and acts of Parliament, made in the time of the said King Henry the fourth, by the which he and the heires of his body comming of Henry late King of England the first, the sonne and heire of the said King Henry the fourth and the heire of King Henry the first, were or be inheritable to the saide Crownes and Realmes, or to the heritage of the same, bée annulled, repelled, damned, cancelled, void, and of none effect.

And ouer this, the King by the said aduice, assent and authority, ordaineth and establisheth, that all other acts and statutes made afore this time by act of Parliament, not repelled or annulled by like authority, or otherwise void, be in such force, effect, and vertue, as they were afore the making of these ordinances, and that no letters patents royall of record, nor acts iudicall, made or done afore this time not repelled, reuersed, ne otherwise void by law, be preiudiced or hurt by this present act. Also it was ordained by the same Parliament, that the saide Richard Duke of Yorke, should be called Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornewell, and Earle of Chester, and pzincepz of England.

The English chronicle printed by William Caxton, and therefore called Caxtons chronicle, declareth how that in the Parliament, while the Commons of the Realme were assembled in the common house, communing and treating vpon the title of the saide Duke of Yorke, suddenly fell downe the crowne which hung there in the middest of the sayde house, which was the fratry of the abbey of Westminster, which was taken for a prodigy or token, that the raigne of King Henry was ended: and all the Crowne which stood on the highest Tower of the Castle of Douer, fell downe the same yere.

The agrément afore saide being put in articles, was engrosed, sealed, and sworne by the two parties, and also enacted in the high court of Parliament: for joy whereof, the King hauing in his company the duke of Yorke, rode to the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paule within the city of London, and there on the day of All Saints, with the crowne on his head, went solemnly in procession, and was lodged a good space after in the Bishops pallace nere to the said church. And on the Saturday next ensuing, Richard Duke of Yorke was by sound of Trumpet, solemnly proclaimed heire apparent to the Crowne of England, and pzincepz of the Realme.

The right title and claime of Richard Duke of Yorke exhibited to the Kings spirituall & temporall in Parliament this yeere being 39. Henry 6.

The 16. of October, the Councell of the Duke of Yorke did exhibite to the Lords in Parliament, a writing touching the Dukes claime to the crowne of England and Lordship of Ireland, which the Lords willed to bee read vnto them, and vpon consultation among themselues it was answered that no answers should be

be made vnto it without the King. The title was deuised from King H. 3. to King Edward 3. vnto whose second Sonne Lionell Duke of Clarence, the Duke of Yorke was proued to be the lawfull heire, and so hereby had better right to the Crowne then any of the line derived from Iohn of Gaunt Duke of Lancaster. The Lords declared this title to the King, who willed them to call the Iudges and his Counsell at lawe to answere the same. Wherefore order was taken that euery Lord might frankly therein vtter his conceipt without any impeachments. In the end obiections were made against the Dukes title as followeth.

First, the oathes of the Lords made to the King, and namely the Dukes oathe.

Secondly, the Acts of Parliament lately made against the Dukes oathe.

Thirdly, sondry Actes of entaile made to the Crowne of England.

Fourthly, that the Duke pretending his title from Lionell Duke of Clarence, should rather beare the armes of Clarence, then of Edmond of Langley Duke of Yorke.

Fifthly, that King H. 4. tooke the Crowne vpon him, as right heire to King Henry, and not as a conqueror, vnto which obiections Richard Plantagenet, commonly called Duke of Yorke, answered thus.

First, no oath ought to be performed when the same tendeth to the suppression of truth and right being against the law of God.

To the 2. and 3. he knoweth no Acts made, but one act of 7 H. 4. touching a generall claime made by him a wrong doer, for if hee had any right to the same, hee neither needed nor would haue made any such entaile.

To the forth he might iustly haue borne the Armes of Clarence and of England, onely for feare the same for a time, as he did for making his Claime to the Crowne.

To the which being a manifest vntruth, was onely a shadow to cloake a violent vsurpation of Henry of Darby.

After this, the Parliament kept at Couentry the last yere, was declared to be a deuilish counsell, and onely celebrated for the destruction of the nobility, and no lawfull Parliament, because they which were returned, were neuer elected according to the due order of the law, but secretly named by them, which desired rather the destruction than the aduancement of the common wealth. When these agréements were done and enacted, the King dissolued his Parliament, which was the last Parliament that euer he ended. The Duke of Yorke well knowing that the Quéene would spurne against the conclusions agreed in this Parliament, caused both her and her sonne to be sent for by the King: but the being a stout woman, by the counsell of the Dukes of Excester and Somerset, not onely denied to come, but also assembled a great army, intending to take the King by force out of the Lords hands.

Great water sounds.

The one and twentieth of November, such abundance of waters ouerflowed in the countries of Huntington, Suffolke, Cambridge, and the Ile of Ely, as the like had not béene seene before: for it ouerthrew the bridge, with a great part of the Hospital and fratry at Thetford in Norfolke, and the bridges in Cambridge, running ouer the wheeles of the water Milles there, destroying many houses, and comming in at the windowes of the rest.

The Duke of Yorke pretendeth being at London, alligned the Duke of Norfolke, and the Earle of Warwicke his trusty friends, to be about the King, and he with the Earles of Salisbury and Rutland, and a conuenient number of men, departed out of London the second of December, and sent to the Earle of Marche his eldest sonne to follow him with all his power. The Duke came to the castle of Sandall beside Wakefielde on Christmas euen, and there began to assemble his tenants and friends. There came to him vnder a colour of friendship, the Lord Neuill, brother to the Earle of Westmerland, and required of him a commission for him to rise the people for to chastise his rebels, as he said: but when hee had raised to the number of eight thousand menne, he brought them to the Lords of the countrie, that is to say, the Earle of Northumberland and the rest.

D. of Yorke went northward.

Battell at Wakefield

The Quéene ascertained hereof, determined to méete with him before his power were come together, and so, hauing in her company the Prince her sonne, the Dukes of Excester and Somerset, the Earle of Deuonshire, the Lord Clifford, the Lord Roose, and in effect all the Lords of the north parts, with an 18000. men, marched from Yorke to Wakefield, where they placed themselues euen before the castle gates, the Duke hauing with him not fully 4000 men (as was said) contrary to the minde of his faithfull friends, would néedes issue forth to fight with his enemies. The Duke of Somerset, and other of the Quénes part, deuised how to take them, and so appointed the Lord Clifford to lye in one vale, and the Earle of Wiltshire in another, and the Duke with other kept the maine battell. The Duke of Yorke with his people descended downe the hill in good order of array, and was suffered to passe on toward the maine battell: but when hee was in the plaine field betwéene his castle and the towne of Wakefielde, hée was environed on euery side, so that hee manfully fighting was within halfe an hower slaine, and his whole armie discomfited: and with him died of his trustie friends, his two bastard vncles, Sir Iohn, and Sir Hugh Mortimers, Sir Dane Hall, Sir Hugh Hastings, Sir Thomas Nevill sonne to the Earle of Salisbury, William and Thomas a Parre brethren, Lord Harington, Thomas Haringtons knight, Sir Henry Ratford knight, and other, to the number of 2200. whereof many were young gentlemen, heires of great parentage in the North parts: In this conflict was wounded and taken prisoner Richard Earle of Salisbury and was led by the Duke of

1461.

Richard Duke of Yorke slaine.

Owen Teuther beheaded.

of Somerset to the Castle of Pontfract, and hadde grant of life for a great ransome, but the common people of the countrey, who loued him not, take him out of the castle by violence and smote off his head. There was also taken Sir Richard Limbroke, Ralph Stanley, Iohn Harrow, Captaine Hanson, and diuers other.

The Lord Clifford perceiuing where the Earle of Rutland was conueied out of the fielde, by one of his fathers chaplaines, and schoolmaster to the same Earle, followed and ouertooke him and stabbed him to the heart with a dagger, as hee kneeled before him. The same Lord Clifford not satisfied herewith, came to the place where the dead corps of the Duke of Yorke lay, and caused his head to bée striken off, and set on it a crowne of paper, fixed it on a pole, and presented it to the Quéene, not lying far from the fielde. The Dukes head with the Earle of Salisburies head were set by ouer a gate of Yorke. This battell was fought in the South fielde of Wakefield by the faire stone bridge of nine arches, on the last of December.

The Earle of March so commonly called, but now after the death of his father, Duke of Yorke, lying at Glocester, was wonderfully amazed when the lamentable newes of these mishaps came to his vnderstanding: but being comforted by his friends, hee remoued to Shrewsbury and raised thereabout a puissant army to the number of 23000. ready to goe against the Quéene, & his fathers enemies. But when hee was setting forward, newes was brought him, that Iaspar Earle of Penbroke, & Iames Butler Earle of Ormond and Wiltshire, had assembled a great number of Welchmen and Irishmen, suddenly to take and surprise him, hée being therewith quickened retired backe, & met with his enemies in a faire plaine néere to Mortimers Crosse, betwéene Ludlow, and farre from Hereford east, on Candelmas day in the morning, at which time the sun (as some write) appeared to the Earle of March like three sunnes, and suddenly ioyned together in one, vpon which sight hée tooke such courage, that hée fiercely setting on his enemies put them to flight: and for this cause men imagined he gaue the sun in his full brightnesse for his badge or cognizance. Of his enemies were slaine to the number of three thousand eight hundred. The Earles of Penbroke and Wiltshire fled, but Owen Tewther (whom Leiland saith should be called Mereclicke) father to the sayd Earle of Penbroke, which Owen Tewther, hadde married (as was said) Katherine mother to King Henry the sixt, was there taken and beheaded, and afterward was buried in a chappel of gray Friers Church in Hereford. There were also taken and beheaded, Dauid Floid, Morgan ap Reuther, Sir Iohn Skidmore, and his two Sonnes, Thomas Griffith, Iohn Throkmorton, Thomas fitz Henry, and other. During this season, the Quéene encouraged with this late gained victory at Wakefield, with a great number of people out of the North, marched toward London, intending to recouer the company of the King her husband, and to vndoe all that had ben done in the last Parliament. These northerne people after they were once passed the riuer of Trent, spoiled & wasted the country afore them, Andrew Trollope grand captaine, and as it were leader of the battell, with a great armie of Scots, Welchmen, and other strangers, beside the northern men, destroyed the Townes of Granthum, Stamford, Peterborow, Huntington, Roiston, Pellebourne, and in a maner all the townes by the way vnto Saint Albons, sparing neyther Abbeis, Priories or Parish Churches, but bare alway Crosses, chalices, bookes, ornaments, and other things whatsoeuer was worth the carriage, as though they had bene Saracens, and no Christians. At length they came vnto to. Dunstaple, and so to Saint Albons, and hearing that the Dukes of Northfolke and Suffolke, and the Earles of Warwicke and Arundell, the Lords Bonuile and other, whom the Duke of Yorke hadde left to gouerne the King in his absence, hadde ioyned were Kings affent assembled a great host, by the incamped with the King néere to the Towne,

Battell at Mortimers Crosse.

Second battell at S. Albons.

Those northern Lords and other that were with the Quéene made forward and entring into Saint Albons, meant to passe through the Towne, and so cope with their enemies, but finding a sort of archers ranged, néere to the great Crosse in the market place, to defend their passage, they were received with such a storme of arrowes, which came flying about their eares as thicke as haile, that they were quickly repulsed backe, and with losse driuen to retire into the West end of the Towne, where by a lane that leadeth Northwards vp to Saint Peters stréete, they made their entrie, and hadde there also a sharpe incounter, against certaine bands of the Kings people: but yet after great slaughter on both parts, they got through, and vpon the Heath, at the North end of the towne, called Barnard heath, toward a little Towne called Synedridge, in a place called No mans land, they hadde a farre greater conflict, with power of fiue thousand of the Kings armie, which gaue the onset so fiercely at the beginning, that the victory rested doubtfull a certaine time, till at the length, through the withdrawing many of the Kentishmen, with their Captaine Louelace, that was the vaward, King Henries part lost the fielde: the Lords fled, and the King went to Quéene Margaret, that was come with the Northern menne (as is afore sayde) and her Sonne Edward. The Earle of Warwicke went toward the Earle of March, that was comming toward London out of Wales. The Lord Bonuile would haue withdrawen him, but the King assured him to haue no bodily hurt: Neuertheless at the instance of the Quéene, the Duke of Excester, and the Earle of Deuonshire, hée was beheaded at Saint Albons, and with him Sir Thomas Kiriell of Kent. This battell was fought on

Shrouetuesday, vz the 17. of Februarij, in the which battell was slaine 1916. persons, of whom no noble man is remembred, saue Sir John Gray, which was the same day made Knight, in the company of other twelue in the Towne of Colny. The same day Thomas Thorp Baron of the Exchequer was beheaded at Highgate by the commons of Kent.

Now after the noble men were fled, and a-lone, without any power of men to guarde his person, hee was counselled by a squire called Thomas Hoo, a man well seene in the lawes, to send some conuenient messenger to the Northerne Lords, aduertising them that hee would now gladly come vnto them (whom hee knewe to bee his friends, and hadde assembled themselues together for his seruice) to the end hee might remaine with them, as before hee hadde vnder the gouernement of the Southerne Lords. According to this aduice the King appointed the same Squier to beare the message, who first went and declared the same vnto the Earle of Northumberland and returning backe to the King, vz ought certaine Lords with him, who conueyed the King first into the Lord Cliffords tent, that stoode next to the place where the Kings people hadde incamped. This done, they brought the Quene and her sonne Prince Edward vnto his presence, whom he ioyfully receiued, imbracing and kissing them in most louing wise, and yelding hartie thankes to almighty God, whome it hadde pleased to strengthen the forces of the Northerne men, to restore his derely beloued sonne againe to his possession. The Quene caused the King to dubbe her sonne Prince Edward Knight, with thirty other persons, which the day before had fought on her partie.

Knights dubbed at S. Albons.

This done, they went to the Abbey, where of the Abbot and the monks they were receiued with hymnes and songs, and so brought to the high altar, and after to the Chaire, and so to the Chamber, in which the King was wont to lodge. The Abbot made sute, that order might be taken to refreine the Northern menne from spoiling the Towne, and proclamation was forwith made to that effect, but it auailed not, for they maintained that the people of all things was graunted them by couenant, after they were once passed the riuer of Trent: and so not regarding any proclamation, they spared nothing that they could lay hands on, if the same were meet for them to carry away.

The Quéne hauing thus got the victorie, sent to the Maior of London, commanding him without delay, to send certaine carts laden with Lenten stuffe, for the refreshing of her armie, which the Maior incontinent granted, caused carts to be laden, and would haue sent them forward, but the commons of the Citie would not suffer them to passe, but stayed them at Criple gate: during which controuersie, diuers of the Northern horsemenne robbed in the suburbs of the Citie, and would haue entred at Criple gate, but they were pulled by the commoners, and three of them slaine, whereupon the Maior sent the Recorder to Barnet to the Kings Councell, there to exercise the matter, and the Duches of Bedford, the Lady Scales, with diuers Fathers of the spiritualtie went to the Quéne to assuage her displeasure, conceiued against the City. The Quéne therefore at their humble request by aduice of her Councell, appointed certaine Lords and knights, with 400. tall persons, to ride to the Citie, and there to view and see the demeanor of the people, and diuers Aldermen were appointed to méete them at Barnet, and to conuey them to London, but all these deuises were shortly altered into another forme, because true report came, not only to the Quéne, but also to the citie, that the Earle of March, hauing vanquished the Earles of Penbroke and Wiltshire, had met with the Earle of Warwicke, after the last battell at Saint Albons, at Chippingnorton by Cotelwolde, and that they with both their powers were comming towards London. The Quéne therefore, hauing little trust in Esser, and lesse in them of Kent, but least of all in the Londoners, with her husband and sonne, departed from Saint Albons into the North countrey, where their refuge onely consisted.

The Duches of Yorke, séeing her husband and sonne slaine, and not knowing what should succéede of her eldest sonne, sent her two youngest sonnes George and Richard, ouer Sea to the City of Utrich in Almaine, where they were of Phillip Duke of Burgoigne well receiued, and so remained there till their brother got the Crowne.

The Earles of March and Warwike, hauing knowledge that the King and Quéene were departed from S. Albons, rode straight to London, entring the Citie with a great number of men of warre, the first week of Kent, vz the eight and twentieth of February, where he was ioyfully receiued, whose comming thither was no sooner knowne, but that the people resorted to him out of Kent, Esser, and other parts in great numbers to ayde, and assist this lucky Prince in whom the hope of all their ioy consisted.

This prudent Prince minding to take time when time serued, called a great Councell both of the Lords spirituall and temporall, and to them declared the title and right that he hadde to the Crowne, rehearsing also the Articles concluded betwixt King Henry and his Father by their writings signed and sealed, and also confirmed by act of Parliament. &c. Which after the Lords hadde considered, they determined, that because King Henry was insufficient of himselfe to rule the Realme, hee should bee depriued of all Kingly honour and Soueraigntie, and incontinently was Edward Earle of March sonne and heire to the Duke of Yorke (by the Lords of that Councell assembled) named and elected for King and Gouernour of the Realme. On which day being Sunday, and the second day

day of March, the people of the Earles part being in their musters in Saint Johns field, and a great number of the substantiall Cittizens there assembled to behold their order, suddenly the Lord Fauconbridge, which tooke the musters, wisely declared to the people, certaine Articles, and points that King Henry had offended in, and then it was demanded of them, whether the said Henry were worthy to raigne still: but the people cryed, Nay, nay. Then was it asked, if they would haue the Earle of March to be their King, and they said Yea, yea: then certaine Captaines were sent to the Earle of March at Bainards Castle, who told him that the people had chosen him King, whereof hee thanked God and them, and by the aduice of the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Bishop of Exceter, and the Earle of Warwick with others, he tok it vpon him. Many welthy Cittizens of London, not altogether liking of his doing, conueyed themselues out of the Citty, amongst the which were Philip Malpas, Alderman of London, Thomas Vaghan Esquire, Maister William Atclife, with many other, who fearing the Quenes comming to London, shipped themselues in a Shippe of Antwerp, purposing to haue sayled thither: but by the way they were taken by a French Ship, named the Colmayne, and at length deliuered for great ransome.

Edward Earle of March elected King in S. Johns field in London.

Cittizens of London fled.

Edward Earle of March tooke on him the kingdome.

Edward, Earle of March, being elected, as is aboue said, on the next morow went in procession at Pauls, and offered there, and after *Te Deum* being song, hee was with great royalty conueyed to Westminster, and there in the Hall set in the Kings seate, with Saint Edwards Scepter in his hand, and then asked of the people if they would haue him King, and they cryed Yea, yea. Then after certaine homages by him receiued, hee was with procession conueyed to the Abbey there, and set in the Quire as King, while *Te Deum* was singing: that done, hée offered at Saint Edwards shrine, and then returned by water to Saint Pauls, and was there lodged within the Bishops Palace. Thus tooke he possession of the Realme, vpon a Tuesday, being the fourth of March, and was proclaimed King of England, by the name of Edward the fourth, when King Henry had raigne 38. yeres, 8. moneths and odde daies.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *KING* EDVVARD *THE FOVRTH.*

An. reg. 1. Iohn Rouse.

EDVVARD Earle of March, borne at Roane, sonne and heyre to Richard, Duke of Yorke, about the age of 18. yéeres, began his raigne the 4th day of March, by the name of Edward the 4th, in the yeere 1460. after the account of the Church of England: he was a man of Noble courage, and great wit: but in his time was much trouble, and vnquietnesse in the Realme, as shall be shewed.

1461.

Walter Walker beheaded for a word speaking.

The 12. of March, Walter Walker, a Grocer of Cheape in London, for words spoken touching the Title of King Edward, when hee was proclaimed, was suddenly apprehended, condemned and beheaded in Smithfield. This Grocer is he, whom Maister Hall mistaketh to be Burdet, of whom yee shall finde in the 17. yere of this Kings raigne.

The same 12. day of March, in the afternoone, King Edward hauing prepared a great army, being accompanyed with the Duke of Norfolke, the Lord Fauconbridge, the Lord Fitzwalter, Sir John Wenlocke, John Stafford, Henry Ratlife of Framlingham, Roger Vvolfestone and others, with great triumph, rode throgow the Citty of London to Bishops gate, and so tooke his iourney toward the North, where betweene Shirburne in Elmet, and Todcaster, all the North part met him, and on Palme Sunday the 29. of March, fought a great battell betweene Towton and Sartou, in which were slaine, Henry Percy, Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Shrewsbury, the Earle of Deuenshire, John, Lord Clifford, the Lord Beaumond, Iohn, Lord Neuill, the Lord Vvillowghby, Leo, Lord Wells, the Lord Roos, the Lord Scales, the Lord Grey, Reynolph, Lord Dacres, the Lord Fitzhugh, the Lord Molineux, Lord, Henry Buckingham: Knights, two Bastard sonnes of Henry Holland, Duke of Exceter, Richard Percy, John Heyron, Gerueyes Clifton, Edmond Hamis, Thomas Crakenthorpe, John Crakenthorpe, Vvilliam Harill, John Ormonde, Andrew Trolope, Roger Mollyn, Radulph Pigote, Henry Norbohew, Dauid Trolope, John Burton, Captaine of Yorke, and many other knights, and Squires, whose names were not then noted. The whole number slaine, were accounted by some to be 33000. but by other some 35091. many of these were first buried in fiue pits, yet appearing halfe a mile off by North-Sarton Church in the field, where Maister Burgare caused them to be brought from thence, and to be buryed in the Church-yard of Sar-

from the Lord Dacres hath there a meane tombe. Towton village is a mile from Sarton, where a great Chappell was begunne by Richard the third, but not finished in which Chappell were buryed also many of the men slaine at Palmesunday field. This field was as much in Sarton Parish as in Towton, yet it bare the name of Towton.

King Henry fled into Scotland.

The Duke of Exceter, the Duke of Somerset, the Lord Roos, the Lord Hungerford and many other fled to Yorke, to King Henry, and then they with the King, Queene and Prince, fled toward Scotland to Barwicke, and so to Edenborough.

King Edward went to Yorke, where he was with all solemnity received, there he caused the heads of his father and the Earle of Salisbury, with other his friends to be taken downe, and buried with their bodies. And then caused Thomas Courtney, Earle of Deuonshire, the Earle of Wilt-shire was beheaded at Newcastle. And then King Edward went to Durham, and when he had quieted the Countrey, returned Southward. The Lord Fitz Walter was drowned at Fetherbridge, Sir Thomas Fulford was beheaded at Yerham, &c.

The Towne of Barwicke was deliuered to the Scots by King Henry the first on Saint Markes day, and the 15. of June, the King of Scots came thither.

King Edward crowned at Westminster.

The 26. of June, the Maior of London, with the Aldermen in Scarlet, and the commons in greene, brought King Edward from Lambeth to the Tower of London, where hee made 28. Knights, and on the morrow, he dubbed foure mo, and on the 28. of June, hee was crowned at Westminster with great solemnitie of Bishops, and other Temporall Lords,

And on the morrow after, the King was crowned againe in Westminster Abbey, in the worship of God and S. Peter: and on the next morrow, hee went crowned in Pauls Church in London, in the honor of God and Saint Paul, and there an Angell came downe and cersed him, at which time was so great a multitude of people in Paris as euer was seene in any daies. And soone after his Coronation, the King made his brother George Plantagenet, Duke of Clarence, and his brother Richard Duke of Gloucester: Humfrey Stafford Esquire, Lord Stafford of Southwick: Sir William Herbert, Lord Herbert, and after Earle of Penbroke: and the said Lord Stafford, Earle of Deuonshire. Also this hee made Edmond Grey Lord of Ruthen, William Neuil, Lord Fauconbridge, Earle of Kent: Henry, Lord Bourcher, Earle of Esser: John Stafford, Lord of Buckingham, Earle of Wiltshire: Sir Thomas Blunt, Knight, Lord of Mountioy: Sir John Howard, Lord Howard: William Hastings, Lord Hastings, and after that, great Chamberlaine: Richard Wooduile Lord Riuers: John Denham Esquire, Lord Denham, &c. To Henry, Lord Bourcher, before spoken of, Richard, Duke of Yorke long before this time had giuen his sister Elizabeth in marriage of whom he begat foure sonnes, William, Thomas, John and Henry, the which William being a man of great inuentrie, wit, and prouidence, in graue and weighty matters, married the lady Anne Wooduile, descended of high parentage, whose mother Iaquet was Daughter to Peter of Luxenburgh, Earle of Saint Paul, by the which Anne, hee had Henry, Earle of Esser, one Daughter named Cicilie, married to Vvalter, lord Ferrers of Chartley, and another called Isabell, which dyed vnmarried. John Markham was made Lord chiefe Iustice, and Robert Stillington, keeper of the priuy Seale.

States created.

Ich. Markham chiefe Iustice.

John Dauy had his hand striken off at the Standard in Cheape, because hee had smitten a man before the Kings Iudges at Westminster, wherefore the King commanded him to haue the law, in example to others.

Record. One had his hand striken off in Cheap.

This peere in the Parnell season, King Edward rode to Canterbury, and to Sandwich, and so along by the Sea-Coast to Hampton, and from thence into the Marches of Wales, and to Bristow, where he was most royally received, thus he progressed about the land to vnderstand the estate thereof. 1462. An. reg. 2.

The 4. of November, beganne a Parliament at Westminster, wherein King Henry, his Queene, and his sonne, were dis-herited of the Crowne: Henry, Duke of Exceter, Henry, Duke of Somerset, Thomas, Earke of Deuonshire, &c. To the number of 140. were attainted and dis-herited, shortly the Earle of Oxford and Awbrey his sonne, Sir Thomas Tudenham, Knight, William Tirrill, and John Mongomery Esquire, were detect, and at seuerall times beheaded at the Tower-hill, and after that many other.

The 37. of March, King Edward went Northward so farre as Stamford, where he was enformed, that King Henrie had procured the Frenchmen and Scots to enter this land, in resisting whereof K. Edward sent his priuy seale throw out England to moue them to giue a certain summe of money, which they granted liberally. The Lord Fauconbridge, Earle of Kent, was appointed to keep the seas with the L. Audeley, Lord Clinton, Sir John Howard, Sir Richard Walgraue, and other, to the number of 10000. which landed in Britaine, and won the Towne of Conquet, with the Ile of Reth, &c.

In Michaelmas Tearme, King Edward sate in the kings bench three daies together, in open Court, to vnderstand how his lawes were executed.

Queene Margaret, wife to Henry the sixth, landed in the North, where hauing but small succour and euill fortune, she was forced to take the sea againe, and by tempest of weather was driuen to Barwicke where she landed, but lost her ships and goods.

King Edward beganne his iourney toward Scotland, on the feast day of Saint Andrew the Apostle, accompanied of Dukes, Earles, Barons and knights as followeth: the Dukes of Norfolke and Suffolke, the Earles of Arundell, Shrewsbury, Worcester, Kent, Westmerland and

Dukes 2. Earles 7. Barons 31. Knights 59.

and Esser, the Barons, Lord Grey, Ruthen, Lord Hastings, Lord Grey, Codnar, Lord Grey, Wilton, Lord Anthony Scales, Lord Latimer, Lord Herberd, Lord Ferrers of Chartley, Lord Stanley, Lord Wenlocke, Lord Grestoke, Lord Ogill, Lord Lomley, Lord Clinton, Lord Southwike, Lord Barnes, Lord Dacre of the South, Lord Dacre of the North, Lord Say, Lord Cromwell, Lord Cobham, Lord Leuerforth, Lord Henry Buckingham, Lord Mortimer, Lord Fitzhugh, Lord de la Ware, Lord Powes, Lord Scropen of Bolton, Lord Dudley, Lord Sturton, Lord Burgauency: Knights, Sir Peirce Aleigh, Sir William Stanley, Sir William Storis, Sir Thomas Mountgomery, Sir I. Canis, Sir Ralph Pigot, &c. to the number of fifty nine knights.

In the moneth of December, King Edward layd siege to the Castles of Bamburgh, Dunstanburgh and Alnewich, in the Castle of Bamburgh was the Duke of Somerset, the Earle of Penbroke, the Lord Roos, Ralph Percy, and 300. men. At the siege whereof, was the Earle of Worcester, the Earle of Arundale, the Lord Ogle, the Lord Mountague, and 1000. men: in the Castle of Dunstanburgh, was Sir Richard Tunstall, Thomas Findren, Doctor Morton and other with 120. men: and at the siege therof, the Lord Wenlocke, the Lord Hastings, and two other Lords, with 10000. men. The Castle of Alnewicke was held by three estates and 300. men. Against the which was in siege, the Earle of Warwick, the Earle of Kent, the L. Powes, the Baron of Greystocke, the Lord Cromwell, and 10000. men. Henry Beuford, Duke of Somerset, Sir Ralph Percy, and others yeelded Bamburgh on Christmas euen, and were taken to the Kings fauour. King Edward granted to the Duke of Somerset, 1000. markes by the yeere, whereof he was neuer payd, the Earle of Penbroke, Sir Thomas Findern, and others went into Scotland.

King Edward, kept his Christmas at Durham. And on Saint Johns day, Dunstanburgh was yeelded to King Edward. 1463.

On the twelfe euen, Pierce le Brasse, the great warriour of Normandy came to helpe the Queene Margaret, with Frenchmen, and 20000. Scots, to remoue King Edwards men from Alnewike siege, and the residue of other Castles there. By whose comming, King Edwards men were afraid of the Scots, as reculing from the siege, and the Scots afraid of Edwards men, left they had retired to bring them into a trap. And Henries men vsing out of ho much boldnesse, gaue Edwards men opportunity to enter into the Castle: on the morrow after the twelfe day, the Earle of Warwicke made 15. Knights: these three Castles were committed to, the keeping of Sir Ralph Grey. And after againe, King Henry with his Queene and their fellowship entred them and kept them. An. Reg. 3.

The 29. of Aprill, began a Parliament at Westminster, in the which was ordained that for the terme of three yeeres, there should no woolls be conueyed out of the Land, except those that were beyond the water of Esse, to the Staple of Calez, and there to be sold, the one halfe for Bolyon, and the other part for Argent content, and all that other remnant of the wills should remaine within the Land to make cloth of, and all Clothiers should make a broad cloth no shorter then 24. yards in length, and two full yards in breadth: also that no Wine Tunner in the Citie of London, should sell any Wine Galcoyne, white, claret, or red, aboue 8. pence the Gallon. Item, that no man or woman, vnder the estate of a Lord, or Lords children, weare any cloth of Gold, apparell wrought with Gold, furres of sable, &c. That no yeoman, or person vnder that degree, weare in their array for their bodies any bolsters of wooll, cotton, or other stuffe, or in their dublet any thing, saue lining, equall to the out side. That no person weare Gowne, Jaquet, or Cloake, but of such length, as the same man standing vpright, the same should cover his buttockes, nor any Taylor to stuffe or bolster any garment, or to make him shorter, or otherwise then was limited, &c. Also that no man weare shoes or boots, hauing pikes passing two inches in length, or Shoomaker to make them aboue that size, &c. Parliament. Statute against stuffed or bolstered garments, or short garments.

Shortly after, Queene Margaret obtained a great power of Scots, and other her friends, and so bringing her husband with her, and leauing her sonne called Prince Edward, in the Towne of Barwicke, entred Northumberland, take the Castle of Bamburgh, and stuffed it with Scottishmen, and made theroff Captaine Sir Ralph Grey, and came forward toward the Bishoprieke of Durham. Whereof when the Duke of Somerset vnderstood, hee without delay, reuolted from King Edward, and fled to King Henry, to likewise did Sir Ralph Percy, and many other of the Kings friends, but many followed King Henry, in hope to get spoyle, for his armie spent and spoiled Townes wheresoeuer they came. Parliament.

About midsommer, the Scots, with many French and Englishmen layd siege to the Castle of Norham, but were forced to leaue it as they found it. The Earle of Warwicke with the Towne of Barwicke, where hee made fiue Bannerets, and 22. Knights, and went into Scotland, where he burnt Lawghmaban, Jedworth and Galowey, and many other Townes, and returned to Barwicke.

This peere a quarter of Wheat was sold for two shillings at London, Barley for two and twentie pence, Peasle for three shillings foure pence, and Oats for 14 pence, and in the countrey of Norfolke, a quarter of Wheate was sold for 20. pence: Mault for 20 pence, Barley and Oats for 12. pence. 1464.

In the moneth of Aprill, King Edward made great preparation against King Henry, and on Saint Markes day, Ralph Percy, Lord Hungerford, with a great power, purposing to haue distressed Sir John Neuill, Lord Mountacute, was himselfe taine with many other. An. reg. 4. Battell at Yerham.

The 15. of May, King Henries power being at Yerham, the Lord Mountacute, with a power came thither, and inclosed them round about

bout. There were taken and slaine many Lords that were with King Henry, but his owne life was sed foure dates before into Lancashire, where he and others lived in Caues full hardly, vnknowne more then a yere. On Trinity Sunday, King Edward made the Lord Mountacute Earle of Northumberland, and warden of the Marches. The Earles of Warwicke and Northumberland, tooke Bamburgh Castle, and Sir Ralph Grey being taken in Bamburgh, for that he had sworne to be true to King Henry, was condemned, and had iudgement giuen vpon him by the Earle of Worcester, high Constable of England, as followeth.

Iudgement on Sir Ralph Grey.

Sir Ralph Grey, for thy treason, the King had ordained that thou shouldest haue had thy spurres taken off by the hard heeles, by the hand of the Maister Cooke, who is here ready to doe as was promised thee, at the time that thee twise off thy spurres, and said to thee, as is accustomed: That and thou be not true to thy Soueraigne Lord, hee shall smite off thy spurs with his knife, hard by the heeles, and so shewed him the Maister Cooke, ready to doe his office with his apron and his knife. Moreouer,

The order of disgracing of a Knight.

thou maiest see, the Kings of Armes, and Heralds, and thine owne proper Coat of Armes, which they should teare off thy body, and so shouldest thou as well be disgraded of thy worship, Nobles and Armes, as of thy order of Knight-hood. Also heere is another Coate of thine Armes reuersed, the which thou shouldest haue worne on thy body, going to thy death-wards, for that belonged to thee after the Law: notwithstanding the disgrading of knight-hood, and of thine Armes and Nobles, the King pardoneth that, for thy Noble Grand-father, who suffered trouble for the Kings most Noble predecessours. Now Sir Ralph Grey, this shall be thy penance: thou shalt goe on thy feete vnto the Tolwnes end, and there thou shalt be laid downe and drawne to a scaffold made for thee, and thou shalt haue thy head smitten off, thy body to be buryed in the Friers, thy head, where the Kings pleasure shall be. This iudgement was pronounced at Doncaster, against the said Ralph Grey, for rebelling, and keeping of the Castle of Bamburgh, against King Edward.

Neuill Earle of Northumberland, and Herbert, Earle of Penbroke.

After this, King Edward returned to Yorke, where in despight of the Earle of Northumberland, which then kept himselfe in the Realme of Scotland, he created Sir John Neuill, Lord Mountacute, Earle of Northumberland, and in reproofe of Iasper, Earle of Penbroke, hee created William, Lord Herbert, Earle of Penbroke: but after when the Earle of Northumberland was reconciled to his fauour, hee restored him to his possessions, name and dignity, and preferred the Lord Mountacute to the Title of Marquesse Mountacute, so that in degree, he was aboue his brother, the Earle of Warwicke, but in power and possessions farre vnder him.

The Earle of Warwicke was sent ouer into France, to demand the Lady Bona, daughter to Lewis, Duke of Sauoy, and sister to the Lady Carlot, then Queene of France, which Bona was then in the French Court. The Earle of Warwicke comming to the French King, as then being at Towers, was of him honorably receiued, and courteously entertained: his message was so well liked for the aduancement of the Lady Bona, that her sister, Queene Carlot, obtained both the good will of the King her husband, and also of her sister, the aforesaid Lady, so that the matrimony on that side, was clearely assented to, and the Earle of Dampmartine appointed with others to saple into England, for the full finishing of the same: but in the meane while, on the first of May, King Edward tooke to wife, Elizabeth, daughter to Iaquet, Duchesse of Bedford, sister to the Earle of S. Paul, late wife to Sir John Grey, slaine at Saint Albons field on King Henries part, which marriage was kept secret almost halfe a yeere.

King Edward married.

King Edward tooke the Chancelorship from the Bishop of Excester, brother to the Earle of Warwicke, and gaue it to the Bishop of Bathe.

In the moneth of May, the Duke of Somerset, the Lord Roos, the Lord Molyns, Talbois Earle of Eyme, Sir Philip Wentworth, Sir Thomas Finderne, gathered an hoste in the North-countrey, Sir Iohn Neuill, Earle of Northumberland, with 10000. men came vpon them, whom the commons forsaking, their Captaines were taken and beheaded. King Edward fearing the Lord Mountacute, whom he had of late made Earle of Northumberland, he caused the men of the Countrey to desire the rightfull heyre, Percy, sonne to Henry, that was slaine at Yorke field: and so Percy was restored, and Mountacute was made a Marquesse, and his sonne, Duke of Bedford, which should wed the kings eldest daughter, and so by possibility should be King of England, thus was hee fed with faire words, but nothing performed. About Michaelmas, the King held a Councell at Reding, where the Queene was shewed openly, and receiued as Queene. After this wedding knowne, the Earle of Warwick and King Edward were neuer friends.

Duke of Somerset and others beheaded.

Earle of Northumberland made Marquesse Mountacute.

The Minster of Yorke, the Steeple of Chiltern Church in Notwich, part of the Priory of Chiltern-Church in London, the Steeple of Saint Mary Spittle at London, with the Cloyster, were burnt this yeere.

Minster of Yorke burned.

This yere the 22. of January, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein it was enacted, that no merchandize comming out of Flanders, or out of any Land of the Duke of Burgoyne, should be sold within any ground of England. Also King Edward caused a new coyne to be made, whereby hee gained much, for hee made of an old noble a royall, which he commanded to goe for 10.s. neuertheless, to the same royall was put 8.d. of alay, and so wriged the more by 8.d. being smitten with a new stampe: he likewise made halfe angells of 5.s. and farthings of 2.s. 6.d. angelets of 6.s. 8.d.

8.d. and halfe angells, 3.s. 4.d. hee made siluer monies, of 3.d. a groat, and so of other coynes after that rate, to the great harme of the commons. I finde by record, that William, Lord Hastings, the Kings Chamberlaine was made Master of the Kings Mints, of Monies of gold or siluer in the Tower of London, his Realme of England, Territary of Ireland, and Towne of Caleis, with the Marches of the same: the which Lord Hastings vndertooke to make the same monies vnder forme following, to wit, of gold, a piece for 8. shillings 4. pence sterling which should be called a noble of gold, of the which there should be 50. such pieces in the pound weight of the Tower, another piece of gold 4. shillings 2. pence of sterlings, and to be of them 100. such pieces in the pound: and a third piece of gold weighing the fourth part of the first, for two shillings one peny sterlings, and 200. such pieces in the pound, and euery pound weight of the said Tower, to be worth 20. pound, 16. shillings 8. pence of sterlings, the which should be 23. Carets, 3. graines, and halfe fine, &c. And for siluer 37. shillings 6. pence of sterlings, the piece of foure pence to be 112. groates, and 2. pence in the pound weight, &c. Thus much out of the Record.

Sheep transported ouer Sea.

King Edward concluded an amity and league with King Henry of Castill, and Iohn, King of Aragon, at the concluding whereof, hee procured licence for certaine Cotelswold sheepe to be transported into the countrey of Spaine, which haue there since mightily increased and multiplyed to the Spainsh profit, as it is said: but true it it, that long ere this were sheepe in Spaine, as may appeare by a pattent of King Henry the second: the 31. of his raigne, granted to the Weauers of London, that if any cloth were found to be made of Spanish wooll, mixed with English wooll, the Maior of London should see it burnt.

Besides this, to haue amity with his next neighbour, the King of Scots, hee winked at the losse of Barwicke, and was contented to take a truce for 15. yeeres.

1568. The 11. of February, Queene Elizabeth was deliuered at Westminster of a daughter, also named Elizabeth, who was long after married to King Henry the 7th whose Christning was done in the Abbey with the most solemnity that might be, and more, because the King was assured by his Phisician, that the Queene was conceiued with a prince, which prooued otherwise as yee haue heard.

An. reg. 6. Hungerford and Courtney executed.

This yere was the Lord Hungerford, Sir Thomas Hungerford knight, sonne to the Lord Hungerford, and Henry Courtney of right, Earle of Deuonshire beheaded at Salisbury. The Lord Stafford of Southwike procured the said Courteyes death, to be made Earle of Deuonshire, as indeed he was shortly after.

1467. King Edward, through the refusall of the French Kings sister in law (as yee haue heard) wan him enemies in France, whereforce in other places he procured him friends, but those friends had stand him in small stead, if Fortune had not holpen him to another, euen at his elbow. This was Charles, Earle of Carrolois, sonne and heyre apparant vnto Philip, Duke of Burgoygne, which Charles being then a widower, was counselled to be a futor vnto King Edward, to haue in marriage the Lady Margaret, sister to the same King, a Lady of excellent beauty, and thought not vnworthy to match with the greatest Prince in the world.

An. reg. 7.

Anthony, the Bastard of Burgoyne, called the Earle of the Roch, brother to the said Earle Carroloys, a man of great wit, corrage, and valiancy, was appointed by his father, Duke Philip, to goe into England in embassage about this ate, who being furnished for his estate, hauing in his company Gentlemen, and other expert in all feats of chiualry, and martiall prowesse, to the number of 400. Horses, tooke ship, and arriued in England, where hee was of the King and Nobles honourably receiued. His message being declared, was forfully heard of the King, the which by that affinity saw how they might be assured of a buckler against the French: the King therefore granted

Knights of the Bathe.

In the Ascension day, King Edward made 48. Knights of the Bathe within the Tower of London, amongst the which, was of that company Sir Thomas Cooke, Sir Mathew Philip, and Ralph Ioceline, and Sir Henry Vauer, Citizens of London made Knights: and vpon the 26. of May, Queene Elizabeth was crowned at Westminster with a great solemnity: her Father also was created Earle Riuers, and made high Constable of England: her brother, Lord Anthony, was married to the sole heyre of Thomas, Lord Scales, Sir Thomas Grey, sonne to Sir Iohn Grey, the Queenes first husband, was created Marques Dorset, and married to Cicely, heire to the Lord Bonuile.

Queene Elizabeth crowned.

King Henry taken.

King Henry was taken in Clitherwood, beside Bungerly Hyppingstons in Lancashire, by Thomas Talbot, sonne and heyre to Sir Edward Talbot of Bathall, and Iohn Talbot his cousin of Colebye, which deceiued him being at his dinner at Wadington Hall, and brought him towards London with his legges bound to the stirrops, where he was met by the Earle of Warwicke, and arrested at Elsydon, and forthwith his gilt spurres were taken from his feete: Doctor Manning, Deane of Windsor, Doctor Bedle, and young Ellerton, being in his company, with their feete bound vnder the horse bellies were brought through the City to the Tower of London, where the King was kept long time.

Long piked shoes forbid.

It was proclaimed throughout England, that the beakes, or pikes of shoone, or boots, should not passe two inches, vpon paine of curling by the Clergy, and forfeiting 20.s. to be payd, one noble to the King, another to the Cotwainers of London, and the third to the Chamber of London. And for other Cities and Townes the like order was taken. Before this time, and since the yere of our Lord, 1382. the pikes of shoes and boots were of such length, that they were faine to be tyed vp to their knees with chaines of siluer, gilt, or at the least with like laces.

granted to the Baſtards requeſt, and the ſaid Baſtard openly in the Kings great Chamber, contracted the Lady Margaret, for and in the name of his brother, the Earle of Charoloys.

Baron Mountioy. Walter Blunt made Baron, and Lord Mountioy.

Parliament at Weſtminſter. The third of June, began a Parliament at Weſtminſter, wherein was returned to the Kings hands, all manner of gifts that had beene given from the firſt day, hee tooke poſſeſſion of the Realme, to that time, except certaine things then excepted, this patterit is dated in the 5th yeere of this Edward.

Lib. Eriſwicke. Alſo this yeere in diuers places of England many men were arreſted, and treaſon furniſhed againſt them, where through many of them were put to death, and the other eſcaped for great ſummes of money: amongſt the which, Sir T. Cooke, Sir Iohn Plumer, Knights, Humfrey Heyford, and other Aldermen of London were arreſted, and charged with treaſon, whereof they were acquite, but they loſt all their goods to the King, to the value of 4000. markes, or more, as ſome haue written: and for example, the forenamed Sir Thomas Cooke, late Maior of London, was by one named Hawkins, appeached of treaſon, for the which he was committed to the Tower of London, his place in London ſeiſed by the Lord Riuers, and his Lady and ſeruants clearely put out thereof. The cauſe was this: the forenamed Hawkins, came vpon a ſeaſon vnto the ſaid Sir Thomas, requeſting to lend him 1000. markes vpon good ſurety, whereunpon hee anſwered, that hee would firſt know for whom it ſhould be, and for what intent: at length vnderſtanding it ſhould be for the vſe of Queene Margaret, hee anſwered, he had no current wares wherof any thrift might be made without too much loſſe, and therefore required Hawkins to moue him no further, for hee intended not to deale withall, yet the ſaid Hawkins required but one hundred pound at laſt, and went without it, or the value of one penny, and neuer came againe to moue him, which ſo reſted two or three yeeres after, till the ſaid Hawkins was caſt in the Tower, and at length brought to the bake, called the Duke of Cyrceſters daughter (becauſe ſhee was the deuiſer of that torture) by meanes of which paine, hee ſhewed many things, among the which, the motion he had made to Sir Thomas Cooke was one, by meanes whereof, Sir Thomas Cooke was troubled as you haue heard, and one Iury: by meanes of Sir Iohn Fogge, indited him of treaſon: after which, an Oyer determiner was kept in the Guild-hall, in which ſate with the Maior, the Duke of Clarence, the Earle of Warwicke, the Lord Riuers, Sir Iohn Fogge with other of the Kings Councell, to the which place, the ſaid Sir Thomas was brought, and there arreigned vpon life and death, whereof hee was acquited of the ſaid indictement, and ſent to the Counter in Breadſtreet, and from thence to the Kings Bench: being acquited, his wife got againe poſſeſſion of his Houſe, the which ſhee found in an euill plight: for the ſeruants to Sir Iohn Fogge, and the Lord Riuers, had made hauocke of what they liſted. Alſo at his place of Giddy-hall in Eſſex, another ſort had deſtroyed the Deere in his Parke, his Conies and fiſh, and ſpared not halfe, pewter, bedding, and all what they might carry: for the which might neuer one penny be gotten in recompence, nor Sir Thomas Cooke be deliuered, till hee had payed 8000. to the King, and 800. pound to the Queene, and for that Sir Iohn Markham, Knight, chiefe Iuſtice of the pleas, determined ſomewhat againſt the Kings pleaſure (that the offence done by Sir Thomas Cook was no treaſon, but miſpriſion, the which was no deſert of death, but to be fined at the Kings pleaſure) the Lord Riuers and the Dutcheſs of Bedford his wife, procured that hee loſt his Office afterward in the twelfth yeere of Edward the fourth.

Lord chiefe Iuſtice loſt his Office for doing iuſtice.

The marriage afozeſaid concluded, the Baſtard of Burgoyne challenged the Lord Scales, brother to the Queene, to fight with him, both on Hoyſe-backe and on foote: which challenge the Lord Scales gladly accepted, the King cauſing liſts to be prepared in Well Smithfield of London for theſe Champions, the length of 120. Tailers yards, and tenne foote: and in breadth eighty yards and ten foote, double barred, fiue foote betweene the barres, the Timber and worke-manſhip whereof coſt two hundred marks, beſides faire and coſtly galeries for the Ladies and other. At the which martiall enterpriſe, King Edward himſelfe with his Nobility was preſent. The firſt day being the Thurſday next after *Corpus Chriſti* day, they came together with ſharpe Speares, and departed with equall honour. The next day they tinted on Hoyſe-backe, the Lord Scales Hoyſe had on his chafron a long ſharpe pike of ſteele, and as the two Champions coaped together, the ſame Hoyſe thruſt his pike into the noſtrills of the Baſtards Hoyſe, ſo that for very paine, hee mounted ſo high, that he fell on the one ſide with his maſter, and the Lord Scales rode about him with his ſword drawne in his hand, till the King commanded the Marſhall to helpe vp the Baſtard, who openly ſaid, I cannot holde mee by the clouds; for though my Hoyſe faile mee, I will not faile my incounter-companion, but the King would not ſuffer them to doe any more that day. The next morrow, the two Noble men came into the field on foote, with two polaxes, and fought valiantly, but at the laſt, the point of the poll-axe of the Lord Scales, happened to enter into the ſight of the Baſtards helme, and by fine force, might haue plucked him on his knees: but the King ſuddenly caſt downe his warder, and then the Marſhall ſeuered them. The Baſtard not content with this chance, required the King of Iuſtice, that hee might performe his enterprize: the Lord Scales refuſed not: but the King calling to him the Conſtable and the Marſhall, with the Officers at Armes, after conſultation had, it was declared for a ſentence definitiue, by the Duke of Clarence then Conſtable of England, and the Duke of Norfolke then Marſhall, that if hee would goe forward with his attempted chalenge, hee muſt by the law of armes, be deliuered to his aduerſary, in the ſame ſtate and like condition, as he ſtood when hee was taken from him. The Baſtard hearing this iudgement, doubted the ſequele of the matter, and ſo relinquiſhed his chalenge. Other chalenges were done, and baliantly atchieued by Engliſh-men, which I paſſe ouer. Shortly after came ſorowfull tydings to the Baſtard, that his Father, Duke Philip, was dead, and therevpon taking his leaue of King Edward, and his ſiſter, the new Dutcheſſe of Burgoyne liberally rewarded, returned to his brother, the new Duke. This yeere, diuers perſons being common Iurors, ſuch as at Aſſiſes, were ſworne for rewards, or fauour of parties, were iudged to ride from Newgate, to the Pillory in Cornehill, with writers of paper on their heads, and then againe to Newgate: and this iudgement was giuen by the Maior of London.

Iuſtices in Smithfield.

1468. Falſe Iurors ſet on the pillory.

An. Reg. 8. Charles, Duke of Burgoyne, deſirous to ſee his new wife, wrote to King Edward, requiring him to ſend his ſiſter ouer vnto him, according to the couenants paſſed betweene them.

King Edward on the other ſide, not ſlacking the matter, firſt called a Parliament, which began at Weſtminſter on the eyghth of May, wherein was granted two fifteenes and a diſmy.

Parliament at Weſtminſter.

Lady Margarete the Kings ſiſter, marries to the Duke of Burgoyne.

The 18. of June, Margaret, ſiſter to King Edward the fourth, begunne her iourney from the Mandeuile in London, toward her marriage with Charles, Duke of Burgoyngne: firſt ſhee offered in the Church of Saint Paul, and then rode through the Citty, the Earle of Warwicke riding before her, with Earles and Barons a great number, the Dutcheſſe of Norfolke, with other Ladies and Gentle-women in great number. And after entry into Cheape, the Maior of London and his brethren the Aldermen, preſented her with a paire of rich Baſons, and in them an hundred pound in gold, and that night ſhe lodged in the Abbey of Stratford, where the King then lay: from thence ſhe tooke her iourney to Canterbury. The King riding after to ſee her ſhipping, on the firſt of July, ſhee tooke the Sea at Margate, and there tooke leaue of the King her brother, and departed. There returned backe againe with the King, the Duke of Clarence, the Duke of Glocester, the Earles of Warwicke, Shrewſbury, and Northumberland. And there abode with her in the Ship, the Lord Scales, the L. Dacres her Chamberlaine, Sir Iohn Woodvile, Sir Iohn Howard, and many other famous Knights and Eſquires: ſhee was ſhipped in the new Ellen of London, and in her Nauy, the Iohn of Newcaſtle, the Mary of Saliſbury, and many other royall ſhips, and on the morrow landed at Sluce in Flanders, and as ſoone as her ſhip, and company of ſhips were entred into the Hauen, there receiued her, Sir Simon de Lelein, and the water-Baily, in diuers boats and barkes apparelled ready for her landing. The firſt eſtate that received her, was the Biſhop of Vtright well accompanied, and the Counteſſe of Shoyne, Baſtard daughter to Duke Philip, of Burgoyngne, and with her many Ladies and Gentle-women, and ſo proceeding in at the gate of the Towne, the ſame Towne was preſented to her, ſhe to be Soueraigne Lady thereof: alſo they gaue her twelue marks of Gold Troy-weyght, the which was 200. pound of Engliſh mony, and ſo ſhee proceeded throw the Towne to her lodging, euery houſholder ſtanding in the ſtreet with a Torch in his hand burning.

On the morrow, the old Dutcheſſe of Burgoigne came to her, accompanyed with many great eſtates. On the third of July, came the Duke of Burgoyngne to Sluce, with 20. perſons ſeructly, and was there openly affianced to the Lady Margaret, by the Biſhop of Saliſbury, and the Lord Scales, in preſence of the Lord Dacre, the Dutcheſſe of Norfolke, the Lady Scales, and all the Knights, Eſquires, and Gentlewomen enuironing the chamber.

On 8. of July, being Saturday, by the Duke of Burgoygnes appointment, the Lady Margaret removed by water to the Dame. And on the Sunday in the morning, betwixt 5. and 6. of the clock, the marriage was ſolemnized betwixt them, by the Biſhops of Saliſbury, and of Turney, there being preſent the old Dutcheſſe of Burgoign, the Lord Scales, the Lord Dacre, with the Knights, Eſquires, Ladies and Gentlewomen that came out of England: the great tryumphs, feaſtings, ſhewes of pageant, with other ſtrange deuices and inckings, were ſuch as I haue not read the like, and would be ouer long in this place to ſet downe.

In the end of Auguſt, the Caſtle of Harlow was wonne by aſſault of the Lord Herbert, the which Caſtle was one of the ſtrongeſt holds in Wales.

Harlow Caſtle wonne.

This yeere, many murmurous tales ranne in the City, betwixt the Earle of Warwicke, and the Queenes blood, the which Earle was euer had in great fauour of the commons of this Land, by reaſon of the orderly houſhold which hee daily kept in all Countries where euer he ſoiourned, or lay: and when hee came to London, he held ſuch an houſe, that fire Oren his houſe were eaten at a breakefaſt, and euery Tauerne was full of his meate, for who that had any acquaintance in that houſe, he ſhould haue had as much ſodden and roſt, as he might carry vpon a long dagger.

Earle of Warwicke Oren his houſe keeping. Ro. Fabian

This Duke of Clarence went to Caleis, and there wedded Iſabell, one of the daughters of the Earle of Warwicke, Sir Iohn Coniers, Knight, Robert Hilliard, who named himſelfe Robin of Riddale, and other, gathered an hoſt of 2000. men in the North, againſt whom King Edward ſent Wil. Herbert, late made Earle of Penbrooke, with 1800. Welſh-men, and Humfrey Stafford of Southwike, late made Earle of Deuonſhire, with 6000. good Archers, which two Earles falling out for lodging in the Towne of Banbery, Humfrey Stafford departed with his power, whereby Wil. Herbert

1469. Robert of Riddale. *An. reg. 9.*

and Rich. Herbert his brother were ouercome and taken by them of the North, and 5000 (saith Hall) of the Welshmen slaine in a plaine called Danes Moze, neere to the Towne of Edgecote, three miles from Banbery, the 26. of July. The men of name slaine of the Welsh party, were Sir Roger Vaughan Knight, Henry ap Morgan, T. ap Richard Vaughan Esquire, Wil. Herbert of Brecknocke, Esquire, Watkin Thomas, sonne to Roger Vaughan, Ivan ap Iohn, ap Meridick, Dauy ap Iankin, ap Limorick, Harrisdon, ap Pikton, Iohn Done of Kidwelly, Rice, ap Morgan, ap Vilton, Iankin Perot ap Scotes Burg, Iohn Euerad of Penbroke-shire, Iohn Courtor of Hereford. The Northerne men of name slaine, were Sir Henry Latimer, sonne and heyre to the Lord Latimer, Sir Roger Pigot, Knight, Iames Coniers, sonne and heyre to Sir Iohn Coniers, Knight, Oliuer Audley Esquire, Thomas Wakes, sonne and heyre to William Mallery, Esquire: Richard Wooduile, Lord Riuers, with Iohn his sonne, were taken in the Forest of Deane, and brought to Northampton, where they with Sir Wil. Herbert, and Richard his brother, were all foure beheaded by the commandement of George, Duke of Clarence, and the Earle of Warwick. Thomas Herbert was slaine at Bristow. Thomas Strafford was by the Commens taken at Bridgewater, and beheaded. King Edward was taken at Winey, a village besides Northampton, by the Archbishop of Yorke, and brought to Warwicke Castle, and thence to Yorke, he was also prisoner in Pidlan Castle, from whence by faire promises hee escaped and came to London.

Edgecot field neere call'd Banbery field.

King Edward taken prisoner.

The 29. of September, Humfrey Neuill, Knight, and Charles his brother were taken by the Earle of Warwicke, and beheaded at Yorke, King Edward being present. In the moneth of March, the Lord Willoughby, Richard, Lord Wells, Sir Robert, his sonne, Sir Thomas Delaband, Sir T. Dimocke, the Kings Champion, o2aue out of Lincolnshire, Sir Thomas Burgh, a Knight of the Kings house, pulled downe his place, and tooke all his goods and cattell, and with 30000. of the commons cryed King Henry. King Edward gaue Lord Wells his pardon, and sent for him, and hauing him in custody, commanded him vpon paine of death, to cause the Lincolnshire men to lay downe their holt, and so he wrote, but all in vaine: whereupon the Lord Wells his head was cut off. King Edward dispersed the Lincolnshiremen, by vertue of his ordinance, and slew many of them; Sir Robert Wells, Sir Thomas Delaband, and Sir Thomas Dimocke were taken and beheaded beside Stamford, the 13. of March: and the 19. day, the Lord Willoughby was beheaded at Pontefret.

1470.

Ann. reg. 10. King Edward pardoneth and beheadeth the Lord Wells.

King Edward comming to Hampton, caused Iohn Tiptoft, Earle of Worcester (and Constable of England for reame of his life) to sit in iudgement vpon Clapham, and other Gentlemen taken in the ships, at a skirmish of Southampton, where to the number of twenty persons, Gentlemen and Yeomen were drawne, hanged, and headed: and after hanged by the legs on a Gallowes, of a paire of Buts length, and then hauing stakes put in their fundaments, their heads were set on those stakes, (an horrible spectacle) and so suffered to hang a long time after, to wit, till the 15. of May.

Tiptoft, Earle of Worcester cruell.

The Duke of Clarence, and the Earle of Warwicke, fled into France, where they made a marriage betwixt Prince Edward, Sonne to King Henry the first, and one of the Earle of Warwickes daughters. At this marriage was concluded, that King Henry should raigne againe, and Prince Edward after, and for lacke of their heyres, George, Duke of Clarence, and his heyres, &c.

George, Duke of Clarence, and the Earle of Warwicke fled into France.

The 13. day of September, George, Duke of Clarence, Iasper, Earle of Penbroke, Richard, Earle of Warwicke, the Earle of Oxford, with the Bastard Fauconbridge, and many other arrised at Plimouth, and another fort at Dartmouth, of whom, the Earle of Penbroke went into Wales, the other toward Exceter, proclaiming in the name of King Henry, that all men betwixt the ages of 16. and 60. should be ready to assist the said Lords, on the behalfe of King Henry, against King Edward. Also on the Sunday next after the feast of S. Michael the Archangell, Doctor Godard preaching at Pauls Crosse, declared by the reading of bills, and diuers other arguments and proues, that Henry was true and lawfull King of England, and not King Edward. Moreouer, the Marquesse Mountacute, who had gathered six thousand men in King Edwards name, and was come neere vnto the said Edward: hee told them how King Edward had serued him: first, making him Earle of Northumberland, and after giuing the same Earledome to Thomas Percy, made him Marques Mountacute, allowing him a Pies nest to maintaine it withall: wherefore he would leaue to serue him, and take part with the Earle of Warwick his brother. Whereof when King Edward vnderstood, he fled from his host, besides Nottingham, and the third day of October, he with the Lord Riuers, Lord Hastings his Chamberlaine, the Lord Say, and other, to the number of seuen or eight Earles, tooke shipping at Lin, and sayled toward the Duke of Burgoigne his brother in Law.

George, Duke of Clarence and other Plimouth.

Doctor Godard preached at Pauls Crosse against King Edward.

King Edward fled beyond the Seas. Phil. Comines.

The Queene had before that, to wit on the first of October, stolne secretly in the night out of the Tower of London by water to Westminster, and there taken sanctuary. This time was great watch kept in the City of London for the Gentlemen had assembled themselues in great companies, and so had come to the outer part of the City, as to Ratcliffe, Saint Katherens, Southwarke and other the suburbs, and many of them were entred the City, where they robbed the Flemmings at Blanchapleton, and other places, making them to flye out of the Citie with sorrow enough.

The Queene tooke sanctuary at Westminster. Kentish men robbed the Flemmings, and chased them out of London.

On Wednesday following, the Tower of London was yeelded to the Maior and his Brethren the Aldermen, who forthwith entred the same, and deliuered King Henry of his imprisonment, and lodged him in the

The Tower yeelded to the Maior of London.

Kings lodging. On the Friday following, came to London the Archbishop of Yorke, brother to the Earle of Warwicke, the Lo2 Prior of Saint Johns, and other, to the number of two thousand men of armes. On the morrow following, came the Duke of Clarence, the Earle of Warwicke, the Bastard Fauconbridge, with other, to the number of 4000. men. On the first day of October, the Duke of Clarence, the Earle of Warwicke, the Archbishop of Yorke, the Lo2d of Saint Johns, with other, entred the Tower of London, and King Henry being there prisoner nigh the space of nine yeeres, they elected him to be their lawfull King, and forthwith rode with him through London to the Bishops Palace, where he rested till the 13. of October, on which day he went a procession crowned in Pauls Church: the Earle of Warwicke bare his traine, and the Earle of Oxford his sword, &c.

George, Duke of Clarence and other landed at Plimouth.

George, D. of Clarence, the Earle of Warwicke and other receiued King Henry.

King Edward was proclaimed vsurper of the Crowne, and Iohn Tiptoft, Earle of Worcester, being found in the top of an high tree, in the Forrest of Waibridge, in the County of Huntingdon, was brought to London, at Parliament arrested and condemned to death by Sir Iohn Vere, Earle of Oxford, and beheaded at the Tower-hill, and after buried at the Blacke-Friers.

Doctor Godard preached at Pauls Crosse against King Edward.

1471. Prince Edward borne in the Sanctuary.

Queene Elizabeth, wife to Edward the fourth, bring in the Sanctuary at Westminster, was deliuered of a Prince on the fourth of Nouember, who was after King Edward the fift.

King Edward, with the Lord Hastings, the Lord Say, and nine hundred Englishmen, and three hundred Flemmings, would haue landed in Essex, but there the Earle of Oxfords brother put them off, and after hee landed fo2e weather-beaten at Rauenspoine, within Humber on Holdernesse, and there rose on him Holdernesse men, whose Captaine was Sir Iohn Westerdale a Priest, after cast into the Marshallsea, at London. As King Edward passed the Countrey, he shewed the Earle of Northumberlands Letters and Seales, that sent fo2 him, saying, that hee came to claime no Title of the Crown but onely his Dukedome of Yorke, nor would not haue done else, but at the crying of the Earle of Warwicke, and cryed in euery place, King Henry and Prince Edward, wearing a Ostrich feather, Prince Edwards liuery. King Edward came to Nottingham, where Sir William Stanley, Sir William Norris, and diuers others brought him men, so that he had then 4000. o2 more. Then Edward marched toward Leycester, where the Earle of Warwicke, and Marquesse Mountacute, had 4000. men, and would haue fought with King Edward, but that he had receiued letters from the Duke of Clarence, that hee would not fight vntill hee came. Whereupon hee keeping Leycester still, suffered Edward to march toward London. A little out of Warwicke the Duke of Clarence with seuen thousand men meeting with King Edward agreed to him, and brake all the promises made in France. King Edward comming to London, by Master Vrswike the Recorders meanes, and others, entred into the Bishop of Londons Palace, by aposteame, and there tooke King Henry, and the Archbishop of Yorke, and sent them both to the Tower on Saunct Dunstan's day.

King Edward landed at Rauenspoine.

Annal. 11.

Edward the fourth landed at Rauenspoine.

George of Clarence agreed with his brother, Edward the fourth.

King Henry sent to the Tower again.

The Earle of Warwicke, the Duke of Exceter, Marquesse Mountacute, and the Earle of Oxford, with many Knights, came with their hoste toward Barnet: wherefore King Edward tooke King Henry with him, and possessed the Towne of Barnet at the North, the Earle of Warwicke and his retinue remained on the plaine without the Towne hosting gunnes one at the other. And in the morning being Easterday, and the 14. of April, they fought in a thicke mist, from foure of the clocke in the morning till ten, and diuers times the Earle of Warwickes men supposed that they had got the victory of the field, but it happened that the Earle of Oxfords men had a Starwith streames, both before and behinde on their liuerice, and King Edwards men had the Sunne, with streames on their liuery: whereupon the Earle of Warwicks men, by reason of the mist, not well discerning the badges so like, shot at the Earle of Oxfords men, that were on their owne part, and then the Earle of Oxford and his men, cryed treason, and fled with eight hundred men. The Marquesse Mountacute was priuily agreed with King Edward, and had gotten on his liuery, but one of his brothers, the Earle of Warwickes men espying this, fell vpon him and killed him.

Barnet field.

John Rastall.

The Earle of Warwicke seeing his brother dead, and the Earle of Oxford fled, leapt on a horse to flye, and comming to a woode where was no passage, two of King Edwards men came to him, killed him, and spoyled him to the naked skinne, Sir William Tyrrell, Knight, was killed on the Earle of Warwickes part. The Duke of Exceter fought manfully, and was disparcled, wounded, and left for dead, from seuen in the morning, till foure of the clocke in the after-noone, and then being brought to a seruants house of his thereby, called Ruchland, he had a Chirurgion, and after was conueyed into Westminster Sanctuary. There were slaine on King Edwards part: Humfrey Bourcher, Lord Cromwell, Henry Bourcher, sonne and heyre to the Lord, Barons both, buried at Westminster, Sir Iohn Lisle was there slaine, also Thomas a Par, and Iohn Milwarer Esquires to Richard Duke of Glocester, were there slaine: and on both parts, to the number of foure thousand, which were buried on the same plaine, halfe a mile from Barnet, where after a Chappell was builded in memory of them, but it is now a dwelling house, the top quarters remaine yet.

The morrow after Easter day, were the bodies of the Earle of Warwick and the Marques Mountacute, laid naked in Pauls Church in London, that all men might see them fo2 the space of three o2 foure dates, and then buried at William Priory in Barkshire; the Lord Barners

was reuerently buried in the friers Augustines Church at London. King Henry, with the Archbishop of Yorke, were sent to the Towser of London.

Earrell of Pembrokeshire beheaded.

At this time Queene Margaret, and Prince Edward her sonne had lien on the sea 17. dates letted with foule weather, and on Easter day at euen, they landed with their French Nauy at Weymouth, and so came to Exceter, from thence to Tewkesbury, and pitched their field by Seuerne. Edward the fourth being come from London, fought with Prince Edward at Tewkesbury on the fourth of May, tooke Queene Margaret prisoner, with Prince Edward her sonne, whom cruelly hee smote on the face with his Gauntlet, and after his seruants slew him. Edmond, Duke of Somerset, and Sir Hugh Courtney, fled from Prince Edward, and lost him the field. There was slaine Courtney, Earle of Deuonshire, Lord, John of Somerset, Lord Wenlocke, Sir Edmond Hamden, Sir William Whittingham, Sir William Vaus, Sir Nicholas Hartuy, Sir John Delues, Sir William Filding, Sir John Lukenore, Sir William Lirmonth, Sir John Venam, Sir T. Seamer, Sir W. Rowse, Sir Thomas Henree. King Edward entering a Church in Tewkesbury with his sword drawne, a Priest brought the Sacrament against him, and would not let him enter, vntill he had granted his pardon, to these that follow: Edmond, Duke of Somerset, John Bough, Strother, Lord of Saint Johns, Sir Humfrey Audley, Sir Gerus of Clifton, Sir William Grimsby, Sir William Cary, Sir Henry Rose, Sir Thomas Tresham, Sir William Newbrough, Knights, Henry Tresham, Walter Courtney, John Fiory, Lewis Miles, Robert Jackson, James Gower: Sword-bearers to Prince Edward, James Delues, sonne and heyre to Sir John Delues: all these, where they might haue escaped, tarried in the Church (trusting in the Kings pardon) from Saturday, till Sunday, when they were taken out and beheaded.

King Edward granted pardon to many, and after cut off their heads.

About this time, Sir Walter Wrottile, and Sir Geffery Gates, Knights, gouernours of Calais, sent Sir George Broke, Knight, from Calais with 300. souldiers, to Thomas the Bastard Fauconbridge, Captaine of the Carle of Warwickes Nauy, willing him to raise the County of Kent, and to goe to London, there to take King Henry out of the Towser, and then to goe against King Edward.

Thomas the Bastard.

The fourteenth day of May, Thomas, the Bastard, with a riotous company of ship-men, and other of Essex and Kent, came to London, where, being denied passage through the Citty, he set vpon Bishops gate, Aldgate, London-bridge, &c. along the Thames side, shooting arrowes and gunnes into the Citty, fired the suburbes, and burnt more then 60. houses, wanne the Bulwarkes at Aldgate, and entred the Citty, but the port-close being let downe, such as had entred were slaine, and then the Citizens pursued the rest so far as Stratford and Blackwall, slaying many, and take many prisoners. Thomas the Bastard went from London Westward, as farre as Kingstone vpon Thames, to prosecute King Edward, but the L. Scales, with Nicholas Faunt, Maior of Canterbury, by fayre words, caused Fauconbridge to returne to Blackheath on Kent, from whence in the night hee stale from the hoste, with 600. horse-men to Rochester, and so to Sandwich, where he abode the Kings comming.

The 21. of May, King Edward came to London, with thirty thousand men: and the same night, King Henry was murthered in the Tower of London: On the morrow, hee was brought through Cornhill, from the Tower with a great company of men, bearing weapons as they should haue led him to some place of execution, to Saint Pauls Church in London, in an open coffin bare faced, where he lied: thence he was carried to the Black Friers, and there lied: and thence to Chersey Abbey in a boat, where he was then buried, but since by King Richard the third, in the second yeere of his raigne, removed to Windsor where hee was buried without the Chancell, at the South doze of the Quire of Windsore Chappell, where he was worshipped by the name of holy King Henry: whose red hat of Velure, was thought to heale the head-ach of such as should put it on their heads: there he rested for a time, but now his Tombe being taken thence, it is not (commonly) knowne what is become of his body.

King Henry murthered.

Thus ended the King his transitorie life, hauing enioyed as great prosperity, as fauourable fortune could afford, and as great troubles on the other side, as this frowning could powze out: yet in both states hee was patient, and vertuous, that hee may be a patterne of most perfect vertue, as hee was a worthy example of fortunes inconstancy: hee was plaine, vpright, farre from fraud, wholy given to prayer, reading of Scriptures and almes-deedes, of such integrity of life, that the Bishop which had beene his confessor tenne yeere, auouched, that he had not all that time committed any mortall crime: So continent, as suspition of bnchast life neuer touched him: and hauing in Chastlemalle a shew of young women with their bare breasts laid out, presented before him, hee immediately departed, with these words, fie, fie, for shame, forsooth you be to blame: before his marriage, hee liked not that women should enter into his Court, and for this respect, hee committed his two vncles by his mothers side, Iasper and Edmond, to most honest and vertuous Prelates to be brought vp. So farre hee was from couetousnesse, that when the executors of his Vncle, the Bishop of Winchester, surnamed the Rich Cardinall, would haue giuen to him two thousand pound, hee plainely refused it, willing them to discharge the will of the departed, and would scarce condescendat length, to accept the same summe of money toward the endowing of his Colledges in Cambridge and Eaton: he was so religiously affected (as the time then was) that on principall Holydates, he would weare sacke-cloth next his skin. Oath, he vsed none, but in most earnest matters these words: Forsooth, and forsooth; for he was so pitifull, that when comming from S. Albons, he

Henry the first not couetous.

Henry Bewford, Cardinall gaue 1000 pound toward the Colledges.

Henry the first his oath.

Pitifulnesse and patience of Henry the first.

hee saw the quarter of a Traytour against his crowne ouer Cripplegate, he willed it to be taken away, with these words, I will not haue any Christian so cruelly handled for my sake; many great offences hee willingly pardoned, and receiuing at a time a great blow by a wicked man, which compassed his death, hee onely saide, forsooth, forsooth, yee foule to smite a King anopnted so. Another also which thrust him in the 4de with a sword, when hee was prisoner in the Tower, was by him pardoned, when hee was restored to his Kate and kingdome: not long before his death being demanded wherefore hee had so long held the Crowne of England vniustly, hee replyed, My Father was King of England, quietly enioying the Crowne all his raigne, and his Father, my Grandsire was also King of England, and I, euen a childe in my cradle, was proclaimed, and crowned King without any interruption, and so held it forty yeeres well neere, all the States doing homage vnto me, as to my Auncestors: wherefore I may say with King Danid: The lot is faine vnto me in a fayre ground, yea, I haue a goodly heritage, my helpe is from the Lord, which saueth the vpright in heart. Hee raigned eyght and thirty yeeres, six moneths, and odde dayes. After this redemption of the Crowne six moneths; he lined 52. yeeres, hauing by his wife one onely Sonne, called Edward, Prince of Wales, descended as you haue heard; hee was of seemely stature, of body slender, his face beautifull, of his owne naturall inclination, he abhorred all the vices, as well of the body, as of the soule.

Saying of Henry the first.

Edward the fourth entred London.

And now to returne to King Edward. At his comming to London, the Maior, Aldermen, and other Citizens meeting him one mile without the Citty, to wit, betwixt Islelon, and Soyletich, in the high way hee made Knights these Aldermen, Sir John Stockton, Maior of London, Sir Ralph Verney, Sir Richard Lee, Sir John Young, Sir William Taylor, Sir George Ireland, Sir William Stocker, Sir Mathew Philip, Sir William Hampton, Sir Thomas Stalbroke, Sir John Crosby, Sir Bartholomew James, Sir Thomas, or Richard Vrswike, Recorder of London, all these hee made Knights, in reward of the good seruice the Londoners had done to him. On the 24. day of May, King Edward when hee had made banarets, Sir Thomas Gray, Sir Richard Hastings, Sir John Courtney, Sir Nicholas Lartimer, Sir Ralph Hastings, Sir Roger Tegets, Sir John Stanley, Sir Simon Mountfort, Sir John Heningham, Sir William Stanley, &c. He take his iourney into Kent with all his army, following the Bastard and other his complices, to suppresse them, if they were in any place assembled to resist him: but after they were once diuerted, they durst not shew themselues againe in armour, those only excepted, that were withdrawne into Sandwich, with the Bastard, which for the more part were Mariners, an. 807. hundred: with these he kept the Towne, hauing in the hauen, 47. ships great and small vnder his gouernance, but the King approching, they sent to him for pardon, which the King granted, and being in the City of Canterbury, he sent into Sandwich his brother, Richard, Duke of Glocester, to receiue him to mercy, together with all the ships which they deliuered: where vpon King Edward not onely pardoned the Bastard, but made him Knight, and Vice-Admiral. The Lord Denham and Sir John Fog, with other were left inlent; to sit in iudgement of the rebels in Kent, Sussex, and Essex, whereof were a great number punished by the purse, some 200. markes, some 200li. some more, some lesse. This King Edward returned out of Kent, with much good, and little losse. Nicholas Faunt, Maior of Canterbury (that had serued the Earle of Warwicke, and had of late perswaded the Bastard to depart from his host) and diuers other of his country-men were hanged and quartered, and the heads of Spilling and Quinten, were set vpon Alde-gate of London.

Aldermen of London made Knights.

Continuance of King Edward first.

Banarets made.

Henry the first not couetous.

Henry Bewford, Cardinall gaue 1000 pound toward the Colledges.

On the 4. day of June, George Neuill, Archbishop of Yorke, and brother to the late Earle of Warwicke, and the Marques Montacute, was deliuered out of the Tower of London, and discharged of his imprisonment.

The 1. of July, Edward, the sonne of King Edward, was made Prince of Wales, Duke of Lancaster, and Earle of Cornwall.

In the moneth of September, Thomas, the Bastard Fauconbridge, was taken at Southampton, by Richard, Duke of Glocester, he was conueyed to the Castle of Middleham in Yorkeshire, and there beheaded. Notwithstanding that he had the Kings pardon, his head was sent to London, and set on London Bridge.

The Bastard lost his head.

The Earles of Penbrooke and of Richmond fled into Britaine.

The 12. of Nouem. the Lady Anne, the Kings sister, was diuorced from Henry Holland, Duke of Exceter, by meanes of her owne suite.

King Edward kept his Christmas at Westminster, where hee with his Queene on the same feast day, sate crowned, and likewise on the 12th day, the King was againe crowned, and went procession crowned, but the Queene was not then crowned, because she was neere her time of deliuerance, but shee went on procession with him, the king kept his estate at Whitehall, with his Prelates & Noble estates, where also dined the Maior of London, the Aldermen and many of the wealthy Citizens. 1475.

This yeere, diuers bones hard cut of the earth, signifying great troubles to ensue, as was iudged: amongst the which bones, one was 7. miles from S. Albons at Pancate, that water was called Wo Mere, or Wo Water for that the running thereof was interpreted to signifie wo to come, as dearth, pestilence, or great battell: this water had ren against euery battell before fought, but neuer so much as now this yeere, for it began on the 10. day of Febru-ary, and continued running vntill the 14. of June in the yeere next following. Also diuers bones brake out this yeere, as at Lucesham in Kent, and at Canterbury, called Maile-borne, at Croydon in Surrey. Also sir vilies

Wonderfull waters and bones found in the earth.

besides Dudley Castle, in a place called Hungerwele, which last, when it betokeneth battell, runneth foule, and troubly water, and when it betokeneth dearth or pestilence, it runneth cleare, but that yere it ranne foule. There is also a pit in Langley Parke in Kent, which is alway full of water, be the weather never so dry, except against battell, and then it will be drie, and so it was this yeere.

This yeere were sent Ambassadours from King Edward to the Duke of Burgoyne, who landed at Bridges on the 2. of Aprill, where they were honorably received without the Towne by the Lord Grantehuse.

Ambassadors sent into Burgundy.

The names of the Ambassadours, were Sir Iohn Scot, Knight, marshall of Calais, Master William Hatclife, Secretary to the King, Master Ioh. Russell, Doctor, and Archdeacon of Barkeshire, Master Richad Mareen Archdeacon of London, Sir Iohn Young, Knight, and merchant of London, and Sir Iohn Crosby, merchant of London: on the 4. of Aprill, they were conueyed on horse-back to the Dukes lodging, &c. They passed from thence to the D. of Britaine, to haue gotten there the 2. Earles of Penbroke and of Richmond.

Archbishop of York: spoyled and sent to prison.

George Neuil, Archbishop of Yorke, being at Windsor with K. Edward on hunting, the King promised the Archbishop to come to the Moze (a place in Hartfordshire, which the Archbishop had purchased and builded commodiously, there to hunt and make merry with him, whereupon the Archbishop taking his leaue of the King, went home to the Mannor of the Moze, and there made great prouision for the King, and sent for much plate, that he had at that time of Barnet and Tewksbury fields, and besides this, borowed much of his friends, and purueyed for the King, for two or three dales meate, drinke and lodging, as royally as he could: but the day before the King had promised to haue come to the Moze, the King suddenly sent for the Archbishop to come to Windsor, where he was arrested of treason, that hee should helpe the Earle of Oxford, and so sent to Caleis and to Hames, where hee continued a long time after prisoner: all which time, the King kept the Archishopzick in his owne hands. In the meane while, Sir William Par, Knight, and Sir Thomas Vaughan Esquire, and other were sent to the Moze to seaze all his goods for the King, which came there to the summe of 20000. l. and all other Lordships and lands that the said Archbishop had within England, and all his stuffe and riches.

The Archbishops mitter. King Edward at this time, make the Bishops miter, that had many rich stones, and made thereof a Crowne for himselfe. Thomas Billing, chiefe Justice of the Kings bench, and so continued till the first of Richard the third.

John Vere, Earle of Oxford kept S. Michaels mount.

Also Sir Iohn Vere, Earle of Oxford, that had withdrawne himselfe from Barnet field, first into Scotland, after into France, then getting much goods on the Sea, landed in the West-countrey, and en red Saint Michaells Mount, with 77. men, the last of September, whereon hee was by the Kings appointment, besieged by Bodrigan, and other, but with such fauour, that the Earle reuictualled the Mount. Then was Richard Forteisue, Esquire, for the body, and Sheriffe of Cornu all sent thither to continue the siege. And King Edward sending pardons to the Earles men, so long practised with them, that at the last, if the Earle had not submitted himselfe to King Edward, he had beene taken by his owne men, and sir Forteisue entring the Mount the 15. of February, found victuall enough there to haue serued them till Midsommer after: Iohn Vere, E. of Oxford the Lord Beamond, two brothers of the said Earle, and Thomas Clifford, were brought prisoners to the King. The Earle of Oxford was sent prisoner to Guines, where he remained so long as this King raigned: In all which time, the Ladie his wife might neuer come to him, or had any thing to line vpon, but what people of their charities would giue her, and what she got by her needle.

In the moneth of September, Lewes de Bruges, Lord Grantehuse, came into England from Charles, Duke of Burgoygne, and on the thirteenth of October was created Earle of Winchester openly in the Parliament chamber. Creation.

The first of October, began a Parliament at Westminster by authority, wherby an ayde was granted to the King, towards the charge of his warres, which was leuied of mens lands, as well of Lords as other. 1471. Parliament at Westmins.

The Duke of Burgoygne hauing great warres with the French King, sent Ambassadours into England, to require King Edward his brother in law to make warre on the French King, vnto the which request King Edward easily granted, because he wished to be reuenged on the French King, as of his enmy, for ayding the Earle of Warwick, Queene Margaret, and her sonne, Prince Edward, and their complices: whereupon he prouided, and also determined, in the beginning of the next yere, to bring a great army ouer to Caleis and to inuade the kingdome of France. And forthwith with all diligence, prepared all things ready for his iourney, making many shifts for the prouision of money to serue his turne. And because this last yeere great summes of money were granted him by the Parliament, he deuised this shift to call before him a great number of the wealthiest sort of the people of his Realme, and to them declared his neede, and the requisite causes thereof, and demanded of them some portion of money, which they sticked not to giue, and therefore the King willing to shew that this their liberalitie was very acceptable to him, he called this grant of money a Benevolence, notwithstanding that many grudged thereat, and called it a Malevolence: but the King died such gentle meanes towards them for their assistance in his necessitie, that they could not otherwise doe, but frankly yeeld and giue him competent summes, wherewith he prepared a great army.

King Edward prepareth to his iourney into France.

This yere, Henry Holland, the Duke of Excester, was found dead in the Sea betweene Douer and Caleis, but how he came there, the certaintie could not be knowne. 1474

King

The King sayleth into France.

King Edward hauing prepared his armie, led the same to Douer, from thence to crosse the seas to Caleis. The foze than passed with him at this present, was the greatest that euer came into France, most of them being horsemen, all in very good order well armed. All the nobles of the Realme bore there: a few excepted, they were fifteene hundred men of armes very well mounted, and the most of them lusted and richly trapped, after the manner of the French warres, and well accompanied with horsemen of their retinue, they were at the least fifteene thousand archers on horse-backe, and a great number of footemen, and others, as well to pitch their tents, whereof they were well furnished, as also to attend vpon their artillery, and inclose their campe, and in all their army they had not one pledge. Besides this, were 3000. Englishmen appointed to lane in Britaine. Anno. 14.

When King Edward came to Douer, the Duke of Burgoigne to helpe his passage, sent 300. Boates of Holland, and Zeland, called cuts, which are flatte and lowe, builte very commodiously for transporting of horses: but notwithstanding all this helpe they hadde from the Duke, and all the King of England could command himselfe, he was aboue three wekes in passing betweene Douer and Caleis, one shippe of Cinq tasks 200. or 300. of his small passengers. Before King Edward embarked, his herault came to the King of France one Herault alone called Guyenne, a Norman borne, who brought a letter of defiance from the king of England, in very bad language, and so excellentlie well penned, that mine Author was perswaded it was neuer Englishmans doing. The contents thereof were, that the King should yelde vnto him the Realme of France, being his inheritance, to the end he might restore the clergy and nobilitie to their ancient liberty, vnto them of the great charges they sustained, and deliuer them of the miseries they were in, which if he refused to do, he protested what great mischiefe should ensue thereof, in manner & forme as in such cases is accustomed. The King read the letter softly to himselfe, and after ward all alone withdrew himselfe into a Wardrobe, and commanded the Herault to be brought to his presence, to whom he made this answere. King Edward tyeth his men in passing betweene Douer and Caleis.

First, that he knew well that the King of England had not passed the Seas of his owne free motion, but by the perswasion of the Duke of Burgundie, and the communaltie of England.

Secondly, that the summer was now almost past, and that the Duke of Burgoigne was returned from Nuntz, as a man discomfited and vtterly vnfurnished of all things.

Thirdly, as touching the Constable (of France) he knew well (he said) that he had intelligence with the king of England, because he hadde married his Niece: but would deceiue his King his master as hee had him, notwithstanding all the great benefits that he had receiued of him, which he then rehearsed, adding thereunto, that the said Constable meante to line in continuall dissimulation, and entertaine euery man to make his profite of him.

Last of all, he alleaged to the Herault diuers reasons to perswade the King his master to peace, and gaue him with his owne hand 300. crownes, promising him a thousand more if the peace were concluded: for after openly he gaue him for a present, a goodly peece of crimson veluet of thirtie els. The Herault answered, that he would trauel me best he could for peace, and thought the King his master would easily be won thereunto: but he willed the King of France, to send an Herault to the English campe, to demand a safe conduct for certaine Ambassadours, that he would send to the King of England, and to direct his letters to the Lord Howard, & to the Lord Stanley, and to himselfe also to make his Herault. At one time, in a manner, both the King of England landed at Caleis, and the Duke of Burgoigne departed from before Nuntz, who in great haste rid straight to Caleis, to the sayde king with a very small traine, for he had sent his army to spoile the Countrey of Barrois and Loraine. The King of England departed from Calis in company of the Duke, and passed through Bolleigne, and from thence marched to Peronne, where the Duke gaue the Englishmen but cold entertainment, for he caused the gates to be streightly kept, & would suffer but fewe to enter, so that the greatest part of them lodged in the fields. After they were come to Peronne the Constable of France sent to the Duke of Burgoigne one of his seruants, by whom he excused himselfe for the withholding of Saint Quintins, alleaging that if he had restored it, he could haue made him in no stede in the realme of France, for he should vtterly haue lost his credite and intelligence, but now seeing the king of England was come ouer in person, he promised to doe hereafter all that the Duke should command him, whereof the better to assure him, he sent him a letter of credite to the declaration of the Duke. Furthermoze he gaue the Duke his faith in writing to serue and succour him, his friends, and confederates, as well the King of England as others, against all men none excepted.

The Duke deliuered the King of England his letter, and all the matter of credite, adding somewhat thereto of his owne heade, for he assured the King, that the Constable would deliuer into his hands, both Saint Quintins and all his other places, which the king easily beleued, partly, because he had married the Constables Niece, and partly, because he saw him in so great feare of the king of France, that he thought he durst not faple his promise made to the Duke and him, and the Duke beleeued it also. But the Constable ment nothing lesse, for the feare he was in of the French king was not so great that it could force him thus farre, but hee died still his wonted dissimulation.

The King of England reloycing at this message sent by the Constable, departed from

Perenne with the Duke of Burgoigne, toward S. Quintins, whereunto when he approched, a great Bande of Englishmen ran before, thinking that the Belles should have bene rong at their comming, and that the Citizens would have receyued them with Crosse and Holy water, but when they dyeue nere to the towne, the Artillerie shot, and the souldiours issued forth to the skirmish, both on Horsebacke and on foote, so that two or three Englishmen were slaine, and some taken: and in this state returned they in great rage to their campe, murmuring against the Constable.

The next morning the Duke of Burgondy would have taken his leaue of the King of England to depart to his army in Barroys, promising to doe marualles in his fauor.

The French king sent a seruant of the Lord Halles in the likeneese of an Herault, with a coate made of a Trumpets Banner, to the English campe, where when he came, he was brought to a Tent, and after dinner talked with the King, his message was chiefely grounded vpon the great desire the king had of long time to be in peace with the king of England, saying further, that since hee was crowned King of France, he never had attempted any thing against the King of England or his Realme.

Secondly, he excused himselfe, for receiuing in times past the Earle of Warwicke into his dominions, saying, that he did it onely against the Duke of Burgoigne and not him.

Further, he declared that the saide Duke of Burgoigne had for no other cause called him into France but that by the occasion of his comming, he might conclude a better peace for himselfe with the King: and if happily any other furthered the matter, it was onely to amend the broken estate of their owne affaires, and for their owne priuate commoditie: but as touching the King of Englands good successe, they were altogether careles thereof. Hee put him also in minde of the time of yere, alleadging that winter approached, and likewise the great charges he sustained.

Lastly he saide, that notwithstanding a great number in England desired war with France, yet if the King of England incline to peace, the King for his part would condescende to such conditions as hee doubted not but he and his realme would allowe of: Finally, he demanded a safe conduct for certaine Ambassadors, to come well enformed of his masters pleasure.

The King of England and part of his nobles liking these ouertures very well, graunted to the Herault of France, as large a safe conduct as he demanded, and gaue him foure Nobles of Golde for a reward. Hee also sent an English Herault with him to bring the like safe conduct. And in the next morning in a Village nere to Amiens, the Commissioners of both Princes mette, being these. For the King of France, the bastard of Bourbon Admirall of France, the Lord of Saint Pierre and the Bishoppe of Cureur, called Heberge: And for the King of England, the Lord Howard, one Chalanger, and Doctor Morton. Many Articles of peace were treated of, but the last resolutions, were these: That the French king should paie to the King of England presently before his departure out of France, seuenty two thousand Crownes, that the Dolphine should marry king Edwards eldest Daughter, and that shee should haue the Dutchie of Guien, for her maintenance, or fiue thousand Crownes yerely, to be paid in the tower of London, the space of 99. yeres, which terme expired, the Dolphine should peaceably enioy the reuenues of the whole Dutchie of Guien, and then the king of France to bee clerely discharged of all payments to the king of England. Further it was decred, that the two Princes should mete together and bee sworne to the treaty, which meting was obserued in a Towne called Picquigny, on the 29. of August.

The King of England vpon receit of his money, departed toward Caleis in great hast, fearing the Duke of Burgoignes malice and his subtelties.

At his departure he left for Hostages with the king of France, till his returne into England, the Lord Howard, and the maister of his House called Sir John Cheyney. King Edward tooke Shipping at Caleis, and landed at Douer, and was receiued on the Black-heath by the Maior of London and his brethren in scarlet, and 500. commoners, all clad in Murrey, and so conueyed to London through the citie to Westminster, on the 28. of September.

King Edward returning into England, landeth at Douer.

The French king to compasse his purpose for the getting of the constable into his hands, tooke truce with the Duke of Burgoigne for nine yeres, as a contractour in the league, and not as a Prince alie. King Edward of England aduertised hereof, sent ouer sir Thomas Mountgomery to the French king, offering to passe the Seas againe the next Sommer to aid him and to make warre on the Duke of Burgoigne, so that the French king should pay to him 50000. crownes for the losse which hee should sustaine in his custome, by reasons that the woles of Caleis, could haue no vent, and also paie halfe the charges, and halfe the wages of his souldiers and men of warre. The French king thanked king Edward for his offer but he alleaged that the truce was already concluded, so that hee could not attempt any thing against him, without reproch to his honor: so Sir Thomas Mountgomery was with plate dispatched. There returned with him the Lord Howard, and Sir John Cheyney, which were Hostages with the French king, till the English armie were returned into England. 1475.

The eightenth of Aprill, were inhanced to the honor of knighthode, after the customs of England, in the time of peace, his eldest son Edward Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornewal and Earle of Chester, his second Sonne the Duke of Yorke, and with them the Earle of Lincolnes Sonne and heire, the Duke of Suffolke, the Lord Thomas Gray the Queenes Sonne, and Richard his brother: the Earle of Shrewsburie: the Earle of Wiltshire, Master Edward Wooduile: the Lord Neuill: the Lord Barkleys son and heire: the Lord Awdeleys Son and heire: the Lord Saint Amand: the Lord Stanleys Son and heire: the Lord Sturtons Son and heire: the Lord Hastinges Son and heire: the Lord Ferrers of Chartleys Son and heire: Master Harbert brother to the Earle of Penbroke, Master Vaughan Brian chiefe Iustice: Littleton one of the Iudges of the Common pleas, Master Bodringham, Master Brian Stapleton, Kneuit, Pilkinton, Ludlow, Charleton, &c. The same day the King created the Lord Thomas Marques Dorset before dinner, and so in the habite of a Marques aboue the habite of his knighthode, he beganne the table of knights in Saint Edwards Chamber. At that time hee ordained that the Kings chamberlaine should goe with the ancient and the well nurtred knight to aduertise and teach the order of knighthood, to the esquiers being in the haine. The King himselfe came in person, and did honor to all the company with his noble counsell. *An. reg. 15.* Knights of the Bath made by the King.

Littleton.

Creation of Noblemen.

King Edward practiseth against Henry Earle of Richmond.

King Edward having established all things in good order, both within his realme and without, was yet troubled in his minde, for that the Earle of Richmond, one of the blod of King Henry the first, on the mothers side, was alive, and at liuerty in Britaine: therfore he sent ouer to Francis Duke of Britaine, one Doctor Stillington, and other Ambassadours laden with no small summe of golde. These Ambassadors declaring their message, affirmed that the king their master, willed, to haue the Earle of Richmond onely to ioyne with him in aliance by marriage, and so to plucke by all the remnants of discord, betwixt him and them of the contrary faction. The Duke thought at the first, that king Edward would giue to the Earle his eldest Daughter the Ladie Elizabeth in marriage, he therefore consented to deliuer him, and receiued of the English orators a great summe of money: but ere any were embarqued with their prey, the Duke being aduertised, that the Earle of Richmond was not so earnestly sought for, to be coupled in mariage with king Edwards daughter, as to haue his head parted from his body with an axe, and therefore caused his treasurer Peter Landoyse to conuey the sayd Earle of Richmond into a sanctuary at Sabo, where the English Ambassadors then lay, staying for a conuenient winde: who complained that they were euill vsed to be spoyled both of their money and marchandise: yet because the matter was so handled, that it seemed the Earle escaped into sanctuary through their owne negligence, after that they had receiued him, they were answered that the Earle should be safely kept, either in sanctuary, or else as a prisoner in the Dukes house, and thus the king purchased for his money, the keeping of his money for a little time.

The second day of Nouember was borne the kings daughter named Anne, at Westminster.

1467. King Edward was somewhat displeased with the chance about the Earle of Richmond, but trusting that the D. of Baptaine would according to promise keepe him from doing any grieuance to him, put all doubts thereof out of his minde, and began to study how to keepe a liberall Princely house, and thereupon storing his chestes with money, hee employed no small portion in good house keeping.

John Duke of Norffolke deceased, on the Tuesday after the feast of the Epiphany, the 15. of Edward 4.

This yere Edward kept the feast of Saint George, and order of the Garter at Windsore in most royall manner, first on the Saterday beforenome, the King being Soueraigne with the knights of the order, entered the chapiter within the castle, which chapiter was also continued in the after noone, in this manner, towards euensong time, being all mounted on horseback in their habits of blew, rode to the chapiter from thence they went to the quire on foote, where they remained while euensong was done, and then rode againe to the Castle (in their habits as afore) where they had their boilde of spices, &c. *An. reg. 16.* Order of S. Georges feast.

On Sunday morning, the Soueraigne with the knights rode to mattens, which being ended, they entred the Chapiter from whence they went to the Deans house to breakefast, & after to the quire againe euery man to his owne stall. Then came the Quene with the Lady Elizabeth her eldest daughter, the Dutchesse of Suffolke, the Kings sister, the Lady Marchionesse of Montague, the Lady Marchionesse of Dorset, the Lady Hastings, &c. all in one liuery of murrey embrodered with garters, except the Marchionesse of Montague, who rode in a gowne of silke, and these Ladies were placed in the rode loft. And in the same order and habite came the Soueraigne, and knights, with the Quene and her Ladies in the afternoone to euensong. The King this day dined in his great Chamber, on whose right hand sate Richard Bewchamp Bishop of Salisbury, Chancellor of the order, and on the left hand the D. of Clarence, and the Duke of Suffolke. At a side table sate the Marquesse of Dorset, the Earles of Arundale, Northumberland, and Essex, the Lord Maltrauers, the Earle Dowglas the Lords Dudley, Ferrers, and Howard, and Sir John Astely knight, all on one side. And at a table on the other side, sate Master Dudley, Deane of S. Georges chappell, and with him all on one side, the Chanons of the same chappell in their mantles of murrey, and mantlet of S. George.

On the Sunday the Soueraigne and knights of the order entred the chapiter, where they had a short communication, from whence they went to the quire, where euery knight stood before his stall while the King had offered a rich suite of vestments, and certaine copes of the same vestue, which the Deane received: that done the King went to his stall, and euery knight sate him downe in their owne sales, till the offertory, and then the Marques and the D. of

Suffolke

Suffolke offered the sword of Iohn Mowbray late D. of Norfolke deceased, the Lords Maltravers and Howard, his pledge: which being done, and obeisance made, every knight stood before their stals, while the King had offered, and then every knight offered according to his stal, to wit, the D. of Clarence, the Marques Dorset, the Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Arundell, the Earle of Essex, and the D. of Suffolke, the Earle of Northumberland, the Earle of Douglas, the Lord Maltravers, and the Lord Howeard, the Lord Dudley, the Lord Ferrers, sir Iohn Astley. The masse being ended, they went to the Chaunter, and thus the feast was ended, from the which were absent of the order out of the Realme, the king of Scotl, the king of Portingale, the Duke of Burgoigne, the D. of Aerein, the Lord Rivers, the Lord Scrope, the L. Dunasse, absent within the realme, the prince, the D. of Glocester, the Duke of Buckingham, the Lord Hastings, and sir William a Par.

This yere Charles Duke of Burgundy was slaine by the Switzers, before the Towne of Nancy in Lorraine, after whose death the French king wan all the townes which the said Duke had holden in Picardy and Artois, and because the Towne of Bologne, and county of Bolonnois, appertained by right of inheritance unto the Lord Iohn earle de la Toure Earle of Auvergne, the French king bought of him his right and title in the same, and recompenced him with other lands in the county of Forest, and in other places. And because the forenamed towne & county were holden of the Carledome of Artois, he changed the tenor, and anowed to holde the same towne and county of our lady of Bologne, and thereof did homage in the great Church of Bologne, offering there an heart of gold, weying 2000. crownes, ordaining further, that his heires and successors at their entree into their estates, by themselues or their deputies, should offer an heart of like waight and valew, as a relefe and homage for the same towne and countrey.

The great Duke of Burgundy slaine.

This yere 1477. Charles the great Duke of Burgondy surnamed the Bould, after much warre and many valyant battailles which he verp fortunatly had performed by the space of eight yeres, & in the end he received two great overthrowes by the Swichers, both of them in short time, and then of Renato Prince of Lorraigne, chiefe of that hoste, were unto Mancela, where this Duke was miserably slaine, and his body two dayes after was found in the Snow, and with great honor carried thence unto the Sepulcher of Princes.

No man ought to gape after other mens fortune.

1477.

An. reg. 17. Burder beheaded. Enguerrand.

This yere T. Burder an Esquire of Arrow in Warwickshire, son to sir Nicholas Burder (who was great butler of Normandy in Henry the fifts dayes) was beheaded (as was said) for a word spoken, in this sort: King Edward in his progresse hunted in Tho. Burders parke at Arrow, and slew many of his deere, amongst the which one was a white bucke, whereof T. Burder had great account, and therefore when he understood thereof, he wished the bucks head in his belly that slewed the king to kill it. Which tale being told to the K. Burder was apprehended, & accused of treason, for wishing the bucks Register of head, horns and all in the kings belly. This was Gray Friers. the report, and true it is (though some have saide the contrarie) that there was a parke at Arrow: for K. Edward the third, in the seventh yere of his raigne, gave licence to Robert Burder, to inclose his wood of Arrow into his parke (as appeareth by paten in record:) And the record also sheweth that the saide Thomas Burder was accused of poysoning, sorcery and inchantment, for the which he was attainted, by parliament condemned, drawne from the tower of London to Tibborne, and there beheaded, and then buried in the Gray Friers Church at London. This Thomas Burder (by licence obtained of Edward the fourth, in the twelfth yere of his raigne) alienated his lands from his eldest sonne, and true heire, to others at his pleasure, whereof he after sore repented him: And being drawne from the Tower toward his end (as is afore shewed) espying his saide eldest Sonne in west Cheape, over against the Record Tow. hospitall of Thomas Becket, he procured himselfe to be staid, and there asked his sonne forgiuenesse, confessing himselfe grievously to have offended God, in wronging him of his inheritance, which he tooke to be the cause, that God had so justly pagued him by the Princes pleasure, to come to such an end.

King Edward kept his royall feast of Christmas at Westminster.

The 15. of January king Edward the fourth solemnized the matrimoniall feast of his Son Richard the Duke of Yorke, and the Lady Anne daughter and sole heire to Iohn Mowbray D. of Norfolke, with great solemnity. By which marriage, the said Richard was created Duke of Yorke and Norfolke, Earle marshall, Warren, and Nottingham.

The 16. day of January began a Parliament at Westminster, wherein George Duke of Clarence king Edwards brother, was attainted of treason: In the which attaindor (which I have read) is declared, that the said George D. of Clarence, against the King his Soueraigne Lord, had caused diuers his servants to informe the people, that Thomas Burder his servant (which was lawfully and truely attainted of treason) was wrongfully put to death. To his servants of such disposition, he gave large summes of money, benison, &c. therewith to assemble the Kings subiects, to feast them, and then to induce them to beleue, that the saide Burder was wrongfully executed. He also by such his servants, laboured to make the people beleue that the King wrought by Negromancie, and vsed the craft to poyson his subiects, such as him pleased, to the great disclander of the King, and incouraging his subiects against him. And over that, the saide Duke being in full purpole to exalt himselfe and his heires to the regality and crowne of England, and cleerly in opinion to put aside from the same for ever, the king and his heires, vpon one the falsest, and most vnnaturall coloured pretence that man might imagine, falsely and vntruely

Parliament at Westminster with the attaindor of George D. of Clarence.

published, that the king was a bastard, and not legitimate to raigne. And to continue in his most malicious and traiterous purpole after, his seditious language among the people, he induced diuers of the Kings naturall subiects to bee sworne vpon the blessed sacrament, to be true to him and his heires, none exception reserued of their allegiance: and after the same oath so made, he shewed to many, that the King had taken his liuelode from him, and his men were disherited, but he would indeuor to get them their inheritance, as he would do his owne: he shewed also, that the King intended to consume him, in like sort as a candle consumeth in burning, whereof he would in briefe quit him. And ouer this the saide Duke got an exemplification vnder the great seale of Henrie the first late king, wherein was contayned, that if the said Henry and Edward his sonne died without issue male, that the said Duke and his heires should be kings, &c. Thus much for his attaindor.

An. reg. 18.

Duke of Clarence put to death.

And on the 11. of March, after he had offered his owne masse penie in the tower of London, he made his end in a vessell of Malmesey and was after buried at Tewkisburie, by his wife, sometime daughter to the Earle of Warwicke, which being with child died of poyson but a little before him.

This George Duke of Clarence, left behind him two young infants begot on his wife, the Daughter of Richard Earle of Warwicke, which children succeded their ancestors in semblable euill chance: for Edward, his heire, whom King Edward had created Earle of Warwicke, was 24. yeres after in the time of Henry the 7. attainted of treason, and on the tower hill lost his head: And Margaret his sole daughter, married to Sir Richard Pole Knight, and by Henry the eight restored to the Carledome of Salisburie, was attainted 62. yeres after her father had suffered, and was in the tower beheaded: in whose person died the forname of Plantagenet. This yere was a great mortality and death of the pestilence, not only in London, but in diuers parts of the Realme, which began in the latter end of September, in the yere last before passed and continued all this yere till the beginning of November, which was about 14. moneths, in the which space died innumerable of people in the saide city and else where.

1479. Great pestilence.

William Gray Bishop of Ely deceased at Dolnham, and was buried at Ely, bestowne two pillars of marble: he gaue much money toward the reparation of the great Church at Ely, Iohn Morton, Doctor of the ciuill law succeded him in that Byshoprike.

An. reg. 19. Penall laws and Statutes reuiued.

This yere King Edward more then he was accustomed, began to search for the statutes of penall law and statutes, as well of the chiefe of his nobilitie, as of other gentlemen, being prepristories of great possessions or aboundantly furnished with goods, likewise of merchants, and other inferior persons: by reason whereof, it was of all menne iudged, that he would prowe hereafter a sore and rigorous Prince among his subiects: but this his new inuented practise, and couetous meaning (by reason of forraine affaires, and abridgement of his dayes in this transitory life, (which were within two yeres after consumed) toke some, but no great effect.

This yere King Edward began to kepe his feast of Christs nativitie at Wicking, but at fiue daies end removed from thence to Greenwich, where he kept out the other part, with great royalty. 1480.

The 22. of February, fiue notable theeues were put to death at London, for robbing of Churches and other places, especially the College of S. Martin le grand in London, for the which three of them were drawne to the tower hill, and there hanged and burnt, the other two were pressed to death. Church robbers hanged, burned, and pressed to death.

Ambassadours were sent, to and fro betwirt the Kings of England and of France, and till the French king led the King of England with faire words, putting him in hope to match his Sonne and heire the Dolphin, with the Lady Elizabeth daughter to King Edward, according to the conclusions of agreement had and made priuily betwixt them, although in very deede he meant nothing lesse, his ambassadors euer made excuses if any thing were amisse, and he vsed to send change of Ambassadours, so that if those which had borne here afore, and were returned, hadde sayde, or promised any thing (though they were authorized so to do) which might turne to their masters hinderance, the other that came after mought excuse themselues by ignorance of that matter, affirming that they wanted commission once to talke or meddle with that matter, or if he perceiued that any thing was like to bee concluded contrarie to his minde, for a shift, he would call his Ambassadours home in great hast, and after send another with new instructions, nothing depending on the old. Thus the French King by cloaking his inward determinate purpole, with great dissimulation and large promises, kept himselfe in friendshippe with the King of England, till he had wrought a great part of his will against the young Duches of Burgoigne which king Edward would not haue suffered, if he had put any great doubt in the French kings faire promises, considering that the Crowne of France, was in this meane time so much increased in dominions to the great reinforcement of that Realme. An. Reg. 20

On the 9. of November was borne King Edwards third Daughter, named Briget, at Eltham, and was christened in the chappell there by the Bishop of Chichester.

James King of Scots, sent into England Ambassage, for to haue the Lady Cicely King Edwards second daughter, to be married to his eldest sonne James Prince of Scotland, D. of Rotheley, and Earle of Carlile. King Edward and his Councell, perceiuing that this affinitie should be both honorable and profitable to the Realme, did not onely grant to this his desire, but also before hand disbursed certaine sums of money, to the intent that the marriage should 1451. An. reg. 21

hereafter neither he hindered nor broken, with condition that if the said mariage proceeded not then the prouost and marchants of the Towne of Edenborrow, should be bound for repayment of the said summe again. But King Iames was a man wedded to his owne will so much, that he could not abide any that would speake contrary to his fancie, by meanes whereof, diuers of the Nobilitie of his Realme were greatly troubled, amongst whom Alexander Duke of Albany, brother to King Iames, being exiled into France, and passing through England, tarried with King Edward, and vpon occasion moued him to make warre against his brother the said King Iames, for that he forgetting his oath, promise and affinitie concluded with king Edward, caused his subiects to make roades into English borders. King Edward set on by the Duke of Albanie, determined to inuade Scotland, with an armie: hereupon all the winter season he mustred his men, rigged his shippes, and left nothing vnprouided for such a iourney, so that in the beginning of the yere, all things for the warre were in a readinesse: towards the charges whereof, King Edward had borrowed many great summes of money, amongst other, the Citizens of London granted him 5000. marks, which was repaid to them in the next yere following.

This yere King Edward created William Lord Barkley Vicount Barkeley, at Greenewich,

1482. King Edward with his Queene kept a royal Christmas at Windsore.

An. reg. 22. King Edward appointed to be his cheifetaine of his host toward Scotland, and lieutenant generall, Richard Duke of Glocester, and with him were adioyned as associates, Henry Earle of Northumberland, Thomas Lord Stanley, Lord Steward of the kings house, the Lord Louell, the Lord Graystoke, diuers other noble men, and worthy knights. These came to Alnewike in Northumberland about the beginning of the moneth of July: where they marshalled their host: The forward was led by the Earle of Northumberland, vnder whose standert were the Lord Scrope of Bolton, Sir John Midleton, sir Iohn Dichfield and other, and souldiers to the number of 6700. In the middle ward was the Duke of Glocester, and with him the Duke of Albany, the Lord Louel, the Lord Graystocke, Sir Edward Woodvile, and other to the number of 4800. The Lord Neuill was appointed to follow with 3000. The Lord Stanley led the wing on the right hand of the Dukes battell with 4000. menne. The Lord Fitzs Hugh, Sir William a Par, Sir Iames Harington with the number of 2000. guided the left wing. And beside these 1000. to attend the ordinance. This royall armie came sodainely by the water side to the towne of Berwicke, and entred the towne, but Carle Bothwell captaine of the Castle, would in no wise deliuer it: wherevpon the captaines planted a strong siege round about it. The two Dukes and all the other souldiers (except the Lord Stanley, sir Iohn Errington treasurer of the Kings house, sir William a Par, and foure thousand men left to kepe the siege before the castle) departed toward Edenborrough, and in marching spent many townes and castles. King Iames kept himselfe within the castle of Edenborough. The Duke of Glocester entred the Towne, and at the speciall desire of the Duke of Albany saued the Towne, and the inhabitants from fire, blood and spoile, taking onely such presents as they offered to him and his captaines. The Lords of Scotland lying at Hadington, on the second of August wrote to the Duke of Glocester, requiring that the mariage betwixt the Prince of Scotland and King Edwards daughter might be accomplished, according to the couenants: and further, that a peace from thenceforth might be concluded betweene both realmes. The Duke of Glocester answered, that for the marriage he knew not his brothers pleasure, but he required restitution of all the money payed out in loane vpon the same marriage: and for peace he would agree to none, except the Castle of Berwike might be to him deliuered. The Scots excused the matter touching the repaiment of the money, for that the time of the contract of the said marriage was not yet come, and as touching the Castle of Berwike, they affirmed it to appertaine to the Realme of Scotland as of olde inheritance. The same time the Archbishop of Saint Andrewes, the Bishoppe of Dunkill the Earle of Argile, Lord Cambell, and Andrew Lord of Auandal, Chancellor of Scotland wrote to the Duke of Albany, a solemne instrument signed and sealed with their seales, concerning a generall pardon to him and his seruants vpon certaine conditions to be granted, so reasonable that the Duke of Albany willingly accepted of the same, but before he departed he promised the Duke of Glocester to doe and performe all whatsoeuer before he had woone, and promised to king Edward: and for performance hereof, he againe tooke a corporall oath, and sealed a writting at Leuington, the third of August.

After he was restored, the Lords of Scotland proclaimed him lieutenant of Scotland: and not long after the castle of Berwicke was deliuered to the Lord Stanley and other, where the Duke of Glocester made Sir T. Molineux Knight banneret. The duke of Albany also caused the prouost and burgesses of Eden borough to become bound for the repaiment of the money lent by king Edward. And then the Duke of Glocester returned to Sharebutton, &c.

King Edward so greatly fauoured William Harriot Maior of London, that he tooke him with certaine of his brethren the Aldermen, and Commons of the citie of London, into the forrest of Waltham, where was prouided for them a pleasant lodge of greene boughes, in the which lodge they dined with great cheere, and the K. would no go to dinner till he saw them serued. After dinner they went a hunting with the king and slew many dere, aswell red as fallow, whereof the King gaue vnto the Maior and his company good plentie and sent into the Ladie

King Edward banqueted the Maior and Aldermen of London.

Lady Maioresse and her sisters the Aldermens wiues, two harts, fiue bucks, and a tunne of wine to make them merry with, which was eaten in the Drapers Hall.

1483. King Edward held his feast of the nativity of Christ in his manor of Eltham, and kept his estate all the whole feast in his great chamber, and the Queene in her chamber, where were daily more then 2000. persons serued.

The same yere on Candelmas day, he with his Queene went on procession from S. Stephens chappell into Westminster hall, accompanied with the Earle of Angulse, the L. Grey, and sir Iames Liddall Ambassador from Scotland, and at his proceeding out of his chamber, he made sir Richard Wood vnder treasurer of England, and sir William Carosby, one of the iustices of the Common place, knights.

An. reg. 23. Although King Edward reioyced much that his vnkindnesse was come to good conclusion with the Scots, yet he was now sore disquieted in his minde towards the French king, whom he now perceiued to haue dallied with him, as touching the agreement of the marriage to be hadde betwixt the Dolphine, and his daughter Elizabeth: for the L. Howard being returned out of France, certified the king of his owne knowledge, that he being present, saw the Lady Margaret of Austrich, daughter to the Duke Maximilliian, sonne to the Emperor Frederike, receiued into France with great pompe and royaltie, and at Amboys to the Dolphine contracted and espoused. King Edward highly displeased with such double dealing of the French king, called his nobles together, & opened vnto them his griefes, who promised him for redresse thereof to be ready with all their powers, to make warre in France at his pleasure and appointment. But whilest he was busie in hand to make his preparance for warres thus against France, whether it was of melancholie and anger which he had taken with the French kings doings, or els were by any superstition forgot, to the which he was greatly giuen, he sodenly fell sicke, and was so grieuously taken, that he ended his life, as it were euen sodenly, at Westminster on the ninth day of Aprill, the yere of Christ 1483. at the age of 41. yeres, when he had raigned 22. yeres, one moneth, and odde dales, and was buried at Windsore, where he had before prouided his resting place: for ioining the old chappell of S. Georges church builded by K. Henry the first, he laid a newe foundation from the west end thereof, and builded the beautifull newe chappell now frequented, almost to the roofe, which the Lord Reginal Bray (with some small helpe of the Knights of the order) afterward finished. King Edward the 4. tooke from the colledge of Eaton, and the kinges colledge in Cambridge, xxiiij. King Henry the 6. his founder (saith Sir Tho. Smith) almost 1600. pound by yere, and gaue to the colledge of Windsor he with scripturous buildings repaired the castles of Nottingham & Douer, the Tower of London, the house of Eltham, and builded at Westminster.

King Edward deceased.

T. Smith.

Phil. Com. Philip de Comines writeth of the death of this King in manner following: Haue we not seene (saith he) the late King of England Edw. the 4. heire of the house of Yorke, bitter y deroyed the house of Lancaster vnder which both his father and he had lined many yeres? Further he said, king Edward hauing done homage to king Henry the 6. being of the house of Lancaster, did he not afterward holde him prisoner many yeres in the tower of London, where in the end he was murthered? Haue we not seene also the Earle of Warwike, principall gouernor of all the said King Edwards offices (after he had put to death all his enemies, especially the Duke of Somerset) in the end became deadly enemy to the King his maker, gaue his daughter in marriage to the Prince of Wales son to K. Henry, attempted to set vp again the house of Lancaster, rased with the said prince into England, discomfited in the field and slaine, both he and his brethren, and kinsmen, and diuers noblemen of England, who in time past had done the like to their enemies? After all this he children of these, when the world turned, reuenged themselues, and caused in like maner the other to die: which plagues we may be assured hapned not, but by the wrath of God. For after K. Edward was quiet in his realme, and received yeerely out of France 5000. crownes paid him in the tower of London, and was growen so rich, that richer he could not be, he died sodainely, as it were of melancholie, because of the French kings marriage with the Lady Margaret the D. of Austriches daughter, for so sone as he was aduertised thereof, he fell sicke, and began then to perceiue how he had bin abused, touching the marriage of his daughter whom he caused to be called the Lady Dolphineese. Then also was the pension which he had receiued out of France taken from him, which he called tribute, although indeede it were neyther the one nor the other. Thus much out of Comines concerning the death of Edward the fourth, who also affirmeth, that within his remembrance in the ciuill warres of England died aboue 80. persons of the Blood royall. King Edward left issue by Elizabeth his wife, two sons, Edward prince of Wales, and Richard D. of Yorke, and fiue daughters, to wit, Elizabeth that after was K. married to King Henry the seuenth, Cicely maried to Vicount Wels, Briget a Nun at Dertforde, Anne married to Thomas Howard after Earle of Surrey, and Duke of Norfolke, Katherine wedded to William L. Courtenay, sonne to the Earle of Deuonshire, he had also one base son knowne to the world, by the name of Arthur, that was after Vicount Lisle.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF KING EDVVARD THE FIFTH.

Whose Historie was written by sir Thomas Moore, as followeth.

KING Edward, of that name the 4th after he had lived 53. yeres (it should be 40. and one yeere) seuen moneths, and fiue daies, and hereof raigned two and twentie yeres, one moneth, and eight dayes, died at Westminster the ninth day of Aprill, the yeere of our redemption a thousand foure hundred fourescore and two, leauing much faire issue, that is to witte, Edward the Prince, of thirteene yeres of age: Richard Duke of Yorke, two yeres younger: Elizabeth, whose fortune and grace was afterward to be Queene wife, vnto King Henry the seuenth and mother vnto the eight: Cicely, not so fortunate as faire: Bridget, which professing the vertue of her, whose name she bare, professed and obserued a religious life in Dertford, an house of close Nuns: Anne, that was after honourably married vnto Thomas then Lord Howard, and after Earle of Surrey: and Katherine which long time tossed in either fortune, sometime in wealth, oft in aduersity, at the last, if this be last, for then she liued, is by the benignitie of her nephew King Henry the 8. in very prosperous estate, and worthy her birth and vertue.

83.

This noble Prince deceased at his palace of Westm. and with great funerall honour and heauinesse of his people from thence conueyed, was enterred at Windsore. A King of such gouernance and behauiour, in time of peace (for in warech part must needs be others enemie) that there was neuer any Prince of this land, attaining the crowne by battell, so heartily beloued with the substance of the people: nor he himselfe so especially in any part of his life, as at the time of his death: Which fauor and affection, yet after his decease, by the cruelty, mischiefe & trouble of the temptations vnto that followed, highly toward him more increased. At such time as he died, the displeasure of these that bare him grudge, for king Henries sake the first, whom he depos'd, was well assuaged, and in effect quenched, in that, that many of them were dead, in more part of the yeres of his raigne, a great part of a long life: and many of them in the meane season growne into his fauour, of which he was neuer strange. He was a goodly personage, princely to behold, of heart courageous, politike in counsell, in aduersitie, nothing abashed, in prosperity rather ioyfull than prowd, in peace iust and mercifull, in warre sharpe and fierce, in the fielde bold and hardy, and nathelesse no further than wisedome would, aduenturous, whose warres who so will consider, hee shall no lesse commend his wisedome where he vsed, than his manhood where he vanquished. He was of visage louely, of body mighty, strong and cleane made: how be it in his latter daies with ouer liberall diet, somewhat corpulent and bowely, and nathelesse not vncomely: hee was of youth greatly giuen to lecherie wantonnesse; from which, health of body in great prosperity and fortune, without a speciall grace hardly refrained.

Description of Edward the fourth.

This fault not greatly grieued the people: for neither could any one mans pleasure stretch and extend to the displeasure of very many, and was without violence, & ouer that, in his latter daies lessed and well left. In which time of his latter daies this realme was in quiet and prosperous estate, no feare of outward enemies, no war in hand, nor none toward, but such as no man looked for: the people toward the Prince, not in a constrained feare, but in a willing and loving obedience: among themselues, the commons in good peace. The Lords whom he knew at variance, himselfe in his death bed appeased; he had left all gathering of money (which is the onely thing that withdraweth the hearts of Englishmen from the Prince) nor any thing intended he to take in hand, by which he should bee driuen thereto, for his tribute out of France hee had obtained, before obtained: & the yere forgoing his death, he had obtained perwike. And albeit, that all the time of his raigne he was with his people, so bentigne, so courteous and so familiar, that no part of his vertues was more esteemed: yet the condition, in the end of his dayes (in which many Princes by a long continued soueraignetie, decline into a prowd port from behenaire behauiour of their beginning) marueilously in him grew and encreased: so far forth, that in summer the last that euer he saw, his highnesse being at Windsore in hunting, sent for the Maior and Aldermen of London, to bring for many other errand, but to haue them hunt and be merry with him, where he made them neke so straight, but so friendly and so familiar cheare, and sent dertion from thence so freely into the City, that no one thing in many dayes before, gat him eyther more hartes or more hartie fauor amongst the common people, which oftentimes more esteeme and take for greater kindnes, a little courtesie, than a great benefit. So deceased (as I haue said) this noble king in the time, in which his life was most desired: whole loue of his people, & their entire affection toward him, had borne to his noble children, (hauing in themselues alsó as many gifts of nature, as many princely vertues, as much goodly towardnes as their age could receiue) a maruellous fortresse and sure armor, if diuision and dissension of their friends had not wanted them, and left them destitute, and the ercecrable desire of soueraignity prouoked him to their destruction, which if eyther kind or kindnes had holden place, must needs haue bin their chiefe defence. For Richard the Duke of Glocester, by nature their vncle, by office their protector, to their father beholden to themselues by oathe and allegiance bounden, all bands broken that binde man and man together, without any respect of God or the world, vnnaturally contriued to bereaue them, not only of their dignity, but also of their liues.

But forasmuch as this Dukes demeanor, minister in effect all the whole matter whereof this Booke shall entreat, it is therefore conuenient, somewhat to shew to you ere we farther go, what manner of man this was, that could find in his heart so much mischiefe to conceiue.

Richard D. of Yorke.

Richard Duke of Yorke, a noble man and a mighty, began not by war, but by law to challenge the crowne, putting his claime into the parliament, where his cause was either for right or fauor so farre forth aduanced, that king Henry his blod (albeit he was a goodly Prince) vtterly reiected, the crowne was by authority of Parliament entailed to the Duke of Yorke and his issue male in remainder, immediately after the death of king Henry. But the duke not induring so long to tarry, but intending vnder pretext of dissension and debate arising in the realme, to preuent his time, and to take vpon him the rule in King Henry his life, was with many nobles of the Realme at Wakefield slaine, leauing 3. sons, Edward, George and Richard. All three as they were great States of birth, so were they great and stately of stomacke, greedy and ambitious of authority, and impatient of partners: Edward reuenging his fathers death, depriued King Henry, and attained the crowne: George Duke of Clarence, was a goodly Noble Prince, and at all points fortunate, if either his owne ambition hadde not set him against his brother, or the enuie of his enemies his brother against him. For were it by the Queene and Lords of her blod which highly maligned the kings kinred (as women commonly not of malice, but of nature hate them whom their husbands loue) or were it a prowd appetite of the D. himselfe, intending to be king: at least wise heinous treason was there laid to his charge, and finally, were he faulty, were he faultles, attainted was he by Parliament, and iudged to death, and thereupon hastily drowned in a But of malmesey, whose death K. Edward (albeit he commanded it) when he wist it was done, piteously bewailed, and sorrowfully repented.

Edward George D. of Clarence.

Richard the 3. son, of whom we now intreate, was in wit & courage equal with either of them, in body and prowesse far vnder them both, little of stature, ill featured of lims, crooke backed, his left shoulder much higher than his right hard fauored of visage, and such as is in states called warely, in other men otherwise: he was malicious, wrathfull, enuious, and from time his birth euer froward. It is for truth reported, that the Duchesse his mother had so much adoe in her trauell, that she could not be deliuered of him vncut, & that he came into the world with the feet forward, as men be borne outward, and (as the fame runneth) also not vntoothed, whether men of hatred report aboue the truth, or else that nature changed her course in his beginning, which in the course of his life many things vnnaturally committed. He euill Captaine was he in war, as to which his disposition was more inclined, than for peace: sundry victories had he, and some times ouerthrowes, but neuer in default as for his owne person, either in hardinesse or politike order: free was he called of dispence, and somewhat aboue his power liberall: with large gifts he gat him vnstedfast friendship, for which he was faine to pill and spoyle in other places, and get him stedfast hatred. He was close and secret, a deepe dissembler, lowly of countenance, arrogant of heart, outwardly compinable, where he inwardly hated, not letting to kisse whom he thought to kill: dispitious and cruel, not for euill will alway, but after for ambition, and either for the surety or increase of his estate. Friend and foe was much what indifferent, where his aduantage grew: he spared no mans death, whose life withstood his purpole. He slew with his owne hands K. Henry the 6. being prisoner in the tower, as men constantly said, and that without commandement or knowledge of the king which would vndoubtedly, if he had intended the thing, haue appointed the butcherly office to some other, than his owne borne brother.

The death of king Henry the 6.

Some wise men also wene, that his drift couertly conueyed, lacked not in helping forth his brother of Clarence to his death: which he resisted openly, howbeit somewhat (as men deemed) more faintly, than he that were heartily minded to his wealth. And they that thus deeme, thinke that he long time in K. Edwards life, forethought to be king, in case that the king his brother, whose life he loked that euill death should shorten, should happen to decease (as indeed he did) while his children were young. And they deeme, that for this intent he was glad of his brothers death, the Duke of Clarence, whose life must needs haue hindered him to intending, whether the same D. of Clarence had kept him true to his nephew the young king, or enterprised to be king himselfe. But of all this point, is there no certainty, and who so draweth vpon coniectures, may as well smote two far as two short. Howbeit this haue I by credible information learned that the same night in which K. Edward died, one Mistlebrooke long ere morning, came in great hast to the house of one Pottier dwelling in red Crosse streete without Cripplegate in London: and when he with hasty rapping was quickly letten in, he shewed vnto Pottier, that K. Edw. was departed. By my truth man, quoth Pottier, then will my master the Duke of Glocester be king. What cause he had so to thinke

Reports vncertaine as spoken of how it fell.

thinke hard it is to fay, whether he being toward him any thing knew that he had secret thing purposed, or elsewise had any inkling thereof, for he was not likely to speake it of nought.

But now to returne to the course of this history. Were it that the Duke of Glocester had of old fore-minded this conclusion, and was now at erst thereunto stirred, and put into hope by the occasion of the tender age of the young Princes his nephews (as opportunity and likelihood of speede, pretendeth a man of courage of that he never intended) certaine it is, that he contrived their destruction, with the disputation of the regall dignity upon himselfe: And forasmuch as he well wist, and helped to maintaine a long continued grudge and hart-burning betweene the Quenes kindred, and the Kings blood, either party envying others authority, he now thought their division should be (as it was indeed) a furtherly beginning to the pursute of his intent, and a sure ground for the foundation of all his building, if he might first under the pretext of revenging old displeasure, abuse the anger and ignorance of the one party, to the destruction of the other, and then winne to his purpose as many as hee could, and those that could not be won, might be lost ere they looked therefore: for of one thing was he certaine, that if his intent were perceived, he should some haue made peace betweene both parties with his owne blood.

King Edward in his life, albeit that this dissention betweene his friends somewhat irked him: yet in his good health hee somewhat the lesse regarded it, because he thought whatsoever busines should fall betweene them, himselfe should alway be able to rule both the parties. But in his last sickness, when he perceived his naturall strength so sore enfeebled, that hee despaired all recovery, then he considering the youth of his children, albeit he nothing lesse mistrusted than that that happened: yet well foreseeing that many harmes might grow by their debate, while the youth of his children should lacke discretion of themselves, and good counsel of their friends, of which either party should counsell for their owne commodity, and rather by pleasant advise to win themselves favour, than by profitable advertisement to do his children good, he called some of them before him that were at variance, and in especiall the L. Marques Dorset, the Quenes son by her first husband, and W. the L. Hastings a noble man then Lord Chamberlaine, against whom the Quene specially grudged, for the great favour the king bare him: also for that he thought him secretly familiar with the King in wanton company. Her kinred also bare him fore, as well for that Sir E. had made him captaine of Calais, which office the L. Rivers brother to the Quene claimed of the kings former promise, as for diuers other great gifts which he received, that they looked for. When these Lords with diuers of both the parties were come in presence, the King lifting up himselfe and vnderset with pillowes, as it is reported, on this wise saide vnto them.

The oration of the king in his deathbed.

My Lords my deare kinsmen and allies, in what plight I lie, you see, and I feele. By which the lesse while I take to liue with you, the more deeply am I moued to care in what case I leave you, for such as I leave you, such be my children like to find you. Which if they should, (that God forbid) find you at variance, might hap to fall themselves at war, ere their discretion would serue to set you at peace: yee for their youth, of which I reckon the onely surety to rest in your concord: For it sufficeth not, that all you love them, if each of you hate other. If they were men, your faithfulnes happily would suffice, but childred must be maintained by mens authority, and slipper youth vnder propped with elder counsell, which neyther they can haue, but yee giue it not: ye giue it, if ye greé not. For where each laboreth to breake that the other maketh, and for hatred of each of others person, impugneth each others counsel, there must needes be long ere any good conclusion go forward. And also while eyther party laboreth to be chefe, flatterey shall haue more place then plaine and faithfull advice, of which must néds insue the euill bringing vp of the Prince, whose mind in tender youth infect, shall readily fall to mischiefe and riot, and draw downe with his noble Realme to ruine: but if grace turne him to wisedome, which if God send, then they that by euill means before pleased him best, shalalter fall furthest out of fauor, so that at length euil drifts draw to nought, & good plaine waies prosper. Great variance hath there bin long betwéne you, not alway for great causes: sometime a thing right well intended, our misconstruction turneth vnto worse, or a small displeasure don vs, eyther our owne affection or euil tongues agreeneth. But this wot I well, ye never had so great cause of hatred, as ye haue of loue: That we be all men, that we be christian men, this shall I leave for preachers to tell you (and yet I wot nére whether any preachers words ought more to moue you then his that is by and by going to the place that they all preach of.) But this that I desire you to remember, that the one part of you is of my blood, the other of mine alies, and each of you with other eyther of kinred or affinity, which spirituall kinred of affinity, if the Sacraments of Christs church beare that weight with vs, that would god they did, should no lesse moue vs to charity, than the respect of fleshly consanguinity. Our Lord forbid, that you long together the worse for the selfe cause that you ought to loue the better, & yet that hapeneth, & no where find we so deadly debate as among them, which by nature and law most ought to agree together. Such a pestilent serpent is ambition, and desire of vain glory and soueraignity, which among states, where he once entreth, crépeth forth so far, till with diuision and variance he turneth al to mischiefe, first longing to bee next the best, afterward equal with the best, and at last chiefe and aboue the best. Of which immoderate appetite of worship, & thereby of debate and dissention, what losse, what and sorrow, what trouble hath within these fewe yéres grown in this realme, I pray God as well forget, as we wel remember. Which things if I could aswel haue forsene, as I haue with my more paine than

pleasure

pleasure proued, by Gods blessed lady (that was euer his oathe) I would neuer haue wonne the courtesie of mens knées, with the losse of so many heads. But sith things passed cannot be againe called, much ought we the more beware, by what occasion wee haue taken so great hurt afore, that we ourselves fall not in that occasion againe. Now be those griefes passed, and all is (God be thanked) quiet, and likely right well to prosper in wealthfull peace vnder your cousins my children, if God send them life, and you love. Of which two things, the lesse losse were they, by whom through God did his pleasure, yet should the Realme alway find Kings, and peradventure as good Kings: but if you among your selues in a childs raigne fall at debate, many a good man shall perish, and happily he too, and ye too, ere this land find peace againe. Wherefore in these last words, that ever I like to speake with you, I exhort you and require you all, for the loue that you haue ever borne to me: for the loue that I haue ever borne vnto you: for the loue that our Lord beareth to vs all, from this time forward all griefes forgotte, each of you loue other. Which I verily trust you will, if ye any thing earthly regard, eyther God or your king, affinitie or kinred, this Realme, your owne country, or your owne surety. And therewithall the King no longer inouring to sit vp, laid him downe on his right side, his face toward them: and none was there present that could refraine from weeping. But the Lords recomforting him with as good words as they could, and answering for the time, as they thought to stand with his pleasure, there in his presence, as by their words appeared, each forgaue other, and ioyned their hands together, when (as it after appeared by their deeds) their hearts were far asunder. As soone as the King was departed, the noble Prince his son drew toward London, which at the time of his decease kept his houshold at Ludlow in Wales, which countrey being farre off from the law and recourse to iustice, was begon to be far out of good will, and worsen wilde robbers and rouers, walking at liberty vncorrected.

And for this occasion the Prince was in the life of his father sent thither, to the end that the authority of his presence, should refraine euill disposed persons, from the boldnes of their former outrages. To the gouernance and ordering of this young Prince, at his sending thither, was there appointed Sir Anthonie Wooduille L. Lord Riuers. Riuers and brother vnto the Q. a right honorable man, as valiant of hand, as politike in counsell. Adioyned were there vnto him other of the same party, and in effect euery one as hee was next of the kinne vnto the Quene, was planted next about the Prince.

That drift by the Quene not vnwisely deuised, whereby her blood might of youth bee rooted in the princes fauour, the Duke of Glocester turned vnto their destruction, and vpon that ground set the foundation of all his vnhappy building. For whomsoeuer he perceiued either at variance with them, or bearing himselfe their fauor, he breake vnto them some by mouth, some by writing & secret messengers, that it was neyther reason, nor in any wise to be suffered, that the young king their master and kinsman, should be in the hands and custody of his mothers kinred, sequestred in manner from their company and attendance, of which euery one ought him as faithfull seruices as they, and many of them fare more honorable part of him than his mothers side. Whose blood (quoth he) hauing the Kings pleasure, was full vnmeetely to be matched with his: which now to be as who say remoued from the King, and the lesse noble to bee left about him, is (quoth he) neither honorable to his maiestie, nor vnto vs, & also to his grace no surety, to haue the mightiest of his friends from him, and vnto vs no little ieopardy, to suffer our well pewed euill willers to growe in ouer great authoritie with the Prince in youth, namely, which is light of belefe and some perlipaded. For remember, I trow, King Edward himselfe, albeit he was a man of age and discretion, yet was hee in many things ruled by the best, more then stode either with honor or our profit, or with the commodity of any man else, except onely the immoderate aduancement of themselues. Which whether they sozer thirsted after their own wealth, or our wo, it were hard I wéene to gesse. And if some folkes friendship had not holden better place with the King, then any respect of kinred, they might peraduenture easily haue be trapped and brought to confusion some of vs ere this. Why not as easily as they haue done some other already, as nére of his royall blood as we? But our Lord hath wrought his will: and thanks be to his grace that peril is past. Howbeit as great is growing, if we suffer this young King in our enemies hand, which without his witting might abuse the name of his commandement, to any of our vndoing, which thing God and good prouision forbid.

Of which good prouision none of vs hath any thing the lesse need, for the late made attonement in which the kings pleasure had more place then the parties wils: nor none of vs, I beléeue, doth vnbuske our some to truss a new friend made of an old foe, or to thinke that an howrely kindnes suddenly contract in one houre, continued yet scant a fortenight, should be deper setled in their stomacke then a long accustomed malice, many yeres rooted. With these words and writings & such other, the Duke of Glocester, some set a fire them that were of themselues cold to kindle, and in especiall twaine, Edward Duke of Buckingham, and Will. Lord Hastings and chamberlaine, both men of honor and great power: The one by long succession from his ancestry: the other by his office, and the Kings fauor.

These two not bearing each to other so much loue, as hatred both vnto the Quenes part, in this point accorded together with the Duke of Glocester, that they would vtterly remoue from the Kings company all his mothers friends, vnder the name of their enemies.

Upon this concluded, the Duke of Glocester vnderstanding that the Lords which at that time were about the King, intended to bring him vp to his coronation, accompanied with

such power of their friends, that it should bee hard for him to bring his purpose to passe, without the gathering a great assembly of people, & in manner of open war, whereof the end he wist was doubtfull, and in which the King being on their side, his part should haue the face and name of a rebellion: he secretly therefore by diuers meanes caused the Quéene to be perswaded and brought in the minde, that it neither were need, and also should be ieopardous, the King to come vp strong. For whereas now euery Lord loued other, and none other thing studied vpon, but about the coronation and honor of the King, if the Lords of her kinred should assemble in the Kings name much people, they should giue the Lords, atwixt whom and them hadde borne sometime debate, to feare and suspect, lest they should gather this people not for the kings safegard, whom no man impugned, but for their destruction, hauing more regard to their old variance, then their new attonement: for which cause they should assemble on the other party much people againe for their defence, whose power the wise well farre strecched. And thus should all the Realme fall on a roze. And of all the hurt that thereof should ensue, which was likely not to be little, and the most harme there like to fall where the least would, all the world would put her and her kindred in the wight, and say that they had vnwisely and vntruly also broken the amitie and peace, that the King her husband so prudently made betwéene his kin and hirs in his death bed, and which the other party faithfully obserued.

The Quéene being in this wise perswaded, such word sent vnto her sonne, and vnto her brother, being about the King, and ouer that the Duke of Glocester himselfe and other Lords the chiefe of his bende, wrote vnto the King so reuerently, and to the Quénes friends there so louingly, that they nothing earthly mistrusting brought the King vp in a great hast (not in good spéed,) with a sober company. Now was the K. in his way to London gon from Northampton, when the Dukes of Glocester & Buckingham came thither, where remained behind the Lord Riuers the Kings vncle, intending on the morrow to follow the King, and be with him at Stony Stratford, twelue miles thence, early ere he departed. So was there maor that night much friendly chére betweene these two Dukes and the Lord Riuers a great while. But incontinent after that they were openly with great courtesie departed, and the Lord Riuers lodged, the Dukes secretly with a few of their most priuy friends, set them downe in Councell, wherein they spent a great part of the night: and at their rising in the dawning of the daye, they sent out priuily to their seruants in their Innes and Lodgings about, giuing them commandement, to make themselues shortly ready, for their Lords were to horse backward. Upon which messages, many of their folke were attendant, when many of the Lord Riuers seruants were vnready. Now had these Dukes taken also into their custody the keies of the Inne, that none should passe forth without their licence. And ouer this, in the high way toward Stony Stratford where the King lay, they had bestowed certaine of their folke, that should send backe againe, and compell to returne any man that were gotten out of Northampton toward Stony Stratford, till they should giue other licence: For as much as the Dukes themselues intended for the shew of their diligence, to be the first that should that day attend vpon the Kings highnes out of that Towne: thus bare they folke in hand. But when the Lord Riuers vnderstood the gates closed, and the wayes on euery side beset, neyther his seruants nor himselfe suffered to goe out, perceiuing well so great a thing without his knowledge not begunne for naught, comparing this maner present, with his last nights chére, in so fewe houres so great a chang, maruellously mistiked. Howbeit, sith he could not get away, and kepe himselfe close bee would not, lest he should séeme to hide himselfe for some secret feare of his owne fault, wherof he saw no such cause in himselfe: he determined vpon the surety of his owne conscience, to goe boldly to them, and inquire what this matter might meane: who as soone as they saw, they began to quarrell with him, and say that he intended to set diffiance betweene the King and them, and to bring them to confusion, but it should not lie in his power. And when he began (as he was a very well spoken man) in godly wise to excuse himselfe, they tarried not the end of his answere, but shortly take him and put him in ward: and that done, forthwith went to horseback, and take the way to Stony Stratford, where they found the King with his company, ready to leape on horseback, and depart forward to leaue that lodging for them, because it was to streight for his both companies. And as soone as they came in presence, they alight downe with all their company about them: To whom the Duke of Buckingham said, go afore gentlemen, and yeomen kepe your rowmes.

The Lord Riuers put in ward.

And thus in godly array they came to the King, and on their knées in very humble wise saluted his grace which receiued them in very topous and amiable manner, nothing earthly knowing nor mistrusting as yet: But euen by and by in his presence they picked a quarrell to the Lord Richard Gray, the kings other brother by his mother, saying, that he with the Lord Marques his brother, and the Lord Riuers his vncle had compassed to rule the King and the realme, and to set variance among the states, & to subdue and destroy the noble blod of the realme: Toward the accomplishing whereof they said, that the Lord Marques had entered into the tower of London, and thence taken out the Kings treasure and sent men to the Sea.

The Lord Gray.

All which things these Dukes well wist were done for good purposes and necessary, by the whole councell at London, sauing that somewhat they must say. Unto which words the K. answered: What my brother Marques hath done I cannot say: but in good faith I dare well answere for mine vncle Riuers and my brother here, that they be innocent of any such matter.

ter. Yea my Leage, quoth the Duke of Buckingham, they haue kept their dealing in these matters far from the knowledge of your good grace. And forthwith they arrested the Lord Richard, and Sir Thomas Vaughan, knight, in the Kings presence, and brought the King and all backe vnto Northampton, where they tooke againe further Counsell: And there they sent away from the King whom it pleased them, and set new seruants about him, such as liked better them then him: at which dealing hee wept, and was nothing content, but it bated not. And at dinner, the Duke of Glocester sent a dish from his owne table to the Lord Riuers, praying him to be of good chéere, all should be well enough: and he thanked the Duke, and praied the messenger to beare it to his nephew, the Lord Richard; with the same message for his comfort, as one to whom such aduersity was strange, but himselfe had béene all his daies in vre therewith, and therefore could beare it the better. But for all his comfortable curtesie of the Duke of Glocester, he sent the Lord Riuers, and the Lord Richard, with Sir Thomas Vaughan, into the North Countrey, into diuers places to prison, and afterward all to Pontfract, where they were in conclusion beheaded.

The death of the Lord Riuers and others.

In this wise the Duke of Glocester tooke vpon himselfe the order and gouernance of the young King, whom with much honour, and humble reuerence, he conueyed vpward, toward the City. But anon, the tydings of this matter came hastely to the Quéene, a little before the midnight following, and that in the forest wise, that the King her son was taken, her brother, her son, and other friends arrested, and sent, no man wist whither, to be done with, God wot what. With which tydings, the Quéene in great fright and heauinesse bewailing her childes raigne, her friends mis-chance, and her owne mis-fortune, damning the time that euer she diswaded the gathering of power about the King, gat her selfe in all hast possible with her younger sonne, and her daughters, out of the Palace of Westminster, in which she then lay, into the Sanctuary, lodging her selfe and her company there in the Abbots place.

The Quéene taketh Sanctuary.

Now came there one likewise not long after midnight from the Lord Chamberlaine, vnto the Archbishop of Yorke, then Chancelor of England, to his place, not far from Westminster: And for that he shewed his seruants that he had tidings of so great importance, that his Master gaue him in charge, not to forbeare his rest, they letted not to wake him, nor for to admit this messenger to his bed-side. Of whom hee heard that these Dukes were gone backe with the Kings grace, from Stony Stratford, to Northampton: Notwithstanding, Sir, (quoth he) my Lord sendeth your Lordship word, that there is no feare, for he assureth you that all shall be well. I assure him, quoth the Archbishop, be it as well as it will, it will neuer be so well as we haue séene it: and thereupon, by and by, after the messenger departed; he called to all the haste, all his seruants to be called vp, and so with his owne houshold about him, and euery man weapned, hee tooke the great Seale with him, and caine yet before day vnto the Quéene. About whom he found much heauinesse, rumble, hast, and businesse, carriage and conueyance of her stuffe into Sanctuary, Chests, Coffers, Packs, Fardells, trussed all on mens backs, no man vnoccupied, some loading, some going, some discharging, some comming for more, some breaking downe the walls, to bring the nert way, and some yet drew to them to helpe to carry a wrong way.

The Quéene her selfe sate alone, alow on the rushes all desolate and dismaied, whom the Archbishop comforted in the best manner he could, shewing her, that he trusted the matter was nothing so forze as she take it for, and that he was put in good hope, and out of feare, by the message sent him from the Lord Chamberlaine: Ah, woe worth him (quoth she) for he is one of them that laboureth to destroy me and my blod.

Madame (quoth he) be ye of good cheere, for I assure you, if they crowne any other King then your sonne, whom they now haue with them, we shall on the morrow crowne his brother, whom you haue here with you. And héere is the great Seale, which in likewise, as that Noble Prince, your husband, deliuered it vnto me, so héere I deliuer it vnto you, to the vse and behalfe of your sonne, and therewith he betooke her the great Seale, and departed home againe, yet in the dawning of the day. By which time, he might in his Chamber window see all the Thames full of Boats of the Duke of Glocesters seruants, watching, that no man should goe to Sanctuary, nor none should passe vnlearned: Then was there great commotion and mutemur as well in other places about, as specially in the City, the people diuerly drumming vpon this dealling. And some Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, either for fauour of the Queen, or for feare of themselues, assembled in sundry companies, and went flock-meale in harnesse: and many also, for that they reckoned this demeanor attempted, not so specially against the other Lords, as against the King himselfe, in the disturbance of his coronation. But then by and by, the Lords assembled together, toward which meeting, the Archbishop of Yorke, fearing that it would be aferibed (as it was indéede) to his ouermuch lightnesse, that hee so suddenly had resbed vp the great Seale to the Quéene, to whom the custody thereof nothing pertained, without special commandement of the King, secretly sent for the Seale againe, and brought it with him, after the customable manner. And at this meeting, the Lord Hastings, whose truth toward the King no man doubted, nor needed to doubt, perswaded the Lords, to beleeue, that the Duke of Glocester was sure, and fastly faithfull to his Prince, and that the Lord Riuers, and Lord Richard, with the other Knights, were for matters attempted by them against the Dukes of Glocester and Buckingham, put vnder arrest for their surety, not for the Kings ieopardy: and that they were also in safe ward, and there no longer should remaine then till the matter were, not by the

Dukes onely, but also by all the other Lords of the Kings Councell indifferently examined, and by other directions ordered, and either iudged or appeased.

But one thing hee aduised them, beware that they iudged not the matter too farre-forth, ere they knew the truth, nor turning their priuate grudges into the common hurt, irking, and prouoking men vnto anger, and disturbing the Kings Coronation, toward which, the Dukes were comming vp, that they might, peraduenture, bring the matter so farre out of ioynt, that it should neuer be brought in frame againe. Which strife, if it should happen, as it were likely, to come to a field, though both parties were in all things equall, yet should the authority be on that side where the King is himselfe. With these perswasions of the Lord Hastings, whereof part himselfe beleeued, of part he wist the contrary, these commotions were somewhat appeased, but especially by that that the Dukes of Glouceſter and Buckingham, were so neere, and came so shortly on with the King, in none other manner, with none other pompe or semblance then to his Coronation, causing the fame to be blowne about, that these Lords and knights which were taken, had contrined the destruction of the Dukes of Glouceſter and Buckingham, and of other the Noble blood of the realme, to the end that themselues would alone demeane and gouerne the King at their pleasure.

And for the colourable proofe thereof, such of the Dukes seruants as rode with the Carts of their stuffe, that were taken (among which stuffe, no marueil, though some were harneſle, which at the breaking vp of the houshold, must needes either be brought away, or cast away) they shewed vnto the people, all the waies as they went: Lo, here be the barrells of harneſle that these traytors had priuily conueyed in their carriage to destroy the Noble Lords withall.

This deuice, albeit it made the matter to wise men more vnlikely, wel perceiuing that the intenders of such a purpose would rather haue had their harneſle on their backs, then to haue bound them vp in barrells: yet much part of the common people were therewith very well satisfied and said it were almes to hang them.

The King comming to London.

When the King approched nere to the City, Edmond Shaa, Gold-smith, then Maior, with William White, and John Mathew, Sheriffes, and all the other Aldermen in Scarlet, with 500. horse of the Citizens in violet, receiued him reuerently at Harnsey, and riding from thence accompanied him into the City, which hee entred the fourth day of May, the first and last yere of his raigne.

The King was lodged in the Bishops Palace, where was kept a great Councell, and there was sworne to the King, the Duke of Glouceſter, the Duke of Buckingham, and all the Lords.

But the Duke of Glouceſter bare him in open sight so reuerently to the Prince, with all semblance of loue vnfeigned, that from the obloquie in which hee was so late before, hee was suddenly raised into so great truſt, that at the Councell next assembled, hee was made the onely man, those, and thought most meete to be Protector of the King and his Realme, so that (were it destiny, or were it folly) the Lambe was betaken to the Wolfe to keepe. At which Councell also, the Archbishop of Yorke, Chancellor of England which had deliuered vp the great Seale to the Quéene, was therefore greatly reproued, and the Seale taken from him, and deliuered to Doctor Russell, Bishop of Lincolne, a wise man, and a good, and of much experience, and one of the best learned men, vndoubtedly, that England had in his time. Diuers Lords and Knights were appointed vnto diuers rowmes. The Lord Chamberlaine, and some other kept still their Offices that they had before.

The Protector made.

The Bishop of Lincolne made Lord Chancellor.

Now all were it, so that the Protector so sore thirsted for the finishing of that hee had begunne, that thought euery day a yere, till it was atchiued, yet durst he no further attempt, as long as hee had but halfe his prey in his hand: well witting, that if hee depoſed the one brother, all the Realme would fall to the other, if hee either remained in Sanctuary, or should happily be shortly conueyed to his farther liberty. Wherefore incontinent, at the next méeting of the Lords at the Councell, hee proposed vnto them, that it was a heinous déed of the Quéen, and proceeding of great malice toward the Kings Councellors, that she should keepe in Sanctuary the Kings brother from him, whose speciall pleasure and comfort were to haue his brother with him. And that by her done to none other intent, but to bring all the Lords in obloquie, and murmour of the people: as though they were not to be truſted with the Kings brother, that by the assent of the Nobles of the Land, were appointed, as by the Kings nérest friends, to the tuition of his royall person. The prosperity whereof standeth (quoth he) not all in keeping from enemies, or all viand, but partly also in recreation, and moderate pleasure, which hee cannot in his tender youth take in the company of ancient persons, but in the familiar conuersation of those that be neither far vnder, nor far aboue his age, nay the leſſe of estate conuenient to accompany his Noble Paieſty; wherefore, with whom, rather then with his owne brother? And if any man think this consideration (which I think no man thinketh that loueth the King) let him consider, that sometime, without small things, greater cannot stand. And verily, it redounded greatly to the dishonour both of the Kings highneſle, and of all vs, that héere about his grace, to haue it runne in euery mans mouth, not in this Realme onely, but also in other Lands (as still words walke farre) that the Kings brother should be faine to kéepe Sanctuary. For euery man will weene, that no man will so doe for nought. And such euill opinion once faſtened in mens hearts, hard it is to wraſt out, and many grow to more griefe then any man can léere diuine: wherefore mée thinketh it were not worſt to send vnto the Quéene, for the redreſſe of this matter, some honourable truſty man, such as both tendereth the Kings weale, and the honour of his Councell, and is also in fauour and credence with her. For all which considerations, none seemeth mée more méete, then our reuerend Father héere present, my Lord Cardinall, who may in this matter doe most good of any man, if it please him to take the paine, which I doubt not of his goodneſle he will not refuſe, for the Kings sake and ours, and wealth of the young Duke himselfe, the Kings most honourable brother, and after my Soueraigne Lord himselfe, most deare Nephew, considered that thereby shall be ceaſed the slanderous rumour and obloquie now going, and the hurts auoyded, that thereof might ensue, and much reſt and quiet grow to all the Realme. And if she be percaſe so obſtinate, and so précisely set vpon her owne will, that neither his wiſe nor faithfull aduertisement cannot moue her, nor any mans reason content her: then shall we by mine aduice, by the Kings authority, fetch him out of that prison, and bring him to his Noble presence, in whose continuall company he shall be so well cherished, and so honorably intreated, that all the world shall to our honour and her reproch perceiue, that it was onely malice, frowardneſle, or folly, that caused her to keepe him there: this is my minde in this matter for this time, except any of your Lordships any thing perceiue to the contrary, for neuer shall I by Gods grace, so wed my ſelfe to mine owne will, but that I shall be ready to change it vpon your better aduices.

The Protector to Queene.

When the Protector had said, all the Counſell affirmed, that the motion was good and reasonable, and to the King and the Duke his brother, honourable, and a thing that should ceaſe great murmur in the Realme, if the mother might be by good meanes induced to deliuer him. Which thing the Archbishop of Yorke, whom they all agreed to be thereto most conuenient, tooke vpon him to moue her, and therein to doe his vttermost deuoire. Howbeit, if shee could in no wiſe be intreated with her good will to deliuer him, then thought hée, and such other as were of the spirituality present, that it were not in any wiſe to be attempted, to take him out against her will. For it would be a thing that should turne to the great grudge of all men, and high displeaſure of God, if the priuiledge of that holy place should now bée broken, which had so many yéres béene kept, which both Kings and Popes so good had granted, so many had confirmed, and which holy ground was more then 500. yéeres agoo by Saint Peter in his owne person in spirit, accompanied with great multitude of Angells by night so specially hallowed, and dedicated to God (for the proofe whereof, they haue yet in the Abbey, Saint Peters Cope to shew) from that time hitherwards, was there neuer so vndeuout a King, that durſt that sacred place violate, or so holy a Bishop that durſt it presume to consecrate. And therefore (quoth the Archbishop of Yorke) God forbid that any man should for any thing, earthly, enterprize to breake the immunition and liberty of the sacred Sanctuary. that hath béene the safeguard of so many a good mans life. And I truſt (quoth hée) with Gods grace, wée

Sanctuary.

shall not méede it. But for any manner méede, I would not wée should doe it. I truſt that shee shall be with reason contented, and all things in good manner obtained. And if it happen that I bring it not so to paſſe, yet shall I toward it so farre forth doe my best, that yet shall all well perceiue, that no lacke of my deuoire, but the mothers dread and womanish feare, shall be the let. Womanish feare, nay, womanish frowardneſle (quoth the Duke of Buckingham) for I dare take it vpon my soule, she well knoweth, shée néedeth no such thing to feare, either for her sonne, or for her ſelfe. For as for her, héere is no man that will be at warre with women: would God some of her kinne were women too, and then should all be sone in reſt. Howbeit, there is none of her kinne the leſſe loued, for that they be her kinne, but for their owne euill deseruing. And natheleſſe, if we loued neither her nor her kin, yet were there no cause to thinke that we should hate the Kings Noble brother, to whose grace, we our ſelues be of kin: whose honor if she as much desired, as our dishonor, and as much regard took to his wealth, as to her owne will, she would be as loth to ſuffer him from the King as any of vs be. For if she haue wit (as would God she had as god will as she hath néed wit) she reckoneth her ſelfe no wiſer then shée thinketh some that be heere, of whose faithfull minde she nothing doubteth, but verily beleeueth and knoweth that they would be as sory of his harme, as her ſelfe, and yet would haue him from her, if shee bide there: and wée all (I thinke) content, that both be with her, if she come thence, and bide in such place where they may with the honor be.

Now then, if she refuſe in the deliuerance of him, to follow the Counſell of them, whose wiſdome she knoweth, whose truth she well truſteth: it is either to perceiue that frowardnes letteth her, and not feare. But goe to, suppose that she feare (as who may let her to feare her owne shaddow) the more she feareth to deliuer him, the more ought wée feare to leaue him in her hands. For if shee cast such fond doubts that shee feare his hurt: then will shee feare that he shall be fetcht thence. For she will some thinke, that if men were set (which God forbid) vpon so great a miſchiefe, the Sanctuary would little let them: which as good men might (as me thinketh) without sinne, somewhat leſſe regard then they doe.

Now then, if her doubt, leſt hee might be fetched from her, it is not likely enough that she should send him some where out of the Realme. Verily I looke for none other. And I doubt not, but shee now as sore minded it, as wée the let thereof. And if shee might happen to bring that to paſſe, (as it were no great matterre, wée letting her alone) all the world would say, that wée were a wiſe sort of Councellors about a King, that let his brother be cast away vnder our noſes. And therefore, I enforce you faithfully for my minde, I will rather waugre her minde, fetch him away, then leaue him there, till her frowardneſle and fond feare conuey him awap. And yet will I breake no Sanctuary therefore. For verily fithy the priuiledges

of

of that place and other like haue beene of long continued, I am not hee that would be about to breake them. And in good faith, if they were now to begin, I would not be hee that should be about to make them.

Yet will I not say nay, but that it is a deede of pitty, that such men as the Sea, or their euill debtors haue brought in poverty, should haue some place of liberty, to keepe their bodies out of the danger of their cruell creditors.

And also if the Crowne happen (as it hath done) to come in question while either part taketh other as traytors, I will well there be some places of refuge for both.

But as for theeues, of which these places be full, and which neuer fall from the craft, after they once fall thereto, it is pitty the Sanctuary should serue them: and much more, manquellers, whom God bad to take from the Altar, and kill them, if their murther were wilfull. And where it is otherwise, there need we not the sanctuaries that God appointed in the old Law. For if either necessity, his owne defence, or misfortune draweth him to that deede, a pardon serueth, which either the Law granteth of course, or King of pitty may.

Then loke me now, how few Sanctuary-men there be, whom any fauorable necessity compelled to goe thither, and then see on the other side, what a sort there be commonly therein of them, whom wilfull vnthriftinesse hath brought to naught.

What a rabble of theeues, murtherers, and malicious heynous traytors, and that in two places especially? The one at the elbow of the City, the other in the very bowells. I dare well answer it, weygh the good that they doe, with the hurt that commeth of them, and yee shall find it much better to lacke both, then haue both. And this I say, although they were not abused as they now be, and so long haue bin, that I feare me euer they will be, while men be afraid to set their handes to the amendment, as though God and S. Peter were the patrons of vngratious liuing.

Westminster and Saint Martins.

Now vnthrifts riot, and run in debt, vpon the boldnesse of these places, yea, and rich men run thither with prodemens goods, there they build, there they spend, and bid their creditors goe whistle them.

The abuse of Sanctuaries

Mens wiues run thither with their husbands plate, and say, they dare not abide with their husbands for beating.

Theeues bring thither their stolne goods, and there liue thereon.

There because they new robberies, nightly they steale out, they rob and reaue, and kill and come in againe, as though those places gaue them not only a safegard for the harme they haue done, but a licence also to doe more. Howbeit, much of this mischiefe, if wise-men would set their handes to it, might be amended with great thanks of God, and no breach of the priuiledge.

The residue, (this long agoe, I wot neare what Pope, and what Prince more pittious than politicke, hath granted it, and other men since, of a certaine religious feare, haue not broken it, let vs take a paine therewith, and let it a Gods name stand in force, as farre forth as reason will, which is not fully so farre, as may serue to let vs of the fetching forth of this Noble man to his honour and wealth, out of that place, in which hee neither is, nor can be a Sanctuary-man.

A Sanctuary serueth allway to defend the body of that man that standeth in danger abroad, not of great hatt onely, but also of lawfull hurt, for against vnlawfull harmes, neuer Pope, nor King intended to priuiledge any one place, for that priuiledge hath euery place: knoweth any man any place wherein it is lawfull one man to doe another wrong?

That no man vnlawfully take hurt, that liberty, the King, the Law, and euery nature forbiddeth in euery place, and maketh, to that regard, for euery man, euery place a Sanctuary.

But where a man is by lawfull meanes in perill, there needeth he the tuition or some speciall priuiledge, which is the onely ground and cause of all Sanctuaries: from which necessity, this Noble Prince is farre, whose loue to his King, nature and kindred prooueth, whose innocency to all the world, his tender youth proueth, and so Sanctuary, as for him, neyther none he needeth, nor also none can haue.

When come not to Sanctuary, as they come to baptisme, to require it by their Godfathers, he must alke it himselfe, that must haue it, and reason, sith no man hath cause to haue it, but whose conscience of his owne fault maketh him faine, need to require it: what will then hath ponder habe: which and if he had discretion to require it, if neede were, I dare say, would naie be right angry with them that kepe him there: and I would thinke without any scruple of conscience, without any breach of priuiledge, to be somewhat more homely with them that be there Sanctuary-men inside.

For if one goe to Sanctuary with another mans goods, why should not the King leauing his body at liberty, satisfie the partie of his goods, euen within the Sanctuary? for neyther King nor Pope, can giue any place such a priuiledge, that it shall discharge a man of his debts, being able to pay: and with that, diuers of the Clergie that were present, whether they said it for his pleasure, or as they thought, agreed plainely, that by the Law of God, and of the Church, the goods of a Sanctuary-man should be deliuered in payment of his debts, and stolne goods to the owner, and onely liberty reserued him to get his liuing with the labour of his hands. Verily (quoth the Duke) I thinke you say very truth, and what if a mans wife will take Sanctuarie, because she list to runne from her husband? I would weene, if she could alledge none other cause, he may lawfully without any displeasure to Saint Peter, take her out of Saint Peters Church by the arme. And if no body may be taken out of Sanctuary, that (saith hee) will bide there, then if a child will take Sanctuary, because he feareth to goe to Schole, his Master must let him alone. And as simple as that sample is, yet is there lesse reason in our case then in that: for therein, though

thought it be a childish feare, yet is there, at the least wise, some feare, and therein is there none at all. And berily, I haue often heard of Sanctuary-men, but I neuer heard earst of Sanctuary-children. And therefore, as for the conclusion of my minde, who so may haue deserued to neede it, if they thinke it for their surety, let them keepe it. But hee can be no Sanctuary-man, that neither hath wisedome to desire it, nor malice to deserue it, whose life or liberty can by no lawfull processe stand in leopardy. And hee that taketh one out of Sanctuary to doe him good, I say plainely, that he breaketh no Sanctuary.

When the Duke had done, the temporall men whole, and a good part of the spirituall also, thinking no hurt earthly ment toward the young babe, condescended in effect, that if hee were not deliuered, he should be fetched: Howbeit, they thought it all best, in the auoyding of all manner of rumour, that the Lord Cardinall should first allaple to get him with her goodwill. And thereupon, all the Councell came vnto the Star-chamber at Westminster, and the Lord Cardinall leauing the Protector with the Councell in the Starre-chamber, departed into the Sanctuary to the Queene, with diuers other Lords with him, were it for the respect of his honor, or that the should by presence of so many, perceiue that this errand was not one mans minde: or were it for that the Protector intended not in this matter, to trust to any one man alone, or else that if the finally were determined to keepe him, some of that company had haply secret instruction incontinent, maugre her mind, to take him, & to leaue her no respite to conuey him, which she was likely to mind after this matter broken to her, if her time would in any wise serue her.

When the Queene, and these Lords were come together in presence, the Lord Cardinall shewed vnto her, that it was thought vnto the Protector, and vnto the whole Councell, that her keeping of the Kings brother in that place, was the thing, which highly sounded, not onely to the great rumour of the people, and their obloquie, but also to the importable griefe and displeasure of the Kings royall Maiesty, to whole grace it were as singular comfort to haue his naturall brother in his company, as it was their both dishonor, and all theirs, & hers also, to suffer him in Sanctuary, as though the one brother stod in danger and perill of the other. And her shewed her, that the Councell therefore had sent him vnto her, to require her the deliuery of him, that hee might be brought vnto the Kings presence at his liberty, out of that place, which they reckoned as a prison, and there should he be demeaned, according to his estate, and he, in this doing, should both doe great good to the Realme, pleasure to the Councell, and profit to her selfe, succour to her friends that were in distresse, and ouer that (which he wist well he specially tendred) not only great comfort and honour to the King, but also to the young Duke himselfe, whose both great wealth it were to be together, as well for many greater causes, as also for their both disport, and recreation: which thing, the Lord esteemed no lesse, though it pretended light, well ponoring that their pouth without recreation and play, cannot endure, nor any stranger, for the coniecture of their both ages and estates, so meetely in that point for any of them, as either of them for other.

My Lord (quoth the Queene) I say not nay, but that it were very conuenient that this Gentleman, whom ye require, were in company of the King his brother: and in good faith, me thinketh it were as great commodity to them both, as for yet a while, to be in the custody of their mother, the tender age conforted of the elder of them both, but specially the younger, which besides his infancy, that also needeth good looking to, hath a while beene so sore diseased, bered with sickneese, and is so newly rather a little amended, then well recouered, that I dare put no person earthly in trust with his keeping, but my selfe onely, considering that there is (as Phylitians say, and as wee also finde) double the perill in the recouination, that was in the first sickeneese, with which disease, Nature being sore laboured, sore wearied, and weakned, wareth the lesse able to beare out and sustaine a new sorfeit. And albeit there might be fonnd other that would happily doe their best vnto him, yet is there none that ye know better how to order him, then I that so long haue kept him: or is more tenderly like to cherish him, then his owne mother that bare him. No man denieth, good Madam (quoth the Cardinall) but that your grace were of all folke most necessarie about your children: and so would all the Councell not only be content, but glad that ye were, if it might stand with your pleasure, to be in such place as might stand with their honour. But if you doe appoint your selfe to tarry heere, then thinke they it more conuenient that the Duke of Yorke were with the King honourably at his liberte, to the comfort of them both, then here as a Sanctuary-man, to their both dishonor and obloquie, sith there is not allway so great necessity to haue the childe to be with the mother, but that occasion may sometime be such, that it should be more expedient to keepe him elsewhere, which in this well appeareth, that at such time, as your dearest sonne then Prince, and now King, should for his honor, and good order of the Country, keepe houshold in Wales, far out of your company: your grace was well content there with your selfe. Not very well content, quoth the Queene: And yet the case is not like, for the one was then in health, and the other is now sicke: in which case, I marnell greatly, that my Lord Protector, is so desirous to haue him in his keping, where if the childe in his sickneese mis-carry by nature, yet might he runne into slander and suspition of fraude, and where they call it a thing to sore against my childes honour, and theirs also, that he bideth in this place: it is all their honours there to suffer him abide, where no man doubteth he shall be best kept, and that is here, while I am here, which as yet intend not to

The Queene.

rours forth and ieopard my selfe after other of my frends, which would God were rather here in surety with me, than I were there in ieopardy with them. Why Madam (quoth another Lord) know you any thing why they should be ieopardy? Nay verily Sir, quoth shee, nor why they should be in prison neither, as they now be. But it is, I trowe, no great maruell, though I feare lest those that haue not letted to put them in durance, without colour, will let as little to procure their destruction without cause. The Cardinall made a countenance to the other Lord, that hee should harpe no more vpon that string, and then said he to the Queen, that he nothing doubted, but that those Lords of her honorable kin, which, as yet, remained vnder arrest, should vpon the matter examined doe well enough: and as toward her Noble person, neither was, neither could be any manner ieopardy. Whereby should I trust that (quoth the Queene) in that I am guiltelesse as though they were guilty, in that I am with their enemies better loued than they? When they hate them for my sake, in that I am so mere of kinne to the King? and how farre they be off, if that would helpe, as God send grace it hurt not, and therefore, as for me, I purpose not, as yet, to depart hence. And as for this Gentleman, my sonne, I mind, that he shall be where I am, till I see further: for I assure you, for that I see some men so greedy, without any substantiall cause to haue him: This maketh mee much the more fearder to deliuer him. Truly Madam, quoth he, and the fearder that you be to deliuer him, the fearder haue here other men to suffer you to keepe him, lest your causelesse feare, might cause you farther to conuey him: and many be there, that thinke he can haue no priuiledge in this place, which neither can haue will to aske, nor malice to deserue it, and therefore they reckon no priuiledge broken, though they fetch him out, which, if you finally refuse to deliuer him, I verily thinke they will. So much dread hath my Lord his Uncle, for the tender loue hee beareth him, lest your grace should perhappe send him away.

The Queen. Ah Sir (quoth the Quéene) hath the Protector so tender zeale, that hee feareth nothing but lest hée should escape him? Whiniest he that I would send him hence, which neyther is in the plight to send out, and in what place could I reckon him sure, if he be not sure in the Sanctuary? Whereof was there neuer tyrant yet so dinelish, that durst presume to breake. And I trust, God is as strong now to withstand his aduersaries as euer he was. But my sonne can deserue no Sanctuary, and therefore hee cannot haue it. For soth he hath found a goodly glose, by which that place that may defend a thiefe, may not saue an innocent. But hée is in no ieopardy, nor hath no neede thereof: would God he had not. Doth the Protector, I pray God he may proue a Protector, trowest hée that I perceiue not, whereunto his painted processe draweth? it is not honorable that the Duke bide here: it were comfortable for them both, that hee were with his brother, because the King lacketh a play-fellow, be yee sure. I pray God send them both better play-fellowes then him, that maketh so high a matter in such a trifling pretext: as though there could none be found to play with the King, but if his brother, that hath no lust to play for sickenesse, come out of Sanctuary, out of his safegard to play with him. As though Princes, as young as they be, could not play, but with their Peeres, or children could not play, but with their kindred, with whom for the more part they agree much worse then with strangers. But the child cannot require his priuiledge: who told him so? Hée shall heare him aske it, and hée will. Howbeit, this is a gay matter, suppose he could not aske it, suppose he would not aske it, suppose he would aske to goe out, if I say hee shall not: if I aske the priuiledge but for my selfe, I say, hee that against my will taketh him out, breaketh the Sanctuary. Seemeth this liberty for my person onely, or for my goods too? See may not hence take my Horse from mee, and may you take my gold from me? He also is my ward: for as my learned Councell theweth me, sith hee hath nothing by descent holden by Knights seruice, the Law maketh his mother his guardian. Then may no man, I suppose, take my ward from me out of Sanctuarie, without the breach of Sanctuary. And if my priuiledge could not serue him, nor he aske it for himselfe, yet sith the Law committeth mee the custody of him, I may require it for him except the Law giue a childe a guardian onely for his goods and lands, discharging him of the cure and safe keeping of his body, for which onely both lands and goods serue.

¶ And if examples be sufficient to obtaine priuiledge for my childe, I neede not farre to seeke, for in this place, in which now hée (and which is now in question, whether my childe may take benefit of it) mine other sonne (now King) was borne, and kept in his cradle, and preferred to a more prosperous fortune, which I pray God long to continue. And as all you know, this is not the first time that I haue taken Sanctuary. For when my Lord, my husband was banished, and thrust out of his Kingdome, I fled hither, being great with child, and heere I bare the Prince. And when my Lord, my husband returned safe againe, and had the victory, then went I hence to welcome him home, and fro thence I brought my babe the Prince, vnto his father, when he first tooke him in his armes. And I pray God that my sons Palace may be as great safegard vnto him now raigning, as this place was sometime to the Enemy. In which place, I intend to keepe his brother, sith, &c. * Wherefore here intend I to keepe him, méer mans Law ferueth the guardian to keepe the infant. The Law of nature willeth the mother to keepe the child, Gods Law priuiledgeth the Sanctuary, and the Sanctuary my sonne, sith I feare to put him in the Protectors hands, that hath his brother already, and were (if both failed) inheritor to the crowne. The cause of my feare hath no man to go to examine, and yet feare I no farther then the Law feareth, which, as learned men tell me, forbiddeth euery

This that is between the marke ¶ and this * was not written by him in English, but is translated out of this history which he wrote in Latine.

man the custody of them, by whose death hée may inherit lesse land then a kingdome. I can no more, but wheresoeuer he be that breaketh this holy Sanctuary, I pray God shortly send him need of Sanctuary, when hée may not come to it: For taken out of Sanctuary would I not my mortall enemy were.

The Lord Cardinall perceiuing that the Queen ward euer the longer the further off, and also that she began to kindle and chafe, and spake more biting words against the Protector, and such as he neither beleued, and was also loth to heare; he said to her for a finall conclusion, that hée would no longer dispute the matter, but if she were content to deliuer the Duke to him, and to the other Lords present, he durst lay his own body and soule both in pledge, not onely for his surety, but also for his estate. And if she would giue them a resolute answer to the contrary, he would forthwith depart there withall, and thus whole would with this businesse afterwards, for he neuer intended more to moue her in the matter, in which shee thought that hee and all other also, saue her selfe, lacked eyther wit or truth: wit, if they were so dull, that they could nothing perceiue what the Protector intended; truth, if they should procure her sonne to be deliuered into his hands, in whom they should perceiue toward the childe any euill intend. d.

The Queene with these words, stood a good while in a great study: And for as much as her seemed the Cardinall readier to depart, then some of the remnant, and the Protector himselfe ready at hand, for that the berily thought shee could not keepe him there, but that he should incontinent be taken thence; and to conuey him elsewhere, neither had the time to serue her, nor place determined, nor persons appointed, all things vnready: This pellage came on her so suddenly, nothing lesse looking for, then to haue him fetcht out of Sanctuary, which she thought to be now best in such places about, that he could not be conueyed out vntaken; and partly (as shee thought) it might fortune her feare to be false, so well shee wist it was eyther needlesse, or bootlesse: wherefore, if shee should needes goe from him, thee deemed it best to deliuer him. And ouer that, of the Cardinalls faith shee nothing doubted, nor of some other Lords neyther, whom hée there saw. Which as shee feared lest they might be deceiued, so was the well assured they would not be corrupted: then thought shee, it should yet make them the more warily to looke to him, and the more circumspectly to see to his surety, if shee with her owne hands betooke him to them of trust. And at the last, thee tooke the young Duke by the hand, and said vnto the Lords: My Lords (quoth shée) and all my Lords, I neuer am so vnwise to mistrust your wits, nor so suspitious, to mistrust your truthes: of which thing I purpose to make you such a proofe, as if either of both lacked in you, might turne both mée to great sorrow, the Realme to much harme, and you to great reproch. For lo, heere is (quoth shée) this Gentleman, whom I doubt not but I could heere keepe safe, if I would, whatsoeuer any man say: and I doubt not also, but there be some abroad so deadly enemies vnto my blood, that if they wist where any of it lay in their owne body, they would let it out. Wée haue also experience that the desire of a Kingdome knoweth no kindred: The brother hath béene the brothers bane: and may the Nephewes be sure of their Uncle? each of these children is the others defence, while they be alunder, and each of their liues lyeth in the others body. Keepe one safe, and both be sure, and nothing for them both more perilous, then to be both in one place. For what wise Merchant aduentureth all his goods in one Ship? All this notwithstanding, heere I deliuer him, and his brother in him, to keepe, into your hands, of whom I shall aske them both before God and the world. Faithfull yee be, that wot I well, and I know well yee be wise. Power and strength to keepe him if you list, neyther lacke yee of your selfe, nor can lacke helpe in this case: And if yee cannot else where, then may you leaue him heere. But onely one thing I beseech you, for the truth which his father put in you euer, and for the truth that I put you in now, that as farre as you think that I feare too much, be you well ware that you feare not as farre too little. And therewithall she said vnto the childe, farewell mine owne worke sonne, God send you good keeping: let mée kisse you yet once ere you goe, for God knoweth when we shall kisse together againe: And therewith shée kissed him, and blessed him, turned her backe and wept, and went her way, leauing the child weeping as fast. When the Lord Cardinall, and those other Lords with him had receiued this young Duke, they brought him into the Starre-Chamber, where the Protector tooke him in his armes and kissed him, with these words: Now welcome my Lord, euen with all my very hert: And hée said in that, of likelihood as hée thought. Thereupon forthwith they brought him vnto the King his brother, into the Bithops Palace at Pauls, and from thence, to the Citty honourably into the Tower, out of the which, after that day, they neuer came abroad.

This that is between the marke ¶ and this * was not written by him in English, but is translated out of this history which he wrote in Latine.

¶ When the Protector had both the children in his hands, hée opened himselfe more boldly, both to certaine other men, and also chiefly to the Duke of Buckingham. Although I know that many thought that the Duke was priuy to all the Protectors counsell, euen from the beginning, and some of the Protectors friends said, that the Duke was the first mouer of the Protector to this matter, sending a priuy messenger vnto him, straight after King Edwards death. But other againe, which knew better the subtill wit of the Protector, deny that hee euer opened his enterprize to the Duke, vntill he had brought to passe the things before rehearsed. But when he had imprisoned the Quéenes kinsfolke, and gotten both her sonnes into his owne hands, then hee opened the rest of his purpose with lesse feare to them whom he thought méet for the matter, and specially to the Duke, who being won to his purpose, be though this strength

This that is between the marke ¶ and this * was not written by him in English, but is translated out of this history which he wrote in Latine.

woxe then halfe increased. The matter was
broken vnto the Duke by subtill folkes, and such
as were their crafts-maisters in the handling
of such wicked deuices: who declared vnto him
that the young King was offended with him for
his kinsfolkes sake, and if he were ever able, he
would reuenge them: who would pricke him
forward thereunto, if they escaped (for they
would remember their imprisonment) or else if
they were put to death, without doubt, the yong
King would be carefull for their deaths, whose
imprisonment was grieuous vnto him. And that
with repenting, the Duke should nothing availe,
for there was no way left to redeeme his offence
by benefits, but he should sooner destroy him-
selfe then saue the King, who with his brother
and his kinsfolkes he saw in such places impri-
soned, as the Protector might with a becke de-
stroy them all: and that it were no doubt but
he would doe it indeede, if there were any new
enterprize attempted. And that it was likely,
that as the Protector, had prouided priuy guard
for himselfe, so had he spyalls for the Duke, and
and traines to catch him, if he should be against
him, and that peraduenture from them, whom
he least suspected. For the state of things, and
the dispositions of men were then such, that a
man could not well tell whom he might trust,
or whom he might feare.

These things, and such like, being beaten in-
to the Dukes minde, brought him to that point,
that where hee had repented the way that he had
entred, yet would he goe forth in the same, and
since he hath once begunne, he would stoutly goe
through. And therefore to this wicked enterprize
which he beleeued could not be vnpaid, he bent
himselfe, and went through, and determined, that
since the common mischiefe could not be amen-
ded, hee would turne it as much as he might to
his owne commodity.

Then it was agreed that the Protector should
haue the Dukes ayde to make him King, and
that the Protectors onely lawfull sonne should
marry the Dukes daughter, and that the Protec-
tor should grant him the quiet possession of the
Castledome of Hertford, which he claimed as
his inheritance, and could never obtaine it in
King Edwards time: Besides these requests of
the Duke, the Protector of his owne minde pro-
mised him a great quantitie of the Kings treas-
sure, and of his houshold stuffe. And when they
were thus at a point betweene themselues, they
went about to prepare for the coronation of the
young King, as they would haue it seeme. And
that they might turne both the eyes and mindes
of men from perceiuing of their drifts other
where, the Lords being sent for from all parts
of the Realme, came thicke to the solemnity:
But the Protector, and the Duke after that,
that they had sent the Lord Cardinall, the Arch-
bishop of Yorke, then Lord Chancelor, the Bi-
shop of Ely, the Lord Stanley, and the Lord Ha-
stings, then Lord Chamberlaine, with many o-
ther Noble-men to commune and deuise about
the coronation in one place, as fast were they in
another place contryuing the contrary, and to
make the Protector King. To which Councell,
albeit there were admitted very few, and they
were secret: yet began there heere and there a-
bout, some manner of muttering among the peo-
ple, as though all should not long be well, though
they neuer wist what they feared, nor where-
fore, were it that before such great things mens
hearts of a secret instinct of nature mis-giue
them, as the Sea without winde swelleth of
himselfe, sometime before a tempest: or were
it that some one man haply somewhat perceiu-
ing, filled many men with suspition, though he
shewed few men what he knew. Howbeit, some-
what the dealing it selfe made men to muse on
the matter, though the councell were close. For
by little and little all folke withdrew from the
Tower, and drew to Crosbies in Bishopps-gate
streete, where the Protector kept his household. The Protector had the resort, the
King in manner desolate.

Crosbies place.

While some for their business made suite to
them that had the doing, some were by their
friends secretly warned, that it might happily
turne them to no good, to be too much attend-
dant about the King, without the Protectors
appointment, which remooued also diuers of
the Princes old seruants from him, and set new
about him.

Thus many things comming together, part-
ly by chance, partly of purpole, caused at length
not common people only, that wound with
the winde, but wise-men also, and some Lords,
eke to marke the matter, and muse thereon, so
farre forth, that the Lord Stanley, that was af-
ter Earle of Darby, wisely mistrusted it, and
said vnto the Lord Hastings, that mee much mis-
liked these two seuerall Councells. For while
wee (quoth hee) talke of one matter in the one
place, little wot we whereof they talke in the o-
ther place. My Lord (quoth the Lord Hastings)
of my life never doubt you: for while one man
is there, which is never thence, never can there
be thing once moued, that should sound amisse
toward mee, but it should be in mine eares ere
it were well out of their mouthes.

This meant he by Catesby, which was of his
nere secret councell, and whom he very familiarly
vsed, & in his most weighty matters put no man
in so speciall trust, reckoning himselfe to no man
so liefe, for hee well wist there was no man so
much to him beholden, as was this Catesby,
which was a man well learned in the lawes of
this Land, and by the speciall fauour of the Lord
Chamberlaine in good authority, and much rule
bare he in the County of Lyncester, where the
Lord Chamberlaines power chiefely lay. But
surely great pitty was it, that he had not had ei-
ther more truth, or lesse wit: for his dissimula-
tion onely, kept all that mischefe vp. In whom
if the Lord Hastings had not put so speciall
trust, the Lord Stanley and he had departed with
diuers other Lords, and broken all the daunce,
for many ill signes that hee saw, which hee now
construes all to the best. So surely thought he,
that there could be no harme toward him in the
Councell intended where Catesby was.

Catesby.

And of truth the Protector and the Duke of
Buckingham made very good semblance vnto the

the Lord Hastings and kept him much in compa-
ny: And vndoubtedly the Protector loued him
well, and loth was to haue lost him, sauing for
feare lest his life should haue quailed their pur-
pole. For which cause he mused Catesby to
prouue with some words cast out a farre off, whe-
ther he could thinke it possible to win the Lord
Hastings vnto their part: but Catesby, whether
he assayed him, or assayed him not, reported vn-
to them, that he found him so fast, and heard him
speake so terrible words, that hee durst no fur-
ther breake.

And of truth the Lord Chamberlaine of ve-
ry trust shewed vnto Catesby the distrust that
other begaunne to haue in the matter: and there-
fore he fearing, lest their motion might with
the Lord Hastings minish his credence, where-
unto onely all the matter leaned, procured the
Protector hastily to rid him. And much the ra-
ther, for that he trusted by his death to obtaine
much of the rule that the Lord Hastings bare
in his County: the onely desire whereof, was
the allurement that induced him to be partner,
and one speciall contriuer of all this horrible
treason.

Whereupon, soone after, that is to wit, on
the Friday, the 13. day of June, many Lords
assembled in the Tower, and there late in Coun-
cell, deuising the honourable solemnity of the
Kings coronation, of which the time appointed
then so neere approched, that the pageants, and
subtilties were in making day and night at
Westminster, and much victuall killed there-
fore, that afterward was cast away.

The Lords so sitting together communing
of this matter, the Protector came in amongst
them first about 9. of the clocke, saluting them
courteously, and excusing himselfe that hee had
been from them so long, saying merrily, that he
had beene a sleeper that day.

And after a little talking with them, he said
vnto the Bishop of Ely: My Lord, you haue
very good Strawberies at your garden in Hol-
borne, I require you let vs haue a messe of them.
Gladly my Lord (quoth he) would God I had
some better thing as ready to your pleasure as
that. And therewith in all the haste hee sent his
seruant for a messe of Strawberies.

The Protector set the Lords fast in commu-
ning, and thereupon praying them to spare him
for a little while, departed thence: And soone
after one houre, betweene 10. and 11. hee return-
ned into the chamber among them all, changed
with a wonderfull sowre angry countenance,
knitting the browes, frowning and fretting,
and gnawing on his lips, and so fate him downe
in his place, all the Lords much dismayed and
sore marvelling of this maner of sudden change,
and what thing should him aile. Then, when
he had sitten still a while, thus he began: What
were they worthy to haue, that compasse and
imagine the destruction of me, being so neere
of blood vnto the King, and Protector of his roy-
all person and his Realme? At this question, all
the Lords sate sore astonished, musing much by
whom this question should be meant, of which
euery man wist himselfe clere.

Then the Lord Chamberlaine, as he that
for the loue he bare them, thought hee might
be boldest with him, answered and said, that
they were worthy to be punished as heynous
traytors, whatsoeuer they were: And all the o-
ther affirmed the same. That is (quoth he) yon-
der sorceresse, my brothers wife, and other with
her, meaning the Queene. At these words many
of the other Lords were greatly abashed that
fauoured her. But the Lord Hastings was in his
mind better content that it was moued by her,
then by any other whom he loued better: albeit,
his heart somewhat grudged, that he was not a-
fore made of Councell in this matter, as he was
of the taking of her kindred, and of their put-
ting to death, which were by his assent before
deuised to be beheaded at Pontfract this selfe
same day, in which he was not ware that it was
by other deuised, that himselfe should be behea-
ded the same day at London. Then said the
Protector, Ye shall all see in what wise that sor-
ceresse, and that other witch of her councell,
Shores wife, with their affinity, haue by their
sorcerys and witchcraft wasted my body: And
therewith he plucked vp his doblet sleeue to his
elbow vpon his left arme, where her thewed a
werith withered arme, and small, as it was neuer
other. And thereupon euery mans mind sore mis-
gaue them, well perceiuing that this matter
was but a quarrell: for they well wist, that the
Queen was to wise to goe about any such folly:
And also if she would, yet would she of all folke
least make Shores wife of councell, whom of all
women she most hated, as that Concubine whom
the King her husband, had most loued: And also,
no man was there present, but well knew that
his arme was euer such since his birth. Natheles-
lesse, the Lord Chamberlaine (which from the
death of King Edward kept Shores wife, on
whom he somewhat doted in the Kings life, sa-
ing (as it is said) be that while forbare her of
reuerence toward the King, or else of a certaine
kind of fidelity to his friend, answered and said,
certainely, my Lord, if they haue so heynously
done, they be worthy heynous punishment.

What (quoth the Protector) then serue me
I weene with ifs, and with ands, I tell thee, they
haue so done, and that I will make good on thy
body traytor: and therewith as in a great an-
ger, hee clapped his fist vpon the boord a great
rap. At which token giuen, one cryed treason
withyont the Chamber: Therewith a dore clap-
ped, and in came there ruthing men in harnesse,
as many as the chamber might hold. And anone
the Protector said to the Lord Hastings, I arest
thee, traytor: What, me my Lord (quoth he)
yea thee, traytor, quoth the Protector. And an-
other let fle at the Lord Stanley, which shranke
at the stroke, and fell vnder the table, or else his
head had beene cleft to the teth: for as shortly
as he shranke, yet came the blod about his sares.
When were they all quickly beclowed in diuers
chambers, except the Lord Chamberlaine,
whom the Protector had spared, and thrise him
spare, for by S. Paul (quoth he) I will not dine
vntill I see thy head off.

The Lord Stanley wourtyed.

It booted not him to aske why, but heatilie

The Lord Hastings Lord Thams berlaine, beheaded.

took a priest at aduenture, and made a short shrift, for a longer would not be suffered, the Protector made so much haste to dinner, which he might not goe to, till this were done, for saining of his oath. So was he brought forth into the greene, beside the Chappell within the Tower, and his head layd downe vpon a long Log of Timber, and then stricken off, and afterward his body with his head interred at Windsore, beside the body of King Edward.

The Lord Stanleies dreame.

A maruellous case is it, to heare eyther the warnings of that hee should haue bayded, or the tokens of that hee could not auoyd, for the selfe night next before his death, the Lord Stanley sent a trusty secret messenger vnto him at midnight in all haste, requiring him to rise and ride away with him, for he was disposed vtterly no longer to bide, he had so fearefull a dreame, in which he thought, that a Boare with his tuskes so raised them both by the heads, that the blood ranne about both their shoulders. And for as much as the Protector gaue the Boare for his Cognisance: this dreame made so fearefull an impression in his heart, that hee was thorowly determined no longer to tarry, but had his horse ready, if the Lord Hastings would go with him to ride yet so farre the same night, that they should be out of danger ere day. Ha good Lord (quoth the Lord Hastings to this messenger) leaneth my Lord thy Master so much to such trifles, and hath such faith in dreames, which either his owne feare fantasieth, or else in the nights rest by reason of his daie thoughts? Tell him it is plaine witchcraft to beleeue in such dreames, which if they were tokens of things to come, why thinketh he not that wee might be as likely to make them true by our going, if wee were caught and brought backe (as friends faile fliers) then had the Boare a cause likely to race vs with his tuskes, as folke that fled for some falsehood? wherefore either is there no perill, nor none there is indeede; or if any be, it is rather in going then biding. And if we should needes fall in perill one way or other, yet had I leifer that men should see that it were by other mens falsehood, then thinke it were eyther by our owne fault, or faint heart. And therefore go to thy Master, man, and commend me to him, and pray him to be merry, and haue no feare: for I ensure him, I am as sure of the man that he woteth of, as I am of mine owne hand. God send grace Sir, quoth the messenger, and went his way.

Certaine it is also, that in riding toward the Tower the same morning in which hee was beheaded, his horse twise or thrice stumbled with him almost to the falling: which thing albeit each man wot well daily happeneth to them to whom no such mischance is toward, yet hath it been of an old vse and Custome obserued as a token oftentime notably foregoing some great misfortune.

Now this that followeth was no warning, but an odious scorne.

The same morning ere hee was vp, came a Knight into him as it were of curtesie, to accompany him to the councel, but of truth sent by the Protector to hast him thitherwards, with whom he was of secret confederacy in that purpose, a meane man at that time, and now of great authority.

This Knight, when it happened the Lord Chamberlaine by the way to stay his horse, and commune a while with a priest, whom he met in the Tower streete, brake his tale, and said merily to him, what my Lord, I pray you come on, whereto talke you so long with that priest, you haue no need of a priest yet: and therewith hee laughed vpon him, as thought hee would say, ye shall haue some. But so little was the other what he meant, and so little mistrusted, that he was neuer merrier, nor neuer so full of good hope in his life, which selfe thing is often seene a signe of change. But I shall rather let any thing passe me, then the vaine surety of mans mind so nere his death.

Vpon the very Tower-wharfe, so nere the place where his head was struck off long after, there met he with one Hastings a pursuiant of his owne name: and of their meeting in that place, he was put in remembrance of another time, in which it had happened them before to meete in like maner together in the same place. At which other time the L. Chamberlaine had been accused vnto King Edw. by the L. Riuers the Queens brother, in such wise as he was for the while, but it lasted not long, for faine into the Kings indignation, and stood in great feare of himselfe: And forasmuch as hee now met this pursuant in the same place, that peraduenture so well pallied, it gaue him great pleasure to talke with him thereof, with whom hee had before talked thereof in the same place, while he was therein. And therefore he said, Ah, Hastings, art thou remembred when I met thee here once with an heauy heart? Yea my Lord quoth he, that remember I well, and thanked be God, they got no good, nor you no harme thereby. Thou wouldst say so quoth he, if thou knewest as I know, which few know else as yet, and no shall shortly. That meant hee the Lords of the Queens kinred that were taken before, & should that day be behaded at Pontfract: which hee well wist, but nothing ware, that the Axe hung ouer his own head. In faith man, quoth he, I was neuer so sory, nor neuer stood in so great dread in my life, as I did when thou and I met here: And lo how the world is turned, now stand mine enemies in the danger, as thou maist hap to heare more hereafter, and I neuer in my life so merrily, nor neuer in so great surety.

O good God, the blindnesse of our mortall nature, when he most feared, he was in good surety: when hee reckoned himselfe surest, hee lost his life, and that within two houres after.

The description of the Lord Hastings.

Thus ended this honourable man, a good Knight and a gentle, of great authority with his Prince, of liuing somewhat dissolute, plain, and open to his enemy, and secret to his friend, easie to beguile, as he that of good heart and courage forestudied no perils: a louing man, and pitying well beloued: very faithfull, and truely enough, truelling to much. Now stew the fame of this Lords death swiftly thorow the Citty, and so forth further about like a winde in euery mans eares.

But the Protector immediatly after dinner, intending to set some colour vpon the matter, sent in all haste for many substantiall men out of the City into the Tower: and at their comming, himselfe with the Duke of Buckingham, stood harnessed in old ill faring Bryganders, such as no man should weene that they would vouchsafe to haue put vpon their backs, except that some sudden necessity had constrained them.

And when the Protector shewed them, that the Lord Chamberlaine, and other of his conspiracy had contrined to haue suddenly destroyed him and the Duke, there the same day in the Councell; And what they intended further, was as yet not well knowne. Of which their treason hee neuer had knowledge before ten of the clocke the same Forenoone, which sudden feare drowe them to put on for their defence such harnesse, as came next to hand. And so had God holpen them, that the mischiefe turned vpon them that would haue done it. And this hee required them to report.

Euery man answered him faire, as though no man beleeued, But for the further appeasing of the peoples minde, he sent immediately after dinner in all haste, an Herald of armes, with a proclamation to be made thorow the Citty in the Kings name, containing that the Lord Hastings, with diuers other of his trapterous purpole had before conspired the same day, to haue slaine the Lord Protector, and the Duke of Buckingham, sitting in the Councell, and after to haue taken vpon them to rule the King and the Realme at their pleasure, and thereby to pill and spoyle whom they list vncontrolled. And much matter there was in that proclamation, deuised to the slander of the Lord Chamberlaine, as that he was an euill Counsellor to the Kings Father, entising him to many things highly redounding to the minishing of his honour, and to the vniuersall hurt of the Realme by his euill company, sinister procuring, and vngracious ensample, as well in many other things, as in the vicious liuing, and inordinate abusion of his body, both with many other, and also especially with Shores wife, which also was one of his most secret councell of this heynous treason, with whom he lay nightly, and namely, the night last past next before his death, so that it was the lesse marueil, if vngracious liuing brought him to an vnhappy ending, which hee was now put vnto, by the most dread commandement of the Kings Highnesse, and of his honourable and faithfull Councell, both for his demerites, being so openly taken in his falsely conceiued treason, and also lest the delaying of his execution might haue encouraged other mischieuous persons, partners of his other conspiracy to gather and assemble themselue together in making some great commotion for his deliuerance: whose hope being now by his well deserued death politikely repressed, all the Realme should by Gods grace rest in good quiet and peace.

The Protectors proclamation.

Now was this proclamation made within two houres after that he was beheaded, and it was so curiously inuited, and so faire written in parchment, in so well a set hand, and therewith of it selfe so long a processe, that euery child might well perceiue, that it was prepared before. For all the time betweene his death and the proclaiming, could scant haue sufficed vnto the bare writing alone, all had it been in paper, and scribed forth in haste at aduenture. So that vpon the proclaiming thereof, one that was Schole-master of Pauls, of chance standing by, and comparing the shortnesse of the time with the length of the matter, said vnto them that stood about him: Here is a gay goodly calf, foule cast away for haste: and a Merchant answered him, that it was written by prophesie.

The Shiefe trifles of Kogers Dr. Matter White & Iohn Mathew for Shores wife one of her house. & commandment of the Protector, and led her shamefully the Citty of London to the Tower, where shee answered certaine points laid to her charge, and from thence shee was committed to Ludgate, there to remaine prisoner, &c.

Now then by and by, as it were for anger, not for couetise, the Protector sent into the house of Shores wife (for her husband dwelled not with her) and spoyled her of all that euer shee had, aboue the value of two or three thousand marke, and sent her body to prison: And when he had a while laid vnto her (for the manner sake) that shee went about to bewitch him, and that she was of councell with the Lord Chamberlaine to destroy him: in conclusion, when that no colour could fasten vpon these matters, then he laid heynously to her charge, that thing that her selfe could not deny, that all the world wist was true and that naithelesse euery man laughed at, to heare it then so suddenly, so highly taken, that shee was naught of her body.

And for this cause (as a good continent Prince, cleane and faultlesse of himselfe, sent out of heauen into the vicious world, for the amendment of mens manners) hee caused the Bishop of London to put her to open penance, going before the crosse in procession vpon a Sunday with a taper in her hand: In which shee went in countenance and pace demure, so womanly, and albeit shee were out of all array, saue her Kirtle onely, yet went shee so faire and louely, namely while the wondering of the people caft a comely red in her cheekes (of which shee before had most misse) that her great shame wanne her much praise, among those that were more gunzous of her body, then curious of her soule. And many good folke also that hated her liuing, and glad were to see sinne corrected: yet pitied they more her penance, then reioyced therein, when they considered that the Protector procured it more of a corrupt intent, then any vertuous affection.

The description of Shores wife.

This woman was borne in London, worshipfully friended, honestly brought vp, and very well married, saning somewhat too soone, her husband an honest Cittizen, young and goodly, and of good substance: But for as much as they were coupled ere shee were well ripe, shee very feruently loued, for whom shee neuer longed, which was happy the thing that the more easily made her inclinable vnto the kings appetite, when he required her. Howbeit the respect of his royalty, the hope of gay apparell, ease, pleasure, and other wanton wealth, was able soone to pierce a soft tender heart.

The Lord Chamberlain kept Shores wife after the death of Edward the fourth.

Shores wife liued when Sir Thomas More wrote: but he was but a childe in the raigne of King Henry the eyghth.

King Edwards third Concubine.

But when the King had abused her, anone her husband (as he was an honest man, and one that could his good, not presuming to touch a Kings Concubine) left her vp to him altogether.

When the King died, the Lord Chamberlaine took her, which in the Kings dates, albeit he was sore enamoured vpon her, yet he for dare her, eyther for reuerence, or for a certaine friendly faithfulnesse: proper she was and faire, nothing in her body that you would haue changed, but if you would haue wished her somewhat higher.

Thus say they that knewe her in her youth, albeit some that now see her (for yet she liueth) deeme her neuer to haue beene well vilaged, whose iudgement seemeth me somewhat like, as though men should guesse the beauty of one long before departed, by her scalpe taken out of the charnell house: for now is she old, leane, withered, and dryed vp, nothing left but reuelishment and bone. And yet being euen such: who so well aduise her visage, might quesse and deuise, which parts how filled would make it a fayre face: yet delighted he no man so much in her beauty, as in her pleasant behauiour. For a proper wit had she, and could both read well & write, merry in company, ready and quicke of answer, neither mute nor full of babble, sometime taunting without displeasure, & not without disport.

The King would say that he had three Concubines, which in three diuers properties diuerslye excelled. One the merriest, another the wiliest, the third the holiest harlot in his Realme, as one whom no man could get out of the Church lightly to any place, but it were to his bed. The other two were somewhat greater personages, and naithelesse of their humility content to be nameles, and to forbeare the praise of those properties. But the merriest was this Shores wife, in whom the King therefore toke speciall pleasure. For many he had, but her he loued, whose fauour, to say the troth (for sinne it were to belye the Diuell) she neuer abused to any mans hurt, but to many a mans comfort and relefe, where the King toke displeasure, she would mittigate and appease his minde: where men were out of fauour, shee would bring them in his grace. For many that had highly offended, she obtained pardon: Of great forfeitures she gat men remission: And finally, in many weighty suites, shee stod many men in great stead, either for none, or very small rewards, and those rather gay then rich: either for that she was content with the deed it selfe well done, or for that she delighted to be sued vnto, and to shew that she was able to doe with the King, or for that wanton women and wealthy be not always couetous.

I doubt not some shall thinke this Woman too sleight a thing to be written of, and set among the remembrances of great matters: which they shall specially thinke, that happily shall esteeme her, onely by that they now see her. But me seemeth the chance is much the more thing to be remembred, in how much she is now in the more beggerly condition, vnfriended and worne out of acquaintance, after good fortune, after as great fauour with the Prince, after as great suite, and seking to lyft all those that those daies had businesse to spede, as many other men were in their times, which be now famous, onely by the infamy of their ill deedes. Her doings were not much lesse, albeit they be much lesse remembred, because they were not so euill. For men vse, if they haue an euill turne, to write it in Marble: and whoso doth vs a good turne, wee write it in dust, which is not worst prooued by her: for at this day shee begged of many at this day liuing, that at this day had begged if shee had not beene.

Shores wife begged of them, that had begged themselues, had she not beene their friend.

Now was it deuised by the Protector, and his Councell, that the selfe-day in which the Lord Chamberlaine was beheaded in the Tower of London, and about the selfe-same houre, was there (not without his assent) beheaded at Pontfrait, the foresaid remembred Lords and Knights that were taken from the King at Northampton and Stony Stratford. Which thing was done in the presence, and by the order of Sir Richard Ratcliffe, Knight, whose seruice the Protector specially vsed in that Counsell, and in the execution of such lawlesse enterprizes, as a man that had beene long secret with him, hauing experience of the world, & a hardy wit, short and rude in speech, rough and boysterous of behauiour, bold in mischefe, as farre from pitty, as from all feare of God.

Sir Richard Ratcliffe.

The Lord Riuers and other beheaded.

This Knight bringing them out of the prison to the Scaffold, and shewing to the people about, that they were traytors, not suffering them to declare and speake their innocency, lest their words might haue inclined men to pitty them, and to hate the Protector, and his part: caused them hastily without iudgement, processe, or manner of order, to be beheaded, and without other earthly guilt, but onely that they were good men, too true to the King, and too nigh to the Quene.

Now when the Lord Chamberlaine and these other Lords and Knights were thus beheaded, and rid out of the way: then thought the Protector, that while men muzed what the matter meant, while the Lords of the Realme were about him out of their owne strengthes, while no man wist what to thinke, nor to whom trust ere euer they should haue space to dispute and digest the matter, and make parties, it were best hastily to pursue his purpose, and put himselfe in possession of the Crowne, ere men could haue time to deuise any way to resist.

But now was all the stody by what meane this matter being of it selfe so heynous, might be first spoken to the people, in such wise that it might be well taken.

To this Councell, they take diuers, such as they thought meetely to be trusted, likely to be induced to that part, and able to stand them in stede, either by power, or policy.

Among whom they made of Councell, Edmond Shaa, Knight, then Maior of London, which vpon trust of his owne aduancement, whereof he was of a proud heart highly desirous, should frame the City to their appetite. Of Spirituall men they toke such as had wit, and were in authoritie among the people for opinion of their learning, and had no scrupulous conscience.

Edmond Shaa, Maior of London.

Doctor Shaa Frier Pinke.

Among these had they Iohn Shaa Clearke, brother to the Maior, and Frier Pinke, prouincial of the Augustine Friers, both Doctors of Diuinitie, both great preachers, both of much learning than vertue, of more fame than learning. For they were before greatly esteemed among the people: but after that neuer. Of these two, the tone had a sermon in prayse of the Protector before the coronation, the tother after, both so full of tedious flattery, that no mans eares could abide them.

Pinke in his sermon so lost his voice, that he was faine to leaue off and come downe in the middest. Doctor Shaa by his sermon lost his honesty, and some after his life, for very shame of the world, into which he durst neuer after come abroad. But the frier forced for no shame and so it harmed him the lesse. Howbeit some doubt and many stinke, that Pinke was not of counsaile of the matter before the coronation, but after the common manner, fell to flattery after: namely sith his sermon was not in continent vpon it, but at Saint Marie Hospitall at the Easter after. But certaine it is, that doctor Shaa was of counsaile in the beginning, so far forth, that they determined that he should first breake the matter in a sermon at Pauls crosse, in which he should by the authoritie of his preaching, incline the people to the Protectors ghostly purpose.

But now was all the labour and studie, in the deuice of some conuenient pretext, for which the people should bee content to depose the Prince, and accept the protector for King. In which diuers things they deuised. But the chiefe thing and the weight of all that inuention reseted in this, that they should alleadge Bastardie, either in King Edward himselfe, or in his children, or both. So that he should seeme disabled to inherite the crowne, by the Duke of Yorke, and the Prince by him.

To lay bastardy in King Edward, sounded openly to the rebuke of the Protectors owne mother, which was mother to them both: for in that point could be none other colour but to pretend that his owne mother was an aduoutresse, which notwithstanding, to further this purpose he letted not: but naythelesse, he would that point should bee lesse and more fauourably handled, not euen fully plaine and directly, but that the matter should be touched craftily, as though men spared in that point to speake all the troth, for feare of his displeasure.

But the other point concerning the bastardy that they deuised to surmise in King Edwards children, that would he should be openly declared, and inforced to the vttermost. The colour and pretext whereof, cannot be well perceiued, but if we first repeate you some things, long before done, about King Edwards marriage.

After that King Edward the 4. had deposed king Henry the first, and was in peaceable possession of the Realme, determining himselfe to marry, as it was requisite both for himselfe and for the Realme, he sent ouer in ambassage the Earle of Warwike, with other noble men in his company vnto Spaine, to intreate and conclude a marriage betweene King Edward and the kings daughter of Spaine. In which thing the Earle of Warwike found the parties so toward and so willing, that he speedily according to his instructions without any difficulty, brought the matter to very good conclusion.

Now happened it, that in the meane season there came to make suite by petition to the King, Dame Elizabeth Grey, which was after Quene, at that time a widow, borne of noble blood, specially by her mother, which was Duchesse of Bedford, ere she married the Lord Woodville her father. Howbeit this Dame Elizabeth her selfe, being in seruice with Quene Margaret wife vnto King Henry the first, was married vnto one Io. Gray an Esquire, whom king Henry made knight, vpon the fields that he had on Barnet heath by Saint Albons against king Edward. And little while enioyed he that knighthood, for he was at the same fielde slaine.

Dame Elizabeth.

After which done, and the Earle of Warwike being in his ambassage about the afore remembred marriage, this poore Ladie made humble suite vnto the King, that shee might bee restored vnto such small lands as her late husband had giuen her in iointure. Whome when the King beheld, and heard her speake, as she was both faire and of a goodly fauor, moderate of stature, well made, and very wise, he not onely pitied her, but also waxed enamoured of her: and taking her after secretly aside, began to enter in talking more familiarly. Whose appetite when she perceiued, she vertuously defended him. But that did she so wisely, and with so good manner, and words so well set, that shee rather kindled his desire then quenched it.

And finally, after many a meeting, much woing, and many great promises, shee well espied the Kings affection toward her so greatly increased, that she durst somewhat more boldly say her mind, as to him whole heart shee perceiued more feruently set, than to fall off for a word.

And in conclusion, shee shewed him plaine, that as the wilfe her selfe to simple to bee his wife, so thought her selfe to good to be his Concubine. The King much maruelling at her constancy, as he that had not beene wont else where to be so stiffely said nay, so much esteemed her continence, and chastity, that he set her vertue in Stade of possession and riches, and thus taking counsaile of his desire, determined in all possible haste to marrie her.

The Kings betweene them twaine ensured her: then all mother-lesse his counsaile of his other friends, and that in such manner, as they might then perceiue, it lusted not greatly to say nay. Notwithstanding the Dutches of Yorke his mother, was so sore moued therewith, that shee dissuaded the marriage as much as shee possibly

But when he King had abused her, anone her husband (as he was an honest man, and one that could his good, not presuming to touch a Kings Concubine) left her vp to him altogether.

The Lord Chamberlain kept Shores wife after the death of Edward the fourth.

When the King died, the Lord Chamberlaine took her, which in the Kings dates, albeit he was fone enamoured vpon her, yet he forbare her, eyther for reverence, or for a certaine friendly faithfulnesse: proper she was and faire, nothing in her body that you would haue changed, but if you would haue wished her somewhat higher.

Shores wife liued when Sir Thomas More wrote this history in the raigne of K. Henry the eyghth.

Thus say they that knew her in her youth, albeit some that now see her (for yet she liueth) deeme her never to haue been well visaged, whose iudgement seemeth me somewhat like: as though men should guesse the beauty of one long before departed, by her scalpe taken out of the charnell house: for now is she old, leane, withered, and dryed vp, nothing left but reueld slim and hard bone. And yet being euen such: who so well aduise her visage, might gesse and deuise, which parts how filled would make it a fayre face: yet delighted no man so much in her beauty, as in her pleasant behauior. For a proper wit had she, and could both read well & write, merry in company, ready and quicke of answer, neither mute nor full of babble, sometime taunting without displeasure, & not without disport.

The King would say that he had three Concubines, which in their diuers properties diuersly excelled. One the merriest, another the wilest, the third the holiest harlot in his Realme, as one whom no man could get out of the Church lightly to any place, but it were to his bed. The other two were somewhat greater personages, and naithelesse of their humility content to be nameless, and to forbeare the praise of those properties. But the merriest was this Shores wife, in whom the King therefore took speciall pleasure. For many he had, but her he loued, whose fauour, to say the troth (for sinne it were to lye the Deuell) her neuer abused to any mans griefe, but to many a mans comfort and releefe, where the King tooke displeasure, shee would mittigate and appease his minde: where men were out of fauour, shee would bring them in his grace. For many that had highly offended, shee obtained pardon: Of great forfeitures shee gat men remission: And finally, in many weighty suites, shee stood many men in great stead, eyther for none, or very small rewards, and those rather gay then rich: either for that she was content with the deed it self well done, or for that she delighted to be sued vnto, and to shew that shee was able to doe with the King, or for that wanton women and wealthy be not alwaies couetous.

King Edwards third Concubine.

I doubt not some shall thinke this Woman too slight a thing to be written of, and set among the remembrances of great matters: which they shall specially thinke, that happily finde lesse then, onely by that they now see her. But me seemeth the chance is much the more fit thy to be remembred, in how much she is now in the more beggerly condition, vnfriended, and worne out of acquaintance, after good fortune, after as great fauour with the Prince, after as great suite, and sacking to with all those that those dates had business to spede, as many other men were in their times, which be now famous, onely by the infamy of their ill deedes. Her doings were not much lesse, albeit they be much lesse remembred, because they were not so euill. For men die, if they haue an euill turne, to write it in Marble: and whoso doth vs a good turne, wee write it in dust, which is not worst prooued by her: for at this day shee begged of many at this day liuing, that at this day had begged if shee had not beene.

Shores wife begged of them, that had begged themselues, had shee not beene their friend.

Now was it deuised by the Protector, and his Councell, that the selfe-day in which the Lord Chamberlaine was beheaded in the Tower of London, and about the selfe-same houre, was there (not without his assent) beheaded at Pontfract, the foresemembred Lords and Knights that were taken from the King at Northampton and Stony Stratford. Which thing was done in the presence, and by the order of Sir Richard Ratcliffe, Knight, whose seruice the Protector specially vsed in that Counsell, and in the execution of such lawlesse enterprizes, as a man that had beene long secret with him, hauing experience of the world, & a hardy wit, short and rude in speech, rough and boysterous of behauiour, bold in mischiefe, as farre from pitty, as from all feare of God.

Sir Richard Ratcliffe.

This Knight bringing them out of the prison to the Scaffold, and shewing to the people about, that they were traytors, not suffering them to declare and speake their innocency, lest their word might haue inclined men to pitty them, and to hate the Protector, and his part: caused them hastily without iudgement, processe, or manner of order, to be beheaded, and without other earthly guilt, but onely that they were good men, too true to the King, and too nigh to the Queene.

The Lord Riuers and other beheaded.

Now then the Lord Chamberlaine and these other Lords and Knights were thus beheaded, and rid out of the way: then thought the Protector, that while men muzed what the matter meant, while the Lords of the Realme were about him out of their owne strengthes, while no man wist what to thinke, nor to whom trust ere euer they should haue space to dispute and digest the matter, and make parties, it were best hastily to pursue his purpose, and put himselfe in possession of the Crowne, ere men could haue time to deuise any way to resist.

But now was all the study by what meane this matter being of it selfe so heynous, might be first broken to the people, in such wise that it might be well taken.

To this Councell, they take diuers, such as they thought meetely to be trusted, likely to be induced to that part, and able to stand them in stede, either by power, or policy.

Among whom they made of Councell, Edmond Shaa, Knight, then Maior of London, which vpon trust of his owne aduancement, whereof he was of a proud heart highly desirous, should frame the City to their appetite. Of Spirituall men they take such as had wit, and

Edmond Shaa, Maior of London.

and were in authority among the people for opinion of their learning, and had no scrupulous conscience.

Doctor Shaa and Frier Pinke, brother to the Maior, and Frier Pinke, prouincial of the Augustine Friers, both Doctors of Diuinitie, both great preachers, both of good learning than vertue, of more fame than learning. For they were before greatly esteemed among the people: but after that neuer. Of these two, the tone had a sermon in praise of the Protector before the coronation, the tother after, both so full of tedious flattery, that no mans eares could abide them.

Pinke in his sermon so lost his voice, that he was faine to leaue off and come downe in the middest. Doctor Shaa by his sermon lost his honesty, and some after his life, for very shame of the world, into which he durst neuer after come abroad. But the frier forced for no shame and so it harmed him the lesse. Howbeit some doubt and many thinke, that Pinke was not of counsaile of the matter before the coronation, but after the common manner, fell to flattery after: namely sith his sermon was not in content vpon it, but at Saint Marie Hospitall at the Easter after. But certaine it is, that doctor Shaa was of counsaile in the beginning, so far forth, that they determined that he should first breake the matter in a sermon at Pauls crosse, in which he should by the authoritie of his preaching, incline the people to the Protectors ghostly purpose.

But now was all the labour and studie, in the deuice of some conuenient pretext, for which the people should bee content to depose the Prince, and accept the protector for King. In which diuers things they deuised. But the chiefe thing and the weight of all that inuention rested in this, that they should alleadge Bastardie, either in King Edward himselfe, or in his children, or both. So that he should seeme disabled to inherite the crowne, by the Duke of Yorke, and the Prince by him.

To lay bastardy in King Edward, sounded openly to the rebuke of the Protectors owne mother, which was mother to them both: for in that point could be none other colour but to pretend that his owne mother was an aduoutresse, which notwithstanding, to further this purpose he letted not: but naythelesse, he would that point should bee lesse and more honorably handled, not euen fully plaine and directly, but that the matter should be touched slopecraftily, as though men spared in that point to speake all the troth, for feare of his displeasure.

But the other point concerning the bastardy that they deuised to surmise in King Edwards children, that would be should be openly declared, and inforced to the vttermost. The colour and pretext whereof, cannot be well perceiued, but if we first repeate you some things, long before done, about King Edwards marriage.

After that King Edward the 4. had deposed king Henry the first, and was in peaceable possession of the Realme, determining himselfe to marry, as it was requisite both for himselfe and for the Realme, he sent ouer in ambassage the Earle of Warwike, with other noble men in his company vnto Spaine, to intreate and conclude a marriage betweene King Edward and the kings daughter of Spaine. In which thing the Earle of Warwike found the parties so toward and willing, that he speedily accepting to his instructions without any difficulty, brought the matter to very good conclusion.

Now happened it, that in the meane season there came to make suite by petition to the King, Dame Elizabeth Grey, which was after his Quéene, at that time a widow, borne of noble blood, specially by her mother, which was Duchesse of Bedford, ere shee married the Lord Wooduille her father. Howbeit this Dame Elizabeth her selfe, being in seruice with Duene Margaret wife vnto King Henry the first, was married vnto one Io. Gray of Esquire, whom king Henry made knight, vpon the fields that he had on Barnet heath by Saint Albons against king Edward. And little while enioyed he that knighthood, for he was at the same fielde slaine.

Dame Elizabeth.

After which done, and the Earle of Warwike being in his ambassage about the afore remembred marriage, this poore Ladie made humble suite vnto the King, that shee might bee restored vnto such small lands as her late husband had giuen her in iointure. Whome when the King beheld, and heard her speake, as she was both fayre and of a goodly fauor, moderate of stature, well made, and very wise, he not onely pitied her, but also waxed enamoured of her: and taking her after secretly aside, began to enter in talking more familiarly. Whose appetite when she perceiued, she vertuously denied him. But trat old she so wisely, and with so good manner, and words so well set, that shee rather kindled his desire then quenched it.

And finally, after many a meeting, much woing, and many great promises, shee well espied the Kings affection toward her so greatly increased, that she durst somewhat the more boldly say her mind, as to him whose heart shee perceiued more feruently set, than to fall off for a word.

And in conclusion, shee shewed him plaine, that as the wilfe her selfe to simple to bee his wife, so thought her selfe to good to be his Concubine. The King much marueiling at her constancy, as he that had not beene wont elles where to be so stiffely said nay, so much esteemed her continence, and chastity, that he set her vertue in stede of possession and riches, and thus taking counsaile of his desire, determined in all possible haste to marrie her.

The Kings mother.

And after hee was thus appointed, and had betweene them twaine enfored her: then also red hee counsaile of his other friends, and that in such manner, as they might them perceiue, it dated not greatly to say nay. Notwithstanding the Duches of Yorke his mother, was so sore moued therewith, that shee dissuaded the marriage as much as shee possibly

bly might, alleadging that it was his honour, profite, and surety also, to marry in a noble progeny out of his Realme, whereupon dependeed great strength to his Estate, by the affinitie and great possibility of encrease of his possession. And that hee could not well otherwise doe, standing that the Earle of Warwike had so farre moued already, which were not likely to take it well, if all his voyage were in such wise frustrate, and his appointments deluded. And hee saide also, that it was not precisely to marrie his owne subiect, no great occasion leading thereunto, no possessions, or other commodity depending thereupon, but onely as it were a rich man that would marrie his maide, only for a little wanton dotage vpon her person. In which marriage many no commend the maidens fortune than the masters wisedome. And yet therein hee saide there was more honestie than honour in this marriage: for as much as there is betweene no merchant and his owne maide so great difference, as betweene the King and this Widowe. In whose person, albeit there was nothing to bee misliked, yet was there (the saide) nothing so excellent but that it mought bee found in diuers other that were more meetely (quoth hee, for your estate,) and maidens also, whereas the onely Widowhead of Elizabeth Grey, though shee were in all other things conuenient for you, should yet suffice, as me seemeth, to refraine you from her marriage, sith it is an vnfitting thing, and a verie blemish and high disparagement to the sacred maiestie of a Prince, that ought as nigh to approach priesthood in cleannelie, as he doth in dignity, to be defouled with bigamy in his first marriage.

The Kings answere to his mother.

The King when his mother had saide, made her answere, part in earnest, part in plaie merrily, as he that wist himselfe out of her rule. And albeit he would gladly that shee should take it well, yet was at a point in his owne minde, take shee it well, or otherwise. Howbeit somewhat to satisfie her he said, that albeit marriage be inga spirituall thing, ought rather to be made for the respect of God, where his grace enclineth the parties to loue together, as he trusted it was in his, than for the regard of any temporall aduantage: yet naitheless, him seemed that this marriage euen worldly considered, was not vnprofitable. For he reckoned the amitie of no earthly nation so necessary for him, as the friendship of his owne, which he thought likely to beare him so much the more hartie fauour, in that he disdained not to marry with one of his owne land. And yet if outward aliance were thought so requisite, he would finde the meane to enter thereunto, much better by other sir is kin, where all the parties could be contented, then to marry himselfe whom he should happily neuer loue, and for the possibilitie of more possessions, leese the fruite and pleasure of this that he had already. For small pleasure taketh a man in all that euer he hath beside, if hee bee loued against his appetite. And I doubt not (quoth he) but there be, as perhap, other, that be in euery point comparable with her: and therefore I let not them that like them to wed them: No more is it reason, that it mislike any man, that I marrie where it liketh me. And I am sure that my Cosin of Warwike neither loueth me so little, to grudge that I loue, nor is so vnreasonable to looke that I should in choise of a wife, rather be ruled by his eye, then by mine owne: as though I were a warde that were bound to marry by the appointment of a guardian. I would not be a King with that condition, to forbeare mine owne liberty in chopse of mine owne marriage.

As for possibilitie of more inheritance by new affinitie in strange lands, to oft the occasion of more trouble than profit: and we haue already title by that meanes, to so much as sufficeth to get and keepe well in one mans dayes. That she is a widow and hath already children, by gods blessed lady I am a batcheler and haue come to, and so each of vs hath a make that neyther of vs is like to be barrain. And therefore (madam) I pray hee content, I trust in God shee shall bring forth a young Prince that shall please you. And as for the Bigamie set the Bishop hardily late it in my way when I come to take orders: For I vnderstand it is forbidden a priest, but I neuer wist it yet, that it was forbidden a Prince.

The Duchess with these words nothing appeased, and seeing the King so set thereon, that she could not pull him backe, so highly she disdained it, that vnder pretext of her dutie to godward, shee deuised to disturbe this marriage, and rather to helpe that he should marrie one dame Elizabeth Lucie, whom the King had also not long before gotten with child. Wherefore the Kings mother openly obiected against his marriage, as it were in discharge of her conscience, that the King was sure to dame Elizabeth Lucie, and her husband before God. By reason of which words, such obstacle was made in the matter, that either the Bishoppes durst not, or the King would not proceed to the solemnization of this wedding, till the same were clerely purged, and the troth well and openly testified. Whereupon dame Elizabeth Lucy was sent for. Elizabeth Lucie.

And albeit that she was by the Kings mother and many other put in good comfort, to affirme that the was insured vnto the King: yet when she was solemnly sworne to say the troth, she confessed that they were neuer ensured. Howbeit she said his grace spake to louing words vnto her, that shee hertily hoped he would haue married her. And that if it had not beene for such kind words, shee would haue neuer shewed such kindnes to him to let him to kindly get her with child.

This examination solemnely taken, when it was clerely perceiued that there was none impediment: the King with great feast and honorable solemnitie, married dame Elizabeth Gray, and her crowned Quene, that was his enemies wife, and many time had prayed full heartily for his losse, in which God loued her better then to grant her boone. The Kings marriage.

But when the Earle of Warwike vnderstood of this marriage, he take it so higly that his ambassage was deluded, that for very anger and disdaine, he at his returning assembled a great puissance against the King, and came so fast vpon him or he could be able to resist, that he was faine to bold the Realme, and flee into Holland for succour, where he remained for the space of two yeres, leauing his new wife in Westminster in Sanctuary, where the was deliuered of Edward the Prince, of whom we before haue spoken. In which meane time the Earle of Warwike take out of prison and set by againe King Henry the first, which was before by King Edward deposed, and that much what by the power of the Earle of Warwike which was a wise man, and a courageous warrior, and of such strength, what for his lands, his alliance, and fauor with all people, that he made Kings, and put downe Kings almost at his pleasure, and not impossible to haue attained it himselfe, if he had not reckoned it a greater thing to make a King than to be a King. But nothing lasteth alway: for in conclusion King Edward returned, and with much lesse number than hee hadde at Barnet on the Easterday field, slew the Earle of Warwike, with many other great estates of that party, and so rightly attained the crowne againe, that hee peaceably enioyed it vntill his dying day: and in such plight left it, that it could not be lost, but by the discord of his bery friends, or falshood of his fained friends. I haue rehearsed this businesse about this marriage somewhat the more at length because it might thereby the better appeare vpon how slipper a ground the Protector builded his color, by which he pretended King Edwards children to be bastards: But that inuention, simple as it was, it liked them to whome it sufficed to haue somewhat to say, while they were sure to be compelled to no larger proue than themselues list to make. The Duke of Warwike slaine.

Now then (as I began to shew you) it was by the Protector and his councel concluded, that Doctor Shaa should in a sermon at Paules crosse ignifie to the people, that neyther King Edward himselfe, nor the Duke of Clarence, were lawfully begotten, nor were not the very children of the Duke of Yorke, but begotten vnlawfully by other persons, by aduoutrie of the Dutchesse their mother. And that also Dame Elizabeth Lucy was verily the wife of King Edward, and so the Prince and all his children bastards, that were begotten vpon the Quene. According to this deuise Doctor Shaa the Sonday after, at Paules Crosse in a great audience (as alwaye assembled great number to his preaching) he take for his theame *Spuria vitulamina non agent radices altas.* That is to say: Bastard slips shall neuer take deepe roote. Doctor Shaas sermon on Sunday the 19 of June.

Thereupon when he hadde shewed the great grace that God giueth, and secretly insondeth in right generation after the lawes of matrimony, then declared hee that commonly those children lacked that grace, and for the punishment of their parents were for the more part vnhappy which were gotten in bale, and specially in aduoutrie, of which though some by the ignorance of the world and the truth hid from knowledge in cruell for the season other mens lands, yet God alway so prouideth, that it continueth not in their blood long, but the truely coming to light, the rightfull inheritors bee restored and the Bastarde slippe pulled vp ere it can be rooted deepe. And when he hadde laid for the proofe and confirmation of this sentence certaine examples taken out of the old Testament, and other auncient Histories, then beganne he to deferend into the praise of the Lord Richard late Duke of Yorke, calling him Father to the Lord Protector, and declared the title of his heires vnto the Crowne, to whom it was after the death of King Henry the first entailed by authority of Parliament. Then shewed he that his very right heire of his body lawfully begotten was onely the Lord Protector: For hee declared then, that King Edward was neuer lawfullie married vnto the Quene, but was before God husband vnto Dame Elizabeth Lucie, and so his children bastards. And besides that, neyther King Edward himselfe, nor the D. of Clarence, among those that were secret in the household were reckoned bery surely for the children of the noble Duke, as those that by their fauors more resembled other knowne men than him. From whose vertuous conditions he saide also that King Edward was farre off. But the Lord Protector he said, the very noble Prince, the speciall patterne of knightly prowes, as well in all Princely behauior as in the lineaments and fauor of his visage, representeth the very face of the noble duke his father. This is quoth he, the fathers owne figure, this is his owne countenance, the very print of his visage, the very sure vndoubted Image, the plaine expresse likenes of that noble Duke. The King died. The Prince borne. K. Henry the first set vp. The Earle of Warwike.

Now was it before deuised, that in the speaking of these words, the Protector should haue come in among the people to the sermon ward, to the end that those meeting with his presence, might haue beene taken among the hearers, as though the holy Ghost hadde put them in the preachers mouth, and should haue moued the people euen there to crie, King Richard, King Richard, that it might haue beene after sayde, that he was especially chosen by God, and in manner by vnyracle. But this deuise quailed, either by the Protectors negligence or the preachers ouermuch diligence. For while the Protector found by the way tarrying, lest he should preuent those words, and the Doctor, fearing that hee should come ere his Sermon could come to these words, hasted his matter thereto, who was come to them, and past them and entred into other matter ere the Protector came. Whom when he beheld comming, hee sodainely left the matter with which hee was in hand, and without any deduction thereunto, out of all order, and out of all frame beganne to repeate those words againe: This is the bery Noble Prince, the speciall paterne of knightly prowes, which as well in all Princely behauiour, as in the lineaments and fauour of his visage, representeth the very

face

face of the noble Duke of Yorke his father: this is the fathers owne figure, this is his owne countenance, the very printe of his visage, the sure undoubted image, the plaine expresse likenes of the noble Duke, whose remembrance can never die while he liueth. While these words were in speaking, the Protector accompanied with the Duke of Buckingham, went through the people into the place where the doctors commonly stand in the vpper roop, where hee stood to hearken the Sermon. But the people were so far from crying King Richard, that they stood as they had turned into stones, for wonder of this shamefull Sermon.

Preacher. After which once ended, the Preacher gat him home, and neuer after durst looke out for shame, but kept him out of sight like an Owle. And when he once asked one that had beene his olde friend, what the people talked of him, all were it that his owne conscience well shewed him that they talked no good, yet when the other answered him, that there was in euery mans mouth spoken of him much shame, it so stroke him to the heart, that within few dayes after he withered and consumed away.

The 13. of June. Then on the Tuesday following this sermon, there came into the Guilde hall in London, the Duke of Buckingham, accompanied with diuers Lords and Knights, more than happily knew the message that they brought. And therein the East end of the hall, where the Maior keepeth the Pleas, the Maior and all the Aldermen being assembled about him, all the commons of the city gathered before them after silence commanded vpon great pain in the Protectors name, the Duke stood vp, and (as he was neither vnlearned, and of nature marueilously well spoken) he said vnto the people with a cleare and a loud voice in this manner of wise.

The Duke of Buckingams Oration. Friends, for the zeale and hearty fauor that we beare you, we be come to breake vnto you of a matter right great and weighty, and no lesse weighty than pleasing to God, and profitable to all the Realme: nay to no part of the Realme more profitable, than to you the Citizens of this noble Citie. For why, that thing that we wot well ye haue long time lacked, and sore longed for, that ye would haue giuen great good for, that ye would haue gone farre to fetch, that thing we be come hither to bring you without your labour, paine, cost, aduenture or ieopardy. What thing is that? Certes the suretie of your owne bodies, the quiet of your Wiues and your Daughters, the safegarde of your goods: of all which things in time past ye stood euermore in doubt. For who was there of you all, that would reckon himselfe Lord of his owne goods among so many greens and traps as were set therefore, among so much pilling and polling, among so many tares and tallages, of which there was neuer end, and oftentimes no need: or if any were, it rather grew of riot, and vnreasonable waste, than any necessary or honorable charge? So that there was daily piled from good men and honest, great substance of goods to bee lashed out among vnthrifts, so far forth that fifteenes sufficed not, nor any vsuall manner of knowne Taxes: but vnder an easie name of beneuolence and good will, the Commissioners so much of euery man tooke, as no man could doe with his good will haue giuen: as though that name of beneuolence, hadde signified that euery man should pay not what himselfe of his owne good will list to graunt, but that the King of his good will list to take. Which neuer asked little, but euery thing was haunted aboue the measure, amerciements turned into fines, fines into ransoms, small trespasses into misprision, misprision into treason. Whereof I thinke no man loketh that we should remember you of examples by name, as though Burdet were forgotten, that was for a word spoken in hast cruelly beheaded, by the misconstruing of the lawes of this Realme for the Princes pleasure; with no lesse honour to Marcam then chiefe Iustice, that left his office rather than he would assent to that iudgement, than to the dishonestie of thole, that eyther for feare or flattery gaue that iudgement. What Cooke your owne worshipfull neighbor Alderman and Maior of this noble city, who is of you either so negligent that hee knoweth not, or so forgetful that he remembreth not, or so hard harted that he pitteth not that worshipful mans losse, what speake we of losse, his vtter spoile and vndeserued destruction, only for that it happened thole to fauor him whom the Prince fauoured not. We nede not, I suppose, to rehearse of these any mo by name, sith there be (I doubt not) many here present, that either in themselues, or in their nigh friends haue knowne as well their goods as their persons, greatly in dangered, either by fained quarelles, or small matters agreued with heynous names. And also there was no crime so great, of which there could lacke a Pretext. For sith the King preuenting the time of his inheritance attapped the Crowne by battell: it sufficed in a rich man for a pretext of treason, to haue been of kinred or aliance, neere familiarity, or longer acquaintance with any of those that were at any time, the K. enemies, which was at one time or other, more than halfe the realme. Thus were neither your goods in surety, & yet they brought Open warres. your bodies in ieopardy, besides the common aduenture of open war, which albeit that it is euer the vil and occasion of much mischiefe, yet it is neuer so mischieuous as where any people fal at distance among themselues no: in none earthly nation, so deadly and so pestilent, as when it hapneth among vs: and among vs neuer so long continued dissention, nor so many battailes in that season, nor so cruell and so deadly foughten, as was in that Kings dayes that dead is, God forgiue it his soule. In whose time, and by whose occasion, what about the getting of the garland, keeping it, leasing, and winning againe, it hath cost more English blod, than hath twice the winning of France. In which inward warre among our selues, hath beene so great effusion of the auncient noble blood of this Realme, that scarcely the halfe remaineth to the great enfeebling of this noble land, besides

T. Burdet Esquier of Arrow in Worcestershire, beheaded. Anno. 1477.

many a good towne ransaked and spoiled by them, that haue beene going to the fielde or comming from thence: And peace long after not much surer than warre. So that no time was there, in which rich men for their money, and great men for their lands, or some other for some feare, or some displeasure were not out of perill. For whom trusted he that mistrusted his owne brother? whom spared he that killed his owne brother? or who could perfitly loue him, or if his owne brother could not? What manner of folke he wold fauoured we shall not: his honor spare to speake of, howbeit this wot you well all, that who so was best, hare allway least rule, and more suits was in his dores vnto Shores wife, a vile and abhominable strumpet, than to all his Lords in England, except vnto those that made her their Protector: which simple woman was well named and honest, till the King for his wanton lust and sinfull affection bereft her from her husband, a right honest substantiall young man, among you. And in that point, which in good faith, I am sorie to speake of, saying that it is in vaine to keepe in counsell that thing that all men know, the Kings greedy appetite was insatiable, and euery where ouer all the Realme intolerable: for no woman was there any where, young or old, rich or poore, whom hee set his eye vpon, in whom he any thing liked, either person or fauor, speech, pace, or countenance, but without any feare of God, or respect of his honor, murmure or grudge of the world, hee would inpotently purloe his appetite, and haue her, to the great destruction of many a good woman, and great dolor to their husbands and their other friends, which being honest people of themselues, so much regard the cleannesse of their honle, the chastity of their wiues and their children, that they were leauer to lese all that they haue beside, than to haue such a villany done them. And all were it that with this and other impottable dealings, the Realme was in euery part annoied: yet specially ye here the citizens of this noble city, as well for amongst you is most plenty of all such things as minister matter to such iniuries, as for that you were nerest at hand, sith that nere hereabout was commonly his most abiding. And yet be ye the people whom hee had as singular faule well and kindly to intreat, as any part of his Realme, not onely for that the Prince by London the Kings especiall chamber. this noble City, as his especiall chamber, and the speciall well renowned City of his Realm, much honorable fame receiueth among all other nations: but also for that ye, not without your great cost, and sundry perils and ieopardies in all his warres, bare euer your speciall fauor to his part, which your kinde minders bone vnto the house of Yorke, sith he hath nothing worthily acquited, there is of that house that now by Gods grace better shall, which thing to shew you, is the whole summe and effect of this our present errand. It shall not, I wot well, nede that I rehearse to you againe that ye haue already heard of him that can better tell it, and of whom I am sure ye will better beleue it: and reason is that it so be. I am not so proud to take therefore, that ye should reckon my words of as great authority as the preachers of the Word of God, namely, a man so cunning and so wise, that no man better wotteth what he should say, and therefore so good and vertuous, that he would not say the thing which he wist hee should not say, in the pulpit, namely, into the which no honest man commeth to lie, which honourable preacher ye well remember substantially declared vnto you at Pauls Crosse, on Sunday last past, the right and title, that the most excellent Prince Richard Duke of Glocester, now Protector of this Realme hath vnto the crowne and Kingdome of the same. For as the worshipfull man groundly made open vnto you, the children of King Edward the fourth were neuer lawfully begotten, for as much as the King (leauing his very wife Dame Elizabeth Lucy) was neuer lawfully married vnto the Queene their mother whose blood sauing that he set his vnpituous pleasure before his honor, was full vnmeetely to be matched with his, and the mingling of whose bloods together, hath bene the effusion of great part of the noble blood of this Realme. Whereby it may well seeme the marriage not well made, of which there is so much mischiefe growne. For lacke of which lawfull accoupling and also of other things which the saide worshipfull Doctor rather signified than fullie explained, and which things shall not be spoken for me, as the thing wherein euery man for dread eth to say that he knoweth in auoiding displeasure of my noble Lord Protector, bearing, as nature requireth, a filiall reuerence to the Duchesse his mother, for these causes I say before remembred, that is to wit, for lacke of other issue lawfully comming of the late noble Prince Richard Duke of Yorke, to whose royall blond the Crowne of England and of France, is by the high authoritie of Parliament entailed, the right and title of the same, is by the iust course of inheritance according to the common lawes of this land, dedulate and common vnto the most excellent Prince the Lord Protector, as to the verie lawfully begotten son of the forerembred noble Duke of Yorke. Which thing well considered, and the great knightly prowesse pondered, with manifolde vertues which in his noble person singularly abound, the nobles and commons also of this Realme, and specially of the north part not willing any bastard blod to haue the rule of the land, nor the abuses before in the same vsed any longer to continue, haue condescended and fully determined to make humble petition to the most puissant Prince the Lord Protector, that it may like his grace at our humble request, to take vpon him the guiding and gouernance of this Realme, to the wealth and encrease of the same, according to his verie right and iust title. Which thing I wote it well, hee will bee loath to take vpon him, as he whose wilesome well perceiueth the labor: and study both of minde and bodie, that shall come therewith, to whomsoeuer so will accept

occupy the rowme, as I dare say hee will, if he take it. Which rowme I warne you well is no childes office: And, that the great wise man well perceiued when he sayd: *Ve regno cuius rex puer est*: Woe is that realme that hath a childe to their king. Wherefore to much the more cause haue we to thanke God, that this noble personage which is so righteously intituled thereunto, is of so sad age, and thereunto so great wisedome ioyned with so great experience, which, albeit he will be loath (as I haue sayde) to take it vpon him, yet shall he to our petition in that behalfe the more gratiously incline, if ye the worshipfull citizens of this the chiefe city of this realme, ioyne with vs the nobles in our said request. Which for your owne weale we doubt not but ye will: and nathelesse heartily pray you so to doo, whereby you shall doe great profit to all this realme beside, in chosing them so good a king, and vnto your selfe especiall commodity, to whom his Maiestie shall euer after beare so much the more tender fauor, in howmuch hee shall perceiue you the more prone and benevolently minded toward his election. Wherein deare friends what mind you haue, we require you plainly to shew vs.

When the Duke hadde sayd, and loked that the people whom he hoped that the Maior had framed before, should after this propolition made, haue cried King Richard, King Richard, all was husht and mute, and not one word answered thereunto: wherewith the Duke was marueilously abashed, and taking the maior neere to him, with other that were about him priuie to that matter, saide vnto them softly, what meaneth this, that this people be so still? Sir (quoth the Maior) perchase they perceiue you not well. That shall we mend (quoth he) if that will helpe.

And by and by, somewhat louder he rehearsed them the same matter againe in other order and other words so well and ornately, nay nathelesse so euidently and plaine, with voice, gesture, and countenance so comely, and so conuenient, that euery man much marueiled that heard him, and thought that they neuer had in their liues heard so euill a tale so well tolde.

But were it for wonder or feare, or that each lokt the other should speake first: not one word was there answered of all the people that stode before, but all was as still as the midnight, not so much as rowning amongst them, by which they might seeme to commune what was best to doe. When the Maior saw this, he with other partners of that Counsell drewe about the Duke, and sayde that the people hadde not bene accustomed there to be spoken vnto, but by the Recorder which is the mouth of the citie and happily to him they will answere. With Fitz William Recorder. that the Recorder called Fitz William, a sad man and an vnwell, which was so new come into that office, that he neuer hao spoken to the people before, and loath was with that matter to begin: notwithstanding, thereunto commanded by the Maior, made rehearsall to the Commons of that the Duke had twice rehearsed to them himselfe. But the Recorder so tempered his tale, that hee shewed euery thing as the Dukes wordes, and no part of his owne. But all this noting, no change made in the people, which all hap after one, stod as they had bene men amased. Whereupon the Duke rowned vnto the Maior and said: this is a marueilous obstinate silence, and therewith hee turned vnto the people againe with these wordes: Deare friends, we come to moue you to the thing which peraduenture we not so greatly needed, but that the Lords of this Realme, and the Commons of other parties might haue sufficed: sauing that we such loue beare you, and so much set by you, that we would not gladly doe without you that thing in which to be partners is your weale and honor, which as it seemeth, either you see not, or wey not. Wherefore we require you giue vs answere one or other whether ye be minded as all the nobles of the realm be, to haue this noble Prince now Protector to be your King or not.

At these wordes the people began to whisper among themselues secretly, that the voice was neither lowde nor distinct, but as it were the sound of a swarme of Bees, till at the last in the neather end of the Hall, a buthment of the Dukes seruants and Mathfields, and other longing to the Protector, with some prentiles and lads that thrust into the Hall among the preasse, began sodainly at mens backes to crie out as lowde as their throates would giue, King Richard, King Richard, and threw vp their caps in token of ioy. And they that stod before cast backe their heads marueiling thereat, but nothing they said.

And when the Duke and the Maior saw this manner, they wisely turned it to their purpose, and said it was a goodly crie, and a ioyfull to heare, euery man with one voice, no man saying nay. Wherefore friends (quoth the Duke) since that we perceiue it is all your whole mindes to haue this Noble man for your King, whereof we shall make to his grace so effectuall report, that we doubt not but it shall redound vnto your great weale and commodity: woe require you that ye to morow goe with vs, and we with you vnto his noble grace, to make our humble request vnto him in manner before remembred. And therewith the Lords came downe, and the company dissolued and departed, the more part all sad, some with glad semblance that were not very merry, and some of those that came thither with the Duke not able to dissemble their sorrow, were faine at his backe to turne their face to the wall, while the dolour of their heart burst out of their eyes.

Then on the morrow after, the Maior with al the Aldermen and chiefe commoners of the citie in their best manner apparelled, assembling themselues together, resorted vnto Baynards castle, where the Protector lay. To which place repayred also according to their appointment, the Duke of Buckingham, with diuers Noble men with him, beside many Knights and other Gentlemen. And thereupon the Duke sent word vnto the Lord Protector of the being The Maior commeth to Baynards Castle. there

thereof a great and honorable company, to moue a great matter vnto his grace.

Whereupon the Protector made difficulty to come out vnto them, but if he first knew some part of their errand, as though he doubted, and partly disturbed the coming of a number vnto him of so sodainly, without any warning or knowledge whether they came for good or harme. Then the Duke vnderstode how he was led this vnto the Maior and other, that they might thereby perceiue little the Protector looked for this matter, then sent vnto him by the messenger such lesting message againe, and therewith so humbly besought him to vouchsafe, that he him might admit to his presence, to propose their intent, of which they would vtter nothing either perteining vnto them, or that he the cause forth of his Chamber, yet not doubting vnto them, but good aboue in a Gallerie ouer them, where they might see him and speake to him, as though he would not yet come nere them, till he with them had commoned. And thereupon the Duke of Buckingham first made humble petition vnto him on the behalfe of them all, that his grace would pardon them, and licence them to propose vnto his grace the intente of their coming without his displeasure, without which pardon obtained, they durst not be bold to moue him of that matter. In which, albeit they meant as much honour to his Grace, as wealth to all the Realme beside, yet were they not sure how his grace would take it, whom they would in no wise offend. Then the Protector (as he was very gentle of his speech, and also longed sore to witte what they meant) gaue him leaue to propose what him liked, verily trusting for the good mind that he bare them al, none of them any thing would intend vnto him ward, wherewith he was not to be grieued.

When the Duke had this leaue and pardon to speake, then bared he bold to shew him their intent and purpose, with all the causes mouing them thereunto, as ye before haue heard and finally to beseech his grace, that it would like him of his accustomed goodnes and zeale vnto the Realme, now with his eye of pitie, to behold the long continued distresse and decay of the same, and to set his gracious hands to redresse an amendment thereof, by taking vpon him the crowne and gouernance of this Realm, according to his right and title lawfully descended vnto him, and to the laud of God, profite of the land and vnto his grace so much the more honor, and lesse paine, in that that neuer Prince raigned vpon any people, that were so glad to line vnder his obeisance, as the people of this Realme vnder his.

When the Protector had heard the proposition, he loked very strangely thereat, and answered: That albeit it were that hee partly knew the things by them alledged to bee true, yet such entire loue he bare vnto K. Edward and his children, that so much more he regarded his honor in other realmes about, than the Crowne of any one, of which he was neuer desirous, that he could not finde in his heart in this point to encline to their desire. For in all other nations where the truth were not well knowne, it should peraduenture be thought, that it were his owne ambitious mind and deuise, to depose the Prince, and take himselfe the Crowne, with which infamy hee would not haue his honour stayned for any Crowne, in which he had euer perceiued much more labour, care, paine and displeasure than pleasure to him that would so be it, as the that would not; were not worthy to haue it. Notwithstanding he not vtterly pardoned them the motion that they made him, but ful thanked them for the loue and hearty fauor they beare him, praying them for his sake to giue the same to the Prince vnder whom he was, and would be content to liue, and with his labour and counsell, as far as should like the king to vse him, he would do his vttermost deuoire to set the Realme in good state, which was already in this little while of his Protectorship (the praise giuen to God) well begun, in that the malice of such as were before occasion of the contrary, and of new stirred to be, were now partly by good policy, partly more by Gods speciall prouidence, than mans preuision, repressed.

Upon this answere giuen, the Duke by the Protectors licence, a little rowned, as well with other noble men about him, as with the Maior and Recorder of London. And after that, vpon like pardon desired and obtained, he shewed alonde vnto the Protector, that for a finall conclusion, by the Realme it was appointed K. Edwards line should not any longer raigne ouer them, both for that they had so far gone, that it was now no surety to retreate, as for that they thought it for the weale vniuersall, to take that way, although they had not yet begun it. Wherefore if it would like his grace to take the crowne vpon him, they would humbly beseech him thereunto. If he would giue them a resolute answere, to the contrary which they would be loath to heare, then must they needs take, and should not faile to find some other noble man that would.

These words much moued the Protector, which else as euery man may witte, would neuer of likely hod haue enclined thereunto. But when he saw there was non other way, but that either he must take it, or else he and his both go from it, he said vnto the Lords & commons: Sith we perceiue well that all the Realme is so set, whereof wee be very sory that they will not suffer in any wise Kings Edwards line to gouerne them, whom no man earthly can gouerne against their wils, and we well also perceiue that no man is there, to whom the crowne can by iust title apperteine, as to our selfe, as by right heire lawfully begotten of the body of our most deare father Richard late Duke of Yorke, to which title is now ioyned your election, the nobles and commons of this Realme, to which both we of all titles possible take for the most part effectuall: We be content and agree fauorably to encline to your petition and request, and accepting to the same, here we take vpon vs the Royall Estate, preeminence and Kingdome of the two noble Realmes, England and France, The Protection. and

the one from this day forward, by vs and our heires to rule, gouerne and defend: the other by Gods grace, and your good helpe, to get againe and subdue, and establish for euer in due obedience vnto this realme of England, the aduancement whereof we neuer aske of God longer to liue than we intend to procure.

With this there was a great shoute, crying King Richard, K. Richard. And then the Lords went vp to the King (for so was he from that time called) and the people departed, talking diuersly of the matter, euery man as his fantasie gaue him: But much they talked and maruelled of the manner of this dealing that the matter was on both parts made so strange, as though neither had euer communed with other thereof before, when that themselues wist there was no man so dull that heard them, but he perceiued well enough, that all the matter was made betweene them. Howbeit some excused that againe, and said it must be done in good order: men must sometime for the manners sake, not be aknowne what they know: at the consecration of a Bishop, euery man wotteth well by the paping for his bulle, that he purposeth to bee one: and though he pay for nothing else, yet must he be twise asked whether he will be Bishop or no, and he must twise say nay, and at the third time take it, as compelled thereunto by his owne will. And in a stage play the people knoweth well, that he that playeth the Sowdain, is perchance a cobler, yet if one should know so little good, to shew out of season what acquaintance he hath with him, and cal him by his owne name, while he standeth in his maiestie, one of his tormentors might hap to breake his head, and worship, for marring of the play: And so they said, that these matters be kings games, as it were stage plaies, and for the more part, played vpon scaffolds: in which poze men be but the lokers on. And they that wise be, will medle no further: for they that pleasten step vp, and play with them, when they cannot play their parts, they disorder the play & doe themselues no good.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF KING RICHARD *THE THIRD*,

1483. *An. reg. 1.* The 25. of June. This that is here betweene this marke ¶ and this marke ¶ was not written by Master Moore in this historie written by him in English, but is translated out of this Historie which he wrote in Latin.

THe next day, the Protector with a great traine, went to Westminster hall, and there when he had placed himselfe in the court of the Kings bench, declared to the audience, that he would take vpon him the crowne in that place there, where the King himselfe sitteth and ministreth the law because he considered, that it was the chiefest duty of a K. to minister the lawes. Then with as pleasant an Oration as he could, he went about to win vnto him, the nobles, the merchants, and artificers, and in conclusion, all kind of men, but especially the lawyers of this Realme. And finally, to the intent that no man should hate him for feare, and that his deceitfull clemency might get him the good will of the people, when he had declared the discommodity of discord, and the commodities of concord and vnity, he made an open proclamation, that hee did put out of his minde all enmities, and that he there did openly pardon all offences committed against him. And to the intent that he might helpe a powre thereof, he commanded that one Fogge, whom he had long deadly hated, should be brought then before him, who being brought out of the sanctuarie (for thither had he fled for feare of him) in the sight of the people, he take him by the hand: which thing the common people reioyced at, and praised, but wise men take it for a banitie. In his returne homeward, whomsoeuer he met, he saluted: for a mind that knoweth it selfe guilty, is in a manner deiected to a seruile flattery.

King Richard, to be sure of all enemies, had sent for out of the north fiue thousand men to bee at his coronation, vnder the leading of Robert of Ridsdale, these being but meanely apparelled, and woorse harneised, mustered in Finsberie field.

On the fourth of July, he came to the Tower by water, with his wife, and on the fift day hee created John Lord *Howard*, Duke of Norffolke, sir Tho. his sonne, Earle of Surrey, *William* Lord *Barkeley* Earle of Nottingham, *Francis* L. *Louel*, vicount *Louel* & the kings chamberlaine: the L. *Stanley* was deliuered out of ward and made steward of the kings houshold. Also the archbi. of Yorke was deliuered, but *Morton* Bishop of Ely was committed to the Duke of Buckingham to bee kept in ward, who sent him to his manor of Brecknock in Wales, there to be kept. The same night the King made Knights of the Bathe to the number of seuenteene.

On the sixt of July hee rode through the City of London toward Westminster with great pompe: and on the morrow being the seuenth, he with his wife Queene *Anne* were crowned.

When he had beguinne his raigne in July, after this mockish election, then was he crowned the first, or rather the seuenth day of the same moneth. And that solemnity was furnished for the most part, with the selfe same prouision that was appointed for the coronation of his nephew.

After this were taken for rebels against the King, *Robert Ruffe* sergeant of London, *William Daw* pardoner of Hounslow, *Iohn Smith* groome of King *Edwards* stirrop, and *Stephen Ireland* wardrober in the Tower, with many other, that they should haue sent writings into the parts of Britaine to the Earles of Richmond and of Penbrooke, and the other Lords: and how they were purposed to haue set fire on diuers parts of London, which fire whilest men had beene stanching, they would haue stolen out of the Tower, the Prince *Edward*, and his brother the Duke of Yorke, &c. *Robert Ruffe*, *William Daw*, *Iohn Smith*, and *Stephen Ireland*, were at Westminster iudged to death, and from thence drawne to the Tower hill, and there beheaded, and their heads were set on London bridge.

Sir Thomas Moore againe in English.

Now fell there mischiefes thicke. And as the thing euill gotten is neuer well kept, though all the time of his raigne neuer ceased there cruell death and slaughter, till his owne destruction ended it. But as hee finished his time with the best death and the most righteous, that is to wit, his owne, so began he with the most piteous and wicked. I meane the lamentable murther of his innocent nephews, the young K. & his tender brother, whose death and finall infortune hath nay the lesse commen so far in question, that some remaine yet in doubt, whether they were destroyed in his daies or no.

Perkin Warbeck.

Not for that onely that Perkin Werbecke by many folkes malice, & moe folkes folly, so long space abusing the world, was afreid with princes as the poore people, reputed and taken for the younger of these two, but for that also that all things were in late dayes so couertly demeaned, one thing pretended, & another meant, that there was nothing so plaine and openly proued, but that yet for the common custome of cloke & couert dealing, men had it euer inwardly in suspect, as many well counterfeited feignes make the true mistrusted. Howbeit concerning the opinion, with the occasions mouing either party, we shall haue place more at large to intreat, if we hereafter happen to write the time of the late noble Prince of famous memorie K. Henry the 7. or perchance that historie of Perkin in any compendious processe by it selfe. But in the meane time for this present matter, I shall rehearse you the dolorous end of those babes, not after euery way that I haue heard, but by such men, and by such meanes, as me thinketh it were hard but it should be true.

King Richard after his coronation, taking his way to Glocester to visite in his new honour, the Towne of which he bare the name of his olde, deuised as he rode to fulfill the thing which he before had intended. And forasmuch as his mind gaue him, that his nephewes liuing, men would not reckon that he could haue right to the Realme, he though therefore without delay to ridde them, as though the killing of his kinsmen could amend his cause, and make him a kindly King. Whereupon hee sent one Iohn Greene, whom he specially trusted, vnto Sir Robert Brakenbury Constable of the Tower, with a letter and credence also, that the same Sir Robert should in any wise put the two children to death. This Iohn Greene did his errand vnto Brakenbury, knocking before one Lady in the Tower, who plainely answered, that he would neuer put them to death, to die therefore: with which answere Iohn Greene returning, recounted the same to King Richard at Warwike yet in his way. Wherewith he take such displeasure and thought, that the same night he said vnto a secret page of his: Ah whom shall a man trust? Those that I haue brought vp my selfe, those that I had warned would most surely serue me, euen those faile me, and at my commandement would doe nothing for me. Sir (quoth his page) there lieth one on your pallet without, that I dare well say, to doe your grace pleasure, the thing were right hard that he would refuse, meaning this by sir James Tirell, which was a man of right goodly personage and for natures gifts worthie to haue serued a much better Prince, if he had well serued God, and by grace obtained as much truth and good will as he had strength and wit. The man had an high heart, and sore longed vpward, not rising yet so fast as he had hoped, being hindered and kept vnder by the meanes of Sir Richard Ratcliffe, and Sir William Catesby, which longing for no mo partners of the Princes fauor, and namely not for him, whose pride they wist would beare no pere, kept him by secret drifts out of all secret trust, which thing this page well had marked and known: wherefore this occasion offered, of verie special friendship he take his time to put him forward, and by such wise to do him good, that all the enuyes he had, except the diuell, could neuer haue done him so much. For vpon this pages words, King Richard arose (for this communication had hee sitting at the draught, a conuenient Carpet for such a councell, and came out into a pallet chamber, on which he found sir Iames and sir Thomas Tirels of person like, and brethren of blod, but nothing of kin in conditions. Then saide the King merrily to them, what sirs, be ye in bedde so soone? And calling vp sir Iames, broke to him secretly his minde in this mischieuous matter: in which he found him nothing frange. Wherefore on the morrow he sent him to Brakenbury with a letter, by which he was commanded to deliuer Sir Iames all the keies of the Tower for one night, to the end hee might there accomplish the Kings pleasure, in such things

Sir Iames Tirell.

Authority loueth no partners.

as he had giuen him commandement. After which letter deliuered, and the keyes receiued, Sir Iames appointed the night next ensuing to destroy them, deuising before, no preparing the meanes. The Prince as soone as the Protector left the name and toke himselfe as King, bad it thewed vnto him, that he should not raigne, but his vncle should haue the Crowne. At which words the Prince sore abathed, began to sigh and said: Alas, I would, my vncle would let me haue my life yet, though I lese my Kingdome. Then he that told him the tale, shed him with good words, and put him in the best comfort he could. But forthwith was the Prince and his brother both shut vp, and all other remoued from them, onely one called Black Will, or William Slaughter except, set to serue them and se them serue. After which time the Prince neuer tasted pleasure, nor aught rought of himselfe, but with the young babe his brother, lingred with wearie and heauines, till this traiterous death deliuered them of that wretched conc: for sir Iames Tyrell deuised that they should be murthered in their beds. To the execution whereof he appointed Miles Forrest one of the foure that kept them, a fellow fleshed in murther before time. To him he ioyned one Iohn Dighton his owne horse keper, a bigge, broad, square, strong knaue.

The young King and his brother murthered.

Then all the other being remoued from them, this Miles Forrest and Iohn Dighton, about midnight (the sely children lying in their beds) came into the chamber, and sodainely lapped them vp among the clothes, so to bewrapped them and intangled them, keping downe by force the feather bed and pillowes hard vnto their mouths, that within a while, smothered & stifled, their breath failing, they gaue vp to God their innocent soules into the ioyes of heauen, learing to the toquentors their bodies dead in the bed. Which after that the wretches perceiued, first by the strugling with the paines of death, and after long lying still, to be throughly dead, they laid their bodies naked out vpon the bed, and fetched sir Iames to se them, which vpon the sight of them, caused those murtherers to bury them at the Staire fot, metely deepe in the ground vnder a great heape of stones.

Then rode sir Iames in great haste to King Richard and shewed him all the manner of the murther, who gaue him great thanks, and (as some say) there made him knight. But he alowed not, as I haue heard, the burying in so vile a corner, saying that he would haue them buried in a better place, because they were a Kings sonnes. To the honorable courage of a King. Whereupon they say, that a priest of S. Robert Brakenbury toke vp the bodies again, and secretly enterred them in such place, as by the confession of his death, which onely knew it, could neuer since come to light. Very troth it is, and well knowne, that at such time as Sir Iames Tyrell was in the tower for treason committed against the most famous Prince King Henry the seuenth, both Dighton and he, were examined, and confessed the murther in manner aboue written, but whither the bodies were removed, they could nothing tell. And thus I haue learned of them that much knew, and little cause had to lie, were these two noble Princes, these innocent tender children, borne of most royall blod, brought vp in great wealth, likely long to liue, raigne, and rule in the Realme, by traiterous tyranny taken, deprived of their estate, shortly shut vp in prison, and priuily slaine and murthered, their bodies cast, God wot where, by the cruell ambition of their vnnaturall vncle and his disputeous tormentors. Which things on every part well pondered, God neuer gaue this world a more notable example, neyther in what vnsurety standeth this worldly weale, or what mischiefe worketh the proud enterprise of an ire heart, finally or what wretched end ensueth such displeasure cruelty. For to begin with the ministers, Miles Forrest at Saint Martins perecreale rotted away: Dighton liueth yet walketh on aliue in good possibility to be hanged ere he die: but Sir Iames Tyrell died at the tower hill beheaded for treason: King Richard, himselfe, as ye shall hereafter heare, slaine in the field, hacked and hewed of his enemies hands, carried on horsebacke dead, his haire in despight long and tugged like a Curre Dogge: and the mischiefe that he toke, was within lesse than three yeres of the mischiefe that he did, and yet all the meane time spent in much paine and trouble outward, much feare, anguish, and sorrow within. For I haue heard by credible report of such as were secret with his chamberlaine, that after this abhominable deede done, he neuer hadde quiet in his minde: He neuer thought himselfe sure: where he went abroad, his eien whirled about, his body priuily fenced, his hand euer vpon his dagger, his countenance and manner like one allwayes ready to strike againe: he take ill rest a nights, lay long waking and musing, sore wearied with Care and Watch, rather slumbred than slept, troubled with fearefull dreames, sodainely sometime start vp, leapt out of his bed, and ran about the chamber, so was his restles heart continually tossed and tumbled with the tedious impression and stormy remembrance of his abhominable deede.

Now had he not ward no long time in rest: for thereupon, some after began the conspiracy, or rather, godd confederation betweene the Duke of Buckingham and many other gentlemen against him.

The occasion whereupon the King and the Duke fell out, is of diuers folke diuers wise pretended.

This Duke (as I haue for certaine beene enformed) as soone as the Duke of Glocester, vpon the death of K. Edw. came to Yorke, and there had solemne funerall service for K. Edward sent thither in the most secret wise he could, one Persall his trustie seruant, who came to Iohn Ward, a chamberer of like secret trust with the D. of Glocester, desiring, that in the most close and couert maner, he might be admitted to the presence and speech of his master. And the Duke of Glocester aduertised of his desire, caused him in the dead of the night, after all other folkes auoided, to bee brought vnto him in his secret chamber, where Persall, after his maisters recommandation, shewed him, that he had secretly sent to him in his new world, he would take such part as he would, and waite vpon him with a thousand good fellowes, if nede were. The messagesent backe with thanks, and some secret instruction of the Protectors winde: yet met with him againe farther from the Duke his maister, within fewe dayes after at Nottingham: whither the Protector from Yorke, with many gentlemen of the north countrey, to the number of 600. horses, was come on his way to London ward, and after secret meting and communication had, eft some departed. Whereupon at Northampton, the Duke met with the Protector himselfe with 300. horse, and from thence still continued with him partner of all his deuises, till that after his Coronation they departed, as it semed, very great friends at Glocester: from whence, as some as the Duke came home, he so lightly turned from him, and so highly conspired against him, that a man would maruell where of the change grew. And surely, the occasion of their variance is of diuers men diuersly reported. Some haue said (I heard say) that the Duke a little before the Coronation, among other things required of the Protector the Duke of Herfords Landes, to the which he pretended himselfe inheritor. And for as much as the title which hee clayned by inheritance, was somewhat enterlaced with the title to the crowne, by the line of King Henry before depriued, the protector conceiued such indignation, that he reiected the dukes request with many spitefull and minatory wordes, which so wounded his heart with hatred and mistrust, that he neuer after could endure to looke aright on King Richard, but euer feared his owne life, so far forth, that when the Protector rode through London toward his coronation, he fained himselfe sicke, because he would not ride with him And the other taking it in euill part, sent him word to rise, & come ride, or he would make him be carried: whereupon he rode on with euill will, and that notwithstanding on the morow, rose from the feast, fayning himselfe sicke, and King Richard said it was done in hatred and despight of him. And they said that euer after continually each of them liued in such hatred and distrust of other, that the D. verily loked to haue bin murthered at Glocester from which, naitheles, he in faire manner departed. But surely some right secret at that day deep thinkers many right wise men thinke it vnlikely (the depe dissembling nature of both those men considered, and what nede in that aege would the Protector had of the Duke, and in what perill the D. stood, if he fell once in suspition of the tyrant) that eyther the protector would giue the Duke occasion of displeasure, or the Duke the Protector occasion of mistrust. And verily men thinke that if King Richard had any such opinion conceiued, he would neuer haue suffered him to escape his hands. Very troth it is, the Duke was an high minded man, and cuill could beare the Glorie of another, so that I haue heard of some that say they saw it, that the Duke at such time as the Crowne was first set vpon the Protectors head, his eye could not abide the sight thereof, but wyped his head another way. But men say, that he was of troth not well at ease, and that both to King Richard well knowne, and not ill taken, nay any demand of the Dukes vncourteouslly reiected, but he both with great gifts & high behestes, in most louing and trusty manner departed at Glocester. But some after his coming home to Brecknocke, hauing there in custodie, by the commandement of King Richard, Doctor Morton Bishop of Ely, who (as ye before heard) was taken in the councell at the Tower, wared with him familiar: whose wisedome abused his pride to his owne deliuerance and the Dukes destruction. The Bishop was a man of great naturall wit, very well learned and honorable in behauiour, lacking no wise wares to win fauor. He had him fall vpon the part of King Henry, while that part was in wealth, and mayheles left it not, nor forsoke it in wo, but fled the realme with the Queene and the Prince, while king Edward had the king in prison, neuer came home, but to the field: After which lost, and that part vtterly subdued; the other, for his fast faith and wisedome, not onely was content to receiue him, but also lowed him to come, and had him from thence forth both in secret trust, and very special fauor, which he nothing deceiued. For he being (as ye haue heard) after king Edwards death first taken by the tyrant, for his truth to the King, found the meane to set this Duke in his toppe, topned gentlemen together in ayde of King Henry, deuising first the marriage betweene him and king Edwards daughter, by which his faith, he declared the good seruice to both his maisters at once, with infinit benefite to the Realme, by the Coniunction of those two bloods in one, whose seuerall titles had long disquieted the land, he fled the Realme, went to Rome, neuer vntoning more to medale with the world, till the noble Prince King Henry the seuenth, gat him home againe, made him Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancellor of England, whereunto the Pope topned the honor of Cardinall. Thus liuing many dayes in as much honour as one man might well with, ended them so godly, that his death with Gods mercy well changed his life.

This man therefore, as I was about to tell you, by the long and often alternate prose, as well of prosperity as aduers fortune, had gotten, by great experience the very mother and mistresse of wisedome, a depe insight in politike worldly drifts. Whereby, perceiuing now this Duke glad to commune with him, feede him with faire wordes, and many pleasant praises. And perceiuing by the processe of their communication, the Dukes pride, now and then balke out a little head of enuie, toward the glory of the King, and thereby feeling him cafe to fall out, if the matter were well handled: hee craftily sought the wayes

to pricke him forward, taking alwayes the occasion of his comming, and so keeping himselfe so close within his bounds, that he rather seemed to follow him, than to leade him. For when the Duke first began to praise and boaste the King, and shewed how much profite the Realme should take by his raigne: Pp Lord Morton answered: Surely my Lord, (folly it were for me to lie, for if I would sweare the contrary, your Lordship would not I weene, believe but that if the world would have gone as I would have wished, King Henries sonne had had the crowne, and not King Edward. But after that God had ordered him to lose it, and King Edward to raigne, I was never so mad that I would with a dead man strive against the quicke. So was I to King Edward a faithfull Chaplaine, and glad would have beene that his child had succeeded him. Howbeit, if the secret iudgement of God have otherwise provided, I purpose not to fyrme against a pricke, nor labor to set by that God pulleth downe. And as for the late Protector and now King. And even there he left, saying, that he had already meddled too much with the world, and would from that day meddle with his beke and his beades, and no further. Then longed the Duke fore to heare what he would have said, because he ended with the King, and there so soddenly stopped, and exhorted him so familiarly betweene them twaine, to be bold to say what so euer he thought, whereof he faithfully promised, there should never come hurt, and peraduenture more good then hee would weene, and that himselfe intended to vse his faithfull secret advice and counsell, which he said was the onely cause for which hee procured of the King to have him in his custody, where he might reckon himselfe at home, else had he ben put in the hands of them with whom hee should not have found the like fauour. The Bishoppe right humblie thanked him, and said: In good faith my Lord, I love not talke much of Princes, as a thing not all out of perill, though the word be without fault, forasmuch as it shall not bee taken as the partie meant it, but as it pleaseth the Prince to construe it. And euer I thinke on Aesopes tale, that when the Lion had proclaymed, that on payne of death, there should none horned beast abide in that wood: one that had in his forehead, a bunch of flesh, tho a way a great pace. The fore that saw him runne fast, asked him whither he made all that haste? And he answered, in faith I neyther wot, nor recke, so I were once hence, because of this proclamation made of horned beasts. What (sayd he) quoth the fore, thou maiest abide well inough, the Lion meant not by thee, for it is none beare that is in thine head. No marie (quoth he) that wot I well enough: but what and he call it an horne, where am I then? The Duke laughed merily at the tale, and said, My Lord, I warrant you, neyther the Lyon nor the Boare, shall pricke any matter at any thing here spoken, for it shall never come to their eares: In good faith Sir, said the Bishoppe, if it did, the thing that I was about to say, taken as well (as afore God I meant) it could deserve but thanke: yet fal en as I weene it would, might happen to turne me to little good, and you to lesser. Then longed the Duke yet much more to wit what it was: wherupon the Bishop saide, In good faith my Lord, as for the late Protector, sith hee is now King in possession, I purpose not to dispute his title, but for the weale of this realme, wherein his grace hath now the gouernance, whereof I am my selfe one poze member, I was about to wish, that to those good abilities whereof he hath already right many, little wanting my prayse, it might yet have pleased God for the better, to have given him some of such other excellent vertues mete for the rule of a realme, as our Lord hath planted in the person of your grace: and there left againe.

The Duke somewhat marvelling at his sodaine pawses, said: Pp Lord, I note your often breathing and sodaine stopping in your communication, so that to my intelligence, your woods neyther come to any direct or perfect sentence in conclusion, whereby eyther I might have knowledge what your intent is now toward the King, or what affection you beare toward me. For the comparison of good qualities ascribed to vs both, maketh mee not a little to muse, thinking, that you have some other pzivy imagination imprinted in your heart which you be abashed to disclose, and especially to mee, which on my honour do assure you to bee as secret in this case as the deafe and dumbe person to the singer, or the tree to the hunter. The B. being somewhat bolder, considering the Dukes promise, but most of all animated, because hee knew the Duke destrous to be magnified, and also hee perceived the inward hatred which hee bare toward King Ric. he opened his stomacke to the bottome, and said: Pp singular good Lord, sith the time of my captivitie, which being in your graces custody, I may rather call it a liberty than a straight imprisonment, in auoiding of idlenes the mother of all vices, in reading bookes and ancient pamphlets I have found this sentence written; That no man is borne free and at liberty of himselfe onely: for one part of our he owed to his parents, another part to his friends and kinsfolkes: but the native countrey, in the which he first tasted this pleasant and flattering world, demandeth a debt not to be forgotten. Which saying causeth me to consider in what case this realme my native countrey now standeth, and in what estate and assurance before this time it hath continued: what governor were now have, and what ruler we might have: for I plainely perceive (the realme being in this case) must needs decay, and be brought to confusion, but one hope I have, that is, when I consider your noble personage, your lignage and inheritance, your feruent zeale and ardent love toward your natiuall country, and in like manner the love of your country toward you, the great learning, pregnant wit, and eloquence, with fish so much doth abound in your person, I must needs put be this realme fortunate which hath such a Prince in hope, mete and apt to be governed. But on the other side, when I call to memory the good qualities of the late Protector, and now called King, so violated by tyranny, so altered by sharped authority, so clouded by blinde ambition, I must needes say, that hee is neither mete to be King of so Noble a Realme, nor so Famous a Realme mete to be governed by such a Tyrant. Was not his first enterprize to obtaine the Crowne, begun by the murther of diuers Noble personages? Did he not secondarily procede against his owne naturall mother, declaring her openly to be a woman given to carnall affection, and dissolute living? Declaring furthermore his two brethren and two Nephewes to be Bastards, and to be borne in adultery? yet not contented, after he had obtained the Garland, he caused the two poze innocents his Nephewes, committed to him, to be shamefully murthered, the blood of which little babes, daily cry to God from the earth for vengeance: what liuely shall be in this Realme, to any person, either for life or goods, under such a cruell Prince, which regardeth not the destruction of his owne blod, and then the lesse, the losse of other? But now to conclude, what I meane toward your Noble person, I say, and affirme, if you love God, your lineage, or your native countrey, you must your selfe take vpon you the Crowne of this Realme, both for the maintenance of the honour of the same, as also for the deliverance of your naturall country-men from the bondage of such a Tyrant. And if your selfe will refuse to take vpon you the Crowne of this Realme, then I adiure you by the faith that you owe to God, to devise some way how this Realme may be brought to some conuenient regiment, under some good Governour. When the Bishop had ended his saying, the Duke sighed, and spake not of a great while, so that night they communed no more. The next day, the Duke sent for the Bishop, to whom he said, Pp Lord of Ely, I must needes in heart thinke, and with mouth confesse, that you be a sure friend, a trusty Councellor, and a very louer of your Countrey. And sith at your last communication, you have disclosed the secrets of your heart, touching the new usurper of the Crowne, and also have a little touched the aduancement of the two Noble families of Yorke and Lancaster, I shall likewise declare vnto you my pzivy intents, and secret cogitations: and to beginne, when King Edward was deceased, I then began to study, and with deliberation to ponder in what manner this Realme should be governed. I perswaded with my selfe, to take part with the Duke of Glocester, whom I thought to be as cleane without dissimulation, as frackable without iniury, and so by my meanes, he was made Protector, both of the King and Realme, which authority being once gotten, he never ceased pzimly to require me and other Lords, as well spirituall as temporall, that he might take vpon him the Crowne till the Prince came to the age of foure and twenty yeeres, and were able to governe the Realme as a sufficient King: which time, when he saw me so nowhat sticke at, he then brought in Instruments, autenticke Doctors, Proctors and notaries of the Law, with depositions of diuers witnesses, testifying King Edwards children to be Bastards: which depositions then I thought to be as true, as now I know them to be fained. When the said depositions were before vs read, and diligently heard, he stood vp bare headed, saying: Well my Lords, euen as I am you minde, that my Nephewes should have no wrong: so I pzay you bee mee nothing but right, for these witnesses and sayings of famous Doctors be true: for I am onely the mouthitate heyze to Richard Plantagenet, Duke of Yorke, adiudged to be the verye heyze to the Crowne of this Realme by authority of Parliament. Which things so by learned men for verity to vs declared, caused mee and other to take him for our lawfull and vnspotted Prince, and Soueraigne Lord: so against my pzo, he of a Protector was made a King: but when he was once crowned King, and in full possession of the Realme, he cast away his old conditions. For when I my selfe sued to him for my part of the Earle of Herefords Lands, which his brother King Edward wrongfully detained from mee, and also required to have the Office of the high Constable-ship of England, as diuers of my Noble Ancestors before this time tane had, and in long decent continued: in this my first suite, he did not onely flat delay mee, and afterward deny mee, but gaue me such vnkinde words, as though I had never further-ed him, all which I suffered patiently: but when I was informed of the death of the two young innocents, O Lord, my heart inwardly grudged, in so much, that I abhorred the sight of him. I take my leaue of the Court, and returned to Brecknock to you, but in my iourney as I returned, I had diuers imaginations how to deprive this vnnaturall Uncle. First I fantasied, that if I list to take vpon me the Crown, now was the way made plaine, and occasion giuen. For I saw he was disdained of the Lords temporall, and accursed of the Lords Spirituall. After diuers cogitations of this matter, as I rode betweene Worcester and Bridgenorth, I encountred with the Lady Margaret, Countesse of Richmond, now wife to the Lord Stanley, whiche is the very daughter and sole heire to John, Duke of Somerset, my grandfathers elder brother: so that she and her sonne, the Earle of Richmond, be both betweene me and the gate, to enter into the Maiesty Royall, and getting of the Crowne: and when we had a little communed concerning her sonne, and were departed, I then beganne to dispute with my selfe, whether I were best to take vpon me, by the election of the Nobility and Commonalty, or to take it by power. Thus standing in the wauering ambiguity, I considered first, the Office, duty, and paine of a King, which surely I thinke that no mortall man can inswly and truly obserue, except hee be elected by God, as King Dauid was: but further, I remembred, that if I once take on me the gouernance of the Realme, the daughters of King Edward, and their allies, being both for his sake much be-

This that followeth is abridged out of Edward Hall.

lowed, and also for the great iniury done to them much pitied, would never cease to barke at the one side of me. Semblably my Cousin, the Earle of Richmond, his aydes and kinsfolke, will surely attempt, eyther to bite or pierce me on the other side, so that my life and rule should ever haue vnquiet, in doubt of death or depoſition. And if the said two Linages of Yorke and Lancaster should ioyne in one against mee, then were I surely matched. Wherefore I haue clerely determined vtterly to relinquish all imaginations concerning the obtaining of the Crowne: for as I told you, the Countesse of Richmond, in my returne from the new named King, meeting me in the high-way, prayed me sticke for kindred sake, secondly for the loue I bare to my Grandfather, D. Humfrey, which was ſworne brother to her father, to moue the King to be good to her ſonne, Henry. Earle of Richmond, and to licence him with his fauour to returne againe into England, and if it were his pleaſure ſo to doe, ſhe promiſed that the Earle her ſonne, ſhould marry one of King Edwards Daughters at the appointment of the King, without any thing demanded for the ſaid eſpouſalls, but onely the Kings fauour, which requeſt, I ſoone ouer-paſſed and departed, but after, in my lodging, I called to memory more of that matter, I am bent, that the Earle of Richmond, bepre to the houſe of Lancaſter, ſhall take to wife Lady Elizabeth, eldeſt daughter to King Edward, by the which marriage, both the houſes of Yorke and Lancaſter may be vnite in one: when the Duke had ſaid, the Biſhop Morton, which fauoured euer the houſe of Lancaſter was wonderous ioyfull, for all his imagination tended to this effect, and leſt the Dukes courage ſhould aſwage, or his minde alter, he ſaid to the Duke: My Lord of Buckingham, ſith by Gods proniſion, and your incomparable wiſedome, this Noble coniunction is firſt mooued, it is neceſſary to conſider what perſons wee ſhall firſt make priuy of this politike concluſion. By my troth, quoth the Duke, we will beginne with the Lady of Richmond, the Earles mother, which knoweth where he is in Britaine: ſith you will beginne that way (ſaid the Biſhop) I haue an old friend with the Counteſſe, called Reinold Bray, for whom I ſhall ſend, if it be your pleaſure: ſo the Biſhop wrote for him to come to Weekmorke: who ſtraight came backe with the meſſenger, where the Duke and the Biſhop declared what they had deuiſed for the preferment of the Earle of Richmond, ſonne to his Lady and miſtreſſe: willing her firſt to compaſſe how to obtaine the good will of Queene Elizabeth, and alſo of her eldeſt daughter, and after ſecretly to ſend to her Sonne in Britaine, to declare what high honor was prepared for him, if he would ſweare to marry the Lady Elizabeth, as ſoone as he was King of the Realme. Reinold Bray with a glad heart returned to the Counteſſe his Lady. When Bray was gone, the Biſhop told the Duke, that if he were in his Iſle of Ely, he could make many friends to further their enterpriſe. The Duke knew this to be true, but yet loth to loſe the company of ſuch a Counſellor, gaue the Biſhop faire words, ſaying, hee ſhould ſhortly depart well accompanied for feare of enemies, but the Biſhop ere the Dukes company were aſſembled, ſecretly diſguiſed in a night, departed, and came to Ely, where he found money and friends, and ſo ſayled into Flanders, where hee did the Earle of Richmond good ſeruice. When Reinold Bray had declared his meſſage to the Counteſſe, no marueil if ſhe were glad, wherefore ſhe deuiſed a meanes how to breake this matter to Queene Elizabeth then being in Sanctuary at Weſtminſter, and hauing in her family a certaine Welſhman, called Lewes, learned in phyſicke, now hauing opportunity to breake her minde vnto him, declared that the time was come that her ſonne ſhould be ioyned in marriage with the Lady Elizabeth, daughter and heire to King Edward, and that King Richard ſhould out of all honour and eſtate be detected: and required him to goe to Queen Elizabeth, not as a meſſenger, but as one that came friendly to viſite her, and as time and place ſhould ſerue, to make her priuy of this deuice. This Phyſician with good diligence, repaired to the Queene: and when he ſaw time conuenient, he ſaid vnto her, Madam, although my imagination be very ſimple, yet for the entyre affection I beare to you and to your children, I am ſo bold to vtter vnto you a ſecret conceit, that I haue compaſſed in my braine. When I remember the great loſſe that you haue ſuſtained by the death of your louing husband, and the great ſorrow that you haue ſuffered by the cruell murther of your innocent children, I can no leſſe doe, then daily ſtudy how to bring your heart to comfort, and alſo to reuenge the quarrell of you and your children on that cruell tyrant, King Richard. And firſt conſider what battell, and what miſchiefe hath riſen by the diſſention betweene the two houſes of Yorke and Lancaſter, which two families, if they may be ioyned in one, I doubt not but that your line ſhall be againe reſtored to your great ioy and comfort. You know, Madam, that of the houſe of Lancaſter, the Earle of Richmond is next of blood, and to the houſe of Yorke your daughters now are heyres: If ye could inuent the meane how to couple your eldeſt daughter with the Earle of Richmond in matrimony, no doubt but the vſurper ſhould be ſhortly depoſed, and your heyre againe to her right reſtored. When the Queene had heard this friendly motion, ſhee inſtantly beſought him that as he had bene the firſt inuenter of ſo good an enterpriſe, that now he would not deſiſt to follow the ſame, requiring him further, that he would reſort to the Counteſſe of Richmond, mother to the Earle Henry, and to declare to her on the Quenes behalfe, that all the friends of King Edward her husband, ſhould aſſiſt and take part with the Earle of Richmond her ſonne, ſo that hee would take an oath, that after the kingdome obtained, to eſpouſe the Lady Elizabeth her daughter, &c. Maiſter Lewes ſo ſped his buſineſſe, that hee made a finall end of his buſineſſe betweene the two

two mothers: ſo the Lady Margaret, Counteſſe of Richmond, brought to a good hope of the preferment of her ſonne, made Reinold Bray chiefe ſolicitor of this conſpiracy, giuing him in charge ſecretly, to inueigle ſuch perſons of the Nobility to ioyne with her, and take her part, as hee knew to be faithfull.

This Reinold Bray, within few daies, brought to his lure, Sir Giles Daubeney, Sir John Cheiney, Richard Guilford, and Thomas Ram, Eſquires, and others. In the meane ſeaſon, the Counteſſe of Richmond, ſent Chriſtopher Vrſwike into Britaine, to the Earle of Richmond, to declare to him all agreements, betweene her and the Queene agreed: but ſhee remembring that the Duke of Buckingham was one of the firſt inuenters of this enterpriſe, ſent Hugh Conway, Eſquire, into Britaine, with a great ſumme of money to her ſonne, giuing him in charge to declare to the Earle, the great loue that the moſt part of the Nobility of the Realme bare toward him, willing him not to neglect ſo good an occaſion offered, but with all ſpeede, to ſettle his minde how to returne into England, giuing him counſell to take land in Wales. When the Earle had receiued this ioyfull meſſage, he drake to the Duke of Britaine all his ſecrets, aduertiſing him that he was entred into a ſure and ſtedfaſt hope to obtaine the Crowne of England, deſiring him of helpe toward the atchieuing of his enterpriſe, which the Duke promiſed, and after performed. Whereupon the Earle ſent into England, Hugh Conway, and Thomas Ram, to declare his comming ſhortly into England. In the meane ſeaſon, the chiefe of the conſpiracy in England began many enterpriſes: which being neuer ſo priuily handled, yet knowledge thereof came to King Richard, and becauſe hee knew the Duke of Buckingham to be the chiefe head and ayde of this communication, he thought it moſt neceſſary to pluckе him from that part, whereupon he addreſſed his louing letters to the Duke, to repaire to the Court: but the Duke required the King to pardon him, excuſing himſelfe that he was not well. King Richard not content with this excuſe, directed to the Duke other letters with checking words, commanding him without delay, to repayre to his preſence. The Duke made to the meſſenger a determinate anſwer, that he would not come to his mortall enemy: and immediately prepared war againſt him, and by this meanes, Thomas, Marqueſſe Dorſet, came out of Sanctuary, gathered a great band of men in Yorkeſhire, Sir Edward Courtney, and Peter his brother, Biſhop of Exceſter, raiſed another army in Deuon-ſhire and Cornewall. In Kent, Sir Richard Guilford, mother Gentleman, raiſed a company.

But King Richard in the meane time, had gotten together a great ſtrength, with whom he removed from London toward Saliſbury, to the intent hee might ſet on the Dukes army, the King was ſcarce two daies iourney from Saliſbury, when the Duke of Buckingham accompanied with a great power of Welſh-men, which in the end forſooke him: The Duke with his power marched thorow the Foreſt of Deane, intending to haue paſſed the River of Seuerne at Glocester, and there to haue ioyned in army with the Countreies, and other Weſterne men, which if he had done, no doubt but King Richard had beene in great leopardy. But before he could attaine to Seuerne ſide, by force of continuall raine the River roſe ſo high, that it ouerflowed all the Countrey adioyning, which rage of water laſted ten dates: by which inundancy, the paſſages were ſo cloſed, that neyther the Duke could come ouer Seuerne to his complices, nor they to him: during which time, the Welſhmen lingering, idle and without money or victuall, ſuddenly ſcaled and departed. The Duke thus left almoſt alone, was of neceſſity compelled to flie, and conueyed himſelfe into the houſe of Humfrey Banaſter his ſeruant, beſide Shrewesbury, whom he had tenderly brought vp, which when it was knowne to his adherents, euery man ſhifted for himſelfe and fled. And ſome of them ſayled into Britaine, among the which were Peter Courtney, Biſhop of Exceſter, and Sir Edward Courtney his brother, Thomas, Marqueſſe Dorſet, John, Lord Wells, Sir John Bourcher, Sir Edward Woodvile, brother to Queene Elizabeth, Sir Robert Willoughby, Sir Giles Dubney, Sir Thomas Arundale, Sir John Cheinie, and his two brethren, Sir William Barkeley, Sir William Brandon, and Thomas his brother, Sir Richard Edgecombe, and Sir John Halwell, Edward Pownings, &c. Proclamation was made, and a thouſand pound promiſed to who ſo could bring out the Duke of Buckingham, whereupon Humfrey Banaſter betrayed his gheſt and maſter to John Mitton, then Sheriffe of Shropſhire: which with a ſtrong power apprehended the Duke in a little grouc adioyning to the mannors of Humfrey Banaſter, and in great haſt conueyed him to the City of Saliſbury, where King Richard then kept his houſhold. This Banaſter after he had betrayed his Maſter, his Sonne and heyre waxed mad, and dyed in a Boares ſtie, his eldeſt daughter was ſuddenly ſtricken with a foule leprey, his ſecond ſonne manuelloſly deformed of his limbs and made lame, his younger ſon in a ſmall puddle was ſpowned, and he himſelfe being of extreme age arraigned and found guilty of a murther, and by his Clergy ſaued. And as for his thouſand pound, King Richard gaue him not one farthing, ſaying, that he which would be traitor to ſo good a Maſter, would be falſe to all other.

The Duke after he had confeſſed all the whole conſpiracy, vpon the ſecond of Nouember without arraignment or iudgement, was at Saliſbury beheaded. At the ſame time that the Duke of Buckingham was by in the Weſt-countrey, there were many vp in Kent, to wit, Sir George Browne, Sir Iohn Gilford, and his Sonne, Foge, Scot, and Hants, after Clifford, Bonting, preeman of the Crowne, with many other, to the number of fiue thouſand: theſe made a fray at Gaddeſend in the faye, where Bonting

Yeo-

A great ſtorme.

Banaſter, that betrayed his Maſter, miſerably plagued, let the like or worſe, befall them and theirs, whoſoeuer hereafter ſhall ſo betray his Maſter.

Duke of Buckingham beheaded.

pentance.

lowed, and also for the great iniury done to them much pitied, would neuer cease to barke at the one side of me. Semblably my Cousin, the Earle of Richmond, his aydes and kinsfolke, will surely attempt, either to bite or pierce me on the other side, so that my life and rule should euer hang vnquiet, in doubt of death or depositon. And if the said two Linages of Yorke and Lancaster should ioyne in one against mee, then were I surely matched. Wherefore I haue clearely determined vtterly to relinquish all imaginations concerning the obtaining of the Crowne: for as I told you, the Countesse of Richmond, in my returne from the new named King, meeting me in the high-way, prayed me first for kindred sake, secondly for the loue I bare to my Grandfather, D. Humfrey, which was true one brother to her father, to moue the King to be good to her sonne, Henry. Earle of Richmond, and to licence him with his fauour to returne againe into England, and if it were his pleasure so to doe, she promised that the Earle her sonne, should marry one of king Edwards Daughters at the appointment of the King, without any thing demanded for the said espousalls, but only the Kings fauour, which request, I sone ouer-passed and departed, but after, in my lodging, I called to memory more of that matter, I am bent, that the Earle of Richmond, heyre to the house of Lancaster, shall take to wife Lady Elizabeth, eldest daughter to King Edward, by the which marriage, both the houses of Yorke and Lancaster may be vnite in one: when the Duke had said, the Bishop Morton, which fauoured euer the house of Lancaster was wonderous ioyfull, for all his imagination tended to this effect, and left the Dukes courage should swage, or his minde alter, he said to the Duke: My Lord of Buckingham, sith by Gods prouision, and your incomparable wisedome, this Noble coniunction is first mooued, it is necessary to consider what persons were shall first make proue of this politike conclusion. By my troth, quoth the Duke, we will beginne with the Lady of Richmond, the Earles mother, which knoweth where he is in Britaine: sith you will beginne that way (said the Bishop) I haue an old friend with the Countesse, called Reinold Bray, for whom I shall send, if it be your pleasure: so the Bishop wrote for him to come to Brecknocke: who straight came backe with the messenger, where the Duke and the Bishop declared what they had deuised for the preferment of the Earle of Richmond, sonne to his Lady and mistresse: willing her first to compasse how to obtaine the good will of Queene Elizabeth, and also of her eldest daughter, and after secretly to send to her Sonne in Britaine, to declare what high honor was prepared for him, if he would sweare to marry the Lady Elizabeth, as sone as he was King of the Realme. Reinold Bray with a glad heart returned to the Countesse his Lady. When Bray was gone, the Bishop told the Duke, that if he were in his Isle of Ely, he could make many friends to further their enterprize. The Duke knew this to be true, but yet loth to lose the company of such a Councellor, gaue the Bishop fayre words, saying, he should shortly depart well accompanied for feare of enemies, but the Bishop ere the Dukes company were assembled, secretly disguised in a night, departed, and came to Ely, where he found money and friends, and so sayled into Flanders, where he did the Earle of Richmond good service. When Reinold Bray had declared his message to the Countesse, no marueil if shee were glad, wherefore shee deuised a meanes how to breake this matter to Queene Elizabeth then being in Sanctuary at Westminster, and hauing in her family a certaine Welshman, called Lewes, learned in physicke, now hauing opportunity to breake her minde vnto him, declared that the time was come that her sonne should be ioyned in marriage with the Lady Elizabeth, daughter and heire to King Edward, and that King Richard should out of all honour and estate be detected: and required him to goe to Queen Elizabeth, not as a messenger, but as one that came friendly to visite her, and as time and place should serue, to make her priuy of this deuice. This Physician with good diligence, repaired to the Queene: and when he saw time conuenient, he said vnto her, Madam, although my imagination be very simple, yet for the entyre affection I beare to you and to your children, I am so bold to vtter vnto you a secret conceit, that I haue compassed in my braine. When I remember the great losse that you haue sustained by the death of your louing husband, and the great sorrow that you haue suffered by the cruell murther of your innocent children, I can no lesse doe, then daily study how to bring your heart to comfort, and also to reuenge the quarrell of you and your children on that cruell tyrant, King Richard. And first consider what battell, and what mischiefe hath risen by the dissention betweene the two houses of Yorke and Lancaster, which two families, if they may be ioyned in one, I doubt not but that your line shall be againe restored to your great ioy and comfort. You know, Madam, that of the house of Lancaster, the Earle of Richmond is next of blood, and to the house of Yorke your daughters now are heyres: If ye could inuent the meane how to couple your eldest daughter with the Earle of Richmond in matrimony, no doubt but the vsurper should be shortly deposed, and your heyre againe to her right restored. When the Queene had heard this friendly motion, shee instantly beseought him that as he had been the first inuenter of so good an enterprize, that now he would not desist to follow the same, requiring him further, that he would resort to the Countesse of Richmond, mother to the Earle Henry, and to declare to her on the Queenes behalfe, that all the friends of King Edward her husband, should assist and take part with the Earle of Richmond her sonne, so that hee would take an oath, that after the kingdome obtained, to espouse the Lady Elizabeth her daughter, &c. Matter Lewes so sped his businesse, that hee made a finall end of his businesse betweene the two

two mothers: so the Lady Margaret, Countesse of Richmond, brought to a good hope of the preferment of her sonne, made Reinold Bray chiefe solicitor of this conspiracy, giuing him in charge secretly, to inuegle such persons of the Nobility to ioyne with her, and take her part, as hee knew to be faithfull.

This Reinold Bray, within few daies, brought to his lure, Sir Giles Daubeney, Sir John Cheiney, Richard Guilford, and Thomas Ram, Esquires, and others. In the meane season, the Countesse of Richmond, sent Christopher Vrswike into Britaine, to the Earle of Richmond, to declare to him all agreements, betweene her and the Queene agreed: but shee remembring that the Duke of Buckingham was one of the first inuenters of this enterprize, sent Hugh Conway, Esquire, into Britaine, with a great summe of money to her sonne, giuing him in charge to declare to the Earle, the great loue that the most part of the Nobility of the Realme bare toward him, willing him not to neglect so good an occasion offered, but with all speede, to settle his minde how to returne into England, giuing him counsell to take land in Wales. When the Earle had received this ioyfull message, he brake to the Duke of Britaine all his secrets, aduertising him that he was entred into a sure and stedfast hope to obtaine the Crowne of England, desiring him of helpe toward the atchieuing of his enterprize, which the Duke promised, and after performed. Whereupon the Earle sent into England, Hugh Conway, and Thomas Ram, to declare his comming shortly into England. In the meane season, the chiefe of the conspiracy in England began many enterprizes, which being neuer so priuily handled, yet knowledge thereof came to King Richard, and because hee knew the Duke of Buckingham to be the chiefe head and ayde of this conspiration, he thought it most necessary to plucke him from that part, whereupon he addressed his louing letters to the Duke, to exhort the Duke to come to the Court: but the Duke required the King to pardon him, excusing himselfe that hee was not well. King Richard not content with this excuse, directed to the Duke other letters with checking words, commanding him without delay, to repayre to his presence. The Duke made to the messenger a determinate answer, that hee would not come to his mortall enemy: and immediately prepared war against him, and by his meanes, Thomas, Marquesse Dorset, came out of Sanctuary, gathered a great band of men in Yorkeshire, Sir Edward Courtney, and Peter his brother, Bishop of Exceter, raised another army in Deuon-shire and Cornewall. In Kent, Sir Richard Guilford, another Gentleman, raised a company.

But King Richard in the meane time, had gotten together a great strength, with whom he removed from London toward Salisbury, to the intent hee might set on the Dukes army, the King was scarce two daies iourney from Salisbury, when the Duke of Buckingham accompanied with a great power of welsh Welsh-men, which in the end forsooke him. The Duke with his power marched thorow the Forrest of Deane, intending to haue passed the River of Seuerne at Glocester, and there to haue ioyned in army with the Countreies, and other Welsherne men, which if hee had done, no doubt but King Richard had beene in great ieopardy. But before hee could attaine to Seuerne side, by force of continuall raine the ter. River rose so high, that it ouerflowed all the Countrey adioyning, which rage of water lasted ten daies: by which inundancy, the passages were so closed, that neyther the Duke could come ouer Seuerne to his complices, nor they to him: during which time, the Welshmen lingering, idle and without money or victuall, suddenly fealed and departed. The Duke thus left almost alone, was of necessity compelled to flie, and conueyed himselfe into the house of Humfrey Banister his seruant, beside Shrewsbury, whom hee had tenderly brought vp, which when it was knowne to his adherents, euery man shifted for himselfe and fled. And some of them sayled into Britaine, among the which were Peter Courtney, Bishop of Exceter, and Sir Edward Courtney his brother, Thomas, Marquesse Dorset, Iohn, Lord Wells, Sir John Bourcher, Sir Edward Woodvile, brother to Queene Elizabeth, Sir Robert Willoughby, Sir Giles Dubney, Sir Thomas Arundale, Sir Iohn Cheinie, and his two heyres, Sir William Barkeley, Sir William Brandon, and Thomas his brother, Sir Richard Edgecombe, and Sir Iohn Halwell, Edward Pownings, &c. Proclamation was made, and a thousand pound promised to who so could bring out the Duke of Buckingham, whereupon Humfrey Banister bewrayed his ghest and master to Iohn Mitton, then Sheriffe of Shroppshire, which with a strong power apprehended the Duke in a little grouse adioyning to the mannors of Humfrey Banister, and in great haste conueyed him to the City of Salisbury, where King Richard then kept his houshold. This Banister after he had betrayed his Master, his Sonne and heyre waxed mad, and died in a Boares stie, his eldest daughter was suddenly stricken with a foule leprey, his second sonne marueilously deformed of his limbs and made lame, his younger son in a small puddle was drowned, and he himselfe being of extreme age arraigned and found guilty of a murther, and by his Clergy saued. And as for his thousand pound, King Richard gaue him not one farthing, saying, that he which would be vntrue to so good a Master, would be false to all other. Great flood. Banister, that betrayed his Master, miserably plagued. The like crafts to their Masters look for the like or worse, to theirs, and out speedy repentance.

The Duke after he had confessed all the whole conspiracy, vpon the second of November without arraignment or iudgement, was at Salisbury beheaded. At the same time that the Duke of Buckingham was by in the West-country, there were many vp in Kent, to wit, Sir George Browne, Sir Iohn Gilford, and his Sonne, Foge, Scot, and Hants, after Clifford, Bonting, peoman of the Crowne, with many other, to the number of fiue thousand: these made a fray at Gualelend in the fayre, where Bonting Duke of Buckingham beheaded.

slew

slew Master Mowbray, with diuers other, but when they heard that the Duke of Buckingham was dead, they were faine to flie to saue themselues.

Whilest these things were thus handled in England, Henry, Earle of Richmond, prepared an army of fiue thousand Britons, and fortie well furnished Ships. When all things were prepared, and the day of setting forward was appointed, which was the twelfth of October, the whole army horsed by sayles, and tooke the Sea, but toward night the winde turned, and so huge a tempest arose, that the Ships were dispersed asunder: some driuen into Normandy, some againe into Britaine. In the morning after, when the tempest was asswaged, the Earle approached to the South part of England, at the mouth of the Haven of Pole in Dorset, where hee might see all the bankes full of men of warre, appointed to defend his arriuall, wherefore he gaue charge, that no man should land, vntill such time as the whole Nauy were assembled, but after that hee perceiued none of his ships to appeare, he hoysed vp anchors and away, where he arriued safe in Normandy, and returned by Land into Britaine, where hee was some aduertised, that the Duke of Buckingham had lost his head, and that the Marquesse Dorset, and a great number of Noble men in England had a little before inquired for him there.

In the meane season, King Richard apprehended in diuers parts of this Realme, certaine Gentle men of the Earle of Richmonds faction, amongst whom, Sir George Browne, Sir Roger Clifford, and foure other were put to death at London, the third of December. Sir Thomas Sentlegar, who had married the Dutchesse of Exceter, the Kings owne Sister, and Thomas Ram, with diuers other were executed at Exceter.

Fire at Leaden-hall in London.

The thirtieth of December, was a great fire at Leaden Hall in London, where through was burnt much housing, and all the Rockes for gunnes, and other like prouision belonging to the Citty.

1484.

After this, King Richard called a Parliament, in the which he attainted the Earle of Richmond, and all other persons, which were fled out of the Realme for feare, or any other cause as enemies to him, and to their naturall countrey, and all their lands and goods was confiscate to the Kings vse, and yet notwithstanding, he laid on the people a great tare.

An. reg. 2.

In this troublesome season, nothing was more marueiled at, then that the Lord Stanley had not beene taken, considering the working of the Lady Margaret, his wife, mother to the Earle of Richmond: but for as much as the enterprize of a woman was of him reputed of no regard or estimation, and that the Lord Stanley her husband, had purged himselfe to be innocent of all attempts by her committed, it was giuen him in charge to keepe her in some secret place at home, without hauing any seruant or companie, so that from thenceforth she should neuer send letter to her Sonne, or to any of his friends, by the whiel she might be wrolled, which commandement was a while put in execution.

This yere, King Richard began the high Tower at Westminster, which remained yet vnfinished. Also hee caused the body of King Henry the first to be remoued from Chertsey Abbey in Surrey, and to be buryed at Windsore on the twelfth of August.

King Henry the first remoued to Windsor.

In these daies were chiefe rulers about the King, the Lord Louel, and two Gentle-men, being named Sir Richard Ratcliffe, and Sir William Catesby, of the which persons was made a seditious rime, and fastened vpon the Crosse in Cheape, and other places of the Citty, whereof the sentence was as followeth.

Record Tow.

The Cat, the Rat, and Louel our dogge,
Rulen all England vnder an hogge.

Which was to meane these three persons, ruled this Land vnder the King, which bare a white Boare for his Cognisance. For the deuisers of this rime, much search was made, and sundry accused to their great charges. But finally, two Gentlemen, Turburuile, and Collingborne, were for that and other things laid to their charge, arrested and cast in prison, for whom shortly was holden at Guild-Hall, an Oyer determiner, where the two Gentle-men were arraigned, and that one of them called William Collingborne, Esquire, conuict of the crime and other, for the which hee was drawne vnto the Tower-hill, and there full cruelly put to death: as first hanged, and straight cut downe and ripped and his bowells cast into the fire, the which torment was so speedily done, that when the Butcher pulled out his heart, hee spake, and said, Iesus, Iesus. This man was greatly moaned of the people, for his godly personage and fauour of visage, hee had borne sometime, to wit, the 15. of Edward the fourth, Sheriffe of Wiltshire, and in the 17. Sheriffe of Somersetshire, and Dorsetshire.

Collingborne executed.

Record

King Richard considering the amities concluded betweene Princes, are the cause that their Realmes are fortified with a double power, that is to say, with their owne strength, and the ayde of their friends, practised a League with the King of Scots, which not long before had made diuers incursions and roades into the Realme of England, and therefore sued to haue a truce, or peace concluded. Wherefore Commissioners were appointed, which met at Nottingham, and there in the end, concluded for three yeeres on certaine Articles, 15. in number. This peace now concluded, King Richard now doubting his owne people, was continually vexed with feare of the returne of the Earle of Richmond and his complices: Wherefore, nothing was for his purpose more, then once againe with price and prayer, to attempt the Duke of Britaine, in whose territorie the Earle then abode, to deliuer him into his hands: wherefore incontinent hee sent certaine Ambassadors to the Duke of Britaine, which tooke vpon them that King Richard should payle pay and answere the

Truce with Scotland for 3. yeeres.

the Duke of Britaine of all the reuenues, rents and profits of the Lands and Possessions, as well belonging to the Earle of Richmond, as to any other Noble or Gentleman which then were in the Earles company, if he after that time would keepe them in continuall prison, and restraine them from liberty. The Orators furnished with these, and other instructions arriued in Britaine, but could not speake with the Duke, by reason that he, being weakned by a long and daily infirmity, began to waxe feble of his remembrance, for which cause, Peter Landoys his chiefe Treasurer, ruled all things at his pleasure, into whom the English Ambassadors moued to him their message, offering to him the same rewards and Lands that they should haue offered the Duke. This Peter faithfully promised to accomplish King Richards request, to that he kept promise with him: but fortune was so fauourable to the publike weale of England, that this deadly compact tooke none effect; for Iohn Morton, Bishop of Ely, sojourning then in Flanders, was of all this crafty deuice certified: wherefore he sent Christopher Vrswike, to declare to the Earle of Richmond all the deceit, giuing him charge in all hast possible, with his company to retire out of Britaine into France. When these newes came to the Earle, hee incontinent sent to Charles, the French King, requiring that he and his might safely passe into France, which desire was granted, and the Earle with the rest dispatched as priuily as might be into France, no man suspecting their departure. After this, the Earle tooke his iourney to Charles the French King, to whom, after great thanks giuen, he disclosed the occasion of his access to his person. After that, he required of him helpe and succour to the intent hee might returne to the Nobility of his Realme, of whom hee was generally called to take vpon him the Crowne: King Charles promised him aye, and bad him be of good comfort, for he assured him that hee would gladly shew to him his bountifull liberality. Whiles the Earle of Richmond thus attended on the French Court, Io. Vere, Earle of Oxford, so perswaded Iames Blunt, Captaine of Hames Castle, and Sir Iohn Forteskewe, Porteror of the Towne of Caleis, that he himselfe was not onely set at liberty, but they also, leauing their fruitfull offices, condescended to go with him into France, to the Earle of Richmond.

1485.

In the meane season, King Richard was credibly aduertised, what promises and oathes the Earle and his confederates had made and sworn, and how by the Earles meanes, all the Englishmen were passed out of Britaine into France. Wherefore being in a manner desperate, imagining how to infringe the Earles promise by another meane, so that by the marriage of Lady Elizabeth, his Niece, he should pretend no claime to the Crowne, there came to his minde a thing not onely detestable, but much more cruell to be put in execution, for he clearely determined to reconcile to his fauor, his brothers wife, Queen Elizabeth, and so by that meanes, the Earle of Richmond, of the affinity of his Niece should be vtterly defrauded, and if no ingenious remedy could be otherwise inuented, if it should happen Queene Anne his wife, to depart out of this world, then hee himselfe would rather take to wife his Cousin and Niece, the Lady Elizabeth, then for lacke of that affinity, the whole Realme should run to ruine. Wherefore he sent to the Queen being in Sanctuary, diuers, and often mellengers, which should excuse him of all things before, against her attempted, and after should, so largely promise promotions, not only to her, but to her sonne, Thomas, Marques Dorset, that they should bring her (if it were possible) into some vain hope. The mellengers so perswaded the Queene, that she began somewhat to relent, in so much, that she faithfully promised to yeeld her selfe to the Kings will and pleasure. And so shee first deliuered vnto King Richards hands her 5. daughters: Afterward she sent letters to the Marquesse her sonne, being then at Paris with the Earle of of Richmond, willing him in any wise to repaire into England, where for him were prouided great honours, ascertaining him, that all offences in both parties were forgiuen and forgotten: After that King Richard had thus pleased the mutable minde of Queene Elizabeth, he caused all her daughters to be conueyed into his Palace with solemne receiuing. Now nothing was contrary to his purpose, but that his mansion was not voyde of a wife: And first, he abstained both from the bed, and company of his wife: after he complained to many of the infortunate barrennesse of his wife. After this, he procured a common rumour to be published among the common people, that the Queene was dead. When the Queene heard tell that so horrible a rumour of her death was sprung amongst the communalty, shee fore suspected the world to be almost at an end with her, and not long after, to wit, the 16. of March, in the Lent season, howsoeuer it fortuned, the Queene departed out of this life, and was with due solemnitie buried at Westminster.

The King thus losed out of the bonds of matrimony, began to cast a fancy to Lady Elizabeth his Niece, making much suite to haue her ioyned with him in lawfull Matrimony: but because all men, and the maiden her selfe most of all, detested this vnlawfull copulation, he determined to deferre the matter, till he were in a more quiet ease, for all this season hee was oppressed with weyghty affayres on euery side, considering that daily part of the Nobility fayled into France, other priuily fauored the Earle of Richmond, amongst the Noble men whoute hee most suspected, these were the principall, Thomas, Lord Stanley, Sir William Stanley his brother, Gilbert Talbot, and fiue hundred other, of whole purpose, though King Richard were ignorant, yet he gaue no credence to any one of them, and least of all to the Lord Stanley, because he was ioyned in matrimony with the Lady Margaret, mother to the Earle of Richmond, for when the Lord Stanley would haue departed into his Country, the King in no wise would suffer him to depart, before he had left as in hostage in the Court, George Stanley,

An. Reg. 3.

Lord

Lord Strange, his first begotten Sonne and heyre.

While King Richard was thus troubled suddenly he heard newes that the Castle of Hames was deliuered into the hands of the Earle of Richmond, by the meanes of the Earle of Oxford, and that not onely he, but also Iames Blunt, Captaine of the Castle, were fled into Fraunce to ayde the Earle of Richmond.

Henry, Earle of Richmond, obtaining of King Charles a small crue of men, and borrowing certaine summes of money of him, and of diuers other his priuate friends, hee departed from the French Court, and came to the Citty of Roan. While he tarried there, making prouision at Harefleete, in the mouth of the River of Seyne, for all things necessary for his iourney, tydings were brought to him, that King Richard, being without children, and a widdower, intended shortly to marry with Lady Elizabeth, his brothers daughter, which newes he tooke of no small moment, for this thing onely tooke away from all his companions, their hope to obtaine an happy enterprize, by reason whereof, he iudged that all his friends in England would shrinke from him, yet notwithstanding, Castle, Henry, of Richmond, because hee would no longer linger and weary his friends, liuing betweene hope and feare, determined in all hast conuenient to set forward, and carried to his ships armour, weapons, victuall, and all other ordinances expedient for war, which being done, onely accompanied with two thousand men, and a small number of ships, weighed by his Anchors, and in the Kalends of August, he sailed from Harefleete with so prosperous a winde, that the seuenth day after, he arriued in Wales in the euening, at a Port called Milford Hauen, and incontinent tooke land, and came to a place called Dale, and at the Sunne-rising removed to Hereford West, where he was receiued of the people with great ioy.

Henry, Earle of Richmond landed at Milford Hauen.

From thence hee removed to Cardigan, 20. mile from Hereford West, whither came to the Earle, Richard Griffith, with all his men and power. After him the same day came Io. Morgan with his men. Then the Earle aduanced forward, making no abode in any place, and suddenly hee was aduertained that Sir Walter Herbert, and Rice ap Thomas, were in harnesse before him, ready to encounter with his army, and to stop their passage. Wherefore he first determined to set vpon them, and either to destroy or take them into his fauour, and after which, all his power to giue battell to King Richard, but to the intent his friends should know with what dexterity he attempted his enterprise forward, he sent messengers with letters and instructions to the Lady Margaret his mother, to the Lord Stanley and his brother, to Talbot and to other, declaring to them, that hee, holpe with the ayde of his friends, intended to passe ouer the River of Seuerne at Shrewsbury, and so to passe directly to the Citty of London, requiring them, as his speciall trust was in the hope of their fidelity that they would meete him by the way, with all diligent preparation.

When these messengers were departed, he marched forward towards Shrewsbury, and in his passage, there met and saluted him, Rice ap Thomas, with a goodly band of Welsh-men, which submitted himselfe wholy to his order and commaundement. In the meane time, the messengers layden with rewards, returned to him the third day that he entred into Shrewsbury, and made relation to him, that his friends were ready in all points to doe all things for him which they might doe. The Earle Henry continued his iourny, and came to a little Towne called Newport, and pitched his campe on a little hill adioyning, reposing himselfe there that night. In the euening of the same day, came to him, Sir Gilbert Talbot, with the whole power of the yong Earle of Shrewsbury, then being in ward, which were accounted 2. thousand men: and thus his power increasing, he arriued at the Towne of Stafford, and there paused. To whom came Sir William Stanley, accompanied with a few persons: After that the Earle departed from thence to Lichfield, and lay without the walls in campe all that night. The next morning he entred the Towne, and was like a Prince received. A day or two before, the Lord Stanley hauing in his band almost fiue thousand men, lodged in the same Towne, but hearing that the Earle of Richmond was marching thitherward, gaue to him place, withdrawing him and his, and repaired to a Towne called Atherstone, there abiding the comming of the Earle: and this he did to auoyd all suspition, being afraid lest if he should be seene openly to be a fauorer, or ayder to the Earle his Sonne in law, before the day of battell, that King Richard, which yet did not vtterly put in him mistrust, would put to some cruell death his Sonne and heyre apparant, George, Lord Strange, whom King Richard had in hostage. King Richard, at this season keeping his house in the Castle of Nottingham, was informed that the Earle of Richmond with such banished men as were fled out of England to him, were arrived in Wales, and that all things necessary to his enterprize were vnpurueyed, and very weake, nothing meete to withstand the power of such as the King had appointed to resist him, yet notwithstanding he sent to Iohn, Duke of Norfolke, Henry, Earle of Northumberland, Thomas, Earle of Surrey, and to other of his trusty friends, willing them to muster and view all their seruants and tenants, and to elect the most couragious and active persons of the whole number, and with them, to repaire to his presence with all speede. Also he wrote to Robert Brakenbry, Lieutenant of the Tower, commanding him with his power, to come to his army, and to bring with him his fellowes in Armes, Thomas Bourcher, and Sir Walter Hungerford, and diuers other Knights and Esquires, in whom he had no small iuspition. While he was thus ordering his affaires, tydings came, that the Earle of Richmond was passed Seuerne, and come to Shrewsbury without any detriment, or encombrance. At which message, he was formoued, and cryed out on them that contrary

to their oath had deceiued him. And in all hast sent out to view what way his enemies kept and passed: it was declared to the King, that the Earle was incamped at the Towne of Litchfield. Whereat, when he had perfect knowledge, he hauing continuall repaire of his Subiects to him, he incontinently made his hast reits to set forward toward the way, where his enemies, as was to him reported, intended to passe, and keeping his array, he, with great pompe, entred the Towne of Leicester, after the Sunne-set. The Earle of Richmond raised his campe from Litchfield to Tamworth, and with vnd-way passing, there saluted him Sir Walter Hungerford, and Sir Thomas Bourchier, knights, and diuers others, which submitted themselues to his pleasure. Diuers other Noble personages like wise resorted to him with all their power. There hapned in this progresse to the Earle of Richmond a strange chance, for he was not a little afraide, because he could not be assured of his father in Law, Thomas, Lord Stanley, which as yet inclined to neither party, wherefore the Earle accompanied with 20. light horse-men, lingering in his iourney behinde his hoste, in the meane while, the whole King came before the Towne of Tamworth, and when he for darknesse could not perceiue the steps of them that passed on before, and had trauailed hither and thither, seeking after his company, he abode in a little village about three miles from his army, where he tarried all night. The next morning, in the dawning, he returned, and by good fortune came to his army, excusing himselfe not to haue gone out of his way by ignorance, but of purpose: this excuse made, he priuily departed againe to the Towne of Atherstone, where the Lord Stanley, and Sir William his brother, with their bands, were abiding: then the Earle came to his father in Law, in a little Stole, where he saluted him and Sir William his brother, and after, consulted how to giue battell to King Richard, if he would abide, whom they knew not to be farre off with an huge army. In the euening of the same day, Sir Iohn Savage, Sir Brian Stanford, Sir Simon Digby, and many other, leauing King Richard, turned and came to the Earle of Richmond with an elect company of men. In the meane season, King Richard marched to a place called Redmore, where for two battells to encounter, by a village called Bosworth, not farre from Leycester, and there he pitched his field, refreshed his army, and tooke his rest. The next day after, King Richard being furnished with men, and all abilliments of warre, bringing all his men out of their camp into the plaine, ordred his forewards in a marrellous length, in which he appointed both horse-men and foote-men, and in the Forefront he placed the Archers.

Battell at Bosworth.

Ouer this battell was Captaine, Iohn, Duke of Norfolke, with whom was Thomas, Earle of Surrey his sonne. After this long bantgard followed King Richard with a strong company of appoynted men of warre, hauing horse-men for wings on both sides of his battell.

After that the Earle of Richmond was retreated from the communication with his friends, he with all diligence pitched his field into the campe of his enemies, and there he lodged that night. In the morning betime, he caused his men to put on their armour, and apparrell themselues to fight, and giue battell, and sent to the Lord Stanley, requiring him with his men to approach neere to his army, and to helpe to set the Soldiers in array: he answered, the Earle should set his owne men in good order, while he would come to him in conuenient time. The Earle made his fore-ward some what straight and slender, according to the small number of his people. In the front he placed the Archers, of whom he made Captaine, Iohn, Earle of Oxford. To the right wing of the battell, he appointed Sir Gilbert Talbot to be the leader. To the left wing, he assigned Sir Iohn Savadge, and he with the ayde of the Lord Stanley, accompanied with the Earle of Penbroke, hauing a good company of horse-men, and a small number of foot-men, for all his whole number exceeded not 5000. men, beside the power of the Stanleyes, whereof 3000. were in the field vnder Sir William Stanley: The kings number was double so much, or more. When both these armies were thus ordered, and all men ready to set forward, King Richard called his chiefetaines together, perswading them to be baliant, &c. But his people were to him vnfaithfull in his end, as he was to his Nephewes vntrue and vnnaturall in his beginning. When the Earle of Richmond knew that the King was so neere enbattelled, he rode about his army, giuing comfortable words to all men, after the which he made to them a pithy Oration, perswading them to haue the victory, for that they were to fight in a iust quarrell, he had scantly finished his saying, but the one army espyed the other, betweene both armies there was a great marrish, which the Earle left on his right hand, and so doing, he had the Sun at his backe, and in the face of his enemies. When the King saw the Earles company was passed the marrish, he commanded with all haste to set vpon them, the terrible shot on both sides passed, the Armies ioyned, and came to hand-strokes, at which incounter, the Lord Stanley ioyned with the Earle.

The Earle of Oxford in the meane season, fearing lest while his company was fighting, they should be compassed of the enemies, gaue commandement, that no man should goe aboue ten fote from the Standard, which commandement once knowne, they knit themselues together, and ceased a little from fighting: the enemies suddenly abashed at the matter, and mistrusting some fraude, began also to pause. The Earle of Oxford bringing all his band together on the one part, set on his enemies freshly: again, the aduersaries perceiuing that, placed their men slender and thinne before, and thicke and broad behinde, beginning againe the battell. While the 2. forewards thus mortally fought, King Richard was admonished, that the Earle of Richmond accompanied with a small number of men of armes, was not farre off, and as he approached to him, he perfectly knew his perso-

nage, and being inflamed with ire, he put his spurres to his horse, and rode out of the side of the range of his battell, leauing the dauntgards fighting, and with Speare in wyst, ran toward him. The Earle perceiued well the King furiously comming toward him, and because the whole hope of his wealth and purpose was to be determined by battell, he gladly proffered to encounter with him body to body, and man to man: King Richard set on so sharply at the first brent, that he ouerthrew the Carles Standard, and slew Sir William Brandon, his Standardbearer, and matched hand to hand with Sir John Cheiney, a man of great force and strength, which would haue resisted him, and the said Iohn was by him manfully ouerthrowne, and so he making vpon pallage by dint of Sword as he went forward, the Earle of Richmond withstood his violence, and kept him at the Swords point longer then his companions thought, which being almost in dispaire of victory were suddenly recomforted by Sir William Stanley, which came to succour, with 3000. tall men, at which very instant, King Richards men were driuen backe and fled, and he himselfe manfully fighting in the middle of his enemies was slaine. In the meane season, the Earle of Oxford, with the aid of the Lord Stanley, after no long fight, discomfited the forward of King Richard, whereof a great number were slaine in the chase, but the greatest number that came to the field, neuer gaue stroke. In this battell dyed on King Richards part, about the number of 4000. men, and on the other side but 100. persons, as Sir Gilbert Talbot then wrote from the campe, and of the Nobility were slaine, Iohn, Duke of Norfolke, Walter, Lord Ferres of Chartley, Sir Richard Ratcliffe, Sir William Conyers, Sir Richard Claringdon, and Robert Brakenbury, Lieuetenant of the Tower, and not many Gentlemen more: Sir Will. Catesby learned in the Lawes of the Realme, and one of the chiefe Counsellours to the late King, with diuers other were 2. daies after beheaded at Leicester. Amongst them that ran away, were S. Francis Viscount Louel, and Humfrey Stafford, with Thomas Stafford his brother, which tooke Sanctuary in S. Johns at Glocester. On the Earle of Richmonds part that was slaine, the principall was Sir Iohn Brandon, his Standard-bearer. This battell was fought at Bolworth in Leicestershire, the 22. of August, in the yere of our Lord 1485. the whole conflict endured little aboue 2. houres. When the Earle had thus obtained the victory, he rendred thanks to God, and after to his souldiers for their fidelity: then the people cryed, King Henry, King Henry. When the Lord Stanley saw the good will of the people, he take the Crowne of King Richard, which was found amongst the spoyle in the field, and set it on the Earles head, as though he had bene elected King by the voyce of the people.

King Richards slaine.

King Henry at this time made Knights, as followeth: Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir Iohn Mortimer, Sir Rice ap Thomas, Sir Robert Poins, Sir Humfrey Stanley, Sir Io. Turburuile, Sir William Willoughby, Sir Hugh Persiall, Sir R. Hegecombe, Sir I. Bikenyle, Sir de Baron de Carow.

After this, the whole campe remoued to the Town of Leicester, where he rested two daies. In the meane season, the dead corps of King Richard was as shamefully carried to the Towne of Leycester, as he gorgeously the day before with pompe departed out of the same Towne: for his body was naked to the skinne, not so much as one clout about him, and was trussed behind a Pursuiuant of armes, like a Hogge or Calfe, the head and armes hanging on the one side of the horse, and the legges on the other side, and all sprinckled with myre and blod, was brought to the Gray-Friers Church within the Towne, and there homely buried, when he had raigned two yeres, two moneths and one day.

He founded a Colledge at Pidelham beyond Poke, and another at London, beside the Tower, in a Chappel called our Lady of Barking: he also endowed the Quenes Colledge at Cambridge with fiue hundred marks of yerly rent. He defeasted the great field of Wichwood, betweene Woodstocke and Bristow, which King Edward the fourth had incorporated before to the Forrest, &c.

John Rouse.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *KING* HENRY *THE SEVENTH.*

An. reg. 1.

HENRY the seuenth, borne in Penbroke Castle, began his raigne the 22. of August, in the yere of our Lord God, 1485. He was a Prince of marueilous wisedome, policy, iustice, temperance, and liberality, and notwithstanding many great occasions of trouble and warre he kept his Realme in right good order, for the which he was greatly reuerenced of forraigne Princes.

On the forenamed 22. of August, was a great fire in Bread-street of London, in the which fire, was brent, the Parson of Mildreds, and one other man in the parsonage there.

Parson of S. Mildreds brent.

King Henry before his departure from Leicester, sent Sir Robert Willoughby, Knight, to the Manor of Sherhutton, in the County of York, for Edward Plantagenet, Earle of Warwicke, Sonne and heyre to George, Duke of Clarence, then being of the age of 15. yeeres, and sent him vp to the Tower of London, where he was put vnder sure custody.

In the meane season, the King remoued towards London, and when he had approached the Citty, on the 27. of August, the Maior, Magistrates, and companies all clothed in violet, met him at Shoreditch, and with great pompe conueyed him through the Citty to Saint Pauls Church, where he offered his three Standards, one of S. George, the second a red Dragon, the third a white Cow, after his prayers said, and *Te Deum* sung, he departed to the Bishops Palace, where he soiourned a season.

The sweating began the 21. of September, and continued till the end of October: of the which sickenesse, a wonderfull number dyed, and in London besides other, died Thomas Hill, Maior, in whose place was chosen William Stocker, who likewise deceased about 7. daies after: in which place departed other 4 Aldermen, Thomas Hand, Richard Rawson, Thomas Norland, and Iohn Stocker, and then was chosen Maior, Iohn Warde, who continued till the feast of Simon and Iude.

On the euen of S. Simon and Iude, King Henry came from Kennington vnto Lambeth, and there dined with Thomas Bourchier, Archbishop of Canterbury, Cardinall of S. Ciriac in Thermis. And after dinner, with a goodly rompany of the estates of this Realme, both spirituall and temporall, from thence went by land toward London, his Nobles riding after the guise of France vpon small Pachneies, two and two vpon a horse, & at London bridge end, the Maior of London, with his brethren, and the crafts, met and receiued the King, and the King proceeded to Grace-church corner, and so to the Tower. On the morrow, being the feast day of Simon and Iude, King Henry created Thomas, Lord Stanley, Earle of Darby, Edward Courtney, Earle of Deuonshire, and Iaspar, Earle of Penbroke, was created Duke of Bedford, all at one time in the Tower of London. Banarets made at this creation, Sir Gilbert Talbot, Sir Iohn Cheinie, Sir William Stonar, Sir William Troutbeke, Sir Ioh Mortimer, Sir Ric. Crosby, Sir I. Fortescue, Sir Edward Bedingfield, Sir Thomas Cokesey, Sir James Baskeruile, Sir Humfrey Stanley, Sir Richard de la Bere.

Penance of the Lord Audeley.

On the 30. of October, K. Henry was crowned at Westminster, by the hands of Tho. Bourchier, Archbishop of Canterbury, and ordained a number of chosen Archers being strong and hardy persons, to giue daily attendance on his person, whom he named Yeomen of the Garde.

Parliament at Westminster.

The 7. of November, began a Parliament at Westminster for the establishing of all things, in the which he caused to be proclaimed, that all men were pardoned of all offences, and should be restored to their lands and goods, which would submit themselues to his clemency. After this, he began to remember his speciall friends, of whom some he aduanced to honour and dignity, and some he enriched with possessions and goods: and to begin, the Lord Chandew of Bayteine, he made Earle of Bathe: Sir Giles Daubeney was made Lord Daubeney: Sir Robert Willoughby, Lord Brooke: and Edward Stafford, eldest sonne to Henry, late Duke of Buckingham, he restored to his dignity and possessions: Sir Thomas Molineux, Knight, Baneret, he made Constable of Beaumarice, where shortly after he ended his life. The Parliament being dissolued, the King redeemed the Marques Dorset, and Sir Iohn Bourchier, whom he had left as pledges at Paris, for money there before borrowed: and sent also into Flanders for Iohn Morton, Bishop of Ely.

The 18. day of Januarp, King Henry married the Lady Elizabeth, eldest daughter to Edward the 4th, by which meanes the two families of Yorke and Lancaster, which had long bene at great diuision, were united and made one.

King Henry married the Lady Elizabeth.

King Henry sent the Lord Treasurer with Mr Bray and other, vnto the Lord Maior of London, requiring him and the Citizens of a pzest of 6000. marks, wherefore the Maior with his brethren and commons, granted a pzest of 2000. pound which was leuied of the companies, and not of the wards, which pzest was repayed again in the yere next following euery penny.

1485. Loue to the King.

Wheat was sold for three shilling the bushell, and bay salt at the like price. *An. reg. 2.*

In the Moneth of September, Quene Elizabeth was deliuered of her first sonne, named, Arthur, at Winchester.

This yere deceased Thomas Bourchier, Archbishop of Canterbury, and was buried at Canterbury: Iohn Morton, Bishop of Ely, a man of excellent wit, learning and vertue, was translated, and succeeded him in the Archbishoprike of Canterbury, and Iohn Alcocke succeeded in the Bishoprike of Ely.

Sir Richard Simon, a wily Priest, came to Gerald, Earle of Kildare, and deputy of Ireland, and presented to him a lad his Scholler, named Lambert, whom he fained to be the Sonne of George, D. of Clarence, lately escaped the Tower of London. And the child had learned of the Priest such Priuely behauiour, that he lightly mowed the Earle and many Nobles of Ireland, tendering the blod royall, of Richard Plantagenet, and George his sonne, as also maligning the aduancement of the house of Lancaster in Henry the seuenth, either to thinke or make the world wene, they thought verily this child to be Edward, Earle of Warwicke, the Duke of Clarence lawfull sonne. And although King Henry moye them halfe marred all the sport, in shewing the right earle through all the streets of London: yet the Lady Margaret, Dutches of Burgoigne, sister to Edward the 4. Iohn de la Pole her Nephew, the Lord Louel, Sir Thomas Broughton Knight, and other Captaines of this conspiracy, deuised to abuse the colour of this young Earles name, for preferring their purpose: which if it came to good, they agreed to depose Lambert, and to erect the very Earle in deede, now prisoner in the Tower: for whose quarrell, had they pretended to fight, they deemed it likely they should haue bene made away: wherefore it was blazed in Ireland, that the King to mocke his subiects, had schooled a boy to take vpon him the

Earle of Warwicks name, and had shewed him about in London, to blinde the eyes of simple folke, and to defeat the lawfull inheritor of the Duke of Clarence their country-man and Protector: during his life, to whose Linage they also deuised a Title of the Crowne.

1487. In all the hast they assembled at Diuelin, and there in Christs Church they crowned this Idoll, honouring him with Titles imperiall, feasting and triumphing, roaring mighty shouts and cries, carrying him thence to the Kings Castle vpon tall mens shoulders, that he might be seene and noted, as hee was sure an honourable boy to looke vpon.

B. Hall. In this meane time, the Earle of Lincolne, and the Lord Louel, had gotten, by the ayd of Margaret, about 1000. Almaines, with Martin Swart, a German, and in martiall acts very expert, to be their Captaine, and so sayling into Ireland, and at the citty of Diuelin, caused yong Lambert to be proclaimed King of England, and so with a great multitude of Irishmen, of whom Thomas Gerardine was Captaine, they sailed into England with the new King, and landed at Foulzey, within a little of Lancaster, trusting there to be aided with money by Sir Thomas Broughton, one of the chiefe of this conspiracy.

King Henry not slacking in his matters, when he had gathered his hoste together, ouer the which the Duke of Bedford, and the Earle of Oxford were chiefe Captaines, he went to Couentrey, where he being certified, that the Earle of Lincolne was landed at Lancaster with his new King, he remoued to Nottingham, to whom shortly after came George Talbot, Earle of Shrewesbury, the Lord Strange, Sir Iohn Cheiney, with many other.

In this space, the Earle of Lincolne being entered into Yorkeshire, directed his way to Newarke vpon Trent, and at a little village called Stoke, field Stoke, 3. or 4. miles from Newarke, nigh to the King and his army planted his campe.

The next day following, the King diuided his number into three battells and after approached nigh the Towne of Stoke, where both the armies ioyned and fought egerly on both parts: but at the length, the Kings fore-ward set vpon the aduersaries with such a violence, that they slew many, and put the rest to flight. For there their chiefe Captaines, the Earle of Lincolne, and the Lord Louel, Sir Thomas Broughton, Martin Swart, and the Lord Gerardine (or after Campion, Morice Fitz Thomas) Captaine of the Irishmen, were slain, & other about 4000. This battell was fought on the 16. of June: Lambert and the Priest were both taken, to the no small griefe of Margaret, Duttches of Burgoygne.

Lambert, after that he had been a turne-broch for a space in the Kings Kitchen, was at length made one of the Kings Falconers.

Now when the King had got the vpper-hand of his enemies (as per haue heard) he remoued to Lincolne, and there tarried three daies, causing solemne processions to be made, in rendering thinks to God for his fortunate victory. Then caused hee execution, to be done on such as were taken in the field, either at the battell, or in the chase. And shortly after, he went into Yorkshire, and there coasted the Countrey, searching out such as had aided his enemies, whom he punished, some by long imprisonment, some by large fines, and some by death. *An. reg. 3.*

About the midst of August the King came to Newcastle vpon Tine, and from thence sent Ambassadors into Scotland, Richard Fox, Bishop of Winchester, and Richard Edgecombe, Knight, controller of his house, to conclude some peace, or truce with King Iames of Scotland. The English Ambassadors were honorably receiued, and entertained of the King, who gladly would haue concluded a perpetuall peace, but his people would not agree thereto: but in the end concluded vpon a truce for seuen yeres. Truce with the Scots.

King Henry, after the Ambassadours were returned out of Scotland, came backe from Newcastle toward Yorke, and so to London: and in the way, being at Leicester, there came to him Ambassadors from Charles the French King, which declared both the recouery of certaine Townes out of the hands of Maximilian, King of the Romanes, which hee had wrongfull detained from the Crown of France before that time: and also that their Master, King Charles, had now warres in hand against Francis, Duke of Britaine, because that he succoured, and maintained the Duke of Orleance, and others that were rebells against him. Wherfore his request was, that for the old familiarity which had been betweene them he would now either assist, and helpe him, or else stand as neuter betwixt them, neyther helping or hurting the one or the other. The King answered the Ambassadors, that he would neither spare paine nor cost, to set some reasonable stay betwixt them. And as the Ambassadors were returned home, the King sent his Chaplaine, Christopher Vrswike ouer into France to King Charles, as well to shew, that he was glad of the victory which he had against Maximilian, as to declare what a tempestuous Storme of euill rebellion himselfe had escaped, and ouercome here in England. But the chiefe point of Vrswikes errand consisted in this, that he should intimate to the French King, how his Master King Henry offered himselfe as a mediator betwixt him and the Duke of Britaine, to make them friends, and if hee perceiued the French King to giue eare thereunto, then hee should goe into Britaine to moue the Duke there to be contented, that some reasonable order might be taken betwixt them.

Whilest Vrswike was trauelling in this matter, King Henry for the accomplishing of the Coronation of his wife, Queene Elizabeth, returned toward London, and on the Saturday next before the feast of All Saints, he began his iourney with the Queene from Warwicke, and in his way at S. Albons, kept the feast of All Saints: and on the next morrow remoued to Barnet where he rested: and on the next morrow as he was comming toward London in Barnesley parke, he was met by the Maior, Aldermen, Sheriffes, and principall commoners of the City of London, all on horsebacke, and in one liuery to attend vpon him, where he dubbed Sir Will. Horne

Horne Maior of London, Knight. And betwixt Ielson and London, he dubbed Sir Io. Percivall Alderman, Knight. Against the Kings coming into London, the streets were grauelled, and the crafts in their liueries stood on both sides from Bishopsgate into Pauls Church. The Queene with the Kings mother, and many Ladies stood in a house without Bishopsgate neere the Spittle, and saw the King with his traine come toward the Cittie: Who rode thorow the Citty to Pauls Church, whereinto he was received: *Te Deum* sung for ioy of his victory, and then lodged in the Bishops Palace. On the morrow he went in procession, and heard a Sermon at Pauls Crosse. On the next Sunday, the Queene with her Ladies and other estates, came from Greenwich to the Tower of London, where shee was received by the King: and on the 25. of November, shee was crowned at Westminster with a great solemnity. And shortly after, King Henry deliuered Lord Thomas Marquesse Dorset out of the Tower, receiuing him againe to his former fauour, because his truth had beene thoroughly tried. Marie Elizabeth crowned.

1488. Christopher Vrswike hauing passed from the French King, to the Duke of Britaine, and backe againe to the French King, returned into England, and shewed vnto King Henry what he had done betwixt them.

Immediately after, came the Lord Barnard Dambeney a Scot borne, which in the French Kings behalfe, required King Henry to make some manner of end of those British warres, whatsoeuer it were. King Henry therefore sent ouer into France, Iohn, Abbot of Abingdon, Sir Richard Edgecombe, Knight, and the said Christopher Vrswike, with commission to driue some agreement betwixt the French-men and the Britons. These went first to the French King, and after to the Duke of Britaine, with whom they could doe no good, and so signified to the King their Master. Now in the meane time, Edw. Lord Wooduile, brother to the Queen, Lord Woodvile aped the Duke of Britaine. fled to King Henry, that he might haue a power of men appointed to him, with the which he would freale priuily ouer without licence or passport, so that euery man should thinke that he were fled the Realme, without knowledge of the King, and although this request was outwardly denied, yet the Lord Woodvile withdrew himselfe into the Isle of Wight, whereof hee was made ruler, hee there gathered a crue of tall and hardy personages, to the number of 400. and arriued in Britaine, where he ioyned himselfe with the Britons against the French men. The French King aduertised hereof, was not well pleased towards the King of England, till King Henry by messengers excused himselfe to be guiltlesse, and then he was pacified. And so the English Ambassadors renewing the league and amity betwixt the two Kings for 12. moneths, returned into England. The King of England forthwith called his high Parliament. Court of Parliament, in the which it was not onely determined, that the Duke of Britaine should be ayded with a power of men, but also there were diuers summes of money granted to the furnishing forth of the same.

About the 27. day of July, the Duke of Britaines Army gaue battell to the French hoste, where to a Towne called S. Alvin, hauing apparelled 1700. Britons in coats, with red crosses after the English fashion, although they had but 400. Englishmen with the Lord Woodvile. The victory in this battell fell to the French, so that almost all the English men were slaine with the Lord Woodvile, besides 6000. Britons. The Duke of Orleance, and the Prince of Orenge were taken prisoners, which were there in the Britons part. The French-men had 1200. men, with their valiant Captaine an Italian, named Iames Galiot. The newes hereof being heard in England, caused King Henry to make haste in sending forth his army, and therefore was the Lord Brooke, with Sir I. Cheiney, Sir Iohn Middleton, Sir Ralph Hilton, Sir Richard Corbet, Sir Thomas Leighton, Sir Richard Laton, and Sir Edmond Cornwall, sent ouer into Britaine with all conuenient speede, hauing with them 8000. men well appointed, and furnished in warr-like sort to ayde the Duke of Britaine. These arriued in Britaine, and marched forward, till they came neere to their enemies, where they pitched their field. But while this war was thus set forward, Francis, Duke of Britaine departed this life, and then the rulers of that Countrey falling at diuision amongst themselues, tended not the defence of their country, so that the Englishmen perceiuing themselues to be in danger, and being in the midst of winter, they returned into England within 5. months after their first setting forth, so that finally the French K. gat the vpper hand of the Britons, and did ioyne that Dutchy to his Realme of France. Hee had married Anne, the daughter and heire to the Duke of Britain. Lord Woodvile slaine. *An. reg. 4.*

Woodvile slaine.

He haue heard how there was in the last parliament, money granted for the furnishing forth of the army into Britaine, to wit, that euery man should be taxed to pay the tenth penny of all lands and goods: which money the most of them that dwelled in the Bishoprickes of Durham, and in the parts of Yorke-shire refused vtterly to pay, for that they thought themselues ouer-charged with the same. Wherefore such as were appointed Collectors, complained to Henry, Earle of Northumberland, chiefe ruler of the North parts. The Earle forth-with signified to the King all that matter, and the King not willing to pardon one penny, commanded the Earle to distreine, or otherwise to leuy the money, as he should thinke meetest. The rude people hearing of this answer from the King, by and by, with great violence set vpon the Earle, by the exciting of one named Io. a Chamber, whom the Earle with fare words sought to appease: but they alledging all the fault to be in him, as chiefe Author of that taxe, furiously slew him, and certaine of his houshold seruants, in a place called Cocke-lodge by Thirske, eyghtene miles from Yorke, on the twenty eyghth of Aprill. Then the Northren men got them to armour, assembling together, chose them a Captaine, called Sir I. Egremond, Knight: and I. Sheleder. Earle of Northumberland slaine. 1489.

passing by the Countreis, they published that they would bid the King battell, only in defence of their liberties. The King sent foyth Thomas, Earle of Surrey, whom not long before he had deliuered out of the Tower, with a crue of men, to chasten those rebells of the North, who skirmished with a company of them, whom they discomfited, and take Sir I. a Chamber, the first beginner of this rebellion. Then the Northren men came to the Citty of Yorke, where they remained three or foure daies, vnto the time they heard of the comming of the King, and then fled out of Yorke, some one way, some another: but diuers of them were taken and brought to the King, who caused them that were Captaines to be hanged and quartered. Io. a Chamber was hanged at Yorke, vpon a gibbet set vpon a foure square paire of Gallowes, and the other his complices were hanged on the Gallowes round about him: but Sir Ioh. Egremond fled into Flanders, to Margaret, Dutches of Burgundy. After this, the King returned to London, leauing the Earle of Surrey to rule the Countrey of the North, and appointed Sir Richard Tunstall to gather the subsidy to him due of the people.

An. reg. 5.

James the third, King of the Scots, was slaine by his rebellious subiects, after they had banquished him in battell.

About the same time, Adrian, an Italian, was sent Ambassador from Pope Innocent the eight, into Scotland, there to haue taken vp the variance betwixt the King, and his people: But being arriued in England, hee was informed that King Iames was slaine, and therefore remained heere certaine moneths, and for that he was a man of excellent learning and humanity, and commended by Iohn Morton, Archbish. of Canterbury, the King made him first Bishop of Hereford, and shortly after, that being resigned, he was made Bishop of Bath and Wells.

1490. This yere came Ambassadours from the French King, the Lord Francis of Lutzenburge, Charles Marignane, and Robert Gagwine, to haue concluded a peace with King Henry, and that the French King might dispose of the yong Dutchesse of Britaine, as he should think best: but thereto would not King Henry consent: notwithstanding at length it was agreed, that a form of league should be drawne with conditions, whereupon the French Ambassadors being dismissed, Tho. Earle of Ormond, and Tho. Goldston, Prior of Christs Church in Canterbury, were appointed to follow into France for conclusion of the same league, but they returned without agreeing vpon any League at all.

An. reg. 6.

Parliament at London.

King Henry determining no more with peaceable messages, but with open warre to determine all controuersies betwixt him and the French King, called a Parliament, and therein declared that hee was iustly prouoked to make warre against the Frenchmen, and therefore desired them of their benevolence of money and men toward the maintenance thereof. Euery man allowed the cause to be iust, and promised his helping hand. The King commended them for their willing and faithfull hearts. And to the intent hee might spare the power sort, hee thought good first to erect money of the richest sort, by way of benevolence, which kinde of leuying money was first practised by King Edward the fourth, King Henry following his example, published, that by their open gifts, he would measure their benevolent hearts: so that he who gaue most, should be iudged to be his most loving friend; and he that gaue little, to be esteemed according to his gift. By this meanes King Henry got innumerable great summes of money, with some grudge of the people, for the extremitie shewed by the Commissioners in diuers places.

A benevolence to K. Henry.

The Cittizens of London gaue toward this iourney 9682. pound, 17. s. and 4. pence. Toward the which summe, many Aldermen gaue 200. l. the piece, and some of the Comons 100. l. the rest was supplyed by the poorer sort.

John Twichet, Lord Audley, Treasurer of England, deceased on the 16. of September, he left issue, Iames Audley, married to Margaret daughter to Sir Rich. Darell, Knight. Which Iames Audley was beheaded on the 28. of June, Anno 1497. 1491.

Henry, the Kings second sonne, was borne at Greenwich in Kent on the 22. of June. *An. reg. 7.*

Maximilian, King of the Romans, intending to be reuenged on the French men, for the many iniuries done to him, because he was not rich enough to maintaine the war of himselfe, he sent his Ambassadour, Iames Conibald, a man of great wisedome, to require the King of England, to take his part against the French King, making diuers great offers on his own behalfe, if it would please him so to doe.

King Henry no lesse desirous then Maximilian to put the French K. to trouble, and chiefely to aid the Britons in the extremity of their businesse, gladly consented to Maximilian, and promised to prepare an army with all spede, and to passe the seas, to inuade the French territories. 1492.

The 6. of Aprill, the Nobles of the Realme, Hugh Clopton, Maior of London, his brethren the Aldermen, Sheriffes, and companies of the Citty in their liueries, assembled in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul, where Doctor Morton, Archbishop of Canterbury, Chancellor of England, made to them an Oration, declaring how the King of Spaine had won the great and rich Citty and Countrey of Granado from the Moores: for top whereof, *Te Deum* was sung with great solemnity. The Cittyes Granado won from the Moores.

In the moneth of May following, was holden a great and valiant iusting within the Kings Manor of Shine, now called Richmond, in Southrey, the which endured by the space of a Moneth, sometime within the said place, and sometime without, vpon the Greene without the gate of the said Manor. In the which space a combate was holden, and done betwixt Sir James Parkar, Knight, and Hugh Vaughan, Gentleman-Vsher, vpon controuersie for the Armes that Garrar gaue to the said Hugh Vaughan: but he was there allowed by the King to beare them, and Sir Iames Parkar was slaine at the first course. The cause of his death was thought to be long of a false helmet, which by Iusting at Shine. A combate at Shine.

by force of the Dronacle failed, and so he was striken into the mouth, that his tongue was borne vnto the hinder part of the head, and so hee died incontinently.

In this season, Charles the French King receyued the Lady Anne of Britayne, and with great solemnity wedded her, hauing with her in dowry the dutchy of Britaine. Thus was Maximillian in a great chafe toward the French King: Wherefore he sent vnto King Henry, desiring him with all spede to passe the Seas with his armie, that they might pursue the war against their aduersaries with fire, sword, and blood. King Henry hearing this, and hauing no mistrust in the promise of Maximillian with all spede leuied an armie, and rigged his naule: and when all things were ready, he sent his Almoner Christopher Vrswike, and Sir Iohn Risley Knight, vnto Maximillian, to certifie him that the King was in a readinesse, and would arriue at Caleis, as soone as he should be aduertised, that Maximillian and his men were ready to ioyne with him.

I belefe touchof Lame of the violent attempts & damages done by the seuerent Sarazens and their bill extirpation out of the Kingdomes of Spaine this present yeere. 1492.

Rodericke King of Spaine hauing defloured the daughter of Earle Iulian a noble man of that countrey, the saide Earle to be auenged of the King brought in the Sarazens of Affrica who being sent by Myramoline their K. vnder conduite of their leader Muza arriued in Spaine in the yeere of our Lord 714. and in two yeres space they obtained almost all Spaine, except the parts of Austria, in which space according to some authors there were slaine on both sides three score and tenne thousand, concerning which Moores and Sarazens, notwithstanding all their ialour, paynes, diligence, and industry, of the Spanyards, yet by reason of many vnexpected supplies they could not bee wholly suppreſt, vntill the yeere 1480. no; absolutely then vntill this present yeere 1492. at which time king Ferdinando and Elizabeth his wife, with their clergy in solemne processions, and with great tryumphes, Pompe, and state, being accompanied with most of the Nobility & attended with a great armie of horse and foote, entred into Granado, and take full possession thereof; which they hold to this day, these monstrous Banquellers the Sarazens (of whom for diuers causes I will speake some what more) possest sundry Kingdomes, and Prouinces in Spaine, for the space of seuen hundreth sirty and six yeres.

In the yeere 1480. the Turkes took the City Gronto in Calabria Ulcriur and made great slaughter.

The Turkes at this day in all their Conquests vse the Christian Churches as their hell hounds did, for to their Popish Sacrifice commanded them which they neuer omit, especially to an episcopall or Cathedrall Church.

In the yeere 830. the Sultan of Babilon inuaded Christendome, take Rome, and sackt it, executed all torments, and extremities, vpon the Clearcy, as well as vpon the Laity, he made Saint Peters Church a stable for his horse, and in contempt of our holy Sacrament of the Supper of our Lord, hee gaue his horse bread and water at the high Altar. And when by Gods permission they had thus punished the Sinnes of the people, it pleased God to smite the Christian Princes, who chased them out of Europe, for at that time Christendome was as farre out of order as it is at this present. In the yeere 924. these hell hounds spoyled all Italy, and were not expulsed thence vntill the yeer, 915. and after that they came proudly into France, and made great hauocke of all Christians ouer whom they had power, and had it not bin for the present supply of the Princes of Italy and Germany, they ment to haue inuaded England, but God bee thanked that at that time they were by any meanes suppreſt and their bloudy purpose preuented. In the yeere 1260. began the Kingdome of Tartars, who slew Dauid their great Lord who was also K. of India, and son to Prester John, and when these mad Hoane Tartars had slaine their King and all his children and neere kinsmen, then they planted and setled themselues in that Region, which is now called Tartaria: in this great slaughter they onely saued one of the kings Daughters, because she was married vnto Lingitha, whom they had chosen to be Lord ouer them, this Lingitha ordained, that whosoeuer sought to be King in his owne right should be put to death, he also instituted a law that it should be lawfull for the Tartars to enioy & possesse all kingdomes and countries of the world, and to spe all other nations at their pleasure, ouer whom they could get dominion; then they began to exercise all spoile and outrage vpon all their Christian neighbours, whose malicious practises and inueterate hatred towards the Christians is no sor abated at this day. The Cittyes of Granado won from the Moores. 1266. Thy originall of the Kings of Tartars.

In the yeere 1207. Mammellis the Prince of Sarazens, whose name by interpretation is as much to say as King of Kings, with a verie mighty power inuaded Spaine, and put the Kingdomes of Spaine, Portugall, Aragon, Castyle, and the rest into great perplexity and danger, but their Christian forces courageously ioyned together and being strongly and kindely seconded by the French king and some other Princes their neere neighbours, gaue them many sharpe fightes and braue battels, and in the end by Gods fauour ouercame them in playne fight, & slew most of the infidels and put the rest to flight, in which holy seruice, many Dukes, Earles, and Barons of each nation dyed right valiantly, vpon the force of their enemies, and in the yeere 1266. the foresaid Sarazens of Affrica, seeing part of their tyrannous successors very likely in short time to be eyther expulsed or suppreſt: came ouer into Spaine with a mighty power to recouer that which the former had lost, with great hope to spoyle and possesse the Kingdomes of Spaine entirely, but God gaue Courage and vnity to the Christians that those new-come Sarazens, were in manner all quite expulsed and the Christians remained Conquerors ouer them though with great effusion of bloud: at this time the City of Wismary in Germanie was cleane burnt to ashes being the day after the ascension of our Lord, and in the yeere 1341. our foresaid inueterate enemies of our Sauiour attempted furious inuasion vpon Granado, but the kings of Spaine, Arragon, and Portugall, very valiantly resisted them, and forced them with great losse to retire to their shippes and Galleis, thereby to saue the remaynder of themselues Note the insolence of the Sarazens. 1266.

themselues, hauing lost by fight and by mortalitie thirtie thousand horse, and fiftie thousand foote: some Chronielers say, that the Sun did shine three houres longer the day of this set Battell with the Sarazens, then it did any time before, except at the time of Duke Iosua, and in the yere 1385, the Turkish Sarazens made so fierce warres vpon the Christians, and did such grieuous damages and slaughters vpon the Christians, that they compelled the Chri- 10
They refuse to bee called Almaines and would bee called Sarazens as defended of Berra. stian Emperor, to pay them tribute. Thus much in briefe touching the Bastard head of Agars Ismalites, and their incessant tyranny, and oppression vpon all their bordering Christian neighbours: I thought mete to set downe at this time, as well in discharge of my religious duty to my God, Prince and country, as to expresse the bellish tyranny and malice of these pretended Sarazens vnto the Church of God, whose vnspeakeable pernicious practices vpon many other Christian Nations, are dayly more felte and sene in farre countries, then is any way rightly vnderstood or considered of the common people of this our nation: wherof many in their pride of ignorance, and wilfull blindenesse, and vnchristian careles respect, which they haue of the hourely outrages and bloody practices which the wandering of-spring of these Infidels, execute and performe in this present age vpon the Russians, Polonyans, Transiluanians, Hongarians, Germaynes, Italians, Spaniards, and Portugals, and others, retayning still a good hope by meanes of the diuision of the Christian Princes, to possesse themselues of all Europe, hauing the best part thereof already in their possession.

These Ambassadors comming into Flanders perceiued that Maximillian was neyther pur-
ueyed of men, money, armour, or any other thing necessary for the setting forth of warre, saue only that his will was good, but his power was small.

An. Reg. 8. King Henry being aduertised hereof, was sore disquieted in his minde: but taking counsaile, at length he determined not to stay his pretended iourney, and therefore he so increased his number before he take shippe, that hee with his owne power might be able to match with his aduersaries.

King Henry sayleth into France. Then on the ninth of September, King Henry, departed from Greenwich toward the Sea-side, and on the first of October take shipping at Sandwich, and the same day landed at Calais with a great armie. The 15. of October hee departed toward Boloigne, the first night he lay at Sanding field, the next night at Wozgison, where he met with the Earle of Oxforde chiefe Captaine of the fore-ward, then come from the beating downe of the Towne of Arde: with the Earle of Oxford came the Earle of Shrewsburie, the Earle of Deuonshire, the E. of Suffolke, the Earle of Essex, the L. Grey Codner, the Lord Strange, the Lord Powesse, the Lord Hastings, the Lord Audley, the Lord Latimer, the Baron of Dudley, and diuers Knights and Esquires: these lay that night at Wozgison, the next night both the wards lay at Winell, and the next night they came before Boloigne, and there lay at siege till the eight of Nouember, at the which time the Lord Cordos chiefe Captaine vnder the French King in his masters name required peace, which King Henry granted vpon conditions. This peace greatly displeased the Englishmen, because they were ready prest to haue set on their enemies, and brought into great hope to haue beene enriched, by the spoile to haue fallen to their lots of their enemies goods, besides the glorious fame of renowmed victories and namely for that diuers of the Captaines, to set themselues and their bands the more gorgeously forward, had borrowed large summes of money, and for the repayment had mortgaged their lands, &c. The King returned to Calais: there were not many of the English armie lost at this siege of Boloigne, and seme men of name more then that baliant captaine sir John Savage knight. King Henry besiegeth Boloigne.

King Henry arrived at Dover on the seuententh of December, from whence he rode to Westminster, where he kept his Christmasse with great solemnitie. 1495

Now sprang there vp a new found son to King Edward the fourth in this manner. The Dutchesse of Burgoigne espying a certaine young man, of visage beautifull, of countenance demure, of wit subtill, called Perken Werbeke, this young man trauelling many Countries, could speake English, and diuers other languages: the Dutchesse glad to haue got so mete an instrument for her purpose, as one not vnlike to be taken, and reputed for the Duke of Yorke, sonne to her brother king Edward, which was called Richard, kept him a certaine space with her priuily, and him with such diligence instructed both of the secrets, and common affaires of the Realme of England, and of the linage, descent, and order of the house of Yorke, that like a good scholler, he could tell all that was taught him without any staggering or stay in his words: and besides that hee kept such a princely countenance, that all men in manner did firmely beleeue, that he was extracted of that noble family of the Duke of Yorke: when the Dutchesse saw her time, shee sent this Perken first into Portingale, and so into Ireland, where shortly after his arriuall, he entred so farre in credit with the people, that his words were taken to be true. Perken Werbeke.

The French king aduertised hereof, sent into Ireland for Perken, who with all diligence sayled into France, and comming to the kings presence, was of him royally receiued, and had a gard assigned, whereof was governor the Lord Congresshall, and to him being at Paris, resorted Sir George Neuill bastard, Sir John Taylor, Rowland Robinson, and a hundreth Englishmen: but after that the peace was confirmed betwixt the two kings of England and of France, the French king dismissed Perken.

And so Perken returned to the lady Margaret who assigned him a guarde, and called him the white Rose of England, the nobility of Flanders did to him all reuerence.

An. reg. 9. In England the brute of him sore disquieted the people, in so much that not onely of the meaner sorte, but also of the Nobles beleeued all that was of him reported, and many passed ouer to him: and some of the Noblemen conspired together, purposing to ayde the forsaid Perken. Wherefore they sent messengers to the Lady Margaret, to know when Richard Duke of Yorke might come into England, to the intent they might be in a readinesse to assist him, at his arriuall. Sir Robert Clifford knight, and William Barley were sent into Flaunders, which discouered to the Dutchesse all the secret intent of the friends of the new found Duke. The Dutchesse gladly receiued this message, and brought the messenger to the sight of Perken Who so well counterfeited the gesture, and manner of Richard Duke of Yorke, that Sir Robert Clifford beleeued that he was the second sonne of King Edward, and thereof wrote into England to his complices.

1494. The coasts kept against Perken Werbeke. The King perceiuing that this fable was not banquished, sent certaine knights with competent bands of Souldiers to keepe the sea coasts: he also sent into the Low countries certaine persons to learne the truth of this forged Dukes progenie: where some of them comming to Tourney, got knowledge that hee was borne in that Citie of base linage, and named Perken Werbeke. The King being aduertised hereof, sent Sir Edward Poinings knight, and sir Willi. Warham Doctor of the laws vnto Philip Archduke of Burgoigne, to signifie to him, that the young man being with the Lady Margaret, had falsely vsurped the name of Richard Duke of Yorke, long before murthered. The Ambassadors hauing done their message, were answered, that to haue the King of England lone, the Archduke would neyther aide or assist Perken, nor his complices in any cause or quarrell:

After the returne of the Ambassadors, the king sent certaine espials into Flanders, which should faine themselues to haue fled to the Duke of Yorke, and thereby to search out the whole intent of the conspiracy.

Other were sent to intise Sir Robert Clifford and William Barley to returne into England, promising to them pardon of all their offences, and high rewards, for obeying the kings request. They that were sent did so earnestly apply their busines, that they brought to passe all things at their owne desires, for they learned who were the chiefe conspirators, and perswaded Sir Robert Clifford to giue ouer that enterprise. When the King had knowledge of the chiefe Captaines of the conspiracie, he caused them to be apprehended. The chiefe were, Iohn Ratclife Lord Fitz Walter, Sir Simon Mountforte, Sir Thomas Thwates Knights, William Dawbeney, Robert Ratclife, Thomas Cressenor, and Thomas Astewoode: Simon Mountford, Robert Ratclife, and William Dawbeney were beheaded, the other had their pardons, the Lord Fitzwalter was conueyed to Calais and layd in houlde, and after lost his head.

An. reg. 10. King Henry taking displeasure with the Flemmish merchants with their wares banished this land. King of Romaines, for that he had not kept touch with him against the French King, and partly displeased with the Flemmings, but specially with the Lady Margaret, for keeping and setting forward Perken Werbeke, not onely banished the Flemmings wares and merchandize out of his dominions, but also restrained all English merchants from their repaire and traffike, into any of the lands and territories of the king of Romaines, or of the Archduke Phillip, son to the king of Romaines, causing the parte to be kept at Calais, of all English merchandize and commodities: wherefore the said King and his sonne banished out of their lands and signories, all English clothes, yearne, tynne, leade, and other commodities of this Realme.

Henry the Kings second sonne was created Duke of Yorke, on Alhalowne day, at which time were made Knights the Duke of Yorke, the Lord Haringtou, Lord Clifton, Lord Dacre of the South, Lord Waren, Sir Thomas Stanley, Sir John Arundell, Sir Walter Griffith, Sir Gerueyes Clifton, Sir Robert Harcourte, Sir Edward Traforde, Sir Henry Merney, Sir Robert Newbrough, Sir Raulph Ryder Sir Iohn Sparke, Sir Humfrey Fulforde, Sir Robert Litton, Sir Pierce Edgecombe, Sir Robert Clere, Sir Thomas Fartax, Sir Richard Knightley, Sir John Chekb. Creation.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Westminster, where on the twelfe day he made Ralph Awstrey Maior of London, and William Morton late Maior Knights. 1495

The morrow after the Epiphanie, King Henry went to the Tower of London, and there remained till such time, as Sir Robert Clifford was there presented, which was done for a policy, that if Sir Robert accused any of the Nobilitie they mought be called thither, without suspition of any euill, and there attached, and laid fast: now at the comming of Sir Robert Clifford to the Kings presence, he besought him of pardon, and obtained it, and therewith opened the manner of the conspiracy and who were the auders, fautors, and chiefe beginners of it. Amongst whom he accused Sir William Stanley, whom the King hadde made his chiefe Chamberlaine, and one of his priuy Councell: but now the King caused him to be restrained from his libertie in his owne Chamber, within the Square Tower, and there appointed him by his priuy Councell to be examined, where he wilely agreed to all things laid to his charge, if he were therein faulty and culpable. The report is, that this was his offence, when communication was had betwene him and the forementioned Sir Robert Clifford, as concerning Perken, Sir William Stanley said that if he certainely knew that the young man was the vndoubted sonne and heire of King Edward the fourth, he would neuer fight nor beare armour against him: wherefore he was charged that he bare no heartie good will toward King Henry. The King hauing finer an hole in his coat, doubted first what he should do King Henry lodged in the Tower.

with

with him, for loath hée was to lose the fauour of his brother the Earle of Darby: but arraigned hée was at Westminster and adiudged to die, according to which sentence, he was brought to the Tower hill on the fifteenth day of February, and there beheaded. This Sir William Stanley was the chiefe and principall helper of king Henry to the Crowne at Bosworth Fielde, against King Richard: hée was a man of a great power in his Countrey, and also of great wealth, in so much, as the common fame ranne, there was in his Castle of Holte, found in ready coine and plate, to the value of forty thousand markes or more, and his lands and fées extended to three thousand pounds by yéere.

Sir William Stanley beheaded.

Sanctuary men examined.

The 22. of February were arraigned in Guildhall at London foure persons, to witte, Thomas Bagnall, John Scot, John Hethe, and John Kenington, the which were Sanctuarie men of Saint Martin le grand in London, and lately before taken thence for forging seditious bils, to the slander of the King, and some of his Councell: for the which three of them were adiudged to die, and the fourth named Bagnall, pleaded to be restored to sanctuary: by reason whereof he was reputed to the Tower till the next terme, and on the 26. of February the other three with a Flemming, and Robert Bikley, a yeoman of the Crowne were all fiue executed at Tyborne.

Giles Lord Dawbeney was made the Kings chiefe Chamberlaine.

The King sent into Ireland Sir Henry Deane, late abbot of Lanthonie whom he made Chancellor of that Ile, and Sir Edward Poinings knight, with an army of men, wherevpon when the fauorers of Perken heard, they straight fled to the woods and marishes, Sir Edward Poinings with his whole army marched against the wild Irish, because the other being culpable were fled to them for succour: but when he saw himselfe and his power, not able to follow his enemies in the woods, marishes and mountaines, hee was constrained to recule backe, sore disquieted against Geralde Earle of Kildare, being then the Kings Deputie, whom he suspected to be the cause that he had no succours sent him, and therefore sodainely hee caused the Earle to be apprehended, and as a Prisoner brought him into England, which Earle so cleared himselfe of all things layde to his charge, that he was dismissed and sent into Ireland againe, there to be deputy and Lieutenant as before.

King Henry being now in some better surety of his Estate, take his progresse into Lancashire about the fiue and twentieth of June, there to be merry with his mother the Countesse of Darby, which then lay at Latham.

Sir William Capell Alderman of London, put in the fines.

Sir William Capell Alderman of London, was called in question, and condemned to the King, in twenty seuen hundreth, and fortie three pounds sterling, for the breach of certayne Statutes made before times: for the which he made his end with the King for fiftene hundreth and 15. pounds, fiue shillings eight pence, which hee paid.

Perken Werbeke being in Flanders, and hoping at length to obtayne the Crowne of England, gathered a power of all nations, some banquerontes, some théeues, and such as desired to line by rapine, and being thus furnished, he take such ships as his friends had prouided for him, and then departing from Flanders, arriued at Deale in Kent, on the third of July: he put some of his men to land, to signifie his arriuall with such a power, that the bishop must néeds incline to his part. The Kentishmen vnderstanding that Perken had none with him to account of, but strangers borne, and base people, like faithfull subiects determined to fall vpon those that were thus now come to Land, and also to trye if they might allure the whole Number out of their Shippes, so to giue them battayle. But Perken would not set one foote out of his Shippe, till he sawe all things sure: yet hee permitted some of his Souldiours to goe on land, which being trained foorth a prettie way from their Shippes, and seeing they could haue no comfort of the Countrey, they withdrew againe to their Ships: at which withdrawing, the Maior of Sandwich, with certaine commons of the Countrey, hikered with the residue that were vpon land, and take a liue of them 169. persons, among the which were fiue Captaines, Mountfort, Corber, White Belt, Quintin, and Genine. And on the twelfth of July, Sir John Pechy, Shériffe of Kent, brought into London bridge those 169. persons, where the Sheriffes of London, Nicholas Alwaine, and John Warner, receiued and conueied them, railed in robes like horses in a cart, vnto the tower of London, and to Newgate, and shortly after to the number of 150. were hanged about the sea coasts in Kent, Essex, Suffex, and Norfolke: the residue were executed at Tyborne and at Wapping in the Whole besides London: and Perkenfied into Flanders:

Perken Werbeke arriues in Kent.

An.reg.11.

In this season deceased Cecily Dutchesse of Yorke, mother to King Edward the fourth, in her castle of Barkhamsted, and was buried at Fodringhay by her husband.

King Henry being in his progresse north, sent Sir Richard Guilford to commend the fidelitie and manhood of the Kentishmen, and also to tender to them most heartie thankes for the same: he also caused order to bée taken for the erecting of bikenings or beacons, and watching of them.

Weareth his vp and walched.

Perken V Verbeke sayled into Ireland, trusting there to augment his number: but perceiuing that the hope of victorie consisted not in naked people without furniture or armor, hee take the sea againe at Cork, and sayled into Scotland, where comming to the presence of king James, hee forged such a painted processe, that the king of Scots began to haue Perken in great honor, caused him to be called Duke of Yorke, and to perswade the world that he was so indeede, he caused the Lady Katherine daughter to Alexander Earle of Huntley, his nigh kinsman, to be espoused to him.

1496. Perken Werbeke sprut into Ireland

And

Perken Warbeth in Northumberland.

And shortly after in company of this Perken he entred into England with a puissant army, and caused proclamation to bée made to spare all those that would submit themselues vnto Richard Duke of Yorke, and here with they began to warre in most cruell manner, with slaughter of men, burning of Townes, and committing detestable enormities, so that all the Countrey of Northumberland, was by them in manner wasted and destroyed. At length when the Souldiers were laden with pray, perceiuing that no succour came out of England vnto the new Duke, they withdrew backe into Scotland, enriched with prayes and bootes.

When King Henry, was truely certified that the Scottish King was returned home, he stayed all the preparations made at that time to goe against him: but yet meaning to be reuenged of the wrongs done to him by King James and his people, hée first called a Parliament, and in that assembly declared the cause of the instant warre, and how necessary it should be, for to haue the warre pursued against those enemies that had begun it: to which motion all the Nobilitie wholy agréed, and a subsidie was granted.

An.Reg.12.

Parliament and a subsidy.

Iaspar Duke of Bedford deceased. 1497.

Iaspar Duke of Bedford Vncle to King Henry the seuenth, deceased on the eighteenth of December, and was buried in the Abbey of Remsham in Glocestershire.

King Henry prepared a mighty army to inuade Scotland, and obtained for chiefetaine, the Lord Dawbeney; but as this army was forward toward Scotland, the same was stayed and called backe againe, by reason of a new commotion begun by the Cornishmen, for the payment of the subsidie granted at the last Parliament. Of these people the heads were called Thomas Flamoke, a Gentleman learned in the law, and Michaell Iosseph a blacke smith or horse farrier of Bodmin, men of stout stomackes. They layde the fault of this exaction vnto Iohn Morton Archbishoppe of Canterburie, and to Sir Reginald Bray, because they were chiefe of the Kings Councel, Flamoke and Ioseph erected the common people to put on harnesse, and to follow them in the quarrell, promising not to hurt any creature, but onely to sée them punished that procured such exactions to be laide on the people, without any reasonable cause: to these captaines assembled a great number of people together, then praising their hardines, when all things were ready for their iourney, set forward with their armie, and came to Taunton, where they slew the Pronost of Parine, which was one of the commissioners of the subsidy, and from thence came to Wels, so intending to go to London, where the King then soiourned. When the King was aduertised of these doings, he was somewhat offended, he reuoked the Lord Dawbeney which was going against the Scots, and increased his army. The nobles came to London with as many men of warre as they could put in a readines, to ayde the King against his rebelles, if néede should be. In the meane time, James Twichet Lord Audley, being confederate with the rebells of Cornewall ioyned with them, being come to Wells, and tooke vpon him as their chiefe Captaine and Leader: from Wells they went to Salisbury, and from thence to Winchester, and so into Kent, where they hoped to haue had great ayde, but they were deceiued: for the Earle of Kent, George, Lord Burgaueny, John Brooke, Lord Cobham, Sir Edward Poynings, Sir Richard Guilford, Sir Thomas Bourchier, John Peché, William Scot, and a great number of people were ready to defend the Countrey, which thing marueilously dismayed the Cornish-men, so that many of them fled from the company. The Captaines brought their people to Black-heath, and there ordered their battells, either ready to fight with the King if he would assayle them, or else to assault the Citty of London. The King sent John, Earle of Oxford, Henry Bourchier, Earle of Essex, Edmond de la Pole, Earle of Suffolk, Sir Rise ap Thomas, and Sir Humfrey Stanley, Noble warriours, with a great company of Archers, and horse-men, to inuiron the hill on eyther side, to the intent that all by-waies being stopped, all hope of flight should be taken from them, and incontinently, he himselfe being furnished with a great army, set forward out of the Citty, encamped himselfe in Saint Georges field, where hee lodged that night, and on the next morning sent the Lord Dawbeney with a great company to set vpon them earely in the morning, which first gat the Bridge of Dartford straw, while the Earles set on them on curry side, the Lord Dawbeney came into the field with his company, and without long fighting on the 22. of June, the Cornish-men were ouer-come: but first they tooke the Lord Dawbeney, prisoner, but let him goe at liberty, without hurt or detriment. There were slaine of the rebells about three hundred, and taken of them about 15. hundred. There was giuen to them that take them, their goods, amongst them the blacke-Smith and other their Captaines were put to death, And when this battell was ended, the King wanted of all his number but three hundred men, which were slaine.

An.reg.11.

Commotion by the commons of Cornwall.

Black-heath field.

The Lord Audley was drawne from Newgate to the Tower hill in a coat of his owne armes, painted vpon paper, reuersed and all to torne, and there was beheaded on 28. of June: Flamocke and Ioseph the Blacke-Smith, were drawne, headed, and quartered at Mileborne, and their heads and quarters set vp at London and other places: Knights and Mareshals made at Blacke-heath, and at London bridge foote, when the King returned from Blacke-heath.

In the moneth of July, King Henry sent an army into Scotland, vnder the guiding of the Earle of Surrey, and the Lord Neuill, which made sharpe warre vpon the Scots: but by the labour of Peter Helias sent from the King of Spaine, a truce was concluded betwixt the two kings of England and of Scotland, with condition

An.reg.13. The Earle of Surrey inuadeth Scotland with a great power.

condition that Iames King of Scottes should conuey Perken We beke out of his Realme and signiories.

Ambassadors sent to Burgundy.

About the same time King Henry receiued the Ambassadors that were sent to him from the French King: Also the Lord of Cauphere, and other orators of Phillip Archduke of Austrich, and Duke of Burgoigne, came to him for the confirmation of amitie, and to haue the English marchants to resort againe into their Countrey, which request he granted. And to did the Englishmen relort againe into the Archdukes dominions, and were receiued (saith Hall) into Antwerpe with generall processions, so glad was that towne of their returne.

Perken Werbeke landed in Cornwall.

Perken Werbeke being vsited by the King of Scots to depart out of the Scottish dominions, fained with his wife and family into Ireland, where while hee remained, hee had knowledge from the Cornishmen, that they were ready to renewe the warre againe. Whereupon hee hauing with him feure small shippes, and not aboue nine score and twenty men, sailed into Cornewall, and there landed at Whiteland Bay on the seuenth of September, from whence he went to Bodmyne, where he gathered to him aboue fiue thousand persons. Then Perken made Proclamations in name of King Richard the fourth, as sonne to King Edward the fourth. And by the aduice of his three Counsellors, John Heron Mercer a Banquerout, Richard Skelton Tayler, and John Askeley Scrimener, determined first of all to assayle the winning of Exceter, and so hastning thither, he laid siege to it: The Citizens perceiuing themselues to be in danger, let certaine messengers downe by cords ouer the wall, that nought certific the King: And herewith caused faggots to be brought and laid to the inward part of their gates, and set them all on fire, to the intent to kepe their enemies from entring in, and their Citizens from flying out, and that they in the meane season might make trenches and ramplers to defend their enemies in stead of gates. Perken set by Ladders to scale the walles: but the Citizens, with helpe of such as were come forth of the countrey to their aid, so valiantly defended the walles, that they slue aboue 200. of Perkens souldiours at that assault. The King hasted forth with his Poste, and sent the Lord Dawbeney with certaine bands of Light horsemen and to assertile all men of his comming.

The City of Exceter besieged.

But in the meane season Edward Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, and William his sonne, accompanied with sir Edmond Carew, sir Thomas Trenchard, sir William Courtney, sir Th. Fulford, sir John Halwell, sir John Crokar, Walter Courtney, Peter Egecombe, William Snaure, came into the City of Exceter to helpe the Citizens, so that the Earle was hurt in the arme with an arrow, and so were many of his men, but few slaine. When Perken saw hee could not winne the City of Exceter, he went from thence to Taunton, and there mustering his men, he perceiued them to be minished, he began to mistrust the remnant: in deede when the people that followed him in hope that no small number of the nobilitie would ioyne with him, saw no such matter came to passe, they stale away from him. When the King heard that Perken was gone to Taunton, he followed after him with all spede, and by the way there came to him Edward Duke of Buckingham, and a great company of noble men. But as soone as Perken was informed that the King was at hand, he with 160. horsemen fled from Taunton to a sanctuary at Beiwley beside Southampton. King Henry sent the Lord Dawbeney with 500. horsemen after Perken to apprehend him, so that many of his captaines were taken. Also diuers horsemen rode to Saint Michaels mount, and there spake the Lady Gorden wife to Perken, and brought her to the King. At whose beautie and amiable countenance, the King much maruelled, and sent her to London to the Quene. The common people submitted themselues to the Kings mercy.

After this the King rode to Exceter, and there executed diuers Cornishmen: hee also caused the sanctuary wherein Perken was inclosed, to be inuironed with bands of light horsemen, to watch that Perken should not escape, wherefore Perken vpon promise of pardon committed himselfe to the King, and then the King returned to London.

The 28. of Nouember, Perken was conueied on horsebacke through cheape, and Cornhill vnto the Tower of London, and from thence backe againe through Candle-wike streate to Westminster.

Perken brought to London.

The 21. of December at nine of the clocke at night, sodainly began a great fire within the Kings lodging, then being at his manor of Shine, which fire continued till midnight, by violence whereof much and a great part of the old buildings of that place was brent, with hangings, beds, apparell, plate, and many iewels.

The Kings manor of Shine brent.

Perken Werbeke endeuouring to scale secretly out of the land, was taken againe by his kepers, and by the Kings commandement cast into the Tower of London, and after hee was shewed in Westminster, and Cheape, mocked on scaffolds to the great wonderment of many people: where he read his confession written with his owne hand. 1489. An.reg.14.

This yere all the gardens which had bene continued time out of minde without Moregate of London, were destroyed, and of them was made a plaine field for archers to shoote in. The English merchants were receiued into Antwerpe with generall procession, after they had bene long absent from thence.

Inclosures about London pulled downe.

This yere was a great drought, by reason whereof, a loade of hay which was before time sold at London for 5. shillings, was this yere solde for tenne shillings or twelue shillings more.

Dyle sommer

This yere one Sebastian Gabato a Genoas sonne, borne in Bristow, professing himselfe to be expert in knowledge of the streight of the worlde and Iles of the same, as by his Charts and

Sebastian Gabato his voiage.

and other reasonable demonstrations he shewed, caused the King to man and victuall a ship at Bristow to search for an Iland, which he knew to be replenished with rich commodities: to the ship diuers merchants of London aduentured small stocks, and in the company of this ship, sayled also out of Bristow three or foure small shippes fraught with sleight and grosse wares, as course cloth, caps, laces, points, & such other. Sir Humfrey Gilbert Knight, in his booke intituled, a discouery for a new passage to Catia, writeth thus: Sebastian Gabato, by his personall experience and trauell, hath set forth and described this passage in his Charts, which are yet to bee seene in the Quenes Maiesties priuy gallery at Whitehall, who was sent to make this discouery by King Henry the 7. and entred the same feet, affirming, that he sailed very far westward, with a quarter of the moyth, on the north side of *Terra de Librador*, the 11. of June, vntill he came to the septentrionall latitude of 67. degrees, and finding the seas still open, said, that he might and would haue gon to Catata, if the enuitie of the master and mariners had not bene.

Humfrey Gilbert.

1499. The 24. of February, the Kings third sonne was christened within the Friers Church at Greenwich, by the name of Edward.

A thomakers sonne borne in Bishops gate streate of London, was hanged at Saint Thomas Watering on Shrouetuesday, for naming himselfe to be Edward Earle of Warwike, son to George Duke of Clarence: which Edward Earle of Warwike was then (and had bene all the raigne of this king) kept secret prisoner in the tower of London.

A thomakers sonne hained to be the Earle of Warwike.

An.reg.15. The Gascoine wine was sold at London for forty thillings the tunne, and much left to the shipmen for fraight, the plenty was so great. A quarter of wheate foure thillings, and baylalet foure pence the bushell.

wine, salt, and wheate cheape.

Charles the 8 of France bieth Sobania ly.

Charles the eight King of France this yere 1499. as he was playing at Tennis died sodainely, this yere also Lodwike king of France with speciall ayde of the Venetians, take the state of Millan, the Duke was carried prisoner into France, and his brother Cardinall Ascanyo was led prisoner into Venice, and after that sent into the French King, which done the French king, and the Venetians diuided the state of Millan, betweene them.

The state of Millan deuided betweene the French and the Venetians.

Perken Werbeke executed

Perken Werbeke being in holde, by great promises corrupted his kepers, named Strangwais, Blewet, Astwood, & long Roger, seruants to sir I. Digby lieutenant of the tower (as was affirmed) intended to haue slaine their master, and to haue set Perken and the Earle of Warwike at large: which Earle of Warwike had bene kept in prison within the tower (as ye haue heard) from the first yere of this king to this 15. yere, ont of all company of men and sight of beasts, and therefore could not of himselfe see he his owne destruction, but by the drift of other he was brought to his death, for being made privy of this enterprise deuised by Perken and his complices, he assented thereunto: but this deuise being reuealed, Perken and Io. a Waters, sometime Maior of Corke in Ireland were arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and on the 23. of November drawn to Tiborne, where Perken read his former confession as before he had done in Cheape, taking on his death the same to be true, and so he and John a Water asked the King forgiuenesse, and take their deaths patiently.

Earle of Warwike be headed.

Also Edward Plantagenet, the forenamed Earle of Warwike, son to George D. of Clarence, brother to Edward the fourth, being about the age of foure and twentie yeres, on the one and twentieth of November was arraigned at Westminster before the Earle of Oxford then high Steward of England, of treason, in minding to haue escaped (as they said) and he was perswaded to confesse, which he did, and submitted himselfe to the Kings mercy: vpon which confession he had iudgement, and was executed on a scaffold on the tower hill, but buried at Bisham by his ancestors: also shortly after, Walter Blewet and Thomas Astwood were hanged at Tyborne.

1500. This yere was a great plague of pestilence whereof men died very sore in many places, especially in and about London, where died in that whole yere (as it was thought) about the number of 30000. people.

Great pestilence.

The King and Quene sailed to Excester.

King Henry, whether it were to auoide the danger of the sickues then raigning, or to take occasion to commune with the Duke of Burgoigne, he with Quene Elizabeth his wife sayled ouer, and landed at Caleis on the 8. of May, with him was the D. of Buckingham, the earles of Surrey and of Essex, the Lord Dawbeney Lieutenant of the Tower and Marches of Caleis, and others in great number where they met with the Duke of Burgoigne, & returned in the moneth of June.

Edward the Kings third son died this yere at Bishops Hatfield in Hertfordshire, and was buried at Westminster.

Two Archbishops and three Bishops deceased.

Also on the morrow after the Ascension day deceased Th. Rotherham Archbishop of Yorke, at his manor of Calwod, at the age of 75. yeres or more, & was buried in the minster of S. Peter at Yorke in a tombe of marble. This Rotherham, otherwise called Scot, a man of great wisedome was brought vp in Rotherham, after ward a fellow of Kings colledge in Cambridge, then Chaplaine to King Edward the 4. and keper of the priuy seale, first preferred by the king to the sea of Rochester, then translated to Lincolne, where he sate 9. yeres, at length made Lord Chancellor of England, which office he enioyed til the kings death, before the which time he was preferred to the sea of Yorke, he erected a colledge at Rotherham in Yorke shire, dedicated to the name of Iesus, for a prouost to be a preacher in the Diocesse of Yorke, fiue priests, fiue Quiristes, and 3. schoolemasters, one for song, 1. for grammer, and one for writing, he gaue a rich Miter to the Church of Yorke (for K. Edward the fourth had broken the old) he caused many great buildings to be made in his mannors, as the great kitchin at White-hall by Westminster. At Southwell, the pantry and Bakehouse,

College at Rotherham founded.

&c and

anonew chambers adioyning to the river. At Bishops Thorpe, the pantry, bakehouse, and chaulers on the north side toward the lwode: he was Archbishop 19. yeres, 9. monethes, &c. The Bishop of Norwich Thomas Ian. and Iohn Alcocke Bishop of Ely deceased. This Iohn Alcocke did conuert the Monastery of S. Radigond in Cambridge, then destitute of gouernment, the edifices fallen in ruine, and the Nuns departing thence, leaning it desolate, vnto a colledge of Chaplains and Schollers *in Anno Christi* 1446. redified all his mannors with new buildings from the foundations, he builded a new hall to his palace at Ely, with other faire buildings there. Also in the month of October deceased Iohn Morton Archbishop of Canterbury at his manor of Knole: this Morton born in Berry besides Blenkford in the County of Dorset, Doctor of lawes, aduocate of the Archbishop, parson of S. Dunstons in the East of London, Bishop of Ely, who passed by the Ile of Ely into Flanders, where he continued a student, till the fall of Richard the 3. after which time he was called home to his bishoprieke, and made Chancellor of England and within three yeres after Archbishop of Canterbury, in the yere 1486. in the moneth of September: this Morton late Chancellor and Archbishop 13. yeres, and was buried vnder the quier at Canterbury; he repaired and builded a great part of his place at Lambeth, he did the like at Maidstone, at Allington parke, at Charing, at Ford, and also at his place at Canterbury.

Thomas Langton Bishop of Winchester deceased, and was buried at Winchester: he gaue to Pembroke hall in Cambridge, a cup of siluer ouer gilt, which I haue seene, with this inscription: Thomas Langhton, *Winton, episcopus, aulæ Pembrichicolim socius, dedit hanc tassiam coopertam eidem aulæ* 1497. *qui alienabit anathema sit* 67. ounces. Richard Fox sometime Bishop of Exceter, after of Durham, was translated to Winchester. Henry Deane sometime Prior of Lanthony, then Bishop of Salisbury, was now translated to the archbishoprick of Canterbury. Richard Redman, succeeded in the bishoprick of Ely, & Ric. Nien in the bishoprieke of Norwich, Thomas Savage first Bishop of Rochester, then of London, was now translated to the sea of Yorke.

The Lord Denham treasurer of England deceased, and on the 30. of Ianuary was buried in the Grey Friers Church at London, on the south side of the quire.

This yere when the King had finished much of his new building at his manor of Shine, and againe furnished and repaired that before was perished with fire, in the 13. yere of his raigne, forasmuch as in the time of that hideous fire, many notable and rich iewels, and other things of superabundant value, were perished by the violence thereof, it pleased him to command it should be called his manor of Richmond, and not other wise. He also this yere builded anew Bainards castle in London, and repaired his manor of Greenwich.

In the moneth of May the King kept a royal turney and iusts in the Tower of London, of his Lords, Knights and other.

About this time Edmond de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, sonne to Iohn Duke of Suffolke and Lady Elizabeth sister to king Edward the fourth was inuited of murther, for slaying a weane person in his rage and furie (as it was saide) and he was perswaded to confesse, but was pardoned by the King, yet because he was brought to the bar afore the kings bench, and arraigned (which he take as a great blemish to his honor) shortly after he fled into Flanders, vnto the Lady Margaret his aunt. Nuertheless (saith Hall) he returned againe, and excused himselfe to the King, so that he was thought to be guiltles of any crime. But after this Earle, with his brother Richard, fled againe into Flanders. Which departure of the Earle sore vexed the King, who doubted of some trouble to ensue thereof.

In this meane time the Lady Katherine of Spaine was sent by her father K. Ferdinando with a puissant Nauy of shippes into England, where she arriued in the hauen of Plimmouth, the 2. of October.

This yere 1501. Ferdinando King of Aragon, by the fauour of the King of Spaine, recouered his kingdome of Aragon, and the yere before was Charles the first Emperor borne in Gaunt in Flanders, and in the yere 1502. Lodwicke of France, and the king of Spaine, made League together, and chaced Ferdinando king of Aragon, out of the kingdome of Naples, and presently after they fell at strife betwixt themselues for the kingdome, in which fight the French were put to the worst and 11000. slaine on both sides.

The 9. of November Prince Arthur with a goodly company came through Fletstreet of London to S. Paules, and so to the wardrobe by the Blacke friers, and there was lodged. And the same day came the Lady Katherine Princesse to Lamberth, where she with her Ladies was lodged in the Archbishops Inne of Canterbury: and vpon the Friday next following about two of the clocke at afternoone, the saide Lady Princesse accompanied with many Lords and Ladies, in most sumptuous manner apparelled, came riding from Lambeth into Southwarke so to London bridge, where was ordained a costly pageant of S. Katherine and S. Vrsula, with many virgins: from thence they rode to Grace Streete, where was ordeined a second pageant, from thence to the conditt in Cornehill where was another pageant. The great conditt in cheape ran with Gascoine wine, and was fornished with Genstre. Against Soperlane end was another pageant. At the standard in cheape was ordeined the 5. pageant. At Pauls gate was the 6. pageant: by which the Princesse rode through Paules Church-yard vnto the Bishop of Londons palace, where she and her people was lodged.

Now within the Church of S. Paul, to wit, from the West gate of it vnto the vppermost greese or step at the going in of the quier, was made a pace of timber and boords to go vpon, from the said west doore vnto the forenamed greese,

greese of the height of 6. foote from the ground, or more: and rose a mount the place where the commissaries court is kept within the said Church, was ordeined a standing, like vnto a mountaine with steps on euery side, which was couered ouer with red worsted, and in like wise was all the railes against which mountaine vpon the north side, within the foresaid place of the commissaries court was ordeined a standing for the king, and such other as liked him to haue: and on the south side almost, for against the kings standing was ordained a scaffold, whereupon stode the Maior and his brethren.

Then vpon the 14 of November being Sunday, vpon the above named mountaine, was Prince Arthur about the age of 15. yeres, and the Lady Katherine about the age of 18. yeres, both clad in white sattine, married by the Archbishop of Canterbury, assisted by 19 Bishops and abbots mitered. And the King, the Queene, the king's mother stood in the place aforenamed where they heard and beheld the solemnization, which being finished, the said Archbishop and Bishops take their way from the mountaine, vpon the said pace couered vnder sat with blew rey-cloth vnto the quier, and so to the high altar, whom followed the spouse and spouses, the Lady Cicile sister to the Queene bearing her traine, after her followed 100. Ladies and gentlewomen, in right costly apparell, then the Maior in a goune of crimson veluet, and his brethren in scarlet, with the sword born before the Maior, and sate in the quier the while, the Archbi. of Yorke sate in the deanes place, and offred as chiefe, and after him the Duke of Buckingham &c. Wonderfull it was to behold the riches of apparel worne that day, with the portant chaines of gold: of which, two were specially noted, to wit, sir T. Brandon knight, master of the kings horse, which that day ware a chaine valued at 1400. pounds: and the other W. de Riuers esquire, master of the king hautes, whose chaine was valued at a 1000. pound: many mo were of 200. 300. & so forth, these were not noted for length, but for the greatnesse of the linkes. Also the Duke of Buckingham ware a goune wrought of Needle worke and set vpon cloth of tissue, furred with sables, the which Gowne was valued at 1500. Land sir Nicholas Vause knight ware a gown of purple veluet, pight with pieces of gold so thicke and massie, that it was valued in golde, besides the silke and fur, a thousand pound: which chaines and garments were valued by gold smithes of best skill, and them that wrought them. The masse being finished, the Princesse was led by Henry Duke of Yorke, and a Legate of Spain, to the foresaid pace into the palace, going before her men of honor, to the number of 160. with gentlemen and other. There came vnto the Maior, sir Richard Crofts Steward of the Princes house, which brought him and his brethren the Aldermen, into the great hall, and at a table vpon the west side of the hall, caused them to be set to dinner, where honorably were they serued with 12. dishes to a messe at the first course, 15. the second course, and 18. dishes the third course. In this hall was a cupbord of fiue stages height, being triangled, the which was set with plate valued 1200. l. the which was neuer moued at that day: and in the vtter chamber where the Princesse dined, was a cupbord of gold plate, garnished with stone and pearle, valued aboue 20000. pound. The tuesday following the King and Queene, being all this season at Bainards castle came vnto Pawles, and heard there masse, and then accompanied with many nobles went into the place, and there dined with the Princesse. This day Sir Nicholas Vause, ware a coller of Esses which weyed, as the goldsmithes that made it reported 800. pound of nobles: And the same day at afternoon, the said Princes were conueyed with many Lords and Ladies, vnto Pauls wharffe, where the said estate take their barges, and were rowed to Westminster, vpon whom the Maior attended, with the Aldermen and fellowships in barges, garnished with banners and other deuises, musicke, &c. Thus much for that marriage.

The 20. of Ianuary at Paules crosse was declared the assurance of Iames K. of Scots, and of the Lady Margaret, eldest daughter to King Henry of England, in reioycing whereof *Te Deum* was sung, and bonefiers made through the City, and at 12. of the bonefiers were set, 12. tert to king hogsheads of Gascoigne wine, to be drunke of all men freely.

There was apprehended Wil. Lord Courtney, son to the Earle of Deuonshire, which had maried the Lady Katherine daughter to K. Edward the fourth, and William de la Pole, brother to the Earle of Suffolke, sir Iames Tyrell, Sir Iohn Windham, &c. When the Earle of Suffolke before fled (as ye haue heard) vnderstood what wait was laid for him in Flanders, he wandred about Germany and France, to purchase succor, if by any meanes he might, but in the end, hee submitted himselfe vnder the protection of Phillip Archduke of Austrich which was to his owne destruction as proued after.

When King Henry had settled things to his contentment & pleasure, there sodainly happened to him a lamentable chance, for in the beginning of the moneth of Aprill, there died that Noble & vertuous Prince Arthur the kings eldest sonne, vnder the age of 16. yeres, in his castle of Ludlowe, and with great funerall obsequie was buried in the Cathedrall Church of Worcester.

On the 2. of May were arraigned in Guildhall at London, sir Iames Tyrrell knight, lieutenant of Guines castle, Sir Iohn Windham knight, Welborne seruant to the said sir Iames and a ship man, foure persons were indicted of treason, for aiding sir Edmond de la Pole Earle of Suffolke, they were condemned to be drawn hanged and quartered.

On the 4. of May, sir Iames Tyrrell, and sir Iohn Windam, were beheaded on the Tower hill, their bodies and heads were buried in the Augustin friers church of London, and the ship man was hanged at Tyborne.

This yere were brought vnto the king three men taken in the new found Ilands, by Sebastian Gabato, before named, in anno 1498. these

Ao. reg. 16.

Iohn Alcocke Bishop of Ely deceased.

Morton archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

Langton Archbishop of Winchester.

Lord Denham deceased.

1507. Richmond and Bainards castle new builded.

This called Richmond by the Earle Bourne of Richmond.

The gate at Paules open.

Edmond de la Pole Earle of Suffolke sent by the king his brother Richard fled into Flanders.

Prince Arthur married.

An. reg. 17.

Lady Katherine arriued in England.

Carolus Quintus borne.

Naples taken by Spaniards.

Waste chaines of gold.

The Duke of Buckingham his goune.

Cupbord de plate.

A massie chaine of gold worn by a knight.

1502. Iames king of Scots, affianced to the Lady Margaret daughter to King Henry the 7.

Prince Arthur deceased.

Sir Iames Tyrell and other arraigned.

Ro. Fabian Ao. reg. 18.

Men brought out of the new found Ilands.

men were clothed in beasts skins, and eate raw flesh, but spake such a language as no man could vnderstand them, of the which three men, two of them were sene in the kings court at Westminster two yeres after clothed like Englishmen, and could not be discerned from Englishmen.

1503. King Henry the seuenth his chappell at Westminster.

This yere the Chappell of our Lady, abone the east end of the high altar of Westminster church, with also a tauerne nere adioyning called the white rose, were taken downe: in the which place or plot of ground, on the 24. of January the first stone of our Lady chappell was laid by the lands of Io. Islip, abbot of the same monastery. Sir Reginald Bray Knight of the Garter, Doctor Barons maister of the Roles, Doctor Wall chaplaine to the K. master Hugh Oldham chaplaine to the countesse of Derby & Richemond the Kings mother, sir Edw. Stanhope Knight and diuers other. Vpon the which stone was marueilous the dayand yere, &c. The charges in building this chappel (as I haue bene informed) amounted to the summes of 14000. pounds. The same King Henry made a ship, named the great Harry, which ship with the furniture cost him as much.

Queene Elizabeth deceased.

King Henry & Queene Elizabeth lying within the tower of London, the Queene was brought a bed of a faire daughter on Candelmas day, which was there christened by the name of Katherine: and on the 11. day of the moneth the said Queene deceased, and was buried at Westminster, whose daughter lined not long after.

The 18. of February Henry Duke of Yorke the Kings onely sonne, was created Prince of Wales, Earle of Chester, and of Flint, at Westminster

The 16. of February Henry Deane Archbishop of Canterbury died at Lambeth, when he had sate archbishop nigh two yeres, and was buried in Christs church at Canterbury: Will. Warham Bishop of London was translated to Canterbury.

On the 25. of June at the Bishop of Salisburies place in Flatstreete was the noble Prince Henry, the 2 sonne of King Henry the 7. allured in matrimony to the Lady Katherine, late the wife of that excellent Prince Arthur.

The 5. of August deceased Sir Reginald Bray knight, treasurer of the kings warres, and was buried at Windsore in the new chappell there, wherof he had bin a great builder.

Margaret the kings daughter married.

The 8. of August James the south King of Scots married Margaret, the eldest daughter of King Henry the seuenth at Edenborough.

A dry summer, hauing no notable raine from Whitsuntide, to the latter Lady day in harueſt.

An. Reg. 19.

Outhe 4. of December deceased the Lord Strange, eldest sen to the Earle of Derby at his place in London, beneath Paules chaine, now called Dartar place, and was buried within the parish church of S. Iames at Clarkenwithe.

Parliament. 1504.

The 25. of January began a Parliament at Westminster, of the which was chosen speaker for the commons maister Edmond Dudley.

New coine.

A new coine was by Parliament appointed, that is to say, groat, and halfe groat, which bare but halfe faces: the same time also was coined a great, which was in value 12. d. Liel of these were but few coined.

All the date. An. reg. 20.

This yere allume, which many yeres before had bene sold for 6 li. an hundred and lesser, arose to 5. nobles an hundred, and after to foure markes, &c.

About Christmas, the more part of the prisoners of the Marshalsey in Southwarke brake out, and many of them being shortly after taken, were put to execution, specially those which had layne for felony or treason: among the which, two of them being sea rouers were hanged on a tree in the Thawis, a little from Wapping in the Wose, and hung there long after.

1504. Prisoners of the Marshalsey hy brake out.

This yere on Saint Georges euen or 21. of Aprill, King Henry with an honorable company of Knights of the order of the Garter, all in their habits, rode through the City from the Tower of London vnto Pauls church, and there heard euensong, his chappell being there, and hauing rule of the quere, and after euensong the King and those knights rode vnto Bainards castle, and there lodged that night: and vpon the morrow in the same habits came againe to the said Church of Saint Paul, and went on procession, and after the diuine service and offering being done, returned.

S. Georges day the King rode to Paules

The 25. of April a coiner for making of false money, was drawne from the Tower vnto Tyborne, and there hanged.

About Midsummer, Pope Iulius the 2. sent to the King a cap of maintenance, and a sword as to defender of the church, the which cap and sword were receiued with many and great ceremonies, which I ouerpasse.

A cap of maintenance. An. reg. 21.

The 5. of January in the night, the Kings chamber was fired at Richmond, the which might not be quenched, till many curtaines, carpets, rich beds, and much other stuffe was consumed. 1506. Richmond on fire.

Through great tempest of winde being at the south west, which began the 15. of January, and continued till the 26. of the same, Phillip K. of Castile and his wife were weather driuen, and landed at Falmouth in England, as they were passing on the 11. of January out of Flanders toward Spaine, who were honorably receiued by the Earle of Arundell at the kings appointment with 300. horses, all by foorth light. This tempest was strange to many men, because the violence thereof had blowne downe the eagle of brasse from the spire of Pauls church in London, and in the falling, the same eagle brake and battered the blacke eagle which hong for a signe in Paules churchyard, that time being but low houses, where now is the schole of Paules.

The King of Castile landed in England. Francis Guincor. Weather took off Paules steeple blowne downe.

Edmond de la Pole Earle of Suffolke being sent (according to promise made to king Henry) out of the countrey of King Phillip of Castile through Flanders, was brought to Calets on the 16. of March, and so ouer into England and landed at Douer on the 24. of March, conueyed by sir Henry Wyat knight, and sir John Willshire knight, controller of the towne and marches of Calets, and 60. souldiers of Calets all in harnes, where he was receiued by sir Thomas Louel and other, and conueied to the Tower of London.

Earle of Suffolke sent to the Tower

In

Bishop of Durham dead.

In the beginning of the moneth of July, a gallery new builded at Richmond, wherein the King and the Prince his son had walked not one houre before, it fell sodainely downe about mid-night, but no christian man perished thereby.

An. reg. 22.

The 21. of August the weather-cocke of Pauls being of copper ouer gilt, in weight 40. pounds, in length 4 foote, in breadth 3. foote and a halfe, was set vpon the spire of Paules steeple.

This yere the King began to be diseased of a certaine infirmity, which thrice euery yere, but especially in the spring time, sore vexed him.

King Henry sickened.

All the sweating sickines, which (as ye haue heard) in the first yere of this Kings raigne first afflicted the people of the realme, now afresh failed them againe, howbeit, by the remedy found at the beginning of it, nothing like the number died thereof, now this second time, as died the first.

1507.

This yere in the Lent season, the King deliuered many prisoners out of sundry prisons, in so much, that as many as lay in Ludgate, and both Counters for 40. shillings and vnder, bee redeemed and deliuered, and ouer that he redeemed that lay for tenne pound, and other larger sums as was said.

The Kings Prymoters.

This yere or rather somewhat sooner, sprang much sorrow through the land, by meane of grieuous persons, which named themselues the kings Prymotors, many forgotten statutes, made hundreds of yeres passed, were now quickened, and sharpely called vpon, to the great vnquietnesse of many the kings subiects, all well the rich as the other that had competent substance. And albeit that other yeres before passed, since the time of Sir Wil. Caples trouble, which was in the 10. yere of this Kings raigne, many times were called to sundry recognings, and were faine to seke their ends to to their charge: yet now, since Empson and Dudley were set in authority, many mo in number were called before them, for many surmised causes, of the which none escaped without paying of fines. And if it were such a matter, as somewould abide the triall of the law, then had they false Iurors so sired vnto them, that they were well assured, that they would passe against their wils, for all was done in the Kings name, and yet the most profit came to other mens coffers.

False Iurors.

An. reg. 23.

Thomas Sauage Archbishop of Yorke deceased at his castle of Cawod, his body was buried at Yorke, his heart at Macclesfield in Cheshire where he was borne, in a Chappell by him founded, which he minded to haue made a colledge: he was not elected after the ancient custome, but by nomination of the K. and fauor of the Pope Alexander. This Thomas daily employed about the temporall matters at the kings pleasure, he vsed hunting, and bestowed much cost in repairing and new buildings at his castle of Cawod, and his mannors of Scroby, he maintained many tall yeomen in his house, and was neuer installed, but after a secret manner at Yorke, and by his deputy at Beuerlake, because the first that brake the custome of solemne feasting at their installing at Yorke, he was 7. yeres archbi. and to him succeeded Christopher Bambridge Doctor of both lawes, borne nere to Apleby in Westmerland, first maister of the Roles, then deane of Yorke, and after Bishop of Durham.

The 25 of Aprill, a great part of the city of Norwich was brent. And againe in the month of June on the euen and day of the assention of our Lord, an other part of the same city of Norwich was brent, and sore perished and neere consumed with fire, that began in a Frenchmans house named Peter Johnson a chirurgion, in the parish of Saint George. 1508. Norwich ons faced by fire

This yere amongst many other was Sir W. Caple againe newly troubled, for things done in time of his being Maior of London, where of the report was, for the false money came to his sight, and he did not due correction vpon the party that to him was accused to be the owner of it: but were this the cause or other, truth it is, that in great trouble he was fo it, and finally, (for he would fall to no agreement) he was by Derby, Simson, and other of their company, which as then the whole Iury of them, were falsly bound to the girdles of Empson and Dudley, that as they would, the verdict alwayes passed, and so was he by them indicted, and after by neglect of Dudley at the kings commandement put in prison, and so continued long time, and at length, for somuch as he would not agree to pay to the King 2000. l: was by the forenamed Dudley commanded to the Tower, where he lay till it was nere Whitsontide after, before which time K. Henry was deceased, and then was he deliuered free. Also T. Knesworth late Maior of London, with both his sheriffes, after great veration and imprisonement, being accused that they had misused the charge of their offices, were deliuered for great sums of money, as it was said, 1400. l. Christoper Hawis mercer and alderman of London, had bene so long vexed by the said prymoters, that it shortned his life by thought taking. Sir Laurence Aylmer late Maior of London, and his two Sheriffes were put to their fine of 1000. pound to the King, but Sir Laurence after great trouble sustained at the hands of Empson, was committed to prison, and continued prisoner till the said Empson was himselfe sent to the Tower. This yere was finished the goodly Hospitall of the Sauoy nere vnto Charing crosse, which was a notable foundation for the poore, don by King Henry the 7. vnto the which he purchased and gaue lands for the releuing of 100. poore people. This house was first named Sauoy place, by Peter Earle of Sauoy the first builder thereof, brother to Boniface Archbishop of Canterbury about the 29. yere of King Henry the third, who made the said Peter Earle of Richmond. This house belonged since to the Dukes of Lancaster, and at this time being in the Kings hands, was conuerted to an hospitall, retaining the first name of Sauoy. King Henry builded three houses of Franciscan friars, which were called Obseruantes, at Richmond, Greenwitch, and Newarke, and three other of the same family of Franciscan friars, called Couentuales, at

False Iurors for money.

Aug. reg. 24.

Hospitall at the Sauoy. 1506.

Hh 3 Can-

Canterbury, Now-castle, and Southampton.

Henry the 7. deceased.

This noble Prince King Henry, was long sicke ere he died, in which season he was by wil disposed persons, in Sermons and other wayes informed of the exclamations made upon Promoters, wherefore of his blessed dispositions, he granted to all men generall pardon, certaine excepted, the which pardons were quickly purchased, to that many were had ere he died: hee deceased at Richmond on the 22. of Aprill, when he had raigned 23. yeres, 8. moneths: and on the 9. of May he was brought to Paules with many Nobles, Knights and Gentlemen, and 1000. torches, and from thence on the next morrow conueyed to Westminster: & there buried in the new chappell, which he had caused to be builded with the charges of 14000. l. on the 11. of May: he left issue, Henry Prince of Wales, which

Sepulture of King Henry the 7.

succeeded in the Kingdome, Lady Margaret the Queene of Scots, and Lady Mary promised to Charles king of Castile.

The Altar and sepulture of the same King Henry the 7. wherein his body now resteth, in his new chappell at Westminster, was made and finished in the yere of Christ 1519 by one Peter T. a painter of the city of Florence, for the which he received 1000. pound sterling, for the whole frame and workmanship, at the hands of the kings executors, Richard bishop of Winchester, Richard fitz James bish. of London, Th. bishop of Durham, John bishop of Rochester, Thomas Duke of Norfolke treasurer of England, Edward Earle of Worcester, the Kings chamberlaine, Edward Filpott Knight, chiefe iustice of the kings bench, Ro. R. knight, chiefe Iustice of the common place, &c.

Executors to Henry the 7.

Henry the eight.

Anno reg. 1.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF *KING* HENRY *THE EIGHTH.*

HENRY the eight borne at Greenewich, second sonne to King Henry the seuenth, about the age of 18. yeres began his raigne by the decease of his father, on the two and twentieth of Aprill: but was proclaimed on the foure and twentieth, *in Anno Christo* 1509. and the same day in the afternoone he was conueyed to the Tower of London, where hee lodged for a season. Of personage he was tall, and mighty, in wit and memory excellent, of such mateckie and humanity as was comely in such a Prince. By the aduice of his grandmother, Margaret countesse of Richmond and Darby, diuers graue personages were elected to be of his priuy councell, whose names were Wil. Warham Archbishop of Canterbury and Chancellor of England, Richard Foxe Bishop of Winchester, Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey, and treasurer of England, George Talbot Earle of Shrewsbury and Lord steward of the Kings house-hold, Charles Somerset Lord Chamberlaine, sir Thomas Louel, sir H. Wyat, Doctor T. Ruthall, sir Edward Poinings. These graue Counsellors, fearing lest such abundance of riches and wealth as the K. was now possessed of, might moue his young yeres vnto riotous forgetting of himselfe, gate him to be present with them when they sate in counsell, to acquaint him with matter partaining to the politike government of the Realme, with the which at the first he could not well endure to be much troubled, being rather inclined to follow such pleasant passimes as his youthfull yeres did more delight in.

Names of the Kings counsellors.

In the same 24. day of Aprill, the Lord Henry Stafford brother to the D. of Buckingham, was arrested and committed to the Tower: & doctor Ruthall was nominated bishop of Durham.

Henry Lord Stafford arrested.

The fiue and twentieth of Aprill was proclaimed the Kings consent to the generall pardon granted by his father, and that himselfe was contented to forgiue all such persons as had bin vered for any cause, so that it touched not felony or treason: and ouer that, in the same proclamation was compiled, that all vagabonds and sturdy beggers, should auoid the city of London, and resort vnto such countries as they were borne in, vpon paine appointed. Also proclamation was made, that if any man could prone himselfe to be deprined of his goods wrongfully by the late commissioners of the forfeitures, he should present his plaint to the K, who was ready to satisfie euery one of al iniuries sustained. After which publication many such as had bin constrained either by right or wrong to pay any thing for forfeitures of lawes or customes by them transgressed, flocked to the court, and there declared their griefes: the counsell heard euery mans complaint, and such as were found to haue paid any thing without plaine proofe of iust cause, such order was taken, that they had their money againe: but the complainants came in so thicke, that the commissioners and other that had dealt in the forfeitures perceiuing that it was hard, and almost vnpossible to satisfie them all, refused to heare any further complaints or suites for restitution, but thought it best to commit those to prison, by whom the complainants pretended themselues to haue bene wronged, and thereupon was sir Richard Empson knight, and Edmond Dudley Esquire, by a politike meane brought into

Pardon for trespasses proclaimed.

Empson and Dudley sent to the Tower. Their crimes apprehended

into the Tower, where they were accused of treason, and so remained prisoners, thereby to quiet mens minds, that made such sute to haue their money againe restored. And shortly after were many of their promoters (for so they termed themselues) called to a reckoning, and cast into sundry prisons, as Page, Michael Canby, Henry Tost, Smith, and sundry others, but Baptist Grimald, the most cruell wretch of them all, went to Westminster, and there registred himselfe a Sanctuary-man.

King Henry married.

The 3. day of June, King Henry in his closet at Greenwich, married the Lady Katherine his first wife, who had bene late the wife of Prince Arthur deceased, and was dispensed with by Pope Iuly.

Common artificers gets for more then from the Prince.

The 6. of June, John Derby, John, Smith John Simson, ringleaders of false inquests in London, rode about the citty, with their faces to the horse tailes, and papers on their heads, & were set on the Pillory in Cornhill, & after brought againe to Newgate, where they dyed for very shame.

On the 21. of June, King Henry came from Greenwich by land, and so rode to the Tower of London, with whom came many well apparelled Noble men, but especially the Duke of Buckingham, who rode in a Gowne of Goldsmiths worke, a thing of great riches: the King reeked there from Thursday, till Saturday, in which season, he made 24. Knights of the Bath. And vpon Saturday the 24. of June, King Henry with Queene Katherine, and their Nobility, rode from the Tower, through the Citty in most honorable wise, before whom rode the said knights of the Bath, the Duke of Buckingham rode next before the King, except the Maior and certaine Sergeants at Armes and Heralds, the which Duke rode in a long gowne wrought of needleworke right costly and rich, and bare a little staffe of siluer in his hand, in token that he was high steward of y feast of coronation, & the said Duke had about his necke a broad and flat close chaine of a new deuice, not before vsed, set with precious rubies, and other stones of great value. On the morrow being Sunday, and Midsommer day, the King and Queene were crowned at Westminster in most solemne manner by the Archbishop of Canterbury and other assisting.

King Henry crowned.

Margaret, Countesse of Darby deceased.

The 29. of June, the most vertuous Princesse of her time knowne to the world, Margaret Countesse of Richmond and Darby, mother to King Henry the 7. dyed at Westminster, and was there buried, whose notable acts, and charitable deedes all her life-time exercised, cannot in a small volume be expressed.

About the same time, deceased Iohn Vere, Earle of Oxford, and was buried in the Priory of Colne in Essex.

The King ordained 50. Gentle-men to be Speares, euery of them to haue an Archer, a Demilance, and a Custrill, and euery Speare to haue three great Horses to be attendant on his person, of the which band, the Earle of Essex was Lieutenant, and Sir John Pechie Captaine, which ordinance continued not long, the charges was so great: for there were none of them, but they and their horses were apparelled and trapped in cloath of Gold, & Iuer, and Goldsmiths worke.

50 Speares appointed to wait on the King.

Dudley arraigned.

The 17. of July, Edmond Dudley was arraigned in the Guild-hall at London, where he was condemned, and condemned, drawne, hanged, and quartered, and committed to the Tower againe, where hee lay long after, insomuch, that the fame went the Queene had purchased his pardon, but that was not so, as after shall appeare. And like as in this while to the comfort of the Kings subiects many things were ordered, as generall pardons for all forc-done offences, treason, felony, and debt by specialties, and a few other excepted: so in like manner, to the discomfort of all the fornamed Promoters was many and diuers waies fought and found to vex and trouble them right wisely, that before had vered many a true man wrongfully: by means whereof, they were daily taken in diuers Counties of England, and brought to the Tower and other prisons, where they remained long. In the mean which time, many opprobrious rimes in derision of them were made, whereof I haue seene some, especially one against Sir Richard Empson, made by Cornish of the Kings Chappell, at the request of the Earle of Kent, forsaunch, as the Kent enemy, to Empson said Empson had deceiued him of a part of his Ro. Fabian. Lens, and in sinister waies had to informed the King of him, that he was long holden vnder, and put to great vnbearance, But (sayeth mine Author) what cause soeuer moued the said Earle and other at that time, let no man thinke, that for any cause hee had remembred it, saue onely, that wise men may, by the sudaine rising and falling of these men, be well ware how they guide them, when they be put in great authority, and especially such as this man was, the which suddenly rose from pouerty (as being the Sonne of a Sieue-maker, in Towcester) vnto inestimable authority and riches. And such other as were of his affinitie, especiall Dudley, that at the time of his fall was in possession of Lands and Fees, with Offices, to the yeerely value of 800. pound. and in ready coyne 20000. pound, ouer many more riches, as Iewells, plate, and rich stuffe of household, the which was shortly gathered, for not 13. yeeres before, he was by labour of friends brought into the Office of vnder-shrieffe-wick of London, where he continued with the fauour of the Citizens, by the space of 6. yeeres or more, after which season he sold his Office, and drew him to the Kings Court, where shortly after he grew in such fauour, that hee was chosen Speaker of the Parliament, in the 19. yere of King Henry the seuenth, and soone after the Kings President, by reason of which Office, he had such authority, that the chiefe Lords of England were glad to be in his fauour, and were faine to sue to him for many vrgent causes, whereupon the Lords, and all men as they durst, had him in disdaine, which was his ouerthrow in the end. Thus much for example may suffice.

Empson and Dudley put to the Tower

Fall of accusers procureth accusers to poison.

On the 29. of July, was arraigned in the Guild-hall of London, one Smith for a Promoter,

ker, and with him were inquired of by inquests, H. Tofe, Page, Canby, &c. but for that they laid for themselues, they were serving-men, and did but as they were commanded, they were all reprieued to their prisons as they came from, where they remained long after.

Empson arraigned.

In the moneth of October, Sir Richard Empson was conueyed into Hogth-hamptonshire, and there araigned, and lastly demed to be drawne, hanged, and quartered, and then was brought again to the Tower.

1510.

This yere, King Henry kept his Christmas at Richmond with great royalty.

Parliament Empson and Dudley attainted.

The 21. of January, began a Parliament, whereof Sir Thomas Ingleby was chosen speaker: in the which Parliament, Sir Richard Empson, and Edmond Dudley, were attainted of high treason.

King Henry kept his Shrouetide at Westminster, with great banquettings, dauncings, and other pastimes.

This yere came Ambassadors not only from the King of Aragon, and Castile, but also from the Kings of France, Denmarke, Scotland, and other Princes, which were highly welcomed, and royally entertained. And on the 20. of April a peace waas proclained betwixt England and France, during the liues of King Henry the 8. of England, and Lewis the French King.

An. Reg. 2. Peace proclaimed.

On Midsommer eue at night, King Henry came priuily into West-cheape of London, being clothed in one of the Coats of his garde: and on S. Peters night the King and the Quéen came royally riding to the signe of the Kings head in Cheape, and there beheld the watch of the City, which watch was set out with diuers goodly shewes, as had béene accustomed.

King Henry and Quéene beholde the watch at London.

King Henry riding on his progresse for his disport, there was brought before him and his Councell many grieuous bills of complaints against Empson and Dudley, wherefore he sent commandement to the Constable of the Tower, charging him that they should shortly after be put to execution. Whereupon the Sheriffes of London were sent for, and commanded by a speciall writ to see the said execution performed and done. And they vpon that went to the Tower, and receiued them on the 17. of August, and from thence brought them vnto the Scaffold on the Tower-hil, where their heads were stricken off: which being done, the body of Empson was buryed in the White-fryers Church, and the body of Dudley in the Blacke-fryers Church. This Edmond Dudley, in the time of his imprisonment in the Tower, compiled one notable booke, which he intituled, The Tree of common wealth, dedicated vnto King Henry the eighth, but neuer came to his hand.

Empson and Dudley executed.

Tree of common wealth.

1511.

On Newyeres day at Richmond, the Quéen was deliuered of a Prince, to the great reioycing of the whole Realme, he was named Henry: but deceased on the 22. of February next following at Richmond, and was buryed at Westminster.

In the moneth of Febr. came Ambassadors from the King of Aragon and Castile, to require an ayde of 1500. Archers to be sent to the same King, hauing at that time war with the Moores, enemies to the Christian faith: the King granted their request, and because the Lord Thomas Darcy, a Knight of the Garter, made humble suit to the King to be generall of that ayde, the King granted his desire: there were appointed to goe with him, the Lord Anthony Grey, brother to the Marques Dorset, Henry Guilford, Weste, Browne, and William Sidley, Esquires of the Kings house, Sir Robert Constable, Sir Roger Hastings, and Sir Ralph Elderton, with diuers other Gentlemen to be Captaines.

Archers sent and aide to the Moore.

They departed out of Plimouth Hauen with 4. ships royall, and on the first of June arriued at Caleis in South Spaine, where they were honorably receiued by a Bishop and other of the Kings Councell: but an abstinence of war being taken, the Lord Darcy and the rest were required to returne home againe, money was sent to pay the souldiers their wages, for their conduction againe into England, with diuers gifts giuen to the Lord Darcy, and the other Gentlemen, and after returned into England.

An. reg. 3.

During the time that the Lord Darcy was in Spaine, the Lady Margarer, Dutches of Sauoy, and daughter to Maximilian, the Emperor, and gouernor of Flanders, Brabant, Holland, Zeland, and other the low countries, appertaining to Charles the yong Prince of Castile, sent in the end of May to the King of England requiring to haue 1500. archers to aid her against the D. of Gelders, which sore troubled the Countries aforesaid: the King granting her request, appointed Sir Ed. Poynings, Knight of the Garter, and controller of his house, a baliant Captaine, to be Lieutenant and leader of the said 1500. Archers, which accompanied with his son in law, the L. Clinton, Sir Math. Browne, Sir Io. Digby, Ioh. Werton, Richard Wetherall, and Shirley, Esquires, with other Gentlemen and Peomen to the aforesaid number: they took their ships besides Sandwich the 18. of July, and landed at Ermew on the 19. from whence they were conducted to Barrow, &c. whither the Lady Regent came to welcome them, on the 27. of July they departed to Rosseyndale, and on the last of July they came to Bruxelles, and the next day the whole Army of Almaines, Flemings, and other appertaining to the said Lady, met with our English-men, where they set forth in order, the Lady Regent being there present, which tooke her leaue of all the Captaines. The Army to the number of 10000. beside the 1500. Englishmen and passed forward, and the tenth of August came before a little Castle, standing on the higher side of the Maze, called Byzinnoit, belonging to the Bastard of Gelderland.

Archers sent to aide the Lady Margaret, Dutches of Sauoy.

The same night, Thomas Hart, chiefe gouernour of the English ordinance, made his approach, and in the morning made battery, so that the assault thereupon being giuen, the fortresse was won, and the Captaine with 80. and odde men were slaine, and 19 taken, of the which 11. were hanged.

John Morton, Captaine of an hundred English-men, and one Guyet an Esquire of Burgogne, gogne, crying, Saint George, were the first that entred, at which assault there was but one English man slaine.

On the 14. of August, the army ferried ouer the Riuer of Maze into Gelderland, the next day they came to a little Towne, called Aylke, the people were fled, but there was a little Castle, raised and cast downe: vpon the next day they burnt the said Towne of Aylke, and all the Countrey about it, and came at the last to a Towne called Stranule, being very strong, double diked, and walled, within it were 360. good men of warre, besides the inhabitants. At the first, they shewed good countenance of defence, but when they saw their enemies approach nere vnto them with ramparts and trenches, they yeelded by composition, so that the souldiers might depart, but the Townsmen rested prisoners at the will of the Prince of Castile. And so on S. Bartholomewes day, the Admirall of Flanders, and Sir Edward Poynings entred the Towne with great triumph.

The 26. of August, the army came before Venlow, and sent an Herald, called Arthoys, to summon the Towne: but they within would not heare, and yet they shot guns at him. Sir Edward Poynings, at this siege had ordinance pertaining to King Henry as followeth: Serpentines the 12. signes: Armies of England, the Antelope, the Greyhound, the Dragon, the Griffon, the Snake, the Permayde, the Vise, the Maze, the Cocatrise, the Slange, the Vnicorne, the Panter, the Hart, the Hinde, the Plenant, the Falcon, the Partion of Coztenes, the Rake, the Somerset, the Richmond, the March, the Nozwamp, the Rose, the Tateis, in all 36. pieces. The army remooued vnto the North side of Venlow, and part went ouer the water, and made trenches to the water, and so besieged the Towne, but for all they could doe without, they within kept one gate open. At length, the English Captaines perceiuing, that they lay there in vaine, considering the strength of the Towne, and also how the army was not in number sufficient to inuiron the same on each side, wrote to the King, who willed them with all speede to returne, and so they did. Sir Edward Poynings went to the Court of Burgorne, where he was receiued right honorably of the young Prince of Castile, and of his Aunt, the Lady Margaret. Io. Norron, Iohn Fogge, Iohn Scot, and Thomas Lynde, were made Knights by the Prince. And the Lady Margaret, seeing the souldiers coats to be worne, and foule with lying on the ground, gaue to euery yeoman a Coat of woollen cloath, coloured white and greene, red and yellow, the white and greene for the King of Englands liuery, the red and yellow for the Duke of Burgoynes liuery, and these foure colours were medled together, this she did to her great commendation: after that, Sir Edward Poynings had beene highly feasted, he returned with his crue into England, and had not lost fully one hundred persons.

King Henry being at Leicester, heard tidings that one Andrew Barton, a Scottish man, and

Pirate of the sea, saying that the King of Scots had warre with the Portingalls, robbed euery Nation, and stopped the Kings streames, that no Merchant almost could passe, and when hee tooke English-mens goods, hee bare them in hand, that they were Portingalls goods, and thus he robbed at euery Hauens mouth. The King displeased herewith, sent Sir Edward Howard, Lord Admirall of England, the Lord Thomas Howard, Sonne and heyre to the Earle of Surrey, and Iohn Hopton to the Sea, which made ready two ships, and taking ten by chance of weather were seuered. The Lord Howard lying in the Downs, perceiuing where Andrew was making toward Scotland, chased him so hard, that he ouer-tooke him, so there was a sore battell betwixt them: Andrew cast out his whistle to encourage his men: but at length the Lord Howard and the English-men did so valiantly, that by cleane strength, they entred the maine decke. The Scots fought sore on the hatches: but in conclusion, Andrew was taken, and so sore wounded, that he dyed there, the remnant of the Scots were taken with their Ship, called the Lyon. All this while was the Lord Admirall in chase of the Barke of Scotland, called Lenny Perwin, which was wont to saile with the Lyon in company, and he with other did so much, that he laid them aboord, and though the Scots manfully defended themselues yet at length the Englishmen entred the Barke, slew many, and take all the residue. Thus were these two ships taken and brought to Blackewall, the second of August. The Scots taken prisoners were sent to London, where they were kept as prisoners in the Archbishop of Yorkes Palace, now called White Hall, and after sent into Scotland.

Andrew Barton ouercome.

About this season, the French King made sharpe warre against Pope Iuly: wherefore the King of England wrote to the French King that he should leaue off to vexe the Pope in such wise, being his friend and confederate: but when the French King seemed little to regard that request, the King sent him word, to deliuer to him his inheritance, both of the Dutchy of Normandy and Guien, and the Counties of Anioy and Pam, and also of his Crowne of France, or else he would come with a power, that by fine force he would obtaine his purpose: but notwithstanding, the French King pursued his warres in Italy, whereupon the King of England ioyned in league with Maximilian the Emperour, and Ferdinando, King of Spaine, and with diuers other Princes, resolued by the aduice of his Councel to make war on the French King and his Countries, and made preparation both by Sea and Land, setting foorth ships for safegard of his Merchants.

1512.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Greenewich, with great and plentifull cheere. The fourth of February began the Parliament at Westminster, vpon the which day, the King and his Lords, Spirituall and Temporall, with many of the Common house being present in the Parliament chamber, William Warham Archbishop of Canterbury then Chancelour of England

Parliament.

land, made a famous and elerkely proposition, grounded on this Text. *Justicia & Pax osculate sunt*, whereupon he stood well a large houre and an halfe, declaring how Justice should be ministred, and Peace should be nourished, and by what meanes Justice was put by, and Peace turned into warre. The which he approued by examples of the old and new Testament in right sufficient wise, to his great commendation, and singular comfort of the hearers. On the nert morrow began the conuocation in Pauls Church: and on the nert day, Sir Robert Sheffield, Knight, and sometime Recorder of London, was chosen speaker of the Parliament, and on the nert morrow, being the 8. of Februarry, before the King and Lords he made his proposition, excusing himselfe, and beseeching the King (as the manner is) to be dismissed of that Office, for the which proposition he was well allowed and admitted. On the same day the King dubbed Sir Henry Gilford, and Sir Charles Brandon, Knights. In this Parliament was granted two fifteenes of the temporality, and of the Clergy two dismes or tents. During which Parliament, a preman of the crown, named Newbolt, slew within the Palace of Westminster a seruant of Master Willoughby, for the which fact, the King commanded to be set vp a paire of Gallowes in the same place where the said seruant lost his life: and vpon the same, the said Newbolt was hanged, and remained on the Gallowes by the space of two daies.

An. 1514. King Henry sent an army into Scotland against the French.

The King of Arragon hauing warre with the French King, wrote to King Henry of England, to send ouer an army into Biscay; and so to inuade France on that side, for the recouery first of his Dutchy of Guienne, and he would ayd them with ordinance, horse-men, beasts, and carriages, with other necessaries, appertaining to the same.

The King of England and his Councell putting their affiance in this promise of King Ferdinando, prepared an Noble armie all of footmen, and small artillery, appointed Lord Tho. Grey, Marques Dorset to be chiefe conductor of the same. Moreouer, King Henry daily studying to set forward the warre which he had begun against the French King, caused Sir Edmond Howard Admirall, with all diligence to make ready diuers goodly ships, as the Souereigne and others, to the number of 18. besides smaller vessells, and therewith hauing in his company Sir Weston Browne, Griffith Dun, Edward Cobham, Tho. Windham, Tho. Lucy, William Perton, Henry Shiborne, Stephen Bull, George Witwage, John Hopton, William Gunstone, Thomas Draper, Edmond Cooke, John Burdet, and diuers other, he tooke the Sea, and scowring the same about the midst of May he came before Portesmouth. About the same time the Lord Marques Dorset, and other Noble men appointed for the iourney to Mitray, as the Lord Howard, son and heyre to the Earle of Surrey, the Lord Brooke the Lord Willoughby, the Lord Ferrers, the Lord Iohn, the Lord Anthony, the Lord Leonard Grey, all three brethren to the Marques, Sir Griffith ap Rice, Sir Maurice Barkeley, Sir William Sands, the Baron of Burford, Sir Richard Cornwall, brother to the said Baron, W. Husse, Iohn Molton, W. Kingstone, Esquires, Sir Henry Willoghby, and diuers other, with the number of 10000. souldiers, amongst the which were 500. Almains all clad in white, vnder the leading of a Fleming, named Cuint, came to Southampton, and there mustered their bands. The 16. of May, they were shipped in Spanish vessells, and landed in Biscay, where they were bidden welcome, but had no such aid sent to them as was promised, whereby they lost the doing of some great exploit against the French men, on the frontiers of Gascoigne: after the army had lane 30. daies in the campe, there came from the King of Arragon messengers, to desire the Marques & his people to take patience for a while, and they should see that such preparation should be made for the furnishing of their enterprize. In the meane time, the Englishmen for the most part, were victualled with Garlike, and drank hot Wines, and eate hot fruits, which procured their blod to boyle in their bodies, whereby they fell sicke, and died more then 800. persons: in the end, many promises being made by the King of Spaine, and none performed, the English-men embarked, and landed in England in the moneth of December. The King of Spaine seemed to be sore discontented with their departure, affirming, that if they had tarryed till the nert Spring, he would in their company haue inuaded France.

About the moneth of August, the Nauies of England and France, meeting at Bitaine bay, fought a cruell battell, in the which the Regent, or Soueraigne of England, and a carieke of Brest in France, being grappled together, were burned, and their Captaines with their men all drowned: the English Captaine, was Sir Thomas Kneuer, who had with him, Sir Io. Carew, and 700. men. In the French Carieke was Sir Pierce Morgan, with 900. men, were all drent or drowned.

The Regent of England, 3 Ships burned.

King Henry hearing of the losse of the Regent, caused a great Ship to be made, such a one, as the like had neuer beene seene in England, and named it, Henry grace de Dieu.

Great Harry a ship made.

By fire this yeere, a great part of the Kings Palace of Westminster, and the Chappell in the Tower of London, and many other places in England were brent.

Scala temp. Kings Palace at Westminster brent.

In the moneth of November, the King called his high Court of Parliament, in the which it was concluded, that the King himselfe in person, with an army royall should inuade France, whereupon notice thereof being giuen to such as should attend, they made their purueyance with all diligences that might be. In this Parliament was granted to the King two fifteenes, and foure demies, and had monyes of euery Duke ten marks, and Earle fiue pound, a Lord foure pound, a Knight foure marks, and euery man valued at 800. pound in goods, to pay 4. markes and so after that rate, till him that was valued at

Parliament at Westminster here.

Great payment to the King.

at forty shillings paid twelue pence, and euery man that was 40. shillings wages 12. pence, and euery man and woman of 15. yeeres or vpward 4. pence.

An. 1515. The King kept his Christmas at Greenwich with great solemnity, dauncing, disguisings, and mummeries in Princely manner.

After Candelmasse, the King created Sir Charles Brandon, Viscount Lisle.

King sent to the Sea.

In the moneth of March, was the Kings Nauy of ships royall, and other set forth to the number of 42. besides balengers, vnder the conduct of the Lord Admirall, accompanied with Sir Walter Deuereux Lord Ferrers, Sir Wollam Browne, S. Edw. Ichingham, Sir Anthony Pomes, Sir Iohn Wallope, Sir Tho. Windham, Sir Stephen Bull, William Fitz Williams, Arthur Plantagenet, William Sidney, Esquires, and diuers other valiant Captaines.

An. Reg. 5

Vhese made saile into Brittaine, and came to Barthyam bay, where they lay at Anchor for a time, at length, minding to enter the Hauen of Brest, on the 25. of Aprill, the Lord Admirall with a pike of the enemy, was throwne ouerboord, and so drowned, all the other escaped very hardly away, for if they had tarryed, the tyde had failed them, and then all had beene lost. The Lord Ferrers and the other Captaines for sorrowfull of this chance, returned into England. King Henry being sory for the losse of his Admirall, called to him Thomas Howard, eldest sonne and heyre apparant to the Earle of Surrey, whom he made Admirall, willing him to reuenge his brothers death. The Lord Howard humbly thanked his grace of the trust that he put in him, and so immediatly went to the Sea, and scoured the same, that no French man durst shew himselfe on the coast of England.

Edward Howard Lord Howard drowned.

On May euen, Edmond de la Pole, Earle of Suffolke was beheaded on the Tower hill, his brother Richard de la Pole, called the White Rose, was afterwards slaine before the City of Pauie, In Anno 1524.

Earle of Suffolke de la Pole beheaded.

King Henry hauing all his prouisions ready for the warre, and meaning in person to passe the Sea, appointed George Talbot, Earle of Shrewsbury, high Steward of his houshold, to be Captaine generall of his foze-ward, and in his company were appointed to goe, Thomas Stanley, Earle of Darby, Lord Dacwray, Prior of S. Johns, Sir Robert Ratcliffe, Lord Fitzwater, the Lord Hastings, the Lord Cobham, Sir Ric ap Thomas, Sir Thomas Blunt, Sir Richard Sacheuell, Sir Iohn Digby, Sir Iohn Askew, Sir Lewis Bagot, Sir Thomas Cornewall, and many other Knights and Esquires, and souldiours, to the number of 8000. men, these passed the Sea, and came to Calcis about the midst of May. Charles Somerset, Lord Herbert, Chamberlaine to the King, in the end of that moneth followed with 6000. men.

King Henry hauing sent other a great and puissant army into France to besiege the City of Turwine, himselfe accompanied with many Noble men, and six hundred archers of his guard, in white gabberdines, tooke his ship at Douer on the last of June in the morning. When the King was shipped, and made saple, all his army followed, to the number of foure hundred shippes, and the wind was so, that they were brought the same night into Calcis Hauen.

King Henry besieged Turwine.

On the nert morrow, being the first of July, Thomas, Lord Howard, Admirall of England, landed at Whitsand bay, and entred, spoyled, and brent the Towne, and returned to his ships.

The twenty one of July, the King passed out of the Towne of Calcis in good array of battell, and tooke the field, and notwithstanding that the foreward of the Kings great army were before Turwine, yet the King of his owne battell made three battells: the Lord Lisle Marshall of the hoste, was Captaine of the foreward, and vnder him 3000. men: Sir Richard Carew with 300. men was the right hand wing to the foze-ward, and the Lord Darcy with 300. men, wing on the left hand. The scowrers and foze-riders of this battell, were the Northumberland men on light Geldings. The Earle of Esser was Lieutenant generall of the speares, and Sir Iohn Pechy was Vice-gouernor of the horsemen. Before the King went 800. Almains all in a plumpe: after them came the Standard with the red Dragon, next the Banner of our Lady, and nert of the Trinity, vnder the which were all the Kings houshold. Then went the Banner of the armes of England, borne by Sir John Gifford, vnder which Banner was the King himselfe, with diuers Noble men and other, to the number of 3000. men. The Duke of Buckingham with 600. men, was on the Kings left hand. On the right hand was Sir Edward Poynings, with other six hundred men, equall with the Almaines. The Lord of Burgainy, with eight hundred men, was wing on the right hand: Sir William Compton with the retinue of the Bishop of Winchester, Fox, and Master Thomas Wolsey, afterward Cardinall, of eight hundred, was in manner of a reereward: Sir Anthony Oughtred, and Sir John Neuil, with the Kings speares that followed were foure hundred, and so the whole armie was eleuen thousand and three hundred men. The Master of the ordinance set forth the Kings artillery, as faulcons, slings, bombards, powder, stones, bowes, arrowes, and such other things necessary for the field, the whole number of the carriages were thirteene hundred, the leaders and drivers of the same were nineteene hundred men. The King lay the first night betwixt Calkwell and Freidon: the nert night before the Castle of Guisnes at Becard: the nert night he lay beside Arde, a good way without the English pale, and when he was a little beyond Dernoine, there came a great hoste of French-men, that purposed to haue set vpon him: but the King with his hoste kept their ground, and shot their great ordinance, wherewith the array of the French men was broken.

The 4. of August, the King in good order of battell, came before the City of Turwine, and planted

planted his siege in war-like wise.

The 11. day of August, Maximilian the Emperour, came to King Henry, who was received with great triumph betweene Aire and the campe. The Emperour and his retinue were in blacke, as mourners for the Empresse lately deceased.

The Emperour and all his seruants were retained with the King of England in wages by the day, euery person according to his degree, and the Emperor as the Kings souldier weare a crosse of S. George with a rose, and so hee and all his traine came to the Kings campe the 13. of August, and there was receiued with great magnificence.

Turwine yeelded to K. Henry.

The 23. of August, the Towne of Turwine was giuen ouer vnto the King of England, with condition, that all men in the Towne might safely passe with horse and harnesse: and so on the 24. of August, there came out of the Towne 4000. men of warre, and moe well appointed, whereof 600. were well horsed, their standards borne before them.

Turwine raced and burnt.

The 26. of August, the King remooued to Singate, and there it was agreed, that the walls, gates, bulwarks, and Towers of Turwine should be defaced, and razed, and cast downe: of which conclusion the Emperor sent word to Saint Owers and to Aire, which being tydings of that tidings, sent thither pioners, and so they and the English pioners brake downe the walls, gates and Towers, and filled the ditch, and fired the Towne, except the Cathedrall Church and the Palace, and all the ordinance was by the King sent to Aire, to be kept to his vse.

After this, it was concluded, that the King in person, should lay his siege to the Citty of Turney, wherefore he set forward their goodly battells: the first was conducted by the Earle of Shrewesbury: the second battell led the King himselfe, with whom was the Emperor: the rereward was conducted by the Lord Harbert, and so in the first night they lay in campe beside Aire.

The 14. of September, the King and his army came to Beatwin, and on the morrow passed forward, and came to a strait, where was a Ford, which with great difficulty they passed: and the next day they passed a bridge called Fount Anandoien, &c.

The 21. day of September, the King remoued his campe toward Turney, and lodged within three miles of the Citty, the which might came to him the Emperor and the Paulsgraue: the people about Turney were with their goods fled to the Citty, and yet the Citty had no men of warre to defend it, but with multitude of inhabitants the Citty was well replenished.

King Henry besieged Turney.

The King came in array of battell before Turney, planted his ordinance round about the City, diuers trenches were cast, and rampiers made, so that no Cittizens could issue out, nor no aide come to them. Whereupon at length, to wit, on the nine and twentieth of September the Cittie was yeelded.

Turney yeelded to King Henry.

Then the King appointed the Lord Lisle, the Lord Burgeyny, and the Lord Willoughby, to take possession, which with 6000. men entred the Citty, and take the Market-place and the walls, and then Maister Thomas Wolsey, the Kings Almoner, called before him all the Cittizens, and sware them to the King of England: the number of which Cittizens were threescore thousand.

On the 2. day of October, the King entred the Citty of Turney, and there ordained Sir Edward Poynings, Knight of the order of the Garter, to be his Lieutenant, with Captaines, horse-men, Archers, and artillery conuenient: he made his Almoner, Thomas Wolsey, Bishop of Turney, and then returned to Calcis, and sayled from thence to Douer on the 24. of October: from whence hee rode post to Richmond where the Quéene lay.

Thomas Wolsey, Bishop of Turney.

In the meane time, Iames, King of Scots, assembled the whole power of Scotland, wherewith hee approached to the Borders, and coming to Norham Castle, layd siege thereunto, and after he had beaten the Castle with his ordinances, by the space of 6. dayes, the same was deliuered by into his hands.

Iames, King of Scots, besieged Norham.

And hee (sayeth Paulus Iouius) made the same to bee layd leuill with the ground, and from thence marched (wasting with fire and sword) to besiege the strong Towne of Barwicke.

Now had the Earle of Surrey, Lieutenant of the North, in absence of King Henry, giuen order to assemble a power of 26000. men, and comming to Alnwike, tarried there til the whole number of his people were come: amongst other, his sonne, the Lord Admirall, with 5000. souldiers, and men of warre, which had beene at Sea, came to his father, whereof he greatly reioyced. The Earle appointed his battells, with wings, and horsemen necessary: first of the forward was ordained Captain the Lord Howard Admiral, with the L. Clifford, the L. Coniers, the L. Lattimer, the L. Scrope, the L. Ogle, the Lord Lumley, Sir Nicholas Appleyard, Maister of the ordinance, Sir Stephen Bull, Sir H. Sherborne, Sir William Sidney, Sir Edw. Echingham, Sir William Bulmer, with the power of the Bishoppike of Durham, Sir William Gascoigne, Sir Christopher Ward, Sir I. Eueringham, Sir Th. Metham, Sir Walter Griffith, &c. Of the wing on the right hand of the forward was Captaine Sir Edmond Howard, Knigt Mathall of the horse, and with him Brian Tonstall, Ralfe Brearton, John Laurence, Richard Bold, Esquires, Sir John Bothe, Sir Thomas Butler, Knights, and other. Of the wing on the left hand was Captaine, Sir Marmaduke Constable with his sonnes, Sir William Percy, and of Lancashire, a thousand men. Of the rereward was Captaine, the Earle of Surrey, the Lord Scrope of Bolton, Sir Philip Tilney, Sir George Darcy, Sir Thomas Barkeley, Sir John Rocliffe, Sir Christopher Pickering, Richard Tempest, Sir John Stanley, &c. Now the Earle of Surrey was informed, that King Iames lay imbattelled vpon a great Mountaine, called Flodan, a place of such

Flodon field.

such strength as was vnpossible for the Englishmen to come neer them, he sent Rouge Crosse, pursuant to the K. of Scots, to shew him, that where he had contrary to his oath and league, inuaded this his brothers Realme, and done great hurt in casting downe Castles, Towers, and houses, burning and destroying the same, &c. The said Earle would be ready to try the said rightwilenesse of the cause with the King in battell, by Friday next comming, if hee of his Noble courage would giue him tarrying and abode. Rouge Crosse went and did his message to Iames, King of Scots, as he was appointed: And hereupon King Iames sent to the Earle an Herald, named Ilay, who deliuered to the Earle a Letter, written by the Kings secretary, as followeth.

King Iames letter to Thomas Earle of Surrey.

As to the causes alledged of our comming into England, against our band and promise (as is alledge) thereto wee answere: Our brother was bound as farre to vs, as wee were to him. And when wee sware last before his Ambassadors, in presence of our Councell, wee expressed specially by oath, that wee would keepe to our brother, if our brother kept to vs, and not else: wee sware our brother brake first to vs, and sith his breake, wee haue required diuers times him to amend: and lately wee warned our brother, as he did not to vs he brake, and this we take for our quarrell, and with Gods grace shall defend the same, at your assured time, which with Gods grace wee shall ayde.

Earle of Surreys letter to Iames, King of Scots.

Right High and mighty Prince, so it is, that lately I sent vnto you Rouge Crosse, pursuant at armes, and by him aduertised your grace, that I and other my Soueraigne Lords subiects, were come to represse and resist your inuasions of this the Kings my Soueraign Lords Realme, and for that intent I offered to giue you battell on this halfe Friday next comming: which my message your grace tooke pleasure to heare, as I am informed, and by your Herald, Ilay, ye made answere, that ye were right toyous of my desire, and would not faile to accomplish the same, and to abide me there, where yee were at the time of my message to shewed vnto your grace. And albeit it hath pleased you to change your said promise, and put your selfe into a ground, more like a Fortresse of campe, then vpon any indifferent ground for battell to be tryed, wherefore considering the day appointed is fo nigh approaching, I desire you of your grace, that for the accomplishment of your honorable promise, you will dispose your selfe for your part, like as I shall doe for mine, to be to morrow with your host in your side of the plaine of Pilfield, in likewise as I shall doe for mine, and shall be with the subiects of my Soueraigne Lord, on my side of the plaine of the said field, to giue you battell betweene 12. of the clocke and 3. in the after noone, vpon sufficient warning by you to be giuen by 8. or 9. of the clocke in the morning, by the said Pursuant. And like as I and other Noble men of my company, binde vs by our writing subscribed with our hands, to keepe the same time, to the intent abouesaid: It may like your grace, by your honorable letters subscribed with your hand, to binde your grace for the accomplishment of this our desire, trusting you will dispatch our said Pursuant immediately: for the long delay of so honourable a iourney, wee thinke should sound to your dishonor. Written in the field of Woller Hangh the 7. day of September, at 5. of the clocke in the after-none. Subscribed, Thomas Surrey, Thomas Howard, Thomas Dacre, Clifford, Henry Scrope, Ralph Scrope, Richard Latimer, William Coniers, John Lumley, R. Ogle, William Percy, Ed. Stanley, William Molineux, Marmaduke Constable, William Gascoygne, William Griffith, George Darcy, William Bulmer, Thomas Strangwais, &c.

Now the time of battell being come, the Earle of Surrey diuided his army into 3. battells: vnto the vauntgard whereof, the Lord Howard was Captaine, his brother, Sir Edm. Howard was toyned as a wing, the Earle himselfe led the middle ward, and the rereward was guided by Sir Edward Stanley. The Lord Dacres, with a number of horse-men stood apart by himselfe, to succour where nede should appeare to be. The ordinance was planted in the front of these battells, and in places betweene, and in this order they marched forward.

In the meane time, Iames, King of Scots, beholding the behauiour of the English-men from the heighth of the hil, commanded his standards to be raised and spread, and euery man to resort to his place, that they might forth-with encounter with their enemies: And without delay King Iames putting his horse from him, all other, as well Nobles, as meane men, did the like, that the danger being equall, and all hope of succour taken away, they might be the more willing to shew their manhod: Then was the army diuided into 5. wards, to the intent that the battell wherein the King himselfe stood, with his standard, might be inclosed, as it were with two wings: their Ordinance was lodged in places most conuenient, though by reason they marched downe the hill, their shot did small damage to the English-men comming vpwards. And herewith Sir Edmond Howard with his wing was got vp on the hill side, with whom the Lord Hume, and the 2. Earles of Lineor and Argill incountred with such violence, that this battell of Scots with speares on foote, beat downe and brake that Wing of English-men in such wise, that Sir Edmond Howard was in manner left alone, and felled to the earth: but Bastard Heron came to his rescue, or else he had beene slaine. This Bastard Heron brought with him a strong troupe of horse-men, which hee bring of late banished both from England and Scotland, had cunningly trained vp in robberies. And on the other side, the Lord Dacres watching to ayde where neede should happen, came in on the sides of the Scots, and gaue a charge on them with his horse-men, whereby Sir Edmond Howard escaped to the English Vauntgard, which was led by his brother the Lord Howard, who being now also got aloft on the hill, pressed still forward to renew the battell, and

Paulus Iouius.

to succour those whom he saw put to the worst, whereby they tooke courage vnto them, and layd about. Herewith the Earle of Crowford, and Mount-rose came with their battell of speares, also on foote, and encountring with the said Lord Howard, after soze fight on both sides, both the said Earles were slaine, besides a great number of other, the whole battell which they led being put to slight, and chased out of the field. On the left hand, Sir Edward Stanley, and with him Sir William Molineux, Sir Henry Kickley, and other of Lancashire, Cheshire, having beguine to encounter with the Scots on that side, forced them to come downe into a more euen ground, and brought to that point, with such incessant shot of arrowes, that to anoyde that sharpe storme, the Scots were constrained to breake their array, and to fight one separate from another: which thing, when Sir Edward Stanley perceiued, forthwith bringing about three Bands which he had kept in store, he inuaded the open sides of his enemies, by a fresh onset, and put them in sunder in such disorder, that they were not able any longer to abide the violence of the Englishmen, so that taking themselues to slight, and running downe the hill, they escaped to the wood: but the Earles of Argile and Lenior were slaine in the same place. In the meane time, the King, who a little before had ioyned with the Earle of Surrey, perceiuing that the Wings of the battells were distressed, and that his enemies beganne to inclose him on each side, here-with rushing forth vpon his enemies, a new battell beganne to rise, for that battell being well armed, passed little for the Arrowes of the Englishmen, insomuch, that piercing the Earles battell, they entered well neere to farre within the same, that they were at a point to haue ouerthrowne his Standards. The King himselfe on foote, euen in the foremost Ranke, fought right valiantly, encouraging his people, as well by example as by perswasions to doe their best. Neyther did the Earle of Surrey faile in the duty of a worthy Generall: but whilest the battell was thus foughten about the Standards, with doubtfull chance of victory, the Lord Howard and Sir Edward Stanley hauing vanquished the enemies in eyther Wing, returned to the middle ward, and finding them there thus occupied, they set on, in two seuerall parts, with great violence, and at the same time, the Lord Dacres came with his horsemen vpon the backes of the Scots, so that they being thus attapted behinde and before, and on eyther side, were constrained to fight in a round compasse. King James, as he beheld Sir Adam Forman his standard-bearer beaten downe, thought surely there was no way for him but death: wherefore to deliuer himselfe from the reproach as was like to follow, he rushed forth into the chiefest prese of his enemies, and there fighting in most desperate manner, was beaten downe and slaine, and a little beside him, there dyed with like courage, diuers honorable Prelates, as the Archbishop of S. Andrewes, and two other Bishops, besides two Abbots, 12. Earles, and 17. Lords, besides Knights and Gentlemen: and about 8000. Scots slaine, and almost so many taken, saith Iouius. All their ordinance and stuffe was taken by the English.

Thus on the 9. of September, King James the fourth of that name, King of Scots, was slaine at Bramstone vpon Piperd hill, and his army discomfited by the Earle of Surrey, Lieutenant to Henry the 8. King of England: there was taken prisoners, Sir William Scot chancellor to the said King; and Sir John Forman his Serieant porter, with diuers other. Also in manner all the Scottish ensignes were taken, and 22. peeces of great ordinance, amongst the which were seuen Culuerings, very faire peeces, whom the King for their likenesse one vnto another, had named the 7. Sisters. There was slaine and taken of our men, aboue 1500. men (saith Hall) during the time of the fight, and in the night following, many English-men lost their horses, and such stuffe as they left in their tents, by the robbers of Tindale, and Tiuidale: when the field was done, the Earle gaue thanks to God, and made Knights to the number of 35. whose names I ouerpasse in this place. The body of the King of Scots was not found till the next day, and then being found and knowne by the Lord Dacres, there appeared in the same diuers deadly wounds, his throat cut halfe asunder, his left hand in two places almost cut off, and many other wounds, as well with Arrowes, as other wise: his body was bowelled, rebowelled and inclosed in lead, and so kept at Barwike till the Kings pleasure were knowen. After that the Earle of Surrey had taken order, and set the North in good quiet, he returned to the Queene, with the dead body of the Scottish King, which body inclosed in Lead, (as before is shewed) as I haue beene informed, was conueyed to Shine, a Monastery in Surrey, founded by King Henry the 5. where it remained for a time, in what order I am not certaine, but since the dissolution of the house, to wit in the raigne of king Edw. the 6. Henry Grey, then Duke of Suffolke, there keeping house, I haue beene shewed the same body (as was affirmed) so lapped in Lead, thrusted into an old wast roome, amongst old Timber, Stone, Lead, and other rubble.

James King of Scots slaine at Bramstone field.

When King Henry was returned into England, from his conquest made in France, of the Cities of Turwin, and Turney, he forgate not the good seruice of those that had beene with the Earle of Surrey, at the battell of Bramstone, wherefore he wrote to them his louing Letters, with such thankes and fauourable words that euery man thought himselfe well rewarded. The tenor of his letter was this.

The Kings letters to sir William Molineux, of Lancashire.

TRusty and well beloued, we great you well, and vnderstand as well by the report of our right trusty Cousin and councellor, the Duke of Norfolke, as otherwise, what acceptable seruice you auowrest of late haue done vnto vs, by your valiant towardnesse in the atchiuing of our said enterprise our great enemy, the late King of Scots: and how courageously you as a very hearty louing seruant, acquited your selfe, for the ouerthrow of the said late King, and distressing of his malice and power to our great honour, and the aduancing of your no little fame and praise, for which we haue good cause to fauour and thanke you, and so we full heartily doe. And assured may you bee, that we shall in such effectuall wise remember your said seruice in any your reasonable pursuites, as you shall haue cause to thinke the same right well imployed to your comfort, and weale hereafter. Given vnder our Signet, at our Castle of Windsore, the 27. of November. To our trusty and well beloued, William Molineux Knight.

This yeere was a death of the pestilence in England, especially about London, so that in one house, to wit, the Minories without Aldgate, there dyed of Nunnes professed, to the number of twenty and seuen, besides other that were Lay-people, and seruants in that house.

Great pestilence.

About the feast of the nativity of our Lady, deceased William Smith, Bishop of Lincolne, he founded Brazenose College in Oxford, and before that being Bishop of Lichfield, he ordained an hospitall there, for a Master 2. Priests, 10. poore men: he set there also a Schoolemaster, and an vsher to teach Grammer to poore mens children, in a schole by him erected. King Henry the 7. gaue vnto it an old hospitall, called Donhall in Warham, in Chestershire, with the lands &c. Also at Farnworke where the said Smith and his parents had originall, he bestowed ten pound the yere for euer, to one that should teach a Grammar Schole.

Will. Smith, Bishop of Lincolne deceased.

1514. States created.

On the day of the purification of our Lady, in the Archbishops palace at Lambeth, the King created the Earle of Surrey Duke of Norfolk, with an augmentation of the Armes of Scotland, and otherwise rewarded him: he likewise the same day created Sir Charles Brandon, Vicount Lisle (son to Sir William Brandon, that bare King Henry the 7. Standard at Bosworth field, and was there slaine) Duke of Suffolke, and Sir Thomas Lord Howard, high Admirall, Earle of Surrey, Sir Charles Somerset, Lord Herbert, his chiefe Chamberlaine, Earle of Worcester, and not long after, he made Sir Edward Stanley Lord Mounteagle.

An. Reg. 6. In the moneth of March following, Thomas Wolsey, the Kings Almoner, & Bishop of Turney, was created Bishop of Lincolne.

Great iusting.

In the moneth of May, the King and the Duke of Suffolk were challengers at the tilt, against all commers, in the which iusts were broken 100. and 14. staues.

Cap of maintenance.

The 19. of May was received into London a Cap of maintenance, and a Sword sent from Pope Iuly the second, with a great company of Noble men and Gentlemen, which Cappe and Sword was presented to the King on the next Sunday with a great solemnity in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul. French-men landed with their Galleies and foists on the bowers of Sussex in the night season and came to Wyghthamsted and Hyenthit, taking such goods as they there found, but in the morning they were constrained to flye.

French hyent Wyghtham steede in Sussex.

The Lord Admirall sent Sir John Wallope to the Sea, with diuers ships, which sayling to the coasts of Normandy, landed there, and hyent 21. villages and Townes, with diuers ships in the hauen of Trapoze, Staples, and other places.

Sir John Wallope hyent Crayport.

In the moneth of May, Sir Thomas Louell tooke the seas, and landed at Calais, with 400. men of warre: also Sir John Pechy, the Lord Burgauney, the Lord Clinton, the Lord Cobham, Sir Richard Lewes, Sir John Rainsforth, Sir William Scot, Sir John Scot his Sonne, Sir Edward Guilford, Sir Henry Guilforth, Sir John Norton, Sir John Fogge. Sir Matthew Browne, and Sir James Dorcie, with diuers Esquieres and Gentlemen, and men of warre, to the number of 5000. The Lord Burgauney, being chiefe leader. These were sent ouer to strengthen the Townes of Calais, and other fortresses within the English Pale, for doubt of any sudden attempt to be made by the Frenchmen.

Richard Tirrie pin.

The French King perceiuing what losses he had sustained by the warres against England, and doubting lest one euill lucke should still follow another, determined to make suite for peace, and first agreeing with the Pope Leo, desired him to be a meane for the procuring of some agreement betwixt him and the King of England.

Whereupon the Popes Letters, the French King by an Herald at armes sent to the King of England, requiring of him a safe Conduct for his Ambassadors, which should come to intreat for a peace to be concluded betwixt them and their Realmes.

Upon grant whereof attained, the French KING sent a Commission with the President of Roane, and others, to entreat of peace.

And because they vnderstood that the marriage was broken betweene the Prince of Castile and the Lady Mary, they desired that the said Lady might be ioyned in marriage with the French King, offering a great Dowry, and surely for the same, so much was offered, that the King moued by his Councell consented vpon condition, that if the French King dyed, then shee should, if it stood with her pleasure, returne into England with her Dowzie and riches.

Peace with France proclaimed.

After that they were recoyded vpon the peace, and that the French King should marry this young Lady, &c. And then was the claimed peace proclaimed on the thirteenth of August, &c.

In the moneth of September, the Lady Mary was conueyed to Doner, by the King her Brother, and the Queene: and on the second day of October, shee was shipped, and such as were appointed to giue their attendance on her, as the Duke of Norfolke, the Marquesse Dorset, the Bishoppe of Durham, the Earle of Surrey, the Lord de la Ware, the Lord Berners, the Lord Mount-

cagle, the foure brethren of the said Parquesse, Sir Maurice Barkeley, Sir John Pechy, Sir William Sands, Sir Thomas Bullen, Sir John Car, and many other Knights, Esquires, Gentlemen, and Ladies. They set out from Douer with 14. great shippes, and had not sayled past a quarter of their voyage on the Sea, but that the winde rose, and severed the ships, driuing some of them to Calcis, some into Flanders, and her ship, and three other, with great difficulty, was brought to Bologne, not without great heoped op at the entring of the Hauen, for the Water ranne the Ship hard on shore, but the Boats were ready, and received the Lady out of the Ship, and Sir Christopher Garnish stood in the water, and tooke her in his armes, and so bare her to Land, where the Duke of Vandosme, and a Cardinall, with many other great Estates, received her with great honour.

In this voyage, King Henries great ship, with foure tops, called the Lubeke, was broken and lost, a little from Sangate West toward Calcis: there was in her at that time, almost fiue hundred men, souldiours and marriners, whereof more then foure hundred were lost, for there escaped not one hundred of the company. From Bologne, the Lady Mary was conueyed vnto Abuile, and there entred the eighth of October, and on the next morrow, the marriage was solemnized betwixt the French King and the said Lady, with all honour and royalty. When the feast was ended, the English Lords returned with great rewards into England: before whose departure from Abuile, the Dolphine of France, Francis, Duke of Valois caused solemne Iustes to be proclaimed, to be kept at Paris, in the moneth of November next ensuing: the said Dolphine, with his 5. aydes to answere all commers, being Gentlemen of name and armes. When this proclamation was proclaimed in England, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marques Dorset, and his foure brethren; the Lord Clinton, Sir Edward Neuill, Sir William Sidney, Sir Giles Caple, Thomas Cheyny and other, got licence of the King to goe ouer to this challenge, and thereupon preparing themselues for the purpose, departed toward France, the twenty of October, they landed at Calcis, all in greene coates and hoods, because they would not be knowne. The twenty fire of October, Sir Henry Guilford landed at Calcis, with two Sergeants at armes, and 20. yeomen of the Crotchne and Kings guard, these went to the Citty of Paris, with tenne or twelue goodly Horses to be at the Iustes, at the Oxonation of the Queene: they came all to Paris about the latter end of October. The Dolphine desired the Duke of Suffolke, and the Lord Marques Dorset, to be two of his immediate aydes, which thereto gladly assented. On the fifth of November being Sunday, the Queene was crowned with great solemnity, in the Cathedrall Church of Dionese: and on the next day, she was receiued into Paris, with all honor that might be deuised. On the seuenth of November, beganne the Iustes, which continued by the space of three daies, in the which were answered three hundred and fiue men of armes, and euery man ranne fiue courses with sharpe Speares. The English Lords and Knights did as well as the best, not onely in the Iustes, but also at the Tourney and Barriers, namely, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marquesse Dorset, and his brother the Lord Edward Grey: when the great triumph was done, the Lords of England tooke their leaue, and came into England before Christmas.

King Henry his great ship called the Lubeke lost.

Mary, Sister to King Henry married to the French King.

Iusting to be holden at Paris.

In the meane time, to wit, in the moneth of Nouember, the Queene was deliuered of a Prince, which liued not long after.

Richard Hun, a merchant taylor of London, dwelling in the parish of S. Margaret in Bridge-streete, who (for denying to giue a mortuary, such as was demanded by the Parson for his child being buried) had been put in the Lollards tower, about the end of October last before passed, was now the 5. of December, found hanged with his owne girdle of silke, in the said tower, and after he was burned in Smithfield.

Richard Hun hanged in Lollards Castle.

This peere dyed at Rome the Archbishop of Yorke, and Cardinall, called Doctor Bambridge, which was the Kings Ambassador there, and was poysoned by an Italian, one of his owne house-hold Chaplaines, he was there honorably buried. And King Henry gaue the said Archbishoprieke to Thomas Wolsey, then Bishop of Lincolne, who shortly after gat to be Cardinall and Lord Chancellor.

On Newyeeres euen, dyed the French King, Lewes the 12. after he had beene married to the Lady Mary of England, the terme of 82. dayes.

The French King deceased. 1515.

The King of England being thereof aduertised, caused a solemne obsequie to be kept for him in S. Pauls Church of London, with a costly hearse, at the which obsequy, many Nobles were present. Then the King sent a letter to comfort the Quéene his sister, requiring to know her pleasure, whether shee would continue still in France, or returne into England. And when he was aduertised of her minde, which was to returne into England, the Duke of Suffolke, Sir Richard Wingfield, deputy of Calcis, and Doctor Welt, with a goodly band of Gentlemen, and yeomen, all in blacke, were sent into France, and comming to Paris, were well entertained of Francis, the new French King, to whom they declared the effect of their commission, which was to receiue the Quéene Dowagar, according to the couenants. The Councell of France by the Kings appointment, assigned for her dowry, and the Duke of Suffolke put in officers, and then was the Quéen deliuered to the Duke, who behaued himselfe so towards her, that he obtayned her good will, to bee her husband. It was thought that when the King created him Duke of Suffolk, he perceiued his sisters good will toward the said Duke, and that hee meant then to haue bestowed her on him, but that a better offer came in the way, but howsoeuer it was, now he was her loue, so as by her consent, hee wrote to the King her brother, meekely beseeching him of pardon in his request, which was humbly to desire him of his good will and contentation. The King after some suite, agreed that the Duke should bring her into England vnmarryed, and at his returne, to marry her in England: but for doubt of change, he married her secretly at Paris, as was said.

The 9. of April, a new peace was concluded betweene the King of England, and Francis the new King of France.

After that the Duke of Suffolke had receiued the French Queene with her Dowzie appointed, and all her apparell, Jewells, and household stuffe deliuered, they tooke leaue of the new French King, & so passing thorow France, came to Calcis on the 25. of April, where they were honorably receiued, from whence on the 2. of May, they sayled ouer into England, and the same night landed at Douer. And on the 12. of May, they were solemnely married at Greenwich.

An. reg. 7. Duke of Suffolke married the Lady Mary the Kings Sister.

This yeere, in the moneth of May, were sent out of England 1200. Masons and Carpenters, and 300. Labourers to the Citie of Turney, to build a castle there, to challice the city, if it chanced to rebell, and thereby to diminish the garison that then lay there to the Kings great charge.

Castle of Turney buil-ded.

In the moneth of September, King Henry after his returne from progresse in the West, being at his manor of Oking, Thomas Wolsey coming thither to him, there was brought to him a letter from Rome to aduertise him that he was elected Cardinall, which he seemed to mislike of, but the King willed to take it vpon him, and from thencefoorth called him My L. Cardinall.

Tho. Wolsey, Cardinall.

In the moneth of Nouember, the King assembled a Parliament at Westminster, especially for order in apparell. In the end of which Parliament, Doctor Warham, Archbishop of Canterbury, and then Lord Chancellor, gaue vp into the Kings hands his office of Chancellor, and deliuered to him the great seale, which seale incontinently the King deliuered vnto the L. Cardinall, and so made him Chancellor. And here I think good to set down for example to posterity, some part of the proceedings of this so oft named Thomas Wolsey Archbishop, his ascending vnto honorous estate, and sudden falling againe from the same, as I haue been informed by persons of good credit. Truth it is, this Cardinall Wolsey was an honest poore mans sonne of Ipswich, in the County of Suffolke, and there borne, and being but a child, very apt to be learned: wherefore, by the meanes of his parents, or of his good friends and maisters, he was conueyed to the Vniuersity of Oxford, where he shortly profited so in learning, as himselfe reported, as he was made Batchler of Art, when he passed not 15. yeeres of age, and was called moste commonly thorow the Vniuersity the boy Batchelor. Thus profpering in learning, he was made fellow of Maudelin college, & after ward appointed to be Schole-maister of Maudelin Schole, at which time, the Lord Marques Dorset had 2. of his sonnes there at schole, committing vnto him as well their education, as their instruction. It pleased the said Lord Marques against a Christmas season, to send as well for the Schoolemaister, as for his children home to his house for their recreation, in that pleasant and honorable feast. Then being there, the Lord their Father perceiuing them to be right well imployed in learning for their time, he hauing a benefice in his gift at Limington, bring at that time voyd, gaue the same to the Schole-maister for his paines, and in reward of his diligence, at his departure after Christmas to the Vniuersity, and hauing the presentation thereof repaired to the Ordinary for his institution or induction, and being furnished of all his ordinary instruments, made speede to the benefice, to take thereof possession, and being there for that intent, one Sir Amias Poulet, Knight, dwelling thereabout, tooke an occasion of displeasure against him, vpon what ground I know not, but Sir, by your leaue, he was to bold to set the Schoolemaster by the feet, during his pleasure, which after was neyther forgotten, nor forgiuen: for when the Schoolemaster mounted to the dignity to be Chancellor of England, he was not oblitious of his old displeasure, cruelly ministred vnto him by maister Poulet: but sent for him, and after many sharpe words, enioyned him to attend vntill he were dismissed, and not to depart out of London without licence obtained, so that he continued there within the middle Temple, the space of 5. or 6. yeeres, who lay then in the gatehouse next the street, which he re-edified very sumptiously, gaue nothing the same all ouer the out-side, with the Cardinals armes, with his hat, cognisances, and other deuices in so glorious a sort, that he thought thereby to haue appealed his old displeasure. Now may this be a good example and president, to men in authority (which will sometime worke their will without wit) to remember in their authority, how authority may decay, and whom they doe punish of will, more then of iustice, may after be aduanced to high honor and dignities in the Common Weales, and they bared as law: who will then seeke the meanes to be reuenged of such wrongs, which they suffered before? Who would haue thought then when Sir Amias Poulet punished this poore scholler, the Schoolemaster, that euer he would haue mounted to so high dignity, as to be Chancellor of England, considering his baseness in euery degree? These be wonderfull works of God and fortune. Therefore I would with all men in authority and dignity, to know and feare God in all their triumphs and glory, considering in all their doings, that authorities be not permanent, but may slide and vanish as Princes pleasures alter and change. Then as all liuing things must of very necessity pay the due debt of nature, which no earthly creature can resist: it chanced the said Lord Marques to depart out of this present life, after whose death, this Schole-master then considering with himselfe, to be but a simple beneficed man, and to haue left his fellowship in the Colledge) for I vnderstand, if a fellow of that house be once promoted to a benefice, he shall by the rules of the same be dismissed of his fellowshippe) and perceiuing himselfe also to be destitute of his singular good Lord, and also of his fellowship, which

Tho. Wolsey gat a benefice.

Tho. Wolsey set in the stockes by Sir Amias Poulet.

Wolsey puttemmen. ten nzen-Gatehouse of the middle Temple.

Ex-ample.

The aduancement of Tho. Wolsey. 1516.

An. reg. 8. Batchler of Art 15. yeres old.

Schole-maister to the Marquesse Dorsets children.

was much of his relicke, though not long to be inioyed of some other helpe, or mastership to defend him from all such stormes, as hee lightly was vexed with, and in his trauell thereabouts, he fell in acquaintance with one Sir Iohn Naphant, a verie graue and ancient Knight, who had a great roome in Caleis vnder King Henrie the 7. this Knight obserued, and behaued himselfe so discreetly, that hee obtained the especiall fauour of his Master, insomuch, that hee committed all the charge of his Office vnto his Chaplaine, and as I vnderstand, the Office was the Treasurership of Caleis, who was in consideration of his great age, discharged of his roome, and returned againe into England, intending to liue more in quiet, and through his instant labour and good fauour, his Chaplaine was promoted to be the Kings Chaplaine, and when hee had once cast Anchor in the port of promotion, how he wrought, I shall somewhat declare. Hee hauing there a iust occasion to be in the sight of the King daille, by reason hee attended, and said masse before him in his Closet, and that being done, hee spent not the day forth in idlenesse, but would attend vpon those whom hee thought to beare most rule in the Councell, and to be most in fauor with the King, the which at that time was Doctor Fox, Bishop of Winchester, Secretary, and Lord of the priuy Seale: And also Sir Tho. Louell knight, a verie sage Counsellor, a witty man, being master of the wards, and Constable of the Tower: These ancient and graue Counsellors in processe of time, perceiued this Chaplaine to haue a verie fine wit, and thought him a meete person to be preferred to witty affaires: It chanced at a certaine season, that the King had an vrgent occasion, to send an Ambassador vnto the Emperour, Maximilian, who lay at that present in the low Country of Flanders, not far from Caleis. The Bishop of Winchester and Sir Thomas Louell, whom the King most esteemed as chiefe of his Councell, the King counselling and debating with them vpon this ambassage, saw they had a conuenient occasion to preferre the Kings Chaplaine, whose wit, eloquence, and learning they highly commended vnto the King: the King giuing eare vnto them, and being a prince of an excellent iudgement and wodesty, commanding them to bring his Chaplaine, whom they so much commended, before his presence, with whom hee fell in communication of great matters, and perceiuing his wit to be verie fine, thought him sufficient to be put in trust with this Ambassage, commanding him thereupon to prepare himselfe to his iourney. And for his dispech, to repaire to his grace and his Councell, of whom hee should receiue his commission and instructions, by meanes wherof, he had then a due occasion to repaire from time to time into the Kings presence, who perceiued him more and more to be a very wise man, and of a good intendement. And hauing his dispatch, tooke his leaue of the King at Richmond about noone, and so came to London about foure of the cloke, where the Barge of Caleis was ready to launch forth, both with a prosperous tyde and winde, without any abode hee entered the Barge, and so passed forth with such happy speede, that hee arrived at Graues-end within little more then three houres, where hee tarried no longer then his post-horses were prouiding, and then trauelled so spedily, that hee came to Douer the nert morning, whereas the passengers were ready vnder saple to Caleis, into the which passenger without tarrying hee entred, and sayled forth with them, that long before noone hee arriued at Caleis, and hauing post-horses in a readinesse, departed from thence without tarrying: and hee made such hasty spéede, that hee was that night with the Emperor. And hee hauing vnderstanding of the comming of the King of Englands Ambassador, would in no wise delay the time, but sent for him incontinent, his affection to King Henry the seuenth was such, that hee was glad when hee had any occasion to shew him pleasure. The Ambassador disclosed the whole summe of his Ambassage vnto the Emperor, of whom hee required speedy expedition: the which was granted him by the Emperor, so that the nert day he was clearely dispatched, with all the Kings requests fully accomplished and granted. At which time hee made no longer delay, but take post-horses that night, and rode toward Caleis, conducted thither with such persons as the Emperor had appointed, and at the opening of the gates of Caleis he came thither, where the passengers were as ready to returne into England, as they were before at his iourney forward, in so much that he arriued at Douer by 10. or 11. of the cloche in the forenoone, and hauing post horses in a readinesse, came to the Court at Richmond the same night, where he taking some rest vntill the morning, repaired to the King at his first comming from his bed-chamber, to his closet to masse, whom when the King saw, hee checked him, for that he was not on his iourney: Sir (quoth hee) if it may please your highnesse, I haue already béene with the Emperor, and dispatched your affaires, I trust to your graces contentation, and with that presented the King his letters of credence from the Emperor. The King being in a great confuse, and wonder of his spédy returne and proceedings, dissembled all his wonder and imagination in that matter, and demanded of him, whether hee encountered not his Pursuiant, the which hee sent vnto him, supposing him not to be scantly out of London, with letters concerning a verie necessary matter neglected in their consultation, the which the King much desired to haue dispatched amongst the other matters of Ambassage: Yes forsooth (quoth the Chaplaine) I met with him yesterday by the way, and hauing no vnderstanding by your graces letters of your pleasure, haue notwithstanding béene so bold vpon my discretion (perceiuing that matter to be very necessary in that behalfe) to dispatch the same: and for as much as I haue recorded your graces Commission, I most humbly require your graces remission and pardon: the King reioycing inwardly not a little, said: Wée

Sir Iohn Naphant, seruant of Caleis, the Wolsey his seruant.

The Wolsey was Chaplaine to Henry the 7.

The Wolsey Ambassador to the Emperour.

Wée doe not onely pardon you thereof, but also giue you our princely thankes, both for the proceeding therein, and also for your good and spédy exploit, commanding him for that time to take his rest, and repaire againe after Dinner, for the further relation of his ambassage. The king then went to masse, and after a conuenient time went to dinner. It is not to be doubted but that this ambassador hath in all this time béene with his great friends the Bishop, and sir Thomas Louell, to whom he hath declared the effect of all his spéed: nor yet what ioy they received thereof.

The Ambassador when he saw time, repaired before the King and councell, where he declared the effect of his affaires so exactly, with such grauity and eloquence, that all the councell that heard him, commended him, esteeming his expedition to bée almost beyond the capacity of man. The King gaue him at that time the deanery of Lincolne, which was at that time one of the worthiest promotions that he gaue vnder degree of a Bishopricke, and thus from thence forward he grew more and more into estimation and authority, and after was promoted by the King to be his almoner.

The Wolsey the Kings almoner.

Here may all men note the chances of fortune that followeth some, whom she intendeth to promote, and to some her fauour is cleane contrary, though they trauell neuer so much with all the possible diligence that they can deuise or imagine, whereof for my part, I haue talked the experience. Now ye shall vnderstand that all this tale that I haue declared of the good expedition of the kings ambassador, was reported by his owne mouth after his fall, lying at that time in the great parke of Richmond, vnto George Cauendish his gentleman Vsher, taking then occasion vpon diuers communications to tell this iourney with all the circumstances, as I haue here before rehearsed.

When death, that fauoureth none estate, had taken King Henry the seuenth out of this prelent life, who for his wisedome was called the second Salomon, what practises and compasses were then vsed about King Henry the eight: and the great prouision made for the funerals of the one, and the costly deuises of the coronation of the other, I omit. After the finishing of these solemnities and costly triumphs, and that our naturall young and lusty courageous Prince King Henry the eight, entering into the flower of lusty youth, and taking vpon him the royall Sceptre and imperiall Diademe of this Realme, which at that time flourished in all abundance and riches, whereof the King was inestimably furnished, called then the golden world, such grace raigned then withm this Realme.

The Wolsey of the priuy counsell.

Now the almoner hauing a head full of subtill wit, perceiuing a plaine pathe to walke in toward his iourney to promotion, handled himselfe so politikely, that he found the meanes to be made one of the kings councell, and to grow in fauour and good estimation with the King, to whom the King gaue an house at Bridewell in Flietstreet, sometime Sir Richard Empsons, where hee kept house for his family, and so daily attended vpon the King, and in his especiall fauour, who had great suite made vnto him, as councellors in fauour most commonly haue. His sentences and witty perswasions in the councell chamber were alwayes so pithy, that the councell as occasion mooued them, continually assigned him to bée the expositor to the King in all their proceedings: in whom the King received such a leaning fantastie, and in especiall for that hee was most learned and readiest of all the councell, to aduance the Kings will and pleasure, hauing no respect to the cause: the King therefore perceiuing his abilitie a meete instrument for the accomplishment of his deuised pleasures, called him more nére vnto him, and esteemed him so highly, that all the other counsellors were put from the great fauour that they before were in: insomuch, that the King committed all his will vnto his disposition, which the almoner perceiuing, toke vpon him therefore to discharge the King of the waighty and troublesome businesse, perswading the King, that hee should not néede to spare any time of his pleasure for any businesse that should happen in the councell: and whereas the other counsellors would diuers times perswade the King to haue sometime recourse into the councell chamber, there to heare what was done, the almoner would perswade him to the contrarie, which delighted him much: and thus the almoner ruled all that before had ruled him: such did his policy and wit bring to passe. Who was now in high fauour but maister almoner? Who had all the suite but maister almoner? And who ruled all vnder the King, but maister almoner? Thus he perseuered in fauour, vntill at last in came presents, gifts, and rewards so plentifully, that I dare say hée lacked nothing that might eyther please his fantasie, or enrich his cofers: fortune smiled so fauourably vpon him, but to what end she brought him, yée shall heare hereafter. Therefore let all men to whom fortune extendeth her grace, not trust to her subtill fauor, and pleasant promises, vnder colour whereof, she carrieth venemous gall.

This almoner thus proceeding in fortunes blisfulnes, it chanced the wars betwéene the Realmes of England and France to be open, in so much, as the King being fully perswaded in his royall person, to inuade his forraine enemies with a puissant army, wherefore it was necessary that this royall enterprise should be spédily prouided and furnished in euery degrée of things apte and conuenient for the same, the expedition whereof, the King thought no mans wit to méete for pollicy and painefull trauell, as was his almoner, to whom therefore he committed his whole trust therein, and he being nothing scrupulous in any thing that the King would commaund him to doe, although it séemed to other very difficult, toke vpon him the whole charge of all the businesse, and brought all things to good passe in a decent

ryder, as all manner of victuals, prouisions, and other necessaries conuenient for so noble a voiage and army.

All things being by him perfected, the King aduanced to his royall enterprise, passed the seas and marched forward in good order of battel, vntill he came to the strong Towne of Turwine, to the which he laid his siege, and assailed it very strongly continually with such vehement assaults, that within short space it was yelded vnto his maiestie: vnto the which place, the Emperor Maximillian repaired vnto the King with a great army like a mighty Prince, taking of the King his grace wages, which is a rare thing and but seldome seene, an Emperor to fight vnder a Kings banner.

Thus after the King had obtained this puissant fort, and taken the possession thereof, and set all things there in due order, for the defence and preseruation thereof to his vse, he departed thence, and marched toward the City of Turney, and there laide his siege in like manner, to the which he gaue so fierce and sharpe assault, that they were constrained of fine force to render the towne vnto his victorious maiestie: at which time the King gaue the almoner the Bishopricke of the same seat towards his paines and diligence susteyned in that iourney. And when the King had established all things agreeable to his will and pleasure, and furnished the same with noble captaines, and men of war for the safegard of the towne, he returned againe into England, taking with him diuers noble personages of France being prisoners, as the Duke of Longuile, and vicount Clarimont, with other, which were taken there in a skirmish. After whose returne, immediatly the sea of Lincoine fell voide by the death of Doctor Smith, late Bishop there: the which benefice his grace gaue to his Almoner, late Bishop of Turney elect, who was not negligent to take possession thereof, and made all the speede he could for his consecration, the solemnization whereof ended, he found the meanes that he gate the possession of all his predecessors goods into his hands. It was not long after that Doctor Bambridge Archbishop of Yorke died at Rome, being there the Kings Ambassador, vnto the which sea, the king immediately presented his late and new Bishoppe of Lincoine: so that he had three Bishoprickes in his hands in one yere giuen him: then prepared he for his translation from the sea of Lincoine vnto the sea of Yorke: after which solemnization done, hee being then an Archbishop, *Primas Angliæ*, thought himselfe sufficient to compare with Canterbury, and thereupon erected his crosse in the court, and euery other place, as well within the precinct and iurisdiction of Canterbury, as many other place. And for as much as Canterbury claimeth a superiority ouer Yorke, as ouer all other Bishoprickes within England, and for that cause claimeth as a knowledge of an ancient obedience of Yorke, to abate the aduancing of his Crosse in presence of the crosse of Canterbury: notwithstanding, Yorke nothing minding to desist from bearing thereof in manner as I said before, caused his Crosse to be aduanced, as well in the presence of Canterbury, as else where: wherefore Canterbury being moued therewith, gaue vnto Yorke a certaine checke for his presumption, by reason whereof there engendered some grudge betweene Yorke and Canterbury, Yorke intending to prouide some such meanes, that he would beare superiority in dignity to Canterbury, that to be eyther obedient or equall to him: wherefore hee obtained to be made Pyrell Cardinall, and *Legatus de Latere*: vnto whom the Pope sent a Cardinals hatte with certaine buls for his authority in that behalfe: Yet you shall vnderstand, that the Pope sent him this worthy hatte of dignity, as a iewell of his honour and authority, the which was conueyed in a verlets budged, who seemed to all men to be but a person of small estimation.

Wherefore Yorke being aduertised of the baseneste of this messenger, and of the peoples opinion, thought it meete for his honor, that this iewell should not be conueyed by so simple a person, and therefore caused him to be stopped by the way immediately after his arriuall in England, where hee was newly furnished in all manner of apparell, with all kinde of costly suites, which seemed decent for such an high Ambassador: and that done, he was encountred vpon Black-heath, and there receiued with a great assembly of Prelates, and lusty gallant gentlemen, and from thence conducted through London with great triumph. Then was great and speedy preparation made in Westminster Abbey, for the confirmation and acceptance of this high order and dignity, the which was executed by all the Bishoppes and Abbots about or nigh London, with their rich miters and copes, and other ornaments, which was done in so solemne a wise, as had not beene seene the like, vnlesse it had beene at the Coronation of a mighty Prince or King. Obtaining this dignity, he thought himselfe meete to beare authority among the temporall power, as among the spirituall iurisdiction; wherefore, remembring as well the taunts sustained of Canterbury, as hauing a respect to the aduancement of worldly honor and promotion, found the meanes with the King, that he was made Lord Chancelor of England, and Canterbury which was Chancelor dismissed, who had continued in that roome since long before the decease of Henry the seuenth. Now being in possession of the Chancelorship, and moued with the promotions of the Archbishop and Cardinall *De Latere*, hauing power to correct Canterbury, and all other Bishoppes and spirituall persons, to assemble his conuocation when he would assigne, he toke vpon him the correction of matters in all their iurisdictions, and visited all the spirituall houses, hauing in euery Diocesse all manner of spirituall ministers, as commissaries, scribes, apparitors and all other officers to furnish his courts, and presented by preuention whom he pleased vnto all benefices throughout all this Realme.

Thomas Wolsey Bishop of Turney.

Thomas Wolsey Bishop of Lincoine.

Thomas Wolsey Archbishop of Yorke.

Thomas Wolsey Cardinall.

Thomas Wolsey Bishop of Winchester.

Thomas Wolsey Lord Chancelor.

And

And to the aduancing further of his legatine iurisdiction, and honour, he had matters of his faculties, matter *Ceremoniarum*, and such other to the glorifying of his dignity.

Then had he his two great crosses of siluer, the one of his Archbishoprike, the other of his legacie, borne before him whither soeuer hee went or rode, by two of the tallest Priests that he could get within the realme. And to increase his gaines, hee had also the Bishoprieke of Durham, and the Abbey of Saint Albons in Comendam. And after, when Doctor Foxe Bishoppe of Winchester died, he surrendred Durham into the Kings hands, and toke to him Winchester. Then had he in his hand (as it were in farme) the Bishoprieke of Bathe, Worcester, and Hereford, notwithstanding the incumbents of them were strangers, and made their abode continually beyonde the seas in their owne countries, or else at Rome, from whence they were sent in legation to this realme vnto the King, and for their reward at their departure, King Henry the seuenth gaue those Bishoprickes, and they being strangers, thought it more meete for the assurance, to suffer the Cardinall to haue their benefices for a conuenient summe of money payde them yerely where they remained, than eyther to be troubled with the charges of the same, or to be yerely burdened with the conueiance of their reuenues vnto them: so that all the spirituall promotions and presentations of these Bishoprickes were fully in his disposition, to prefer whom he liked. Hee had also a great number daily attending vpon him, both of Noble men and worthy Gentlemen, with no small number of the tallest yeomen that he could get in all the realme, in so much that well was that Noble man and Gentleman, that could prefer a tall yeoman to his seruice. He shall vnderstand that he had in his hall continually three boords kept with three seuerall principall officers, that is to say, a Steward which was alwayes a Priest, a treasurer a Knight, and a controller an esquire: also a coferer being a Doctor, three marshals, three yeomen vshers in the hall besides two grooms, and almoners. Then in the hall kitchen, two clearkes of the kitchen, a clearke controller, a surueior of the dresser, a clearke of the spicerie, the which together kept also a continuall messe in the hall. Also in his hall kitchen he had of master cooks two, and of other cookes, labourers, and children of the kitchen, twelue persons: foure yeomen of the scullerie, and foure yeomen of the siluer scullerie: two yeomen of the pastrie, with two other pastelers vnder the yeomen. Then in his priuie kitchen a master cooke, who went daily in veluet or in sattin, with a chaine of golde, with two other yeomen and a groome: In the scalding house a yeoman and two grooms In the pantrie two persons: In the butterie two yeomen, two grooms, and two pages: And in the pewrie likewise: In the seller three yeomen and three pages: In his chaunderie two: In the wafarie two: in the wardrobe of beds, the maister of the wardrobe, and teane other persons: In the launderie a yeoman, a groome, thirty pages, two yeomen purueyors and one groome: In the backehouse a yeoman and two grooms: In the wood-yeard a yeoman and a groome: In the barne one: In the Garden a yeoman and two grooms: Porters at the gate, two yeomen and two grooms: A yeoman of his barge, and a maister of his horse. A Clearke of the stable, a yeoman of the same: the saddler, the farrier: a yeoman of his chariot: a sumpter man: a yeoman of his litrop: a muleter: sixteene grooms of his stable, euery of them kept foure geldings: In the almorie a yeoman and a groome: In his chappel he had a Deane: a great diuine, and a man of excellent learning: a subdeane, a repeater of the quire: a gospeller, a Pistoller, of singing priests ten: a maister of the Children: Seculars of the Chappell, singing men twelue: singing children ten, with one seruant to waite vpon the children: in the Reuestrie a Yeoman and two Groomes, ouer and besides diuers retainers that came thither at principall feasts. For the furniture of his Chappell, passeth my capacitie to declare, the number of costly ornaments and rich iewels that were to be occupied in the same continually: there hath bin seene in procession about the hall. 44. very rich Coapes of one suite worne, besides the rich crosses and candlesticks, and other ornaments to the furniture of the same. Hee had two crosse-bearers, and two pillar-bearers in his great chamber: and in his priuie chamber these persons: first the chiefe chamberlaine, and vice chamberlaine: of gentlemen vshers, besides one in his priuy Chamber, hee had twelue daily waiters: and of gentlemen waiters in his priuy chamber he had six, and of Lords nine or ten who had each of them two men allowed them to attend vpon them, except the Earle of Darby, who had allowed fiue men: then had hee of Gentlemen, of cupbearers, caruers, and sewers both of the priuy chamber and of the great chamber, with gentlemen daily waiters there, fortie persons: of yeomen vshers 6. of groomes in his chamber 8. of yeomen in his chamber fiue and fortie daily: he had also almes men, some more in number than other sometime.

The order of the Cardinals house.

There was attending on his bord of Doctors and chaplaines, besides them of his chappell sixteene daily: a clearke of his closet: secretaries two: and two clearkes of his signet; foure counsellers learned in the law. And forasmuch as it was necessary to haue diuers officers of the chauncerie to attend vpon him, that is to say, the clearke of the crowne, a riding clearke, a clearke of the hamper, and a chafar of the war: then a clearke of the checke; as well vpon the Chaplaines, as of the yeomen of his chamber: hee had also foure Footemen, which were garnished in rich running coats, whensoeuer he rode in any iourney: then had hee an hearault of armes, and a sergeant of armes, a Phisition, an apothecary, foure minstrels, a keeper of his tents, an armorer, an instructer of his wards, two yeomen of his wardrobe

wardobe of his robes, and keeper of his chamber continually in the court: he had also in his house the surueior of Poyse, and a clearke of the grene cloth. All these were daily attending, boyne lying, and by rising, and at meales he kept in his great chamber a continuall boord for the Chamberers and Gentlemen officers, hauing with them a messe of the young Lords, and another of Gentlemen: and besides all these there was neuer an Officer, Gentleman, or worthy person, but hee was allowed in the house some thare, some two, and all other one at the least, which grew to a great number of persons. Thus farre out of the Chekerol, besides other officers, seruants, retayners, and suiters that most commonly dined in the hall.

Tho. Wolsey sent Ambassador to the Emperor Charles.

After that hee was thus furnished, he was sent twice in ambassage to the Emperor Charles the fift, for diuers vrgent causes touching the Kings Maiestie, it was thought, that to so noble a Prince (the Cardinall) was most meete to be sent: wherefore, being ready to take vpon him the charge thereof, was furnished in all degrees and purposes most like a great Prince: for first he proceeded forth furnished like a Cardinall; his Gentlemen being very many in number, were clothed in liuery coates of crimson veluet of the best, with chaines of gold about their neckes, and his yemen and meane officers in coates of fine scarlet, garded with blacke veluet a hand broad.

Thus furnished, hee was twice sent into Flanders to the emperor, then lying in Bruges whom he did most highly entertaine, discharging all his charges and his mens. There was no house within the Towne of Bruges, wherein any gentlemen of the Cardinals were lodged or had recourse, but the owners were commanded by the Emperors officers, that they, vpon paine of their liues, should take no money for any thing that the Cardinals seruants did take of any kinde of victuall, no although they were disposed to make any costly banquets: commanding furthermore their saide hosts, to see that they lacked no such things as they honestly required for their honestie and pleasure. Also the Emperors officers euery night went through the Towne from house to house, whereas any English gentlemen did repaire or lodged, and serued their liueries for all night, which was done in this manner. First, the officers brought into the house a cast of fine manchet, & of siluer two great pots with white wine, and sugar to the weight of a pound: white lights and yellow lights of wax: a boll of siluer with a goblet to drinke in, and euery night a staffe-torch. This was the order of liueries euery night and in the morning when the same officers came to fetch away their staffe, then should they account with the hosts for the gentlemens costes spent in the day before.

Thus the Emperor entertained the Cardinall and all his traine for the time of his embassage there. And that done, he returned into England with great triumph.

How of his order in going to Westminster Hall daily in the terme: first ere he came out of his priuy chamber, he heard seruice in his closet, and there said his seruice with his Chaplaine: then going againe to his priuy Chamber he would demand, if his seruants were in a readines, and had furnished his chamber of Presence, and waiting Chamber, being thereof then aduertised, came out of his priuy Chamber about eight of the clocke, apparelled all in red, that is to say, his vpper garment either of fine Scarlet, or else fine Crymson Taffata, but most commonly of fine Crymson Satten engrayned, his Pillion of fine Scarlet, with a necke sette in the inner side with blacke Velvet, and a Tippet of Sables about his necke, holding in his hand an Orange, whereof the substance within was taken out, and filled vp againe with the part of a Spunge, wherein was Vineger and other confections against the Pestilent Ayres, the which hee most commonly held to his nose when he came among any presse, or else that he was pestered with many suters: and before him was borne, first the Broad Seale of England and his Cardinals Hatte, by a Lord or some Gentleman of worship right solemnely: and as soone as he once entered into his chamber of Presence, his two great Crosses were there, attending to bee borne before him: then cryed the Gentlemen Vshers, going before him bare headed, and saide: On before my Lords and maisters, on before, make way for my Lords grace. Thus went he down through the hall with a Seriant at armes before him, bearing a great Mace of siluer, and two gentlemen carrying two great pillers of siluer, and when he came at the Hall doore there was his mule, being trapped all in crimson velvet, with a saddle of the same, and gilt stirrops.

Then was there attending vpon him, when hee was mounted, his two Crosse Bearers, and his Piller Bearers in like case vpon great horses, trapped all in fine Scarlet. Then marched he forward with a Traine of Noblemen and Gentlemen, hauing his seruemen, foure in number about him, bearing each of them a gilt Polar in their hands: and thus passed he forth, vntill he came to Westminn Hall doze, and there lighted, and went vp after this manner into the Chauncery, or into the Star Chamber: howbeit, most commonly he would go into the Chauncery, and stay a while at a Barre made for him beneath the Chancery on the right hand, and there commune sometime with the Iudges, and sometime with other persons: and that done, he would repaire into the Chancerie, and sitting there vntill eleuen of the clocke, hearing of suites, and determining of other matters, from thence he would diuers times go into the Star Chamber as occasion serued. There he neither spared high ne low, but iudged euery state according to his merits and desert. Hee died also euery Sunday to resort to the Court, then being for the most part of all the yere at Grenwich, with his former tryumphes, taking his Barge at his owne Stayres, furnished with yemen, standing vpon the Bayles, and his Gentlemen being within about him, and lauded againe at the three Cranes in the Vintry: and from thence he rode vpon his Mule, with his crosse, his Pillars, his Hatte, and Broad seale carryed afore him on Horse-backe through Thamis Streete, vntill he came to Bellinsgate; and there take his Barge againe, and so was riuyed to Grenwith, where he was receiued of the Lords and chiefe officers of the Kings house, as the Treasurer, Controller, and other, and so conueyed into the kings chamber: then the Court was wonderfully furnished with Noblemen and gentlemen: and after dinner among the Lords, hauing some consultation with the King, or with the Councell, he would depart homeward with the like triumph.

Thus in great honour, triumph, and glorie, hee raygned a long season, ruling all things within the realme appertayning vnto the king. His house was alwayes resorted to with noblemen and Gentlemen, feasting and banqueting Ambassadours diuers times and all other right nobly: and when it pleased the king for his recreation, to repaire to the Cardinals house as he did diuers times in the yere: there wanted no preparations, or furniture: Banquets were set forth with maskes and mummeries, in so gorgeous a sort, and costly manner, that it was an heauen to behold. There wanted no Dames or Damosels, mete or apte to daunce with the maskers, or garnish the place for the time: then was there all kinde of musicke, and harmony, with fine voices both of men and children.

A maske at a banquet.

One time the King came sodainly thither in a maske with a dosen maskers all in garments like Shepheards, made of fine cloth of Golde, and Crimosin Satten paned, and Chappes of the same, with Vysars of gold bullonny, their haires and beardes, either of fine golde-wire silke, or blacke silke, hauing firetorche-bearers, besides their drums, and other persons with vizars, all clothed in Satten of the same colour: and before his entering into the Hall, hee came by water to the water gate, without any noyse, where were laid diuers chambers and guns charged with shot, and at his landing they were shot off, which made such a rumbling in the ayre, that it was like thunder: It made all the Noblemen, Gentlemen, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, to muse what it should meane, comming so sodainly, they sitting quiet at solemne banquet vnder this sort: First ye shall vnderstand, that the Tables were set in the Chamber of Presence full couered, and the Lord Cardinall sitting vnder the cloth of Estate, there hauing all his seruice alone: and then was there set a Lady with a Nobleman, or a Gentleman and a Gentlewoman throughout all the Tables in the Chamber on the side, which were made and ioyned as it were but one Table, all which order and deuice was done by the Lord Sandes then Lord Chamberlain, to the King, and by sir Henry Guilford Comptroller of the kings Maiesties house. Then immediately after the great Chamberlaine, and the said Comptroller sent to aske what it should meane (as though they knew nothing of the matter,) they looking out of the windowes into the Thames, returned againe and shewed him, that it seemed they were Noblemen and Strangers, arrived at his bridge, comming as Ambassadors from some forraine Prince: with that, quoth the Cardinall, I desire you, because you can speake French, to take the paines to goe into the Hall, there to receiue them according to their Estates, and to conduct them into this Chamber, where they shall see vs and all these Noble Personages, being merry at our Banquet, desiring them to sit downe with vs, and to take part of our fare. Then went he incontinent downe into the Hall, whereas they receyued them with twenty new Torches, and conueyed them by into the Chamber, with such a noyse of Drummes and Flutes, as seldome had bene heard the like. At their entering into the Chamber two and two together they went directly before the Cardinall where he sate, and saluted him reuerently, to whom the Lord Chamberlaine for them saide: Sir, for as much as they be Strangers, and can not speake English, they haue desired me to declare vnto you, that they hauing vnderstanding of this your triumphant Banquet, where was assembled such a number of excellent Dames, they could not be lesse vnder supporte of your Grace, but to repayre hither, to view as well their incomporable beautie, as for to accompany them of Mummechance, and then to daunce with them: and Sir, they require of your Grace licence to accomplish the said cause of their comming. To whom the Cardinall said, he was very well content they should so doe.

Then went the Maskers, and first saluted all the Dames, and returned to the most worthiest, and there opened their great cup of gold filled with crownes, and pieces of gold, to whom they set certaine pieces of gold to cast at.

Thus perusing all the Ladies and Gentlewomen, to some they lost, and of some they won: and perusing after this manner all the Ladies, they returned to the Cardinall with great reuerence powring downe all their gold to left in their cup, which was about two hundred crownes: At all (quoth the Cardinall) and so cast the dice and wanne them, whereat was made a great noyse and ioy. Then quoth the Lord Cardinall to the Lord Chamberlaine I pray you (quoth he) that you would shew them, that me seemeth there should be a Noble man amongst them, who is more mete to occupy this seate and place then I am, to whom I would most gladly surrender the same according to my duty, if I knew him. Then spake the Lord Chamberlaine to them in French, and they rounding him in the eare, the Lord Chamberlaine said to my Lord Cardinall: sir (quoth he) they confesse that among them there is such a noble personage, whom if your grace can appoint him out from the rest, he is con-

tent

tent to disclose himselfe, and to accept your place: with that the Cardinall taking good advisement among them, at the last queth he, me seemes the gentleman with the blacke beard should be owner: with that he arose out of his chaire, and offered the same to the gentleman in the blacke beard, with his cap in his hand. The person to whom he offered the chaire was sir Edward Neuill, a comely knight that much more resembled the Kings person in that maske than any other.

The King perceiuing the Cardinall so deceiued, could not forbeare laughing, but pulled downe his visar, and maister Neuils also, and dashed out such a pleasant countenance and chare that all the noble estates there assembled perceiuing the King to bee there among them, reioyced very much. The Cardinall effsones desired his Highnesse to take the place of estate to whom the King answered, that he would go first and shift his apparell, and so departed into my Lord Cardinals chamber, and there new apparelled him: in which time the dishes of the banquet were cleane taken vp, and the Tables spread againe with new cleane perfumed clothes, euery man and woman sitting still, vntill the King with all his maskers came among them againe all new apparelled: then the King tooke his seate vnder the cloth of Estate, commanding euery person to sit still as they did before: In came a new banquet before the King and to all the rest throughout all the tables, wherein were serued two hundred diuers dishes, of costly deuices and subtilties. Thus passed they forth the night with banquetting, dancing, and other triumphes, to the great comfort of the King, and pleasant regard of the Nobility there assembled. Thus passed this Cardinal this time from day to day, and yere to yere, in such great wealth, ioy, triumph, and glory, hauing alwayes on his side the kings speciall fauour, vntill fortune enuied his prosperous estate, as is to the world well knowne, and shall be partly touched hereafter.

Lady Mary the Kings daughter borne.

Lady Mary King Henries Daughter was borne at Greenewich on the 11. of February.

The Queene of Scots fleeth into England.

Margaret Queene of Scots, King Henries eldest sister, who had after the death of her first husband (James king of Scots slaine at Bramstone) married Archibald Douglas, Earle of Angusse fled into England for feare of the Duke of Albany, that had taken her two sonnes the lay at Harbottle, where she was deliuered of a childe called Margaret. But shortly after Archibald Douglas her husband went home againe into Scotland without leaue taking: wherefore the King sent for her to London, where shee was royally receiued and lodged at Baynards castle, and there she tarried a whole yere ere she returned.

The King for the honor of his sister Margaret, Queene of Scots, on the 19. and 20. day of May, prepared and kept solemne Iusts, where in the tilt himselfe, the Duke of Suffolke, the Earle of Essex, and Nicholas Carew Esquier, answered all commers.

This yere the Cardinall caused all these to be called to accompts, that had dealt with the Kings money, and had the occupying thereof in the warres, or elsewhise. This audit troubled many, for some were found in arrerages, and some tained themselues by policie, and surely he so punished periurie with open infamy, causing the offenders to weare papers, and so forth, that in his time it was lesse vsed then in long time before: he punished also, Lords, Knights, and men of all degrees, for riots, for bearing out wrongs, and for maintenance practised in the countries, whereby the poore men liued quietly, and no man durst vse boisterring, for feare of imprisonment. It was a strange matter to see, a man not trained vp in the lawes, to sit in the seat of iudgement, to pronounce the law, being aided at the first by such as according to the ancient custome did sit as associates with him: but hee would not sticke to determine sundry causes, neither rightly decided, nor iudged by order of law: and againe such as were cleare cases he would sometimes prohibite the same to passe, call them into iudgement, frame an order in controuersies, and punish such as came with vntrue surmises, after the iudges themselues, which had received such surmises, and not well considered of the controuersies of the parties: he ordained by the Kings commission, diuers vnder courts, to heare complaints by bill of poore men, they might the sooner come by iustice: so that wise men have reported, never to haue seene this realme in better obedience, and quiet, then it was in the time of his authority and rule, ne iustice better ministred with indifference.

Decrees for debts.

Commissions.

Permanent other wise punished.

Cardinals feare complaints of the poore men.

The Duke of Norfolke departed home into his country, and also the Duke of Suffolke followed shortly, for he hauing spent liberally in his iourneies into France, as also in the solemnization of his marriage, and in house keeping, sith he was married, borrowed great summes of money of the king, which hee hoped should haue beene forgiuen him: but the Cardinall had called him as all other to account.

In the moneth of October, Matthew Visshop of Sion or Sitten, a Cardinall of the Swissers, came into England from the Emperor Maximilian: At the contemplation of which Cardinall, the king lent to the Emperor a great summe of money: but the greatest matter that moued the K. to be so free to Maximilian, was because the same money should bee employed on men of warre against the French king, toward whom of late the king had conceiued a grudge. Hereupon was Richard Pace, sent first into Germany with a great summe of money to wage the Swissers, which vnder the conduct of the Emperor Maximillian, inuaded the Dutchie of Millaine, but without any great gaine returned from thence, leauing Millaine in the French mens hands at that time. And now for a new reliefe was this Cardinall sent from Millaine, at vtmost instance money was assigned to be deliuered vnto certaine Merchants vnder take the ereby, which made not payment at the day, although they had received it

King Henry procureth Maximilian to warre vpon the French.

of the king.

1517. A great dearth in Winter, and a great frost.

This yere was a great drouth, for there fell no rain to be accounted of from the beginning of September, till the moneth of May in the next yere, wherethrough in some places, men were faine to driue their cattell, 3. or 4. miles to water.

Also for a time the Thames was frozen, that men with horse and carts might passe betwixt Westminster and Lambeth.

The number of strangers in London multiplied.

About this season, there grew a great hart burning, and malicious grudge amongst the Englishmen of the city of London, against strangers and namely the artificers found themselues sore greeued, for that such numbers of strangers, were permitted to resort hither with their wares, and to exercise handy crafts, to the great hinderance & impouerishing of the Kings liege people: and this malice grew to such a point, that one Iohn Lincolne a Broker, busied himselfe so far in the matter, that about Palme Sunday or the fift April this eighteene of the kings raigne, he came to one doctor Standish with these words: Master Standish you shall preach at the Spittle on mundaie in the Easter weeke, and so it is, that Englishmen both merchants and other are vndone, by strangers, who haue more liberty in this land than they, which is against all reason, and also against the common Weale of this Realme: I beseech you therefore to declare this in your Sermon, and in so doing, ye shall deserue great thankes of my Lord Maior, and of all his Brethren, and herewith he offered vnto the saide Doctor a Bill, conteyning the matter more at large: but Doctor Standish (wisely considering that there might more inconuenience rise thereof, than he would wish, if he should deale in such a sorte) both refused the Bill, and told Lincolne plainely, that he ment not to meddle with any such matter in his Sermon. Whereupon the saide Lincolne went vnto one Doctor Bell, a Chanon of the foresaid Spittle, that was appointed likewise to preach vpon Tuesday in Easter weeke at the same Spittle, whom he perswaded to read his sayde bill in the pulpit, which bill in effect contayned the greefes that many found with strangers for taking the liuing away from artificers, and the intercourse from merchants, the redresse whereof must come from the commons knit in one: for as the hurt touched all men, so must all set to their helping hands: which letter he read, or the chiefest part thereof, comprehending much seditious matter, and then he began with this sentence, *Cœlum, cœli Domino, terram autem dedit filijs hominum*, and vpon this text he entreated, how this land was giuen to Englishmen, and as birds defend their nestes, so ought Englishmen to cherish and maintaine themselues, and to hurt and grieue aliens for respect of their common-wealth: and vpon this text. *Pugna pro patria*, he brought in how by Gods law it was lawfull to fight for their countrey: and thus he subtilly moued the people to rebell against strangers: by this Sermon many a light person tooke courage and openly spoke against strangers. And as vnhap would, there had bin diuers euill parts plaid of late by strangers, th and about the city of London which kindled the peoples rancor the more furiously against them.

The 28. day of April, diuers young men of the city picked quarrels to certaine strangers, as they passed by the streets, some they did strike and buffeted, and some they threw into the channel, wherefore the Maior sent some of the Englishmen to prison, as Stephen Studley skinner, Stephenson, Bets and other. Then sodainely rose a secret rumour, and no man could tell how it began, that on May day next, the Citie would rise all the aliens, in so much, that diuers strangers fled out of the city. This rumor came to the knowledge of the kings Councell, whereupon the L. Cardinall sent for the Maior, and other of the councell of the city, giuing them to vnderstand what he had heard. The Maior, as one ignorant of the matter, told the Cardinall, that he doubted not but to gouerne the City as peace should be obserued. The Cardinall willed him so to do. and to take good heed that if any riotous attempt were intended, he should with good policy preuent it. The Maior comming from the Cardinals house about 4. of the clocke in the afternoone on May eue, sent for his brethren to the Guildhall, yet was it almost 7. of the clocke ere the assembly was set. Vpon conference had of the matter, some thought it necessary that a sufficiantiall watch should be set of honest Citizens, which might withstand the euil doers, if they went about any mischiefe: other were of contrary opinion, but rather thought it best, that commandement should be giuen to euery man to shut in his doores, and to keepe his seruants within. Before eight of the clocke the Recorder was sent to the Cardinall, with these opinions, who hearing the same, allowed the latter. And when the Recorder and sir Thomas More, late vnder sheriffe of London, and now of the Kings councell came to the Guildhall, halfe an houre before nine of the clocke, and there shewed the pleasure of the Kings Councell: whereupon euery Alderman sent to his ward, that no man should stir after nine of the clocke out of his house, but to keepe his doores shut, and his seruants within till nine of the cloke in the morning. After this commandement giuen, in the euening, as sir Iohn Mundy Alderman came from his ward, and found two young men in cheape playing at the bucklers, and a great many of young men looking on them (for the commandement was scarce published) he commanded them to leaue off, and for that one of them asked him why, he would haue sent him to the counter: but the prentises resisted the alderman, taking the young man from him, and cried prentises and clubs, then out at euery doore came clubs and other weapons, so that the Alderman was faine to flie. Then more people rose out of euery quarter, and forth came seruingmen, watermen, cuntiers and other, so that by 11. of the clocke there were in cheape, 6. or 700. and out of Paules churchyard came about 300. so out of al places they gathered, and brake vp the counter, tooke out the prisoners that had

bin thither committed by the Maior, for hurting of strangers. Also they went to Newgate, and and toke out Studley and Peris, committed thither for the likecause: the Maior and Sheriffes were present, & made proclamation in the Kings name, but nothing was obeied. Herewith being gathered in plumps, they ran through S. Nicholas Shambles, and at S. Martins gate, there met with them sir Tho. More, and other, desiring them to go to their lodgings: and as they were thus entreating, and had almost perswaded the people to depart, they within S. Martins threw out stones and bats, so that they hurt diuers honest persons, that were with sir Tho. More, perswading the rebellious persons to cease: insomuch as at length, one Nicholas Denis a Sergeant at armes, being there sore hurt, in a furie cried downe with them, and then al the mistuled persons ran to the doores and windowes of the houses within S. Martins, and spoiled all that they found: After that they ran into Cornehill, and so forth to an house east from Leaden Hall, called the Spergate, where dwelt one Mewras a Pickard or Frenchman, whose house dwelled diuers Frenchmen whom they likewise spoiled, and if they had found Mewras they would haue stricken off his head: some ran to Blanchapleton, & there brake up the strangers houses and spoyled them: they continued thus til three of the clocke in the morning, at what time they began to withdraw: but by the way they were taken by the Maior and other, and sent to the Tower, Newgate, and counters, to the number of 300. The Cardinall was aduertised by S. Tho. Parre, whom in all haste he sent to Richmond to informe the King, who incontinently sent to vnderstand the state of the city, and was truely informed, Sir Richard Cholmeley lieutenant of the Tower during that time of this busines, that off certaine pieces of ordinance against the city, but did no great hurt. about fiue of the clocke in the morning, the Earles of Shrewsbury, and Surrey, Tho. Dokwrey Lord Prior of S. Johns, George Neuill L. Burgauenny, and other came to London, with such powers as they could make, to did the Iames of Court: but before they came, the businesse was done as ye haue heard. Then were the prisoners examined, and the sermon of Doctor Bell called to remembrance, and he sent to the Tower. A commission of Oyer and determiner directed to the D. of Norffolke and other Lords, for punishment of this insurrection. The 2. of May the commissioners with the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Iustices went to the Guild-hal, where many of the offenders were indicted, wherevpon they were arraigned, and pleaded not guilty, had day giuen till the fourth of May: on the which day the L. Maior, the D. of Norffolke, the E. of Surrey, & other came to sit in Guild-hall. The Duke of Norffolke entred the city with 1300. men: the prisoners were brought through the streets tied in ropes, some men, some lads, but 13. or 14. yeres old to the number of 278. persons: that day John Lincolne and diuers other were indicted. The next day 13. were adiudged to be hanged, drawne and quartered, for execution whereof, were set vp 10. paire of gallowes in diuers places of the city, as at Ald-gate, Blanchapleton, Grace-streete, Leaden-hall, before eyther counters, at Newgate, S. Martins, at Aldersgate, and at Bishops gate, these gallowes were set on wheeles to be remoued from streete to streete, and from doore to doore, whereunto the prisoners were brought, & there executed. On the 7. of May was Lincolne Shirwin, and two brethren called Bets, and diuers other adiudged to die. They were on hardels drawne to the standart in Cheape, and first was Lincolne executed, and as the other had the rope about their necks, there came a commandement from the King to respite the execution, and then were the prisoners sent againe to prison and the armed men sent out of London. For it is to be noted that 3. Queenes, to wit, Katherine Dowager of England, and by her meanes Mary the French Queene, and Margaret Dowager of Scots, the Kings sisters, (then resident in England) long time on their knees before the King had begged their pardon, which by perswalion of the Cardinall Wolsey (without whose Councell hee would then doe nothing) the King granted vnto them.

Mewras a French man at Greene gate by Leaden hall.

Three Queenes obtained pardon for the Londoners.

On the thirteenth of May, the King came to Westminster Hall, and with him the Lord Cardinall, the Dukes of Norffolk and Suffolke, the Earles of Shrewsbury, Esser, Wiltshire, and Surrey with many Lords, and other of the Kings councell, the Maior of London, Aldermen and other chiefe citizens, were there in their best liueries by nine of the clocke in the morning: Then came in the prisoners, bound in ropes in a ranke one after another in their shirtes, and euery one had a halter about his necke, being in number 400. men & 11. women. When they were thus come before the Kings presence: the Cardinall laid fore to the Maior and Aldermen their negligence, and to the prisoners he declared how iustly they had deserued death. Then all the prisoners together cried to the King for mercy, and therewith the Lords beseought his grace of pardon, at whose request the King pardoned them all. The generall pardon being pronounced, all the prisoners threwe out at once and cast their halters towards the roofe of the hall. The prisoners dismissed, the gallowes were taken downe, and the Citizens tooke more heed to their seruants.

The 18. of May, Margaret Queene of Scots departed from London towards Scotland, right ship appointed and prepared of all things necessary for her estate through the Kings great liberality. She entered into Scotland the 13. of June and was receiued at Wertwike, by Archibald Dowglas Earle of Anguise her husband. In the moneth of June there were with the King diuers Ambassadors from forraine parts: In honor of whom, and for their solace, he prepared costly iusts, he himselfe and 12. other, taking vpon them to iust with the Duke of Suffolke, and 12. of his partakers: there were broken betweene the parties on both sides 108. speares.

Margaret Queene of Scotland returned into Scotland.

About the feast of Lammas began the sweating sickenes, of the which many men died soddainly in the beginning thereof, and this plague

Sweating sickenes.

continued till Michaelmas, many died thereof in the court, as the Lord Clinton, the L. Grey of Wilton, and many other Knights and Gentlemen, by reason of which contagious sickenes, Michaelmas terme was adiourned: After this, to wit, in the winter was a great death of pestilence, almost ouer all England in euery towne more or lesse, wherefore the King kept himselfe with small company about him, willing to haue no resort to the court for feare of infection.

1518. Pestilence

An. reg. 10. Trinity terme was begun at Oxford, where it continued but one day, and was againe adiourned to Westminster.

Cardinall Campeius come into England

In the moneth of July Laurence Campeius borne in Bolognie la grace, commonly called Cardinall Campeius legate de latere, from Pope Leo the 10. to require and exhort King Henry, to make war on the Turke.

Cardinall Wolsey made legat.

At the request of the K. of England, and also of the French King (which sought now to be reconciled into friendship with the K. of England) Pope Leo constituted Cardinall Wolsey his legate in England, ioyning him in commission with the foresaid Cardinall Campeius.

There was at the same time other legates, sent into other parts of christendome, about the same matter, as into France, Spaine, and Germany: but Cardinall Campeius hearing that their suite toke no place in other parts, left off his suite about it, and returned to Rome.

After long suite made of the French king and his councell, it was agreed, that the City of Tourney should be deliuered to the French K. he paying 600000. crownes for the City to bee paid in 12. yeres, and 400000. crownes for the castle, the which the K. had builded (which was not fully performed: and also he should pay 23. thousand pound Turnois, the which sometime the citizens of Turney ought to the K. of England for their liberties and franchises. Moze the French King should pay to the Cardinall of England 1200. marke of yeerely pension, in recompence of his Bysshoprieke of Tourney. It was further agreed, that the young Dolphine, son and heire to the French king, should marrie with the Lady Mary king Henries Daughter of England, if they both so liked each other when they came to age. And then Charles Bewford Earle of Worcester, Lord chamberlaine of England, with the Bishop of Ely and other, were sent into France, to make deliuery of the said City of Tourney, which was done on the 10. of February. The captaine sir Richard Jerningham was discharged, and the Frenchmen suffered to enter, the Englishmen returned into England sore displeased, for thereby many a tall yeoman lacked liuing, the which would not labour after their returne, but fell to robbing, and leud life.

1519.

The 8. of March solemne iusts were holden, the king himselfe and 8. young gentlemen taking vpon them to mainteine the D. of Suffolke and 8. other commers with him.

This yere 1519. died Maximillian the first Emperor of Welsia a City in Austria, being sixty yeres of age, and after him was Carolus Quintus elected Emperor with wonderous great applause, this Charles beeing Archduke of Austria and King of Spaine, was Crowned Emperor triumphantly: and in the yere 1522. the Spaniards got great hold of Genua in Italy.

Charles the first chosen Emperor Genua got by the Spaniards

This yere K. Henry held his feast of S. George at Windsor, with as great solemnity as it had bene the feast of a coronation, where were present all the Knights of the order then within the Realme.

Anno 1519

Shortly after certain gentlemen of the privy chamber, which through the Kings lenity in bearing with their lewdnes, forgetting themselues, and their duty towards his grace in being too familiar with him, not hauing due respect to his estate and degree, were removed, by order taken by the Councel, vnto whom the King had giuen authority to vse their discretions in that behalfe, and then were 4. sad & ancient knights put into the Kings priuy chamber, whose names were, sir Richard Wingfield, sir Richard Jernigham, sir Richard Weston, and Sir William Kingstone, and besides these diuers officers were changed in other places.

The French King desirous to continue the friendship lately begun betwixt him and the K. of England, made means to the Cardinall, that they might in some conuenient place come to an enterview together, that he might haue further knowledge of King Henry, & King Henry like wise of him. The Cardinall therefore breaking with the King of this matter, declaring how honorable, necessary, and conuenient it should be for him to gratifie his friend herein. And thus the King conceiued an earnest desire to see the French K. and thereupon appointed to go ouer to Caleis, and so into the Marches of Guisnes, to meete with the French King. Then were sent vnto Guisnes, Sir Nicho. Vaux, Sir. Edward Belknape, Sir Wil. Sands Knights of the garter, commissioners to ouer-see the making of a palace before the Castle gate of Guisnes: these lanued at Caleis on the 16. of March. There were also sent, the Kings master mason, master carpenter, 300. masons 500. carpenters, 100. ioyners, besides many painters, glasiers, tailors, smithes, and other artificers both out of England, and prouided in Flanders, in all to the number of more than 2000.

The said palace was begun on the 19. of March, for the which palace the timber was before bought in Holland, and was so long, for the most part, that the same was faine to bee bound together and drawne after ships to Caleis, for no ship might receiue it. The other timber and bord was conueyed out of England. This palace was framed in diuers places, all the roofes whereof was couered within with cannas curiously painted, and also the wals from the second plat downward: it was also glased with the best and clearest glasse that could be gotten from the ouer plat into the second plat of the stone worke, and round about were houses of office, as pantry, buttry, cellar, and other. And thus was there builded the goodliest Palace of timber, that euer was wrought in these westerly parts of the world.

The Palace builded before Guisnes.

Then was prouision made in England and in Flanders for victuall, wine, and all other things necessary for the furniture of feasts and banqueting.

Herewith were letters written to all such Lords, Ladies, Gentlemen and Gentlewomen, which should giue their attendance on the King and Quéene, which incontinently put themselues in a readines, after the most sumptuous sort. Also it was appointed that the King of England and the French King in a campe betwéene Arde and Guisnes, with 18. dayes, should in the month of June next ensuing abide all commers being Gentlemen, at the tilt, at the tourney, and at barriers. Then came into England Orliance King of armes in France, and made proclamation at the Court, that the King of England and the French King in campe betwéene Arde & Guisnes with 18. dayes, in June next insuing should abide all commers, being Gentlemen, at the tilt and tourney, and at barriers. And the like Proclamation was made in the Court of France, by Clarencius king of armes of England: also in the court of Burgoigne, in Almaine, and Italy. For the furnishing of these iusts there was deuised a tilt, and all things necessary for that enterprise, in a goodly plaine betwéene Guisnes and Arde. About the which was cast a great dike or trench, and a costly house or gallery for the Kings and Quenes, Lords and Ladies, to stand in, and behold the iust and other things there done.

King Henry being informed, that his Realme of Ireland was out of order, discharged the Earle of Kildare of his office of deputy, and thereunto was appointed the Earle of Surrey, Thomas Howard Lord Admirall: wherefore the said Earle in the beginning of Aprill, tooke leaue of the King, and the Duke of Norfolke his father, and passed into Ireland with diuers Gentlemen, or such as had béene of the garrison of Tourney, and had with him 100. yeomen of the Kings guard, and other to the number of one thousand men, and there hee continued two yeres and more, in which space hee had many battailes and skirmishes with the wilde Irish.

Ipmounted or the king came into France.

There were appointed to attend vpon the King ouer sea to Calais, and so to Guisnes, Thomas Wolsey, Cardinall, 12. chaplaines, 50. gentlemen, 228. seruants, 150. horses: the Archbishop of Canterbury: the Bishop of Durham Lord priuy seale: the Bishop of Ely: Chester, and Worcester: the Archbishop of Armacan: the Duke of Buckingham and of Suffolke: the Marques Dorset: the Earles of Shrewsbury, Essex, Deuonshire, Westmerland, Stafford Kent, Wiltshire, Worcestershire, Northumberland, Oxford and Kildare: besides Lords, and Knights, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, in great number.

En. Reg. 12. Chalengers against all Gentlemen on horseback and on foote, for all feats of armes for thirty dayes.

The King of England.
The Duke of Suffolke.
The Lord Marques.
Sir Richard Iernyngham.
Sir William Kingstone.
Sir Giles Caple.
Sir Nicholas Carew.
Sir Anthony Kneuet.

The French King and seuen Chalengers of France.

For to furnish the dayes of iusts, there were appointed bands, and to euery band a captaine. The Earle of Deuonshire captaine to these.

The Lord Harberd.
The Lord Edmond Howard.
The Lord Leonard Grey.
Sir Edward Neuill.
Sir Francis Brian.
Sir Henry Noris.
Master Anthony Browne.
Master Nicholas Haruy.
Sir John Audley
Master Iohn Parker.
Master William Palmer.
Robert Iernyngham.
Sir Iohn Neuill.

The second captaine of the bands, the Lord Montague.

The Lord Richard Grey.
The Lord Iohn Grey.
Sir Thomas Cheiney.
Sir William a Parre.
Sir William Sidney.
Sir Griffith Dune.
Sir Ralph Eldarcare.
Sir Geffrey Gate.
Sir Powland Voluele.
Master Arthur Pole.
Francis Poines.
John Coffen.
Master Hansard,
with other.

The summe of these two bands were 128. for the English side. The King gaue to these two bands 100. markes, to witte, 50. markes a piece.

King Henry with his traine remoued on the one and twentieth of May, from his mannor of Greenewich towards the Sea, first to Otford, then to Léds, then to Charing, and so on the 25. came to, Canterbury intending there to keepe his Whitsontide.

On the next morrow, the Emperor Charles the fift returning out of Spaine, arriued with his Nauy of ships at Pithe in Kent, where hee was saluted by the Vice-admirall of England, sir William Fitz William, with fiue of the Kings great ships, which lay for the safegard of passengers betwixt Calais and Douer: toward euening the Emperor entred his boat, and Tho. Wolsey
comming toward land was met and receiued of Charles the
the Lord Cardinall. Thus landed Charles the fift Emperor
Emperor at Douer vnder his cloth of estate, of landed at
the blacke Eagle all fret on rich cloth of gold, Douer.

in whose company was the Quéene of Aragon with diuers noble estates, and faire Ladies of his countrey and blood, which were receiued at the sea side, by the Lord Legate Cardinall and other Lords and gentlemen. The Emperor so accompanied at ten of the cloche at night by torch light, was brought to the castle of Douer where he rested, and there sir Edward Poinings warden of the fiue ports, brought to the Emperor the keyes of the Castle, who refused them 01
saying, he knew well that he was out of all danger, and as safe, as if he were at home in his owne realme. The same night about two of the cloche after midnight, the King came to Douer by torch light, and as soone as the Emperor heard of his comming, he arose, and met with the King at the staire head, where eyther embraced other in armes, and there they talked together a long time, and alwayes the king had the Emperor on his right hand, on the morrow 20
which was Whitsonday, the King and the Emperor with all the other estates rode vnto Canterbury, the sword borne, by the Earle of Darby, ryding betweene them both, by the Kings commaundement, into the which Princes rode to Canterbury, and to Christs Church, where they were receiued with generall procession, by the Lord Cardinall and other. The King and the Emperor went both vnder one canapie vnto Thom. Beckets shrine, where they made their
prayers and oblations, and then went to the archbishops palace, where the Quéene of England the Emperors Aunt, met him going into the great Chamber, of whom he was ioyfully receiued and welcomed. The Emperor and the King take a little recreation, and then went to high masse, where they offered, first the Emperor, and then the King, and so returned to their trauerses set a part, and after went to dinner, at which seruice the Emperours trumpets 40
sounded and not the Kings. On Monday at nine of the cloche at night, was begun a banquet, which endured till the next morning at three of the cloche, at the which banquet the Emperor, the King and the Quéene did wash together, the Duke of Buckingham giuing the water, the Duke of Suffolke holding the towel, next them did wash the Lord Cardinall, the Quéene of France, and the Quéene of Aragon. At which banquet the Emperor kept the estate, 50
the King sitting on the left hand, next him the French Quéene and on the other side sate the Quéene, the Cardinall, and the Quéene of Aragon, which banquet was serued by the Emperors owne seruants. On Tuesday these estates departed out of Canterbury: The Emperor brought the Quéene his Aunt to horseback to Douer-ward. Then the Emperor and the King kept company together till they came to the Downes, where they parted. The Emperor 60
went to Sandwich, and so to his fléete, which were in number great ships with two tops the piece, 44.

King Henry tooke shipping toward Calais.

The King went to Douer, where he rested that night, and on the thursday tooke shipping to Calais, where he landed about eleuen of the cloche, where he remained fiue dayes, and with him the Quéne and Ladies, and many nobles of the realme. The number of persons on the King and Quéenes side were 4334. and of horses, 1637. besides the persons on the French Quéenes, and Duke of Suffolke her husbands, and of the Cardinals.

On the fourth of June, the King with all nobles, as well the Quéene with her traine of Ladies as other, with the whole number of nobles remoued from Calais to Guisnes, into the most noble and royall lodging before séene, for it was a Palace made quadrant, and euery quadrant was 328. foote long, which was in compasse 1312. foote about, set on stages with great cunning.

The 7. of June, the kings of England and France met at the campe betwéene Guisnes and Arde, with both their swords drawne and borne before them.

The tenth of June, the king of England dined with the French Quéene in the towne of Arde: and the French king dined the same day with the Quéene of England, in the new palace made before the Castle of Guisnes, which house was the most sumptuous, and costly of riches that hath béene séene.

And after this, these two Kings met euery day after at campe, with diuers Lords, and there iusted and turneyed 14. dayes: and the two Quéenes met at Guisnes and at Arde diuers times.

The 24. of June these two Kings & Quéenes with their retinues, met at a campe where the iusts were kept, and there they banqueted and daunced with maskings and disguising, that the like had not béene lightly séene, almost all the night following, and then take their leaue and departed: and on the 25. of June, the king of England and the Quéene, and all the court, 40
remoued from Guisnes to the towne of Calais, where they rested.

On the tenth of July, the King with a goodly company rode to the towne of Gaueline in Flanders, and there met with Charles the Emperor, and on the next morrow, the Emperor, & the Lady Margaret, the Emperors Aunt Dutchesse of Sauoy, with many other great estates came with the King of England to the towne of Calais, whereby all the Lords and states of England were displaced of their lodgings: and Banqueting
for solace against their comming, was builded house in the
a Banqueting house 800. foote compasse like a town of Ca-
Theatre, after a goodly deuise, builded in such lais.
manner, as I thinke was neuer séene, with fif- Rich. Turpin.
teene principals made of great masses, betwixt euery mask foure and twenty foote, and all the out-sides closed with bord and canuas, within the which, and round about were raised scaffolds of three stages high, for men and women to stand vpon: and in the midst of the same banqueting house was set vp a great pillar of timber made of 8. great masts, bound together with yron bondes for to holde them together, for it was 134. foote of length, and cost 6. l. 13. s. and 4. d. to set it vpright. The banquetting house was couered ouer with canuas, fastened with ropes and yron as fast as might be deuised.

And within the saide house was painted the Heauens, with starres, sunne, moone, and clouds, with diuers other things made aboue ouer mine heads: and there were great Images of timbers couered with canuas painted, representing men of diuers strange nations, and diuers reasons were written by them of the countries that they were likened to be of, and the armes of those countries hanging by them. Also there was made as it were many ships vnder saile, and windmils on the hils winding: especially there was on the one side set out all the armes of the Kings of England, with the kings petigrée: and on the other side, the Emperors armes and descent, and about the high pillar of timber in the midst was framed diuers stages, for organs, and other instruments of musicke to bee placed with men, and children, as well to play on them, as for to set forth their musicall voices, & to haue made, as it were, an heauenly noise. But when the Emperor and the King of England, and the other states should haue sit downe to their banquet, this house, and all things els in great abundance being prepared for furnishing thereof, it fortuned, that in the morning of the same day, the wind began to rise, and increasing till the euening, it then on a sodaine blew off all the canuas heauen with planets, &c. and blew out more than 1000. torches and other lights of war prepared to haue giuen light to the banquet. The seates which were with great riches prepared for the Emperor and the King, were bathed and lost. The same night the King of England with 15. persons more richly apparelled in a maske, went to the Emperors lodging, and in the chamber of presence danced and reuelled, and then departed.

Banqueting house decked, the canuas heauen blowne downe.

The twelfth of July, the Emperor, and the Lady Margaret slipped with the King & Quéene of England, at the Orcheguer, where the same night were eight companies of maskers, and in euery company were 12. persons, all in gold, siluer and veluet, richly apparelled. The Emperor and the King in this meane time, besides their pastimes, caused the charters before times concluded to be read, all the articles of the league tripartite, agréed betwixt the Emperor and the King of England, and the French King were at full declared, to the which the French King had condescended: and for the more exemplifying of the same, he sent monsieur de Roch with letters of credence, to signifie to the Emperor, that in the word of a Prince he would obserue and kéepe all the same articles, for him, his realme, and subiects.

The 8. of July the Emperor Charles and the Lady Margaret, departed out of Caleis. The King gaue to the Emperor a Bare Courser, trapped with goldsmithes worke, set with stones and pearle, in which place the Emperor alighted from his horse, and mounted vpon the saide courser, wherein he take great delight, and take him vp with the spurres lustily, and so departed lowingly from Caleis, and rode to Gaunelin. The King remayned at Caleis some few dayes, and then take Shipping with the Quéene and Nobility, and had faire wind to Douer, where he arriued the same night with all his company in safety.

This yere King Henry kept his Christmas at his manor of Greenwich, with great royalty & open court, and on the 10. of February in his owne person iusted with all commers. 1521.

About this time the king being moued by such of his councell as had regard to the common wealth of this Realme, considering how for the space of fiftie yéres past and more, the nobles and gentlemen of England, being giuen to grasing of cattell, and kéeping of shéepe, to the great decay of husbandry and tillage, furnishing the ground with beasts, cheep and deere, & inclosing the fields with hedges, pales, and ditches, as might stand most to their owne priuat commoditie: Wherefore the King causing such good statutes as had béene deuised and established for reformation in this behalfe, to be renued and called vpon, and also directing forth his commission vnto Iustices of peace, and other such magistrates, that presentement should be made of all such inclosures, and decay of husbandry as had chanced within the space of 50. yeres before that present time. The Iustices and other magistrats, according to their commission executed their authority: and so commandement was giuen, the decayed houses should be built againe, that the husbandmen should be placed ottsomes in the same, and that inclosed grounds should be laid open, & sore punishment appointed against them that disobeyed. Order taken against inclosers.

In this meane time Edward Duke of Buckingham was accused of high treason, wherefore the King directed his letters to the said Duke, being at his manor of Thornebury in Glocestershire, that incontinently he should come to his presence, which commandement the Duke obeyed, and came to London, where hee was straight waies arrested by sir Henry Marney Captaine of the gard, and conueyed to the Tower of London on the 16. of Aprill: before which time sir Gilbert Parke the Dukes Chancellor was taken, which had confest matter of high treason, concerning the Kings person. There was also attached one Nicholas Hopkins a monk of the order of Carthusians, being of Penton priory in Sommersetshire, and John de la Court the Dukes confessor, and other, these were prisoners in the Tower. D. of Buckingham accused and arrested.

After the apprehension of the Duke, inquisitions were taken in diuers shires of him, so that by the knights and gentlemen he was indicted of high treason for certaine words spoken by the said Duke at Blechingly in Surrey, to George Neuill Lord Burgauenny, and thereuith was the same Lord attached for concealement, and so likewise was the Lord Montague, and both conueied to the tower: and sir Edward Neuill brother to the said Lord of Burgauenny was forbidden the Kings presence. Hall.

Moreouer, in the Guild hall of London, before Sir John Bruge knight, then Maior of the same City, by an inquest, the said D. was indicted of diuers points of high treason, as by the same inditement (which I haue séene and read) it appeareth, inferring, that the said duke intending to exalt himselfe, and to vsurpe the crowne, the royall power, and dignity of the Realme of England, and to depriue the King thereof, that hee the sayde Duke might take vpon him the same against his allegeance, had the tenth day of March, in the second yére of the kings raigne and at diuers times before, and after, imagined and compassed the Kings death and destruction at London, and at Thornebury in the County of Glocester: and for the accomplishment of the wicked intent and purpose, the 24. of Aprill, in the fourth yére of the Kings raygne, he sent one of his Chaplaines called John de la Court, vnto the priory of Penton in Somersetshire, which was an house of Carthusian Monkes, there to vnderstand of one Nicholas Hopkins, a monke of the same house (who was bainely reputed by way of reuelation to haue foreknowledge of things to come) what should happen concerning this matter, which he had imagined: which monke, causing the said de la Court first to sweare vnto him, not to disclose his words to any manner of person, but onely to the Duke his master, therewith declared that his master the said duke should haue all, willing him for the accomplishment of his purpose to séeke to winne the fauour of the people. De la Court came backe with this answere, and told it to the Duke at Thornebury the morrow after, being the 25. of Aprill. And on the 22. of July the same fourth yére, the Duke sent the same de la Court with letters vnto the saide Monke, to vnderstand of him further of such matters, and the Monke told to him againe for answere, that the Duke should haue all: and being asked as well now as before at the first time, how he knew this to bée true, he saide by the grace of God, and with this answere, de la Court now also returning, declared the same vnto the Duke, on the 24. of July at Thornebury aforesaid. Moreouer, the saide Duke sent the same de la Court againe vnto the said Monke with his letters the 26. of Aprill, in the 5. yére of the Kings raigne, when the King was to take his iourney into France, requiring to vnderstand what should become of these warres, and whether the Scottish King should in the kings absence inuade this realme or not. The Monke among other things, for answere of these letters, sent the Duke word that the King should haue no issue male. Against the said Duke the 20 day of Feb. in the 6. yére of the Kings raigne, being at Thornebury, spake these words vnto Ralph Earle of Westmerland: Well, there are two Dukes created in England, but if ought but good come to the King, the Duke of Buckingham should be next in blood to succéede to the Crowne. After this the said Duke on the 16. day of Aprill, in the said first yére of the Kings raigne, went in person vnto the Priory of Penton, and there had conference with the foresaid Monke Nicholas Hopkins, who told him, that hée should bée King: whereunto the Duke said, that if it chanced, hée would shew himselfe a iust and right louing Prince. The Monke also told the Duke that he knew by his relation, and willed him in any wise to procure the loue of the commons, the better to attaine his purposed intention. The Duke the same time gaue, and promised to giue yerely vnto the saide Priory 6. pound, therewith to buy a tunne of wine: and further promised to giue him of the said Priory in ready money twenty pounds, whereof ten pounds he gaue in hand, towards the conueying of water vnto the house by a Conduit. And to the saide Monke Nicholas Hopkins, he gaue at that present in reward three pound, and at one other time forty shillings, and at another time a marke, and at another time fiue shillings and eight pence. After this, on the twentieth day of March, in the tenth yere of the kings raigne, he came to the same priory, and oftimes had conference with the saide Monke, to bée more fully informed by him in the matters aboue specified, at what time the Monke also told him that he should be King, and the Duke in talke told the Monke, that he had done very well to binde his Chaplaine John de la Court, vnder the seale of confession, to kéepe secret such matters, for if the Kings should come to knowledge thereof, it would be his destruction. Likewise, the twentieth day of October, in the seuenty yére of the Kings raigne, and at diuers other times, as well before as after, the saide Duke had sent his Chancellor Robert Gilbert, Chaplaine vnto London, there to buy certaine clothes of golde, siluer, and veluets, euery time so much as amounted to the value of three hundred pound, to the intent, that the saide Duke might bestow the same, as well vpon Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen of the Kings house, and yeomen of his gard, as vpon other the Kings subiects, to winne their fauours and friendships to affist him in his euill purpose: which clothes the saide Gilbert did buy, and brought the same to the said Duke, who on the 20. day of January in the saide seuenth yére, and diuers other dayes and yéres before and after, did distribute, and giue the same to certaine of the Kings subiects, for the purpose before recited. Furthermore, the saide Duke the tenth of July, in the tenth yére of the Kings raigne, and diuers other dayes and times, as well before as after, did constitute more seuerall and particular offices in his Castles, honors, Lordships, and landes, than hee was accustomed to haue, to the end they might be assistant to him vnder colour of offices, to bring his euill purpose to passe. Moreouer, the same Duke sent to the king the tenth day of May, in the ninth yére of his raigne, for licence to retaine any of the Kings subiects, whom it should please him, dwelling within the shires of Hereford, Glouester, and Somersetshire: and also, that he might at his pleasure conuey diuers armours, and habiliments for warre into Wales, to the intent to vse the same against the King, for the accomplishment of his naughty purpose, which was to destroy the king, and to vsurpe the royal gouernment and power to himselfe: which suite for licence to haue Retayners, and to conuey such armours and habiliments of war, the said Gilbert the twentieth day of May, in the sayde

ninth yere, and diuers other dayes before and after at London, and East Granewich did follow, labouring earnestly, both to the King and counsell, for obtaining of the same. And the twentieth day of July, in the said ninth yere, the said Duke sent the said Gilbert vnto Henton aforesaid, to vnderstand of the aforesaid Monke Nicholas Hopkins what he heard of him: and the Monke sent him word, that before Christmas next there should be a change, and that the Duke should haue the rule and gouernment of all England. And moreouer, the twentieth day of February, in the eleuenth yere of the Kings raigne, at Blachingly in Surrey, the sayde Duke sayde vnto the saide Robert Gilbert his Chancellor, that he did expect and tarry for a time more conuenient to atchieue his purpose, and that it might easily be done, if the nobles of the Realme would declare their minds together: but some of them mistrusted and feared to shew their minds. Hee sayde further the same time vnto the saide Robert Gilbert, that whatsoeuer was done by the Kings Father, was done by wrong: and still the Duke murmured against all that the King then presently raigning did. And further he said, that he knew himselfe to be so wicked a sinner, that hee wanted Gods fauour, and therefore he knew, that whatsoeuer he toke in hand against the King had the worse successe. And furthermore, the saide Duke (to alienate the Kings subiects minds from dutifull obedience, towards him and his heires, the twentieth of September, in the first yere of his raigne) bring then at London, reported to Robert Gilbert, that he had a certaine writing, sealed with the Kings great seale, comprehending a certaine act of Parliament, in the which it was enacted, that the Duke of Somerset, one of the Kings progenitors was made legitimate. And further, that the said Duke meant to haue deliuered the same writing vnto King Henry the seuenth, but (said he) I would not that I had so done for ten thousand pounds. And furthermore, the same Duke the fourth day of November, in the eleuenth yere of the Kings raygne, at East Granewich in the County of Kent, said vnto one Charles Kneuet Esquire, after the King had repraued the Duke for retayning William Bulmer knight vnto his seruice, that if he had perceiued that he should haue bin committed to the tower, as he doubted he should haue bene, he would haue so wrought, that the principall doers therein should not haue had cause of great reioycing, for he would haue played the part, which his father intended to haue put in practise against King Richard the 3. at Salisbury, who made earnest suit to haue come to the presence of the same King Richard, which suite if hee might haue obtained, he hauing a knife secretly about him, would haue thrust it into the body of King Richard, as he had made semblance to kneele downe before him: and in speaking these words, he maliciously laid his hand vpon his dagger, and said, that if he were so euill vsed, he would doe his best to accomplish his pretended purpose, sweating to confirme his word, by the blood of our Lord.

And beside all this, the same Duke the 10. of May, in the 12. yere of the Kings raigne at London, in a place called the Rose, within the parish of S. Laurence Poultney in Candlestreet ward, demanded of the said Charles Knewet Esquire what was the talke amongst the Londoners, concerning the Kings iourney beyond the seas: and the said Charles told him, that many stode in doubt of the iourney, lest the Frenchmen meant some deceit towards the King: whereunto the Duke answered, it was to be feared lest it would come to passe, according to the words of an holy monke, for there is (saith he) a certaine Chartar house monke, that diuers times hath sent to me, willing me to send vnto him my chancellor, & I die send vnto him I. de la Court my chaplain, vnto whom hee would not declare any thing, till de la Court had sworne vnto him to keepe all things secret, & to tel to no creature liuing what he should heare of him, except it were to me, and the said monke to de la Court, that neither the King nor his heires should prosper, and that I should endeuour my selfe to purchase the good wils of the communality of England, for I (the same D.) and my blud should prosper and haue the rule of the realme of England. Then said Charles Knewet, the monke may be deceiued through illusion of the deuil, and that it was euill to meddle with such matters. Well said the Duke, it cannot hurt me, and so the duke seemed to reioyce in the Monks words. And further, the same time the Duke told the said Charles, that if the King had miscarryed now in his last sickness, hee would haue chopped off the heads of the Cardinall, of sir Tho. Louell knight, and of others: and also said, that he had rather die for it, than to be so vsed as he had beene. Moreouer, the 10. day of September in the said 11. yere of this Kings raigne, at Blechingly in the county of Surrey, walking in the gallery there with George Neuill knight, L. of Burgauenny, the Duke murmuring against the kings counsellors, and their gouernment, said vnto the said George, that if the King died, he would haue the rule of the realme in spite of whosoeuer said the contrary, & with all said, that if the said L. of Burgauenny would say, that the Duke had spoken such words, hee would fight with him, & lay his sword vpon his pate, and this he bound with many great oathes. These were the points and articles compiled in the indictment, and laid to his charge, whereof he was by the inquest found guilty.

On the 13. of May, the said D. was brought from the Tower by water vnto Westminster hall, before the D. of Norffolke high steward of England, to accomplish the high of appeale of the peere of peeres of the realme, and to discerne and iudge the cause of the peeres. There were also appointed to sit as peres and iudges vpon the Duke of Buckingham, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marques Dorset, the earles of Worcester, Deuonshire, Eller, Shrewsbury, Kent, Orford, and Darby, the L. Lords of S. Johns, de la Ware, Fitz Waren, Willoughby, Brooke, Cobham, Herbert, and Morley. There was made within the hall at Westminster a Scaffold for these Lords, and a pressence for the Iudge railed, and counterrailed about, and barred with degrees. When the Lords had taken their place, the Duke was brought to the Barre, and vpon his arraignement pleaded not guilty, and put himselfe vpon his peres. Then was the indictment read, which the Duke confessed to bee true, and (as he was an eloquent man) alleaged reasons to falsifie the indictment, very pithily. The kings attorney against the Duke reasons, alleaged the examinations, confessions and proofes of witnesses. The Duke desired the witnesses might be brought forth: and then came before him Charles Kneuet, Sir Gilbert Perke his Chancellor, John de la Court his Confessor, and Nicholas Hopkins the monke of Henton that had fed his humour with faire speeches: diuers presumptions and accusations were laid to him by Charles Kneuet, which he would haue couered. But the depositions being read, and the deponents deliuered prisoners to the officers of the Tower, finally, he was found guilty by his peres, and hauing iudgement to suffer as in case of treason is vsed, was led againe to his barge, and so conueyed, by water, to the Temple staires, where he was set a land, and from thence by land through London to the Tower with the axe afore him, Sir William Sands hauing him by the right arme, and Sir Nicholas Vaux by the left arme. And on the 17. of May, being the fryday before Whitsunday, he was deliuered to the Sheriffes of London, who led him to the scaffold on the Tower hill, about 11. of the clocke, and there he was beheaded, in the presence of sir Thomas Louel and all the people, his body with the head was borne by the fryers Augustines to their church, and there buried in the chappell church for the close. And now followeth the publication at the disgrading of the saide Edward late Duke of Buckingham knight & companion of the most noble order of S. George, named the Gartar, which was read and published by Gartar king at Armes, at the feast of Saint George, in the quire of Windsor Colledge, standing on the high pase at the dore, all the other officers of armes about him, there being also present the Lord Marques Dorset knight of the same order, then being the Kings deputy for the feast, the Earle of Esser, the Earle of Wiltshire, the Earle of Kent, sir Thomas Lovel, and the Lord le Ware, knights of the said order, with other great audience assembled there on the eight of June, the thirteene yere of Henry the eight, the yere of Christ, 1521.

Duke of Buckingham beheaded.

Duke of Buckingham disgraded.

Disgrading of a knight of the Gartar.

Vee it knowne vnto all men, that whereas Edward late Duke of Buckingham knight, & companion of the Noble order of S. George, named the Gartar, hath lately done and committed high treason against the King our soueraigne Lord, and soueraigne of the saide order of the Gartar, in compassing and imagining the destruction of the most Noble person of our said soueraigne Lord the King, contrary to his oath and due allegeance, and for the which high treason the said Edward hath bin iudged, arraigned, conuicted, and attainted, for the which detestable offences and high treason, the saide Edward hath deserued to bee disgraded of the said noble order, and expelled out of the saide companp, and not worthy that his Armes, enfignes, and hatchments should remaine among other noble enfignes of the other noble, vertuous, and approued knights of the said Nobls order, nor haue the benefit of the said noble order: wherefore our said soueraigne Lord the King, soueraigne of the saide Noble order of S. George, named the Gartar, by the aduise of the other knights of the said Noble order, for his saide offences, and committing of the said high treason willfully and contumaciously, that the said Edward Duke of Buckingham be disgraded of the said Noble order, and his Armes, Enfignes, and hatchments clerely expelled, and put from among the Armes, Enfignes, and hachments of the other noble knights of the saide order, to the intent, that all other Noble men thereby may take ensample hereafter, not to committe any like haynous and detestable treason and offences, as God forbid they should.

God saue the King.

It is to be remembred, that Somerset Herault was in the rowe left behind the hachments of the saide Duke Edward: and when Gartar spake these words, expelled and put from the armes, then the saide Somerset violently cast downe into the quire, his creast, his banner, and sword. And when the publication was all done, the officers of armes, spurned the saide hachment with their feete, out of the quire into the body of the Church, first the sword, and then the banner, and then was the creast spurned out of the said quire through the Church out at the west doze, and so to the Bridge, where it was spurned ouer into the ditch. And thus was the said Edward late Duke of Buckingham fully disgraded of the order of S. George named the Gartar.

The Duke of Buckingham had begun a great and sumptuous building of his Manor of Thornebury, but left the same vnfinished. The foundation of a very spacious hale Court was there begun, and certaine gates and towers in it castle like. It was of a foure or fiue yards high, and so remained, a token of a noble piece of worke purposed. Hee made a faire Parke hard by the castle, and toke much faire ground into it very fruitfull of corne, now faire lands for courting. The inhabitants cursed the Duke for those lands so inclosed. There was afore Duke Edwards time a Parke at East Wood, a myle or more off: but Duke Edward at two times enlarged it to the compasse of 6. myles, not without many curses of the poore tenants. John Leiland.

In this meane while, were the Emperor and the French King fallen at variance, so that the warre was renued betwixt them. For the pacifying whereof, Cardinall Wolsey with the Bishops of Ely and Durham were sent ouer, there went with them the Earle of Worcester the Lord Chamberlaine, the Lords S. Iohn Ferrers. Warre betwixt the Emperor & the French King.

Ferrers, and Herbert, the Primate of Armacane, Sir Thomas Bolleigne, Sir John Pechy, Sir John Hussey, Sir Richard Wingfield, Sir Henry Gildford, and many other Knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen, these arrived at Caleis on the 2. of Auguſt.

The ſame day came to Caleis Ambaſſadors from the Emperor: and on the 4. of Auguſt, came the Chancellor of France, and the county de Pallace, with 1400. horſe, by which meanes, there met at Caleis, the Lords of England (before named) of Burgoygne, Spaine, Flanders, and France, with the Popes Orator, to make peace betwixt the Emperor and the French King. Cardinall Wolſey would have furthered a league betwixt the Emperor, the King of England, the King of France, and the Pope, but the Popes Ambaſſador wanted commiſſion therto, and therefore were letters ſent to Rome, and the French men remained ſtill at Caleis, till anſwer came from thence.

Cardinall Wolſey rode to Gaſnes, to the Emperor.

The Cardinall Wolſey on the 12. day of Auguſt rode into Flanders, to ſpeake with the Emperor, which as then lay in Bruges: a mile without Bruges, the Emperor received him, and did to him as much honour as could be deviſed: the cheare was great which was made to the Engliſh-men, and of every thing there was ſuch plenty, that there was no want of things neceſſary. The Cardinall after he had ſolourned in Bruges by the ſpace of 13. dayes, and concluded diuers matters with the Emperor, and accomplished his commiſſion, he tooke leaue of the Emperor, and the 29. of Auguſt, returned to Caleis, where the Ambaſſadors of France tarried his comming.

The firſt of September, the Cardinall Chancellor of England, the Chancellor of France, and the Chancellor of Burgoygne rode from Staple Inne, to our Lady Church in Caleis. The fourth of September, the Regent of Naples came to Caleis, to the great Councel there: and the 27. of September, the Chancellor of Hungary came to the ſame Councell, but in fine nothing was concluded, but onely that the fiſhermen of both Princes might freely fiſh in the Seas, without diſturbance, till the ſecond of February next. Thus when no concluſion of agreement could be accorded, the Cardinall ſent to the Emperor the Lord of Saint Johns, and Sir T. Boleine, Knight, to adverriſe him what was done.

During the continuance of the Cardinall at Caleis, all Writs and Patents were there by him ſcaled, and no Sheriffes of ſhire choſen for lacke of his preſence, having there with him the Great Seale, and full power in things, as if the King had beene there in perſon. After the returne of the Engliſh Ambaſſadors from the Emperor and the French King, the Cardinall returned into England about the latter end of November, he landed at Caleis, and from thence tooke his tourney to Blechingley, where the King welcomed him, and gaue him thankes for his great paines.

King Henry wrote againſt Luther.

King Henry wrote a booke againſt Luther in Germany, and therefore Pope Leo the tenth, named him Defender of the faith. To the which booke Luther anſwered very ſharply, nothing ſparing his authority or Maieſty.

Doctor Pace, Deane of Paules.

Pope Leo dyed this yere, whereupon Doctor Pace, Deane of Pauls, was ſent to Rome to make friends in the behalfe of Cardinall Wolſey, who was brought into a vaine hope, through the Kings fauour and furtherance, to be elected Pope: But Adrian the firſt was choſen before Doctor Pace could come to Rome, and ſo that ſuite was daſhed. This Pace was a right worthy man, and one that gaue in Councell faithfull advice, learned he was alſo, and endued with many excellent good gifts of nature, courteous, pleaſant, and delighting in muſicke, highly in the Kins fauour, and well heard in matters of waight.

A mighty inundation in Holland, Zealand, and Brabant.

This yere, 1521. the Sea ſwelled ſo exceedingly, and being encountred with the ſtrong ſtreames of the River of Reigne, Maſe, and others, by meanes whereof the waters overflowed their bankes and bounds, and overwhelmed 72. billages, and drowned above 100000. people with much cattell, and in the yere 1530. the River Tyber overflowed her bounds in the night, and did great damage to the Citty and Cittizens of Rome.

Rome annoyed with an inundation.

Great death and dearth in England.

This yeere was a great death in London and other places of the Realme: many men of honour and great worſhip dyed, and amongſt other, Doctor Fitz James, Biſhop of London, in whoſe place was elected Doctor Tunſtall. Alſo a great dearth in London and other places, for Wheate was ſold for twenty ſhillings the quarter.

1521. The Earle of Surrey returned out of Ireland, and came to the Court on the 25. of January.

Many complaints to the King were made by the Merchants of the French-men, which ſpoyled them by Sea of their goods, for by reaſon the warrs were open betwixt the Emperor and the French King, many ſhips of warre were abroad on both parts, and now and then the Engliſhmen fell into their hands, and were uſed as Enemies, namely, by the French-men, whereof the French Ambaſſadors promiſed reſtitution, but little was recovered. In the moneth of January, therefore the King commanded all his ſhips to be rigged, and made ready, which was done with all diligence.

Ships rigged to the Sea.

In this meane time, grudges and diſpleaſures ſtill grew and increaſed betweene the King of England and the French King, till at length the Duke of Albany returned into Scotland, contrary to that which was covenanted by the league. The French King alledged that he was not privy to his going thither, and wrote to the King, that the ſaid Duke was entred Scotland without his aſſent. Hereupon the King ſent fiue ſhips to the Sea well appointed, the Admirall whereof was Chriſtopher Coo, an expert Sea-man, his commiſſion was to ſafegard the Merchants, and other the Kings ſubiects that were in danger to be grieuouſly ſpoyled and robbed on the Sea by the French-men, Scots, and other rouers.

The

The eyghth of February, the Lord Dacres, Warden of the Marches, fore anent Scotland, entred into Scotland with fiue hundred men, by the Kings commandement, and there proclaimed that the Scots ſhould come into the Kings peace by the firſt of March following, or elſe to ſtand at their perills: the Duke of Albany being then within fiue miles with a mighty power of Scots.

The 11. of February, the Lord Burgauenny was brought from the Tower to Weſtminſter, and there in the Kings Bench, confeſſed his indictment of miſpriſion.

The Lord Montague was about the ſame time reſtored to the Kings fauour.

This yeere dyed the Lord Brooke, Sir Edward Poynings, Knight of the Garter, Sir Iohn Pechy, and Sir Edward Belknape, valiant Captaines.

A Scottiſh rouer, called Duncan Camell, after long fight was taken on the Sea by I. Arundell, Eſquire of Cornwall, who preſented him to the King, and he committed him to the Tower, where he remained a long ſeaſon.

The 6. of March, the French King commanded all Engliſhmens goods being in Burdeaux to be attached, and put under arreſt, and retained not onely the money due to be paid, for reſtitution of Turney, but alſo with-held the French Queenes dower. The French Ambaſſador therefore was called before the Councell, and the Cardinall laid fore to his charge, that contrary to his promiſe at all times made on the French Kings behalfe, affirming, that he meant nothing but peace and amity to be obſerued in all points with the King of England, yet now the Engliſh Merchants had not only their goods ſtaped at Burdeaux, but alſo they and their factors were laid in priſon in full breach of all peace and amity afore time concluded. The Ambaſſador as well as he could, excuſed his Maſter, but in the end hee was commanded to keepe his houſe, and the French hoſtages that were appointed here to remain for the money to be paid for the deliuery of Turney, were committed to ſafe keeping: wherewith alſo all the French-men in London were arreſted, committed to priſon, and put to their fines: but they were after ten daies ſet at liberty, vpon finding ſureties to appeare before the Maior, or elſe afore the Councell at a certaine day, and to pay the fine vpon them aſſeſſed, which time the King pardoned to diuers of the poorer ſort.

A generall preſcription of the Realme of England.

This yere betweene Caſter and Michaelmas, was made a generall proſcription of all the Realme of England by taking of muſters, and otherwiſe in every countrey, as may appeare by the charge ſent to a chiefe Conſtable.

William Fitz Williams Knight, Richard Fitz Lewes Knight, Robert Norwich, Sergeant at the law, and Iob. Tirell, Eſquire, commiſſioners aſſigned for our Soueraigne Lord the King, to the Baily, and chiefe Conſtable of the halfe hundred of M. greeting, where afore this time the ſaid William, Richard, Robert, and Iohn Tirell, by our late precept to you directed, charged you the high Conſtables of the ſame hundred, to giue monition and charge to all Conſtables of euery hamlet, Parith and village within the ſaid hundred, perſonally to appeare before the ſaid commiſſioners on Sunday next comming, the laſt day of the moneth of March at Waltham holy croſſe, and there to bring with them a certificate in writing, of the names of all manner of men, above the age of 16. yeres, dwelling within euery towne, hamlet and village within the ſaid hundred, and to do further as by the ſame precept more plainly doth appeare. We now certifies in the behalfe of the King our Soueraigne Lord, will and command you, that you duly execute the ſaid precept, and alſo that ye giue knowledge, warning and commandement to all manner of temporall men dwelling, inhabiting, or abiding within any towne, hamlet, parith, or village, within the ſame halfe hundred, perſonally to appeare before the Kings ſaid Commiſſioners at Waltham holy croſſe afore ſaid, the ſaid Sunday next comming, furniſhed and apparelled in their beſt array for the war, that is to ſay, with bowes, arrowes, bills, harneſſe, or any other weapons, artillery or harneſſe for the war, which they or any of them haue within the townes and hamlets of the ſaid hundred and euery of them. And alſo that they the ſaid laſt day of the preſent moneth of March doe certifie vs in writing at Waltham holy croſſe, afore ſaid, of all their names, and whom they belong vnto. Alſo who is Lord of euery towne or hamlet within the ſaid hundred, and who be Stewards. Item, who be perſons of the ſame townes and what the benefices be worth by yere. Alſo who be owners of euery parcell of land within any towne, hamlet, parith, or village within the ſaid hundred, with the yeerely value of euery mans land within the ſame townes, hamlets, parithes, and villages. And of euery ſtocke and flocks of Cattell, or other things that be occupied vpon any ferme within the ſaid townes, hamlets, and parithes, and who be owners of them. Alſo what aliants or ſtrangers dwell in any towne, hamlet, or parith within the ſaid hundred, and where they were borne, and vnder whoſe dominion. Item, what occupation, myſtery, or ſubſtance they be of. Item, the value and ſubſtance of euery perſon being of 16. yeeres and aboue, dwelling within your ſaid hundred, hamlets and parithes, as well ſpirituall as temporall. Alſo what penſions goeth out of any lands there to any religious or ſpirituall men, and that ye faile not this to doe, as ye tender the Kings pleaſure, and will auoid the contrary. At Wenteſwod 27. of March, in the 13. yeere of the raign of King Henry the 8.

Anno reg. 14.

There were ſent to the ſea vnder the conduct of Sir William Fitz Williams, Vice-admirall, 28. great ſhips well manned and furniſhed for the warres, and 7. other ſhips were ſent toward Scotland, which entred the Forth, and proffered to enter the Scottiſh ſhips that lay in the Hauens, but the Scots ran their ſhips a land, and the Engliſhmen followed with boats, landed, and ſet the ſhips on fire, and at the ſame tooke certaine priſoners, which they brought into England: and ſtill the Kings great Many kept

the narrow Seas: for then was neyther peace betwixt England and France, nor open warre.

The King vnderstanding that the Emperor would come to Calleis, to to passe into England, as he went toward Spaine, appointed the Lo. marques Dorset to goe ouer to Calleis, there to receiue him, and likewise the Lord Cardinall was appointed to receiue him at Douer.

Cardinall Wolsey rode toward Douer to receiue the Emperor.

The 26. day of May, Cardinall Wolsey rode through the City of London toward Douer, there to meete and receiue the Emperor, being accompanyed with 2. Earles, 6. Knights, 100. Gentlemen, eight Bishops, ten Abbots, thirty Chaplaines, all in veluet and satten, and seuen hundred yeomen.

The Marques Dorset, with the Bishop of Chester, the Lord de la Ware, and diuers other, at Graueline receiued the Emperor in the name of the King of England, on the fiue and twenty day of May, and with all honour brought him to Calleis, where he was receiued with procession, and by the Lord Barners Lieutenant of the towne, by the Maior and merchants of the Staple, in the best manner that might bee deuised. On the 26. he take ship at Calleis, and landed at Douer, where the Cardinall with a great number of Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen of England, was ready to receiue him, and with all the honour that might bee, brought him to the castle, where he was lodged.

On the 28. of May the King came to Douer, and there with great ioy the Emperor and he met, and saluted each other. On the 30. of May he rode from Douer to Canterbury, and so from thence, by easie iourneyes they came to Grauesend, where the Queene receiued her Nephew with all the ioy that might be. On the first of June, the King and the Emperor with all their company marched towards London, where the City was prepared for their entry, after the manner as is vsed at a coronation; so that nothing was neglected that might sette forth the honor of the City wherein they were receiued by the Maior, Aldermen, and commons: the Crosse in Cheape was new gilt, and eleuen pageans were deuised on stages very faire and excellent to behold. The Emperor was lodged at the Blacke Freers, and all his nobles in the new builded house of Bridewell.

The Emperor harbles into London.

On Whitsunday the eight of June, the Emperor and the King rode to the Cathedrall Church of S. Paul, and there heard masse, which was sung by the Cardinall. The Emperor rode to diuers places, being feasted by the King, at Windsor they tarryed a whole weeke, where on *Corpus Christi* day the Emperour weare his mantle of the garter, and sate in his stall. The same day both the Princes receiued the Sacrament and sware their corporall oathes to kepe and obserue the league concluded betwixt them. On the morrowe after they departed from Windsor, and came to Winchester on the 22. of June.

The first of July, the Emperors nauy came before Hamuton, containing 1180. goodly ships. Then the Emperor toke leaue of the King, of whom he had many gifts and sends of money by way of loane, and so the first of July he take shippe, and made saile towards Spayne, where he arriued in safety the tenth day after.

Earle of Surrey Lord Admirall, Brent Mooles in Bytaine, and then returned: not long after, he passed ouer to Calleis, entred Picardie, and burnt diuers townes and Castles. He besieged Hedoing, but because Winter was neere, he raised his siege, and returned.

Brent Mooles in Bytaine. I. Skelton.

The D. of Albany in Scotland began to enter this land with a great army, but hearing that the Earle of Shrewsbury was comming he take a truce for fiue moneths.

The Rhodes besieged.

In the beginning of this yere, Sultan Soliman Pac, called the great Turke, which was the 8. of the line of Ottoman the first that take vpon him to be great Captaine or ruler, and to whom Sultan Solime, his father had left the Empires of Constantinople, Trapesond, Alexandry, and Babylon, with many diuers kingdomes and realmes: which Sultan Soliman the yere before had gotten the towne of Belgrade, being the key of Hungary, because he saw at the Princes in Christendome now at discord, thought it most for his honor & profit to make war on the Ile of the Rhodes, and to take the same: which Ile had been kept the space of 224. yeers, by the brethren of knights of the order of S. Iohn of Ierusalem. Diuers things moued him to take this enterprise, one was because this Ile stood so, that the religious of the same oftentimes take & destroyed his ships as they came with gold, and other riches from Egypt, Sire, and other East parts to Constantinople, so that by them of that Ile he sustained more hurt than by all Christendome, because the said Ile stod in the very entry toward Constantinople. Another motion was, because his father when he dyed, charged him to assay to take the Rhodes, for to bee reuenged of the shame that they had done to their grandfather Mahomet the great Turke, which was with dishonour beaten from the siege of the Rhodes. But the greatest occasion of all was the exhortation of a great Counceller of the Religion called Andrew Amirall borne in Poytiers, which knew the whole estate, and in what case the Towne stod in. The cause why this Andrew Amirall bare malice to his Religion was, because after the death of his brother Fabrica de laretto Lord master of their religion, he was not elected to that honor, but one Phillip de la Villiers de Lisle Adame of France was named to be Lord maister, wherefore the said Andrew prouoked the Turke to come to the Rhodes.

The Rhodes besieged by two hundred thousand Turkes. Why the Turke coueted the Rhodes.

The great Turke seing so great an occasion offered, and desiring honor, and also knowing the fortresse of the Rhodes to lacke munitions, for the brethren of the order were both of such wealth and pride, & also of such wicked life, that they toke no heede of their vow and solemne profession, nor foresaw things to come, and so their towne vnfurnished was sone surprised. The said Turke prouided for 300. saile, in

in the which he conueyed all his artillery, and other things necessary. In the which Army were 60000. miners and pioners prepared to dig and vndermine, the rest of the army came by land to a place called Fisco, which standeth so directly against the Rhodes, that a fire may be seene from the one side to the other: from the which place the Turke sent Letters to the aboue named Phillip de Villiers Lord master of the Religion, signifying to him, that he would haue the said Ile, for the great damage that they had done to him and his people: and if they would yeld to him the said Ile, he promised on his faith, and by Mahomet his first Prophet, they should haue no damage nor hurt by him, and that they that would depart should goe in safety, and they that would tarry and serue him, should haue good wages: and if they refused this to doe, bee sware that he would subuert the walles of their Fortresse, and destroy them all. and make them slaues, which letter was dated at Constantinople, the first of June.

Chap-stone ordaind pioners sent to the Rhodes.

The said Lord master and his company were greatly abashed at this letter, but yet like hardie gentlemen they intended to defend them, and made all the preparations that they could doe in so short space, and wrote to all Christian Princes of their distresse. But the Turke knowing the great diuision amongst the Christian Princes, so that they could send no succour to the Rhodes: sent 200000. Turkes, which arriued in the Ile of the Rhodes on Midsommer day, which was the festiuall day of the Rhodes in honour of S. Iohn Baptist, which sodden coming sore abashed the Rhodians, being but 600. knights, & 5000. other met to beare armis: yet of noble courage & trusting in God, they determined to defend themselues against the enemies of God. And on the 28. of July the Turke arrined there in his owne person, which much encouraged his people: he sent his ordinance toward the Towne, but did no great harme, wherefore he caused all his pioners to cast earth one banke ouer another till til they came within a bow shotte of the wals: and although that many of the pioners were slaine with ordinance of the towne, they neuer ceased till they had made a banke of earth higher by ten sote than the wall of the towne, and laid there their ordinance, so that no person durst stir on the wals or bulwarkes. Thus with mounts of earth was the towne environed, & behind the mountaines lay the Basheaw and cheifetians of the Turke, which were euer ready to take their aduantage, and daily they shot into the towne, and beat downe houses, and slew the people in the streets, for they vpon the mount might easily see into the towne: besides this, the Turke caused so many mines to be made in diuerse places, that they within were not able to make countermines for lacke of people, in somuch, as women were set at worke, to dig and carry, by reason whereof a great part of the wals were ouerthrowne, and if they within had not made countermines, the towne had bin gotten within a short space. Also the Turke in the moneth of September gaue to the Rhodians foure great assaults, but the Christians so valiantly defended them, that at euery assault they lost 10000. Turkes and more.

The great Turke seing the losse of his men at the assaults, sent for Mostaffa Bashaw, and much blamed him, that he had perswaded him that he might haue taken the towne in 12. daies, or in a moneth at the most; wherefore in his fury he would haue put him to death: but in conclusion the Turke determined cleerely to raise his siege, and to depart, and so had done, if that same night sir Andrew Amirall, & a Iew with in the Rhodes had not written letters, and shot them out on quarels into the Turkes army: by which letters the Turke knew the necessity of the towne, and feeblenes of the people, which caused him to change his purpose: but this treason was espied, the traitors taken, and put to terrible execution. The Turke caused so many mines to bee made, that both bulwarkes, wals, and towers were ouerthrowne. and so on S. Andrewes euen he caused a great assault to be giuen: but yet the Christians so valiantly defended themselues, that they slew 3000 Turks, and kept them from entering that day: but the citizens of the Rhodes after this assault came to the Lord master, and prayed him to haue compassion on them, the Lord master comforted them with faire words: but by chance about the same time the great Turke sent a letter into the Rhodes, willing them to deliuer the towne, and they all should haue their liues and goods, and they that would tarry should remaine quiet. This letter being knowne, the people of cyprc out on the Lord master to take the offer, wherefore calling all his councell, for diuers wants amongst them, they sent to the Turke two of the religion, for the assurance of his promise, who were well entertained, and had writings sealed of all things that they desired. To the which two Knights, Aymech Bashaw sweare, that there were slaine at that siege 64000. Turks, and 40000. dead of mortality & more. And on Christmas day, the great Turke himselfe entered into the Rhodes, and toke possession thereof, and the Lord master and all his religion, the first day of January toke shippe, and sayled to Candy, and so to Rome, and there declared his chance and aduenture. Thus was the towne and the Ile of the Rhodes taken by the great Turke, which was a great succour to all Christian men, reseruing to the east parts of the world, which chance was much lamented (but too late) throughout all Christendome, and much blame put in Princes, because they sent no succour to them of the Ile.

Yeelding of Cyprc to the Turkes.

1523

Register of the Grey Friers.

Lady Alice Hungerford beheaded.

The 20. of February, the Lady Alice Hungerford a Knights wife, for murthering her husband, was led from the Tower of London to Holbourne, and there put in a Cart with one of her seruants, and so carried to Tyborne, and both hanged: she was buried in the Grey Friers church at London.

Thomas Howard Earle of Surrey, burned 27. villages in Laydon, dispeopled the countrey from the East marches to the West, and

ouer thiewe diuers holds.

Thomas Ruthall Bishop of Durham being deceased, the King gaue that Bishoprike vnto Cardinal Wolsey, who resigned the Bishoprick of Bathe to Doctor Iohn Clarke maister of the Rolles: And sir Henry Marney that was vicechamberlaine, was made Lord priuy seale, and shortly after he was created Baron Marney at Richmond.

Doctor Blych Bishop of Chester was attached for treason, but he acquit himselfe.

Parliament, or the Blacke Fryers.

The 15. of Aprill began a Parliament at the Blacke Fryers in London, and that day the King came into the Parliament chamber, and there sate in the state royall, and at his feet on the right side sate the Cardinall of Yorke, & the Archbishop of Canterbury: and at the raile behinde stod Doctor Tunstall Bishop of London, which made to the whole Parliament an eloquent oration, declaring the office of a King. First he must be a man of iudgement, according to the saying of the Prophet Dauid, *Deus iudicium tuum regi da, &c.* Also he must bee a man of great learning, according to the saying of the Prophet, *Erudimini qui iudicatis terram.* According to which saying, he said that God had sent vs a Prince of great iudgement, of great learning, and great experience, which according to his Princely duty forgat not to study to set forwards all things, which might be profitable to his people and realme, lest might be laid to his charge the saying of Seneca, *Si rex, & non habes tempus esse rex?* Art thou a King, and hast no time to be a King: Which is as much to say, as art thou a King, and doest nothing profitable to thy people? Art thou a King, and seest the people haue an insufficient Law? Art thou a King, and wilt not prouide remedy for the mischiefe of thy people? These things haue indeed caused the Kings highnesse to call this high court of Parliament, both for remedie of mischiefes which be in the common law, as receiuories, forein vouchers, and corrupt tryals; and for making and ordering of new statutes, which may be to the high aduancing of the common wealth: wherefore he willeth the commons to repaire to the common house, and there to elect them a speaker, & their common mouth, and to certifie the Lord Chancellor of the same, which should thereof make report to the Kings most noble grace, which should declare his pleasure when he would haue him presented before his person.

Oration of Sir Thomas Moore.

This was the cause of the Parliament, he said, but of these things no one word was spoken in the whole Parliament, nor any good act made, except the grant of a great subsidy. The Commons chose for their speaker Sir Thomas Moore Knight, and presented him the saturday after in the Parliament Chamber. Where he according to the vsage, disabled himselfe, both in wit, learning, and discretion to speake before the King, and brought in for his purpose, how one Phormio desired Hannibal to come to his reading, which thereto assented, and when Hannibal was come, hee began to reade *De remissionis*, that is, of chiualrie: when Hannibal perceiued him, he called him arrogant fole, because he would presume to teach him, which was master of chiualrie in the feats of warre: to the speaker saide, If I should speake before the King of learning, and ordering of the common wealth, and such other like, the King being so well learned, and of such prudence and experience, might say to him as Hannibal to Phormio: wherefore he desired his grace that the Commons might chose another speaker. The Cardinall answered, that the King knew his witte, learning, and discretion by long experience in his seruice: wherefore he thought that the Commons had chosen him as the most meetest man of all, and so he did admit him. Then Sir Thomas Moore gaue to the King his most humble thankes, and desired of him two petitions: the one, if he should bee sent from the Commons to the King on message, and mistake their intent, that hee might with the Kings pleasure resorte againe to the Commons, for the knowledge of their true meaning. The other was, if in communication and reasoning, any man in the common house should speake more largely than of duty they ought to doe, that all such offences should bee pardoned, and that to be entred of record: which two petitions were granted, and thus begunne the Parliament. And euen as there was much ado amongst them of the common house, about their agreement to the subsidy then required, so was there as hard hold for a while amongst them of the clergy in the conuocation house, namely, Richard Foxe Bishop of Winchester, and Iohn Fisher Bishop of Rochester held fore against it, but most of all Sir Rowland Philips vicar of Crodoione, one of the Canons of Paules, a famous and notable preacher in those dayes, spake most against that paiment. But the Cardinall taking him aside, so perswaded the matter with him, that he came no more into the house, willingly absenting himselfe, thus he giuing ouer his hold, the other perswaded, and so was granted the halfe of all their reuenues spirituall for one yere, to bee paide in 5. yeres following. Now on the 29. of Aprill, the Cardinall accompanied with diuers Lords, as well spirituall as temporall, came into the common house, where he eloquently declared to the commons, how Francis the French King the first, called the most Christian King, had oft-times broken promise with the King of England, and his nephew Charles the Emperor, that the King of his honor could no longer suffer. For he first declared that the meeting of the said 2. Princes at Guisnes, the said French King was sworne to keepe all the articles contained in the league, sith the which time he hath made warre on the Emperors dominions, &c. he also hath withholden his tribute, and other paiments which he should pay to the K. of England, for redemption of Turney and Turwine, &c. Wherefore of necessity the King was driuen to warre, which in no case could bee maintained without great summes of money, and hee thought no lesse than 800000. pound, to be raised of the first part of euery mans goods and

An. Reg. 15.

Great subsidy granted.

There were not 13000. parishes then in England as I haue obiected.

and lands, that is to say, foure shillings of euery pound: for he sayde that the yere following, the King and the Emperor should make such warre in France as had not beene seene.

After that hee had declared his matter at length, exhorting the commons to ayde their Prince in time of necessity, he departed out of the common house.

The morow after, sir Thomas Moore declared all the Cardinals oration againe to the commons, and enforced his demand, saying, that of duty men ought not to deny to pay foure shillings of the pound. But for all that it was denyed, and proued manifestly, that if the first part of substance of the Realme were but 800000. and if men should pay to the King the first part of their goods in money or plate, it was proued that there was not so much money out of the Kings hands in all the Realme, for the first part of euery mans goods is not in mony nor plate: for although fiue men were well monyed, fiue thousand were not so, the gentleman of lands hath not the first part of the value in coine: the marchant that is rich in silke, woll, tin, cloth, and such like, hath not the first part in money, &c. And then consequently, if all the money were brought to the Kings hands, then men must barter cloth for victuall, and bread for cheese, and so one thing for another. Then consider that after this valuation, the King hath had by the way of loane two shillings of the pound, which is 400000. pound, and now to haue foure shillings of the pound, which amounteth in the whole to 12. hundred thousand pound, which first and last is fiue shillings of the pound, which is almost the third part of euery mans goods, which in coine cannot be had within the realme: for the proofe whereof was alleaged, that if there were in England but 15000. parishes and euery parish should giue 100. marks, that were but fifteene hundred thousand marks, which is but ten hundred thousand pound: and how many parishes be in England one with another, able to spare a hundred markes, out of cities and townes: and where it is written, that in England there be forty thousand parish Churches, it was proued that there were not 13000. parishes. Then account, the whole sum cannot mount aboue tenne hundred thousand pound, and the King demandeth 800000. and bee after this valuation hath had 400000. pound, therefore it was thought the sum impossible to be leuied: and if all the coine were in the Kings hand, how should men liue? Also the King had of the spirituall men the last yere, foure shillings of the pound, &c. To conclude, after a long debating, the commons granted two shilling of the pound of euery mans goods and lands that were worth 20. pound, or might dispend twenty pound by yere, and so vpward, and from forty shillings to twenty pound, twelue pence of the pound: and vnder forty shillings of euery head fifteene yeres and vpward, foure pence to be paid in 2. yeres. This Parliament the 21. of May was adiorned to Westminster among the blacke monks, and ended in the Kings Pallace at Westminster the fourteene of August, at nine of the clocke in the night.

The 27. of Aprill, was sir Arthur Plantagenet a bastard son to King Edward the fourth, at Calice created Viscount Lisle, in the right of his wife, which was sometime wife to Edm. Dudley beheaded, Sir Mauris Barkley lieutenant of Caleis was made L. Barkley, sir Will. Sands, L. Sands, and sir Nich. Vaux, L. Vaux.

Viscount Lisle.

Christerne King of Denmarke and his Queene, arryuing at the Downs besides Douer the 15. of June, came to London on the 22. of June, and were lodged in the Bishop of Bathes place. The first of July, they returned againe to Caleis.

The K. and D. of Denmarke arryued in England.

In this season the King hauing put an army of men in a readinesse, caused the same to be transported ouer to Caleis, and appointed the Duke of Suffolke to haue the leading thereof, and to make a iourney into France. The Duke according to his commission came to Caleis on the 24. of August, and there abiding the army, caused all things to be prepared for the same, as victuall, munition, and such like. There were appointed to attend him in this iourney, the L. Mountacute, and his brother sir Arthur Poole, the Lord Sands, the Lord Barkley, the Lord Powes, and the baron of Curson, and of knights, sir Richard Wingfield Chancellor of the dutchy of Lancaster, sir Iohn Vere, sir Edward Neuill, sir William Kingstone, sir Richard Westone, sir Andrew Windsor, sir Robert Wingfield, Sir Anthony Wingfield, sir Ed. Gilford, sir Edward Greuile, sir Edward Chamberlaine, sir Thomas Lucy, sir Edward Digby, sir Adrian Fortescue, sir Richard Cornwall, sir William Courtney, sir William Sidney, sir Henry Owen, and many other. The whole army consisted in 600. Demilances, two hundred Archers on horseback, 3000. Archers on foote, and 5000. Bill-men. To these also were adioyned 1700. taken out of the garisons of Hames, Guisnes, and Caleis, so that in all they were 10500. well armed and appointed for the war, besides 2600. labourers and pioners. These set out of Caleis on the 19. of September. The first enterprise that they attempted was the winning of Well castle, which they beate downe, and sent the Frenchmen prisoners to Caleis.

Duke of Suffolke entered France with a power.

In this season was the D. of Burbon high Constable of France reuolted from the French King to the service of the Emperor, & the King of England: for after it was knowne that this Duke had his minde alienated from the French King, Sir Iohn Russell (that was after Earle of Bedford) was sent into France vnto the saide Duke, which in disguised apparell ordered himselfe so wisely, that in couert manner he came to the Duke and so perswaded him, that he continued in his former determination, and auoided the Realme of France. The Duke of Suffolke remoued to Arde, and so into Picardie. At Cozdres a village betweene Turwine, and Saint Omers, there came to him the Lord of Iselton, and with him of Spaniards, Almaines, Clemeners,

Charles D. of Burbon reuolted from the French.

and after, 3000. footmen, and 500. horsemen. The D. being thus furnished with new ayde, marched forward, sending out diuers companies of his men to take townes, and fetch bootes. The Frenchmen were so afraide of the Englishmen, that they fled out of their houses, and left the townes and villages voyd. The Duke passed forth till he came to the towne of Bray, in the which were 1600. men of war, vnder the gouernance of Captaine Adrian.

The 20. of October the Duke caused his ordinance to be brought afore it, the which is so well applied in making batterie to the walles of the towne, that the towne was made assaultable, and then the Englishmen and other made forward, got the ditches, and after entred vpon the Wals, and so into the towne, and sodainely the French men fled, and thus was gotten the towne of Bray. The 21. of October, the army with their ordinance passed the riuer, and came to a towne called Enap, al the inhabitants were fled, but they had left good plenty of wine behind them. The Duke sent to them of Roy, requiring to haue the towne deliuered to him, which they graunted to doe, because they had no garrison of souldiers to defend them: thither was sent Sir Richard Cornwall, with 400. men, which receiued the towne, and kept it in good quiet, till the Duke came thither.

The 25. of October, the Duke remoued to a Village called Lyhowe, where the souldiours had great pillage. The next day they went to Dueuehier, and the 27. they came before the towne of Montdedier, in the which were 1000. footemen, and 500. horsemen: but after Sir William Seuingron had made battery foure houres, they within yelded the Towne vnto the Duke. The Duke remained in Montdedier till the laſt of October, and then remoued to Roy, where on Allhalowne day the Duke made Knights, the Lord Herbert, the Lord Powes, Oliuer Manners, Arthur Poole, Richard Sands, Robert Iernigham, Robert Salisbury, Edmond Beningfield, Richard Corber, Tho. Wentworth, William Sorton, Walter Mantill, George Warham, Edward Seymer. The next morrow the Army remoued to a place called Neale. The Souldiers being thus led from place to place, began to grudge, because of the winter season.

Duke of Suffolke maketh Knights.

The 6. of Nouem. the whole army came to a village called Ycau, & there rested that night, on the morrow they came to a place called Beuford: at this passage the Duke made John Dudley, and Robert Vrsright Knights.

The 8. of November, the Duke remoued to Mount S. Martine, and the Army remoued to Perwent, and there rested for a time. The Westlinen murmured that they might not returne home: but there were to the number of 1000. persons vnder the leading of Sir John Wallope, which had little wages or none, and liued as aduenturers, and therefore were so called, and of some called Brokers, these by spoyling of townes, taking of prisoners, and other such practises, brought daily to the campe, Horses, Victuals, Cloth, and other necessaries, which stood them in great stead.

Aduenturers or Brokers.

The 13. of November the Duke removed to a place with in 2. miles of Bogham castle, there the Westlinen set out great shouts and cryed: home, home, and as fast the Brokers cried: hang, hang, whereof great busines was like to haue ensued: the Frenchmen yelded the castle of Bogham, and all the Artillery, which was 76. peeces great and small. The Duke broke vp his army and returned, and left at Valencenus all the great ordinance, and returned into England the 30. day of December.

In December, at the City of Couentry, Francis Phillip Schoolemaster to the Kings Henrmen, Christopher Pickering clearke of the Kings larder, and Anthony Manuile gentleman, intended to haue taken the Kings treasure of his subsidy, as the collectors of the same came toward London, therewith to haue raysed men, and to haue taken the Castle of Killingworth, and then to haue made battell against the King, for the which they were drawne, hanged, and quartered at Tiborne the 11. of Feb. the other of their conspiracy were executed at Couentry.

Conspiracy at Couentry. 1524.

The Earle of Surrey brent Jedworth in Scotland, and toke diuers holes. The Duke of Albany besieged the castle of Warke, and had in a readines a great army to inuade England, but when he heard the Earle of Surrey was comming, he fled into Scotland.

An. reg. 16.

The 25. of May, deceased sir Thom. Louell Knight of the Garter, at Endsfield, and was buryed at Halywell an house of Nuns besides London, vnto the which house he had done a great benefactor, not onely in building of a beautifull Chappell, wherein his body was interred, but in many other godly buildings, and indowing the same with lands: And the same moneth deceased Thomas Lord Howard Duke of Norffolke, and was honourably buried at Chatford, and after at Fremingham, where he resteth.

Sir Thomas Louell deceased.

Chatford.

The souldiers of Guisnes toke a great booty at a faire in the towne of Norguilon, and sir Rob. Iernegan with certain dimilances of Caleis, toke diuers French prisoners.

The first of September, Doctor Tho. Hanibal maister of the rols, was received into London as ambassador from Clement the 7. Pope, which brought with him a Rose of golde for a token to the King, which was presented to him at Windsor. This tree was forged of fine gold, and wrought with branches, leaues, and flowers, resembling roses, set in a potte of Golde, which pot had 3. feete of antike fashion, of measure halfe a pint. In the vppermost rose was a faire saphire loupe pearced, the bignes of an Acorne. The tree was of height halfe an English yard, and in breadth a foote.

Golden rose sent from Rome. Ed. Hall.

It chanced in the yere passed, as partly hath been touched, a grudge to breake out betweene the French king, and the Duke of Burbon, insomuch that the Duke for the safegard of his life fled out of the French kings dominions, whereof the Cardinall Wolsey hauing intelligence, compiled in his heade, that if the King our

A policie of Cardinall Wolsey that might haue ben turned against himselfe.

our soueraigne Lord could obtayne him to be his generall in the warre against the French king, and considering further that the Duke of Burbon was fledde vnto the Emperour to inuite him to a like purpose, wherefore he hauing this imagination in his head, thought it good to moue the King in the matter, and after the King was once aduertised hereof, and conceiuing the Cardinals inuention, at last it came to a consultation among the Councell, so that it was concluded, that an Ambassage should be sent to the Emperour about the matter, with whom he was, that the King and the Emperour should ioyne in hole warres against the French King, and that the Duke of Burbon should be our Kings Champion and Generall in the fielde, who had great number of good Souldiers, ouer and besides the Emperours Army, which was not small: and that the King should pay vnto the Duke monethly wages, both for himselfe and his retinue, insomuch, as Sir John Russell lay continually beyond the seas in a secret place, both to receiue money of the King, and to pay the same monethly to the Duke, so that the Duke beganne the warres with the French King in his owne territory and Dukedome, which the King had confirmed in his owne hands, being not perfectly knowne vnto the dukes enemies that he had any aid out of England, and thus he wrought the French King much displeasure, insomuch, as the French king was constrained to prepare a puissant army, and in his owne person to resist the Dukes power, and with force the King drawe him to take Pauia, a strong Towne in Italy, with his horse, for their securitie, where as the king encamped him wonderously strong, intending to enclose the Duke that he should not issue forth, yet notwithstanding, the Duke did many times issue forth and skirmished with the King.

The Duke of Burbon champion for the King of England against the King of France.

Sir John Russell.

John Iokin messenger from the French king.

1525. Now let vs returne againe to the Cardinall Wolsey, who seemed to be sodainely altered, and to be more French than Emperiall, howsoeuer it came to passe: but the French king lying in his Campe, sent secretly into England a priuy person, a very witty man, to treate a peace betwixt the French King, and our King: this person was named John Iokin, who was kept as secretly as might be, for he was no Frenchman borne, but an Italian, a man of no great estimation in France, and for his subtill witte, elected to entreate of such Ambassage, as the French King had giuen him in commission. This Iokin was secretly conueyed into Richmond, and there remained, till the Cardinall resorted thither vnto him, where after Easter terme ended, he kept the feast of Whitsontide vere solemnely, in which season the Cardinall caused diuers times this Iokin to dine with him. Thus continued this Iokin in England long after, vntill at the last, as it should seeme, he brought to passe the matter that he had in commission. After this, there was sent out immediatly a restraint to sir Io. Russell, into those parts where he made his abiding beyond the seas, that hee should retaine that moneths wages still in his hands, vntill the Kings pleasure were to him knowne, which should haue beene paid to the Duke of Burbon, being then with his retinue encamped within the towne of Pauy, for want whereof at his day the Duke and his men were sore dismaid, when they saw there was not money brought as it was wont to be: and being in so dangerous a case, and where victualles began to be scant and very deere, they imagined many wayes what should be the lette, some sayde this, and some sayde that, so that they mistrusted nothing lesse, then the very cause thereof, insomuch, as at the last, what for want of victualles, and other necessaries, the Souldiours and Captaynes beganne to grudge and mutter, and at last, for lacke of victualles were like all to perish. The Souldiers being in this extremitie, came before their Captayne the Duke of Burbon, and sayde: Sir wee must bee of very force and necessitie constrayned to pelell by vp to our enemies, and better it were for vs so to do, then to sterue like Dogges. When the Duke saw their extremitie, hee saide vnto them with weeping eyes: Sirs (quoth hee) ye are both valiant men, and of Noble hearts, who haue serued me here right worthily, and for your necessitie (whereof I am participant) I ode not a little lament: but I shall desire you as you are Noble in heart and courage, so to take patience for a day or twaine, and if succour come not then from the King of England, as I doubt nothing that he will deceiue vs, I will well agree that wee shall all putte our selues and our liues into the mercie of our Lord, wherewith they were all agreeable. And tarrying the comming of the Kings money, vntill the terme of two dayes were past: the Duke seeing no remedie, called his Noble Captaines and Souldiours before him, and weeping sayde: Ye noble men and Captaines, I see no remedy in this necessitie, but either wee must yelde vs vnto our enemies, or else famish: and to yelde the Towne and our selues, I know not the mercie of our enemies, as for my part I passe not for their cruelties, for I know very well that I shall suffer death most cruelly, if I come into their hands: it is not for my selfe therefore that I so declament, but it is for your sakes, it is for your liues, and safegarde of your persons, for to that ye might escape the danger of our enemies hands, I would most gladly suffer death, therefore good companions, and most noble Souldiers, I shall require you all to consider the dangerous miserie and calamitie that wee stand in, to sell our liues most derely, rather than to bee murthered like beasts: if ye will bee agreeable, wee will take vpon vs this night to giue our enemies an assault, and by that meanes wee may either escape, or else giue them an ouerthrow, and thus if wee better to dye in the Fielde like men, than liue prysoners in captiuitie and miserie, to the which they all agreede: then (quoth the Duke) ye perceiue that our enemies Campe is strong,

and that there is no way to enter vpon them but one, and that is so planted with ordinance and strength of men, that it is not possible to attayne to our enemies that wayes to fight with them in Campe: And also now of late you perceiue they haue had but small doubt of vs, insomuch, that they haue kept but very slender watch, therefore my deuice shall be thus: There shall issue out of the Towne about the dead of the night from vs a number of you that be of the most deliuerest to assault their Campe, and they shall giue the assault right secretly, euen directly against the place of the entrie which is very strong and inuincible, your fierce and valiant assault shall be to them of the Campe so doubtfull, that they will turne their strength of the entry that lyeth ouer against your assaulte, to beate you from your purpose; then will I issue out of the Posterne, and come to the place of their strength newly turned, and there or they bee aware will I enter, and fight with them in their Campe, and winne their Ordinance, which they haue newly turned, and beate them with their owne peeces, and then may you come and ioyne with mee in the Fielde. This deuice pleased them woonderfull well. Then prepared they all that day for the purposed deuice, and kept them secret and close without any noyse, or shotte off peeces within the Towne, which gaue their Enemies the lesse feare of the assaulte: but at night went to their Tentes, and cowched quietly, nothing mistrusting that after happened vnto them. When the time came that all men were at rest, the assaylants issued out of the Towne, and there according to their appointment, they gaue so cruell and fierce assaulte, that thee in the Campe had as much to doe as was possible to resist them: and euen as the Duke declared before to his Souldiours, they within were compelled to turne their shotte that lay at the entry, against the assaylants. With that issued out the Duke, and with him about fiftene or sixtene thousand men, or more, secretly in the night, his Enemies being not pryuie of his comming vntill hee was entered the Fielde, and at his entry hee take all the Ordinance that laye there, and slewe the Gunners, then he charged the peeces against his Enemies, and slue them woonderfully, hee cutte downe the Tentes and Pauilions, and murthered many with in them, ere they were ware of his comming, suspecting nothing lesse than his entry, so that hee wanne the Fielde or euer the King could arise to the rescue; insomuch, as the King was taken in his lodging by the Vice-roy of Naples or euer he were harnessed, his Tentes were robbed and spoyled, which were woondrous rich, and in the spoyle and search of the Kings Coffers, the Duke of Burbon found the league vnder the great Seale of England, newly made betweene the King of England, and the French King, which once perceiued by him, began to smell the impediment of his money which should haue come vnto him from the King, hauing vpon diligent search intelligence, that all the matter was deuised by the Cardinall of England. The Duke conceiued such an indignation hereupon against the Cardinall, that incontinently he went to Rome, and there intended to sack the towne, and to haue taken the Pope, where at the first assault of the walles, the Duke was the first man that was slaine: yet notwithstanding, his Captaines continued their assault, and at the last won the Towne, and the Pope fled vnto the Castle of Saint Angell, where he continued long in calamity. All this notwithstanding, which ye haue heard, when newes was brought into England of the taking of the French King, great triumph was made for ioy thereof, on the 9. of March. Another triumph on the fiftene of March, for ioy that Richard de la Pole was slaine in the battell of Pauy. This battell of Pauy is at large set downe by Paulus Iouius.

French King taken prisoner.

Rome sacked

About such time as Cardinal Wolsey was determined to erect his new Colledges in Oxford and Ipswich, he obtained licence and authority of Pope Clement the 7. to suppresse about the number of 40. Monasteries of good fame, and bountifull hospitality, wherein the King bearing with all his doings, neyther Bishop, nor temporall Lord in this Realme durst say any word to the contrary. Now he manifested his pride vpon further hope of future greatnes.

Cardinall Wolsey suppresseth priories to build his colledges in Oxford & in Ipswich.

In the executing of this businesse, 5. persons were his chiefe instruments, who on a time made a demand to the Pope and couent of the monastery of Deintry, for occupying of certaine of their grounds, but the monks refusing to satisfie their requests, straight-way they picked a quarrell against the house, and gaue information to the Cardinall against them, who taking a small occasion, commanded the house to be dissolued, and to be conuerted to his new Colledge, but of this irreligious robbery done of no conscience, but to patch vp pride, which priuate wealth could not furnish, what punishment hath since ensued at Gods hand (saieth mine Author) partly our selues haue seene, for of those 5. persons, two fell at discord betweene themselues, and the one slewe the other, for the which, the Surviuor was hanged: the third drowned himselfe in a Well: the fourth being well knowne, and valued worth two hundred pound, became in thee yeeres so poore, that he begged till his dying day: and the fift called Doctor Allane, being chiefe executor of these doings, was cruelly maimed in Ireland, euen at such time as hee was a Bishop: the Cardinall falling after into the Kings grieuous displeasure, was deposed, and died miserably: the Colleges which hee meant to haue made so glorious a building, came neuer to good effect: the one at Ipswich cleane pulled downe, and the other in Oxford vnfinished: and Pope Clement himselfe by whose authority these houses were throwne downe to the ground, was after inclosed in a dangerous siege within the Castle of S. Angel in Rome by the Emperials, the City of Rome was pitifully sacked, and himselfe narrowly escaped with his life, as shall be shewed in anno. 1527.

E. Hall. Ambassadors to the Emperor Charles

In the moneth of March, King Henry sent Cuthbert Tunstall Bishop of London a famous clearke, sir Richard Wingfield chancellor of the Dutchy, and Knight of the Garter, into Spaine, to common with the Emperor for causes concerning the taking of the French King, for warres to be made into France on euery side.

The first part of all mens goods demanded to the King in his warres.

The King being thus determined to make warres in France, and to passe the Sea himselfe in person, his councell considering that a-bone all things, great treasure and plenty of money must needs be prouided, deuised strange commissions, and sent commissioners in euery shire, with privy instructions how they should proceede in the sittings, and order the people to bring them to their purpose, which was, that the first part of euery mans substance, should be payd in money or plate to the King without delay, for the furniture of his warre: whereof followed such euciing, weeping, and exclamation against both King and councell, that pity it was to heare. And notwithstanding all that could be said by the commissioners, to perswade the people to this contribution, the same would not be granted: but in excuse of their denialls, it was alleaged that wrong was offered and the ancient customes and lawes broken, which would not any man to be charged with such payments, except it were granted by the estates of the realme in Parliament.

The like answere was made by them of the spiritualty, of whom was demanded the fourth part of their goods.

The Emperors Ambassadors departeth secretly out of England.

Monsieur de Parate the Emperors Ambassador, whether offended for admitting of Iokin in the Realme, as before ye haue heard, or for some other cause, on the ninth of Aprill departed out of England, not taking leaue of the King, Cardinall, or rest of the Councell, and did so much, that he passed through France in Post, and came to the Emperor before the Ambassadors of England came thither, and whether it was by his report, or otherwise, the accustomed fauour that the Emperour and his Councell shewed to the Englishmen began to decay, and the Emperor withdrew his good opinion from the Cardinall, which the Cardinall soone perceiued.

King Henry in danger of drowning.

In this yere (saith Hall) King Henry following his hauke, lept ouer a ditch beside Pitchen, with a pole, and the pole brake, so that if one Edmond Mody a seruingman, had not lept into the water, and lift vp his head, which was fast in the clay, he had beene drowned.

An. Reg. 17.

The Commissioners in all shires sitting for the leuy of the first part of all mens goods, as ye haue heard, the burthen was so grieuous, that it was denyed, and the commons in euery place were so mooued, that it was like to haue growne to a rebellion: when this mischiefe was shewed to the King he said, that he neuer knew of that demand, and therefore with great diligence hee sent his letters to the City of London, and to other places, in the which hee gently wrote, that yet would he demand no sum certaine, but such as his louing subiects would grant to him of their good wils, toward the maintenance of his warres.

The demand of the first part of mens goods remitted.

Wherefore the Cardinall on the 26. of Aprill sent for the Maior of London, the Aldermen, with most substantiall persons of the common councell, and when they were come to Westminster, he said: that the King our soueraigne Lord, most graciously considereth the great loue, zeale, and obedience, which you beare vnto him and where like louing subiects, without any grudge, or gaine-saying of your louing mindes you haue granted the first part of all your goods and substance, freely to be paid according to the firth valuation, the which louing grant and good mind, he so kingly accepted, that it was marueile to see: but I my selfe do consider the great losses, and other charges that daily hath and doth to you growe, and that notwithstanding, any losse or charge that happeneth to you, yet you neuer with stood no, gainst said any of the Kings demands or commissions, as it appeareth now of late, of which things I haue highly the King informed, for the which hee gaue you harty thankes. Then I kneeled downe to his grace, shewing him both your good mindes toward him, and also the charges that you continually sustaine, the which at my desire and petition, hee was content to call in, and abrogate the same Commission. And where hee by reason of your owne grants might haue demanded the said summe as a verie debt, yet he is content to release and pardon the same, and will nothing take of you but your benevolence: wherefore take heere with you the Kings letter, and let it bee reade to the commons, and I doubt not but you will gladly doo as louing subiects would doo. The 28. of Aprill, in the common Councell of the City was read the Kings letter, according to the effect aboue rehearsed. Wherefore the Citizens sent 4. Aldermen, and 12. commoners to Hampton court to giue thankes to the Lord Cardinal, which for busines as was said, could not speake with him, wherefore they returned not content. Then euery Alderman assembled his ward in their places accustomed, and gently mooued them of a benevolence to be granted to the King, the which they openly denyed, saying: That they had paid enough before, with many euill words. The 8. of May the Cardinall againe sent for the Maior and his brethren, which shewed him what they had done. Then said the Cardinall, You haue no such commission to examine any man, I am poor commissioner, I will examine you one by one my selfe: & then I shall know the good will that you beare to your Prince, for I will aske a benevolence of you in his name. Then was it answered to the Cardinal by a Counsellor of the City, that by the law there might no such benevolence be asked, nor men so examined, for it was contrary to the Statute made the 1. yeere of king Richard the third. Also some persons comming before your grace may for feare grant that, that all dayes of their life they shall repent, and some to win your

fauor will grant more than they be able to pay of their owne, and so runne in other mens debts, to their vtter decaie and vndoing: and shall not be masters of themselues, but as men distraied, shall grant that, that their wiues and children shall soze rew. The Cardinall heard this saying very patiently, and answered quietly: Sir, I maruell that you speake of Richard the third, which was an diuerer and a murtherer of his owne nephewes: then of so euill a man, how can the acts bee good, make no such allegations, his acts be not honorable: And it please your grace, said the Counsellor, although he did euill, yet in his time were many good acts made, not by him onely, but by the consent of the body of the whole Realme, which is the Parliament. Then Sir William Baily Lord Maior kneeled downe, and besought his grace, that sith it was enacted by the common councell of London, that euery Alderman should sit in his owne ward for a beneuolence to be granted, which he perceiued to bee against the law, that the same act by the same common councell might be reuoked, and no otherwise. Well said the Cardinall, I am content. But now will I enter into the Kings commission: You Maioz, and you master Alderman, what will ye giue? My Lord, said the Maioz, I pray you pardon me, foz if I should enter into any grant, it might foztune to cost me my life. Your life, said the Cardinall, that is a meruellous word, foz your good will toward the King, will the citizens put you in ieopardy of your life, that were strange; foz if they would that way, then must the King come with a strong power them to oppresse, wherefoze speake no more such words, and with that he fwited a little, and said: My Lord Maioz, let you and your Citizens, if you be grieued with any thing, in this demand, humbly and after a good fashion come to me, and I shall so intreat you, that you shall be content, and no displeasure arise, and so I pray you shew your neighbors: so the Maioz foz that day departed. The Maioz (saith Hall) did wisely not to assent to grant to any thing, foz although he and the Aldermen had assented, the common councell would neuer haue assented. So on the next morow it was declared to the common councell, that their act that was made, that euery Alderman should sit foz a beneuolence to be granted, was against a statute law: wherevpon the said act was annulled: and then was it declared that euery man should come to the Cardinall, and to grant plainly what he would, with the which saying the Citizens were soze grieued: then the Maioz gently shewed them, how hee durst warrant that they should be intreated gently, & exhozted them to go thither when they were sent for: which saying so offended them, that in their furie they would haue had Richard Gresham and John Hewster mercers, and Richard Gibson sergeant at armes and merchant tailer, banished out of the common councell, and so without and were made what they would do, they deuorted home.

This demand through the Realme was vterly denyed, so that the commissioners could not bring things to passe, & yet they assaied both by faire and foule meanes. For in Kent the Lord Cobham was commissioner, and handled them roughly, and by reason one I. Skudder answered him clubbishly, he sent him to the Tower of London: for which doing the people muttered against the lord Cobham, and said expressely that they would pay no money, and they began to account the loanes and subsidies granted, so that they reckoned the Kings treasure innumerable: for they accounted that the R. had taken of his Realme 20. fifteens sith the 14. yere of his raigne, and in this grudge they euill intreated Sir Thomas Boleine at Maidstone.

The people were generally offended both with the king and Cardinall for this matter.

In Essex the people would not assemble before the commissioners in no houses, but in open places. And in Huntingdon shire diuers resisted the commissioners, and would not suffer them to sit, which were apprehended and sent to the fleete. The Duke of Suffolke sitting in commission about this subsidie or taske in Suffolke, perswaded by curteous meanes the rich clothiers to assent thereto: but when they came home, and went about to discharge and put from them their spinners, carders, fullers, weauers, and other artificers, which they kept in woze afoze time, the people began to assemble in companies, whereof when the Duke was aduertised, he commanded the Constables that euery mans harnesse should be taken from them: but when that was knowne, the rage of the people increased, railing openly on the Duke, and Sir Robert Drurie, and threatned them to death, and the Cardinall also: and herewith there assembled together, after the manner of rebels, foure thousand men of Lanam, Sudbery, Hadley, and other Townes there about, which put themselues in harnesse, and rang larams to increase their number. The Duke of Suffolke perceiuing this, began to gather such a power as he could, but that was very slender: yet the bzidges being bzoken, those rebels were letted of comming against the Duke, the Cardinall still endeuoured to please the King, hoping thereby to maintains his owne greatnes.

The Duke of Norffolke treasurer of England raised a power in Norffolke, and came to the Duke of Suffolke, he first sent to the people, to know their griefe. They answered, that as they had some matters that grieued them, so had they will to spend their liues in the Kings service as obedient subiects. Then the Duke rode to them, and demanded what was the cause of their disquiet, and who was their captaine? Unto whom one John Greene a man of fiftie yeres olde answered, that poverty was both cause and captaine. For the rich clothiers, Spring of Lanam, and other had giuen ouer occupying, whereby they were put from their ordinarie worke, and liuing. The Duke with curteous words willed them to depart home, promising them, that he and the Duke of Suffolke would intreat the King for them, whereupon they became quiet, and returned, & in token of repentance, they came to Saint

Saint Edmondsbury in their shirts, and hallers about their neckes desiring pardon: the two Dukes take a few of them to London, which after some imprisonment were pardoned and deliuered.

Great councell called to Yorke place by Westminster.

Then the King at Yorke place, where the Cardinall lay, called a great Councell, in the which hee openly protested, that his minde was neuer to aske any thing of the commons, which might sound to the breach of his lawes, wherefoze he willed to know by whose means the commissions were so straightly giuen foztb, as to demand the 5ft part of euery mans goods. The Cardinall answered and saide, that when it was moued in the Councell, how to leuy money to the Kings vse, the kings councell, and namely the Judges said, that he might lawfully demand any summe by commission, and that by the consent of the whole councell it was done, and toke God to witnes, that he neuer desired the hindrance of the commons, but like a true counseller deuised how to enrich the King: and the spirituall men say, that it standeth with Gods law, for Ioseph caused the king of Egypt, to take the 5ft part of euery mans goods: but because euery man layeth the burthen from him, I am content to take it on me, and to endure the fame and noyse of the people, for my good will toward the King, and comfort of you my Lozds, and other the Kings counsellors, but the eternall God knoweth all. Well said the King, some haue informed me, that my Realme was neuer so rich, and that there should neuer trouble haue risen of that demand, and that men would pay at the 5ft request, but now I finde all contrarie: then euery man held his peace. Then the King saide, I will no more of this trouble, let letters be sent to all shires, that this matter may no more be spoken of. I will pardon all that haue made deniall openly or secretly: then all the Lozds kneeled downe, and hartily thanked him. Then letters were sent, in the which were shewed, that the Lozds and the Judges, and other of the Kings councell, deuised that demand, and that the Cardinall followed the mind of the whole councell. And thus was the Kings great iourne into France staied for this time.

This yere the Tower at Greenewich was newly repaired and builded.

Creations at Bridewell. The King dignifies his base sonne wonderously.

The 18. of June, at Bridewell Henry Fitz Roy, which King Henry the eight had by Elizabeth daughter to sir John Blunt knight, was created Earle of Nottingham, Duke of Richmond and of Somerset, lieutenant generall from Trent northward, warden of the East, middle, and west marches, foz anewst Scotland, he was borne in the manno2 place of Blackamoze in Essex, it was then the Priors house of Blackamoze. Henry Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, cosen german to the King, was created Marques of Exceter: Henry Brandon sonne to the Duke of Suffolke, was created Earle of Lincolne: sir Thomas Manners Lord Rosse, Earle of Rutland, sir Henry Clifford Earle of Cumberland, and the Lord Fitz water, sir Robert Ratcliffe was created Vicount Fitz Water, and sir Thomas Boleine treasurer of the Kings houshold, was created Vicount Rochford.

This yere 1525 Charles King of Spaine made fierce war vpon Francis the French King in Italie, and tooke the French King prisoner, and led him prisoner into Spaine, and the next yere the Emperour set the French King at liberte and married the Emperours sister. The French king taken prisoner by the Emperor.

1526.

In this winter was a great death in the city of London, so that the terme was adiourned, and the King kept his Christmas at Eltham with a small company, wherefoze it was called the still Christmas.

The Cardinall ketcheth an order in the kings house.

The Cardinall about this time comming to the court at Eltham, take order foz altring the state of the Kings house, many officers and other seruants were discharged, and put to pensions. In which number were 64. yeomen of the gard, which before having 12.d. the day with cherke, were now allowed 6.d. the day without cherke, and commanded to goe home into the countries. He also made new officers in the house of the Duke of Richmond, which was then newly beginne. Also at that time he ordained a councell, and established another houshold foz the Lady Mary, then being Princesse of the Realme, so that all things, that were done, was done by him, foz to him was the charge of all things committed. At this time the saide Cardinall gaue to the King the lease of the manno2 of Hampton court, which he had of the leafe of the Lozd of S. Johns, and on which he had done great cost in building: In recompence whereof, the King licenced him to lie in his manno2 of Richmond at his pleasure, and so he lay there at certaine times, the Cardinals double diligence and ambition was his ouerthzow. Hampton court builded by the Cardinall, and given to the King.

On Shzouetuesday, there was holden soz Iusts at Greenwich. solemne iusts at Greenwich, the King and 11. other on the one part: and the Marques of Exceter with 11. other on the contrarie part. At these iusts by chance of thinering of a speare, sir Francis Brian lost one of his eyes.

The 11. of February, foure merchants of the Stilyard did pennance at Paules crosse, and an Augustine Fryer called Doctoz Barnes bare a fagot: there was present the Lord Cardinall with 11. Bishoppes, John Fisher Bishop of Rochester made the Sermon, which was against Martine Luther of Germany, and his doctrine. Stilyard merchants did pennance.

A truce was taken betweene England and France foz a certaine space, and Ambassadors were sent into Denmarke, foz reasoning of their King: but the Danes would grant nothing thereunto, they did so deadly hate him foz his cruelty.

The 28. of April came to the court at Greenwich Monsieur Briond, President of Roane, and Iohn Iockin, which President before the King and his nobles made in the Latin tong a solemne oration, the effect whereof was, how dreadfull the warres had bene betweene the Realmes of England and France, the declared An. Reg. 28. Peace with France.

clared further of what power the King of England was, and what conquest hée might haue made in France, the French King being prisoner, where of he humbly thanked him of his pitty and compassion that he had on them in their necessitie, that he would consent to peace: To the which oration, sir Thomas More Chancellor of the duchy of Lancaster, made answere, saying: that it much reioyced the king, that they first considered, how by his power he might haue oppressed, and how by his pitie he had relieued them: wherefore he would hereafter, that for kindnes they should shew him nons unkindnes, but inuiolably keepe that league which was concluded.

Proclamation against vnlawfull games.

In the month of May, was proclamation made against all vnlawfull games, and commissions awarded into euery shire, for the execution of the same, so that in all places, tables, dice, cardes, and boules were taken and brent: but when yong men were restrained of these games and pastimes, some fell to drinking, some to forretting of other mens cornes, & stealing of Déere in parkes, and other vnthriftines.

Gold enhaunced.

In this season the angell noble was the first part of an ounce troy, so that fiue angels were iust an ounce, which was 40. s, sterling, and the angell was worth two ounces of siluer, so that fiue angels were worth 12. ounces, which was but 40.s, in siluer. By reason of the good weight, and low valuation of the English coine, merchants daily caried ouer great store because the same was much enhaunsed there: so that to méete with this inconuenience (as it was said) Proclamation was made in the moneth of September the first day, throughout England, that the angell should go for 7. shillings 4. pence, the royall for 11.s. and the crowne for 4.s.4. pence. And on the 5. of November following againe by proclamation, the angell was enhaunsed to 7.s.6.d. and so euery ounce of gold should be 45.s. and an ounce of siluer at 3.s.9. in bullion.

1527.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Grénwich with reuels, maskes, disguisings, and banquets royall.

Great raine and land waters.

In the moneths of November, December, and January fell such raine, that thereof ensued great floods, which destroyed corne-fields pastures, and beasts, then was it day till the twelfth of Aprill, and from that time it rained euery day and night till the third of June, whereby Corne failed sore in the yére following.

Ambassadors into France.

King Henry sent Thomas Boleine Vicount Rochford, and sir Anthony Browne knight ambassadors into France, which came to Paris to the Bishop of Bathe that lay there for the king as legat, and then these three went to the court and saw the French king take the oath to kéepe the league and amitie, concluded betweene him and the King of England.

Ambassadors to the Emperor.

Also king Henry sent Sir Francis Poines knight, Ambassador to Charles the Emperor, & with him Clarentius king at armes, to demand the one halfe of the treasure and ordinance which was taken at Pauie, for so much as the war was made as well at the Kings charge as at the Emperors. Also they were commanded to demand one of the French Kings sons, which lay in hostage with the Emperor, that is to wit, the Duke of Orleance to be deliuered to the King of England: and further that he should call backe his army out of Italy, and if so were that he refused these requests, then should they in the kings name denounce open warre against him.

In this meane time Rome was taken by the Emperials, & the Pope brought into captiuitie, as ye shall heare: Charles Duke of Burbon, and the Emperors army, which all the last winter lued in great pouerty, without clothes, victuals, or wages, so that they were in manner desperate, went toward Parma, and Bonony, belonging to the sea of Rome. The Pope hearing this, sent messengers to the D. to redeeme his townes, so that they should not be spoiled. The Duke asked 350000. Duckats, for sauing of the Popes land, and if they might haue so much mony, they would depart to Naples: but when they saw they could not haue their demand, they turned toward Florence, whereof hearing the Romans they were glad, for they thought that the Florentines would hold god warre with them, and then the Romans would giue the looking on: but the chance turned, as ye shall heare.

Edward Hall. The City of Rome taken and sacked.

The Duke of Burbon had thought to haue gone to Florence for this cause: there was a gentleman in Florence called Peter de Saluito which had a brother that serued the Emperor in his warres, which promised to deliuer the City, for he determined to cause the commons to rebell in the City against the heads, and in the meane season the Dukes companie should scale the walles: when this Peter knew that the Emperors army was come to a place called le Chase, within twelue miles of the City, to bring his purpose to conclusion, hée with such as he had trained to him, cried in the city, *Liberate de populo*, that is to say, liberty of the people: which voice the people étirred, and came to the palace in great number, and there they toke the fire Lords of the Councell, which had the rule of the wealth of the city, clue one of them. The familie of Medices, which were the popes kindred were at this time sore afraide. Thus this Peter de Saluito with the commons, gate that palace, and rang the common bell. In this season was in Florence a Captaine of the French king called Frederico de Bedso, he had with him three hundred men, and when he saw this rebellion, he came to the commons and said: sirs if you continue in this case, your faire City is like to be subuerted, for your enemies bée at hand: which notwithstanding that you beare some fauour to the Emperor, as appeareth, yet their nédinesse and pouerty is such, that without mercy they will robbe, murther and slay you, your wiues and children, and set fire on your beautifull city. This Captaine much feared the citizens, notwithstanding that twenty or more persons were slaine in the ruffle: yet they were well auoided, and suddenly entred into

The peticle of the male contented Duke of Burbon

into the City the Duke of Vrbine, which lay but 6. miles from Florence, and 18. miles from the Emperors army, whom hee had coasted: but he thought no aduantage to medle. This Duke brought with him 5000. foote men, and 600. horsemen, and when hée was entred the Citie, a crie was made that all things were pardoned, so that euery man departed home, and deliuered his weapon, and thus the City was appeased the 28. of Aprill. All this doing within was vnknowne to the Emperors army, and so for lacke of knowledge this enterprise was lost: which was happie for the Florentines. Sore displeased were the Emperors Captaines when they knew of this chance, and how the Duke of Vrbine was entred into the City of Florence. And so shortly they departed, and came to the City of Seines thirty miles off, and there they lost their great ordinance, and toke councell to goe to Rome, notwithstanding the truce concluded betwéene the Pope, and the vice Roy of Naples and Hugo de Moncada, and so much they trauelled by night and day, that the 6. of May with banners displaide they came before the City of Rome. The Romanes make Bulwarks, raumpiers, and other defences, and laid ordinance on the wals, and shot at them fiercely. The Duke of Burbon waying that it were not best to lye still and bée slaine, considering that they were all naked people, and without great Ordinance: determined to take the chaunce, and to giue the assaulte, and so manfully they approched the wals, betweene the Burgo nono and old Rome, but the Romans valiantly defended them, with hand-guns, pikes, stones, and other weapons, so that the enemies were faine to retire. The Romanes were glad, set many faire banners on their Towers, and Bulwarks, which séing, the Duke of Burbon cried to a new assault: then euery man with a Ladder mounted, and at the first encounter the Romans against put them a little backe: which perceiuing the Duke, he cried, God and the Emperor: then euery man set on manfully, there was a sore fight, many a man felled, but at the last the Emperials gotte the wall: and betweene euery assault fell a misse, so that they within could not sée what part they without would assaile, which was profitable to the Emperials. At the third assault were slaine three hundred Switchers of the Popes guarde. In this last assault was the Duke of Burbon stricken in the thigh with a hand-gunne, of which he shortly died, in a chappell of S. Syth, whither his souldiors had brought him. And this chance notwithstanding, the army entred into Rome, and toke the Popes palace. The same day that these three assaults were made, Pope Clement passed little on the Emperors army, for he had accursed them on the Saturday before, and in his curse he called the Almains Lutherans, and the Spaniards, Puritns or Mores. And when he was hearing of masse, sodainly the Almains entred the church, and slue his guard, and diuers other. He séing that fled, by a priuie way to the Castle Angell: and all they that followed him that way and could not enter, were slaine. The Cardinals and other Prelats fled to the Castle Saint Angell ouer the bridge, where many of the common people were ouer-prelled, and drowned as they gaue way to the Cardinals, and other states that passed toward the Castle for succour. The Cardinall of Seines, of Sefarine, of Cudertine, of Jacobace and of the Vale, tarried so long, that they could not get the Castell for multitude of people: wherefore they were compelled to take another house called the Palace of S. George, where they kept themselues for a while, as secretly as they might. You must vnderstand, that through the City of Rome runneth a famous Riuer called Tiber, and on the other side of the Riuer standeth the Castle of Saint Angell, or the Borough of Saint Angell: and the other side is called Burgo nouo. This bridge is called the bridge of Sixt, which lieth directly before the Castle. At the end of this Bridge was a wonderous strong Bulwarke, well ordinanced, and well manned. The Emperials saw they could doe nothing to the Pope, not to the port of the city but by the bridge, determined to assaile the Bulwarke: and so as men without feare came to the Bridge: and the Romanes so well defended them, that they slue almost foure thousand men. That séeing the Prince of Orenge, and the Marques of Guasto, with all spéede gaue assaulte, and notwithstanding that the Romanes shot great Ordinance, Handguns, Quarels, and all that might be shot, yet the Emperials neuer shranke, but manly entered the Bulwarke and slue, and threw downe out at the loupes all the Romans that they found, and after raced the Bulwarke to the ground. The Pope in the Castle Angell beheld this fight, and with him were three and twentie Cardinals, of which one called the Cardinall Sanctorum quatuor was slaine, and with him were a thousand Prelats and Priests, fiue hundred gentlemen, fiue hundred souldiors: wherefore immediately the Captaines determined to lay siege to the Castle Angell, lest they within might issue out and turne them to damage: wherefore sodainely a siege was planted round about the Castle: In the meane season, the Souldiers fell to spoyle, neuer was Rome so pilled, neyther of the Gothes nor Vandals, for the Souldiers were not content with the spoile of the Citizens, but they robbed the Churches, brake vp the houses of close religious persons, and ouerthrew the Cloisters, they spoiled virgins and rauished wiues, men were tormented if they had not to giue euery new asker or demander: some were strangled, some were tormented vp the prime members, to cause them to confesse their treasure. This woodnes continued a great while, and some man might thinke, that when they had gotten so much, then they would cease and bée quiet, but that was not so, for they played continually at dice, some 500. some 10000. duckats at a cast: he that came to play

The Pope fled to the Castle Angell.

Rome sacked and spoiled.

ladyes

Duke of Burbon slaine.

The Pope cursed the Emperials.

necessitie place, went away againe almost euery night, and then fell to rifling againe: Many of the Citizens which could not patiently suffer that vexation, drowned themselues in Tyber. The Souldiers that laye at the siege easily made it fall out of the Pope, sometime they had one victory that the Pope, with a whoze behinde him, sometime he blessed, and sometime he cursed, and sometime they would with one voyce call him Antichriſt. They went about to vndermine the Castle, and to haue thzowne it downe on his head, but the water that encompaſſeth the Castle disappointed their purpoſe. In this season the Duke of Vrbine with fifteene thousand men came to aide the Pope: but hearing that Rome was taken, he tarried 20. mile from Rome till he heard other word. The Marques of Seſaire, and Sir Fredericke de Bedſo with 10000. fatemen, and 1000. hoſsemen, were at Viterbe the 10. of May, where they hearing that the City of Rome was taken, also tarried: the Cardinall of Colonne came with an army of Neapolitanes to helpe the Emperozs men: but when he saw the cruelty of the Souldiers, he did little to helpe them, but hasted them much. The Bishoppe of Rome was thus beſieged till the eight of July, at which day he yeelded himſelfe, foz neceſsitie and pzomiſe of all things in the Castle. And then he was restozed to giue graces and graunt buls, as hee did before: but he tarried still in the Castle Saint Angell, and had a great number of Almaines and Spaniards to keepe him: but the Spaniards bare moſt rule in the Castle, foz no man entred noz came out of the Castle, but by them. When the moneth of July was come, rayne beganne to faile in Rome, and the pestilence beganne to waxe strong, wherefore the great armie remoued to a place called Narnya 40. mile from Rome, leauing behind them such as kept the Pope. When they were departed, the Spaniardes neuere were contented, till they hadde gotten the Almaines out of the Castle of Saint Angell, and so they had the whole custody of the Pope. Thus Rome continued in peace till the moneth of September, that the army came againe from Narnia: for then the Almaines feare, that they would set the City and all on fire except the Pope would pay them their wages. The Pope sent to commune with them, two Archbishoppes, two Bishoppes and two Gentlemen, these six persons the Almaines take as pledges, contrary to the Popes meaning, and saide they would keepe them there, till they were paid, and to put them in a strong Chamber, in the Palace of Saint George: and euery day almost they would bring them foath openly, and scoffe with them, and threat to hang them if they were not paide, and so they kept them imprisoned in a Chamber, and watched them day and night without the Chamber: and yet for all that, they gatte out at a chimney on Saint Andrew euen, and were no more sene of them. The Almaines were so wroth with this chance, that they came to the Prince of Orenge their generall Captaine, and demanded money of him, in such rigozous manner, that he was faine secretly to flye to Senes: and then for him they chose Captaine, the Marques of Guasto, which governed them till February, that he brought them to Naples.

In the meane space, by means of great armies prepared by the Kings of England, of France, and other for the Popes deliuerance, the Emperor sent letters to the Pope, and excused himselfe, that he neyther willed nor commanded such mischiefe to bee done, and streightly commanded his Captaines to deliuer him. The Prince of Orange and other Captaines of the Emperor, hearing his commandement, take agreement with the Pope and his Cardinals, and so he and twelue Cardinals were bound to performe certaine articles to the number of eleuen, and then he was deliuered out of the castle Saint Angell, the 10. of December, and was conueyed to Orpot, where after he had payd certaine money for the souldiers wages, hee was put at full liberty, and the Emperors people departed from him, and from thence hee remoued to Ancona: the Emperors Captaines (fearing the French armie prepared) caused all the Souldiers to depart out of Rome in the beginning of February: and so came into the Realme of Naples, and fortified certaine townes as they passed, and so came to a towne called Troy, and there stayed. This remouing was to them profitable, for if they had tarried at Rome, they had beene set on, by the Italians on the one side, and the Frenchmen on the other side, that by euery mans iudgement they should haue beene slaine or taken. Thus much for the sacking of Rome. Pope Clemens deliuered.

Also about this time, diuers complaints being made of Geralde Fitz Gerald Earle of Kyldare, late deputie of Ireland, that he wilfully winked at the Earle of Desmonde, whom hee should haue attached by the Kings letters, that hee curryed acquaintance, and affinitie with more Irish Enemies, that he hanged, and beheaded rashly good subiects, whom hee mistrusted to leane to the Butlers friendshippe, wherefore Kyldare was commanded to appeare which hee did, leauing in his roome Fitz Geralde of Kerlip, whom they shortly deposed, and chose the Baron of Delue, whom Oconnor Faley poisoned, and there the Earle of Ossory, to shew his liability of seruice, brought to Dinsline an army of Irishmen, having Captaines ouer them, Oconnor, Omer, and Ocarrall, and at S. Mary abbey was chosen deputy by the kings councell. In whose office being himselfe (saue onely in feates of armes) a simple Gentleman hee bare out his honour, and the charge of gouernment very worthily, thorowe the singular wisedome of his Countesse, a Lady of such port, that all Estates of the Realme crouched vnto her, so politike, that nothing was thought substantially debated without her aduise, manlike and tall of stature, very rich and bountifull, Gerald Fitz Gerald departed of Ireland accused.

bountifull, a bitter enemie, the onely meane at those dayes, whereby her husbands countrey was reclaimed from the sluttish and vncleane Irish custome, to English habit, bedding, house-keeping, and ciuilitie: but to these bertues was yoked such a selfe-liking, and Maiestie aboue the tenure of a subiect, that for assurance thereof she kicked not to abuse her husbands honor against her brothers folly: notwithstanding I learne not that she practised his vndoing, which indeed, and was to her vndoubtedly great heauines, as vpon whom both the blemish thereof, the sufferance of that whole family depended after, but that she by indirect meanes cogged her brother out of credit to aduance her husband, the common voice and the thing it selfe speaketh. All this while abode the Earle of Kyldare at the court, and with much ado found shift to be called before the Lords to answere solemnly, they set vpon him diuerslie affected, and in especiall the Cardinall Lord Chancellor, disliked his cause, comforted his accusers and inforced the articles obiected, and what else soeuer could be gathered thereof in these words.

Cardinall Wolsey his speech to the Earle of Kildare.

I wotte well (my Lord) that I am not the meetest man at this boorde to charge you with these treasons, because it hath pleased some of your pew fellowes to repoze that I am a professed enemy to all nobility, and namely to the Geraldines: but saying euery course boy can say as much when he is controlled, and saying these points are so weighty, that they should not be dissembled of vs, and so apparant that they cannot be denied of you, I must haue leaue (notwithstanding your stale slander) to be the mouth of these honorable at this present and to trumpe your treasons in your way, howsoeuer you take me. First, you remember how the lewd Earle your kinsman, who passeth not whom hee serue, might be change his master, sent his confederates with letters of credence to Francis the French King and hauing but cold comfort there, to Charles the Emperour, proffering the helpe of Monstere and Connagh toward the conquest of Ireland, if either of them would helpe to winne it from our King: how many letters, what Pzecepts, what messages, what threats haue beene sent you to apprehend him, and yet not done? Why so? forsooth I could not catch him: Nay, nay, Carle, forsooth, you would not watch him. If hee be iustly suspect, why are ye partiall in so great a charge? if not, why are you fearefull to haue him tried? possible it will be sworne and deposed to your face, that for feare of meeting him, you haue winked, wilfully shunned his sight, altered your course, warned his friends, stopped both eares and eyes against his detections, and whensoeuer you take vpon you to hunt him out, then was he sure afore hand to hee out of your walke: surely this iugling and false play, little became either an honest man called to such honour, or a noble man put in such trust: had you lost but a cow or a carran of your owne 200. kerneghes would haue come at your whistle to relcue the pray from the furthermost edge of Ulster, all the Irish in Ireland must haue giuen you the way: but in pursuing so notable a matter as this was, meruell God, how nice, how dangerous, how wayward haue you beene? One while for to from home, another time he kepeth home, sometimes feare, sometimes in the borders, where you dare not venture. I was my Lord, there be thicke bugs in the borders, for the Earle of Kildare, to feare the Earle, nay the king of Kildare, for when you are disposed you raigne more like then rule in the land: where you are the malicious, the truest subiects stand for Irish enemies, where you are pleased the Irish enemies stand for duttifull subiects: hearts, and hands, liues and lands, are all at your curtesie, who fauneth not thereon, he cannot rest within your smell, and your smell is so rancke, that you tract them at your pleasure: whilest the Cardinall was speaking, the Earle chafed and changed colour, and sundry profers made to answere euery sentence as it came, at last he brake out, and interrupted him thus. Treasons laide to the Earle of Kyldare. The Earle interrupted the Cardinal

My Lord Chancelor, I beseech you pardon me, I am short witted, and you I perceiue intend a long tale: if you procede in this order, halfe my purgation will be lost for lacke of carriage, I haue no Schoole trickes, nor Art of memory, except you heare me while I remember your words, your second processe will hammer out the former.

The Lords associate, who for the most part tenderly loued him, and knew the Cardinals manner of taunts so lothsome, as wherewith they were tried many yeres ago, humbly besought his grace to charge him directly with particulars, and to dwell in some one matter, till it were examined thoroughly, that granted.

It is good reason, quoth the Earle, that your grace beare the mouth of this Chamber, but my L. those mouths that put this tale into your mouth are very wide mouthes, such as indeed haue gaped long for my wracke, and now at length for want of better stuffe, are faine to fill their mouthes with smoake: what my cosen Desmond hath compassed as I know not, so I beshrew his ricked hart, for holding out so long if hee can be taken by my engins that presently waite for him, then haue mine aduersaries betraied their malice, and this heape of heinous words shall resemble a man of straw, that seemeth at a blush to carry some proportation, but when it is felt and poysed, discouereth a vanity serning onely to frap crowes. And I verily trust your honours will see the proofe, by the thing it selfe within these foure dayes: but go to, suppose he neuer be had, what is Kildare to blame for it more than my good brother of Osery, who notwithstanding his high promises, hauing also the Kings power, is yet content to take egges for his money, and to bring him in at leisure? Can not the Earle of Desmond shift, but I must be of counsell? cannot hee behold except I winke? if he be close, am I his mate? if he be friended, am I a traitor? This is a doughty kind of accusation, which they wage Kyldares reply to the Cardinall.

against me, if herein they are stabled and mired, at my first denyall: you would not see him, say they, who made them so familiar with wine and sights? & when was the C. in wine cognies, & who stood by when I let him slip, & where are the tokens of my willful bad winke? & but you sent him word to beware of you: & who was the messenger, where are the letters? Convince my negatives: for how lasely this idle reason hangeth: Desmond is not taken: well you are in fault, why? because you are: who proves it: no body: what conjectures? so it seemeth: to whom, to your enemies: who told it them? they will sweare it: what other ground? none: will they sweare it my Lords? why, then of like, if they know it, either they have my hand to shew, or can bring forth the messenger, or were present at a conference, or privy to Desmond, or some body had credit with them, or themselves were my carriers, or Vicegerents therein, which of these parts will they chuse, for I know them too well, to reckon my self to commit by their words, or bad selle practises, or trayterous acts: my letter were some read, were any such writing extant, my servants and friends are ready to be tried: if my cosen of Desmond they may lye lawfully, since no man here can well contrarie their tong: my self, I never noted in them either so much wit, or so fast faith, that I would have gaged upon their silence the life of a good horse: much less mine owne self. I doubt not, may it like your honors to appose them how they came to knowledge of these matters, which they are so ready to depose, but you shall find their tongs chained to another mans trencher, and as it were Knights of the post suborned to say, sweare, and stare, the uttermost they can, as those that passe not what they say, nor with what face they say it, so they say no truth but of anetter thing it concerth me, that your good grace, whom I take to be wise and sharp and who of your own blessed disposition wisheth me well, should be so farre gone in crediting those corrupt informers, that abuse the ignorance of your state and countrey to my perill: little know you my Lord how necessary it is, not onely for the governor, but also for every Noble man in Ireland to hamper his unruly neighbors at discretion, where if they waited for processe of law, and had not those lives and lands you speake of within their reach, they might hap to lose their owne lives and lands without law: you heere of a rase, as it were in a dreame, and feele not the smart that vereth us. In England there is not a meane subject that dare extend his hand to fillip a pere of the Realme: In Ireland, except the Lord have carrying to his strength, and strength to save his credit, and sufficient authority to take thames and Darbies when they serve, he shall finde them the same to fall, that it will be too late to call for succor: if you will save our service take effect, you must not tie us allwayes to these judicial proceedings, where with your Realme thanked be God, is cumbred. As touching my Kingdome, my Lord, I would you and I had exchanged kingdoms but for one month, I would trust to gather by more crums in that space, then twice the revenues of my poore Carbrome but you are well and warme, and so I wish you, and upbraide not me with such an odious farme: I sleepe on a cabben, when you lye soft in your bed of downe: I serve under the coope of heaven, when you are served under a canopie: I drinke water out of my scull, when you drinke wine out of golden cups, my exercise is trained to the field, when your gennet is taught to amble: when you are be-graced and be-lorded, and crowched and kneeled unto, then find I small grace with our Irish bedarers, except I cut them off by the knees.

The Cardinall perceived that Ryldare was no babe, and rose in a fume from the Councell table, committed the Earle, deferred the matter, till more direct probations came out of Ireland.

After many mettings, and objections wittily refelled, they pressed him soze with a traiterous errand sent by his daughter lady of Clane to all his brethren, to Oneal, Occonor, and their adherents, wherein he exhorted them to warre upon the Earle of Osery then deputy, which they accomplished, making a wicked conspiracy against the English of Ireland, and many a bloudy skirmish. Of this treason hee was found guiltie, and reprived in the Tower a long time, the gentleman betooke himselfe to God, and the time: was heartily loved of the Lieutenant, pitied in all the Court, and standing in so hard a case, scarred little of his accusshomed bow, con forted other Noble men Prisoners with him. discoursing his owne sozrow. One night when the Lieutenant, and he for his disport were playing at chouell gioat, sodainely commeth from the Cardinall, a *Mandatum* to execute Ryldare on the morrow. The Earle marking the Lieutenants deepe sigh in reading the bill, by S. Bride Lieutenant quoth he, there is some mad game in that scrole: but fall out how it will, this thow is for a bedde: when the worst was told him, now I pray thee (quoth he) do no more but learne assuredly, from the Kings owne mouth, whether his grace be writing therto or not: for doubted the Lieutenant to displease the Cardinall, yet of very pure devotion to his friend, he posteth to the K. at midnight, and said his errand, for at all houres of day or night the Lieutenant hath accesse to the Prince upon occassions. King Henry controlling the fawtines of the Priest (for those were his termes) take him his signet in token of countermand, which when the Cardinall had seene, he began to breath out unseasoned words which the Lieutenant was loth to heare, and so he left him fretting. And within few yeeres after, Sir William Scenington was sent over deputie, who brought with him the Earle pardoned, and rid from all his troubles. Here arose about this time a bruit in London, that divers great Clearkes had tolde the King that the marriage between him and the lady Katherine, sometime wife to his brother Prince Arthur, was not lawfull: whereupon the K. should see a divorce, and marry the Dutchesse of Alanson, sister to the

Jo. Hoyw.

Ryldare accused.

Ryldare pardoned.

Hall.

the French King, the Towne of Caleis this Sommer, and the occupon Vicount Rochefozd had brought with him the picture of the same Lady: but the K. being offended with the tales, sent for Sir Tho. Seymere Maior of London secretly, & charged him to see that the people ceased, from such talke. But whatsoever the commons talked, true it was, that the king had mind to depart from Quene Katherine his wife, aunt to the Emperor, and Daughter to the King of Spaine, for that shee was before espoused to his brother, Prince Arthur late deceased, and that the Pope could not dispence with one woman to marrie with two brothers: but the King was letted by the Emperor, and his Ministers, so that he could not well bring the matter about without the assistance of the French king. Upon which respect, he granted more than the French King desired: that is, the 400000, crownes, which was one of the principall sums of the millions, which should be payd presently he lent the same to the French K. to repay in 5. yeeres: and the 600000. crownes forfeit by the Emperor, he gave to the French King: and the flower deluce, valued at 50000. crownes he gave to his god son Henry D. of Orliance. And further with the said Monsieur de Langie, there was sent Sir Francis Brian then one of the Gentlemen of the Kings privy Chamber, as well with the obligations and acquittances, as also the said flower-deluce, to bee delivered by the French King when time should serve. And for the said Monsieur de Langie, was a Gentleman greatly favoured, as well in the Universities of Italy and Germany, as in the Universities of France, and Brother to the Cardinall Bellay then Bishop of Paris, hee was at that time travelled withall to procure the opinions and judgements of the Doctors and chiefe learned men, subscribed with their hands and confirmed with their Seales of the chiefe Universities, as of Paris, Orliance, and other of France, and of Padua, Vienna, and Bolonia in Italy, declaring by the same, that the Pope could not dispence with the said marriage as being by Gods law prohibited, which afterward was procured by the said Monsieur de Langie, travelling in person to every the saide Universities with the King of Englands commission, who had the French kings letters of singular commendations to the uttermost aid therein: whatsoever the commons talked it was concluded by the King and his Councell, that the Cardinall should passe into France as high Ambassador, but for what cause, no person knew but the King till his returne. Gwichardine saith, hee brought with him treasure amounting to 300000, crownes, both to furnish his expences, and to impart with the French King by way of loue if need were. The cause of this voiage was saith G.C. this, certaine great estates and Lords of the councell bearing little good will to the Cardinall, lying in waite to espy a convenient time, and occasion to take the Cardinall in a brake thought it now were a necessary time to cause him to take upon him the kings commission to travell beyond the sea in this matter, and by his wit to compasse a perfect peace among these great princes and prevent attempts: and incouraging himselfe thereto, alleaged that it was more meete for his high wit, discretion, and authority, to bring so weighty a matter to passe then any other within this realme. Their intent was none other, but if they might get him from the King out of the realme, then thought they sufficiently abused him to depraue him unto the Kings highnes, and to him in his absence to bring him in displeasure with the king, or at the lest to be of lesse estimation: Well what will you more? this matter was so handled, the Cardinall was commanded to prepare himselfe to this iourney, which he take upon him, but whether it were with his good will or no, I am not able well to tell you: but that I know he made a short abode after the perfect resolution thereof, but caused all things to bee prepared onward toward his journey: and every one of his servants were appointed that should attend upon him in the same. When all things were concluded, and for this noble ambassage prounded and furnished, then was there no more to doe, but auance forwards in the name of God. My Lord had with him such of the Lords and Bishops, and other worthy persons, as were not of the Councell or conspiracy, to wit, the Earle of Darby, the Bishop of London, Lord privy seale, sir Henry Gilford Knight of the Garter, controller of the kings house, the Lord Sands knight of the garter: Lord chamberlaine of the kings house, doctor Taylor, Maister of the rols. sir Th. Moore knight, chancelor of the duchy of Lancaster: the Bishop of Diuelin, the L. Mounteagle, the L. Hatrenden, sir, John Dudley knight, M. Ratcliffe, M. Willoughby, M. Parker, M. Sturton: Vicounts and Barons, sons and heires. Sir Fra. Brian. sir Ed. Seimer, sir Ro. Gernigam, doctor Stephen Gardener secretary, doct. Peter Vannes secretary: of the privy chamber, maister Hennege, maister Arundell, maister Knevet, maister Alford: Phisitions, doctor Francis, doctor Smith: Gentlemen Ushers of the priuie chamber, M. Walgraue, M. Elles, Sir Thomas Denis high Chamberlaine, M. Sentclere vicechamberlaine: Gentlemen Ushers. M. Wentworth, M. Hansard, master Pemercy, master Constable, M. Warren: of houshold, M. Cade steward, sir William Gascoigne treasurer, M. Goslike Controller, master Broughton, master of the hose: doct Allen, doct. Bekes, doct. Duke, deane of the Chappell, doctor Capon Almoner, the archdeacon of Canterbury, the archdeacon of Carleile: sir John Sent-John, Sir Richard Sands knights, &c. in all to the number of 900. The Pourhoses. Then marched hee forward from his lodging owne house at Westminster, through London ouer London bridge, having before him of Gentlemen a great number, three in a ranke in velvet coates, and the most of them great chaines of Gold about their neckes, and all his Yeomen followed him with Noblemens, & Gentlemens servants, all in Orenge tawney coates, with the Cardinals Hatte, and a T.C. for Thomas Cardinall, embroidered upon all the coates, as well of his owne servants, as of all the rest of the

Gwichardine.

G. Cauen.

Cardinall Wolsey sent Ambassador into France.

Ric. Tit.

Gentlemens seruants: and his sumptermules which were twentie or more with all his carriage of carts, and other of his traine were passed before. He rode like a Cardinall very sumptuously on his mule, with his spare mule and spare horse trapped in crimosin velvet vpon velvet, and stirrops gilt following him: and before him he had his two great Crosses of siluer, his two great Pillars of siluer, the kings broad seale of England and his Cardinals hat, and a Gentleman carrying his balence, otherwise called his clokebag which was made of fine scarlet, altogether embrodered very richly with gold, having in it a cloake. Thus passed he forth through London, and all the way every day in his iourney he was thus furnished, hauing his Harbengers in euery place before, which prepared lodging for his traine.

The first iourney that hee made, was two miles beyond Dertford in Kent, vnto Sir Thomas Wiltshires house, and the rest of his traine were lodged in Dertford, and in the countrey thereabouts. The next day he marched to Rochester, where he was lodged in the Bishops palace, & the rest of his traine in the City and in Strowde. The third day he rode to Feuersham, and there was lodged in the Abbey, and his traine in the towne there, and some in the countrey thereabouts. The fourth day he rode to Canterbury where hee encountered with the worshipfull of the towne and countrey, and lodged in the Priory of Christ Church, and all his Traine in the City, where hee continued three dayes, in which season there was a great faire in the Towne, by reason it was the feast of Thomas of Canterbury. At the which day there was a solemne procession, wherein the Cardinall then went apparelled in his legantine ornament, with his hat on his head, who commanded the monks and the Quyre to sing the Letanie, after this sort *Sancta Maria, ora pro Papa nostro Clemente*, the Cardinall kneeling at a stole before the Quyre dore all the while the monks and their Quyre sood in the body of the Church singing the Letanie: at which time the Cardinall was seene to weepe bitterly for heauines to see the Pope in such calamity and danger of the Lanceknights.

The 11. of July the Cardinall arriued at Calis, who was received with all the officers and councell of the towne, the Maior of the towne, and the Maior of the Staple in procession, and in the Lanterne Gate, he kneeled and made his prayers: that done they passed on before vntill he came to S. Maries Church, from whence he departed with a great number of Noblemen and gentlemen being peeres of the towne, vnto a place called the Cheker, where he was lodged, and kept his house as long as he abode in the towne. When all his traine and carriage was landed, and euery thing prepared for his iourney, he called all his Noblemen and Gentlemen, being seruants vnto him, into his priuy Chamber, where they being all assembled before him, he said: I haue called you hither to the intent to declare vnto you, that I consider the duty you beare me, and the good will that I assuredly beare to you, seeing your intendement to further the authority that I haue by commission: which your diligent seruice I will remember hereafter, and therefore I meane to declare the same directly to the King. Secondly, to shew you the nature of the Frenchmen. And thirdly, to instruct you how and with what reuerence ye shall vse me for the honor of the Kings maiesty, and then to enioyne you how ye shall entertaine and accompany the French men, when ye shall meete at any time.

The first point ye shall vnderstand, that the kings maiesty for certaine weighty affaires of his graces, hath for more aduancement of his royal dignity, assigned me to be in this iourney his Lieutenant, and what reuerence belongeth to the same I will tell you: for my part I must by vertue of my commission and Lieutenantship assume and take vpon me to be esteemed in all honor and degrees of service, as to his highnesse psalence is meetest due, and that by me nothing to be neglected that to his royall estate is due and appertinent. And for my part ye shall see me, that I will not omit one iote thereof. Therefore because that ye shall not be ignorant of your duty in this case, as one of the chiefe causes of this your assembly, willing you as you will haue myfauour, and also charge you in the Kings name, that ye doe not forget the same in time and place, but that euery one of you doe obserue your duty vnto me accordingly, as ye will at your returne auoide the Kings indignation, or obtaine and deserue his highnesse thanks, the which I will set forth as each of you shall deserue. Now to the second point, the nature of the Frenchmen is such that at the first meeting they will be as familiar with you as they had beene acquainted with you long before, and commune with you in their French tong, as though ye vnderstode euery word, therefore vse them in like manner, and be as familiar with them as they be with you. If they speake in their naturall tong, speake you againe vnto them in the English tong: for, if you vnderstand not them, no more shall they vnderstand you: and speaking merily to one of the Gentlemen there, being a Welshman said, Rice (quoth he) speake you Welsh to them: I doubt not but that they speech shall be more diffuse to him, than his French shall be to thee.

And thus quoth he againe to them all, let all your entertainement and behauior be according to the order of all gentleness and humility, that it may be reported after your departure from thence, that ye be gentlemen of right good behauior, and of much gentlenesse, and that ye are men, who know your duties to your Soueraigne Lord, and to your Maister, offeming much your great reuerence. Thus shall ye not onely obtaine to your selues great commendation and praise for the same, but also aduance the honor of your Prince and countrie. Now go your wayes, being admonished of all these points, and prepare your selues against to morrow, for then we intend (God willing) to set forward. The next morrow, being Mary Magdalens

Note this speech and the wit.

Magdalens day, all things being furnished, the Cardinall aduanced out of Calis, with such a number of blacke velvet coates, as hath beene seldome seene with an Ambassador, all the Speres of Calais and Guines, with all other Gentlemen besides his traine, being garnished in blacke Velvet Coates and Chaines of gold. Thus passed he forward with his Traine of Gentlemen before him three in a Ranke, which by suppofall endured three quarters of a mile or more in length, hauing his Crosses and all other his accustomed and glorious furniture carried before him, as I haue before rehearsed, except the Broad Seale, the which he left in Calais with Doctor Taylor, then master of the Rolles vntill his returne. Passing thus on his way, and being scarcely ridden a mile, it began to raine so vehemently, as lightly had not beene seene the like, which endured vntill they came to Wologne, and ere they came to Sandingfield, the Cardinall of Lorraine a goodly young Gentleman, encountred the Cardinall of England, and received him with great ioy and reuerence, and so passed forth with the Cardinall in communication vntill they came nigh vnto the faide Sandingfield, which was a place of Religion, standing betweene the English, French, and the Emperors dominions, being a Nonne, holding of no other of them. There awaited for him Le Countie Brian captaine of Picardie, with a great number of Stradiates or Albenois, standing in array in a great peece of grene oates, all in barres vpon high horses, passing on with the Cardinall in a wing vnto Wologne, and so after through Picardy: for the Cardinall doubted somewhat the Citizens, that he should lay some ambush to betray him, for which cause the French King commanded them to attend vpon him for the assurance of his person. Thus rode he vntill he came within one English mile of Wologne, where encountred him the worshipfull Citizens of the Towne of Wologne, hauing a learned man that made vnto him an Oration in Latine, vnto the which the Cardinall semblably made answere: And that done Monsieur de Bees Captaine of Wologne with the retinue there of gentlemen, met with him on horsebacke, and then with all this assemble he rode into the towne lighting at the abbey gate, and from thence conueyed with procession into the abbey church there offered, then went he into the Abbey to his lodging, and all his traine were lodged in the high and base courts. The next morning after, he rode to *Montreuil sur Lonoie*, where he was in like sale encountered with the worshipfull of the towne all in one liuery, hauing a learned man to make an oration vnto him in Latin, whom he answered also againe in Latine. And as he entred at the gates, there was a cannpy made vpp of fine embroidered with lettice, and as that ouer his head on their coates, and when that he was lighted, his footcloth had the same as a Foe due to the office. Now hauing made diuers Pageants for the ioy of his comming, who was called in the French tong Foere, and in all other places through the Realme where he rode or came, *Le Cardinall pacifique*. The next day he take his iourney towards Abuile, where he was encountred with diuers Gentlemen of the Towne and Countrey, and so receiued into the towne with pageants, as he rode through the towne hauing a like canopie borne ouer him, but more richer, and so brought to his lodging: in this towne he remained more than eight dayes, where resorted to him daily diuers of the French Kings councell, sitting with him in councell euery day and continually feasting with him and other. When the time came of his departing out of the towne he rode to the castle beyond the water of Some, called *le Chastel de Pequen*, adioyning to the said water vpon a Rocke, within which there was a College of Priests, the situation whereof was much like the castle of Windsore, and there he was receiued with solemne procession, comming thorough the Church, and after into the castle to his lodging. At this castle sometimes vpon the bridge that goeth ouer the water of Some, king Edward the 4 met with the French king, as I haue made in our Chronicle: when my Lord was settled in his lodging (with mine author) I heard that the French king should come that day into the towne of Amiens, which was not past six English miles from thence. And being desirous to see his comming thither, tooke with me one or two of my Lords gentlemen, and rode incontinently thither, as well to furnish me of a conuenient lodging, as to see the King. And when we came thither, being but strangers, tooke vp our inne at the signe of the angell, directly against the West dore of the Cathedrall Church *de nostre Dame*. After we had dined there and tarried vntill 3. or 4. of the clocke, expecting the Kings comming, in came mabam Regent, the Kings mother, riding in a very rich chariot, and with her therein was the Queene of Nauarre her daughter, furnished with 100. or more of Ladies and gentlewomen following: euery one riding vpon white palfreis: besides others and many Ladies some in rich horse-litters, some in chariots, who lighted at the next doore with all this traine of Ladies and Gentlewomen, besides her gard, which was not small in number. Then within two houres after the King came in with a great shotte of gunns, and diuers pageants made onely for ioy of his comming, hauing about his person and before him, beside the wonderfull number of Noblemen and gentlemen, three great guards apparelled diuersly; the first was of Switzers, the Burgonians with gunne pikes: the second was of Frenchmen, some with bowes and arrowes, and some with billes: the third guard *pour le corps*, was of full Scots, which were more equierly personed then all the rest. The French guard and the guard of Scots had one liuery, being apparelled with rich coates of white cloth guarded with a rich garde of cloth of gold of an hand full broad. The King sate in his open Chariot in a gowne of purple veluet, and lighted at the great Chirch, and so conueyed with

The broad seale of England left at Calis

The French kings guard.

Procession like the Bishops palace, where he was lodged, and also his mother. The next morning I rode againe to Picardy, to attend upon my Lord, at which time of my repast, my Lord was ready to go to horseback: he toward Amiens and passing on his way, he was incountred with diuers noble personages, making vnto him diuers Oratiõs in Latin, to whom he made answere *ex tempore*. Then was word brought him, that the King was comming to encounter him, wherefore he had none other shift, but to light at an old chappell that stood hard by the high way, and there he new apparelled himselfe into rich apparell, and so mounted againe vpon a mule very richly trapped, with a cote cloth altogether of crimsin velvet vpon velvet, purled with gold, and fringed about with gold fringe very costly: his stirrops of siluer and gilt, the bosses of the same, and the cheekes of his mules bit were all gilt. And by that time that he was mounted againe, after this gorgeous sort, the King was come very neere, within lesse than a quarter of an English mile, mustering vpon a hill, his guard standing in array vpon the top of the same hil, expecting my Lords comming, to whom my Lord made as much hast as he conueniently might, till he came within a paire of buts length, and there he stayed. The King perceiuing that, hauing two worthy young Gentlemen with him, the one called Monsieur Vadamont, and the other Monsieur de Guise, both brethren to the cardinall of Loraine, and to the Duke of Loraine: also being like apparelled, as the King was in purple velvet, lined with cloth of siluer, their coates cut: The King called Monsieur Vadamont to him from him, and rode to my Lord Cardinall to know the cause of his tarrying: and this Monsieur being mounted vpon a faire great geanet, take his race with his horse vntill he came euen to my Lord, and there caused his horse to come aloft twice or thrice, to shew my Lords mule that hee was in doubt of his horse, and with that he alighted, and doing humble reuerence, did his message to my Lord, and that done he mounted againe, and made his horse to do the like at his departing, as before he had done, and so repaired againe vnto the King: and his mulkers ended to the King, the King aduanced forwards. That seeing, my Lord did the like: and in the midway they met, embracing each other, with amiable countenance and entertainement. Then drew into the place all Noble men and Gentlemen on both parts, with wonderfull chere made one to another, as though they had beene of old acquaintance. The preasse was such and so thicke, that diuers had their legges hurt with horses. Then the Kings officers cried, march, march, deuaunt ale deuaunt. Then the King and the Cardinall on his right hand rode forth towards Amiens, euery English gentleman accompanied with another of France. The traine of these two Princes entered two long English miles, they were nobly receiued into the Towne of Amiens with shot of gunnes and costly pageants, till the King had brought the Cardinall to his lodging, and then departed for that night, the King being lodged in the Bishops palace. The next day after dinner the Cardinall rode to the court to the King, at which time the King kept his bed: yet neuertheless the Cardinall came into his bed Chamber, where, on the one side of the bed sate the Kings mother, and on the other side the Cardinall of Loraine, accompanied with diuers other Noble men of Fraunce, and after a short communication and drinking of a cup of wine with the kings mother, he departed to his owne lodging, accompanied with diuers Gentlemen and Noble men, where they supped with him. Thus continued the Cardinall and the King in Amiens, the space of a fortnight and more, consulting and feasting each other diuers times. In Amiens the King and my Lord heard masse, and both of them receiued the Sacrament. And vpon our Lady day the assumption, my Lord said masse before the Regent and the Quæne of Nauarre, and gaue them the Sacrament. And there the King dyssed a number of sicke folkes. Then the King and the Cardinall removed to a City called Champain, which was more then 20. English miles from Amiens, they were both lodged in the great castle of the towne, whereof the Cardinal had the one halfe alligned him for his lodging, and the King the other halfe. And likewise they diuided a long Calery betweene them, where was made in the middest a strong wall, with a window and a doore. The King and the Cardinall would many times meete at the same window and talke: and diuers times they would go into the other at the said doore. Then came there to my Lord Cardinall the Lord Chancellor of France, with all the kings councellers, where they tooke great paines daily in consultation, insomuch that the Cardinall of England fell out with the Chancelor of France, taking to his charge, that he went about to hinder the league which before his comming was concluded, insomuch that Madam Regent herselfe and many Nobles of France with much labour and trauell could scarcely bring the Cardinall to his former state of communication, he was in such a wrath against the Chancelor: by these meanes, he brought other things to passe, that before he could not attaine, which was more for feare than for any affection to the matter, he had the heads of the councell to vnder his girdle. The next morning after, his councell he rose early about foure of the clocke, and sate him downe to write letters, into England, vnto the K. commanding one of his chaplaines to prepare him ready to say masse, insomuch that the chaplaine stood in his vestures vntill foure of the clocke in the afternoone: all which season the Cardinall never rose to eate or drinke, nor to make water, but continually wrote letters with his owne hand, hauing all that time his nightcap and his kercheefe on his head, and about the houre of foure in the afternoone hee made an end, commanding Christopher Gunner the Kings seruant, without delay to ride post into England with these letters, whom he dispatched away euen

he drunke, and then went to masse, and said his seruice with his Chaplaine, and then went and walked in a garden the space of an houre and more, and saide his euensong, and after went both to dinner and supper all at once, and after Supper, making but little tarrying, scant an houre, but that he went to bed and take his rest.

The next night after the Cardinall made a great supper for Madam Regent, for the D. of Nauarre and other great estates of Ladies and Noble women, and at the middest of the saide banquet, the Kings of France and of Nauarre, came sodainely in vpon them bolstred for, and take their place in the lowest part of the banquet. The supper and banquet being finished, the Ladies and Gentlemen fell to dansing, and so passed away the most part of the night ere they departed. There was nat onely plenty of fine meats, but also much mirth and solace, as well in merry communication, as with the noise of my Lords minstrels, who played there all that night so cunningly, that the King take therein great pleasure, insomuch that he desired my Lord to lend them vnto him for the next night, and after supper their banquet finished, the Ladies and Gentlemen fell to dansing, among whome one Madam Fountaine a maide had the price. And thus passed they the most part of the night ere they departed. The next day the King take my Lords minstrels, and rode to a Noblemans house where was some Image to whom he vowed a pilgrimage, to performe his deuotion. When he came there, whith was in the night, he damned, and caused other to doe the same, after the sound of my lords minstrels, who played there all night, and neuer rested, so that whether it were with extreame labour of blowing, or with poyson (as some iudged) because they were commended by the King more than his owne, I cannot tell, but the Player on the Shalme (who was very excellent in that instrument) died within a day or two after. Then the King returned into Champaigne, and caused a wilde Boze to be lodged for him in the Forrest of Champaigne, and thither the Cardinall rode with him to see him hunt, where the Lady Regent with a number of Ladies and Damosels went standing in Chariots, looking on the toile on the out side: which was pitched there for that purpose: among whom stood the Cardinall to regard the hunting, in Madam Regents Chariot, and with in the toyle was the King with diuers vnknowen Gentlemen of France, ready furnished to his high and dangerous enterprise of the hunting of the perilous wilde swine, the King being in his doublet and hosen all of shapes colour cloth, hauing in his fist a brace of great white Greyhounds, who were trained as the manner there is: and the rest of the Kings Gentlemen being appointed to hunt this Boze, were likewise in theire doblets and hose, holding each of them in their hands very sharpe Boarspeares. Then the King commanded the keepers to vncouch the Boze, and that euery person being within the toyle should go to a standing, among whom were diuers Gentlemen and Peomen of England, and incontinent the Boze issued out of his den, and followed with an hound, came into a plaine, where being scaled a while, and gazing vpon the people, and incontinent pierced by the Hound, he spied a little bush standing behinde a banke, ouer a ditch (vnder the which lay two French Gentlemen) and thither fled, trusting there to haue defended himselfe, who thrust his head snuffing into the sand bush, which caused the two Gentlemen to fly from thence, as from the danger of death. Then was the Boze by pursuit of hunters and the hound, driuen from thence, who ran straight to one of the Cardinals footemen, a very tall yeoman, who had in his hands a Janeline, with the which hee was faine to defend himselfe from the Boze a great while, the Boze continually foyning at him with his Tuskes, so that he was faine at last to pitch his Janeline in the ground betweene him and the Boze: the which the Boze brake with the force of his foyning and with that the yeoman drew his sword, and stood at defence, and therewith the hunters came to the rescue, and put him once againe to flight: with that he sleadde to another young Gentleman of England, called master Henry Ratclife, who was sonne and heire to the Lord Fitz Walter, since Earle of Sussex, who had bestowed by chaunce of a Frenche Gentleman, a very fine and sharpe Boze Speare, where with he thrust the Boze in the mouth, and so into the throate, whereupon the pastime was ended. In the time of the Cardinalls abode in France, many displeasures were done against him, for all the payne and trauell he had taken for the qualifying of the French kings ransome: and amongst other this was one: there was no place where hee lodged, after he entred the territorie of France, but that he was robbed in his priuy chamber either little or much, insomuch that at Campaigne he lost his Standish, which was all of Siluer and gilte, and there it was espied, and the party taken, which was a boy of twelue or fourteene yeres old, a ruffians page of Paris, which hanted my Lords lodging without suspition, vntill he was taken lying vnder my Lords priuy Staires, vpon which occasion he was apprehended, examined, and confessed all things that he had stolen, the ruffian his maister had receiued, maintained, and procured him so do. The Cardinall reuealed this to the councell, by meanes whereof the ruffian was apprehended, and set on the Pillory in the middle of the Market place, which was but a small punishment for such an offence. Another displeasure was this: foure lewd person had ingraued in my Lords Window, vpon the leaning stone there, a Cardinals hat, with a paire of Gallowes ouer it, in derision of my Lord, with diuers other vnkinde dealings, the which I omit to write, they be so slaunderous matters. The Cardinall passing diuers dayes in consultation, and in other matters, expecting the returne of Christopher Gunner, at the last he returned with letters againe, vpon receipt whereof the Cardinall intended to remoue:

Many displeasures done against Car. Wolsey in France.

being then at maſſe in his Cloſet, hee conſecrated the Chancellor of France Cardinall, and put vpon him his habite, his hat and Cap of Maieſtie, and then take his tourney, returning againe into England, making ſuch neceſſary expedition, that he came to Guiſnes, where he was nobly received by the Lord Sands then Captaine there, with all the retinue of the ſame. And from thence he rode to Calais, where hee tarryed the ſhipping of his ſtaffe, horſes, and traine. And in the meane time, he eſtabliſhed there a Mart for all Nations. Theſe things and other, for the Weale of the Towne and garriſon by him perfect, hee tooke ſhipping and arriued at Douer the twentie foure of September, from whence he rode to the Court, the King being in his Progreſſe at Sir Henry Wyats houſe in Kent, by whom he had long talke, and continued two or three dayes there in the Court, and then returned to his houſe at Weſtminſter, where he remained vntill Michaelmas terme, which was in leſſe then a fortnight after, and executed to roome of Chancellorſhip as he was accuſtomed.

Scarcitie of bread.

Such ſcarcitie of bread was in London, and all England, that many dyed for default thereof: the King of his goodnes ſent to the Citie of his owne proviſion 600. quarters, or elſe for one weeke there had bin little bread. The bread Carts comming from Stratford toward London were met at the mile end by the Citizens, ſo that the Maior and Sheriffes were forced to goe and reſcue the ſame carts, and to ſee them brought to the Markets appointed. Wheat was then at 15. ſhillings the quarter: but ſhortly after the Marchants of the Stilyard brought from Danſke ſuch ſtore of Wheate and Rye, that the ſame was better cheape to be ſold in London, than in any other part of the Realme beſides.

After the beginning of the Terme the Cardinall cauſed to be aſſembled in the Star Chamber, all the noble men, Iudges, and Iuſtices of peace that were in Weſtminſter hall at that time preſent: and there made to them a long Oration, declaring the cauſe of his Ambaſſage into France, and of his proceeding there: among the which he ſaid he had concluded ſuch an amitie, as never was heard in the realme before, as well betweene the Emperor and vs, as betweene the King our ſouereigne, and the French King with a perpetuall peace, the which ſhould be confirmed in writting, ſealed in fine gold, affirming further, that the King of England ſhould receiue yerely his tribute by that name out of the Dutchy of Normandie, with all the coſts which he had ſuſteined in the warres. And alſo, where there was a reſtraint made in France of the French Queenes dowry (whom the Duke of Suffolke had married) for diuers yeres during the warres, it was concluded, that ſhe ſhould not onely receiue it againe, but alſo the arrerages that were vnpaid. This peace thus concluded, there ſhould be ſuch amitie betweene the gentlemen of each Realme, and entercourſe of Marchants, that it ſhould ſeeme to all men both

Cardinall Wolſey in the Star chamber declareth his iourney and honorable peace he had concluded.

territories to be but one Monarch: gentlemen may trauell from one Countrey to another, for their recreation and paſtime: the Marchants being in either countrey arriued, ſhall be aſſured to trauell about the affaires in peace and tranquility, ſo that this Realme ſhall ioy and proſper for euer, &c.

The 20. of Octo. were received into London certaine Ambaſſadors out of France, about 80. in number, of the moſt noble and worthy gentlemen in all France: they were lodged in the Biſhops palace in Pauls churchyard, to whom diuers Noble men reſorted and gaue them diuers preſents, eſpecially the Maior of the City of London, as wine, ſugar, war, capons, wildfoule, beefes, muttons, and other neceſſary things in great abundance, for the expences of their houſe. Then they reſorted vnto the court, being at Greenwich, where they were received by the King. They had commiſſion to eſtabliſhe the K. in the order of France, for whom they brought for that intent, a collar of fine golde, with the Michaell hanging therat, and robes to the ſame order appertinent, the which was of blew velvet richly embrodered. And the King to gratifie the French King with the ſemblable, he ſent a noble man of the order here in England, with Garter the Herault into France to eſtablish the French King, in the order of the Garter, with a ſemblable Collar, with a Garters and Robes according to the ſame.

Ambaſſadors out of France.

The Ambaſſadors remaining here vntill their returne, all things being concluded concerning the perpetuall peace vpon ſolemne ceremonies and oathes contained in certaine inſtruments touching the ſame, which was confirmed by receiuing of the Sacrament in Pauls Church of London by the King, and the grand maiſter of France, who repreſented the King his maſter, and there the inſtruments were ſealed with gold, and the King put his hand thereunto, and the grand maiſter did the like: betweene whome the Cardinall diuided the Sacrament. And that done, they departed, the King rode with the Cardinall to Weſtminſter, and there dined with the Frenchmen, paſſing all the day after with conſultation of weighty matters, touching the concluſion of the ſaide Article of the perpetuall peace.

The King then departed againe by water to Greenwich, at whoſe departing it was concluded by the deuiſe, that all the Frenchmen ſhould reſort to Richmond, and hunt in euery one of the Parkes there: and from thence to Hampton court, and there to hunt, and the Cardinall to make there a Supper or banquet, or both to them. And from thence they ſhould ride to Windſor, & there to hunt: & after to returne to London, and ſo to Greenwich, and there to banquet with the King. Then was there made great preparation of all things for this great aſſembly at Hampton court: the Cardinall called before him his principall officers, as Steward treaſurer, controller and clearke of his Kitchin, to whom he declared his mind, touching the entertainment of the Frenchmen at Hampton court: his pleaſure to them knowne, they ſent out

Cardinall Wolley bare queareth the French Ambaſſadors at Hampton court.

out takers, purueiors, and other, the Cookes wrought both night and day in ſubtleties, the preomen and grommes of the Wardrobes were buſſed in hanging of the Chambers, and furniſhing the ſame with beds of ſilke and other furniture: there were prouided two hundred and eighty beds, furniſhed with all manner of furniture to them belonging, too long particularly to be rehearſed.

1528.

The day was come to the Frenchmen aſſigned, and they readie aſſembled before the houre of their appointment, wherefore the Officers cauſed them to ride to Hamworth, a place and a Parke of the kings within three miles, there to hunt and ſpend the day vntill night, at which time they returned againe to Hampton court, and euery of them conueyed to their ſeuerall Chambers, hauing in them great fires and wine for their comfort, remaining there vntill the ſupper was ready. The Chambers where they ſupped and banqueted, were ordered in this ſort: firſt, the great waiting Chamber was hanged with rich Arras, as none were better than other, and furniſhed with tall yeomen to ſerue. There were ſet tables round about the Chamber banquet-wiſe couered, a Cupboord was there garniſhed with white ſilver plate, hauing alſo in the ſame Chamber to giue the more light, foure plates of ſilver ſet with great lights, and a great fire of wood and coales. The next Chamber being the Chamber of preſence, was hanged with very rich Arras, and a ſumptuous cloth of eſtate furniſhed with many goodly Gentlemen to ſerue the tables, ordered in manner as the other Chamber was, ſauing that the high Table was remoued beneath the cloth of eſtate toward the middeſt of the Chamber couered. Then was there a Cupboord, being in length as broade as the Chamber, with fire deskes of height, garniſhed with guilt plate, hauing with lights one paire of Candleſticks of ſilver and guilt, being curiouſly wrought, which coſt three hundred markes, and ſtanding vpon the ſame two lights of ware burning as bigge as torches to ſet it forth. This Cupboord was barred round about, that no man could come nigh it, for there was none of all this plate touched in this banquet, for there was ſufficient beſides. The plates that hung on the walls to giue light were of ſilver and guilt, hauing in them great pearchers of ware burning, a great fire in the chimney, and all other things neceſſary for the furniture of ſo Noble a feaſt. Now was all things in a readines. The trumpets were blowne to warne to Supper: the Officers diſcretly conducted theſe Noble men from their Chambers into the Chambers where they ſhould ſuppe, and cauſed them there to ſit downe, and that done, their ſeruice came vp in ſuch abundance both coſtly and full of ſubtilties, and with ſuch a pleaſant norſe of inſtruments of muſicke, that the Frenchmen (as it ſeemed) were rapt into a heauenly Paradiſe. The Cardinall was not yet come, but they were merry and pleaſant. Before the ſecond courſe, the Cardinall came in booted and ſpured, all ſodainly amongſt them, and bade them Preface: at whoſe comming there was great ioy, with rifling euery man to his place. The Cardinall cauſed them to ſit ſtill and keepe their rowmes, and being in his apparell as hee rode, called for a chayre and ſate in the middeſt of the high table. Anone came vp the ſecond courſe, with ſo many diſhes, ſubtilties, and deuiſes, aboue a hundred in number, which were of ſo goodly proportion and coſtly, that I thinke the Frenchmen neuer ſaw the like, the wonder was no leſſe than it was worthy indeed. There were Caſtles with Images, in the ſame Pauls Church, for the quantity, aſwell counterfeited, as the Painter ſhould haue painted it on a cloth of wall. There were beaſts, birds, and perſonages, moſt liuely made and counterfeited, ſome fighting with ſwords, ſome with gunnes, and crobbowes, ſome daughting and leaping, ſome dancing with Ladies, ſome on horſes in complete harneſſe, iuſting with long and ſharpe ſpeares, with many more deuiſes. Among all other was a cheſſe-bord made of ſpiced plate, with men there of the ſame, and for the good proportion, and becauſe the Frenchmen be very expert in that play, my Lord Cardinall gaue the ſame to a Gentleman of France, commanding there ſhould be made a goodly caſe for the preſeruation thereof in all haſt, that hee might conuey the ſame into his countrey. Then tooke my Lord a bole of golde filled with hypocraſe, and putting off his cap, ſaid: I drinke to the King my ſouereigne Lord, and next vnto the King your maſter, and therewith dranke a good draught: and when he had done, he deſired the grand maiſter to pledge him cup and all, the which was well worth 500. markes, ſo cauſed all the lords to pledge theſe two royall Princes: then went the cups ſo merrily about, that many of the Frenchmen were faine to be led to their beds.

Then roſe vp the Cardinall, and went into his priuy chamber to pull off his bootes, and to ſhift him, and then went he to Supper in his priuy chamber, and making a very ſhort ſupper, returned into the chamber of preſence among the Frenchmen, vſing them ſo louingly and familiarly, that they could not commend him too much: and whileſt they were in communication and other paſtimes, all their liueries were ſerued to their Chambers, euery Chamber had a baſon and an ewer of ſilver, a great liuery pot of ſilver, and ſome guilt, yea and ſome Chamber had two liuery pots, with wine and beere: a ſilver candleſticke, both white and plaine, hauing in it two ſtaues, and a paſte torch of ware, a fine manchet, and a cheat loafe. Thus was euery Chamber furniſhed through all the houſe: and yet the Cupboords in the two banquetting Chambers were not once touched.

Thus, when it was more than time conuenient, they were conueyed to their lodgings, where they reſted that night.

In the morning they dined with the Cardinall, and ſo departed to Windſore. After the returne of the ſtrangers from Windſore, which place, with the order thereof they much commended.

K. Henry secretly watched by the Scots.

wended. The day approched that they were by the King inuited to the Court, where first they dined, and after dancing and other pastimes by them done, the time of supper came on. Then was the banquetting chamber in the tylt yard at Greenewich, to the which place these strangers were conducted by the noblest personages in the Court, where they did both suppe and banquet. But to describe to you the order, the dishes, the subtilties, and strange deuises of the same, I lacke both a head of fine wit, and also cunning in my bowels to declare these wonderfull deuises. But this ye shall vnderstand, although it were maruellous sumptuous at Hampton Court, yet that notwithstanding this banquet excelleth the same, as far as gold doth exceede siluer in value of weight for weight, and the beholders professed neuer to haue seene the like.

In the middest of this banquet there was iousting at the barriers, with lusty gentlemen in complete harnesse, very gorgeous on horse. Then was there the like on horse-backe. And after all this, was the most goodliest disguising or enterlude made in Latin, the plaiers being so rich and of so strange deuises, that it passeth my capacity to expound.

This done, there came such a number of the fairest Ladies and Gentlewomen that bare any brute of beauty in all the realme, in the most richest apparell that might be deuised, with whom the Gentlemen of France danced, vntill a gorgeous maske came in of Gentlemen, who danced and masked with these Ladies. This done, came in a maske of Ladies: these Ladies take each of them one of the Frenchmen to dance and to maske: these Women maskers spake good French to the Frenchmen, which delighted them very much to heare these Ladies speake to them in their mother tongue.

Thus was this night consumed, from 5, of the clocke vntill three of the clocke after midnight, and then euery man departed to their lodgings. After all this solemne cheere at a day appointed, they resorted to the Court to take their leaue of the King and other Noble-men: then came they to Westminster vnto the Cardinall, of whome they receiued the Kings rewards, the which were these: euery man of honour and estimation had plate, some to the value of three or foure hundred pound, and some more, and some lesse, besides other great gifts receiued before of the King, as gownes of velnet with rich furres, great chaines of gold, and goodly beades, with diuers other gifts, and the least of them had a yeare of Crownes of gold: the which part amongst them had 20. Crownes for his part: and being thus nobly rewarded they departed.

A French Craer chased to the Tower wharfe of London.

¶ A French Craer, of 30. tun, being manned with 38. Frenchmen, and a Flemmish craer of fifteen and twenty tunne and fower and twenty Flemmings, landing at Margate, the one chased the other along the riuer of Thamis to the Tower wharfe of London, where sir Edmond Wellingham Lieutenant of the Tower, stayed them both, and tooke both their Captaines and men.

The 17. day of June, the terme was adiourned to Michaelmas, because of the sweating sickenes that then raigned in the city of London, and there was no such watch at Midsommer, as before time had bene accustomed: of this sickenesse dyed many sodainly in the Kings court, namely sir William Compton, Sir Francis Poynts, and other, who dyed with little warning. The King for a space remoued almost euery day till he came to Titenhanger, a place of the abbot of S. Albons, and there hee with the Quéene, and a small company about them, remained till the sickenes was past.

Before the Cardinals going into France, in the preceding yéere, it was talked among the people, that King Henry (as yée haue heard) was by some perswaded, that his marriage with Quéene Katherine could not bée good nor lawfull, wherefore hée determined to haue the case examined, cléered and adiudged by learning, law, and sufficient authoritie. The Cardinall was by some put in blame for that scruple now cast into the Kings conscience, for the late hee bare to the Emperor, and therefore hée did not onely procure the King of England to ioyne in friendship with the French King, but also (as they say) sought a diuorce betwixt the King and the Quéene. But howsoeuer it came about that the King was thus troubled in conscience concerning his marryage, it followed, that to haue the doubt clérely removed, hee called together the best learned of the Realme, which were of seuerall opinions, wherefore he thought to know the truth by indifferent iudges, lest peradeuenture the Spaniards and other would say that his owne subiects were not indifferent iudges in this behalfe, and therefore wrote his cause to Rome, as also (as ye haue heard) sent to the Vniuersities of Italy and France for their opinions: and desired the court of Rome to send into the Realme a Legate which should bée indifferent, and of great & profound iudgement to heare the cause debated. At whose request the whole consistory of the College of Rome, sent thither Laurence Campeius a priest Cardinall, a man of great wit and experience, which had bene sent hither before in the tenth yeare of this King, as yé haue heard, and with him was ioyned in commission the Cardinall of Yorke, and Legate of England. This Cardinall Campeius by long iourneyes came into England, and much preparation was made to receiue him triumphantly into London: but hee was sore vexed with the gout, that her refused all such solemnities, and desired that he might without pompe be conueyed to his lodging for his more quiet and rest, and so on the ninth of October he came from S. Mary Oueries by water to the Bishop of Bathes place without Temple barre, where he was visited of the Cardinall of Yorke, and diuers other estates and Prelats: and after he had rested him a season, he was brought to the Kings presence, then being at Baidewell, by the Cardinall of Yorke, and was carryed in a chaire betwéene foure persons, for he was not able to stand, and the

King Henries marriage cast in question.

Edward Hall.

Cardinall Campeius came to London.

Cardinall.

the Cardinall of Yorke and he sate both on the right hand of the Kings throne, and there one Francisco Secretarie to Cardinall Campeius made an eloquent Oration in Latin: in which he rehearsed first, with what cruelties the Emperors souldiers had handled the Pope, what tyrannye they had shewed to the Cardinals and Priests, what sacrilege and spoile they had committed in Saint Peters Church, how they had violated virgins, rauished mens wiues, and in conclusion, spoyled, robbed, and tormented all the Romans and inhabitants in the Citie of Rome. And further he shewed what friendship the College of Rome found at the Kings hands, and the French Kings in time of that tribulation, that if they had not ioyned together, the Citie of Rome with all their governours had bin brought to vtter ruine: for the which hee saide, Pope Clement and all his College of Cardinals, and the Senators of the Citie, with all the Citizens rendred to the King their harty thankes, and promised him their loue and fauour, and amity perpetuall.

Oration answered.

To the which Oration doctor Fore Provost of Cambridge, made a discrete answere: and as to the first point, hee declared that the king much lamented to heare his friends; yea, of any other Christian men to bee handled with such tyrannie: and as touching the second point, hee saide that the King did but the duty of a Christian Prince to relieue his friends being in captiuity, for the which he would that the whole City of Rome should giue thankes to God, and not to him. After which answere made, the 2. Legates communed secretly with the King a long space, and after departed to their lodging. Of the comming of this Legate the people, especially Women, talked largely, and saide, that the King would for his owne pleasure haue another wife, and had sent for this Legate to bée diuorced from his Quéene, with many foolish words, insomuch, that whosoeuer spake against the marriage, was of the common people abhorred and reproued, which common rumour was related to the King. Wherefore to like a prudent Prince, willing all men to know his intent and purpose, caused all his nobilitie, iudges, and Counsellors, with diuers other persons, to come to his place of Bridewell on Sonday the 8. of November at afternoone, in his great chamber, and there to them spake, as nere as I could carrie away (saith Hall) in these words following: Our trustie and welbeloued subiects, both you of the Nobility, and you of a meaner sort, it is not vnknowne to you that wee, both by Gods prouision, and true and lawfull inheritance, haue raigned ouer this Realme almost 20. yeeres: during which time, wee haue so ordered vs, thanked be God, that no outward enemie hath oppressed you, nor taken any thing from vs, nor we haue inuaded no Realme but wee haue had victory and honour, so that we thinke you nor none of your predecessors neuer liued more quietly, more wealthy, nor in more estimation vnder any of our Noble progenitors. But when we remember our mortality, and that we must dye, then we thinke that all our doings in our little time are cleerely defaced, and worthy of no memorie, if we leaue you in trouble at that time of our death. For if our true heirs be not knowne at the time of our death, for what trouble shall succéede to you and your children. The experience thereof some of you haue séene, after the death of our Noble grandfather Edward the fourth, and some haue heard what manslaughter continued in this Realme betwéene the houses of Yorke and Lancaster, by the which dissention this Realme was like to haue bene clerely destroyed. And although it hath pleased God to send vs a faire daughter of a noble woman and me, begotten to our great comfort, yet it hath bene told vs by diuers great Clarkes, that neyther she is our lawfull daughter, nor her mother our lawfull wife, but that we liue together abhominably and detestably in open aduoutry, insomuch, that when our Ambassage was last in France, and motion was made, that the Duke of Orleance should marry our said daughter, one of the chiefe counsellors to the French King said: It were well done to know whether she bee the King of Englands lawfull daughter, or not: for well knowne it is, that he begate her on his brothers wife, which is directly against Gods law, and his precept. Thinke you (my Lords) that these words touch not my body and soule? thinke you that these doings doe not daily and sourely trouble my conscience and bere my Soules Pes, wee doubt not but if it were your owne cause, euery man would séeke remedie, when the perill of your soule, and the losse of your inheritance is openly laid to you. For this onely cause I protest before God, and in the roome of a Prince, I haue asked counsell of the greatest Clearkes in Christendome, not for this cause I haue sent for this Legate, as a man indifferent, onely to know the truth, and to settle my conscience, and for none other cause, as God can witnesse. And as touching the Quéene if it be iudged by the law of God, that she is my lawfull wife, there was neuer thing more acceptable to me in my life, both for the discharge of my conscience, and also for the good qualities and conditions which I know to be in her: for I assure you all, that beside her noble parentage of the which she is descended (as all you know) she is a woman of most gentlenes, of most humilitie, and buxumnes, yea, and of all good qualities appertaining to nobility, she is without comparison, as I these twenty yeres almost haue had the true experiment, so that if I were to marrie againe, if the marriage might be good, I would surely chose her aboue all other women: but if it be determined by iudgement, that our marriage was against Gods law and cleerely voide, then I shall not onely sorrow the departing from so good a Lady and louing companion, but much more lament and bewaile my infortunate chance, that I haue so long liued in aduoutry to Gods great displeasure, and haue no true heire of my body to inherite this Realme. These be the causes that

The Kings Oration.

here

Dere I will make these be the pangs that trouble my conscience, and for these griefes I seeke a remedy therefore I require of you all as our trust and confidence is in you, to declare to our subiects our intent, according to our true meaning, and desire them to pray with vs that the truth may be knowne, for the discharge of our conscience, and saving of our soule: and for declaration hereof I have assembled you together, and now you may depart.

To see what countenance was made amongst the hearers of this Oration, it was a strange sight, for some sighed and said nothing, other were sory to heare the King so troubled in his conscience: others fauouring the Q. much sorrowed, that this matter was now opened, and so every man spake as his heart serued him: thus much Hall. And thus G.C. The Cardinall of Yorke, saith he, being prouoked to declare his opinion, and wilfe done in the aduancement of the Kings purpose, who thought it not meete to wade too far alone, or to giue his hasty iudgement in so weighty a matter, desired of the king licence to aske counsell of men of famous learning, both in the diuine and ciuill lawes. That obtained, by his legantine authority, hee sent his commission out, for all the Bishops of the realme that were learned in either of the said lawes, or had in any high estimation for their prudent counsell and iudgement, in priuely assaires of long experience. Then assembled those noble Prelats and notable Clearks of both Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, as also of diuers Cathedrall Churches of this realme accounted learned, and of witty discretion in determination of doubtfull questions. Then was this matter of the Kings case consulted of from day to day, that it was to the learned a goodly hearing: but in fine the ancient fathers of both lawes, departed with one iudgement, contracte to the principall expectation. Then was it thought expedient, that the King should send out his commissioners into all the Universities of Christendome, to bring with them the definition of their opinions in the same vnder the seale of euery Universitie, which they obtained. Having now a sure staffe to stand by, these proceedings declared to the Cardinall, he sent againe for the Bishops, to whom he declared the trauell of these commissioners. And for affirmance thereof, he vsed them the instruments of euery Universitie vnder their seuerall seales. They went once againe to consultation. It was then concluded, that the King should send to the Pope, declaring the opinions of these Universities, authorised by their common seales: to the which it was thought that the consent of these Prelats of this realme should be necessary to be sent thither, altogether compiled in an instrument sealed with all their seales annexed to the said instrument. Not long after the Ambassadors were addressed to trauell in the matter, hauing certaine instructions, among which one was this, that if the Pope would not giue iudgment definitiue in the Kings case, to require another commission to bee granted vnder lead, to stablish a Court to be kept in England, for that purpose directed to the Legt Cardinall and Legate of England, and to the Cardinall Campeius, who was then (though he were a stranger) Bishop of Bathe (the which the King had giuen him) to determine, and iustly to iudge according to conscience and discretion: To the which, after long suite made, and the good will of the same Cardinall obtained to trauell into England, the Pope granted to their suite, and the Cardinall arriued in England, as ye before haue heard.

Now after some deliberation and consultation in the ordering and ding of the Kings matters, and his commission, and the articles of his ambassage seene and read, and digested, it was determined, that the King and Quéene his wife should bee lodged at Bridewell. And then in the blacke Fryers a certaine place was there appointed most conuenient for the King and Quéenes repaire to the Court, there to be kept for the disputation and determination of the cause, whereas these two Legats sate as iudges, before whom the King and Q. were sited and commoned to appeare: which was a strange sight, and the newest deuise that euer was reade or heard of before in any region, story, or chronicle, a King & a Quéene to be constrained by processe compellatory to appeare in any Court as common persons within their owne realme and dominion, to abide the iudgements and decrees of their owne subiects, being the royall Maiestie and prerogatiue thereof. Ye shall vnderstand (as I haue said before) that there was a Court erected in the blacke Fryers in London, whereas sate these 2. Cardinals for iudges in the same, in the moneths of April, May, Iune, and July. Now will I set you out the manner and order of the same Court: first, there was a Court platted in Tables and Benches in manner of a Consistorie, one seate raised higher for the Iudges to sitte on than the other were. Then as it were in the middest of the said Iudges also aboue them 2. degrees high, was a cloth of estate hanged, with a chaire royall vnder the same, wherein sate the King, & besides him, same distance from him sate the Q. & vnder the Iudges sate sate the scribes and other necessary officers for the execution of the processe, and other things appertaining to such a court: the chiefe scribe was doctor Steuens after Bishop of Winchester, and the apparator, who was Caller of the court, was one Cooke (most commonly called Cooke of Winchester) Then before the King and the Iudges within the court sate the Archbish. of Canterbury D. Warham, and all the other Bishops. Then vnder at both ends within, the Counsellors learned in the lawes, as well the Kings as the Quéenes. The Doctors of law for the King, were doctor Simpson that was after Bish. of Chichester, and Do. Bell, that was after Bishop of Worcester, with diuers other, and proctors in the same law on the same side were, doctor Peter, doctor Tregonel, with others. On the other side for the Q. were doctor Fisher B. of Rochester, Doct. Standish, and Doct. Ridley, a very small man of stature, but surely a great and excellent clearke in diuinitie.

1529.

Amrig. 21. The King marriage argued in open Court at the Blacke Fryers.

diuinitie. Thus was the Court furnished. The Iudges commanded the Cryer to proclaime silence whilest their commission was read, both to the Court, and to the people assembled. That done, the Scribes commanded the Cryer to call the King by the name of King Henry of England, come into the court, &c. With that the King answered and said: Here. Then called hee the Quéene, by the name of Katherine Quéene of England, come into the Court, &c. Who made no answere, but rose incontinent out of her Chayre, and because shee could not come to the king directly, for the distance seuered betweene them, shee went about the Court, and came to the King, kneeling downe at his féete in the sight of all the Court and people, to whom she spoke in effect these words, as followeth: Sir (quoth shee) I desire you to doe mee iustice and right, and take some pitty vpon mee, for I am a poore woman, and a stranger, borne out of your dominion, hauing here no indifferent counsell, and lesse assurance of friendship: Alas sir, what haue I offended you, or what occasion of displeasure haue I shewed you, intending thus to put mee from you after this sort? I take God to my iudge, I haue béene to you a true and an humble wife, euer conformable to your will and pleasure, that neuer contraried or gainsaid any thing thereof, and being alwayes contented with all things where in you had any delight or daliance, whether little or much, without grudge or countenance of discontentation or displeasure: I loued for your sake all them whome you loued, whether I had cause or no cause, whether they were my friends or enemies. I haue béene your wife, these twenty yéres or mo, and you haue had by me diuers children, and when ye had me at the first, I take God to be my iudge, that I was a very maid, and whether it be true or no, I put it to your conscience. If there be any iust cause that you can alledge against me, either of dishonesty, or matter lawfull to put me from you, I am content to depart to my shame and rebuke: and if there bee none, then I pray you to let me haue iustice at your hand. The King your Father was in his time of such an excellent witte, that hee was accounted among all men for wisedome to be a second Salomon, and the King of Spaine my Father Ferdinando, was reckoned one of the wisest Princes that raigned in Spaine many yeres before: it is not therefore to be doubted, but that they had gathered as wise Counsellers vnto them of euery realme, as to their wisedoms they thought méet, and as to me séemeth there were in those dayes as wise and well learned in both the Realmes, as be now at this day, who thought the marriage betweene you and me good and lawfull: therefore it is a wonder to mee to heare, what new inuentions are now inuented against me that neuer intended but honestly: and now to cause me to stand to the order and iudgement of this Court, yee should (as séemeth me) doe me much wrong, for ye may condemne me for lacke of answere, hauing no counsell but such as yée haue assigned mee: yee must consider that they cannot be indifferent on my part when they bée your owne subiects, and such as yée haue taken and chosen out of your owne Councell, whereunto they be privy, and dare not disclose your will and intent. Therefore I humbly desire you in the way of charity to spare mee, vntill I may know what counsell and aduise my friends in Spaine will aduertise me to take, and if you will not, then your pleasure be fulfilled: and with that she rose vp, making a low curtesie to the King, and departed from thence, supposing that she would haue resorted againe to her former place. But she took her way straight out of the court, leaning vpon the arme of one of her seruants, who was her generall receiuer, called Spatt. Griffith. The King being aduertised that shee was ready to go out of the house, where the court was kept, commanded the Cryer to call her againe, who called her by these words, Katherine Quéene of England, come into the court: with that quoth Spatt. Griffith, Madam, ye be called againe. On, on, (quoth she) it maketh no matter, it is no indifferent court for me, therefore I will not tarry, go on, your wayes: and thus shee departed without any farther answer at that time or any other, and neuer would appeare after in any Court. The K. perceiuing shée was departed thus, and considering her words which she pronounced before him, saying to the audience these words in effect: For as much (quoth he) as the Q. is gone, I will in her absence declare vnto you all: She hath béene vnto me as true, as obedient, and as conformable a wife, as I would wish or desire: she hath all the vertuous qualities that ought to bee in a woman of her dignity, or in any other of baser estate: shée is also surely a noble woman borne, her conditions will well declare the same. With that (quoth Cardinall Wolsey) Sir, I most humbly require your highnesse, to declare before all this audience, whether I haue béene chiefe and the first mouer of this matter into your Maiesty or no, for I am greatly suspected herein. Ye L. Cardinall (quoth the King) I can well excuse you in this matter: many (quoth he) ye haue béen rather against me in the tempting thereof, than a setter forward or mouer of the same: the speciall cause that moued mee vnto this matter, was a certaine scrupulosity that pricked my conscience, vpon certaine words spoken I a time when it was, by the B. of Bayon the French Ambassador, who had béene hither sent, vpon the debating of a marriage to be concluded betweene the Princesse our daughter the Lady Mary, and the Duke of Orleance, second sonne to the King of France, and vpon the resolution and determination of the same, he desired respite to aduertise the King his master thereof, whether our daughter Mary should be legitimate, in respect of this my marriage with this woman, being sometime my brothers wife: which once conceiued within the secret bottome of my conscience, engendred with such a scrupulous doubt, that my conscience was incontinently accombred, vexed, and disquieted, where-

words of Q. Katherine.

whereby I thought my selfe to be greatly in danger of Gods indignation, which appeared to be (as me seemed) the rather, for that he sent vs no issue male: all such issues male as my said wife had by me died incontinent after they came into the world, so that I doubted the great displeasure of God in that behalfe. Thus my conscience being tossed in the waues of a scrupulous conscience, and partly in despaire to haue any other issue than I had already by this Lady now my wife, it befell me further to consider the state of this Realme, and the danger that it stood in for lacke of a Prince to succeed me, I thought it good in release of the weighty burden of my weake conscience, and also the quiet estate of this worthy Realme, to attempt the law therin, whether I may lawfully take another wife more lawfully, by whom God may send me more issue, in case this my first copulation was not good, without any carnall concupiscence, and not for any displeasure or mislking of the Queenes person and age, with whome I would be as well contented to continue, if our marriage may stand with the lawes of God, as with any woman alioe: in which point consisteth all this doubt that we go about now to try, by the learning, wisedome, iudgement, of you our Prelats, and Pastors of all this our realme, and dominion now here assembled for the purpose to whose conscience and learning I haue committed the charge and iudgement, according to the which, I will (God willing) be right well content to submit my selfe, and for my part obey the same: wherein, after that I perceiued my conscience so doubtfull, I moued it in confession to you my Lord of Lincolne then ghostly father: for as much as then you your selfe were in some doubt, you moued me to aske the counsell of all you my Lords: wherevpon I moued you my Lord of Canter. whom first, to haue your licence, in as much as you were metropolitane, to put this matter in quest: for so I did of all you my L. to which you granted vnder your seales, and that I haue lore to bee thewed. That is truth, if it please your grace, quoth the Archbishop of Canterbury, I doubt not but my brethren here present will acknowledge the same: No sir, not so, vnder your correction, quoth the bishop of Rochester, for you haue not mine: No, oh, quoth the King, take here, is not this your hand and seale, and thewed him the instrument with seales? No forsoth, quoth the Bishop. How say you to that, quoth the King to the Archbishop of Canterbury? Sir, it is his hand and his seale, saide my Lord of Canterbury. No my Lord (quoth the Bishop of Rochester) indeed you were in hand with mee to haue both my hand and seale, as other of my Lords haue done, but then I said against to you, that I would never consent to any such act, for it was much against my conscience, and therefore my hand and seale should never be set to any such instrument, God willing, with much more matter touching the same communication betweene vs. Ye say truth, quoth the Archbishop of Canterbury, such words you had vnto me, but you were fully resolued at light, if at I should subscribe your name, and put to your seale my selfe, and you would allow the same. All which, quoth the Bishop of Rochester, vnder your correction my Lord, is not true. Well, well (quoth the king) it maketh no great matter, we will not stand with you in argument, you are but one man. And then the King rose vp, and the Court was adiorned vntill another day.

The next Court day the Cardinals sate againe, at which time the councell on both sides were there ready to answere: the Kings councell alleaged the matrimony not to bee lawfull at the beginning, because of the carnall copulation had betweene Prince Arthur and the Q. This matter being very vehemently touched on that side, and to proue it, they alleadged many reasons and similitudes of truth, and being answered negatively against on the other side, it seemed that all their former allegations were very doubtfull to bee tried, and that no man knew the truth. Yes (quoth the B. of Rochester) I know the truth: how know you (quoth my Lord Cardinall) the truth, more than any other person: Yes forsoth my Lord (quoth he *Quia ego sum professor veritatis*, therefore I know the truth: I know that God is truth it selfe, and he never saith but truth, and God said: *Quos Deus coniunxit, homo non separet.* And for as much as this marriage was ioyned and made by God to a good intent, I say that I know the truth, and that no man can breake vpon any wilfull occasion that which God hath made and constituted. So much doth all faithfull men (quoth my Lord Cardinall) know as well as you, yet this reason is not sufficient in this case, for the Kings councell doe alleage diuers presumptions to proue that it was not lawfull at the beginning. *Ergo* it was not ordained by God, for God doth nothing without a due order, therefore it is not to bee doubted, but if the presumptions be true, which they do alleadg to be most true, then the coniunction was not could not be of God. Therefore I say to you my Lord of Rochester, yee know not the truth, vnlesse ye can auoide their presumptions by iust reasons. Then quoth Doct. Ridley, it is a shame and a great dishonor to this honorable presence that any such presumption should bee alleaged in this open Court, which bee to detestable to bee rehearsed: what (quoth my Lord Cardinall) *Domine Doctor magis reuerenter?* No, no, my Lord (quoth he) there belongeth no reuerence to be giuen to this matter, for an vnreuerent matter would be vnreuerently answered: and there they left, and proceeded forth with other matter.

Thus the Court passed from session to session, and day to day, that at a certaine day of their session, the King sent for my L. Cardinall to come to him to Bridewell, who to accomplish his commandement went to him, and being there with him in communication in his priuy Chamber from eleuen vnto twelue of the clocke at noone and past, my Lord Cardinall departed from the King, and take his barge at the Blacke Fryers, & went to his house at Westminster. The Bishop of Carlile being in his barge

barge, said vnto him winding his face, it is a hot day quoth hee: Yea my Lord (quoth the Cardinall if yee had beene as well chafed as I haue beene within this houre, yee would say it were very hot: as soone as hee came home to his house at Westminster, hee went incontinent to his naked bed, where hee had not laine full two houres, but that my Lord of Wiltshire came to speak with him of a message from the King. My Lord vnderstanding of his comming, commoned hee should bee brought to his bed side, and he being there, the wed him the K. pleasure was that he should incontinent goe with the other Cardinall vnto the Queene, (who was then in Bridewell in her Chamber there) to perswade with her by their wisedoms, and to aduise her to surrender the whole matter into the Kings hands, by her owne consent and will, which should be much better to her honour, than to stand to the triall of law, and thereby to be condemned, which should seeme much to her dishonour. To fulfill the K. pleasure, my L. said he was ready and would prepare him to go thither out of hand, &c. Then my L. arose, and made him ready, taking his barge and went straight to Bath place to Card. Campeius, and so went together to Bridewell, directly to the Q. lodging, and being in her chamber of presence, they shewed the gentleman Vsher that they came to speak with the Q. grace The gentleman Vsher aduertised the Queene, that the Cardinals were come to speake with her: with that the rose vp, and with a skeine of white thread about her neck, came into her chamber of presence, where the cardinals were attending, at whose comming, quoth the, alacke my Lords, I am very sorie to make you attend vpon me, what is your pleasure with me? If it please your Grace (quoth Cardinall Wolsey) to goe into your priuy chamber, we will shew you the cause of our comming: My Lord (quoth she) if ye haue any thing to say, speake it openly before all these folke: for I feare nothing that ye can say against me, but that I would all the world should heare and see it, and therfore speak your mind openly I pray you. Then began the Cardinall to speak to her in Latin: May good my L. (quoth she) speak to me in English, for I can (I thank God) both speak and vnderstand English, although I vnderstand some Latin. Forsooth (qo. the Cardinall) good Madam, if it please your Grace, we come both to know your minde how you are disposed to doe in this matter betweene the King and you, and also to declare secretly our opinions and counsell vnto you, which we doe onely for very zeale and obedience we beare vnto your grace. My Lord (quoth thee) I thanke you for your good will: but to make you answer in your request, I cannot so sodainely, for I was set among my maids at worke, thinking full little of any such matter, wherein there needeth a longer deliberation, & a better head than mine to make answere; for I need of counsell in this case, which toucheth me so neere, and for any counsell of friendship that I can find in England, they are not for my profit: what thinke you I pray you my Lords, will any English man counsell me, or be friendly to me against the K. pleasure, that be his subiects may know? and as for my counsell in whom I will put my trust, they bee not here, they be in Spaine in mine owne country: and my Lords, I am a poore woman lacking wit to answere to any such noble persons of wisedome as you bee in so weighty a matter, therefore I pray you, be good vnto me poore woman destitute of friends here in a forraine region, and your counsell also I will be glad to heare: and therewith the rose the Cardinall by the hand, and led him into her priuy chamber with the other Cardinall, where they tarried a season talking with the Q. what communication ended, they departed to the K. making to him relation of her talke, and after returned home to supper. Thus this case went forward from Court to Court, til it came to iudgement, so that euery man expected iudgement would be giuen the next day, at which day the King came thither, & set him down in a chaire within a dore, in the end of the gallery) which opened directly against the iudgement seate) to heare the iudgement giuen, at which time all their proceedings were openly read in Latine. That done, the K. counsell at the bar called for iudgement. with that (quoth Cardinall Campeius) I will not giue iudgement till I haue made relation to the Pope of all our proceedings, whose counsell and commandement in this case I will obserue, the matter is too high for vs to giue any hasty iudgement, considering the highnes of the persons, and the doubtfull occasions alleaged: and also whose commissioners we be, vnder whose authoritie we sit: it were therefore reason that we should make our chiefe head a Counsell in the same, before wee proceed to iudgement definitiue. I come not to please for fauour, meed, or dread of any person alive, to be King or otherwise, I haue no such respect to the person, that I will offend my conscience, I will not for the fauor or displeasure of any high estate, do that thing that should be against the will of God, I am an old man both weake and sickly, that looke dayly for death, &c. And for as much as I do vnderstand, hauing perceiuerance by the allegations in the matter, the cause is very doubtfull, and also the party defendant will make none answere, but doth rather appeale from vs, supposing that we be not indifferent, considering the K. high dignity and authority within his owne Realme, which hee hath ouer his subiects, & we being his subiects, the thinketh that we cannot do iustice for feare of displeasure. Therfore to auoid all these ambiguities and doubts, I will not wade any further in this matter, vnlesse I haue the iust opinion and assent of the Pope, and such other of more experience, or as he seme better in such doubtfull lawes, than I am: wherefore I will adiorn the court for this time, according to the order of the Court of Rome, from whence semblable iurisdiction is deriued: and if we should goe further than our commission doth warrant vs, it were great folly and much to our blames, and may be accounted breakers of the order of

the high Court, from which (as I said) our authorities be derived. And with that the Court was dissolued, and no more done. Then stept forth the Duke of Suffolke from the king, and spake with an haut countenance these words: It was neuer merry in England (quoth hee) while we had any Cardinals among vs: which words were set forth both with countenance and vehemencie, that all men maruelled what he intended. to whom no man made answere. Then the D. spake against in great despight, to the which our Cardinall (perceiuing his vehemencie) soberly made answere, &c. This matter continued thus a long season, and my Lord Cardinall was in displeasure with the king, for that the matter in his suite toke no better incesse to his purpose, notwithstanding my Lo. excused him by his commission, which gaue him no authority to proceed in iudgement without knowledge of the Pope, who referred the same to himselfe. At the last they were aduertized by their post, that the Pope would take deliberation in the matter, vntill his Courts were opened, which should not be before Bartholomewtide next. The K. considering the time so long ere it should be determined, thought it good to send an Ambassadge to the Pope to perswade with him, to shew such honourable fauor vnto his maiestie, that the matter might sooner be ended than it was like to be. D. Stephen Gardiner Secretary was thither sent, and there tarryed till the latter end of Sommer. The King commanded the Quene to be removed out of the Court, and sent to another place: and his Highnes rode in his progresse. And when M. Secretary was returned from Rome, Cardinall Campeius made suite to be discharged, and was admitted to returne to Rome.

The Duke of Suffolke speaketh during the absence of the Cardinall.

Stephen Gardiner the K. Secretary sent Ambassador.

Cardinall Campeius tooke his iourney towards Rome, with the kinges reward, but what it was I am vncertaine: neuertheless after their departure, it was reported vnto the king by the Councell, that Cardinall Campeius was departed, and carried with him great treasures of my L. Cardinals of England, to be conueyed in great sums to Rome, whither they surmised he would secretly repaire out of the Realme: insomuch, as they caused a post to ride after the Cardinall to search him. And when they ouertooke him at Calcis (where he was staid vntill search was made) there was not found so much money as he receiued of the K. reward, so he was dismissed, and went his way.

After that Cardinall Campeius was thus departed and gone, Michaelmas terme drew on, against which time my L. Cardinall resorted to his house at Westminster: and when the terme began, he went into the Hall in such like sort and gesture, as hee was accustomed most commonly to doe, and sate in the Chancery being then Chancellor: after which day he neuer sate more.

The next day he tarryed at home, expecting the comming of the Dukes of Suffolke and Norfolke, who came not that day: but the next day, to wit, the 18. day of October, they came thither vnto him, to whom they declared the K. pleasure, which was that he should surrender & deliuer by the great Seale into their hands, and to depart simply vnto Asher, which was an house situate nigh vnto Hampton Court, belonging to the Bishoprike of Winchester. The cardinall demanded of them their commission that gaue them such authoritie: who answered again, that they were sufficient commissioners, and had authoritie to do no lesse by the K. mouth: notwithstanding he would in no wise agree in that behalfe, without further knowledge of their authority, saying: That the great seale was deliuered him by the K. person, to enioy the ministration thereof, with the rome of the Chancellor, for the terme of his life, whereof for his suretie he had the K. letters patents: which matter was greatly debated betweene him and the dukes, with many great and haynous words, insomuch that the dukes were fain to depart again without their purpose, & rode to Windsor to the K. and made report accordingly: but the next day they returned againe, bringing with them the K. letters. Then the Cardinall deliuered vnto them the great Seale, and was content to depart simply, taking with him nothing but only certaine prouision for his house: and after long talke betweene him & the D. they departed with the great Seale of England, and brought the same to the K. Then the Card. called all his officers before him, & tok account of them for all such stuffe wher of they had charge, & in his Galery were set diuers Tables, whereupon lay a great number of goodly rich stuffe, as whole pieces of silke of all colours, veluet, satin, damosk, taffata, grograin, and other things: also there lay 1000. pieces of fine Holland cloth. There was laid on euery table bokes, reporting the contents of the same, & so was their inuentories of all things in order against the K. coming. He caused to be hanged the walls of the galery on the one side, with cloth of gold, cloth of tissue, cloth of siluer, and rich cloth of bodkin of diuers colours: on the other side were hanged the richest suite of copes of his own prouision made for his Colledges of Oxford and Ipswich, that euer was seene in England. Then had he two chambers adioyning to the galery, the one most commonly called the gilt Chamber, and the other the councel-chamber, wherein were set by 2. bord and long tables vpon trestles, whereupon was set such a number of plate of all sorts, as was almost incredible. In the gilt Chamber were set out vpon the Table nothing but gilt plate, and vpon a cupbord and in a windowe was set no plate, but gold very rich: and in the Councell-Chamber was all white and parcell gilt plate, and vnder the Table in baskets was all old broken siluer plate, and tokes sette by them, purpoyting euery kind of plate, and euery parcell, with the contents of the ounces therof. Thus was all things prepared, giuing charge of all the said stuffe, with all other remaining in euery office, to be deliuered to the K. to make answer to their charge: so the order was such that euery officer was charged with the receipt of the stuffe belonging to his office by indenture. Then all things being ordered, as is before rehearsed,

Cardinall discharged of the great seale, and departed from Yorke place simply.

rehearsed, my Lord prepared him to depart by Water, and before his going, Sir William Gascoine being his treasurer, came vnto him, (to whom hee gaue among other the charge of the deliuerie of the said goods to bee deliuered vnto the King) and said vnto the Cardinall then being his Lord and Master. Sir (quoth he) I am sory for your Grace: for yee shall goe straight way to the Tower, as I heare say. Is this the good comfort and counsell (quoth my L. Cardinall vnto him) that you can giue your Master in aduersitie? It hath been alwayes your naturall inclination to be very light of credit, and much more lighter of reporting lies. I would you should know Sir Will. & all those reporters, that it is vntrue, for I neuer deserued to come there, although it hath pleased the King to take my house ready furnished for his pleasure at this time. I would all the world knew that I haue nothing but it is his of right; for by him, and of him I haue receiued all that I haue: therefore it is of conuenience & reason, that I render vnto his Highnesse the same again with all my heart: therfore go your wayes, and attend well to your charge. And therewithall he made him ready, and then with his traine of gentlemen and yeomen, which was no small number, he tok his barge at his priuie staires, and so went by water vnto Putney: at the taking whereof, there was walking by and downe in Thamis as full of boates, filled with people of London, expecting the Cardinals departing by water, supposing that he should haue gone to the tower, wherof they hoped sory much. Of wauering and new fangled multitude, is it not a wonder to consider the mutability of this vncertaine world, the common people desireth allwayes those things for the nouelties sake, which after turneth them to small profite or commodity? For if the sequele be well and directly weighed and considered, they had small cause to reioyce at his fall. What hath succeeded, wise men doe know, and the common sort themselues haue felt: wherfore to wonder at it, were but a folly, to study the remedy, it profiteth not: for thus it hath euer been, and will alwayes be, do what ye will to redresse the faute, it boteth not. I cannot see, but alwayes men in authority be disdained with the common sort of people, and they most of all that do obserue and minister iustice: for where they please some one that receiueth the benefit of the law at their hands according to iustice, they likewise displease the contrary part, supposing to sustaine wrong where they haue right. Thus all Iustices be in contempt with the people alwayes, for ministration of their duty, yet must some such be alwayes elected and deputed so to doe, for els if the world should be without inquisition and order, there should be too much erro & abomination. When he was arriued with all his traine at Putney, being vpon the land, he toke his Mule, and euery man toke their horses; and riding not past a paire of Buts length, he espyed a Gentleman come riding in poste downe the Hill in the Towne of Putney: And demanding of his Gentlemen about him, what he was that came riding downe so fast for sooth Sir (qd. they) itis master Norris, as it seemeth vs: and by and by, he came to my Lord, saluting him, and said: Sir, the Kings Maiestie commendeth him vnto you, and commaunded me to shew you, that you be as much in his fauour as euer you were, and so shall he: therefore he would that you should be of good chere, and take no thought, for you shall not lacke. And although he hath done thus vnkindly towards you, it is more for the satisfying of some, than of any indignation. And yet you know well that he is able to recompence you againe, and restore you to twise so much: and thus he bad me that I should shew you, and willed me to bid you to take all this matter in patience: and Sir, for my part I trust to see you in better estate then euer ye were. But when he heard Master Norris report the good and comfortable words of the King, he quickly lighted from his Mule, all alone, as though he had been the yongest amongst his men, and incontinent kneled downe in the dirt vpon both his knees, holding by his handes for ioy of the Kings most comfortable message: master Norris lighted also, stepping him to soone vpon his knees, and kneeled by him, and toke him in his armes, and asked him how he did, calling vpon him to credit his message: Mast. Noris (quoth he) when I consider the ioyfull newes that you haue brought me, I could do no lesse than greatly reioyce, euery wood pierced to my heart, that the sodaine ioy surmounted my memory, hauing no regard or respect to the place, but I thought it my duty, that in the same place where I receiued this comfort, to laud and praise God vpon my knees, and most humbly to render to my soueraigne L. my hearty thanks for the same. And as he was talking thus vpon his knees to Mast. Noris, he would haue pulled off a veluet night-cap which he ware vnder his blacke hat, and scarlet cap, but he could not vndoe the knot vnder his chin: wherefore with violence hee rent his laces of his cap, and pulled his said cap from his head, and kneeled bareheaded: and this done, he rose vp, and mounted againe vpon his mule, and so rode forth vp the high way in the towne, talking with master Noris. And when he came vpon Putney-heath, where M. Noris should depart from him, Mast. Noris gaue him a ring of gold with a stone, and said vnto him, that the K. sent him the same for a token of his good will, which ring (quoth he) the K. saith ye know very well. It was the priuie token betweene the King and him, when the K. would haue any especiall thing sped at his hands: then said he to Master Noris, if I were Lord of the Realme, the one halfe thereof were too small a reward to giue you for your paines and good newes: but good M. Noris, consider with me that I haue nothing left me, but my clothes vpon my backe, therefore I shall desire you to take this small reward at my hand (the which was a little chaine of golde made like a flagen chaine, with a crosse of gold, wherein was a peece of the holy Crosse, which he continually weare about his necke next his body:) and said

wauering of the new-fangled multitude described.

Cardinall Wolley arriued at Putney, & what followeth there at that time.

said sur thermore: master Noris, I assure you, when I was in prosperity, although it seeme but small in value, yet I would not gladly have departed with the same for a thousand pound, therefore I shall require you to take it in good worth, and to weare it about your necke continually for my sake, and to remember me to the king, when ye shall see opportunity, unto whose highnes I shall most instantly require you to have me most humbly commended, for whose charitable disposition toward me, I can but pray for the preservation of his royall estate. I am his obedient subiect, his poore Chaplain, and bead man, and so will be during my life, accounting my selfe nothing, nor to have any thing but onely of him, and by him, whom I have iustly and truely served to the best of my grosse wit: and with that he take Mast. Noris by the hand bare-headed, and so departed. And when he was gone but a small distance, he returned againe, and caused master Noris to be called to him: when Master Noris was returned, hee said unto him, I am sory (quoth he) that I have no token to send to the king: but if ye will at my request present the king with this poore fole, I trust he will accept him: for he is for a Noblemans pleasure, for sooth worth 1000. pounde: so Master Noris take the fole, with whom my Lord was faine to send fire of his tallest yeomen to helpe him to convey the fole to the Court, for the poore fole take on like a tyrant rather then he would have departed from my Lord, but notwithstanding they conueyed him, and so brought him to the Court, where the king received him very gladly.

Parch the L. Cardinalls foole guen to the king.

After departure of M. Noris with his token to the king, my L. rode straight to Asher, which is an house belonging to the Bishoprick of Winchester, situate in the County of Surrey, not far from Hampton Court, where my L. and his family continued the space of 3. or 4. weekes, without either beds, sheets, table-clothes, or dishes to eate their meat in, or wherewith to buy any, howbeit there was good prouision of all kinde of victuall, and of beere, and wine, whereof there was sufficient, and plenty enough: but my Lord was compelled of necessity to borrow of Master Arundell, and of the Bishop of Carlile, plate, and dishes, both to drinke in, and eate his meate in. Thus my L. with his familie continued in this strange estate vntill after Hallowntide.

On Allhalowne day, when the Cardinall had finished his service, he returned into his Chamber, and called for his dinner, who was served in his privy Chamber, and there dined among diuers his Doctors, among whom master Thomas Cromwell dined: and sitting at dinner, it came to passe that in communication of his Gentlemen and seruents true & faithfull seruice which my Lord much commended, Master Cromwell tooke an occasion, to tell my Lorde that hee ought in conscience to consider the truth, and good service that they had done in his necessitie, which did not forsake him in weale nor woe, and sayd: Sir, it shall be well done for your grace, to call them

Mr. Thomas Cromwell counsaileth the Cardinall.

before you, both Gentlemen which be worthy persons, and also Yeomen, and let them vnderstand, that ye right well consider their paines and trueth, with their faithfull service, and to giue them your commendation, with good words, the which shall bee to them great courage, to sustaine your misery with paines and patience, and to spend their life and substance in your service. Alas, Thomas (quoth my Lord) ye know I have nothing to giue them, and words without deedes bee not often well taken, for if I had but as I late had, I would depart with them so frankly, as they should bee well content: But nothing hath no sauour: and I am both ashamed and also sorie, that I am not able to requite their faithfull service. And although I doe reioyce, as I may, to consider the fidelitie that I see in the number of my seruants, who will not forsake me in my miserable estate, but be as diligent and as serviceable about me, as they were in my great triumph and glorie: Yet doe I lament againe as behemently the want of substance to distribute amongst them: Why Sir, (quoth Master Cromwell) have ye not heere a number of Chaplaines, to whom yee have departed liberally with spirituall promotions, insomuch, as some may dispend by your Graces preferment a thousand pound by yere, and some fiue hundred markes, and some more, and some lesse: You have not a Chaplaine within your house, or belonging vnto you, but hee may spend well at the least by your procurement and promotion, three hundred markes yeerely, who have had all the profite and gaines at your hands: and your other seruants nothing: and yet haue your seruantes taken much more paines in one day, then all your idle Chaplaines haue done in a yere. Therefore if they will not freely and friendly consider your liberalitie, and depart with you of the same goods gotten in your service, now in your great indigence and necessity, it is pitty that they line, and all the world will have them in indignation and hatred for their ingrattitude to their Master. I thinke no lesse Thomas (quoth my Lord:) wherefore I pray you cause all my seruants, to assemble without in my great Chamber after dinner, and see them stand in order, and I will declare vnto them my mind. After that the words cad was taken by, Master Cromwell came to the Gentleman-Usher and said. Heard you not (quoth hee) what my Lord said. Yes Sir, (quoth he) I did; why then (quoth hee) call all the Gentlemen and Yeomen vp into the great Chamber, and so it was done: the Gentlemen placed on the right side of the Chamber, and the Yeomen on the other side, and at the last my Lord came out with his Rochet vp on a violet gowne like a Bishop, who went straight to the vpper end of the said Chamber, where was the great window standing there a while, his Chaplains about him, beholding the godly maners of his seruants, who could not speake vnto them vntill the teares ran down his cheekes, which

which few teares perceiued by his seruants, caused the fountaines of water to gush out of their faithfull eyes in such sort, as it would cause a cruell heart to lament. At the last, after he had turned his face to the window, and dried his moisted cheekes, he spake to them in this sort in effect. Most faithfull Gentlemen, and true-hearted Yeomen, I doe not lament to see you about me, but I lament in a manner, a certaine ingratitude on my behalfe towards you all, in whom hath beene a great default that in my prosperity have not done so much for you as I might have done either in deed or in word, which lay in my power then to doe, but then I knew not the iewel and speciall treasure I had in my house of you my faithfull seruants but now experience hath taught me, and with the eies of my discretion I do perceiue the same. There was neuer thing that repented me more that euer I did, then both the remembrance of my great and most oblitious negligence, and vnkind ingrattitude, that I have not promoted, preferred, and aduanced you all, according to your demerits: howbeit, it is not vnknowne vnto you all, that I was not so fully furnished of temporall promotions in my gift, as I was of spirituall preferments: and if I should have preferred you to any of the Kings offices, then should I have runne in the indignation of the Kings seruants, who would not much let to repost behinde my backe that there could no office in the Kings gift escape the Cardinall and his seruants: and thus should I have runne in open slander before all the world. But now it is come to this passe, that it pleased the King to take all that euer I have into his hands, so that I have nothing to give you: for I have nothing left me but my bare clothes vpon my backe, the which are simple in comparison that I had: howbeit, if it might doe you any good, I would not sticke to deuide the same among you: but my good Gentlemen and Yeomen, my trustie and faithfull seruants, and of whom no Prince had the like, I shall require you to take some patience with me a while: for I doubt not but that the King considering my suggested offence by mine enemies, which is put against me to be of small griefe or hurt for so great and sodaine an ouerthrow, will shortly restore me to my liuing, so that I shall be more able to deuide my substance among you, whereof ye shall not lacke; for whatsoeuer shall chance hereafter to be the ouer-plus and superfluity of my reuenewes, at the determination of my yerely account, it shall be distributed among you: for I will neuer during my life, observe the goods or riches of this world any other wise, then which shall bee sufficient to maintaine the state, that God hath, and shall call me to. And if the King doe not so shortly restore me, then will I write for you, either to the King, or to any Noble-man within this Realme, to retaine your service: for I doubt not but the King or any Noble-man of this Realme will credite my Letter in your commendation: therefore in the meane time I would aduise you to repaire home to your wives, such as

The Cardinalls words to his Gentlemen and Yeomen.

haue wiues, and some of you that haue no wiues to take a time to visite your parents in the Countrey. There is none of you all, but once in a yeere ye would require licence to see and visite your wife and other your friends: take this time therefore in that respect, and in your returne I will not refuse you to beg with you. I consider that your service in my house hath beene such, that ye be not apt to serue any vnder the degree of a king: therefore I would aduise you to serue no man but the King, who I am sure will not refuse you. Therefore I desire you to take your pleasure for a moneth, and then ye may come againe: and by that time I trust the King will extend his mercy vpon me. Sir (quoth Master Cromwell) there bee diuers of these your Yeomen that would be glad to see their friends, but they lacke money: therefore heere be diuers of your Chaplaines who have received at your hands great Benefices, and Livings, let them shew themselues vnto you as they be bound to doe: I thinke their honestie and charitie is such, that they will not see you lacke that may doe you good or pleasure. And for my part, although I have not received of your Graces gift one peny toward the increase of my living, yet will I give you this toward the dispatch of your seruants: and therewith deliuered to my Lord, fiue pound in gold: and now let vs see what your Chaplaines will doe, I thinke they will depart with you much more liberally than I, who be more able to give you a pound then I a penie, goe to masters (quoth hee) to the Chaplains: I so much as they gaue to my L. liberally, some ten pound, some twenty nobles, some fiue pound and so some more, & some lesse, as their powers would extend at that time: by meanes whereof my L. received among them, as much mony as paid the Yeomen ten shillings a peece towards their quarters wages, and as much money as would pay euery of them for a moneths bond wages: and then they departed downe into the Hall, where some determined to goe to their friends, and some would not depart from my Lord, vntill they might see him in better estate. My Lord returned into his Chamber lamenting the departure from his seruants, making his moane to Master Cromwell, who comforted him the best he could, and desired my Lord to giue him leave to goe to London, whereas hee would either make or marre (which was alwayes his common word.) Then after a little communication with my Lord in secret, he departed, and tooke his horse, and rode to London. At whose departing he said to the Lords, Gentlemen, farewell, ye shall heare shortly of me, and if I speede well, I will not faile to be heere againe within these two dayes, and so hee rode on his iourney, Ralph Sadler since a Knight, was then his Clearke, and rode with him. After my Lord had supped that night, and all men got to bed, Allhallowne day about mid-night, one of the Porters wakened the Gentleman-Usher, and told him that there were a great number of horsemen at the gate,

M. Cromwell his comfort and gift to the Cardinall.

Tho. Cromwell sent to London to make or to marre.

Sir Ralph Sadler.

Sir Io. Russ. sent to the Cardinall.

that would come in, saying that it was Sir John Russull: the Gentleman Vsher bad the porter goe downe, and make a great fire in the lodge to burne them, for it had raigned all that night most vehemently. The said gentleman-Vsher rose, cast on his night-Gowne, and went to the gates, and asked who was there: with that Maister Russell spake, and the gates were opened, Sir John Russell went to the fire to drie him, and said he came from the King on message to my Lord, Sir, quoth the gentleman Vsher, I trust your newes be good. Yea, I promise you on my fidelity, and so tell him, that I haue brought him such newes that will please him well. The Cardinall was wakened, and told of the iourney taken by Sir John Russell that troublesome night: I pray God all be for the best quoth my Lord: Yes, quoth the Gentleman Vsher, hee told mee it was such newes, as yee would greatly reioyce to heare: well then, quoth he God be praised, and welcome be his Grace, goe yee and fetch him to me, and by that time I will bee ready to talke with him.

When Maister Russell was come to my Lord, he had cast on his night-gowne, vnto whom Maister Russell made most humble reverence vpon his knee, whom my Lord stoped vnto, and take him vp, and bade him welcome: Sir (quoth hee) the King commendeth him vnto you, and deliuered him a great ring of gold, with a Tuckes for a token, and willed me to bid you be of good cheere, for hee loueth you as well as euer he did, and is sorry for your trouble, whole minde runneth much vpon you: insomuch that before his Grace sate downe to supper, he called me vnto him, and desired me to take the paines secretly to visite you, and to comfort you the best of my power. And Sir, I haue had the fayrest iourney for so little a way, that euer I had to my remembrance: my Lord thanked him for his paines and good newes, and demanded of him if he had supped, and hee said nay: well then (quoth my Lord) cause the Cookes to prouide some meate for him, and cause a Chamber to be prouided for him, that he may take his rest a while vpon a bed: all which commaundement was fulfilled, and in the meane time my Lord and Maister Russell were in secret communication, and in the end Maister Russell went to his Chamber, and said he would tarie but a while, for he would be at the Court, at Greenewich againe before day, and would not for any thing that it were knowne that hee had beene with my Lord that night. And so being in his Chamber, hauing a small repast, rested him a while vpon a bed, while his seruants supped, and dyed them. And that done, incontinent hee rode away with speede againe to the Court. After this within a while my Lord was restored to Plate, Vessell and Houshold-stuffe of euery thing necessarie some part, so that hee was better furnished than before.

Tho. Cromwell.

Now to returne to Maister Cromwell, to see how hee had sped since his departure. The case stood so, that the Parliament should begin in *crastino animarum*, or there abouts: and hee being within London, deuised with himselfe to be one of the Burgesses of the Parliament, and chanced to mete with one Sir Thomas Rush Knight, a speciall friend of his, whose Sonne was appointed to bee a Burgesse, of whom hee obtained his roome, and so put his fate into the Parliament house; so that within two or three dayes after his departure from my Lord, he came againe to Asher, with a pleasant countenance: and said, that hee had once aduentured to put in his fate, where he would be better regarded or euer the Parliament was finished. Then talked hee with my Lord, and after his talke, he rode againe to London, because hee would not bee absent from the Parliament in the Morning. There was nothing done against him in the Parliament-house, but hee sent to my Lord to know what answere hee might make in his behalfe: Insomuch, that there was nothing alleadged against my Lord, but that he was ready to make answere thereto: Insomuch, that at the length his honest estimation and earnest behauiour in his Maisters cause, grew so in euery mans opinion, how that hee was the most faithfull seruant to his Maister of all other, wherein he was greatly of all men commended. Then was there brought in a Bill of Articles into the Parliament-house, to haue my Lord condemned of treasons, against which bill Maister Cromwell inueyed so discreetly and with such wittie perswasions, and deepe reasons, that the same could take no effect. Then were his enemies constreyned to indight him in a Premunire, all which was to intitle the King to his goods and possessions, the which hee had obtained and purchased for the maintenance of his Colledges in Oxford and Ipstwich, whereof he was then in building in the most sumptuous wise: wherein when my Lord was demanded by the Iudges which were sent vnto him to know his minde, and to take his answere therein, hee answered them in this wise: My Lords Iudges (quoth hee) the Kings Highnesse knoweth, whether I haue offended his Maiestie or no, in vsing of my prerogatiue legantine, for the which I am indighted. I haue the Kings Licence in my Coffers, vnder his hand and broad Seale, for the exercising and vsing thereof in the most largest wise, the which now are in the hands of mine enemies. Therefore because I will not stand in question with the King in his owne cause, I will heere presently confesse before you the indightment, and put me wholly to the mercie and grace of the King, trusting that he hath a Conscience and a discretion to consider the truth and my humble submission and obedience, wherein I might right well stand to the tryall thereof by Iustice: but thus much you may say to his Highnesse, that I am wholly vnder his obeysance and will, and doe submitte my selfe to all things that shall bee his Princely pleasure, whole will and commandement I neuer

Parliament at the Black Friers.

The Cardinall indighted in the Premunire.

neuer disobeyed or repugned, but was alwayes contented, and glad to please him before God, whom I ought most chiefly to haue obeyed, the which now me repents: notwithstanding, I most heartily require you to haue me vnto his royall Maiestie commended, for whom I doe and will during my life, pray to God to send him much prosperous honour and victorie ouer his enemies, and therewith they take their leaue and departed. Shortly after the King sent the Duke of Norfolke vnto him in message, but what it was, was kept secret. My Lord being aduertised that my Lord of Norfolke was comming euen at hand, he caused all his gentlemen to wait vpon him down through the Hall into the base Court to receiue the Duke at the gates, and commanded all his yeomen to stand in order still in the Hall: and he himselfe with his gentlemen went to the gates, where he received my Lord of Norfolke bare-headed, who embraced each other, and so led him by the arme through his Hall into his Chamber. And when the Duke had passed through vnto the vpper end of the Hall, regarding the number of tall Yeomen that stood on each side thereof, he turned againe to the Yeomen and said: Sirs (quoth he) your diligent and faithfull service vnto your Maister in this his calamitie, hath purchased you of all men, noble and ignoble, much honestie, insomuch, that the King commanded mee to say to you in his name, that for your true and louing service that ye haue done to your Maister, his Highnesse will see you at all times furnished with seruices according to your demerites: with that my Lord put off his Cap, and said to my Lord of Norfolke, sir (quoth hee) these men be all approued men, wherefore it were pitty they should want any seruice, and being sorie that I am not able to doe for them as my heart willeth, I will therefore require you my good Lord, to be a good Lord vnto them, and extend your charitie amongst them, where or when ye shall see occasion at any time hereafter, and that ye will prefer their diligence and faithfull service vnto the King. Doubt you not my Lord (quoth he) but I will doe for them the best in my power, and whereas I shall see cause. I will be an earnest suiter for them to the King: and some of you I will haue my selfe in seruice for right honest men, and as you haue begunne, so continue, vntill ye heare more of the Kings pleasure, Gods blessing and mine bee with you, and so went vp into the greate Chamber to dinner, whom my Lord Cardinall thanked, and said vnto him: yet my Lord of all other noblemen I haue cause to thanke you for your noble and gentle heart, the which you haue shewed me behinde my backe, as my seruant Thomas Cromwell hath reported vnto mee: but euen as ye be a Noble-man indeede, so haue you shewed your selfe no lesse to all men in calamitie, and in especiall to me, whom ye haue brought downe from my high estate: but now againe being in this miserable state, ye haue extended your fauour most honourably, with

D. of Norfolke sent to the Cardinall.

great charitie, &c. The dinner ended, the Cardinall and Duke went into my Lords priuie Chamber, where they continued in consultation: and betwy there, it chanced Maister Shelley the Iudge to come thither, who was sent from the King, whereof relation was made to my Lord: which caused the Duke and him to breake off their communication. And as the Duke desired to goe to a Chamber, he met with Maister Shelley, to whom Maister Shelley reported. And after hee had made relation of the cause of his comming, hee desired my Lord of Norfolke to tarrie, and to assist him in doing of his message: whome he denyed, and said, I haue nothing to doe with your message, wherein I will not meddle, and so departed into a Chamber, where hee tooke his rest for an houre or two: and in the meane time my Lord illued out of his priuie Chamber, and came to M. Shelley to know his message, who after due salutations, did declare vnto him that the Kings pleasure was to haue my Lords house, called Yorke Place, neere Westminster, belonging to the Bishoprycke of Yorke, and to possesse the same, according to the Law of his Realme: his Highnes hath sent for all the Iudges, and for all his learned Councell to know their opinions for the assurance thereof, whole opinions he fully resolued that your Grace must make a recognizance, and before a Iudge to acknowledge and confesse the right thereof to belong to the King and his Successors, and so his Highnes shall be assured thereof: wherefore it hath pleased the King to appoint and send mee hither to take of you the same recognizance, hauing in your Grace such affiance, as that yee will not refuse so to doe. Therefore I shall desire your Grace to know your pleasure therein. Maister Shelley (quoth my Lord) I know that the King of his owne nature is of a Royall stomache, not willing more than Iustice shall lead him vnto by the Law: And therefore I counsell you and all other Iudges and learned men of his Councell, to put no more into his head than Law that may stand with Conscience: for when ye tell him this is the Law, it were well done yee should tell him also, that although this be the Law, yet this is Conscience: for Law without Conscience is not meete to bee euen to a King by his Councell, to be ministred by him, ne by any of his ministers: for euery Counsellour to a King, ought to haue a respect to conscience before the rigor of the Law. For *Lawes est facere quod decet, non quod licet.* The King ought for his royall dignitie and prerogatiue to mitigate the rigor of the Law, where conscience hath no more force. And therefore in his Princely place he hath constituted a chancellor to order for him the same. And heretofore the Court of Chancerie, hath beene commonly called the Court of Conscience, because it hath iurisdiction to command the Law in euery case to desist from the execution of the rigor of the same, whereas conscience hath most effect. Therefore I say to you, that in this case, although you and other of your pro-

fession

Sir Io. Russell sent to the Cardinall.

fession perceiue by the orders of the law, that the king may lawfully do that thing which pee require of me: how say you M. Shelley, may I do it with conscience, to giue that away which is none of mine from me & my successors if this be the law and conscience, I pray you shew me your opinion. Forsooth my Lord (quoth hee) there is a great conscience: but hauing regarde to the kings high power, and to a better purpose, it may the better stand with conscience: who is sufficient to recompence the Church of York with double the value. That I know wel but here is no such condition (quoth my L.) but onely a bare and simple departure with anothers right. For if euery Bish. that may, should so doe, then might euery prelate giue away the patrimony of their dignities, which should be but smally to the kings honor. Well I will not stand with you long in this matter. Let me see your commission: to whom M. Shelly shewed the same. And that seene, Master Shelley, quoth he to shall shew the Kings Highnes, that I am his most faith full subiect, obedience and beadman, whose repall remmandement and request I will in no wise disobey, but fulfill his pleasure in all such things wherein yee fathers of the law say, that I may lawfully doe, therefore I charge your conscience to discharge me, howbeit the whits Highnes from me, that I most humbly desire his maiestie to call to his most gracious remembrance, that there is both a heauen and hell. And therwithall the clearke tooke wpate the recognisance, and after seene, secret talke they departed. Then rose the duke of Norfolke from his repast, and after some communication with my Lord, he likewise departed. Thus continued my Lord at Asher, who receiued daily messages from the Court, some good, and some as euill, but mee euill than good: for his enemies procured his disquietnesse what they could, as some day they would cause the King to send for some of his Gentlemen from him to serue the King, and another day they would take away some of his promotions, or some of their promotions whom he had preferred before. Then could they fetch from him some of his yeomen, insomuch as the King take fifteene of them at one time into his guard. This was in the for a long time, so that there was not one day, but or euer hee went to bed, hee had an occasion greatly to chafe, and fret the heart out of his bodie, but that he was a wise man, and bare all things in patience. At Chrismasse he fell very sore sicke most likely to die, wherof the the King being aduertised, was very sorie, and sent Doctor Butts his Physitian vnto him, to see in what estate he was: D. Butts came vnto him, finding him lying very sicke in his bedde: and perceiuing the daunger, returned to the King, of whom the King demanded, saying: Haue ye seene ponder mans Beast (qd. he.) How do you like him (quoth the King?) Sir (quoth he) if ye will haue him dead, I warrant him, hee will be dead within these foure dayes, if he receiue no comfort from you shortly: Marie (quoth the King) God forbid that he should die: I pray you master Butts goe againe vnto him, and doe your cure vnto him, for I would not lose him for twentie thousand pound. Then must your Grace (quoth master Butts) send him first some comfortable message as shortly as ye can: & men to I will (quoth the King) by you, and therefore make speede to him againe, and ye shall deliuer him this ring from me for a token, in the which ring was ingrauen the Kings Image, within a Rubie, as like the King as could be deuised. This ring hee knoweth right well, for he gaue me the same and tell him that I am not offended with him in my heart any thing at all, and that shall be know shortly: therefore bid him plucke vp his heart, and bee of good comfort, and I charge you, come not from him vntill ye haue brought him out of danger of death. And so Doctor Butts departed with speede to Asher, after whom the King sent Doctor Cromer the Scot, Doctor Clement, and Doctor Vorton, to consult with Master Butts for my Lords recouerie.

After Master Butts had beene with my Lord, and deliuered the Kings token vnto him, with the most comfortable wordes that hee could deuise in the Kings behalfe, hee recouered not a little, and aduanced him in his bedde, and receiued the tokens most ioyfully, thanking Master Butts for his paines and good comfort: Master Butts told him further more, that the Kings pleasure was that he should minister vnto him for his health, and to ioyne with him for the better and most assured waies, he hath sent hither Doctor Clement, Doctor Cromer and Doctor Worton: Therefore my Lord (quath he) it were well done they were called in to dispute you and to consult with them: to this motion my Lord was contented to heare their iudgement, and it was not long ere they had brought him out of danger, and within foure dayes set him on his feete, and got him a stomacke to meat, all which done, they take their leaue to depart, refusing vtterly all rewards proffered them, saying the King had giuen them expertall commandement that they should take of him nothing, for at their returne hee himselfe would reward them. Thus my Lord continued at Asher vntill Candlemas, against which feast the King caused to be sent to my L. three or foure carloads of stuffe, as bedding, plate, hangings, kitchin-stuffe, &c. Then commanded he master Cromwell to make earnest suite to the King, that he might remoue my L. from thence to some other house: which suite at the Kings hands Master Cromwell obtained, for the King was contented he should remoue to Richmond, which place my Lord had a little before repaired to his great coste: for the King had made an exchange thereof with him for Hampton Court. All this was done without knowledge of the Kings Counsell: for if they might haue had vnderstanding hereof before, then would they haue perswaded the King to the contrarie: but when they knew of the Kings grant and licence, although they dissimuled

Cardinall sicke.

The Cardinall sicke like to haue died.

Cromwell a sutter to the King.

The Cardinall left Hampton Court.

for which paine the King gaue him Richmond in exchange.

mulled their minde in the Kings presence (yet were they afraid of him, lest his nigh resort to the King, might moue the King at some braide to haue resorted vnto him, and to haue called him home againe, considering the great louing affection that the King daily shewed vnto him: wherefore they doubted his rising vp againe, if they found not a meane thereby to remoue him further from the King. Insomuch that they thought it conuenient for their purpose to moue the King vpon consideration which they inuented, that it were very necessary that my Lord should goe downe into the North vnto his benefice, where he should bee a good stay for the country, to the which the King condescended. Whereupon my Lord of Norfolke bade master Cromwell to say to him, that he must goe home to his benefice: who at his next repaire to my Lord (then lying at Richmond) declared to him how it was determined that he should goe home to his benefice. Well then Thomas (quoth my Lord) we will goe to Winchester. I will (quoth master Cromwell) shew my Lord of Norfolke what yee say: and so he did. What should he doe there (quoth the Duke?) nay, let him goe to his Archbishoprick of Yorke, where his honour and more charge lieth: and so shew him. The Lords who were not his friends, moued the King to giue my Lord a pension of 3000. markes out of Winchester, and the rest to distribute among his nobility and seruants, and so in likewise to deuide the reuenues of Saint Albons, whereof some had three hundred markes, and some an hundred pounds, and so some more, and some lesse. And all the reuenes of the lands belonging to his Colledges of Oxford and Ipswich, which the King take into his owne hands whereof after Cromwell had the receipt and gouernance afore by my Lords assignment. Wherefore it was thought very necessary, that he should so haue still, who executed all things thereof carefully and wittily, that he was had in great estimation for his behauiour herein, and also for the true and faithfull demeanor towards his Lord and master. Then it came to passe, that those to who mthe King had giuen any annuities or fees for terme of life by patient, would not be good, but onely during my Lords life, for asmuch as the King had no longer state therein, the which he had by reason of my Lords attainder in the premunire, and to make their estates good and sufficient for the terme of their liues, there was none other shift, but to obtaine my Lords confirmation of their patents. And this to bee brought about, there was no meane but to sue to master Cromwell to attaine the same at my Lords hands, who they thought the best instrument for the purpose. Then began euery man, both Noble men and Gentlemen, who had any patents of the King out of Winchester or Saint Albons, to make suite to master Cromwell, to solicite the cause to my Lord, to get therein his confirmation, and for his paines therein, both worthily rewarded him, and euery man to shew himselfe pleasure as should be at all times in their seuerall powers wherof they assured him: Wherein Master Cromwell perceiued an occasion giuen him to helpe himselfe, and to bring to passe that hee long sought for, intending to worke in this matter according to their desires, the sooner to bring his owne enterprise and purpose to passe. Then at his next returne to my Lord, he moued this matter to him, and so perswaded with him, that they both wrought together to bring master Cromwell in place where he might doe good to my Lord, and also to himselfe. And now hauing the ordering and disposition of the lands of those Colledges, hee had great occasions of suits, besides his continuall accesse to the King, by meanes whereof hee drew into the Kings fauour, who reputed him to be a very wise man, and a meet instrument to serue his turne.

Cromwell his rising.

Now the Lords thought long to haue the Cardinall remoued further out of the Kings way, wherfore among other of my Lords, the Duke of Norfolke said to Master Cromwell, Cromwell (quoth he) me thinke the the Duke of Cardinall thy master maketh no haste to goe Norfolke against the Cardinall. northward, tell him if he goe not away, but shall tarry, I will teare him with my teeth: therefore I wish thee aduise him to prepare himselfe away as shortly as he can, or else he shall be sent forward. These words Master Cromwell reported to my Lord at his next repaire to him, who then had an occasion to resort to him for the dispatch of the noble and gentlemens patents. And there I will leaue off this matter, and speake of other things that in this meane time happened.

Bitter words of

The Lady Margaret Duchesse of Sauoy Iunt to the Empress, and the Lady Lewes Dutchesse of Angolesme, mother to the French King, met at Cambray in the beginning of the month of June last past, to treate of a peace, where here present Doctor Tonstall Bishop of London, and Sir Thomas Moore Chancelor of the Duchy of Lancaster, commissioners for the King of England. At length through diligence of the saide Ladies, a peace was concluded betweene the Emperor, the Pope, the Kings of England and of France. This peace was called the womans peace, and was proclaimed by heraults, with of the sound of trumpets in the City of London, to the great reioycing of the merchants, who in times of the warres had sustained much hinderance.

Peace betweene the Emperor and the king of England.

The 26. of October at Greenwich, sir Thomas Moore late Chancellor of the Duchy of Lancaster, was made Lord Chancelor of England, and the next day led into the chancery by the Dukes of Norfolke and Suffolke, and there sworne.

Sir Thomas Moore Chancelor of England.

The eight of December was Thomas Bolein Viscount Rochford created Earle of Wiltshire: Robert Viscount Fitzwater, Earle of Sussex, and George Lord Hastings Earle of Huntington at Poules place by Westminster.

States creates.

1530.

William Tindall hauing translated the new Testament into English and caused the same

The new Testament printed in the English.

to

to be printed beyond the Seas, many of them were conueyed into England, and there made sale of, as good merchandise, for many men desired to haue them, but this translation was forbidden by the King to bee vsed of his subiects: for his Counsell, namely, the Bishops affirmed that the same was not truely translated, and that therein were Prologues, and Prefaces sounding to heresie, with vncharitable railing against Bishops & the Clergy. The King therefore commanded the Bishops, that they calling to them the best learned men, of the Vniuersities, should cause a new translation to bee made, that the people without danger might *An. reg. 22.* read the same for their better instruction in the lawes of God.

Ambassadors to the Emperor and Pope.

The King vnderstanding that the Emperor and the Pope, were appointed to meete at Bonnonie or Boloigne, where the Emperor should bee crowned, sent thither an Ambassade from him the Earle of Wiltshire, Doctor Stokesley elected Bishop of London, and his Almoner doctor E. Lee, to declare both vnto the Pope and Emperor the Law of God, the determinations of the Vniuersities in the cause of his marriage, and to require the Pope to doe iustice according to truth, and also to shew to the Emperor, that the King did mooue this matter, only for discharge of his conscience, and not for any other respect of pleasure or displeasure earthly: these ambassadors comming to Bonony, were honorably received, and first, doing their message to the Pope, had answere of him, that he would heare the matter disputed when hee came to Rome, and according to the right he would doe iustice. The Emperor answered, that he in no wise would do against the lawes of God, and if the court of Rome would iudge that the matrimony was not good, he would be contented to stand by the dispensation, which hee thought to be of force enough to proue the marriage lawfull. With these answers the ambassadors departed, and returned homewards, till they came on this side the mountaines, and then receiued letters from the King which appointed the Earle of Wiltshire to go Ambassador to the French K. which then lay at Burdeaux, making shift for mony for the redeeming of his sons. And the B. of London was appointed to go to Padua, and other Vniuersities in Italy, to know their full resolutions and determinate opinions in the kings case of matrimony: and the kings almoner was commanded to return into England.

Suite to Rome for Iudges.

Afterwards King Henry vpon occasion of delay made by the Pope in his controuersie of diuorcement, and through displeasure of such reports as he heard had bene made of him to the court of Rome, and thereby pricked forward by some counsellers, to follow the example of the Germans, caused proclamation to be made on the 19. of September, forbidding all his subiects to purchase any manner of thing from the Court of Rome, containing matter preiudiciall to the high authority, iurisdiction, and prerogatiue royall of this Realme, or to the hinderance and impeachment of the kings Maiesties noble and vertuous intended purposes.

Cardinall Wolsey hauing licence of the K. (as ye haue heard) to repaire vnto Richmond, was there lodged within the lodge of the great parke, which was a very pretty house, where my Lord lay vntill lent with a pretty number of his seruants, for the rest went to bord wages. Vpon haue heard tofore what words the Duke of Norfolke had to Master Cromwell, touching my Lords going into his benefice of Yorke. At such time as master Cromwell told these words to my Lord, Mary Thomas (quoth my Lord) then is it time to be going, if he take it so: therfore I pray you to go to the King, and say I would go to my benefice of Yorke, but for lacke of money, desiring his grace to helpe me with some: for ye may say that the last money that I receiued from his grace hath bene too little to pay mine old debts, and to compell me to the payment thereof, hath bene too much extremity, taking my goods from me, wherein I trust his grace will haue a charitable respect: ye may also shew my Lord of Norfolke and other of the Councell, that I would depart, if I had money. Cromwell went to London, and my Lord remoued out of the lodge into the charterhouse at Richmond, where he lay in a lodging with Doctor Coller, made for himselfe vntill hee remoued Northward, which was on the Passion weeke: and euery day resorted to the charterhouse there, and in the afternoones he would sit in contemplation with one of the most ancient fathers of that house in their cels who conuerted him, and caused him to despise the vaine glory of the world, and gaue him shirts of haire to weare, the which hee weare diuers times after. When master Cromwell came to the court, he shewed my Lord of Norfolke that my Lord would gladly go northward, but for lacke of money, wherein hee desired his helpe to the King. Then was the King moued therein as well by master Cromwell, as by the counsell: which matter the King referred to determine and assigne to the counsell, who were in diuers opinions, so that after long debating it was concluded that he should haue by way of presta thousand markes of his pension out of Winchester: when this determination was concluded, they declared the same to the King, who straightway commanded the same thousand markes to be deliuered out of the hand to master Cromwell, and so it was. The King commanded master Cromwell to resort to him again, when he had receiued the same summe of money: at whose returne to the King, the King said: Shew my Lord although our Counsell haue assigned no sum of money for to beare his charges, yet, yee shall shew him in my behalfe, that I haue sent a thousand pound of my beneuolence, and tell him that he shall not lacke, and bid him be of good cheere. Master Cromwell humbly in my Lords behalfe, thanked the King, and therewith departed, and came to Richmond to my Lord, to whom he deliuered the money and whereof it was leuied, that the Counsell sent him, and of the money which the King sent him, adding thereto the Kings comfortable sayings, wherein my Lord

Cardinall Wolley lay at Richmond.

Doctor Coller Dean of Paules.

The Cardinals maundie.

did not a little reioyce. Then my Lord prepared all things for his iourney, and sent to London for Liuery clothes for his seruants that should ride with him: so that all things being furnished towards his iourney, in the beginning of passion weeke before Easter he set forward, and rode from Richmond to a place of the Abbot of Westminster called Hendon: the next day he removed to a place where the Lady Parry lay, called the Rie: the next day to Roiston, where he lodged in the Priory, the next day to Huntington, and there lodged in the Abbey. And the next day he removed to Peterborow, and there lodged in the Abbey, making there his abode all the next weeke, where he kept his solemne feast of Easter, with all his traine, in number 160. persons, hauing with him twelue cartes to carrie his stuffe of his owne, which he sent for from his College of Oxford, that were there pounded, besides threescore other carts of his daily carriage of necessaries for his buildings. Vpon Palme-sunday he went in procession with the Monks. And vpon maundy thursday he made his maundie there in our Ladies Chappell, hauing 50. poore men, whose feet he washed, and kissed after he had wiped them, hee gaue euery of the said poore men twelue-pence in mony, three ells of good canuas to make them shirts, a paire of new shoes, a cast of red herrings, and three white herrings, and one of them had two shillings. Vpon Easter day he rose to the resurrection, &c. On thursday next he remoued to master Fitz-Williams Knight (sometime a merchant Tailer of London, and then of the Kings Councell, who dwelt within three or foure miles of Peterborow) where he was toptully receiued, and had honorable entertainment. On munday next he removed to Grantham, & to Stamford and the next day to Grantham, & was lodged in the house of Easter Hall. The next night he lodged in the castle of Newarke, where hee remained the next day, and from thence rode to Southwell. Where he continued the most part of that Sommer, not without great resort of the most worthiest of the countrey. And diuers Noble-men hauing occasion to repaire into the same country there thought it good to visite my Lord as they trauelled, of whom they were most gladly entertained, and had right good cheere: whose name and estate behauiour caused him to haue much loue in the countrey of all kind of people: he kept there a noble house, where was boorded plenty of meate and drinke for all comers, and also vnto the almes gate at his gate vnto the poore of the towne and countrey. Whereby well, charity, and clemencie among his Tenants and other: he made many agreements betwixt Gentlemen and Gentlemen, and betwixt some Gentlemen and their wiues, and other meane persons, the which had bene long before aduerse and in great trouble, making for euery of them (as occasion serued) great assemblies & feasts, not sparing his purse where he might make amitie. It chanced vpon *Corpus Christi* Euen, in the night, when my Lord and all his household were at rest in their beds, there knocked at the gate two Gentlemen, the one named Master Brierton one of the Gentlemen of the Kings priuie Chamber, and Master Witherley, who were come from the King in post to speake with my Lord. These were let in, my L. was raised, and came to them into the oiuing Chamber: they seeing him in his night apparell, did to him due reuerence, whom he tooke by the hands, demanding how the King his Soueraigne Lord did. Sir, (said they) right well and merry, wee must desire to talke with you apart: With a good will (quoth he.) After long talke, they tooke forth of a little maile a little coffer couered with greene veluet, & bound with bars of siluer and gilt, with a locke and a gilt key, with the which they opened the cheft, out of the which they take an instrument or writing containing more then a skin of great parchment, hauing many Seales hanging to the same, whereunto they put more ware for my Lords seale: the which my Lord sealed and subscribed his name with his owne hand, and deliuered the same againe vnto them, desiring them to take a bed: for it was fourthwhat past midnight. But they said they would straight way ride to the Earle of Shrewsbury, to bee with him ere he were stirring: so my Lord caused them to eate such cold meate as was ready and to drinke a bowle or two of wine: that done, he gaue each of them foure olde Soueraignes of fine gold, and so they departed. In this feat and manner my Lord lay at Southwell vntill about the latter end of Iulie time, then he remoued to Newike, an Abbey, to Rufford and Wirth Abbey, and so to Scroby, where he continued till after Michaelmas, exercising many deeds of charitie, and commonly euery Sunday he would trauell vnto some poore parish church. & there would say his diuine seruice, and cause one of his Chaplaines to preach vnto the people: that done, he would dine in some honest house of the towne, where should be distributed to the poore a great almes in meate and drinke, as of money. About the feast of S. Michael, he remoued to Calwod Castle within 7. miles of Yorke, where he lay long after with much honor and loue of the country, doing deeds of charity, and beld there an honourable houshold for all commers, and also built and repaired the Castle, hauing artificers & labourers aboue the number of 300. persons daily in wages, &c. At length being thereunto perswaded by the doctors of the Church of Yorke, he determined to be stalled there at Yorke Minster the next Munday after Allhallowne day, against which time due preparation was made for the same, but not in so sumptuous wise as were his predecessors. My Lord sent his Gentleman Vsher to Yorke, to forecast things there that should bee ordered for and prouided for the solemnity, which should the Cardinall Wolley & Calwood. Prepare for install. day and houre as could be. Vpon All-hallowne day one of the head Officers of the Church of Yorke, which should haue the most doings in all this stallation, was with my L. at dinner at his house of Calwod, and sitting at dinner they fell in communication of this matter, and of the order thereof, saying that my

Sir William Fitz-williams Alderman of London, and Treasurer of the Kings house.

my Lord should goe on foote from a Chappell of Saint Iames, without the Gates of the Citie vnto the Minster vp on cloth, the which should be distributed among the poore after his passage. My Lord hearing this, made answere in this wise: Although our Predecessors did goe vpon cloth so, we intend to goe on foot from thence without any such glory, for I take God to witnesse, I doe not intend to go thither for any triumph or glory, but only to performe the rites of the Church, to the which I am bound. And therefore I desire you all, and will commaund other my seruants to goe as humble thither without any superfluous or gorgeous apparrell, otherwise then in decent manner: for I doe purpose to come to Yorke vpon Sunday at night next and to lodge in the Deanes house, and vpon munday to be shaued, and there to make but a dinner for you of the close, and for other worshipfull Gentlemen that shall chance to come thither to the same, and to supper with some of the residencers, and the next day to dine with the Maior, and then to prepare home hither againe. The day being once knowne vnto all the Country which could not be hid, the worshipfull Gentlemen & other, as Abbots and Priors sent in such prouision of victuals, that it is almost incredible, as of fat beasts and muttons, Wilde-fowle, and Venison both red and fallow, and other dainty things such as would haue plentifully furnished the Feast. All which things we e vnknowne to my Lo, for as much as he being preuented and disappointed of his purpose, by reason that he was arrested of high treason, as ye shall heare hereafter, so that most part of this Sommer prouision was sent vnto Yorke that same day of his arrest, and the next day following: for his arrest was kept as close and secret from the country, because they doubted the common people, which had him in great estimation and loue, for his great charity and liberality which he vsed daily amongst them. It is appointed by the King and Councell, that Sir Walter Walsh Knight, one of the Kings priuy chamber, should be sent downe with a commission into the North, vnto the Earle of Northumberland, who was sometime brought vp in house with the Cardinall, and they twaine being ioynly in commission, to arrest the Cardinall of high treason: Master Walsh tooke his horse at the Court gate, about none, on Allhallowne day, toward the Earle of Northumberland. And now haue I occasion to declare what happened about the same time, which, peraduenture, stanched the troubles following to the Cardinall. The Cardinall sitting at dinner vpon Allhallowne day, hauing at his boords end diuers Chaplaines sitting at dinner, ye shall vnderstand that the Cardinals great crosse stood in a corner, at the tables end, leaning against the hanging, and when the boords end was taken vp, and a conuenient time for the chaplains to arise, one Doctor Augustine a Frenchman, and physitian to the Cardinal, rising from the table with the other, hauing vpon him a great gowne of boysterous bolmet, snatched vp the Crosse which trayling downe along the tappet, with the point of one of the Crosses, brake Doctor Boners head, that the blood ranne downe, the company there standing greatly astonished with the chance. The Cardinall perceiuing the same, demaunded what the matter meant, of such a sudden amaze, and they shewed him of the fall of the Crosse vpon Doctor Boners head: and hath it, quoth he, drawne any blood? Yea, forsooth, my Lord, quoth they: with that call he his head aside, and saide shaking his head *Malum Omen*, and therewith said Grace, and rose from the table, and went to his Chamber. Now marke the signification, how the Cardinall expounded this matter of Pomfret, after his fall. First, yee shall vnderstand, that the Crosse which bee bare, as Archbishop of Yorke, signified himselfe, and Augustine the Physician who ouerthrew the Crosse, was onely hee that accused the Cardinall, whereby his enemies caught an occasion to ouerthrow him: it fell vpon Doctor Boners head, who was Parker of the Cardinalls faculties and spirituall iurisdictions, and was then damnified by the ouerthrow of the Crosse: yea, and moreouer drawing blood of him, betokened death, which shortly after did ensue. About which time of this mischance, the same very day and season Master Walsh tooke his Horse at the Court, as nigh as could be iudged, and so much néeds be taken for a signe or token of that which followed. Now the appointed time drew neere of his exaltation, and sitting at dinner vpon the Friday next before the Monday, on the which day hee intended to be shaued at Yorke, the Earle of Northumberland and Master Walsh, with a great companie of Gentlemen of the Earles house, and of the Country, whom he had gathered together in the Kings name, came into the Hall at Catwod, the officers being at dinner, & the Cardinall not fully dined, being then in his fruites. The first thing that the Earle did after that hee had set order in the Hall, hee commanded the porter at the gate to deliuer him the keyes thereof, who would in no wise obey his commandement although he were roughly threatned, and straitly commanded in the K. name to make delinery of them to one of the Earles seruants; Sir (qd. he) seeing that ye doe but intend to set one of your seruants in my place to keepe the gates, I know no seruant that ye haue, but I am as able as he to doe it, and keep the gates to your purpose, whatsoeuer it be; and also the keies were deliuered me by my Lord & maister, wherefore I pray you to pardon me, for whatsoeuer ye shall command me to doe in the ministration of mine office, I shall doe it with good will: with that (qd. the Earle) hold him a booke, and commanded him to lay his hand thereon, thou shalt sweare (qd. he) that thou shalt well and truely keepe the gates to the Kings vse, and to doe all such things as we shall command, and that ye shall let passe neither in nor out at these gates, but such as ye be commanded by vs, and with this oath, he receiued the keyes at the Earles hands. Of all these doings knew the Cardinall nothing, for they stopped the

Doctor Boners head broke.

Cardinall arrested.

Augustine Doctor of Physicke accused of treason.

Gaires, so that none went vp to the Cardinals Chamber, and they that came downe, could more go vp againe: at the last one escaped, who shewed the Cardinall that the Earle was in the hall: whereat the cardinall marueiled, & would not believe him, but commanded a Gentleman to bring him the truth, who going downe the Gaires, saw the Earle of Northumberland, and returned, and sayde it was very hee: then (quoth the Card.) I am sorie that we haue dined, for I feare our officers be not prouided of any more of good fish, to make him some honourable cheere, let the table stand (qd. he) with that he rose vp, and going downe the Gaires, he encountred the Earle comming vp with all his traine, and assoone as the Cardinall espied the Earle, he put off his Cap, and said, My Lord, ye be most heartily welcome, & so embraced each other: then the Cardinall take the Earle by the hand, & had him vp into his chamber, whom followed all the number of the Earls seruants. From thence, he led him into his Bed-chamber, and they being there all alone, the Earle said vnto the Cardinall with a soft voyce, laying his hand vpon his arme, my L. I arrest you of high treason: with which words the Cardinall being marueilously astonied, standing both still a good space, at the last, quoth the cardinall, what authoritie haue you to arrest me? Forsooth my Lord, qd. the Earle, I haue a commission so to do: where is your commission, quoth he, that I may see it? Nay Sir that you may not, said the Earle: well then quoth the cardinall, I will not obey your arrest. But as they were debating this matter betweene them in the chamber: to hustle was M. Walsh in arresting D. Augustine at the Dore in the Pallace, saying vnto him, goe in Traitor or I shall make thee. At the last Master Walsh being entred the Cardinals chamber, began to plucke off his hood, and after kneeled downe to the cardinall, vnto whom the cardinall sayde, come hither Gentleman and let me speake with you: sir, here my Lord of Northumberland hath arrested me, but by whose authority he sheweth not: if ye be toyned with him, I pray you shew me. Indeede my Lord, quoth M. Walsh, hee sheweth you the truth: well then, quoth the cardinall, I pray you let me see it. Sir, I beseech you, quoth Master Walsh, hold vs excused, there is annexed to our commission certain instructions which you may not see: well quoth the cardinall, I trowe ye are one of the Kings Priuie chamber, your name is Walsh, I am content to yeeld to you, but not to my Lord of Northumberland, without I see his Commission: the worst in the Kings priuie Chamber is sufficient to arrest the greatest Peere of the Realme by the K. commandement, without any commission, therefore put your commission and authority in execution, spare not, I will obey the Kings will: I take God to iudge, I neuer offended the King in word nor deede. Then the Earle called into the chamber diuers Gentlemen of his owne seruants, and after they had taken the Cardinalles Keyes from him, they put him in custodie of the Earles Gentlemen, and then they went about the house to set all things in an order: then sent they Doctor Augustine away to London with as much speede as they could, who was bound vnto the horse like a traytor, but it was Sunday toward night ere the Cardinall was conueyed from Catwood, and lodged that night in the Abbey of Pomfret. The next day hee remoued toward Doncaster, and was there lodged at the Black-Friers, the next day he was remooued to Sheffield parke, where the Earle of Shrewsbury with his Lady, and a great traine of Gentlemen and Gentlewomen receiued him with much honor. And the Cardinall being thus with the E. of Shrewsbury continued there 18. dayes after, vpon whom the E. appointed diuers Gentlemen to attend continually, to see that hee should lacke nothing, being serued in his owne Chamber, as honorably as he had ben in his owne house, and once euery day the Earle would repaire vnto him and commune with him. After the Cardinall had thus remained with the Earle of Shrewsburie about a fortnight, it came to passe at a certain time as he sate at his dinner in his own Chamber, hauing at his boordes end a messe of Gentlemen and Chaplaines to keepe him companie, toward the end of his dinner, when he was come to eating his fruites, his colour was perceiued often to chaunge, whereby he was iudged not to be good in health: where vpon, one of his Gentlemen said: Sir, me seemes you are not well at ease: to whom hee answered with a loude voyce, forsooth no more I am, for I am quoth he, taken sodainly with a thing about my stomacke, that lieth there along, as colde as a whetstone, which is no more but wind, I pray you go to the Poticarie & inquire of him if hee haue any thing that will breake wind vpward. Then went he to the E. & shewed him what estate the cardinall was in and what he desired: with that the Earle caused the poticarie to be called before him, and demanded of him if he had any thing that would breake wind vpward in a mans body, and hee answered, he had such geare. Then quoth the Earle, fetch me some: then the Poticarie fetched a white confection in a faire paper, and shewed it to the Earle, who commanded one to giue the assay thereof before him, and then the same to be brought to the Cardinall, who receiued it vp all at once into his mouth: But immediately after, surely hee auoyded much winde vpwarde. Loe, (quoth hee) ye may see that it was but wind, and now I am well eased, I thanke God, and so he rose from the Table, and went to his prayers. And that done, there came on him such a loosenesse that caused him to goe to his Stoole. And not long after the Earle of Shrewsburie came into the Gallery to him, with whom the Cardinall met, and then sitting downe vpon a Benche, the Earle asked him how hee did, and hee most lamentably answered him, and thanked him for his gentle entertainement: Sir, (quoth the Earle) if ye remember, yee haue often wished to come before

Cardinall lodged at Sheffield with the E. of Shrewsb.

The Cardinal sickneth.

the King, to make your answere, and I haue written to the King in that behalfe, making him parte of your Lamentation that ye inwardly haue received for his displeasure, who accepteth all your doings therein, as friends be accustomed to doe in such cases: wherefore I would aduise you to pluck vp your heart, and be not agast of your enemies, I doubt not but this your iourney to his Highnesse, shall bee much to your aduancement. The King hath sent for you that worshipfull Knight Master Kingstone and with him 24. of your old seruants, now of the guard, to the intent you may safely come to his Maiestie: Sir (quoth the Cardinall) I know M. Kingstone is Constable of the tower, yea, what of that, quoth the Earle? I assure you he is elected by the King for one of your friends: Mel quoth the Cardinall, as God wil, to be it, I am subiect to fortune, being a true man ready to accept such chances as shal follow and there an end. I pray you where is M. Kingstone? quoth the Earle I will send for him: I pray you so doe quoth the Cardinall: at whose message he came, as soone as the Cardinall espied him, he made haste to encounter him, and at his comming he kneeled to him, and saluted him in the Kings behalfe, whom the Cardinall bareheaded offered to take vp, and said: I pray you stand vp, kneele not to mee, I am but a wretch repleate with misery, not esteeming my selfe but as a vile abiect, vtterly cast away without desert, as God knoweth. Then said M. Kingstone with humble reuerence, Sir the K. hath him commended vnto you: I thanke his highnes, quoth the Cardinall, I trust he be in health: yea, quoth M. Kingstone, and hee commanded me to say to you, that you should assure your selfe that he beareth you as much good wil as euer he did, and willeth you to be of good chere, and where report hath beene made that ye should commit against him certain heynous crimes, which he thinketh to be vntrue, yet hee can doe no lesse than to send for you to your tryall, & take your tourney to him at your owne pleasure, commanding me to be attendant vpon you. Therefore sir I pray you when it shall be your own pleasure to take your tourney, I shall be ready to giue attendance: Master Kingstone quoth he, I thank you for your newes, and Sir, if I were as lusty as I haue bin of late, I would ride with you in post, but I am diseased with a fluxe that maketh mee very weake: but I shall with all speede make me ready to ride with you to morrowe. When night came, the Cardinall waxed very sicke with the laske, the which caused him continually to goe to the close all that night, insomuch, that he had that night .xxv. stooles: therefore in consideration of his infirmitie, they caused him to tarrie all that day and the next day he tooke his iourney with Master Kingstone, and them of the guard, till he came to an house of the E. of Shrewsburies called Hardwike Hall, where he lay all night, very euill at ease. The next day he rode to Nottingham, and there lodged that night more sicke: and the next day he rode to Leicester Abbey, and by the way waxed so sicke, that he was almost from his mule, so that it was night before hee came to the Abbey of Leicester: where at his comming in at the gates, the Abbot with all his Conuent met him with diuers torches light, whom they honourably receiued and welcommed: to whom the Cardinall sayde: Father Abbot, I am come hither to lay my bones among you, riding to it vntill he came to the staires of the chamber, where he alighted from his Mule, and M. Kingstone led him vp the stayres, and as soone as he was in his chamber he went to bed. This was on the saterday at night, & then encreased sicker and sicker vntill Monday, that all men thought hee would haue died. So on Tuesday S. Andrewes Euen, Master Kingstone came to him and bade him good morrow, for it was about five of the clocke, and asked him how he did: Sir, quoth hee, I tarry but the pleasure of God, to render my poore soule into his hands: not so Sir, qd. Master Kingstone with the grace of God, ye shall liue, and doe very well, if ye will be of good chere: nay in good sooth master Kingstone, my disease is such, that I cannot liue: for I haue had some experience in Physicke, Thus it is, I haue a flure with a continuall feauer, the nature whereof is, that if there be no alteration of the same within 8. daies, either must ensue excoriation of the entrailes, or frantse, or else present death, & the best of them is death, and as I suppose this is the eight day and if ye see no alteration in mee, there is no remedy, saue though I may liue a day or twaine after, but death must ensue. Sir quoth master Kingstone, you begin such pensiuenes, doubting that thing, that in good faith ye needs not. Well, well, Master Kingstone, quoth the Cardinall, I see the matter how it is framed: but if I had serued God as diligently, as I haue done the King, he would not haue giuen me ouer in my gray hayres: but this is the iust reward that I must receiue for the diligent paines and study that I haue had to doe him seruice, not regarding my seruice to God, but only to satisfie his pleasure: I pray you haue me most humbly commended vnto his royall maiestie, and beseech him in my behalfe to call to his princely remembrance, all matters proceeding betweene him and me from the beginning of the world, and the progresse of the same, and most especially in his weightie matter, and then shall his graces conscience know whether I haue offended him or no, &c. Master Kingstone farewell: I can no more say, but I with all things to haue good successe, my time draweth on fast, and euen with that hee began to draw his speech at length, and his tongue to faile, his eyes being set, whose sight failed him, then did they put him in remembrance of Christ his passion, and caused the yeomen of the guard to stand by to see him die, and to witnes of his words at his departure, and incontinently the clocke strooke eight, and then he gaue vp the ghost, and departed this present life, which caused some to call to remembrance how hee sayde the day before, that at eight of the clocke they should lose their Master: One of them lasted

Speech of the Cardinal to Master Kingstone.

The Cardinall deceaseth.

lasted on the other, supposing that either hee knew or prophesied of his departure.

The King as yee haue heard, notwithstanding his hastie diuorce, yet hee doubted not to keepe amitie with the Pope, for which cause he sent Stephen Gardiner, and Francis Brion to Rome.

Cardinall Campeius and Wolsey, were selected to decide the matter, whereat the Peeres and People murmured, and Queene Katherine her selfe toke exception against the iudges.

The King had formerly appointed Wolsey, to solicite the diuorce at Rome, and had caused many Bookes to be written both at home and abroad: for Cardinall Wolsey both then, and a good while before was verie prompt to set discorde betweene the King and Queene Katherine, because the Emperour failed to make him Pope, and had practised with Iohn Long-lande Bishoppe of Lincolne the Kings Confessor, to call his Marriage in question, who after a while gaue thereunto his furtherance, the Cardinall would faine haue drawne the Kinges liking vnto Margaret the French Kinges Sister, but the Kings heart was else where engaged.

Campeius seeing the matter plaine and honest on the Queenes side, refused to giue definitiue sentence, and craued longer time, the Pope hauing knowledge thereof, commanded the Cardinals not to proceede any further, and recalls Campeius to Rome. The King perceiuing all his purposes to bee plainely vnderstood, and in diuers things to bee frustrate, did then lay the whole blame vpon Wolsey, whose Fortunes then began to decline.

Example of pride and arrogancie.

Here is the end and fall of pride and arrogancie of men exalted by fortune to dignities: for I assure you in his time he was the haughtiest man in all his proceedings aliue, hauing more respect to the honor of his person, than he had to his spirituall Profession, wherein should be shewed, all meekenes, humility and charity, he discussing whereof any further, I leaue to Diuines.

After that hee was thus departed, Master Kingstone sent a Post to the King, aduertised him of the departure of the Cardinall by one of the gard, that saw and heard him die. And when Master Kingstone and the Abbot had consulted for the order of his burial, it was thought good that he should be buried the next day following, for Master Kingstone would not tarrie the returne of the Post: and it was thought good that the Maior of Leicester and his Brethren should be sent for, to see him personally dead, to auoyd false rumors that mought happen. In the meane time the body was taken out of the bed, who had vpon him next his body a shirt of haire, besides his other shirt of holland: now hauing put vpon his dead Corps, all such ornaments, as hee was professed in, when hee was made Bishop and Archbishop: as Miter, Crosse, Ring, and Pall, with all other things due to his order and dignitie: and lying thus all day in his Coffin open-faced, euery man that would might see him there dead, as the Mayor, his Brethren and other did. About foure or fiue of the Clocke at night he was carried downe into the Church, by the Abbot and Chanons, and Seruice was sung for the Funerals. And about foure of the clocke in the Morning Master Kingstone and his seruants came into the Church, and there tarried the executing of diuers Ceremonies, and then was he buried in the midst of our Ladies Chappell, and by that time it was fiue of the clocke in the morning. Then prepared euery man to horseback, being S. Andrewes day the Apostle, and so take their iourney to the Court. And thus ended the life of this rich Cardinall of England, whose Historye who list to read with a cleare eye, may behold the mutabilitie of vaine honors, and brittle assurance in aboundance, the vncertainty of dignities, the flattering of fained friends, and fickle fauor of worldly princes: whereof this L. Cardinall had felt and tasted both of the sweet & sowre in each degree: as fleeting frō honors, losing of riches, deposed from dignities, forsaken of friends, and the mutability of Princes fauor: of all which things hee had in this world the full felicitie, as long as fortune smiled vpon him: but when the began to frowne, how soone was he deprived of all these mundane hopes, and vaine pleasures, which in twenty yeares with great trauell and studie he obtained, was in one yeare and lesse, with great care and sorrow lost and consumed. O madnesse: O fonde desire: O foolish hope: O greedie desire of vaine honor, dignities, and riches: of what vnconstant hope and trust is it in the false fained countenance and promise of fortune! whereto se the Prophet said full well: *Thesaurizat, & ignorat cui congregabit ea.* Who is certaine that hee shall leaue his riches that he hath gathered in the world, vnto them whom hee hath purposed? The Wiseman saith: That another whom peraduenture hee hated in his life, shall spende it out, and consume it.

The Clergie of England, being iudged by the Kings learned Councell to bein the præmunire, for maintaining the power legantine of the Cardinall, were called by præcelle into the K. Bench to answere, whereforе in their conuocation they concluded a submission, wherein they called the K. supreame head of the Church of England, according to the Law of God, and not otherwise, and were contented to giue the King 100000. pounds to pardon their offences touching the præmunire.

The clergye condemned in the præmunire.

K. Hen. 8. præame head of the church.

When the Parliament was begun, the 6. of January, the pardon of the spirituall persons was signed with the Kings hand, and sent to the Lords, which they consented to, and signed the bill. But when the same came downe to the Commons it could not so easily passe, because diuers froward persons would also that the K. should pardon the laity as well as the spirituality, saying that all men which had dealt with the Cardinall were in like danger; This their stay

1532.

and bold demand was thought more than reason, for that they would seeme to enuie other mens wealth, and also to restraine the King of his liberte: but at length they seemed to be sorrowfull for that they had dealt so vnaduisedly, and then the King sent them their part on, for the which they humbly thanked him.

Parliaments against the Kings mariage.

The 30. day of March the Lord Chancellor, and diuers other Lords, both Spirituall and Temporall, came into the Common house and there the Lord Chancellor declared what the King had done, touching the doubt of his Mariage, to know the opinions of learned men of diuers Vniuersities in Christendome, and there were read the determinations of the same Vniuersities, which they had written and sealed, concluding, that the Kings Mariage could not be lawfull: there were shewed also diuers bookes diuine, by doctors of forraine nations, which were to the same effect, but were not read, for that the day was spent.

K. Cooke buried in Smithfield.

The 5. of April one Richard Rose a Cooke was boyled in Smithfield, for poisoning of diuers persons, to the number of 16. or more at the B. of Rochesters place, amongst the which Benet Curwine Gentleman was one, and he intended to haue poysoned the Bishop himselfe, but he eate no pottage that day, whereby he escaped: marie the poore people that eat of them many of them dyed.

An. Reg. 23. King Henry sent vnto the Queene diuers Lords of the Counsell, about the last of May, the which Lords in her chamber at Greenwich declared vnto her the determinations of the Vniuersities concerning the Mariage betwixt them two, and demanded of her, whether she would for the quietnes of the Kings conscience, put the matter to foure Prelates, and foure temporall Lords of the Realme: but she still affirmed her selfe to be his lawfull wife, and therefore would abide in that point, till the court of Rome had made a finall end therein.

Chanterie Priests of London as gainst their Bishop.

The chanterie Priests of London being called afore the Bishop who would haue had them contributaries towards the payment of the 100000. l. granted to the K. for his pardon of the pyemunire, kept such a stir, in breaking into the Chapiter where the Bishop sate, that the B. was faine with faire words to dismisse them for a time: but after vpon complaint made to the Lord Chancellor, diuers of them, and of their partakers were arrested and committed to prison, to the number of fifteene Priests, and fiue Lay-men, some to the Tower, and some to the Fleete, and to other prisons, where they lay long after.

The Kings house at S. Iames built.

This yere King Henry tooke into his hands the Hospitall of Saint Iames nere vnto Charing Crosse, and all the meadowes to the same belonging, compounding with the Sisters of that house, they to haue pensions during their liues. And then builded in place of the said Hospitall, a goodly mansion, reteining still the name of S. Iames: he also inclosed a parke with a wall of bricke, now indifferently seruing to the said mansion, as also to his place of Whitehall at Westminster.

After Christmas the Parliament began a- 1532.
gaine, in the which the Commons declared Parliament.
their selues to be sore agreeued, with the exactions of the Ordinaries, that called mortuaries of the Ordinaries, that called mortuaries
them ex officio. At length a Bill was deuised
all their griefes, and the same deliuered to the
King by the Speaker, who humbly beseeched
him in the name of the Commons to take such
direction therein, as to his Highnesse might
seeme expedient: whereunto the King answered
he would take aduice, and beare the party accused
speake. In this Parliament was made mo-
nay, that Bishops should pay no more annuities,
or otherwise money for their Pals to the Pope,
for it was affirmed that there had beene paid for
Pals, of Bishops and other, fifty the fourth of
Henry the seuenth, 60000. pounds sterling.

The Parliament began againe after Easter, An. reg. 24.
there was a motion made to helpe the King
with money towards his charges about the
edifying of pyles and other fortifications, vp-
on the borders of forraine Scot-land, both for
better habitation to be had there, and also for
restraint of the Scots that vsed to make inua-
sions: there was therefore a fifteene granted, A fifteene granted to the King.
but not inacted at this season, because that
sodainly began a pestilence in West-minster:
whereupon the Parliament was prorogued.

The 15. of May, Sir Tho: Moore after
great suite made by him, was discharged of his
Chancellor-ship.

The twenty eight of May, Fryer Elstowe A Fryer kept
standing in the Rood-loft of the Friers Church standing in the Rood-loft of the Friers Church
at Greenewich, contraying the Preacher Do- er told the
ctor Curwine, sayd he lyed, before the King, Preacher be-
and was for the same sent to prison. This Do- fore the K.
ctor Curwine was some time Deane of Here- that he lied.
ford, after Arch-bishop of Deuelin in Ireland,
and lastly Bishop of Oxford in Qu. Maries
dayes.

The 4. of June the King dubbed Tho: Aud- Lo. Audley
ley Knight, and made him Keeper of the great made Lord
Seale, and not long after Lord Chancellor. Chancellor.

The 15. of June 5. men were hanged and Coiners and
quartered at Tower-hill for coining and clip- clippers exe-
ping of coine. cuted.

In the moneth of July the King suppressed Chrisis-
the priory of the holy Trinitie commonly cal- Church sup-
led Christs-church in London, he sent the Cha- pressed.
nons of that house to other Priories, and gaue
their Church-plate, and lands, to Sir Thomas
Audley late made Keeper of the great Seale.

The three and twentieth of August, William
Warham Arch-bishop of Canterbury, deceased
after he had sate Arch-bishop eight and twenty
yeeres and three moneths, he was buried at
Canterburie: Thomas Cranmer succeeded in
the Arch-bishoppricke.

The King repayred the Tower of London, The Tower
namely the White Tower. repayred.

The first of September the Lady Anne Marchio-
Boloigne was made Marchioneste of Pem- nesse of Pem-
broke at Windsore, and then was giuen her broke.
by the King, one thousand pound by yere, out
of the Bishoppricke of Durham.

The eleuenth of October, King Henry K. Hen. lan-
landed at Calais, with the Duke of Rich- ded at Ca-
mond lais.

mond his bastard Sonne, the D. of Norfolke Lord Treasurer of England, the Duke of Suffolke, the Marques of Exceter, the Earles of Darbie, Arundale, Orford, Surrey and Rutland, the Viscount Lisle King Edward the fourth his bastard sonne, the Lord Marruers, the L. Sands Lord Chamberlaine of the K. house, the Lord William Haward, the Lord Bray, the L. Mountague, the Lord Cobham, the Lord Mordant, the Lord Daubney, the Lord Grey, the Lord Clinton, the Lord Vaux, the L. Mountcagle, the Lord Rocheford, with diuers other Lords: the Bishops of Winchester, London, Lincolne and Bathe: Sir William Fitz-William Treasurer of the Kings house, Sir William Paulet Comptroller, Sir William Kingstone Captaine of the Guard, Sir Io. Page, Sir James Boloigne, Sir Anthony Browne, Sir Edward Neuill, Sir Thomas Cheiney, Sir John Russell, Sir Richard Page, Sir Ralph Eldercare, Sir Edward Baynton, Sir Edward Santener, Sir Griffith Deane, Sir Io. Dudley, Sir Iohn Femer, Sir Henry Long, Sir Anthony Hungerford, Sir Iohn Brudges, Sir Arthur Hopton, Sir Anthony Wingfild, Sir William Paston, Sir Edmond Bedingfield, Sir Thomas Strange, Sir William Hawte, Sir Edward Wotton, Sir William Askew, Sir Iohn Marleant, Sir William Barington, Sir William Essex, Sir Giles Strangues, Sir Edward Chamberlaine, Sir Giles Caple, Sir Io. Sent-Iohn, Sir Walter Hungerford, Sir W. Gascoine, Sir Lioncll Noris, Sir Edw. Boloigne, Sir Thomas Lisle, Sir Iohn Ashton, Sir Thomas Palmer, Sir William Boloigne, Sir William Finch, Sir Wiliam Pellam, Sir Thomas Rotheram, Sir Iohn Norton, Sir Richard Sands, Sir Iohn Neuill, and thirtie Esquires, with many Gentlemen, and all their traines.

Possession in the towne of Calais.

The towne of Calais had at this season, 24. C. beds, and stabling for 2000. horses, besides the villages about.

The 21. of October, King Henry rode towards Boloigne, and was by the way at Sandingfield met by the French King, and many Nobles of France, who rode all to Boloigne, and were there lodged.

King Hen. rode to Boloigne.

The twenty fine of October, whilest the King lay thus in Boloigne, the French king called a chapter of the companies of his order called S. Michaell, of whom the King of England was one, and so hee there elected the Dukes of Norfolke and Suffolke, to bee companions of the same order, who being brought to the Chapter had their collars deliuered to them, and were sworne to the statutes of the order. The same day, they departed out of Boloigne toward Calais: without the Towne of Calais, about the distance of two miles, the Duke of Richmond the Kings base Son, with a great compante of Noble-men, which had not beene at Boloigne, met them, and saluting the French King, embraced him in most honourable and courteous manner. Then they pulled forward to Newenham bridge, and so to Calais, where was such prouision made for the receiuing of them, as well for lodging, plate, and all such other furniture of houshold, as also of all sorts of beasts, wines, and other necessaries, that it seemed wonderfull. The French Kings traine was 1200. Horse or more, among the which was the King of Nauarre, the Cardinall of Loraine, and many Dukes, Bishops and great Estates of France, Gascoigne, Britaine, and Normandie: but there was lodging enough in Calais, not onely for them, but also for many other, so that there were about 8000. persons lodged within the Towne at that time. Whilest these two Kings lay at Calais, K. Henry made the King of Nauarre Knight of the Garter. The next day, the French King, with the King of Nauarre, and all the great Lordes of France, rode againe to Boloigne: and King Hen. of England rode with them to Sandingfield, where he made the French King a costly banquet. At this enterview, there was a communication of a ioynt armie to bee made by them both, against the Turke, who had at that time a great armie in Hungary. The two Kings should bring into the field against him fourescore thousand men, whereof 10000. to be Horsemen with artillery and furniture, but the enemie of peace (the Diuell) stirred all Christian Princes against the Emperor, for that they feared he sought to be Monarch of all Italy. Whereupon King Henry of England sent presently to the French King, by the Lord of Pomerie the French Ambassadour 50000. crownes. The King of England feared that the Emperor, for Queene Katherine his Aunts sake (whom the said King had refused to be his lawfull wife) would ioyne with the Pope against him, whereforee hee made great complaints to the French King against the said Pope, for the wrong he did him in the matter of diuorce, and namely in that he would constraine him to goe in proper person to Rome, or else to send thither a Deputy with sufficient proric to answere the law, which the said King held for rigorous: furthermore hee requested the French King that they two might send ambassadors together against the Pope to some mon him to a councell: to see what abuse and great wrongs hee had done against Christian Princes, and their subiects, and exacting of the Clergie of England, and that the same, by the said Councell, might be reformed. To this the French King agreed, and forthwith willed the King of England to make all sure at home, and let him alone to deale abroade, but not to call the Pope to any Councell, for that by their 2. powers, he was otherwise to be dealt withall. Thus was the King of England now bent against the Pope, where of late he had giuen monethly three score thousand Angells, towardes the pay of an Army vnder Mounsier de Foys, for the Popes delinery, when he was holden prisoner in Castle Angell, by the late Duke of Burbons souldiers, and the Prince of Orange.

The Pope to bee summoned to a Councell.

The banquet being ended at Sandingfield, as is aforesaide, the two Kings departed like louing brethren in great amity. Whilest the

King of England was in the French Kings dominions, he had the vpper hand, and likewise had the French King in the dominions of the King of England. And as the French King paid all the Englishmens charges at Boloign, so did the King of England pay the Frenchmens charges at Calais.

The 14. of November the King returning into England, landed at Douer.

King Henry kept his Christmas at Greenewich, and after Christmas Sir Thomas Audley Keeper of the great Seale, was made L. Chancellor of England.

1533. He marrieth the Lady Anne Bo-

King Henry priuily married the Lady Anne Boloigne on the fine and twentieth of January being S. Paules day: Mistresse Anne Sauage boze vp Queene Annes traine, and was her selfe shortly after married to the Lord Barkley, Doctor Rowland Lee, that married the King to Queene Anne, was made Bishop of Chester, then Bishop of Couentry and Litchfield, and President of Wales.

Parliament at Westminst.

And then began the Parliament, in the which was chosen Speaker Humphry Wingfield gentleman of Greses Inne. In this Parliament was enacted, that no person should appeale for any cause out of this Realme to the Court of Rome, but frō the Commissary to the Bishop, and from the Bish. to the Arch-bishop, and from the Arch-bishop to the King, and all causes of the Kings to be tryed in the vpper house of the Conuocation. It was also enacted the same time, that Q. Katherine should no more be called Queene, but Princesse Dowager, and the widdow of Prince Arthur.

Suite to frame foe bishop.

Shelt two false Fryers ouer the first Shake ouer against the Kings ghostly Marriage.

The first that openly resisted or reprehended the King touching his marriage with Anne Boloigne, was one Fryer Peto, a simple man, yet very deuout, of the order of the Obseruants: this man preaching at Greenewich, vpon the two and twentieth Chapter of the third booke of the Kings, viz. the last part of the Story of Achab, saying, euen where the dogges licked the blood of Naboth, euen there shall the dogges licke thy blood also, O King, and therewithall spake of the lying Prophets, which abused the King, &c. I am quoth he, that Micheas whom thou wilt hate, because I must tell thee truely that this Marriage is vnlawfull, and I know I shall eate the bread of affliction, and drinke the water of sorrow, yet because our Lord hath put it into my mouth I must speak it, and when he had strongly inueighed against the Kings second Marriage to diswade him from it, he also said, there are many other Preachers, yea too many, which preach and perswade thee otherwise, feeding thy folly and fraile affections vpon hope of their owne worldly promotion, and by that meanes they betray thy soule, thy honor and posterity, to obtaine fat benefices, to become rich Abbots, and get Episcopall iurisdiction, and other Ecclesiasticall dignities, these I say are the foure hundreth Prophets, who in the spirit of lying, seeke to deceiue thee, but take good heed lest you being seduced, you find Achabs punishment, which was to haue his blood licked vpon the dogs, saying, it was one of the greatest miseries in Princes, to be daply abused by flatterers, &c. The King being thus reprooued, endured it patiently, and did no violence to Peto, but the next Sun-day being the eighth of May, Doctor Curwin preached in the same place, who most sharpely reprehended Peto, and his preaching, and called him dogge, slanderer, base beggerly Fryer, Close man, Rebell, and traytor, saying that no subiect should speak so audaciously to Princes, and hauing spoke much to that effect, and in commendation of the Kings Marriage, thereby to establish his seed in his seate for euer, &c. He then supposing to haue vtterly suppressed Peto, and his partakers, he lift vp his voyce and said, I speake to thee Peto which makest thy selfe Micheas, that thou mayest speak euill of Kings, but now thou art not to be found, being fledde for feare of shame, as being vnable to answere my arguments: and whilest hee thus spake, there was one Elstow, a fellow Fryer to Peto, standing in the Rood-loft, who with a bolde voyce sayd to Doct. Curwin, good sir, you know that Father Peto, as he was commanded, is now gone to a Prouincial Councell holden at Canterbury, and not fled for feare of you, for to morrow he will returne againe, in the meane time I am here as mother Micheas, and will lay downe my life to proue all those things true which he hath taught out of the holy scripture: and to this Combat I challenge thee before God and all equall Iudges, euen vnto the Curwin I say, which art one of the foure hundreth Prophets into whom the Spirit of lying is entred, and sacketh by adultery to establish Succession, betraying the King vnto endlesse perdition, more for thy owne vaine-glory and hope of promotion, then for discharge of thy clogged conscience, and the Kings Saluation, this Elstow waxed hot, and spake very earnestly, so as they cold not make him ceale his speech vntill the K. himselfe bad him hold his peace, and gaue order that he and Peto should bee conuented before the Councel, which was done the next day, and when the Lords had rebuked them, then the Earle of Essex tolde them, that they had deserued to be put into a Sack and cast into the Thames, whereunto Elstow smiling sayd, threaten these things to rich and daintie folke, which are clothed in Purple, fare delicatously, and haue their chiefest hope in this world, for we esteeme them not, but are toyfull that for the discharge of our duties wee are driuen hence, and with thankes to God we know the way to heauen, to bee as ready by water as by land, and therefore we care not which way we goe. These Fryers & all the rest of their order were banished shortly after, and after that none durst openly oppose themselues against the K. affections, Doctor Curwin was made Deane of Hereford, and after that Arch-bishop of Dublin in Ireland, and after that B. of Oxford in S. Maries time.

After that the King perceiued his new wife to be with childe, he called all officers necessary to be appointed to her, and so on Easter-euen being the twelfth day of April, she went to her Closet

An. Reg. 25

Closet openly as Queene, and was proclaimed Queene of England: and then the King appointed the day of her Coronation to be kept on Whit-sunday next following, and writings were sent to all Sheriffes, to certifie the names of men of fortie pound lands, to receiue the order of Knight-hod, or else to make fine for the same. The assessement of which fine was appointed to Thomas Cromwell Maker of the Kings iewell-house, who so vsed the matter that a great sum of money was leuied to the Kings vse by these fines.

Men of 40. l. land, knighted. T. Cromwell maker of the Kings iewell-house.

The matter of appeale made by Q. Katherine, whereunto she still sticked, and by no meanes could be removed from it, was communed of both in the Parliament house, and also in the Conuocation, where it was so handled, that manie were of opinion, that not onely her appeale, but also all other appeales made to Rome were voyd, and of none effect, for that in ancient Councels it had bene determined, that a cause rising in one Province, should not be determined in another. This matter was opened with all the circumstances to the Lady Katherine Dowager, the which persisted still in her former opinion, and would by no meanes reuoke her appeale to the court of Rome. Whereupon the Arch-bishop of Canterbury doct. Thomas Cranmer accompanied with Doctor Iohn Stokesley Bishop of London, Stephen Gardener, Bishop of Winchell. the Bishops of Bath and Lincolne, and diuers other learned men in great number rode to Dunstable, which is fiue myles from Ampthill, where the Princesse Dowager lay, and there by one Doctor Lee shee was aduised to appeare before the said Archbishop in case of Matrimony in the sayd Towne of Dunstable: but shee made default and appeared not, wherefore she was called peremptorily euery day, fifteene dayes together, and at the last for lacke of appearance by the assent of the learned men there present, the was diuorced from the King, and the Marriage declared to be voyd and of none effect.

Katherine Dowager appeared.

Katherine Dowager diuorced.

K. Henry requested to appeare in a generall Councell.

In the moneth of May Pope Clement sent an Orator to the King, requiring him to appeare personally at the generall Councell, which was appointed to be kept in the yeare following: but when his commission was shewed at the Kings Court, there was neither place nor time certaine specified for the keeping of that Councell, and so with an vncertaine answere to an vncertaine demand, he departed, but not vnrewarded. Notwithstanding the King vnderstanding that the Pope, the Emperor, and the French King should meete at Nice in June following, he appointed the Duke of Norfolk, the Lord Rocheford, brother to Queene Anne, Sir William Pawlet, Controller of the Kings house, Sir Anthony Browne, and Sir Francis Brian Knights, to goe in Ambassage to the French K. and both to accompany him to Nice, and also to commune with the Pope there, concerning his stay in the Kings diuorce. These made their prouision ready, and so with the number of 8. score horses they went to Douer, and passing ouer to Calois, take their way through France, to accomplish their Ambassage as they had charge.

Preparation for coronation of Queen Anne.

The Kings Highnes addressed his Letters to the Maior and communaltie of London, signifying vnto them, that his pleasure was to solemnize the Coronation of his most deare and welbeloued wife Dn. Anne, at Westminster, on Whit-sunday next ensuing, willing them to make preparation, as well to fetch her Grace from Greene-wich to the Tower by water, as to see the Citie garnished with Pageants in places accustomed, for the honour of her grace, when she should be conueyed from the Tower to Westminster. Whereupon a common councell was called, and commaundement giuen to the Haberdashers, of which craft the Maior was, that they should prepare a Barge for the Bachelors, with a Master, and a Foyste, garnished with Banners, like as they vse when the Maior is presented at Westminster, on the morrow after the Feast of Saint Simon and Iude. Also all other crafts were commanded to prepare Barges, and to garnish them, not onely with their Banners accustomed, but also to decke them with Targets by the sides of the Barges, and to set by all such semely Banners, and Bannerets, as they had in their Halles, or could get to furnish their said Barges, and euery Barge to haue Minstrels, according to which commandement great preparation was made for all things necessary for such a noble triumph.

The 29. day of May being Thursday, the Maior and his Brethren all in Scarlet, and such as were Knights, had Collars of Esses, and the residue hauing great chaines, and the councell of the Citie assembled with them at S. Mary Hill. And at one of the clocke descended to the new staire to their Barge, which was garnished with many goodly Banners, and streamers, and richly couered, in which Barge was Shaulmes, Shagbushes, and diuers other Instruments of Musicke, which played continually.

After that the Maior and his Brethren were in their Barge, seeing that the Companies to the number of fifty Barges were ready to waite vpon them, they gaue commandement to the Companies, that no Barge should row nearer to another, than twice the length of the Barge, and to see the order kept, there were three Whirries prepared, and in euery part one of them two officers to call on them to keep their order.

The coming by water from Green-wich.

After which commandement giuen, they set forth in order, as hereafter is described. First, before the Maiors Barge was a foyste, for a waiter full of ordinance, in which foyste was a great red Dragon continually mouing and casting wild-fire, and round about the said Foyste stood terrible monstrous and wilde men casting fire, and making hideous noyse: next after the Foyste a good distance came the Maiors Barge: on whose right hand was the Bachelers Barge, in the which were trumpets, and diuers other melodious instruments: the decker of the said Barge and saile-yards and the top castles

raftles were hanged with rich cloth of gold and like: at the fore-ship and the sterne were two great Banners rich beaten with the armes of the King and the Quéene: and on the top-raftle also was a long streamer newly beaten with the said armes: the sides of the barge was set full of flags and Banners of the deuices of the company of Haberdathers and Merchant-Aduenturers, and the raffeters or oares were hanged with innumerable Pensels, hauing little Bells at the endes, which made a gmole noyse, and was a goodly sight, wauering with the wind: on the outside of the Barge were three dozen Scutcheons in mettall, of the armes of the King and Quéene, which were beaten vpon square Buckeram diuided, so that the right side had the R. colours, and the left side the Quéenes, which Scutcheons were faskned on the clothes of gold and siluer, hanging on the deckes: on the left hand of the Mayor was another Foist, in the which was a mount, and on the mount stoode a white Faulcon crowned vpon a roote of golde enuironed with white Roses and red, which was the Quéenes deuice: about which mount sate Virgins singing and playing melodiously: Next after the Maior followed his fellowship the Haberdathers: next after them the Mercers: then the Grocers and so every Company in his order, and last of all the Maiors and Sheriffes officers, euery company hauing melodie in their barge by themselues, and goodly garnished with banners, and some couered with silke, and some with Arras or such like, which was a goodly sight to behold: and in his order they rowed by Grénewich to the point beyond Grénewich, and there they turned backward in another order, that is to wit, the Maiors and Sheriffes Officers first, and the meanest craft next, and so ascending to the vppermost craft in order, and the Maior last, as they go to Pauls at Christmasse, and in that order they rowed downe-ward to Grene-wich towne, and there cast anchor, making great melodie. At three of the clocke, the Quéene apparelled in rich cloth of gold, entred into her Barge, accompanied with diuers Ladies and Gentlewomen, and incontinent the Citizens set forward in their order, their minstrels continually playing: and the Batchelers Barge going on the Quéenes right hand, which thee twise great pleasure to behold. About the Quéenes Barge were manie Noblemen, as the D. of Suffolke, the Marquesse Dorset, the Earle of Wiltshire her Father, the Earle of Arundell, Darbie, Rutland, Worcester, Huntington Sussex, Oxford, and many Bishops and Noble-men, euery one in his barge, which was a goodly sight to beholde: the thus being accompanied, rowed towards the Tower: and in the meane way the ships which were commanded to lie on the more for letting of the Barges, shotte diuers peales of guns, and ere the lauded, there was a marueilous shot out of the Tower, I neuer heard the like: and at her lauing, there met with her the Lord Chamberlaine with the Officers of Armes, and brought her to the King, which received her with louing countenance at the Posterne by the water side, and kissed her, and then thee turned backe againe, and thanked the Maior and the Cittizens with many goodly wordes, and so entred into the Tower.

Postume of the Tower by the waters side.

After which entry the Cittizens all this while houered before the Tower, making great melodie, and went not a land, for none were affigned to land but the Mayor, the Recorder, and two Aldermen: but to speake of the people that stoode on every shoare to behold this sight, he that saw it not will not beléeue it.

On Fryday at dinner serued the King all such as were appointed by his Highnesse to bee Knights of the Bathe, which after dinner were brought to their Chambers, and that night were bathed and thriuen according to the old vsage of England, and the next day in the morning the King dubbed them according to the Ceremonies thereto belonging, whose names hereafter ensue, nineteene in number.

Knights of the Bathe.

The Marqueese Dorset.
The Earle of Darby.
The Lord Clifford, sonne and heire to the Earle of Cumberland.
The Lord Fitz-Walter, sonne and Heire to the Earle of Sussex.
The Lord Hastings, sonne and heyre to the Earle of Huntington.
The Lord Mountague.
The Lord Vaux.
Sir Henry Parker, sonne and heyre to the Lord Morley.
Sir William Winsore, Sonne and heyre to the Lord Winsore.
Sir John Mordant, sonne and heyre to the Lord Mordant.
Sir Francis Weston.
Sir Thomas Arondell.
Sir John Huddlestone.
Sir Thomas Poynings.
Sir Henry Sauell.
Sir George Fitz-William of Lincolneshire.
Sir John Tindale.
Sir Thomas Ierney.

On Saturday the one and thirtieth day of May, the Quéene was conueyed through London in order as followeth: To the intent that the Dames should not ride on the Pauement, nor that the people should bee hurt by Horses, the high streets, where through the Quéene should passe, were all grauelled from the Tower vnto Temple-barre, and rayled on each side, within which rayles stood the crafts along in their order from Grace-Church, where the Marchants of the Stil-yard stoode vntill the little Conduit in Cheape, where the Aldermen stood, and on the other side of the Street stood the Constables of the City, apparelled in veluet and silke with great staues in their hands, to cause the people to giue rome, and keepe good order: and when the streets were somewhat ordered, the Maior in a gowne of crimosin veluet, and a rich coller of esses, with two footemen clothed in white and redde damaske, rode to the Tower, to giue his attendance on the Quéene, on whom the Sheriffes with their officers did awaite vntill they came to the Tower hill, where they taking their leaue, rode downe the high Streets, commanding the constables to kéepe roome and good order kept, and so went and stood by the Aldermen in Cheape, and before the Quéene with her traine should come, Grace-streate and Cornehill were hanged with fine Scarlet, Crimosin, and other grained clothes, and in some places with rich Arras, and the most part of Cheape was hanged with cloth of tissue, gold, veluet, and many rich hangings, which did make a goodly shew, and all the windowes were replenished with Ladies and Gentle-women to behold the Quéene and her traine, as they should passe by.

The Coneueying of Qu. Anne through the City to Westminst.

The first of the Quéenes company that set forward, were twelue French men belonging vnto the French Ambassador, cloathed in coates of blew veluet, with sleeues of yellow and blew veluet, their Horses trapped with cloth trapers of blew sarsenet powdred with white crosses: after them marched Gentlemen, Esquires, Knights two and two: after them the Iudges: after them the Knights of the Bathe in violet gownes with hoods purfled with miniuer, like Doctors: after them Abbots: then Barons: after them Bishops: the Earles and the Marquesses: then the Lord Chancellor of England: after him the Archbishop of Yorke, and the Ambassador of Uenice: after them the Archbishop of Canterbury, and the Ambassador of France: after rode 2. Esquires of honor with robes of estate rolled and worne bandrickewise about their neckes, with caps of estate, representing the Dukes of Normandy and Aquitaine: after them rode the Maior of London with his mace, and Garter in his coat of armes, which bare also his mace of Wel-minst. Hall: after them rode the L. William Howard with the Marshals rod, deputy to his brother the D. of Norfolke Marshall of England, which was Ambassador then in France, and on his right hand rode Charles Duke of Suffolke for that day high Constable of England, bearing the warder of siluer appertaining to the office of Constablership, and all the Lords for the most part were clothed in crimosin veluet, and all the Quéenes seruants or Officers of Armes in scarlet: next before the Quéene rode her Chancellor bare-headed: the seriants and officers at armes rode on both sides of the Lords: then came the Quéen in a white litter of white cloth of gold, not couered or bailed, which was led by two Palfreis clad in white damaske downe to the ground, head and all, led by her footmen: she had on a kirtle of white cloth of tissue, and a mantle of the same furred with Ermine, her haire hanging downe: but on her head she had a coife with a circlet about it full of rich stones: ouer her was borne a canopy of cloth of gold with foure gilt staues, and foure siluer Belles: for bearing of the which canopye were appointed fifteene Knights: foure to beare it one space on foote, and foure another space, according to their owne appointment: next after the Quéen rode the L. Brough her Chamberlaine: next after him William Coffin Master of her horses, leading a spare horse with a fine sadle, trapped downe with cloth of tissue: after him rode 7. Ladies in crimosin veluet, turned vp with cloth of Gold and of tissue, and their Horses trapped with golde: after them two Chariots couered with red cloth of gold, in the first chariot were two Ladies, which were the olde Dutchesse of Norfolke, and the old Marchionesse of Dorset: in the second chariot were 4. Ladies all in crimosin veluet: after them rode seuen Ladies in the same sute, their Horses trapped and all: after them came the third chariot all in white, with fiue Ladies in crimosin veluet: next to them came the fourth Chariot all red, with eight Ladies also in crimosin: after them followed thirty gentlewomen all in velucet and silke, in the liuery of their Ladies, on whom they gaue their attendance: after them followed the Guarde in coates of Goldsmiths worke, in which order they rode forth til they came to Fan-church, where was made a pageant all of children apparelled like Marchants, which well-commed her in the Cittie, with two proper propositions both in French and in English: and from thence they rode vnto Grace Church corner, where was a costly & marueilous cunning pageant made by the marchants of the Stil-yard, therein was the mount Parnassus with the fountain of Helicon which was of white marble, and 4. streame: without pipe did rise an exceeding high and mixt together in a little cup aboue the fountaine, which fountaine ranne abundantly with right Rennesh Wine till night, on the mountaine sate Apollo, and at his féete sate Calliope: and on euery side of the mountaine sate fowre Muses playing on seuerall swéete instruments, and at their feete Epigrams and poesies were written in golden letters, in the which euery muse according to her property praised the Quéene.

Pageants.

From thence the Queen with her traine passed to Leaden-hall, where was a goodly pageant with a tippe and heauenly rose, and vnder the tippe was a goodly roote of Gold, set on a little mountaine enuironed with red roses and white, out of the tippe sate downe a faulcon all white, and set vpon the roote, and incontinent came downe an Angell with great melodie, and set a close crowne of golde on the faulcons head: and in the same pageant sate Saint Anne, with all her issue beneath her: and vnder Mary Cleophe sate her fowre children, of the which children, one made a goodly Oration to the Quéene of the fruitfulnesse of Saint Anne, and of her generation, trusting, that like fruit should come of her. Then she passed to the Conduit in Cornehill, where were the three Graces set in a Throne, afore whom was the spring of Grace, continually running Wine: afore the fountaine sate a Poet, declaring the properties of euery Grace: that done, euery Ladie by her selfe according to her propertie, gaue to the Quéene a seuerall gift of Grace.

That done, they passed by the great Conduit,

in Cheape, which was newly painted with Armes and deuises, out of the which Conduit, (by a goodly Fountaine set at the end) ranne continually wine, both white and Claret all that afternoone: and so she rode to the Standard, which was richly painted with Images of Kings and Quenes, and hanged with Banners of Armes, and in the top was marueilous sweete Harmonie both of Songs and Instruments.

Then she went forward by the Crosse, which was newly gilt, till she came where the Aldermen stood, and then Master Baker the Recorder came to her with low reuerence, making a proper and briefe proposition, and gaue to her, in the name of the Citie, a thousand marks in golde, in a purse of gold, which she thankefully accepted with many good words, and so rode to the little Conduite, where was a rich pageant full of melody & songs, in which pageant were Pallas, Iuno, and Venus, and at last them Lord Mercurie, which in the name of the three Goddesses, gaue vnto her a ball of gold, diuided in three, signifying 3. gift which these three Goddesses gaue to her, that is to say, wisedome, riches, and felicitie.

Crosse in Cheap newes to gilt.

As she entred into Pauls gate, there was a goodly pageant, in which sate three Ladies richly cloathed, and in a circle on their head was written *Regina Anna*, prosper, proceed, and raigne. The Lady in the middest had a tablet, in the which was written, *Veni, amica, coronaberis*, and vnder the tablet sate an Angell with a close Crowne. And the Lady sitting on the right hand had a tablet of Siluer, in which was written, *Domine dirige gressus meos*. And the third Lady had a tablet of golde, with letters of azure written, *Confide in Domino*, and vnder their feete was written.

Regina Anna paris regi de sanguine nata,
Et paries populis sancta foelicitas.

And these Ladies cast downe Wafers, on the which the said two verses were written.

From thence she passed to the East ende of Pauls Church against the Schole, where stood a Scaffold, and children well apparelled, which said to her diuers goodly verses of Poets translated into English, to the honor of the King and her, which she highly commended. And then she came to Ludgate, which gate was new garnished with golde and bise, and on the leads of S. Martins Church stood a goodly Quere of singing men and children, which sang new Ballets made in praise of her Grace.

After that she was past Ludgate, she proceeded toward Fleet-street where the Conduit was newly painted, and all the Armes and Angels refreshed, and the Shalmes melodiously sounding. Vpon the Conduit was made a Tower with foure turrets, and in euery turret stood one of the cardenall vertues with their stations and properties, which had seuerall speeches, promising the Queene neuer to leaue her, but to be aiding and comforting her: and in the middest of the tower closely was such seuerall solemne instruments, that it seemed to be an heauenly noyse, and was much regarded and praysed: and besides this, the Conduit ran Wine, claret and red all the afternoone, so that with all her company, and the Maior, rode forth to Temple-bar, which was newly painted and repayred, where stood also diuers singing-men and children, till she came to Westminst. Hall, which was richly hanged with cloth of Arras, and newly glased, and in the middest of the Hall she was taken out of her litter, and so led vp to the high deske vnder the cloth of estate, on whose left hand was a cupbord of ten stages high, marueilous rich and beautifull to behold, and within a little season, was brought to the Queene with a solemne seruice in great standing Spice plates, a voide of Spice, and subtelties, with Ipocrase, and other wines, which she sent downe to her Ladies, and when the Ladies had dranke she gaue hearty thankes to the Lords and Ladies, and to the Maior, and other that had giuen their attendance on her; and so withdrew her selfe with a few Ladies to the wardrobe hall, and so to her chamber, and there shifted her and after went in her Barge secretly to the King to his Mannor of Westminster, where she rested that night.

On Whitsonday the 1. of June, the Maior clad in crimosin veluet, with his coller, and all the Aldermen and Sheriffes in scarlet, and the Counsell of the City, take their Barge at the Crane by 7. of the clocke, and came to Westminster, where they were welcommed, and brought into the Hall by M. Treasurer, and other of the Kings house, and so gaue their attendance till the D. should come forth betweene 8. and 9. of the clock that came into the Hall, and stood vnder the cloth of estate, and then came in the Kings Chappell, and the Monks of Westminster, all in rich Copes, and many Bishops and Abbots in Copes and Miters, which went into the midst of the Hall, and there stood a season, then was there a ray cloth spread from the Quenes standing in the Hall, through the Palace and Sanctuary, which was raysed on both sides to the high Altar of Westminster, after that the ray cloth was cast, the officers of armes appointed the order accordingly. First went Gentlemen, then Esquires, then Knights, then Aldermen of London in their clokes of scarlet, cast ouer their gownes of scarlet.

Coronation of K. Anne.

After them, the Iudges in their mantles of scarlet and coifes: then followed the Knights of the Bath, being no Lords, euery man hauing a white lace on his left sleeue: the followed Barons and Vicounts in their Parliament robes of scarlet: after them came Earles, Marquesses, and Dukes in their Robes of Estate, of crimosin veluet, furred with Ermin, poudred according to their degrees. After them came the L. Chancellor in a robe of scarlet, open before, bordered with lettice. After him came the K. Chappell, and the Monkes solemnly singing, with procession. Then came Abbots and Bishops mitered, then Sergeants and officers at armes: Then the Maior of London with his mace, and Gartar in his coate of armes: then the

the marques Dorset in his robe of estate, which bare the Scepter of gold, and the Earle of Arundell, which bare the rod of Iuorie with the Doue both together: then alone the Earle of Oxford high Chamberlaine of England, which bare the Crowne. After him the Duke of Suffolke in his Robe of Estate, for that day being high Stewarde of England, hauing a long white rod in his hand, and the Lord William Howard with the rod of the Marshal-ship, and euery Knight of the Gartar had on his Collar of the Order. Then proceeded forth the Quene in a curcote and robe of purple veluet, furred with Ermine in her hayre, coife, and circlet, as she had the Saturday, and ouer her was borne the Canoppe, by foure of the Cinque portes, all in Crimosin, with points of blew and red hanging ouer their sleeues, and the Bishops of London and Winchester bare by the lappes of the Quenes robe, and her traine which was very long, was borne by the olde Dutchesse of Norfolke. After her followed Ladies, being Lords wiues, which had circates of scarlet, with narrow sleeues, the breast all lettice, with barres of powders according to their degrees, and ouer that they had mantles of scarlet furred, and euery mantle had lettice about the necke like a neckerchiefe, likewise poudered, so that by the poudrings their degrees might be knowne. Then followed Ladies being Knights wiues, in gownes of scarlet, with narrow sleeues without trames, onely edged with lettice, likewise had all the Quenes Gentlewomen.

When she was thus brought to the high place made in the middest of the Church betweene the Quere and the high Altar, she was set in a rich chaire, & after that she had refted a while, she deliuered downe vnto the high Altar, and there prostrated her selfe while the Bishop of Canterbury said certain Collects ouer her. Then she rose, and the Bishop annointed her on the head and on the breast: and then she was led vp againe to her chaire, where after diuers orisons said, the Archbi. set the Crowne of S. Edward on her head, and then deliuered her the Scepter of golde in her right hand, and the rod of Iuory with the doue in the left hand, & then all the quere sung *Te Deum*, &c. Which done, the Bishop take off the crowne of S. Edward being heauie, and set on her heade the Crowne made for her, and so went to masse, and when the offering was begunne, she descended downe and offered being Crowned, and so ascended vp againe & sate in her chaire till *Agnus* was said, and then she went downe and kneled before the high Altar, where she receiued of the Arch-bishop the holy sacrament, and then went vp to the place againe. After that Masse was done, she went to S. Edwards shrine, and there offered. After which offring done, she withdrew her into a little place made for that purpose on the one side of the quere. Mowin the meane season euery Dutches put on her bonet a coronell of gold wrought with flowers, & euery Marchionesse put on a demi-coronell of Golde, & euery Countesse a plaine circle of gold without flowers, and euery Lady at armes put on a Crowne of copper and gilt, all which were worne till night.

When the Quene had a little reposed her, the company returned in the same order that they set forth, and the Quene went crowned, and so did the Ladies aforesaid: her right hand was sustained be the Earle of Wiltshire her father, and her left hand by the L. Talbot, Legate for the Earle of Shrewsbury and L. Furniual his father. And when she was out of the sanctuary within the Pallace, the trumpets played marueylous freshly, and so she was brought to Westminster Hall, and so to her withdrawing chamber: during which time, the Lord, Iudges, Maior, and Aldermen, put off their ches, mantles, and cloaks, and tooke their hods from their necks, and cast them about their shoulders, and the Lords sate onley in their circates, and the Iudges and Aldermen in their gownes, and all the Lords that serued that day serued in their circates, & their hods about their shoulders. Also diuers officers of the Kings house being no Lords, had circates and hods of scarlet, edged with miniuer, as treasurer, controller, and Master of the Iewell house, but their Circates were not gilt.

The sitting at dinner of K. Anne.

While the Quene was in her Chamber, euery Lord and other that ought to doe seruice at the Cozonation, did prepare them according to their dutie as the D. of Suffolke high Steward of England, which was richly apparelled, his dublet and iacket set with orient pearle, his gowne crimosin veluet embroidered, his courser trapped with a close trapper head and all to the ground of crimosin veluet, set full of letters of gold of Gold smiths worke hauing a long white rod in his hand. On his left hand rode the Lord William, deputy for his brother as Earle marshall with the marshals rod, whose gown was crimosin veluet, and his hoyse trapper purple veluet cut on white sattine embroidered with white Lions. The Earle of Oxford was high Chamberlaine, the Earle of Essex caruer, the Earle of Sussex, sewer, the Earle of Arundell, chiefe Butler, on whom 12. Citizens of London did giue their attendance at the cupboord: the E. of Darby, cup-bearer the vicount Lisle, panter, the Lord Burgeiny, chiefe larder, the Lord Bray, Almoner for him and his copartners, and the Maior of Oxford kept the buttery bar, and Tho. Wyat was chosen Sweerer for Sir Henry Wiat his Father.

When all things were ready and ordered, the Quene vnder her Canoppe came into the Hall, and washed, and sate downe in the middest of the Table vnder her cloth of estate. On the right side of her chaire stood the Countesse of Oxford widdow, and on her left hand stood the Countesse of Worcester all the dinner season, which diuers times in the dinner time did hold a fine cloth before the Quenes face when she list to spit, or doe otherwise at her pleasure: and at the Tables end sate the Archbishop of Canterbury, on the right hand of the Quene, and in the middest betweene the Archbishoppe and the Countesse of Oxford stood the Earle

of Orlo̊ with white staffe all dinner time, and at the Quenes borde vnder the Table sate two Gentlewomen all dinner time. When all these things were thus ordered, came in D. of Suffolke, and the Lord William Howard on horsebacke, and the Sergeants of armes before them, and after them the Sewer, and then the Knights of the Bathe, bringing in the first course, which was eight and twenty dishes, besides subtilties, and Shippes made of ware, marueylous gorgeous to beholde, all which time of seruice the trumpets standing in the Window at the neather end of the Hall, played.

When she was serued of two dishes, then the Archbishops service was set downe, whose sewer came equall with the third dish of the Quenes seruice on his left hand. After that the Quene and the Archbishop were serued, the Barons of the Ports began the Table on the right hand nert the wall, then at the Table sate the Maisters and Clearkes of the Chancerie, and beneathe them other Doctors and Gentle-men. The Table nert the wall on the left hand by the cupboorde was begunne by the Maior and Aldermen, the Chamberlaine, and Councell of the City of London, and beneath them sate substantiall Marchants, and so downe-warde other worshipfull persons. At the Table on the right hand in the midst of the Hall sate the L. Chancellor, and other temporall Lordes, on the right side of the Table in their circuite: and on the left side of the same Table sate Bishops and Abbots in their Parliament Robes: beneath them, sate the Iudges, Sergeants, and the Kings Councell: beneath them, the Knights of the Bathe. At the Table on the left hand in the middle part sate Dutchesses, Marquesses, Countesses, Baronesses in their Robes, and other Ladies in circotes, and Gentlewomen in gownes, all which Gentlewomen and Ladies sate on the left side of the table along, and none on the right side, and when all were thus set, they were incontinent serued so quickly, that it was marueilous; for the Seruitors gaue so good attendance, that meat, nor drinke, nor any thing else needed to be called for, which in so great a multitude was marueil. As touching the fare, there could be deuised no more costly dishes, nor subtilties. The Maio̊ of London was serued with foure and twenty dishes, at 2. courses, and so were all his brethren, and such as sate at his table. The Quene had at her second course foure and twenty dishes, and thirtie at the third course, and betweene the last courses, the Kings of Armes crowned, and other officers of Armes cryed larges in three partes of the hall, and after stood in their place, which was in the bekens of the Kings Bench: and on the right hand out of the cloyster of S. Stephens Chappell was made a little Closet, in which the King with diuers Ambassadours lined to behold the service, the Duke of Suffolke, and the Lord William rode oftentimes about the hall, cheering the Lords, Ladies, and Maio̊, and his brethren.

After they in the Hall had dined, they had wafers and Ipocrase, and then they washed, and were commanded to rise and stand still in their places before the tables o̊ on the formes till the Quene had washed. When she had taken Wafers and Ipocrase, the Table was taken vp, and the Carle of Rutland brought vp the surnape, and laid it at the Bords end, which immediately was drawne and cast by Maister Reade Marshall of the Hall, and the Quene washed, and after the Arch-bishop, and after the Surnape was with drawne: then she rose, and stod in the middest of the Hall place, to whom the Carle of Sussex in a goodly spice plate, brought a void of spice and confections. After him the Maio̊ of London brought a standing cup of gold, set in a cup of assay of gold, after that shee had dronke, she gaue the Maio̊ the cup, with the cup of assay, because there was no couer, according to the claime of the City, thanking him and all his Brethren of their paine.

Then she vnder her canopy departed to her chamber, and at the entry of her chamber, shee gaue the canopie with bels and all to the Barons of the Ports according to their claime, with great thanks: then the Maio̊ of London bearing his cup in his hand with his Brethren, went through the Hall to their Barge, and so did all other Noble-men and Gentlemen, for it was fire of the clocke.

On Sunday were the Iustes at the tilt before the Kings gate, where the Maio̊ and his Brethren had a godly standing, but there were few speares broken, by reason the Horses would not cope.

On Wednesday the king sent for the Maio̊ and his brethren to Westminster, and there he himselfe gaue vnto them heartie thankes, with many goodly words.

On Midsommer Euen deceased Mary the Frenche Quene, Sister to King Henry the 8. and wife to Charles D. of Suffolke, and shee was buried at S. Edmundsbury. Mary King Henries sister deceased.

The fifth of July Q. Katherine was proclaimed Prince Arthurs widdow.

The 7. of July, two Marchants were murthered on the Thames by one Wolfe and his wife.

It was this yeare enacted, that Butchers should sell their Beefe and Mutton by weight, Beefe for a halfepenny the pound, and Mutton for three farthings: which being deuised for the great commodity of the Realme (as it was thought) hath proued far otherwise, for at that time fat Oxen were sold for fiue and twenty shillings and eight pence the piece, fat Weathers for 3 shillings and 4. pence the piece, fat calues of the like price, a fat Lamb for twelue-pence. The Butchers of London sold penny pieces of Beefe for the reliefe of the poore, euery piece two pound and a halfe, sometime three pound for a penny: and 12. sometime 14. of these pieces for twelue-pence: mutton 8. pence the quarter, and an hundred weight of beefe for 4. shillings and eight-pence: what price it hath growne to since it neeedeth not be set downe. At this time also, and not before, were foraine Butchers Beefe and mutton sold by weight.

permitted to sell their flesh in Leaden-hall market of London.

Birth of Lady Elizabeth, and her christening.

The 7. of Septemb. being Sunday, betweene three and foure of the clocke at afternoone, the Qu. was deliuered of a faire Ladie, for whose good deliuerance *Te Deum* was sung incontinently, and great preparation was made for the Christning. The Maio̊ and his Brethren, and forty of the chiefe cittizens were commanded to bee at the Christning the Wednesday following. Upon which day the Maio̊, Sir Stephen Peacocke, in a gowne of crimosin velvet, with his collar of Esses, and all the Aldermen in scarlet, with collars and chaines, and all the Councell of the Citie with them, take their barge at one of the clocke, and the cittizens had another Barge, and so rowed to Grenewich, where were many Lords, Knights, and gentlemen assembled: all the Walles betweene the Kings Pallace, & the fryers were hanged with arras, and all the way strewed with greene rushes. The fryers Church was also hanged with rich Arras: the Font was of silver, and stode in the midst of the Church 3. steps high, which was couered with a fine cloth: and diuers gentlemen with Aprons and Towels about their neckes, gaue attendance about it, that no filth should come to the Fonte: Ouer it hong a square Canopie of Crimosin Sattin, fringed with Gold, about it was a raile, couered with red Sape, betweene the quere and body of the Church was a close place with a pan of fire to make the Childe ready in. When all these things were ordered, the Childe was brought to the Hall, and then euery maister of worship went forward: first, the cittizens two and two, then gentlemen, Esquires, and Chaplaines, next after them the Aldermen, and the Maio̊ alone, and next the Kings Counsell, then the Kinges Chappel in copes, then barons, bishops, earles, the C. of Esser bearing the couered basons gilt, after him the Marques of Dorset with a Taper of virgin wax, next him the Marques Dorset bearing the salt, behind him the Lady Mary of Norfolke bearing the crisome, which was very rich of pearle & stone. The old dutches of Norfolke bare the childe in a Mantle of purple velvet, with a long traine furred with Ermine. The Duke of Norfolke with his marshals rod went on the right hand of the said Dutchesse, and the Duke of Suffolke on the left hand, and before them went officers of armes, the Countesse of Kent bare the long traine of the childes mantle, and meane betweene the childe and the Countesse of Kent went the C. of Wiltshire and the C. of Darby on either side, supporting the said traine in the middest: ouer the Childe was borne a rich Canopie by the L. Rochford, the Lord Hussey, the Lord William Howard, and the Lord Thomas Howard the elder. After the childe followed many Ladies and Gentlewomen. When the child was come to ꝑ church doze, the Bishop of London met it with diuers Bishops and Abbots mitered, and begunne the ceremonies of the Sacrament. The Godfather was Lord Thomas Archbishoppe of Canterbury: the God-mothers were the olde Dutchesse of Norfolke, and the old Marchionesse of Dorset, widdowes, and the childe was named Elizabeth, and after that all things were done at the church doze, the child was brought to the Font and christened: and that done, Garter chiefe King of Armes cryed aloud: God of his infinite goodnes send prosperous life and long to the high and mighty Princesse of England Elizabeth, and then the trumpets blewe, then the child was brought vp to the Altar, and the Gospell said ouer it. After that immediately the Arch-bishop of Canterbury confirmed it, the Marchionesse of Exeter being God-mother, then the Bishop of Canterbury gaue vnto the Princesse a standing cup of gold, the Dutchesse of Norfolke gaue to her a standing cup of gold fretted with pearle, the Marchionesse of Dorset gaue 3. gilt bowles pounced with a couer, and the Marchionesse of Exceter gaue 3. standing bowls grauen, all gilt, with a couer. Then was brought in wafers, confects, and Ipocras, in such plentie, that euery man had as much as hee would desire: then they set forward, the trumpets alone going in the same o̊der toward the Kings pallace as they did when they came thitherward, sauing that the gifts that the Godfather and Godmothers gaue, were borne before the childe by 4. persons, that is to say, first Earle John Dudley bare the gift of the Lady of Exeter, the L. Thomas Howard the younger bare the gift of the Lady Dorset, the Lord Fitz-Walter bare the gift of the Lady of Norfolke, and the Lord of Worcester bare the gift of the Arch-bishop of Canterbury, and all the one side as they went was full of staffe torches, to the number of fiue hundred, born by the gard and other of the Kings seruants: and about the child were many other proper torches borne by gentlemen. And in this o̊der they brought the princesse to the Quenes chamber doze, and then departed.

The Maio̊ went to the Kings chamber, and tarried there a while with his Brethren the Aldermen, and at the last, the Dukes of Norfolke and Suffolk came out from the King, and reported to the Maio̊ and his Brethren, that the King thanked them heartily, and commanded them to giue them thankes in his name, and from thence they were had to the cellar and drauke, and so went to their barge.

Eliz. Barton, holy maid of Kent.

About this time the crafty practises of one Elizabeth Barton, named the holy Maide of Kent, came to light and were discouered, so that she and her adherents in Nouember following, were brought to the Starre-chamber, and there before the Kings counsell confessed their fained hypocrisie and dissimuled holines, traiterous purposes and intents. The names of those her adherents, which were presented with her before the Lords in the Starre-chamber, were as followeth: Richard Master Parson of Aldington in Kent, Edward Bocking, Doctor of Diuinitie, a Monke of Canterbury, Richard Dering, monke also of Canterbury, Edw. Twaits gentleman, Thomas Laurence Register to th Archdeacon of Canterbury, Henry Colde Parson of Aldersmary in London, Hug

Rich, fryer obſervant, Richard Risby, and Tho. Golde Gentleman. Theſe were adiudged vpon their confeſſion, to ſtand at Paules Croſſe in the Sermon time, where they with their own hands ſhould ſeuerally deliuer each of them to the preacher, a bill declaring their ſubtill and ſuperſtitious doings, which thing they did the Sunday next following, ſtanding vpon a Stage or ſcaffold before the Croſſe, the L. of Bangor late Abbot of Bide there preaching, ſhewed their offences, from whence they were committed to the Tower of London.

The Scots ioyned with Irish.

In this meane time the Scots were not quiet, but robbed the Kings ſubiects both by Sea and Lnd, whereupon the King cauſed them to be requited, not onely by the Wardeners and other to them aſſociate, which entering the Parches, burnt many of their Piles and ſtrong holds: but alſo he ſet forth certaine Shippes, which entered into their Breames, and fetched out many of thoſe prizes, which they had taken, out of their hauens, yet was there no war proclaimed.

A curſe pronounced from Rome.

At the ſuite of Ladie Katherine Dowager, a cauſe was ſent from Rome, which accurſed both the King and the Realme. This curſe was ſet vp in the towne of Dunkerke in Flanders (for the bringer thereof durſt approch no nerer) where it was taken downe by one William Locke a Mercer of London: becauſe (as it was ſaid) that the Lady Katherine Dowager had procured this curſe of the Pope, the D. of Suffolk was ſent to her, as then lying at Bugden beſide Huntington, where according to that he had in commandement, he diſcharged a great ſort of her houſhold ſeruants, and yet left a conuenient number to ſerue her like a Princeſſe, which were ſworne to ſerue her, not as a queen, but as princeſſe Dowager: but ſuch as tooke that oath they vtterly refuſed, and would none of their ſeruice, ſo that ſhe remained with a ſmall number of ſeruants about her.

1533. Holy Maid of Kent examined.

After Chriſtmas the Parliament began, wherein the foreſaid Elizabeth Barton, and other her complices were attainted of treaſon, for ſundry practiſes by them put in vre, ſounding to the bitter reproch, perill, and obſtruction of the Kings perſon, his honour, faue, and dignitie, for they had put into the heads of many of the Kings ſubiects, that to the ſaid Elizabeth Barton was giuen knowledge by reuelation from God and his Saints, that if the K. proceeded to the diuorce, and marryed another, he ſhould not be K. of this Realme one moneth after, and in reputation of God, not one day nor houre.

This Elizabeth firſt through ſickneſſe, being oftentimes brought as it were into a traunce, whereby her viſage and countenance became marueilouſly altered at thoſe times when ſhe was ſo vexed: at length by the incouraging procurement, and information of the foreſaid Richard Maſter perſon of Aldington, the learned to counterfeit ſuch manner of traunces, as other ſeemes by force of her diſeaſe ſhe had bin acquainted with, ſo that ſhe ſhewed vnto the people diuers marueils, and ſundry alterations of the ſemblable parts of her body, craftily vttering in her ſaid fained traunces diuers counterfeite vertues and holy wordes, tending to the rebuke of ſinne, and reproouing of ſuch new opinions as then begaunne to bee ſpred. And to bring the people more in beliefe with her hypocriticall doings, ſhe was counſelled to ſay, that ſhe ſhould neuer be perfectly whole, till ſhe had viſited an Image of our Ladie at a place called Court at ſtreete, within the Parith of Aldington aforeſaid. Thither was ſhe brought, and by the meanes of the ſayd Richard Maſter, and Edward Bocking there was aſſembled a two thouſand perſons at the day appointed of her thither comming, to ſee the myracle. At which time ſhe being thither brought afore all that aſſembly, and multitude of people, ſhe falſly faigned & ſhewed in the Chappell of our Lady of Court at ſtreet many alterations of her face, & other outward ſenſible parts of her body: and in thoſe traunces ſhe vttered wonderous wordes, as ſhe was before ſubtilly induced by the ſayd Edw. Bocking and Richard Maſter. And amongſt other things ſhe vttered, that it was the pleaſure of God, that the ſaid Bocking ſhould bee her ghoſtly father, and that ſhe ſhould be a religious woman. And within a while after ſuch fayned traunces, ſhe appeared to the people to be ſodainly releaſed from her ſickneſſe by the interceſſion of the Image of our Ladie being in the ſayd Chappell, by reaſon of which hypocriticall diſſimulation, the ſaid Elizabeth was brought into a marueylous fauor, credite, and good opinion of a great multitude of people of this realme, and to increaſe the fame by the counſell of the ſayd Edward Bocking, ſhe became a Nunne in the priorie of S. Sepulchres at Canterbury, to whom the ſaid Edward Bocking had commonly his reſort: and by conſpiracie betweene her and him, ſhe ſtill continued her diſſembled traunces, alleadging that in the ſame ſhe had reuelations from almighty God and his Saints: and among other, that which as before we haue mentioned, touching the K. Marriage, as yee haue heard. This matter proceeded ſo far, that there was a Booke written by her complices, namely, by Thomas Laurence Regiſter to the Arch-deacon of Canterburie, of her fained myracles, reuelations, and hypocriticall holineſſe. All things were handled ſo craftily, that not onely the ſimple people, but alſo the wiſe and learned were deceiued by the ſame: inſomuch, that William Warham late Arch-biſhoppe of Canterbury, and John Fiſher Biſh. of Rocheſt. and diuers other being informed thereof, gaue credite thereunto. All which matters and many other haue bene traiterouſly practiſed amongſt the parties many yeres, chiefly to interrupt the diuorce, and to deſtroy the King, and depriue him of the Crowne and dignitie royall of the Realme, as in the act of their attaindor made more at large doth appeare.

In this Parliament alſo was made the act of ſucceſſion, for the eſtabliſhing of the crowne, to the which euery man was ſworne, being of lawfull

lawfull age.

Biſhops preach againſt the Pope.

During this Parliament, euery Sunday at Paules Croſſe preached a Biſhop, declaring the Pope not to bee ſupreame Head to the Church. Alſo in other places of this Realme great troubles were raiſed about Preaching, namely, at Wiſſeow where M. Latimer preached, and there preached againſt him one M. Hobberton, and Doctor Powell, ſo that there was great part-takings on both ſides: inſomuch that diuers Prieſts and others ſet vp bils againſt the Maior, and againſt M. Latimer, but the Maior (permitting Lay-men to preach) cauſed diuers Prieſts to bee apprehended and caſt into Newgate with bolts vpon them, and diuers other ran away and loſt their liuings rather than come in the Maiors handling.

Latimer preached at Wiſſeow. Chron. Britt.

The Lords ſworne to the ſucceſſion.

The 30. of March the Parliament was proroged, and euery Lord, and Knight, and Burgeſſe were ſworne to the act of ſucceſſion, and ſubſcribed to a Schedule ſyred to the Statute. And then were Commiſſioners ſent into all parts of the Realme, to take the like oath of all men and women.

holy maid of Kent her head ſet on London-Bridge.

The 20. of Aprill, Elizabeth Barton a Nunne profeſſed, Edward Bocking, and Iohn Deering, two Monks of Chriſts Church in Canterbury, and Richard Risby and another of his fellowes of the ſame houſe, Richard Maſter, Perſon of Aldington, & Henry Hold Prieſt, were drawne from the Tower of London to Tiborne, and there hanged and headed, the Nuns head was ſet on London-bridge, and the other heads on the gates of the City: theſe as ye before haue heard, were attainted by Parliament. At which time alſo were attainted of miſpriſion for the ſame matter, I. Fiſher, Biſh. of Rocheſter, and John Adeſon his Chaplaine, Thomas Abel Prieſt, Thomas Golde Gentleman, and Tho. Laurence Regiſter to the Arch-deacon of Cant.

An. reg. 26. L. Dacres of the north arraigned & quit.

The ninth of July was the L. Dacres of the North arraigned at Weſtminſter of high treaſon, where the D. of Norfolke ſate as iudge and high Steward of England, where the ſaid Lord Dacres being brought to the Barre with the Axe of the Tower before him, after the inditement read, ſo inuponned the ſame, anſwering euery part and matter therein contained, and ſo plainly confuted Sir Ralph Fenwike, and Muſgraue his accuſers, who had brought in their falſe Scotets for witneſſes, which were there preſent ready to auouch their falſe accuſations, that to their great ſhames and his honour, hee was found that day by his peres not guiltie, to the great reioycing of the people, who made a great ſhout for ioy, when they heard the words, Not guilty, pronounced.

Frith burnt.

The 22. of July, John Frith was burned in Smith-field for his opinions concerning the ſacrament: at the ſame time alſo ſuffered with him, at the ſame ſtake, one Andrew Hewet a young man, by occupation a Tailor.

Fries hanged & ſauued.

The 11. of Auguſt were all the places of the obſeruants friers at Greenewich, Canterbury, Richmond, Newarke, and Newcaſtle put downe, and Auguſtine Fryers ſet in their places for the time, and the obſeruants were put in place of the gray Fryers.

The Mure by Charingcroſſe beat.

The 16. of Auguſt, was burned the Kings table at Charing-croſſe, of old time called the Pelwee, (for that the Kings Hawkes were there mewed and kept) wherein was burned many great hoſes, and great ſtore of hay.

The 21. of September, Doctor Taylor, Maſter of the rolles was diſcharged of that office, and maſter Thomas Cromwell ſworne in his place, the 9. of October.

T. Cromwell maſter of the Rolles.

The Popes authority aboliſhed.

The 3. of November, the Parliament began at Weſtminſter, wherein the Pope with all his authority was cleane baniſhed this Realm, and order taken that he ſhould no more be called Pope, but Biſhop of Rome, and the K. to be taken and reputed as ſupreame head of the Church of England, hauing full authoritie to reforme all errors, hereſies, and abuſes of the ſame. Alſo the firſt fruits and tenths of all ſpirituall dignities and promotions were granted to the King, with a ſubſidie of the Laitie of twelue-pence in the pound, with a fifteenth and a tenth.

Firſt fruits and tenths giuen to the King.

1535. The Earle of Kildare dyed priſoner in the Tower of London, and his ſon Thomas Fitz-Garet rebelled in Ireland, and tooke all the Ordinance, ſending to the Emperor, requiring him to take his part. Amongſt other he ſlewe doctor Allen Biſhop of Diueln, and robbed all ſuch as would not obey him: wherefore the K. ſent thither Sir William Skeuington with a number of ſouldiers.

An. reg. 27. Charter-houſe monkes executed.

The 29. of Aprill, Iohn Prior of the Charter houſe at London, Auguſtine Webſter Prior of Exnall, Thomas Laurence Prior of Eſham, houſe-monkes Ric. Reginalds doctor, a monke of Sion, & John Haile Vicar of Thiſſelworth, were all condemned of treaſon, who were drawne, hanged, and quartered at Tiborne, the fourth of May, their heads and quarters ſet on the gates of the Citie all ſaue one quarter, which was ſet on the Charter-houſe at London.

Poles headꝭ commanded.

The 8. of May, the King commanded all about his Court to poll their heads, and to giue them example, hee cauſed his owne head to bee polled, and ſcore thenceforth his beard to bee notted and no more ſhauen.

Hollanders condemned for hereticks

The fiue and twentieth day of May, was in S. Paules Church at London examined nine ſcore men and fiue women borne in Holland, whoſe opinions were: firſt, that in Chriſt is not 2. natures, God and man: ſecondly, that Chriſte tooke neither fleſh nor blond of the Virgin Mary: thirdly, that children borne of infidels ſhall be ſaued: fourthly, that Baptiſme of children is to none effect: fiftly, that the Sacrament of Chriſts bodie is but bread onely: ſixtly, that he who after his baptiſme ſinneth wittingly, ſinneth deadly, and cannot be ſaued. Fourteene of them were condemned, a man and a woman of them were burned in Smith-field, the other twelue were ſent to other Townes there to be brent.

Charter-houſe Monkes executed.

The eighteenth of June, three Monkes of the Charter-houſe at London, named Thomas Exmew, Humfrey Middlemore, and Sebaſtian Nidigate were drawne to Tiborne, and there

hanged and quartered for denying the Kinges supremacie.

Bishop of Rochester beheaded.

The two and twentieth of June, dyed Iohn Fisher Bysshop of Rochester, for denying the Kings supremacie, was beheaded on the Tower hill, his head was set on London-Bridge, and his body buried within Barking Churchyard.

Sir Tho: Moore beheaded.

The first of July, Sir Thomas Moore was beheaded on the Tower-hill, for the like deny- all of the Kings supremacie: and then the body of doctor Fisher Bishop of Rochester was taken by and buryed with Sir Thomas Moore both in the Tower.

Doctor Foxe the Kings Almoner was made Bishop of Hereford: and Hugh Latimer Bish. of Worcester: Iohn Hilsey called the Blacke fryer of Bistlow, was made B. of Rochester.

In August, the L. Thomas Gerard son to the Earle of Kildare, was taken in Ireland, and sent to the Tower of London.

Abbeyes dissolued.

In October the King sent Maister Thomas Cromwell, and Doctor Lee, and other, to visite the Abbeys, priories, & nunneries in England: these were ordained to be the principall visitors, who put forth all relations persons that would goe, and all that were under the age of foure and twenty yeres: and after closed up the reuenue that would remaine, so that they should not come out of their places, and take order, that no man should come to the houses of women, nor women to the houses of men, but onely to heare their seruice in the Churches: all religious men that departed, the Abbot or Prior to giue them for their habite a priests gowne, and forty shillings of money: the Nuns to haue such apparell as secular women weare, and to go where they would. They take our monasteries and Abbeys, their reliches, and chiefest iewels, to the Kinges vse, they said.

Processiõ.

The 11. of November was a great processiõ at London of all the religious men, three Bishops, and foure Abbots mitered, which was for ioy the French King was recouered of his health.

Names of Chauntries.

In the moneth of December, the names of all Chauntries were taken, and who had the gift of the in.

The first making of great Ordinance for England by Englishmen.

This yere 1535. Iohn Owin began to make braste Ordinance, as Cannons, Culuerins, and such like, he was the first English-man that euer made that kinde of Artillerie in England, his sonne of his name and the name of Pit, haue continued vnto the dayes of King Iames, most ready and exquisite Gun makers, for the generall seruice of this Kingdome.

Katherine Dowager deceased.

The 8. of January dyed Lady Katherine Dowager of Ryuhallon, and was buried at Peterborough.

1536.

The 29. of Januarie, Quéene Anne was deliuered of a man-childe before her time, which was borne dead.

A Parliament.

In a Parliament begun in the moneth of Febuary, was granted to the King and his heires all religious houses in the Realme of England, of the value of 2. hundred pound and vnder, with all lands and goods to them belonging: The number of these houses they suppresed, were 376. the value of their lands then 32000. pound, and more by yare, the moueable goods as they were solde, Robin Hoodes penny-worthes, amounted to more than one hundred thousand pounds, and the religious persons that were in the saide houses, were clerely put out, some went to other greater houses, some went abroad to the world. It was (saith mine Author) a pittifull thing to heare the lamentation that the people in the Country made for them: for there was great hospitality kept among them, and as it was thought, more then ten thousand persons, maisters and seruants had lost their liuings by the putting downe of those houses at that time.

Iustes at Greenwich.

On May day was a great iusting at Greenwich, where were Challengers the Lo. Rochford and other: and Defenders Hen. Norrice and other. From these Iustes King Henry sodainely departed to Westminster, hauing onely with him 6. persons: of which sodaine departure many men marueiled.

On the next morrow, George Bolоigne L. Rochford Brother to the Quéene, and Henry Norrice, were brought to the Tower of London prisoners. Also the same day, about fiue of the cloche in the afternone, Quéene Anne Boleign was brought to the Tower of London by Sir Thomas Audley Lord Chancellor, the D. of Norfolke, Thomas Cromwell Secretarie, and Sir William Kingstone Constable of the Tower. And when shee came to the Tower gate entring in, she fell on her knees before the said Lords, beseeching God to helpe her, as she was not guilty of that whereof shee was accused, and then desired the Lords to beseech the Kings grace to be good vnto her, and so they left her there prisoner.

Q. Anne beheaded.

On the 15. of May Quéene Anne was arraigned in the Tower of London on a scaffold for the purpose made in the Kings hall, before the Du. of Norfolke, who sate vnder the cloth of estate as high Steward of England, with the Lord Chancellor on the right hand, the Duke of Suffolke on his right hand, with Marquesses and Lords, &c. and the Earle of Surrey sate before the D. of Norfolke, his father, as Earle Marshall of England: The K. Commission being read, the Constable of the Tower, and the Lieutenant brought the Quéene to the Barre, where was made a Chaire for her to sit downe in, & there her inditement was read, whereunto shee made so wise and discrete answers, that she seemed fully to cleere her selfe of all matters laid to her charge; but being tried by her Peres twenty fiue in number, whereof the D of Suffolke was chiefe, shee was by them found guilty, and had iudgement pronounced by the Duke of Norfolke, to be burnt on the greene in the Tower, or else to haue her head smitten off, as the Kings pleasure should be further known, and so shee was conueyed to ward againe: the Lady Kingstone, & the Lady Bolоigne her Ant attending on her. And then immediatly, the Lord Rochford the Quénes brother was likewise arraigned & condemned: the Mayor of London, his brethren the Aldermen, the Wardens, and foure persons moe of euery the twelue principall companies being present.

The seuenténe day of May, the Lord Rochford Brother to the Quéne, Henry Norrice, Marke Smeton, William Brierton, and Francis Weston, all of the Kings priuy Chamber, about matters touching the Quéne, were beheaded on the Tower-hill, the Lord Rochfords bodie with the head was buried in the Chappell of the Tower, the other foure in the church-yard there.

Rob. Greene.

On the nineteenth day of May, about eight of the clocke in the morning, Quéene Anne Bolоigne was brought to the greene within the Tower of London, by the white Tower, the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of Richmond, the Duke of Suffolke, with the most of the Kings councell, as Earles, Lords, and Nobles of the Realme being present, also the Maior of London, with his Brethren the Aldermen, and Sheriffes, and certain of the principall companies of the citie, &c. All these being on a scaffold made there for the execution, the said Quéene Anne said as followeth: Maisters, I here humbly submit me to the Law, as the Law hath iudged me, and as for mine offences, (I here accuse no man) God knoweth them, I remit them to God, beseeching him to haue mercy on my soule, and I beseech Iesu saue my Soueraigne and maister the King, the most godliest, noblest, and gentlest Prince that is, and long to reigne ouer you, which words shee spake with a smiling countenance: which done, she kneeled downe on both her knées, and said, To Iesu Christ I commend my soule, no with that word suddenly the Hangman of Calais smote off her head at one stroke with a sword: her body with the head was buried in the Quéne of the Chappell in the Tower.

King Henry marrieth L. Iane.

The twentieth of May, the King married Lady Iane, Daughter to Sir Iohn Seymour Knight, which at Whitsontide was openly shewed as Quéene, and on tuesday in the Whitson weeke, Sir Edward Seymour was created Vicount Beauchamp, and Sir Walter Hungerforde made Lord Hungerforde.

Articles of Religion deuised by the King.

The eight of Iune began a Parliament, and the Cleargie held a conuocation in Pauls Church, where after much disputing and debating of matters, they published a booke of Religion, intituled, Articles deuised by the Kings highnesse. In the which booke is mentioned but three Sacraments.

On Saint Peters night, the King and Quéene dyed at the Perrers hall, and saw the watch most hauely set forth.

Triumph at Westminster.

The nine and twentieth of Iune, the King held a great iusting and triumph at Westminster, where were ordained two Lighters made like Ships to fight vpon the water, one of the which brake in the midst, whereby one Gates gentleman, a seruant of Maister Knewets was drowned in his harnesse. In the other, a gonne brast her Chamber, and maimed two of the mariners.

After that the Earle of Willshire and Dymond, called Sir Thomas Bolоigne, had deliuered the Kings priuy seale whereof he was *Custos*, into the Kings hands: Thomas Cromwell Secretary to the King, and Maister of the Rolles, was made Lord keeper of the said priuie seale. And Christopher Hales the Kings attorney, was made Maister of the Rolles, and Maister Baker Recorder of London was made the Kings attorney.

T. Cromwell L. Keeper.

The 9. of Iuly, the Lord Fitzwaren was created Earle of Bathe, and the morrow after Thomas Cromwell was made Lord Cromwell.

The eightenth of Iuly, Lord Thomas Cromwell was made Knight, and high Vicar generall ouer all the Spirituality vnder the King, and sate diuers times in the Conuocation among the Bishops, as head ouer them.

T. Cromwell Lord priuy seale vicar generall.

The 22. of Iuly, Henry Duke of Richmond and Somerset, Earle of Nottingham, a bastard sonne of King Henry, borne at Blakemore in Essex, of the Lady Taileboise, that time called Elizabeth Blunt, died at S. Iames, and was buried at Thetford in Norfolke.

Hen. Duke of Richmond.

This moneth of Iuly, Lord Thomas Howard, youngest brother to the Duke of Norfolke, was sent to the Tower of London, for making a priuie contract of Matrimony with the Lady Margaret Dowglas, Daughter to the Quéene of Scots, by the Earle of Angus, and neece to King Henry of England: the said Lord Thomas was attaint by Parliament, and also the said Lady Margaret Dowglas, was after committed to the Tower for the same.

L. Thomas Howard sent to the Tow wer.

In September, Thomas Cromwel Lord priuie seale, and vicegerent, sent out vnder the Kings spirituall seale, certaine iniunctions to the Prelates and Clergie of the Realme, charging curates to preach and to teach their Parishioners the *Pater noster*, *Aue* and *Creede*, the commandements, and articles of the faith in English, with other Articles.

Pater noster Creed, and Commandements.

In the beginning of October, at an Assise for the Kings whistle kept in Lincolnshire, the people made an insurrection, and gathered nigh twenty thousand persons, who take certaine Lordes and gentlemen of the Country, causing them to be sworne to them vpon certaine Articles which they had deuised, and such as refused to sweare, they kept prisoners, and beheaded a Priest, who was the Bishop of Lincolnes Chancellor: Against those the King did send the D. of Suffolk, the E. of Shrewsbury, and the L. of Rutland with a strong power, whereof when the Rebells heard, they desired pardon, take by their Armie, and departed home, but their Captaines were apprehended and executed.

Commotion in Lincolneshire.

Commotion appeased.

The ninth of Octob. a Priest and a Butcher were hanged at Windsore, by Martiall Law, for words spoken in the behalfe of the Lincolneshire men, the butcher wished the good fellowes (as he termed them) in Lincolnshire, to haue the flesh on his stall, rather than to sell it at such price as he was offered: the Priest standing by likewise wished them to haue it, for hee said they had neede of it. Also Iames

Priest and a butcher executed.

Maller Doctor of Law, late Chaplain to Qu. Katherine, for like wordes was executed at Chelmesford in Eſſex.

Commotion in Yorkſhire.

The men of Lincolneſhire being pacified, within fire dayes after began an inſurrection in Yorkſhire for the ſame cauſes: there, people gathered to the number of 40000. who tooke the Arch-biſhop of Yorke, and the Lord Darcie, and cauſed them to be ſworne to their partie.

Diuers of the rebels in Yorkſhire.

Ye ſhall not enter into this your Pilgrimage of grace for the Common-wealth onely, but for the loue that you doe beare to Gods faith and the Church militant, and the maintenance therof, and the preſeruation of the Kings perſon and his iſſue, and the purifying of Nobility, and to the intent to expelle all villaines blood, and euill Counſellours againſt the common wealth, from his Grace, and the priuie Counſell of the ſame. And that ye ſhall not enter into our ſaid pilgrimage for no particular profit to your ſelues, nor doe any diſpleaſure to any priuate perſon, but by the Counſell of the common wealth, ne to murder or ſlay for any enuy, but in your heart to put away all feare fro the common wealth, and to take beſide you the croſſe of Chriſt, and in your hearts his Faith, to the reſtitution of Gods Church, and to the ſuppreſſion of erroneous opinions.

God ſaue the King.

Againſt theſe rebellies, the King ſent the Duke of Norfolke, the Duke of Suffolke, the Earle of Shrewſburie, and the Marqueſſe of Exceſter, with a great Army, with whom a battell was appointed to haue beene fought on the eeue of Saint Simon and Iude: but as God would, there fell ſuch raine the night before, that the two Armies could not meet, whereupon they deſired the Duke of Norfolke, to ſue vnto the Kings Maieſty for their pardon, and that they might haue their liberties, &c. which the Duke promiſed, and rode poſte to the King, then lying at Windſor, to know his pleaſure, and ſo appealed them. Sir Robert Aske, that was chiefe of his rebellion, came to London, was not onely pardoned, but rewarded with great gifts.

Commotion appeaſed.

Sir Ralph Eure kept Sharborow Caſtle in the North, being fiue weeks beſieged by the rebells, twenty dayes whereof hee and all his company, (which were his onely friends, ſeruants, and tenants, and ſerued for good will to him) were forced to ſuſtaine themſelues, with bread and water, and yet kept the ſame ſafe to the end of the ſaid rebellion, and ſo deliuered it to King Henry, who ſent him ſome after to ſerue in the borders againſt Scotland, where, in great credit hee continued his ſeruice, keeping the Scots without doing hurt to England, and with ſuch obedience of them, as within twenty miles of the borders of Scotland foe againſt him, there was not a Scot, but at his commaundement, and ſo continued till hee was killed, in Anno 1545.

Sir Ralph Eures kept his good ſeruice in the north.

Robert Pagiton murthered.

The 13. of November, Maſter Robert Pagington, a graue Citizen, and a mercer of London, was ſlaine with a gun, as he was going from his houſe, by Soper lane end, to mayorew maſſe in Saint Thomas of Akers, now called the Mercers Chappell in Cheape: but the murtherer was neuer openly knowne, till by his owne confeſſion, made many yeres after, when he came to the Gallowes at Banbury, where he was hanged for fellony.

The 22. of December, the Thames being froſen, the King and Quéene lane, rode fro Zow London to Greenewich.

1537. The E. of Kildare and fiue of his vncles executed.

The third of February, was Thomas Fitzgarret, ſonne and heyre to the Earle of Kildare beheaded, and fiue of his vncles drawne, hanged, and quartered, at Tiborne for treaſon.

New commotion in Yorkſhire.

In the ſame moneth, Nicholas Muſgraue, Thomas Gilby, and other, ſtirred a new rebellion, and beſieged the City of Carliſle, from whence they were driuen, and many of them taken, and put to death. Also the ſame month Sir Francis Bigot, Sir Robert Conſtable, and other, beganne a conſpiracy, and for the ſame were attainted.

Another conſpiracie.

The 10. of March, John Paſlew, batcheler of Diuinitie then being the fiue and twentieth Abbot of the Abbey of Whalley in Lincolnſhire, was executed at Lancaſter, and the ſame day with him was hanged, drawne, and quartered, John Eaſtgate, a Monke of the ſame, houſe, whoſe quarters were ſet vp at diuers Townes in that ſhire. And on the 13. of March William Hayddoke a Monke of Whalley was hanged at Whalley, in the field called Pedeamguies, and there hanged long time after. More about the ſame time, the Abbot of Salwey in Lancaſhire, with one Aſſebee a monke of Cernaur, were executed. Alſo Rob. Hops, Abbot of Woborne in Bedfordſhire, with the Prior of the ſame houſe, and the Perſon of Pudington, were executed at Woborne.

Abbot of Whyley and other hanged.

Three nine and twentieth of March were 12. men of Lincolne drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered, fiue were Prieſts, and 7. were Lay-men, 1. one was an Abbot, a ſuffragan, Doctor Mackerel: another was the vicar of Louth in Lincoln-ſhire, 6 two Prieſts.

Lincolneſhire men executed.

In Aprill, through certaine Commiſſions ſent into Somerſet-ſhire to take vp Coyne, a Commotion in Somerſetſhire.

An. reg. 29.

the people beganne to make an Inſurrection, which was by Maſter Powlet and other allaid, the beginners to the number of 60. were condemned, whereof 14. were hanged and quartered, one of them was a woman.

In June the Lord Darcy, the Lord Huſſey, Sir Robert Conſtable, Sir Thomas Percy, Sir Francis Bigot, Sir Stephen Hamelton, Sir John Bulmer and his wife, George Lomley, Nicholas Tempeſt Eſquire, Robert Aske, William Thurſt, Abbot of Fountaines, Adam Sodbury Abbot of Cernaur, the Abbot of Riuers, William Wold, Prior of Birlington, were all put to death: Sir Robert Conſtable at Hull, ouer the gate called Beuerley gate: Aske hanged in chaines on a Tower at Yorke: Margaret Cheyney, otherwiſe Lady Bulmer, burned in Smith-field: Lord Darcy beheaded at Tower hill: Lord Huſſey at Lincolne, and the other fiue in number, ſuffered at Tyborne.

L. Cromwell Knight of the Garter.

The 26. of Auguſt, the Lord Cromwell Lord priuie ſeale, vice-Roy, and vicar generall, was made Knight of the Garter.

Prince Edward borne.

The twelfth of October, about two of the clocke in the morning, was borne at Hampton Court, Prince Edward, and Quéene Iane his mother left her life the 14. of October, the 18. of October, the Prince was made Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall, and Earle of Cheſter.

Edward Seymour Lord Beauchampe, the Quéenes brother, was made Earle of Hertford, and Sir Will. Fitz-William Lord admirall, was made Earle of Southampton, and Maſter William Powlet was made Treaſurer of the Kings houſe, Sir John Ruſſell comptroller of the K. houſe, M. Henedge, Mall. Long, M. Kneuet of the Kings priuie Chamber, Maſter Coſſin, Maſter Liſtar, and Maſt. Seymour the D. brother, Knights.

Lord Thomas Howard beheaded.

On Alhallowne euen, Lord Thomas Howard brother to the D. of Norfolke, died priſoner in the Tower of London, and was buried at Thetford, and then the Lady Margaret Dowglas was pardoned, and releaſed out of the Tower.

The 12. of November, the corps of Quéene Iane was with great ſolemnity conueyed from Hampton court toward Windſore, and there buried in the middeſt of the quire.

King Henry kept his Chriſtmas at Greenwich.

1538. Bible of great volume ordered to Paules.

The 24. of February being Sonday, the Lord of Boreley in Kent, called the Lord of Grace, made with diuers biſhops, to moue the eyes and lips was ſhewed at Pauls Croſſe by the Preacher, which was the Biſhop of Rochcheſter, and there it was broken, and plucked in pieces.

The 25. of February, Sir John Allen Prieſt, and alſo an Iriſh Gentleman of the Garrets, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

An. Reg. 30. Iohn Forreſt burnt.

Doctor Iohn Foreſt, a frier obſeruant, was apprehended, for that in ſecret confeſſion hee had declared to many the Kings ſubiects, that the K. was not ſupreame head of the Church, whereas before hee had beene ſworne to the ſame ſupremacie, vpon this point hee was examined, and anſwered that hee take his Oath with his conſcience man, but his inward man neuer conſented thereunto: then being further accuſed of diuers hereticall opinions, hee ſubmitted himſelfe to the puniſhment of the Church, but hauing more libertie than before, to talke with whom hee would, when his abiuration was ſent him to read, hee vtterly refuſed it. Whereupon he was condemned, and afterward on a payze of new gallowes ſet vp for that purpoſe in Smithfield, hee was hanged by the middle and armes-pits quicke, and vnder the gallowes was made a fier, wherewith hee was burnt and conſumed, on the 22. day of May, there was a ſcaffold ſet vp before the priſoner, whereon was placed Sir Richard Gresham L. Maior of the City, the Dukes of Norfolke, and Suffolk, the L. Admirall, the L. priuie ſeale, and diuers other of the Counſell, beſides a great number of Citizens and other: alſo a pulpet was there ſet, in the which M. Hugh Latimer Biſhop of Worceſter preached a Sermon, confuting the Friers errors, and moouing him to repentance, but all auayled not: ſo that in the end, when the Biſhop asked him what ſtate hee would dye in, the frier with a loud voyce aſwered and ſaid, that if an Angell ſhould come downe from Heauen, and teach him any other doctrine then he had receiued and beleued from his youth, hee would not now beleue him, and that if his body ſhould be cut ioynt after ioynt, or member after member burnt, hanged, or what paine ſoeuer might bee done to his body, hee would neuer turne from his old Profeſſion: moze hee ſaide to the Biſhop, that ſeuen yeres paſt hee durſt not haue made ſuch a Sermon for his life, And ſo hee was hanged and brent, as is afoze ſhewed: and an huge great Image named Daruell Gatherm, hanting beene brought out of Wales to this Gallowes in Smithfield, was there brent with the ſaid Frier Forcit. In the night next following the Rood at Saint Margarets Pattns by the tower ſtreete of London was pulled downe, and broken in pieces, with his Tabernacle. And about three nights after, to wit, the 27. of May was a great fire in the ſame Saint Margarets pariſh not farre from the Church, the which fire among the Basket-makers there conſumed more then a dozen houſes, and nine perſons men and women brent to death.

Fire in Rood lane.

Battaile-Abbey in Suſſex, Partine Abbey in Surrey, Stratford-Abbey in Eſſex, and other were ſuppreſſed to the Kings vſe.

Abbeys ſuppreſſed.

The Images of our Lady of Walſingham and Ipſwich were brought vp to London, with all the Iewels that hung about them, and diuers other Images both in England & Wales, whereunto any common pilgrimage was vſed, for auoyding of Idolatry, all which were brent at Chelſey by Thomas Cromwell priuie ſeale.

The ninth of Auguſt, Edmond Conesby one of the Grooms of the Kings Chamber was executed at Tyborne, for counterfeiting the Kings Scale manuell.

Hanging man hanged.

The 1. of September being Sonday, one Cratwell Hanguan of London, and two other, were hanged at the weſtling place by Clerken-well, for robbing a Booth in Bartholomew faire.

The 2. of Sept. Edward Clifford gentleman was executed at Tyborne, for counterfeiting the Kings priuy ſignet.

The Bible in euery Church to be read.

This moneth of September Thomas Cromwell Lord priuy ſeale, vice gerent to the Kings Highnes, ſent forth iniunctions to all Biſhops and curats throughout the realm, charging them to ſee that in euery Pariſh Church, the Bible of the largeſt Volume, printed in Engliſh, were placed, for all men to read on and that no

bookes

Registers booke in euery Church to be kept.

booke of Register were also prouided and kept in euerie Parish Church, wherein shall be written euery wedding, Christening, and burying within the same parish for euer.

Thomas Becketts Shrine.

S. Austines Abbey at Canterbury was suppressed, and the shrine and goos taken to the Kings treasury, as also the Shrine of Thomas Becket in the Priory of Christs Church, was likewise taken to the K. vse. This shrine was builded about a mans height, all of stone, then vpward of timber plaine, within the which was a Chest of yron, conteyning the bones of Thomas Becket, scull and all, with the wounde of his death, and the piece cut out of his scull layde in the same wounde. These bones (by commaundement of the L. Cromwell) were then and there burnt, the timber-work of this shrine on the outside, was couered with plates of gold, damaskes with gold wier, which ground of gold was againe couered with iewels of golde, as rings 10. or 12. cramped with gold wyer, into the said ground of golde many of those rings hauing stones in them. Bowches, Images, Angels pretious stones, & great pearls, &c. The spoile of which shrine, in golde and pretious stones, filled two great chests, such as fiue or seauen strong men could doe no more, then conuey one of them at once out of the Church. The Monks of that Church were commaunded to change their habites, into the Apparell of secular Priests.

Friers in London suppressed.

The Hospitall of S. Thomas of Akres in London, the blacke-friers, the white friers, the gray-friers, and the Charter-house Monks in London, were suppressed, and so all other Religious houses immediately after.

Lambert burnt.

In the moneth of November, John Nicholson, otherwise Lambert, a Priest, was accused of heresie, for holding opinion against the bodily presence in the sacrament of the Alter: hee appealed to the King, who fauorably consented to heare him at a day appointed. Against the which day in the Palace at Westminster, within the K. Hall, there was set vp a throane or siege royall for the King, with scaffolds for the Lords, and a stage for Nicholson to stand vpon. Diuers articles were ministred to him by Thomas Cranmer Arch-bishop of Canterbury, Latimer Bishop of Worcester and other, but namely the K. pressed him sore, and in the end offered him pardon, if he would renounce his opinion, but he would not, wherefore he was condemned, had iudgement as the Kings mouth, and was burnt in Smith field.

The 5. of November Henry Courtney marquesse of Exceter, and Earle of Deuonshire, and Sir Henry Poole knight, L. Mountacute, and Sir Edw. Neuil brother to the L. of Burgauenny, were sent to the tower, being accused by Sir Geffrey Poole, brother to the L. Mountacute, of high treason, who were indighted, for deuising to maintain, promote and aduance, one Reginald Poole, late Deane of Exceter, enemy to the K. beyond the sea, & to deprive the King.

Anabaptists burnt fingers, and were spent.

The 24. of November, foure Anabaptists, 3. men and one woman, all dutch, are fagots at Paules crosse, And on the 27. of November, a man and a woman dutch Anabaptists, were burnt in Smithfield.

The first day of December Sir Thomas Audley, was made baron Audley of Walden.

1539. Marquesse of Exceter, and other attainted.

The Marquesse of Exceter, Earle of Deuonshire, and Henry Lord Mountacute, were arraigned on the last of December, at Westminster, before the L. Audley that was Lord Chancellor, and for the present high Steward of England, where they were found guilty. The third day after were arraigned Sir Edward Neuill, Sir Geffrey Poole, 2. Priests called Crofts and Colens & one Holland a Mariner, all attainted. And the 9. of January were Henry Marques of Exeter, Earle of Deuonshire, Henry L. Mountacute, and Sir Edw. Neuill, beheaded on the Tower-hil. The two Priests Crofts and Colens and Holland the mariner, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne, and Geffrey Poole was pardoned.

Executed in Paules church-yard.

On Ash-wednesday Iohn Iones, John Potter, & Wil. Mancring were hanged in the princes liuery (because they were the princes seruants) on the south side of Pauls Churchyard, for killing of Roger Cholmeley, Esquire, in the same place.

Sir Nicholas Carew beheaded.

The 3. of March Sir Nich. Carew of Bedington in the County of Surrey, Knight of the Garter and Maist. of the K. horse, was beheaded on the tower-hill, for being of counsell with Henry Marques of Exceter, and Henry Poole Lord Mountacute.

States erected.

The 9. of March the K. created S. W. Powler Knight, Treasurer of his houshold, L. Saint John, Sir Iohn Russell, Comptroller of his houshold, L. Russel, and Sir John Parre, L. Parre.

Anno reg. 31.

The 28. of Aprill began a Parliament, in the which Margaret Countesse of Salisburie, Gertrude wife to the Marquesse of Exeter, Reginald Poole, Sir Adrian Fortescue, and Tho. Dingley Knight of Saint Johns, and diuers other were attainted: And all the Religious houses in England, suppressed and vnsuppressed, were granted to the King for euer.

Blockehouses built and.

King Henry being informed that the Pope by instigation of Cardinall Poole, had moued and stirred diuers Princes and Potentates of Christendome to inuade the Realme of England without delay rode towards the Seacoasts, and sent diuers Nobles to survey all the Ports, and places of danger, where any meete and conuenient landing place might be doubted, as well on the borders of England, as also of Wales, in which dangerous places hee caused bulwarkes and forts to be erected: and further he caused the Lord Admirall Earle of Southhampton, to prepare in a readines his Nauie of ships for defence of the coasts: besides this he sent forth commissions to haue general musters taken through the realme, to vnderstand what able men hee might make account of: and further to haue the armour and weapons seene and viewed, Sir William Forman Knight then Maior of London, was commanded to certifie the names of all the able men within the City, and liberties thereof, betwixt the ages of sixteene, and 60. with the number of armours and weapons, wherevpon the saide Maior and

and his brethren, each one in his warde, take the number accordingly, whereof they aduertised Sir Thomas Cromwell Lord priuy Seale, who certified the King and then hee commaunded a conuenient number of the most able to be mustered.

Great musters in London.

The eight of May, the Citizens of London mustered at the Miles end, all in bright harneis, with coates of white silke, or cloth, and cheines of golde, in three great Battailes, the number was 15000. beside whifflers, and other awapters, who in goodly order passed through London to Westminster, and so through the Sanctuary, and round about the Parke of S. Iames, and returned home through Holborne

No watch at Midsommer.

Doctor Shaxston Bishop of Salisbury, and Doctor Latimer Bishop of Worcester, resigned their Bishoprickes into the Kings hand the first of July.

Vicar of Wandlworth and other executed.

The eight of July Griffith Clarke vicar of Wandlworth, with his Chaplaine and his seruant, and Frier Waire, were all foure hanged and quartered at S. Thomas Waterings: whose inditement I haue not heard of, and therefore not able to set downe the cause of their execution.

The 10. of July, Sir Adrian Fortescue, and Thomas Dingley, were beheaded, for matter whereof he haue heard.

On Easter-day there were fortie faile discouered, that lay in the Downes, and for that it was neither knowne, what they were, nor what they intended, all the able men in Kent were raised and mustered in armour the same day.

The seuenth of September deceased Doctor Iohn Stokesly, Bishop of London, and was buried in our Ladies Chappell of Paules Church, on the 14. of September.

B. of London elected.

The 20. of October, the Quire of Paules went to their Chapter-house, with the Bishop of Chichester being then Deane of Pauls, who made to them a Collation, and then elected there by the Kings commission, Doctor Edmond Boner, by these words: We elect Edmond Bishop of Herefoid now beyond the seas, Bishop of London, and then desired the Audience to pray for him, the Bishop beganne, and the Quire followed, from the Chapter-house where the election was made, vp to the Quire, &c.

Duke of Vanlere and Palsgraue of Rhine came into England.

In this meane time, to wit, in the moneth of September came to London Duke Fredericke of Vaniere, the Palsgraue of Rhine, the Preathall of Hans, Fredericke Prince Electo of Saxonie, and the Chancellor of William Duke of Cleue, Gulicke, Celoeland, and Berghen. These were conducted to Windsore, where eight dayes together they were continually feasted, and passtimes deuised them in huntings and other pleasures, so much as mought be. The Palsgraue shortly after departed homewards, and was princely rewarded: And at that present was the Marriage concluded betwixt the King and the Lady Anne sister to the Duke of Cleue, and great preparation was made for the receiuing of her.

Abbots executed.

In the Moneth of November, Hugh Faringdon Abbot of Reading, and two Priests, named Rug and Onion, were hanged and quartered at Reading. The same day was Richard Whiting Abbot of Glastenbury hanged and quartered on Tore Hill, besides his Monastery, Iohn Thorne, and Roger Iames Monkes, the one Treasurer, the other Vnder-treasurer of Glastenbury Church, were at the same time executed. Also shortly after Iohn Beche Abbot of Colchester, was executed at Colchester, all for denying the Kings supremacie.

Abbey of S. Albons surrendred.

The 5. of December, the Abbey of S. Albons was surrendred vp by the Abbot and Monks there, by deliuering the conuent Seale into the hands of Thomas Pope, D. Peter, Master Cauendish, and other the Kings Ministers.

Pentioners appointed.

In the moneth of December, were appointed to waite on the K. person 50. Gentlemen, called Pentioners or Speares, like as they were in the first yeere of the King, vnto whom was assigned the summe of 50 pounds the peece yerely, for the maintenance of themselues, and euery man two Horses, or one Horse, and a Gelding of seruice.

The arriuall of the Lady Anne of Cleaue and her marriage with the K. and diuers things of note.

The King vpon deliberation, and aduice of some of his priuie Councell, and certaine other fauourites, and neere attendants to his person, but chiefly by the Instigation of the Lord Cromwell, who at that time was mighty in fauour with the King, a great Counsellour of estate, and of great command both in Church, and Common-wealth: he to contriue and effect this match betwixt the King and the Daughter of the Duke of Cleue, was wonderous forward (inconcluding wherof, he died not one-ly for his owne diligence, but also caused all other that respected his high fauour, and their owne hope of rising, to assist him therein, of which sort and others, some were sent ouer by the King, some by the Lord Cromwell, and some went voluntary to view the Lady Anne of Cleaue, and to negotiate her marriage with the King. All which, either by Letters, speech, or both made very large and liberall Reports, in praise of her singular feature, matchlesse beautie, and princely perfections: and for proofe thereof, presented the King with sundry of her Pictures, which the bringers euer affirmed to haue beene truely made without flatterie, but be it for that time howsoeuer, the King of himselfe, for certaine reasons following, was very desirous to match that way, which being concluded, and all things prepared as was fitting, The Lady Anne of Cleaue in the Moneth of December set forward for England, shee was very honourably receiued at Calets by the L. Admirall, who accompanied her into England.

The King being aduertained of her Arriuall and approch, was wonderfull desirous to see her, of whom hee had heard so great commendations, and thereuppon her came very priuately to Rochester, where he tooke the first view of her, and when he had well beheld her, hee was so

maruelously

marueilloſly aſtonished that he knew not well what to doe, or ſay, he brought with him diuers things, which he meant to preſent her, with his owne hands, that is to ſay, a partlet, a muffler, a cup, and other things, but being ſodainly quite diſcouraged, and amazed with her preſence, his mind changed, and he deliuered them vnto Sir Anthony Browne, to giue them vnto her, but with as ſmall ſhew of kingly kindnes as might be. The King being ſore vexed with the ſight of her, began to vtter his hearts griefe vnto diuers: Amongſt whom hee ſaid vnto the Lord Admirall, how like you this woman, doe you think her ſo perſonable, faire and beautifull as report hath beene made vnto me of her, I pray you tell me true: the Admirall anſwered, I take her not for faire, but to be of a browne complexion. Alas ſaid the K. whom ſhall men truſt, it promiſe you I ſee no ſuch thing in her: as hath him ſhewed me of her, either by pictures, or report, and am aſhamed that men haue praiſed her, as they haue done, & I like her not. Theſe words, and many ſuch other touching his perplexitie & abſolute vnwillingnes to marry with her he expreſſed to many, the names of the chief whereof, being very reuerend and honorable perſonages follow as I found them in the Record.

The K. from this time vnto the day of her diuorſe, was in a manner weary of his life, though his ſetled mildneſſe he tooke of her, and his fierce wrath was kindled againſt all thoſe that were preferrers of this match, whereof the L. Cromwel was the chiefe, for the which and for dealing ſomwhat too far in ſome matters beyond the K. good liking, were the occaſions of the Lord Cromwels haſtie death, whilſt the Lord Cromwel was priſoner in the Tower he wrote a very humble Letter vnto the King, the copie whereof I read in the Record, wherein he expreſt his hearts griefe, to ſee his Maieſty ſo vexed, as well formerly, whereof he oft complained in priuate vnto his eſpeciall friends, as at this preſent, being now conſtrained to make his griefe knowne vnto the whole world concerning his Marriage with the Lady Anne of Cleaue, and therewithall earneſtly beſought the K. for mercy, but it preuailed not.

The Lady Anne of Cleue was met at Blackheath, and with great ſtate brought to Greenewich the third of January and was married vnto the King the firſt day of the ſaid moneth. From which time the K. not onely continued his firſt miſliking of her, but his hatred encreaſed more and more againſt her, not only for her want of beauty and feature, whereof at firſt he took exceptions, but alſo for ſundry ill qualities, whereof he ſecretly accuſed her, as alſo he ſaid that her body was vnpleaſant, making great doubt that ſhee was no Virgin when ſhee came into England, with diuers other defects which hee ſayd hee knewe by her outwarde appearance to bee in her. And being now thus ſo ſore perplexed, and deſperate of redreſſe, hee grew wondrous apt and willing to call in queſtion any thing, that might tend to the diſſoluing of this marriage, namely hee oft and earneſtly bayed a pre-contract betweene her and the Duke of Lorraines Sonne, made in their infancie and was ſince cleared: yet therewith hee would no way be ſatisfied though his daily encreaſe of hatred againſt her. And as I ſhould haue told you before, the King when he had firſt beheld her, euen then vpon hope to haue found ſome eſſentiall matter that might with faire ſemblance of honor haue ouerthrowne the match: he deferred his appointed and prepared day of marriage, which ſhould haue beene vpon the Sunday vnto tueſday, and then with hearts griefe & great vnwillingnes the marriage was ſolemnized.

Within 8. dayes after, the King of his owne motion in plaine termes, told his Phyſitians his further cauſe of griefe, that he was lothſome to him in bed, and that her body was foule and out of order, ſo as he had no manner of diſpoſition towards her, & although he lay in bed with her euery other night, yet he could not be prouoked to haue carnall knowledge of her, no albeit he take Phyſicke the more to enable him, and thereupon ſaid, I ſee and know my ſelfe to be as ſufficient as any man, yet her very preſence depriues me of all manner of motion that way, and that for his part ſhee was as god a Maide as when ſhee came firſt into England. The K. being thus tormented in body and mind, knew not how to eaſe himſelfe, vntill hee had procured a ſpeedy diuorce, in which ſpace and euer hee extreamly hated all thoſe that had any hand in making this match.

And amongſt other things which I found in the Record pertinent to this matter of the La. Anne of Cleaue, you ſhall vnderſtand that the 23. 03 24. of June the L. Elinor Rutland, ſhe Lady Iane Rochford, the Lady Katherine Egecombe, being all together with the Q. at Weſtminſter, they wiſhed that her Grace were with childe, ſhe anſwered ſaying, I know well that I am not with child: the L. Egecombe ſaid how is it poſſible for your Grace to know that, and lie euery night with the K. I know well quoth the Q. that I am not with child, wherupon thoſe Ladies plainly ſaid, now by our Lady we think your Grace is a maid ſtill, at which words the Q. laughed, and ſaid, how can I be yet a maid & ſleepe euery night with a K. there muſt be more then that quoth the Lady Rochford, 03 elſe I had as leeue he lay further, why ſaid the Q. when the K. comes to bed, he kiſſes me, takes me by the hand and bids me God night ſweete heart, and in the morning kiſſes me, and bids me farewell Darling, is not this enough, no Madame quoth ſhe, Lady Rutland, there muſt be more then this, 03 it will be long before we haue a Duke of Yorke, which all this realme much deſireth, nay ſaid the Queene is not this enough, I am contented with this, for I know no more. Theſe & many other ſuch like ſpeeches ſhe vttered vnto them and others diuers times, but with as great ſhew of womanly mildneſſe and patience as was poſſible.

It alſo appeareth plainly in the record, what ſhe cauſe was that moued the K. to marry with Anne of Cleaue, for theſe are the very words of his aſſertions, viz. firſt I depoſe and declare that

that this hereafter written is merely the verities, entended vpon no ſiniſter affection, nor yet vpon none hatred nor diſpleaſure, and herein I take God to witnes, I ſay and affirme, that when the firſt communication was had with me for the marriage of the Lady Anne of Cleaue, I was glad to hearken to it, truſting to haue ſome aſſured friend by it, I much doubting at that time, both the Emperor, France, and the biſh. of Rome, and alſo becauſe, I heard ſo much, both of her excellent beauty, and vertuous conditions. But when I ſaw her at Rochell. which was the firſt time that euer I ſaw her, it reioyced my heart, that I had kept me free from making of any part of bond, before with her, till I ſaw her my ſelfe, for then I aſſure you I liked her ſo ill, and ſo far contrary, to that ſhe was praiſed, that I was woe, that euer ſhe came into England. And deliberated with my ſelfe, that if it were poſſible to find the meanes to breake off, I would neuer enter into poke with her. Of which miſliking, both the great P. and Admirall that now is, and the P. of the houſe, can and will beare me record. Then after my repaire to Greenwich, the next day after, I ſtinke, doubt not but that the L. Cromwel, well examined, can & will, 03 hath declared what I then ſaid to him in that caſe, not doubting, but ſince her is a perſon, which knowes himſelfe condemned to die, by act of parliament, will not damne his ſoule: but truly declare the truth: not onely at that time ſpoken by me: but alſo continually, vntill the day of marriage: and alſo many times after, wherin my lack of conſent (I doubt not) doth 03 ſhall well appeare: and alſo lack enough of the will, and power, to conſummate the ſame, wherein both he and my Phyſitians: the L. pray ſeale that now is, Henage, and Denny can (& I doubt not will) teſtifie according to truth. Which is that I neuer, 03 leaſt leye to the woman conſented to marry, nor yet (if ſhe beynght maiden head with her) twixt any ſo her, by true carnall copulation. This is my bo'e, true and perfect declaration. The cheefe of thoſe, whoſe names are moſt mentioned in the record Luce T. Audley, L. Chancellor T. Archbi. of Cant. T. D. of Norf. Charles D. of Suff. W. C. of South, & Cuthert B. of Durham, all iointly together examined touching this marriage.

S. Mary Ouries made a Pariſh Church.

After Chriſtmaſſe the Priorie Church of S. Maries Ouery in South-warke, was purchaſed of the King by the inhabitants of the Borough. Doct. Gardiner Biſh. of Wincheſt. putting to his helping hand: they made there of a Parith Church, in place of two ſmall parish Churches, the one of Mary Magdalene, in the ſayd Priory Church, the other of S. Margret on the Hil.

Earle of Eſſex, beheaded.

The 12. of March Henry Boucher Earle of Eſſex, riding a young Horſe, was caſt, and brake his necke, at his mannor in Eſſex. Hee was the eldeſt Earle in England.

E. of Oxford deceaſed.

The 19. of March John Vere, Earle of Oxford, high Chamberlaine of England deceaſed at his mannour of Hedingham in Eſſex.

Priests at Calais executed.

The tenth of Aprill, Sir William Peterſon Priest, late Commiſſary of Calais, and Sir W. Richardſon Priest of S. Maries in Calais, were both there drawne, hanged and quartered, in the Market-place, for ſedytious matter.

The 18. of Aprill, Sir Thomas Cromwell K. Cromwel E. Primiſeale was created Earle of Eſſex, and high Chamberlaine of England, and his ſonne Gregory was made L. Cromwell.

Subſidie granted.

In a Parliament which began the 18. of April were granted to the K. a ſubſidie of [illegible] pounds, and 12. d. goods, and foure fifteenes [illegible] lands, and 12. d goods, and foure fifteenes [illegible] wards the K. great charges in building [illegible] blockhouſes. Moreouer the corporations of the Knights of the Rhodes, 02 Knights [illegible] of Ieruſalem in England and Ireland, [illegible] terly diſſolued and made bold, the K. his heires and ſucceſſors, to haue and enioy all the manſion houſe, church, and all other edifices, buildings, and gardens to the ſame belonging, neere to the city of London, called the houſe of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem in England and alſo the hoſpitall church and houſe of Kilmain in Ireland, with all caſtles, honors, mannors, meaſes, lands, tenements, rents, reuerſions, ſeruices, woods, medowes, paſtures, parkes, warrens, &c. in England and Ireland, with all the goods, cattailes, &c. Will. Weſton Knight Prior of the ſaid hoſpitall of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem in England, during his life to haue an annuall rent of 1000. pounds, and ſuch reaſonable portion of the goods, & chattels of the ſaid houſe as the K. ſhall appoint him. Ioh. Rauſon, Knight Prior of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem in Ireland, 500. marks, with a reaſonable portion of goods. Clement Well. 200. l. T. Pemberton. 80. G. Ruſſel. 100. l. G. Aſmar. 100. l. Sutton 200. l. E. Belengam 100 l. E. Browne. 50. l. E. Huſe 100. marks, Ambroſe Caue 100. marks, W. Tirel 30. l. I. Rauſon 200. marks, A. Rogars Oſwald, Maſlingberd, and other 8. each of them 10. l. yearely, with portion of the goods as the K. ſhould limite, ſo that the penſions appointed to them came to 2870. l. yerely out that hoſpitall.

An. reg.

The 24. of Aprill, T. L. Audley, Lord Chancellor of England, & Sir Anthony Browne M. of the K. horſe were made knights of the garter.

Anabaptiſts burnt.

The 29. of April one named Maundeuild, another named Colens, and one other were examined in S. Margarets Church, and were condemned for Anabaptiſts, and were on the third of May burnt in the high-way beyond Southwarke towards Newington.

Iuſting of challengers.

On May day, was a great triumph of Iuſtinry at Weſtminſter, which Iuſts had been proclaimed in France, Flanders, Scotland, and Spaine, for all commers that would, againſt the challengers of England, which were Sir Iohn Dudley, Sir T. Seymour, Sir T. Poinings Sir George Carew Knights: Anthony Kingſton, & Richard Cromwell eſquires, which ſaid challengers came into the liſtes that day richly apparelled, & their horſes trapped all in white veluet, with certaine knights and gentlemen riding afore them, apparelled all with velvet, & white farſenet, and all their ſeruants in white doublets, and hoſen cut after the Burgonian faſhion: and there came to iuſt againſt them the ſaid day of defendants, the Earle of Surrey being the formoſt, L. William Howard, Lord Clinton, and L. Cromwell ſon and heire to T.

Eſſex

Cromwell Carle of Effex, and chamberlaine of England, with other, which were all richly apparelled. And that day Sir Iohn Dudley was ouerthrowne in the field by mischance of his horse, by one Walter Breme defendant, neuertheleſſe he brake diuers ſpeares valiantly after that: and after the ſaid Iuſts were done, the ſaid challengers rode to Durham place, where they kept open hertheld and feaſted the King, and Qu. with her Ladies and all the Court.

The 2. of May Anthony Kingſtone and Richard Cromwell were made Knights of the ſaid place.

Courney ryde.

The 2. of May the ſaid Challengers did Courney on horſeback with ſwords and againſt them came 29. defendants: Sir Iohn Dudley, and the C. of Surrey running firſt, which the firſt courſe loſt both their gauntlets, and that day Sir Rich. Cromwell ouerthrew M. Palmer in the Fielde off his horſe, to the great honour of the challengers.

Barriers.

The 5. of May the ſaid Challengers fought on foot at the Barriers and againſt them came 30 defendants which fought valiantly, but Sir Richard Cromwell ouerthrew that day at the Barriers, M. Culpepper in the field, and the firſt of May the ſaid Challengers brake vp their houſhold.

In the which time of their houſe-keeping, they had not only feaſted the K. Qu. Ladies, and the whole Court as is aforeſaide, but alſo on the Tueſday in the Rogation Wake, they feaſted all the Knights and Burgeſſes of the common-houſe in the Parliament: and on the morrow after they had the Maior of London, the Aldermen, and all their wiues to dinner, and on the Friday they brake it vp as is aforeſaid.

The 7. of May Sir Wil. Weſton Knight L. Prior of S. Iohn of Ieruſalem without Smithfield died, and neuer receiued any part of his penſion, and the K. toke all the lands that belonged to that houſe and to that order, into his hands to the augmentation of his Crowne, and gaue it to euery of the challengers aboue written, for a reward, of their valiantneſſe 100. markes, and a houſe to dwell in of yerely reuenues out of the ſaid lands for euer.

Richard Farmer in the præmunire.

The 29. of May was ſent to the Tower M. Wilſon, and Doctor Sampſon Biſhop of Chicheſter, for refuſing certaine priſoners which had denied to ſubſcribe to the Kings ſupremacy for the ſame offence Richard Farmer Grocer of London, a rich and wealthy Citizen, was committed to the marſhalſea, and after arraigned, and attainted in the præmunire, and loſt all his goods, his wife and children thruſt out of doores. Alſo the Bæker of Newgate was ſent to the Marſhalſea, for giuing liberty to Doctor Powell and Doctor Abell his priſoners, to goe vnder baile.

The 9. of July Thomas Lord Cromwell E. of Eſſex being in the counſell Chamber, was ſodainly apprehended and committed to the Tower of London. The 19. he was attainted of hereſie and high treaſon, as appeareth by the ſame attaindor which I haue ſeene and read, but ſo, beare to ſet downe the ſame being long.

On the 28. of July the ſaid Tho. Cromwell was brought to the Scaffold on the Towerhill where he ſpake theſe words (as was then noted) I am come hither to die, and not to purge my ſelfe, as may happen ſome thinke I will, for if I ſhould ſo do, I were a very wretch and miſer. I am by the law condemned to die, and I thanke my Lord God that hath appointed me this death for mine offences: for ſithence the time that I came to yeers of diſcretion, I haue liued a ſinner and offended my L. God, for the which I aſke him heartily forgiuenes. And it is not vnknowne to many of you, that I haue bin a great traueller in the world, and being but of a baſe degree was called to high eſtate, and ſithence the time I came thereunto, I haue offended my Prince, for the which I aſke him heartily forgiuenes, and beſeech you all to pray to God with me, that he will forgiue me. O father forgiue me. O ſonne forgiue me, O holy Ghoſt forgiue me, O three Perſons in one God forgiue me. And now I pray you that be here to beare me record, I die in the Catholike faith, not doubting in any article of my faith, no nor doubting in any ſacrament of the Church. Many haue ſlandred me and reported that I haue beene a bearer of ſuch as haue maintained euill opinions, which is vntrue: but I confeſſe, that like as God by his holy ſpirit doth inſtruct vs in the truth, ſo the Diuell is ready to ſeduce vs, and I haue been ſeduced: but beare me witneſſe that I die in the Catholike faith of the holy church, and I heartily deſire you to pray for the K. grace, that he may long liue with you in health and proſperity, and after him that his ſonne P. Edward that goodly impe may long reigne ouer you, and once againe I deſire you to pray for me, that ſo long as life remaineth in this fleſh, I waner nothing in my faith. And then made hee his prayer which was long, and after committed his ſoule to the hands of God, and ſo laid him downe, and patiently ſuffered the ſtrokes of the axe, by the hands of him who likewiſe ſoone after did the office. At the ſame time alſo with the ſaid Carle was beheaded the Lord Hungerford of Heitelbury, who at the houre of his death ſeemed ſo vnquiet, that many iudged him rather frenzy then otherwiſe: he ſuffered (as it was ſaid) for Buggery.

Thomas Lord Cromwell beheaded.

Tho. Cromwell (as before is ſhewed) was attainted by Parliament, but neuer came to anſwere. He was borne in Putney a village in Surrey by the Thames ſide, about 4. miles Weſt from London, and was ſonne to a blackeſmith (in his latter dayes a brier) after whoſe deceaſe, his mother was married to a Gherman in London. This Thomas notwithſtanding the baſeneſs of his birth, through a ſingular excellencie of wit, ioyned with induſtrious diligence of mynde, grew to ſuch a ſufficient ripeneſſe of vnderſtanding and ſkill in ordering of waighty affaires, that he was thought apt and fit to any roomth or office whereunto he ſhould be admitted, which being perceiued of the Cardinall Wolſey, he took him into ſeruice, and making him his ſolicitor, imployed him about buſineſſe oftentimes of great importance, wherin he

he acquit himſelfe with ſuch dexteritie, as anſwered alwayes the credite to him committed.

At the fall of the Cardinall he got him to the court, ſaying, he would make or marre, as before you haue heard: where, being once aduanced into the Kings ſeruice, he behaued himſelfe ſo aduiſedly in matters which he tooke in hand, that in ſhort time he roſe to the greateſt authority that might be in this Realme, vnder the maieſty of the King wherein paraduenture forgetting the fall of his late maſter Cardinall Wolſey (a notable ſpectacle) he fell himſelfe, as ye haue heard.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 25. day of June, the King cauſed the Queene to remoue to Richmond, perſwading it ſhould be more for her health and pleaſure, by reaſon of the cleare open ayre there. But on the 6. of July, certaine Lords came downe into the nether houſe of the Parliament, expreſſedly declared cauſes, for the which, the marriage was not to be taken lawfull: and in concluſion, the matter was by the conuocation cleerely determined, that the King might lawfully marry where hee would, and ſo might the: and thus were they clearely diuorced. And by the Parliament it was enacted that ſhe ſhould be taken no more for Quéen, but called the Lady Anne of Cleue.

K. Henry diuorced frō La. Anne of Cleue.

This yeare the L. Leonard Gray brother to Tho. marques Dorſet, being the K. Lieutenant in Ireland, was reuoked home, and vpon his comming to London, was ſent to the Tower.

Lord Leonard Gray ſent to the Tower.

The 30. of July were drawne from the Tower of London to weſt Smith field Robert Barnes doctor of diuinity. T. Gerard perſon of Hunyſlane, and W. Ierom Vicar of Stepenheth, bachelors in Diuinity: alſo Edw. Powell, Thomas Able, and Richard Fetherſtone, all three doctors. The firſt three were drawne to a hake and there burned. The other three were drawne to a gallowes, & there hanged, headed & quartered. The three firſt as appeareth in their attaindors, were executed for diuers hereſies. The laſt three for treaſon, as in their attaindor was menttoned, to wit, for denying the Kings Supremacy, and affirming his marriage with Queene Katharine to bee good: of the which argument Doctor Powell wrote a booke which was printed in quarto, and I haue ſeene it.

Three priſoners drawne hanged & three hanged.

Seuen priſoners executed.

The 4. of Auguſt, Thomas Empſon ſometime a monke of Weſtminſter, which had bin priſoner in Newgate more than three yeeres, was brought before the Iuſtices of goale deliuery at Newgate, and for that he would not aſke the King pardon for denying his ſupremacy, nor beſworne thereto, his monks cole was plucked from his backe, and his body reuiled till the King were informed of his obſtinacie. The ſame 4. of Auguſt were drawen to Tyborne 6. perſons and one led betwixt twaine, to wit, Laurence Cooke priour of Dancaſter, William Horne a lay brother of the Charterhouſe of London, Giles Horne Gentleman, Clement Philip Gentleman of Calcis, and ſeruant to the L. Liſle, Edmond Bröholme Prieſt, chaplaine to the ſaid L. Liſle, Darby Gening, Robert Bird, all hanged and quartered, and had beene attainted by parliament, for deniall of the kings ſupremacy.

The 8. of Auguſt, Lady Katherine Howard daughter to Edmond lord Howard, neere to the Duke of Norffolke, was thewed openly as Quéene at Hampton-court.

King Henry married.

Dry ſommer

The latter end of this Sommer, was vniuerſally throughout this Realme great death by a ſtrange kinde of Ague and flure, with ſome peſtilence: in which ſeaſon was ſuch a drought, that wels and ſmall riuers were dried vp, ſo that much cattell noted for lacke of water.

The twenty two of December, Ralph Egerton ſeruant to the Lord Audley Lord chancellor, and Thomas Harman, ſeruant to maſter Flightwood, were executed the one for counterfeiting the kings ſeale in lead, wherewith they had ſealed diuers Pattents counterfeiting and antidated, making ſtrangers denizons, vnder the names of diuers clearks of the chancery: the other for writing them. One Tuckfield being of their faction, robbed the L. Audleys chappell of the chalice, pixe, baſons and candleſticks of ſiluer, and fled, who being afterward apprehended at Caleis, which towne he would haue betrayed, he ſlew himſelfe with a dag.

1541. An. reg. 33.

In Aprill, certaine perſons began a newe rebellion in Yorkeſhire which were ſhortly after taken, and put to execution in diuers places: of which, Leigh a gentleman, Tatarſall a clothier, and Thornton a peoman, were put to death at London: Sir Iohn Neuill knight, and ten perſons or more were put to death at Pomfret.

A new commotion in Yorkeſhire.

The 27. of May, Margaret counteſſe of Salisbury, ſometime daughter and heire to George Duke of Clarence, wife to ſir Richard Poole knight, and mother to Cardinall Poole, was beheaded in the Tower of London, being neuer arraigned nor tried before, but condemned by act of Parliament.

Counteſſe of Salsbury beheaded.

The ninth of June, Damport and Chapman two of the kings gard, were hanged at Greenewich for robbery.

Damport & Chapman hanged.

The tenth of June, Sir, Edmond Kneuet knight of Norffolke, was arraigned before the Kings Iuſtices (ſitting in the great Hall at Greenewich maſter Gage comptroller of the kings houſhold, maſter Suthwell, ſir Anthony Browne, ſir Anthony Winkfield, maſter Wriſley, and Edmond Pecham cofferer of the Kings houſholde, for ſtriking of one Maſter Clere of Norffolke, ſeruant with the Carle of Surrey, within the kinas houſe in the Tenice Court. There was firſt choſen to goe vpon the ſaid Edmond a queſt of gentlemen, and a queſt of yeomen, to enquire of the ſaid ſtripe, by the which inqueſts he was found guilty, and had Iudgement, to loſe his right hand, wherupon was called to do the execution, firſt the Sergeant chirurgion with his inſtrument appertaining to his office: the ſergeant of the Woodyard with the mallet and a Blocke, whereupon the hand ſhould lie: the maſter cooke for the King with the knife: the Sergeant of the larder to ſet the knife right on the ioynt: the Sergeant farrier with his ſearing irons to ſeare the ſeines: the Sergeant of the poultry with a Cocke,

Sir Edmond Kneuet arraigned for ſtriking in the Court.

which Cocke should haue his head smitten off vpon the same blocke, and with the same knife: the yeoman of the chaudry with feare thereof, the yeomen of the scullery with a pan of fire to heate the yrons: a chafer of water to coole the ends of the yrons: and two fourmes for all officers to set them vpon: the Sergeant of the seller with wine, ale, and beere: the yeomen of the ewry in the Sergeants stead, who was absent, with basen, ewre, and towels. Thus euery man in his office ready to doe the execution, there was called forth Sir William Pickering knight marshall to bring in the said Edmond Kneuet, and when hee was brought to the barre, the cheife Justice declared to him his trespasse, and the said Kneuet confessing himselfe to be guilty, humbly submitted him to the Kings mercy: for this offence he was not onely iudged to lose his hand, but also his body to remaine in prison, & his lands and goods at the Kings pleasure. Then the said Sir Edmond Kneuet desired that the King of his benigne grace, would pardon him of his right hand, and take the left: for (quoth he) if my right hand be spared, I may hereafter doe such good seruice to his grace, as shall please him to appoint. Of this submission and request the Justices forthwith informed the king, who of his gentlenes, considering the gentle heart of the said Edmond, and the good report of Lords and Ladies, granted him pardon, that he should lose neither hand, land, nor goods, but should go free at liberty.

The Lord Leonard Gray being indited of certaine points of treason by him committed, as was alleaged against him, during the season that he was the Kings Lieutenant in Ireland, to wit, for betraying his nephew Girlde Fitz Gerarde, Brother to Thomas Fitz Gerarde, before executed, and also for that he caused certaine Irishmen to inuade the lands of the kings friends, whom he fauoured not: The 25. of June hee was arraigned at Westminster in the Kings Bench, and appointed to be tried by knights, because he was a Lord by name, and not a Lord of the Parliament, but he discharged the Iury, and confessed the inditement, whereupon he had iudgement, and on the 28. of June being S. Peters euen, he was beheaded at Tower-hill, where he ended his life very quietly and godly.

The L. Leonard Gray beheaded.

This noble man, as hee was come of high linage, so was he a right valiant and hardy personage, hauing in his time done his Prince and countrey good seruice, both in Ireland, France, and other places, greatly to his commendation, although now his hap was thus to lose his head.

The same day that he suffered, there were executed at Saint Thomas Waterins three Gentlemen, John Mantel, John Frouds, and George Roidon. They died for a murther committed in Sussex (as their inditement imported) in company of Thom. Fines Lord Dacres of the South. The truth whereof was this. The said Lord Dacres through the lewd perswasion of some of them, as hath beene reported, meaning to hunt in the park of Nicholas Pelham esquier at Laughton in the same Countie of Sussex, being accompanied with the saide Mantell, Frouds and Roidon, John Cheiney, and Tho. Iley gentlemen, and Richard Middelton & John Goldwel yeomen, passed from his house of Hurstmonseux, the last of Aprill in the night season, toward the same parke where they intended so to hunt, and comming into a place called Pikehay in the parish of Hillingley, they found one Iohn Busbrig, James Busbrig, and Richard Somener, standing there together: & as it fell out through quarrelling, there ensued a fray betwixt the said Lord Dacres, and his company on the one part, and the said Iohn and James Busbrig, and Richard Somener on the other, insomuch that the said Iohn Busbrig received such hurt, that he died thereof the second of May next ensuing; whereupon as well the said Lord Dacres, as those that were with him, and diuers other likewise that were appointed to goe another way to meete them at the said parke, were endited of murther, and the fourth and twentieth of June the Lord Dacres himselfe was arraigned before the L. Audley of Walden, then lord Chancelor, sitting that day as high Steward of England, with other peeres of the Realm about him, who then and there condemned the said L. Dacres to die for the transgression: and afterwards the nine and twentieth of June being Saint Peters day, at eleuen of the clocke in the fore-noone, the Sheriffes of London accordingly as they were appointed, were ready at the tower to haue received the said prisoner, and him to haue led to execution on the tower-hill. But as the prisoner thereto come forth of the tower, one Heire a gentleman of the L. Chancellors house, came, & in the Kings name commanded them to stay the Execution till two of the clock in the afternoone, which caused many to thinke that the King would haue granted his pardon. But nevertheless at 3. of the clocke in same afternoone he was brought forth of the Tower, and deliuered to the Sheriffes, who led him on foote betwixt them vnto Tiburne, where he died. His body was buried in the church of S. Sepulchers: he was not past foure and twenty yeres of age when he came thus through great mishap to his end: for whom many sore lamented, and likewise for the other three gentlemen, Mantell, Frouds, and Royston, but chiefely for the said young Lord, being a right towardly gentleman.

L. Dacres of the South arraigned.

The 1. of July, a Welchman a minstrel, was hanged & quartered for singing of songs, which were interpreted to be prophesying against the K. Sir David Genson knight of the Rhodes was drawne through Southwarke to S. Thomas of Watrings, and there executed for the supremacie.

In the month of August, the King take his progresse toward Pozke, and passed through Lincolneshire, where was made vnto him submission, &c. About this time Mr. F. was made vicar and Dr. Row were made Prebendaries.

Progresse to York.

On Christmas euen at seuen of the clocke at night, beganne a great fire in the house sometime

Fire at Elsing-spittle.

sometime named Elsing-spittle, then the house of Sir John Williams M. of the Kings Iewels where many of those iewels were brent, and more imbeseled, as was thought.

1534.

The Lady Katherine Howard whom the King had married, for her vnchaste liuing committed with Thomas Culpepper and Francis Derham, was by Parliament attainted; Culpepper and Derham, were put to death at Tyborne the tenth day of December. Culpepper was headed, his body buried at Saint Sepulchers Church by Newgate; Derham was quartered, &c.

King Henry the 8. of Ireland.

The 23. of January the King was proclaimed King of Ireland.

Lady Katherine beheaded.

The 12. of February, the Lady Howard, otherwise called D. Katherine, and the L. Iane Rochford for being of her counsell with Tho. Culpepper, were both beheaded within the Tower of London.

In the beginning of the moneth of March died Arthur Plantaginet Viscount Lisle, Ballard sonne to Edward the fourth, in the tower of London vnattainted, when hee should haue bin deliuered vnslet at libertie (as it was said) the occasion of his trouble in the tower, rose vpon suspition that he should be practice which some of his men (as Philpot and Brindholme executed the last yere) had consented vnto, for the betraying of Calais to the French, whilst he was the K. Lieutenant there. But after that by due tryall it was knowne that he was nothing guilty to the matter the King appointed Sir Thomas Wriothesley his Secretary to go vnto him, and to deliuer vnto him a ring with a rich diamond for a token from him, and to will him to be of good chere, sith it was manifestly proued that hee was voide of all offence, for he (the said) had that he would make account of him, as of his most true and faithfull Seruant, and not onely to restore him, to his former libertie, but otherwise be ready to pleasure him in what he could. Master Secretary set forth his message with such effectuall words, as he was an eloquent man, that Lord Lisle take such an immoderate ioy thereof, that his heart being oppressed therewith, hee died the night following through too much reioycing (as was said.) After whose decease, to wit, 12. of March, Sir Iohn Dudley was at Westminster created Vicount Lisle, by the right of his mother Lady Elizabeth sister and heire to Sir John Gray Vicount Lisle, who was late wife to Arthur Plantagenet Viscount Lisle late deceased, as ye haue heard.

L. Lisle dead in the tower.

A maid boyled in Smithfield.

The 17. of March, Margret Dauy a Maid, was boiled in Smithfield, for poisoning of three housholds that shee had had dwelled in.

The 28. of March, the Parliament sitting, George Feres Burgesse for the towne of Plimmouth, was arrested in London vpon a condemnation, whereupon the Sergeant at armes of the common house was sent to the Counter in Bredstreet to fetch him, but the Clearks would not deliuer him, till the Sheriffs came themselues, who in the end deliuered him: howbeit, this matter was so taken in the Common house, that the Sheriffes, the Clearks, and fiue officers, with the party plaintiffe, were sent to the Tower, and there lay two dayes, and were then deliuered by the speaker & common house: the Sheriffes were deliuered from all charges, except twenty pound for their fees.

The Sheriffs of London sent to the tower.

In May the King take a loane of money, of all such as were valued worth fifty pound or vpward in the booke of subsidie. Anno reg. 34.

The E. of Desmond.

In the moneth of August, Iames E. of Desmond in Ireland, came and submitted himselfe to the King, and so returned.

The great Oneale.

The first of October, the great Oneale of Ireland, was created Earle of Tiron, and his base son Mathew Oneale, baron of Donganow for Shane Oneale the onelyon of his body lawfully begotten, was then little esteemed.

D. of Norfolke entered Scotland.

The Duke of Norfolke entred Scotland the 21. of October, burning and wasting all the marches, and there taried without any battell profered by the King of Scots, vntill the midst of November.

Scots ouerthrowne.

After the departure of our army from Scotland, the King of Scots made a roade into England, and did much harme, but at the last Sir Tho. Wharton, and Sir Willi. Mulgraue with a few of the borderers, met the Scottes, where they being in number 15000. were ouerthrowne: in which conflict was taken the E. of Cassels and Glencarne, the L. Maxwell admirall of Scotland and Warden of the West marches, the L. Flemming, the L. Somerwell, the Lo. Oliphant, the Lord Gray, the Lord Oliuar Sinclere, &c. more then two hundred of the better sort, and more then 8. hundred of meaner persons. Then take also foure and twenty pieces of ordinance, foure carts laden with speares, and ten pauilions. The King of Scots take such griefe and inward thought for this ouerthrow, and also for the murther of an English herault that was slain at Dunbar by one Leech an English man (the which for the rebellion in Lincolnshire was fled into Scotland) that he fell into a feuer, and died. Of the prisoners before named, 21. of them were brought by to London, and on the 19. of December entred the Citie at Bishops gate, and so were conueyed to the tower, where they remained the space of 2. dayes, and vpon S. Thomas day the Apostle, they were conueyed to Westminster, Sir Iohn Gage constable of the tower riding before them and the lieutenant of the tower riding behinde them, they rode two and two together, and 8. of them being Earles and Lordes had new gownes of blacke damaske furred with blacke conies, coates of blacke velues, and doublets, of sattine, &c. all new of the Kings charge. Comming thus before the Kings Councell in the Star-chamber, the L. Chancelor declared to them their vntruth and vnkindnesse, for the which the King had cause of warre against them, as well as for the denial of their homages, and also for their trayterous invasions made into his Realme without defiance, and also for keeping his subiects prisoners without redemption, contrary to the lawes of the marches, for the which doings, as God they might well per-

reuie had scourged them. Holbeck the King more regarding his honor, than his Princely power, was content to shew them kindnes for unkindnes, right for wrong. And although he might keepe them straight in prison, yet he was content that they should have libertie to bee with the Nobles of the Realme in their houses, and so according to their estates, they were appointed to Dukes, Earles, Bishoppes, knights and gentlemen.

The 22. of December came tidings of the King of Scots death. And upon Saint Johns day in Christmas weeke, the foresaid Lords of Scotland were brought to the Court then at Greenewich, where they had great chere, and were lodged within the Court. And heere it is to be considered, that when the King of Scots had left no issue but only one daughter: the Realme being counsell perceiuing a meane now offered, whereby without warre the two Realmes might be united: the Scottish Lords having first made the motion themselues, for a marriage tobe had betwixt Prince Edward and their young Queene, the King required them to helpe to the furtherance of that matter, which might be such benefite to themselues and their countrey. This they promised faithfully to doe, and as well by themselues, as their friends, to bring the same to effect, so much as the King could require, whereupon the King was not onely contented to release them home, but also highly rewarded them with rich gifts.

Motion of a march between prince Edward and the cuene of Scots.

1543. The 30. of December, they departed from the Court, and the morrow after eight of them dined with Sir Io. Coats then L. Maior of London, and the rest with the Sheriffs, and had very great chere. On New yeres day they departed from London home-wards towards Scotland, and by the way dined at Suffield there to behold the Prince, whom they highly commended, for the great liking they had of his person, from thence they kept on their iourney till they came to the North parts, where they found the Duke of Suffolke the Kings lieutenant there, and with him they remained till such pledges were come forth of Scotland, as it was couenanted they should leaue behind them. The Duke after he had received the hostages, permitted them to depart, and so they returned into Scotland, where they were ioyfully welcomed home, to their friends. With them went the Earle of Angus, who had beene banished Scotland, and hauing remained heere in England a long time, received of the Kings for a thousand marks by yere: and likewise his brother Sir George Douglas, who had 500. marke by yere, likewise of the Kings gift. They were now both restored home into their Countrey, and that was (as was said) by the last Kings will. The said Earle of Angus and diuers of the Lords that had beene prisoners here in England, were made of the priuie counsell of the Realme, by the C. of Arraine, that was chosen governor to the young Queene of the Realme, as next heire apparant. Notwithstanding that, the Arch-bishop of S. Andrews cardinall, enemy to the K. of England, had a will (forgedde some haue said) perpetually how the K. had made him governour, as well of the Queene, as Realme, wherevpon the said K. according to his right, as he pretended, with the helpe of his friends tooke vpon him the authoritie of governour, and put the said Cardinall in prison, and deliuered Sir Robert Bowes, and the other English prisoners, by their bandes, according to the custome of marches.

The ninth of February, a Proclamation was made, whereby the people were licensed to eate white meates in Lent, but streightly forbidden the eating of flesh. Wherupon shortly after the C. of Surrey with diuers Lords, Knights and Gentlemen, were imprisoned for eating of flesh in the same Lent, contrary to the said proclamation. White meats licenced to be eaten in lent

The 8. of May one Leech sometime Deputy of Lowth, who had killed Somerset one of our heraults of armes at Dunbar in Scotland, was drawne to Tyborne and there hanged and quartered. And the 12. of June, Edward Lech his brother and with him a priest for the same fact, were likewise executed at Tyborne. An. reg. 35. Somerset an heraults bitten.

King Henry minding wars with Fraunce, made great preparation and prouision aswell of munitions and artillery, as also of braue ordinances, amongst which, at that time, by one Peter Bawd a French-man borne, a gunfounder, or maker of great ordinance, and one other Alien, called Peter van Collen, a gunsmith, both the Kings seruants, by conferring together, deuised & caused to be made, certaine mortar pieces, being at the mouth, from 11. inches vnto 19. inches wide, for the vse whereof the said Peter, and Peter caused to be made certaine hollow shot of cast yron, to be stuffed with fire-worke, or wild fire, whereof the bigger sort for the same, had screwes of yron to receiue a match to carry fire kindled, that the fire-worke might be set on fire, for to breake in small pieces the same hollow shot, whereof the smallest piece hitting any man would kill or spoile him. And after the Kings returne from Bullen, the said Peter Baud by himselfe, in the first of Edward the first, did also make certaine ordinance of cast yron, of diuers sorts, & forms, as Fawconet, Fawcons, Pinions, Saikers, and other pieces: vnto this Bawd, Iohn Iohnson his seruant seruant, forniuting his M. did likewise make and cast yron ordinance, cleaner and to better perfection, to the great vse of this land: his sonne Tho. Iohnson is yet liuing, a speciall workman, in the yere 1595. he made 42. cast pieces of great ordinance of yron for the Earle of Cumberland, Demy Canons weying 6000. or 3. tunne the piece. Mortar peeces cast for shooting of wild fire R. Crokley. Peeces cast in the first of Edward the 6.

The 3. of June, the Obrine a Lord in Ireland, and diuers of the wilde Irish, submitted them to King Henry.

In July the said Obrine was created Earle of Clawlicarde.

The 12. July, King Henry married Lady Katherine Par, late wife to the Lord Latimer and Sister to the Marquesse of Northampton at Hampton court, and then was the proclaimed Queene. King Henry married Lad. by Katherine Par.

Great Subsidie.

This yere in a Parliament holden at Westminster a subsidie was granted to the King to be paid in three yeres, every English man being worth in goods 20. s. and vpward to fiue l. paid 4. d. of euery pound, from 5. l. to 10. l. 8. d. from 10. l. to 20. l. 16. d. from 20. l. and vpward as of euery pound 2. s. Strangers, aswell denisons as other, being inhabitants, doubled this sum: & euery Stranger not being an inhabitant that was 16. yeres of age and vpwards paid foure d. of euery pole. And for lands, fees, and annuities euery one borne within the Kings Dominions, paid 8. d. of the l. from 10. s. to 5. l. and from 5. l. to 10. l. 16. d. from 10. l. to 20. l. 2. s. and from 20. l. vpwards 3. s. Strangers full doubled the sum. The Clergie granted a subsidie of 6. s. the pound, to be paid of their benefices, and perpetuities in three yeres, and euery priest hauing but an annuall stipend, 6. s. 8. d. &c. as in the Statute. 03

Going to Landersey.

About the same time the King of England, and the Emperor, sent Garter, and Toyson-dor K. at armes, to demand the performance of certaine articles of the French King, which if he denyed, they were commanded then to defie him, but he would not suffer them to come within his land, and so they returned. Wherefore the King of England caused the demands to be declared vnto the French Ambassador at Westminster. And in the moneth of July the King sent ouer fiue thousand men, vnder the leading of Sir Iohn Wallop, accompanyed with Sir Thomas Seimer marshall, Sir Robert Bowes Treasurer, Sir Richard Cromwell Captaine of the Horsemen, and Sir George Carew his Lieutenant. There was likewise Sir Tho. Palmer, Sir Iohn Rainsforth, Sir Iohn Seint-Iohn, and Sir Iohn Gascoigne, knights, that were Captaines of the footmen: they were appointed to ioyne with the Emperors power, and so to make war into France: they departed from Caleis the 22. of Iulie. The 3. of August open warre was proclaimed betwixt the Emperor and the K. of England on the one partie, and the French King on the other partie, as enemy mortall to them both, and to all other Christian Kings as he that had conspired himselfe with the Turke. Open warre proclaimed.

The armie that was sent ouer vnder the leading of Sir Iohn Wallope, passed forth from the marches of Caleis, and keping alongst betwixt the borders of the French & Burgonians pales, and confines, and ioyning with the Emperors forces, Spaniards, Wallons, & Dutch, came at length before Landersey, a towne lately fortified by the French, within the borders of the Emperors dominions, to the which they laid long siege. At length the Emperour hauing dispatched his warres against the Duke of Cleue, who had submitted himselfe vnto him, came now to the siege of Landersey, with a mighty power of sundry nations, so that the Towne was sore constrained, and in danger to haue beene lost, if at that present the French King had not likewise with him an huge army of French men, Switchars, Lantquits, Italians, and other, came to the rescue, pitching downe his campe, making countenance as if he meant presently to haue giuen battaile: and verily it was thought that two such powers as were there at that time so neere together, should neuer haue departed without battaile. The Emperor thinking surely to fight, raysed his siege, and drewe his people into the field. The French men therebye eyping their aduantage, put as well fresh men as bitrails, and all kinde of munition necessary into the Towne, and in the meane while kept the Emperors men occupied with hotte skirmishes: but now after the Towne was thus relieued, which thing the French King onely wished to accomplish, the next day when the Emperour was ready with his army enranged in battailes, to haue fought with his aduersaries, the French King put his army also in order, but hauing no minde to come forward, he trifled forth the day, and in the night following secretly departed with as much hast as possible. When the next morning had discouered the French mens flight, it was no need to bid diuers troupes of the Emperors army to hie after them: but some made too much hast, for the French king suspecting what would ensue, appointed his eldest son Henry the Dolphin, to remaine behind with the rereward, accompanied with diuers Noble Captaines, which ordered their people in their retire with such warinesse, that such of the Emperors campe as aduentured ouer rashly, fell within danger of such ambushes as were by the way laid in places of aduantage: and so diuers were taken, as Sir George Carew, Sir Tho. Palmer Knight, porter of Caleis, Edward Belingham and others. Neuerthelesse a great number of the French men were snapped by, slaine, and taken in no small numbers by their enemies that followed them. This was after Hallowmas tide, so that now by reason the winter was farre entered, the Emperour bade by his campe, and licenced the most part of the people to depart home.

In the meane space, to wit on the 28. of July, Anthony Parson, Robert Testwood, and Henry Filmer, were brent at Winsore. And a great death of pestilence was at London, and therefore Michaelmas terme was adiourned to S. Albans. Terme kept at S. Albons.

About Hallowmas tide, a road was made into Scotland, by the garison there, sir Ralph Euers with the men of Tindall and Ridsdale brent in the middle marches of Scotland, Thesold with 15. other Townes, killed 18. Scots, and take 300. prisoners, 1500. cattell, 4000. sheepe: Brian Lechener brent 18. Townes, killed 12. Scots, tooke 200. prisoners, 600. cattell, 2000. sheepe, and 300. geldings. The west bordereres with the helpe of the Scots of Liddesdale, brent 21. Townes, killed eight Scots, tooke 160. prisoners, 500. Cattell, 1000. sheepe, and 100. geldings, sum of the Townes brent 55. Scots killed 38. prisoners taken 560. Cattell taken 3500. geldings, 800. sheepe 7000. and much horsehold stuffe. Road made into Scotland.

The 18 of December, the Archbishoppe of

Canterburies Pallace at Canterburie was brent, and therein was brent his Brother in law, and other men.

Lord Parre made E. of Essex.

The 24. of December, William Lord Parre brother to the Queene, who had marryed the daughter and heire of Henry Boucher Earle of Essex, at Hampton Court was created E. of Essex, and Sir William Parre knight, vnkle to them both, was made Lord Parre of Horton, and Chamberlaine to the Queen. And on Newyeres day Sir Thomas Wriothesly, the Kings Secretarie, was made Lord Wriothesley of Tichfield.

1544. Foure Eclipses.

This yere chanced 4. Eclipses, one of the Sun the 14. of January, and three of the Mone at sundry times.

In the beginning of Lent, Lord Edward Seymor Earle of Hertford, was made Lieutenant of the North, and sent thither with an Armie.

Germaine Gardiner and other executed.

The 7. of March, Garmaine Gardiner, and Larke parson of Chelsey were executed at Tyborne for denying the Kings supremacie, with them was executed for other offences, one Singleton, and shortly after, Ashbey was likewise executed for the supremacie.

The 12. of March, Sir John Dudley Lord Lisle, Lord Admirall, with a great Nauie, departed toward Scotland.

An. reg. 36.

The 4. of Aprill a Gun powder house, called the black Swan in East-Smithfield, was blowne vp, and therein burned fiue men, a boy, and a woman.

Powder house blowen vp with gunpowder.

The same fore-noon

Lord Admirall commeth into Scotland.

Of May diuen, died Lord Thomas Audley Lord Chancellor of England. After whom succeeded Lord Thomas Wriothesley.

The third of May, Sir John Dudley vicount Lisle, high Admirall of England, arrived with his fleete of 200. saile in the Frith of Scotland, where he lanced diuers of his men, and tooke there diuers vessels. The 4. of May he landed the residue of his men at Lieth, and from thence marched forward in 3. great battailes, whereof the said Lord Admirall led the Vaward, the Earle of Shrewsbury the Rereward, and Edward Seymor Earle of Hertford Lieutenant Generall of the Battailes. Here they found the Scots to the number of fiue thousand horsemen, besides many footemen ready to stoppe their passage, who at the first, made as they would haue set on the Vaward, but after certaine shot on both sides, they sodainely, leauing their Artillerie behinde them, fled toward Edenborow, the foremost in flieing was the Cardinall of Saint Andrewes, the Earle of Huntley gouernor, Murrey and Bothwell, and then the Englishmen entered the towne of Lieth, where they found such riches, as they thought had not bene in any Towne of Scotland. The next day our army went towards Edenborough, and when they approched neere, the Prouost of the Towne with other prefered to haue deliuered the same, vpon condition, that the people might depart with bagge and baggage, and the Towne to be safe from fire. Wherunto our Lieutenant answered, that he was sent thither to take vengeance vpon them for their detestable falshod, and that vnlesse they would yeeld vp the Towne simply without condition, and cause man, woman, and childe to depart into the fields, submitting them to his pleasure, he would put them to the sword, and their Towne to the fire. The Prouost answered, that it were better for them to stand to their defence, and so departed, and forthwith the Lord Lieutenant caused the Vaward to march towards the Towne, which they did so courageously with helpe of the English Gunners, that they kept the Scots from their ordinance, and so entred Cante-gate, and there slew a great number of the Scots, and set fire on the Towne, which continued three dayes after burning. Shortly after came the Lord Lieutenant by lande, William Lord Euars Warden of the East march of England, and gouernour of Barwike, with his son Sir Ralph Euars, and ioyned themselues with the army thus lying in Lieth, where after their comming they did such exploytes, in riding and walking the countrey, that within seuen miles euery way of Edenborough, they left few places, either pile, village, or house vnburnt. And beside this, they brought great numbers of cattaile dayly into the armie, and not without much good sturre which the inhabitants of Edenborough had for safety of the same conueyed out of the Towne.

Lieth taken and fortified.

Edenborough.

Lord Euars.

The names of Knights made at Lieth, by the Earle of Hertford generall, on the eleuenth of May: The Lord Clinton, the Lo. Coniers, Sir William Wroughton, Sir Th. Holcroft, Sir Edward Dorell, Sir John Luterell, Sir I. Ienins, Sir Tho. Waterton, Sir Charles Howard, Sir George Blunt, Sir Peter Mewtas, Sir Edward Warner, Sir Ralph Bulmer, Sir Hugh Cholmeley, Sir Thomas Lee, *alias* Doct. Lee, Sir Richard Leigh, Sir Peter Leigh, Sir Iohn Leigh of Bath, Sir Laurence Smith, Sir William Vauesour, Sir Rich. Shirborne, Sir Ro. Stapleton, Sir T. Holt, Sir Wil. Deuenporte, Sir Ralph Leicester, Sir Humfrey Bradborne, Sir Tho. Maliuerie, Sir Francis Hothorn, Sir I. Massy, Sir Leonard Beckwith, Sir Tho. Cokayn, Sir Peter Fresthuill, Sir Ric. Egerton, Sir Anthony Neuill, Sir Iohn Neuill, Sir W. Radcliffe, Sir Geo. Bowes, Sir Brian Brereton, Sir Wil. Brereton, Sir Roger Brereton, Sir E. Waren, Sir Brian Leyton, Sir Robert Worfeley, Sir Thomas Talbot, Sir Hugh Calueley, Sir Thomas Clere, Sir Ric. Holland, Sir Tho. Venobles, Sir Iohn Constable, Sir Edmond Trafford, Sir Iohn Atharton, Sir Richard Cholmeley, Sir Philip Egerton, Sir Hugh Willoughby, Sir Robert Constable, Sir William Woodhouse, Sir Edmond Sauage, Sir Thomas Gerard.

E. of Hertford made Knights at Lieth.

The 13. of May the Englishmen brake down the pire of the hauen at Lieth, and brent euery sticke of it. This done, & hauing shipped their great artillery, and picked forth all such, Scottish shippes, as were meete to serue, they tooke vpon them to returne home by land. Among other shippes, they tooke out of Lieth Hauen, there were two of notable faireneslle, the one called the Salamander, the other the Vnicorne; the rest of the Scottish Ships being taken away together with their owne Ships, were for the most part pestered with the spoyle and bodies of the souldiers and mariners.

Lieth burned.

The fifteenth of May the armie and fleete departed from Lieth, both in one houre, the Towne being set on fire, and burned to the ground. The English Army encamped that night at a place called Soten, seauen myles from Lieth, where they brent the Castle, and spoyled the grounds about it. The same day was Haddington brent, with an house of nuns, and an house of Fryers. The next night they encamped beside Dunbar, and in the morning brent the Towne, and marched forward, and on the 18. day of May they entered into Berwick, so ending their voyage.

Haddington brent.

Dunbar brent.

About the same time the Earle of Lenox fled out of Scotland into the Realme of England, where hee was right gladly received by King Henry, and shortly after hee obtained in marriage the La. Margaret Douglas, Neece to King Henry, and returned with a competent crew of English-men, but finding no such friendship amongst his countrey-men as he looked for, he returned without atchieuing the Enterprise which he had taken in hand.

Base money coyned.

In this meane space, to wit, on the sixteenth of May, Proclamation was made for the enhansing of gold to 48. s. and siluer to foure shillings the ounce. Also the King caused to be coined base monies in great abundance, which was since that time, to wit, in the fift yere of King Edward the Sixt, called downe from 12. pence to nine pence, from nine pence to fiue pence: and in the second yere of Q. Elizabeth, called into her Maiesties mints, and there refined.

Procession in English.

In the moneth of June, the Letanie or Procession was set forth in English, with commandement by the King to be generally vsed in euery parish Church.

In armie into France.

The King tooke order for the leuying of a mighty armie to passe ouer into France, according to the appointment made with his confederate friend the Emperour, against the French King. There were therefore appointed three Battailes: The Vaward vnder the leading of the Duke of Norffolke: The Battaile vnder the Duke of Suffolke, which also was counted the Kings Battaile, because hee minded to be present with the same in person, and the Rereward was led by the Lord Russell, Lord priuie Seale. Those of the Fore-ward vnder the Duke of Norffolke, were apparrelled in blew coates garded with red, and had caps and hosen after the same sute, party blew, and partie red. The Battaile vnder the D. of Suffolke in Coates, Cappes, and hosen in like manner, but the colours blew and yellow. The Duke of Norffolke, and the Lord priuie Seale, accompanied with diuers other noble men, as the Earle of Surrey Marshall of the Field, the Earle of Oxford, the Lord Grey of Wilton Lieutenant of Hams, the Lo. Ferrers of Chartley, and Sir Richard Deuereux his son and heyre, they brought with them a great number of Welshmen, Sir Thomas Cheiney Lord Warden of the Portes, the Lord Mountioy, Sir Francis Brian knight, Sir Tho. Poynings, Captaine of Guisnes, and diuers other, passed ouer to Caleis about Whitsontide, and from thence forward to France, left Bologne on their right hand, and keeping forwards towards Muterell, ioyned with an army which the Emperour had raised for that purpose, vnder the leading of the Countie of Buren, admirall of the low Countreyes, and so those Armies being ioyned in one, came before Muterell, and there laid siege to the Towne, being well manned, and furnished with all things necessarie for defence, as well in munition as in victuall, the chiefe Captaine of which towne was Monsieur de Bitz, one of the Marshals of France.

The Duke of Suffolke with the Kings armie passed ouer, accompanied with the Earle of Arundell, marshall of the Field, the Lord Saint John, and the Bishop of Winchester, Sir John Gage, Comptroller of the Kings house, Sir Anthony Browne, Master of the Kings horse, with diuers other Captaines, the which on the nineteenth of July came before Bologne, and encamped on the East side of the same towne, aloft vpon the hill, and after removed into a valley where after many sharpe skirmishes, they first entered the base towne, being left and forsaken by the inhabitants, which hauing set fire on their filthy nestes, and other such baggage, vnder couert of the smoake, gotte them vp into the high Towne, before the English-men could espie them.

Duke of Suffolke with a power ouer sea before Bologne.

After this the Olde man, a Tower standing without the towne for a direction to them that were to enter the Hauen, and now being kept by fifteene souldiers, was peeled vppe by them.

The Frenchmen within the Towne, being dispeopled of these two places, yet spared not to shoote off their walls and bulwarkes, doing what they could, and namely from the Castle, and greene bulwarke, they did much hurt to the Englishmen with their shot.

The 14. of July King Henry in person, accompanied with diuers Noble men, passed the seas from Douer to Caleis, and on the 26. of July encamped before Bologne on the northside, within lesse then three quarters of a mile of the Towne, where he remained till the town was surrendred into his hands: the Kings liuery was red garded with yelow. Beside the trenches which were cast and brought in manner round about the towne, there was a mount raysed vpon the East side, and diuers pieces of artillery planted aloft the same, the which together with the mortes-pieces, sore annoyed them within, battered downe the steple of our La. Church. To conclude, the battery was made in most forceable wise in three seuerall places, and the walls, towers, and Castle were vndermined, and the Towne within so beaten with shot out of the campe, and from the mount

K. Henry went to Bolloigne.

and

and treach, by the moster pieces, that there were here few houses left whole therein. The Frenchmen thus daring in great distresse, there were 200. Frenchmen and Italians, which entered vnder the conduct of Iohannino to enter the towne in couert of the night, which entrie they so warily atchieued, that by meanes of a priest that could speak the English tongue they passed by the scowrers, & though the most part of them were got
01 before the gates, yet it was knowne what they were: so the number of an hundred and twenty of them got into the towne, but the residue being intercepted, were either taken or
Boloign assaulted. slaine. At length when a piece of the Castle was blowne vp, and the breaches made as was thought reasonable, the assault was giuen by the Admirall Lord Dudley that was come thither by the sea, which he had scowred, after his returne out of Scotland. This assault was
20 straightly giuen, and also manfully defended, so that when the assaylants had perceiued in what estate the breach stood, and what prouision they within had made for defence of their Towne, which was great, they were called back, and retired, but not without losse on both sides, especially of them within: for during the assault, the great artillerie did beate still vpon them that presented themselues at the breaches to repulse the assaylants, and so diuers of their
30 valiant Captaines and braue souldiours were slaine at this assault: shortly after, the Captaines within the towne, doubting to be eftsoones assaulted, and perceiuing themselues in extreame danger to lose the Towne by force, if they prounded not the soner, by rendring it, to saue themselues: they sent forth two of their chiefe Captaines Mounsier Semblemount, and Monsieur de Veruine, gouernor of the towne, his retinue was contented to deliuer the towne
40 to his grace, with condition, that they might passe with bagge and baggage, which request the king granted, and so the next day the Duke of Suffolke rode into Boloigne, vnto whom,
Boloigne rendred to K. Henry. as vnto the K. the keyes of the towne were deliuered, and in the after-noone departed all the French-men. The number of all the men of warre that were strong, and able to serue were of horsemen 67. of footmen 1563. of hurt men 87. of women and children 1927 beside a great
50 number of aged and sick persons, not able to depart with the rest.

K. Henry entreth Boloigne. The 25. of September, the K. hauing the sword borne before him by the Lord Marquesse Dorset, like a conqueror rode into Boloigne, and the trumpetters on the wals sounding. In the entring there met him the D. of Suffolke, and deliuered vnto him the keyes of the towne, and so he rode forth to his lodging that was prepared on the South side of the towne; two dayes after the King rode about the Towne,
60 within the wals, and appointed that our Lady church of Boloigne should be taken downe, and in place therof a mount to be made, for strength ning of the towne: finally, after that he had set things in order for the safe keeping of the towne, he appointed Sir Iohn Dudley, Lord Lisle, high Admirall of the Seas, to be his deputy of the same towne, and then taking the seas, he returned into England, landing at Douer on the first of October.

The 9. of October in the night, the French men came vnawares vpon the Englishmen in base Boloigne, and slew of them a great number: howbeit they were shortly after chased from thence, and the base Towne holden after in good quiet.

This yere was taken by the Kings ships of the West Countrey, and of the English coast the number of 300. French shippes and more, so that the grey Fryers Church in London was laid full of Wine, the Austen Fryers and Blacke Fryers, were laid full of herring, and other fish that was taken going into France. Prises taken.

The King demanded a benevolence of all his subiects, spirituall and temporall, towardes his wars in France and Scotland. A benevolence demanded.

The twelfth of January the Lord Chancellor, the Duke of Suffolke and other of the K. Councell began to sit at Baynards Castle, where they first called before them the Maior and Aldermen, &c. And because Richard Read Alderman would not agree to pay as they sette him, he was commanded vpon a great paine to serue the King in his wars of Scotland, who departed from London the three and twentieth of January, where he was taken prisoner, &c. 1545.

Also Sir William Roch Alderman, for words of displeasure taken by the Kings Councell, was by them sent to the Fleete, where he remained till Shrouetide Sunday. Sir William Roche sent to the Fleet.

The fire and twentieth of January, there camped on the West side of Boloigne beyond the Hauen, an armie of French to the number of fourteene thousand, where they lay ten dates, and the first of February, were put to flight, by the Earle of Hertford, and Sir Iohn Dudley Lord Admirall, then being Deputy of Boloigne.

The 13. of February, a priest was set on the pillorie in Cheape, and burnt in both cheekes with the letters F. & A. and a paper on his head, wherein was written For false accusing, which iudgement was giuen by the Lord Chancellor in the Star chamber, a notable example of iustice: great cause haue I to wish the like iustice had beene ministred vnto him, that after hee had defrauded me of my worldly goods, sought to haue depriued me of my life, by likewise accusing me of many Articles (seauen-score and odde) suborned witnesses (detected of periury, burnt in the hand for felony, & such like) which all could proue neuer one article against me, before the Arch-bishop of Canterbury, & other her Maiesties high Commissioners (as appeareth in their Register) by whom I was answered, there was no remedy against the accuser, by meane of a Statute late made, &c. Whereupon the false accuser of his master and eldest brother, sweareth to some, he neuer did any such act: to other, that all those Articles were true, and also largely (to the like effect) libelleth against me. False accuser set on the pillorie, and marked in the face, as he and other the like haue well deserued.

In the begining of March, a roade was made into Scotland toward Godworth, by the English men, who at the first got great praise, but they were so greedie, and went so farre, that a great army of Scottes beset them with three battels, where the Englishmen for the most part were slaine and taken at Pawperhowghe, among whom Sir Ralph Eure Lord Eure, and Warden of the East-marches was slaine, and
Alderman of London ransome prisoner. Richard Read Alderman of London, with other taken prisoners by the Scottes. Thomas Wriothesly Lord Chancellor made Knight of the garter.

Trinitie terme was adiourned because of the wars.

Anno reg. 37. About the twenty-fiue of June was a great tempest of wind in Darbithire, where through trees were ouer-turned, and diuers Churches, Chappels, and houses, were vncouered. Also in Lancashire, there fell haile-stones as bigge as
Stallions figured like mens heads. mens fists, which had diuers points in them, some like mens faces, some like Gunne-holes &c.

French-men arriued in Sussex. The nineteenth of July, the French Kings Nauie comming out of New-hauen, and Dep, arriued on the coast of England in Sussex, at foe bright Hamstead, where they set certaine of their souldiers a land to burne: but the Beacons were fired, and the men came downe so thicke, that the French-men fled and did little hurt.

Men burnt in the Hedge hogge. The 19. of July, by mis-fortune of shooting a Gonne in one of the Hedgehogs a ship, of foe Wellkinstall, a sicken of gun-powder fired, and slew seauen men, and the eyghth leaped into the Thames, and was drowned.

Mary Rose was drowned. The 20. of July, the King being at Portsmouth, a goodly ship of England, called the Mary Rose, with sir George Carrow the Captaine, and manie other gentlemen were drowned in the midst of the hauen, by great negligence.

French-men landed in the Ile of Wight The 21. of July, the French galleyes and nauie came afore Portsmouth Hauen, and landed certaine of their army in the Ile of Wight, at saint Helens Poynt, and there burned and encamped about 2000. men: but they were soone driuen away with losse of their Captaine, and many souldiers. Within few dayes after, the whole Fleete removed from the Wight to a
French-men landed at New-hauen in Sussex. place in Sussex, called New-hauen, 4. miles from Lewes, and there landed many Captaines and souldiers, who by the valiantnesse of the gentlemen and women of Sussex, were slaine and drowned in the Hauen a great number of them, and the rest hardly recouered their ships and galleyes.

E. of Hertford sent into Scotland. In the moneth of August, deceased at Guilford Charles Brandon Duke of Suffolke, and Lord great master of the Kings houshold, who was honourably buried at Windsore.

In August the Earle of Hereford was sent into Scotland, with an army of 12000. men, where he destroyed diuers Townes, and greatly endomaged the Scots.

L. Admirall sent to Troyport. The 9. of September, Sir Iohn Dudley, Lo. Lisle, Lord Admirall of England, landed with 6000. men at Treyport in Normandie, and there brent the towne and Abbey with other houses about it, and 30. ships with a barke that lay in the hauen, with losse of 14. Englishmen, and so returned.

The 24. of November began a Parliament, wherein was granted to the King, a Subsidie of 2.s.8.d. of the pound in goods, and 4.s. of the pound in lands. Also all colledges, chauntries, and hospitals, were committed to the K. order, to alter and transpose, which he promised to vse to the glory of God and the common profite of the realme. Chauntries, Colledges, and Hospitals, giuen vnto the K.

The 24. December the Parliament was prorogued on the which day the King comming into the house to giue his royal assent vnto such acts as were passed, the Speaker made vnto him an eloquent Oration: to the which, although the custome hath alwayes beene that the Lord Chancellor should make the answere, it pleased the K. at the present to make the answere himselfe, which he vttered as here followeth, set downe by Edward Hall.

Although my Chancellor for the time being, E. H. hath before this time vsed very eloquently and substantially to make answere to such Orations, as hath beene set forth in this high Court of parliament, yet is he not so able to open and set forth my minde and meaning, and the secrets of my heart in so plaine and ample manner, as I my selfe am, and can doe: wherefore I taking vpon me to answere your eloquent Oration, M. Speaker, say that where you in the name of our well-beloued commons, haue both prayed and extolled me, for the notable qualities that you haue conceiued to be in me, I most heartily thanke you all, that you haue put me in remembrance of my dutie, which is to indeuor my selfe to obtaine and get such excellent qualities, and necessary vertues as a Prince or gouernour ought to haue, of which gifts I recognize my selfe both barren & bare: but of such small qualities as God hath indued me withall, I render to his goodnes my most humble thankes, intending with all my wit and diligence to get and acquire to me such notable vertues, and princely qualities as you haue alleaged to be corporated in my person: these thankes for your louing admonition and good counsell first remembred, I effsoones thanke you: againe, because that you considering our great charge, not for our pleasure, but for your defence, not for our gaine, but to our great cost, which we haue lately sustained, as well in defence of our and your enemies, as for the conquest of that fortresse, which was to this realme most displeasant, and shall hereafter by Gods grace be to our nation both profitable and pleasant, haue freely of your owne mindes granted to vs a certaine subsidie, here in an act specified, which verily we take in good part, regarding more your kindnesse, than the profit thereof, as he that sets more by your louing hearts, than by your substance. Besides this heartie kindnes, I cannot a little reioyce when I consider the perfect trust and confidence, which you haue put in me, as men hauing vndoubted hope,

hope, and vnfained belefe in my good doings and iuft proceedings for you, without my defire or request haue committed to mine order & disposition, all chauntries, colledges, hospitals, and other places specified in a certaine act, firmly trusting that I will order them to the glory of God, and the profite of the common-wealth: sure I am, if I contrary to your expectation should suffer the ministers of the Church to decay, or learning which is so great a iewell to be minished, or poore and miserable, to be vnrelieued, you might say, that I, being put in so speciall a truft, as I am in this cafe, were no truftie friend to you, nor charitable to mine owne children, neither a louer of the publike wealth, nor yet one that feared God, to whom account muft be rendred of all our doings. Doubt not I pray you, but your expectation fhall be ferued more godly than yee will wish or hereafter yee fhall plainely perceiue. Now fithence I finde fuch kindneffe on your part towards me, I cannot chooſe but loue and fauor you, affirming, that no Prince in the world more fauoureth his subiects, than I doe you, nor no subiects or commons more loued and obeyed their foueraigne Lord, than I perceiue you doe me, for whose defence my treasure fhall not be hidden, nor if neceffitie require, my person fhall not be vnaduentured: yet although I wish you, and you with me to be in this perfit loue and concord, this friendly amitie cannot continue except both you my Lords temporall, and my Lords spirituall, and you my loving subiects ftudie and take paine to amend one thing which furely is amiffe, and farre out of order, to the which I muft heartily require you, which is: That charitie and concord is not among you, but difcord and diffention beareth rule in euery place: S. Paul feith to the Corinthians, the thirteene Chapter, Charitie is gentle, charitie is not enuious, charitie is not proud, and so forth in the same Chapter. Behold then what loue and charitie is amongst you, when the one calleth another heretike, and Anabaptift, and he calleth him againe Papift, Hypocrite, and Phariſey: bee these tokens of charitie amongst your selues? No, no, I affure you that this lacke of charity among your selues will be the hinderance and affwaging of the feruent loue betweene vs, as I faid before, except this wound be salued and clerely made whole, I muft needes iudge the fault and occafion of this discorde to be partly by negligence of you the fathers and preachers of the spiritualitie: for if I knowe a man which liueth in adultery, I muft iudge him letherous and a carnall person: if I see a man boaft and brag himselfe, I cannot but deeme him a proud man. I heare daily that you of the Clergie preach one against another, teach one contrary to another, enuying one against another, without charitie or discretion: some be too ſtiffe in their old *Mumpſimus*, other to be too bufie and curious in their new *Sumpſimus*: thus all men almoſt be in variety and discord, and selue or none Preach truely and sincerely the word of God, according as they ought to doe. Shall I iudge you charitable persons doing thus? No, no, I cannot so deeme: alas how can the poore soules liue in concord, when you Preachers sow amongſt them in your sermons debate and discorde? of you they looke for light, and you bring them into darkenes. Amend these crimes, I exhort you, and set forth Gods word both by true preaching and good example giuing, or else I, whom God hath appointed his Vicar and high minifter here, will see these diffensions extinct and these enormities corrected, according to my very dutie, or else I am an vnprofitable seruant, and vntrue officer. Although I say, the spirituall men be in some fault that charity is not kept amongſt you, yet you of the temporality be not clere and vnspotted of malice and enuie, for you raile on Bishops, speake slanderously of Priests, and rebuke and taunt preachers, both contrarie to good order, and Chriſtian fraternitie: if you know surely that a Bish. or Preacher, preacheth or teacheth peruerſe doctrine, come and declare to some of our Counsell or to me, to whom is committed by God the high authority to reforme and order such causes and behauiours, and be not iudges your selues of your owne fantaſticall opinions and vaine expoſitions, for in such high causes you may lightly erre: and although you be permitted to read holy scriptures, and to haue the word of God in your mother tongue, you muſt vnderſtand it is licensed you so to do, only to informe your conscience, and to instruct your children & familie, and not to diſpute, and make scripture a raping and a taunting ſtocke, against priests and preachers, as many light persons do. I am very sorie to know and heare how vnreuerently that moſt precious iewell the word of God is diſputed, rimed, ſung, and iangled in euery Alehouſe & Tauerne, contrary to the true meaning and doctrine of the same: and yet I am euen as much sory that the readers of the same, follow it in doing so faintly and coldly: for of this I am sure, that charitie was neuer so faint amongſt you, and vertuous and godly liuing was never leſſe vſed, nor God himſelf amongſt Chriſtians was neuer leſſe reuerenced, honored, or serued: therfore, as I faid before, be in charity one with another, like brother and brother: loue, dread, and serue God, to the which I, as your ſupreame head and soueraigne Lord erbort and requite you: & then I doubt not, but that loue and league, that I ſpake of in the beginning, ſhall neuer be diſſolued or broke between vs. And to the making of lawes which we haue now made and concluded, I exhort you the makers, to be as diligent in putting them in execution, as you were in making and furthering of the same, or else your labour ſhall be vaine, and your comon wealth nothing relieued. Now to your petition concerning our royall eſtate, to be giuen to such acts as haue paſſed both the houſes they ſhall be read openly, that ye may heare them. And so being read his grace aſſented vnto them as is required.

Many proper feats of armes were exployted and done in this meane while betwixt the Engliſh and the French about Boloigne.

On the morow after the feaſt of the Cirkumciſion, 1546.

English men put to flight by the Frenchmen.

nie, there came a conuoy of victuals towards the French Fort builded beſides Boloigne, garded with three or foure thouſand Launcequents, vnder their Coronell, the Reingraue, and certaine French men. The Earle of Surrey then Lieutenant of Boloigne aduertiſed thereof made out with ſuch power as he might conueniently ſpare out of Boloigne, and the old man, to cut off those victuals: but comming to encounter with the enemies at Saint Etiennes, he was put to flight, Sir Edward Poynings Captain of a band called the Kings gard of Boloigne, was ſlaine in that conflict, with 15. or 16. other Captains, beſides Officers and common ſouldiers.

The Frenchmen put downe.

In the latter end of March, the Frenchmen on the banke ſide of the Thames, in Southwarke was put downe, by the Kings commandement, which was proclaimed by ſound of Trumpets, no more to be priuiledged or vſed as a common Bayneil, but the Inhabitants of those houſes, to keepe good and honeſt rule, as in all other places of the Realme.

An. Reg. 38. W. Foxley kept more than ordinary Lent.

The 27. of Aprill, being Tueſday in Eaſter weeke, W. Foxley Potmaker for the ſpace in the Tower of London, fell a dape, and so continued dapping, and could not be waked with pricking, cramping, or otherwiſe burning whatſoeuer, till the firſt day of Iune: Anno, which was full 14. dayes, and 15. nights, for that Eaſter Terme beginneth not afore 17. dayes after Eaſter. The cauſe of his thus dapping could not be knowne, though the same were diligently ſearched for by the Kings Phyſitians and other learned men, yea the King himſelfe examined the ſaid W. Foxley, who was in all points found at his wakening, to be as if he had kept but one night, and liued 41. yeares after, to wit, till the yeare of Chriſt 1587.

A ſtrange Comet ſeene.

The 18. of May, there were 4. of the Kings ſhips, and 4. Pinnaces abroad on the ſeas afore the Hauen of Hamble iow, and there came 8. of the French Galleies to ſet vpon them, there was great ſhooting betweene them: but at the laſt, one of the Galleies was taken, in the which were 280. ſouldiers, and 140. rowers. The reſt of the Galleies packed away. Moreouer, while the Camp lay thus at Hamble iow, it chanced that one day a Mutenie roſe among the Launſequents againſt their Captaine, ſo that they gat themſelues into order of battell, ſeiſed vpon the great Artillery, and ſhewed countenance, as if they would haue ſet vpon the reſidue of the whole Camp. Hereupon euery man was commanded to repaire to his Enſigne, and the Spaniards came and ioyned themſelues with the Engliſhmen, ready to take ſuch part as they did. At length by the diligence of the Chiefe taines, and good countenance of the Engliſh Souldiers and Spaniards, the tumult was layed, and fire of the principall beginners thereof were hanged.

The 21. of May, the French Army came and encamped beyond Boloigne at the Church on the hill, and the morow after the Earle of Hertford marched with his power to a place within two miles of them, and certaine horſemen and footmen went forth and ſkirmiſhed with them, and in the meane time the Artillery ceaſed not to ſhot off, as well from the French Camp, as from Boloigne, and the Dio man. This day were ſlaine 14. French men, and two taken priſoners: and three of the Engliſh were taken, and ſo the Earle of Hertford retired to his Camp, and left the Launcequents vpon the hill, encamped before the Enemies, not two miles diſtant from them, in which place a Fort was begun to be raiſed, which was called the Fort of Boloigne beage.

The 23. of May, the Souldiers of Boloigne and the Launſquents ſkirmiſhed with the French men, and diuers and take of them about the number of ſeuen ſcore, of the which there were 30. of them in veluet coates, and ſome with chaines.

In this meane while, by the motion of diuers Princes, a meeting was had of diuers Commiſſioners appointed to treat of ſome peace, to be concluded betwixt the two Kings of England and France, hereupon there came to Guines for the King of England, the Earle of Hertford, the Biſhop of Winchester, Sir John Dudley Viſcount Lile, Baron of Dudley, and high Admirall of England, Sir Wil. Paget the Kings Secretary, and Doctor Nicholas Wotton Deane of Canterbury: For the French King there came to Arde, Monſieur Claude Dandebaulte Admirall of France, the Biſhop of Carcen, Monſieur Reimond chiefe Preſident of Roane, the Secretary Boucherell. Theſe met diuers times betwixt Arde and Guiſnes. After long debating, on the 7. of June a peace was concluded, which peace was with Heraulds and ſound of Trumpets, proclaimed at London on Sabbath ſunday, being the 13. of June, and the ſame day was a generall Proceſſion, before the which was borne all the richeſt ſiluer croſſes in London, to wit, of euery Church one, then proceeded all the Parith Clarkes, Conduits, Quiriſters, and Prieſts in London, with the quire of Pauls, all of them in their richeſt Coapes, ſinging: Then the Companies of the Citie in their beſt Liueries. The Lord Maior, the Aldermen and Sheriffes in skarlet, &c. All theſe went from Pauls Church through Cheape, and Cornhill vp to Leaden hall, and ſo back againe to Paules. And this was the laſt ſhewe of the rich croſſes and coapes in London: for ſhortly after they, with other their Church Plate, were called in to the Kings Treaſury and Wardrobe. And the ſame day was the ſame Peace proclaimed in the Citie of Paris, in Roan, and other places: the firſt Article of which peace was, that the French King paying to the King of England 800000. crownes, within the terme of 8. yeers he ſhould haue Boloigne again to him reſtored, which in the meane time ſhould remaine in the hands and poſſeſſion of the King of England.

Peace proclaimed, and generall proceſſion.

Moreouer, for the full eſtabliſhing of the peace, and for to receiue the French Kings oath, the Viſcount Lile L. Admirall, with the Biſhop of Durham, 5 diuers other Lords & Gentlemen, to the number of more than 100. all in veluet coates and chaines of gold, with 45. Peomen ſemly appointed, went into France from Boloign, the 10. of Iuly, & came to Pellane, a town

beyond Paris, where the French King lay: by whom, and the Dolphin his sonne, they were royally received, feasted, & banquetted: and having done that for the which they came, the said Lord Admirall Dudley the first of August tooke his leave of the French King, who rewarded him with a Cupbord of plate of gold, valued at 1500. pound. The Lords also and Gentlemen had chaines of gold given to them, and women had 1200. crownes bestowed amongst them, and so they returned into England.

Anne Askew and others burne.

The 16. of July, was burned in Smithfield for the Sacrament, Anne Askew, *alias* Kenne, John Lascles, Nicholas Otorden Priest, 1. Adlam Cayley, and Doctor Shaxton sometime Bishop of Salisbury, preached at the same fire, and there recanted, perswading them to doe the like, but they would not.

Admirall of France came to London.

The 21. of August, came into England Claude de Honnebale, high Admiral of France, who brought with him the Sacre of Diep, and 12. Galleies, he landed at the Tower-wharfe, where he was honourably received, and brought to the Bishop of Londons Pallace, where hee lodged two nights, and then rode to Hampton Court where the King lay. By the way, Prince Edward received him with a company of 500. coates of velvet, with one sleeve of cloth of gold, and halfe the coat embroydered with gold: there was in all to the number of 800. horses. And to the French Admirall came to the Court, giving the Prince the upper hand as they rode; and at the entry gate of the Court, the Lord Chancellour and all the Kings Councell received him, and brought him to his lodging.

On Bartholomew day, the King admitted him to his presence, welcommed him, and in great triumph went to the Chappell, where the King received his oath, to performe the articles of the league. I omit to speake of huntings and banquettings, which was wonderfull. But on the 27. of August, hee being rewarded with a Cupboard of plate, to the value of 1200. pound, he returned to London, and so to his Galleies, and departed homeward: besides the Kings gift, hee had given to him by the Citie of London, two Flagons guilt, and two other parcell guilt, valued at 126. pound, besides wine, wax, &c.

Duke of Norfolke and Earle of Surrey sent to the Tower

The 12. of Decem. The Duke of Norfolke, and Henry Earle of Surrey, his sonne and heire upon certaine surmises of Treason, were committed to the Tower of London, the one by water, the other by land, that the one knew not of the others apprehension.

K. H. his gift to the Citie of London.

The 3. day of January, the late dissolued Church of the Gray Freyers in London was opened, and Masse sung there: and that day preached at Paules Crosse the Bishop of Rochester, who declared the Kings gift to the Citie of London, for the reliefe of the poore people, which Gift was by Patent under his great Seale, S. Bartholomewes Spittle in Smithfield, lately valued at 305. pound 6. shillings and 7. pence, and surrendred to the King, the Church of the said Gray Friers, valued at 32. pound 19. shil. and 7. pence, and surrendred, and two Parish Churches, the one of S. Nicholas in the Shambles, the other Saint Ewine in Newgate Market at Warwick lane end, all to be made one Parish, in the said Church of the Gray Friers: and in lands hee gave for the maintenance of the same Church, with divine service, reparation, &c. five hundred Markes by yeare for ever, and this Church to be named Christs Church, founded by King Henry the eight.

The 13. day of January, the King then lying dangerously sicke, the Earle of Surrey, was arraigned in the Guild-hall of London, before the Lord Maior, the Lord Chancelour, and other Lords and Judges being there in Commission, some things hee flatly denied, weakening the credite of his accusers, by certaine circumstances, other he excused with interpretations of his meanings, to prove the same to be farre otherwise than was alleaged against him: the especiall matter, wherewith he was charged, was, for bearing certaine Armes that were said belonged to the King and Prince: the bearing whereof he intituled, that as he took it, he might beare them, as belonging to his Ancestors, and withall affirmed that he had the opinion of the Heraulds therein, and so to his indictment he pleaded, not guilty. And for that hee was no Lord of the Parliament, hee was enforced to stand to the triall of a common inquest of his Country, which found him guilty, and thereupon hee had judgement of death: and shortly after, to wit, on the 19. of January he was beheaded on the Tower hill. 1547. Earle of Surrey arraigned and beheaded.

Tombe for King Henry the eight made by Cardinall Wolsey.

The King lying dangerously sick (as ye have heard) and in great perill of death, made his last will and testament, dated the 30. day of December, the 38. yeare of his raigne, &c. Wherein, amongst other things, he appointed his body to be buried in his College, or free Chappell at Windsore, in an honourable Tombe prepared, and at that time almost finished for that purpose, which tombe I have seene, with this inscription cast in the grates of melosine thereof (being copper) *Henricus octauus Rex Anglie, Francie, dominus Hibernie, fides defensor*: hee appointed the tombes of King Henry the 6. and of Edward the fourth, to be more princely made in the same places they then stood: one thousand markes to be given in almes to the most needy, in as short time as may be after his decease, and to twelue poore Knights, to each of them twelue pence the day for ever, and every yeare to each of them a long Gowne of white cleath, with the Garter embroydered upon the breast, with a shield and crosse of S. George, and a mantle of red cloath, &c. He appointed his first heire to be Crowne to be Prince Edward: the second, Lady Mary, daughter to Queene Katherine: and the third to be the Lady Elizabeth, by Queene Anne Boleine. Item, he tooke order, that during the minority of his sonne Prince Edward, his executors should be Counsellours and aydes to him in all things, as well concerning private as publique affaires, they were in number fifteene, whose names ensue as followeth.

Thomas Archbishop of Canterbury.
Thomas Wriothesley Lord Chancellour.
Sir William Pawlet Knight of the Order, Lord Saint-John, and great Maister of the Houshold.
Sir John Russell Knight of the Order, Lord priuie Seale.
Sir Edward Seimer Knight of the Order, Earle of Hertford, great Chamberlaine.
Sir John Dudley Knight of the Order, Viscount Lisley, Baron of Malpas, high Admirall of England.
Cuthert Tunstall Bishop of Durham.
Sir Anthony Browne Knight of the Order, and Maister of the Horse.
Sir William Paget Knight of the Order.
Sir William Herbert Knight.
Sir Edward Mountacute Knight, chiefe Justice of the common Pleas.
Sir Thomas Bromely Knight, one of the Justices of the Kings Bench.
Sir Anthony Denny Knight.
Sir Edward North Knight, Chancelour of the Augmentations.
Sir Edward Wotton Knight, Treasurer of Calais.
Doctor Wotton Deane of Canterbury and of Yorke.

And furthermore, for the speciall trust and confidence which the King had in the Earle of Arundell, and the Earle of Esser that then were, Sir Thomas Cheiny Knight, Treasurer of Houshold. Sir John Gage Knight, Comptroler of Houshold. Sir Anthony Winkfield Knight, Vice-Chamberlaine. Sir William Peter Knight, one of the principall Secretaries. Sir Richard Rich Knight. Sir John Baker Knight. Sir Ralph Sadler Knight. Sir Thomas Seimor Knight. Sir Richard Southwell Knight, and Sir Edm. Pecham Knight: hee appointed that they, and every of them should be of counsell, for the ayding and assisting of the foresaid Counsellors and Executors, &c. Hee deceased at Westminster on the eight and twentieth day of January, being Friday, in the yeare of Christ 1547. beginning the yeare at Christmasse, but after the account of the Church of England, in An 1546. when he had raigned 37. yeares, nine moneths, and odde dayes, and was buried at Windsore with great solemnity.

The last of January being Munday, Prince Edward was proclaimed King, by the name of Edward the first, and the same day hee came from Smithe to the Tower of London. Blase San.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF KING EDVVARD THE SIXT.

Anno 1.

EDVVARD the sixth, born at Hampton Court (by the decease of King Henry his Father) began his Raigne the 28. of January, and was proclaimed K. of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the Faith, and of the Churches of England, and also of Ireland, the supreame head immediatly in earth under God, &c. On the 31. of last day of January, in the yeare of Christ after the Church of England 1546. but after the account of them that begin the yeare at Christmas 1547. being then of the age of nine yeares. And the same day in the after noone, the said young King came to the Tower of London from Hertford, and rode into the Citie at Aldgate, and so along the wall by the crosse Freyers to the Tower hill, and entred at the red bulwarke, where hee was received by Sir John Gage Constable of the Tower, and the Lieutenant on horseback. The Earle of Hertford riding before the King, and Sir Anthony Browne riding after him: and on the Bridge next the Ward gate, the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Chancellour, with other great Lords of the Councell received him, and so brought him to his Chamber of Presence, where they were sworne to his Praelthe.

Earle of Hertford made Lord Protector.

The first of February, the Earle of Hertford was nominate, elected, and chosen, by all the Executors, to be Protector and chiefe Gouernour of the Kings person, untill he came to his lawfull age of 18. yeares, and so was hee proclaimed.

King Edward made Knight.

The first day of February, the Earle of Hertford Lord Protector in the Tower of London, enbued K. Edward with the order of Knighthood: and then immediatly the King standing up, under the cloth of Estate, Henry Holbethorn Lord Maior of London was called, who knighting downe, the King tooke the sword of the Lord Protector, and made him knight, which was the first that ever hee made. Then the Lords called the Iudges and communed with them, and then every of them came before the King, who put forth his hand, and every of them kissed it: then Maister William Portman one of the Iudges of the Kings Bench was called forth, whom the King made knight, and then the King moving his Cap, departed to his priuie Chamber againe.

Lord Maior of London made knight.

The 14. of Februarie, the corpes of King Henry the eight, was with great solemnitie and honour conueyed vnto Sion, and the next day to Windsore, and there buried in the Colledge.

Duke and Lords create.

The 17. of Februarie, Sir Edward Seimer Earle of Hertford, and Lord Protector, was created Duke of Somerset: the Lord William Parre Earle of Esser, was created Marquesse of Northhampton: Sir John Dudley Lord Lisle, Lord Admirall, was created Earle of Warwick, and Lord Chamberlaine of England: Sir Thomas Wriothesly and Lord Chancellour, was created Earle of Southhampton: Sir Thomas Seimer the Kings Vncle, was made Lord of Sudley and high Admirall: Sir Richard Rich was made Lord Rich: Sir William Willoughby was made Lord Willoughby of Parham: Sir Edmond Sheffield was made Lord Sheffield of Butterwike.

The 19. of Februarie, King Edward rode from the Tower of London, accompanied with his Nobility thorough the Citie of London towards Westminster, and as he passed on the South side of Pauls Churchyard, a man of the Nation of Arragosa, came from the battlements of the steple of Paules Church vpon a Cable, being made fast to an Anchor by the Deanes gate, lying on his breast, ayding himselfe neither with hand nor foote, but spreading them abroad, and after ascended to the midst of the Cable, where he tumbled and played many pretty toyes, whereat the King and the Nobles had good pastime. He was Crowned at Westminster on the 20. day of Februarie. And there was the same day proclaimed a generall pardon of all manner of persons saueing fire, to wit, the Duke of Norfolk, Edward Lord Courtney, eldest sonne to the Marquesse of Exceter, Master Foskew, Master Throkmorton, Cardinall Poole, and Doctor Pates.

Paules steple lay at Anchor.

King Edward crowned.

The first of March, the great Seale of England was taken from Sir Thomas Wriothesly, and on the morrow the same was deliuered to the Lord Saint-Iohn, Lord great Master.

1548. The 11. of Aprill being Monday in the Easter weeke, the Complin (being a part of the Euening prayer) was sung in English in the Kings Chappell. Also the same moneth of Aprill, D. Glasier preaching at Pauls Crosse, affirm'd there, that the Lent was not ordained of God, to be Fasted, neither the eating of flesh to be forbone, but that the same was a politick ordinance of men, and mought therefore be broken by men, at their pleasures. Moze on the 15. of May being Sunday, Doctor Smith Master of Whittington Colledge in London, Doctor of Diuinity, and Reader of the same in the Kings Colledge at Oxford, recanted at Paules Crosse, declaring his former Bookes and teachings, to be erronious and heretical. Also on the 19. of June, one Peren did recant in the Parish Church of S. Andrew Vnderhaft in London, where he had before (to wit, on Saint Georges day) preached that it was good to worship the pictures of Christ, and of Saints, but now he said he had bene deceiued, and was sozie that he had taught such doctrins, &c.

On the same 19. of June was a Dirige sung in euery Parish Church in London, for the French King late deceased (to wit, on the 22. of March last before passed) also the Church of St. Paul in London, being hanged with Black, and a sumptuous Herse set vp in the Quire, a Dirige was there sung, and on the next morrow, the Archbishop of Canterbury, assisted of eight Bishops, all in rich Miters, and other their pontificals, did sing a Masse of Requiem, and the Bishop of Rochester preached there a learned Sermon.

The first of July, two Priests were arraigned, and condemned in the Guild-hall, for hauing of certaine Reliques, amongst the which there was a left arme and shulder of a Saint, of the Charterhouse; on the which arme was written, It was the arme of such a Knight, which suffered Martirdome vnder King Henry the eight.

The 9. of July, 15. Gallies of France, past through the narrow Seas into Scotland, where they destroyed the Castle of Saint Andrewes, wherein were certaine Scots, that had in the same Castle murthered the Cardinall of Saint Andrewes. And on the eight of August the said Gallies returned againe into France.

In the moneth of August, Edward Duke of Somerset, Lord Protector, as generall, and Iohn Dudley Earle of Warwicke Lord Lieutenant, with a noble Armie were sent into Scotland, and here to Oxenbozough at a place called Musselburgh, the English men and Scots met, where betweene them the tenth of September was fought a cruell Battell. The victorie whereof fell to the English men, and of the Scots were slaine 14000. and taken prisoners 1500. wherevpon many were Gentlemen, and not aboue 60. English men slaine: more of this yee may read in Master Patten his Booke certaine entituled, The expedition into Scotland.

The 2. of September, the French Gallies did take a Pinnace of the Kings, called the Roo, betweene Calais and Doner.

The Lord Protector, and the rest of the Councell, sent Commissioners into all part of the Realme, willing them to take all Images out of their Churches, for the auoiding of Idolatry, with them were sent diuers Preachers, to perswade the people from their Beads, and such like ceremonies: and at that time the going in Procession was forbidden to be vsed, and the Gospell, and Epistle was commanded to be read in English. And the fift of September the Kings Commissioners did sit in Pauls Church, there to reforme such ceremonies and superstitions. And on the 18. of September, the Letany was sung in English in Paules Church, betwixt the Quire and the high Altar, the singers kneeling, halfe on the one side, and halfe on the other side. And the same day, the Epistle and Gospell was read in English at the high Masse in Pauls Church. And on the 11. of September, Edmond Bonner Bishop of London, was by the Councell committed prisoner in the Fleete. And on the 25. of September, Stephen Gardener Bishop of Winchester, was likewise committed to the Fleete. And Nicholas Ridley was made Bishop of Rochester.

The 24. of October, Richard Lord Rich, was made Lord Chancellour.

Parliament and admin.

The 4. of November the Parliament begun at Westminster, and that same day Masse was sung before the Lords of the Parliament in the English tongue. Sir John Baker Knight, Chancellour of the Exchequer and tenthes, was speaker of the Common house for the said Parliament: In the which was graunted to the King, all colledges, chantries, free Chappels, Hospitals, fraternities, brotherhoods, and guildes. And an Act was made for the receiuing of the Sacrament in both kindes, of Bread and Wine: and the Statute of the fiue Articles was repealed.

Colledges, Chantries, Chappels, and Hospitalles geuen to the King.

The 17. of November was begun to be pulled downe the Rode in Paules Church, with Mary and Iohn, and all other images in the Church, and then the like was done in all the Churches in London, and so throughout England, and texts of Scriptures were written vpon the walls of those Churches against images, &c. And on the 24. of December the Parliament was prorogued.

In the first of Ianuary, Doctor Latimer preached at Paules Crosse, which was the first Sermon by him preached in almost eight yeares before, for at the making of the Six Articles, he being Bishop of Worcester in vnlo not resident 30 bare them, and therefore was commanded to silence, and gaue vp his Bishoppick: hee also preached at Paules Crosse on the 8. of Ianuary, where he affirmed, that whatsoeuer the Clergie commanded, ought to be obeyed, but he also declared that the Clergie are such as sit in Moyses Chaire, and bidde not their Hallers commission: adding nothing thereto, nor taking any thing there from: and such a Clergie must be obeyed of all men, both high and low. He also preached at Paules on the 15. and on the 29. of Ianuary. And on the 2. of February being the Feast of the Purification of our Lady, commonly called Candlemasse day, the hauing of Candles in the Church was left off through out the whole Citie of London.

The 12. of February being Shrone-Sunday, and the Monday, and Tuesday following, was great Iusts, and warlike feates done in the Parke at Greenewich, where was a Castle of Fozt of turues, beleged and assaulted, to shew the King the manner of Warres, wherein he had great pleasure. The Wednesday following commonly called Ashwednesday, the vse of giuing ashes in the Church was also left.

The 17. of March, being Wednesday, was a Pulpit set vp in the Kings prime Garden at Westminster, and therin Doctor Latimer preached before the King, where he might be heard of moze then foure times so many people as could haue stode in the Kings Chappell: and this was the first Sermon preached there. And this yere the ceremony of bearing of Palmes on Palme Sunday was left off, and not vsed as afore.

1548. Commissioners sent out.

About the beginning of the month of March, the King sent his Commissioners into euery Shire in England, to suruey all Colleges, free Chappels, and Chantries, with other lands, as faces in the Articles of their Commission.

An. Reg. 2.

Also in the said moneth of March, the King sent forth his Proclamation, with a booke for the order of receiuing of the holy Communion of the body & bloud of Christ, vnder both kindes of bread and wine, to be ministred by the Priest to all persons at Easter, and at all times after, when the people required it. Whereupon at Easter following began the Communion and Confection in English, but no man constrained thereto except vpon voluntarie after Easter began the Service in English in diuers Parish Churches, and at Whitsuntide at diuers by the commandement of D. W. Mathew deane of the same church. Barkins Chappell nigh the tower of London and the Colledge Church of Saint Martins le Grand nigh the Shambles were pulled downe. Also the Parish Churches of S. Nicholas in the Shambles, and S. [illegible] at Pilles gate, were pulled downe, and the Parish Church appointed to the late dissolued Grey Friers Church, which is now named Christs Church, founded by King Henry the eight. Also the Parish Church at the Strand without Temple barre was pulled downe, both Saints Inne, and Strond bridge, in place whereof to build the Protectors house.

Great Watch at Midsom downe.

The Watch which had bene accustomed in London at Midsommer of long time late past, was now againe vsed, both on the Euen thereof and S. Peters, and S. Peter in a readie order as it had bene accustomed, which watch was greatly beautified by the number of more than 5. hundred demilances and light horsemen that were prepared by the Citizens, to be sent into Scotland for the rescue of the Town of Hadington, and other, kept by Englishmen in Scotland.

The siege of Hadington.

On S. Peters Euen, Monsieur D'Esse Lieutenant to the French King, and the Kingdome of France, with the number of 10000. French and Almains, besides Scots, beleged the Town of Hadington in Scotland, defended by the English men, vnto whose ayde shortly after came from Barwick 1300. Footemen, which were 700. men of Armes and Demilances, the Captaines whereof were Sir Rob. Bowes and Sir Thomas Palmer, which Footemen not long after by the French men were enclosed, and the moze part either slaine, or taken with their Captaines before named: neuertheless, the English men defended the Towne, often skirmishing with the French, and putting them to the worse, vntill the 20. day of August, and then came an Army out of England of 16000. of the which 4000. were Almaines, the Kings Lieutenant was the Earle of Shrewsbury, the Generall of the Almains was Captain Courtpenny.

At the comming of the Armie, the French men and Scots in peaceable manner departed from before Hadington, giuing our Captaines and Souldiers great commendation for their seruice. Francis Earle of Shrewsbury, after he had seene the Towne victualled and stored with fre, Souldiers and Munitions, departed into

England, and our men kept the Castle of Badington, oftentimes skirmishing with the French men and Scots, till the 20. day of September, and then came the Castle of Rutland with 3000. Almains, and as many bedderers, who caused the Town to be raced, and to bring their Ordnance and Cariage to Lamberke, and returned without Battell.

Hadington raced by the Scottish men.

On S. Peters day Stephen Gardner, Bishop of Winchester, preached in the Palace of white hall at Westminster before the King, for the which Sermon he was on the morrow after sent to the Tower of London.

W. of Winchester sent to the tower by the Lord Protector.

The 7. of July, a Priest was hanged and quartered in Smithfield, for that he and other in Cornewall had slaine Master Body, one of the Kings Commissioners, the others of his Society were put to death in diuers other parts of the Realme.

A Priest of Cornewall executed.

This yeare a great Mortality by the Pestilence was in London, wherefore commandement was given to all Curates of other hauing to doe therewith, that no corps should be buried before 6. of the clocke in the morning, nor after five of the clock at night, and that there should at the buriall of euery corps, be rung one bell at the least, by the space of three quarters of an houre.

Great Pestilence in London.

In September died Q. Katherine late wife to King Henry, and after married to Sir Tho. Seimer Lord Admirall; shee died of childbirth, being deliuered of a daughter.

Q. Katherine died.

The 16. of January, Sir T. Seimer Knight of the Garter, Baron of Sudley, L. Admirall, brother to the Lord Protector, and Uncle vnto King Edward, was arrested, and sent to the Tower of London. On the 19. of January Sir William Sherington was also committed to the Tower; which Sir William on the 14. of February, was arraigned in the Guild-hall at London, and condemned of Treason, for misusing of the Kings Print at Bristow. The L. Tho. Seimer Uncle to the King, was condemned by the Parliament, and neuer came to his answere. This Parliament brake vp on the 14. of March, and on the 20. of March the said Lord Tho. Seimer was beheaded on the Tower hill, he tooke it on his death, that he had neuer committed or meant any Treason against the King nor Realme. The 29. of March Doctor Latimer preached before the King at Westminster, and there in his Sermon, declaring many things against the L. Thomas Seimer late beheaded, he affirmed that in time whiles he was prisoner in the Tower, hee wrote letters vnto the Lady Mary, and Lady Elizabeth the Kings sisters, that they should make some stur against the Lord Protector, and reuenge his death.

An. Reg. 3.

1549.

The 1st of April, Proclamation was made for the Masse, to bee put downe through the whole Realme.

The 10. of April, the cloister of Pauls Church in London, called Pardon Church-yard, with the dance of death, commonly called the dance of Pauls about the same cloister, cruelly and cunningly wrought, and the Chappel in the middest of the same Churchyard, were all begun to bee pulled downe. Also the charnill house of Pauls, with the chappel there (after the tombs & other monuments of the dead were pulled downe, and the dead mens bones buried in the fields) were conuerted into dwelling houses and shops.

Dance of Pauls pulled downe.

Charnell house of Paules.

About the same time the steple, and nine part of the Church of S. John of Jerusalem, nere vnto Smithfield, most beautifully new builded, and late finished, by the Lord Prior named Docwray, was undermined, and ouerthrowne with Gunpowder, the stone whereof was applied in the building of the Lord Protectors house at the Strand.

Church of S. John of Smithfield blowne vp.

The 27. of April, diuers Anabaptists were examined in our Lady Chappell of Saint Pauls Church in London, before T. Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, Edm. Thirlby late Bishop of Westminster, D. Cox, D. Smith, D. May Deane of Pauls, and D. Cox Deane of the Arches, and Chancellor to the Archb. of Cant. these late in the Altar of our Lady in iudgment of these Anabaptists, and at their next sitting, there late with them the Sheriffes of London; and on the next Sunday being Iohn Sunday, one of them named Champenes bare a faggot at Pauls Crosse, Myles Coverdale preached the rehearsall Sermon there: on the next Saturday the said Commissioners sate there again, before whom was brought Joan of Kent, alias Iean Butcher, alias Knel, she was condemned and a Maner of Colchester named Putto it carted, and on the morrow bare a fagot at Pauls Crosse, and after that at Colchest. Also that day stood at Pauls Crosse a Butcher an Anabap. of Mary Magdal. parish in old fish street and against the Sunday after, because he made a mock at the first time: and thus much of the Anabaptists of that time.

In the meneth of May, by meanes of a Proclamation for inclosures, the Commons of Somersetshire and Lincolnshire made a commotion, and broke vp certaine Parks of sir W. Herberds, and L. Sturtons, but sir W. Herbert fought and ouercame many of those Rebels.

Commotion in Somersetshire & Lincolnshire.

In July, the Commons of Essex and Kent, Suffolke and Norfolke, rose against inclosures, and pulled downe diuers Parks and houses.

Also the Commons of Cornwall and Deuonshire, rose against the Nobles and Gentlemen, and required not onely that the inclosures might be disparked, but also to haue their olde Religion, and act of the articles reuoked: these besieged the Citie of Exceter, which was valiantly defended. Against these Rebels was sent John Lord Russell, Lord priuie Seale, with a number of Souldiers, who entred the Citie of Exceter the 6. of August, where they slew and tooke prisoners of the Rebels more than 4000. and after hanged diuers of them in the Towne and Country about. The Lord Grey was also sent with a number of strangers Almaine and Germaine horsemen, who in diuers conflicts slew many people, and spoyled the Country.

Commotion in Deuonshire & Cornwall.

The last of July, Will. L. Marques of Northampton, entred the Citie of Norwich, and on the next morning, the Rebels also entred the Citie, burned part thereof, put the L. Sheffield to flight, and slew the L. Sheffield.

In this meane time diuers persons were apprehended

Martiall law.

prehended as ayders of the foresaid Rebels or reporters of their doings of the which one was the Bailiffe of Romford in Essex, hanged with in Alogate, and another of Kent, at the Bridge gate toward Southwark, both on Mary Magdal. day by Martiall law.

The 8. of August, the French Kings Ambassadour, did in name of his Master the French King, make defiance vnto the King of England, and so the warres to begin with all their force, and the same night following, all French men were taken prisoners, and their goods registred.

The French Kings Ambassadour maketh defiance.

In the beginning of August, the French K. determining to take the Iles of Gernsey and Jersey, did set there sodainely vpon our Ships with a great number of Galleys, but they were so manfully encountred by the Kings nauy, that with the losse of a thousand men, & great spoile of their Galleis, they were forced to retire into Fraunce, and desist from their purpose.

The 16. of August, a man was hanged without Bishopsgate of London, and one other without Aldgate, the other at Totenham, the fourth at Waltham, and so forth in diuers other places, all by Martiall law.

The 8. of August, the French Ambassadours gaue a defiance to the Lord Protector, whereupon all French men with their goods being no Denizens, were apprehended and committed to prison.

French men apprehended.

The Rebels in Norfolk and Suffolk encamped themselues at mount Surrey, in a wood called S. Nicholas wood, nere vnto Norwich, against whom Sir Iohn Dudley Earle of Warwick went with an Army, where both he and a great number of Gentlemen meeting with the rebels, were in such danger, as they had thought all to haue died in that place: but God that confounded the purpose of all Rebels, brought it to passe, that as well there as in all other places, they were partly by power constrained, partly by promise of their pardon, perswaded to submit themselues to their Prince: the Earle of Warwick entred the Citie of Norwich the 27. of August, when he had slaine about 5000. of the Rebels, and taken their chiefe Captaine Robert Ket of Windham Tanner, which might dispend in lands fifty pound by yere, and was worth in mouueables about a thousand marks, when he had put to execution diuers of the Rebels in diuers places about Norwich, he returned.

The Earle of Warwicke sent against the Rebels in Norwich.

The 28. of August, tidings was brought to King Edward, and the Lord Protector, that the French men had taken Blackenes, Hamultewe, and Newhauen by Boleine, and had slaine all the English men, and taken the Kings Ordnance and victuals, which was reported to be begun by one Sturton, a bastard sonne of the Lord Sturtons, which had betrayed Newhauen, and went himselfe to the French Kings seruice: hereupon the Captaine of Boleine Barke, for feare of the French Army, conueyed all the Ordnance, victuals, Gods, & men of that Fort, to the high Towne of Boleine, and after their departing, with Gunpowder blew vp the Fort.

Newhauen by Boleine wonne by the French.

About this time also, a commotion began at Semer in the North riding of Yorkshire, and continued in the East riding, and there ended: the principall traytors whereof were William Ombler of Est Hesterton Yeoman, Tho. Dale Parish Clarke of Semer, and Steuenton of Semer: being presented by the Lord President from riding at Murringham, they drew to a place at Semer by the Sea coast, and there by night rode to the beacon at Scarton, and set it on fire, and so gathered a rude route: then they went to Walter Wars house, and took him, and Clopton his vnkes brother, and Savage a Merchant of Yorke, and Bery seruant to Sir Walter Maldery, which soone they murthered a mile from Semer, and there left them naked: their number encreased 3000.

Commotion in Yorkshire.

On the 21. of August, the kings pardon was offered, which Ombler and other refused, who were shortly after taken, and brought to Yorke where Thomas Dale and other were executed the 21. of September.

Rebels executed at Yorke.

The first of September, Edmund Bonner Bishop of London, preached a Sermon at Pauls Crosse, for the which hee was accused vnto the Councell by William Latimer, Parson of Saint Laurence Pountney, and Iohn Hooper, sometime a white Frenke, and so commented before the Archbishop of Canterburie, and other Commissioners at Lambheath, on the 13. the 16. the 18. and on the 21. day of that same moneth, he was sent to the Earle Marshall in his habite of a Bishop: but on the first of October he was deposed of his Bishoprick, for disobeying the Kings order in Religion.

On the last day of October in the morning, the Earle of Warwick with other Lords of his Councell, sent to the Lord Maior, and the Aldermen of London, to his place in Holborne, where was declared to them by the Lord Chancellor, and other of the Kings Councell, diuers abuses of the Lord Protector, concerning the Kings person, and his affaires both in England and also in Scotland, and other his peeres beyond the Seas. And that afternoone was kept a Court of the Aldermen in the Guild-hall, where was shewed a letter, from the King and the Lord Protector, for to haue one thousand men of the Citie, well harnessed with weapons for defence of the Kings Maiesties person. And another letter also from the Lords of the Councell, to haue two thousand men to ayde them, for defence of the Kings person: and also, that the Citie should be well kept with Watches both day and night, &c.

And the same first day, the King being at Hampton Court, the Lord Protector caused Proclamations to be made in diuers Townes nere to the Court, for men to ayde the King against the Lords, and also sent letters to diuers Townes to the same effect: whereupon great assemblies of people were made at Hampton Court. And in the night of the same day he conueyed the King to Windsor, with a great number of horsemen and footemen.

My Lords, wee commend vs most heartily vnto you: and where the Kings Maiestie was enformed that you were assembled in such sort

A letter from the Lords at Windsore, to the Lords at London.

as ye doe now remember there, was aduised by vs, and such other of his Councell, as were here about his person, to send Master Secretarie Peter vnto you with such a message, as where by might haue enlued the surety of his Maiesties person, with preseruation of his Realme and Subiects, and the quiet both of vs, and your selues, as Master Secretarie can well declare vnto you: his Maiestie, and wee of his Councell here, doe not a little maruell that you haue still with you the said Master Secretarie: and haue not (as it were) vouchsafed to send an answere to his Maiestie, neither by him, nor yet by any other. And for our selues, we doe much more maruell, and are right sorie, as we and you haue good cause to be, to see the manner of your doings, bent with force and violence to bring the Kings Maiestie and vs to these extremities, which as we doubted if you will take none other way but violence to defend vs, as nature and our allegiance doth binde vs, to extremity of death, and put it vnto Gods handes, who guyde vs to a good end. So if our reasonable conditions and offers will take no place, as hitherto none hath beene signified vnto vs from you, nor wee doe not vnderstand what ye doe require or seeke, nor what ye doe meane, and that ye speake no hurt of the Kings Maiesties person: as touching all other priuate matters, to auoide the effusion of Christian blod, and to preserue the Kings Maiesties person, his Realme, and Subiects, ye shall finde vs agreeable to any reasonable conditions that you will require. For we doe esteme the Kings wealth and tranquilitie of the Realm more than all other worldly things, yea more than our owne liues. Thus praying you to send vs determinate answere herein by Master Secretary Peter or if ye will not let him goe) by this bearer, we beseech God to giue both you and vs grace to determine this matter, as may be to Gods honour, the preseruation of the King, and the quiet of vs all, which may be, if the fault be not in you. And so we bid you hartily farewell. From the Kings Maiesties Castle of Windsor the 7. day of October, 1549.

Your Lopps. louing friends E. Somerset, &c.

A letter from the Duke of Somerset, to the Earle of Warwick

My Lord, I cannot perswade my selfe that there is any ill conceiued in your heart as of your selfe against me, for that the same seemeth impossible, that where there hath beene from your youth and mine so great a friendship and amity betwixt vs, as neuer for my part to no man was greater, now so suddenly there should be hatred, and that without iust cause, whatsoeuer rumours and bruits, or perswasion of others haue moued you to conceiue; in the sight and iudgement of almighty God, I protest and affirme this vnto you, I neuer meant woorse to you than to my selfe, wherefore my Lord, for Gods sake, for friendship, for the loue that hath euer beene betwixt vs, or that hereafter may be, perswade your selfe with truth, and let this time declare to me and the world, your iust honour, and perseuerance in friendship, the which, God be my witnes, who seeth all hearts, was neuer diminished, nor euer shall be whilest I liue. And because my heart and minde shall be more plaine and open than my writings: this bearer M. Hobie shall declare vnto you the effect thereof at length, to whom I pray you giue credite, &c. the 8. of October, 1549.

The Lords at Windsore, to the Lords at London.

After our hearty commendations vnto your good L. wee haue receiued from the same a letter by Master Hunnings, dated at London yesterday, whereby you doe vs to vnderstand the causes of your assemble there, and charging the Lord Protector with the manner of gouernment, require that he withdraw himselfe from the Kings Maiestie, disperse the force which he hath leuied, and be contented to be ordered according to iustice and reason. And so you will gladly commune with vs, as touching the surety of the Kings Maesties person, and the order of all other things, with such conformity on that behalfe as appertaineth, and otherwise you must (as you write) make other account of vs, than you trust to haue cause, and burden vs, if things come to extremities. To the first points we bee ruly beleeue that as bruites, rumors, and reports, that your Lordships intended the destruction of the Lord Protector, induced his Grace to flie to the defence which hee hath assembled, ecause your Lordships, hearing that his Grace intended the like destruction towards you, haue beene moued to doe as you haue done. So as for lacke of vnderstanding one of anothers right meaning, things bee growne to such extremities, as if the sauing of the Kings Maiesties person, and the Common-weale, take not more place in his Grace and your Lordships, than priuate respect of affaires, you see we doubt not, as we doe, that both our King, our Country, and also our selues, shall, as verily as God is God, bee vtterly destroyed and cast away. Wherefore might it please you, for the tender passion of Jesus Christ, vse your wisedome, and temper your determination in such sort, as no blod be shed, nor cruelty vsed, neither of his Graces part, nor of your Lordships; for if it come to the point, both you and we are like to see presently with our eyes, that which enery vrine of all our hearts will blede to behold. Wherefore, as true Subiectes to the Kings Maiestie, as faithfull Counsellours, though vnworthy Counsellours to his Maiestie and his Realme, and as lamentable Petitioners, we beseech your Lordshippes most humblie, and from the bottome of our hearts, to take pitie of the King and the Realme, whereof you bee principall members, and to sette apart *Summum ius*, and to vse at this time *Tum bonum & aquum*; and thinke not that this is written for any priuate feare, or other respect of our selues, but for that vndoubtedly we heare and know more of this point with your fauours, than you there doe know; yea, and howsoeuer it shall please you to account of vs, we are true men to God, to the King, to the Realme, and so will we liue and die whersoeuer we be, and in respect of them thase esteeme little any other person or thing, no not our owne liues: and hauing cleare consciences, as some whatsoeuer, ill

all may follow, vpon the vse of extremity there, that neither now is, nor shall be found fault in vs, and so quieting our selues we rest. Now to that you would haue the Lord Protector to doe, for his part, his grace and we haue communed herein, and much to our comforts and yours also, if it shall like you to way the case, who is contented, if you will agree for your parts vse equity, to put that now in execution, which many times hee hath declared by his words, that is to say, so as the King and the Realme may be otherwise well serued, hee passeth little for the place hee now hath. Mary hee doth consider, that by the Kings Maiestie, with all your aduices, and the consents of the Nobles of the Realme, he was called to the place (as apparetly in writing vnder his Maesties great Seale and Signe, whereunto your owne hands also and ours, with all others the Lords of the vpper house in the Parliament are subscribed: and therefore in violent sort to be thus thrust out against his will, he thinketh it not reasonable: hee is here with the Kings person, where his place is to be, and we be here with him, we trust in God for the good seruice of the King, the weale of the Realme, and the good acquiting both of his Grace and of your Lordships, which wee most heartily desire, and for such hope here thereof, as if you be not too sore bent vpon the extremities, as is reported, and as equity can take no place, my Lords and Grace may liue in quiet, and the Kings Maiesties affaires maintained in such order, as by his Maesties Counsellours shall bee thought conuenient; matre to put himselfe simply into your hands, hauing heard as both wee and he haue, without first knowledge vpon what conditions, it is not reasonable. Litle short my Lords, and they say, you seeke his bloud & his death which if you do, and may haue him other-wise conformable to reason, and by extremity driue him to seeke extremity again, the bloud of him and others that shall die on both sides inocently, shall bee by God iustly required at your hands. And when peraduenture you would haue him againe vpon occasion of seruice, you shall foorethinke to haue lost him. Wherefore good my Lords, wee beseech you againe and againe, if you haue conceiued any such determination, to put it out of your heads, and enclyne your hearts to kindenesse and humanity, remembring that hee hath neuer beene cruell to any of you, and why should you bee cruell to him: as we trust you be not, whatsoeuer hath beene said, but will shew your selues as conformable for your parts as his Grace is contented, for the zeale he beareth to the King and the Realme, to be of his part, as this bearer Sir Phillip Hobie will declare vnto you, to whom we pray you to giue credite, and to re-turne him hither againe with answere hereof. And thus beseeching the liuing God to direct your hearts to the making of a quiet end of these terrible tumults, we bid your Lordships most heartily well to fare. From the Kings Maiesties Castle of Windsore the eight of October 1549.

These letters notwithstanding, the same eight of October, after a common Councell in the Guild-hall at London, whither all the Lords of the Councell came, the Lord Chancellour and other declared diuers abuses of the Lord Protector, deseruing the Citizens to be aydyng and assisting with them, for the preseruing of the Kings Maiesties person, which they greatly feared, being in his aduersaries handes.

The Lords dined with Master Yorke one of the Sheriffes, and in the after noone Proclamation was made in diuers places of the Citie, with Trumpets, Heraulds, and Kings at Armes, wherein was contained diuers articles touching the euill gouernment of the Lord Protector.

Proclamation against the Lord Protector.

First, they charged him with making insurrection, whereby the quiet state of the Realme left by King Henry the eight was now disturbed, and the subiects of the Kings naturall seduced thereby.

Item, the losse of his Maiesties Pares beyond the Sea, which his Highnesse father (not long before his decease) won to the honor of himselfe, and commodity of the Realme, not without the aduenture of his owne person.

Item, that in all times of the warres in France and Scotland he hath enriched himself, and builded sumptuous & faire houses, leauing the Kings poore souldiers vnpaid of their wages.

Item, that hee hath laboured to make himselfe strong in all Countries.

That hee hath subuerted all lawes, iustice, and good order of the Realme, whereby he hath fearefully shaken the chaire of the Kings state.

That he hath little esteemed the graue aduice of the Kings gods and faithfull Councellours.

That hee hath little regarded the order appointed by the late King Henry the eight, for the gouernment of the King his Sonne, his Realmes and Dominions in his tender age.

That hee hath laboured to sowe diuision in the Realme among the Nobles, Gentlemen, and Commons.

Finally, that it is easie for euery man to see what losse the King and Realme haue of late suffered by his wilfull negligence, and lacke of prouision and furniture of the Pares beyond the Sea. Subscribed.

The Lord Rich Chancellour.
Lord Saint-Iohn, Lord great Master.
Lord Marquesse of Northhampton.
The Earle of Warwick Lord great Chamberlaine.
The Earle of Arundell Lord Chamberlain.
The Earle of Shrewsburie.
The Earle of Southhampton.
Sir Tho. Cheiney Treasurer of Houshold.
Sir Iohn Gage Constable of the Tower.
Sir William Peter Secretarie.
Sir Edward North Knight.
Sir Edward Mountague Knight, chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas.
Sir Ralph Sadler Knight.
Sir Iohn Baker Knight.
Sir Edward Wotton Knight.
Doctor Wotton Deane of Canterbury.
Sir Richard Southwell Knight.

The

The tenth of October, by a common Counsell at the Guild-hall, was granted fiue hundred men of the Citie, (100. to be hosemen) to be ready on the next morrow: and this day the Lords dined with Maister Turke, one of the Sheriffes of London.

The 11. of October, the Lords sitting at the Lord great Masters, Sir Anthony Wingfield Captaine of the Guard, was sent to the Kings at Windsore, and seuered the Lord Protector from his person, and caused the Guard to watch him till the Lords comming. On the morrow, the Lord Chancellor with the rest of the Councell, rode to Windsore to the king, and that night the Lord Protector was put in ward into Beauchamps Tower in the Castle of Windsor.

Lord Protector committed to the Tower.

The 14. of October in the after noone, the D. of Somerset was brought from Windsore, riding betwixt the Earles of Southampton, and of Huntington, through Oldborne in at Newgate, to the Tower of London, accompanied with diuers Lords and Gentlemen, and with 300. hosse: the Lord Gates, Sir Ralph Warren, Sir Iohn Gresham Maister Recorder, Sir William Lock, and both the Sheriffes, and other Knights sitting on their horses against Soper lane, and all the Officers with halbards, and from Holborne bridge to the Tower, certaine Aldermen or their Deputies on horse backe in euery Streete, with a number of householders standing with Bills as he passed. There was with him committed to the Tower, Sir Michaell Stanhope, Sir Thomas Smith, Sir Iohn Thin, Knights, Wolfe of the priuie Chamber, and Grey of Reading.

King Edward rode through London.

The 17. of October, King Edward came from Hampton Court to his place in Southwarke, then called Suffolke place, and there dined, where after dinner hee made M. Iohn Yorke one of the Sheriffes of London Knight, and then rode through the citie of London to Westminster.

Now when the Duke of Somerset was first apprehended, Steph. Gardener B. of Winchester then being prisoner in the Tower (as before ye haue heard) was borne in hand, he should be set at liberty: in hope whereof he prepared him new apparell for that purpose, thinking verily to haue come abroad within eight or ten dayes: but when he was forgotten, and nothing said vnto him, by the space of one moneth after, he thought it good to put the Lords in remembrance by his letters, wherein (after commendations had vnto them) he wrote as followeth.

I haue continued here in this miserable prison now one yeare, one quarter and one moneth, this same day that I write these my letters, with want of ayre to relieue my body, want of bookes to relieue my minde, want of good company, the onely solace of this world: and finally, want of a iust cause why I should haue come hither at all. More of this Letter came not to my hands, but that the Lords take it in good part, and laughed very merrily thereat, saying, hee had a pleasant head: for reward whereof, they gaue him leaue to remaine still in prison saue or fiue weekes after, without saying or sending any word to him, which when hee considered, then he wrote to them this letter following.

Short letters of Stephen Gardener Bishop of Winchester.

After my due commendations to your good Lordships: Howsoeuer the time is stolen from you with the multitude of businesses and varietie of matters, wherewith ye be trauailed, whereby ye rather want time (as I suppose) then be glutted with it; yet with me (being alone comfortlesse in this miserable prison) the time passeth more sensibly, and as the griefe groweth in length, so it bringeth more encombrance and trauell with it. And being now the time of Parliament, whereof I am a member in my degree called vnto it by writ, and not cast from it by any fault, but onely by power kept here: it is a double calamity to be detained in prison by so intolerable wrong, and excluded from this assembly so much against right. I haue suffered the like in the late Lord Protectors time against all reason; which God hath giuen you power now to reforme, and among many other things which in his time were wrythed amisse, no one thing (as I suppose) was of worse example, ne more preiudiciall to the good order of the high Court of Parliament, which is the direction of all mens liues, lands, and goods in this Realme, then to allow for a president, that any one man being member thereof, might without cause be excluded, and so letted to parlee there his minde in publike matters, for the wealth of the Realme, and such other priuate causes as doe occurre. If the Strength of the Parliament be not empaired by wrong in one, because right consisteth not in number, it shall be at the pleasure of him that ruleth, to doe the same in me, whereby others may take more harme then I, as experience hath shewed in such examples. But I know it becommeth mee not to reason the strength of that Court, ne the order of it: the Lawyers of this Realme know that, and to their knowledge I submit my iudgement, and take for good that they allow. But this I dare say, when Religion is entreated in a generall Councell of Christendome, if the rulers of the Councell let any mans repaire thither that hath right to be there, whatsoeuer is there concluded, is in the lawes of the world abroad taken of no force, by excluding of one member wrongfully that should furnish the body, which I write vnto your Lordships, for the good opinion I haue of you, trusting that ye intend not to vphold or follow the late Lord Protectours doings by wrong, but to fashion your proceedings, as they may agree with Iustice at home, and seeme agreeable to reason, to others abroad: being so assured of mine innocencie, that when your Lordships shall heare what can be said against me, and mine answere thereunto, there shall appeare cause why I should haue had praise, thanks, and commendations of the late Lord Protector (if truth, honesty, and due obedience might take therefore) and no cause of trouble or displeasure at all, so wrongfully haue I been tormented in this prison, so boldly dare I speake to you of my cause, with such an opinion and estimation of your wisedomes which I know, and

and reuerence, as I ought not, ne would not vainely hope to abuse you with words: but vpon certaine confidence of your indifferencies, verily I trust that ye will beare with take things in such sort, as being plainly and truly opened, shall appeare vnto you by matter indeede. In consideration whereof, I renue my suite vnto your Lordships, instantly requiring you that I may be heard according to iustice, and that with such speede, as the delay of your audience giue not occasion to such as be ignorant abroad of my matter, to thinke that your Lordships allowed and approued the detaining of me here. Which without hearing my declaration, I trust ye will not, but haue such consideration of me, as mine estate, in the Common-wealth, the passing my former life amongst you, and other respects doe require, wherein you shall binde mee, and doe agreeable to your honours and iustice: the free course whereof, you haue honourably taken vp on you, to make open to the Realme without respect, which is the onely establishment of all Common-wealthes, and therefore the zeale of him was allowed that said, *Fiat iustitia, & ruat mundus*: signifying, that by it the world is kept from falling indeede, although it might fortune otherwise in some respect, and some trouble to arise in doing it. And this I write, because in the late Lord Protectors time there was an information made vnto me, as though I were kept here by policie, which with the violation of iustice take neuer good effect, as I doubt not of your wisedomes yee can and will consider, and doe therefore accordingly: for the effectuall execution whereof, I shall not faile to pray Almighty God for the preseruation and encrease of your Honours. From the Tower. Thus much concerning these letters, haue I thought good to set downe, for that I finde not the same otherwise extant in larger discourses of the said Bishops writings.

The 29. of November, Robert Ket and William Ket his brother were deliuered out of the Tower of London, to Sir Edmond Windham Knight, and Sheriffe of Norfolke to be conueyed to Norwich, where Robert Ket was hanged in chaines on the top of Norwich Castle, and William Ket likewise hanged on the top of Windham steeple.

Robert Ket and William Ket arraigned.

Rebels lose in Scotland.

In the moneths of November and December, the Scots take Butterag in Scotland, and other holds then possessed by English men, where the Scots slew, man, woman, and childe, except Sir Iohn Lutterell the Captaine, whom they tooke prisoner.

The Lords of the Councell resorted to the Mower of London, and there charged the Lord Protector with sundry articles, which hee confessed, and subscribed vnto them as followeth.

1 First, you did take vpon you the Offices of Protector and Gouernor vpon condition expressedly and specially, that yee would doe nothing in the Kings affaires publike or priuate, but by the assent of the late Kings executors, or the most part of them.

2 Item, you contrary to the same condition and promise of your owne authority did stay and let iustice, and subuerted the lawes as well by your letters as by your commandement.

3 Item, you caused diuers persons reiued and imprisoned for treason, murther, manslaughter, and felony, to be discharged, and to goe at large, against the lawes and statutes of this Realme.

4 Item, you haue made and ordained Lieutenants for the Kings Armies, and other the Kings waighty affaires, vnder your owne writings and Seales.

5 Item, you communed with the Ambassadors of other Realmes, disceading alone with them the waighty matters and causes of this our Realme.

6 Item, you haue sometimes rebuked, cherished, and taunted as well priuately as openly, diuers of the Kings most honourable Counsellours, for shewing and declaring their mindes and aduices, or opinions against your purpose in the Kings waighty affaires, saying sometime to them, that they were not worthie to sit in Councell, and sometimes saying to them, that you made not to open matters to them, and yee will be otherwise aduised, and that yee would if they were not agreeable to your opinions, put them out, and take in other at your pleasure.

7 Item, yee had and held against the lawes in your owne house, a Court of Requests, and thereby did enforce diuers of the Kings Subiects to answere for their fee holds and goods, and determines the same to the diminution of the same lawes.

8 Item, you being no Officer, without the aduice of the Councell, of the more part of them did dispose the Offices (for money) of the Kings Gifts, and granted Leases and Wards of the Kings, and gaue presentations of the Kings Benefices and Bishoprickes, hauing none authority so to doe: and further, yee did meddle with selling of the Kings lands.

9 Item, you commanded Sophistication and Alamistry to be practised, thereby to abate the Kings coyne.

10 Item, you are charged, that ye haue diuers and many times, both openly and priuately said and affirmed, that the Nobles and Gentlemen, were the onely causes of the dearth of things, whereby the people rose, and did reforme things themselues.

11 Item, you caused Proclamations to bee made concerning Inclosures, whereby the common people haue made diuers insurrections, and leuied open warre, and destroyed and spoiled the Kings Subiects, which Proclamations went forth against the wils of all the Councell.

12 Item, you caused an Iniunction, with certaine Articles thereunto annexed, to be made out concerning Inclosures, Commons, Highwayes, decaying of Cottages, and diuers other things, giuing the Commissioners authority to heare and determine the same causes, to the subuersion of the Lawes, and Statutes of the Realme, whereby much sedition, insurrection, and rebellion haue risen and growne among the Kings Maiesties Subiects.

13 Item, you suffered the Rebels and Trai-

tors

toys to assemble and lie in campe and armour against the Kings Nobles and Gentlemen, without any speedy subduing or appeasing them.

14 Item, you did comfort and encourage diuers of the said Rebels, by giuing to them diuers summes of your owne money, and by promising to diuers of them fees, rewards, and seruices.

15 Item, you in fauour of the said Rebels did against the lawes, and caused Proclamation to be made, that none of the said Rebels or Traytors should be sued or vexed by any manner of person, for any of their offences in the said rebellion, to the cleare subuersion of the lawes here.

16 Item, you haue said in the time of rebellion, that you liked well the doings and proceedings of the said rebellious Traytors, and said that the consentment of Gentlemen gaue occasion to the common people to arise: saying, that better it were for the Commons to dye, than for to perish vtterly for lack of liuing.

17 Item, you said that the Lords of the Parliament, were loath to enclose themselues to reformation of inclosures or other things, therefore the people haue good cause to reforme the things themselues.

18 Item, you after the report and declaration of the defaults and lackes, reported to you by them that the Camp Bologne, and the pences, if you would neuer amend the faults.

19 Item, you would not suffer the Kings power beyond the sea called New-hauen and Boleines, to be furnished with men and victuals, although that yee were aduertised of the defaults thereof by the Captaines of the said peeces, as by others, and was also aduertised by the Kings Counsell, whereby the French King being the Kings enemy, was encouraged and confirmed to inuade and win the said peces, to the Kings great losse and dishonour.

20 Item, also you said, ye would not suffer the Noble men and Gentlemen, to subdue and to represse the said rebellious in time conuenient, neither would you giue any authority to the said Nobles and Gentlemen, to the subduing of the said Rebels, but wrote your letters to them to speake faire to the Rebels, and to handle them gently.

21 Item, you haue caused the first of October last past, at Hampton Court, for the defence of your owne cause, diuers seditious bils to be written in counterfaited hands, and secretly to be throwne abroad in diuers parts of this Realme, thus beguiling the good people, &c. meaning thereby for to stir and raise vp the Kings Subiects vnto armour and open warre.

22 Item, when that the Kings Maiesties priuie Counsellours of their loue and zeale that they did beare vnto the King and the Realme, did counsell at London to come to you, to the intent to commune with you charitably, to amend your doings and misgouernance, you hearing of their assembly, did cause to be declared by letters in diuers places, the said Lords to be Traytors to the King, to the great disturbance of the Realme.

23 Item, you declared and published vntruly as well to the Kings Maiestie, and other the young Lords attendant vpon his Maiesties person, and to the Kings Subiects at diuers and sundry times and places, that the said Lords at London minded to destroy the King, and you required the King neuer to forget it, but to reuenge it, and likewise required the said young Lords to put the King in remembrance thereof, to the intent to make sedition and discord betweene the Kings Maiestie and his Lords.

24 Item, you said in the moneth of October last at Hampton Court, and the 8. of the same moneth at Windsor, or at one of the same places the 8. Lords: The Lords of the Councell at London doe intend to kill me; but if I dye, the King shall die, and if they famish me, they shall famish the King.

25 Item, you caused and procured by your owne letters, the Kings people in great number to rise, and assemble in armour after the manner of war, to your ayde and defence.

26 Item, the 9. of October last, you did of your owne head, sodainly remoue the Kings Maiesties person late in the night from Hampton Court to Windsor, without any precision there made for his Grace, whereby his Highnesse was not onely in great feare, but take also such disease as was to his great perill.

27 Item, you caused your owne seruants, and friends at Hampton Court, and at Windsor to be harnessed with the Kings armour, the Kings Graces seruants hauing no armour nor harnes.

28 Item, you caused at Windsor your owne person in the night time to be garded in harnesse by many persons, leauing the Kings Maiesties person vngarded, and would not suffer his owne gard or seruants to be neer the Kings person, but appointed your seruants and friends to keepe the gates.

29 Item, you minded for to flie to Iarsey or to Wales, and laid post horse, and a boate and men for the same intent.

I Edward Duke of Somerset, haue read and considered these said 29. articles before specified, and doe acknowledge my said offences, faults, and crimes, done, and contained in the same, and most humbly prostrate on my knees, doe fully and wholy submit my selfe to the most abundant mercy and clemency of the Kings Maiestie, for the moderation of my said offences, hauing my full trust and confidence, that his Maiestie with the aduice of his Highnesse most honourable Counsaile, will consider mine offences, faults, words, and proceedings, that if any of my said offences be by his clemency, pardoned, remitted, or otherwise discharged, that I may enioy the benefit thereof, although the same become vnknowne. And farther, I doe most humbly beseech all my Lords and other his Maiesties most honourable Counsaile, not onely to be meanes to his Maiestie, to take away, and consider mine offences to haue proceeded more of ignorance, negligence, folly, wilfulnesse, and for lacke of good consideration, than of any cankered or malicious heart, euill intent or thought, tending to any treason to his Edward Duke of Somerset his first submission.

his Maiestie or Realme: but that it may please his Maiestie by the charitable aduise of their good Lordships to haue pitty vpon me, my wife, and children, and to take some mercifull way with me, not according to the extremity of his lawes, but after his great godnesse and clemencie, whereunto, whatsoeuer it shall be, I doe most humbly with all my heart submit my selfe. Written with mine owne hand the 23. day of December, in the 3. yeere of the raigne of our Soueraigne Lord King Edward the 6.

1550. Sir Thomas Seimer made Lord Seimer.

The 19. of January, Sir Iohn Russell Lord priuie Seale, was created Earle of Bedford: and Lord saint-Iohn Lord great Master, was created Earle of Wiltshire: and Sir W. Paget Comptroler of the Kings house, was made Lord Paget.

Peter Gambo and another Captaine executed.

The same day at night, were murthered by S. Peters Church aganst the Kings head without Newgate of London, two Captaines that had serued the King at Bologne and elsewhere, the one was Sir Peter Gambo, the other Fiscarga; which murther was committed by Charles Gauaro a Flemming, who came post from Warwicke to doe that act: on the morrow hee with three of his company was taken in Smithfield by the Lord Paget, and sent to Newgate; and the fourth and twentieth of Ianuary, they were all foure, Charles Gauaro, Balthasar Gauaro, Nicholas Dellaccon, and Francis Denalcico had in a Cart in Smithfield, and by the way at the place where the murther was done Charles Gauaro had his right hand stricken off on the Cart wheele, and then all hanged in Smithfield.

Lands and Offices given.

The 22. of January, Iohn Earle of Bedford, William Paget, Sir Wil. Peter Knight, one of the Kings Secretaries, and Sir Iohn Mason knight, chiefe Clerke of the Councell, were sent into France Ambassadors to the French King.

1. Ac. Reg. Offices of Land.

The 27. of January, Humfrey Arundell Esquire, Thomas Holmes, Winslowe, and Bery, Captaines of the rebels in Deuonshire, were hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Peter Officers.

On Candlemas day, William L. Saint-Iohn Earle of Wiltshire, Lord great Master, President of the Councell, was made Lord Treasurer: Iohn Dudley Earle of Warwicke, Lord great Chamberlaine, was made Lord great Master, William Parre Marques of Northampton, was made Lord great Chamberlaine: Lord Wentworth was made Lord Chamberlaine of Houshold: Sir Anthony Wingfield Captaine of the Gard, was made Comptroler of the Kings house: and Sir T. Darcy knight, was Vicechamberlaine, and Captaine of the Guard: and the Earle of Arundell late Lord Chamberlaine, wit) the Earle of Southhampton, were put off the Councell, and commanded to keepe their houses in London.

Edward duke of Somerset his second submission.

The submission of the Duke of Somerset prisoner in the tower, made the 2. of February.

I am most fearefull, and full of heauinesse, my very good Lords, to vnderstand that my last letters were no better accepted at your Lordships hands, to whom I am bound during my life, for your most gentle and mercifull dealing with me, that it pleased your godnesse to bring my cause to a fine. I trust your Lordships neuer thinke that I euer did, or would intend to stand against the Kings Maiesty and your Lordships goodnesse, or that I would goe about to maintaine my cause, saying his Maiestie and your Lordships offereth clemencie, mercy, and pardon. Although the same be to me impossible, yet I doe commit my selfe wholy to his highnesse, and your Lordships mercies, I pray onely the moderation of it. And did comfort to declare to your godnesse mine inhability to be in it: And yet referred all to his Maiesties and your lordships goodnesse, and discretion. And I most humbly before your Lordships doe confesse that I was about to contend with you Lordships, when I did speake of my conference, I might erre, in that I thought I did for the best, as I doe acknowledge and confesse, that neither I am the wisest man in the world, nor yet if I were, I should not escape, with a most singular great, but many times I should offend: But I leaue all that, and most humbly, simply, wholy, and loyally, I submit my selfe to the Kings Maiesty, and to your good Lordships: appealing from the rigour and extremity of his Maiesties lawes, to his Maiesties great mercy and clemency, praying your godnesse to be meanes to his Maiestie, not to be offended with me, nor to exclude his Maiesties mercy and bringing from me, for my rawenesse and lacke of discretion, but to accept my good minde as one that fayne would doe that were well. And when I cannot, or haue not done that thing I ought to doe, I would gladly amend, and am ready at all times, without condition to doe and suffer willingly that thing that your Lordships will appoint me, accepting what clemencie or mercie soeuer I obtaine to be of his Maiesties, and your godnesse: most humbly on my knees praying, his Maiestie and your good Lordships to pardon mine offences, and to order me for them, as to his most high mercifull clemencie shall appeare conuenient. And finally, hoping from extremity of rigour, desire mercie, as you be and are called most mercifull Councellours, not imputing my writings and doings hitherto as of frowardnesse and stubbornnesse, but onely for lacke of discretion and wisedome. For the which once againe I require pardon and fauour to bee shewed. And if it pleased your good Lordships to heare mee, I trust yee should finde me loyall vnto your Honours, and so conformable vnto your Lordships orders, that I trust to make amends, and obtaine pardon for my former folly. And thus I most humbly commit your good Lordships to almighty God: To whom I shall alwayes pray, that yee may long continue in honour. From the Tower the 2. of February.

Duke of Somerset deliuered.

The 6. of February, the Duke of Somerset was deliuered out of the Tower, and that night he supped at Sir Iohn Yorks, one of the Sheriffes of London.

The 10. of February, one Bel a Suffolk man was hanged and quartered at Tyborne, for moouing a new rebellion in Suffolke and Essex.

After diuers meetings of our Ambassadors with the Lords of Fraunce, at Bologne, a finall peace was concluded, vpon condition, that the French King paying a certaine summe of money to the King of England, should haue rendered to him the Towne of Bologne, and all the Fortes thereunto belonging, with all such artillery and munition as was thereat the taking thereof by the English: for the performance whereof hostages were by both parties to be deliuered, so that on the last day of March a generall peace was proclamed betweene the Kings of England and Fraunce, the Emperour and the Scots.

Proclamation of peace.

The 8. of April hostages on either part were deliuered, at a certaine place appointed betweene Arde and Guisnes, where at the deliuerance of the hostages of our party was the Lord Cobham Deputy of Calais, Sir Iohn Wallop Knight, Captaine of the territory and Castle of Guisnes, Sir Mawrice Denice Knight Treasurer of Calais, and Francis Hall Comptroler of the same Towne, with diuers Gentlemen and other. And on the French part there Monsieur de la Kalpe, Monsieur Chatillon, Monsieur de Traye, and other. The hostages for the English were the Duke of Suffolke, the Earle of Hertford, the Lord Matreers, the Lord Talbot, the Lord Grange, and the Lord Fitzwater. On the French part, Duke de Angyne, Marques de Mayne, Monsieur Memorancie Constable Sonne of Fraunce, Monsieur Vieldame de Chartres, la Tremoile, Monsieur Hauceden, the Admirals sonne of Fraunce.

The Citizens of London of diuers Misteries and Corporations, hauing certaine chanterie lands, for Priests wages, obits and lights, surrendred into the Kings hands by Act of Parliament, valued by the Commissioners to 1000. pounds the yere, purchased the said yerely quitrents of the King for 20000. pounds, to be paid within eight daies after, by the Councels commandement: which caused the said Corporations to sell much of their best lands, farre better cheape than they had bought their quitrents, as after 16. or 14. yeres purchase, &c.

The King sold chantry lands.

Also the Lord Maior of London, and the Aldermen purchased all the Liberties of Southwarke, which was in the Kings hands, and cost the Citie about 1000. markes.

Liberties of Southwark purchased.

The 8. of April, the Duke of Somerset came to the Court to the Kings Maiestie at Greenewich, where he was honourably receiued of the King and his Councell, and dined with the King, and was sworne of the Priuy Councell.

D. of Somerset comes to the Court.

The 12. of April, Doctor Nicholas Ridley Bishop of Rochester, was installed Bishop of London in Saint Paules Church.

Doctor Ridley Bishop of London.

The 25. of April, the Towne of Bologne was yolded to the French King, and all the marches of the same, & all English men clerely auoyded, which was done by composition, for a summe of money to be paid to the King of England, and pledges for the same deliuered, as is afore touched. Those pledges, to wit, the Duke of Suffolk, & other were redeliuered by the parties aforesaid, at the deliuery of the Towne.

Bologne yolded to the French.

The 2. of May, Ioane Knell *alias* Butcher, or Ioane of Kent, was burnt in Smithfield for heresie, that Christ tooke no flesh of the virgin Mary. There preached before her at the stake, to haue conuerted her from her heresie Doctor Story: but she not regarding his doctrine, said to him, he lied like, &c.

Ioan Butcher burnt.

Ric. Lion, Goddard Gorran, and Ris. Ireland, were executed the 14. of May, for attempting a new rebellion in Kent.

Rebels of Kent executed.

Trinity Terme was adiourned till Michaelmas, for that the Gentlemen should keepe the commons from commotion.

Terme adiourned.

The 3. of June, the Lord Lisle, sonne and heire to the Earle of Warwicke, was married to the Duke of Somersets daughter at Sheene, the Kings Maiestie being there present.

A marriage.

This yere Saint Barnabies day was kept holiday, and the same day at night the Altar in Paules Church was pulled downe, and a Table set where the Altar stode, with a Cayle rounde about it, and vpon the Sunday next there a Communion was sung at the same Table, and partly after all the Altars in London were taken downe, and Tables placed in their roomes.

1551. Saint Barnabies day holy day. Tables set in stead of Altars.

The 30. of July, Thomas Lord Wriothesley Earle of Southhampton, Knight of the Garter, and one of the executors to King Henry the 8. deceased at Lincolne place in Oldborne, and buried. was buried in Saint Andrewes Church there.

Earle of Southampton deceased.

In the moneth of August, a Piller, seruant to the piller at Battaile bridge in Southwarke, was set on the pillorie in west Cheape of London, and had both his eares cut off, for seditious words by him spoken against the duke of Somerset, as that he had proclamed himselfe King in the Country, which was false.

Bishop of Winchester deposed.

Also in the moneth of September, Grig a Poulter of Surrey, taken among the people for a Prophet, in curing of diuers diseases by words and prayers, and saying he would take no money for it, was by commandement of the Earle of Warwick, and other of the Counsell, set on a scaffold in the Towne of Croydon in Surrey, with a paper on his breast, wherein was written, his deceitfull and hypocriticall dealings. And after that on the 8. of September set on the pillorie in Southwarke, being then our Lady Faire there kept, and the Maior of London with his brethren the Aldermen riding thether the Faire, the said Grig asked them and all the Citizens forgiuenesse. Thus much for Grig.

Grig counterfeit Prophet set on the pillorie.

Of the like counterfeit Phylitian haue I noted in the summary of my Chronicles *Anno* 1382. to be set on horse backe, his face to the horse taile, the same taile in his hand as a bridle, a chaplar of Iordans about his necke, a whetstone on his breast, and so led through the Citie of London, with ringing of Basons, and banished. Whereunto I had added as followeth, Such deceiuers no doubt are many, who being neuer trayned vp in reading, or practise of Physicke and Chirurgerie, boast to doe great Cures, especially vpon women, as to make them straight that before were crooked, or bed. or crumped in any part of their bodies, &c. But

Not to take to nurse a crooked body straight, as nurse Gualtar-queen is one leape out of a docker maketh a Dotor.

if the contrary be true, for some haue receiued gold, when they haue better deserued the whereof. These words touching generally against all such counterfait Physitians, hath beene so hardly taken to heart, by one priuate person, not of the best, or second sort, (but my common aduersary) that he hath largely libelled against me, to my great slander, but to the full bewraying of himselfe, as one touched more then other that being wiser, held their peace. I forbeare to answere his libelling, as I haue before borne his false accusing, and other greater matters, still referring my cause to the Almighty: who abhorreth lying lips, and maketh the proud to stumble.

On Saint Valentines day, at Feuersham in Kent, one Arden a Gentleman was murthered by procurement of his owne wife, for the which fact, she was the fourteenth of March burnt at Canterburie: Michael Saffer Ardens man was hanged in chaines at Feuersham, and Mayden burnt: Mosbie and his sister were hanged in Smithfield at London: Greene which had fled, came againe certaine yeres after, and was hanged in chaines in the high way against Feuersham, and Blacke Will the Ruffian that was hired to doe that act, after his full escape, was apprehended, and burnt on a scaffold at Flushing in Zeland.

Stephen Gardiner Bishop of Winchester, hauing bene diuers times conueyed from the Tower of London to Lambeth, (to wit, on the 15. and the 18. of December, the 8. the 12. and the 16. of January, the 13. and 14. of February, and at euery the said times, examined by the Archbishop of Canterburie, and other the Kings high Commissioners, hee was now on the said 14. of February deposed of his Bishoprick, and committed againe to the Tower: Into his place was translated Doctor Poynet late Bishop of Rochester: and Maister Iohn Scorie was made Bishop of Rochester.

The 5. of April Sir Thomas Darcey Vicechamberlaine, and Captaine of the Gard, was created Lord Darcey at Greenwich.

The 24. of April, George of Paris a Dutch man, was burnt in Smithfield for Arrianisme.

An Arrian burnt.

Earthquake.

The 25. of May, about none, was an earthquake at Mechingly, Godstone, Titsey, Rigate, Croydon, Bennington, Alberie, and diuers other places in Southerey.

In the moneth of June, the Earle of Northampton, the Bishop of Ely, and other, were sent Ambassadors into France, who were there honourably receiued and entertained. And after that came diuers Lords of France into England, who were lodged at Suffolke place in Southwarke.

The 9. of July, the base monies (coyned in the time of King Henry the eight, and King Edward the first) was proclamed the shilling to goe for 9. pence the groate for 3. pence, which take effect immediatly after the proclamation made.

First fall of the base monies.

The 15. of April, the infectious sweating sickenesse began at Shrewsbury, which ended not in the North part of England vntill the end of September. In this space what number died, it cannot be well accounted, but certaine it is that in London in few dayes 960. gaue vp the ghost: it began in London the 9. of July, and the 12. of July it was most vehement, which was so terrible, that the people being in best health, were sodainly taken, and dead in foure and twenty houres, and twelue, or lesse, for lack of skill in guiding them in their sweat. And it is to be noted, that this mortality fell chyefely or rather on men, and those cheefe of the best age, as betweene 30. and 40. yeres, fewe women, nor children, nor aldermen died thereof. Skipping in the beginning was present death, for if they were suffered to skape but halfe a quarter of an houre, they neuer tooke after, nor had any kind pledge, but when they waxed full into pangues of death. This was a terrible time in London, for many one lost sodainly his seruants, by the sweat, and their money by the proclamation. Seuen honest householders did sup together, and before eight of the clocke in the next morning, fiue of them were dead: they that were taken with full stomackes scaped hardly. This sickenesse followed English men as well within the Realme, as in strange Countries: whereforo this nation was much afeard of it, for the same began to repent and remember God, but as the disease relented, the deuotion decayed. The first weeke died in London 800. persons.

Sweating sickenesse.

John Caius.

The 17. of August, the shilling which of late was called double to three pence, was called double to 6. d. the great to 2. d. the halfe great to one penny, the penny to one halfe penny.

Second fall of base monies.

The lake of August, Sir Francis Ingenield, Maister Walgrane, and Maister Rochester being the chefe of the Lady Mary the Kings sisters house, were committed to the tower of London.

The 10. of October, D. Day Bishop of Chychester, and Doctor Heathe Bishop of Worcester, which had lien long prisoners in the Fleat, were deposed of their Bishoprickes by the Bishop of London in Paules Church, and sent againe to the Fleat.

The 12. of October, at Hampton Court, Lord Marquesse Dorset, was created Duke of Suffolke: the Earle of Warwicke was created Duke of Northumberland: the Earle of Wiltshire was created Marquesse of Winchester: Sir W. Harbert Lord of Cardise, Maister of the horse, was made Lord of Carmarden, and created Earle of Pembroke. The King also made William Cecill his Secretary, M. Iohn Cheeke one of his Schoolemaisters, M. Henry Dudley, M. Henry Neuill Knights.

Dukes and Earles created.

The seuenth of October, Edward Seimer Duke of Somerset, Lord the Gray of Wilton, Sir Ralph Vane, Sir Thomas Palmer, Sir Myles Partridge, Sir Michaell Stanhope, Sir Thomas Arundell Knights, and diuers other Gentlemen, were brought to the Tower of London. Item, the same yeare, the Dutchesse of Somerset was also brought to the Tower. The liberties of the Stillard were seased into the Kings hands for diuers causes forfaited, contrariwise to the enterconrse.

Duke of Somerset brought to the Tower.

Liberties of the Stillard seased.

New coined gold and siluer.

The 30 of Octaber, was proclaimed a new roume both of gold and siluer, to wit, a whole Soueraigne of fine gold, 30.s. Another peece of fine gold called an Angel of 10.s. The third peece called an Angelet of fine gold of 5.s. Another peece of Crowne gold called a Soueraigne of 20.s. the halfe Soueraigne of Crowne gold of 10.s. the third peece of Crowne gold of 5.s. the fourth peece of Crowne gold of 2.s.6. pence.

A peece of siluer of 5.s. sterling, the second peece of 2.s.6. pence sterling, the third peece a shilling of 12. pence sterling, the 4. peece of 6 pence sterling, of smaller money a penny of the double Rose, not sterling but base, and halfe penny of the single rose, the 3. peece a farthing with a port close.

The Queene of Scots comming to London.

The Queene of Scots being lately arrived at Portsmouth, comming out of France, and desiring licence of the king to passe through England into Scotland, was honorably receiued, and conueied towards London: on the second day of November the said Queene came by water from Hampton Court, and landed at Paules wharffe, from whence she rode accompanied with diuers Noble men and Ladies of England beside her owne traine of Scotland to the B. of Londons pallace, where she receiued (presented by the Chamberlaine of London, as a gift of the citty) certaine kindes of victuals for her prouision, as beeues, muttons, veales, swans, and other kind of poultry meates, with bread, swell, wine, hare, war. &c. On the 4. of November the said Queene rode to the White hall at Westminster in her Chariot, accompanied with the Lady Margarite Douglas, the Dutches of Richmond, the Dutches of Suffolke, the Dutches of Northumberland, with diuers noble women of England, and Ladies of Scotland, following after her: the Dukes of Suffolke and Northumberland, and the Lord Treasurer receiuing her, within the Court gate, all the guard standing in each side: and at her entring into the hall, the King stood in the vpper end of the hall, the Earle of Warwick holding the sword afore the King, she kneeling downe, the King tooke her vp and kissed her, and by the hand led her vp in to her chamber of presence, and from thence to the Queenes chamber of presence, where he kissed all the Ladies of Scotland, and so departed for a while. And that day she dined on the Queenes side with the King, the Kings seruice and hers comming both together, the Kings on the right hand, the Queenes on the left hand, thee sitting by the King apart by his cloth of estate: All the great Ladies of England, and the Ladies of Scotland, dined in the Quenes great chamber, all most sumptuously serued. After dinner the King shewed vnto the Queene his galleries, gardens, &c. And about foure of the clock he brought her downe by the hand into the hall where he kissed her, and so she departed to the Bishoppes palace as afore.

The 6. of Nouem. the said Scottish Queene departed toward Scotland, she rode from Pauls through all the high streetes of the City, out at Bishops gate, accompanied with diuers Noblemen and women, to conuey her through the City to Shoreditch Church, the Duke of Northumberland hauing his horsemen standing in cheapside with Iauelins 100. persons, whereof 40. Gentlemen apparelled in blacke Veluet, garded with white, with veluet hats, & white feathers, and chaines of gold about their necks, next them stood 120 horsemen of the Earle of Pembrookes with blacke Iauelins, hats and feathers, next them stood 100. of the Lord treasurers gentlemen and yemen, with Iauelins, with three rankes of horsemen, compassed from the crosse in Cheape, to Birchen lane end: and when the said nobles had brought her to Shoreditch Church they tooke their leaue and departed, the Sheriffs of London had the conduction of her to Waltham townes end, where they left her, and harbengers were sent afore into euery shire to the Borders of Scotland, that euery Sheriffe in euery shire, accompanied with the gentlemen of the countrey, should receiue her, and making prouision for lodging and victualing both for her selfe, family, and horses, till she came to the borders of Scotland at the charges of the shires.

The Earle of Arundell and the Lord Page sent to the Tower.

The 30. and last of Nouem. by commandement from the Kings Councell, order was taken in London, that euery householder should lie in his family, and keepe his house, hauing in a readinesse that day a man in harnesse in euery house, but not to goe abroad till they should be called, if need were: and further that on the night following there should be kept a good and substantiall watch of houholders in euery ward which was so done.

And on the next morrow being the first of December, the Duke of Sommerset was had from the Tower of London, by water, and thor London bridge at fiue of the clocke in the morning, and so went to Westminster, where was made ready a great Scaffold in Westminster Hall, and there the said Duke appeared before the Lords and Peeres of the Realme, the Lord William Poulet Marquesse of Winchester and L. high Treasurer of England, that day sitting vnder the cloth of estate as high Steward of England, the inditement of the said Duke being read, he was immediatly arraigned on the same of felony and Treason, and after tryed by his Peeres the nobles there present, which did acquit him of the Treason, but found him guilty of the felony: whereupon after their verdit giuen, her had iudgement to bee had from thence to the place hee came from, and from thence to the place of execution, there to bee hanged till hee were dead: but the people in the hall supposed he had beene clearely quit, when they saw the Axe of the Tower put downe, made such a shrike casting vp of caps, &c. that their cry was heard to the long Acre beyond Charing crosse, which made the Lords astonied. About 5. of the clocke at night the said Duke landed at the Crane in the Vintry, and so was had through Candlewicke Street to the Tower.

The 7. of December, there was a muster before the King in S. Iames field beyond Charing crosse, the King sitting on horseback with his prinie

D. of Somerset arraigned and condemned.

Duke of Somerset beheaded.

Master of horsemen before King Edward.

prinie Councell about him. First, came the Kings Pentioners riding all in complete harnesse, foure Trumpeters riding before them: then the Kings Standard, and euery Pentioner had two men following after them with their speares: then followed a hundred of the Lord Treasurers men, with a Trumpet and a Standard afore them: next a hundred of the Duke of Northumberlands men, with a Trumpet and a Standard, forty of them in veluet coates on their Harnesse: next the Lord prinie Seales men, a hundred, with a Trumpet and a Standard: next the Marquesse of Northhamptons men, a hundred, with a Trumpet and a Standard: next the Earle of Rutlands men, fifty, with a Trumpet and a Standard, twenty of them in veluet Cassocks on their Harnesse: next the Earle of Huntington, fifty with a Trumpet and a Standard: next the Earle of Pembrokes men, 100. with a Trumpet and a Standard: next the Lord Darcie 50. with a Trumpet and a Standard: last of all, the L. Wardens of the Cinque Ports 100. with a Trumpet and a Standard. All these rode twice afore the King, fiue in a ranke, all in complete harnesse, and well hosed.

The 20. of December, Doctor Tunstall Bishop of Durham, which had long laine at his house by Colbarbard in Thames Street, was had from thence to the Tower of London.

1552. The 21. of December, the great Seale was taken from the Lord Rich, being then Lord Chancelour of England, by the D. of Northumberland, and the Earle of Pembrooke in the afternone: and on the next morrow the keeping thereof was committed to Doctor Godrike Bishop of Ely, one of the Kings Councell, he was sworne Lord Chancellour on the 22. of Januarie in the Chancery, the Lord Treasurer gaue him his oath.

Duke of Somerset beheaded. The 22. of January, Edward Duke of Somerset was beheaded on the Tower hill. The same morning early, the Constables of euery Ward in London (according to a precept directed from the Councell to the Maior) streightly charged euery Houshold of the same Citie, not to depart any of them out of their houses, before tenne of the clocke of that day, meaning thereby to restraine the great number of the people, that otherwise were like to haue beene at the said execution: notwithstanding by seuen a clocke the Tower hill was couered with a great multitude, repairing from all parts of the Citie, as well as out of the Suburbes, and before 8. of the clocke the Duke was brought to the scaffold enclosed with the Kings Guard, the Sheriffes Officers, the Wardens of the tower, and other with Halbards, the Duke being ready to haue been executed, suddenly the people were driuen into a great feare, sets of none knowing the cause: wherefore I thinke it good to write what I saw concerning that matter.

Great feare with small cause.

The people of a certaine Hamlet, which were warned to be there by seuen of the clocke, to giue their attendance on the Lieutenant, now came through the Posterne, and perceiuing the Duke to be already on the scaffold, the foremost began to run, crying to their fellowes to follow fast after: which inconuenelle of these men being weaponed with Bils and Halbards thus running, caused the people which first saw them, to thinke some power had come to haue rescued the Duke from execution, and therefore to cry away, away, whereupon the people ran some one way some another, many fell into the Tower ditch, and they which tarried thought some pardon had beene brought, some said it thundered, some that a great rumbling was in the earth vnder them, some that the ground mooued, but there was no such matter, more than the trampling of their feete, which made some noyle.

The 17. of February, on which day was receiued the bookes of the reliefe of all the Wards of London towards the new Hospitals by the Kings Commissioners. The Councell dined at M. Cowpers the Sheriffe, and after dinner M. Tho. Courtes Alderman, came thither to speake with the Lord Chancellour for a matter he had depending afore him in the Chancerie: but for his misdemeanour in words and gestes to the Lord Chancelour at that time, the said M. Courteys was committed to Ward in the Fleete.

An. Reg. 6. Sir Ralph a Vane & other executed. The 26. of February, sir Ralph a Vane and sir Miles Partridge were hanged on the Tower hill, sir Michaell Stanhope with sir Thomas Arundell, were beheaded there: all which foure persons tooke on their death, that they neuer offended against the Kings Maiestie, nor against any of his Councell.

House blowen vp with gunpowder. The last of April, through negligence of the Gunpowder-makers, a certaine house neere to the Tower of London, with their last of powder, was blowne vp and burnt, the Gunpowder-makers being 15. in number, were all slaine.

Muster of horsemen. The 16. of May, was a goodly muster of horsemen made before the King in the Parke of Greenwich.

Under the Kings banner, his band of Pentioners, in number 150. euery Pentioner two great horses and a gelding, the Lord Bray their Lieutenant.

The Lord Marquesse of Winchester high Treasurer, under his banner the Faulcon one hundred men.

The Duke of Northumberland, great Master of the Kings houshold, under the white Lyon and the ragged staffe fifty.

The Duke of Suffolke, under the Unicorne in the starre, an hundred and ten.

The Earle of Bedford, Lord prinie Seale vnder the Goate, an hundred.

The Marques of Northhamton high Chamberlaine, vnder the Mayden-head, an hundred.

The Earle of Warwick Master of the kings horses, vnder the white Lyon fifty.

The Earle of Huntington vnder his banner fifty.

The Earle of Rutland vnder the Peacocke, fifty.

The Earle of Pembrooke vnder the greene Dragon, fifty.

The Lord Darcie vnder the Paydens body, fifty.

The Lord Cobham vnder the Sariyens head, fifty.

The Lord Clinton Lord Admirall vnder the Anchor, fifty.

The Lord Warden of the fiue Ports, vnder the Rose in the sunne beames, an hundred.

To Greene, Garter and George taken from the Lord Paget by the Kings appointment.

In the moneth of Aprill before S. Georges day, Garter the King of Armes was sent by the Kings Maiestie, to the Lord Paget, prisoner in the Tower of London, to fet and take from him the said Lord Paget the Garter & George, appertaining to the order of the Garter, which Garter and George, the said King at Armes called Garter, tooke from the said Lord Paget in such order, as the same was deliuered to him when he was made Knight of the same Order. And the said Lord Paget was well content (as it seemed) to part therewith, saying it was the Kings pleasure it should be so. The King sent the same Garter and George to the Earle of Warwick, sonne and heire to the Duke of Northumberland, who was made Knight of the said Order, in roome and place of the other.

Gray Friers in London an Hospitall.

The 26. of July, began the preparing of the Gray Friers house in London for the poore fatherlesse children: and also in the latter end of the same moneth, begun the repairing of Saint Thomas Hospitall in Southwarke, for poore impotent and lame persons.

A monster.

The third of August, at Stoddleton 11. miles from Orford, a woman brought forth a childe, which had two perfect bodies from the nauell vpward, and were so ioyned together at the nauell, that when they were laid in length, the one head and body was Eastward, and the other West: the legges for both the bodies grew out at the midst where the bodies ioyned, and had but one vsue for the exercments of both bodies: they lined eightene dayes, and were women children.

Great fishes.

The 8. of August, were taken at Quinborough three great fishes called Dolphins, and the whole following at Blackwall, were fiue more taken, and brought to London, the least of them was more than two horse.

This moneth of August, began the great prouision for the poore in London, towards the which euery man was contributory, and gaue certaine money in hand, and couenanted to giue a certaine weekely.

Great fishes taken.

The 7. of October, were three great fishes called Whirlepooles taken at Grauesend, which were drawne vp to the bridge at Westminster.

A presse by the Merchant aduenturers.

In this moneth of October, the King demanded of the Merchant-Aduenturers by way of presse of euery Broad-cloth then Shipped to Bawmes Part, twenty shillings sterling to be paid at Antwarp for certaine debt there, and they to haue the Kings hand for the repayment thereof, which did at that time amount to more than 48000. pound.

Sergeants Feast.

The 17. of October, the Sergeants Feast was kept at Graues Inne by Oldborne, Master Robert Brooke Recorder of London, being the Principall of the new Sergeants, and fiue more besides him: the Lord Maior and Aldermen being bidden to the said Feast, rode from the Lord Maiors house vp Friday Streete through Cheape, and out at Newgate all in their scarlet Gownes to the said Graues Inne.

Booke of Common Prayer.

The first of November, being the feast of all Saints, the new Seruice Booke called Of common Prayer, began in Paules Church, and the like through the whole Cittie, the Bishop of London Doctor Ridley executing the seruice in Paules Church in the forenoone in his rochet onely, without coape or vestment preached in the quier: and at afternoone hee preached at Pauls Crosse, the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Crafts in their best Liueries being present: which Sermon tending to the setting forth the said late made Booke of Common Prayer, continued till almost fiue of the clocke at night, so that the Maior, Aldermen, and Companies, entred not into Paules Church as had beene accustomed, but departed home by Torchlight. By this Booke of Common Prayer, all coapes and vestments were forbidden through England, and Prebends of Paules left off their Hoods, the Bishops left their crosses, &c. as by an act of Parliament more at large is set out.

After the Feast of All Saints, the vpper quire in Saint Paules Church in London, where the high Altar stoode, was broken downe, and all the quire thereabout: and the Table of the Communion was set in the lower where the Priests sung.

First children in Christs Hospitall.

The 23. of November, the children were taken into the Hospitall at the Gray Friers called Christs Hospitall, to the number of almost foure hundred. And also sicke and poore people into the Hospitall of Saint Thomas in Southwarke, in which two places, the children and poore people should haue meat, drinke, lodging, and cloath, of the almes of the Citie.

First shrife of the children in Christs Hospitall.

The 3. of December, the Earle of Arundell was dispatched of imprisonment out of the Tower of London, and went from thence to his place by Strand. On Christmasse day in the afternoone, when the Lord Maior & Aldermen rode to Paules, all the children of Christs Hospitall, stood in aray from Saint Laurence lane in Cheape towards Paules, all in one Liuory of russet cotton, the men children with red Caps, the women children Kerchifes on their heads, all the Maisters of the Hospitall foremost: next them the Physitians and foure Surgeons, and betweene euery twenty children one woman Keeper, which children were in number 340.

1553.

The King kept his Christmasse with open houshold at Greenwich, George Ferrers Seruant of Lincolnes Inne, being Lord of the merry disports all the 12. dayes, who so pleasantly and wisely behaued himselfe, that the King had great delight in his pastimes.

The Shreifs Lord of this Feast.

On Monday the fourth of January, the said Lord of merry disports came by water to London, and landed at the Tower-Wharfe, entered the Tower, and then rode through Tower-streete, where hee was receiued by Sergeant Vawce, Lord of Misrule to John Maynard, one of the Shreifes of London, and so conducted through the Citie with a great company of young Lords and Gentlemen, to the house of Sir George Barne Lord Maior, where he with the chiefe of his company dined, & after had a great banquet, and at his departure, the L. Maior gaue him a standing Cup, with a couer of siluer and guilt, of the value of ten pound for a reward, and also set a Hogshead of Wine, and a Barrell of Beere at his gate, for his traine that followed him, the residue of his Gentlemen and seruants dined at other Aldermens houses, and with the Shreifes, and so departed to the Tower Wharfe againe, and to the Court by water, to the great commendation of the Maior and Aldermen, and highly accepted of the King and Councell.

Bridewell giuen to the City of London.

An. Reg. 7.

In the moneth of January, the King fell sick of a Cough at White-hall, which grieuously encreased, and at the last, ended in a consumption of the lights.

Parliament.

The first of March, began a Parliament at Westminster, and all the Lords spirituall and temporall, assembled that day in the White Hall in their Robes, where a Sermon was preached in the Kings Chappel by Doctor Ridley, Bishop of London, and his Paselme with diuers Lords receiued the Communion. Which being done, the King with the Lords in order, went into the Kings great Chamber on the Kings side, which that day was prepared for the Lords house: the King sitting vnder his cloath of Estate, and all the Lords in their degrees, the Bishop of Ely Doctor Goodrike Lord Chancellour, made a proposition for the King: which being ended, the Lords departed. This was done, because the King was sickly.

The morrow after, the Burgesses sate in the common house at Westminster, and chose for their speaker Master Diar one of the late made Sergeants of the Law.

The 31. of March being good Friday, the Parliament brake vp, and was clearely dissolued at the Kings Pallace of White-Hall, at seuen of the clocke at night.

First shrife of the children in Christs Hospitall in Spittall.

The 3. of Aprill, being Monday after Easter day, the children of Christes Hospitall in London came from thence through the Citie to the Sermon kept at S. Mary Spittle, all cloathed in plonket coates and red Caps and the mayden children in the same Liuory, with Kerchifes on their heads, all which with their Patrones and other Gouernours, were there placed on a scaffold of 8. stages, and there sate the same time, which was a goodly shew.

The tenth of Aprill, the Lord Maior of London was sent for to the Court at White-hall, and there at that time the Kings Maiestie gaue to him, to the Communalty, and Citizens, for to be a Worke-house for the poore and idle persons of the Citie of London, his place of Bridewell, and seuen hundred marke land of the Sauoy rents, with all the beds, bedding, and other furniture of the Hospitall of the Sauoy, towards the maintenance of the saide Worke-house of Bridewell, and the Hospitall of S. Thomas in Southwarke. King Edward confirmed the said Gift, by his Charter dated the 26. of June next following.

Iewels and Church plate called into the Kings hands.

The 11. of Aprill, the Lord Maior was presented to the King in his Pallace of White-hall at Westminster, and was made Knight by his Maiestie, and the same day the King removed in the afternoone to Greenwich.

In this moneth of Aprill and in May, Commissioners were directed through England, for all the Church goods remaining in Cathedrall and Parish Churches, that is to say, Iewels of gold and siluer, croslets, candlesticks, censors, chalices, and all other such like, with their readdy money, to be deliuered to the Maister of the Kings Iewels in the Tower of London, all Coapes and Vestments of cloath of gold, cloath of Tissue, and siluer, to the Maister of the Kings Wardrobe in London, the other Coapes, Vestments, and ornaments to be sold, and the money to be deliuered to the Kings Treasurer sir Edmund Peckham Knight, referring to euery Church one Chalice or Cup, with table-clothes for the Communion boord, at the discretion of the Commissioners, which were for London the Lord Maior, the Bishop, the Lord chiefe Iustice, with other.

Voyage to Muscouy.

The 20. of May, by the encouragement of one Sebastion Cabot, three great Shippes well furnished, were set forth for the aduenture of the vnknowne voyage to Muscouia, and other East parts by the North Seas, diuers Merchants, and other being free of that voyage, payed towards the charges of the same fine and twenty pounds a peece. Sir George Barnes and Sir William Garrard being the principall doers therein.

About the same time, two other Ships were sent to seeke aduentures Southwards.

There note-worthy ge-stes at Durham place.

Whiles King Edward lay dangerously sick, Lord Guilford, the Duke of Northumberlands fourth sonne, married Lady Iane the Duke of Suffolkes daughter, whose mother being then aliue, was daughter to Mary King Henries sister, which was first married to the French King, and after to Charles Duke of Suffolke. Also the Earle of Pembrokes eldest son married Lady Katherine, the Dukes second daughter. And Martin Keyes Gentleman Poyter, married Mary the third daughter of the Duke of Suffolke. And the Earle of Huntingtons son called L. Hastings, married Katherine youngest daughter to the Duke of Northumberland.

King Edward deceased.

K. Edward being about the age of 16. yeares, ended his life at Greenwich, in the 6. of July, when he had raigned fiue yeares, fiue moneths, and odde dayes, & was buried at Westminster. He was in this his youth a Prince of such towardnesse in vertue, learning, and all godly gifts, as seldome hath beene seene the like.

K. Edwards death opened.

The 8. of July, the Lord Maior of London was sent for to the Court then at Greenewich, to bring with them sixe Aldermen, as many Merchants of the Staple, and as many Merchant Aduenturers, into whom by the Councell was secretly declared the death of King Edward, and also how hee did ordaine for the succession of the Crowne by his Letters Patents, to the which they were sworne, and charged to keepe it secret.

Lady Iane proclaimed Quene.

The 10. of July, in the afternoone about 3. of the clocke, Lady Iane daughter to Francis Dutchelle of Suffolke (which Lady Iane was married to the Lord Gilford Dudley, fourth sonne to the Duke of Northumberland) was conuayed by water to the Tower of London, and there receiued as Quene. After fiue of the clocke the same afternoone, was proclamation made of the death of King Edward the sixt, and how hee had ordained by his letters Pattents, bearing date the 21. of June last past, that the Lady Iane (as is afore said) sheuld be heire to the crowne of England, and the heire males of her body, &c.

Gilbert Pot punished in Cheape.

The 11. of July, Gilbert Pot drawer to Ninion Saunders Vintner, dwelling at S. Iohns head within Ludgate, who was accused by the said Saunders his Master, was set on the Pillory in Cheape with both his eares nailed, and cleane cut off for words speaking at the time of the proclamation of Lady Iane, at which execution was a Trumpet blowne, and a Herault in his coate of Armes read his offence, in presence of William Garrard, one of the Sheriffes of London.

Men drowned at London bridge.

About 5. of the clocke the same day in the afternoone, Ninion Saunders Master to the said Gilbert Pot and Iohn Owen a Gunmaker, both Gunners of the Tower, comming from the Tower of London by water in a Whirry, and shooting London bridge towards the Black Friers, were drowned at S. Mary Lock, and the Whirry men saued by their Oyes.

Lady Mary proclaimed Quene at Norwich.

The 12. of July, the Lady Mary sent to Norwich to be proclaimed there, which they refused to doe, for that they were not certaine of the Kings death: but on the next day after, they did not onely proclaime her, but also sent her men and Munition to ayde her.

The same 12. of July, word was brought to the Councell, being then in the Tower with the Lady Iane, that the Lady Mary, eldest daughter to King Henry the eight, was at Kenninghall Castle in Norfolke, and with her the Earle of Bath, Sir Thomas Wharton, sonne to the Lord Wharton, Sir Iohn Mordant, sonne to the Lord Mordant, Sir William Drury, Sir Io. Shelton, Sir Henry Bedingfield, M. Henry Iermingham, Master Iohn Sulierde, M. Richard Freston, Master Sargeant Morgan, M. Clement Higham of Lincolnes Inne, and diuers others, and also that the Earle of Suffer, and Master Henry Ratcliffe his Sonne were comming towards her: whereupon by speedy Councell it was there concluded, that the Duke of Suffolk with certaine other Noble men, should goe towards the Lady Mary, to fetch her vp to the Tower: this was first determined: but by night of the same day, the said voyage of the Duke of Suffolke, was cleane dissolued by the speciall meanes of the Lady Iane his daughter, who taking the matter heauily, with weeping teares made request to the whole Councell, that her Father might tarry at home in her company: whereupon the Councell perswaded with the Duke of Northumberland, to take that voyage vpon him, saying, that no man was so fit therefore, because that he had atchieued the victory in Norfolke once already, and was therefore to feared, that none durst once lift vp their weapon against him: besides that, he was the best man of warre in the Realme, as well for the ordering of his Campes and Souldiers both in battell and in their Tents, as also by experience, knowledge, and wisedome, he could animate his Army with witty perswasions, and also pacifie and slay his enemies pride with his stout courage, or else to discomfite them if neede were, from their enterprise. Finally, said they, this is the shoot and long, the Quene will in no wise graunt, that her Father shall take it vpon him: wherefore (quoth they) we thinke it good, if it may please your Grace, it lyeth in you to remedy the matter. Well (quoth the Duke then) since ye thinke it good, I and mine will goe, not doubting of your fidelity to the Quenes Maiestie, which I leaue in your custodie: so that night hee sent for both Lords, Knights, and other that should goe with him, and caused all things to be prepared accordingly: then went the Councell in to the Lady Iane, & told her of her conclusion, who humbly thanked the Duke for referring her Father at home, and beseeched him to vse his diligence, whereto he answered, that he would doe what in him lay.

Preparation to goe against Lady Mary.

The morrow following, great preparation was made, the Duke early in the morning called for his owne harnesse, and sain it made ready at Durham place, where hee appointed all his retinue to meete.

The same day Carts were laden with Munition and Artillery, and field Peeces were set forward.

The same forenoone the Duke moued estsones the Councell to send their powers after him, as it was before determined, the same to meete with him at New Market, and they promised they would. Hee said further to some of them: My Lords, I and these other Noble personages, with the whole Army that now goe forth, as well for the behalfe of you and yours, as for the establishing of the Quenes Highnesse, shall not onely aduenture our bodies and liues amongst the bloudy strokes and cruell assaults of our aduersaries in the open fields, but also we doe leaue the conseruation of our selues, children, and families at home here with you, as altogether committed to your truth and fidelities, whom, if wee thought ye would through malice, conspiracie, or discention leaue us your friends in the hiers and betray vs, we could as well sundry wayes forsee and prouide for our owne safegards, as any of you, by betraying vs, can doe for yours. But now vpon the onely trust and faithfulnesse of your Honours, whereof we thinke our selues most assured, we doe hazard our liues, which trust and promise if ye shall violate, hoping thereby of life and promotion, yet shall not God count you innocent of our bloods, neither acquite you of the sacred and holy oath of allegeience made fro ly by you to this vertuous Lady the Quenes Highnesse, who by your and our enticement, is rather of force placed

Duke of Northumberland sent against the Lady Mary, his Souldiers & the Lords.

ced therein, than by her owne seeking and request. Consider also, that Gods cause, which is the preferment of his word, and feare of Papists entrance, hath beene (as ye haue here before alwayes said) the originall ground whereupon ye erien at the first motion graunted your good wils and consents thereunto, as by your hands writing appeareth: and thinke not the contrary, but if ye meane deceite, though not forthwith, yet hereafter God will reuenge the same.

I can say no more, but in this troublesome time with you to vse constant hearts, abandoning all malice, enuie, and priuate affections: and therewithall the first course for the Lords came vp, whereforee the Duke shut vp his talke with these words; I haue not spoken to you in this sort vpon any mistrust I haue of your truthes, of which alwayes I haue euer hitherto conceiued a trusty confidence, but I haue put you in remembrance thereof, what chance of variance so euer might grow amongst you in mine absence, and this I pray you, with me not woorse good speede in this iourney, than ye would haue to your selues. My Lord, saith one of them, if ye mistrust any of us in this matter, your Grace is farre deceiued, for which of us can wash his hands cleane thereof? and if we should shunke from you as from one that were culpable, which of us can excuse himselfe to be guiltlesse? therefore herein your doubt is too farre cast, I pray God it be (quoth the Duke) let us goe to dinner: and so they sate downe. After dinner the Duke went in to the Quene, where his Commission was by that time sealed, for his Lieutenantship of the Army, and then tooke his leaue of her, and so did certaine other Lords also.

Then as the Duke came through the Councell chamber, he tooke his leaue of the Earle of Arundel, who prayed God to be with his Grace, saying, hee was sorie it was not his chance to goe with him, and beare him company, in whose presence hee could finde in his heart to spend his bloud, euen at his feete: then the Earle of Arundell tooke Thomas Louell the Dukes boy by the hand, and said, Farewell gentle Thomas with all my heart. Then the Duke, with the Lord Marquesse of Northampton, the L. Grey, and diuers other, tooke their barge, and went to Durham place, and to White hall, where that night they mustered their men: and the next day in the morning, the Duke departed with the number of 600. men, or there about. And as they rode through Shoreditch, saith the Duke to the Lord Grey, the people preste to se vs, but not one saith God speede vs.

The same day sir Iohn Gates and other went out after the Duke.

By this time word was brought to the Tower, that the Lady Mary was fled to Framlingham Castle in Suffolke; where the people of the Countrey almost wholy resorted to her: and that William Lord Windsor, sir Edward Hastings, Sir Edm. Peecham with others, were proclaiming Quene Mary in Buckinghamshire, sir Io. Williams in Oxfordshire, &c.

About this time, fiue ships well manned, that were appointed to lye before Parmouth, and to haue taken the Lady Mary if thee had fled that way, were by force of weather driuen into the Hauen, where one Master Iermingham was ruling power on the Lady Maries behalfe, who hearing thereof, came thither, whereupon the Captaines tooke a Boat and went to the Ships, but the Saylers and Souldiers asked Master Iermingham what he would haue, and wyether he would haue their Captaines or no? and hee said yea: marry said they, ye shall haue them, or we will throw them into the bottome of the Sea, but the Captaines said forthwith, that they would serue Quene Mary willingly, and so brought forth their men, and conueyed with them their great Ordnance: Of the comming of these Ships the Lady Mary was wonderfull ioyous, and afterward doubted little the Dukes puissance: but when newes thereof was brought to the Tower, each man there began to draw backward, and ouer that, word of a greater mischefe was brought to the Tower, that is to say, that the Noble-mens Tenants refused to serue their Lords against Quene Mary.

The Duke thought long for his succours, and wrote somewhat sharply to the Councell at the Tower in that behalfe, as well for lack of men as of Munition, but a slender answere had hee againe: And from that time forward certaine of the Councell, to wit, the Earle of Pembrooke, and Sir Thomas Cheney Lord Warden, and other sought to get out of the Tower to consult in London, but could not yet.

I god thats seruice.

The 16. of July, being Sunday, D. Ridley Bishop of London, by commandement of the Councell preached at Paules Crosse, where he vehemently perswaded the people in the title of the Lady Iane, late proclaimed Quene, and inueyed earnestly against the title of Lady Mary, and the Lady Elizabeth her sister.

The 17. of July, the Lord Treasurer was gone out of the Tower to his house in London at night, and forthwith about 7. of the clock the gates of the Tower vpon a sodaine were shut vp, and the Keyes borne vp to the Lady Iane, which was for feare of some packing in the Lord Treasurer, but hee was fetched againe to the Tower, about 12. of the clock in the night.

The 18. day, the Duke perceiuing that the succours promised came not to him, and also receiuing from some of the Councell letters of discomfort, he returned from Bury back againe to Cambridge.

The Councell assembled at Barnards Castle.

The 19. of July, the Councell, partly moued with the right of the Lady Maries cause, partly considering, that the most of the Realme was wholy bent on her side, changed their minds, and assembled themselues at Baynards Castle, where they communed with the Earle of Pembroke, and the Earle of Shrewsbury, with sir Iohn Mason, Clearke of the Councell, spake to the Lord Maior secretly, that he with the Sheriffes, and such other of the Aldermen, with the Recorder, as he thought best, to meete him and the Councell at Baynards Castle, within lesse than an houre, which they did: where the Councell declared to the Lord Maior and his brethren.

then, that he and they must ride with them into Cheape to proclaime a new Queene, which was the Lady Maries grace, daughter to King Henry the eight; and they riding from thence to Paules Churchyard, and into Cheape, the people were so assembled, that the Lords could not ride by them to the Croſſe, where Maſter Garter King at Armes in his rich Coate of Armes, with a Trumpet being ready, the Trumpet was ſounded, and then they proclaimed the Lady Mary, daughter to King Henry the eight, and Queene Katherin, Queene of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the Faith, &c. Which Proclamation ended, the Lord Maior and all the Councell rode to Paules Church, where the Canticle of *Te Deum* was ſung. And the ſame night the Earle of Arundell, and the Lord Paget rode in poſt to Queene Mary with 30. horſe with them.

The 20. of July, Iohn Duke of Northumberland, being then in Cambridge, and having ſure knowledge, that the Lady Mary was by the Nobility, and others of the Councell proclaimed at London proclaimed Queene; about nine of the clocke the ſame night, he with ſuch other of the Nobility as were in his company, came to the higheſt Croſſe of the Towne, and calling for an Herauld, himſelfe proclaimed Queene Mary, and throwe other hee there up his owne Cap, and William an Heare after hee had Letters from the Councell, by the hands of Richard Rofe Herauld: Dated at Weſtminſter the 20. of June in forme following.

In the name of our Soveraigne Lady Mary the Queene, ſo be declared to the Duke of Northumberland, and all other of his bands of what degree ſo euer they be.

We ſhall command a charge in the Queenes Highneſſe name, the ſaid Duke to diſarme himſelfe, and to cauſe all his men of warre: and to forbeare any part of his Armes to doe any villany, or any thing contrary to the peace: and himſelfe to forbeare his coming to this Citie, until the Queenes pleaſure be expreſſedly declared unto him. And if he will ſhew himſelfe like a true ſubiect, we will then continue as we have begun, as humble ſuters to our Soveraigne Lady the Queenes Highneſſe for him and his, and for our ſelues. And if he doe not, we will not faile to ſpend our lives in ſubduing him and his.

Item, we ſhall declare the like matter to the Marqueſſe of Northampton, and all other Noble men and Gentlemen, and to all men of warre in his with any of them.

Item, we ſhall in all places where we come, notifie it: If the Duke of Northumberland doe not ſubmit himſelfe to the Queenes Highneſſe, Queene Mary, he ſhall be accepted as a traytor. And all wee of the Nobility that were Counſellours to the late King, will to the vttermoſt portion, perſecute him and his to their vtter confuſion. Thomas Cant. Archbiſhop, Thomas Elie Chancellor, Will. Winchester Marqueſſe, I. Bedford Earle, H. Suffolke Duke, F. Shrewſbury Earle, W. Penbrough Earle, Thomas Darcy Lord Chamberlain, R. Cotton, W. Peter Secretary, W. Cecill ſecond Secretary, I. C. I. Baker Chancellour of the Tenths, I. Maſon Maſter of Requeſts, R. Bowes Maſter of the Rolls.

The rumour of theſe Letters was no ſooner abroad, but every man departed. And ſhortly after, the Duke was arreſted in the Kings Colledge by one Maſter Sleggs, Sergeant at armes. At the laſt Letters were brought from the Councell at London, that all men ſhould gee each his way: Whereupon the Duke ſaid to them that kept him, Yee doe me wrong to withdraw my liberty, ſee not the Councels Letters with out exception, that all men ſhould gee whither they would? At which words, they that kept him and the other Noble men, ſet them at liberty, and ſo continued they for that night. Inſomuch, that the Earle of Warwicke was ready in the morning to have rode away, but then came the Earle of Arundell from the Queene to the Duke into his Chamber, who went out to make him, and as ſoone as hee ſaw the Earle of Arundell, he fell on his knees, and deſired him to be good to him, for the loue of God; conſider (ſaith he) I have done nothing but by the conſents of you and all the whole Councell: My Lord (quoth the Earle of Arundell) I am ſent hither by the Queenes Maieſty, and in her name I doe arreſt you: and I obey it my Lord (quoth he) I beſeech you my Lord of Arundell (quoth the Duke) vſe mercy towards me, knowing the caſe as it is: my Lord (quoth the Earle) ye ſhould have ſought for mercy ſooner, I muſt doe according to my commandement, and therewith he committed the charge of him, and of other to the Guard and Gentlemen that ſtood by.

The 25. of July, the Duke with other were brought up to the Tower of London, under the conduct of Henry Earle of Arundell, with a great number of light Horſemen, Bowes and Speares, they came into London at Biſhops gate, all the ſtreetes as hee paſſed by ſtanding with men, in harneſſe alone every mans doore, till he came to the Tower-Wharfe: the priſoners names that came in at that time, were the Duke of Northumberland, the Earle of Warwicke, the Earle of Huntington, the Lord Haſtings, Lord Ambroſe Dudley, Lord Henry Dudley, Sir Andrew Dudley, Sir Iohn Gates, Henry Gates, Sir Thomas Palmer, Doctor Sands, but when they came to the Tower, the Earle of Arundell diſcharged the Lord Haſtings, and had him alway with him.

On the five and twentieth, the Lord Marqueſſe of Northampton, the Biſhop of London, the Lord Robert Dudley, and Sir Robert Corbet were brought from the Queenes Campe into the Tower. And thus was the matter ended without bloudſhed, which men feared would have brought the death of many thouſands.

Duke of Northumberland arreſted.

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF QVEENE MARY.

An. Reg. 1.

MARY, the eldeſt daughter of King Henry the eight, began her raigne the firſt of July, in the yeare 1553. when ſhe diſſolued her Camp at Framingham, which was to the number of 13000. men, the Earle of Suſſex being Lieutenant of the Armie: victualls were of ſuch plenty, that a barrell of Beare was ſold for five pence with the caske, and foure great loaues of bread for a penny.

The 27. of July, Sir Roger Cholmeley Lord chiefe Iuſtice of the Kings Bench, Sir Edmond Mountague Lord chiefe Iuſtice of the common pleas, were ſent to the Tower, on the next morrow Henry Duke of Suffolke, and Sir Iohn Cheek, were had to the Tower.

On the 30. of July, the Lady Elizabeth ſiſter to the Queene, rode from her place at Strand (where ſhee had lien the night before) through the Citie of London, out of Aldgate toward the Queene, accompanied with 1000. Horſe, of Knights, Ladies, Gentlemen, and their ſeruants.

On the 31. of July, the Duke of Suffolke was diſcharged out of the Tower, by the Earle of Arundell, and had the Queenes pardon.

Queene Mary came from Wanſtead in Eſſex, to London on the third of Auguſt, being brought in with her Nobles very honourably, and ſtrongly, the number of velvet coates that did ride before her, as well ſtrangers as others were 740. and the number of Ladies and Gentlewomen that followed, was 180. The Earle of Arundell riding next before her, bare a ſword in his hand, and Sir Anthony Browne did beare vp her traine. The Lady Elizabeth her ſiſter followed her next, and after her the Lord Marqueſſe of Excesters wife. The Guard followed the Ladies, & after them Northamptonſhire and Deſonſhire men, and then Buckinghamſhire men, and after them the Lords ſeruants: the whole number of horſemen were eſteemed to be about 1000. The Queene ſtayed without Aldgate, before the ſtage, whereon the poore children of the Hoſpital were placed, and one of them made to her an Oration. Sir George Barnes then Lord Maior, with the Aldermen, brought her into the Citie, the Lord Maior riding next to the Earle of Arundell, with a Scepter or Mace in his hand. A great peale of Ordnance was ſhot off at the Tower of London, when the Queene entered the Citie through Aldgate, vp to Leaden-hall then downe Grace ſtreete, Fanchurch ſtreete, Marke lane, Tower ſtreete, and ſo into the Tower, where Thomas Duke of Norfolke, Doctor Gardener late Biſhop of Winchester, Edward Courtney ſonne and heire to Henry Marqueſſe of Excester, the Dutcheſſe of Somerſet, priſoners in the Tower, kneeling on the hill within the ſame Tower, ſaluted her Grace, and ſhe came to them and kiſſed them, and ſaid, theſe be my priſoners. On the next morrow, Edward Courtney was made Marqueſſe of Excester, and the other forenamed priſoners pardoned, and diſcharged in the Queenes Chamber.

The 5. of Auguſt, Edmond Bonner late Biſhop of London, priſoner in the Marſhalſea, and Cuthert Tonſtall the olde Biſhop of Durham priſoner in the Kings bench, had their pardons, and were reſtored to their Seas. Shortly after all the Biſhops which had been depriued in the time of King Edward the firſt, were reſtored to their Biſhopricks, and the other which were placed in King Edwards time, remoued: alſo all beneficed men that were married, or ſhould not forſake their opinion, were put out of their liuings, and other knowne to be of the contrary part, were ſet in the ſame, eſpecially if any were alme, that had of late bene put out of the ſame, as Biſhop Day of Chicheſter, Heath of Worceſter, &c. And the ſame day there was eight pence giuen to euery poore Houſholder throughout London.

Biſhops reſtored, and other diſplaced.

Eight penny dole to all comers.

Sir Nicholas Hare Maſter of the Rols, was made keeper of the great Seale, for the ſpace of a fortnight or there about.

The ninth of Auguſt in the afternoone, the Queene held an Obſequie in the Tower for King Edward, the Corpſe being ſung in Latine, and on the morrow a Maſſe of *Requiem*, where at the Queene with her Ladies offered. The ſame day the corpes of K. Edward was buried at Weſtminſter, the Lord Treaſurer, the Earle of Pembroke, and the Earle of Shrewſbury being cheefe mourners, with diuers other Noble men and other. Doctor Day Biſhop of Chicheſter, preached at the ſaid burriall, and all the Seruice with a Communion was in Engliſh.

Burriall of King Edward.

The 11. of Auguſt, certaine Gentlemen minding to paſſe vnder London Bridge in a Wherrie, were there ouerturned, and ſeauen of them drowned, one was Maſter T. Bridges ſonne.

When drowned at London bridge.

The 13. of Auguſt, Maſter Bourne a Canon of

of Paules preaching at Paules Crosse, not onely prayed for the dead, but also declared, that Doctor Bonner Bishop of London (late restored, and there in presence) for a Sermon by him made in the same place, upon the same Gospell, was about foure yeres since, uniustly cast into the vile prison of the Marshalsea, and there kept during the raigne of King Edward: which saying so offended some of the audience, that they breaking silence, said the Bishop had preached abomination, other some cried (meaning of the Preacher) pull him out, pull him out; and some being neere the Pulpit, began to clime: wherewith the Preacher stepped back, and one Master Bradford, a Preacher of King Edwards time, stepped into his place, and gently perswaded the audience to quietnesse and obedience, alleadging S. Paul to the Romanes: Let every soule submit himselfe to the authoritie of the higher powers, &c. Neuerthelesse, Master Bourne standing by Master Bradford, one threw a dagger at him, which hit a side post of the Pulpit, and rebounded backe againe a great way, whereupon M. Bradford take off his speach, and forced himselfe with the helpe of I. Rogers another Preacher, to convay M. Bourne out of the audience, which with great labour they brought into Pauls Scholle.

A dagger throwne at the Preacher.

The 18. of August, Iohn Dudley Duke of Northumberland, William Parre Marquesse of Northampton, and Iohn Carle of Warwicke some and heire to the Duke, were arraigned at Westminster hall, before Thomas Duke of Norfolke, high Steward of England, where the Duke of Northumberland with great reuerence towards the Iudges, protested his faith and allegeance to the Queene, whom hee confessed grieuously to haue offended, and said, that he meant not to speake any thing in defence of his fact, but requested to vnderstand the opinion of the Court in two points. First, whether a man doing any act by authority of the Queenes Councell, and by warrant of the great Seale of England, and doing nothing without the same, might be charged with treason for any thing which hee might doe by warrant thereof. Secondly, whether any such persons as were equally culpable in that crime, and those, by whose letters and commandements he was directed in all his doings, might be his Iudges, or passe vpon his tryall as his Peeres.

Duke of Northumberland, and other arraigned.

Whereunto was answered, that as concerning the first, the great Seale (which hee layd for his warrant) was not the Seale of the lawfull Queene of the Realme, nor passed by authority, but the Seale of an vsurper, and therefore could be no warrant to him. As to the second, it was alledged, that if any were as deepely to be touched in the case as himselfe, yet so long as no attaindor were of record against them, they were neuerthelesse persons able in law to passe vpon any triall, and not to be challenged therefore, but at the Princes pleasure. After which answer, the Duke vsed few words, but confessed the inditement, by whose example the other prisoners arraigned with him did the like, and thereupon had iudgement.

And when iudgement was giuen, the Duke sayd, I beseech you my Lords, all to bee humble suters to the Queenes Maiestie, and to grant mee foure requests, which are these. First, that I may haue that death which Noblemen heene had in times past, and not the other. Secondly that her Maiestie will bee gracious to my children, which may hereafter doe good seruice, considering that they went by my commandement, who am their Father, and not of their owne free willes. Thirdly, that I may haue appointed to mee some learned man for the instruction and quiet of my conference. And fourthly, that thee will send two of the councell, to commune with me, to whom I will declare such matters as shall be expedient for her and the Common weale: and thus I beseech you all to pray for me.

On the 19. of August, were arraigned at Westminster, Sir Iohn Gates, Sir Hen. Gates, Sir Andrew Dudley, and Sir Thomas Palmer, where without any Quest they pleaded guilty and submitted themselues to the Queenes mercy, and so had iudgement.

The twentieth of August, Doctor Watson Chaplaine to the Bishop of Winchester Preached at Paules Crosse, by the Queenes appoyntment, and for feare of the like tumult, as had beene the Sunday last past, certaine Lords of the Councell repaired to the Sermon, as the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Privy Seale, the Earle of Bedford, the Earle of Pembroke, the Lord Wentworth, the Lord Rich, and sir Henry Gerningham Captaine of the guard, with two hundred of the Guard, which stood about the Preacher with halberts. Also the Maior had warned the companies of the City to bee present in their liueries, which was well accepted of the Queenes Councell, and the Sermon was quietly ended.

Preacher of Paules Crosse guarded.

The twenty two of August, sir Iohn Gage Lieutenant of the Tower, deliuered to the Sheriffs of London, by Indenture these prisoners following: first Sir Iohn Gates was brought forth, and set at the Garden gate, then the Duke of Northumberland, was likewise brought forth, and Sir Thomas Palmer after him: When the Duke and sir Iohn Gates met, Sir Iohn (sayth the Duke) God haue mercy vpon vs, for this day shall ende both our liues, and I pray you forgiue mee whatsoeuer I haue offended, and I forgiue you with all my heart, although you and your Councell was a great occasion hereof: Well my Lord quoth sir Iohn Gates, I forgiue you, as I would bee forgiuen, and yet you and your authority was the originall cause of all together, but the Lord pardon you, and I pray you forgiue me. So either making obeciance to other, the Duke proceeded, and when he came vpon the Scaffolde, hee putting off his Gowne of Crane coloured Damaske, leaned vpon the East rayle, and sayd to the people: Gut people, all you that be heere present to see me die, though my death bee odious, and horrible to the flesh, yet I pray you iudge the best in Gods workes, for hee doth all for the best. And as for mee, I am a wretched sinner, and

Duke of Northumberland beheaded.

and haue deserued to die, and most iustly am condemned to die by law. And yet this act wherefore I dye, was not altogether of mee (as it is thought) but I was procured and induced thereunto by other. I was, I say induced thereunto by other: Notwithstanding, God forbid that I should name any man vnto you, I will name no man vnto you, and therefore I beseech you take not for it. I for my part forgiue all men, and pray God also to forgiue them. And if I haue offended any of you here, I pray you, and all the world to forgiue me: and most chiefly I desire forgiuenesse of the Queenes highnesse, whom I haue most grieuously offended. And I pray you all to witnesse with me, that I departe in perfect loue and charitie with all the world, and that you will assist mee with your prayers at the houre of death. The rest of his speech almost in euery point, was the like as hee had sayd in the Chappell of the Tower, in the day before, saying, when hee had made confession of his beleefe, hee had these words. And heere I doe protest vnto you good people, most earnestly, euen from the bottome of my heart, that this which I haue spoken is of my selfe, not being required nor induced thereunto by any man, nor for any fauour, or hope of life, and I take witnesse of my Lord of Worcester heere, mine olde friend and Ghostly father, that hee found mee in this minde and opinion, when hee came to me; but I haue declared this onely vpon mine owne motion and affection, and for the zeale and loue that I beare to my naturall Country. I could good people rehearse much more then by experience, that I haue of this euill that is happened to this Realme by these occasions, but you know I haue another thing to doe, whereunto I must prepare mee, for the time draweth alway. And now I beseech the Queenes highnesse to forgiue mee mine offences against her Maiestie, whereof I haue a singular hope, forasmuch, as thee hath already extended her goodnesse and clemency so farre vpon me, that whereas she might soothswith, without iudgement or any further tryall, haue put me to most vile and cruell death, by hanging, drawing, and quartering, for as much as I was in the field in Armes against her highnesse, her Maiestie neuerthelesse of her most mercifull goodnesse suffered me to bee brought to my iudgement, and to haue my tryall by law, where I was most iustly and worthily condemned. And her highnesse hath now also extended her mercy and clemencie vpon mee, for the manner and kind of my death. And therefore my hope is, that her Grace of her goodnesse will remit all the rest of her indignation and displeasure towards mee, which I beseech you all most heartily to pray for, and that it may please God long to preserue her Maiestie, to raigne ouer you in much honour and felicity. After hee had thus spoken, hee kneeled downe, saying to them that were about him: I beseech you all to beare mee witnesse that I die in the true Catholike faith, and then sayd the Psalmes of *Miserere* and *De profundis*, his *Pater noster*, and Creed of the first verses of the Psalme, *In te Domine speraui*, ending with this verse; Into thy handes O Lord I commend my spirit, and when hee had thus finished his prayers, the executioner tyed him togetherselfe, to whom hee sayd: I forgiue thee with all my heart, and doe thy part without feare. And bowing toward the Blocke, hee sayd, I haue deserued a thousand deathes, layd his head vpon the Blocke, and so was beheaded. Whose body with the head was buryed in the Tower, by the body of Edward late Duke of Somerset: so that there lyeth before the high Altar, in S. Peters Church, two Dukes, betweene two Queenes, to wit, the Duke of Somerset and the Duke of Northumberland betweene Queene Anne, and Queene Katherine, all foure beheaded.

Martirs in the Tower.

At the same time and place also, was likewise beheaded Sir Iohn Gates, and Sir Thomas Palmer, which Sir Iohn Gates in that place vsed these or like words. By comming hither this day good people is to die, whereof I assure you all I am well worthy: for I haue liued as vitiously and wickedly all the dayes of my life as any man hath done in the world. I was the greatest reader of Scripture that might be of a man of my degree: And a wicked follower thereof no liuing: for I did not read to the intent to be edified thereby, nor to seeke the glory of God: but contrariwise, arrogantly, to bee seditious, and to dispute thereof, and priuately to interpret it after my owne braine and affection. Wherefore good people I exhort you all to beware how, and after what sort you come to read Gods holy word, for it is not a trifle, or playing game to deale with Gods holy misteryes: stand not too much in your owne conceits, for like as the Bee of one flower doth gather home, and the Spyder poyson of the same, euen so you, except you humblie submit your selues to God, and charitably reade the same to the intent to bee edified thereby, it is to you as poyson, and worse: and it were better for you to let it alone. And then after he had asked the Queenes highnesse forgiuenesse, and all the world, he desired the people of their charitie to praye vnto God with him for remission of his sinnes, and then refusing the kerchiefe, layd downe his head, which was stricken off at 3. blowes. Sir Thomas Palmer, as soone as he came to the Scaffold, tooke euery man by the hand, and desired them to pray for him: then putting off his Gowne, he leaned vpon the East Rayle, and sayde these words in effect: My masters (quoth he) God saue you all: it is not vnknowne vnto you wherefore I come hither, wherefore I haue worthily well deserued at Gods handes, for I know it to be his diuine ordinance by this meanes to call me to his mercy, and to teach me to know my selfe, what I am, and wherevnto wee are all subiect: I thanke his mercifull goodnesse, for he hath caused mee to learne more in one little darke corner in yonder Tower, than euer I learned by any trauell in so many places as I haue beene, for there I (say)

Sir Iohn Gates and Sir Thomas Palmer beheaded.

I haue seene God, what he is, and how vnsearchable his wonderous workes are, and how infinite his mercies bee; I haue seene there my selfe throughly, and what I am, nothing but a lumpe of sinne, earth, dust, and of all vilenesse most vilest: I haue seene there and known what the world is, how vaine, deceitfull, traiterous, and short it is, how wicked and loathsome the workes thereof are in the sight of Gods Maiestie, how he neither regardeth the menaces of the proud men and mighty ones, neither despiseth the simplenesse of the poore and lowly which are in the same world. Finally, I haue seene there what death is, how neere hanging ouer euery mans head, and yet how vncertaine the time, and how vnknowne to all men, and how little it is to be feared, and should I feare death? or be sad therefore? how I not fame two die before mine eyes? Yea, and within the hearing of mine eares? No, neither the sprinkling of the blood, or the bedding thereof, nor the bloody axe it selfe shall make mee afraid; and now taking my leaue to the same, I pray you all to pray for mee: come on good fellow (quoth he) art thou he that must do the deed? I forgiue thee with all my heart, and then kneeling downe, layeng his head on the blocke, said, I will see how neate the blocke is for my necke, I pray thee strike not yet, for I haue a few prayers to say, and that done, strike on (God Name, good leaue haue then, his prayers ended, and bestring each man to pray for him, he laid downe his head againe, and so the executioner tooke it from him at one stroke.

New Lord Chancellor.

The 23 of August, the Queene deliuered the great Seale to Doctor Gardener, Bishop of Winchester, and made him Lord Chancellor.

Latin seruice.

The twenty seauen of August, the seruice began in Latine to be sung in Paules Church in London.

Profit to the Queene.

The first of September, the Queene demanded a profit of the City of London of 20000. l. to be repayed againe within fourteene dayes after Michaelmas next following, which summe was leuied of the Aldermen, and a hundred and twenty commoners.

Earle of Deuonshire restored.

The third of September, Edward Courtney was created Earle of Deuonshire at Richmond.

The Lord Ferrers of Chartley, the Lord chiefe Iustice, sir Roger Cholmley, the Lord Mountague, sir Iohn Cheeke, and other, were deliuered out of the Tower.

New coines

The 4. of September, was proclaimed certaine new coines of gold and siluer, a Soueraign of gold of 20. s. the halfe Soueraigne, 15. s. an angel of 10. s. the halfe angell 5. s. of siluer, the groat, halfe groat, and penny. All base coines to be current as before.

Subsidie pardoned.

Also the same day by Proclamation, was pardoned the Subsidy of 4. s. the pound lands, and two s. 8. d. the pound of moueable goods, graunted in the last Parliament of King Edward the first.

The 12. of September, the Queene remoued to Saint Iames.

The 14. and 15. of September, Ma. Latiner and Doctor Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury were sent to the Tower of London.

The 27. of September, Queene Mary came to the Tower by water, accompanied with the Lady Elizabeth her sister, and other Ladies, before whose arriuall was shot a great peale of gunnes.

The last of September, Queene Mary rode through the City of London towards Westminster, sitting in a Chariot of cloth of tissue drawne with 6. horses, all trapped with the like cloth of tissue. Shee sate in a goune of purple velues furred with powdered Ermine, hauing on her head a caule of cloth of tinsell, beset with pearle and stone, and aboue the same vpon her head, a round circlet of gold beset so richly with precious stone, that the value thereof was inestimable, the same caule and circlet being so massie and ponderous, that shee was fayne to beare vp her head with her hand, and the canape was borne ouer her Chariot. Before her rode a number of gentlemen and knights, then Iudges, then doctors, then Bishops, then Lords, then the Councell: after whom followed the knights of the Bath, thirteene in number, in their robes, the Bishop of Winchester L. Chancellor, and the Marquesse of Winchester Lord high Treasurer, next came the Duke of Norfolke, and after him the Earle of Oxford, who bare the sword before her, the maior of London in a goune of crimson Velues bare the sceptor of gold, &c. After the Queenes chariot, sir Edward Hastings led her horse in his hand: then came another chariot, hauing a couering all of cloth of siluer all white, and six horses trapped with the like, therein sate the Lady Elizabeth and the Lady Anne of Cleue, then Ladies and Gentlewemen riding on horses trapped with red Velues, and their Gownes and kirtles likewise of red Velues: after them followed two other Chariots couered with red Sattin, and the horses betrapped with the same, and certaine Gentlewomen betweene euery of the said Chariots riding in Crimson Sattin, their horses betrapped with the same, the number of the Gentlewomen so riding, were 46. besides them in the Chariots. At Fanchurch was a costly pageant made by the Genowayes: at Grace-church corner there was another Pageant made by the Easterlings. At the vpper end of Grace-street there was another Pageant made by the Florentines very high, on the top whereof there stood foure pictures, and in the midst of them and most highest, there stood an Angel all in greene, with a trumpet in his hand, and when the Trumpeter who stood secretly in the Pageant did sound his Trumpe, the Angel did put his trumpe to his mouth, as though it had bin the same that had sounded, to the great marueiling of many ignorant persons: this Pageant was made with three thousw fares of gates &c. The Conduit in Cornehill ranne wine, and beneath the Conduit a Pageant made at the charges of the city, and another at the great Conduit in Cheape, and a fountaine by it running wine. The standart in Cheape new painted, with the waites of the Citie aloft thereof playe

Coronation.

playing. The Crosse in Cheape now washed and burnished. One other Pageant at the little Conduit in Cheape next to Paules made by the City, where the Aldermen stode: and when the Queene came against them, the Recorder made a short proposition to her, and then the Chamberlaine presented to her in the name of the Maior and the City, a purse of cloth of golde, and a thousand markes of golde in it: then shee rode foorth, and in Paules Church yard against the Scholle, one Master Haywood sate in a Pageant vnder a vine, and made to her an Oration in Latine and English. Then was there one Peter a Dutchman stood on the Weathercocke of Paules steeple, holding a streamer in his hand of fiue yard long, and wauing thereof, stod sometime on the one side, and shooke the other, and then stod on his knees, to the great admiration of the people. Shee had made two triumphant arches, one aboue the Crosse, hanged with Clothes and streamers set on it, and euery corner of the bole of the Crosse, likewise set with streames and Clothes, which could not blow the Winde was so great: the said Citie had straine pound thirteene shillings and foure pence given him by the City for his coats and paines, and all his stuffe. Then there was a Pageant made against the Deane of Paules gate, where the querristers of Paules played vpon vials, and sung. Ludgate was newly repaired, painted, and richly hanged, with minstrels playing and singing there: then was there another Pageant at the Conduit in Fleetstreete, and the Temple bar was newly repaired and hanged. And thus shee passed to Whyte hall at Westminster, where shee tooke her leaue of the Lord Maior, giuing him great thankes for his paynes, and the City for their cost. On the morrow, which was the first day of October: the Queene went by water to the old palace, and there remained till about 11. of the clocke, and then went on foote vpon blew cloth, being railed on either side into Saint Peters Church, where she was solemnly crowned, and annointed by the Bishop of Winchester, which Coronation and other ceremonies and solemnities then vsed according to the olde custome, was not fully ended till it was nigh 5. of the clocke at night that shee returned from the Church, before whom then was borne three Swordes sheathed, and one naked. The great seruice that day done in Westminster hall at dinner by diuers noble men, would aske long time to write. The Lord Maior of London and twelue Citizens kept the high Cupbboorde of plate as Butlers, and the Queene gaue to the Maior for his fee a cup of golde with a couer weighing 17. ounces.

Parliament

The 5. of October, the Parliament began at Westminster, sir Iohn Yorke, and H. Dudley were deliuered out of the Tower.

Queene forgo ouer bored.

The 25. day of October, the barge of Greenwich ouer-bored, a Catch running vpon her, was ouerturned, and 14. persons drowned, and 16. saued by swimming.

Cardinall Poole.

Cardinall Poole, who had long time beene

Weathercock of Paules.

The 3. of November, the weathercocke of Paules was set vp, which cocke weighed eighty pound, hys length from the bill to the taile was 4. foote, and his breadth ouer the wings three foote and a halfe, the weight being of copper was ouer gilt.

The 13. of November, Doctor Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, Doctor Ridley, that was before Parliament Martyr, and the Lord Guilford Dudley, were arraigned at the Guild hall of London, and condemned of Treason. Hugh Carey was deliuered out of the Tower.

The Parliament was dissolued on the first of December. Also on the one and twentieth of December, began a thanksgiuing in England the Church seruice to be sung in English, as was established by the last Parliament, and as the same had beene left in the last reigne of K. Henry the eight. The Lady Anne had the Liberty of the Tower to walke in, the Queene's garden and on the hill. The Lord Admirall Clinton and the Lord Gifford Dudley, had the Libertie of the parts where they were lodged: the Marquesse of Northampton had his pardon and was deliuered.

Lotterie for the reparation of Paules.

In the beginning of the month of January, the Emperour sent Ambassadors into England to conclude a marriage betweene Philip his sonne, and Queene Mary of England.

1554.

The 14. of January, Doctor Stephen Gardiner Bishop of Winchester, Lord Chancellor of England, in the Chamber of presence at Court, made to the Lords, Iewells, and gentlemen of Queene Mary very rich, a solemne Feast, wherein was declared that the Queenes Highnesse, part for amity, and other weighty considerations had, after much Suite to the Emperour and Prince of Spaines behalfe made, determined by the consent of the Councell and Nobility, to match her selfe with the said Prince in holy Wedlocke and lawfull Matrimony: and declared further, that shee should haue for her dowrie 300000. Duckets by the yeare, with all the Seigniorie of Flaunders, and that the issue of them happened any) betweene them two should be begotten, should be heire absolute to the Kingdome of Spaine, as also to the said low Countries. The said Chancellor that they were all bound to thank God that so noble, worthy, and famous a Prince would vouchsafe so to humble himselfe, as to this marriage to take vpon him rather as a subiect, than otherwise, for the Queene, and her Councell should rule all things as they did before, and that there should be of the Councell no Straunger, neither to haue the custody of any forts or castles, &c. nor beare any rule or office in the Queenes house, or else where in all England, with diuers other Articles there by him rehearsed, wherefore he said the Queenes pleasure and request was, that his good Subiects for her sake, they would most louingly receiue him with reuerence, loue, and honour.

The next day, the Lord Maior of London with his brethren the Aldermen, were sent for to the Court, and to bring with them forty of the head Commoners of the city, vnto whom before the Councell, the Lord Chancellor made the like Oration desiring them to behaue themselues like good Subiects with all humblenesse and reuerence. Robert Dudley sonne to the late D. of Northumberland, was arraigned at the Guild hall of London of high Treason, he confessed the inditement, and had iudgement giuen by the Earle of Sussex, to be drawne, hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Within fiue dayes after, there was word brought to the Court, how that sir Peter Carow sir Gawine Carow, sir Thomas Dere, with diuers other, were vp in Deuonshire in the resisting of the King of Spaines comming thither, and that they had taken the City of Exceter, and Caſtle there into their custody.

About the 23. or 25. of January, sir James a Crofts departed from London toward Wales as it was thought, to haue raised power there.

The purpose of the Queenes marriage was so grieuously taken of diuers men, that for this and for religion, they in such sort conspired against the Queene, that if the matter had not broken out before the time by them appointed, men thought it would haue brought much trouble and danger.

Conſpiracy.

The 25. of January, sir John Gage Lord Chamberlaine, certified the Lord Maior of London that sir Thomas Wyat with certaine rebels, were vp in Kent about Maidstone, whereupon great watch was kept, and that night the Lord Maior rode about to perule the same, and euery night after two Aldermen did the like, in the day time the gates of the City were warded by substantiall citizens.

Commotion in Kent by sir Thom. Wyat.

The 26. of January, was brought into the Tower as priſoners, the Lord Marquesse of Northampton, sir Edward Warner, and other. And the same night there went out certaine of the guard, and other against the Kentish men, And the City of London began to be straughtly kept and watched by harnessed men, by the appointment of the Lord Treasurer, who had the day before sent for the Lord Maior and Aldermen, and giuen them some charge for safety of the city. And the same day or rather on the day before, the Duke of Norfolke with his power went toward Gaueston.

About the which time the Lord Bergauenny, by chance, encountred with sir Henry Isle (one of sir Thomas Wyats faction,) and slew 2. or 3 of his men, he fleeing with the rest of his company to Wyats campe.

The 27. of January, the Lord Treasurer came to the Guild-hall from the Councell, to request the Citizens to prepare 500. lx men well harnessed to goe against Wyat, which was granted and made ready the same night, and on the morrow were deliuered to their Captaines, and sent to Gaueston by water.

The Duke of Norfolk sent against Wyat.

The 29. of January, the D. of Norfolke Lieutenant of the army, and with him the Earle of Arundel, S. Henry Bingham Captaine of the gard with a great number of the gard, and other souldiers, and the Captaine and souldiers that were sent from London, runded to assault Rochester castle, where Wyat and his people lay, so that vpon munday they were set in array towards Rochester bridge, which was kept by Wyats company, and furnished with 3. or 4. double Canons: but before the setting forward of these men the D. sent M. Nory an herault vnto Rochwich the Proclamation of pardon to all such as would desist from their purpose, who coming to the bridge, would haue gone through into the city, but they that kept the bridge would not suffer him, til that the Captain came, who at the last granted the same to be read in the city, but holding a bag against him, cryed, speake softly, or els he would shut him through, so that they would not suffer the people to heare the proclamation: which being ended, each man cryed they had done nothing whereby they should need any pardon and in that quarrell which they had taken in hand, they would liue and dye: nevertheleſſe, at the last sir George Harper receiued the pardon outwardly, and being receiued vnder the D. of Norffolks protection, came on forward against the Kentishmen, and euen as the company were set in a readines, and marched forward toward the bridge, Bret being Captain of the 500. Londoners, of which, the more part were in the forewarde, turned himself about, and drawing out his sword, said these or like words, Maisters we go about to fight against our native countrymen of England and our friends, in a quarrell vnrightfull, and partly wicked, for they, considering the great miseries which are like to fall vpon vs, if we shall be vnder the rule of the proud Spaniards, or strangers, are here assembled to make reſistance of their comming for the auoiding of so great inconueniences likely to light, not onely vpon themselues, but on euery of vs and the whole Realme, wherefore I thinke no English heart ought to say against them, much leſſe by fighting to withstand them: wherefore I and others (meaning such as were in that ranke with him) will spend our blood in the quarrell of this worthy Captaine Sir Wyat, and other Gentlemen here assembled: which words once pronounced, each man turned their ordinance against their followers, and thereupon cryed, a Wyat, a Wyat, of which sodaine noyse, the Duke, the Captaine of the guard, and other, being abashed, fled foorthwith: immediatly came in Sir Wyat and his company on horseback, riding in amongst as well the guard, as the Londoners, and said, so many as will come and tarry with vs shall bee welcome, and so many as will part, good leaue haue they, and so all the Londoners, part of the guard, and more then 3. parts of the retinue, went to the camp of the Kentishmen, where they still remained. At this discomfiture, the Duke lost 8. peeces of brasse, with all other munition and ordnance, and himselfe with fewe other hardly escaped.

Wyat greeteth with the ordinance.

The last of January, Wyat and his company came to Detford, and the next day they came full & whole to Greenwich and Depeford, where they remained Thursday, Friday, & the foresayd Saturday. On the Fryday, which was Candlemas day, the most part of the houlholders of London, with the Maior and Aldermen were in harnesse, yea this day and other dayes the iustices, Sergeans at the Law, and other Lawyers in Westminster hall pleaded in harnesse.

In this meane time, to witte, on the 25. of January, Henry Duke of Suffolke, father to the Lady Iane, fleeing into Leicester-shire and Warwickshire with the Lords Grey and the Lord Leonard Grey, and a small company in diuers places as he went, made Proclamation against the Queenes marriage with the Prince of Spain, &c. but the people inclined not to him.

The first day of February, proclamation was made at London, that the Duke of Suffolk was discomfited, and fled with his two brethren. And also that sir Peter Carow, with his vncle sir Gawine Carow and Gibbes, were fled into France: and further, that the Queene did pardon the whole campe of the Kentishmen, except Wyat, Harper, Rudstone, and Isley, and that who soeuer could take sir Tho. Wyat, except the said 4. persons, should haue an hundred pound lands to him and his heirs for euer.

Queen Mary came to the Guildhall in London.

The same day in the afternoone being Candlemas euen, the commons of the City assembled in their liueries at the Guild hall, whither the Queene with her Lords and Ladyes came riding from Westminster, and there after vehement words against Wyat, declared that shee meant not otherwise to marry then the Councell should thinke both honorable and commodious to the Realme, and that she could continue vnmarried, as she had done the greatest part of her age, and therefore willed them truely to assist her, in repelling such as contrary to their duties rebelled. When shee had done vnderstanding that many in London did fauour Wyats part, shee appointed Lord William Howard Lieutenant of the City, and the Earle of Pembrooke generall of the field, which both prepared all things necessary for their purpose. In the meane season, to wit, the 3. of February, about 3. of the clocke in the afternoone, sir Thomas Wyat and the Kentishmen, marched forward from Depeford towards London with fiue ancients, being by estimation about two thousand, which their comming so soone as it was perceiued, there was shot off out of the White Tower, 6. or 8. shot, but they missed them, sometime shooting ouer, and sometime short. After knowledge thereof once had in London, foorthwith the draw bridge was cut downe and the bridge gates shut. The Maior and Sheriffes harnessed, commanded each man to shut in their shoppes and windowes, and to be ready harnessed at their doores, what chance so euer might happen. By this time was Wyat entred into Kent streete, and so by S. Georges Church into Southwarke. Himselfe, and part of his company came in good array downe Barmondsey streete, and they were suffered peaceably to enter Southwarke without repulse, or any stroke striken, either by the inhabitants, or of any other: yet was there many

Lord William Howard Lieutenant of the city.

Wyat came into Southwarke.

men of the countrey in the Innes, rayled and brought thither by the Lord William and other, to haue gone against the sayd Wyat, but they all ioyned themselues to the Kentishmen, and the inhabitants with their best cheere entertained them. Immediatly vpon the sayd Wyats comming, hee made Proclamation, that no souldier should take any thing, but that he should pay for it, and that his comming was to resist the Spanish King. Notwithstanding foorthwith diuers of his company being Gentlemen (as they sayd) went to Winchester place, made hauocke of the Bishops goods (bee being Lord Chancellor) not onely of his victuals, wherof there was plenty, but whatsoeuer els, not leauing so much as one locke of a doore, but the same was taken off and carried away, not a booke in his gallery or library vncut, or rent into peeces, so that men might haue gone vp to the leaues in leaues of bookes, cut out and thrown vnder foote.

Bishop of Winchesters library and other his goods spoyled in Southwarke.

At the Bridge foote he layd two peeces of ordinance, and began a great trench betweene the Bridge and him. He laid one other peece of ordinance at S. Georges, and one going into Barmondsey street, and another toward the Bishop of Winchesters house.

Wyat remoued out of Southwarke.

On Shroue-tuesday, the first of February, Sir Thomas Wyat remained out of Southwarke, toward Kingstone bridge, which was done vpon this occasion. The night before his departing out of Southwarke, by chance as one of the Lieutenants men of the Tower, named Thomas Meechen rowed with a sculler ouer against the Bishop of Winchesters place, there was a waterman of the Tower Wayres, desired the sayd Lieutenants man to take him in, who did so, which being espyed of Wyats men, seuen of them with harquebusses, called to them to land againe, but they would not, whereupon each man discharged their piece, and killed the sayd Waterman, which foorthwith falling downe dead, the sculler with much paine rowed through the bridge to the Tower wharfe with the Lieutenants man, and the dead man in his boat, which thing was no sooner knowne to the Lieutenant, but that euen the same night, and the next morning, hee bent seauen great peeces of Ordinance chiuerings, and demi-canons, full against the gate of the Bridge, and against Southwarke, and the two staples of Saint Olaues, and Saint Mary Overies, besides all the pieces on the White Tower, one chiuering on Diueling Tower, and three fauconets ouer the Water-gate: which so soone as the inhabitants of Southwarke vnderstood, certaine both men and women came to Wyat in most lamentable wise, saying, Sir, we are all like to bee vtterly vndone, and destroyed for your sake, our houses shall by and by be throwne downe vpon our heads, to the vtter spoyle of this borough, with the shot of the Tower, all ready bent and charged towards vs, for the loue of God therefore take pittie vpon vs: at which words, hee being partly abashed, staied a while, and then sayd: I pray you my friends bee content a while, and I will soone ease you of this mischiefe, for God

Wyat marcheth toward Kingstone.

for bid that you, or the least here should be killed or hurt in my behalfe. And so in most speedie manner hee marched away. As he marched towards Kingstone, he met by chance a Merchant named Christopher Dorell, whom he called, saying, cousin Dorel, I pray you commend me unto your citizens the Londeners, and say unto them from mee, that when liberty and freedome was offered them, they would not receive it, neither would they admit mee to enter within their gates, who for their freedom, and the disburthening of their griefs, and oppression by strangers, would have frankly spent my bloud in that their cause and quarrell, but now well apeareth their unthankefullnesse to us their friends, which meaneth them to much good, and therefore they are the lesse to be mated hereafter, when the miserable Tyrannie of strangers shall oppresse them, and so he went forward.

This day about foure of the clocke in the afternoone he came to Kingston upon Thamis, ten myles West from London, where finding the bridge to be broken, as a 30. foote or thereabout to bee taken away, saving the postes that were left standing, & the other side kept by 200. men he caused 2. pieces of ordinance to be planted against them, whereupon they durst not abide: then caused he certaine sailers to swim over the Thames, who I used the Westerne Barges, which there had beene tyed, and so brought them over, by which meanes hee passed the water: it was wonder to see what paines hee and others take, whilest the number of souldiers baited in the towne, hee caused the bridge to bee repaired with ladders, planks, and beames, the same being tyed together with ropes, so as by reason of the clocke in the night, it was in such plight, as both his ordinance, and companies of men might passe over without perill. And to about 11. of the clock, Wyat with his band, with ordinance marched towards London, meaning to have beene at the Court gate before day of the next morning. They came almost to Southwarke or ever they were descryed by the Scouts, who there by chance meeting Bret and his company, Bret said to the Scout, bache villaine, if thou goe further to discover any thing here, thou shalt die out of hand, so the Scout returned in great hast: but as God would have it, before he came within 6. miles of the city, staying upon a piece of his great Ordinance, which was dismounted by breach of the wheeles his comming was discovered, and it was 9. of the clocke of the day following, before hee came to Hide Parke, as ye shall heare anone. Whilest Wyat and his counsell were devising how to raise his ordinance dismounted, many of his society slipped from him, among the which, Mr. Harper was one, who went to the Court, and opened all the premises afore said, to the Queene and Counsell, where Wyat was, what had chanced, and what was his intention. The breaking of the said Gun was such an hinderance to his enterprise, that all about him were amazed, and at their wits end, because by that meanes the houre was broken of appointment, wherefore Vaughan, Bret, and other appointed souldiers and counsellers, such as had brise heads in other affaires, as Dct. Poinet and other, did counsell the said VVyat to march forwards and keep his appointment, and to let the Gun lie, which in no wise hee could be perswaded to do. Dct. Poinet Bishop of Winchester, therefore, considering how many of his confederacy was stolne away from him, he began to perswade with captaine Bret and other his friends to shift for themselves as he would doe, and at that very place where the Gun did breake, he tooke his leave of his secret friends, and bayd he would pray unto God for their good successe, and so did depart, and went into Germany, where he dyed.

The same day in the afternoone, were two men hanged on a gibbet in Paules Churchyard by Martiall law, the one Iohn Egerly servant to the Duke of Suffolke, and late Sheriffe of Leicester, the other a Baker, one of the white coates sent out of the citie against VVyat: and the same day came tydings, that the Duke with his brethren were taken.

Executions in Paules Churchyard.

The same day toward night there was laden 10. or 12. Carts with Ordinance, as bils, pikes, speares, bowes, arrowes, powder, shot, shovels, mattocks, baskets, and other munitions, 2. culverings, 1 Sacre, 3. Faulcons, and a Faulconet, all which stuffe layed in Paules Churchyard.

The same night at 9. about five of the clocke, a Trumpetter went about, and warned all horsemen, and men at armes to be at S. Iames field, and all footemen also to bee there by five of the clocke in the next morning.

The Queenes scout upon his returne to the Court, declared VVyats being at Brentford, which sodaine newes, made all in the Court wonderfully afraid, Drummes went through London about foure of the clocke in the morning, commanding all souldiers to armour, and so to Charing-crosse.

VVyat hearing that the Earle of Pembrooke was come into the field, hee staid at Kingsbridge untill day, where his men being very weary with travell of that night, and the day before, and also partly feebled and faint, having received small sustenance since their comming out of Southwarke restlesse: There was no small adoe in London, and likewise the Tower made great preparation of defence. By ten of the clocke the Earle of Pembrooke had set his troupe of horsemen on the hill in the high way above the new bridge, over against S. Iames: his footmen were set in two battels, somewhat lower, and nearer Charing-crosse, at the lane turning downe by the bricke wall from Islington-ward, where hee had set also certaine other horsemen, and he had planted his ordinance upon the hill side. In the meane season, VVyat and his company planted his ordinance upon a hill beyond S. Iames, almost over against the parke corner, and himselfe after a few words spoken to his souldiers, came downe the old lane on foote, hard by the Court gate at S. Iames. with 4. or 5. ancients, his men marching in good array. Cuthbert Vaughan and two ancients turning downe toward Westminster. The Earle of Pembrookes horsemen hovered all this while

Wyat in S. Iames field.

while. About morning, untill all was passed by saving the taile, upon which they did set, and set off: the other marched forward in array, and never staid or returned to the end of their taile: the great ordinance that off freshly on both sides: Wyats ordinance overshot the troupe of horsemen. The Queenes Ordinance, one peece strake three of Wyats company in a ranke upon the heads, and slaying them, strake through the wall into the parke: more harme was not done by the great shot of neither party. The Queenes whole battaile of footemen standing still, Wyat passed along by the wall towards Charing crosse where the said horsemen that were there, set upon part of them but was soone forced backe.

At Charing crosse stood sir Iohn Gage Lord Chamberlaine with the guard, and a number of other, being almost a thousand, the which upon VVyats comming, shot at his company, but the last feddoe to the Court gates, which certaine pursued, and forced with shot to shut the Court gates against them. In this repulse the said Lord Chamberlaine and others were so amazed, that many cryed Treason in the Court, and had thought that the Earle of Pembrooke, who was assaulting the taile of his enemies, had gone to VVyat, taking his part against the Queene: there was running and crying out of Ladies and Gentlewomen, shutting of doores and Windowes, and such a thrusting and noyse, as was wonderfull to heare, VVyat with his men marched still toward all along to Temple barre, and so through Fleetstreet till hee came to Bell-Savage an Inne nigh unto Ludgate, without resistance, his men going not in any good order or array. It is said, that at Strand, certaine of the Lord Treasurers band, to the number of three hundreth men, whereof the Lord Chidioke Powlet his sonne was Captaine, met them, and so going on the one side, passed by them on the other side without any thing saying to them. Also this is more strange, the said VVyat and his company passed along by a great company of harnessed men which stood on both sides the streets without any withstanding them. And as he marched forward through Fleetstreet most with their swordes drawne, some crying, Queene Mary hath graunted our request, and given us pardon: other said the Queene hath pardoned us. Thus some of VVyats men, some say it was VVyat himselfe, came even to Ludgate and knocked, calling to come in, saying, there was VVyat: whom the Queene had graunted to have their requests, but the Lord William Howard staid at the gate, and said, avaunt Traytor: thou shalt not come in here. VVyat a while stayed and rested him a while upon a stall over against the Well-Savage gate, and at the last seeing he could not get into the city, and being deceived of the ayde he hoped for, returned backe againe in array towards Charing crosse, and was never stopped till he came at Temple bar, where certaine horsemen which came from the field, met them in the face, and then began the fight againe, till Clarentius an Herault came and said to Master VVyat: Sir, you were best by my counsell to yeeld, you see this day is gone against you, and in resisting, you can get no good, but be the death of all these your souldiers, to your great perill of soule: perchance you may finde the Queene mercifull, and the rather, if yee stint to great bloudshed as is like here to be. Wyat herewith being somewhat astonied (although he saw his men bent to fight) saide, Well, if I shall not needes yeeld, I will yeeld me to a Gentleman, to whom sir Maurice Barkely came straight, and bad him leape up behind him, and another tooke Thomas Cobham, and William Knevet, and so carried more behinde them upon their horses to the Court then was taken of men in all sides. It is said in this conflict, one piece only, setting his backe to the wall at S. Iames, kept seventeene horsemen off him a great time, and at the last was slaine. The whole number on both sides slaine at this battell paged not forty persons, as far as could be learned by them that viewed the field, but there were many hurt. The noyse of women and children, when the conflict was at Charing crosse, was so great that it was heard to the top of the white Tower, and also the great shot was well discerned there out of Saint Iames field: there stood upon the leades the Marques of Northampton, Sir Nicholas Poines, Sir Thomas Pope, Master Iohn Scimer, and other,

Wyat taken

Wyat sent to the Tower.

About five of the clocke, Thomas Wyat William Knevet, Thomas Cobham, two brethren named Mantels, Alexander Bret, were brought by sir Henry Jernegham by water to the Tower as prisoners, where sir Philip Denny received them at the Bulwarke, and as Wyat passed by he said, gee Traytor, there was never such a Traytor in England: to whom sir Tho. Wyat turned and said, I am no Traytor, I would then should it well know, that art more Traytor then I, for it is not the part of an honest man to call me so, and so went forth: when hee came to the Tower gate, sir Thomas Bridges, lieutenant of it, said to him, thou wicked Mantel and sayd: Ah thou Traytor, what hast thou and thy company wrought? But hee holding down his head sayd nothing: then came Thomas Knevet, whom Master Chamberlaine Gentleman porter of the Tower tooke in, then came Alexander Bret, whom sir Thomas Pope tooke by the breast, saying: Oh Traytor, how couldest thou find in thy heart to worke such a villany, as to take wages, and being trusted over a band of men, to fall to her enemies, returning against her in battell? Bret answered, yea, I have offended in that sale; then came Thomas Cobham whom sir Thomas Pomes tooke in, and sayd, Alas master Cobham what mind headed you to worke such Treason? and he answered, Oh Sir, I was seduced. Then came sir Thomas Wyat, whom Sir Iohn Bridges tooke by the collar, and sayd; Oh thou villaine and unhappy Traitor, how couldest thou find in thy heart to worke such detestable Treason to the Queenes Majestie, who gave thee thy life and living once already, though thou divdest before this

time beare Armes in the field against her, and now to yeeld her battell to her marvellous trouble and fright: if it were not (saith hee) but that the law must passe vpon ther, I would stick ther through with my dagger, to the which Wyat holding his armes vnder his side, and looking greviously with a grim looke vpon the Lieutenant, sayd, it is no maistery now, and so passed on. Thomas Wyat had on a shirt of male, with sleeves very faire, thereon a velvet cassocke, and a yellow lace, with the wandlace of his bag hanging thereon, and a paire of buts and spurs on his legs, and on his head a faire hat of velvet, with brand bone worke lace about it,

William Kneuet, Thomas Cobham, and Brett were the like apparelled.

On the morrow, and next day following were brought into the Tower prisoners, Georg Cobham, sir William Cobham, Anthony Kneuet, Hugh Booth, Thomas Vane, Robert Rudstone, sir George Harper, Edward Wyat, Eward Fog George Moore, and Cuthert Vaughan, whith Cuthert being a very handsome man, Master Thomas Bridges at his entry into the Tower, did wonderfully reproach him, calling him ranke Traytor, and sayd that hanging was too good for him: to whom this Vaughan answered with a stout courage, saying, I pray God to send you charity, and I would all men knew it. I am as true a man to the Quene, and Common wealth, as any man that I shall leave behinde me, and for death I care not for it.

The tenth of February, the Earle of Huntington, and other Gentlemen, and to the number of 300. horsemen, brought into the Tower as prisoner, the Duke of Suffolke and the Lord John Grey his brother from Coventry, where the D. had remained three dayes after his taking in the house and custody of Christopher Warren, Alderman there.

The 11. day sir Henry Isley, who had fled, was brought into the Tower prisoner, in an old russet coat, and an old paire of hosen, all his apparell not worth 4.s. The same day came in two of the Culpeppers, one Cremer, and Thomas Rampton the Duke of Suffolkes Secretary.

The 12. of February being Monday, about ten of the clerke, there went out of the Tower, to the scaffold on the Tower hill, the Lord Guilford Dudley sonne to the Duke of Northumberland, husband to the Lady Jane Gray, daughter to the D. of Suffolke, who at his going out, tooke by the hands sir Anthony Browne, Master John Throckmorton, and many other gentlemen, praying them to pray for him: and without the bulwarke gate master Thomas Offley one of the sheriffs of London receiued him and brought him to the scaffold, where after a small declaration, hee kneeled downe and sayd his prayers, then holding vp his eyes and hands to heauen with teares, at the last hee desired the people to pray for him, and after was beheaded: his body being layd in a car, and his head in a cloth, was brought into the chappell within the Tower, where the Lady Jane, whose lodging was in master Partridges house, did see his dead carcasse taken out of the car, as well as she did see him before alive going to his death, a sight to her woorse then death.

By this time was there a scaffold made vpon the greene, ouer against the white Tower, for the Lady Jane to die vpon, who with her husband was appointed to haue beene put to death on the Friday before, but was staied till then, this Lady being nothing at all abashed, neither with feare of her owne death, which then approached neither with the sight of the dead carcasse of her husband, when hee was brought into the chappell, came forth, the Lieutenant leading her with countenance nothing abashed, neither her eyes any thing moistened with teares (although her gentlewemen Elizabeth Tilney and mistresse Helen wonderfully wept) with a booke in her hand, wherein shee prayed vntill shee came to the sayd scaffold, whereon when she was mounted, she was beheaded: whose deaths were the more hastened for feare of further troubles and sturre for her title, like as her father had attempted.

The same day was brought into the Tower as prisoner by the Lord Chamberlain and 200. of the guard, Edward Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, who as he passed by the Lieutenant, being asked the cause of his thither comming, answered, he could not accuse himselfe.

The 14. and 15. of February, about the number of 50. of Wyats faction were hanged on 20. paire of gallowes made for that purpose in diuers places about the city.

The 17. of February was Proclamation made that all strangers should auoid the realme within foure and twenty dayes next ensuing, vpon paine of their goods to be confiscate, all free denizens, merchants, and ambassadours excepted.

The same 17. day of February the Duke of Suffolke was conueyed to Westminster by the Clearke of the checke and the guard, at his going out hee went with a cheerefull and a very stout countenance, but at his returne very pensiue and heavy, desiring all men to pray for him, the Lord Courtney lying in the Well Tower saw both his going out and returning, hee being arraigned, and the Earle of Arundell sitting vpon him in Iudgement, he said it was no treason for a Peere of the Realme as he was, to raise his power, and to make proclamation, onely to auoide strangers out of the Realme, and therevpon he asked the Sergeants at law standing by, whether it were so or no, but they would say nothing: then was it layd to his charge, hee met with 200. men in armes the Quenes lieutenant the Earle of Huntington, which was Treason against the Quene, forasmuch as the Lieutenant represenieth the Prince: to the which hee answered, that hee knew not the said Earle to bee such a Lieutenant, but quoth hee, I met him indeed with 50. men or thereabouts and would not haue shunke from him if I had had fewer, by which wordes he was found to be guiltie of Treason. Moreouer, he partly accused his brother the Lord Thomas, who had, as hee sayd, perswaded him rather to fly into his country, then to abide, sith it was to be feared hee should againe bee committed to the Tower, where-

whereas being in his Countrey amongst his friends and tenants, who durst fetch him: Touching other articles laid to his charge, hee neuer knew of them, sauing that one should say at his table once at supper, that hee would vndertake for twelue, onely with 100. men to set the crowne vpon Courtneys head, and so hee was condemned.

The 18. of February, Alexander Bret one of the Captaines of the Londoners that fled to Wyat, and 22. persons more of the Kentish men were deliuered to the Sheriffe of Kent, to be executed in diuers places of Kent, but for the most part, they were all pardoned. This Bret going out of the Tower, embraced Master Chamberlaine the Gentleman Porter, and desired him to commend him to Sir Tho. Wyat, then praying all men to pray for him, he said, I am worthy of no lesse punishment than I now goe to suffer, for besides my owne offence, I refused life and grace three times offered, but I trust God doeth all for the best, that I might repent, and thereby obtaine grace.

The 20. of February, William Thomas late Clearke of the Councell, William Winter, and Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, were sent to the Tower, and on the next morrow were sir Iames Croft, and the Lord Thomas Grey sent to the Tower.

Kentish men pardoned.

The 20. of February, certaine of Wyats faction, to the number of 400. and more were led to Westminster, coupled together with halters about their necks, and there in the tilt yard, the Quene (who looked togith of her gallery) pardoned them.

D. of Suffolk beheaded.

The 23. of February, Henry Grey Duke of Suffolke, was beheaded on the Tower hill, his words on the scaffold were these: Good people, I am come hither to die, being iustly condemned for my disobedience against the Queenes highnesse, of whom I doe most humbly aske forgiuenesse: Doctor Weston answered and said, My Lord, her Grace hath already forgiuen you: then said the Duke, I beseech you all good people, to let me be an example to you for obedience to the Quene and the Magistrates, for the contrary thereof hath brought mee to this end. I desire you all to beare me witnesse, that I die a true Christian man, beleeuing to be saued by none other meanes but by Almighty God, through the passion of his Sonne Iesus Christ: and now I pray you to pray with me: then kneeling downe, and Doctor Weston with him, they said the Psalme *Miserere mei Deus*, and *In te Domine speraui*, the Duke one verse, and Doctor Weston another; which done, hee put off his Gowne and Doublet, knit the kercher about his eyes, held vp his hands, laid his head ouer the blocke, which head at one stroke was taken from him.

The 26. of February, William Thomas had almost slaine himselfe, by thrusting a knife vnder his pap.

The 11. of March, William Lord Howard, Admirall of England, was created Baron of Effingham at Westminster.

The 14. of March, the Earle of Bedford Lord privie Seale, chiefe Ambassadour to the Prince of Spaine, set forwards on his voyage to fetch him hither.

The 15. of March, Sir Thomas Wyat was arraigned at Westminster.

The 18. of March being Palmesunday, the Lady Elizabeth the Quenes sister, was by the Lord Treasurer and the Earle of Sussex, conuayed to the Tower of London, from Westminster by water.

The 24. of March, were released out of the Tower, the Marquesse of Northhampton, the Lord Cobham, Sir William Cobham, John Fow Williams, Culpepper, H. Vane, John Harington Corbet &c.

The 2. of April, the Parliament began at Westminster, which was appointed to haue beene kept at Oxford. Parliament.

The 5. of April Sir I. Williams was created Baron of Thame at S. Iames.

The 7. of April Sir Edward North was created Baron of Chirtsey by night at Saint Iames. 25 Barons created.

The 8. of April sir John Bridges was created Baron Chandois of Sudley at Saint Iames.

The same 8. of April, being then Sunday, a Cat hanged in Cheape.

A Cat with her head shaue, and the likenesse of a Petticoat cast ouer her, with her fore-feete tyed together, and a round piece of paper like a singing cake betwixt them, was hanged on a gallowes in Cheape, neere to the Crosse, in the Parish of S. Mathew, whith Cat being taken downe, was caried to the Bishop of London, and hee caused the same to be thrown at Paules Crosse by the Preacher D. Pendleton. The 10. of April D. Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury, D. Ridley Bishop of London, and Hugh Latimer once Bishop of Worcester, were committed prisoners from the Tower of London to Oxford, and after from thence to Oxford, at Oxford. Disputation there to dispute with the Diuines and learned men of the contrary opinion.

The 11. of April, Sir Thomas Wyat was beheaded on the Tower-hill, and after quartered, his quarters were set vp in diuers places, and his head on the Gallowes at Hyde parke, from whence it was shortly after stolne and conueyed away. This Sir Thomas Wyat before his comming downe out of the Tower, was conueyed by the Lord Chamberlaine, and the Lord Shandois, to the Tower water gate where the Lord Courtney lay, and there he remained in talke more than halfe an houre, but what was spoken betwixt them I know not. Then was he brought downe, and at the Garden gate, the Lord Chamberlaine tooke his leaue of him, and likewise did Master Secretary Bourne, to the whom Sir Thomas Wyat said, I pray you to pray for me, and be a meane to the Quene for my poore wife and children, and if it might haue pleased her Grace to haue granted me my life, I trust to haue done her such good seruice, as should haue recompenced mine offence: but since not, I beseech God to haue mercy on me: to the which M. Bourne made answere, and so Wyat came toward the Thom. Wyat beheaded. Row. Lea.

hill

hill betwixt Dedes Wash and the Lord Standes: when he was vpon the scaffold, he desired all men to pray for him, and with him, and then said in effect these or the like words: good people, I come presently here to dye, being thereto lawfully and worthily condemned, for I have soe offended against God and the Queenes Maiesty, I trust God hath forgiuen me, and will take mercy vpon me; I beleeue the Queenes Maiesty also of forgiuenesse: She hath forgiuen ten tymes Deare Wotton: therefore, quoth he, let euery man beware how he taketh any thing against the higher powers, vnlesse God be perspicuable to his purpose, it will neuer take the effect of sufferie, wherefore you may now learne of me, and I pray God I may be the last example in this place, for that euery other like. And where it is said and noised abroad, that I should accuse the Lady Elizabeth and the Lord Courtney, it is not so good people: for I accuse you, neither they nor any other new deuiser in deeds was privie of my rising before I began, as I now declared no lesse to the Queenes Councell, and that is well true. Then said Doctor Wotton to all these words, Sirrha this my Gossip here, he saith that, that which he hath declared to the Councell in writing of them is true, and to without any more talke Sir Thomas Wyat turned him, and put on his Gowne, untrussed his points. Then taking the Caule of Vuntington, the Lord Hastings, Sir Thomas Seyntgerth, and many other by the hands he plucked off his Doublet and Mantle, and then kneeling downe, laid his head to the block, and taking himselfe againe on his knees after a fiue words spoken, with eyes lifted vp toward heauen, he bad the Executioner doe his office, and holding vp his hands, he deuily layd downe his head, to which the Executioner take from him at one stroke.

Sir Nicholas Throkmorton arraigned.

The 17. of April, were led to the Guilde Hall in London to be arraigned, Sir Nicholas Throkmorton, and Sir Iames a Croft, Robert Winter, and Cuthbert Vaughan, being also had thither to vnderake against them, where that day was nowise arraigned, but Sir Nicholas Throkmorton, who tarrying from seuen of the clocke in the morning, vntill almost fiue at night, was by the verdict of the Iury quit; he pleaded not guilty, and that he was consenting to nothing, &c. But the Iury which quit him, was commanded to appeare before the Councell on an houres warning, and the lesse of fiue hundred pounds a peece.

On Saint Markes day, being the 25. of April, they were before the Councell in the Starre-Chamber, and thence about two of the clocke Thomas Wyat Iohn Daberdasher Fozeman, and Emanuell Lucar, Merchant Taylor, were sent to the Tower, & the rest to the Fleet prisoners.

Lord Thomas Grey beheaded.

The 27. of April, Lord T. Grey, brother to the late Duke of Suffolke, was beheaded on the Tower hill.

The 29. of April, Sir Iames a Croft Knight, was arraigned in the Guilde Hall of London, found guilty of high treason, & had iudgement.

The 9. of May, William Thomas Esquire, was arraigned at the same Guild hall, for conspiring the Queenes death, was found guilty, and had iudgement of death.

The 14. of May, Gerrard sir Garret, was created Earle of Kildare, and Baron of Opheley, for him and his heires, at Kilmes.

The 18. of May, William Thomas was drawn from the Tower of London to Cyprus, and there hanged, headed, and quartered, & laid at his death he died for his countrey, &c.

William Thomas executed.

The 19. of May, Lady Elizabeth was conueied from the Tower of London by water to Richmond, from thence to Windsor, and so by the Lord Williams to Ricote in Oxfordshire, and from thence to Westcliffe.

The Earle of Deuonshire sent to Fodringay.

The 25. of May, Edward Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, was deliuered out of the Tower, by sir Ralph Chamberlaine of Suffolke, and sir Thomas Tresham knights, who conueied him to Fodringay Castle in Northampton shire, there to remaine vnder their custody.

A gun shot at the preacher.

The 10. of June Doctor Pendleton preached at Pauls Crosse, at whom a gunne was shot, the pellet whereof went very neare him, and light on the Church wall. But the shooter could not be found.

The 22 of June, was Proclamation made forbidding the shooting in handguns and bearing of weapons.

Aurora, a spirit in a wall.

The 15. of July Elizabeth Croftes a wench about the age of 18. yeeres stood vpon a scaffold at Paules Crosse at the Sermon time when she confessed, that she being mooued by diuers lewd persons thereunto, had vpon the 14. of March last before passed, counterfeited certaine speeches in a well of an house without Aldersgate of London, through the which the people of the whole City were wonderfully mislead, for that all men might heare the voice, but not see her person. Some said it was an Angel and a voyce from heauen, some the holy Ghost, &c. This was called the Spirit in the wall: she had learned it by a strange whistle made for that purpose, which was giuen her by one Dr Dees seruant to sir Anthony Noull: then were there diuers companions, one named Myles cleark of Saint Buttolphs without Aldersgate, a player, a vocaber, Bill cleark of S. Leonards in Foster lane and other confederate with her, which putting themselues among the people, tooke vpon them to interpret what the spirit said, expressing certaine seditious words against the Q. the Prince of Spaine, the match, confession, &c.

The 19. of July the Prince of Spaine arriued at Southampton, the 4. day after he came to Winchester in the euening, and there going to the Church was honorably receiued of the Bishop and a great number of nobles: the next day he met with the Queene, with whom he had a long familiar talke.

On S. Iames day the marriage was solemnized betweene him and Queene Mary, at which time the Emperors Ambassador being present pronounced, that in consideration of the marriage the Emperor had giuen vnto his sonne the Kingdome of Naples. The solemnitie of this marriage being ended, the King of Heralds pro-

Ceremonies of King Philip and Queene Mary.

proclaimed their title as followeth: Philip and Mary by the grace of God, King and Q. of England, France, Naples, Hierusalem, and Ireland, defenders of the faith, Princes of Spaine and Sicilie, Archdukes of Austrich, Dukes of Millane Burgundy and Brabant, counties of Aspurge, Flanders and Tyrroll: which being ended, the trumpets blew, the King and Q. came forth hand in hand, and two Swords borne before them. Shortly after King Philip and Q. Mary removed from Winchester to Basing, from thence to Windsor, where on the 5th of August the king was stalled in the noble order of the Garter, where he kept a great feast, and at that time the Earle of Sussex was made knight of the Garter.

The 11. of August, the King and Queene removed to Richmond, from thence by water to Southwarke, accompanied with the Noble men and Ladies, the King in one Barge, the Queene in another, and landed at the Bishop of Winchesters Rentes neere to Saint Mary Oueries Church, and so passed through that place and parke into Suffolke place: where they rested that night. And the next day being the 12. of August, they rode throught Southwarke ouer the bridge, and so through London, where they were with great pompion receiued of the citizens, with Pageants in places accustomed, the Crosse in Cheape new guilt, &c. and passing through Paules Church yard, a man came lasing as it were flying vpon a rope, from Pauls steple downe to the Deanes wall.

A man flying from Pauls.

The second of September, sir Anthony Browne maister of the Kings horse was made vicount Montague for him and his heires males, with the gift of twenty marks the yere of Surrey, at Hampton Court.

In this moneth of September, deceased Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolke, at Framingham in Norfolke, and was honorably buried amongst his ancestors.

Money brought to the Tower.

The 2. of October was brought into the tower of London, 20. carts laden with 27. chests, each of them a yard & 4. inches long, filled with siluer bolion to be coined, conducted by a traine Spaniards, and Englishmen of the Kingsgard.

A Spaniard hanged.

The fiue and twentieth of October, a Spaniard was hanged at Charing Crosse for killing of an English man in sight there, hee was sent vnto sir George Clifford, there was offred for his life by other strangers fiue hundred crowns, but all that would not stay iustice.

The 4. of November, being Sunday, three Priests that being married, would not leaue their wiues, and two lay men that had two wiues apiece, were punished alike, for they went on procession about Paules Church in white sheetes ouer them, and either of them a taper of wax in the one hand, and a rod in the other, and so they sate before the Preacher at Paules crosse during the Sermon, and then were displed on the heads with the same rods.

Cardinall Poole came into England.

The twelfth of November the Parliament began at Westminster.

The 24. of November Cardinall Poole came out of Brabant into England, and was receiued with much honour: hee was by Parliament restored to his olde dignity that hee was put from by King Henry, and shortly after came into the Parliament house, where the King, Queene and other States were present. Then he declared the cause of his legacy, first exhorting them to returne to the communion of the Church, and to restore the Pope his due authority. Secondly, hee absoluted them to giue thankes to God that had sent them so blessed a King and Queene. Finally he signified, for so much as they had with great gentlenesse restored him to his honour and dignity, that he most earnestly desired to see them restored to the heauenly Court, and vnity of the Church.

The next day the whole Court of Parliament, drew out a scrole of a supplication, the summe whereof was, that they greatly repented them of all that seruice that they had liued in, and therefore desired the King, Queene and Cardinall, that by their meanes they might bee restored to the bosome of the Church, and obedience of the Sea of Rome.

The next day the King, Queene, and Cardinall being present, the L. Chancellor declared what the Parliament had determined concerning the Cardinals request, and offered to the King and Queene the supplication before mentioned, which being read, the Cardinal in a large oration declared how acceptable repentance was in the sight of God, &c. And immediately making prayer vnto God, by authority to him committed, absolued them. When all this was done, they went all vnto the Chappell, and there singing *Te Deum* with great solemnity, declared the ioy that for this reconciliation was pretended.

The Queene brought to bed with child.

The 28 of November, the Lord Maior of London with the Aldermen in scarlet, and the Commons in their liueries assembled in Pauls Church at nine of the clocke in the forenoone, where Doctor Chadley one of the prebends preached in the quire in the presence of the Lords of London, and nine other Bishops and read a letter sent from the Queens Councel, the tenor whereof was, that the Bishop of London should cause *Te Deum* to bee sung in all the Churches of his diocesse, with continual prayers for the Queenes graciefie which was conceiued and quicke with child: the letter being read he began his Sermon with this Antheme: *Nemo meas Maria, inuenies hoc genus oration: quod Deum.* His Sermon being ended, *Te Deum* was sung, and solemne procession was made of *Salue festa dies* all the circuit of the Church.

The King and Cardinall came to Paules and heard the Sermon.

The second of December, Cardinall Poole came from Lambeth by water and landed at Pauls wharfe, and from thence to Paules Church, with a Crosse, two pillats, and two pollaces of siluer borne before him. Hee was there received by the Lord Chancellor, with procession, where he tarried till the King came from Westminster by land at eleuen of the clocke, and then the L. Chancellor entred Pauls Crosse and preached a Sermon, taking for his theame these words. *Fratres scientes quia hora est iam nos de somno surgere, &c.* In the which sermon

Sermon he declared, that the King and Quæne had restored the Pope to his Supremacie, and the thre Estates assembled in the Parliament, repesenting the whole body of the Realme, had submitted themselues to the same. The Sermon being ended, the King departed towards Westminster, and with him the Lord Cardinall; with the Crosse onely borne before him.

Prince of Piemont.

The 27. of December, Emanuel Philibert Prince of Piemont, and Duke of Savoy, with other Lords, were received at Gravesend, by the Lord Paris Seale and other, and so conuayed along the River of Thamis vnder London bridge to Westminster.

1555. Prince of Orange.

The 9. of January, the Prince of Orange being receiued at Gravesend, was conuayed along the River of Thamis, and landed at the Duke of Suffolkes place.

The 12. of January, the said Prince of Orange, with other Lords, was conducted by the Lord Chamberlaine to the Tower of London, where was shewed vnto him the Ordinance, Artillery, Munitions, and Armorie, with the Plate, &c. and so was brought into the white Tower, from whence as hee returned through the long Gallery, all the prisoners saluted him, vnto whom the Prince said, Hee was sorie for their captiuitie, and trusted the King & Quæne would be good vnto them; at his departing from the Tower, he gaue the Gunners ten peces of Flemish gold at 5. shillings the peece, and the Wardores other ten peces as a reward.

The 18. of January, the Lord Chancelour, the Bishop of Ely, the Lord Treasurer, the Earle of Shrewsbury, the Comptroler of the Quænes house, Secretary Bourne, and sir Richard Southwell, Master of the Ordinance and Armourie, came to the Tower of London, and there sitting in Commission, deliuered prisoners as followeth: the late Archbishop of Yorke, sir Iohn Rogers, sir Iames a Croftes, sir Nicholas Throckmorton, sir Nicho. Arnold, sir Edward Warner sir George Harper: sir William Sentlow sir Andrew Dudley, sir Gawin Carrew Knights, William Gibs Esquire, Cuthbert Vaughan, Harington, Tremain, and other.

Prisoners discharged.

The 4. of February, Iohn Rogers Vicar of S. Sepulchers, was burnt in Smithfield.

Iohn Rogers burnt.

The 7. of February, the Lord Strange being married to the Earle of Cumberlands daughter at the Court, the same day at night was a goodly maskime of Iuogo de Canne, by Cresset light.

Iuogo de Canne.

The 12. of February, 99. horses, and two Carries laden with treasure of gold and siluer, brought out of Spaine, was conueyed through the Citie to the Tower of London, vnder the conduct of sir Thomas Gresham, the Quænes Merchant, and other.

The 18. of February, Thomas Thurlbe Bishop of Ely, and Anthony Lord Montacute, with other, take their iourney towards Rome, Ambassadors from the King and Quæne.

Imbassadors sent to Rome

Against Easter, the Lord Courtney Earle of Deuonshire, came againe to the Court, & about ten dayes after, the L. Elizabeth came likewise to the Quæne, both at Hampton Court, where the Quæne had taken her Chamber to be deliuered of child, but all prooued contrary: for she neither had child, nor great hope to haue any.

Earle of Deuonshire deceased.

The 14. of March, Iohn Russell Earle of Bedford, died at his house neare Iuy bridge by the Sauoy, sometimes the Bishop of Carliles house, and on the 22. of the same moneth was conueyed to Cheines in Buckingham shire his chiefe house, and there honourably enterred.

This yere 1555. Carolus Quintus the Emperour was ordained head of the order of the Knighthood of the golden Fleece, which high order was instituted to the honour of Almighty God, and of S. Andrew the Apostle, to be held Protector of the house of Burgundy, the next yere after there appeared a blazing Star, which with great terrour to the beholders, was seene almost eight weekes, whereupon Charles the Emperour said being sicke, This Starre comes for me.

Carolus Quintus ordained President of the golden Fleece.

In Easter day, a Priest, sometime a Monke of Ely, and also of Bicster named William Branch, *alias* Flower, with a wood knife wounded another Priest as hee was ministring the Sacrament to the people in Saint Margarets Church at Westminster: for the which fact the said W. Flower the 24. of April had his right hand smitten off, and for opinions in matters of Religion was burned in the Sanctuary nigh to Saint Margarets Churchyard.

Will. Flower burnt at Westminster.

In May Cardinall Poole, the Lord Chancelour, the Earle of Arundell, and the Lord Paget went ouer to Calais, and there vnto Marke treated with the Emperours and the French Kings Commissioners, for a Peace to be had betweene the said Princes, Cardinall Poole being President there, who returned againe into England about the midst of June, without any agreement making.

Imbassadors sent ouer to Calais.

The tenth of May, William Constable, *alias* Fetherstone, a Gillers sonne, about the age of 18. yeres, who had published King Edward the first to be alue, and sometime named himselfe to be King Edward the first, was taken at Eltham in Kent, and conueyed to Hampton Court, where being examined by the Councell, he required pardon, and said he wist not what he did, but as he was persuaded by many: from thence he was sent to the Marshalsea, and the 22. of May hee was caried in a Cart through London to Westminster with a paper on his head, wherein was written, that he had named himselfe to be King Edward. After hee had bene carried about Westminster-Hall before the Iudges, he was whipped about the Pallace, and through Westminster into Smithfield, and then banished into the North, in which Country he was borne, and had ben sometime Lacky to sir Peter Mewtes.

I counterfait King Edward deceiued.

The first of July, Iohn Bradford was burned in Smithfield. This Bradford was a man of very sober and honest life, and therefore the Bishops would gladly haue had him recant and abiure his opinions.

Bradford burnt. *Act. Mon. f. 1.*

The 12. of August, was a terrible fight on the Sea betweene the Dutchmen and French men, neere to Kanney Hearth, whereas eleuen Ships was burnt and sunke.

In

In this moneth of August, in Suffolke at a place by the sea side, al of hard stone and pibble, called in those parts a thelfe, lying betweene the townes of Orford and Alborough, where neuer grew grasse, nor any earth was euer seene, there chanced in this barren place, suddenly to spring vp without any tillage or sowing great abundance of peason, whereof the poore gathered (as men iudged) aboue an hundred quarters, yet remained some ripe and some blossoming, as many as euer there were before, to the which place rode the B. of Norwich, and the Lord Windoughby, with others in great number, who found nothing but hard rockie stone the space of 3. yards vnder the rootes of those peason, which roots were great and long, and very sweet, &c.

The necessity of the poore by God relieued.

On Bartholomew euen, after the Lord Maior and Aldermen of London had ridden about S. Bartholomewes faire, they came to Christs hospitall within Newgate, where they heard a disputation betweene the schollers of Pauls schole, Saint Anthomes schole, and the schollers of the sayd hospitall; for whom was prouided three games, which was three pens, the best pen of siluer and gilt, at 5.s. won by a scholler of Saint Anthonies schole, and the master of that schole had 6. s. 8. pence: the second, a pen of siluer parcell gilt, valued at 4.s. won by a scholler of Pauls schole, and his master had 5.s. in money: the third, a pen of siluer, valued at 2.s. won by a scholler of the said hospitall, and his master had 4.s: and there were two Priests, masters of Art, appointed for Iudges, which had each of them a siluer rule for their paines, valued at 6. shillings 8. pence the piece. The disputation being ended, the Maior and Aldermen entred the hall where the children of the hospitall fed to dine, and had fruit and wine, and so departed.

Disputation at Christs hospitall, as hath ben accustomed at S. Bartholomewes in Smithfield.

King Philip went ouer seas, and landed at Calais on the fourth of September, where he was honorably receiued by the Lord deputy, and the Maior of the staple of Calais, an Alderman of London named sir Andrew Iud, who presented his Maiestie with a purse and a thousand markes of gold in it: that night the King was lodged in staple Inne, and on the morrow he departed from Calais toward Gusnells in Wabant, to visit the Emperor his father: he gaue at his departing among the souldiers of the towne of Calais a thousand crownes of gold, and there accompanied him in his iourney of English Lords, the Earle of Arundell, Lord Steward of the Quænes house, the Earle of Pembroke, the Earle of Huntington, and others.

King Philip went ouer into Flanders.

Dit Michaelmas euen, the prisoners that lay in the counter in Wodstreet were removed to a new counter made in Woodstreete, of the cities purchase and building, the which removing was confirmed by a common councell assembled at the Guild hall for the same purpose.

Newe Counter in Woodstreet.

On the last of September by occasion of great wind and raine that had fallen, was such great floods, that that morning the Kings pallace at Westminster, and Westminster hall was ouerflowne with water vnto the staire foot, going to the chancery and Kings bench, so that when the L. Maior of London should come to present the officers to the Barons of the exchequer, Westminster hall was full of water, and by report there that morning, a wherry man rowed with his boat ouer Westminster bridge into the pallace court and so through the Staple gate, and at the wall Maple into the Kings Streete: and all the marshes on Lambeth side were so ouerflown that the people from Newington Church could not passe on foot, but were carried by boate from the sayd Church to the pinfold, neere to Saint Georges in Southwarke.

Great land Water.

The 16. of October, Doctor Ridley and master Latimer were burnt at Oxford.

Ridley and Latimer burnt

In October and November a Parliament was holden, in the which the Quæne perlede vnto the spirituall men, the first fruits and tenths of all the benefices, & ecclesiastical liuings. In this Parliament was granted to the King and Q. a subsidie of the lastie from 5. pound to 10. pound 8. pence of the pound, from 10 pound to 20. pound 12 pence of the pound, and from 20. pound vpward 16. d. of the pound, & all straungers double, and the clergy granted 6. s. of the pound.

First fruits and tenths restored to the Clergie & Subsidie

Doctor Story and other were appointed by the Cardinall to visit euery parish Church in London and Middlesexe, to see their reedifices repaired, and the images of the crucifix, with Mary and Iohn thereto to be fired.

The 12. of Nouember, Stephen Gardener Bishop of Winchester, Chancelor of England, deceased at Yorke place, or whitehall by Westminster, whose body was from thence conueyed by water to Winchester house in Southwarke, where being inclosed in lead, he was layd in a vault of bricke made for the purpose, in S. Mary Oueries Church, and there rested for a time, but the pauie of blacke pelnet laid ouer his setting was stolen, and so cleane conueyed away, that the same was neuer heard of. From thence on the 24 of February next following, he was translated and caried from the sayd parish church of S. Mary Oueries, through Southwarke toward Winchester, there to be buried in his cathedrall Church as hee had appointed by his testament, his corps was set in a chariot couered with blacke, and a picture made like vnto him, lying on his coffin, with a miter on the head, a cope of cloth of gold on the body of the picture, gloues on the hands, rings on the fingers, &c. The L. Viscount Montacute the B. of Ely, and other his executors riding to the burial with aboue 200. haste of Gentlemen and Yeomen al in blacke.

D. Gardener deceased.

1556.

On New-yeares day, the Quæne gaue the great Seale to Doctor Nicholas Heath Archbishop of Yorke, and made him Lord Priuy Seale to the Lord Paget, and made him Lord Priuy Seale: these were both Londoners borne.

In this moneth of February, the Lord Maior of London and the Aldermen entred into Bridewell and tooke possession thereof, according to the gift of King Edward, now confirmed by Quæne Mary.

The 26. of February William Constable *alias* Fetherstone was arraigned in the Guild hall of London, who had caused letters to be sent as

The millers sonne taking to be King Edward.

broad that King Edward was alive, and to some he shewed himselfe to be King Edward, so that many persons both men and women were troubled by him, for the which sedition the sayd William had bin once whipped and delivered, as is aforesayd: But now he was condemned, and the 13 of March he was drawne, hanged and quartered at Tyborne.

Blazing starre.

A blazing starre was seene at all times of the night, the 6, 7, 8, 9. and the 10. of March.

Dr. Cranmer burnt.

The 21 of March, D. Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury was burnt at Oxford: and the same day Cardinall Poole sang his first Masse at Greenwich in the Friers Church on Sunday next he was consecrated Archbi. of Canterbury.

Cardinall Poole archbishop.

The 25 of March, being the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady, Cardinall Poole received the Pall with the then used ceremonies and solemnities at Bow Church in cheape.

Newgate on fire. Conspiracy.

The 28. of March, at ten of the clocke before noone, a part of Newgate called Pannings hall was brent to the ground, and no prisoners left. A conspiracy was made by certaine persons, whose purpose was to have robbed the Exchequer, called the receit of the exchequer, in the which ther was of the Q. treasure about 50000. l. the same time, to the intent they might be able to maintaine war against the Queene. This matter was uttered by one of the conspiracie named White, whereby Vdall, Throckmorton Peckham, John Daniel and Stanton were apprehended, and divers others fled into France, Sir Anthony Kingstone was apprehended, and died by the way comming toward London.

Throckmorton and other executed.

The 28. of April, John Throckmorton and Richard Vdall, were drawne to Tyborne and there hanged and quartered,

The 19. of May, William Stanton was likewise executed.

The 8. of June, William Rossey, John Dedike, and John Bedell were executed at Tyborne,

Sands hanging on for robbery.

The 18. of June, one Sands a younger son to the Lord Sands, was hanged at Saint Thomas of Waterings, for a robbery that he and other had committed on Witsunday last, of 4000. pound.

Three burnt at Stratford.

The 27. of June, 13. persons being condemned for opinions concerning the Sacrament, were burnt at Stratford the Bow.

Aug. 4. Daniell and Peckham.

The 8. of July, Henry Peckham sonne to Sir Edmond Peckham, and John Daniel were hanged and headed on Tower hill, for being of counsell with them that should have robbed the Queenes treasure of her Exchequer, and their bodies buried in Barking Church.

Conspiracy in Norfolke.

About this time one Cleber, which sometime kept a schoole at Dys in Norfolke, with 3. brethren, whose names were Lincolne, pretended an insurrection, and would have gathered the people at a marriage, unto the which the brethren promised either of them to bring an 100. horse with men: at which time by them appointed, the sayd Cleber gave charge to a servant of his to watch in a lane nigh to the Church where they should meete, and as soone as he saw any horseman comming thitherward, to give him warning with all speede. So it chaunced (by the will of God) that certaine men riding through that lane to some other place about their businesse, came about such an houre as Cleber had appointed, upon sight of which men, his sayd servaunt returned to his master, and tolde him that his friendes were come: and immediatly the sayd Cleber stood up in the Parish Church of Payle, and read a Trayterous Proclamation of purpose prepared, which being ended, and seeing his part was too weake, for that his mates were not come, began to flye: but one Master Shiereman pursued and tooke him, at a towne called Eye in Suffolke, and was kept in prison untill the next Sessions at S. Edmondsbury, and his three mates being brought to him, were there all together drawne hanged and quartered.

Seuen Aldermen ceased in London.

In the last yeere began the hot burning feuers wherof died many old persons, so that in London there died 7. Aldermen in the space of 10. moneths, whose names were Henry Herdion who deceased the 22. of December, 1555, sir Richard Dobs, late Maior, sir William Laxton late Maior, sir Henry Hobletborne late Maior, sir John Champneis blind, late Maior, sir John Aylcefe late Sheriffe, and sir John Gresham, late Maior, who deceased the 23. of October, Anno. 1556.

This yeere, on the 19. of September, the Rose pence being base monyes coyned in the raigne of Henry the 8. and Edward the 6. were by Proclamation forbidden to bee any longer currant in England, but in Ireland to passe as before.

Abbot of Westminster.

The 21. of November John Feckham late Deane of Pauls in London was made Abbot of Westminster, was stalled, and tooke possession of the same: and 14. Monks more received the habit with him that day of the order of S. Benet.

False accuser set on the pil lorie and burnt in both cheekes.

The 21. of Novemb. a man was brought from Westminster Hall, riding with his face to the horse tayle, and a paper on his head, to the standard in Cheape, and there set on the pillorie, and then burned with an hote iron on both his cheekes, with two letters, F. and A. for false accusing one of the court of the common place in Westminster of treason: the like unjust fact once wished to the like accuser of his master and eldest brother, but it was answered, that in such case could be no remedy, though the accuser himselfe were in the same fact found the principall offender: where through it followeth, the accuser never shewed signe of shame (the way to repentance) but terribly curseth, and blasphemously sweareth hee never committed any such act, though the same be registred before the honorable, the Queenes Paieties high Commissioners: and what horrible slanders, by libelling and otherwise with threats of murther hee dayly bruiteth against mee, the knower of all secrets, God I meane, knoweth, unto whom I refer my cause, being comforted with this sentence of the Prophet Dauid: Fret not thy selfe with these cursed harmefull men, neither envy angerly these workers of wickednesse, for like

grasse anon they shall bee cut nowne, and like the greene fresh bent of the flower shall they wither away, &c.

A stranger would have murthered the keeper of Newgate.

The 16. of December, Gregory Carpenter, Blacke-Smith, a Frenchman borne, was arraigned for making counterfeit keyes, whereby to have opened the lockes of Newgate, to have slain the keeper, and let forth the prisoners, at which time of his arraignement, having conveyed a knife into his sleeve, hee thrust it into the side of William Whitrenes his fellow prisoner, who had given witnesse against him, so that he was in great perill of death thereby, for the which fact he was immediatly taken from the barre into the Starre before the Justice hall, where his hand being first taken off, hee was hanged on a gibbet set up for that purpose: the keeper of Newgate was arraigned, and indicted for that the sayd prisoner had a weapon about him, and his hands loose which should have bene bound.

1557 Gunshot in the Court at Greenewich.

The 4. of January, a ship before Greenwich (the Court being there) shot off her ordinance, one piece being charged with a bullet of stone, which passed through the walles of the Court, and did no more hurt.

Ambassadors from Russia and Scotland.

In the yere 1556. an Ambassadour from the high and mighty Euan Vasilouich Emperor of all Russia, great Duke of Volodemer, Muscouia, and Nouogrode, Emperour of Cassan, and of Astarchan, &c. sent by the Sea from the port of Saynt Nicholas in Russia, his honorable Ambassador surnamed Olep Napea, to the famous and excellent Princes Phillip and Mary king and Queene of England with certaine Letters, together with certaine presents and gifts, as a manifest argument of a mutuall amitie to be made and continued betweene their Paieties subiects, for the commodities of both Realmes, and people: which Diator, was the twentieth of July imbarqued in a good English ship named the Edward Bonaventure, belonging to the company of the English marchants, Richard Chancellor being graund Pilote, and John Buckland Master of the said ship. In which was laden, ware, oyle, tallow, furres, felts, yarne, &c. to the summe of 20. thousand pound sterling, together with fifteene Russes: Diuers and above ten other Russes shipped in another shippe called Bona Speranza, with goodes to the value of five thousand pound sterling, which ships in their journey towards the coast of England, were by contrary winds severed the one from the other, to wit, the sayd Bona Speranza with 2. other English shippes the one named the Philip and Mary, the other the Confidentia, were driven on the coast of Norway, where the said Confidentia was seene to perish on a rocke, and the Bona Speranza seemed to winter there. The third being the Phillip and Mary, arrived in the Thamis nigh London the 18. of April, in the yeare 1557. The Edward Bonaventure travelling the seas foure moneths, finally the tenth of November the said yeare 1557. arrived within the Scottish coasts, where by extreme tempest, the sayd ship being beaten from her ground, and tackles, was driven upon the rockes on those, where the brake and split in pieces, in such sorte, as the graund Pilote, taking the boate of the said ship, trusting to attaine the shore, and to save the body of the sayd Ambassadour, and seaven of the company, the same boate was by darke night overwhelmed and drowned, wherein perished, not onely the sayd graund Pilote, with seaven Russes, but also divers Mariners, the Ambassador with a few others with much difficultie saved. In which ship wracke not onely the sayd ship was broken, but also the goods laden in her was by the rude people of the country rifled and carryed away. As soone as by letters it was to the company in London knowne of the losse of their Pilote, men, goods, and ships: the Merchants obtained the Queenes Letters to the Lady Dowager of Scotland, for the gentle entertainement of the said Ambassador with his traine, and restitution of his goods, and also addressed two gentlemen, Master Lawrence Hussie doctor of the civill Law, and George Gilpin with money, and other requisites into Scotland, to conduct him and his there, and also to conduct him into England, so that on the 14. of February, the sayd Ambassadour left Scotland, comming towards England, having attending upon him the sayd two English gentlemen and others, came the 18. day of February to Warwicke, where he was honourably received by the Lord Wharton, Lord Warden of the East Marches: he prosecuting his voyage untill the 27. of February, approched the city within twelve miles, where hee was received with 80. Marchants with chaines of golde, and goodly apparell, ryding, who conducting him to a Merchants house foure miles from London, received there a quantity of golde, velvet, and silke, with all furniture thereto requisite: the next day being the last of February, he was by the Merchants adventurers for Russia, to the number of 140. persons, and so many or more servants in one livorie, conducted towards the city of London, where by the way he had not onely the hunting of the Fore, &c. but also by the Queenes Paieties commandement was received by the Viscount Montague, he being accompanied with divers lustie Knights, Esquires, Gentlemen, and Yeomen, to the number of 300. horses, led him to the North parts of the City of London, where by foure Merchants richly apparrelled, was presented to him a faire richly trapped horse, together with a fost cloth of crimson velvet, enriched with golde laces, whereupon the Ambassadour mounted, ryding toward Smithfield bars, the Lord Maior accompanied with the Aldermen in scarlet did receive him, and so riding through the city of London, in the middle betweene the L. Maior and Viscount Montague, a great number of Merchants, and notable personages riding before, was conducted into his lodging in Fanchurch street. At his first entrance into his chamber, there was presented unto him on the Queens behalfe, for a gift & present one rich piece of cloth of tissue, a piece of cloth of gold, another piece of cloth of gold raised with Crimson

Richard Chancellor drowned.

Clothes, of purple Veluet, imbroidered with gold, a paire of purple Veluet, a paire of damaske purples, a paire of Crimson damaske: which he thankefully accepted. In this his beautifull lodging he abode expecting the Kings repaire out of Flanders into England: whose highnesse arriuing the 2. of March, the same Ambassador the 23. of March (the day twelue-moneth he before his came from the Emperor his master) was honourably brought to the King and Queene at Westminster, where arriuing at the bridge, was there receiued with 6. Lords, conducted into a Chamber, where by the Lords, Chancellour, Treasurer, Iohn Gray, Admirall, Bishop of Ely, and other Councellers, he was salued, and consequently brought into the Kings & Queens presence sitting vnder a stately cloth of honour. Where after he had deliuered his letters, made his Oration, gaue 2. number of sables, and the rest of the same made both in English and Spanish, with much honour, exhibited readines to depart to his former lodging, to the which he was in two daies after, by assignment of the King and Queene, repayed, and conferred with him two graue Councellers, the Bishop of Ely, and Sir William Peter Knight, chiefe Secretary, who after diuerse talkes and conferences, finally concluded vpon such treaties and Articles of amity, as by the letters of the Kings and Queenes Highnesse vnder their great Seale of England, to him by the said Councellers deliuered, doth appeare.

A league and Articles of mary concluded.

The 24. of April was celebrated the solemnitie of the Noble Order of the Garter at Westminster. The said Ambassador was conducted to the Court by the Lords, Lauer and Mantle, to his Maiesties presence, where he was placed in the high commendations to the Emperour, which being done, he was led vnto the Chappell, where was prepared for him a State by Estate, wherein he accompanied with the Duke of Norfolke, the Lords aboue mentioned and other, was present at the whole seruice: the Diuine Seruice being done, he was reuested and reduced to his Barge, and so to his lodging. The Merchants hauing prepared foure goodly and well trimmed Ships, laden with all things of Merchandizes apt for Russia, the same Ambassador sailed downe the River of Thames, from London to Graueseud, where he with his Traine and furniture, was imbarked with his voiage homeward on the 3. of May. It is to be remembred, that during the whole abode of the said Ambassadour in England, the company of Merchants did frankly giue to him and his, all manner of costs and charges in victuals, trauing from Scotland to London, during his abode there, and vntill setting of sayle aboord a Ship.

Gifts sent to King and Queene of England by the Emperour of Russia, and spoyled by the Scots after the Shipwracke.

First, fiue hundred of sables, rich in colour and haire.

Item, twenty entire sables, exceeding beautifull, with teeth, eares, and clawes.

Item, foure hunting tables, with chaines and collers.

Item, thirty luzarnes large and beautifull.

Item, fiue large and great skins, very rich and rare, worne only by the Emperor for his person.

Item, a large and faire Ierkafwon for the wilde Swan, Crane, Goose, and other great fowles, together with a dozinne of siluer, the hoopes gilte, seru'd for a lure to call the sayd hawke.

Gifts sent to Emperor of Russia, by the King and Queene of England.

First, two rich peeces of cloth of tissue.

Item, one fine peece of scarlet.

Item, one fine violet in graine.

Item, one azur cloth.

Item, a notable paire of baigandines, with a murrian couered with crimson veluet, and gilt nailes.

Item, a male and female Lyons.

Gifts giuen to the Ambassadour at his departure.

First, a chaine of gold of one hundred pound.

Item, a large Basen and Ewer of siluer and gilt.

Item, a paire of pottle pots gilt.

Item, a paire of flagons gilt.

Charles Lord Stanton and his men cruelly murthered maister Argile, and his sonne: he caused them to be stricken downe with clubs, then their throats to be cut, and after to bee buried in his owne house 15. foote deepe, for the which he was arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and after conueyed from the Tower of London through the City, and so to Salsbury, and there hanged with foure of his men seruants, the 6. of March.

Lord Stanton executed.

King Philip returned into England, and landed at Douer on the eighteene of March, and the twenty three of March passed through London with the Queene and Nobles of the Realme.

King Philip returneth into England.

Thomas Stafford, and other hauing conspired diuers treasons against the King and Queene, fearing iust punishment for their desertes, fled beyond the seas, and there remaining attempted diuers times to stirre rebellion within this Realme, by sending Bookes, Billes, and Letters, written and painted, farced full of vntruthes, and at length the sayd Stafford, and other English Rebels, and some strangers, entred this Realme, on the foure and twentieth of April, and tooke by stealth the Castle of Skarborough in the county of Yorke, and set out a shamefull Proclamation, wherein he traiterously called and affirmed the Queen to be vnrighteous and most vniworthy Queene, and that the King had brought into this Realme the number of twelue thousand Spaniards, and that into their handes were deliuered 12. of the strongest holdes in this Realme. In which Proclamation the sayde Stafford named himselfe Protector and gouernour of this Realme, but he with the other his complices, by the good diligence of the Earle of Westmerland and other Noble men, were apprehended on the last of April.

Thomas Stafford & his complices take Skarborough Castle.

The last of April, Thomas Piercy Esquire was

Percy Earle of Northumberland.

was made Baron Percy at Westminster, and on the next morow which was the first of May, he was created Earle of Northumberland, and the Queene gaue him all the lands which had beene his Auncestors remaining in her hands.

Thomas Stafford beheaded.

The 28. day of May, Thomas Stafford was beheaded on the Tower hill, and on the morrowe three of his company, to wit, Strechley, Bradford, and Proctor, were drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered.

Warre with France.

The 7. of June, for that the French King had supported the treason of the Duke of Northumberland, and also the trayterous hand of Wyat, and not long after when the deuill put in the heads of Dudley, Ashton, and others their complices, to enter into a new conspiracie, the said Kings Ambassadour was not onely paide, but receiued them into his house, there to assemble and contriue their malicious and deuillish enterprise: and although the said King were aduertised thereof by our Ambassadours: neuertheless, Dudley, Ashton, and others flying into France, were both receiued of the King, and also maintained with annuall pensions by him giuen, contrary to his promise. Also hee hath receiued sundry famous Pirates, and notorious enemies, and of late he sent Stafford with other Rebels, whom hee had entertained, furnished with armour, money, munition and ships, to suppresse the Castle of Skarborough: Proclamation was made to giue warning to our Subiects, to forbeare all Traffique with any of that Realme, and to repute the French King and his Subiects as open enemies, &c.

The last of June, the Lord Philip Howard, sonne of Thomas Duke of Norfolke, was borne in London, at the Earle of Arundels house without Temple barre, which house sometime belonged to the Bishop of Bathe, and shortly after was Christned in the Queenes Chappell at Westminster in a font of gold, where Philip King of Spaine, and Nicholas Heath Archbishop of Yorke, then Chancelour of England, were his Godfathers in proper person, and the Lady Elizabeth, Dutchesse of Norfolke, his great Grandmother, was his Godmother. This Lord Philip was the onely begotten childe of the said Duke, borne of the Lady Mary, daughter and heire of Henry Fitz Allen, the last Earle of Arundell of that name. To whom the inheritance and dignity of the said Earle therefore descended.

English men sent to Saint Quintens.

The 6. of July, the King passed ouer to Calleis, and so into Flaunders, where hee made great prouision for warre against the French King. The same moneth, the Queene sent ouer an Army of a thousand horsemen, foure thousand footemen, and two thousand Pioners, to ayde King Philip, whereof the Earle of Pembrooke was Generall. The Lord Robert Dudley Maister of the Ordenance.

Lady Anne of Cleue.

The 15. of July, died the Lady Anne of Cleue at Chelsey, and was buried at Westminster on the 3. of August.

An Reg. 5. Noble men of France taken prisoners.

The 10. of August, were taken of Fraunce the chiefest Captaines, the Duke of Montmorency, Constable of Fraunce, and his sonne Monsieur de Meme, the Duke of Pompenciers the Duke of Longuille, the Marshall of Saint Andrew, the Reingraue Colonell of the Almaines, Roch du Maine, the Count de Rochefoucault, the Viscount of Touraine, the Baron of Curton, the Prince of Mantua, besides many Gentlemen and Captaines.

Saint Quintins was wonne.

The 18. of August, the Towne of S. Quintins was taken by King Philip, with the helpe of English men, at the siege whereof the Lord Henry Dudley, youngest sonne to Iohn late Duke of Northumberland, was slaine with a Gunne: which Henry Dudley and Sir Edward Windsore were the first that aduanced banner on the wall.

Dearth and penury.

This yeare before Haruest, Wheat was sold for foure mark the quarter, Mault at 44. shillings the quarter, Beanes and Rye at 30. shillings the quarter, and Peaze at 36. shillings 8. pence. But after Haruest, Wheat was sold for 5. shillings the quarter, Mault at 6. shillings 8. pence, Rye at 3. shillings 4. pence, so that the penny Wheat loafe that waighed in London the last yere but 11. ounces Troy, waighed now 56. ounces Troy, according to the size set downe by the Statute at that time. In the Country, Wheat was solde for 4. shillings the quarter, Mault for 4. shillings eight pence, and in some places a bushell of Rye for a pound of Candles, which was 4. pence.

Iohn Caius.

The 7. of September, at 7. of the clocke at night, in a blacke rainie cloude in the West was seene a Rainebow, the Moone in the East risen one houre before, and faire shining, and at the full the day before.

A final terme at Westminster.

This yere in Michaelmas Terme, men might haue seene in Westminster Hall at the Kings Bench barre, not two men of Law before the Iustices, there was but one named Molton, who looked about, and had nothing to doe, the Iudges taking about them. In the Common Pleas no moe Sergeants but one, which was Sergeant Stanton, who looked about him, there was elbow rome enough, which made the Lawyers complaine of their iniuries in that Termne.

Lord Paioy of S. Johns.

The 30. of November, Sir Thom. Tresham Knight, receiued the order of the Croste, and was made Lord Paioy of S. Iohn of Ierusalem in England.

Calais besieged by the French.

The first of January, the Duke of Guise with a great Army of French men, entred a plot of ground, entrenched at Sandgate, and there building his power into two parts, sent the one with certain Peeces of Ordenance along the Downes towards Risebanke: and the other with battering Peeces to Newnam Bridge, which two Forts both at one time they shot at, and some recouered without resistance, for there was not a man in them, for they priuily fled into the Towne of Caleis. The next day there, fore the French men began a Battery from the sand hils next Risebanke, against the wall of Calais, betwixt the water-gate and the prison, and continued the same by the space of two or three dayes, vntil they had made a little breach, but yet not faultable, neither was it meant, but

to make the Englishmen to haue the lesse regard to the defence of the Castle, where they were ascertained to haue an easie entry: so that while the Englishmen trauailed to defend the breach, the French men being passed through the ditch fell of water, entred the Castle, and thought to haue entred the Towne that way: but by the prouesse of sir Anthony Agar knight, and Marshall of the Towne, they were put backe into the Castle, but the same sir Anthony Agar left his life, and this was on the 1st of January.

The Towne of Calais was deliuered to the French on the 8th of January.

The same night William Lord Wentworth, Deputie or Lieutenant of the Towne, sent Nicholas Wotton *alias* Owen, and Richard Turpin, *alias* Hans to the Castle to demand parlee, which they graunted, putting forth of the Peterne two French Gentlemen, and receiued in pledge of them into the Castle Richard Spilman of the Ordinance, and Iohn Mosse a Gentleman of the Staple. Vpon which they hauing intelligence, that the Towne with all the Artillery, Victuals, and Ammunition, should be yeelded to the French, the Duke of the Inhabitants saued, they vnder the conduct to passe whither they would, sauing the Lord Deputy with 50. other, such as the Duke of Guise should appoint, to remaine prisoners, and to be put to no fine. The next morning the French men entred the Towne and possessed it. And forthwith all the men, women, and children, were commanded to leaue their owne and to goe into certaine places appointed for them, there to remaine till order were further taken for their sending away. The places appointed for them to remaine in, were chiefely feare, the two Churches of our Ladie, and of S. Nicholas, the Departure house, and the Staple, where they might part of that day, the night following, and the next day till the afternoone. And while they were thus in these seuerall places, peculiar mention was made in their hearings, straightly charging them that were Inhabitants of the Towne of Calais, hauing about them any money, plate, or iewels, to the value of 4. pence, to bring the same forthwith, and lay it on the high Altars of the said Churches, vpon paine of death, bearing them in hand they should be searched. The reason of which Proclamation, there was made a verie fruitfull offering, and while they were at the offering in the Churches, the French men rifled their houses, where they found inestimable riches and treasure: but especially in that Towne, Ordinance, Armour, and other Munitions, as the French men write, besides the great riches of gold and siluer, coine, iewels, plate, wools, and other Merchandize, (which was inestimable) there were found 30. peeces of brasse mounted on wheeles, and as many of yron, with such furniture of powder, pellets, armour, victuals, and other munitions of warre scarcely credible. On the next day being the seuenth of Ianuary in the afternoone, a great number of the meanest sort were suffered to passe out of the Towne in safetie, being guarded through the Army with a number of Scottish light Horsemen, who vsed the Englishmen very well and friendly, and after this, euery day for the space of three or foure dayes, there were sent away diuers companies, till they were all auoyded, those excepted that were reserued prisoners.

The French men enter the Towne of Calais.

There were in the Towne of Calais, 500. English Souldiers in ordinarie pay, and of the townes men about 200. fighting men: and there were in the whole number of men, women, and children, as they were accounted going out of the gate, 4200. persons or thereabout. The Lord Wentworth deputie of Calais, sir Ralph Chamberlaine Captaine of the Castle, Iohn Harlestone, Captaine of Rysbanke, Nicholas Alexander captaine of Newnam bridge, Edward Grimston Controuller, Iohn Rogers surueior, with other to the number in all of fiftie persons, were sent prisoners into France.

The losse of this towne seemed strange to many men of great experience, the same towne being so many yeeres so strongly fortified with all munitions that could be deuised, should now in so short space bee taken of our enemies without stroke or slaughter of any man, more then sir Anthony Agar, as ye haue heard. The Councell of England had with all expedition raised a great power, to haue beene sent for the defence of that Towne but it availed not, for such a tempest of wind arose, as the like in many yeeres had not been seene, whereby no ship could brooke the sea, by meanes whereof our men were forced to remaine at Douer in a readinesse to haue passed the seas, till newes was brought the towne was lost, as ye haue heard, and then euery man returned to his home. And shortly after, to wit, in the same moneth of Ianuary, the Strong Forts of Guisnes and Hames, though most valiantly defended by the Lord Gray of Wilton and others, Englishmen, was wonne by the French, and by them possessed: wherof Master George Ferrers hath written at large, for he collected the whole History of Queene Mary, as the same is set downe vnder the name of Richard Grafton.

George Ferrers in the raigne of Queene Mary.

The 18. of Ianuarie, Edward Hastings knight of the Garter, Lord Chamberlaine to the Queene, was created Baron Hastings of Loughborough at Westminster.

The 20. of Ianuary began a Parliament at Westminster.

Parliament.

In the moneth of March, a pres was graunted to the Queene by the Citizens of London, of twentie thousand pound, which was leuied of the Companies, for the which summe to be repaid againe, the Queene bound certaine lands, and also allowed for interest of the money 12. pounds of euery hundred for a yeere.

A pres forth Queene.

The twentie eight of Aprill, Francois the French Kings eldest sonne called the Dolphin, was married vnto Mary Stewart, daughter and sole heire of Iames the fift, late King of Scotland, in the Citie of Paris, with great pompe and triumph.

Queene of Scots married into France.

The losse of Calais being generally grieuous to the whole Realme of England, but especially to Queene Mary, she could not to trauell with King Philip her husband, as with her owne Councell, and Lords of the Realme which way should

should be best to reuenge this iniurie, especially now whilest the French King was occupied in warres with King Philip, to endomage some of his countreys by way of inuasion, and to surprise some of his townes vpon a sudden. And amongst sundry deuises none was thought so fit to bee attempted as an hauen Towne in Flanders called Ysell, a Towne as well for the situation thereof conuenient to receiue fresh succours, and vittuall out of England by sea, as also for that it was knowne to the Queene and her Councell at that time not to be furnished with any garrison of souldiers sufficient to repulse the power of a Prince vpon a sudden. Wherefore there was immediately order giuen to Edward Lord Clinton then high Admirall of England, with all expedition to prepare himselfe, with all the Queenes ships of warre, furnished with souldiers, munition, and victuall, to ioyne with the Admirall of King Philip, who had the ouer from the said King to ioyne with the Nauy of England, for the atchieuing of this enterprise.

In the meane time while King Philip being absent from the Low Countries, was occupied with his wars in France, Monsier de Thermes Captaine of Calais, being a man very expert in the wars, taking out of Calais so many of his souldiers as might be spared from thence, ac-ioyned to them all the forces of the French garrysons in Arroys, Bollonois, and Picardie, whereof together with the souldiers of Calais, being to the number of 700. Footmen, and 300. light horsemen, there were assembled 14. ensignes of the French footmen, 18. Cornets of Almaines, 4. or 5. hundred men at armes of France, besides the light horsemen Scotters, amounting in the whole to the number of 9000. Footmen, and 1500. Horsemen, entred into Flanders with full determination to spoile B. Philippes countrey along the Sea coast, and namely a proper hauen towne called Dunkerke, and with like purpose to haue surprised the Towne of Graueling. This Captaine of pollicie passing by the towne of Gaueling, layd siege to a little Fort not farre from thence called Bergines, which he won with small resistance. And without long staying marched on to Dunkerke, and planting a siege there, battering the same so sharply with the Cannon, that within lesse than foure dayes hee won the towne, which he (like as the other) put to sacke, and after setting the towne on fire, he with his French men spred abroad, wasted the most fruitfull quarter of that part of Flanders almost to Newport: the army withdrew, and encamped within halfe a mile of Gaueling. The county Egmont lieutenant generall for King Philip in the low countrey, assembled all the power as well of King Philips garrisons, as also of men of warre in the low country, to the number of 14. M. or more footmen, and 2. or 3. M. horsemen, determining so to affront the French, that either they should passe no further into the country, or at the least to impeach them from the siege of Gaueling: Monsier de Thermes hearing of this power assembled, made all possible hast toward Gaueling, where he was no sooner arriued, but that hee saw his enemies ready ranged in the field, by reason whereof his Army was now nothing rife, but how he might bring home his army in safety to Calais. The county Egmont espying the French men bent to march away with the people of the countrey, cut betweene them and home, placing his battailes in such order, that the Frenchmen had no way to passe, but vpon the sands betweene the towne and the seaside: as by good chance lay a great fleet of D. Maries ships of warre, within eye shoot of whole iron shot the French men had no feare, but to passe as their iourney lay: and so hauing forces on either hand to fight at aduantage. Monsier de Thermes without staying any longer, caused his trumpets to passe ouer the riuer somewhat more towards the west of the English ships, and staid vpon the further side for the residue of his battels: there came such thicke haile shot of artillery out of the foure on the one side, and from the English ships on the other side, that there was a full battery made vpon the French men on all sides, which they nothelesse abode without breaking order for the time, when suddenly appeared before them two great troopes of horsemen of 1500. apiece part Iuart Rutters, and part Almaines, whereof the one in front, and the other in flanke, gaue strong charges vpon the French vantgard, who being well backed with their other battels, stoutly repulsed those two first troopes. Thus both parties being at a stay, the county Egmont with 180. men of armes, and his forte battels following, before the French had well recouered breath, rechearged vpon them with all his forces together so terrible, that he shooke all their battell and the other tooke them to flight, the victory was soone had, by reason the Almaines beaten backe with the artillerie, all well of the towne as of the ships, brake their order, and came not to the charge, whereby the whole charge of the battell rested vpon the French mens heads. This field was fought on the 13. of July vpon the sea sands, neere to Gaueling, where besides those that were slaine, which were esteemed to the number of fiue thousand, there were taken prisoners the Marshall de Thermes Captaine of Calais, Monsier Senerpont gouernour of Boleigne, Monsier Villebon gouernour of Hambye, Monsier Annabaule sonne to the late Admirall, Monsier de Montmillers gouernour of Arroule, Monsier de Channe gouernour of Coxbier, beside a number of gentlemen, Captaines and souldiers, but especially the bandes of Calais went to wracke, so as very few returned home. The admirals beeing named knew nothing of this matter, wherefore following their prescribed course, and hoping together at the place appointed, sayled from thence with prosperous wind, and on the third and twentieth of the same moneth, with seuentie shippes of warre appeared before the hauen of Conquet in Britaine at whose arriuall there, they sounded their trumpets, and with a peale of great ordinance, gaue a loud salue to the Britaines: and by eight

Dunkerke a Flanders Hauen.

of the clocke the same morning, the English men manning foorth their Ship-boates, recouered landing, and within short time became Maisters of the said Towne of Conquet, which they sacked and burnt with a great Abby, and many pretty Towns and Villages neere there abouts, where our men found great store of pillage.

Towne of Conquet burnt.

This being done, the English men withdrew downe to the Seaside, where their Ships lay ready to receiue them. But the Flemings being courteous of the spoile passing further into the land, before they could recouer their Ships againe, were encountered by the power of the Country, by whom there were slaine of them to the number of foure or fiue hundred. The Admirall perceiuing the power of the Country greatly to encrease, thought it not best to attempt any assault against the Towne of Brest, or to make longer abode there, but returned home.

In this meane time while King Philip and the French King with two most puissant Armies, affronted each other neere vnto the water of Some, either of them being obstinately bent to driue the other out of the field, for which cause they entrenched their Campes: diuers conferences were had concerning Peace, and at the last concluded vpon all controuersies, except the restitution of Calais required by the Ambassadours of Queene Mary, which the French part would in no wise heare of, by reason of which difficulty this treaty could take no effect, nor come to good conclusion. King Philip thinking himselfe bound to stand in that case with the Queene his wife, did therefore stay a long time before he concluded peace with the French King.

A treaty of Peace about the deliuery of Calais.

The second of July, the Lord Wenewoorth and diuers other that had beene Gouernours of Calais, were attainted of treason being then in France.

The 11. of July, within a mile of Nottingham, was a meruailous tempest of thunder, which, as it came through two Townes, beat downe all the houses and Churches, the Bells were cast to the out side of the Churchyards, and some webs of Lead foure hundred foote into the field, withen like a paire of Gloues.

An. Reg. 6. Tempest at Nottingham.

The riuer of Trent running betweene the two Townes, the water with the mud in the bottome was carried a quarter of a mile, and cast against the trees, the trees were plucked vp by the rootes, and cast twelue score off. Also a childe was taken forth of a mans hands two speares length high, and carried a hundred foote, and then let fall, wherewith his arme was broken, and so died. Fiue or sixe men there about were slaine, and neither flesh nor skin perished: there fell some hailestones that were 15. inches about, &c.

This yeere in Harueſt time, the quartaine Agues continued in like manner or more vehemently, than they had done the last yeare passed, wherethrough died many olde people, and specially Priests, so that a great number of Parishes were vnserued, and no Curates to be gotten, and much corne was left in the field for lacke of workmen and labourers.

Quartaine Agues raigned sore.

In the beginning of this yeare, corne rose to foureteene shillings the quarter, and wood was sold scant in London, and was sold for thirteene and fourteene shillings the thousand of billets, and coales at ten pence the sacke, by reason of the great death and sickneſſe the last Sommer for lacke of helpe and carriage.

Corne and wood dare.

King Philip being absent out of the Realme (as ye haue heard) and Queene Mary being dangerously sicke, ended her life at her Mannour of Saint Iames by Charing Crosse the 17. of November being Thursday, in the yeare 1558. when she had raigned fiue yeares, 4. monethes, and odde dayes. The same day deceased Cardinall Poole at Lambeth, and a little before, two of her Physitians, besides diuers Bishops and Noble men. Queene Mary was buried at Westm. and Cardinall Poole at Canterbury.

THE

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF QVEENE ELIZABETH.

An. Reg. 1. 1558.

THe Parliament house being aſcertained of Queene Maries death, many were amazed, and some reioyced. Doctor Heath, Archbishop of Yorke, then Lord Chancelour, published vnto the whole assemblie, the immediate right of the Lady Elizabeth, which they all acknowledged, and forthwith shee was Proclaimed in Westminster Hall, and London, the Queen being now at Bishops Hatfield, was not Proclaimed there vntill two dayes after.

This newes of Queene Maries death was deadly vnto all Abbots, Priors, & Priorasses, &c. who saw their suddaine deſolation before their face, and although the Queene were resolued to alter the manner of Religion, yet she ordered all things to remaine, as shee found them vntill the end of the next Parliament, saue only by her Proclamation, commanded that none should preach but such as should be specially licensed thereunto, and that such rites and ceremonies should be vsed in all Churches as had beene vsed in her Highneſſe Chappell, and that the Epiſtle, and Gospel, with Procession, should be read in the English tongue, in the time of Masse.

Proclamation.

The 19. of November, the Queene came from Hatfield, being met, by the Bishops at Highgate, who kneeling, acknowledged their Allegeance, which shee very graciously accepted, giuing to euery of them her hand to kisse, except Bishop Bonner; which shee omitted for sundry seuerities, in the time of his authority, and was very dutifully, and honourably met, by the Lord Maior and whole Estate of London, and so brought to the Charterhouse, where she stayed many dayes, from thence entred in at Cripplegate, rid in State along by the Wall, to the Tower, and the 28 of December she removed thence to Somerset house.

Great thanks giuen from many parts.

The Oath of Supremacie.

The Queene being now to take an exact survay of all her Clergie, and Officers of State, began to put in practise the Oath of Supremacy, which her Father first ordained, and amongst many which refused that Oath, was the Lord Chancelour aforesaid; yet neuertheleſſe, the Queene hauing a good respect vnto him, would not deprive him of his title, but committed the custody of the great Seale vnto Sir Nicholas Bacon, then Attourny of the Court of Wards, who from that time was called Lord Keeper, and by Parliament confirmed to haue as ample power, and preroguatiue, as the ancient Lord Chancelours of England, in which place he liued and died very honourably.

The 13. of December, in the Abby of Westminster, the corpes of Queene Mary was very Royally enterred with all solemne Funerall rites, and a Masse of Requiem: her body was laid on the North side of Henry the seuenth his Chappell.

Queene Mary buried.

The 24. of December in the same place, and in like Princely manner were performed solemne obsequies, for the late famous Emperor Charles the fift, who died in September, a rich pall of gold lying vpon the Hearse, the Emperours Ambassadour was three Mourner, accompanied with many Princes and Peeres of England.

Obsequies for Charles the Emperour.

The 12. of January, the Queene went by Barge, from Whitehall to the Tower, the Lord Maior and Citizens, attended her Highneſſe with Musicke and many triumphant shewes vpon the water.

The 13. of January the Queene in the Morning created Sir William Parre Lord Marques of Northampton, Edward Seymour sonne to the late Duke of Somerset Viscount Beauchamp, and Earle of Hertford, Thomas Howard, Viscount Bindon, Sir Oliuer Saint-John Barron of Bletso, and Sir Henry Carey, Lord Hunsdon.

Creation of Lords.

The morrow after being the 14. day of January, the Queene with great Maiestie, rode through London to Westminster, against which time, the Lord Maior, and Citizens of London had furnished the Streetes with stately Pageants, sumptuous shewes and deuises; the next day shee was Crowned by Doctor Ogiethorp, Bishop of Carlile.

Queene Elizabeth crowned.

At this time the English Nation was wonderfully deuided in opinions, as well in matters of Ecclesiasticall gouernment, as in diuers points of Religion, by reason of these changes, within the compaſſe of 12. yeares, and euery of those changes, varying from that which was authorized by Henry the eight, viz King Henry retained the Ecclesiasticall Supremacie, with the first fruites and tenths, maintained seuen Sacraments, with Obits, and Masse, for the quicke and dead, King Edward abolished the Masse, authorized one Booke of Common Prayers

Towne of Conquet burnt.

of the clocke the same morning, the English men manning forth their Ship-boates, recouered landing, and within short time became Masters of the said Towne of Conquet, which they sacked and burnt with a great Abby, and many pretty Townes and Villages neere there abouts, where our men found great store of pillage.

This being done, the English men withdrew downe to the Seaside, where their Ships lay ready to receiue them. But the Flemings being couetous of the spoile passing further into the land, before they could recouer their Ships againe, were encountered by the power of the Country, by whom there were slaine of them to the number of foure or fiue hundred. The Admirall perceiuing the power of the Country greatly to encrease, thought it not best to attempt any assault against the Towne of Brest, or to make longer abode there, but returned home.

A treaty of Peace about the deliuery of Calais.

In this meane time while King Philip and the French King with two most puissant Armies, affronted each other neere vnto the water of Some, either of them being obstinately bent to driue the other out of the field, for which cause they entrenched their Campes: diuers conferences were had concerning Peace, and at the last concluded vpon all controuersies, except the restitution of Calais required by the Ambassadours of Queene Mary, which the French part would in no wise heare of, by reason of which difficulty this treaty could take no effect, nor come to good conclusion. King Philip thinking himselfe bound to stand in that case with the Queene his wife, did therefore stay a long time before he concluded peace with the French King.

The second of July, the Lord Wentworth and diuers other that had beene Gouernours of Calais, were attainted of treason being then in France.

An. Reg. 6. Tempest at Nottingham.

The 11. of July, within a mile of Nottingham, was a meruailous tempest of thunder, which, as it came through two Townes, beat downe all the houses and Churches, the Bells were cast to the out side of the Churchyards, and some webs of Lead foure hundred foote into the field, writhen like a paire of Gloues.

The riuer of Trent running betweene the two Townes, the water with the mud in the bottome was caried a quarter of a mile, and cast against the trees, the trees were plucked vp by the roates, and cast twelue foote off. Also a childe was taken forth of a mans hands two speares length high, and carried a hundred foote, and then let fall, wherewith his arme was broken, and so died. Fiue or six men there about were slaine, and neither flesh nor skin perished: there fell some hailestones that were 15. inches about, &c.

Quartaine Agues raigned sore.

This yeere in Harnest time, the quartaine Agues continued in like manner or more vehemently, than they had done the last yeere passed, wherethrough died many olde people, and specially Priests, so that a great number of Parishes were vnserued, and no Curates to be gotten, and much corne was left in the field for lacke of workmen and labourers.

Corne and wood deare.

In the beginning of this yeere, corne rose to fourteene shillings the quarter, and wood was sold scant in London, and was sold for thirteene and fourteene shillings the thousand of billets, and coales at ten pence the sacke, by reason of the great death and sickenesse the last Sommer for lacke of helpe and carriage.

King Philip being absent out of the Realme (as yee haue heard) and Queene Mary being dangerously sicke, ended her life at her Mannour of Saint Iames by Charing Crosse the 17. of November being Thursday, in the yeere 1558. when she had raigned fiue yeeres, 4. monethes, and odde dayes. The same day deceased Cardinall Poole at Lambeth, and a little before, two of her Physitians, besides diuers Bishops and Noble men. Queene Mary was buried at Westm. and Cardinall Poole at Canterbury.

THE

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF QVEENE ELIZABETH.

An. Reg. 1. 1558.

THE Parliament house being ascertained of Queene Maries death, many were amazed, and some reioyced. Doctor Heath, Archbishop of Yorke, then Lord Chancelour, published vnto the whole assembly, the immediate right of the Lady Elizabeth, which they all acknowledged, and forthwith thee was Proclaimed in Westminster Hall, and London, the Queen being now at Bishops Hatfield, was not Proclaimed there vntill two dayes after.

This newes of Queene Maries death was dreadly vnto all Abbots, Priors, Priories, &c. who saw their suddaine desolation before their face, and although the Queene were receiued [illegible] the manner of Religion, yet she suffered [illegible] to remaine, as thee found them [illegible] the next Parliament, saue one [illegible] nation, commanded that none [illegible] such as should be specially [illegible] and that such rites and ceremonies [illegible] in all Churches as had [illegible] Chappell, and that [illegible] Gospel, with Procession, should [illegible] English tongue, in the time of [illegible]

A. Reg. 1. The 23. of November, the Queene came [illegible] from Hatfield, being met, by the Bishops at Highgate, who kneeling, acknowledged their Allegeance, which thee they graciously accepted, giuing to euery of them her hand to kisse, except Bishop Bonner, which thee omitted for sundry seuerities, in the time of his authority, and was very dutifully, and honourably met, by the Lord Maior and whole Estate of London, and so brought to the Charterhouse, where she stayed many dayes, from thence entred in at Cripplegate, rid in State along by the Wall, to the Tower, and the 28. of December she remoued thence to Somerset house.

The Oath of Supremacie.

The Queene being now to take an order throughout all her Clergie, and Officers of Estate, began to put in practise the Oath of Supremacy, which her Father first ordained, and amongst many which refused that Oath, was the Lord Chancelour aforesaid; yet neuertheless, the Queene hauing a good respect vnto him, would not deprive him of his title, but committed the custody of the great Seale vnto Sir Nicholas Bacon, then Attourny of the Court of Wards, who from that time was called Lord Keeper, and by Parliament confirmed to haue as ample power, and preeminence, as the ancient Lord Chancelours of England, in which place he liued and died very honourably.

Queene Mary buried.

The 13. of December, in the Abby of Westminster, the corpes of Queene Mary was very Royally enterred with all seemely Funerall rites, and a Masse of Requiem her body was laid on the North side of Henry the seuenth his Chappell.

Obsequies for Charles quintus the Emperour.

The 24. of December in the same place, and in like Princely manner were performed solemne obsequies, for the late famous Emperor Charles the fift, who died in September, a rich pall of gold lying vpon the Hearse, the Emperours Ambassadour was chiefe Mourner, accompanied with many Princes and Peeres of England.

The 5. of Ianuary, the Queene rode by Barge, from Whitehall to the Tower, the Lord Maior and Citizens, attended her Highnesse with Musicke and many triumphant shewes vpon the water.

Creation of Lords.

The 13. of January the Queene in the Tower created Sir William Parre Lord Marques of Northampton, Edward Seymour sonne to the late Duke of Somerset Viscount Beauchamp, and Earle of Hertford; Thomas Howard, Viscount Bindon, Sir Oliuer Saint-Iohn Baron of Bletso, and Sir Henry Carey, Lord Hunsdon.

Queene Elizabeth crowned.

The morrow after being the 14. day of Ianuary, the Queene with great Pageantie, rode through London to Westminster, against which time, the Lord Maior, and Citizens of London had furnished the streetes with lately Pageants, sumptuous shewes and deuises, the next day shee was Crowned by Doctor Ogiethorp, Bishop of Carlile.

At this time the English Nation was wonderfully deuided in opinions, as well in matters of Ecclesiasticall gouernment, as in diuers points of Religion, by reason of these changes, within the compasse of 12. yeeres, and euery of those changes, varying from that which was authorized by Henry the eight, viz King Henry retained the Ecclesiasticall Supremacie, with the first fruites and tenths, maintained seuen Sacraments, with Obits, and Masse, for the quicke and dead, King Edward abolished the Masse, authorized one Booke of Common

Prayers

Prayers in English, with hallowing the bread, and wine, &c. and eſtabliſhed onely the two Sacraments; Queene Mary reſtored all things according to the Church of Rome, reduced all Eccleſiaſticall Iuriſdiction, vnto the Papall obedience, with reſtitution of firſt fruites, and tenths, permitting nothing within her dominion, repugnant to the Roman catholike Church; Queene Elizabeth in this her firſt Parliament, holden at Weſtminſter the 25. of this moneth of January, expelled the Papall Supremacie, reſumed the firſt fruites and tenthes, repreſſed the Maſſe, and for the generall vniformity of her Dominions, eſtabliſhed the booke of Common Prayer in the Engliſh tongue, forbidding all other, and within fewe yeeres after that, great care was taken, to haue the ſame tranſlated into Welch for particular vſe of the ancient Brittaines.

Parliament. The 25. of January, began a Parliament at Weſtminſter, before the eſtates whereof Doctor Cox late come from beyond the Seas, and ſometime Schoolemaſter to King Edward the firſt, made a learned Sermon.

The firſt fruites and tenths granted to the Crowne. In this Parliament, the firſt fruites and tenths were graunted to the Crowne, and alſo the ſupreame gouernment euer the ſtate Eccleſiaſticall.

Likewiſe the booke of Common Prayer, and adminiſtration of the Sacraments in our vulgar tongue, was reſtored, to be done as in the time of King Edward the firſt.

Moreouer, in the time of this Parliament, a motion was made by the Common houſe, that the Queenes Maieſtie might be ſued vnto, to graunt her Graces lycence to the Speaker, Knights, Citizens, and Burgeſſes, to haue acceſſe vnto her Graces preſence, to declare vnto her matter of great importance, concerning the ſtate of this her Graces Realme. The which Petition being moued to her Grace, ſhee moſt honeſtly agreed, and conſented thereunto, and aſſigned a day of hearing: when the day came, the Speaker and the Common houſe, reſorted vnto her Graces Pallace at Weſtminſter, called the White Hall: and in the great Gallery there, her Grace moſt honeſtly ſhewed her ſelfe, ready to heare their motion and petition. And when the Speaker had ſolemnly and eloquently ſet forth the meſſage, the ſpeciall matter whereof was, to moue her Grace to marriage, whereby to all our comforts wee might enioy the Royall iſſue of her body to Raigne ouer vs, &c.

Speech made to her Graces for her marriage.

Anſwere of her Maieſty. The Queenes Maieſtie after a little pauſe, made this anſwere following. As I haue good cauſe, ſo doe I giue you all my hearty thankes, for the good zeale and louing care you beare to haue, as well towards me, as to the whole eſtate of your Country: your petition I perceiue, conſiſteth of three parts, and mine anſwere to the ſame ſhall depend of two.

Alex. Euesham. And to the firſt part I may ſay vnto you, that from my yeeres of vnderſtanding, ſith I firſt had conſideration of my life, to be borne a ſeruitour of Almighty God, I happily choſe this kinde of life, in the which I yet liue, which I aſſure you for mine owne part, hath hitherto beſt contented my ſelfe, and I truſt hath beene moſt acceptable vnto God. From the which, if either ambition of high eſtate offered to mee in marriage by the pleaſure and appointment of my Prince, whereof I haue ſome Records in this preſence (as you our Treaſurer well know) or if eſchewing the danger of mine enemies, or the auoyding of the perill of death, whoſe meſſenger, or rather a continuall watchman, the Princes indignation, was no little time daily before mine eyes, by whoſe meanes, although I know, or iuſtly may ſuſpect, yet I will not now vtter, or if the whole cauſe were in my ſiſter her ſelfe, I will not now burthen her there, withall: becauſe I will not charge the dead: if any of theſe, I ſay, could haue driuen or withdrawen me from this kinde of life, I had not, now remained in this eſtate wherein you ſee me, but ſo conſtant haue I alwayes continued in this determination, although my youth and yeeres may ſeeme to ſome hardly to agree together: yet is it moſt true, that at this day I ſtand free from any other meaning, that either I haue had in times paſt, or haue at this preſent, with which trade of life I am ſo throughly acquainted, that I truſt, God, who hath hitherto there, in preſerued and led me by the hand, will not of his goodneſſe ſuffer me to goe alone.

For the other part, the manner of your petition I doe well like, and take it in good part, becauſe that is ſimple, and containeth no limitation of place or perſon, for if it had been otherwiſe, I muſt needes haue miſliked it very much, and thought it in you a very great preſumption, being vnkitting, and altogether vnmeete for you to require them that may commaund, or thoſe to appoint, whoſe parts are to deſire, or ſuch to binde and limit, whoſe duties are to obey, or to take vpon you to draw my loue to your liking, or to frame my will to your fantaſie: for a guerdon conſtrained, and gift freely giuen can neuer agree together. Neuertheleſſe, if any of you be in ſuſpect, that whenſoeuer it may pleaſe God to enclyne my heart to another kinde of life, you may well aſſure your ſelues, my meaning is not to doe or determine any thing, wherewith the Realme may or ſhall haue iuſt cauſe to be diſcontented. And therefore put that cleane out of your heads, for I aſſure you, what credit my aſſurance may haue with you, I cannot tell, but what credit it ſhall deſerue to haue, the ſequell ſhall declare, I will neuer in that matter conclude any thing that ſhall be preiudiciall to the Realme: for the weale, go I, and ſafely whereof, I will neuer thinne to ſpend my life. And whom ſoeuer my chance ſhall be to light vpon, I truſt hee ſhall be ſuch, as ſhall be as carefull for the Realme and you, I will not ſay as my ſelfe, becauſe I cannot ſo certainely determine of any other, but at the leaſt-wiſe by my good will and deſire he ſhall be ſuch as ſhall be as carefull for the preſeruation of the realm, and you, as my ſelfe. And albeit, it might pleaſe Almighty God to continue mee ſtill in this minde, to liue out of the ſtate of marriage, yet is it not to be feared, but hee will ſo worke in

in my heart, and in your wiſedomes, as good prouiſion by his helpe may be made conuenient, whereby the Realme ſhall not remaine deſtitute of an heire, that may be a fit Gouernor, and peraduenture more beneficiall to the Realme, then ſuch offſpring as may come of mee. For though I be neuer ſo carefull of your well doings, and minde euer ſo to be, yet may iſſue grow out of kinde, and become perhaps vngracious. And in the end this ſhall be for me ſufficient, that a marble ſtone ſhall declare, that a Queene hauing raigned ſuch a time, liued, and died a Virgine. And here I end, and take your comming vnto me in good part, and giue vnto you all eſt-ſtones my hearty thankes, more yet for your zeale and good meaning, then for your petition.

Preachers at the Spittle, and at Paules croſſe. In the Eaſter Holidayes, preached at the Spittle, Doctor Bill the Queenes Almoner, Doctor Coxe, and Maſter Horne, the two laſt came lately from beyond the Seas.

On Low Sunday, the ſecond of Aprill, Maſter Sampſon, late came from beyond the Seas, made the Rehearſall Sermon at Paules Croſſe: but when the Lord Maior and Aldermen came to their places in Paules Churchyard, the Pulpit doore was locked, and the key could not be heard of: whereupon the Lord Maior ſent for a Smith to open the locke, which was done, and when the Preacher ſhould enter the place, it was found very nithy and vncleane: moreouer, the Sergeant that had the key of the place, where the Biſhops and Prelates vſe to ſtand to heare the Sermon, could not be found: whereupon certaine Gentlemen with a fourme, brake open the doore. This diſorder chanced, by reaſon that ſince Chriſtmaſſe laſt paſt, there was not a Sermon preached at Paules Croſſe, for an inhibition had beene ſent from the Councell vnto the Biſhop of London, that he ſhould admit no Preacher, becauſe of the controuerſie betwixt the Biſhoppes, and them of the Clergie that were new returned into the Realme from beyond the Seas.

Conference appointed betwixt the ab Biſhops and other Preachers. The laſt of March, the Parliament yet continuing, a conference was begun at Weſtminſter, concerning Articles of Religion, betwixt the Biſhops and other of the Clergy on the one part, and certaine learned Preachers, of whom ſome had beene in dignity in the Church of England, before that time on the other part. The declaration of the proceeding wherein and the cauſe of the breaking vp of the ſame conference, by default and contempt of certaine Biſhops, part of the ſaid conference was publiſhed in a Treatiſe printed by Richard Iugge and Cawood, Printers to the Queenes Maieſtie as followeth.

The Queenes moſt excellent Maiеſtie, hauing heard of diuerſitie of opinions in certaine matters of Religion, amongſt ſundry of her louing ſubiects, and being very deſirous to haue the ſame reduced to ſome godly and Chriſtian concord, thought it beſt by the aduice of the Lords, and other her priuie Councell, as well for the ſatisfaction of perſons doubtfull, as alſo for the knowledge of the very truth in certaine matter of difference: to haue a conuenient choſen number of the beſt learned of either part, to conferre together their opinions and reaſons, and thereby to come to ſome good and charitable agreement. And hereupon by her Maieſties commandement, certaine of her priuy Councell declared this purpoſe to the Archbiſhop of Yorke (being alſo one of the ſame priuie Councell) and required him that he would impart the ſame to ſome of the Biſhops, and to make choyſe of eight, nine, or ten of them, and that there ſhould be the like number named of the other part: and further alſo declared to him (as then was ſuppoſed) what the matters ſhould be: And as for the time, it was thought meete to be as ſeene as poſſible might be agreed vpon. And then after certaine dayes paſt, it was ſignified by the ſaid Archbiſhop, that there was appointed by ſuch of the Biſhops to whom he had imparted this matter, eight perſons, that is to ſay, foure Biſhops, and foure Doctors, who were content at the Queenes Maieſties commandement to ſhew their opinions, and as he termed it, render account of their faith in thoſe matters which were mentioned, and that ſpecially in writing, although he ſaid they thought the ſame ſo determined, as there was no cauſe to diſpute vpon them.

It was hereupon fully reſolued by the Queenes Maieſtie, with the aduiſe aforeſaid, that according to their deſire, it ſhould be in writing on both parts, for auoyding of much alteration in words, and that the ſaid Biſhops ſhould, becauſe they were in authority, of degree ſuperiours, firſt declare their mindes and opinions to the matter, with their reaſons in writing: and the other number being alſo 8. men of good degree in ſchooles, & ſome hauing bin of dignity in the Church of England, if they had any thing to ſay to the contrary, ſhould the ſame day declare their opinions in like manner. And ſo each of them ſhould deliuer their writings to the other, to be conſidered what were to be improoued therein, and the ſame to declare againe in writing at ſome other conuenient day, and the like order to be kept in all the reſt of the matters: all this was fully agreed vpon with the Archb. of Yorke, and ſo alſo ſignified to both parties. And immediatly hereupon diuers of the Nobility & ſtates of the Realme, vnderſtanding that ſuch a meeting and conference ſhould be, and that in certain matters, whereupon the Court of Parliament conſequently following, ſome lawes might be grounded: they made earneſt meanes to her Maieſty, that the parties of this conference, might put and reade their aſſertions in the Engliſh tongue, and that in the preſence of them of the Nobility, & others of the Parliament houſe, for the better ſatisfaction & inabling of their owne iudgements, to treat and conclude of ſuch lawes as mought depend thereupon. This alſo being thought very reaſonable, was ſignified to both parties, & ſo fully agreed vpon, & the day appointed for the firſt meeting to be the Friday in the foreenoone, being the laſt of March, at Weſtm. Church, where both for good order & for honor of the conference, by the Queenes Maieſties com-

mande-

mandement, the Lords and others of the priuy Councell were present, and a great part of the Nobility also: and notwithstanding the former order appointed and consented vnto by both parties, yet the Bishop of Winchester, and his Collegues, alleaging they had mistaken that their assertions, and reasons should be written, and so onely recited out of the booke, said, their booke was not ready then written, but they were ready to argue and dispute, and therefore they would for that time repeate in speech that which they had to say to the first proposition. This variation from the order, and specially from that which themselues had by the said Archbishop in writing before required, adding thereto the reason of the Apostle, That to contend in words, is profitable to nothing but to subuersion of the hearer, seemed to the Queenes Maiesties Councell somewhat strange, and yet was it permitted without any great reprehension, because they ceased themselues with mistaking the order, and agreed, that they should not faile but put it in writing, and according to the former order, deliuer it to the other part, and so the said Bishop of Winchester and his Collegues, appointed Doctor Cole Deane of Paules, to be the vtterer of their mindes, who partly by speech onely, and partly by reading of Authorities written, and at certaine times being informed of his Collegues what to say, made a declaration of their meaning, and their reasons to the first proposition, which being ended, they were asked by the priuie Councell, if any of them had any more to be said: and they said no. So as then the other part was licensed to shew their mindes, which they did according to the first order, exhibiting all that which they meant to be propounded in a booke written, which after a prayer and inuocation made most humbly to Almighty God, for the ending of them with his holy spirit, and a protestation also to stand to the doctrine of the Catholique Church, builded vpon the Scriptures, and the doctrine of the Prophets and the Apostles, was distinctly read by one Robert Horne Batcheler in Diuinity, late Deane of Duresme. And the same being ended with some likelihood, as it seemed, that the same was much allowable to the audience, certaine of the Bishops began to say contrary to their former answere, that they had much more to say to this matter: wherein although they might haue beene well reprehended for such manner of cauillation, yet for auoyding of any mistaking of orders in this colloquie or conference, and for that they should vtter all that which they had to say: it was both ordered, and thus openly agreed vpon of both parts in the full audience, that vpon the Monday following, the Bishops should bring their mindes and reasons in writing to the second assertion, and the last also if they could, and first reade the same, and that done the other part should bring likewise theirs to the same. And being read, each of them should deliuer to other the same writings. And in the meane time the Bishops should put in writing, not onely all that which Doctor Cole had that day vttered: but all such other matters as they any otherwise could thinke of for the same, and as done as they might possible, to send the same booke touching the first assertion to the other part, and they should receiue of them that writing which Master Horne had there read that day, and vpon Monday it should be agreed what day they should exhibite their answers touching the first proposition. Thus both parts assented thereto, and the assembly quietly dismissed. And therefore vpon Monday, the like assembly began againe, at the place and houre appointed, and there, vpon what smister or disordered meaning is not yet knowne (though in some part it be vnderstanded) the Bishop of Winchester and his Collegues, and especially Lincolne, refused to exhibite or reade according to the former notorious order on Friday, that which they had prepared for the second assertion. And thereupon by the Lord Keper of the great Seale, they being gently and fauourably required to keepe the order appointed: and that taking no place, being secondly as it behoued, pressed with more earnest request, they neither regarding the authority of that place, nor their owne reputation, nor the credit of the cause, vtterly refused that to doe. And finally, being againe particularly euery of them apart distinctly by name, required to vnderstand their opinions therein, they all sauing one (which was the Abbot of Westminster, hauing some more consideration of order, and his duty of obedience then the other) vtterly and plainely denied to haue their booke read, some of them as more earnestly than other, some so also, some other more vndiscreetly, and vnreuerently then others. Whereupon, giuing such example of disorder, stubbornesse, and selfe-will, as hath not beene seene and suffered in such an honourable assembly, being of the two Estates of this Realme, the Nobility, and the Commons, besides the presence of the Queenes Maiesties most Honourable priuie Councell, the same assembly was dismissed, and the godly and most Christian purpose of the Queenes Maiestie made frustrate. And afterward, for the contempt so notoriously made, the Bishops of Winchester and Lincolne, hauing most obstinately both disobeyed common authority, and varied manifestly from their owne order, and especially Lincolne, who shewed more folly than the other, were condignly committed to the Tower of London, and the rest (sauing the Abbot of Westminster) stode bound to make daily and personall appearance before the Councell, and not to depart the Citie of London and Westminster, vntill further order were taken with them for their disobedience and contempt.

The three propositions, whereupon conference was determined to haue beene at Westminster.

1 It is against the word of God, and the custome of the ancient Church, to vse a tongue vnknowne to the people, in common prayer, and the administration of the Sacraments.

2 Euery Church hath authority to appoint, take away and change ceremonies and Ecclesiasticall

Ecclesiasticall rites, so the same be to edification.

3 It cannot be proued by the word of God, that there is in the Masse offered vp a sacrifice propitiatory for the quicke and the dead.

The names of such as were in the commissions of Englage.

The Bishop of Winchester.
The Bishop of Lichfield.
The Bishop of Chester.
The Bishop of Carleil.
The Bishop of Lincolne.
Doctor Cole.
Master Grindall.
Master Horne.
Doctor Sands.
Doctor Harpsfield.
Doctor Langdal.
Doctor Chadsey.
Doctor Story, Bishop of Chichester.
Doctor Coxe.
Master Whithead.
Master Gest.
Master Aylmer.
Master Iuell.

The Bishops and Doctors sate on the one side of the Quier at a table, and the other learned men sate at another table on the other side of the Quier. And at the vpper end thereof at another table sate the Queenes Councell to haue heard some good conclusion of the said conference, but it came to small effect, as ye haue heard.

The 5. of Aprill the Bishops of Winchester Doctor White, and of Lincolne, Doctor Watson were committed to the Tower of London.

Treaty of peace termed.

In this meane time, a treatie of peace, which had beene in hand the last yeere, betwixt the 2. Kings, of Spaine and France, was now renued againe, and the deputies were appointed to meet at Chasteau Cambresis, a 6. miles distant from Cambray. For the King of Spaine, the Duke of Alua, the Prince of Oringe, the Bishop of Arras, Rigomes de Silua, Earle of Fells, Monsieur Vigilius Zwichen knight and president of the priuie Councell in the Low countries, who was letted by sicknesse, and could not come. For the French King, there came the Cardinall of Lorraine, the Constable, the Marshall of Saint Andrew, the Bishop of Orliance, and Claude de Aubespine the said Kings secretary. For the Queene of England, the Bishop of Ely, the Lord William Howard, Baron of Effingham, Lord Chamberlaine to the said Queene, Doctor Nicholas Wotton, Deane of Canterbury and Doctor. After this treaty had continued long, and now relied nothing to stay the from concluding a generall peace, but onely the article touching Caleis, at length the matter was also accorded by a speciall treaty betwixt the M. Paiestly of England and the French King. The substance of which article was, that Caleis should rest in the Frenchmens hands for the terme of 8. yeres and at the end of that terme, to render the same to the M. Highnes, or for default thereof, to forfeit vnto her, the sum of 500000. Croines: and for sweety hereof, to deliuer 4. hostages, such as her Paiestly should thinke sufficient. It was concluded also a firme peace betwixt the Realms of England and Scotland, such fortresses to be raised as had bin built, and made by the Scots and the French in the borders towards England: Sir Iohn Mason knight, secretary for the French tongue, was sent ouer in post with instructions vnto the English Commissioners, after whose comming, within two or three dayes a generall peace was concluded betwixt all the parties. And so on the 7. of Aprill, the said peace was proclaimed, to wit, betwixt the Queenes Maiestie on the one party, and the French King on the other, their Realmes, Dominions and subiects, and likewise betwixt her Maiestie and the King, Dolphine, and Queene of Scots his wife, their Realmes, Dominions and subiects. This Proclamation was made at London by Garter and Norrey, Kings at armes, accompanied with 3. other Heraults, and 5. Trumpeters, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen in their skarlet Gownes, being present on horseback.

Peace proclaimed.

Commissioners for the Prince.

Conclusion of peace concluded with commission to deliuer Caleis to the English.

The 22. of Aprill, William Lord Wentworth late deputy of Caleis, was arraigned at Westminster vpon an inditement of treason found against him, in the late Queene Maries dayes for the losse of Caleis, but hee was acquit by his Peeres, the Lord Marquesse of Northampton, sitting that day as chiefe Steward of England, so hee was deliuered presently vnto his house, without returning to any prison.

Lord Wentworth arraigned and quit.

The 8. of May the Parliament broke vp, in which Parliament, besides other things before recited, a Subsidy was granted to the Queene of two shillings eightpence the pound, of moueable goods, and foure shillings of lands to be payd at two seuerall payments of euery person, Spirituall and Temporall.

Church seruice in the English tongue.

The 8. of May, being Whitsunday, the seruice in Churches began according to the Booke of Common prayer, set forth and established by this last Parliament, correspondent to that of King Edwards time.

The 2. of July, the Citizens of London had a muster before the Queenes Maiestie at Greenwich in the Parke, of a 1400. men, whereof 800. were pikemen all in fine coslets, 400. harquebuts in shirts of male, with morians, & 200. halberters in Almain riuets, which were furnished and set forth by the company of the citie of London: they had to euery hundred two Mistelers, richly apparelled, and 12. Wardens of the best companies riding in coats of blacke veluet, to conduct them with drums and fifes, and fiue ensignes, all in Ierkins of white bridges lattern, cut, and lined with blacke sarsenet, with caps, hosen and scarfes according, the Captaines Robert Constable, and maister Saunders, brought them in battell ray afore the Queene, euen as they should haue fought, which made a goodly shew before her Maiestie, the Emperours and French Kings Ambassadours being present.

Citizens of London mustered at Greenwich.

In the moneth of July, the old Bishops of England then liuing, were called and examined by certaine of the Q. Maiesties Councel, where the Bishops of Yorke, Ely, and London, with other, to the number of 13. or 14. for refusing to take the oath touching the Queenes supremacy and other Articles, they were deprined from

Bishops deprined.

their Bishopricks. And likewise diuers Deans, archdeacons, Parsons, and vicars, deprined from their benefices, and some committed to prison in the Tower, Fleet, Marshalsea the Kings bench.

Commissioners. Commissioners were likewise appointed for the establishing of Religion through the whole Realme. For London were appointed, sir Richard Sackvile Knight, Doctor Horne a Diuine, Doctor Huicke, a Civilian, and maister Salvage, Iniunctions. who called before them diuers persons of euery Parish, and sware them to enquire and present vpon certaine iniunctions.

Also the houses of Religion by Queene Mary, Houses suppressed. as the Priory of Saint Iohn of Jerusalem by Smithfield, the Nuns and brethren of Sion and Sheene, the blacke Friers in Smithfield, and the Friers of Greenwich were all suppressed: the Abbot and Monkes of Westminster, were put out, a Deane, Prebends, and Canons placed there, and so named the Colledge of Westminster, founded by Queene Elizabeth.

Church images burned. On the euen of S. Bartholomew, the day and the morrow after, they were burned in Paules Churchyard, Cheape, and diuers other places of the City of London, all the roodes and other Images of the Churches, in some places the Copes, vestments, altar clothes, bookes, banners sepulchres, and rood lofts were burned.

Churches in London striken and broken by tempest. The 5. of September, there fell a three houres tempest at London, in the forenoone, in the end whereof a great lightning, with a terrible clap of thunder, strake the spire (being stone) of the steeple of Allhallowes Church in Bredstreete, about a ten foot beneath the top, out of the which fell a stone that slew a dogge, and cuerthrew a man playing with the same dogge, and not long after, the same spire was taken downe by the Churchwardens, to saue charges of repairing. And at the same instant, by the same tempest, one of the South doores of Saint Dionies Church, in Fanchurch streete, with the doore of the rencstire of the same Church, were both striken through and broken.

Obsequie for the French King. The 8. and 9. of September, a solemne obsequie was kept in Paules Church at London for Henry the second of that name K. of France, who deceased about the 10. of July last past, of a wound receiued the 29. of June, in running at Tilt, in solemne Iusts holden at Paris, in honor of the marriage celebrated betwixt his sister the Lady Margaret of France, and Philibert, Duke of Sauoy. He was striken on the viser with a launce, as he ran against the Count Montgomerie: the splits entring by the sight of his head, piercing through his eye into his head, so perished his braine, that there was no meane to saue his life. The obsequie for him was kept in very solemne wise, with a rich hearse made like an imperiall Crowne, suteyned with 8. pillars, and couered with blacke velure, with a valence fringed with gold, and richly hanged with scutchions, penons, and banners of the French Kings armes, without any lights. And on the hearse was layd a palle of cloth of gold, with a coat armour of the armes of France, and a crest with an imperiall crowne standing vpon the hearse. Doctor Parker Archbishop of Canterbury elect, Doctor Barlow Bishop of Chester elect, and Doctor Scory, Bishop of Hereford elect, executing at the dirige of the Euening song in English, they sitting in the Bishop of London seate, in the vpper Quire in surplices, with Doctors Hoods about their shoulders. The cheefe mourner was the Marquesse of Winchester, Lord Treasurer, assisted with 10. other Lords mourners, with all the Heraults in blacke, and their coat armours vppermost.

On the morrow being the 9. of September, a Sermon was preached by Doctor Scory, in place of Doctor Grindall Bishop of London. After the Sermon, fire of the Lords, mourners, receiued the communion with the Bishops, which Bishops were in Copes on their surplices, onely at the ministration of the said Communion. Which being finished, there was a great dinner kept in the Bishop of Londons palace by Paules where the mourners apparelled them, and so ended the solemnitie of the said obsequies.

About the last of September, Iohn Duke of Finland, second sonne to Gustabus King of Swethen, was sent by his Father to treat a marriage for his eldest brother Ericus, with the Quenes Maiestie of England, he arriued at Harwich in Essex, and was there honorably receiued and entertained by the Earle of Oxford, which sayd Earle, and the Lord Robert Dudley, with a goodly band of Gentlemen and Yeomen, conueyed him to London, where he was receiued of diuers Knights and Gentlemen of the Court, on the 5. of October, and was with his traine of about the number of 50. persons well hosted, conueyed to the Bishop of Winchesters place in Southwarke, where he was lodged during his abode here, and remoued from thence 2. dayes before Easter homeward, and sped on his message, as may appeare by that which followeth taken out of *Iohannes Lewenclauij, comment. de bellis Moscouitis.*

Ericus King of Sweden son of Gustabus late King of the sayd Kingdome, hauing committed to prison his brother Iohn Duke of Finland, whom a little before he had employed into England on an Ambassage to the Queens Maiestie, whom he sued to for marriage, and had his suite receiued: againe, the second time solicited her Maiestie in the same suite, notwithstanding (to his great dishonour, and (as it fell out) his suit disgrace) he attempted the same matter with the youngest daughter of Philip Iaugraue van Hessen, at whose hand (hauing the second time bin reiected of her Maiestie here) the matter being knowne there, he also not only receiued a denial, but the Lady was by her father bestowed vpon Adolfe D. Van-Holst vncle of Frederick King of Denmarke, then enemie of the sayd Ericus.

The 22. of December, Chamberlen that was Captain of the Castle of Caleis, and Hurlestone that was Captaine of Risebanke were condemned of high Treason, because they left their charge, when the French men came thither.

In this meane time, through controuersie raised betwixt the Scottish Nobilitie, and the Quene Dowager of Scotland, which chanced specially

specially about matters of Religion, certaine of the Lords there inuying reformation therein and the Quene resisting them to her power, diuerse companies of souldiers, and men of warre, were sent out of France into Scotland to ayde the sayd Quene, where they were placed in diuers townes and forts, to the displeasure of the most part of the Scottish Nobilitie, who were forced to sue vnto the Quene of England for ayde to expell the French. Their suite was the better liked of, for that it was doubted lest the French men vnder pretence of bringing an army into Scotland to appease the Scots, might attempt some inuasion here in England, considering that by procurement, as was thought, of the Duke of Guise, Uncle to the Q. of France and Scotland, a title should seeme to bee pretended by his neece the aforesayd Quene, as might be gathered by coniectures. The names of the Lords of Scotland that made suite for ayde against the Frenchmen at that season were these.

Frenchmen sent into Scotland.

Confederate Lords in Scotland.

The Duke of Chateau le Rault.
The Earle of Arraine his sonne.
The Lord Iames, Prior of Saint Andrew.
The Earle of Argule.
The Earle of Glencarne.
The Earle of Rothosse.
The Earle of Southerland.
The Earle of Hintithe.
The Earle of Huntley.
The Earle of Catnes.
The Earle of Atolle.
The Earle Marshall.
The Earle of Paxton.
The Earle of Cassils.
The Earle of Sglenton.
The Earle of Pentros.
The Lord Ruthuen.
The Lord Boyd.
The Lord Ogletre.
The Lord Erskin.
The Lord Droonond.
The Lord Hume.
The Lord Roote.
The Lord Creighton.
The Lord Levingston.
The Lord Somerwell.
The Master of Lindsey.
The Master of Marwell.

The Queenes Maiestie with aduice of her graces Counsell, considering of this waighty businesses, and withall, foreseeing the malicious purpose of her aduersaries, and how the Quene of Scots was in France married and governed, so as she was not able to vse the liberte of her Crowne, did thinke it best to preuent such mischiefes as might ensue, if timely remedy were not vsed to displace such dangerous neighbours, the Frenchmen, that began to nestle themselues thus strongly so neare at hand. Hereupon was a power raised and sent foorth, both by Sea and land, the Duke of Norfolke being appointed Generall, and sent into the North for the direction thereof. And first Master W. Winter appointed vice Admirall of the Queenes Naune, Northwards made saile toward Scotland, and waiting along the coast, in the moneth of January, came into the Forth, and so to the rode of Leith, and there cast Anchor, as well to impeach the landing of such Frenchmen as might happily bee sent forth of France, against the Scottish Lords of the congregation, as also to keepe them that lay in Inse keith from victuals: moreouer after that the army by land was come together into the North parts, and had soiourned a while at Barwicke and thereabouts, the Lord Grey of Wilton being appointed Generall of the sayd army, departed with the same, and marched to Coldingham, where they encamped that night.

The 30. of March, Sir Iames Croft, and Sir George Howard, departed from Barwicke to the army, with all the lances and light horsemen containing the number of 1250. horses. The number of Footmen, more then 6000. The cheefe gouernours of which army were these: The Lord Grey of Wilton Lieutenant Generall, Sir Iames Croft assistant with him in the charge, the Lord Scrope L. Marshall, sir George Howard Generall of the men at armes and demilances, maister Barnaby fitz Patricke his lieutenant, Sir Henry Percy, Generall of the light horsemen: Thomas Hugghen Esquire Provost Marshall, Tho: Gower, Esq. of the Ordinance, M. William Pellham Captaine of the Pioners, Edward Randall Esquire, Sergeant Maior, Maister Thomas Borrough, Maister Cuthbert Vaughan, Maister Williams, and maister Cornewall Corporals, this day at night the army encamped at Dunglas, and thereabout.

The last of March, the army marching by Dunbar, there issued out of the towne certaine horsemen, and footmen, offering to skirmish, towards whom certaine harquebusiers made forward, but they kept themselues within their strength, two of the enemies horsemen, and one footman were slaine. This done the army marched on to Linton bridges, where the footmen encamped that night. The horsemen lay at Hadington and in diuers other small townes, Sir Iames Crofts lay at Clarkington west to Hadington, at the Lord of Tockburnes house. The first of Aprill the campe remoued to Salt Preston, and there incamped: this euening sir Iames Croft, with diuers of the Captaines in his company, met with the Earle of Arraine, the Lord Iames Prior of Saint Andrewes, the maister of Marwel, Sir William Kirkaudy Lord of Grange and diuers other of the Scottish Nobility, with three hundred horse in their traine.

After they had saluted each other, they rode together to Salt Preston, where the Lord Grey Lord Lieutenant met them, where they entred into communication and after departed. The second of Aprill, the Lord Grey, Sir Iames Croft, the Lord Scrope, Sir George Howard, with other Captaines rode to Musselburgh Church, whither came to them the Duke Chateau le Raule, with his son the Earle of Arraine, the Earles of Argule, Glencaine, Southerland, Mentith, and Rothus, the Lord Iames Prior of Saint Andrews, the Lord Ruythuen *alias* Riuen

the Lord Ogletree, the Lord Boyde, the master of Sarwel, the Lord of Quneckone, the master of Lindsey, the Bishop of Galloway, the Abbot of Saint Colmes Inch, the Abbot of Culros, the Lord of Pettirow, the Lord of Cunningham head, the Lord of Grange and other, about 200. horse, there they sate in Councell, and departed for that night.

On the 3. of Aprill, the Lord Grey, sir James Croft, the Lord Scrope, sir George Howard, sir Henry Percy, and diuers other Captaines, and Gentlemen, rode vnto Dunkey, a house of the Abbot of Dunfermes, where the Earle of Arraine, and the Lord Iames Steward, with diuers other Noble men of Scotland meeting them did conduct them into the said house, where they had long conference together, and after dinner they returned with the Lord Lieutenant vnto Salt Preston.

The 4. of Aprill, fiue yong Gentlemen, appointed to passe into England for pledges, their names were L. Claude Hamilton, fourth son to the Duke Chateau le Reault, Robert Dowglas, Archebald Cambel, L. of Longhennel, George Gream second son to the E. of Suntithe, Iames Coningham, son to the Earle of Glencorne.

The first of Aprill, the Campe raised from Salt Preston and marched forwards halfe a mile from Lestricke, beneath a Crage called Arthurs seate, the Duke of Chateau le Reault, the Earle of Arraine, the Earle of Argile, the Lord Iames, Lord Prior of Saint Andrewes, and the rest of the Noblemen of Scotland, accompanied with 2000. horsemen, and fiue hundred footmen staid for the comming of the English army, whereupon the Lord Grey, sir Iames Croft, the Lord Scrope, sir George Howard, and sir Henry Percy, repaired to them, and had conference there with the Duke, and other the Scottish Lords that were in his company.

In the meane while the army staid, but yet at length the horsemen, the vantgard and battell, were commanded to march forth, who accordingly passed along by the place where the Duke and Scottish Lords stood, vntill they approched neere to Lestericke: There came Trumpet the Queenes Regent Trumpet, to the Lieutenant and brought him with a safe conduct giuen vnder the hand and Seale, for the safe repaire of sir Iames Croft, sir George Howard, and 6. other to accompany them. Whereupon they preparing themselues, departed towards Edenbrough, where the said Queene as then lay within the Castle. There went with them master Somerset, master Pelham, and foure other Gentlemen, whilest they were in conference with the D. the Frenchmen to the number of nine hundred or a thousand shot, backed with fiue hundred rowters and pikes, and about 50. horsemen, were came forth of Lieth, vnder conduction of master Doncle, and the county Mortigues, Cozonell of the French footmen. The Lord Grey vnderstanding thereof, came vp to the hill, appointed an officer at armes called Rouge Crosse, to go vnto them, with commandement from him, that they should retire their forces forth of the field into the towne of Lieth: for if it were not for the promise which he had made to the Queen Dowager, hee would cause them to depart, The Herault doing his message, received answere, that they were vpon their master and mistresse ground, and therefore meant not to remoue from it. Rouge Crosse returning with this answere, was sent againe, to command them eftsones to go their way backe to Lieth, for if they did not, they should bee sent away with a mischiefe. Vnt vnneath had the Herault done this second message, when the Frenchmen stepping forth discharged a whole volie of their shot into the field against the Lord Grey and his company. Hereupon, the Englishmen and they fell in skirmish, which continued for the space of 4. houres and more, so hote and earnestly maintained on both parts, that the like had not lightly bene seene long time before: yet at the length the Englishmen beate the French footmen ouer the hill and wan the Crag from them, and put them from a Chappell, where they had made a great while, vsing it for a couert from the Englishmens shot. Then the enemies that were in Lieth shot off diuers peeces of their great artillerie out of the towne against the English men who on the other part brought foorth two field peeces, and couered them with a troup of horsemen, and hauing planted them to some aduantage, discharged the same among the enemies, who perceiuing that, gaue place, and sodainely the English demilances gaue a charge on them, bashe in amongst them, and fiue diuerse of them, whereby they bee forced to retire backe into Lieth, being followed verie neere to the gates of the towne. There were slaine in this skirmish of the French about 140. beside them that remained prisoners. Of the English men there were also diuers slaine, and many hurt. The same day sir Iames Croft and sir George Howard returned from the Queene Regent, after they had spent a long time in talke with her.

The seuenth of Aprill, a new trench was cast beside the Crag, and thereon two peeces of Ordinance planted. The 8. of Aprill, the Frenchmen shot at the English Campe very fore out of Saint Nicholas steeple, where were planted two great peeces of Ordinance, although they did no great hurt: but the same night the Englishmen cast a trench beyond the Crag, and placed in the same trench certaine small peeces of artillery, which went off the nert day against the enemies, and they likewise shot off against the English. The 12. of Aprill, a bullet of a great peece of Ordinance being shot out of Lieth, did light in the Campe and slue three men but they were answered againe with our Cannons. The fourteenth day of Aprill, being Easter day, the Englishmen shot off their great Ordinance, and the Frenchmen answered them againe all that day. The Frenchmen also skirmished, so that diuers were hurt on both parties. The same day the pile of Blackenes was surrendred to Master Winter. The same day, 9. Frenchmen apparelled like women came foorth of Lieth, and counterfeiting some light demeanour, trained one of the English scowts within their danger, whom

Pile of Blackenes surrendred to the English.

whom they tooke and chopped off his head, which they set vpon the toppe of one of their Church steeples. The 15. day of Aprill, a fifty horsemen, and about fiue hundred harquebuiers, who making to the new Trenches, were vpon the English men that warded, vpon such a sodain, that they slew and wounded no small number, and possessing the trenches a while, stopped the touch holes of three peeces of the Artillery, tooke Master Maurice Barkeley prisoner, and his ensigne Brian Fitz Williams was sore wounded, &c. The alarm being brought to the Campe, Sir Iames Croft, and other repaired towards the Trench with all expedition, and perceiuing the Frenchmen to bee masters of one of the Trenches, hee commanded captaine Vaughan with his band to enter the Trench, and to relieue those that were hardly beset of the Frenchmen, which was done with such manhood, that the enemies were expulsed, and foure of them slaine: Captaine Somerset and Captaine Reade with their bandes followed them, as they retired, and Master Arthur Grey with certaine demilances, and charging them with great courage, draue them into the towne, and made of them great slaughter, but Arthur Grey was shot through the shoulder. The 16. of Aprill, a supply of 2200. footmen came to the campe, sir Andrew Corber, sir Rowland Standley, sir Thomas Hesketh, Sir Arthur Manwering, sir Laurence Smith, Master Francis Tuntall, Master Edward Littleton, Captaine Carnell, Phillip Shurley, and Dauid Morris. They were garbed with 500. horsemen, Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir Francis Leake, Sir John Foster, and Sir Nicholas Strange, hauing charge to see them safely conducted, who after they had brought them past all danger of enemies, left them in safety by the way, and were come a day or two before them to the campe.

The 17. of Aprill, Master Winter caused diuers of the ship boats, being well manned to giue a great alarme at the side of the towne towards the water, discharging many hasses and harquebusiers of croke into the towne, during which time there was a piteous cry made by the women and children within the town. The 20. of Aprill, many peeces were shot off, out of the trenches into the Towne. There issued out at the gates one hundred shot, to hasse such of the Englishmen as came forth to offer skirmish, the pioners both Scots and English were occupied in making of a new trench neare to the towne.

The 20. of Aprill, the Bishop of Valence, accompanied with Sir Henry Percy and three hundred horsemen, came to Lestricke, the Lord Lieutenant, Sir Iames Croft, the Lord Scrope, and Sir Ralph Sadler, met him at the further end of the ward. And after they had receiued him with salutations, hee was conducted by Rogue crosse from the campe vnto Edenbrough, so by to the Castle, to confer with the Queen Dowager. He was no sooner in the Castle, but there issued forth of Lieth, the number of 200. French men, and began a hot skirmish, which continued two houres, at which diuers were slaine on both parties. The same night nine peeces of ordinance were planted in the new trench, so that the nert day the same peeces were shot off toward the steeple of Saint Anthonies Church, whereby the peeces of ordinance that lay in the same steeple, were dismounted by them, and like wise those that lay in the steeple of S. Nicholas Church, where a Gunner was slaine that stood at one of them, the peece and the Gunner tumbling downe both together: a great piece of this Church was beaten downe, and the steeple defaced. The Bishop of Valence after he had talked with the Queene, returned to commune with the Lords of the Congregation.

The three and twentieth of Aprill, the Pioners, Scottish and English, were busied in casting of trenches.

The 24. of Aprill, there issued out of Lieth seuentene hundred horsemen, who offered the skirmish, and vnder the place called little London, 300. or 400. of their shot were placed, at length certaine of the English Lances gaue a charge vpon their horsemen, who therewith retiring drew the Englishmen within danger of their shot, but the French were forced to retire, without any great hurt done to the Englishmen.

The 25. of Aprill, the Pioners finished the new fort, named Mount Pelham, to the gard whereof Captaine Vaughan was appointed gouernour, with 1200. souldiers. This fort was raised on the South side of the towne, the plot whereof was cast square with foure bulwarkes at euery corner, and 12 battering pieces planted in places conuenient. This day there issued out of Lieth on the East side, 70. or 80. horsemen, and 200. harquebusiers offering the skirmish, toward whom certain of the English light horsemen made, and charging them, draue them backe to their footmen, who with their shot receiued the light horsemen so sharpely, that they were forced to retire: in the retire Iames Hamilton a Scottish man was taken prisoner. This day Captaine Perick, and Captaine Hayes, hauing charge of a troupe of light horsemen, vnder sir Henry Percy, and the Lord of Grange, were taken prisoner before Dunbar, to the number of 20. or 30. other were likewise taken or slain. The same night also 2000. footmen with the Pioners, were sent to the other side of the towne, beyond the Canon miles, where the Pioners cast a trench for the safe lodging of the army, which remained the nert day from Lestrick downe into the valley by the said Canon miles called the red Banes. As the army was incamping, certaine of the enemies horsemen and footmen skirmished with the English Lances, and light horsemen a long time, there were two Frenchmen slaine with their horses also. In the time of this skirmish 2. Canons were conueyed and planted in the new trench, which discharged diuers shot at the enemies.

The seuen and twentieth of Aprill, the great artillery was planted aloft on the hill aboue the campe, within lesse then a furlongs shot of the towne wals, and the pioners were set a worke to cast new trenches; from the place where the same ordinance was lodged vnto mount Pelham

ham, drawing so nere vnto Lieth, as the harquebuse might reach them that watched and warded without the great bulwarke. The French kept the same day a trench which they had made without the towne continually shooting at the Englishmen in the Campe, but the same night the Englishmen wonne that trench from them, slue diuers of them therein with their sword, which being done they gaue a great alarme to the Towne both by land and water, the shippe boats shooting off against the Town very hotly, and they within the Towne likewise at the Englishmen. The same night was the great ordinance planted, and maister Markham hurt. The 28. the said great Ordinance went off, and shot continually the more part of the day. The Bishop of Valence departed the same day toward Warwicke, and this night Sir George Howard, that had been sent backe to Warwicke, to signifie to the Duke of Norfolke the estate of the siege, returned with sir Richard Lee, being conducted with 500. horsemen.

The 30. of April, the great artillery were shot off very hotly, and the French likewise shot off theirs, and comming forth of the Town, skirmished with the Englishmen: this night the pioners made new Trenches towardes the South bulwarke. The last of April, a sodaine fire was raised within the Towne, which hugely encreased and continued the most part of the night following: at the beginning when it first appeared, the English Ordinance was shot off to the place where the fire was, which shot together with helpe of the wind which was very great, did marueilously augment the same fire: neuertheles the French at the present time offred a skirmish and continued the same neere the space of two houres. It was appointed, that certaine bands should make alarme to the towne, insomuch that Captaine Vaughan, with other diuers soulditers of Mountpelham, entred the ditch, & approached the walles, but retiring without receiuing any great hurt. The 1. of May, the Frenchmen early in the morning set vp their May poles in certaine bulwarks and 14. Ensignes, the which being discouered of them in the camp, they saluted them with a peale of great Ordinance, and likewise the French answered them againe, and so continued the most part of that day.

The 2. of May, the pioners made the trenches for the artillery to be planted in battery. The night following they placed the artillery in the new trench, and the next morning, the same battery went off, and continued all that day. The night ensuing, the Pioners made a trench by the Citadell, wherein they might lodge some shot, and Captain Vaughan with diuers of the bands in Mountpelham, gaue two fierce assaults to the towne, entred the ditches and viewed the flankers, whereupon the French shot off the same flankers, and manning their walles shot off two or three volies of their small artillery, slaying and hurting to the number of 20. Englishmen among other little Norton was one.

The 4. of May, there was three ensignes appointed to gard the new trenches, and towardes night the Frenchmen that were in the trench vnder the Citadell, made a sally vpon the English men that garded the said trench, but could not preuaile. The same night the English conueyed two culuerings ouer the water to secure the mills, and before the breake of the day they had burnt one of the same mils. The 5. of May, 4 souldiers belonging to our great ordinance, set fire and burnt the other mill. This day also, as French gentlemen came forth to discouer the English trenches, Captaine Reade commanded one of his souldiers to shoote at them, but through mishap his piece burst, and a thiuer thereof brake the arme of the said Captaine.

The 6. of May, the English Ordinance on the further side the water, began to shot off against the enemies very hotly. This day the Earle of Argule, and diuers other Noble men of Scotland, came to Edenbrough with two thousand horsemen and footmen, who shewed themselues in order of a muster on the hill vnderneath the Castle, which being perceiued of the French within Lieth, they shot off three great peces of artillery at them, but hurt them not. The night ensuing, the great Ordinance in the Englishmens trenches and bulwarks, continued shooting on euery side: and herewith commandement was giuen by the Lord Lieutenant and the Councell that the whole army should be ready armed by midnight. In the morning by two of the clocke, diuers bands passed forth toward the towne, and entring the ditches offered to scale, other Captaines with their men approches the bulwarks, and other were appointed to enter beside the mils. Beside the English bands, there a thousand Scots ioyned with them, whereof fiue hundred with Captaine Vaughan and other were commanded to attempt the bulwarke next to Mountpelham, and other fiue hundred went with such English Captaines as were commanded to assault the breach.

Moreouer, a wel the lances as light horsmen were assigned to gard the fields: sir George Howard with the lances, keeping betwixt the foot Mountpelham and the Sea Westward, and sir Henry Percy with the light horsemen, betwixt the Campe and the Sea Eastward. The rest of the footmen that went not to the assault, were also appointed to gard the trenches and field, in such wise as was thought expedient, and vpon warning giuen by Captaine Kandall, Sergeant Maior, such as had beene commanded to giue the assault in their seuerall appointed places, pressed with courage, and boldly aduentured to climbe the walles, and enter at the breaches, but yet their attempt wanted the wished successe: for what through the policy of the French, in stopping the currant of the riuer that night, and what by reason of the vnsittnesse of the ladders, being too short, the assailants were repulsed, and were forced to retire with the losse of 700. 8. score Englishmen, or more, which were slaine outright, besides those that were wounded being at the least two or three hundred.

The 8. of May, sir George Howard & sir Richard Lee departed toward Warwick with certain companies of horsmen for their safe conduction.

The ninth of May, the Frenchmen wrought within

within the Towne to fortifie and repaire the breaches. The same day also the French had manned to the seawards a Boat fraught with fifty Harquebusiers, meaning to conuay them ouer to Inskeith, but the English ships discouering them, prepared certaine Boates to encounter them, whereof they being aware, returned.

The 10. of May, Master Ingleby, Captaine Pickman, and Captaine Browne came to the campe from Barwicke, with a supply of foure hundred and fifty souldiers.

The twelfth of May about midnight, the French men to the number of 200. sallied forth of the Towne, minding to giue a camisado to the English men that kept watch in the trenches at the West side of Mountpelham, but they were descried and repulsed.

The 15. of May, Sir Francis Leake came to the Campe with a supply of 500. men from Barwicke.

The 21. of May, about 7. of the clocke at night, there issued forth of Lieth fiue horsemen, and an 100. footmen Harquebusiers, marching toward Mountpelham to offer skirmish: whereupon Captaine Vaughan went forth to them very orderly, and skirmished with them a pretty while, in the end the French men were driuen to retire. The same night Master Francis Somerset and other Captains were appointed to keepe a Fort built aboue the Campe, and tooke the name of him being Captaine thereof, and was called Somersets Mount. The 22. sir Peter Carew came to the Campe, being sent from the Court. The 24. of May at night about 7. of the clock, the French sallied forth to the number of 200. footmen and 20. horsemen, meaning, as it appeared, to haue wonne the trenches from the English men, whereupon a sore skirmish followed, diuers slaine, and many hurt on both parts: yet in the end the French were driuen home by force. The same day the French men of Dunbar take an English Hoy laden with Beere, Bose, and Bacon.

Queen Dowager of Scotland deceased.

The 8. of June, Sir John Neuill with 300. men, Captaine Bridges, and Captaine Drewry, with other 300. set from Barwick towards the Campe, where they arriued on the 10. of June, on which day the Queene Dowager departed this life.

The 13. of June, Sir William Cicill principall Secretary to the Queenes Maiestie with sir William Cordall, and Doct. Wotton Deane of Canterbury and Yorke, came to Barwicke, appointed Commissioners on her said Maiesties behalfe, to treate of an accord with the County de Randon, and the Bishop of Valence Commissioners, sent for that purpose from the French K. and his wife Mary Q. of Scots.

The 14. of June a certain number of French men came forth of Lieth to gather Cockles on sands towards Mountpelham, whereof the English men perceiuing, set vpon them, slew 70. and tooke 16. of them prisoners.

The 16. of June, the foresaid Commissioners came to Edenbrough, and as Master Secretary and the other passed the English Forts and Campe, they were saluted with a gallant peale of Harquebusiers.

The 17. of June, about 8. of the clocke, an abstinence of warre was concluded, warning being giuen by the discharging two Peces of Ordinance out of the Castle, & then the French men themselues vpon the Rampiers.

The 22. of June, the abstinence of warre was broken off.

The 4. of July, about 3. of the clocke in the afternoone, the French came out of Lieth to gather Cockles, whereupon the Lord Lieutenant being at that present in Mountpelham, sent a Drum vnto Monsieur Doysell, to signifie vnto him, that his souldiers had gone further without their bounds then they might doe, by the order taken by the Commissioners of both parts: Doysell answered, that they were no souldiers, but poore people which went to gather Cockles for their reliefe and sustenance. The Drumme said, that if they kept not themselues within their appointed limits, the Lord Lieutenant meant to send them backe, not greatly to their ease: whereunto Doysell replied, That if he so did, he would doe the best he could to ayd them: hereupon the English horsemen and footmen of Mountpelham gaue a charge vpon them, and slew of them to the number of fifty, and tooke certaine prisoners.

The first of July issued out of Lieth 14. horsemen, and 100. footmen, which entered the skirmish, but vpon the shooting of the great Artillery from Mountpelham, they retired home againe into the Towne. The night following about 12. of the clocke, one Scattergood an English man, that was a Gunner, and had laigned himselfe to flie from the English Campe for manslaughter into Lieth, and was receiued of the French men, beleeuing that he had meant no deceipt, came out of the Towne, after he had remained there about seuen dayes, in which meane while he had vnderstood fully the state of the Towne, and now vpon his returne, made relation thereof as he knew.

The first of July, the Lord Grey Lord Lieutenant, Sir William Cicill Secretary, and Sir Ralph Sadler, about 3. of the clocke in the afternoone, gaue order, that there should no Peace be shot, nor shew of hostility made vntill seuen of the clocke the same night: and herewith sent Gerueis Clifton vnto all the souldiers that warded in the trenches and bulwarks on the West side of Lieth, to command them to obserue the like order, and Sir John Neuill was sent with like order vnto the Soulditers that lay in Somerset Mount.

The Peace now being concluded, on the 7. of July, Sir Francis Leake, and Sir Gerueis Clifton, accompanied with two French Gentlemen, were sent to the Towne of Lieth, to signifie vnto Monsieur Doysell, the Bishop of Amiens, Labrosse, Marrignes, and other the French Lords and Captaines, that they were come thither by commandement from the Commissioners, to cause the Peace already concluded, to be proclaimed, which accordingly was done in manner following.

Peace concluded in Scotland.

The most mighty princesse, Elizabeth by the

Peace proclaimed in Scotland.

grace of God, Queene of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. And the most Christian king Francis and Mary, by the same grace of God king and Queene of France and Scotland, haue accorded vpon a reconciliation of a peace and amitie to be inuiolably kept betwixt them, their Subiects, kingdomes, and Countries, and therefore in their names it is straitly commanded to all manner of persons borne vnder their obeysances, or being in their ferule, to forbeare all hostility either by sea or land, and to keepe good peace each with other from this time forwards, as they will answere thereto at their vttermost perils. Immediatly after this Proclamation was ended, Sir Francis Leake, and sir Gerueis Clifton were brought to Monsieur Doytels lodging, where was prepared for them a banquet of thirty or forty dishes, and yet not one either of flesh or fish, hauing one of a powdered hogge, as was auouched by one that auouched himselfe to haue tasted thereof.

Articles of the peace, thirteene in number, were to this effect.

Treaties of peace at the Burgh of Leeth.

1 First, the French king and Queene doe not onely relinquish the title, title, and Armes of England and Ireland, but doe also binde themselues from henceforth to forbeare any more to vse or beare the same, and shall forbid their Subiects the vsing of the same title, in what sort soeuer it be, within any of their countries or dominions, forbidding also as much as in them lieth, the ioyning or quartering any manner of wayes the Armes of England, with those of Scotland or France.

2 All such letters patents, or other writings as haue beene heretofore made, wherein the said title is mentioned, or whereunto any stile concerning the said Armes is annexed, shall be reformed, and new made, without putting to them the title or Armes of England or Ireland, and that all manner of writings or instruments concerning the said title, and being sealed with the said Armes, not being renewed or reformed within 6. moneths after the publication of this Treaty, shall be voyd and of none effect.

3 Scotland shall be gouerned by a Councell of twelue of the noblest of that Country, which Nobility shall be taken out of foure and twenty, to be first chosen by Parliament, by the three Estates there, and of those twelue, seuen shall be named by the Scottish Queene, and fiue by the Lords of the Parliament.

4 All things passed there since March 1558. shal be euer passed and forgotten, and by Parliament the surety of the same shall be confirmed, and euery man restored to his Office in that Realme.

5 No French man shall haue any Office in Scotland.

6 Three score French men Souldiers onely shall remaine in Scotland, viz. three score in Dunbar, and three score in Inskith, and those to bee monethly mustered, and payed by the Councell of the Realme, and to be iustified by the lawes of Scotland.

7 No munition nor victuals shal be brought into Scotland, but from five moneths to five moneths, and then onely for those places, and for the said number of five score souldiers.

8 No forraigne ships or men of warre shal be from henceforth brought into Scotland, but by the consent and will of the Scots.

9 Leith shall be demolished by the view of the Queenes Maiesties Commissioners, and in such sort as they shall thinke conuenient.

10 The new buildings of Dunbar shall also be raced.

11 Matters of religion in Scotland be ouerpassed in silence without any alteration.

12 The league betweene the Queenes Maiestie and the Nobility of Scotland, is also passed ouer without any renouation.

13 Finally, in the treaty betweene her Highnesse, and the said French king and Queene, the said king and Queene, are by the speciall clause bound to her Highnesse to performe, and keepe the said couenants that touch the Realme and Subiects of Scotland.

After that this Peace was then fully established, the French men were embarqued at Leith in English vessels, those onely excepted that were appointed to remain as pledges with the English men, till the ships came back again, and a fewe other that were permitted to passe through England into their Country.

The fift of July, through shooting of a Gun which brake in the house of one named Adrian Arren a Dutch man in Crooked lane, and setting fire on a firkin and barrell of Gunpowder, foure houses were blowne vp, and diuers other sore shattered, nine men and women were slain, and diuers other sore bruised.

Houses blowne vp.

The 28. of September, this yere 1559. proclamation was made, that the Teston, which at first was coyned for twelue pence, and in the raigne of K. Edward the first, had beene abated and brought downe to fiue pence, should now againe be abated and brought downe to foure pence halfe penny, being of the best sort, and the two other sorts of Testons being distinguished by seuerall stamps, should likewise be abated, viz. the second sort to two pence farthing, and the third sort was made of no value. And by this Proclamation the old Groat was also abated, and brought downe to two pence, and the old two pence was brought downe to a penny: these old monies being thus abated, the Queene caused them all to be brought into her Mint, and according to the last valuation of them, she gaue them fine money of cleane siluer for them, commonly called Sterling money, and from this time there was no manner of base money coyned or vsed in England, which had beene vsuall and currant throughout this Realme in all former ages: but all English monies were made of gold and siluer, which is not so in any other Nation whatsoeuer, but haue sundry sorts of coyne or money.

The third and last fall of base money.

The 9. of October, the French crowne that went current for fiue shillings foure pence, was proclaimed to be fiue shillings.

The Queenes Maiestie made great preparation, of Armour, Munition, and Powder, to be in a readinesse to defend her Realme, if neede should happen.

An. Reg.

1561. The Queene erecteth Tapisting free Schoole.

The 21. of March, a notable Grammar Schoole was founded by the Master, Wardens, and Assistants of the Worshipfull Company of the Marchant Taylors of London, in the Parish of Saint Lawrence Pountney in the same Citie: Richard Hils late Master of that Company, hauing giuen 500. pound toward the purchase of an house, called the Mannour of the Rose, sometime the Duke of Buckinghams, wherein the Schoole is kept.

The 10. of April, was one William Geffrey whipped from the Marshalsea in Southwarke to Bedlem without Bishops gate of London, for that hee professed one Iohn Moore to bee Christ our Sauiour: on his head was set a paper, wherein was written as followeth: William Geffrey a most blasphemous heretike, denying Christ our Sauiour in heauen. The said Geffrey being stayed at Bedlem gate, Iohn Moore was brought forth, before whom William Geffrey was whipped, till he confessed Christ to bee in heauen. When the said Iohn Moore being examined, and answering ouerthwartly, was commanded to put off his coate, doublet, and shirt, which he seemed to doe very willingly, and after being tyed to the Cart, was whipped an arrowes shot from Bedlem, where at the last he also confessed Christ to be in heauen, and himselfe to be a sinfull man: then was Iohn Moore sent again into Bedlem, and William Geffrey to the Marshalsea, where they had lame prisoners nigh a yere and a halfe, the one for professing himselfe to be Christ, the other a disciple of the same Christ.

Idolatrie Christ.

This yere was such a scarcity of Wheat and other graine, that Sir William Chester Maior of London, and other the principall magistrates of the Citie, were forced to make prouision for Wheat and Rye from beyond the Seas, to a great quantity, which was a reliefe, not onely to the Citizens, but also to the Countries nere adioyning.

On Wednesday the 4. of June, betweene 4. and 5. of the clock in the afternoone, the steeple of Paules in London, being fired by lightning, built forth (as it seemed to the beholders) two or three yards beneath the vane of the cresse, and from thence burnt downe the spere to the stone worke and Bels, so terribly, that within the space of foure houres, the same steeple, with the roofes of the Church to much as was timber, or otherwise combustible, were consumed, which was a lamentable sight, and pittifull remembrance to the beholders thereof.

Paules steeple on fire by lightning.

The length of Paules Church in London is twelue score Taylors yards, which is 7. hundred and twenty foote: the breadth thereof is one hundred and thirty foote: the height of the steeple was fiue hundred and twenty foot, where of the stone worke is two hundred and fifty foote: and the spere which now is burnt, was likewise two hundred and fifty foot: the height of the body of that Church, is one hundred and fifty foote.

After this mischance, the Queenes Maiestie being much grieued for the losse of so beautifull a monument, directed her Highnesse Letters to the Maior of London, willing him to assemble the Citizens, to take some order for speciall ayde and helpe for the repairing againe of the same, they of her most gracious disposition, to giue a comfort vnto other, for the furtherance thereof, did presently giue and deliuer in gold, one thousand markes, and a warrant for one thousand load of timber, to be taken out of her Maiesties Woods or elsewhere. And the Citizens of London granted one benevolence, and three fifteenes to be forthwith paid. And the Clergie of England vnder the Province of Canterbury granted to giue the fortieth part of the value of their Benefices, being charged with first fruits, and not being charged with first fruits, to pay the thirtieth part. And the Clergy of the Diocese of London graunted to giue the thirtieth part of their Benefices, being in first fruits, and the fiue and tieth part being out of first fruits. And immediatly by commandement of her Maiestie, her priuie Councell take order, that five Citizens of London, and two of the Clergie of the Church of Paules, had charge to ouersee and set forward this worke, who made such expedition, that within one moneth next following the burning thereof, the same was couered with bords and lead, after the manner of a false roofe: and the greatnes of the worke dispatched in so short time, could scarcely be credited of any but such as saw the same. And the cause of this great hast, was for feare of rame which might haue perished the vaults, to the destruction of the whole Church: and before the said yeare was fully ended, all the side Iles of the said Church were framed of new and maine timber, and couered with lead, and fully finished. And the same yere also the great roofe of the West end was framed, and made of new and great timber in Yorkshire, and brought to London by Sea, and set vp and couered with lead, and fully finished. And in like manner within the said yere, the whole vaile and frame of the East end of the said Church, was made in Yorkshire, and brought by Sea to London and after set vp as the rest of the roofes, but the roofes of the North and South ends of the same church remained couered with bords till 1564. that the Bishop (as I am enformed) take vp on him the charge of repairing them, and for the same laid out seuen hundred and twentie pound, and so that worke ceased to proceede any further.

The fifteenth of November, the Queenes Maiestie published a Proclamation for diuers small peces of siluer money to be currant, as the fine pence, foure pence, three pence, 2. pence, and a peny, three halfe pence, and 3. farthings: and also forbad all forraigne coynes to be current within the same Realme, as well gold as siluer, calling them into her Maiesties Mints, except two sorts of crownes of gold, the one the French crowne, the other the Flemish crowne: whereupon for the space of halfe a yere, was weekely brought into the Tower of London 8000. 10000. 12000. 16000. 20000. 22000. pound

An. Reg. Newe coynes.

pound of siluer plates: and as much or more in pistolets, and other gold of Spanish coynes, and one waske in pistolets and other Spanish gold 16000. pound, all these to be coyned with the Queenes stamps.

The twenty fiue of December, Sir Ambrose Dudley knight, called Lord Ambrose Dudley, second sonne of Iohn late Duke of Northumberland, was created Barron Lisle, and afterward the same day Earle of Warwicke at Westminster.

1562. Monstrous birthes.

This yere in England were many monstrous birthes: in March a Mare brought forth a Foale with one body and two heads, and as it were a long taile growing out betweene the two heads. Also a Sow farrowed a Pigge with foure legges like to the armes of a man childe, with hands and fingers, &c. In Aprill a Sow farrowed a Pigge with two bodies, eight feete, and but one head, many Calues and Lambes were monstrous, some with collers of flamme growing about their neckes, like to the double ruffes of shirts and neckerchefes then wed. The foure and twenty day of May, a man child was borne at Chichester in Sussex, the head, armes, and legges whereof, were like an Anatome, the breast and belly monstrous bigge, from the nauell, as it were a long thing hanging: about the necke a great collar of flesh and flamme, growing like to the ruffe of a shirt or neckerchefe, comming vp aboue the eares playting and folding, &c.

Declaration of her Highnes causes, why to aide her Subiects into France.

The Realme of France being in great trouble about this season, by meanes of ciuill dissension and warres that rose amongst themselues, the Queenes Maiestie and her honourable priuy Councell being enformed thereof, first published a booke entituled, A declaration of the Queenes Maiestie, containing the causes which haue constrained her to arme certaine of her Subiects for defence both of her own estate, and of the most Christian King Charles the ninth her good brother, and his Subiects. The booke followeth thus.

Although the miserable and afflicted estate of the Realme of France, is to be lamented of all Christian Princes and Nations, and requireth some good remedy, not onely for preseruation of the King there, with the Queene his mother, and the Subiects of that Realme from danger and ruine: but also for the stay of the rest of Christendome in peace, and to be free from the like ciuill warre, into the which, as it appeareth by these strange dealings in the said Realme, it is meant the same shall fall: yet there is no Prince that hath more iust cause to haue regard hereunto, nor that hath more indifferently and earnestly intended the recouery of quietnesse and accord therein, then the Queenes Maiestie of this Realme of England, both by her owne gracious disposition, and by aduice of her Councell. For as the matter is now plainly discouered to the world, and as her Maiestie hath proued the same sufficiently by her owne late experience, there is not onely touched as other Princes ought to be, with great compassion and commiseration for the vnnaturall abusing of the French King her good brother, by certaine of his Subiects, the danger of his person and his bloud, the lamentable and barbarous destruction, hauocke, and spoyle of so many Christian innocent people beyond all measure: but her Maiestie also euidently saith before her eyes, that if some good remedy be not by Gods goodnesse prouided in season, the very fire that is now kindled and dispersed there, is purposely meant and intended to be conuayed and blowne ouer to enflame this her Crowne and her Realme. Which great perill, although it be so plainely seene to all wise and prudent men both at home and abroad, that they cannot mistake her care and prouidence to remedy the same in time, yet hath her Maiestie thought not vnmeet to notifie some part of her dealings herein, for as it shall well appeare how sincerely her Maiestie hath both hitherto proceded with her neighbours, and how plainely and vpright she is determined to continue.

The Queene of England moueth controuersies with the French ministers.

First, it hath bene well seene to the world how well disposed her Maiestie was euen at the beginning of her Raigne, to the restitution of peace to Christendome, that for loue thereof, was contented to forbeare for certaine yeres the restitution of a portion of her ancient dominion, when all other parties to the same peace, with whom, and by whose alliance her Crowne sustained losse, were immediately restored to the most part of their owne in possession: and yet it cannot be forgotten within how short a space, or rather no space after, and by whom, and vpon how great, euident, and iust causes, as well by meanes of force and Armes first taken, as by other open attempts against her Maiestie, she was constrained to prepare like armes of defence onely, euen for her whole Crowne and Kingdome, and iointly therewith for the safety of her next neighbours from a plaine inuasion. And also how sincerely her Maiestie proceeded therein: first by simple requests and meanes made, to forbeare their attempts: next, by open declaration of her intent, to bee onely for defence of her selfe, and by the whole handling of the matter: and lastly, by the euent and issue of the cause, all the world hath clearely vnderstoode.

The peace made at Cambresie. The Queene of Scots her resolution to the Queene of England.

After which dangerous troubles pacified, the Queene of Scots at her returne to her Country, feeling the great commodity hereof following, both to her selfe and her Realme, and vnderstanding the sincere dealing of the Queenes Maiestie in all her former actions, did by diuers meanes giue signification to her Maiestie of a great desire to enter with her into a straiter bande of amity: whereunto her Maiestie being of her owne nature much enclined, readily accorded. And how farre and prosperously they both proceeded therein by many and sundry mutuall Offices of friendship, as well the good will shewed by her Maiestie to the Queene of Scots Vncles, the Guises, and to all her friends and Kinsfolkes passing and repassing through this her Realme, as also the accord of the enterview intended betwixt them both this last Sommer, hath well declared.

But

Particular seuerities, made of the common troubles. Dyo. of the great Parliament at Poictiers in Ian. 1560. The diuer. of Ian. 1562. The slaughters at Vassy, Paris, Sens, Thoulouse, Blois, Roan, Orleance, Tours, Lyons, and diuers other places, by credible information reported out of France, to the number of 10.000 persons dead in the first at Vassy March and Aprill at Paris, and Lyons at Iuly last. 1562.

But in the midst of these her Maiesties quiet and peaceable determinations, she had bene to her great griefe vtterly disappointed, and constrained for her owne interest to attend and intermeddle in the pacification of these great troubles in France nere to her Realme, the same being stirred vp by such as both were her last manifest great enemies, and haue also (they know how) continued the cause of mistrust till this day, by manifest arguments of iniustice, which her Maiestie is content to conceale, for the great affection that she beareth to the Scottish Queene. First, her Maiestie at the beginning, doubting by the encrease of these French troubles, that not onely that Realme should fall into danger of ruine by diuision, as it now is, but also, that the rest of Christendome, and specially her owne Realme, both for the neere neighbourhood thereto, and for the respects of them which were the principall Authors and parties in these troubles, should bee also disturbed and brought to danger: vsed all the meanes that might be by messages, by solicitations, by aduice, yea by a speciall Ambassage of a person of good credit, to haue some mediation made betwixt these parties being at controuersie. But such was the policie and violence of the one party in hastie proceeding euen at the first, as no mediation could be heard of or allowed. And yet could not her Maiestie discontinue her good intent, but seeing the cruelties encrease, the bloud-shedding, and murthers continued: yea, which was most perillous, the young King, and the Queene his mother being sodainly assalted, and found without feare, were diuerted and drawne altogether by the very Authors of the troubles, to suffer their name and authority to be abused, euen to the killing of the Kings owne vnarmed innocent bloud, the spoiling of his rich Crowne, the breaking of his best adunited Edicts, the persecuting of his owne bloud and his Nobility, the destroying of his faithfull approoued seruants, with many such other heapes of mischiefe: and all these for no other cause, but for the particular appetites of some, and to breake with violence the ordinances of the Realme, specially those which were lately deuised by the long and great councell of the Realme, both for quietnes in matters of Religion, and for the relefe of the Kings estate diuers wayes.

1. Aprill 1562. The peace made at Cambresie. The Queene of Scots her resolution to the Queene of England.

The Ambassage intended by the Queen of England.

And finally, her Maiestie vnderstanding by certainty of an open destruction and subuersion there put already in vre, and likewise intended against all states and persons professing the Gospell abroad, her Maiestie thought it very needfull to thinke of some other meanes of more efficacie, to induce the Authors of those troubles, to giue eare to some reasonable motions of accord, and not to aduenture the ruine of a Realme for their particular appetites: and therefore determined to send a solemne Ambassage of a certaine number of personages of her counsell, being of great authority, experience, and indifferency, to repaire into France, to assay how some stay might be reasonably deuised for these extremities, by preserving of both parts indifferently, to the seruice of the King their Soueraigne, according to their estates of birth and calling.

But this manner of proceeding also could no wise be liked nor allowed, neither could answere bee had hereunto from the good young King, nor the timerous Queen his good mother, without the only direction of that part, which both began and continued the troubles from the beginning.

And whilest her Maiestie was thus well occupied, meaning principally the weale and honor of the King her good brother, and secondly, well towardes both the parties being at diuision, without the preiudice of either: a plaine contrary course and proceeding was vsed against her Maiestie, by the which was made manifest what was further meant and intended by them that had so oftentimes refused to heare her Maiestie speake for mediation and accord. All her Maiesties subiects, and Merchants as well of her Cities of London and Excester, as of other port townes in the West parts of the Realme, being at that very time in diuers parts of the Country of Brittaine, resorting thither onely for trade of Merchandizes, and ready to returne to their owne ports, were in the same time apprehended, spoyled, miserably imprisoned: yea, such as sought to defend themselues, cruelly killed, their ships taken, their goods and marchandise sealed, and nothing laid nor deuised to charge them, but onely furiously calling them all Hugonots, a word though very strange and foolish to many of the honest Merchants and poore mariners: yet fully sufficient to declare from whence these commandements came and what their intent is to prosecute, when their time shall serue them: neither were these spoiles small or few, but in value and number great and many. neither done by priuate fury, but by publike officers, who were also maintained by gouernors of the Countries: yea, none of her Maiesties subiects were spared that could bee taken, though some escaped with great hazzard. Well, hereof complaint was made where it ought to bee, but therein hath bene as small regard had, as was before for robbing of her Maiesties owne messengers with her letters from her Ambassadour, and yet the fact vnpunished without any satisfaction for the same: wherein her Maiestie surely noteth and pitieth the lack rather of authority, then of good will in the King or the Queene his mother, or the King of Nauarre his Lieutenant: but seeth manifestly by this and by all other proceedings, in what hard termes the estate of the yong King is set, that can neither bee permitted to pacifie his owne people and seruants, his owne Lawes and Ordinances, neither to answere other Princes and people in forme of iustice: that which bee ought to doe.

3. July. 19 August. 1561. Spoyles of Englishships of London, Exceter, and Falmouth & other places committed by the French in Brittaine. 20. August. 1562.

Imbasadors robbed of the Queen's letters

Upon these and other former dangerous enterprises against her Maiestie and her Crowne, it might well appeare to all persons of indifferent iudgement, how the violent proceedings in Fraunce, concurring at this time by the Duke of Guise, and his adherents, to touch the Queenes Maiestie, must needes for her state and Realme then

then any other Prince of Christendom. Wherefore seeing the authority of the King and the Quæne his mother, with their quet good Councellours, cannot at this time haue place to direct their affaires neither towards their owne people, nor towards their neighbours, neither can any mediation sought by her Maiestie for concord be allowed: but contrariwise, the tender persons of the King and the Quæne his mother, be manifestly abused, and dangerously carried about for the particular pleasures onely of a few persons, and specially those of Guise, to wast the Kings Countries, to sacke and spoile his rich great Townes, to kill and murther the multitude of his good and true Subiects: and seeing also the quarrell manifestly published and prosecuted both by writing and otherwise by them, to subuert the whole The principall quarrell is to subuert Religion. profession of true Religion through Christendome by force, without mercy, and thereby to stirre vp a cruell, bloody, lamentable warre in all Christendome. Lastly, seeing they which be the Authors and maintainers of all the diuisions, are well knowne to the world to be the same, that when time serued them, bent their whole endeuours to offend and diminish the Crowne & dignity of this Realme of England, and of late time for the exaltation of their particular house, deuised vniustly to assaile the whole Crowne of England by sundry wayes, though by Gods goodnesse their practises and Councels turned for that time to their owne confusion: As by the same goodnesse they shall at all times hereafter.

Calais.

1560. French Armies sent by way of Scotland & other deuises, to claime the Crowne of England, &c.

How may her Maiestie, without note of manifest vnkindnesse to her deare young brother and confederate, of vnmercifulnesse to her next neighbours his Subiects, of vnrighteousnesse to the common quiet of Christendome: and lastly, which is nearest to her selfe, of more negligence to the surety of her owne estate, her Country and people, suffer these fewe troublesome men, first to destroy and shed the bloud of a number of Christian people, whose bloud by narrownesse of place to her Maiesties Realme may be stopped, or some wayes saued, next to surprise and take such Townes and Hauens, whereby their former long intended and manifest practises against the Crown of this Realm, may be most easily for them, and dangerously for this Realme, put in vre and execution? Wherefore for these reasonable, euident, vrgent, and necessary considerations, and not without the lamentable and continuall request of the French Kings Subiects, her Maiesties next neighbours, crying to her Maiestie onely for defence of themselues, their Ports and Townes from tyrannie and subuertion, during this their King's minority, or at the least during this his vnability to pacifie these troubles: Her Maiestie hath put certaine numbers of her subiects in order both by sea and land, to saue some part of her good brothers innocent people from this tyrannie, slaughter, and ruine, and to preserue some special Townes in Picardie importante, for the King her good brother, if they come not into the possession of them: which if they had them, might more easily thereby prosecute their olde particular practises against this Realme, as in times lately past they did manifestly attempt, whereby of necessity they must nedes endanger the perpetuity of the peace betwixt the French King and her Maiestie, and so consequently, though against the meaning of the King, depriue her Maiestie of her good right to her Towne of Calais and the members thereof: Whereof if by meanes her Maiestie, as things be handled, to haue good regard. And in this sort her Maiestie doubteth not, but the sincerity of her doings, tending only to procure Christian quietnesse by sauing of Christian bloud, shall well please Almighty God, content the King her good brother, when hee shall be in estate and like, to ponder the same indifferently, and serue also for the iust and naturall defence of her selfe, her peoples and Countries: and finally, by Gods grace shall establish the continuance of some more assured peace and concord betwixt both their Maiesties and Countries, so as either of them may quietly enioy and rule their owne. And in the meane time, her Maiestie aduerth the said King, the Quæne his mother, the King of Nauarre, and all his good Councellors and Subiects, that whatsoeuer any malicious or mis-contented person shall finisterly report of her intent and doings: Her Maiestie meaneth nothing herein, but sincerely, and as the necessity of the time and cause requireth, without blurping any thing, or doing wrong or violence to wards any the French Kings Subiects, protesting before God and all the world, that her meaning is for a necessary defence onely of the true and good Subiects of the French King, which otherwise apparantly in this troublesome time should be violently killed or destroyed: and so consequently her Maiestie intended by all manner of meanes possible, to keepe and continue good peace with the said King and all his Countries, and to neglect no reasonable meanes that may procure liberty to himselfe, and quietnesse betwixt his Subiects, which then shall succede when it shall please Almighty God to giue to the first and chiefe Authors of these troubles, grace to content themselues with their owne estates, and to liue within the compasse of their degrees, like quiet Subiects and fauourers of the common peace and tranquillity of Christendome. A matter more necessary at this time to be sought for, rather by coniunction of Christian Princes and States in vnity of minde, and loue of peace and concord, then in this sort by sword and fire, by priuate deuises, and secret factions, to stirre a diuision and ciuill warre in Christendome, vnder the cloake and pretence of Religion.

Perill and doubt of the restitution of the towne of Calais.

These causes thus published at the request of the French themselues, namely, Monsieur de Vidame then Captain of Newhauen, the Bayliffe of Roan, the Treasurer of Dieppe, and other, proffering the foresaid Townes whereof they had charge, vnto her Maiestie (if it would please her to further their procedings of the Gospell) for that her Maiestie was true inheritour,

ritor not onely to those Townes, but to all the whole Kingdome of France, as they themselues confessed. In the moneth of September, her Maiestie sent a band of her subiects to the town of Newhauen in Normandy: who were embarked at Portsmouth, because that hauen is most apt for transportation to that place, vpon whose arriuall the Townes-men and inhabitants ioyfully surrendzed themselues and their towne into the possession of the Quænes Maiestie, which was kept by Englishmen from this moneth of September in *Anno.* 1562. vnto the 29. of July, then next following in the yeere 1563. as more at large shall be shewed. For the conduction of such forces as were to be sent ouer, her Maiestie ordained the Lord Ambrose Dudley Earle of Warwick to be her principall Lieutenant, Captain General, chiefe leader and Gouernour of her sayd subiects, that should in such wise passe ouer into Normandy. Hereupon the sayd Earle the 17. of October, tooke shipping at Portsmouth in the hauen there, being aboard himselfe in the Quænes ship called the New barke, and setting forward sailed all that afternoone, and the night following directly towards Newhauen: but in the morning when hee was within twenty myles of the towne of Newhauen, the wind suddenly changed contrary to his course, so that being driuen to retume, about the next midnight hee arriued in the Downes, and there remained at Anchor till the next morning, and then was set on land by boate at Sandon Castle beside Deale, and the same day at night came to Douer, and there lay till the 28. of October, and then taking ship againe sayled forth, but finding the wind nothing prosperous to his course, after he had lyen all that night and day following, tossing on the Seas, hee was constrained backe againe to the hauen of Douer, where hee remained till the 28. of October, and on the twentie nine he landed at Newhauen, where he was most ioyfully received with a great peale of Artillery. The 30. of October, there came to Newhauen from Diepe 50. light horsemen Scots, brought by one of master Killegrewes seruants. The last of October, the Earle of Warwickes commission was Proclaimed in Latin, English, and French, by Blew Mantell pursuiant at armes, which being ended, his Lordship went into the Church, and there sir Adrian Poinings Knight Marshall, gaue him his oath, and then my Lord gaue the said Sir Adrian his oath, and after him were sworne, Cuthbert Vaughan, Controller, John Fither, Knight porter, William Bromfield Maister of the Ordinance, William Robinson, Walter Bayliffe, and Captaine T. Wood Clark of the Councell. The second of November, the Earle of Warwicke with the Knight Marshall and the Controller, rode out of Newhauen to Hauteuile, and so towards Mondeuile, accompanied with all the horsmen English, and Scottish, and a thousand footmen. The Scottish men and Montgomeries band passed forth and skirmished with them of Mondeuile, and the Scottes brought away with them a bootie of 300. sheepe, but in the morning they were returned backe againe, by commandement of the Earle of Warwicke. Maister Controllers souldiers went as farre as Harflew, and there skirmished with them of the garrison, but without any hurt to either part. The 4. of November, a barke of Newhauen belonging to Francis Clarke, brought into the hauen of the same towne 4. Buttains laden with Gascoine wine to the quantity of 200. tuns, which they meant to haue brought to the enemies, but was discharged in Newhauen, and sold the Citizens in good stead. The 6. of November, a great alarme was raised in the Towne of Newhauen, for vpon the hills on the South side of the Towne, the Reingraue and other shewed themselues with 2000. footemen, and 500. Horsemen; and therewith the Reingrauers a trumpeter to the towne, to aduertise the Lord Lieutenant, that he was there on the hilles, and that if it would please him to promise vpon his honor and by the faith of a Gentleman that he might come and goe safe, hee would be glad to come and see him, and talke with him. Whereupon the Lord Lieutenant taking with him certaine Captains and gentlemen, rode forth of the town and sent before him, Sir Adrian Poinings the Marshall, with Steph: Medcalfe, her Maiesties Trumpeter, vnto the Reingraue, who talking with him, returned and met with the Lord Lieutenant, who thereuppon passed forward, and meeting with the Reingraue, they embraced each other, and conferred together: and the Reingraue told the Lord Lieutenant, that hee was come to see his neighbour, with such other merry speech, and after taking leaue each of other, they returned. The County Montgomery, and Monsieur Beauoys had some talke also with the Reingraue, calling out bitter words in reproche of the Duke of Guise, and other whom they hated. The Reingraue comming backe to his army, foorthwith all the countrey, and driue away the more part of all the cattell that they could find, and comming to the Church of Hauteuile, where an hundred and fiftie of Montgomeries band lay, they skirmished with them, and in the end Montgomeries souldiers were forced to retire, and abandon the place, and came to Newhauen, but the next morrow they returned, tooke the Church, and kept it against the enemies as afore.

and of Guisians sent to Newhauen.

The Queenes maiesties intent to procure peace, and to obserue it.

They of Guise to liue in their degrees vnder our Soueraigne ouer the King, and the rest of his blood.

Free generall Counsell by the consent of Christian Princes, meeter then ciuill warre, to bring the Church to vnity.

The 11. of November, a Proclamation was made in the name of the Lord Lieutenant, as well for good orders to be kept by the souldiers against the French inhabitants of the Towne, and reforming of certaine grieuances, whereof the French had made complaint, as also for their comming to Church, to heare common prayer and preaching at diuerse times, for the auoyding of vnlawfull games, &c. The 12. of November, there went out of Newhauen towards Harflew three bands of Frenchmen, containing about fiue hundred footemen, and suddenly they were beset by the Almaines and Frenchmen of the garrison of Harflew, so that the French men of Newhauen were driuen to take the village of Graule, where they maintained the skirmish for the space of two houres, till the Lord

Lieutenant sent foorth with the Controller, the number of one thousand footmen, and all the English and Scottish horsemen, and master Beaunoys with diuers French horsemen, who comming before Hurlew, fell in skirmish with the enemies, to whose succour there issued foorth of Hurlew a great number of the Almaines, both horsemen and footmen: but the English men behaued themselues so valiantly, that they beat them out of the field into the towne: and the Englishmen returned to Newhauen, with honor, hauing not lost past eight of their souldiers that were slaine, and fiue hurt.

Prises of wine brought into Newhauen.

The 13. of November, a pinnesse of the Frenchmen that belonged to Newhauen, hauing gone foorth the night before, brought into the hauen a ship laden with Rochell wine, fiue and twenty tunnes, that was bound to the enemies. The 14. of November, another ship fraught with twenty Tuns of Gascoine wine was brought in as a prise, taken by a barke of Newhauen. The 17. of November, a proclamation was made concerning orders taken by the Lord Lieutenant, that no English man nor French man should shoote off any harquebut within the towne, nor that any French man except Monsieur Beaunoys, or Monsieur Bricquemault, or their companies should be out of their lodgings after nine of the clocke at night till the next morning, on paine of death, except in alarmes.

The 23. of November, the Reingraue was came on the North hilles of the Towne, with fourescore horsemen, whereupon the Scottish horsemen, and three bands of footmen issued out, marched vp towardes the same hilles in hope to meete with the enemies, but they were retired towardes Pondeuile, and so nothing was done.

A souldier executed. Prises brought into Newhauen.

The twenty fiue of November, a souldier was hanged in the market place in Newhauen, and therewith Proclamation made, that none should take any thing forcibly from the French on paine of death. The same day came into the hauen hoyes and boats laden with wine, rider, perry, wheate, beefe, bisket, meale, &c. The same day also there landed at Newhauen fiue hundred souldiers vnder the leading of Avery Darcy, Reignald Higate, and William Twedie. The same day the Queenes ship called the Hare, comming from Portsmouth, arryued at Newhauen, and in her came Sir John Portinarie, a man of great experience in fortification, they were by the way assayled by a French ship of ninty tuns and better, but they that were aboord the Hare, vanquished the enemies, tooke the same ship, and brought her with them, being laden with Wines. The same day Sir John Moore landed at Newhauen, bringing ouer with him fiue hundred souldiers for a supply of the garrison.

The 8. of December, Mounsieur de Beaunoys Captaine Francis Somerset, and Captaine Edward Horsey, with diuers other Captaines and Gentlemen, rode to the Reingraue, lying at a faire house not farre from Pondeuile, where they dined with him, had great cheere, and returned to Newhauen. The Reingraue sent for a present to the Earle of Warwicke a great horse, very faire, with saddle and bridle, esteemed to bee well worth an hundred pound. The same day at night, the double Rose with other boates pulled out of the hauen, Edward Dudley, and Captaine John Ward, being aboord with other to the number of an hundred good souldiours, sayling downe the riuer, landed besides Tankeruile, and lay close all that night in a wood: in the morning Monsieur Bimare Enseigne bearer to the Countie Montgomerie, with fiue or seuen Frenchmen vnarmed went to the Castle gate, and there fell in talke with Monsieur Dimence, that was Captaine of that fortresse, hauing about him twentie souldiours. Whilest they were thus in talke, the Englishmen and French men comming foorth of the Wood that was there at hand, reared vp their ladders at the breach, which was made the summer before, and entring by the same, came downe into the base Court. Which thing when the French souldiers that kept talke at the Castle gate perceiued, the Captaine beholding as good as thzeefoze armed men within the Castle at his backe, he suddenly yeelded himselfe, and in this sort was the Castle taken, and the Captaine brought paysoner to Newhauen. The 12. of December, the Earle of Warwicke, Monsieur de Beaunoys, and Monsieur de Bricquemault, with all the horsemen, and 3000. footmen, passe foorth of Newhauen vnto Hurlew, out of which towne issued 700. Reisters of the retinue of County Reingraue, and 300. footmen, who fell in skirmish with the French & English very hotly, but the English draue them to the gates of Hurlew, and slew them there, and vpon the walls of the towne: yet was there not slaine past 7. of the English part. The 17. of December, the county of Montgomery and Sir Hugh Paulet arriued at Newhauen in one of the Quenes ships called the Hyde.

Whilest things passed thus in Normandy, there ended his life at home the honorable Baron and famous Captaine, William Lord Grey of Wilton, knight of the most Noble order of the garter, at that present gouernor of Barwick, and warden of the East Marches against Scotland, he deceased the 25. of December, at Chesthunt in Hertfordshire.

The 26. of December, the County de Montgomery toke shipping at Newhauen roade, accompanied with foure hundred harquebuziers Frenchmen, and sayled to Diepe, there to be gouernour of that towne.

The first of January, were apprehended Captaine Blondell, Captain Moucombel, Monsieur de Mainie, and Viranua, with others, for some conspiracy or trayterous practise which they went about, and had contriued.

The same day Captaine Edward Horsey with 200. souldiers, and Captain Francis Blunt with 100. tooke shipping at Newhauen roade, and sayled to Diepe, there to remaine with the County Montgomery.

The 9. of January, a great tempest of wind and thunder happened in the Towne of Leicester, which vncouered 411. baies of houles, and ouerthrew many.

A present from the Reingraue to the Lieutenant.

The Castle of Tankeruile surrendred.

The 16. of January, the Castle of Tankeruile was surrendred to the Reingraue, after he had layne about 18. dayes, with 2. thousand horsemen and footmen. The nintenth of January, there landed at Newhauen, Captaine Tremaine with fifty horsemen very well appointed to serue there. The twenty foure of January, Francis Clarke Frenchman arriued at Newhauen with two tall ships of his owne, right well appointed for the warres, bringing with him three rich prises.

Prises brought into Newhauen.

The 5. of January, two ships of Britaines laden with Gascoine wine, butter, bacon, salt, and other victuals, were brought into Newhauen, by a shallop of Killebeut, that was reskant with other Frenchmen in Newhauen, and had taken these two vessels as they were going to victuall the enemies. The 6. of February, three mighty ships of warre, belonging to Francis Clarke, brought into Newhauen three rich prises laden with Sacks, Bastards, Sugar, Orenges, grains, and other Merchandises. This Clarke had not beene foorth past 6. weekes at this time, and yet he had got aboue 18. prises well worth the sum of 50000. pounds. The 7. of February, was Hunsiew summoned by an Herault sent from the French Admirall, Monsieur de Chatillon. The 8. of that moneth, the saic Admirall came before Hunsiew with 6000. horsemen Reisters, and other of his owne retinues, beside footmen, and 100. horsemen of the countries thereabout, and about fiue of the clocke at night, there was a great peale of Ordinance shot off at Newhauen for a welcome to the sayd Admirall.

Castle of Tankeruile taken by them of Newhauen.

The 12. of February, the French galliasse of Newhauen passing foorth and wafting about Hunsiew to seeke aduentures in hope of suretie, by reason the Lord Admiral of France lay there by at Tongue, rode at an Anchor, whilest some that were aboord in her went aland to gaine somwhat of the enemies, but they within Hunsiew perceiuing this, made out their great galliasse with 50. marriners and souldiers, who coming vpon the galliasse of Newhauen put her in great danger of taking, but waying anchor drew toward the shore, tooke in the rest of their company, stod at their defence, behauing themselues so well, that continuing in sight aboue a long houre, at length they ouercame their enemies, slew 7. of them, wounded 37. tooke their galliasse, and brought her to Newhauen with 13. belsi, diuers coapes and Church ornaments, sheepe, and other spoyles which they had got aboard in the country, together with 43. prisoners, and the artillery of the galliasse. The 14. of February, there came from the L. Admirall of France lying then at Tongue, Monsieur de Rohet, and Monsieur de Grandemont a knight of the order, Monsieur Telegny the Admirals son in law, and diuers other French Gentlemen to conferr with the Lord Lieutenant, who receiued them right gladly, & made them great cheere, they remained there till the 18. and then departed and went to Caen, whither the sayd Lord Lieutenant was remooued, and had entered the Towne, preparing to beseege the Castle. The same day Monsieur Bricquemault and Sir Nicholas Throckmorton knight arriued at Newhauen. The admirall Chatillon kept the Castle of Caen beseeged, within the which was the Marquesse Dalbeuf, there were sent vnto him from Newhauen the 25. of February, 7. Canons 2. demy culuerings, and one minion. The 26. Sir Nicholas Throckmorton, monsieur Bricquemault, and Monsieur Beaunoys, with a thousand souldiers, French, and as many English: to wit, Captaine Zouch, Captaine Swedie, Captaine Higate, each of them two hundred, Captaine John Warde, Captaine Parkinson, Captaine Saule, and master Wheeler, Captain Fisher, Lieutenant with his band, each of them with his hundred, and Captaine Pelham with the labourers, were embarked in the roade of Newhauen, and sayled foorth towards Caen to come to the siege, which the Admiral of France had layd to the Castle there. The same day as County Montgomery had embarked at the hauen of Diepe in an English vessell, and was comming towards Newhauen, there came from Fics Campe 3. shallops, by the appointment of the Reingraue, which made towards Montgomerie, whose meaning when hee perceiued, hee set vpon the strongest of the same shallops, so that there followed a sharpe conflict betwixt them, but in the end, the victory fell to Montgomery, the shallop being taken, the Captaine and master slaine, and three English victualers rescued, which the sayd shallop had taken, Montgomery herewith arriuing at Newhauen, and bringing with him his prise, was ioyfully receiued, and went abroad againe, and sailed to Caen, there to confer with the Admirall. The first of March, they began to batter Caen in such wise, that about 4. of the clock in the afternoone they within the towne began to parley, but it tooke none effect. And then went off the artillerie againe till night, and in the morning, the battery effsones began, and before that 2. tires of the shyd artillery had gone off, they within offered again to parley, and finally agreed by composition to yeeld, and so the same day the castle was surrendred vnto the French Admirall, and the Marquelle Dalbeut and other that kept that place departed,

Sir Nicholas Throckmorton

Ayde from Newhauen to the siege of Caen.

Montgomery taketh a shallope, he goeth to Caen.

The Castle of Caen surrendred to the Admirall.

The 3. of March, the towne of Bayeuil was yeelded to the Admirall, and on the morrow following, Falaise, and after S. Lo, with diuers other townes and Castles yeelded vnto him.

Galliasse of Newhauen taken by them of Newhauen.

The 10. of March, the great galley and the foyles were sent from Newhauen with a canon, and shot, powder, &c. to Hunsiew, where they met with Monsieur de Mouy, that came thither with a faire company of horsemen, and diuers footmen, French: and of the Englishmen, Captaine Tuttie, with his 2. hundred, and Captaine Fisher with his hundred. The Canon was immediatly planted, & shot off 6. times. Whereupon they within began to parle, and in the end agreed to yeeld vp the castle vnto Monsieur de Mouy with condition: and so left the Castle vnto Monsieur deMouy, whereby his souldiers as well English as others gained greatly by the spoyle:

The French appointed to depart from Newhauen.

ſpoyle: whereas Monſieur de Beawoys had by the Admirall Chatillons commandement, charged by Proclamation, all ſtrangers, forreiners, and French ſouldiers, to depart the Iſlonde of Newhauen, by the 23 of March laſt paſt, and that all other, hauing their wiues and families, ſhould depart with them, or within 4 dates after to giue ayde for the keeping of the townes of Dunkirke, Caine, Bayeux, Falaize, S. Lo, and other places, lately brought vnder the obedience and authority of the Prince of Condy, vnder payne for making default, to be taken as good priſoners of warre, to thoſe that ſhould apprehend them. Proclamation was alſo thereupon made in the Lord Lieutenants name, the 26. of March, that it ſhould bee lawfull to the Queenes Maieſties ſubiects, to apprehend and take as their good and lawfull priſoners, all ſuch as contrary to the former Proclamation ſhould remaine in the towne of Newhauen, after fiue of the clocke after noone of the day next following (thoſe perſons onely excepted, whoſe names were enrolled) remaining with the Lord Lieutenants ſecretary.

The firſt of Aprill, the Reingraue with 400. horſemen, and about 500. footmen, came downe the hill, betwixt S. Addreſſes and Engleſield, where Sir Hugh Pawlet Knight met with him by the appointment of the Lord Lieutenant, accompanied with 40. horſemen, and a 1000. Engliſh footmen, and after they had talked together, Sir Hugh Pawlet returned into Newhauen, and the Reingraue to Pendemile

On Eaſter euen, two ſouldiers that ſerued vnder Captaine Parkenſon were hanged in Newhauen, for running away to the Reingraue.

The firſt day of May, Garter King at armes, arriued at Newhauen, bringing with him the Garter to Ambroſe Earle of Warwicke, the Lord Lieutenant, choſen on S. Georges day laſt paſt, to be one of that moſt Noble Order.

The 7. of May, Proclamation was made, that all manner of furniture and apparrell, appertaining to ſhips, within the garriſon, haue, or rode of the towne of Newhauen, ſhould bee brought in, or a note to be giuen thereof in writing to the Lord Lieutenant and Councel there.

The 22. of May, about one of the clock in the morning, the Reingraue with 500. horſemen, and 22. Enſignes of footmen, came downe to a village called Lheure, neere vnto the new fort, which by order of the Lord Lieutenant was lately before begun to be built. The enemies meaning was to haue taken the ſame fort by a ſudden aſſault, but the Engliſh ſcouts gaue intelligence to the L. Lieutenant thereof, who incontinently going to the bulwarke Royall, ſet out by the Poſterne, Captaine Ward with his 100. ſouldiers, and Captain Parkinſon with his 100. to paſſe the fort, there to be an ayde and defence to them that lay in the ſame. About 3. of the clocke in the morning, the Reingraue ſuddenly with his bands of horſe and footmen, gaue them in the fort a hot alarme, and immediatly the Earle of Warwick gaue in charge to Captains, Read, Appleyard, Turry, Souch, Antwiſell, Ward, Morton, and Parkinſon, hauing with them 1000. footmen, and 200. horſemen, to ſet vpon the enemies in the village of Lheure, neere adioyning vnto the ſaid new fort, when the Engliſh ſouldiers beat backe their enemies flew and tooke of them to the number of an hundred, beſides 30. faire horſes, and an Enſigne, and ſet fire on the towne, becauſe the enemies ſhould not come to encampe therein as their purpoſe was.

Alarme giuen to the new fort by Newhauen.

The 26. of May, the Frenchmen in number a bout three thouſand horſemen and footmen, came downe towards the wind-mils, neere to the bulwark called Saint Addreſſes, againſt whom the Engliſh horſemen and footmen iſſued forth of the town, giuing them a hot ſkirmiſh, wher were ſlaine two hundred of the French, beſides two hundred and aboue that were hurt. Amongſt the Engliſh, Captaine Tremayne and about ſome twelue perſons more were ſlain: but the French were driuen to retire. The firſt of June, at ſeauen of the clocke at night, the Reingraue hauing layd in the Village of Lheure an armie of fiue hundred horſemen, and fiftéene hundred footmen, there came downe alſo betweene the Abbey and the Village called Engleſield towards the towne, the number of a thouſand footmen, which began a very hot ſkirmiſh, firſt at the new fort, comming euen hard to the dikes where the Engliſhmen manfully encountered them. Herewith alſo, the Reingraue appointed other to come downe and approch the bulwarks of Saint Addreſſe, Saint Francis, Michaell and other, round about the towne, ſo that ther were of them the number of fiue thouſand, that were employed in this ſkirmiſh, which was maintained right fiercely, for the ſpace of two houres, till in the end, the enemies were forced to giue place, with the loſſe of fiue hundred of their men, Almaines, Frenchmen, and other. Of Engliſhmen there were hurt, Captaine Gelbert, and Captaine Welham, and a bout fiftéene other hurt and ſlain.

A great fight.

Thurſdaie ſkirmiſh.

The 7. of June, the firſt Canon ſhot light within the towne of Newhauen, neere to the bulwarke of Saint Addreſſe. The ninth of June, arriued at Newhauen three Captaines with their bandes of an hundred the piece, being of the garriſon of Warwicke. Alſo the ſame day landed there Edward Randoll, appointed to bee Knight Marſhall. For you muſt vnderſtand that ſir Adrian Poinings, being Knight Marſhall, vpon his returne into England went not backe againe: and then was ſir Thomas Finch of Kent, appointed to goe ouer to ſupply the roomth of Knight Marſhall, who making his proviſion ready, ſent ouer his brother Erasmus Finch, to haue charge of his band, and his kinſman Thomas Finch, to bee Yeoman Marſhall, whileſt he ſtaying till he had euery thing in a readineſſe to paſſe ouer himſelfe, at length embarqued in one of the Queenes ſhips, called the Gryphonnd, hauing there aboord with him beſides three ſcore and fiue of his owne retinue, foure and fourty other Gentlemen, two of them being brethren to the Lord Wentworth, to wit, Iames Wentworth, and Iohn Wentworth with diuers others, who in the whole

Captaine Randoll knight Marſhall.

Sir Thomas Finch.

whole (accompting the marriners) amounted to the number of two hundred perſons and vpward: and as they were on the further coaſt towardes Newhauen, they were by contrary wind and foule weather driuen backe againe toward the coaſt of England, and plying towards Rye, they forced the Captaine of the ſhip a very good Sea-man, named William Nalme, and alſo the maiſter and marriners, to thruſt into the hauen before the tide, and ſo they all perithed, ſeuen of the meaner ſort only excepted, whereof three dyed ſhortly after they came on land. After this miſchance, Edmond Randoll was appointed Knight Marſhall.

The 25. of June, the Captains Richard Sanders and William Soul, with their bands of an hundred ſouldiers a piece, and Captaine Drurie with two hundred arriued at Newhauen, and the morrow after arryued Captaine Roberts, with another hundred ſouldiers. On the 17. day ſir Francis Knowles, vice-chamberlaine to the Quéenes Maieſties houſe, landing at Newhauen, ſent to view the ſtate of the towne.

The 18. of June, two ſouldiers were executed for drawing weapon againſt their Captaine.

The 28. of June, the Frenchmen came down to the village of Lheure, and there very neere to the fort, began a ſkirmiſh with the Engliſh men: there were of them tenne Enſignes of footmen, and two hundreth horſemen, this ſkirmiſh laſted three houres, and yet not paſt ſome perſons ſlaine. The night following, they placed fiue Canons betwixt the towne and the bricke-hilles, and likewiſe other pieces of Artillerie at the foreſayd Village of Lheure, ſo that they ſhot both into the towne and fort. The firſt of July, about midnight, they iſſued forth of their trenches, and ſkirmiſhed with the Engliſh Rontes, drone them vnder the bulwarke of Saint Addreſſe, and there perceiuing that the Engliſhmen had prouided to ſally out, after a long ſkirmiſh they retired. About the third of July, there landed 9. hundred ſouldiers well appointed all in yellow clokes, and bleus, Captaine Saunders was hurt in the legge, whereof he dyed. The 12. of July about foure of the clocke in the morning, the French layd battery to the bulwark of Saint Addreſſes, continuing the ſame all that day. They alſo dismounted the ſame day the Ordinance in the ſteeple of Newhauen, and beate downe the great bell, cleane defacing the ſteeple: the ſame euening, was William Robinſon Eſquire, Bayliffe of Newhauen, ſlaine with a ſhot, and William Bromfield, Maiſter of the Ordinance hurt, whereof he dyed ſhortly after.

The 14. of July, Sir Hugh Pawlet Knight landed at Newhauen, bringing with him eight hundred ſouldiers. The ſame day came downe the Frenchmen to the number of 3000. euen hard to the gates of the towne, beating the Engliſhmen out of their trenches, but in the end they were forced to retire, and not paſt twenty Engliſhmen ſlaine, and about an hundred hurt: but the French loſt (as was thought) aboue 4. hundred horſemen and footmen. The ſame day, the little Galiaſſe called the Fore, went out of Newhauen, fraught with 50. men, to ſtanke a longſt the ſhore, and to beate the Frenchmen with her ſhot, but a linckſtoke fell into a barrell of powder, and ſet it on fire together with the veſſell, ſo that the ſuddenly ſanke, and all that were aboord in her were loſt, ſauing 15. that ſaued themſelues by ſwimming.

A Galiaſſe of Newhauen burnt.

The 21. of July, the Conſtable of France, and many other Lords of France came to the Abbey of Gyanille, where the Marſhall Briſſac was lodged, who had the generall charge in the army, before the comming of the ſaid Conſtable.

Conſtable of France came to the ſiege of Newhauen.

The 23. of July, the Conſtable came to the trench that was caſt ouer againſt the Bulwark of Saint Addreſſe, alonglt by the Sea ſide, & ſent his Trumpet to ſummon the towne. The Lord Lieutenant appointed Sir Hugh Pawlet to goe forth, and make anſwere in his name, which was in effect, that the Queens Maieſtie had appointed him and others to keepe the towne, and therefore they meant not to deliuer it to any other perſon, without her Graces commaundement. The Engliſhmen were no ſooner departed, but that the enemies hauing planted 8. canons in battery againſt the Caſtle and bulwark of the hauen, cauſed the ſame to be ſhot off, continuing the battery vntill the 28. of July.

The 28. of July, the Prince of Condy, and the Duke of Montpenſier, came to the Campe and alighted at the Conſtables lodging, went from thence to the trenches foreliene the Marſhall Montmorancie, and to ſupply his roome, whileſt he might in the meane time goe to ſup with his father, and ſo to take his reſt: Monſieur Deſtree, and the other that had charge about the planting and ordering of the artillerie, vſed ſuch diligence, and were ſo earneſtly called vpon and encouraged by the Prince of Condy, continually remaining in the trenches, that on the 27. in the morning, the artillery began to batter the bulwark of S. Addreſſe and other p'aces. This was not done without great danger of the Pioners and men of war that garded them: for as the French deſperatly made theſe approches, they were made by the Engliſh Gunners to taſte the bitter fruite thereof: but ſuch was the multitude of the Frenchmen that were now aſſembled, in hope to recouer that towne, (which being poſſeſſed by the Engliſh, cut off all traffique from Roane, Paris, and other places) that with their generall aide, and drawing the water downe to the Sea, the marſhes were made paſſeable and firme ground, which to men of great experience was thought a thing impoſſible. The Caſtle, the walls, and other defences of the towne, were battered, breaches made, and the trench, which before the comming of the Conſtable, was but brought to the point ouer againſt the bulwarke of Saint Addreſſe, was now within foure dayes aduanced neere hand the ſpace of two myles, vpon the cauſey or breach which was all of ſtone, without any earth to couer them, ſo that they were driuen to make the beſt ſhift they could with woollſacks, ſand-bags, baſkets, and fagots. Yet all this had neuer come to paſſe, without infinite

The Prince of Condy came to the campe before Newhauen.

Plague of pestilence in Newhauen.

slaughter, and farre more losse of French blood if the great mortality of pestilence (which entred the towne about the beginning of Somer) though a venimous infection, had not so greatly increased, that it fine dayly great numbers of men, so that the streetes lay euen full of dead corpses, not able to bee remoued, by reason of the multitude that perished. And now the shot of the Canon, lying within a fire and twenty paces of the towne, was soterrible, as the like had not beene lightly heard of, and sundry breaches there were, which were already made, namely, two very great and easie to bee entred: all these dangers and miseries notwithstanding, the Earle of Warwicke with his Captaines and souldiers, in courageous order, stood at those seuerall breaches, ready to defend the same, if the enemies had presumed to haue giuen the assault, which when the Constable perceiued, hee caused a trumpet to sound the blast of enparley, that talke might bee had for the concluding of a composition betwixt both the parties, to auoyd the imminent slaughter and effusion of blood: which offer seeming not vnmeete, both parties concluded that parly should be had. The eight and twentieth of July therefore, the Constable came to the end of the trenches next to the Towne, where Sir Maurice Denis, Treasurer of the Towne, Sir Hugh Pawlet, Captaine Horley, Captaine Pelham, Captaine John Shute Pecuit Marshall, and Nicholas Mary Secretary to the Lord Lieutenant, came forth, and passed ouer the Hauen to commune with him, and during the parley betwixt them a truce was accorded, and assented to by both parties. But the Constable tooke vpon him to haue onely authority to accept or refuse such conditions as should bee offered or agreed vpon by the English Commissioners in this treatie: and so at length they passed certaine articles in forme as followeth. First, that the Earle of Warwicke should render the Towne of Newhauen into the handes of the Constable of France, with all the artillery and munitions of warre, then being in the Towne belonging to the French King and his subiects. Item, he should leaue the shippes that were in the Towne at that present, belonging to the King or his subiects, with all their furniture, and generally all such Merchandize and other things, being at that present within the towne, as either belonged to the King or his subiects. Item, the said Earle should presently deliuer into the handes of the Constable the great Tower of the said hauen, so that the souldiers there of enter not into the Towne: and that the said Earle should deliuer foure such hostages as the said Constable should name. Item, that the next day by eight of the clocke in the morning the said Earle should withdraw his souldiers from the fort, to deliuer it immediatly into the handes of the said Constable, &c. his deputies, at the said houre. Item, that all prisoners should be deliuered on either side, without paying any ransome. Item, that the Constable should for his part suffer the said Earl of Warwicke and all those that were in garison in the said Newhauen to depart, with all things whatsoeuer that belonged to the Queene of England, or her subiects. Item, that for the departure aforesaid of the said Earle, as the remouing of his souldiers and other things: the said Constable agreed to giue them fiue dayes, to beginne the twentie nine of July, during the which they might frankely take and carry away the said things. Item, the said Constable did likewise permit, that all the ships and English vessels appointed for the postage and conueying away of the said things, should safely and freely passe in, to, and fro from the said Hauen, without any stay or impeachment, either by the French or any other. The seuen hostages were appointed to bee master Oliuer Maners, brother to the Earle of Rutland, Captaine Pelham, Captaine Horley, and Captaine Leighton. In witnesse whereof the said Lords the Constable of Fraunce, and Earle of Warwicke signed these Articles, the eight and twentieth of July. The last of Iulie, the most part of the Englishmen tooke ship and departed homewards: for glad was he that could get soonest out of that vnwholesome ayre: many sicke persons yet were left behinde, impotent, and not able to helpe themselues a ship boord, the miserie whereof, Edward Randolph Esquire, high marshall of the towne (who was appointed to tarry and see the vtmost of the composition accomplished) perceiuing, moued with natural pity of his countrymen relinquished without comfort, caused the said sicke persons to be carryed aboorde, and not sparing his owne shoulders, at that time feeble and full of the plague, himselfe and his men still bearing and helping the poore creatures on ship boorde: a rare fact, worthy rewarde, and no doubt in remembrance with God, the true recorder of mercifull deserts. Besides the meaner sort of those that dyed at Newhauen of the pestilence, during the siedge, I find noted as chiefe, Cuthbert Vaughan Comptroller of the towne, Francis Sommerset Esquire, brother to the Earle of Worcester, Auerie Darcie, brother to the Lord Darcie, John Zouche, brother to the Lord Zouche, Edward Ormesby, Thomas Drury *alias* Pygnard, Richard Croker, John Cockson, Thomas Kemish, John Prowde, William Saule, Wilfride Antwisell, these of the plague. There were diuers also that were slaine in the field, as both the Fremayns brethren, Nicholas and Andrew, Captaine Richard Saunders, with master Robinson and master Bromfield, also one Leighton a Gentleman, and diuers other.

A truce accorded, and articles agreed vpon for surrendring of Newhauen.

Edward Randolph high marshall of the towne commeth vnto Newhauen.

As ye haue heard the plague of pestilence being in the towne of Newhauen, through the number of soulders that returned from thence into England, the infection thereof spread into diuers parts of this Realme, but especially the City of London was so infected, that in the same whole yeere that is to say, from the first of Ian. 1562. till the last of Decem. 1563. there dyed in the citie and liberties thereof containing 108. parishes of all diseases, 20, 93. C. 72. and of the

the plague, (being part of the number aforesaid) 17. 93. 4. C. 4. persons. And in our parishes adioyning to the same Citie, being 11. Parishes, died of all diseases in the whole yeare, 3. 93. 2. C. 88. persons, and of them, of the plague, 2. 93. 7. C. 32. persons, so that the whole number of all that died of all diseases, as well within the Citie and Liberties, as in the out Parishes, was 23. 93. 6. C. and 60. of them, there died of the plague 20136.

Tempest at London.

The 8. of July, in the morning, hapned a great tempest of lightning and thunder, wherethrough a woman and three Kine were slaine in the Couent Garden neere to Charing Crosse. At the same time in Essex a man was tone to peces as he was carrying Hay, his barne was borne downe, and his Hay burnt: both stones and trees were rent in many places.

The Councell of K. Philip at Bruxels, commanded proclamation to be made in Antwerp, and other places, that no English Ship with clothes should come into any places of their low Countries: their colour was (as they said) the danger of the plague, which was that time in London, and other places of England: notwithstanding they would gladly haue gotten our walles: other causes they alleaged, as the rating of Impostes as well vpon goods inwards as outwards, as well vpon English men as vpon Strangers, &c. Also for that in the first Parliament of the Queenes Maiestie, by a Statute then made, diuers Wares and Commodities were forbidden to be brought into this Realme out of Flanders or other places being wrought there, which was done to the end to set our subiects a worke here, as by the Statute doth appeare, for that no man English or Stranger might ship out any white clothes vndrest, being of the price aboue foure pound, without licence, &c. but the Queenes Maiestie through the sute of our Marchant Aduenturers, caused the woll sacke to be discharged, and our cloath sacke was sent to Emden in East Frizeland about Easter next following, in An 1564.

Three-fold plague to the poore Citizens of London.

For so much as the plague of pestilence was so hote in the Citie of London, there was no Terme kept at Michaelmasse: to be short, the poore Citizens of London, were this yeare plagued with a three-fold plague, pestilence, scarcitie of money, and dearth of victuals: the miserie whereof were too long here to write, no doubt the poore remember it, the rich by sight into the Countries made shift for themselues.

Earthquake.

An Earthquake was in the moneth of September in diuers places of this Realme, specially in Lincolne and Northamptonshire.

An. Reg. 6. Lightning and thunder.

From the first day of December, till the 12. was such continuall lightning and thunder, especially the same 12. day at night, that the like had not beene seene nor heard by any man then liuing.

A great fish.

In the moneth of December, was driuen on the shore at Grimbie in Lincolnshire, a monstrous fish, in length 19. yards, his taile 15. foote broad, and fiue yards betweene his eyes, twelue men stoode vpright in his mouth to get the oyle.

1. 8. Parishes in London besides them the suburbs.

For that the plague was fully ceased in London, Hillary Terme was kept at Hertford Castle besides Ware. 1564. Terme kept at Hertford.

This yeere an honorable & ioyfull peace was concluded, betwixt the Queenes Maiestie & the French King, their Realmes, Dominions, and Subiects, which Peace was proclaimed with sound of trumpet before her Maiestie, in her Castle of Windlesore, then being present the French Ambassadours. Also the same Peace was proclaimed at London on the 13. day of Aprill. And shortly after the Queenes Maiestie sent the right Honourable sir Henry Carie Lord Hunsdon, accompanied with the Lord Strange, besides diuers Knights and Gentlemen vnto the French King, with the Noble order of the Garter, who lying then at Lions, he there presented vnto him the said order, and Garter King at Armes inuested him therewith, obseruing the ceremonies in that behalf due, &c. Peace with France proclaimed.

The plague (thanks be to God) being cleane ceased in London, both Easter and Midsommer Terme were kept at Westminster.

Through the earnest suite of the Armenters, there was on the vigile of S. Peter, a Watch in the Citie of London, which did onely stand in the highest streets, as Cheape, Cornehill and so forth to Algate, which watch was to the Commons of the Citie as chargeable, as when in times past it had bin commendably done. Watch on S. Peters euen.

The 5. of August, the Queenes Maiestie in her Progresse came to the Vniuersity of Cambridge, and was of all the Students (being inuested according to their degrees taken in the Schooles) honourably and ioyfully receiued in the Kings Colledge, where shee did lye during her continuance in Cambridge. The dayes of her abode were passed in Scholasticall exercises of Philosophy, Physicke, and Diuinitie: the nights in Comedies and Tragedies set forth partly by the whole Vniuersity, and partly by the Students of the Kings Colledge. Abr Hartwell. The Queens Progresse thorow Cambridge.

At the breaking vp of the Vniuersity Act, being on Wednesday the ninth of August (on the which day she rode through the Towne, and viewed the Colledges, those godly and ancient Monuments of the Kings of England her noble Predecessours) she made within S. Maries Church a notable Oration in Latine, in the presence of the whole learned Vniuersity, to the Students great comfort. The next day shee went forward on her Progresse to Finchingbroke by Huntington.

The 20. day of September, arose great floods in the riuer of Thamis, whereethrough the marishes neere adioyning, were ouerflowed, and many cattell drowned. Great floods in the Thames.

The creation of sir Robert Dudley Knight of the Garter, and Master of the horse to the Queenes Maiestie, who was created Barron of Denbigh, and after Earle of Leicester on Michaelmas day at S. Iames, with the gift of the Manour of Killingworth, and other things there, to him and his heires, to the yearely value of foure twenty pound and better. First, the said Lord attended on the Queenes highnes to the Chappell, and from the Chappell to ser- Creation of a Barron.

uice, and when he was returned to the Chamber of presence, the said Lord with other departed to the Lord Chamberlaines chamber, and shifted them, the said Lord Robert in his surcote with the hood, his mantle borne before him by the Lord Hunsdon, and led by the Lord Clinton Lord Admirall by the right hand, and the Lord Strange on the left hand in their Parliament robes, Garter bearing the Patent, and before him the Officers of Armes, and so proceeded into the Chamber of presence, where the Quenes Highnesse sate under the cleath of Estate, with Noble men on each side of her, the Ambassador of Fraunce was also present with another stranger an Italian, and when the said Lord with the other came in the Quenes sight, they made their obeisance three times, the said Lord kneeled downe, after the which, Garter presented the letters patents to the Lord Chamberlain, and he presented the same to the Quenes Highnesse, who gaue it to sir William Cicil Secretary who read the same with a loud voyce, and at the word, *Ceremonia*, the Lord of Hunsdon presented the mantle to the Quenes Maiestie, who put on the same, whereby her was created Barron of Denbigh for him and his heires, then the Patent was read out to the end, after the which hee deliuered it to the Quene againe, and her Highnesse gaue it to the said Lord, who gaue her Maiestie most humble thanks, and he rose by and departed to the Chamber they came from, the Trumpets sounding before him. Then hee shifted him of those robes, and put on the robes of estate of an Earle, and being led by the Earle of Sussex on the right hand, and the Earle of Huntington on his left hand, the Earle of Warwicke bearing his sword the pommell vpward, and the gold about the same, all in their robes of Estate, the Lord Clinton Lord Admirall in his Parliament robes, bearing his Cap with the Coronall, Garter before him bearing his patrent, and the other Officers of Armes before him, they proceede as afore, into the Chamber of presence, where, after they made their obeysance, the said Earle kneeled downe, and Garter deliuered his patrent to the Lord Chamberlaine, who gaue the same to the Quenes Maiestie, and her Highnesse gaue the same to sir William Cicill Secretary to reade, who read the same, and at the words *Cinkturam gladij*, the Earle of Warwicke presented the sword to the Quenes Highnesse, who girt the same about the necke of the new Earle, putting the point vnder his left arme, and after her Maiestie put on his Cap with the Cozonall, then his patrent was read out to the end, and then the said Secretary deliuered it againe to the Quene, and her Highnesse gaue it to the said new Earle of Leicester, who gaue her humble thankes for the same, and then arose and went into the Councell chamber to dinner, the trumpets sounding before, and at dinner hee sate in his kirtle and there accompanied him the foresaid Ambassadour of France, and the said Italian, with diuers other Earles and Lords; and after the second course, Garter with the other Officers of Armes, proclaimed the Quenes Maiesties stile, and after, the stile of the said Earle, for the which they had fifténe pound, to wit, for his Barronny fiue pound, and for his Earledome tenne pound, and Garter had his gowne of blacke veluet, garded with three gards of the same, layd on with Lace, lined through with blacke Laffata, and garded on the inner side with the same, and on the sleeues 38. paire of aglets gold.

Creation of an Earle.

Du treſnoble & puiſſant ſeigneur Robert Conte de Leyceſtre, Baron de Denbigh, Chenilier du treſ noble Ordre de la Iarritiere, & grand Eſquier de la Royne noſtre Souueraigne.

The second of October in the afternoone, and the morrow in the forenoone, a solemne obsequie was holden in Saint Paules Church in London, for Ferdinando late Emperour departed.

Obsequies for the Emperour.

The 7. of October at eight of the clocke at night, the North parts of the element seemed to be couered with flames of fire, proceeding toward the middle of the firmament, where, after it had stayed nigh one houre, it descended West, and all the same night (being the next after the change of the Moone) seemed as light as it had beene day.

An. Reg. 7.

The twentieth of November in the morning, through the negligence of a mayden with a candle, the snuffe falling in an hundred pound waught of Gunpolwder, three houses in Bucklersbury were sore shaken, and the Mayde died two dayes after.

The 21. of December began a Frost, which continued so extreamely, that on New-yeares euen people went ouer and along the Thamis on the Ice from London-bridge to Westminster, some played at foote-ball as boldly there, as if it had beene on the dry land, diuers of the Court being then at Westminster, shot daily at pricks set vpon the Thamis: and the people both men and women went on the Thamis in greater number then in any streete of the City of London. On the third day of January at night it began to thaw: and on the fift day was no Ice to be seene betweene London bridge and Lambeth, which caused great floods and high waters, that bare downe bridges and houses, and drowned many people in England, especially in Yorkeshire, Ouses bridge was borne away with other.

The Thamis frozen ouer.

1565.

Ouses bridge borne downe.

The third of February, Henry Stewart Lord Darnley, about the age of 19. yeares eldest sonne of Mathew Earle of Lennox (who went into Scotland at Whitsontide before) hauing obtained licence of the Quéns Maiestie, took his iourney toward Scotland, accompanied with fiue of his Fathers men, where when he came, he was honourably receiued, and lodged in the Kings lodgings, and the Sommer following, married Mary Quéne of Scotland.

Henry Stewart married the Quene of Scots.

About this time for the Quenes Maiestie were chosen and sent Commissioners to Bruges, sir Anthony Browne Viscount Montacute Knight of the honourable order of the Garter, Doctor Wotton one of her Maiesties honourable Councell, Doctor Haddon one of the Masters of Requests to her Highnesse, with other: Master Doctor Aubrey was for the Merchant Aduenturers of England. They came to Bruges in Lent, *Anno* 1565. and continued there till Michaelmas following, and then was the diet prolonged till March in 1566. and the Commissioners returned into England.

Commissioners sent to Bruges.

Lady Leonor sent to the Tower.

The 22. of Aprill, the Lady Margaret Countesse of Leonor was commaunded to keepe her chamber at the White hall, where shee remained till the 22. of June, and then conueyed by sir Francis Knolls and the Gard to the Tower of London by water.

On Midsommer day, Odonell Mac Cartie More, chiefe Captaine of that name in Ireland, was created Barron of Valency, and afterward the same day Earle of Clanker at White hall.

Odonell Earle of Clanker.

On S. Peters Euen at night, was the like standing Watch in London, as had been on the same night twelue moneth.

Watch at Midsommer.

The 16. of July, about 9. of the clock at night, began a tempest of lightning and thunder, with showers of haile, which continued till three of the clocke the next morning, so terrible, that at Chelmisford in Essex 500. Acres of corne were destroyed, the glasse windowes on the East side of the Town, and of the West and South sides of the Church were beaten downe, with also the tiles of their houses, beside diuers barnes, chimnies, and the battlements of the Church which were ouerthrowne. The like harme was done in many other places, as at Ledes, Cranebrooke, Douer, &c.

Tempest at Chelmisford.

An. Reg. 8.

Christopher, Prince and Margraue of Baden, with Cicely his wife, sister to the King of Swethland, after a long and dangerous iourney, wherein they had trauelled almost 11. moneths, sayling from Stokeholme, crossing the Seas ouer into Lifeland, from whence by Land they came about by Poland, Prusey, Pomerland, Seckburge, Friseland, and so to Antwerpe in Brabant, then to Calcis, at the last in September landed at Douer, where they were met and receiued by the Lord Cobham, with a goodly traine of Knights and Gentlemen. And at Canterbury, the Lady Cobham with the like traine of Ladies and Gentlewomen met them, and at Gaueslend the Lord Hunsdon with the Gentlemen Pensioners met them; and so on the 11. day of September they came to London, where they were met, and receiued by the Earle of Sussex, the Countesse his wife, and their traine, and so brought to the Earle of Bedfords Place, néere to Iuie-bridge, where they were lodged, and within foure dayes after, that is to say, the 15. of September she trauelled in child-bed, and was deliuered of a manchilde, which childe the last of September was christened in the Quenes Maiesties Chappell of White-hall at Westminster, the Quenes Maiestie in her owne person being Godmother, the Archbishop of Canterbury and the Duke of Norfolke Godfathers: at the christening the Quéne gaue the childe to name Edwardus fortunatus, for that God had so graciously assisted his mother in so long and dangerous a iourney, and brought her so safe to land in that place which she most desired, and that in so short time before her deliuerance.

Prince and Margraue of Baden, with his wife.

The 11. of November, the right honourable Ambrose Earle of Warwicke, married Anne eldest daughter to the Earle of Bedford: for the honour and celebration of which noble marriage, a goodly challenge was made and obserued at Westminster at the Tilt, with each one fiue courses: at the turney twelue strokes with the sword, three pushes with the punchion staffe, and twelue blowes with the sword at Barriers, or twenty if any were so disposed.

Marriage of the Earle of Warwicke.

At ten of the clocke the same day, a valiant serviceable man called Robert Thomas, Master Gunner of England, desirous also to honour the Feast and Marriage day, in consideration the said Earle of Warwicke was Generall of the Ordnance within her Maiesties Realmes and Dominions, made three traines of great chambers, which terribly yeelded forth the nature of their voyce, to the great affeerinment of diuers, who at the firing of the second, was vnhappily slaine by a peece of one of the chambers, to the great sorrow and lamentation of many.

The 24. of December in the morning, there rose a great storme and tempest of winde, by whose rage the Thamis and Seas ouerwhelmed many persons, and the great gates of the West end of Paules Church in London were blowne open.

Paules gate blowne open.

In January, Monsieur Rambuley, a Knight of the order in France, was sent ouer into England by the French King Charles the ninth of that name, with the order, who at Windsore was stalled in the behalfe of the said French King, with the knighthood of the most honourable order of the Garter: and the 24. of January, in the Chappell of her Maiesties Palace of White-hall, the said Monsieur Rambuley inuested Thomas Duke of Norfolke, and Robert Earle of Leicester with the said order of Saint Michaell.

Order of S. Michaell. 1566.

The Marquesse of Baden, and the Lady Cicely his wife, sister to the King of Swethen, who came into this land the meneth of September last past, as before is declared, being then by the Quenes especiall appointment at their arriuall, honourably receiued by the Lord Cobham an honorable Barron of this Realme, and the Lady his wife, one of the Quenes Maiesties priuie Chamber, now in the moneth of Aprill, Anno 1566. hauing receiued certaine gifts of the Quenes Maiestie, amongst the which one was a Cup of gold, with a couer weighing 133. ounces and a halfe, departed the same againe: the Marquesse a few dayes before his wife, being both conducted by a like personage, the Lord of Abergauenny to Douer.

The Marquesse of Baden returned.

The Commissioners before named appointed for the matters of Flaunders, keeping their dyet at Bruges, agreed to referre the whole matter to the Princes on both sides and if they could not agree, then the Merchants to haue forty dayes to repaire home with their Merchandize, and in the meane time, all things to stand

Land as they were then. Our Commissioners departed from Bruges about the 29. of June.

The Queens Progresse to Oxford.

The 31. of August, the Queenes Maiestie in her Progresse came from Woodstocke to the Vniuersitie of Oxford, and was of all the Students, which had looked for her comming thither two yeres, so honourably and ioyfully receiued, as either their loyalnesse towards the Queenes Maiestie, or the expectation of their friends did require. Concerning orders in disputation, and other academicall exercises, they agreed much with those, which the Vniuersitie of Cambridge had vsed two yeares before. Comedies also and Tragedies were played in Christs Church, where the Queenes Highnesse lodged. Among the which, the Comedie entituled Palemon, and Arcet, made by Master Edwards of the Queenes Chappell, had such tragicall successe as was lamentable: for at that time by the fall of a wall, and a paire of staires, and great presse of the multitude, three men were slaine.

Misfortune at Oxford.

The fift of September, after disputations, the Queene at the humble sute of certaine of her Nobilitie, and the King of Spaines Ambassadours, made a briefe Oration in Latine to the Vniuersitie, but so wise and pithy, as England may reioyce that it hath so learned a Prince, and the Vniuersitie may triumph, that they haue so noble a Patroneste.

The first of September after dinner, her Grace comming from Christs Church ouer Carfox, and so to Saint Maries, the Schollers standing in order according to their degrees, euen to the East gate, certaine Doctors of the Vniuersitie did ride before in their scarlet Gowns and Hoods, and Masters of Art in black Gownes, and Hoods. The Maior also named Master Williams with certain of his brethren, to the number of 14. or 15. did ride before her in scarlet to the end of Magdelen bridge, where their Liberties ended: but the Doctors and Masters went forward still to Shot ouer, a mile and more out of Oxford, because their Liberties extended so farre, and there, after Orations made, her Highnesse with thanks to the whole Vniuersitie bad them farewell, and rode to Rycote to Master Norrice house, an eight miles from Oxford.

Souldiers transported into Ireland.

The valiant Captaine Edward Randolfe Esquire, Lieutenant of the Ordnance, and Colonell of a thousand foote men, in September last past, was with his band embarked at Bristow, and within fewe dayes after landed at Knockfergus, in the North parts of Ireland, and went thence by water to a place called Derry, by which passeth the riuer of Longfoile: there the said Colonell in short space fortified, to the great annoyance of I. Oneale, and by great forecsight and experience, garded himselfe and his charge till the said Oneale, (to hinder and disturbe his abode there) the 12. of December arriued with a great Army of Kerne Calawglasses and Horsemen, with whom the said Captaine Randolfe encountred, and him there so discomfited, as after that conflict, hee durst neuer approach the Queenes power, and to his perpetuall fame the said Captaine by reason of his bold and hardy onset, that day lost his life.

King Iames christened. An. Reg. 9.

Charles Iames the first of that name, sonne to Henry Stewart Lord of Darnley, and Mary, King and Queene of Scots, was borne in Edenborough Castle the 19. of June last past, and the 18. of December, this yeare solemnly christened at Striueling, whose Godfathers at the Christening were Charles King of France, and Philibert Duke of Sauoy, and the Queenes Maiestie of England was the Godmother, who gaue a font of gold curiously wrought and enamelled, waying 333. ounces, amounting in value to the summe of 1043. l. 9. s.

1567. K. of Scots murthered.

The 10. of Februarie in the morning, Henry Stewart Lord of Darnley before named King of Scots, by Scots, in Scotland, was shamefully murthered, the reuenge whereof remaineth in the mighty hand of God.

The 22. of February, the Lady Margaret Douglas Countesse of Lennor, mother to the said King of Scots, was discharged out of the Tower of London.

Seuen Aldermen deceased in London.

This yeare deceased many aged people, so that in London within the space of tenne moneths last past died seuen Aldermen of London, the first Edward Banks deceased the ninth of July *Anno* 1566. Richard Chamberlaine late Sheriffe, Sir Martin Bowes, Sir Richard Malorie, Sir William Hewet, and Sir Thomas White, late Maiors, then Richard Lambart, one of the Sheriffs for that yeare, the fourth of Aprill, *Anno* 1567.

Townes of Dissetrie burnt thirtie in 30. yeares.

The 22. of Aprill, by great misfortune of fire in the Towne of Dissetrie in Wales, 12. miles from Shrewsburie, to the number of two hundred houses, that is to say, seuen score within the walls, and threescore without in the Suburbs, besides cloath, corne, cattell, &c. were consumed, which fire began at two of the clocke in the afternoone, and ended at foure, to the great mernailing of many, that so great a spoile in so short time should happen. Two long streetes with great riches of that Towne were burnt, in *Anno* 1542. And likewise 22 yeare in *Anno* 1544.

Sergeants Feast.

The 24. of Aprill, the Sergeants feast was kept at Graies Inne neere vnto Holborne, and there were at that time made seuen new Sergeants of Law.

Milnall in Suffolke burnt.

The 27. of May, in the Towne of Milnall in Suffolke, eight miles from Newmarket, 37. houses, besides Barnes, Stables, and such like, were consumed with fire in the space of two houres.

Shane Oneale discomfited.

Shane Oneale, who had most trayterously rebelled against the Queenes Maiestie in Ireland, and had done many great outrages in the parts of Vlster, was this yeare with his great losse manfully repelled from the siege of Dundalke by the Garrison thereof, and afterward through the great valiancy of Sir Henry Sidney, Knight of the Order, and Lord Deputy of Ireland, hee was so discomfited in sundry conflicts, with the losse of 3500. of his men, that now foreseeing his declination to be imminent,

Seauenta Regni Hiberni. Edmond Campion.

nent, he determined to put a Collar about his necke, and disguising himselfe, to repaire to the Lord Deputy, and patiently to require his pardon to haue his life. But Neil Mackeuer his Secretary, who had incited him to this rebellion, perswaded him first to try and treate the friendship of certaine wilde Scots, that then lay incamped in Clan Iboy, vnder the conduct of Alexander Oge, and Mec Gilliam Buske, whose father and vncle Shane Oneale, had lately killed in an ouerthrow giuen by the Scots: neuertheselfe, he well liking this perswasion, went to the said Campe the second of June, where after a diuersified entertainment; and quaffing of wine, Gilliam Buske burning with desire of reuenge of his fathers and vncles death, and ministring quarrelling talke, issued out of the Tent, and made a fray vpon Oneales men, and then gathering together his Scots in a throng, suddenly entred the Tent againe, who there with their slaughter swords, hewed in peeces Shane Oneale, his Secretary, and all his company, except a very few which escaped by flight.

Shane Oneale slaine.

The 8. of June, Sir Thomas Sackuile knight, was created Barron of Buckhurst at Westminster in the Queenes Pallace.

Watch at Midsommer.

On Saint Johns euen at night, was the like standing Watch in London, as had beene on S. Peters euen in the yeare before passed.

Coronation in Scotland.

The 19. of July, Charles Iames the young Prince of Scotland, after a Sermon made by Iohn Knokes, was crowned King of Scots at Sterling Church, where were read certaine Commissions with the Queenes privy Seale at them for the establishing of the same. The first for her resignation of the Crowne, and government of the young Prince her sonne. The second, to authorize the Earle of Murrey to be Regent during his minority. The third, to giue authority and power to seuen other, ioyning with the said Earle of Murrey, in case he should refuse to execute the same alone, that is to say, the Duke Chatilerop, the Earles of Lennor, Argile, Athelmorton, Glencarne, and Marre: the Commissions being ended, the Bishop of Aberly with two superintendents, proceeded to the Coronation, the Earle Morton and Lord Hume tooke oath for the King, that he should rule in the faith, feare and loue of God, to maintaine the Religion then preached in Scotland, and persecute all aduersaries to the same, with many other particular causes: he was then annointed, and had the royall robe put on him, he had the Crowne vpon his head, the sword by his side, and the Scepter in his hand. At the bringing to him of euery of which, were prayers made for euery particular thing in the Scottish tongue, wherein the whole ceremony was made and done.

Maximilian the Emperor Knight of the Garter.

Maximilian Emperour, the second of that name, being elected into the most honorable order of the Garter, the honorable Thomas Earle of Sussex, &c. Knight of the same order, was appointed by the Queenes Maiestie to goe into the said Emperour with the said order of the Garter, who being honourably accompanied with Roger Lord North, Sir Thomas Mildmay Knight, Henry Cobham Esquire, one of the Pensioners, and others, departed from London the 25. of June into Douer, and there embarked, landed at Caleis, and his traine at Dunkerke, and so passed through the Low Countries to Antwerpe in Brabant, where hee was honorably receiued by the English Merchants and others, there he visited Madame de Parma, Regent of the said Countries, then resident within the said Towne. And from thence hee passed vnto Coleine, where his Lordship and traine take the riuer of Reene, passing by the City of Spents vnto Oppenham, from thence by land through the Country by the Citie of Worms and Spires, till he came to Vlmer, standing on the riuer of Danow, where he arriued on the 21. of July, and the 23. his Lordship rode in post to Ausperge, 9. Dutch miles from Vlmes: from thence he departed the 25. of July, and met with his traine at Denewert, being come down by the said riuer of Danow. From thence he kept his iourney by Ingolistatt, Reuspurge, by Passaw, and other Townes, till hee came to Linz, where his Lordship stayed the first, second, and third of August, by reason of high waters, and on the fourth of August passed by Stoanne and Tromz, by the said riuer of Danow, and so arriued at the Citie of Vienna the fift of August, where he was receiued of the Lord Smackomes, hauing twelue horses ready with their foot-cloathes for his Lordship, and the best respected of his traine, and so brought to the Emperour, by whom hee was right honourably receiued, and afterward conducted to his lodging, where all prouision was made at the Emperours charges: and here his Lordship continued vntill the 14. of January. In the which time of his abode, the Emperour very often had the said Earle forth with him vnto such pastimes of hunting the Hart, Boare, and such like, as that Country yeeldeth. After this, vpon the Queens Maiesties letters out of England, by Master Henry Brooke *alias* Cobham, one of her Maiesties Gentlemen Pensioners, the said Earle of Sussex vpon Sunday the fourth of January in the afternoone, presented and deliuered vnto the Emperours Maiestie in his Chamber of presence, the abiliaments of the most Noble order of the Garter, Sir Gilbert Dethike knight, *alias* Garter, principall King at Armes, and officer for the said order, and William Dethike then Rouge Croffe also officer of Armes, giuing their attendance in their coates of Armes. And the Emperour at his inuesture of the said abiliments, gaue vnto the said Garter his short gowne, and vnder garment, furred throughout with Luzernes, and then proceeded thence into a great Chamber, adorned in forme of a Chappell, whereas all the other ceremonies belonging to the said order were accomplished, and the same night the said Garter supped with the Emperours Maiesty, both being in their roabes of the said order. And shortly after his Lordship with certaine of his company taking leaue of the Emperour, departed from Vienna the fourteenth of January vnto Newstat,

An. Reg. 10.

1568.

Newkat, and so through the Country of Stire vnto Gantz, the chiefe Citie of Carinthie, where he toke leaue of the Archduke Charles, and from thence returning, passed those parts of the Alpes, vnto Saltzburgh, where hee met with other parts of his traine, and so by iourneyes came againe into England vnto the Queenes Maiestie, about the latter end of March.

Hay sold by waight.

After a dry Sommer followed a sharp Winter, with such a scarcitie of fodder and Hay, that in diuers places the same was sold by waight, as in Yorkshire, and in the Peake, Hay was sold for fiue pence the stone: there followed also a great death of cattell, especially of Oxen and Sheepe.

Ships sent to the Seas against the Subiects of K. Philip.

In the moneth of January, the Queenes Maiestie sent into the narrow Seas three of her Ships, named the Antelope, the Swallow, and the Ade, and one Barke named the Phenix, the which were manned with 500. men: and her Highnesse appointed the charge of those Ships and men, to Master William Holstoke Esquire, Comptroler of her Highnesse Ships, who had commandement to stay the Subiects of King Philip, and according to his duty and charge, he vsed such diligence, that on the 11. of March next following, he met with 11. saile of Flemish Hoyes, vpon Sologne, which came from Roane, and in them 400. and odde Tuns of Gascoigne and French wines, which they intended to haue conueyed into Flaunders, but William Holstoke stayed all the sayde Hoyes, and sent them to London, where they made their discharge, and the Flemings disappointed.

Moreouer, on the 28. of March, the sayde William Holstoke seruing in the Antelope at that present Admirall, in his company being William Winter the younger, (at that time Viceadmirall) seruing in the Ade, and Iohn Baling Captaine of the Swallow, and Thomas Generlee Captaine of the Phenix, met in the narrow Seas with fourteene saile of great Pulkes, which were come out of Portingale, and bound to Flanders, their chiefe lading being Portingale Salt, and yet had good store of Spanish Reals of Plate, and also great store of Spices, the which fourteene Pulkes did maintaine their fight for the space of two houres, and after that they did perceiue they could not preuaile, the said William Holstoke and his company tooke 8. of the same Pulkes, whereof fiue were sent into the riuer of Thamis, and the Admirall and Viceadmirall of the said Pulkes, being two great ships, which William Holstoke himselfe did take, were conueyed to Harwich, and there discharged.

Great windes

The 28. of March, through vehement rage and tempest of windes, many vessels in the Thamis, with two Tilt-boates before Greenewich, were sunke and drowned.

Queene of Scots arriued in England.

In the moneth of May, the Queene of Scots escaping out of prison through the meanes of George Dowglas, brother vnto the Lord of Lochledon her keeper, leuied a power of 6000. men through the helpe of the Earles of Argile, Eglinton, and Rothes, and Glaud de Hamilton, sonne to the Duke of Shatellerault, and other which was discomfited in battell by the Gouernour the Earle of Murrey, and 14. Hamiltons slaine, and 30. men taken prisoners, among whom were the Lords Seton & Ros, the Queene escaped and fled into England.

The 16. of May, Mary Queene of Scots, after her escape out of Lughleuen, where she had beene imprisoned, arriued at Werkington in England, hauing in her company to the number of 16. persons, besides 4 water-men where she was staid: Captaine Read with 50. Souldiers were appointed to attend vpon her, and conueyed her to Carlile, and from thence to Bolton Castle, belonging to the Lord Scrope, who with Sir Raph Sadler sent downe for that purpose, had the custody of her, till she was committed to the Earle of Shrewsbury.

The 26. of Iune, deceased Thomas Yoong Archbishop of Yorke, in the Mannour of Shefield, belonging to the Earle of Shrewsbury, he was honourably buried at Yorke. This Thomas Yoong pulled downe and destroyed the great Hall and Pallace of Yorke in *Anno* 1562. which sometimes had beene sumptuously builded by his Predecessour Thomas, surnamed the elder, Archbishop of Yorke, about *Anno* 1090. &c.

Archbishop of Yorke sealed after he had spoiled his Pallace.

This yeare Cardinall Edet Castillion, and the Bishop Aries flying out of France into England, arriued at the Tower-wharfe on the thirteenth of September, and were there receiued by sir Thomas Gresham, and other, and from thence conueyed to sir Tho. Greshams house in Bishops gate streete, where they were lodged. On the next morrow, in the forenoone the said Cardinall (in his short cloake, and a Rapier by his side) with sir Tho. Gresham, and other, rode to the French Church, from thence to the Exchange in Cornehill, and then to S. Paules Church, and so backe againe to dinner. On the 20. of September, the said Cardinall rode to the Court, &c. he remained in England till the yeare of our Lord 1570. and then died at Canterbury, and was there buried in Christs Church.

Peter Ramus Cardinall Castillon came into England.

The 11. of October, were taken in Suffolke at Dolnam bridge neere vnto Ipswich, 18. monstrous fishes, some of them containing 28. foote in length, the other 24. or 21. foote in length at the least.

Monstrous fishes.

At the costs and charges of the Citizens of London, a new Conduit was builded at Walbroke corner, neere to Dowmegate, which was finished in the moneth of October, the water whereof is conueyed out of the Thamis.

New Conduit at Walbroke.

In the moneth of December certaine of the Spanish Kings treasure comming from Spaine by sea to goe to the low Countries, was taken by English ships, and brought into England, whereupon the English Merchants goods were arrested in Spaine and Flanders, &c. *An. Reg.* 11.

The 29. of December, the English Merchants and their goods in the Towne of Antwerpe, were arrested by commandement of the Duke of Alua.

The

The 4. of February following, the English Merchants of the staple, with their goods in the towne of Bridges, was also arrested. Whereupon on the seauenth of January it was proclaimed at London, that the bodies and goods, of all that were borne vnder the King of Spaines dominions, throughout England should bee arrested, which was done, and the Spanish Ambassador was committed to the custodie of Master Parre, Master Kneuet, and Master Knowles.

1569 3 French men executed.

The 17. of January, Phillip Mestrell a Frenchman, and two Englishmen, were drawn from Newgate to Tyborne, and there hanged, the French man quartered, who had coyned gold counterfeit, the Englishmen, the one had clipped siluer, the other cast Testons of tinne.

Gaoler of Prisoners.

The 28. of March, the Prisoners well appointed in armor on horsbacke, muttered before the Queenes Maiestie in Hide Parke beside Westminster.

A Lottery.

A great Lottery being holden at London in Paules Churchyard, at the West doore was begun to be drawne the 11. of Ianuary, and continued day and night till the first of May, wherein the sayd drawing was fully ended.

George Lord Dacre slaine.

The 17. of May, George Lord Dacre of Graystock, son and heire of Thomas Lord Dacre being a child in yeares, and then Ward to Lord Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolke, was by a great mischance slaine at Thetford in the house of Sir Richard Fulmerstone Knight, by meanes of a vaulting horse of wood, standing within the same house, vpon which horse as he meant to haue vaulted, and the puns of the same being not made sure, the horse fell vpon him, and bruised the braines out of his head.

Ambassadors from Portugall.

The 27. of August, Andrewe Gregoreuich Saum, Ambassadour from Portugall, landed at the Tower wharfe, and there was receiued by the Lord Maior of London, the Aldermen, and Sheriffs in scarlet, with the Merchants aduenturers in coates of blacke Veluet all on horsebacke, who conueied him riding through the Citie to the Portugall house in Seething lane, there to be lodged.

Parliament adiourned.

The plague of pestilence somewhat raigning in the City of London, Michaelmas terme was first adiourned vnto the 2. of November, and after vnto Hillarie Terme next following.

Duke of Norfolke sent to the Tower.

The 11. of October, Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolke, was brought from Burnam beside Windsore by land to Westminster, and from thence conueyed by water to the Tower of London prysoner, Sir Henry Neuill being his keeper.

The Earle of Northumberland and Westmerland indicted.

On Monday the 14. of November, Thomas Percy Earle of Northumberland being at Topcliffe, receiued the Queenes Maiesties letters to repaire to the Court, and the same day at night certaine conspirators perceiuing the sayd Earle to be wauering and vnconstant of promise made to them, caused a seruant of his called Nekewith, (after he was layd in his bed) to bustle in and to knocke at his Chamber doore, willing him in hast to rise and thrift for himselfe, for that his enemies (whom he termed to be sir Otwold Vistrop, and master Vaughan) were about the Parke, and had beset him with numbers of men, whereupon he arose, and conueyed himselfe away to his keepers house in the same instant, they caused the belles of the Towne to be rung backeward, and so raised as many as they could to that purpose.

The next night, the Earle departed thence to Wansipith, where he met with Charles Neuill Earle of Westmerland, and other their confederates, after which time, by sundry Proclamations, they abusing the Queenes subiects, commanded them in her highnesse Name to repaire to them in warlike manner, for the defence and surety of her Maiesties person, sometimes affirming their doings to be with the aduise and consent of the Nobilitie of the Realme, who indeede were wholly bent (as manifestly appeared) to spend their liues in vnlawfull obedience, against them and all other Traytors; sometimes pretending for conscience sake to seeke to reforme religion, sometimes declaring that they were driuen to take this matter in hand, lest otherwise forraine Princes might take it vpon them, to the great perill of this Realme.

Rebels rent the Bible.

The 16. day, they came to Durham, and forthwith went to the Minster, where they tare the Bible, Communion bookes, and other such as there were. The same night they went againe to Wansipith, and on the morrow to Darington, where they had holy-water, but no Masse for want of vestments. From thence they sent their horsemen to gather together such numbers of men as they could.

An. reg. 12.

The 18 the Earle of Northumberland went to Richmond, then to Northalerton, after to Borow bridge, and on Sunday the 20. of November, he with his Lady, Countesse of Northumberland, met againe with the Earle of Westmerland at Ripon, and there had Masse, where (to get the more credit among the fauorers of the Romish Religion, they had a Crosse with a banner of the fiue wounds borne before them, by Richard Norton, and that night they went to Borow-bridge, and on the monday to Wetherby, on which day at night some bands of them entred Tadcaster, and tooke 200. footemen, chasing their Captaines which were leading towards Yorke to the Earle of Sussex. On Tuesday they mustred on Clifford moore nigh vnto Bramham moore, where they were, 1600. horsemen, and 4000. footmen, which was the greatest number that euer they were. From thence they intended to haue marched toward Yorke, but their minds being suddenly altred, by report they heard that sir George Bowes had mustered within the Bishoprick, and Richmondshire, and leuied great bands. On the Wednesday they returned againe to Wetherby: on Thursday to Northalerton on Friday to Richmond: on Saturday Westmerland went to Rabies his owne house: on Sunday at night the E. of Northumberland came to him there. On Munday, Tuesday, and Wednesday, they mustered in all Richmondshire and the Bishopricke, bestowing their footmen in bands vnder Captaines leading: and the same day, which was the

The number of Rebels.

Warnards Castle beleaged.

last of Nouemb. they beleaged Barnard or Barne Castle, vpon Teese, builded by Barnard Bayliol, about Anno Domini, 1174. which Castle was valiantly defended by sir George Bowes, and Robert Bowes his brother, the space of 11. daies In the meane space, the Earle of Westmerland and his Ladie went to Durham with seuen or eight hundred horse, where they remained til the 13. of December, in which space, to wit, the seuenth day of December, sir John Foster, Warden of the middle marches, accompanied with sir Henry Percy, did giue to the sayd Earle a great skirmish. The 6. of December, sir George Bowes put forth of the Castle two hundred horsemen, whereof two persons were slaine, and thirtie taken by the Rebels. The 10. of December, sir George Bowes deliuered the sayd Castle, vnder composition to depart with armour, munition, bagge, and baggage, and foorthwith marched with his garrison towards Pozke. In this meane time, to wit, on the 24. of Nouember, the Quenes Maiestie had caused the said Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland to be Proclaimed traytors, with all their adherents, and foorthwith prepared an army to bee sent out of the South for their suppression. The Lord Scrope, Warden of the West marches, had called vnto him the Earle of Cumberland, and other Gentlemen of the Countrey, and they kept the Citie of Carlile. Thomas Earle of Sussex, the Quenes Maiesties Lieutenant Generall in the North, had on the seuenteenth of November there published the like Proclamation (in effect) as after was published by her Maiestie against the sayd Rebels, and also sent out to all such Gentlemen as he knew to be her Maiesties louing Subiects vnder his rule, who came vnto him with such number of their friends, as he was able in fiue dayes to make aboue fiue thousand horsemen, and footmen, and so being accompanied with Edward Earle of Rutland his Lieutenant, the Lord Hyndon Generall of his horsemen, William Lord Eure, who had the leading of the Rearewarde of the footmen, and sir Ralph Sadler treasurer, who all came to Pozke with their seruants, on Sunday the 11. of December, they marched from Pozke towardes Topcliffe: the twelfth they tarried at Sezay, where sir George Bowes with his power comming from Barnards Castle (as is aforesayd) met him, and was made Marshall of the army: then they went to Northalerton, to Smeaton, to Crostbridge, and so to Aclay, on the which day the rebels fled from Durham, (hauing called their company, Christopher Neuill from Hertlepoole, who were fortifying there) to Erham, where they abode thre dayes.

Warnards Castle deliuered to the rebels.

The Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland proclaimed Traytors.

The Earle of Sussex the Queens lieutenant generall in the North against the Rebels.

Thomas Markenfield hauing beene many yeres beyond the Seas, returned into England, about the eleuenth yeere of the Quene, and comming into the North parts, solicited earnestly with Thomas Earle of Northumberland, Charles Earle of Westmerland, Francis Norton, Robert Tempest, John Swynburne, Christopher Neuill, Cuthert Neuill, and sir John Neuill, to rise in armes as they did, being tenne thousand strong, horse and foote, for the restauration of the Catholike Religion. 1569.

Against which rebels and their complices the Quen sent Thomas Earle of Sussex being then president of the North with 4000. of that country people, vpon whose approch the rebels fled, the Earle pursued them vnto Yeram in Nozthumberland, and from thence they fled vnto Nayoth in Cumberland, where they dispersed themselus euery man shifting for himselfe, all the Lords and Gentlemen fled into Scotland.

Skirmish with the Rebels.

The Quene leuied another armie of greater strength vnder the leading of Ambrose Earle of Warwick, and Edward Lord Clinton Admirall of England, who commanded iointly: this army consisted of 2000. horse and foote, Walter viscount Hereford Earle Marshall and Charles Howard heire aparant to the Lord Effingham, Generals of the horse. And in the same army was the Lord Willoughby of Parham, hauing vnder him a speciall charge of footmen, which sayd army marched no farther then the Bishoprieke of Durham.

The Earles of Northumberland and Westmerland flie.

In the meane space, what with the forwardnesse of the Lord president, and the fame of the other great armie, being certified to the enemie to be foure times greater then it was, the rebellious multitude were scattered and, taken in euery corner, many of them for treason were executed by Marshall law, but the greater number were pardoned.

The next night the two Earles of Nozthumberland, and Westmerland, with sundry of their principal Gentlemen vnknowne to their associates, fled to Yerlaw in Scotland: the other Rebels were shortly after taken by the Earle of Sussex and his power, without any resistance.

The Earle of Northumberland and Westmerland fled.

The 4. and 5. of January, did suffer at Durham to the number of three score and five Constables and other, among whom, an Alderman of the town named Scruchar, and a Priest called Parson Plomtree, were the most notable: then sir George Bowes Marshall, finding many to be faultors in the foresayd rebellion, did see them executed in euery market towne, and other places betwixt New Castle and Witherby, and about 60. miles in length, and 40. miles in breadth, as himselfe reported vnto mee.

1570. Rebels executed at Durham.

The 21. of January, a prentise was hanged on a gibbet at the North end of Finch lane in London, (to the example of other) for that hee the 13. of December had stricken his maister with a knife, whereof he died.

The 22. of February, Leonard Dacre of Harley in the County of Pozke Esquire, hauing raised a number of people, the Lord Hundon and other setting on him with a company of valiant souldiers, slue many of his people, and forced him to flie into Scotland.

Leonard Dacre fled into Scotland.

On good Friday, the 27. of March, Simon Digby of Alkewe, John Fulthorpe of Ielbecke in the County of Pozke Esquires, Robert Peneman of Stokelly, Thomas Bishop the younger of Poklinton, in the same County of Pozke gentlemen, were drawne from the Castle of Pozke, to the place of execution, called Knauesmire, halfe a mile without the citie of Pozke, and there

Rebels executed at Yorke.

there hanged, headed and quartered, their foure heads were set vpon the foure principal gates of the City, with foure of their quarters: the other quarters were set in diuers places of the countrey: Osculph, Glesby was with them drawne to the gallowes, and returned againe to the Castle.

This yere, 1570. the Turke cruelly inuaded Ciprus & the 19. of Septemb. with great slaughter on both sides he won the Citie Nicosia, and this yere there hapned a generall disease of pestilence almost throughout all Europe, in such sort, that many dyed of Gods tokens, chiefly amongst the Venetians, of whom there died of that cruell sickne aboue three score thousand.

3 great plague throughout Europe.

This yere 1571. the Turke hauing made diuers violent and cruell attempts in Ciprus and Hungaria, and other prouinces, refuses and contracts his whole Nauall force vnto Lepanto, with full purpose to ouerthrow the Christian army, which hee vnderstood was ready to giue him battell, and there vpon with great fury hee gaue a violent assault vpon the well gouerned army of the holy League, in which fight it pleased God that the wind sodainly changed from the Turkes Armade, and came with great aduantage vnto the Christians ayde, and forced the smoke of both armies with great annoyance to remayne amongst the Turkes gallies, so as they could not well see or know one another, neither directly know how directly to bend their shot vpon the Christians army, so as the Christians for their euerlasting honor, and encouragement to perfect vnity, obtained a glorious victorie with rich spoyles: three hundreth Galliss, and many prisoners, whereof some were sent to Rome, some to France, some to Spaine, and some to Venice, and other Prouinces according to their aduenture and furtherance in this Christian expedition.

A generall fight at Sea, betweene the Turke and many Christian Princes.

This Yeare in Christmas holidayes.

William Harbert Earle of Pembrooke, Baron of Cardiffe, Knight of the Garter, one of the Priuy Councell, and Lord Steward of the Quenes Maiesties houshold, deceased at Hampton Court on the seuenth of March, hee gaue great giftes to the Queene, to the Earle of Leicester, to the houshold, and diuers other, and was buried in Saint Paules Church at London the 18. of Aprill: the blacks giuen at his buriall came to the value of two thousand pounds, and a sumptuous monument was raised for him on the North side the Quire in Paules, at the feete of Iohn of Gaunt, Duke of Lancaster.

Earle of Pembrook deceased.

The 17. of April, the Earle of Sussex Lieutenant Generall in the North, with the L. Hundon, Lord Gouernor of Warwicke, and Warden of the East marches, and maister William Drewry high Marshall of Warwicke, with all the garrison and power of the same, began a iourney in, to Scotland, and the same night came to Wark, 12. miles from Warwicke, and so the next morrow entred into Tiuidale, and marching in warlike order, they burnt, ouerthrew, rased and spoyled all the Castles, Townes, and Villages of their enemies, till they came to the castle of Poxke, standing in a strong marish belonging to the Lord of Backlugh, which likewise was rased, ouerthrowne and burnt, and so marched forward & burnt the whole Country before them, till they came to Craling. The same day with the garrison and force of the same, entred likewise into Tiuidale vpon Erpics gate, 16. miles from Warke, where in like order they burnt, rased and spoiled the country before them, til they came to a strong Castle called Craling, in the possession of the mother of the L. Fernihers, which likewise they ouerthrew, rased, and burnt. There both the armies met, and so marched by the riuer of Tiuite, raging, burning, and spoyling Castles, and pyles along the riuer, till they came to Gedworth, where they both lodged, and were curteously received. The next day the Lord Cheiford Warden of the middle marches of Scotland, came in with all the principall men of his kinred to the Lord Lieutenant, and did submit themselues, and were assured, for that they had not receiued the English Rebels, hyding or assisting them, neither had made any inuasion into England. The nineteenth, the army diuided into two parts, the one part whereof passed the riuer of Tiuite, and burnt the Castle of Fernihers, and all other Castles and Townes belonging to the Lord of Fernihers, Huntil, and Wedel, and so passed to Pint where both the armies met againe, and so burnt on both sides the riuer, till they came to a great Towne, called Hawicke, where they intended to haue lodged, but the Scots had vnhatched the house, and burnt the thatch in the streetes, and themselues fled with most part of their goods, but by the industrie of the English men, the timber was also burned with the thatch, sauing one little peece of stone of Dunlamber, wherein my Lord lay that night. The 20. day, the army marched forwards to a house of the Lord of Buckligh, which they ouerthrew with powder, and then marched Northward to the riuer of Tiuit, where they burnt, and spoiled such Castles, pyles and townes, as belonged to the Lord of Fernihers, and Buckligh, their kinsmen and adherents, and that night returned to Gedworth. The one and twentieth day, part of the army went to the riuer of Bowbeut, vnder the leading of the sayd Marshall, where maister George Heron keeper of Tindale and Ridsdale, with them of that country met with him, and ioyning together, rode on, burning & spoyling all on both sides of the riuer, and the other part marched to the riuer of Trile, whereby they wasted and burnt all on both sides the riuer, and returned to Rilley, where the Lord Lieutenant lodged of purpose to beseige Hetune Castle in the night, and the Lord Gouernor with his company went to Wark, to bring the ordinance from thence in the morning, which was disappointed by the negligence of such as were put in trust for those matters, who suffered the carriage horses to returne to Warwicke the day before, which should haue drawne the same, the lacke whereof caused the Lord Lieutenant with the whole army, to

Sir John Foster with a garrison entred Scotland.

returne to Barwicke the 22. of Aprill, in the which time there was neuer any shew by the Scots made, to resist or defend their Country.

The Lord Scrope entred Scotland.

The Lord Scrope Warden of the West marches, entred Scotland the eighteenth of Aprill, burnt and spoyled those parts almost to Dunfreis, he had diuers conflicts, gaue sundry ouerthrowes, tooke many prisoners, and returned safely. During all these tumultions, the marches of England in all places were so gearded by the Lordiners, sir George Bowes, and other of the Bishopricke, as the Scots durst not once offer to enter into England, so that not one house was burned, nor one Cowe taken out of England. There were raised, ouerthrowne and burnt in this tourney, about fiftie strong Castles and Pyles, and aboue three hundred Townes and Villages, so that there be very few in the Countrey, that either haue receiued our English Rebels, or inuaded England, that either haue Castle, Pile, or house for themselues or their tenants, besides the losse of their goods. The fire and twentieth, the Lord Lieutenant accompanied with the Lord gouernour the Marshall and diuers lustie Gentlemen, Captaines and soldiers, to the number of three thousand, set forward to Warke one of the Lord Hewme Castle, which Castle they besieged till the same was yeelded, the Lord Gouernor, the Marshall and diuers other, tooke possession for our Soueraigne Ladie the Queene Maiestie, and expelled the Scots that were therein, to the number of 168. persons, in their apparell on their backs only without armes, weapon, bagge, or baggage, among whom there were two Englishmen, one Hilliard the Castle of Northumberlands man, and a bastarde Scottish person, named William Gowlwher, which both were carried to Barwicke and there executed the 24. of May. The Lord Lieutenant placed in the Castle, Captaine Wood and Captaine Pikeman, with 200. souldiers, and so returned to Barwicke the 29. of Aprill, where he rested very quill at ease, hauing in the trauell taken extreame cold, wherewith he was driuen into an extreame ague.

Wood & Pikeman left at Warke.

The 4. of May, he sent Master Drewry Marshall with the number of two thousand, to take Fauns Castle, which at the first comming was deliuered to the Marshall, who expelled the Scots in number twelue, and placed fourteene of our Englishmen against all Scotland, it is so strong a place, and so returned to Barwicke. The 11. of May, the Lord Lieutenant made foure knights, viz. Sir William Drewry, sir Thomas Maners, sir George Carr, sir Robert Constable. And the same day Sir William Drewry being General, set forward toward Edenborough with diuers fat bands with shot, armed pikes and peces of great ordinance, to ioyne with the Earls of Lenox, Morton Glencarne, and Marre, and other of the Kings power of Scotland, in pursuing of the English rebels, and such of the Scots as supported them, as the D. Hamilton, & other who were in armes at Lithco, 12. miles from Edenborough to defend their exile. The foresayd new knights with their bands came to Edenborough, the 13. of May, and there rested three nights, and departed from thence to Lithco, where the Regent was laine. The 17. the footmen marched to Faukirke, 6. miles from Sterling, and Sir William Drewry with the horsmen, marched from Sterling to se the King, whom they found so perfect in all things, as age and nature could permit. The 18 they departed to the foothands, and so together marched to Glasco, where the Lord Hamilton had besieged a house of the Kings, but hearing of their comming, he fled with dishonor, and the losse of 29. of his men. The 19, the Generall with other horsemen and some shot, passed to Dumbarton, to view the straits of the Castle there, being kept by the Lord Fleming the E. of Saint Andrewes, and other his adherents, to the Queene of Scots wse. Our Generall sent his trumpeter to require a parley with assurance safely to returne, whereunto the Lord Heming subtilly consented, and minding so to wind him into his danger, conueyed certaine shot, and armed men into a secret place, so that our Generall comming alone to haue parlied, his trumpeter not returned, they shot at him meaning to haue slayne him, but hee bestowed his pistolets as freely at them as they at him, and returned to his company and so to Glasco: from whence Sir George Care, being maruelously offended with the subtill dealing of the Lord Heming, wrote a letter of challenge to combat with him body for body. Which the Lord Heming by his letter of answere refused, whereupon Sir George Care wrote a sharpe and pithy replie, &c.

The one and twentieth day, our Generall accompanied with the Gentlemen and horsemen, went to Dumbarton again to parley with the Lord Heming, upon his promise that hee would meete him three miles from the sayd Castle, but the place of parley being viewed, was found to be subiect to the shot of the Castle, and therefore our Generall required another place, which would not be granted by the Lord Heming.

The 22. the Lord of Lenox, the Lord Glencarne, and the Lord Simple, with their friendes and tenants, came to our Generall, and mustered before Glasco, to the number of foure thousand horsemen and footmen.

Knights made by the Earle of Sussex.

The 23. our Generall with the whole army matched toward the Castle of Hamilton, and there had parley with the Captaine, whose name was Arthur Hamilton, but hee would not deliuer the Castle, whereupon, our ordinance being placed, was shot very fore, but did no great harme, for that they were field peces.

The foure and twentieth day, our generall gaue summons to the sayd Castle which would not yeild, whereupon he sent to Sterling for bigger ordinance for the battery, and so went from thence, accompanied with the Earles of Lenox and Mortaine, with the horsemen, and certaine shot, marched in the Countrey to a faire house of the Abbots of Kilwining neere adioyning, whose name was Cayvyn Hamilton; which house they burned and vtterly spoyled with seuen-

Hamiltons Castles defaced.

teene or twentie houses more of good countenance of that name, whereof one was the Lord Lanhaps, which had married with the sister of Iames Hamilton of Bedwilhaugh, which slue the Regent. There was burned seuen other faire houses thereabouts, not of that name, but of alie: besides those, there were diuers of their kinred and alie, that came in with humble submission, and assured themselues, promising their obedience to their King, &c.

A Bull from Rome hanged on the Bishop of Londons gate.

The 25. of May, in the morning was found hanging at the Bishop of Londons pallace gate in Paules Churchyard, a Bull, which lately had bene sent from Rome containing diuers horrible Treasons against the Queenes Maiestie, for the which one Iohn Felton was shortly after apprehended, and committed to the Tower of London.

The Nortons executed.

The 27. of May, Thomas Norton and Christopher, of Yorkeshire, being both condemned of high Treason, for the late rebellion in the North, were drawne from the Tower of London to Tyborne, and there hanged, headed, and quartered.

Hamilton in Scotland yeilded to the English.

The 27. of May, the Castle of Hamilton was yeilded to Sir William Drewry General of our army, and by him presently spoyled and burnt, there was in the house, 34. men.

The 28. Sir George Care with the horsmen came to Lithco, where the whole army met. This day, a very faire house, with the whole Towne of Hamilton was burnt. The 29. they burnt an house of the Dukes, called Kempel, and another at Lithco, the whole towne, and diuers other faire houses was yeilded to our generall, who returned to Edenborough, and so to Barwicke the third day of June.

Conspiracy in Norfolke.

A conspiracy was made by certaine Gentlemen, and other in the County of Norfolke, whose purpose was on Midsomer day at Yarlestone faire, with sound of Trumpet and Drum, to haue raised a number, and then to Proclaime their diuelish purpose, vnder pretence against strangers and other. This matter was bttered by Thomas Kete one of the conspiracy, vnto Iohn Kensey, who forthwith sent the same Kete with a Constable to the next Iustice, before whom and other Iustices, he opened the whole matter, whereupon master Drewgh Drewry immediatly apprehended Iohn Throgmorton, and after him, many Gentlemen of the city of Norwich, and of the County of Norfolke, who were all committed to prison (and at the next Sessions of gaole delliuery at the Castle of Norwich, the seuenteenth of July, before Sir Robert Catlin Knight, Lord chiefe Iustice, Gilbert Gerrard the Queenes Attourney generall, and other Iustices) ten of them were indicted of high Treason, and some others of contempt, diuers of them were condemned and had iudgement the one and twentieth of August, and afterward three of them were hanged, boiwelled, and quartered, which were Iohn Throgmorton of Norwich Gentleman, who vsed mute at his arraignment, but at the gallows confessed himselfe to be the chiefe conspirator, and that none had deserued to die but hee, for that hee had procured them: with him was executed Thomas Brooke of Rolbie Gentleman, the thirtieth of August, and George Redman of Cringleford Gentleman, was likewise executed the second of September.

The Duke of Norfolke removed.

The fourth of August, the Duke of Norfolke was removed from the Tower of London to the Charter-house vnto Smithfield.

Felton and diuers arraigned.

The same day was arraigned at Guild hall of London Iohn Felton, for hanging a Bull at the gate of the Bishop of Londons pallace, and also two young men, for coyning and clipping of coyne, who all were found guilty of high Treason, and had iudgement to be drawne hanged, and quartered.

Felton and diuers executed.

The eight of August, Iohn Felton was drawne from Newgate into Paules Church-yard, and there hanged on a gallowes new set vp that morning before the Bishoppes pallace gate, and being cut downe alme, he was boiwelled and quartered. After this time the same morning the Sheriffes returned to Newgate, and so to Tyborne with two young men which were executed for coyning and clipping, as is aforesayd.

A iourney into Scotland by the Earle of Sussex.

The 22. of August, the Earle of Sussex Lord Lieutenant General for the Queene Maiestie in the North, and the Lord Scrop, Warden of the West marches, and diuers other marched from Carleile with the Queenes army and force of the North, as well horsmen as footmen into Scotland, passing ouer the riuers of Esk, Leuine, and Sarke, which riuer of Sarke parteth England and Scotland, and so to Dornocke wood, belonging to Edward Vrone the L. of Louthoun, and then to Annonna, a strong house of the Lord Harris, which they raised and ouerthrew with other thereabouts, from thence to Yoobim, which they burnt and blew vp: from thence to Kennel, a towne belonging to the Lord Cowhill, which they burnt: from thence to Domfries, which they sacked and spoiled of such paltry as the Fugitiues had left, and also raised and ouerthrew a sumptuous house, belonging to the Queene of Scots, in the keeping of the Lord Harris: then passing the Riuer of Longher, they burnt and spoyled Cowhils and Poinktracke, and returned to Domfries, and so to the towne of Yankend, which they burnt, with another house pertaining to William Maxwell of the Iles, and so to the Castle of Carlauozack, standing in a Marish in an arme of the sea, which parteth Annerdall, and Gallaway, which Castle they blew vp, and returned homeward, transporting their Ordinance ouer quicksands and bogs, where neuer the like was done before, and so came to Dornocke wood.

The Queene was informed he had burnt 300. townes and villages, and spoyled 360. stone Castles.

Knights made by the Earle of Sussex.

The 28 of August, they marched towards Carleile, where by the way they burnt and ouerthrew 2. houses, the one being Arthur Greames, *alias* Carleile, the other, Rich George, two notable theeues. The same day at night after the Lords comming to Carleile, he made knights, sir Edward Hastings, sir Francis Russell, sir Valentine Browne, sir William Hilton, sir Robert Stapleton, sir Henry Curwen, sir Simon Musgraue.

The first of October, at night happened a

High waters which drowned many.

terrible tempest of wind and raine both on the sea and land by meanes whereof many ships and other vessels were drowned, about midnight the water ouerflowing, drowned many meddowes, pastures, townes, villages, cattell, houses, and goods, to the vtter vndoing of a great number of subiects of this Realme: besides the losse of many women, and children, some drowned in their beds and some as they trauelled.

An. reg. 13.

The Royall Exchange builded.

The City of London being of very late yeares, much increased in people and generall traffique with all Christian nations: so as at this time not onely the native Merchants and the retailers and shop keepers were multiplied and encreased both in wealth and number, but also the City was wonderfully replenished with great store of Merchants strangers from many forraine nations reseding now in London, whose generall repaire to this Citie, was partly for their owne safeties, because of the ciuil warres in France, and Flanders, whose confluence in London was now growne to an vnknowne greatnesse in respect of former ages, all which Merchants and tradesmen, as well English as strangers, for their generall making of bargaines, Contracts and commerce, they did vsually meete twice euery day in Lombard streete (like as they doe now in the Royall Exchange) but forasmuch as their meetings was then vnpleasant and troublesome by reason of walking and talking in an open narrowe streete, which streete beareth the name of the Lombard Merchants, which of former time vsed to walke there at their vsuall houres being there constrained either to endure all extremities of weather: Viz. heat and cold, snow and raine, or else to shelter themselues in shoppes, for redresse whereof, vpon good aduice, the Citizens of London bought diuers times houses and small Tenements in Cornehill, and pulled them downe and made the ground faire and plaine to build vpon, the charges whereof, cost them aboue fiue thousand pound, and then the Citie gaue that ground vnto Sir Thomas Gresham, to the end he should build a Burse or faire place for the assembly of Merchants, like to that of Antwerpe, and the sayd Sir Thomas Gresham layd the first stone thereof, the seauenth of June, and the whole worke was fully finished in November the next yeare. 1567. and then the Merchants held their meetings at this Burse, for it was generally so called vntill the Queene came thither, which was the three and twentieth of January following, and then by her owne mouth caused it to be Proclaimed that it should for euer bee called the Royall Exchange, and the next yeare following Lombard streete was quite forsaken.

1567.

A strange kind of earth moouing.

The seuenteenth day of February, at a place called Kilmanstone, neere Darcleth Hill in the Country of Hereford, was seene the ground to open, and certaine rockes with a peece of ground removed, and went forwarde the space of foure dayes, making at the first a terrible noyse as it went on the earth: it removed it selfe betweene three of the clocke in the euening, and seuen the next morrow, forty paces, carrying great trees and hedge coates, some hedge coates with three score hedge in them, some trees fell into the chinks, other that grew on the same ground grow now as firmely on a hill, and some that stood East, stand West, and those that stood West, stand East. The depth of the hole where it first brake out, is thirty foote, the breadth of the breach is eight score yards, and in length about twentie score yards. It neerethew Kingstone Chappell. Also, two high hedges be removed nigh one hundred yards, with the trees of the hedge rowes. The ground in all is five and twenty acres, and where tillage ground was, there is pasture left in place, and where was pasture, there is tillage ground gone vpon it. The ground as it remoued, drawe the earth before it, and as the lower part ouerwhelmed the ground, so that it is growne to a great hill of twelue fadome high. It removed from Saturday till monday at night following, and so stayed.

In the moneth of Febuary, Sir Thomas Sackvile, Barron of Buckhurst was sent in ambassage from the Queenes Maiestie to Charles the 9. French King, as well to congratulate for his marriage with the daughter of the Emperor Maximilian, as for other weighty affaires. And as his Ambassage was great, so was his charge no lesse in furnishing himselfe and his traine accordingly, being both in number and furniture, such in euery point as did appertaine: and his receiuing and entertainment in France by the King and others, was agreeable thereto, for he was received vpon the coast by the governors of the fortified townes right honorably, by order from the King. Among other, the Bournoisell was one, who being very well mounted and appointed, left not his Lordship before hee came to the Court, and from thence accompanied him backe, vntill his embarkement homewards. In the maine countries, he was accompanied with the Gouernours and Nobles of the places about: and in the good townes where he passed, he was presented by the chiefe Magistrates, though his Lordships rewardes ouer-valued their presents.

Sir Thomas Sackvile sent into France.

At his approach neere to Paris, hee was encountred on the way by two Marquesses of Trans and Saluces, this being of the house of Sauoy, and the other of the family of Foix. These wanted not such as accompanied them, euen of the best sort. At the Lord ambassadors first audience, which was at the Castle of Madrid, otherwise called Boloigne neere Paris, where the King then lay, the Queens Almaine coaches bery richly furnished, were sent to Paris for him, in one of the which his Lordship with the Marquesse of Trance rode toward the Court, very narrowly escaping from a threwd turne, by reason the same coach was ouerthrown by the duch wagoners their negligence, who in a brauery galloping the field, made an ouer thort turne, wherewith the Marques was sore hurted. The Lord Ambassador at his arrivall, was very honor-

honourably receiued, hee was banqueted by diuers, and that very sumptuously, which by him was not vnrequited, but his reward at the Kings hand was onely a chaine, weighing one thousand French crownes. At this present, the riuer of Sayne, that runneth through the Citie of Paris, was not passable with vessels, by reason of the great frosts, and thereby not onely all kinde of victuals, but also hay and wood was hard to come by, and not to be had but at excessiue prises, the Country there-abouts hauing beene sore harried and spoiled by the ciuill tumults: by reason whereof, not onely the Lord of Buckhurst for the space bee remained there, but also sir Henry Norrice, and Master Francis Walsingham her Maiesties Ambassadors, Legers successiuely, were driuen to an encrease of expences, paying for euery thing they bought an higher price then had beene accustomed. After that my Lord Buckhurst had beene feasted and banqueted by the King, and others of the French Nobility, and had accomplished the points of his Ambassage, hee toke leaue of the King, and departed homewards, arriuing here in England a little before Easter.

1 Parliament.

The second of Aprill, a Parliament began at Westminster, wherein was granted to the Queenes Maiestie (toward her great charges, in repressing the late Rebellion in the North, and pursuing the said Rebels and their fautors which were fled into Scotland) by the Cleargy a Subsidie of sixe shillings in the pound, and by the Temporalty two Fifteenes, with a Subsidie of two shillings eight pence in the pound.

Iustes at Westminster.

The first, second, and third of May, was holden at Westminster before the Queenes Maiestie, a solemne Iust, at the Tilt, Turney, and Barriers. The chalengers were Edward Earle of Oxford, Charles Howard, sir Henry Lee, and Christopher Hatton Esquire, who all did very valiantly, but the chiefe honour was guen to the Earle of Oxford.

Ded. Story executed.

The first of June, Iohn Story a Doctor of the Canon law, who before had beene condemned of high treason, was drawne from the Tower of London to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered, his head set on London bridge, & his quarters on the gates of the City.

A combate appoint. d at Tuthill.

The 18 of June, in Trinity Tearme, there was a combate appointed to haue beene fought for a certaine Manour and demaine lands belonging thereunto, in the Ile of Harty, adioyning to the Ile of Sheppey in Kent: Simon Low and Iohn Kyme were Plaintifes, and had brought a writ of right against T. Paramore, who offered to defend his right by Battell, whereupon the Plaintifes afore-said, accepted to answere his Chalenge, offering likewise to defend their right to the same Manour & lands, and to proue by Battell that Paramore had no right, nor no good title to haue the same.

The quarrell of combate stayed.

Hereupon the said Tho. Paramore brought before the Iudges at the common place at Westminster, one George Thorne, a bigge, broad, strong set fellow: and the Plaintifes, brought Hen. Nailor, Master of Defence, and seruant to the right honourable the Earle of Leicester, a proper slender man, and not so tall as the other: Thorne cast downe a Gauntlet, which Nailor toke vp. Vpon the Sonday before the battell should be tried, on the next morrow, the matter was stayed, and the parties agreed, that Paramore being in possession should haue the land, and was bound in 500. pound to confider the plaintifs, as vpō hearing the matter the Iudges should award. The D. Stately was the taker vp of the matter, in this wise. It was thought good, that for Paramores assurance, the order should be kept touching the combat and that the plaintifs Low & Kyme should make default of appearance, but that yet such as were sureties of Nailor, their champions appearance, should bring him in, and likewise those that were sureties for Thorne, should bring in the same Thorn in discharge of their band, and that the Court should sit in Tuthill fields, where was prepared one plot of ground one and twenty yardes square, double railed for the combate, without the West square, a stage being set vp for the Iudges, representing the Court of the common pleas. All the compasse without the Lists, was set with scaffolds one aboue another, for people to stand and behold. There were behinde the square where the Iudges sate, two Tents, the one for Nailor, the other for Thorne. Thorne was there in the morning timely. Nailor about seuen of the clocke came through London, apparelled in a doublet and galey-gascoyne hartches, all of crimsin sattin cut and raced, a hat of black veluet, with a red feather and band, before him Drums and Fifes playing: the Gauntlet that was cast downe by George Thorne, was borne before the said Nailor vpon a swords point, and his Baston (a staffe of an ell long, made Taper-wise, tipt with horne) with his shield of hard leather, was borne after him, by Askam a yeoman of the Queenes garde: he came into the Pallace of Westminster, and staying not long before the Hall doore, came backe into the Kings streete, and so along through the Sanctuary, and Tuthill streete, into the field, where he stayed till past nine of the clocke, and then sir Ierome Bowes brought him to his tent, Thorne being in the tent with sir Henry Cheney long before. About ten of the clocke, the Court of common pleas removed, and came to the place prepared: when the Lord chiefe Iustice with two other his associates were set, then Low was called solemnely to come in, or else hee to lose his writ of right. Then after a certaine time the sureties of Henry Nailor were called to bring in the said Nailor, Champion for Simon Low, and thereupon sir Ierome Bowes leading Nailor by the hand, entreth with him the Lists, bringing him downe that square by which hee entred, being on the left hand of the Iudges, and so about till hee came to the next square iust against the Iudges, and there making curtesie, first with one leg, and then with the other, passed forth till he came to the middle of the place, and then made the like obeysance, and so passing till they came to the barre, there hee made the like curtesie, and his shield was held vp aloft ouer his head:

Nailor put off his weather stockes, and so barefoote and bare-legged, saue his like scantlonions to the ancles, and his dublet sleeues tyed vp aboue the elbow, and bare headed, came in as is afore-said. Then were the sureties of George Thorne called to bring in the same Thorne, and immediatly Sir Henry Cheiney cutting at the vpper end on the right hand of the Iudges, vsed the like order in comming about by his side, as Nailor had before on that other side, and so comming to the barre with like obeysance, held vp his shield, proclamation was made in forme as followeth: The Iustices commaund in the Quenes Maiesties name, that no person of what estate, degree, or condition that he be, being present, to be so hardy to giue any token or signe, by countenance, speech, or language, either to the partner or to the defender, whereby the one of them may take aduantage of the other: and no person remoue, but still keepe his place: and that euery person and persons keepe their staues and their weapons to themselues: and suffer neither the said prouer nor defender to take any of their weapons, or any other thing, that may stand either to the said prouer or defender any auaile, vpon paine of forfeiture of landes, tenements, goods, chattels, and imprisonment of their bodies, and making fine and ransome at the Quenes pleasure.

Oath of the prouer.

Then was the prouer to be sworne in forme as followeth: This heare, you Iustices, that I haue this day neither eate, drunke, nor haue vpon me either bone, stone, nor glasse, or any inchantment, sorcerie, or witchcraft, whereby through the power of the word of God might be inleased or diminished, and the deuils power encreased: and that my appeale is true, so helpe me GOD and his Saints, and by this booke.

After this solemne order was finished, the Lord chiefe Iustice rehearsing the manner of bringing the writ of right by Simon Low, of the answere made thereunto by Paramore, of the proceeding therein, and how Paramore had challenged to defend his right to the land by battell, by his champion George Thorne, and of the accepting the triall that was by Lowe, with his champion Henry Nailor, and then for default in appearance in Low, he adiudged the land to Paramore, and dismissed the champions, acquitting the sureties of their bands. He also willed Henry Nailor to render againe to George Thorne his gauntlet, whereunto the said Nailor answered, that his Lordship might command him any thing, but willingly he would not render the said gauntlet to Thorne except he would win it: and further, he challenged the said Thorne to play with him halfe a score blowes, to shew some pastime to the Lord chiefe Iustice, and the other there assembled: but Thorne answered, that hee came to fight, and would not play. Then the Lord chiefe Iustice commending Nailor for his valiant courage, commanded them both quietly to depart the field, &c.

The 16. of July, Rebecca Chamber, late wife to Thomas Chamber of Pergetcham, was found culpable of poysoning the said Thomas Chamber her husband, at the Assises holden at Maidstone in the County of Kent: for the which fact (hauing well deserued) she was there burnt the next morrow.

A woman burnt at Maidstone.

The 7. of September, the Duke of Norfolk was remooued from the Charter-house to the Tower of London prisoner.

Duke of Norfolk sent to the tower.

The 22. of September, deceased Io. Iewell Bishop of Salisbury, in his life a most eloquent and diligent Preacher, but a farre more paine full and studious writer, as his workes remaining beare witnesse, whereby his fame shall neuer die.

Bishop of Salisbury deceased.

The great Turke hauing had many victories by land in sundry places, as well in subduing whole Countries, as in taking many strong Cities and Castles from the Christians, which conuerted neere his territories, enforcing the Christians either to renounce their holy faith, or to endure vnspeakeable slaury, themselues, their wiues, and children being daily bought and solde in open Markets, like Horses, Oxen, and Asses. The Turke by this time had conquered many Ilands, and Cities bordering vpon the Sea, by meanes whereof he was greatly enriched, and strengthened with Galleyes and other mayne forces. And this yeare 1571. knowing a diuision amongst diuers Christian Princes, as well for matters of Religion, as affaires of State, vpon hope of which aduantage, he assembled and furnished a mighty Armie of Galleyes, pretaining thereby to become Master of the Sea, and Lord of the land at one instant: but such was the great mercy of Almighty God, that many Christian Princes conioyned together, and furnished a very strong defensible Nauie of Shippes, Galleyes, and Gallyasses: and at the time of Battaile, the wind changed from the Turkes side, and came on the backe of the Christian Nauie, and carried the smoke of all their shot vpon the Turks Galleyes, Foystes, and Brigandines, so as they could not well see how to defend themselues, or offend their enemies, which the Christians well obseruing, with all religious resolution, right brauely gaue charge and chase vpon the miscreants, and sunke and tooke of Turkish Galleyes full two hundred and thirty, and in that fight slue aboue thirty thousand Spahomatits, besides a great number of prisoners taken by the Christians, and aboue 12. thousand Christians redeemed by force from Turkish slauery: in this blessed victory, the Christians lost not aboue 7. or 8. Galleyes, nor of them aboue eight thousand persons slaine: this was done the first day of October 1571. and the 9. of November at London the people for ioy made bonefires, and other pleasant signes of reioycing. The Christian Armies before the fight began, were wondrous wary and carefull in their rowing, that the Oares of one Galley should not annoy another, but to rowe gently and keepe good distance, and when the victory was atchieued, the spoiles and prisoners were orderly diuided, and sent according to the cost and

The Christians obtained a great victory by Sea against the Turk, otherwise called the battaile of Lepanto. *An. Reg. 14.*

and state of the aduenturers, viz. some to the King of Spaine, some to France, some to Portugall, and some to the Pope, and other Princes of Italy, allowing euery valiant Seruitour his due merit: for which happy victory, the Citizens of London reioyced, and made bonefires, and gaue Almighty God humble and hearty thanks, for if in this fight by Sea the Turkes had preuailed, it would haue bred great woe and danger to all Christendome.

The Spaine sent certain Galliasses which did especiall good seruice in this exposition.

The thirteenth of December, Reynold Grey was by the Quenes Maiestie restored Earle of Kent.

Earle of Kent.

The 13. of January, deceased Sir William Peter Knight, who for his iudgement and pregnant wit, had borne Secretary and of priuie Councell to foure Kings and Queenes of this Realme, and seauen times Lord Ambassadour abroad in forraigne lands: he augmented Gresham Colledge in Oxford, with landes to the value of an hundred pound by yeare: and also builded ten Almes-houses in the Parish of Ingerstone for twenty poore people, ten within the house, and ten without the house, hauing euery one two pence the day, a Winter Gowne, and two loade of wood, and among them, hauing for fiue Nine Winter and Sommer, and a Chaplaine to say them Seruice daily.

1572. Sir William Peter deceased.

The 16. day of January, the Lord Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolke, was arraigned in Westminster hall, before George Lord Talbot Earle of Shrewsbury, high Steward of England for that day, and there by his Peeres, to wit, nine Earles, one Viscount, and 16. Barrons, found guilty of high treason, and had iudgement accordingly.

Dukes of Norfolk arraigned.

The 11. day of February Kenelme Barney, and Edmond Mather were drawne from the Tower of London: and Henry Rose from the Marshalsea in Southwarke, all three to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered for treason: Barney and Mather for conspiracy against some of her Maiesties priuy Councell, and Rose for counterfaiting the Quenes Maesties hand.

Mather, Barney, and Rose executed.

Counterfeiters of Maiesties hand, and other Maiesties seales, ordered to be punished to the example of their companions and followers.

The Quenes Maiesty hearing credibly by report, that certaine lewd persons, vnder pretence of executing Commissions for inquiries to be made for lands concealed, contrary to her Maesties meaning, challenging lands, stockes of money, plate, &c. letting out also to make petences to the Wals, Lead, and other such things belonging to Parish Churches or Chappels: Her Maiestie meaning speedily to withstand such manner of vnlawfull practises, commanded, that all Commissions then extant, and not determined, for inquisition of any manner of concealements, should be by *Supersedeas* out of her Exchequer reuoked. And also appointed speedy remedy to be had against such extortioners, as more at large appeareth by a proclamation, concluding thus: Finally, her Maiestie would her Iudices of Assise to haue some speciall care, not onely to the premisses, but also to the reforming of certaine couetous and iniurious attempts, of diuers that of late time by other colour then for her Maiesties vse, had taken away the Lead of Churches and Chappels, yea and Bels also out of the Steeples, and other common goods belonging to Parishes, an example not to bee suffered vnpunished nor vnreformed. And so her Maiestie estsones chargeth her Iudices of her Assise to prouide seuere remedy, both for punishment and reformation thereof. Dated at Westminster the thirteenth of February, the fourteenth yeare of her Raigne.

The 10. day of March, deceased Sir William Powlet knight, Lord Sent-Iohn, Earle of Wiltshire, Marquesse of Winchester, knight of the Honourable order of the Garter, one of the Quenes Maesties priue Councell, and Lord high Treasurer of England, at his Mannour of Basing in Hamphire. This worthy man was borne in the yeare of our Lord 1474. in the 14. yeare of King Edward the fourth, at Sutharton de la Haze in Wiltshire on Whitsonday, and liued about the age of ninety and seuen yeares, in fiue Kings and Quenes dayes. Hee serued fiue Kings and Quenes, Henry the seauenth, Henry the eight, Edward the first, Quene Mary, and Quen Elizabeth. All these he serued faithfully, and of them was greatly fauoured. This man in his time passed many Offices, for in the time of the late King Henry the eight, hee enioyed successiuely the roomes of Master of the Wards and Liueries, Comptroller, Treasurer, Lord Chamberlaine, and Lord Steward of the Kings Houshold: and lastly, Lord Treasurer of England in the time of King Edward the first, which he continued about 21. yeares: hee was aduanced to sundry honours, for by the said King Henry the eight, he was created L. Sent-Iohn of Basing, and Knight of the Garter, and by King Edward the first, he was aduanced to be Earle of Wiltshire, and Marquesse of Winchester. Hymselfe did see the children of his children euen to the growne to the number of 100. and three: a rare blessing giuen by God to men of his calling.

Sir William Powlet Lord Sent-Iohn Treasurer.

The 25. and 26. of March, by the commandement of the Quenes Maestie, her Counsell, the Citizens of London assembling at their seuerall Halls, the Maisters chose out the most likely and actiue persons of euery their Companies, to the number of 3000. whom they appointed to be Pikemen and shot, the Pikemen were furnished with armes in faire Corslets and other furniture, according thereunto: the Gunners had euery of them his Caliuer, with the furniture, and Murrians on their heads. To these were appointed diuers valiant Captains, who to traine them vp in warlike feates, mustred them thrice euery weeke, sometimes in the Artillery yard, teaching their Gunners to handle their Peeces, sometimes at the Pikes end, and in S. Georges field, teaching them to skirmish. In the which skirmish on the Pikes-end the tenth day of Aprill, one of the Gunners of the Goldsmiths Company, was shot in the eye with a peece of a scowring stick left in one of the Caliuers, whereof he died, and was buried the twelfth of Aprill in S. Paules Churcheyard, all the Gunners marching from the

Pikemen and shotte trayned vp in London.

Nailor put off his weather stockes, and so bare-foote and bare-legged, saue his like scantlonions to the ancles, and his dublet sleeues tyed vp about the elbow, and bare headed, came in as is aforesaid. Then were the sureties of George Thorne called to bring in the same Thorne, and immediatly Sir Henry Cheiney entring at the vpper end on the right hand of the Iudges, vsed the like order in comming about by his side, as Nailor had before in that other side, and so comming to the barre with like obeysance, held vp his shield, proclamation was made in forme as followeth: The Iustices commaund in the Queenes Maiesties name, that no person of what estate, degree, or condition that he be, being present, to be so hardy to giue any token or signe, by countenance, speech, or language, either to the prayer or to the defender, whereby the one of them may take aduantage of the other: and no person remoue, but still keepe his place: and that euery person and persons keepe their staues and their weapons to themselues: and suffer neither the said prayer nor defender to take any of their weapons, or any other thing, that may stand either to the said prayer or defender any auaile, vpon paine of forfeiture of lands, tenements, goods, chattels, and imprisonment of their bodies, and making fine and ransome at the Queenes pleasure.

Oath of the prayer.

Then was the prayer to be sworne in forme as followeth: This heare, you Iustices, that I haue this day neither eate, drunke, nor haue vpon me either bone, stone, nor glasse, or any inchantment, sorcerie, or witchcraft, wherethrough the power of the word of God might be vnleased or diminished, and the deuils power encreased: and that my appeale is true, so helpe me GOD and his Saints, and by this booke.

After this solemne order was finished, the Lord chiefe Iustice rehearsing the manner of bringing the writ of right by Simon Low, of the answere made thereunto by Paramore, of the proceeding therein, and how Paramore had challenged to defend his right to the land by battell, by his champion George Thorne, and of the accepting the triall that was by Lowe, with his champion Henry Nailor, and then for default in appearance in Lowe, he adiudged the land to Paramore, and dismissed the champions, acquitting the sureties of their bands. He also willed Henry Nailor to render againe to George Thorne his gauntlet, whereunto the said Nailor answered, that his Lordship might command him any thing, but willingly he would not render the said gauntlet to Thorne except he would win it: and further, he challenged the said Thorne to play with him halfe a score blowes, to shew some pastime to the Lord chiefe Iustice, and the other there assembled: but Thorne answered, that hee came to fight, and would not play. Then the Lord chiefe Iustice commending Nailor for his valiant courage, commanded them both quietly to depart the field, &c.

The 16. of July, Rebecca Chamber, late wife to Thomas Chamber of Pergettcham, was found culpable of poysoning the said Thomas Chamber her husband, at the Assizes holden at Maidstone in the County of Kent: for the which fact (hauing well deserued) she was there burnt the next morrow.

I Woman burnt at Maidstone.

The 7. of September, the Duke of Norfolk was remoued from the Charter-house to the Tower of London prisoner.

Duke of Norfolke sent to the towre.

The 22. of September, deceased Io. Iewell Bishop of Salisbury, in his life a most eloquent and diligent Preacher, but a farre more painefull and studious writer, as his workes remaining beare witnesse, whereby his fame shall neuer die.

Bishop of Salisbury deceased.

The great Turke hauing had many victories by land in sundry places, as well in subduing whole Countries, as in taking many strong Cities and Castles from the Christians, which conuerted more his territories, enforcing the Christians either to renounce their holy faith, or to endure vnspeakeable slauery, themselues, their wiues, and children being daily bought and solde in open Markets, like Beasts, Oxen, and Asses. The Turke by this time had conquered many Iliands, and Cities bordering vpon the Sea, by meanes whereof he was greatly enriched, and strengthened with Gallies and other mayne forces. And this yeare 1571. knowing a diuision amongst diuers Christian Princes, as well for matters of Religion, as affaires of State, vpon hope of which aduantage, he assembled and furnished a mighty Armie of Galleyes, presuming thereby to become Master of the Sea, and Lord of the land at one instant: but such was the great mercy of Almighty God, that many Christian Princes conioyned together and furnished a very strong defensible Fleete of Shippes, Galleyes, and Gallyasses: and at the time of battaile, the wind changed from the Turkes side, and came on the backe of the Christian Fleete, and carried the smoke of all their shot vpon the Turkes Galleyes, Foysts, and Brigandines, so as they could not well see how to defend themselues, or offend their enemies, which the Christians well obseruing, with all religious resolution, right brauely gaue charge and chase vpon the miscreants, and sunke and tooke of Turkish Galleyes full two hundred and thirty, and in that fight slue aboue thirty thousand Sarazens, besides a great number of prisoners taken by the Christians, and aboue 12. thousand Christians redeemed by force from Turkish slauery: in this blessed victory, the Christians lost not aboue 7. or 8. Galleyes, nor of them aboue eight thousand persons slaine: this was done the first day of October 1571. and the 9. of Nouember at London the people for ioy made bonefires, and other pleasant signes of reioycing. The Christian Armies before the fight began, were wondrous wary and carefull in their roluing, that the Oares of one Galley should not annoy another, but to rowe gently and keepe good distance, and when the victory was atchieued, the spoiles and prisoners were orderly diuided, and sent according to the cō

The Christians obtained a great victory by Sea against the Turke, often called the battaile of Lepanto.

An. Reg. 14.

and state of the aduenturers, viz. some to the King of Spaine, some to France, some to Portugall, and some to the Pope, and other Princes of Italy, allowing euery valiant Seruitour his due merit: for which happy victory, the Citizens of London reioyced, and made bonefires, and gaue Almighty God humble and hearty thanks, for if in this fight by Sea the Turkes had preuailed, it would haue bred great woe and danger to all Christendome.

The thirteenth of December, Reynold Grey was by the Queenes Maiestie restored Earle of Kent.

Earle of Kent.

The 13. of Ianuary, deceased Sir William Peter Knight, who for his iudgement and pregnant wit, had borne Secretary and of prime Councell to foure Kings and Queenes of this Realme, and seuen times Lord Ambassadour abroad in forraigne lands: he augmented Gresham Colledge in Oxford, with lands to the value of an hundred pound by yeare: and also builded ten Almes-houses in the Parish of Ingerstone for twenty poore people, ten within the house, and ten without the house, hauing euery one two pence the day, a Winter Gowne, and two loade of wood, and among them to bring for fire Wine and Seacoale, and a Chaplaine to say them Seruice daily.

1572. Sir William Peter deceased.

The 16. day of Ianuary, the Lord Thomas Howard Duke of Norfolke, was arraigned in Westminster hall before George Lord Talbot Earle of Shrewsbury, high Steward of England for that day, and there by his Peeres, to wit, nine Earles, one Viscount, and 16. Barons, found guilty of high treason, and had iudgement accordingly.

Duke of Norfolke arraigned.

The 11. day of February Kenelme Barner, and Edmond Mather were drawne from the Tower of London: and Henry Rose from the Marshalsea in Southwarke, all three to Cyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered for treason: Barner and Mather for conspiracy against some of her Maiesties priuy Councell, and Rose for counterfeiting the Queenes Maiesties hand.

Barner, Mather, and Rose executed.

The Queenes Maiesty hearing credibly by report, that certaine lewd persons, vnder pretence of executing Commissions for inquiries to be made for lands concealed, contrary to her Maiesties meaning, challenging lands, stockes of money, plate, &c. letting not also to vse the pretence to the Vels, Lead, and other such things belonging to Parish Churches or Chappels: Her Maiestie meaning speedily to withstand such inuasiue vnlawfull practises, commanded, that all Commissions then extant, and not determined, for inquisition of any manner of concealements, should be by *Supersedeas* out of her Exchequer reuoked. And also appointed speedy remedy to be had against such extortioners, as more at large appeareth by a proclamation, concluding thus: Finally, her Maiestie would her Iustices of Assise to haue some speciall care, not onely to the premisses, but also to the reforming of certaine couetous and illicitous attempts, of diuers that of late time by other colour than for her Maiesties vse, had taken away the Lead of Churches and Chappels, yea and Bels also out of the Steeples, and other common goods belonging to Parishes, an example not to bee suffered vnpunished nor vnreformed. And so her Maiestie effectually chargeth her Iustices of her Assise to prouide seuere remedy, both for punishment and reformation thereof, Dated at Westminster the thirteenth of Februarie, the fourteenth yeare of her Raigne.

Commaunds for inquisitions, and other charging goods, not to be practised to the preiudice of the true owners by followers.

The 10. day of March, deceased Sir William Powlet Knight, Lord Saint-Iohn Earle of Wiltshire, Marquesse of Winchester, Knight of the Honourable order of the Garter, one of the Queenes Maiesties priuie Councell, and Lord high Treasurer of England, as his Grandsonne of Basing in Hamphire. This worthy man was borne in the yeare of our Lord 1474. in the 14. yeare of King Edward the fourth, at Fulharton de la Spere in Wiltshire on Whitsonday, and liued about the age of ninety and seuen yeares, in the Kings and Queenes dayes. Hee serued fiue Kings and Queenes, Henry the seuenth, Henry the eight, Edward the first, Queene Mary, and Queen Elizabeth. All these he serued faithfully, and of them was greatly fauoured. This man in his time passed many Offices, for in the time of the late King Henry the eight, hee enioyed successiuely the roomes of Master of the Wards and Liueries, Comptroler, Treasurer, Lord Chamberlaine, and Lord Steward of the Kings Housholde: and lastly, Lord Treasurer of England in the time of King Edward the first, which he continued about 21. yeares: hee was aduanced to sundry honours, for by the said King Henry the eight, he was created Lord Sainct-Iohn of Basing, and Knight of the Garter, and by King Edward the sixth was aduanced to be Earle of Wiltshire, and Marquesse of Winchester. Hee liued to see the children of his children vnlawfully growne to the number of 100. and three: a rare blessing giuen by God to men of his calling.

Sir William Powlet Lord Treasurer.

The 25. and 26. of March, by the commandement of the Queenes Maiestie, her Seruants sell the Citizens of London assembling at their seuerall Halls, the Masters chose out the most likely and actiue persons of euery their Companies, to the number of 3000. whom they appointed to be Pikemen and Shot, the Pikemen were forthwith armed in faire Corslets and other furniture, according thereunto: the Gunners had euery of them his Caliuer, with the furniture, and Murrians on their heads. To these were appointed diuers valiant Captaines, who to traine them vp in warlike feates, assembled them thrice euery weeke, sometimes in the Artillery yard, teaching them Gunners to handle their Peeces, sometimes at the Pikes end, and in S. Georges field, teaching them to skirmish. In the which skirmish on the Pikes end the tenth day of April, one of the Gunners of the Goldsmiths Company, was shot in the eye with a peece of a scowring sticke left in one of the Calliuers, whereof he died, and was buried the twelfth of April in S. Paules Churcheyard, all the Gunners marching from the

Diuers Companies assembled, and skirmish vp and downe in London.

the Miles-end in battell ray, fhot off their Canimers at his graue.

Muſter at Greenewich.

On May day they muſtred at Greenewich before the Queenes Maieſtie, where they ſhewed many warlike feates, but were hindred by the weather, which was all that day ſhowring, they returned that night to London, and were diſcharged on the next morrow.

Earles of Eſſex & Lincolne created.

The fourth of May, Walter Deuereux, Lord Ferrers of Chartley, and Viſcount of Hereford, was created Earle of Eſſex: And Edward Fines, Lord Clinton and Say, high Admirall of England, was created Earle of Lincolne, at Greenewich.

Barrons made.

The eight of May, the Parliament began at Weſtminſter: and that ſame day in the Parliament by the Queenes Maieſties writs, Sir Henry Compton Knight, Lord Compton of Compton, Sir Henry Cheiney Knight, Lord of Cudington, Sir William Pawlet Knight, Lord of Baſing, and Sir Henry Norrice Knight, Lord of Ricote, were called Barrons into the higher houſe. In this Parliament, foſomuch as the whole Realme of England was ſtrooke full ſtored with rogues, vagabonds, and ſturdy beggers, by meanes whereof, daily happened diuers horrible murthers, theftes, and other great outrages, it was enacted, that all perſons above the age of 14. yeares, being taken begging, vagrant, and wandring miſorderly, ſhould be apprehended, whipped, and burnt thorow the griſtle of the right eare, with a hot iron of one inch compaſſe for the firſt time ſo taken.

Roomes burned thorow the eare.

Murther neuer eſcapes vnpuniſhed.

The 24. of May, Martin Bullocke was hanged on a gibbet by the Well with two buckets, in Whorſes-gate ſtreet of London, for robbing and moſt thamefully murthering of a Merchant named Arthur Hall in the Pariſonage of Saint Martine by the ſaid Well. This Martin had procured the ſaid Arthur Hall to come to the ſaid Pariſonage, to buy of him certaine Plate: but after the ſaid Arthur had well viewed the ſame, he ſaid, This is none of your plate, it hath Doctor Caius his marke, and I know it to be his: that is true ſaid Martin Bullocke, but hee hath appointed me to ſell it &c. After this talke, whiles the ſaid Arthur was weighing the Plate, the ſame Martin fetcht out of the Kitchin a thicke waſhing battle, and comming behind him, ſtruck the ſaid Arthur on the head, that he fell to the ground with the firſt ſtroke, and then ſtruck him againe, and after tooke the ſaid Arthurs dagger, and ſtabbed him, and with his knife cut his throat, and after would haue truſſed him in a Danſke Cheſt, but the ſame was too ſhort: wherevpon he tumbled him downe a paire of ſtaires, and after thinking to haue buried him in the Cellar, his legges being broken with the firſt fall, and ſtiffe, he could not draw him downe the Cellar ſtaires being winding, wherefore he cut off his legges with an hatchet, and in the end, truſſed him with ſtraw in a dry fat, and ſaying it was his apparell and bookes, cauſed the ſame to be carried to the waters ſide, and ſo ſhipped to Rye. But as God would haue it, there was ſuſpition gathered againſt the murtherer, whereby hee was examined before Alderman Branch, one of the Sheriffes of London, but ſeemed ſo innocent and guiltleſſe in that caſe, that one Robert Gee a Cloathworker, being of good credite, vndertooke for his forthcomming: wherevpon Bullocke ſlipt away, firſt to Weſtminſter, where taking boate, he was rowed vp the riuer Weſtward, till he came to Okingham in the Foreſt, eight miles beyond the Towne of Windſore: from whence (by Gods prouidence) he came back againe vnto London, where he lodged at the red Lyon in Holborne. In the meane time Robert Gee, vpon knowledge heard that Bullocke was ſtept aſide, was not onely had in ſuſpition, but alſo committed to ward, albeit ſo, as he had liberty to ſend abroad ſuch as ſhould make ſute after Bullocke, and amongſt other, one of his ſeruants was ſent to Rye, after the day-fat, and comming thither, the ſame day-fat was opened, where the mangled corpes of Hall was found, whereby the truth of the matter came to light, and by the will of God, Bullocke was at the very ſame time diſcouered at the place in Holborne afore mentioned, and there apprehended, reteined, as ye haue heard, due puniſhment for his wicked fact.

The 26. of May, the right honourable Earle of Lincolne, departed from London toward France Ambaſſadour, being accompanied with the Lords, Gregory Lord Dacres, the Lord Robert Rich, the Lord Talbot, the Lord Sands, and Henry Lord Clinton, Sir Arthur Chambernowne, Sir Ierome Bowes, and Sir Edward Haſtings knights, with diuers other Gentlemen, who taking ſhip at Douer, ent ouer to Bologne, where they were very honourably receiued, and from thence conueyed by coutries to Paris, where they were lodged in a houſe of the Kings, named le Chafteau de Loure, being attended on by the Kings Officers. Fiue dayes after, they went to the King at a houſe called Madrill, where the King with his two brethren, the Admirall, and the moſt part of the Nobles of France, met them a diſtance from the place, and brought them into the houſe, where they dined, and remained till Sunday following, from whence the King and his Nobles, with the Nobles of England came to Paris: the King, his two brethren, and our Ambaſſadour riding in one Coach together, and the Nobles of England and France being ſo placed, alſo in Coaches came to the ſaid Caſtle of Loure, and there dined. After dinner, the King, our Ambaſſadour, with the Nobility of both Realmes, went to a Church named S. Germaine, where the French King, his brethren, and Nobility, heard Euenſong, the Noble men of England withdrawing them into a Chappell, till Euenſong was done, were then fetched thence by the Nobles of France, to the King and his brethren that awaited their comming, where was confirmed the league (which had beene concluded at Blois the 19. of Aprill) Deputies being there for the French party, Francis Memorencie, Reinold Biraigne, Sebaſtian de Lanbeſpine, and Paul de Foix. And for the Queene of England, Sir Thomas Smith, and

Earle of Lincolne Ambaſſador into France.

League with France confirmed at Weſtminſter.

and Walter Walſingham Ambaſſadors. This being done, they departed without the walls of Paris, to a garden of pleaſure, where they ſupped: after ſupper the King departed to his place of Madrill, and the Nobles of England to the Caſtle of Loure. On Monday the Admirall feaſted the Nobles of England. On Tueſday the Duke of Aniow the Kings brother: and on Wedneſday the Duke of Alanſon his younger brother, and ſo paſſed in banqueting and feaſting, with rich gifts on both parts.

On Friday, the Nobles of England tooke leaue of the King: and on Sunday came to S. Dennis, and after to Boloigne, where they tooke ſhippe, and returned into England the fourth of July.

The Duke of Norfolke beheaded.

The 2. of June in the morning, betweene the houres of 7. and 8. of the clocke, Tho. Howard Duke of Norfolke, was beheaded on a ſcaffold vpon the Tower hill.

French Iuſtices.

About the 9. of June, Francis Duke of Memorencie chiefe Marſhall of France, Gouernour and Lieutenant of the Ile of France, Generall vnto Charles the ninth King of France, and Paul de Foix of the priuie Councell to the ſaid King, and Bertrande de Saligners, Lord de la Mothefenalon, Knights of the order of Saint Michaell, Ambaſſadours for the ſame King, arriued at Douer, and were brought to London.

The 15. day being Sunday, the ſaid Ambaſſadours repaired to the White-hall, where they were honorably receiued of the Queenes Maieſtie, with her Nobility, and there in her Graces Chappell, about one of the clocke in the afternoone, the articles of treatie, league, or confederacie and ſure friendſhip (concluded at Blois the 19. of Aprill) as is afore-ſhewed, betwixt the Queenes Maieſtie, and the French King, being read, the ſame was by her Maieſtie and his Ambaſſadours confirmed, to be obſerued and kept, without innouation or violation, &c. The reſt of that day with great part of the night following, was ſpent in great triumph, with ſumptuous banquets.

S. George feaſt at Weſtminſter.

The 18. of June, the feaſt of S. George was holden at Windſor, where the French Ambaſſadours were royally feaſted, and Francis duke of Memorencie was ſtalled knight of the moſt honourable order of the Garter.

The 28. day of June, the aforenamed Ambaſſadours departed from London towards France.

The 14. of June, Thomas Lord Wharton deceaſed in his houſe of Chanon row at Weſtminſter, the ſecond Barron of that name, leauing behinde him the Lord Philip his eldeſt ſonne.

Lord treaſurer, Lord Scale, Lord Chamberlaine with other offices.

The 13. of July, the Queenes Maieſtie at White hall made Sir William Cecill Lord of Burghley, Lord high Treaſurer of England: Lord William Howard Barron of Effingham, late Lord Chamberlaine, Lord priuie Seale: the Earle of Sallſer Lord Chamberlaine: Sir Tho. Smith principall Secretary: and Chriſtopher Hatton Eſquire Captaine of the Gard, &c.

Thomas Percie Earle of Northumberland, late of Topcliffe, who had beene before attainted by Parliament of high Treaſon, as being one of the principall conſpiratours in the late rebellion, ſince fled into Scotland, as is afore-ſhewed, being there taken, was ſent to Barwicke in the moneth of July, and deliuered to the Lord Hunſdon, then Captaine & Gouernour of that Towne, and was now on the two and twentieth day of Auguſt beheaded at Yorke, about two of the clocke in the afternoone, on a new ſcaffold ſet vp for that purpoſe in the Market place.

Earle of Northumberland beheaded.

In this moneth of Auguſt Sir Tho. Smith one of the Queenes Maieſties priuy Councell, ſent to the Engliſh men carefully tending the reformation of Ireland, ſent his ſonne Thomas Smith Eſquire thither, after in Ireland, with a Colony of Engliſhmen, to inhabite the Ardes in Ulſter.

The towns of Portſm.

About the beginning of the moneth of October, the Queenes Maieſtie ſent downe to the Towne of Portſmouth, the honorable Robert Dudley Earle of Leiceſter: and Sir Francis Knowles knight, Treaſurer of her Houſhold, to ſet in hand with fortifications of that Towne and Country neere adioyning, againſt the inuaſion of the French or other, if the ſame ſhould happen to be attempted by arriuall there.

An. Reg. 15.

The 18. of November in the morning, was ſeene a ſtar Northward very bright and cleare in the conſtellation of Calliopeia, at the backe ſtar appeared of her chaire, which with three chiefe fixed ſtars of the ſaid conſtellation, made a Geometricall figure loſenge-wiſe, of the learned men called Rombus: this ſtarre in bigneſſe at the firſt appearing ſeemed bigger then Iupiter, and not much leſſe then Venus, when the ſecond greateſt: alſo the ſaid ſtarre neuer changing his place, was carried about with the daily motion of heauen, as all fixed ſtarres commonly are, and ſo continued (by little and little, to the eye appearing leſſe) for the ſpace of almoſt ſixteene moneths, at what time it was ſo ſmall, that rather thought by exerciſe of oft viewing, might imagine the place, that any eye could iudge the preſence of the ſame: and one thing is herein chiefly to be noted, that by the learned skill and conſent of the beſt and moſt expert Mathematicians, which obſerued the ſtace, property, and other circumſtances belonging to the ſame ſtarre, it was found to haue beene in place celeſtiall farre aboue the Moone: otherwiſe then euer any Comet hath beene ſeene, or naturally can appeare. Therefore it is ſuppoſed, that the ſignification thereof is directed purpoſely and ſpecially to ſome matter not naturall, but celeſtiall, or rather ſuper-celeſtiall, ſo ſtrange, as from the beginning of the world neuer was the like.

Earle of Darby dead.

The 24. of November, Edward Earle of Darby, Lord Stanley, and Strange, of Knocking, Lord and Gouernour of the Ile of Man, created Knight of the noble order of the Garter, and one of the Queenes Maieſties priuy Councell, deceaſed at his houſe called Lathum in Lancaſhire. His life & death deſerning commendation, and eraning memory to be imitated: was ſuch as followeth: His fidelity vnto two Kings and

two

two Quænes in dangerous times, and great Rebellions, in which time and alwayes (as cause serued) he was Lieuetenant of Lancashire and Cheshire, and lately offered 10000. men to the Quenes Maiestie of his owne charge for the suppression of the last Rebellion. His godly disposition to his Tenants, neuer forcing any seruice at their hands, but due payment of their rent: his liberality to strangers, and such as shewed themselues gratefull to him: his famous house-keeping, 220. in checkroll neuer discontinuing the space of 42. yeres: his feeding especially of aged persons three a day 60. and odde, besides all comers, three a weeke appointed for his dealing dayes, and euery Good-friday these 35. yeeres, one with another, 2700. with meate, drinke, money, and money worth. There was neuer Gentleman or other that waited on his seruice, but had allowance from him to haue as well wages as ouerthwrte for horse and man. His yearely portion for the expences for his house 4000. pounds his cunning in setting bones disiointed or broke: his delinery of his Gray & scale to the Lord Strange, with exhortation that he might kepe it so vnspotted in fidelitie to his Prince, as he had: and his low that hee dyed in the Quenes fauour: his ioyfull parting this world, his taking leaue of all his seruants, by shaking of hands, and his remembrance to the last day. He was buried at Ormeskirke on the fourth of December in most honorable manner.

Two Gentlemen executed.

The 28. of December, John Hal Gentleman, and Oswald Wilkinton late of Poske, and gaoler of Yorke Castle (being before arraigned and condemned of Treason) were drawne from the Tower of London to Tyborne, and there hanged and quartered.

Great frost and snow.

This yere a great and sharpe frost almost continually lasted from before the feast of all Saints, till after the Feast of Epiphany of our Lord, with sometimes great and deepe snowes, and sometimes raines, which freesed as fast as the same fell to the ground, where-through at Westbeerne in Kent, and many other places, the armes and bowghes of trees, being ouer charged with yce, brake off and fell from the stocks of the same trees: also the wind continued North and East, till after the Ascension day, with sharpe frosts and showres, wherby followed a late spring.

1573. Lord Hunsdon made Knight of the Garter.

The twelfth of January, William Lord Howard, Warrener of Effingham, Lord Privy Seale, Knight of the Noble order of the Garter, and one of the Priuy Councell, deceased at Hampton Court.

Earle of Worcester sent into France.

The 18. of January, William Lord Somerset, Earle of Worcester, began his iourney towards France, to the Christning of the Kings daughter there, in stead of the Quenes Maiesty of England, who sent him with a Font of gold for that purpose, weighing 326 ounces. The said Earle with many of his company were robbed vpon the Sea by pirats of much of their baggage, also of diuers of their men slaine. In France he and his traine were honorably receiued. At the Christening hee gaue the childe to name Elizabeth, and returned into England the twentie seauenth of February.

In the moneth of February, through sundry haynous complaints, brought to the Quenes Maiestie, and her Councell, of Pirats that kept the narrow seas, doing many robberies, as also the robbing of the Earle of Worcester (as is aforesayd) her Highnesse, by the aduise of her honorable Councel, tooke order with the Lord Admirall of England, that he should send to the Seas ships and men to scoure the narrow Seas, and to apprehend so many Pyrats shippes as might bee met with: and for the better doing thereof, it pleased her Maiestie to send one of her owne ships named the Swallow, to be the Admirall, vnder the charge of William Holstock of London Esquire, Controler of her Highnesse ships, who had with him the Gullian, the barke Garet, and the barke of Yarmouth, and 360. able marriners, Gunners, and souldiers in the sayd three ships, and one barke which seowed the narrow Seas, from the North-east-land, as far West-wards as Falmouth in Cornewall, and take twenty shippes and barkes of sundry nations, viz. Englesh, French, and Flemings, (but all Pirates) and in fashion of war. He apprehended in those shippes and barkes to the number of 900. men of all nations, and sent them to ward, to Sandwich, Douer, Wight, and Portsmouth (whereof three of them that rebred the Earle of Worcester, were shortly after executed at Wight) also the sayd William Holstocke did rescue and take from the aboue sayd Pirates ships, fifteene other Merchants shippes laden with Merchandise, that were their prize, being of sundry nations, and set at liberty the sayd fifteene Merchants ships and goods, which done, hee returned to Portsmouth, and there ended his voyage in March.

Pyrates apprehended.

Pyrats rescued.

Peter Ramus in his Commentaries of the Warres of France, writeth thus. The Earle of Worcester passing into France, certaine Frenchmen and Flemings set vpon him, to be from him one of his shippes, and killed certaine of his men: Whereupon the Quene of England taking displeasure, cut the Lord Admirall, (saith he) wherein he mistake the matter. for Master William Holstock was sent (as is aforesayd) who set vpon all the shippes, French and Flemings, tooke and carried away, what he came to hand, so that twenty of Montgomeries ships were olst, who was going to Rochell with the number of fiftie shippes, well furnished out of England with money there bestowed (but neuer repayed) thus his nauy being diminished of those twenty ships, when he saw the Kings Nauy here to Rochell, he directed his course another way, la bed at Bell Ile, and take both the Ile and Castle.

Earle of Worcester robbed on the Sea.

Earle of Worcester robbed.

The fourth of March, a man was hanged in chaines in Saint Georges field beyond Southwarke of London, for murthering the gaylor of Horsham in the same field.

A man hanged in Saint Georges field.

Mee 17. of March, deceased Reinold Grey of Ruthen, Earle of Kent, at Herneser, and was buried at Saint Giles without Cripplegate.

Earle of Kent deceased.

About the same time dyed Edmond L. Chardois, The

George Sanders murthereth at Shoters hill.

The 25. of March, being Wednesday in Easter weeke, and the feast of the Annunciation of our Lady, George Browne cruelly murdered two honest men neer vnto Shoters hill in Kent, the one of them was a wealthy Merchant of London, named George Sanders, the other Iohn Beane of Wolwich: which murder was committed in manner as followeth.

On Tuesday in Easter weeke (the foure and twentieth of March) the said George Browne receiuing secret inteligence by letter from mistresse Anne Drewry, that master Sanders should lodge the same night at the house of one Master Barnes in Wolwich, and from thence goe on foote to Saint Mary Cray the next morning, lay in waite for him by the way, a little from Shoters hill, and there slew both him and Iohn Beane, seruant to master Barnes: but Iohn Beane hauing ten or eleuen wounds, and being left for dead, by Gods prouidence reuiued again, and creeping away of all foure, was found by an old man and his mayden, and conueyed to Wolwich, wher he gaue euident marks of the murtherer.

Immediatly vpon the deede doing, Browne sent mistris Drewry word thereof by Roger Clement (among them called trusty Roger) he himselfe repaired forthwith to the Court at Greenewich, and anon after him came thither the report of the murther also. Then departed he thence to London, and came to the house of mistris Drewry, where, though he spake not personally with her, after conference had with her seruant trusty Roger, they preuyded him twenty pounds that same day, for the which the layd certaine plate of her owne, and of mistris Sanders to gage. On the next morrow being thursday (hauing intelligence, that Browne was sought for,) they sent him fiue pounds more by the same Roger, warning him to shift for himselfe by slight, which thing he forebodyed not to doe: neuertheless the Lords of the Quenes Maisties Councell, caused so speedie and narrow search to be made for him, that vpon the eight and twentieth of the same month, he was apprehended in a mans house of his owne name at Rochester, & being brought backe againe to the Court, was examined by the Councell, to whom he confessed the deed, as you haue heard, and that her had oftentimes before pretended and sought to doe the same, by the inftigation of the sayd mistris Drewry, who hadde promised to make a marriage betweene him and mistresse Sanders (whom hee semed to loue exceedingly) neuertheless he protested (though vntruly) that mistresse Sanders was not priuye nor consenting thereunto. Vpon his confession hee was arraigned at the Kings Bench in Westminster hall, the 18. of April, where he acknowledged himselfe guilty, and was condemned as principall of the murder, according to which sentence, he had iudgement, and was executed in Smithfield on munday the 20. of April, at which time also vntruly (as shee her selfe confessed afterwards) hee laboured by all meanes to cleare mistresse Sanders of committing euill of her body with him, as also of procuring or consenting to the murther of her husband, and then beginning to sing a Psalme, O Lord turne not away thy face, &c. hee sung himselfe beside the ladder, and so thoztened his owne life: hee was after hanged vp in chaines neere vnto the place where hee had done the fact.

George Brown hanged in Smithfield.

In the meane time mistris Drewry and her man being examined, as well by their owne confessions, as by fol'ing out of the matter (and also by Brownes appeachment thought culpable) were committed to ward. And after mistris Sanders being deliuered of child, and churched (for at the time of her husbands death she looked presently to lye downe) was vpon mistresse Drewries mans confession, and other great likelihoods, likewise committed to the Tower, and on wednesday the 1st of May arraigned with mistresse Drewry at the Guild hall, the effect of whose inditement was, that they by a letter written had bene procurers of the layd murther, and knowing the murther done, had by money and otherwise relieued the murderer: whereunto they pleaded not guilty, howbeit, they were both condemned as accessaries to master Sanders death, and executed in Smithfield the 13. of May, being wednesday in Whitson weeke, at which time they both confessed themselues guiltie of the fact. Trusty Roger mistris Drewries man was arraigned on Friday the 8. of May, and being there condemned as accessary, was executed with his mistris, the time and place aforesayd. Not long after, Anthony Browne, brother to the forenamed George Browne, was for notable felonies conueyed from Newgate to Foske, and there hanged.

Anne Sanders
Anne Drewry
and trusty
Roger hanged

Anthony Browne hanged at Yorke.

The 10. of April, 7. Pyrates, which (among other) had bene taken on the North seas, were led from Southwarke to Wapping, and fiue of them were there hanged: the other two had their pardon at the gallowes.

Pyrats hanged at Wapping.

The 17. of April, a chandlers wife without Aldersgate of London, who had practised her husbands death by poysoning and other wayes, was set on the pillory in Cheape, with 3. other women, who had borne of her counsell, two of them were with her there whipped.

Foure women on the pillory.

This yere the Quenes Maiesty of England being moued by the Regent of Scotland, in behalfe of the young King of Scots her cosin, sent a power of 1500. Englishmen to the siege of Edenbozough Castle, sir William Drewry, Knight Marshall of Barwicke, to be generall of her forces there, with Captaines as followeth, sir Francis Russell, Knight, Captaine Reade of Barwicke, and these following also, Captaine Yaxley, Captain Wood, Captaine Brickewell, Captaine Pikeman, Captaine Gamm, Captain Cace, Captaine Carew, Captain Errington, provost Marshall Captaine Asoll, Captaine Sterlee, Captaine of the pioners, Captain Barton, also of the pioners. Diuers other gentlemen also went thither to serue of their owne frē wills as sir George Cary knight, sir Hen. Lea knight, master Tho Cicil, master Michael Cary, master Henry Carie, master William Knolles, master

Foure ensignes to Scotland against the Castle of Edenborough.

Thomas Sutton, Master Cotton, Master Kelvvay, Master Diar, Master Tilney, Master William Killigrevv Master William Selbey, and other. Sir William Drevvry with the Captaines, Gentlemen, and number of soul-diers before mentioned, passed from Barwicke to Lieth, from whence on the 25. of April they marched on to Coenborough, entred the towne, and the same day summoned the Castle in forme as followeth.

The Church yard.

Sir William Kirkaudy, sometime of Grange Knight, forasmuch as the Queenes Maiestie my Soueraine Lady, vpon the earnest request of her deare cousin the King of Scots, your Soueraigne Lord, made to her highnesse by his Regent, Nobilitie, and State of this Realme, after all good meanes vsed to haue reduced you to dutifull obedience of his authority by treaty, which hitherto you haue not bulyeearkned vnto, to the only hinderance of the vniuersall peace in this Realme, by withholding that his highnes Castle, meaning, as it formerly, to reserue the same for a receptacle of forraine forces, to the manifest dangers both of this Realme, and of my Soueraignesse, and therefore necessary to remeane so perillous a danger to both the Realmes, for which consideration, her Maiestie hath sent her ayd and succors of men, ordinance, and munition, vnder my charge and leading, for the repugnation and recouery of the sayd Castle, to the sayd Kings vse and behalfe, and therefore according to her Maiesties commandement, and Commission, this shalbe in due maner to warn, require, and summon you, that you render and deliuer the said Castle, with the whole ordinance, Artillery, Munitions, Jewels, houshold-stuffe, and such other implements within the same, to me and the vse and behalfe of the king your Soueraigne, and his Regent in his name, immediatly after this my letter of summons, or knowledge of the same, shall come to your: which if you obey, as of duty you ought, then shall I in her Maiesties name, interpone my selfe to trauell with the Regent, Councell, and Nobility here for the safety of your liues, &c. Otherwise if you continue in your former obstinacy, abiding the canon, then no further to looke for grace or fauour, but you and the rest within the Castle to be pursued to the vttermost, & holden as enemies to her Maiestie, your owne Soueraign and country. Giuen at Coenborough by me sir William Drewry Knight, generall of her Maiesties forces now in Scotland, this twenty fiue of Aprill, 1573.

The Lord Grange, Captaine of the Castle, notwithstanding this summons, refused vtterly to yeeld the Castle, who thereupon receiued such answer from the general, as stood not to his contentation. Herupon were the pioners set in hand to cast trenches, & to raise mounts in places conuenient to plant the ordinance vpon. And then began the siege of the Castle in 5. places where were erected 5. mounts. The first was for the Regent, called the R. mount. The 2. for sir William Drewry general there. The 3. was gouerned by sir George Cary. The 4. by sir Henry Lea. The 5. by master Thomas Sturton, master of the ordinance in the north part of England. There was at this siege as is reported 1500. Englishmen, & of Scots 5. hundred, or rather, 1500. there was also one with another peeces of artilery 50. to wit. 6. canons, 9. halfe canons, 9. culuerings, 6. sakers. They within spared not to bestow such as they had, as well at the pioners as souldiers, in-so much that diuers were hurt, and some slaine, before the trenches and mounts might be brought to perfection: but they within escaped not free, especially after that the trenches and mounts were brought in state to defend the assailants, who watching and warding in the trenches, answered them within the Castle very roughly. On the 17. of May, began the battery of the Castle, so that there wer 30. canons shot off against the same, and so well bestowed at Dauids tower, that by the ruines thereof then & after, the force of the English canons were easie to be sene. The 18. 19. and 20. of May, the canons and demy-canons were not idle, but the 21. the whole battery began on each side the Castle from the trenches and mounts very hotly, and still they within ceased not to make answere again with their artillery, killing and hurting diuers both Englishi and Scots, but such was the diligence of the English Gunners, that they displaced the ordinance in the Castle, and strok one of their chiefe canons iust in the mouth, whereby the same was broken in peeces. The 26. of May, the assault was giuen at 7. of the clocke in the morning to the Spurre, which by the hardy manhood of the assailants was wonne, and was no sooner entred by the Englishmen, but that the generals ensigne was shewed and spred vpon the front and top thereof, to the great discomfort of them within the Castle. In the meane time whilst these were appointed to giue the assault thus to the Spurre, there were certaine Englishmen & Scots commanded to make a counternance of an assault at the west side of the Castle whereby those that assaulted the Spurre might the more easily obtaine their purpose, but they rashly aduenturing further then they had in commandement, were beaten backe and repulsed, with 28. or 30. of their company slaine and hurt. The same day toward night, they within the Castle by a drum demanded parley, which being granted, with assurance of all hostility from that houre vnto the 28. of May, the Lord Petorre was let downe by a rope from the Castle, and afterward the Lord Grange himselfe Captain of the Castle, and Robert Melun same likewise downe to talke with the Generall, and such other as were appointed to accompany him, hereupon at length, to wit, the sayd 28. of May, the Castle was surrendred into the hands of sir William Drevvrie, and so it rested in his possession for the time, and his ensigne was set vp and spred during the same time in sundry places of the Castle, and afterwards to the great honour of England, by him it was deliuered vnto the vse of the King of Scots, and part of the spoyle of the Castle was giuen to the souldiers, the canons and artillery with certaine other instruments, left to the King. If the Englishmen by force hadde taken it, it was decreed that they should

Edenbrough Castle yeelded to the Englishmen.

should haue had the whole spoyle except the artillery, and so should haue enioyed it by the space of three dayes.

Causes of delivery of the Castle were these.

1 Lacke of water: the wel within the Castle was stopped and defiled by the ruins of the Castle: the other wel without the Castle could not serue them, for that there was a mount made to hinder them. Another water there was which was vnknowne to them which were without, and was taken from them when the spur of the Castle was taken, out of the which they were wont to haue a pint a day for euery souldier.

2 Diuers sicke.

3 Diuers hurt.

4 Not many to maintaine the Castle, which had no space to take any rest, they were so pyed and ouerwearied.

5 Diuers doubted in opinion.

6 Some were no souldiers.

7 No ayde was to be looked for.

The 16. of June, the prisoners were deliuered by the sayd Sir William Drevvry in presence of sundry Scots and Englishmen, vnto the Regent and that done, the same day the sayd Sir William Drevvry with his power departed toward Barwicke. The names of the prisoners were these, sir William Kirkwdie Lord of Grange, and Captaine of the Castle of Coenborough, the Lord Hume, the Lord Ledington Secretarie, the Countesse of Argyle, the Lady of Ledington, the Lady of Grange, with others: in all to the number of men, one hundred sixtie seuen, women thirty foure, boyes ten.

Date in Northampton-shire.

The 7. of June, betweene the houres of one and two of the clocke in the afternoone, a great tempest of haile and raine happened at Lotcester in Northampton-shire, where-through fiue houses in that towne were borne downe, and fourescore more sore perished with the waters which rose of the tempest, the haile-stones were square, and 6. inches about: one child was there drowned, and many sheep and other cattel, which when the water was fallen, many of them were lying on the high hedges, where the waters had left them.

Thomas Woodhouse.

The 16. of June, Thomas Woodhouse a Priest of Lincolnshire, who had been long prisoner in the Fleete, was arraigned in the Guild-hall of London, and there condemned of high Treason, who had iudgement to be hanged and quartered, and was executed at Tyborne the nineteenth of June.

Earle of Essex and the Lord Rich with other sailed into Ireland.

The 16. of August, Walter Earle of Essex, accompanied with Robert L. Rich, and diuers other Gentlemen, embarked themselues in seuerall ships at Liverpole, and the wind sitting very well, tooke their voyage towards Ireland. The Earle after many and great dangers on the sea, at length was Copemans Iland, from whence in a pinnesse of Captain Percies, he was brought safe to Knockfergus. The Lord Rich with the like dangers landed at Castle Rilcliffe, where being met by Captaine Maby, Mr. Smith, and Master Moore Pensioners, was conducted to Inch Abby, Master Milbies house, where he had in a readines on the morrow morning, an hundred and fiftie horsemen for their safeguard to Knockfergus, beside fifty kernes which went a-foot through the woodes: there was amongst these, a thirty bowes with a bag-pipe, the rest had darts. Sir Brian Mac-Phelim had prayed the Countrey, and taken away what was to be carryed or driuen, but on the 6. of September, he came to Knockfergus to the Earle of Essex, and there made his submission: the number of kine were esteemed 30. besides sheepe and swine.

After him Terdorough Mac-gilduffe the blind Scots sonne, Rorye Oge Mac-Swilline did the like, and diuers other sent their messengers to the Earle, to signifie that they were at his Lordships disposition, as the Barron of Dongarvon, Condenel, and Doenel, and the Captain of Killulco. The Earle of Esser hanged the Contry of Clandboy and other.

The Queenes Maiestie of England directed her letters to the Lord deputy of Ireland, willing him to make by Commission the Earle of Esser Captaine Generall of the Irish nation in the Prouince of Vlster, and to reside the Countrey in Clandboy, and elsewhere, &c.

Earle of Essex Captaine Generall of Vlster in Ireland.

The 11. of October, Peter Burchet Gentleman (of the middle Temple) with his dagger, fiercely assaulted, cruelly wounded, and meant to haue murdered a seruiceable Gentleman named Iohn Hawekins Esquire, as he with sir William Winter and another Gentleman rode towards Westminster, in the high streete neere to the Strand beyond the Temple bar of London, for which fact the sayd Burchet being apprehended, and committed to the Tower, was after examined concerning the fact, who answered, that he take the sayd master Hawkins for another gentleman, to wit, Mr. Christ opher Hatton: and being further examined, he was found to hold certaine erroneous opinions, for the which he was sent to the Lollards Tower, from thence being called into the Consistorie of Pauls Church, before the right reuerend Father, Iohn Bishop of London, and other, and by them examined, he held in his opinions, till the sentence of death, as an heretike was ready to haue beene pronounced against him on the 4. of November, but through the earnest perswasions of diuers learned men, who tooke great paines in that matter, it was sayd he renounced his errours, and allowed his opinions for erroneous and damnable, promising neuer to turne to them, and also vnlingly to doe and performe all such penance as the Bishop his Ordinary should enioyne him, but nothing was done, whereofre on the 9. of November, by commandement of the Councell, the sayd Peter Burchet was removed from the Lollards Tower to the Tower of London, where on the next morrow about noone, whilest one of the tunine that had by appointment kept him company was gone downe, and locked the doore after him, leaning the other with him, called High Longeworth, who sit vp at a window reading in the Bible, the sayd Burchet walking vp and down in the chamber, took a billets end out of the fire, & knocked the sayd Longworth on the head, and left him not till he had stricked him starke dead, and then drawing him behinde the

Peter Burchet woundeth Mr. Iohn Hawkins.

Peter Burchet for what he was found to be an heretike.

Peter Burchet abiured his heresie.

Peter Burchet submitted himselfe to the penance as it was sayd.

Peter Burchet killeth his keeper.

chamber doore, he awaited the comming vp of the other, it likewise to haue dispatched him, but the other opening the doore, and missing his fellow from the window where he left him: taking good regard espied him lying behind the doore, which he clapped to, ran downe for more helpe, and returning found his fellow murdered as is afore shewed. For the which fact on the next morrow hee was arraigned and condemned at Westminster, and from thence returned to Somerset house at the Strand, where he remained that night. And the next morrow being the 12. of November, he was brought out to a gibbet, set vp for that purpose, nigh the place where hee wounded maister Hawkins, he had no speech, nor shewed signe of repentance, but was by force and strength of men partly drawne, partly borne and thrust vp to the gibbet, where after his right hand being stricken off, and nayled to the gibbet he was hanged.

Fact Burdet hanged.

This yeare about Lammas, wheate was sold at London for 3. shillings the bushell but shortly after it was raised to 4. shillings, fiue shillings, sixe shillings, and before Christmasse to a noble, and seuen shillings, which continued long after: beefe was sold for twenty pence, and two and twenty pence the stone, and all other flesh and white meates at an exceeding price, all kind of salt fish very deere, as fiue shillings two pence, &c. yet great plenty of fresh fish, and oft times the same very cheape: bay salt at three shillings the bushel &c. All this dearth notwithstanding (thankes be giuen to God) there was no want of any thing to him that wanted not money. Bay salt at fiue shillings the bushel, which was neuer so before.

An. reg. 16. 1574.

Dearth of victuals scarcity.

The 4. of April, being Palme Sunday, there was taken saying of masse in the Lord Mordents house, within Aldgate of London, one Alison Domman Priest, and the Lady Mordey with her children and diuers others, were also taken hearing of the said masse. There was also taken the same day and houre for saying masse at the Lady Gifords in Tuttle lane, one Oliver Heywood Priest, for hearing of the said masse the said Lady Gifford with diuers other gentlewomen. There was also taken at the same instant in the Lady Browns house in Cow lane for saying masse, one Thomas Heywood Priest, and one Iohn Cooper priest, with the Lady Brown: and diuers other were likewise taken, being hearers of the said masse. All which persons were for the same offences indicted, conuicted, and had the law according to the statute in that case prouided. There was also found in their seuerall chappels, diuers Latine bookes, beads, images, palmes, chalices, crosses, vestments, pixes, pares, and such like.

Priests saying masse apprehended.

Peter Ramsey.

County Montgomery was taken in Normandy, in the Castle of Donfro, on the 27. of May.

A monstrous fish.

The 9. of July, at 6. of the clocke at night, in the Ile of Thanet beside Ramesgate in the parish of S. Peter vnder the cliff, a monstrous fish or whale of the sea, did thoot himselfe on shore, where, for want of water, beating himselfe on the sands, he died about 6. of the clocke in the next morning, before which time he roted, and was heard more then a mile on the land. The length of this fish was 22. yards, the weather saw twelue foote the opening, one of his eyes being taken out of his head, was more then 6. horses in a cart could draw, a man stood vpright in the place from whence the eye was taken, the thickernesse from the backe whereon he lay to the top of his belly (which was vpward) was 14. foot, his taile of the same breadth, betweene his eyes, 12. foot. 3. men stood vpright in his mouth, some of the ribs were 16. foot long, his tongue was 15. foote long, his liuer 2. cart load, into his nostrils any man might haue crept: the oyle being boyled out of the head was parmacety, the oyle of his body was whitish, and bearte of tast. The 7. of August, a solemne obsequie was kept in Saint Paules Church at London, for Charles the ninth, King of France, who being poysoned, deceased on the 30. of May last before passed.

Obsequies at Paules. the French King.

The 15. of August being Sunday, Agnes Reid-ges a maid about the age of 20. yeares, and Rachel Pinder, a wench about the age of 11. or 12. yeere, who both of them had counterfeited to be possessed by the deuill (whereby they had not only marueilously deluded many people, both men and women, but also diuers such persons as otherwise seemed to be of good wit and vnderstanding) stood before the Preacher at Paules Crosse, where they acknowledged their hypocriticall counterfeiting with penitent behauiours, requiring forgiuenesse of God and the world, and the people to pray for them. Also their seuerall examinations and confessions were there openly read by the Preacher, and afterwards published in print, for the further posterity, hereafter to beware of the like deceiuers.

Peter Ridges and Agnes Reid-sisters of Paul Grofe for counterfeiting to be possessed.

The 4 of September, in the afternoone, such a storme of raine happened at London, as the like of long time could not be remembred, wherethrough the chanels of the City suddenly rising, ran with such forcible course towards the common shores, that a lad of the age of 18. yeares, minding to haue leapt ouer the chanel neere vnto Dowgate, was borne ouer with the streame, and by the same carried from the conduit there towards the Thamis, with such a swiftnesse, that no man with staues or otherwise could stay him, till he came against a cart whale, that stood in the water-gate, afore which time he was drowned and starke dead.

A lad of 18. yeares drowned in a channel at London.

Inchachmas crime, which had beene abiured by proclamation, began at Westminster on the first of November. The same first day in the morning, there happened two great types at London in the Thamis, the first by course, the other within one houre after, which ouerflowed the marches, with many vaults and sellers nere adioyning.

Inchachmas crime abiured.

Two tydes in one houre.

The foureteenth of November being Sunday, about midnight following, diuers strange impressions of fire and smoake, were seene in the ayre, to procede forth of a blacke cloud in the North towards the South, which continued til the next morning that it was day light. The next night following, the heauens from all parts did seems to burne marueilous rayingly,

Fiery impressions.

gingly, and ouer our heads the flames from the horizon round about rising did meete, and there double and rolle one in another, as if it had beene in a cleare furnace.

The 18. day at night, were very stormy and tempestuous winds out of the South (I haue not knowne the like out of any quarter) especially after midnight till the next morning that it was day light. These are to bee receiued as tokens of Gods wrath readie bent against the world for sinne now abounding, and also of his great mercie, who doth but onely shew the rod wherewith we dayly deserue to be beaten.

An. reg. 17. Tempest of wind.

This yeare at London after haruest, the price of wheate began by little and little to fall from seuen shillings to three shillings the bushell, at which price it stayed (little or nothing rising or falling all the yeare after) but bay salt was raised from 3. shillings to 4. 5. and 6. shillings the bushell, the like whereof had neuer beene seene or heard within this Realme.

Bay salt deare.

The 24. of February, the feast of S. Matthie, on which day the Fayre was kept at Tewkesbury, a strange thing happened there, for after a flood which was not great, but such as thereby the meddowes neare adioyning were couered with water, in the afternoone there came downe the riuer of Auon great numbers of flies, and beetles, such as in summer commings vse to strike men in the face, in great heapes, a foote thicke aboue the water, so that to credible mens iudgement, there were seene with in a payre of Butts-lengths of those flies aboue an hundred quarters. The mills thereabouts were damned vp with them for the space of 4. dayes after, and then were cleared by digging them out with shouels: from whence they came is yet vnknowne, but the day was colde, and a hard frost.

1575. Flies in so great numbers strange.

The 26. of February, betweene 4 and 6. of the clocke in the afternoone, great earthquakes happened in the Cities of Yorke, Worcester, Chester, Bathow, Hereford, and in the countries adiacent, which caused the people to run out of their houses, for feare they should haue fallen on their heads. In Salisbury, Exeter, and other places, the dishes fell from the rupbords, and the bookes in mens studies from the shelues. In Norton chappel, the people being on their knees at Euening prayer, the ground mooning, caused them to run away in great feare that the dead bodies would haue risen, or the Chappel to haue fallen: part of Kirkby Castle fell downe, with certaine brick chimnies in Gentlemens houses. The Bell in the shire hall of Denbigh was caused to toll twice by shaking of the hall, &c.

Earthquake.

Anabaptists base fagots at Paules Crosse.

On Easter day, which was the 3. of Aprill, about 9. of the clocke in the forenoone, was disclosed a congregation of Anabaptists Dutchmen, in a house without the barres of Aldgate at London, whereof 27. were taken and sent to prison, and foure of them bearing fagots reconciled at Pauls Crosse, on the 15. of May, in forme as followeth.

Whereas I, I. T. R. H. being seduced by the deuill, the spirit of errour, and by false teachers his ministers, haue falne in certaine most detestable and damnable heresies, namely.

1 That Christ took not flesh of the substance of the Blessed Virgine Mary.

2 That infants of the faithfull ought not to be baptized.

3 That a Christian man may not be a Magistrate, or beare the sword or office of authority.

4 That it is not lawfull for a Christian to take an oath.

Now by the grace of God, and through conference with good and learned Ministers of Christ his Church, I doe vnderstand and acknowledge the same to bee most damnable and detestable heresies, and do aske God here before his Church, mercy for my said former errors, and doe forsake them, recant and renounce them, and abiure them from the bottome of my heart, professing that I certainely beleeue.

1 That Christ tooke flesh of the substance of the blessed Virgin Mary.

2 That infants of the faithfull ought to be baptized.

3 That a Christian man may be a Magistrate or beare the sword and office of authority.

4 That it is lawfull for a Christian to take an oath.

And further I confesse, that the whole doctrine and Religion established and published in this Realme of England, as also that which is receiued and preached in the Dutch Church here in the City, is sound, true, and according to the word of God, wherevnto in all things I fully mit my selfe, and will most gladly be a member of the said Dutch Church, from henceforth vtterly abandoning and forsaking all and euery Anabaptisticall error.

The 17. day of May, about midnight following, the right reuerend Father in God Matthew Parker, Doctor of Diuinity, Archbishop of Canterbury deceased at Lambeth, and was there honorably buried.

Archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

This reuerend Father examined throughly the English translation of the holy Bibles, wherein he vsed partly the helpe of his brethren Bishops, and other Doctors, and caused the same to bee newly printed in the largest volume, for the furniture of many Churches then wanting. And making diligent search for the antiquities of the Britons, and English Saxons, to the end those monuments might be carefully kept, he caused them to be well bound, and truely couered, and such whereof he knew very few examples to be extant (among the which was Matthew Paris, Matthew Florilegus, Thomas Walsingham, and other, all which he recouered of my hands) he caused to be printed. The famous palace of his See at Canterbury, left builded by Stephen Langton one of his predecessors, and since by long continuance decayed, and in Thomas Cranmers time consumed with fire, he repaired, builded, and fully restored with the charges of more then 1400. pounds.

He founded a grammer schoole in Rochdale in the County of Lancaster.

To Corpus Christi Colledge in Cambridge, he procured thirteene Schollerships, and bare the charges, in making and furnishing two

Chambers for Schollers, and inward library of the same Colledge.

Item, he gaue to the outward and inward library of the sayd Colledge a goodly company of printed bookes, and a great number of written bookes, of great antiquity and much value.

Item, he procured to the sayd Colledge, the Patronage of Saint Mary Abchurch in London.

Item, he hath founded 2. fellowships in the sayd Colledge, and procured one Charter of Mortmaine, to the sum of 1000. l. by yeere.

Item, he hath giuen to the same Colledge, of siluer plate double gilt, 309. ounces, 3. quarters, and surrendred to them a lease with the improvement of 148. l. 8. s. 8. d. yearely for 17. yeares.

Item, 100. l. to the maintainance of a fire in the hall, from Halamas to Candlemas, and by his last will and testament, 100. l.

Item, to diuers Schollers chambers within the sayd Colledge, diuers bedsteds, with sufficient bedding, and bokes to remaine for euer.

Item, he hath founded for euer, fiue Sermons to bee preached in diuers places of Norfolke euery yeere in Rogation weeke, and 40. s. to be deuided at Norwich to the poore and other.

Item, to the City of Norwich, one bason and ewer of siluer and double gilt, 173. ounces.

Item, to the towne of Watfall in Norfolke, for euer an annuity of 5. o. s. to be diuided to the poore, with a Sermon in Rogation weeke.

Item, to Cunnil, and Caius Colledge, one schollership, with a drinking cup, and a pot of siluer double gilt 57. ounces 3. quarters, and one nest of boxes, with a couer, siluer and gilt, with a number of good bokes to their library.

Item, to Lincolne hall, one schollership, a standing cup and a pot of siluer and gilt, 53. ounces, a nest of goblets siluer and gilt with a couer, and bokes to their library.

Item, to the Vniuersitie library, fiftie olde auncient written bokes, and fiftie printed bookes, &c

Anabaptists banished.

The 21. of May, being Whitson-euen, one man and ten women Anabaptists Dutch, were in the Consistory of Paules, condemned to be burnt in Smithfield, but after great paines taken with them, onely one woman was conuerted, the other were banished the land.

Fiue persons of the family of loue stood at Paules Crosse.

The 12. of June, stood at Paules Crosse fiue persons Englishmen of the sect termed, The family of loue, who there confessed themselues vtterly to detest as well the author of that sect, H. N. as all his damnable errors and heresies.

Anabaptists burnt.

The 22. of July, 2. Dutchmen Anabaptists, were burnt in Smithfield, who died in great horror, with roaring and crying. The 30. of July, in the after noone, was a great tempest of lightning and thunder, where-through both men and beasts in diuers places were stricken dead. Also at that time fell great abundance of haile, whereof the stones in many places were found to be .07. inches about.

The 4. of September, being Sunday, about 7. the clocke in the morning, a certaine glasse house, which sometimes had beene the Crossed Fryers hal, neare to the Tower of London, brake out on a terrible fire, whereunto the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Sheriffs with all expedition repaired, and practised there all meanes possible by water buckets, hookes, and otherwise to haue quenched it, all which notwithstanding, whereas the same house in a small time before, had consumed great quantity of wood, by making of fine drinking glasses, now it selfe hauing within it neere fortie thousand billets of wood, was all consumed to the stone walles, which walles greatly defended the fire from spreading farther, and doing any more harme,

The 26 of September, a Poulterers wife in the parish of Christ-Church within Newgate, of London, was deliuered and brought to bed of foure children at one burden, all females, no males children, which were christened by the names Elizabeth, Mary, Margaret, and Dorothy, and the same day month, the mother was buried, but all the foure children liuing and in good liking, were borne to Church after her.

Foure children borne at one burden.

Anno 1568.

The eleuenth of February, Anne Queries widow, forswearing herselfe for a little money that she should haue paid for fiue pound of tow, at a shop in Woodstreete in London, fell immediately downe speechlesse, casting vp at her mouth in great abundance, and with horrible stinke, the same matter which by natures course should haue beene voided downewards, till she died: a terrible example of Gods iust iudgment vpon such as make no conscience of falsly forswearing against their brother.

1568. God punisheth periurie.

The 15. of February, Edmond Grindale sometime Bishop of London, late Archbishop of Yorke, was in the Chapter house of Saint Pauls Church at London, elected Archbishoppe of Canterbury.

Edmond Grindale elected.

The 5. of March, in the night, through a great flaw of wind then in the North west, a tilt boat with about the number of 31. persons, men and women, comming from Quinborough toward London, were all drowned, one boy excepted.

Fifty men drowned.

The 30. of May, Thomas Greene goldsmith was drawne from Newgate of London to Tyborne, and there hanged, headed, and quartered, for clipping of coyne both gold and siluer.

Greene hanged.

The 15. of June, Martin Frobisher, being furnished of aduentures, with 2. small barks and one pinnesse, departed from Blackewall, vpon his voyage for the discouery of a passage to Cataya, by the North-west Seas. Vpon the 1. of July, he had sight (as he iudged) of Frisland, but durst not approch the same, by reason of the great yce that lay alongst the coast: not farre from thence he lost his pinnesse, and one of his barks, who misrulting the danger of tempests returned home, with report that their generall Martin Frobisher was cast away, which Captaine notwithstanding continued his course, Northwest beyond any man that hath heretofore discouered, & the 20. of July had sight of a high land, which he named Q. Elizabeths Foreland: and after that another Foreland, with a great passage deuiding (as it were) the 2. maine lands asunder, this place he named Frobishers Straites. After he had passed 60. leagues further, he went on shoare, found the same to be inhabited with saluage

Frobishers first voyage to Cataya.

saluage people, caught one of them into his Barke, and returned into England in the moneth of August following: one of his company brought from thence a peece of blacke stone, much like to a sea-coale in colour, which being brought to a certaine Goldsmiths in London, to make allay thereof, found it to hold golde, and that very richly for the quantity as they affirmed; but other said the contrary, and so it passed.

A stone said to be gold, which was a mere deceit.

The 29. of July, a woman was burnt at Tunbridge in Kent, for poysoning of her husband: and two dayes before, a man named Oxley, was hanged at Maidstone for being accessary to the same fact.

A woman burnt at Tunbridge.

A strange prouing an vsurer in the commission of a peny.

A strange thing of wyke, and almost incredible, was brought to passe by an English man, borne within the City of London, and a Clearke of the Chancery named Peter Bales, who by his industry and practise of his pen, continued and writ within the compasse of a peny, in Latine, the Lords prayer, the Creede, the tenne Commandements, a prayer to God, a prayer for the Queene, his posie, his name, the day of the moneth, the yeare of our Lord, and the raigne of the Queene: And at Hampton Court hee presented the same to the Queenes Maiestie in the head of a ring of gold, couered with a Christall, and presented therewith an excellent spectacle by him deuised for the easier reading thereof, wherewith her Maiestie read all that was written therein, and did weare the same vpon her finger.

Anno 1578.

Also about the same time Morke Sedlior Blacksmith, borne in London, for triall of workmanship, made one hanging lock of yron, steele, and brasse, a pipe key filed three square, with a pot vpon the shaft, and the bolt with two effes, all cleane wrought, which weighed but one graine of gold or wheat corne: hee made also a chaine of golde of 43. linkes, to the which chaine the locke and key being fastned, and put about a Fleas necke, thee drew the same, all which locke, key, chaine and flea, weighed but one graine and a halfe.

Peter Ark forged pieces.

In the moneth of August, many complaints being brought to the Queenes Maiestie and her Councell vpon the Flushingers, for great spoils and robberies by them daily committed vpon her Highnesse Subiects, her Maiesty gaue order to put some good Ships, and two Barkes of her owne, to the Seas, vnder the charge of Master William Holstocke Esquire, Comptroller of all her Highnesse Ships, with 1100. men, victualled for fiue weekes, in which time was by them taken eight Flushingers Shippes and Barkes, prizes, and 220. Sea rouers in them, who were sent on land to sundry prisons.

Pirates and sea rouers taken, and sent to prison

Walter Deuereux Earle of Essex died.

Walter Deuereux Earle of Essex, and Earle Marshall of Ireland, knight of the order of the Garter, falling sicke of a laske on the 21 of August, was greeuously tormented by the space of 22. dayes, and deceased on 12. of September at Dwelyn in Ireland.

A murderer of his brother hanged.

The 10. of Nouember, in the Citie of Worcester, a cruell and vnnaturall brother (as another Cain) murdered his owne naturall and louing brother, hee first smote out his braines with an axe, then cut his throat, and after buried him vnder the harth of a chimney, thinking thereby (though wrongfully) yet quietly to haue enioyed his brothers goods, long before in his possession, but not long after this secret murther comming to light, the murtherer was rewarded according to his deserts.

An. Reg. 12

The 17. of March, through a strange tempest which happned in the North neere to a Towne called Richmond, not onely cottages, trees, barnes, and haybarkes, but also the most part of a Church called Patrike Brampton, was ouerthrowne, with most strange sights in the aire both terrible and fearefull.

1577. Patrike Brampton ouerturned.

The 26. of March, the new Conduit neere vnto Aldborne, and a standart with one cocke at Aldborne bridge, were begun to be founded by William Lambe, sometime Gentleman of the Chappell to King Henry the eight, and Citizen and Cleathworker of London, the water whereof is conueyed in pipes of Lead from diuers springs to one head, and from thence to the said conduit and standart more then 2020. yards in length, all which of his own coits and charges, amounting to the summe of 1500. pounds, was fully finished the 24. of August, in the same yeare more of his charitable acts, &c.

Charitable acts of Master William Lambe, Cleathworker and Conduit maker.

This yeare in the moneth of Aprill, the decayed stone house, called the Tower vpon London bridge, was begun to be taken downe, and the heads of traytors being remooued thence, were set on the gate at the bridge foote toward Southwarke. And on the 28. of August next following, Sir Iohn Langley Lord Maior of the Citie of London, laid the first stone of a new foundation of a Tower in the same place, which Tower was most beautifully finished in the moneth of September, in the yeare of Christ 1579.

Tower on London bridge taken downe.

The 31. of May Martin Frobisher with one ship and two barkes furnished for that purpose, sailed from Darwich in Esser, towards Cataya by the North-west Seas, and entred his straits, beyond Queene Elizabeths Foreland about 30. leagues, where he went on shoare, and finding store of gold Ore as it was vntruly said, taught his Ship and Barke, caught a man, woman, and childe of that Country, and then on the 24. of August returning from thence, arriued at Milford hauen in Wales on the 20. of September next following, but neither the man, woman, nor childe liued long in this Country, nor his Ore proued gold but drosse.

Second voyage to Cataya.

The 4. 5. and 6. dayes of July, were the Assises holden at Oxford, where was arraigned and condemned one Rowland Jenkes for his seditious tongue, at which time there arose amidst the people such a dampe, that almost all were smothered, very fewe escaped that were not taken at that instant: the Iurors died presently: shortly after died Sir Robert Bell Lord chiefe Barron, Sir Robert de Olie, Sir William Babington, Master Weneman, Master de Olie high Sheriffe, Master Daners, Master Harcart, Master Kirle, Master Phereplace, Master Greenwood, Master Foster, Master

Strange sickenesse at Oxford.

Nash, Sergeant Baram, Master Stevens, &c. there died in Orford 300. persons, and sickned there, but died in other places 200. and odde from the 6. of July to the 12. of August, after which day died not one of that sickenesse, for one of them infected not another, nor any one woman or childe died thereof.

Tempest in Lincolnshire.

On Sonday the 4. of August, betweene the houres of nine and ten of the clocke in the forenoone, whilest the Minister was reading of the second Lesson in the Parish Church of Wiborough, a Towne in Suffolke, a strange and terrible tempest of lightning and thunder stroke through the wall of the same Church into the ground almost a yard dape, drave downe all the people on that side above twenty persons, then renting the wall up to the Rooffe, cleft the doze, and returning to the Pulpit rent the timber, brake the chimes, and fled towards Yenger five miles off. The people that were stricken downe, were found groueling more then halfe an houre after, whereof a man more then sixty yeares, and a boy of fiftene yeares old were found starke dead, the other were scorched. The like flash of lightning and cracks of thunder, rent the Parish Church of Yengey nine miles from Norwich, wrung in sunder the wyers and wheeles of the clocke, slue two men which sate in the belfrey, when other were at Procession, and scorched another, which hardly escaped.

Anchors Sergeants Feast.

The 10 of November, the new Sergeants at the Law, seven in number, held their Feast in the Temple at London.

Cuthbert Mayne executed.

The 30. of November, Cuthbert Mayne was drawne, hanged, and quartered at Lanceston in Cornwall, for preferring Romane power.

And here I thinke good to set downe a declaration sent by the Queenes Maiestie of England unto the King of Spaine, containing a iustification of her proceedings with the States of the low Countries.

A declaration sent by the Queene to the King of Spaine.

The Queenes Maiestie being given to understand of diuers most slaunderous and false brutes given out touching her proceedings with the States of the low Countries, tending as it were to make her the Authour and principall nourisher of the ciuil troubles in the said Countries: and doubting that the lowers and spreaders abroad of the said brutes, to sake by all meanes they may to induce her good brother the King of Spaine to beleeue the said false and malitious surmises to be true, with meaning thereby to breede a breach and interruption of the good amity betweene them: her Maiestie hauing therefore nothing more in recommendation then her honour, and to bee reputed a Prince that desireth to maintaine and continue good amity with the Princes her neighbours (whatsoeuer hath been given out maliciously to the contrary) being able to iustifie her whole actions before God and the world, as well towards him as other Princes her neighbours, hath thought it very expedient for the earnest desire shee hath to satisfie the said King, to set downe in writing a declaration (such as she will maintaine to bee true in the word of a Prince) of her proceedings with the States, to the end the said King being truly informed therein, such causes and scruples of suspition, as might any way hinder the good amity betweene them, might be removed, and the same reduced to as great perfection and integrity, yea hath beene heretofore betweene any their progenitors, which declaration, tending to that good end above mentioned, her Maiestie also hath thought meete to accompany, as well with an aduise unto the said King, what way in her opinion were most fit for him to take for the continuance of the said Countries under his obedience, and the restoring of them unto their former quietnesse and repose, as also with her resolution in those cases of the low Countries, in case the said King shall not condiscend to take some way of pacification, according to her Maiesties most sincere and friendly aduice.

And first touching her proceedings with the States, shee doubteth not but that if the King shall resort to his owne knowledge, and call to remembrance how often sithence the first breaking out of the ciuill dissention in those Countries, her Maiestie hath moued him by sundry Ministers, sent as well vnto himselfe as unto his vnder-gouernours in the said Countries, forewarning both him and them of the mischiefes presently then fallen out, and aduised him to take some speedy way for the prevention of the same, shee cannot but in honour and conscience confesse, that her Highnesse hath therein discharged the duty of a faithfull friend, and good allie in that behalfe. Of which aduise if it might please him to haue taken profit, these his Countries being presently in a most perplexed state, had ben stayed from the ruine and destruction they are now apparantly running into, his people and subiects preserued from slaughter and bloudshed, his rich Townes continued unspoiled, and the whole gouernment kept from perill and alienation: and if herein for her Maiesties iustification, neither these friendly offices, nor the word and faith of a Prince may suffice, yet her owne accounts themselues may serue to iustifie her in the eyes and sight of all the world: That she hath sought to continue those Countries under the Kinges obedience, and hath not at any time intended to impatronize her selfe of any part of them, a matter which perhaps other Princes hauing like aduantages offered by some part of his people, would not haue refused, and therefore may thinke her selfe euill dealt withall, in case so rare an example should be so hardly or rather unfriendly interpeted. And as her Maiestie hath not left any good office undone towards the King and his Ministers, tending to pacification, and the perswasions of those Countries under his obedience: so on the other side, she hath not omitted by sundry messengers sent both to the Prince of Orenge and to the States, as well to perswade them to cease their ciuill warres, and to take some way of peace and agreement amongst themselues, as also to continue their auncient obedience under the lawfull King

King their naturall Lord and Soueraigne, being prouoked thereto upon secret, but yet very true and certaine aduertisements given her of great offers made unto them by some (whom she forbeareth to name for good respects) to haue withdrawne them from their obedience. And heerein if besides many perswasions vsed by messengers, sent of purpose to aduise them to continue their obedience to the King, her Maiestie had not furnished them in the time of their necessity with a portion of money, as well to serue them for the speedy execution of the pacification, then in Treaty betweene Don John and them, as for the keeping of them from a desperate putting of themselues into the hands of other Princes, it did manifestly appeare, that the pacification and accord had not beene so soone made, and that they for lacke thereof, should haue beene driuen for their defence, to haue deliuered some part of those Countries, to the possition of such as would not haue beene remoued without the spending of many millions, and the losse of many thousand mens liues. Of the true cause of this support, her Maiestie is the more willing to make mention, for that she is informed, that notwithstanding her good and sincere meaning in that behalfe, other wrong and sinister interpretations haue beene made of the same, as the like also hath beene done of other her proceedings. Amongst the rest, her Maiestie hath thought it expedient to answere one calumniation contained in a letter fathered on Don John, published in a booke lately set out by the States in their Iustification, by the which her Maiestie is charged to haue encouraged the Prince of Orenge not to stand to the pacification, and withall did for his better encouragement, offer unto him any assistance they could yeld (a matter most slanderous and untrue) for that her Maiestie being given to vnderstand by the Vizcount of Gaunt, sent unto her from Don John, how hee found himselfe grieued with the Prince of Orenge, for that (as he affirmed) the said Prince did not obserue the said pacification, her Maiestie did immediatly dispatch an expresse messenger unto the said Prince: both to charge him with Don Johns accusation, as also to aduise (and that most effectually) to obserue duely the said pacification, vsing towards him some threats, in case he should seeke to violate the same, wherein she could finde no other disposition, but that he was most desirous to keepe all the parts of the said pacification, as the onely meane of the ending of the long ciuill warre. The like aduice did she also giue to the States, receiuing no lesse contentment of the pacification, being ratified first by Don John, and then afterwards by the King, then they to whom the benefit thereof did most properly and peculiarly appertaine. Her Maiesties proceedings and dealings with the Prince and States, hauing beene such as hath beene before alleaged and deduced, she doth appeale to the King himselfe, who she thinketh will truly and fully looke into the truth of the matter, and also to all others that shall not be transported with passion, whether the said proceedings are not to be maintained to be both iust and honourable, whatsoeuer hath beene maliciously given out to the contrary. And herein her Maiestie is persuaded, that hardly any other Prince that hath some wayes beene so unfriendly dealt withall, and found so little account made of her aduises given both to the King and to his Gouernours of those Countries, would haue dealt in such friendly sort as shee hath done: notwithstanding the said difficouragements, her Maiestie thinketh it honourable for her, and meete for the place shee holdeth, being the ancients alike that the Kings progenitours as Dukes of Burgundy haue to continue still her former course, in giuing friendly counsell unto the King, cannot but proceed to the second point aboue mentioned, which is to yeld her aduise, what way, in her opinion, is to be taken for the appeasing of the present troubles, and the continuing of them under his obedience.

First, it is apparant that the pacification is broken, and as great hostility intended on both sides as may be, whereof she is heartily sorrie: the end, if it goe on, will be an utter desolation of the Countries, or the losse or alteration of them from the Kings obedience, for helpe whereof, her Maiestie thinketh the best and expedientest remedies to be, that it would please him to receiue his Subiects to his grace and fauour, that he would permit them to continue in their ancient Liberties and Charters, that hee would command the due and iust execution of the pacification, and that hee would appoint such a Gouernour of his owne blood, as might like him, and be gratefull to them, whereby they with great contentation might yeld to him all due obedience, continue in their Religion, according to his pleasure doe all things accepted in the pacification: which by reason of the great distrust growne on both sides, between Don John and them, can neuer take effect, so long as Don John shall remaine Gouernour, for it seemeth they haue put on a determination, that rather then they will endure the hard dealing which they thinke themselues assured they shall receiue by his gouernement, they will throw themselues into the protection of any other Prince. They charge him with the breach of the pacification, he on the other side offereth to stand to his iustification, charging them with the said breach. Her Maiestie hauing heard the allegations of the Ministers sent hither, both from Don John and the States, meaneth not to be a Iudge betweene them, hauing rather a greater desire to reconcile them if shee could, and to doe them both good, than to discouer the faults and blemishes of either party. To reconcile them she findeth it impossible, and therefore for the stay of the troubles and of those mischiefes that otherwise are like to ensue, the onely way of remedy will be, to make choise of some other tyed to him by proximity of blood, to be substituted vnder him in that gouernment, by which temperate course the troubles may well be appeased, the great effusion of bloud auoyded, and the Countries continued under his obedi-

obediente, which otherwise are like to be alienated from him. If he shall like to follow this advice, the seeth no disposition in the people to change their king, being dutifully minded towards him with intention (in this behalfe they may be reckoned) to innouate nothing, but to maintaine, and duly obserue the late pacification made at Gaunt.

And like as for the contentment of the States and the appeasing of the troubles, the wilbeth Don Iohns reuocation: so considering how euill affected he sheweth himselfe toward her, as well by letters intercepted, as by secret practises and dealings with the Queene of Scots, a matter very dangerous to the good quiet of her State, as the bearer can more amply enforme him touching diuers particularities in this behalfe: shee can not but in respect of the continuance of the good amity, which she wisheth to be between the king and her Maiestie, be the more earnest to pacifie the king therein, looking for no continuance of good amity and good neighbourhood, so long as a Minister so euill affected towards her shall reside there, and being desirous that such Ministers might be employed on both sides, as would desire rather to encrease the amity than to hinder it.

This her aduise tending to none other end, but to preserue those Countries vnder her obedience, and the continuance of good amity betweene them, shee hopeth the king will accept in no lesse friendly part, then it is by her sincerity meant. And in the meane time vntill his minde be knowne in this behalfe, her Maiestie fearing the great forces prepared by Don Iohn, with the assistance of the French already marching towards him, will driue her auncient friends the States of the low Countries, to the one of these two extremities: either to be ouercome by forces, and so endangered to forsaken & confused: or else constrained for the withstanding thereof, to giue themselues ouer to some other Prince, both which cannot but be perillous to the king principally, dangerous to her Maiestie hereafter, and an vtter destruction to the whole Country. Her highnesse therefore for the benefit of the said king, and the auoyding of her owne perill, vpon promises and assurance giuen by the said States, to yeld the king his due obedience, and make no further innouation in matters of Religion, but to obserue the pacification of Gaunt hath promised for the causes and respects aboue mentioned, to yeld them a supply of money and men, onely to stay them from further danger of alienation, or else their ruine.

Which proceedings of hers, if the king shall not be induced to like of, whereby her Maiestie shall discouer, that his intention is by force of Armes to alter and dissolue the auncient forme of gouernment, and by taking away their auncient lawes and liberties, to make it a land of conquest, and to people it with Garrisons of men and warre. And that the end and scope of his intention should tend to that which is discouered by Escouedoes letters, wherein hee writeth, that the enterprize of England is of more facility then the enterprize of the Ilea, whereby her Maiestie shall perceiue the disposition of so ill a neighbour to her and her royall estate, then her Maiesties resolution is to employ all the power, she shall be able to make for the defence of her neighbours, and preseruation of her owne estate.

As on the contrary side, if he shall enclyne to their reasonable demand, in giuing them such a Gouernour as they can better like of, then of Don Iohn, and they notwithstanding shall goe on in disobedience against him, and make other innouations contrary to the promises they haue giuen and professed to her, shee will turne her force against them, and in assistance of the king yeld him the best ayde shee can to bring them to reason and conformity. And in the meane season, vntill shee may be throughly enformed thereof, she hath thought good, for auoyding of effusion of Christian blood, and for many other good necessary respects, to deale both with Don Iohn, and the States for a surceasse of Armes, which if he shall refuse to yeld vnto, and the States shall be willing, because she sorts it manifestly, that it concerneth the kings honour, and profit of his Country, shee will not cease to goe on with like Offices towards them, as shee hath begun. Thereby onely to defend them from forraigne tyrannie, to keepe them in the kings obedience, from alienating themselues to any other Potentate, and to defend her selfe and her Dominions from the perils that there by the sayth manifestly to ensue.

This declaration of Q. Elizabeth was sent to the king of Spaine by Master Wade the 20 of December. Anno 1577.

The 17. day of January, Symon Pembrooke dwelling in Southwarke, being a Fleure slinger, and be hemently suspected to be a Seminer, by commandement of the ordinary Iudge of those parts, appeared in the Parish Church of Saint Saviour, at a Court holden there, which Symon being inclined in entertaining a Papist, and hauing money in his hand, leaned his head vpon a Pewe wherein the Papist stode: which after he had done a certaine space, the Papist began to lift vp his head, to see what he ayled, and found him departing out of life, and straightway the said Simon fell downe rather a little in the throat, and neuer spake word after: this was done euen as the Iudge came into the Church, who said, it was the iust iudgement of God towards those that died Sorcerers, and a great example to admonish other to feare the iustice of God. After his cloathes being opened, there were found about him fiue deuilish books of Coniuration and most abominable practises, with a picture of Tinne of a man hauing three Dice in his hand, with this writing, Chance Dice fortunately, and diuers papers of such like matters, as he had dealt in for men, such as are mentioned in Leuiticus the 20. Chapter, and the 6. verse: If any soule turne himselfe after such as worke with spirits, and after Southsayers, to goe a whoring after them (saith the Lord) I will put my face against that soule, and will cut him off from among my people.

The third of February, early in the morning, John Nelson, for denying the Queenes Supremacie, and such other traytorous words against her

her Maiestie, was drawne from Newgate to Tiborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Sherewood executed.

The 7. of February, one named Sherewood was drawn from the Tower of London to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered for the like treason.

Pirates hanged.

The ninth of March, seuen Pyrates were hanged at Wapping.

Counterfeiters of coine.

The 15. of February, Iohn de Ioy a French man, and fiue English Gentlemen, were conuayed from the Tower of London toward Norwich, there to be arraigned and executed, for coyning of money counterfeit.

Lady Leuinor deceased.

The tenth of March deceased the Lady Margaret Countesse of Leuinor, and was honourably buried at Westminster the 3. of Aprill.

The king of Portugall entering and others right, lost his owne life and inheritance.

This yeare 1578. Don Sebastian king of Portugall, vpon hope to bee made king of Fesse, entered with an Army into Barbary, to ayde an vsurper against the right heire of Morocco and Fesse, in which attempt the fourth of August hee was ouerthrowne and slaine in battell, and presently vpon his death Philip the second King of Spaine laid hote claime to the Kingdome of Portugall, and got full possession thereof, and connered it vnto the rest of his Kingdomes, in which right hee also got possession of the East Indies, which the Portugals had conquered and peaceably enioyed it, according to the award and decree of Pope Gregory the thirteenth.

The king of Spaine obtained the Crowne of Portugall.

Frobishers second voyage.

The 31. of May, Martin Frobisher with fiftene faile of good shippes, manned, victualled, and other wayes well appointed departed from Harwich in Essex, on his third voyage towards Cataya. And on the one and thirtieth of July after many attempts, and sundry times being put backe by Ilands of Ice, in his streights he recouered his long wished Port, and came to anchor in the Ilands, newly by her Maiestie named Meta Incognita, where (as in the yeare before) they fraught their Shippes with the like pretended Coldoze out of the Mines, and then on the last of August returning thence, arriued safely in England about the first of October, but their gold Oze after great charges, proued worse then good stone, whereby many men were deceiued, to their vtter vndoings.

An. reg. 21.

Cassimere released.

The two and twentieth of January, about seuen of the clocke at night, Iohn Cassimere Count Palatine of Rhene, Duke of Bauare, landed at the Tower of London, was there by diuers Noble men and others honourably receiued, and conueyed by Cresset light, and Torch light, to Sir Thomas Greshams house in Bishops gate Streete, where he was receiued with sounding of Trumpets, Dummes, Fifes, and other instruments of musicke, and there both lodged and feasted till the next Sunday, that hee was by the Nobility fetched to the Court at Westminster, where he talked with her Maiestie, and after lodged in Somerset house. In the weeke following hee hunted at Hampton Court. On Sunday the first of February, hee beheld a Turnant Iusting and running at the Tilt at Westminster, on the next morrow hee saw them fight at Barriers with swords on horsebacke. On Tuesday hee dined with the Lord Maior of London: On Wednesday with the Duthesse of Suffolke, at her house called the Burckenning or Barbican, by Redcrosse Streete: On Thursday at the Stilyard, &c. On the eight of February, the Queene made him Knight of the Garter, by deliuering to him the collar, and putting the Gartar on his legge at White-hall: and on the 14. of February, hee departed from London homewards, with great reuerence giuen by the Queene Maiesty, the Nobility, men of honour, the Maior of London, and the Citizens of that City.

Deepe snow.

The 4. of February, and in the night following, fell such abundance of snow, that on the 5. in the morning, the same was found at London to lye two foote deepe in the Shallowest, and otherwise being driuen by the winde, very boysterous in the Northeast, on banker, an ell or yard and halfe deepe, in the which drifts of snow in the Countries, many cattell, and some men and women were ouerwhelmed & lost: it snowed till the eight day, and freezed till the 10. Then followed a thaw with continuall raine a long time after, which caused such high floods, that the marshes and low grounds being drowned for the time, the water rose so high in Westminster hall, that after the fall thereof, some fishes were found there to remaine.

Great floods, water floudes.

Lord Keeper deceased.

The 20. of February, deceased Sir Nicholas Bacon, Lord keeper of the great Seale of England, who was honourably buried vnder a sumptuous monument of stone (by him in his life time erected) in Paules Church of London the 9. of March. He also in his life time gaue for 6. Schollers, to be found in Bennet Colledge at Cambridge, to each of them, their pension fiue shillings and eight pence the yeare, for euer.

1577

The foure and twentieth of Aprill fell such a snow betwixt the houres of foure of the clocke in the morning, and nine of the clocke before noone, that at London some was found to lye almost one foote deepe.

Sir Thomas Bromley Lord Chancellour.

The 25. of April, Sir Thomas Bromley Knight, was made Lord Chancellour of England.

Alderman Kympton committed to the Fleete.

The 26. of April, William Kympton Alderman of London, was by the Lord Chancelor sent to the Fleete, about a letter late by him received, from the Vicar of Hasley in Oxfordshire beside Burnet. This letter amongst other matters mentioned of a pale pulled downe at Northall, by the Commons there, &c. for concealing of which letter, the said Alderman was committed as aforesayd. And on the 15. of May, was in the Starred Chamber condemned to pay 500. marks fine, and to remaine prisoner at the pleasure of her Maiestie.

Men hanged at Barnet for a rpot made at Northall.

The 4. of May, were arraigned at Barnet, in Hartfordshire, certaine men of Northall, Hyms, and the parts there adioyning, for pulling downe a pale at Northall, late set vp (on the common ground) by the E. of Warwick, 8. of them were condemned, two were burnt in the hand, two were hanged betwixt Barnet, and Whetstone, the other foure condemned remained prisoners in Hartford Gaole long after, many

many were bound to appeare at the next Size, and such as could not put in Baile for their appearing were committed, &c. Mathew Hamont of Wetharsel, by his trade a Plow-right, three miles from Norwich, was conuented before the Bishop of Norwich, for that he denied Christ to be our Sauiour. At the time of his appearance it was obiected, that he had published these heresies following.

In heretick burnt at Norwich.

That the new Testament and Gospell of Christ are but meere falshoode, a fable of men, or rather a meere fable.

Item, that man is restored to grace by the meere mercy of God, without the meane of Christs bloud, death and passion.

Item, that Christ is not God, nor the Sauiour of the world, but a meere man, a sinfull man, and an abominable Idoll.

Item, that all they that worship him, are abominable Idolaters: And that Christ did not rise againe from death to life by the power of his Godhead, neither that he did ascend into heauen.

Item, that the holy Ghost is not God, neither that there is any such holy Ghost.

Item, that Baptisme is not necessary in the Church of God, neither the vse of the Sacrament of the body and bloud of Christ. For the which heresies, he was condemned in the Consistory, and sentence was read against him by the Bishop of Norwich, the 14. of Aprill, and thereupon deliuered to the Sheriffes of Norwich, and because hee spake words of blasphemie against the Queenes Maiestie, and others of her Counsell, hee was by the Recorder (after Sergeant Windham, and the Maior Sir Robert Ward of Norwich, condemned to lose both his eares, which were cut off the 13. of May in the Market place of Norwich, where he confirmed his blasphemous speeches against our Sauiour Iesus Christ, for which on the 20. of May he was burnt in the Castle ditch of Norwich.

Bishop of Winchester deceased.

The first of June, deceased Robert Horne Doctor of Diuinity, Bishop of Winchester, at Winchester place in Southwarke, and was buried at Winchester.

Grantorous fact of Thomas Appelton.

The 17. of July, the Queenes Maiestie, being on the riuer of Thamis, betwixt her Highnesse Mannour of Greenwich and Dettford, in her priuie barge, accompanied with the French Ambassadour, the Earle of Lincolne, and Master Vicechamberlaine, &c. with whom shee entred discourse about weighty affaires: it chanced, that one Thomas Appelton, a young man, and seruant to Master Henry Cary, with two or three children of her Maiesties Chappell, and one other, being in a Boat on the Thamis rowing vp and downe betwixt the places aboue named, the aforesaid Thomas Appelton had a Caliuer or Harquebuze which hee had three or foure times discharged with bullet, shooting at random very rashly, who by great misfortune shot one of the watermen, being the second man next vnto the bales of the said Barge labouring with his oare (which sate within fiue foote of her Highnesse) cleane through both his armes: the blow was so great and grieuous, that it moued him out of his place, and forced him to cry and scritch out pitteously, supposing himselfe to be slaine, and saying, he was shot, through the body. The man bleeding abundantly, the Queenes Maiestie shewed such noble courage, as is most wonderfull to be heard and spoken of, for beholding him so maymed, shee neuer bashed thereat, but bad him be of good cheere, and said, he should want nothing that might be for his ease, &c. For the which fact the said Thomas being apprehended and condemned to death: was on the 21. of July brought to the water side, where was a gibbet set vp, directly placed betweene Dettford and Greenewich, and when the hangman had put the rope about his necke, hee was by the Queenes most gracious pardon deliuered from execution.

This yeare Iohn Fox of Woodbridge, William Wickney of Portsmouth, and Robert More of Warwich Englishmen, hauing long time prisoners in Turky about the space of three or foure teene yeares, with more then two hundred and sixty other Christians of diuers nations, by killing their Keeper, miraculously escaped and returned to their natiue Countries. John Fox & fower more in Turky.

In September and October fell great winds and raging floods in sundry places of this realm, where through many men, cattell, and houses were drowned. Floods

In the Towne of Newport the Cottages were borne downe, the Corne lost. Pasture ground ouerwhelmed, and cattell drowned. In the Towne of Bedford the water came vp to the Market-place, where cupbords, chests, trasles and fournes, swamme about the houses, their fewell, corne, and hay, was wracke and borne away. Also the Town of Saint Edes in Huntingtonshire, was ouerflowne suddainly in the night, when all men were at rest, the waters brake in with such force, that the Towne was almost all defaced, the Swans swam downe the Market-place, and all the Towne about, the Boats did float. Gozmanchester was suddenly surprest, their houses flowne full of water, when men were at their rest, their cattell were destroyed: about the 14. of October, the Sea did swell, the Merchants lost their goods, many were drowned, which were after found in great numbers.

On Saterday the 21. of Nouember, Sir Tho. Gresham Knight, Agent to the Queenes Highnesse, who had in his life time builded the Royall Exchange in London, as is afore hereof mentioned) deceased at his house in Bishops gate streete of London, and was buried in the Parish Church of Saint Ellen there. By his last will and testament, dated *Anno* 1579. he gaue to one hundred poore men, so many blacke Gownes of fiue shillings eight pence the yard, to 100. poore women the like Gownes, at the day of his burriall. *An. Reg.* 22. Sir Thomas Gresham deceased.

The Royall Exchange and all the buildings therto belonging, the one moity to the Maior and Communalty of London and their successours for fifty yeares, vpon trust that they doe perfourme, as shalbe declared, and the other moitie to the mercers for 50. yeares in like confidence. The Maior and communalty to find 4. to read leactures, of Diuinity, Astronomy, Physick, and Geometry within his dwelling house, which he gaue for that purpose) in Bishopsgate streete, the sum of 50. pounds the piece. More 35. pounds 6. 8. 8. d. vnto 8. almes men in his 8 almes houses in the Parish of Saint Peter the poore, to euer each 6. l. 13. s. 4. d. To the prisoners in Newgate, Ludgate, Kings bench, Marshalsea, and the Counter in Woodstreete, 50. l. to wit, each ten pounds. The Mercers to find three men to read Lectures of the Law, Physicke, and Rhetoricke, within the same his dwelling house, of Saint Ellen in Bishops gate streete, the summe of one hundred and fifty pounds, to wit, to euery reader, fifty pounds, more a hundred pounds for a dinner 4. times in the yere, to the whole company, in the Mercers hall, for euery dinner twenty foure pounds. And more, fifty pounds to the hospitals of Christ Church, Saint Bartholomewes, Saint Thomas, Bedlem, and the Counter in the Poultry, to each yearely ten pounds. And in the sayd fifty yeares to procure licence, which hee trusted would not be denied, considering the goodnesse of the suite, and then to haue all the Exchange, Palme, and house with appurtenances for euer.

Henry Fits-Allen (the last of that name) Earle of Arundale, deceased on the 24. of February, and was buried at Arundale on the 22. of March.

On the 8. of March, Francis alias Marmaduke Glouer was hanged on a gibbet set vp for that purpose, by the Standard in Cheape, for willingly murthering his seruant Grace after he was by him arrested. 1580. One hanged in Cheape for murder.

Earthquake.

The 6. of Aprill, being Wednesday in Easter weeke, about 6. of the clock towards euening, a sudden earthquake happning in London and all most generally throughout England, caused such amazednes of the people as was wonderfull for that time, & caused them to make their earnest prayers vnto almighty God. The great clocke bell in the palace at Westminster strake of it selfe against the hammer, with thaking, as diuers clocks and bells in the City, and elsewhere did the like: the gentlemen of the Temple being at supper, ran from the tables, & out of their hall, with their knives in their hands, a piece of the Temple Church fell downe, some stones fel from Pauls Church: and at Christs Church in the Sermon while a stone fel from the top of the Church, which killed out of hand one Tho: Grey an apprentice, and another stone also bruised his fellow seruant, named Maior Bremer so that the liued but 4. dayes after: diuers other were sore hurt with running out of the Church, diuers chimnies in the City, part of them fell downe, the houses were so shaken. The earthquake continued, in or about London not passing one minute of an houre, and was no more felt: but Eastward in Kent, and on the sea coast it was felt 3. times: as at Sandwich at 6. of the clocke, the land not only quaked, but the sea so foamed, that the ships tottered. At Douer also at the same houre was the like, so that a piece of the cliffe fell into the sea, with also a piece of the Castle wal there: a piece of Salt-wood Castle in Kent fell downe, and in the Church of Hide, the bells were heard to sound. At piece of Sutton Church in Kent fell downe, the earthquake being there both heard and felt. And in all these places and other in East Kent, the same was felt three times to moue, to wit, at fiue, at nine, and at eleuen of the clocke.

The 19. of Aprill the ferry at Lambeth was drowned with fiue men and foure horses, other two men and fiue hozses swimme to land and were saued. Ferry of Lambeth drowned.

The first of May, after 12. of the clock in the night, was an earthquake felt in diuers places of Kent, namely at Alfold, great Chart, &c. which made the people there to rise out of their beds, run to the Churches, where they called vpon God by earnest prayers to be mercifull vnto the. Earthquake in Kent.

This yere were many monstrous births, and strange sights to be seene, which I ouerpasse in this place, for that I haue partly touched them in my Summaries.

Also this yere maister Francis Drake returned into England, hauing sailed round about the world, (as is affirmed) thus it was begun: on the 13. of December, in the yere of Christ 1577. hee set saile from Plimoth with a fleet of fiue ships, (to wit, the Pelicane admiral, the Marigold, the Elizabeth, backe Benedict, and a pinnace) he fel with the cape Canbine, on the coast of Barbary the 25. of the same moneth, & so coasting along, the 27. of December found an Iland called Mogadador, lying one mile distant from the main, in this Iland the general erected a pinnace, which hee had with thee other brought ready framed out of England, which being finished, he departed the last of December. And the 17. of January he arriued at cape Blanke, & left the same on the 22. of that moneth, and on the 27 fell with cape de verde: on the 30. of January, he fel with an Iland called S. Iago, hauing put off cape de verde, in the beginning of February, they saw no more land vntil the 6. of April. 1578. that they fell with the coast of Brasill, in the latitude of 53. degrees beyond the line, and with much adoe, entred the riuer of Plate: from whence departing, hee fell with the strait of Magelan, the 20. of August, and passed through with three ships only, hauing cast off the other two as impediments, where, after they had bin tossed many dayes to and fro, in the night, the first of October the Marigold, wherein Master Iohn Thomas was Captaine, parted from the Generall, and was no more heard of. And shortly after, the other wherein Master Iohn Winter was Captaine parted also, who hauing lost his company came home again through the straites. The golden Hinde (or Pelicane I thinke) held on her course to Chily, Lima, Coquimbo, Arica, Panama, & so all along the backe side of America to the line ward, and passed the line the first day of March, and the 16. of March being on land at the Ile of Canoes, hee passed foorth northward till he came to the latitude of fortie seauen, thinking to haue come that way

Francis Drake his voyage round about the world.

home: but being constrained by fogs and cold windes to forsake his purpose, came backeward to the line-ward the tenth of June 1579. and stayed in the latitude of thirty eight to graue and trim his ship, vntill the fiue and twenty of July, and from thence setting his course South-west he fell the third of October with an Ile 8. degrees from the line Northward, and the 4. of November he fell with Tremate one of the Iles of Molucca, where being curteously entertained of the King, he take in certaine tuns of cloues, and came homeward to a little Iland, where he stayed to trim his ship, 26. dayes, where he furnished himselfe with wood, and erected a smiths forge, for to make such vse of worke as was needfull for the repairing of his ship: from thence the 12. of December he went toward Malaca, but not able to continue his course westward for the wind, was constrained to recouer the North of the Iles of Selebes: after this the ninth of January, comming towards Java-Maior, they ran themselues vpon ground, and stucke fast twenty houres, not looking but for death, but escaping the danger, they continued their course still West, and came to Java-Maior afore-named, and there touching, they bent their course Southwest to the cape of Bona Speranza, then after they kept their course Northwest, and fell with the coast of Guinea, from thence bending their course North Northwest, they came to the line, and then shaping their course North and by West, they came to the height of Azores, where finding the wind Westerly, they came home into England in the yere 1580. And in the yere next following, to wit, 1581. on the 4. of April, her Maiestie dining at Deptford in Kent, after dinner entred the ship which Captaine Drake had so happily guided round about the world, and being there a bridge that her Maiestie had passed ouer brake, being vpon the same more then 200. persons, and no man hurt by the fall, and there shee did make Captaine Drake knight, in the same ship, for reward of his seruice, his armes were giuen him, the world in a ship, which ship by her Maiesties commandement is lodged in a docke at Deptford, for a monument to all posterity of that famous and worthy exploit, whereof a worshipfull Gentleman Master William Borough in his preface to a booke intituled, a discourse of the variation of the compasse, or magneticall needle, hath these words: So now at length (saith he) our countriman Sir Francis Drake, for valorous attempt, prudent proceeding, and fortunate performing his voyage about the world, is not only become equall to any of them that liue, but in fame far surpassing.

Sir Francis Drake knighted and his commendation.

On the 10. of October, (some say on the 7. appeared a blazing starre in the South, bushing toward the East, which was nightly seene diminishing of his brightnesse, vntill the one and twentie of the same moneth.

Blazing star.

The 17 day of October, were made 8. Sergeants at law, to wit, first William Fleetwood Recorder of London, the second, Edward Flowerdew, the third Thomas Snagge, the fourth William Periam, the fift Robert Halton, the first John Clench, the seuenth, John Puckering, the eight, Thomas Walmesly, master Snagge was sicke, and therfore had a writ directed to two masters of the Chancery to take his oath, and so was sworn in his chamber at Greys Inne, the other seuen were sworne at Westminster, and held their feast in the new Temple at London.

Sergeants made.

The 9. of October, Proclamation was published at London for the apprehension and seuere punishing of all persons suspected to be of the family of Ione.

Proclamations against the family of Ione.

There arriued vpon the West coast of Ireland certaine companies of Italians and Spaniards, sent by the Pope to the aid of the Earle of Desmond in his rebellion, which fortified themselues strongly neere Smerwicke, in a fort which they call Castle del'oy, there erecting the Popes banner against her Maiestie: which when the Lord Grey of Wilton deputie of Ireland vnderstood, hee marched thitherward, and the 6. of Nouember, hearing of the arriuall of the Switsbur, the Tyger, the Ayde, the Perlen, and other of the Queenes Maiesties ships and also of 3. barkes fraughted from Lisbonne, and laden with victuals, en the morrow after marched towards the fort, vnto the which he gaue so hote an assault, that on the ninth of November the same was yelded, all the Irish men and women hanged, and more then seuen hundred Spaniards, Italians, and Biskayes put to the sword, the Colonell, Captaines, Secretary and other (to the number of twenty) saued for ransome. In which fortresse was found great store of money, bisket, bacon, oyle, wine, and other prouision of victuall sufficient for their companie for halfe a yeare, beside armour, powder, shot, and other furniture for 2000. men and vpwards.

Castle del'oy taken by the Irish and other in Ireland.

The 25. of November, were arraigned in the Kings bench, William Randall, for concealing to know where treasure was hid in the earth, and goods feloniously taken, were by verdict conuicted. Thomas Elkes, Lupton, Ralph Spacy, and Christopher Waddington, for high treason: Randall, Elkes, Spacy, and Waddington, were found guilty, and had iudgement to be hanged, Randall was executed, the other were reprieued.

Arraignments.

About the twelfth of January, Proclamation was published at London, for the execution of sundry the Queenes Maiesties subiectes remaining beyond the Seas, vnder colour of duty, and liuing contrary to the Lawes of God and of the Realme. And also against the retaining of Iesuites and massing Priests, fosterers of sedition, and other treasonable attempts, &c.

1581. Proclamations against Iesuites.

The 16. day of January, the Lords and Barons of this Realme began to sit in the Parliament house at Westminster: and on the 20. day of January, the Queenes Maiestie went from Whitehall to the Parliament house by water. Whereas a great challenge of Iustes was signified by way of deuise before her Maiestie on Twelfe night last past, to haue beene performed the fifteenth day of January, her Maiesties pleasure was, for diuers considerations

Iusting at Westminster.

Parliament at Westminster.

considerations the same should bee deferred vntill the two and twentieth day of the same moneth: on the which day the same was most courageously accomplished in the accustomed place at Westminster, where many staues were broken, but through the great concourse of people thither repairing, many of the beholders, as well men as women were soze hurt, some maymed, and some killed by falling of the scaffold ouercharged.

About Hallontide last past, in the marshes of Dunsop Hundred, in a place called Southminster in the Countie of Essex, a strange thing hapned: there suddenly appeared an infinite multitude of mice, which ouerwhelming the whole earth in the said Marshes, did deare and gnaw the grasse by the roots, deuouring and tainting the same with their venemous teeth, in such sort, that the cattell which grazed thereon, were smitten with a murreine, and died thereof, which vermine by policie of man could not bee destroyed, till at the last it came to passe that there flocked together all about the same marshes, such a number of owles, as all the there was able to yeelde: whereby the Marsh-holders were shortly deliuered from the vexation of the said mice, the like of this was also in Kent.

Mice deuoure the grasse in Essex.

This yeare (against the comming of certaine Ambassadours out of Fraunce) by her Maiesties appointment, on the fiue and twentieth day of March in the morning, (beeing Easter day) a banquetting house was begun at Westminster, on the Southwest side of her Maiesties pallace of Whitehall, made in manner and forme of a long square 332. in measure about, 30. paincipalls made of great Maſſes, bering 40. foote in length apiece, standing vpright, betweene euery one of the Maſſes, tenne foote asunder and more, the walls of this house were closed with canuas, and painted all the outsides of the same most artificially, with a worke called rusticke, much like stone. This house had two hundred, nintie and two lights of glasse. The sides within the same house was made with ten hights of degrees for people to stand vpon: and the toppe of this house was wrought cunningly vpon canuas works of iuie and holly, with pendants made of wicker rods, and garnished with Bay, Iuie, and all manner of strange flowers, garnished with spangles of golde, as also beautified with hanging toseans made of holly and Iuie with all manner of strange fruites, as pomegranates, orenges, pompions, cucumbers, grapes, with such like, spangled with gold, and most richly hanged: betwixt these works of bayes and Iuie were great spaces of canuas, which was most cunningly painted, the clouds with starres, the sunne and sunne-beames, with diuers other coates of sundy sortes belonging to the Queenes Maiestie, most richly garnished with golde. There were of all manner of persons working on this house, to the number of three hundred seuenty fiue, two men had mischances, the one broke his legge, and so did the other. This house was made in three weekes and three dayes, and was ended the eighteenth of Aprill and cost 1744. l. 19. s. 4. d.

Banqueting house at Westminster.

Henry the second of Fraunce, had foure sonnes, viz. Francis, Charles, Henry, and Francis, the two eldest succeeded their father, and died without issue, after them, raigned their third brother, Henry which now possesseth the Diadem, the youngest Francis being a Batchelour, and desirous to increase his present toptunes, and establish himselfe and his heires, if the King his brother should chance to haue issue: after diuers deliberate consultations concerning the most noble and eminent Princes of Europe, with whom a Prince of his high birth, and reputation, might contract marriage: at last resolued, that the Queene of England was the most absolute and worthy Princesse: and there vpon to make ouerture, the King sent speciall Commissioners vnto the Queene, that is to say, Francois Burbon, Prince Dolphi, of Auuergne, Arthur Cossie, Marshall of Fraunce, Monsieur Iuſinian, Lord of Lanscy, Francois Clercomgis, Earle of Tylin, Bertrand Salignacus Lord of Mothelon, Barnabe Brisō, President of the Parliament of Paris, Claude Pinart, Monsieur Morchemont, Monsieur Verave, and others, and with them a very great Traine, and exceeding braue: which braucry the English equalled euery way, as well in richnesse of apparell, as in Chaines, and Iewells, with variety of fashions, the like whereof was neuer seene in England, except only at the crowning of King Philip, which said Commissioners arriued at Douer the fifteenth of Aprill, 1581. against whose comming, the Queene made diuers great prouision, and for their more stately entertainment, there was builded, beautified, and adorned, in three and twenty dayes, a very lofty and spacious roome, called the Banqueting house, in which place the said French Lords, were often solemnly inuited, with all kind of princely pleasures and pastimes.

A practise in France concerning marriage betweene the Kings brother, and the Queene of England.

Commissioners sent from France to treat with the Queene for marriage with Monsieur.

There was builded very highly and strongly, and beautified with hangings and stone.

But for as much as their Cinbastle was generally disliked, as well of the peeres, as common people, and being very apt to ſignifie their discontent, Proclamation was made vpon great penaltie, that none of the Queens subiects, should either strike, or draw weapon within foure miles of London, or the Court.

There were performed many stately tropyes, and ingenious deuises with sundry Morryces, all Iustings, Barriers, and Turney, all which were performed by the most illustrious and Noble gallants of the time, that is to say, the Earle of Arundell, Sussex, Leicester, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Windsor, the Lord Sheffield, the Lord Darcy, Sir William Russell, Sir William Cecill, Sir Thomas Cecill, Sir George Cary, Sir William Drury, knights, Henry Gray, Philip Sidney, John Borough, Walther Windsor, Ambrosse Willoughby, Thomas Radcliffe, George Carew, William Knowles, Francis Knowles, Hercules Meyrtife, John Wotton,

The deuice the fighting gallantes of the time whole like was neuer, since.

Anthony Mildmay, Thomas Kneuet, George Gifford, Henry Bronkard, Francis Darcy, Esquirs, and diuers others, as both appeare in the Heraulds bookes.

These foresaid Lords, being for fiue moneths space entertained, with as great state, and kindnes, as their hearts could wish, and finding no great hope of desired successe in their serious Negotiation: after diuers secret conferences, among themselues, and returne of sundry letters into France, signifying the Queenes declination from marriage, and the peoples vnwillingnesse, to match that way, held it most conuenient, that the Duke should come in proper person, whose presence they thought in such affaires, might preuaile more then all their Oratory: and thereupon, the first of Nouember, the sayd Prince came ouer in Person, very Princely accompanied, and attended, though not in such glorious manner, as were the a- bone named Commissioners, whose entertainment, in all respects was equitalent, vnto his estate and dignity.

Monsieur commeth ouerin person.

By this time, his Picture, State, and Titles, were aduanced in euery Stationers shop, and many other publique places, by the name of Francois of Valois Duke of Alanson, heire apparant of France, and brother to the French king: but he was better knowne by the name of Monsieur, vnto all sorts of people, then by all his other Titles.

Monsieur his titles.

During his abode in England, he vsed all Princely meanes to preser his suite, and in his carriage, demeaned himselfe, like a true borne Prince, and the heire of Fraunce: and when he had well obserued the Queenes full determination, to continue a single life, he pacified himselfe, admiring her rare vertues and high perfections.

Whilst the Duke remained yet in England, the confederates of the low countries diligently obserued the successe and inclination of the Duke, and perceiuing his chiefe desire, was increase of present authority, honour, wealth, and dignitie, all which they meant to impose vpon him, so it might please the Queene, and Councell, to stand auspicious to their generall suite, and thereupon in the height of fortunate opportunitie, sent euer their agents, and Commissioners, who found the Queene very forward, to do them any kindnesse: as well to supply their weaknesse, and to ease their imminent misery, and danger, as to gratifie the former kindnes of the Duke, &c.

The States of the low countries negotiate to haue Monsieur to their protector.

The Duke liked well of the motion, and after some solicitation and incouragement to be ayded from England, accepted of their proffer, and according to their earnest desire, he would be their protector.

His neere friendes, and followers, were very well pleased with the proiecte, hauing a priuate purpose, to prefer themselues, and their nation.

The Queene in all respects, shewed as great kindnesse vnto the Duke, and all his retinew, at their departure, as at any time before, and for period of her Princely fauours, in that behalfe, that, with great state, accompanied the Duke in person to Canterburie: where she feasted him and all his traine, very Royally, and then returned.

The next day being the first of Februrary, the Duke, with his French Lords and others went to Sandwich, being accompanied with the Earle of Leicester, the Lord Hounsdon, the Lord Charles Howyard, the Lord Willoughby, the Lord Windsore, the Lord Sheffeld, the Lord Thomas Heyward, and the Lord Auydley, Sir George Cary, master John, and master Robert Cary, Sir William Russell, Sir William Drury, and Sir George Bowyer, and George Carew, with diuers other knights, and many Gentlemen of note, and qualitie, besides the particular followers, and attendants of the Earle, hauing in his traine, an hundreth Gentlemen, and 300. others, of inferior nature. The L. Hounsdon had in his traine, 150. the Lord Charles Howyard, had as many, and the Duke with his traine, and the aforesayd English Lords, and others, imbarked at Sandwich, and arriued at Flushing with fifteene sayle: where the Prince of Orenge, with diuers of the States met them and with great signes of gladnesse, entertained them: from thence, they went to Middleborough, from thence, to Antwerpe, and were there entertained, with great State and solemnity. About the nineteenth of Febr. ary, the sayd Francis of Valois, was by the States, created Duke of Anioy, Duke of Lother, Brabant, Limbrough and Gelders, and Marquesse of the sacred Empire, Earle of Flaunders, Hoaand, Zeland, and Vtland, and Prince of the Ioue countrys, with other Titles, and dignities: which solemnitie ended, the English Nobilitie with their traine, returned to England.

The Duke sayle by his French Lords and diuers English Lords embarked them- selues for the low countries.

States and dignities which the States vnpo- sed vpon Monsieur.

Presently after this, withall conuenience, the States, Souldiers, and furniture for warre being in good readinesse, the Duke with great iollity entered into Armes against the forces of the Spanish King, vnder command of the Prince of Parma, and very courageously disualled, and recouered diuers Cities, wonne Alst and Endenan, he draue the Prince of Parma, from the siege of Cambray, and tooke the Citie, and Territories thereof, into his owne possession: hee forced the Spannish faction, vnto sundry extreamities: by meanes whereof, hee became very gracious in the hearts of the people: and hee as politicklie tooke the aduantage of the time: placing French Garrisons in Donkerke, Winerbrogh, Dixmuden, Dermond, Villnord, and in diuers other Townes, and strong Holdes, whereat many of the Dutch, beganne to suspect him, and some sayd openly, surely he meant no faire play, and that the Duke would deale doubly with them, began to thinke, that in short time hee meant to discharge them, with French multitudes: hauing certain inteligence, that Sparhall Byron, was comming to his ayd, with an army of fresh souldiers. Whereupon, their generall telouse encreased: all which notwithstanding, they in all respects, demeaned themselues towards him, with great kindnesse and discretion.

Monsieur entred into armes against the king of Spaine.

Monsieur groweth malcontent and is earnestly laboured by his friends Coun- sell to attempt some great exployt to aduance the French fac- tion.

The Duke being greatly animated, with his small exploits: and elevated in minde with his soddaine popular applause, began to thinke vpon his high birth, the matchlesse Paiectke of his Royall house: vnto whom the Nobilitie of those Prouinces, had done their homages in times past: and that his present estate, authority, and command, either in Campe, or Citty was but limitation, and pleasure of the States, all which, he held at farre too meane a rate, as either condigne recompence, or part of satisfaction, for the hazard of his highnesse person, and his Noble followers: which opinions, were not onely seconded by his Counsell, but dayly increased by his neere friendes, and fauourites: saying it all became the heire of France toserue, vnder the greatest potentate of the Vniuerse: especially, an inferiour headstrong people, vowed to resist all regall authority, onely to maintaine their subtill Aristocracie: careleste, vpon whose shoulders their burthen rest, so they bee freed from the yoke of due obedience, proposing high termes of honour, and Titles of Paiestie vnto others, which were neuer theirs to giue: and that their pride of wealth, and strength of walled Townes, had made them quite forget their ancient homage, and appearance at the high Court of Parliament in Paris.

Night is therefore pleasse his highnesse, to deuise some speedy exploit, worthie his countries hencur, and his name: either to reduce those Prouinces, vnto the French obedience: or to acquite himselfe, and them, of the worlds deserued scandalous imputation: and it should bee resolutely executed, with hazard of their proper liues: And thereupon the Duke considered of diuers matters: but first concluded to surprise Antwerpe, in manner following.

By this time, Parshall Byron, was come vnto his ayde, with great troupes of French men, and Switchers: of whom the French faction, had promulgated, that when all their forces were arriued, they would not dally out an howres time, but in short space, they would expell the Spaniard, from those Prouinces.

Monsieur practiseth to his purpose by the treason of his great losse, griefe and disgrace.

Vnder which pretext, the French forces, which were newly come, began to take possession, of as many Townes and Sconses, as they could: but Burges and Antwerpe, vtterly refused all French Garrisons: yet nertheless, vpon the seauenth of Ianuary, being the appointed day, about twelue of the clock, when the Citizens were at dinner: the Duke, vnder pretence to muster his army without the Towne, hee caused the gates to bee opened for him, as being vncertaine, thogugh which of them hee would passe, he caused the chaines also, which crossed the stretes to bee let downe, which for some suspition of the Frenchmen which were without the Towne, were locked.

Then hee issued forth with all his Court, and a great number of gallant Gentlemen brauely mounted, many of them being secretly army, and comming to Saint Iames gate there met him at the out side of the bridge, certaine of his companies, of horse and foote: who stayed themselues, on either side the way, making a lane, or lane, to giue passage to the Duke and his followers.

Who being past them, made signall to them with his cap to inuade the Citty.

Whereupon his men sallied the watch, with the Colonell Vicende's, that stood bareheaded, to see the Princesse passe by.

Then they entred the gate, with seuentene Cnsignes of footmen, and fowre Cellonels of horse: the Switchers followed them and the Duke stayed without, crying vnto them, Watch, Parch, the Town is wonne, but spoyle it not: and those within, cried the Citie is wonne, the Citty is wen, &c. and got possession, of both the Bulwarkes, and turned the Ordinance towardes the Citie, and passed through diuerse stretes, almost to the middest of the Citty. The Citizens, for the most part being at dinner, hearing the Alarme, got holde of such weapons, as came next to hand, and with great fury issued forth: some fell charge vpon the French, in diuers Lanes, and stretes: others, with admirable dexterite pulled vp their Chaines, crosse their stretes, and other passages, and at an instant, barred them from going any further: then, they all turned head vpon the Switchers, that were entered the Citie, with exceeding violent shot, in the meane space, the Citizens, that were neere vnto the Gate, let fire their bullets as thicke as haile out of windowes, Leades and Loopholes at the French, and killed a Goose right vnder the gate, which very much impeached them from entraunce, so certain, many of them stumbling at the Goose, fell disorderly vpon heapes, so as one of them speeled another, and stopped the Gate, by reason whereof, all that were entred into the Citie, within lesse then halfe an houres space, were either slayne, or taken prisoners, in which exployte, the Citizens showed meere manly valour, and Martiall resolution, and so farre from femule feare, or disheartning that in the fiere of the fight, when they wanted Leaden Bullets, very aduisedly, and readily, they melted their Pewter Dishes, and Platters, to make Bullettes: and least for more speede, tooke money out of their Purses, and bended it with their teeth, and kept it singing out of their Bullets, and Calluers.

In this short Skirmish, were slaine eight thousand, fiue hundred, and threttie French, and two thousand taken prisoners, amongst which, was the Castle of Vermagen, the Bishoppe of Confluence, and many other Noble personages: amongst the dead, were the Castles of Saint Agnan, and his sonne the Earle of Chatew, Rouze, the Sonne of Marshall Byrone, Monsieur de Saitonal,

Governour of Vilnord, and many others of like quality, being vnbarde, the flower of Fraunce.

In this soddaine and vnexpected Danger, the Citizens throwed themselues, most brane and resolute warriours, full of courage, and vngouernd in their Iust defence, without the ayde of any Souldiers.

When the Duke, with the Prince Dolphin, the Earle of Liuall, and others of his Semcell, being without the Towne, and seeing the bad successe, of their power, all amazed, the Duke retired his Campe, vnto Melchaire, and from thence to Dormon, where he was hard be set by Generall Norris, with thirteene companies of Sorties, and English, and from this time, the English were in great estimation with the States, the Duke with great difficultie, losse of men, and want of victuall, in his retreat came to Dinante, and from thence to France, and in his double discontent, seeing his plot discouered, his purpose preuented, his hopes frustrate, many chiefe Gallants of Fraunce his kind friends, and trustie followers slaine, and as many taken prisoners, for whose ransome, hee was willing to doe his vttermost: but not being able, by violence to make rescue, agreed to surrender backe, all such Cities, Holdes, and Castles, as were either deliuered him, or otherwise in possession of the French, which done, all prisoners were released. Presently vpon this, the Spanish faction beganne to take heart of grace, and the Prince of Parma to renue his spirits, and courageously to attempt the siege of Cleues, Dueres, and Gulliers. Against whose desire, the English were the chiefe to giue encounter.

The Duke died the tenth of July, 1583. and it was suppozed, of melancholly. After his death, his mother, vnder pretence of her ioynter right, during her life, kept possession of Cambra, which stand City, and prouince of Cambresis in an Archbishoprike, and a free Earldom, lying betweene Fraunce, Flaunders, and Germany: by reason wherof, it is conuenient for the one of them to be a protector, ouer the rest.

Cambray.

Iust this City, is made the finest lennen, of the name, namely Lawne and Cambreche, and therefore the last takes his name, and the other taken his name, of another City not far off, called Lawne.

And so an historicall conclusion, of the foresaid Duke, and his three brethren, of all which there remained then onely one, to wit, Henrie the third, who was slaine in the yeare 1589. as you may read, and was the last of that house: which house of Valois, hath triumphantly raigned, euer since the Raigne of Lodowick the third, at which time, it was then but an Earledome, and descended from a second brother, was of meere purpose by the French aduanced to the throne, vnder pretences of the Salique law, made by Pharamond, onely to suppresse the immediate right, and title of King Edward the 3. who was descended of the French Kings eldest daughter, and heire: whereby he iustly claimed the Crown of France. Since which time the French had neuer more hope or likelihood, to continue that race, then in these foresayd 4. gallant Princes, who died, and left no lawfull issue behind them.

The Salique law.

Pharamond.

Dagobert.

Clotarius.

Charles Martell.

Pepin.

Charles the great.

Lewis.

Charles the fat.

Charles the simple.

Rollo.

And sith, I haue vpon occasion spoken somewhat of the house of Valois, and of the entrance of the house of Navarre, I will also for the more delight, speake a word or two, of some of the ancient, and most remarkable Kinges of Fraunce: as I finde them recyted in their owne Chronicles: concerning which, and all the rest of the kings of France, I will in all courtesie, for thy better satisfaction, recommend the vnto the excellent labours, of that worthy Gentleman, our kind countreyman, Master Edward Grimston in his booke called his Generacies of France, &c. It is certaine that, that great entire Kingdome which is now called France, was of old time many Kingdomes for seuerall Lawes, and Languages, of Arion, Aquitaine, Britaigne, and other Prouinces hadde peculiar Kings of their owne, their owne authours also affirme that the French are issued from the Troyans of a Duke called Francion that first inhabyted neere the Cuiph called Cam, or Lame whose offspring afterward vpon certaine discontent left that countrey, and came with their Duke Francion into Germania, where by reuolte vnto Gaul and Austrigis, then they chose Faramond the son of Marc their Duke for their king and became setled in ciuility and obedient vnto peruse lawes, hee ordained foure noble men to be Iudges ouer the people to decide their causes and differences, the making of the Salique Law, is also attributed vnto Faramond, also their writers, as well Parcles as Layamon say, that Dionisius the disciple vnto Saint Denis came into France, and conuerted a great part thereof, which Dionisius they held to their Patron, and in their vsual deuotie of speech they call him Saint Denis Paramond. The seuenth Marc was the first King of France, began his raigne in the yeare after Christ, 421. and raigned 11 yeares, his sonne Clodion succeeded him who also enlarged his Territories, and ordayned that the Frenchmen should weare long haire in signe of Nobleme.

Clodion.

Childerick.

Merouis.

Childerick.

Clodoueus *alias* Clouis, the fift King of France, he was the first Christian King of France, he succeeded his father Childerick in the yeare 585. he was Christened by Saint Remy Archbishoppe of Rhemis, he subdued Burrage and enlarged his kingdome from the Rhayne vnto Seyne, and stretched his boundes as farre as Loire, hee ouerthrewe his ancient enemies the Almaynes, and forced them to pay him tribute, he had almost brought all the Gawles vnder his subiection, he receiued from Pope Anastasius, the name and title of Patricius and Consull, with a Crowne of gold adorned with precious stones, at this time the Arian heresie much troubled Christendome, hee raigned thirty yeares.

Clotarius

Dagobert the first of that name, and eleuenth King of Fraunce, succeeded his father Clotarius, the second of that name, in the yeare 631. this Day bent in his youth with his owne hands, plucke off the beard of his Schoolemaster, and then whipt him, for which act he greatly feared the displeasure of his father, and for his better meanes of reconciliation, hee gaue his brother Aribert the kingdome of Aquitaine, hee subdued the Gascoynes, which then were Heathen, hee conquered Gascoigne, hee banished a Hermeard Prelate called Saint Arnand, for reproouing him of his extraordinate lust; this King was also effeminatly addicted as Sardanapalus, being accompanied vp and downe with women, euen as the Turke doth now adayes, for he had in his company of wanton women, created Colledges for faire women, causing them to be attired and adorned in great pompe like Queenes, he spoile all the Iewes out of Fraunce that would not be Baptized, hee builded the goodly Church of Saint Dion nere Paris, he tooke much riches from other Churches to adorne that, and withall, hee gaue more land out of his Demaynes, and money vnto Ecclesiasticall vses then any of his predecessours, hee raigned fourteene yeares, his Sonne Clouis succeeded him, in whose time there happened great famine, who in charity to relieue the poore, spent his proper treasure, and therewithall to supply the poores want, hee brake downe the rich ornaments which his Father erected in the Church of Saint Denis, for the which sacrilege some write, that God visited him with frensie, and that hee died mad, hauing raigned fourteene yeares.

Clouis the first King of France that was Christened.

Pipinus *alias* Pepine the Brefle, began his Raigne ouer Fraunce in the yeare 750. he instituted the Parliament at Paris, he moued the Pope against Astolpho king of Lombards, and besieged him in Pauia, where he was forced to yeeld himselfe, and for confirmation of a lasting peace, Astolpho freely gaue vnto the Pope the exarchat and the signorie of Rauena, he raigned 18. yeares.

The institution of the Parliament in Paris.

Carolus Magnus, *alias* Charles-Maigne the fourte and twentieth King of Fraunce, after hee had raigned two and thirty yeares, was assumed to the dignitie of Rome, chosen Emperour, by reason of his faithfull forwardnesse, and noble acts which he had done for the generall good of Christendome, hee was annointed in Rome by Pope Leo the third, in the yeare 800. hee was the sonne of Pepin, and the first King of Fraunce, that attributed to himselfe the Stile and Title of the most Christian King of Fraunce, and from him his successors haue continued it, hee gaue the most part of his Empire Eastward, vnto his seconde Sonne Pepin presently, after himselfe was enthronized, when hee had ended his warres in Aquitaine, hee vanquished the Kingdome of Lombardy, and tooke the King prisoner, hee ouercame the Saxons, vpon whom he made warres thirtie yeares, and taught them the Christian faith, he expelled the Sarazens, which had almost ouerd Spaine, he subdued Pannonia, Denmarcke, Bohemia, and Hungaria, vpon whom hee made warres eight yeares, in reuenge whereof, the Hungarians, Danes, and Saxons, in the time of Charles the 4. who began his Raigne in the yeare 870. they with a resolute Armie by sea and land inuaded Fraunce, spoyled Nantes, Angers, Tours, and diuers other places, and had gre[illegible] Battayles against Robert Duke of Aquitaine, and Robert Earle of Angiers, for they were both slain: whereby the Danes, Saxons, or Normanes became so annointed, that they not onely vsurped ouer the French, but also very cruelly repulsed the Duke of Aquitaine, and held their footing in despight of their Enemies. The French said, it was a iust punishment of God vpon them, for the great ambition, pompe, and excessiue pride, wherewith their King was infected, as well in his apparell, as otherwayes: but whether the iustice of their Heathenish people, was for reuenge or punishment, I cannot iudge, but from that time vnto this day, armes of Fraunce are those Normannes, Danes, or Saxons, portrayd, so called Normans by all Nations: the foresayd Charlemaigne erected two famous Vniuersities, the one in Paris, the other in Pauia, and called great learned to be made there, out all Nations, to furnish them with the best learned men in all Sciences, hee called two Councels to be held by the reparing of Churches, and reformation of the state of the Church, hee was renowned for Warre and Magnanimitie, and was called Charles the great, by the same reason that Alexander and Pompey were called great, he raigned King 46. yeares, and was Emperour thirteene yeares, and died of a Feauer at 71. yeares of age, he had three sonnes, viz. Charles, Pepin, and Lewes, which Lewes succeeded him by the name of Lewes the milde. In this Kings dayes liued *Iohannes de Temporibus*, of whom diuers graue Authors write, that he liued 300. yeares, and was so called, because hee had seene so many alterations of time and state. Rioal *alias* Rollo, sonne to King Richard of Bourgondy, whipped the Crowne of France after Charles the Simple, in the yeare 926.

Iohannes de Temporibus.

This Rollo was the first Duke of Normandy.

Clotarius *alias* Clotaier, the first of that name, and seuenth King of Fraunce, sonne to Childebert, began his raigne in the yeare 560. hee attempted to take away the third part of the Church reuenewes, but the Archbishop of Tours at length dissuaded him from it, saying that God would surely visite him for attempting it, and confound him if hee persisted to rob the poore, and spoyle the Church: his Sonne Chramus rebelled against him, and stirred vp great dissention throughout Fraunce, whom hee ouerthrewe in Battell, and then caused him to be burned with his wife and children for his disobedience: Chramus was strongly backed by his owne Vncle Childeuert, and by his wifes Father the Duke of Aquitaine, and by Chramus the King of Britaine, his other sonne Arybertus *alias* Childebert succeeded him.

Disobedience seuerely punished.

Dagobert the first of that name, and eleuenth King of Fraunce, succeeded his Father Clotarius, the second of that name, in the yeare 631. this Day bent in his youth with his owne hands, plucke off the beard of his Schoolemaster, and then whipt him, for which act he greatly feared the displeasure of his father, and for his better meanes of reconciliation, hee gaue his brother Aribert the kingdome of Aquitaine, hee subdued the Gascoynes, which then were Heathen, hee conquered Gascoigne, hee banished a Hermeard Prelate called Saint Arnand, for reproouing him of his extraordinate lust; this King was also effeminatly addicted as Sardanapalus, being accompanied vp and downe with women, euen as the Turke doth now adayes, for he had in his company of wanton women, created Colledges for faire women, causing them to be attired and adorned in great pompe like Queenes, he spoile all the Iewes out of Fraunce that would not be Baptized, hee builded the goodly Church of Saint Dion nere Paris, he tooke much riches from other Churches to adorne that, and withall, hee gaue more land out of his Demaynes, and money vnto Ecclesiasticall vses then any of his predecessours, hee raigned fourteene yeares, his Sonne Clouis succeeded him, in whose time there happened great famine, who in charity to relieue the poore, spent his proper treasure, and therewithall to supply the poores want, hee brake downe the rich ornaments which his Father erected in the Church of Saint Denis, for the which sacrilege some write, that God visited him with frensie, and that hee died mad, hauing raigned fourteene yeares.

Pipinus *alias* Pepine the Brefle, began his Raigne ouer Fraunce in the yeare 750. he instituted the Parliament at Paris, he moued the Pope against Astolpho king of Lombards, and besieged him in Pauia, where he was forced to yeeld himselfe, and for confirmation of a lasting peace, Astolpho freely gaue vnto the Pope the exarchat and the signorie of Rauena, he raigned 18. yeares.

The institution of the Parliament in Paris.

Carolus Magnus, *alias* Charles-Maigne the fourte and twentieth King of Fraunce, after hee had raigned two and thirty yeares, was by a generall consent of the Clergie and Laytie of Rome, chosen Emperour, by reason of his faithfull forwardnesse, and noble acts which he had done for the generall good of Christendome, hee was annointed in Rome by Pope Leo the third, in the yeare 800. hee was the sonne of Pepin, and the first King of Fraunce, that attributed to himselfe the Stile and Title of the most Christian King of Fraunce, and from him his successors haue continued it, hee gaue the most part of his Empire Eastward, vnto his seconde Sonne Pepin presently, after himselfe was enthronized, when hee had ended his warres in Aquitaine, hee vanquished the Kingdome of Lombardy, and tooke the King prisoner, hee ouercame the Saxons, vpon whom he made warres thirtie yeares, and taught them the Christian faith, he expelled the Sarazens, which had almost ouerd Spaine, he subdued Pannonia, Denmarcke, Bohemia, and Hungaria, vpon whom hee made warres eight yeares, in reuenge whereof, the Hungarians, Danes, and Saxons, in the time of Charles the 4. who began his Raigne in the yeare 870. they with a resolute Armie by sea and land inuaded Fraunce, spoyled Nantes, Angers, Tours, and diuers other places, and had gre[illegible] Battayles against Robert Duke of Aquitaine, and Robert Earle of Angiers, for they were both slain: whereby the Danes, Saxons, or Normanes became so annointed, that they not onely vsurped ouer the French, but also very cruelly repulsed the Duke of Aquitaine, and held their footing in despight of their Enemies. The French said, it was a iust punishment of God vpon them, for the great ambition, pompe, and excessiue pride, wherewith their King was infected, as well in his apparell, as otherwayes: but whether the iustice of their Heathenish people, was for reuenge or punishment, I cannot iudge, but from that time vnto this day, armes of Fraunce are those Normannes, Danes, or Saxons, portrayd, so called Normans by all Nations: the foresayd Charlemaigne erected two famous Vniuersities, the one in Paris, the other in Pauia, and called great learned to be made there, out all Nations, to furnish them with the best learned men in all Sciences, hee called two Councels to be held by the reparing of Churches, and reformation of the state of the Church, hee was renowned for Warre and Magnanimitie, and was called Charles the great, by the same reason that Alexander and Pompey were called great, he raigned King 46. yeares, and was Emperour thirteene yeares, and died of a Feauer at 71. yeares of age, he had three sonnes, viz. Charles, Pepin, and Lewes, which Lewes succeeded him by the name of Lewes the milde. In this Kings dayes liued *Iohannes de Temporibus*, of whom diuers graue Authors write, that he liued 300. yeares, and was so called, because hee had seene so many alterations of time and state. Rioal *alias* Rollo, sonne to King Richard of Bourgondy, whipped the Crowne of France after Charles the Simple, in the yeare 926.

Iohannes de Temporibus.

This Rollo was the first Duke of Normandy.

through the treachery of Herbert Earle of Vermendois taking Charles prisoner, who inuited him to a banquet, and then deliuered him prisoner to Rollo, and caused him before the whole assembly of the Princes and Peeres of France, to diuest himselfe from his Kingdome, and to giue it as a pure gift vnto Rollo: this happened after Lewes had beene taken prisoner in Italy, and had his eyes pluckt out, his wife Gerberga and his sonne Lewes fled for succour into England vnto his Vncle King Adelstane: Rollo seeing the Empire diuided, attempted to obtaine the Imperiall Diadem, he went into Italy, and ouercame Berenger, and vnderstanding of the death of Charles the Simple, her returned into France: the fore-named Lewes was then called out of England, and by the strength of his friends was crowned King of France, in the yeare 928. hee held warres with Rollo for his Kingdome, Rollo and his heires held Normandy, vntill the time of Philip the second: Rollo died in the ninth yeare of the raigne of Lewes. Lewes made warre vpon Otho the Emperour, for the Kingdome of Lorraine, after that hee married the sister of Otho, after that he was taken prisoner by the Normanes, and set at liberty by Otho, hee reigned 37. yeares, by the names of Lewes the fourth.

This Lewes succeeded Otho in the Empire in the yeare 936. he made warre vpon Berengar, and had victory vpon him in the first time, but the second time he was ouercome by Berengar, who was chosen the seuenth person by the Electors.

Philip the second, otherwise called Philip Augustus, sonne to Lewes the younger, succeeded his father, in the yeare 118. He instituted the eschewins in Paris, which Magistrates are like vnto the Aldermen of London, hauing peculiar gouernment ouer their seuerall Precincts or Wards, hee inuironed with walles the most part of Paris, and he edified many other places, he with King Richard of England enterprised a voyage to recouer Jerusalem, after it was yeelded vnto Saladyne, this Philip conquered all Normandy, and Aquitaine, and raigned 43. yeares, his sonne Lewes succeeded him.

Philip surnamed the Faire, began his raigne in the yeare 1285. hee builded the Stately Palace in Paris by the Gate of Flanders, and his two sonnes prisoners, and brought Flanders vnder his subiection, in his time Pope Clement the 5. was consecrated at Lions, and then the Papall seate was transferred from Rome to Auignon in France, and remained there seuenty yeares, during which translation, there were three Cardinals sent to gouerne Italy, in this Kings time, the Hospitlers of S. Iohn of Ierusalem surprised the Ile of Rhodes, and expelled the Turkes, and in the generall Councell of Vienna, the Knights of the Temple were wholly suppreſt, of whom, and of the Knights of Rhodes, and Malta, I haue said sufficiently in my abridgement, after this foresaid Philip the Faire, Lewes Hutin succeeded, and after him succeeded his brother Philip the tall, so called because of his stature, whom amongst other their nicknames, which they vsually bestow vpon their Kings, they might as well haue called him Philip the vnfortunate, for he was ill beloued, both of the Clergy and Laity, as he could neuer obtaine of them either subsidies, loanes, tribute, or impost: in his time certaine diseased Leprous persons, by instigation of the Iewes, poysoned many Wells in France, whereof ensued a great pestilence, and death of people, but the offenders were seuerely punished: and thus much by the way concerning some of the auncient Kings of France, whom their owne Historians haue held most remarkable.

Knights Templers suppreſt.

The 21. of June in the night, certaine young men, drawing ropes thwart the streete, on both sides the Croſſe in Cheape, to stop the passage, did then fasten ropes about the lowest Images of the said Croſſe, attempting by force to haue plucked them downe, which when they could not doe, they plucked the picture of Christ out of his mothers lap, whereon he sate, and otherwise defaced her, and the other Images by striking off their armes. Whereupon proclamation was made, that who so would bewray the doers, should haue forty Crownes. But nothing came to light, for euery one of them kept others Counsell, till their dying daies.

Croſſe in Cheape defaced.

Thomas Mather Brewer (for that hee and others of the 27. of June, had congregated themselues in West Smithfield of London, and in other places, in manner of rebellion) was on the thirty of June whipped from Newgate to West Smithfield, and was there reserued, taken from the Cartes, and sent away to Guilford himselfe: for the which fact on the 21. of July, other foure, to wit, three Shoomakers and a Brewer, were whipped from Newgate to the middeſt of West Smithfield, and there set on the Pulloy, wherein they did stand ten the twelue of the clocke.

Brewer set on the Pulloy.

The 13. of July, Richard Cox, Deane of Dunmow, sometime Schoolemaister to King Edward the 6. Deane of Westminster, and Master of Christs Colledge in Oxford, and since Bishop of Ely, deceased, and was buried at Ely.

Dunmow.

This yeare were to be seene in London, two Dutchmen of strange statures, the one in height seuen foote and seuen inches, in breadth betweene the shoulders three quarters of a yard, and an inch, the compaſſe of his breast one yard and halfe, and two inches: and about the waist one yard, quarter, and one inch, the length of his arme to the hand, a full yard: a comely man of person but lame of his legges (for he had been shot with lifting of a barrell of Bare.) The other was in height but three foote, had neuer a good foote, nor any hand at all, and yet could hee daunce a Galliard, hee had no arme, but a stumpe to the elbow, or little more on the right side, on the which singung, hee would daunce a cup, and after toſſe it aboue three or foure times, and euery time receiue the same on the sade stumpe: he would shoote an arrow nere to the marke, flourish with a rapire, throw a bowle, beat with a hammer, hew with an axe, sound a trumpet and drinke euery day ten quarts of the best Bare if he could get it. I my selfe on the 17. of July, saw the taller man sitting on a bench bareheaded, & the lesser standing on the same bench, and hauing on his head a hat with a feather, was yet the lower. Also the taller man standing on his fote, the lesser (with his hat and feather on his head) went vpright betweene his legs, and touched him not.

Two Dutchmen of strange statures.

Euerard Haunce arraigned and executed.

The 18. of July, Euerard Haunce a seminary Priest, was in the Sessions hall in the old Bayly arraigned, where he affirmed that himselfe was subiect to the Pope in Ecclesiastical causes, and that the Pope hath now the same authority here in England, that he had an hundred yeares past, with other trayterous speeches, for the which he was condemned to be drawne, hanged, bowelled, and quartered, and was executed accordingly on the last of July.

Prisoners arraigned for not coming to Church.

At the same Sessions were brought from the Fleet, the Gate-house at Westminster, Newgate of London, and the Counters, sundry prisoners, indicted for refusing to come to the Church, al which being conuicted by their owne confession, had iudgement accordingly to pay 20. pounds for euery moneth of such their wilfull absence from the Church.

John Stubs and William Page lost their hands.

The 13. of October were arraigned at Westminster hall, John Stubs, Hugh Singleton, and William Page, these were all three condemned to lose their right hands, for writing, painting, and dispersing a libell, which they entituled, the Gaping Gulph, against Monsieur Francis, Duke of Anion, the French Kings brother. And on the 3. day of Nouember, they were all led to Westminster, where John Stubs, and William Page lost their hands by chopping off, but Hugh Singleton had his pardon.

Hugh Singleton pardoned.

On the 20. of Nouember, Edmond Champion Iesuite, Ralph Sherwyne, Lucas Kirby, Edward Rithon, Thomas Cotebam, Henry Orton, Robert Johnson, and James Bofgrace, were brought to the high bar at Westminster, where they were seuerally, and all together indicted vpon high treason, for that contrary both to loue and duty, they forsoke their native country, to liue beyond the seas vnder the Popes obedience, as at Rome, Rheimes, and diuers other places, where (the Pope hauing with other Princes, practised the death and depriuation of our most gracious Princesse, and vtter subuersion of her State and Kingdome, to aduance his most abhominable religion) these men hauing vowed their allegiance to the Pope, to obey him in all causes whatsoeuer, being there, gaue their consent, to ayde him in this most Stayterous determination. And for this intent and purpose they were sent ouer to seduce the hearts of her Maiesties louing subiects, and to conspire and practise her Graces death, as much as in them lay, against a great day set, and appointed, when the generall hauock should be made, those only reserued that ioyned with them. This layd to their charge, they boldly denied, but by a Iury they were apparent guilty, and had iudgement to be hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Arch-Bishop of Glascow and others arraigned.

The first of September, Edmond Champion, Iesuite, Ralph Sherwyne and Alexander Brian, Seminary Priests, were drawne from the Tower of London to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

1582. Champion and others executed.

John Paine Priest, being indicted of high Treason, for words by him spoken to one Elliot, was arraigned and condemned at Chelmesford, on the last of March, and was there executed on the second day of Aprill.

John Paine executed at Chelmesford.

The 15. of May, about teme of the clocke in the night, a blazing Star appeared, descending in the Northwest, the beard whereof streamed Southwest.

A blazing Star.

On the 28. of May, Thomas Ford, John Shert, and Robert Johnson Priests, hauing bin before indicted, arraigned, and condemned for high Treason intended, as ye haue heard of Champion and other, were drawne from the Tower to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Act. Mendax. Seminaries executed.

On the 30. Luke Kirby, William Filby, Thomas Cottam, and Laurence Richardson, were for the like treason in the same place likewise executed.

The 2. of June, Phillip Price was hanged in Fleetstreet of London, for killing a Sergeant that had arrested him.

Phillip Price hanged.

The 14. day of July, Peregrine Bartie, Lord Willoughbie, of Eresby appointed Ambassador to Fredericke the King of Denmarke with the Garter, embarked at Kingston vpon Hull, and prosperously arriued at Elsinoze in Denmarke, on the twentieth day of the same moneth. On the foureteenth of August, the said Lord receiued the robes of the Order, ware the Garter, Coller, and George: and the Lord Ambassador returning with his traine, arriued at Bromeholme in Norfolke, on the twentieth of September.

Lord Willoughby Ambassador into Denmarke.

This yeare was first founded a publike lecture in Surgery, to begin to be read in the Colledge of Phisitians in Knightriders Street of London in Anno 1584. on the first of May, and so to bee continued twice euery weeke, to wit, wednesday and fryday for euer, by the honorable Iohn Lord Lomley, and Richard Caldwell, Doctor of Physicke: the reader whereof to be Richard Potter, Doctor of Physicke.

Lecture in Surgery to be read.

The 19. of July, certaine firkins of gunpowder (to the number of seauen) and as many or more firkins of Stungeon, laden in a Barre vpon Galley key, were vnto the Tower of London, some small portion of the same powder being shed on the ground, the hose in the said Barr stroke fire with his taile, and fiered all together, whereof though the Stungeon was blowne out of the Barre, some into the Thames, some elsewhere, one firkin was driuen through a leaned wall that was boarded ouer, into a house there by. The Crane on the Wharfe, with the houses there adioyning were sore shaken, many mennes hoses sore blasted, so that three men and seuen hoses died thereof.

Misfortune by gunpowder.

The twelfth of August, there arose a great tempest of lightning, thunder, white wind, and raine, with hailestones fashioned like to the rowels of spurres, two or three inches about, in the Countie of Norfolke, betweene the townes of North Wallham, and Mosseled (the Towne wherein the making of Mosseled, commonly called

Tempest in Norfolke.

through the treachery of Herbert Earle of Vermandois taking Charles prisoner, who inuited him to a banquet, and then deliuered him prisoner to Rollo, and caused him before the whole assembly of the Princes and Peeres of France, to diuest himselfe from his Kingdome: and to giue it as a pure gift vnto Rollo: this happened after Lewes had beene taken prisoner in Italy, and had his eyes pluckt out, his vaine ... and his sonne Lewes fled for succour into England vnto his Vncle King Adelstone: Rollo seeing the Empire diuided, attempted to obtaine the Imperiall Diadem, he went into Italy, and ouercame strenger, and vnderstanding of the death of Charles the Simple, hee returned into France: the fore-named Lewes was then called out of England, and by the strength of his friends was crowned King of France, in the yeare 928. hee held warres with Rollo for his kingdome, Rollo and his heires held Normandy, vntill the time of Philip the second: Rollo liued in the ninth yeare of the raigne of Lewes, Lewes made warre vpon Otho the Emperour, for the Kingdome of Lorraigne, after that hee married the sister of Otho, after that he was taken prisoner by the Normanes, and set at liberty by Otho, hee reigned 27. yeares, by the names of Lewes the fourth.

Philip the second, otherwise called Philip Augustus, sonne to Lewes the younger, succeeded his Father, in the yeare 118. He instituted the eschoynes in Paris, which Magistrates are like vnto the Aldermen of London, hauing peculiar gouernment ouer their seuerall Precinctes or Wards, hee inuironed with walles the most part of Paris, and re-edified many other places, he with King Richard of England enterprised a voyage to recouer Jerusalem, before it was yeelded vnto Saladyne, this Philip conquered all Normandy, and Aquitaine, and raigned 42. yeares, his sonne Lewes succeeded him.

Philip surnamed the faire, began his raigne in the yeare 1285. hee builded the stately Palace at Paris by the Gate of Flanders, and tooke two Earles prisoners, and brought Flanders vnder his subiection, in his time Pope Clement the 5. was consecrated at Lions, and then the Papall seate was transferred from Rome to Auignon in France, and remained there seuenty yeares, during which translation, there were three Cardinals sent to gouerne Italy, in this Kings time, the Hospitlers of Saint Iohn conquered the Ile of Rhodes, and expelled the Turkes, and in the generall Counsell of Vienna, the Knights of the Temple were wholy suppreſt, of whom, and of the Knights of Rhodes, and Malta, I haue said sufficiently in my abridgement, after this foresaid Philip the faire, Lewes Hutin succeeded, and after him succeeded his brother Philip the tall, so called because of his stature, whom amongst other their nick-names, which they vsually bestow vpon their Kings, they might as well haue called him Philip the vnfortunate, for he was so ill beloued, both of the Clergy and Laity, as he could neuer obtaine of them either subsidies, loanes, tribute, or impoſt: in his time certaine diseased Leprous persons, by instigation of the Iewes, poysoned many Wells in France, whereof ensued a great pestilence, and death of people, but the offenders were seuerely punished: and thus much by the way concerning some of the ancient Kings of France, whom their owne Hiſtorians haue held meet remarkable.

The 21. of June in the night, certainety vnknowen men, drawing ropes thwart the ſtreete, on both sides the Croſſe in Cheape, to ſtop the passage, did then fasten ropes about the lowest Images of the said Croſſe, attempting by force to haue pluckt them downe, which when they could not doe, they plucked the picture of Christ out of his mothers lap, wherein he sate, and otherwise defaced her, and the other Images by striking off their armes. Whereupon proclamation was made, that who so would bewray the doers, should haue fortty Crownes. But nothing came to light, for euery one of them kept others Counsell, till their dying dayes.

Thomas Archer Brewer (for that hee and others on the 27. of June, had congregated themselues in West Smithfield of London, and in other places, in manner of rebellion) was on the thirty of June whipped from Newgate to West Smithfield, and was there reſcued, taken from the Bedles, and sent away to ſhift for himselfe: for the which fact on the 21. of July, other foure, to wit, three Shermakers and a Brewer, were whipped from Newgate to the middeſt of West Smithfield, and there ſet on the Pillory, whereon they had ſtoode ten full tweine of the clocke.

The 13. of July, Richard Cox Deane of Dunmity, sometime Schoolemaſter to King Edward the first, Deane of Westminster, and of Christs Colledge in Oxford, and since Bishop of Elie, deceased, and was buried at Elie.

This yeare were to be seene in London, two Dutchmen of strange ſtatures, the one in height seuen foote and seuen inches, in breadth betweene the shoulders three quarters of a yard, and an inch, the compaſſe of his breast one yard and halfe, and two inches: and about the waſt one yard, quarter, and one inch, the length of his arme to the hand, a full yard: a comely man of person but lame of his legges (for he had broken them with lifting of a barrell of Bare.) The other was in height but three foote, had neuer a good foote, nor any knee at all, and yet could hee daunce a Galliard, hee had no armes, but a ſtumpe to the elbow, or little more on the right side, on the which singing, hee would daunce a cup, and after toſſe it aboue three or foure times, and euery time receiue the same on the saide ſtumpe: he would ſhoote an arrow neere to the marke, flourish with a rapire, throw a bowle, beat with a hammer, bow with an axe, sound a trumpet and drinke euery day ten quarts of the best Beare if he could get it. I my ſelfe on the 17. of July, saw the taller man ſitting on a bench bareheaded, & the leſſer ſtanding on the same bench, and hauing on his head a hat with a feather, was yet the lower. Also the taller man ſtanding on his feete, the leſſer (with his hat and feather on his head) went vpright betweene his legges, and touched him not.

The 18. of July, Euerard Haunce a seminary Prieſt, was in the Seſſions hall in the old Bayly arraigned, where hee affirmed that himselfe was subiect to the Pope in Eccleſiaſtical causes, and that the Pope hath now the same authority here in England, that he had an hundred yeares paſt, with other trayterous ſpeeches, for the which he was condemned to be drawne, hanged, bowelled, and quartered, and was executed accordingly on the laſt of July.

At the same Seſſions were brought from the Fleet, the Gate-house at Westminster, Newgate of London, and the Counters, sundry priſoners, indicted for refusing to come to the Church, al which being conuicted by their owne confeſſion, had iudgement accordingly to pay 20. pounds for euery moneth of such their wilfull absence from the Church.

The 13. of October were arraigned at Westminster hall, Iohn Stubs, Hugh Singleton, and William Page, these were all three condemned to loſe their right hands, for writing, printing, and diſperſing a libell, which they entituled, the Gaping Gulph, against Monſieur Francis, Duke of Aniow, the French kings brother. And on the 3. day of Nouember, they were all led to Westminster, where Iohn Stubs, and William Page loſt their hands by chopping off, but Hugh Singleton had his pardon.

On the 20. of Nouember, Edmond Champion Ieſuite, Ralph Sherwine, Lucas Kerby, Edward Rushton, Thomas Cotebam, Henry Orton, Robert Iohnſon, and Iames Bosgrave, were brought to the high bar at Westminster, where they were seuerally, and all together indicted vpon high treaſon, for that contrary both to loue and duty, they ſoſoote their native country, to liue beyond the seas vnder the Popes obedience, as at Rome, Rheimes, and diuers other places, where (the Pope hauing with other Princes, practised the death and depriuation of our most gracious Princeſſe, and vtter subuerſion of her state and kingdome, to aduance his most abhominable religion) these men hauing vowed their allegiance to the Pope, to obey him in all causes whatsoeuer, being there, gaue their consent, to ayde him in this most trayterous determination. And for this intent and purpose they were sent ouer to seduce the hearts of her Maieſties louing subiects, and to conſpire and practise her Graces death, as much as in them lay, against a great day set, and appointed, when the generall hauock should be made, those only reſerued that ioyned with them. This layd to their charge, they boldly denied, but by a Jury they were approoued guiltie, and had iudgement to be hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

The ſixt of September, Edmond Champion, Ieſuite, Ralph Sherwine and Alexander Brian, Seminary Prieſts, were drawne from the Tower of London to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

John Paine Prieſt, being indicted of high Treaſon, for words by him ſpoken to one Eliot, was arraigned and condemned at Chelmesford, on the laſt of March, and was there executed on the second day of Aprill.

The 15. of May, about tenne of the clocke in the night, a blazing ſtar appeared, deſcending in the Northweſt, the beard whereof streamed Southweſt.

On the 28. of May, Thomas Ford, Iohn Shert, and Robert Iohnſon Prieſts, hauing bin before indicted, arraigned, and condemned for high Treaſon intended, as yee haue heard of Champion and other, were drawne from the Tower to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

On the 30. Luke Kirby, William Filby, Thomas Cottam, and Laurence Richardſon, were for the like treaſon in the same place likewise executed.

The 2. of June, Phillip Price was hanged in Fleetſtreet of London, for killing a Sergeant that had arreſted him.

The 14. day of July, Peregrine Bartie, Lord Willoughbie, of Eresby appointed Ambaſſador to Fredericke the King of Denmarke with the Garter, embarked at Rungton vpon Hull, and proſperously arriued at Elsinore in Denmarke, on the twentieth day of the same mieneth. On the foureteenth of August, the layd King receiued the robes of the Order, ware the Garter, Coller, and Georges and the Lord Ambaſſador returning with his traine, arriued at Yzomeholme in Norfolke, on the twentieth of September.

This yeare was firſt founded a publike lecture in Surgery, to begin to be read in the Colledge of Phyſitians in Knightriders ſtreet of London in Anno 1584. on the firſt of May, and so to bee continued twice euery weeke, to wit, Wednesday and Friday for euer, by the honorable Iohn Lord Lomley, and Richard Caldwell, Doctor of Phyſicke: the reader whereof to be Richard Foster, Doctor of Phyſicke.

The 19. of July, certaine firkins of gunpowder (to the number of fourteen) and as many or more firkins of Sturgeon, laden in a Carre vpon Galley key, neare vnto the Tower of London, some small portion of the same powder being ſhed on the ground, the horſe in the said Car ſtroke fire with his foote, and fiered all together, where through the ſtrength on was blowne out of the Carre, some into the Thames, some elsewhere, one firkin was driuen through a loamed wall that was boorded ouer, into a house there by. The Crane on the Wharfe, with the houſes neere adioyning were sore broken, many mennes houſes sore blacked, so that three men and seuen horſes died thereof.

The twelfth of August, there arose a great tempeſt of lightning, thunder, white-wind, and raine, with haileſtones fashioned like to the rowels of spurres, two or three inches about, in the Countie of Norfolke, betweene the townes of North Walsham, and Worſted (the Towne wherein the making of Worſted, commonly called

called Norwich worsted, was first practised, and tooke their beginning) which tempest beat the corne flat to the ground, rent vp many great trees, and shiuered them in pieces, or wound them like withs. At Henny, more then a mile from Wolsted, the West doore of the Church, weighing more then three hundred pound waight, there was lifted off the hookes, and throwne ouer the font within one yard of the chancell doore, the top of the Church was riuen vp, and the lead as it were blowne cleane away, fiue webs of lead were rolled vp together like as they had bin cloths of linnen cloth, and blowne into the field without the Church-yard. Also at Gosh Ruffen were many Barnes blowne downe, and houses vncouered.

An. reg. 25. Terme kept at Hartford.

This yere Michaelmasse terme was returned from the Vtas thereof, vntill the fourth returne of the same called Morte Michaelis, and from the said returne, vntill the returne commonly called Crastino animarum next ensuing, and then returned from Westminster to the Castle of Hartford in Hartfordshire, there to begin in the said Crastino animarum, and to bee continued till the end of the said terme, which was done accordingly.

Thames water conueyed to the Conduit in Cornehill.

This yeare Peter Morris a Dutchman, but a free denizon, hauing made an engine for that purpose, conueyed Thames water in pipes of lead ouer the Bridge of Saint Magnus Church, at the North end of London bridge, and so into diuers mens houses in Thames streete, new fish street, and Grace-street vp vnto the Northwest corner of Leaden hall (the highest ground of the City of London) where the wast of the first maine pipe came first this yere 1582. on Christmasse euen: which maine pipe being since at the charges of the City brought vp into a standard there made for that purpose, and diuided into foure seuerall spouts, came foure waies plentifully, seruing to the vse of the inhabitants neere adioyning that will fetch it, and also cleansed the chanells of the streete, North toward Bishops gate, East towards Aldgate, South towards the bridge, and West towards the Stocke-market: no doubt a great commodity to that part of the Citie and would bee far greater, if the said water were maintained to runne continually, or at the least at euery tyde some reasonable quantitie, as at the first it did.

1582. A strange kind of earth mouing in Dorsetshire.

The 13. day of January, in the parish of Arnuttage, in a place called Blackmore in Dorsetshire, a peece of ground containing 3. acres remained from the place where it was first planted, and was carried cleane ouer another close, where Alder and Willow trees grew, the space of forty yeade (euery yeade containing fiftene foote) and hath stopt vp a high way that directed toward the market towne of Cerne, and yet notwithstanding the hedges wherewith it was inclosed, vnuyoned it still, and the trees stand thereon bolt vpright, leauing one Oake that is well nigh twenty yeads remoued: the place where this ground had his being, is left like vnto a great pit.

The same thirteenth day of January, being Sunday, about foure of the clocke in the after noone, the old and vnderpropped trafolds, round about the Beare-garden, commonly called Paris garden, on the South side of the riuer of Thames ouer against the City of London, ouercharged with people, fell sodainly down, whereby to the number of eight persons, men, and women were slaine, and many others sore hurt, and bruised, to the hastning of their liues. A friendly warning to such as more delight themselues in the cruelty of beasts, then in the workes of mercy, the fruits of a true professed faith, which ought to be the Sabbath dayes exercise. A warning to keepe holy the Sabbath

The 3. of February, being Sunday, William Brunter Haberdasher (a man of more then 60. yeares old) being lodged ouer the Southwest porch of Saint Bodes Church, in Flatstreete, with a woman named Mary Breame (whom the same Brunter had hapled out of Bridewell) were both found dead therein to death, in manner as shall be shewed. On the same Sunday in the morning, a wedding being celebrated in that Church, a strong sauour was smelt, which was thought to bee the burning of old theeues, or such like in some Gentlemans chamber there thereabouts, but in the afternoone before euening prayer, the parishioners espyed a smeake to issue out of Brunters chamber, and thereupon made hast to his doore, which they found fast locked on the inside, and were forced to breake it open, and yet could not enter till they had ripped vp the lead and roofe of the chamber, to let out the smoothering stench: which being done, they found Brunter dead, sitting on a settle by the bedside (in his apparell, and close trussed) his right thigh, and right arme, vp to the elbowe burnt with the fire of a small pan of coales that stood before him. The woman also lay dead ouer the pan, so that her armes were burnt with the neather part of her body before to the breast, and behind to the shoulders, and nothing else in the chamber burnt but the bottome of the settle wherein Brunter sate, Mary Breame had beene accused by her husband to bee a nice woman of her body but her husband being a bad man, and hauing spent faire and large possessions, and all whatsoeuer, hauing but two pence left in his purse, hang himselfe on a tree, against a stone wall at Spartin abbey in Surrey about Whitsuntide, an Anno. 1582. William Brunter and Mary Breame buried together, though sundry fables be deuised.

The 16. of April in the morning, Thomas Worst, and Alice Sheepheard were hanged at Shoe-lanes end at Fleetstreet of London, for killing an apprentise in the same lane. Also the same day about eyght of the clocke in the morning, a gunpowder house in Fetterlane, and diuers other houses neere adioyning were blowne vp with the spoyle of 1500. weight of powder, and two men and one woman were slaine, and diuers other persons alwell men as women and children were sore hurt, some blasted with the flames, some bruised with timber that fell vpon them: and a child lying in the house escaped vntouched. Houses blowne with gunpowder.

Albertus Alasco frō Barron of Lasco, Vaiuoda, or Palatine of Siradia in Poland, arriued at Harwich in Essex, and on the last of April, came by water to Winchester house in Southwarke, where he remained for the most part of his abode here. Alasko of his fame.

Thacker and Coping hanged at Berry for bookes.

Elias Thacker was hanged at Saint Edmondsbury in Suffolke, on the fourth of June, and Iohn Coping, on the 5. of the same moneth, for spreading certaine bookes, seditiously penned by one Robert Browne, against the Booke of Common prayer, established by the Lawes of this Realme, their bookes so many as could bee found were burnt before them.

Earle of Sussex deceased.

On the 9. of June, deceased Thomas Ratcliffe Earle of Sussex, Lord Chamberlaine to her Maiestie, and Knight of the Garter, at Bermondsey besides London, and was on the 8. of July, conueyed through the City of London, toward Newhall in Essex, there to be buried: first went before him, 45. poore men in black gownes, then on horsebacke, 120. seruing men in blacke coates, then 25. in blacke gownes or cloakes, besides the Heraulds of armes and others, which bare his helme, crest, sword, coate of armes, and banners of armes, &c. Then the deceased Earle in a Chariot couered with blacke veluet, drawn of foure goodly geldings: next after him was led the Earles steed couered with blacke velnet, then Sir Henry Ratcliffe, the succeeding Earle, chiefe mourner, and eight other Lords, all in blacke, then the Lord Maior and Aldermen of London, ryding in murrey, then the Gentlemen of Greys Inne, and last of all the worshipfull merchant Taylors in their liueries, for that the said Earle was brother of their company, as many Noble men and famous Princes, Kings of this Realme before him had beene: the Maior and Aldermen, the Gentlemen of Greis Inne, and the Merchant Taylors accompanied the Corps to the Bars without Aldgate, and returned.

Archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

Edmond Grindall Bishop of London, translated to bee Archbishop of Yorke, and then of Canterbury, deceased at Croydon in Surrey, on the first of July, and was there honourably buried vnder a faire monument for him raised. This Archbishop in his life, and by appointment to be finished after his death, founded a grammer Schoole at Saint Beghes in the countie of Cumberland, where he was borne, with a Schoolehouse for the master and Schollers, to be endued with thirty pound by yere, the schoolemaster to haue twenty pound, and a Scholler to teach as Usher, 5. markes by yeare, the rest to bee bestowed according to his statutes. To Queenes College in Oxford, 20. pounds by yere to maintaine one fellow, and two Schollers, to be taken out of his said Schole, and to that colledge he gaue the most part of his bookes, hee forgaue them foure pounds, and gaue them in plate 87. ounces, and a quarter. To Pembrooke Hall in Cambridge he gaue 22. pound by yeare, whereof 40. s. for the maintenance of a Greeke Lecture, and the other 20. pound for a fellow, and 2. Schollers to be likewise taken out of his Schole: to this College he gaue some bookes, and plate 40. ounces and halfe. To Magdalene College in Cambridge, he gaue fiue pound by yeare, for one Scholler to be taken out of his said Schole. To Christs Colledge in Cambridge, plate, 45. ounces. To the 8. little poore almes houses in Croydon 50. pound, to be bestowed in land for their reliefe. To the Citie of Canterbury, a hundred pound, to bee imployed vpon a Locke to sette the poze on worke, which Locke (as I am enformed) was neuer put to so good an vse.

Bernard Randolph Esquire, Seniour Sergeant to the Citie of London, deceased on the seauenth of August. This man in his life time deliuered nine hundred pound of good and lawfull money of England, to the company of fishmongers in London and bequeathed by his Testament a thousand pounds more, all to bee employed in charitable actions.

In the moneth of June, were sent to the seas a shippe called the barke Talbot, and a small barke, both manned with a hundred men vnder charge of the worshippfull William Borough Esquire, clearke of her Maiesties nauie, for apprehending of certaine outragious sea-rouers, who for that they were many in number and well appointed, so boldly behaued themselues, as that shortly after it was confidently buried, that they had vanquished in fight the said ship and barke: but within few dayes after, beyond all expectation, they were by the said William Borough and his company discomfited and taken to the number of ten saile (whereof three were prises) and some of the chiefe pirats, namely, Thomas Walton, *alias* Purser, Clinton, Atkinson, William Ellis, William Valentine, *alias* Bogh, Thomas Benou, Iohn Pellard, Edmond Copinger, Robert Woodman, and Iohn Euans, who on the thirtieth day of August, were hanged at Wapping in the Wose besides London. Walton as he went toward the gallowes, rent his Venetian breeches of crimson Taffata, and distributed the same, to such his old acquaintance as stood about him, but Atkinson had before giuen his murrey Velnet doublet with great gold buttons, and his like coloured Velnet Venetians layd with great gold lace, (apparrell too sumptuous for sea rouers) which hee had worne at the seas (and wherein hee was brought by prisoner from Cosse Castle, in the Isle of Pozbecke to London) vnto such friends as pleased him. Sea-rouers apprehended and executed. John Lewes burnt at Norwich.

On the 17. day of September, John Lewes, who named himselfe Abdon, an obstinate heretike, denying the Godhead of Christ, and holding diuers other detestable heresies (much like to his predecessor Matthew Hamond) was burned at Norwich.

On the 22. of September, Albertus de Lasco Palatine of Siradia in Poland, before spoken of, when he had well viewed the order of our English Court and Nobilitie, with other places of this Realme, especially the Vniuersitie of Oxford, he returned into Poland. Palatine of Siradia in Poland returned.

The 23. of September, Iohn White-gift doctor of diuinitie, sometime master of Trinity Colledge in Cambridge, and afterward Bishop of Worcester, was at Lambeth translated to the Archbishoppicke of Canterburie. Doct. Whitegift Archbishop of Canterbury.

The 10. of October, at Caster in Norfolke, about

A monstrous fish taken.

about two miles from Yarmouth, there was a fish by force of the Easterly winde driuen on shore, the length whereof was from the necke to the taile 17. yards and a foote, the head was great, for the chap of the law was three yards and a quarter in length, with teeth of three quarters of a yard compasse, great eyes, and two great holes ouer them to spout out water, her tayle was fourteene foote in breadth, in thicknesse from the backe to the belly she was foure yards and an halfe.

Players.

Comedians and Stage players, of former time were very poore and ignorant, in respect of these of this time, but being now growne very skilfull and exquisite Actors for all matters, they were entertained into the seruice of diuers great Lords, out of which Companies, there were twelue of the best chosen, and at the request of Sir Francis Walsingham, they were sworne the Queenes seruants, and were allowed Wages, and Liueries, as Grooms of the Chamber: and vntill this yeare 1583. the Queene had no Players: amongst these twelue Players, were two rare men, viz. Thomas Wilson for a quicke delicate refined extemporall wit, and Richard Tarleton for a wondrous plentifull pleasant extemporall wit, hee was the wonder of his time: he lieth buried in Shoreditch Church.

Tarleton for-bidden that men shc his picture for their signes.

Slade and Body executed.

John Slade Schoolemaister, and John Bodie master of art, being both condemned of high Treason, for maintaining the Romane power, were drawne, hanged, and quartered: Slade at Winchester on the thirteenth of October, and Bodie at Andouer on the 3. of November.

Ann. Reg. 26. 600. Horsestealers hanged ten at once.

One Diech a notable horse stealer was apprehended, and at the sessions holden at Newgate on the 4. of December, nineteene fonnes indicted, where he confessed eighteene, who also betweene the time of his apprehension and the said sessions, appeached many for stealing of horses, whereof ten were hanged in Smithfield, on the first of December, being horse-market there: he also holpe diuers men to their horses againe, and tooke of euery of them, ten shillings the piece, 02 more, whereby he made fiftene pounds toward his charges.

Desmonds head set on London bridge.

James Earle of Desmond in Ireland, secretly hanging without any succour, being taken in his cabine by one of the Irish, his head was cut off, and sent into England, where the same (as the head of an archrebell) was set on London bridge on the thirteene of December.

The towne of Nantwich burnt.

The same 13. of December, through negligence of vndiscrete persons, Brewing in the Towne of Nantwich, the fire being carelesly left, vpon some light matter, and so burst forth to the roofes of the house, and in short time increased, that from the West end of the towne, the flame was dispersed so furiously into the Towne, that in short space a great part of the Towne was burned downe to the ground, and there was consumed about the number of 200. houses, besides brew-houses, barnes, stables, &c. in all about fiue hundred houses.

About this time Iohn Sommervill, a furious young man of Elstow in Warwickshire, of late discouered and taken in his way, comming with full intent to kill the Queenes Maiestie (whom God long prosper to reigne ouer vs) confessed the treason, and that he was moued thereunto in his wicked spirit, by certaine trayterous persons: his kinsmen and allies, and also by often reading of certaine seditious bookes lately published, for the which the said Somervill, Edward Arden a squire in Parkhall in Warwickshire, Mary Arden his wife (father and mother in law to the said Somervill,) and Hugh Hall Priest, being with other before indicted at Warwicke, were on the 16. of December arraigned in the Guildhal of London, where they were found guilty and condemned of high treason. In the 19. of December, both Somervile, and Edward Arden, being brought from the Tower of London to Newgate of the same City, and there shut vp in seuerall places: within two houres after, Somervill was found (desperately) to haue strangled himselfe. And on the morrow being the 20. of December, Edward Arden was drawne from Newgate into Smithfield and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered: whose head with Sommervils head was set on London bridge, and his quarters on the gates of the City, but the body of Somervill was buried in the Moore-fields, more vnto the Windmils.

Somervill, Arden, and other arraigned.

Somervil strangleth himselfe in Newgate.

Arden executed.

On the 10. of January, at a Sessions holden in the Iustice hall, in the Old baily of London, for the geale deliuery of Newgate: William Carter of the City of London, was there indicted, arraigned, and condemned of high treason, for printing a seditious and trayterous book in English, entituled, A treatie of schisme: and was for the same (according to sentence pronounced against him) on the next morrow drawne from Newgate to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered. And forsomuch with against slanderous reports spread abroad in seditious bookes, letters, and libels, thereby to inflame our countrey-men, and her Maiesties subiects, a booke was published, entituled, a declaration of the fauourable dealing of her Maiesties Commissioners, &c.

Iesuit Carter executed.

The 22. of January, Iohn Watson, Bishop of Winchester deceased at Wolsey, and was buried at Winchester on the twelfth of February.

Bishop of Winchester deceased.

The seuenth of February, were arraigned, at Westminster, Iohn Ien, George Haddocke, Iohn Munden, Iohn Nutter, and Thomas Hemesford, all fiue found guiltie of high treason, in being made Priests beyond the seas, and by the Popes authority, since a statute made in *Anno primo* of her Maiesties raigne, and had iudgement to be hanged, bowelled, and quartered: which were all executed at Tyborne on the twelfth of February.

Seminaries executed.

The 21. of May, Francis Throckmorton Esquire was arraigned in the Guild hall of the Citie of London, where being found guilty of high Treason, hee was condemned, and had iudgement to be drawne hanged, bowelled, and quartered. The 10. of July next following, the same Francis Throckmorton was conueyed by

Francis Throckmorton arraigned, and executed.

by water, from the Tower of London, to the Blacke Fryers staires, and from thence by land to the Sessions hall in the Olde baily without Newgate, where he was deliuered to the Sheriffes of London, layd on a hurdle, drawne to Tyborne, and there executed according to his iudgement. A discouery of whose Treasons, practises and attempts against the Queens Maiestie and the Realme, were in the moneth of June published and printed in a booke intituled, A true and perfect declaration of the treasons practised and attempted by Francis Throckmorton, &c.

The second siege of Antwerp by the Spaniardes.

Pride not onely the first originall sinne in the world, and first fall of man, but the dotonfall of Lucifer, and his adherents, before the worlds creation, whose misery by his proper merits, euer since his banishment from the glorious presence of his maker, hath lyen in himselfe and all his ministers inuetorate enuy, at mans eternall felicitie, as euidently appeareth in the 3. of *Genesis*, by his subtill solicitation of Eua, vnto pride of knowledge. For which transgression her selfe, her husband, and their heires, were forthwith excluded the heauenly Paradise, and from that time the sinne of man encreased still, and in pride of heart, and hand, ouer-ruled the earth: for which the whole world was drowned. eight persons onely excepted, whose encrease grew no sooner to any greatnesse, but presently presumed to aspire the clouds, and ouerlooke the Architect of heauen: and for that attempt, God ouerthrew proud Nimrods lofty Tower, and sent confusion of their vaine speech. After that, as in the 7. of Daniel you may read concerning the foure-fold Monarchies, which were then to come, whose seuerall pride, did their seuerall states confound: the last whereof being larger, and more learned then the rest, stood longer then any of the three precedent, whose high authority, gaue warrant to the head-strong Iewes, to Crucifie the Sauiour of the world, hauing, as they thought, conuicted him of high Treason, before the Romane Tetrarch, where they renounced all their auncient Regall state, and rule, disdaining to acknowledge the true immediate right, of honor, and of loue, due to their Messias, meekely standing in the middell amongst them, being come in person, according to diuine promise made by God, vnto the Patriarkes, and in fulnesse of time, as was foretolde them, by their well knowne Prophets: yet they in pride of Romes authority, and scope of his humilitie, forsooke their euerlasting obliged allegeance, and with one consent, cryed, Crucifie that Christ, his blud bee vpon vs, and vpon our Children: For wee haue no king but Cæsar, &c. After this trayterous deed, the Iewes recald to mind, their ancient peculiar priuiledge, and prerogatiue, and by deuice acquitted themselues, from the imperiall gouernment, and then forthwith fortified their Cities, in farre stronger manner, then at any time before, especially Ierusalem: whereunto they added a seuen-fold fortitude, by making three walles of wonderous strength, and matchlesse defence, keeping therein continuall Garrison, of most valiant and expert Souldiers, and plenteously furnished it with victuall, and all manner of munition, so as they held themselues free, and secure, from all hazard of hostilitie, and became resolute in their wonted errors, and misbeleefe. Pride, and other temporall enemities, triumphing in their imaginary habilitie, &c. Whilst they thus lulled themselues in securitie, it pleased God to call to remembrance their offences, with the sinnes of their fore-fathers, who wilhed the blood of Christ might fal vpon them, and their children. And about 40. yeares after his glorious Ascension, Titus the Romane generall, with a mighty hoste, subdued the Country, and besieged that great City, the inhabitants whereof, besides their daily fight, for seuen yeares space, endured extreame misery, of famine, and ciuill discord. And when the Romanes had won that state, there was as many Iewes sold for a peece of Romane coyne, as there was peeces of plate giuen to betray Christ: besides their vtter extirpation vnto this day. And as this auncient famous Citie, in her greatnesse fell through pride: and since that time, the last great Monarchie of Rome it selfe, as did the rest, when they thought least of a mischefe: Euen so likewise it happened, this present yeare, 1584. vnto the flourishing Citie of Antwerpe, after it had bene subdued, and reduced vnto former obedience, by the Regent of Parma, in the yeare 1567. and after that by their politick practise, hauing freed themselues for diuers yeeres, from all their forraine seruitude, and Spaynes gouernment, and being now growne the brauest, and wealthiest Citie in this part of the world, and greatest in comerce: which said generall comerce was formerly kept at Burges, and remooued thence to Antwerpe, by reason it standeth vpon a goodly riuer, more commodious, and indifferent for all nations: this stately City, was within an hundreth yeares past, but a poore fisher Towne, though now the only rich, and beauteous Citie of the West, whose inhabitants like her selfe, bigge swolne with pride: her Merchants boasting of their mightie wealth, would prowdly, wagers lay amongst themselues, who should driue the greatest heape of coyne. This Cittie, and these men for their owne security, and enioying of their abundant store, desirous to shake off all Regall authoritie, surfetting in their owne loosenesse, hauing now at all liberte within themselues, began to furnish, and to fortifie in as ample manner, as did the Iewes, omitting nothing auayleable for their defence: as well by defacing the Kings forts and Castles, as by building new forts and bulwarks, besides their store of ships, and strength by sea, and assurance of ayde, from diuers prouinces, their vowed confederates: they still perfited farms dread of enemies, vntill the death of their most Noble and prudent Protector, William of Nassa, Prince of Orenge, lately slaine by Iohn Iaurigny. Whereupon the Duke of Parma, with eleuen thousand footmen, and three thousand horse, besieged it, and made a bridge ouer the Scheld,

Ierusalem destroyed, as our Sauiour foretold in the Gospel.

The great wealth of Antwerpe.

in manner following. The Duke being Lord of the field, planted his forces round on the land side, whereat the City gaue small regard, being plentifully relieued by the riuer from Holland, Zeland, and other places. The Duke in his former obseruation, and present iudgement, beheld all his endeauors loll, except he could speedily stop the riuer, and preuent all succour by water, and thereupon, after he had strongly fortified, vpon either side the Scheld, being in distance about three English myles, downeward towardes the Sea from Antwerpe, he fired pyles, and postes, into the ground, as farre as the water would permit, and then placed two and thirty barge hoyes, side by side, double chayned, and planched together, and moored fast with double Anchors at either side, and in euery of them, a great peece of Ordinance, both in proa, and poope, with thirty stout soulgiers appointed to euery Hoy, who for their most security against all attempts, layd great fyrre mattes thwart the riuer, being likewise fast moored, about ten yardes distant from either side the Bridge, to preuent all sudden approach of daunger: this Bridge was made to open at pleasure, and giue free passage vnto whom they listed, and presently to shut againe, the Duke with much adoe finished this worke in October, 1584.

Note. A bridge almost nine hundred yards long.

When the Citizens saw, that the Duke had brought his purpole vnto desired effect, and pestred them of all succors, then the effeminate Merchants, exercised armes with martiall discipline, and dayly issued forth vpon the face of the enemie, vntill diuers hundreds of their number, by often skirmishing were diminished, and then practised sundry ingenious stratagems to regaine their former ayde, and intercourse by water, viz. they sent fiue great ships, with full sayle, and strength of wind and tyde, to ream the bridge, but they failed, then they made diuers great drifes vnder water, thinking by violence of the streame, to beare away the Bridge, which tooke as little effect as the former. After that, they sent diuers ships well stored with powder, couered ouer with broken stones, pieces of timber, and iron, hauing in euery of them, a proportion of match lighted, which of it selfe should giue fire, within short space after their comming to the bridge, being carefully guided downe the streame, vntill they came within shot of the enemie: of all these deuices, one only to his effect, which slew eight hundred common soulgiers, with the Viscount of Gaunt, and blew downe the Duke of Parmas himselfe: some of the former deuices, with others, tending all to one purpose, were sometimes discerned, and the bridge opened to giue them passage: but their last deuice, of greatest hope, was a great vessell, wherein was layd a beue three thousand weight of gun-powder, and ouer the same, was layd all manner of great stones, as great stones, mill-stones, barres of iron, and peeces of Ordinance, all which were arched ouer by Masons art, to encrease the violence, and when it came towardes the enemie, Sir Rowland Yorke, being then vice-admirall espyed the Hoate, and very resolutely boorded it, tooke out the Match, and anchored it. This was one of the three great engines made by the Citizens, which they termed, *Fin de la guerre, Rompula Tout*, and the *Caga fuego*, who now perceiuing, that not onely all their former plots, colles and deuices, were frustrate, and vnfortunate, but also desperate, of any further meanes for their relefe: hauing by this time spent most of their wealth, and endured great famine, and that now their beauteous daughters, and daintie dames, would gladly sell their costly gai lands, in exchange of cozonets, to buy them bread, which in their wonted wantonnesse they knew not how to weare, so as the best and wealthiest, for want of food and liberty, became tayne suppliants with the multitude, praying their gouernour to make some speedie and honourable composition with Spaines generall, which done, the Citie was payded to the Duke of Parma, the 7. of August, one thousand fiue hundred eighty fiue.

The daughters of Antwerp now fain to weare garlands of gold curiously wrought pleasantwise, ameled and very richly set with precious stones, which garlands they dayly wore in the time of famine.

The 12. of Nouember the Queenes Maiesty (returning after her Progresse) came to her Palace of Saint James, where the Citizens of London, to the number of 200. the grauest sort in coates of Velues, and chaines of gold on horse backe, and 1000. of the companies on foote, hauing with them 1000. men with torches ready there to giue light on euery side, for that the night drew on, receiued and welcomed her. And on the 24. day of the same moneth her Maiesty and the Lords rode to the Parliament, which was that day begun at Westminster.

The Citizens receiue the Queene from her progresse.

Parliament at Westminster

In the moneth of January, deceased Edward Fines, Lord Clinton, Earle of Lincolne, and Lord Admirall of England, Knight of the Garter, and one of her Maiesties Priuy Councell a man of great yeres and seruice, as well by Sea as by land, he was buried at Windsor.

1585. Earle of Lincolne deceased.

The 21. of January, Iesuites, Seminaries, and other maffing Priests, to the number of 21 late prisoners in the Tower of London, Marshalsea, and Kings bench, were shipped at the Tower wharfe, to be conueyed towards France, and banished this Realme for euer, by vertue of a Commission from her Maiestie, as may more fully appeare by the same Commission.

Seminaries and other maffing Priests banished England.

Henry Earl of Derby, appointed by her Maiesty Ambassador to Henry the 3. French King, and to inuest him with the order of the Garter, tok his leaue of the Queene Maiesty at Greenwich the 20. of January, and with him such Gentlemen as were present, were admitted to kisse her highnesse hand, Master Cooke Clarencieux, appointed to attend in that voyage in place of Garter, whose roome was voyd, and Roger, Somerset herault, likwise appointed to that iourny, Noblemen, & gentlemen attending on the Earle of Darby, the Lord Sands, Fredericke, Lord Windsor, Master Scrope son & heire to the Lord Scrope, Master Windsor, brother to the Lord Windsor, sir Richard Sherborne, sir Ralph Brierton, Master Anthony Cooke, Master Gerard son and heire to sir Thomas Gerard Master Fleetwood, Master Nudigate, Master Stallage, Gent. wher, the Queenes seruantes, Master

The Earle of Derbies Ambassage into France.

Master Crompton, Master Smith, Master Denton, Master Miles, Master Thomas Arden, steward, Master Fox. controller, Master Newton, Gentleman vsher, Master Phillips, chaplain, Master Alexander Gentleman of the hose Master Morecroft, Physitian: the Earles waiting Gentlemen, Master Dawnie son and heire to sir Iohn Dawnie, Master Legh, son and heire to sir Pierce a Legh Master Warren, &c. On the 26. of January, the Earle with his traine passed from London to Graueseud, where taking post-hoyles, they rid to Sittingborne, and from thence to Dower, where they embarqued and landed at Caleis on the 1. of February, on the 3. of February, the Earle with his whole traine went from Caleis to Bologne to bed, where they were very well entertained. On the 4. of February, they rid to Montrell, on the hill to Abbeuil, where they were met with a hundred and fifty shot of harquebusiers. On the first they take their tourney to Amiens, whereof Monsieur Crequiere, accompanied with 100. Gentlemen and best Citizens, they were met halfe a mile without the towne, that night the said Crequiere, presented the Earle with great store of very large & good fresh water fish, and the town with wine of diuers sorts, and the day following being Sunday, the said Crequiere inuited the Earl to dinner, which dinner was highly commended. After dinner the Earle with his traine went to Bethuill to bed, the next night to Clermont, where he stayed tuesday and wednesday: the 10. of February he went to Luzarch. On the 11. to S. Denis, wher by the way hee was met by sir Ed: Stafford, her Maiesties Ambassador resident with the French King, who brought with him diuers gentlemen of England to the number of 30. hoyse, and so accompanied him to S. Denis, where they kept company all the day following being Friday. On Saturday, his honour made his entry into Paris about 2. of the clocke in the afternoone, there being of the L. Ambassadors traine more then 200. hoyse, and midway betwixt S. Denis and Paris, there met with them sent from the King the Duke of Montpenser, a Prince of the blood, the Lord of Cauigny, le Chapelaux Vrsins County de Lude, de Pienne, de Maiscorn, de la Mothfenilon, who had sometimes bin Ambassadour Leger in England, Deltric, Dabin, de Fontaines, de Cormillon, the Marquesse of Cureon, the Count de Grignan, all Councellors to the King, and Knights of the holy Ghost. The Duke of Vermouille, the Counties Beffac, de Creance, Sancere, and of Lazure, with a great number of Lords and Barrons, Gentlemen of the chamber. These did accompany the Earle of Darby vnto Postell de Longeneuil, there was his Lordship with the other Lords and Gent. lodged, where was 3. tables very sumptuously furnished for them, all of the Kings cost, the one table in the great chamber for the Lords and Gent. seruants to her Maiestie, the other in the hall, for the Earle of Darbies Gent. and the 3. in a gallery beneath for Gentlemens seruants, besides liuery, into euery chamber, both of wat, wood, wine, and such like, in as great plenty as could be desired. On Sunday the 14. of February, the Ambassadour with the rest of the Earles traine, through the garden, accompanied with the said Lords de la Mothfenelon, de Curton, & Grignan together with other, and found the Captains of the regiment of the Kings guard, making two rankes on either side of the streete, beginning from the posterne to the Loure gate, who welcomed him in the Kings behalfe. Without the gate of the said Loure, he was receiued by the Lieutenants of the great Preuost of France, and his archers. At the Loure gate by the sier de Montegus, Captaine thereof to his Maiestie, and his archers, which archers together with those of the great Preuost made 2. rankes from the sayd gate of the Loure, to the gate of the Staires: from which gate his Lordship was receiued by the sier de Perdillons, the French Lieutenant of the Suissers of the Kings guard, which from the foot of the Staires to the head of the hall made 2. rankes for his Lordships passage. At the entry of the hall his Lordship was receiued by the sier de Chateau Vieux Knight of the holy Ghost, and Captaine of the Archers of the Kings guard, who likewise from the sayd doore vnto the doore of the antichamber, made 2. rankes: from the doore of the antichamber, his Lordship was receiued by sier de Conbault, of the holy Ghost, chiefe Master de Hostelle to his Maiestie, and by his gentlemen waiters, and there in the sayd antichamber, al the sayd Earle of Darbies officers and Gent. wearing liueries, were appointed to stay, & the Queens seruants that proceeded next, went thi forward: at the entry of the chamber of state, his Lordship was receiued by the sier de Lencourt, Knight of the holy Ghost, chiefe Esquire of the Kings Stable, and the other Esquires of the Stable, together with the Lieutenant of the hundred gentlemen of his Maiesties, who made 2. rankes from that chamber doore, to the chamber of Audience, euery of them hauing halberts in their hands. At the entrance of the antichamber, his Lordship was receiued by the Duke de Neuers, accompanied with the Gent. of the Kings chamber Ordinary, who made 2. rankes from that chamber doore to the chamber Royall. Into the sayd chamber Royall, first entred all the Gent. the Queens Maiesties seruants, the Lords that had receiued and accompanied the sayd Earle and Lords: & the sayd Duke de Ioieuse accompanied the said Earle of Derby into the bars that stood about the hal pace, or mounting floore in the said chamber, where the King stood at his beds feet, accompanied with the said barrons, on his right hand, with the Cardinals of Burbon, Vadosine and Ioieuse, and on the left hand with the Lords, the Princes of Contie, the County de Soissons & Dombpensier Princes of the blood, the Dukes of Neuers, Delocurt, de la Tremoille, de Retz, Monsieur le Chancellor, sier de Villequier, du Bouchafe, de la Valette, Dantragues, de la Chappelle aux Vrsins, Cauignie, la Vanvion, Counte de Mayvievrier, Clermont, Dantragues, de Larchant, and other knights, of the holy Ghost, and councellors of the estates

in great number, The said Earle with the Lord Ambassador ordinarie of England, alonely entred within the said haltpace, within the barriers vnto his Maiestie, of whom they were receiued with great courtesie, and as amiable countenance as could be, and the Earle deliuered the Queenes Maiesties letters vnto the King with great reuerence, and then making rehearsall of that he had in charge to say, the said Ambassador presented vnto the King, the Lords, Sands, and Windsor, and other the English Knights, and Gent. which all one after another mounted vpon the haltpace, kissed their hands, and did their reuerence vnto the King. Then the Earle tooke his leaue, and was conducted by all the Lords, and Captaines, vnto the place where they had first receiued him. Afterward he went to salute the Queen mother, and at the entrance into her chamber, he was receiued by Monsieur de Laclac Knight of the Holy Ghost, & Knight of honor vnto the same Queene, whom he found accompanied with her neece the Princesse of Loraine, standing at her beds head, the Princesse of Condie, and Ionti, and the Dutches of Neuers, of Dusez, and of Roy, and other Ladies and Gentlewomen in great number. From thence his Lordship was conueyed to the Queen Regents chamber, at the entrance whereof, hee was receiued by the Countesse de Fiesque, Knight of the Holy Ghost, and her Knight of honour, finding her accompanied with the Dutches of Montpensier, and Ioruals, who stood at her beds feet, the Lady of Roydon, her Lady of honor, and other Ladies and Gentlewomen in great number, and then returned to the foresayd hostell, de Longueuile. On monday the 15. of February, the King by Monsieur le Mosbefenelon told the Lord Ambassador his mind, touching the receit of the order, that hee intended to receiue it on Thursday following in the afternoone, at the Augustine Friers, which was done accordingly, with a mantle of blew velvet, and a hood and collor of the order, with a booke of the statutes of the order, which all were inuested vpon the King in a place called Parlon de nauerales, but the oath was administred vnto the King, in the Friers Church, *Magnificat* being sung. On the 23. of February, the Ambassador with his traine take their leaue, at whose return from the Court to his lodging, he was presented that night with a rich cupboord of plate, worth 1200. l. at the least: and vnto master Clarencieux was giuen a chaine of gold, worth 120. l. and better of 136 linkes, to Mr. Somerset, a chaine of 150. linkes, worth 100 mark, and to T. Miles one of the same value. On thursday next, the Earle went with his traine forward homewards from Paris vnto S. Denis, and so were lodged. All the way, in the same lodgings that before they had bin receiued in arriued & prosperously in England, from Bologne to Douer, the 12. of March, and on the Tuesday following were brought to the Queens Maiesties presence at Greenwich, who graciously welcommed them home.

William Parry arreated.

The second day of March, William Parry, was drawne from the Tower, through the City of London to Westminster, and there in the Pallace Court, hanged, bowelled, and quartered for high Treason, as may appeare by a booke extant, intituled a true and playne declaration of the horrible Treasons, practised by William Parry, &c.

This yere Sir Walter Mildmay Knight, Chancelor of the Exchequer, and one of her Maiesties Priuy Councell, founded a Colledge in the Vniuersity of Cambridge, vpon the house, and ground of the late frier preachers Dominikes, or blacke fryers, in the preachers street, and named it Emanuell Colledge.

Emanuell Colledge.

The nine and twentieth of March, the Parliament was dissolued, at the breaking vp whereof, the Queenes Maiestie made an Oration in Parliament. the Parliament house, to such effect as followeth. My Lords and ye of the lower house, my silence must not minish the owner so much, as to suppose a substitute sufficient to render you the thankes, that my heart yeeldeth you: not so much for the safe keeping of my life (for which your care appeareth so manifest) as for the neglecting your priuate future perill, not regarding other way then my present state, no Prince herein (I confesse) can be forced, or rather bound then I am, with the like of your good will, and can for that but yeld a heart and head to seeke for euer all your best: yet one matter toucheth me so neere, as I may not ouer slip: Religion, the ground on which all other matters ought to take roote, and being corrupted may mar all the tree: and that there be some fault-finders with the order of the clergie, which I may make a slander to my selfe and the Church, whose ouer-looker God hath made me, whose negligence cannot be excused, if any schismes or errours heretofore haue suffered. Thus much I must say, that some faults are negligences may grow and be (as in all other great charges it happeneth) and what vocation without all which if you my Lords of the clergie doe not amend, I mind to depose you, looke you therefore well to your charges, thus may they be amended without hazarde or open exclamation. I am supposed to haue many kindes, but most Philosophical: I must yeeld this to be true, that I suppose few (that be no professors) haue read more. And I need not tell you, that I am so simple that I vnderstand not, nor so forgetfull, that I remember not, and yet amongst my many volumes, I hope Gods booke hath not beene my schoolemaster, in which we find that, which by reason (for my part) wee ought to beleeue, that saing so great wickednes and griefs in the world, in which we liue but as way-faring pilgrimes, we must suppose that God would neuer haue made vs, but for a better place, and of more comfort then we find here. I know no creature that breatheth, whose life standeth hourely in more perill for it then mine owne, who entred not into my state without sight of manifold dangers of life, and Crowne, as one that had the mightiest and greatest to inuattle with. Then it followeth, that I regarded it so much, as I left my selfe behind my care. And so you see, that you wrong mee too much (if any such there bee) as doubt my coldnes in that behalfe: for if I were not

not perswaded that mine were the trueth of Gods wil: God forbid I should liue to prescribe it to you. Take heed lest Ecclesiastes say not too true: they that feare the hoary frost, the snow shall fall vpon them. I see many ouer-bold with God almighty, making to many subtill framings of his blessed wil, as Lawyers do with humane Testaments: the presumption is so great, as I may not suffer it (yet mind I not hereby to animate Romanists, which what aduersaries they be to mine estate, is sufficiently knowne) nor tollerate new fangledones. I meane to guide them both by Gods true rule: in both parts be perils, and of the latter, I must pronounce them dangerous to a Kingly rule, to haue euery man according to his owne censure, to make a dome of the validity and puissre of his Princes gouernement, with a common baile and corner of Gods word, whose followers must not be iudged but by priuate mens exposition. God defend you from such a ruler, that so euill would guide you. Now I conclude, that your loue and care neither is nor shall bee bestowed vpon a carelesse Prince, but such as for your good will paieth as little for this world, as who saieth least, with thankes for your free Subsidy: I manifest shew of the abundance of your good wiles, the which I assure you, but to bee employed to your weale, I could bee better pleased to returne then receiue. Thus much her Maiesties Oration. In this Parliament a subsidie of two shillings eight pence goods, and 4. s. Lands was granted, and two fifteanes by the laitie.

In the moneth of Aprill, about the 14. day by commandement of her Maiestie, the citizens of London, appointed out of their companies of the same City, to the number of 4000 men with armour, ensignes, drums, fifes, and other furniture for the wars, the greater part whereof were shot, the other were pikes, and halberts, in faire coasts: all those to be trained vp vnder expert Captaines, with Sergeants of the bands, viuters, and other necessary officers, mustered, and skirmished day by at the Miles end, and in Saint Georges field: and on the 18. of May (hauing ouer night set forward out of S. Georges field) muttered in the parke at Greenwich, and skirmished before the Queenes Maiestie, who gaue to them great thankes, for their actuitie and paines.

The Londes men trayned by with shot.

At this time, Phillip Earle of Arundell attempted to haue passed the seas without licence for the which he was committed to the Tower, the 25. of Aprill, 1585. what the cause might be that moued this Noble man to flie the realm, being best knowne to himselfe, I refer you to a letter of his owne hand, written vnto the Queenes Maiestie, which hee left behind him; the coppie whereof followeth.

The Earle of Arundell committed to the Tower.

May it please your most excellent Maiestie, as the displeasure of a Prince is a heauier burden to beare, then the hard conceit of a meaner and inferiour person: so it is not lawfull for any sclesse conuenient for them to settle an opinion of mislike before either there appeare some cause sufficient to procure it, or there be a fault committed worthy to deserue it. I speake not this that I doubt of your Maiesties gracious disposition, or that I feare you will condemne me without mit and euident proofe (for I know it agreeth with the honour of your estate, and I can witnesse it hath beene the manner of your proceedings, to know the cause, before you giue the censure, and to heare the matter before you condemne the person) but I speake with humilitie, that I may receiue this fauourable and indifferent dealing, at your Maiesties hander, because, as I am most desirous to conserue your gracious and good opinion, so I am most earnest to remoue all imp edments, that may hinder or withdraw the same: and besides for that many actions at the first shew, may seeme to be rash and headdied, which after ripe and sufficient consideration of the cause, doe appeare to be wil and necessary. I most humbly beseech your most excellent Maiestie, to vouchsafe but the reading of this simple writing. I in allowing me this (which is no more then your Maiesties place both require you to follow vppon your meanest subiects, and the graciousnesse of your nature, hath alwaies moued you to grant vnto euery sutor) your Maiestie shall do a thing which is pleasing in the sight of God, and honorable in the eyes of the world, you shall take a course which is worthy of your selfe and do that iustice which appertaineth to your estate: to be short, I doubt not by this meanes both your Maiestie shall rest satisfied, in seeing the true and full defence of my dealing, and I remaine happie, being deliuered from all feare and suspect of your displeasure.

And because the course of my former life may in some part expresse the reasons of my present fact, I will humbly beseech your Maiestie, that with fauour I may put you in remembrance, how since my first comming to the Court, which is 9. or 10. yeares past at the least, it hath beene my chiefest care to please your Maiestie, and my greatest desire to performe that which I thought might most content you, how I haue beene alwaies ready, and euer willing to doe you that seruice which either duty required at my hands or the ample state of mine abilitie would permit, your Maiestie best knoweth, and for proofe thereof, I will appeale to none other iudge, then your selfe, though I could iustly call a great part of your Realm, to be a witnesse hereunto: and so hapy was I before some yeares, in that it pleased your Maiestie to accept my seruice in gracious part, and to conceiue a fauourable opinion of al mine actions, as I accounted my labors which I take a comfort, I made my selfe a stranger to mine owne house, to be a continuall waiter vppon your Maiestie, and liked to liue in any sort at the Court, rather then in the best manner at home, for I thought my selfe happiest, when I was nearest to your Maiestie, and my time best imployed, where I bestowed it in doing of your seruice: but at the last, whether the malice of mine aduersaries, by reason of your Maiesties good countenance towardes mee, did begin to bee greater then it was, or the credit which your Maiestie for my misliap did grow to be more then in times past it

had bene, I know not, but I found by little and a little your good opinion declined and your favour, as I thought, somewhat strange from me: I heard from time to time, how your Majestie tooke exception of many of my actions, and how it pleased you sayly in your speeches to bewray an hard and euill opinion of mee: I saw that such as you euermore hated in your heart, and those which before you had not fauored, did win your Majesties good countenance, which till that time they could by no meanes obtaine, and besides that received protection and assistance from your Majestie in all their actions against mee, yea oftly after they had offered me wrong and were become mine aduersaries. Notwithstanding all this, I knowing my conscience to be cleare, came at conuenient times to doe my duties to your Majestie, and though it pleased you at some times to talke with mee: yet your Majestie neuer charged me with the least fault or offence done you, and those aduersaries of mine, which did broile behind my backe, durst neuer accuse me nor once open their mouthes to my face, so that I accounted my hap very ill that I was wrongfully accused, but much worse because at no time I was openly charged, whereby I might haue had a iust accusation, both to haue shewed mine innocency, and to haue satisfied your Majesties suspition: for first seeing your Majestie to countenance my aduersaries who seeke of purpose to disgrace mee, and that you would not many times in their presence vouchsafe so much as once to lend your eyes to the place where I stoode. Secondly, I finding them encouraged to mine vtmost many wayes, by the helpe of your fauour, my selfe being vnable to helpe my selfe any waye, by reason of your displeasure: Lastly perceiuing by your Majesties open disgrace, which all men did note, and by your bitter speeches which vext mee not a little, that I was generally accounted, nay that I was in a manner pointed at as one whom your Majestie did disdaine, and meete disgrace, and as a person whom you did deadly hate, and especially dislike, I knew this smoake did bewray a fire, and I saw these clouds did foretell a storme, and therefore prepared my selfe with patience to endure whatsoeuer was: it was the will of God, by meanes of your Majesties indignation to lay vpon mee, being assured that my faults towardes you were none, though mine offences towardes other were many: and thus hauing resolued my selfe to endure whatsoeuer should happen, I continued some moneths in this deepe disgrace, without either knowing what was the ground of your Majesties displeasure, or hearing what should be the ende of mine owne misfortune: till at last I was called at your Majesties commandement before your Councell at two sundry times, where many things were obiected against me, and some of them such trifles, as they were ridiculous, others of them could not bee iustified: and yet notwithstanding that mine innocency did so euidently appeare, by mine answeres, as my greatest enemies could not reprooue me of the smallest offence, or vnduitifulnesse to your Majestie, I was commanded to keepe my house: wherefore I saw it was resolued by the course of this dealing, that how cleare or manifest soeuer mine innocencie was, mine aduersaries should receiue the triumph of the victorie, in hauing what they would: I saw the disgrace of mine owne misfortune, in enduring that which no way I had deserued, and mine enemies to maintaine their doing by some colourable shew, seeing they could not iustifie their actions by any sufficient proofe, procured your Majestie to send some of your Councell, foure dayes after my restraint to examine mee of new matters, which were of greater weight and importance, but as my answeres as the former: and I do charged my selfe as cleerely as of the other before mentioned, so as mine innocency did more plainly appeare, although my restraint did continue, for after this which was my last examination, I remained in the same state fiftene weekes at the least, no man charging me with the least offence, nor my conscience being able to accuse mee of the smallest fault, and at the last when either mine enemies could not for shame longer continue in their vnreasonable proceedings, or that your Majestie was informed by some of my friends, that I had too long endured this punishment, I was restored to my former liberty, without hearing any iust cause of your Majesties hard conceipt, or of no good colour, why I was committed, or but the shadowe of a fault which I might bee touched withy: wherefore after I had safely escaped those stormes, and when I was cleerely deliuered from all my troubles, I began to call to remembrance the heauy sentence which had lighted vpon these 30. of mine aduersaries, which immediatly went before mee. The first being my great grandfather, who was of free birth all supition, and shew of any fault, as because they had no colour or matter to bring him to his answere, they attainted him by act of Parliament, without euer challenging him to his answere. The second being my Grandfather, as beeing of his truth, and condemned for such trifle, as amazed the standers by at that time, and it is ridiculous at this time to heare the same: now, he was to faultlesse in all respects, as the Earle of Southampton then was being one of his greatest enemies, fearing lest his innocencie would bee a meane to saue his life, told sir Christ pher Hay (as being one of his Jury before hand, that though he saw no other matter weighty inough to condemne him, yet there were sufficient reason to make him say guiltie, for that he was an vnmeete man to liue in a Common wealth. The last being my Father, was arraigned according to the Law, and condemned by his peeres. God forbid I should thinke, but that his tryers did that whereunto their consciences did lead them, and yet gaue mee leaue, I must heartily beseech your Majestie, to say thus much, that how euer he might bee vnwittingly or vnwillingly drawne into greater danger then himselfe did either see or imagine: yet all his actions did plainly

plainly declare, and his greatest enemies must of necessity confesse, that he neuer carried any disloyall minde to your Majestie, nor intended any vnduitfull act to his Country: and when I had in this sort both fully and throughly considered the fortune of those three which were past, I called to minde my owne danger which was present, and did thinke it impossible by the ayde of this rough beginning, but I might as well follow them in their fortune, as I haue succeeded them in their place: for I considered in the greatnesse of mine enemies power, to ouerthrow mee, in the weakenesse of my selfe, no ability to defend mee. I perceiued in my late trouble, how narrowly my life was sought, and how easily your Majestie was drawne to a iniurious and hard opinion of mine honest loyes, and by my passed dangers how mine innocencie was no sufficient warrant to protect my selfe: I knew my selfe, and besides was charged by your Councell to bee of that Religion which they accounted odious and dangerous to your estate. Lastly, but principally I weighed, in what miserable and doubtfull case my estate had remained, if that my life had not beene taken, as it was, not vnlikely by former troubles: for I protest the greatest burden that rested in my conscience at that time, was because I had not liued according to the prescript rule of that which I vndoubtedly beleeue, and assuredly doe presume my selfe to be in the truth. Wherefore being somewhat induced by all these reasons, but chiefely moued by this last argument, I thought that the best performing of my duty towards God, in such sort as I knew would please him best, might be a principall occasion of my late punishment, and therefore resolued whiles I had opportunity, to take the course which might be sure to saue my selfe from the danger of shipwracke, although my body were subiect to the perill of misfortune: and euer since the time, I followed and pursued this good intent of mine, though I perceiued some, what more danger to mine estate, yet I humbly thanke God I haue found a great deale more quietnesse in my minde: and in that respect I haue iust occasion to esteeme my passed troubles as my greatest felicity, for both of them were (though indirectly) the meanes to leade mee to that course, which euer hetherto hath perfect quietnesse, and onely procureth eternall happinesse: and being resolued rather to endure my punishment, then willingly to decline from the beginning I had begun, I did bend my selfe wholly as neere as I could to continue in the same, without any act which was repugnant to my faith, and profession: and by meanes heereof, was compelled to doe many things, which might procure perill to my selfe, and be an occasion of mislike to your Majestie. For the first day of this Parliament, when your Majestie with all your Nobility, was hearing of a Sermon, in the Cathedrall Church of Westminster aboue in the Chancell, I was driuen to walke by my selfe, belowe in one of the Iles: and one day this last Lent, when your Majestie was hearing another Sermon in the Chappell at Greenwich, I was forced to stay that while aboue in the presence Chamber: to be short, when your Majestie went vpon Sunday or Holyday, to your great Closet, I was forced either to stay in the privy Chamber, and not to waite vpon you at all, or else presently to depart as soone as I had brought you to the Chappell. These things with many more I could by no meanes escape, but only by an open plaine discovery of my selfe, in the eye and opinion of all men, as the true cause of my refuse: all could no longer be hidden, although for a while it were not generally noted and obserued: wherefore since I saw it of necessity, it must shortly be discouered, and withall remembred, what a watchfull and iealous eye was carried ouer all those which were knowne to be Recusants, and therewithall calling to minde how all their lodgings were continually searched, and to how great danger they were subiect, if a Iesuite, or a Seminary Priest were found within their houses: I began to consider, that either I could not serue God in such sort as I had professed, or else I must incurre the hazard of greater punishment, then I was willing to endure: I made resolute and vnremoueable to continue in the first, though it were with danger of life, and therefore did ayde I my minde, to deuise what meanes I could, for auoyding of the last: long I was debating with my selfe what course to take, for when I considered, in what continuall danger I did remaine here in England, both by the lawes heeretofore established, and by a new act lately made, I did thinke it the safest, was to depart out of this Realme, and abide in some other place, where I might liue without danger of my conscience, without offence to your Majestie, without this seruile subiection to mine enemies: and without this daily perill to my life, and yet I was drawne by such forcible perswasions to be of another opinion, as I could not easily resolue, on which part to ground and settle my determination: for on the one side, my native Country, my friends, my wife, and kinsfolke did vnite mee to stay: on the other side, the infelo time of my house, the power of mine aduersaries, the remembrance of my former trouble, and the knowledge of my present danger did hasten me to goe: and in the end I found no middle course, but either I must venture to liue in extreame poverty abroad, or to bee sure to remaine in continuall danger at home: I regarded more the hazard of my life, wherein stode the perill of mine estate, and I rather sought the preseruation of my life, then the profit of my liuing. Wherefore after I had waighed as many dangers as I could remember, and was perswaded, that to depart the Realme, was the safest way I could take: I did resolue mee to take the benefit of a happy winde, to auoide the violence of a bitter storme, and knowing that the dealing of those that goe beyond the Seas, though their intent be neuer so good and dutifull, were yet euill thought of: I presumed to write this letter to your Majestie, and in it, to declare the true causes and reasons of my departure, both to remoue all

occasions of doubt, and suspition from your Maiestie, which otherwise this sodaine departure of mine, might peraduenture procure: and also to settle as much as lyeth in me, your gracious and good opinion of me, which as I haue borne moste desirous to enioy, so will I be moste willing to deserue: and because my aduersaries may take this as a fit opportunity to bewray their malice, and to kindle your Maiesties indignation against me, I most humbly beseech your Maiestie to aske, such as you doe thinke doe hate me most, whether being of that Religion, which I doe professe, and standing euery way in the state and condition wherein I did remaine, they would haue taken that course for safety of their soules, and discharge of their consciences, which I did: and either they must directly tell you, that they would haue done the same, or plainely acknowledge themselues to bee meere Atheistes, which howsoeuer they be affected in their hearts, I thinke they would be loath to confesse with their mouthes: and when they haue satisfied your Maiestie in this point which is the first, I beseech you to aske them of the second which is the last. Whether hauing had their heads so fatally and so successefully touched, and finding themselues to be of that Religion which is accounted dangerous, and odious, to the present state: whether hauing beene hardly handled long restrained, and openly disgraced heretofore for nothing: and might now be drawne for their conscience into great and continuall danger: whether hauing some in effect create with your Maiestie, their mortall and professed enemies, and standing suspected persons in your Maiesties opinion, both in respect of the Father, who was taken away in your Maiesties time, and of themselues, who haue beene since many wayes wronged and maimed, and besides being of that Religion which your Maiestie doth detest, and of which you are most iealous and doubtfull: to be short, whether hauing had one of these Anchoras taken away, without shadow of any fault, but onely for this cause, for that he was thought to beare too great a man to liue in a commonwealth, at that time, and knowing themselues to be so reputed at this time, of those which doe beare the most sway in your Maiesties government. Lastly, whether not being able to doe any act of duty whereunto their Religion did binde them, without the incurring of the danger of felony, by a new act now lately made, they would haue departed out of the Realme as I haue done or no: and either they must say, that they would ioyfully runne vpon their owne death headlong, which is repugnant to the law of God, contrary to the law of nature, as I thinke flatly against their owne conscience, or else they must acknowledge that they would haue sought the same meanes, which I haue vsed for escaping those perils: and then I hope your Maiestie will not hardly conceiue of this my dealing, which my mortall enemies, if they speake not contrary to the truth, and reason, must needes confesse to be iust and conuenient. Besides, to confirme your Maiesties opinion of mine innocencie herein, your selfe may best remember how I might haue departed long before this time, if I had beene guilty of any crime, and that I haue stoode to the vtermost triall and examination of all my dealings, though I haue tasted all times since my last restraint, your Maiesties hard opinion and publique disgrace, both daily and hourely, without any hope or likelihood of euer recouering your former good opinion: and if my protestation who neuer told your Maiestie the least vntruth, may carry any credit in your opinion, I here call God and his Angels to witnesse, that I would not haue taken this course if I might haue stayed still in England, without danger of my soule, and perill of my life. Wherefore as it is the true token of a noble minde, and hath alwayes beene noted for a certaine argument of your Maiesties gracious disposition, in that it hath euer pleased you to take pitie of those which are in misery, and to respect with the eyes of your fauour all miserable persons, so cannot I be brought any whit to feare, that your Maiestie will make me the first example of your seuere and rigorous dealing, in laying your displeasure vpon mee, who am constrayed to forsake my Countrey, to forget my friends, to leaue my liuing, and to leese the hope of all worldly pleasures, and earthly commodities: if either, I will not consent to my certaine destruction of my body, or willingly yeild to the manifest endangering of my soule the least of which are so intolerable to any Christian man to endure, as I hope it cannot be thought any vndutifulnesse in me, if I seeke by any good and lawfull meanes to auoyde so great an inconuenience: and though the seate of temporall commanders bee so gracious to flesh and blood, as I could not desire to liue, if I were not comforted with the remembrance of his mercy, for whom I endure all these troubles endured 1500. times more for me: yet I assure your Maiestie, that your displeasure should be more vnpleasant vnto me, then the bitternesse of all my other losses; and a greater griefe, then the greatest of my misfortunes are besides. Therefore remaining in assured hope, that my selfe and my cause shall receiue that fauour, conceit, and rightfull constructions at your Maiesties hands, which I may iustly challenge, both because the triall of my good dealings heretofore haue sufficiently deserued the same, and also for that the confession of my mortall enemies at this time must needes acknowledge mine innocencie herein. I doe humbly craue pardon for my long and tedious letter, which the weightinesse of the matter enforced me vnto: and I beseech God from the bottome of my heart, to send your Maiestie as great happinesse, as I wish to mine owne soule.

The 21. of June, Henry Percy Earle of Northumberland, in prison in the Tower of London, vpon vehement suspition of high treason, was there found dead, and also of his owne deuillish intent, and of his malice before pretended to haue murdered himselfe, as more at large

Earle of Northumberland murdered himselfe.

large may appeare, by inquisition made by a substantiall Iury, taken before the Coroner of London, as followeth *verbatim* with the record.

Copie of the inquisition of the Coroners.

An inquisition taken at the Citie of London, that is, within the Tower of London, in the Parish of Allhallowes Barking, in the ward of the Tower of London, on Monday being the 21. day of June, in the yeare of the raigne of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth, by the grace of God Queene of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. the 27. before William Squire Gentleman, Coroner to our said Soueraigne Lady the Queene, within the Citie of London and the Liberties of the same, vpon the view of the body of H. Percy Knight, late Earle of Northumberland, late prisoner there within the Tower of London aforesaid, for suspition of high treason by him supposed to bee done, there lying dead, and slaine: by the Oathes of Nicholas Wheeler, Simon Horlepoole, T. Gardener, William Leueston, Owen Morgan, Henry Lodge, W. Abraham, W. Horne, T. Russell, John Porter, Robert Dower, Anthony Hall, W. Curtis, T. Wood, Mathew Dolman, T. Martin, Richard Skeford, John Trot, Philip Smith, T. Taylor, and H. Bowdler, of good and lawfull men of the same ward, and of three other wards to the same ward next adioyning, as the maner and custome is in the Citie aforesaid, to enquire how, in what maner, and when the said Henry Percie late Earle of Northumberland came to his death. Which Iurie do say vpon their Oathes, that on the one and twentieth day of this instant moneth of June, in the yeare of the Raigne of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth, by the grace of God Queene of England, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c.

The 27. aforesaid, and long before, the foresaid Henry late Earle of Northumberland, prisoner in the Tower of London imitate, in the Parish of Allhallowes Barking aforesaid, in the Ward of the Tower of London aforesaid, for suspition of high treason aforesaid, by him against our Soueraigne Lady the Queene supposed to be committed, and being placed in a certaine Chamber within the Tower of London aforesaid, there prisoner remaining, imagining and intending himselfe deuillishly and felloniously to kill and murder before the aforesaid 21. day of June: that is to say, the 20. day of June, in the 27. yeare aforesaid, did prepare a certaine Dagge of yron and steele, of the value of twenty shillings, and with certaine bullets of Lead, and a certaine quantity of Gunpowder, contained in a small barr, and caused the aforesaid Gunne, the bullets of Lead, and the Gunpowder to bee brought into the said Chamber vnto him the said Earle of Northumberland, and to be deliuered to the same Earle then and there, by the hands of Iames a Price Yeoman, to execute his deuillish and felonious purpose and intention, which Dagge aforesaid, the aforesaid Earle caused secretly to be hidden in a certaine Mattrice, vnder the bolster of his bed in the Chamber aforesaid, and then and there, the aforesaid 21. day of June, in the 27. yeare aforesaid, betweene the houres of twelue and one in the night of the aforesaid 21. day of June, thinking and intending to prosecute and follow his deuillish intention and purpose aforesaid, did bolt the doore of the aforesaid Chamber, and the inner part of his Chamber towards himselfe, least any man should forsee or withstand his deuillish, felonious, and malicious intent: and the said doore of the aforesaid Chamber being so bolted, the same Earle then and there into his bed himselfe did lay, and vpon thys afterward, that is to say, the foresaid one and twentieth of June in the 27. yeare aforesaid, about the houres aforesaid, within the Tower of London aforesaid, situate and being in the Parish of Allhallowes Barking aforesaid, in the ward of the Tower of London aforesaid, not hauing the Almighty God as his feare before his eyes, but being moued and seduced by the instigation of the deuill, of his malice afore practised, did take vp into his hands the aforesaid Dagge of yron and steele, then and there made ready, charged with Gunpowder, and three bullets of Lead, and the aforesaid Dagge to the left part of his breast, neere vnto the pap of the same part of his breast, then and there feloniously and deuillishly did put, and vpon the same part of his breast the aforesaid Dagge did discharge, by reason of the violence of which Gunpowder, and of the aforesaid three bullets of Lead, the aforesaid Earle into his body and heart, and through his chyne bone, then into his right shoulder, manifestly then and there with the aforesaid bullets of Lead, felloniously and volantarily did strike, giuing vnto himselfe then and there one mortall wound of the depth of twelue inches, and of the breadth of two inches: of which mortall wound aforesaid, the foresaid Earle within the Tower of London aforesaid, the day and yeare, Parish, and Ward aforesaid, instantly died. And so the Iury doth say vpon their oathes aforesaid, that the foresaid Earle, the day and yeare, and place aboue written of his deuillish intent aforesaid, and of his malice before preceaded, felloniously and voluntarily himselfe did kill, and murther in manner and forme aforesaid, against the peace of our Soueraigne Lady the Queene, her crowne and dignity. But what goods and chattels the aforesaid Earle in the time of the felony and murther of himselfe aforesaid committed had, or as yet hath, the Iury know not, &c. in witnesse whereof, &c. This was the verdict of the Iurors, whereby it remained to prouide for the bestowing of his wretched carkasse, which on the 23. day of June, was buried in Saint Peters Church within the said Tower of London. This was the end of that Earle, the manner of whose murthers, and part of his treason are dilated, as the same was published in the Starre chamber, and in a booke intituled, A true summary report of the declaration of some part of the Earle of Northumberlands treasons, deliuered, &c.

In the 26. of June, arriued at London Deputies

Entertainement of the deputies for the states of the Low Countries.

Duties of the States for the Netherlands, or Low Countries, who were lodged about the Tower Streete, and had their diet for the time of their abode here very worshipfully appointed (all at the charges of her Maiestie) in the Cloathworkers Hall in Pinchene lane, neere to the said Tower Street. These on the 29. of June, being the Feast of the Apostle Peter and Paul, repaired to the Court, then at Greenwich, where by vertue of their Commissions from the united Countries, they presented to her Maiestie the Soueraignty of those Countries, to wit, of Brabant, but the Commission (for the siege of Antwerpe not full authorized, of Guelder, of Flaunders, of Holland, Zeland, of Utricht, and of Friseland: for Brabant, Iaques de Grise great Baily of Bruges, Counsellour of the Frankes for Guelerre, Rotger of Varfold Gentleman: for Flaunders Nocil de Garlie Lord of Shoncwall: for Holland, Iohn Wandercoost, Lord of Hoztwike: Iosse de Menin Pensionarie of Dordreght, Iohn of old Barneuelt, Pensionarie of Rotradame, and D. Francis Maelie: for Zeland, Iacob Dales Counceller and pensioner of Bergoest: for Utricht, Petrus Suis, Duke of the Lawes: for Friseland, Liuerzma, Gentleman, and Antonie, president of Friseland, and Lads Langema, Gentleman. All these falling on their knees before her Maiestie, and so remaining for a long space, one of them, to wit Iosse de Menin, Counsellour, and pensionary of Dordreght, one of the Commissioners for Holland, made to her Maiestie this Oration in French: Madames Estates des Prouinces Vnies des pais, &c. with also the same in English thus: Madam, the States of the united Prouinces of the Low countries, most humbly thanke your Maiestie for the good affection and fauor, which it hath pleased you to shew to the said Countries in their necessity, and to confirme the same with so many testimonies, and that lastly, after the execrable assault committed vpon the person of the late Prince of Orenge, at what time it pleased your Maiestie to let the said States vnderstand by your Ambassadour Master Dauison, what care you had of our defence and preseruation, and also by Seigneur de Crisi, the great displeasure which your Maiestie conceiued, to see the States frustrated of the hope which they had founded vpon the treate of Fraunce. But since the care which your Maiestie hath alwayes had ouer our good, and conseruation, is not thereby any whit diminished, but hath more pleatifully increased, according to the necessity of our affaires required, for which the sayde Countrey in generall, and euery of vs in particular remaine perpetually bound to your Maiestie, and acknowledge the same with all fidelitie and obeisance. And as the sayd States (Madam) did consider that since the decease of the Prince of Orenge, they haue sustained the losse of diuers of their holdes and good Townes, and that for the preseruation of the sayd Country, it is needfull for them to haue a Prince and Soueraigne ruler, which may warrant and defend them against the tyranny and vniust oppression of the Spaniards, and their adherents, which dayly more and more intrude themselues by their sinister power, and all other meanes to destroy and ouerthrow the sayd Countreys, and reduce this poore people into perpetuall seruitude, worse then that of the Indians, vnder the impostable yoake of the detestable Inquisition of Spaine. Considering also that the body of the Townes, and Communalties of the aforesayd Countreys, haue a time hope that your Maiestie will not see them perish, according to the desire of their enemies, which make this long and cruell war, all which outrages, the States of the sayd Low Countryes (following the diligence and bond which they owe to the Burgesses and Citizens) are to sustaine, repell, and to turne from them, by reason of the manifest tyranny and seruitude, which the Spaniards attempt to bring in and lay vpon the poore people, thereby to preserue their liberties, rights, priuiledges, and franchises, with the exercise of the true Christian religion, whereof your Maiestie by good right carrieth the title of Protector, and Defendresse, against which the sayd enemmes and their associates, already haue and still doe make many leagues, deuise many subtilties, treasons, and ambushes, not ceasing daily to practise and imagine them against the person of your Maiestie, and to the preiudice of the rest of your Realmes and States, whom the good God hath preserued vntill this present, for the wealth of the Christians, and sustentation of their Churches. Wherefore (Madam) it is so, that for causes, reasons, and other considerations, the sayd States haue assembled and concluded vpon a good and firme resolution, to haue recourse vnto your Maiestie, sith it is an ordinary matter among all people, and oppressed nations, in their calamities and oppressions to craue support, and fauour against their enemies, of kings and Princes neare vnto them, but especially of those who be endued with magnanimitie, piety, iustice, and other Princely vertues, to which effect, the States haue appointed vs to come vnto your Maiestie, to present vnto the same, the Principalitie, Soueraignitie, and iust gouernment of the sayd Prouinces, vnder certaine good and equall conditions, chiefly concerning the preseruation of the exercise of the reformed Religion, and of the ancient priuiledges, liberties, franchises, and customes, and next of the administration of the affaires, policie, and iustice of the warres in the sayd Country. And although that these Countryes haue sustayned much hurt by these long and continuall warres, and that the enemy hath taken diuers strong places and Fortes in the same Countries: yet there is besides the same in the Countryes of Brabant, Gelderland, Flaunders, Haines, and Duerlet, many good townes and places, which defend themselues against the force of the enemie, and the Countries of Holland, Zeland, Utrich, and Frise, be yet (thankes be to God) entire and whole: in which there be many great and strong townes and places, faire riuers and deepe Ports and hauens of the Sea, out of which your Maiestie

The deputies oration to her Maiestie.

Maiestie and your successours may receiue diuers good seruices, fruites, and commodities, whereof it is needlesse here to make any long rectall. Onely this amongst other matters deserueth good and especiall consideration, that the vniting of those Countries, of Holland, Zeland, Frise, and the Ilownes of Sluze, and Sland in Flanders, vnto the Realmes of your Maiestie, importeth so much as the absolute gouernment of the great Ocean Sea, and by consequence, and assurance, and perpetuall felicity for the subiects of your worthy Maiestie: which we most humbly beseech, that it will please the same to condiscend vnto vs in the said points and conditions, and in that which followeth, which is, that you will for you and your lawfull successours in the Crowne of England, be protectors of the reformed Religion, as the principall iusticer and soueraigne Gouernour of the said Countries: and consequently to receiue the people of the same, as your most obedient Subiects vnder the protection and continuall safegard of your Maiestie, they being a people assuredly so faithfull and louing to their Princes and Lords (be it spoken without daunting) as any other Nation is throughout Christendom. In doing whereof (Madame) you shall preserue many godly Churches, which it hath pleased God to assemble in these latter times in the same Countries, at this present in many places grieuously afflicted, and you shall deliuer the same Country and people (of late before the vniuall deedes of the house of Spaine) very rich and flowing, through the great commodity of the Sea, Ports, Hauens, Riuers, Trasique, and Merchandize, whereof they be naturally endued: you shall I say (Madame) deliuer them from ruine and perpetuall bondage of body and soule, being a worke right royall and most magnificent, acceptable to God, profitable to all Christianity, worthy immortall commendation, answerable to the magnanimitie and heroicall vertues of your Maiestie, and ioyned with the assurance and prosperity of your Dominions and Subiects. Whereupon we present vnto your Maiestie the said articles and conditions, reuerently praying the King of Kings to preserue your Maiestie from your enemies, to encrease your glory and felicity, and for euer to keepe you in his holy protection.

This Oration ended, and the summe thereof considered, it pleased the Queenes Maiestie, by direction of her wise and politicke Councell, to encline her heart to the ease and relefe of the said oppressed people. And because her owne Subiects should not be vtterly vnacquainted with her Highnesse doings in that case, there was published by authority a booke intituled, A declaration of the causes mouing the Queene of England to giue ayde to the defence of the people afflicted and oppressed in the Low Countries. Dated at Richmond the first of Octobet 1585. and the 27. yeare of the raigne of our Soueraigne Lady the Queene. This booke was printed, in the Latine, Italian, and English tongues.

The 4. of July, Charles Lord Howard late Lord Chamberlaine, was made Lord Admirall, and Henry Lord Hunsdon was made Lord Chamberlaine of Houshold.

Charles Howard Lord Admirall. Henry Lord Hunsdon Lord Chamberlaine.

The 5. of July, Thomas Ausield, a Seminarie Priest, and Thomas Welley Diar, were arraigned at the Sessions Hall in the Old Bayly, found guilty, conuicted, and had iudgement, as fellons to be hanged: for publishing of bookes containing false, seditious, and slanderous matter, to the defamation of our Soueraigne Lady the Queene, these were on the next morrow executed at Tiborne accordingly.

Ausield and Welley executed.

On the 16. of July, by the suddaine fall of a bricke wall in Thames Streete of London neare vnto Dowgate, fiue persons were ouerwhelmed and slaine, to wit, a man and his wife, (the wife being great with childe) and two children.

Fiue persons slaine by fall of a wall

On the same 16. day of July was Sir Francis Russell Knight, Lord Russell, third sonne to Francis Russell Earle of Bedford, slaine with a Dagge in the borders of Scotland by the Earle of Bucclench, as they met vpon a truce day. And on the next morrow, to wit, the 17. of July, Francis Russell, Earle of Bedford, Knight of the Garter, and one of her Maiesties priuie Councell (father to the late named Sir Francis Lord Russell slaine on the borders of Scotland) deceased, and was honourably buried at Chenies in Bedfordshire, on the 8. of September next following.

The Earle of Bedford and his sonne deceased.

On the 23. of July, certaine Souldiers were pressed in the seuerall Wards of the Citie of London, which Souldiers being furnished for the warres, and cloathed in red coates, all at the charges of the Companies and Citizens, set forth toward the Seas on the 13. of August, and were transported ouer into Holland, Zeland, &c. as other the like Souldiers out of other parts of the Realme, before had bene transported to serue for the defence of the Low Countries vnder Generall Norris, and other appointed Captaines.

Souldiers transported into the Low Countries.

On the 4. of August, betwixt the houres of 4. and 5. of the clocke in the morning, at the end of the Towne called Nottingham, in Kent, eight miles from London, in a Lane not farre from the houses, the ground began to sink three great Elmes being swallowed vp, the tops falling downward into a hole with the rootes vpward turning round in the falling, and driuen into the earth past mans sight: and before ten of the clocke that present day, the ground and trees were sunke so low, that neither the one or other might be discerned, the hole being sometimes filled with water, and other whiles neither bottome, trees, or water may be perceiued. The compasse of this hole was then about 80. yards, and being sounded with a Lead and line of 50. fadomes, cannot therewith finde or fasle any bottome.

Ground and trees sunke and loasles wonder.

This yeare on the 14. of September, Sir Francis Drake Knight, Generall, as well by seas as by land, Edw. Wintar, Martin Frobisher, Francis Knowles, with diuers other Gentlemen, Captaines, and two thousand three

Sir Francis Drake his voyage to Dominico and Carthagena.

three hundred Souldiers and Sailers in 25. Ships & Pinnaces, departed from Plymouth, and passing by the Iles of Bayon and the Canaries, arrived at Saint Jage, which Citie they tooke and burned: after they sailed to Saint Domingo, which they spoiled and ransomed, from thence to Carthagena, which they also with great valour and especiall danger to be spoiled, and ransomed: and retiring homewards, raced and burned the Fort and Citie of Saint Augustine in Terra Florida: and the 27. day of July, in Anno 1586. arrived at Plymouth.

Seminary and masking Priests banished.

On the 15. day of September, to the number of 32. Seminaries, masking Priests, & others, late prisoners in the Tower of London, Marshalsea, Kings bench, and other places, were embarked in the Mary Martine of Colchester, on the South side of the Thames, right over against Saint Katherines, to be transported over into the coasts of Normandy, to be banished this Realme for ever, by vertue of a commission from her Maiestie before specified. There being safely transported over to Bologne, wrote their certificate thereof as follow eth.

Certificate returned by the banished men.

Whereas upon your Honours Commission directed unto Anthony Hall, and Thomas Stockar, for the transporting of vs whose names are under written, into the coasts of Normandie, who accordingly tooke vs into a Barque called the Mary Martine of Colchester, on the Southside of the Thames, right over against that part of Saint Katherines next to London bridge, the 15. day of September 1585. according to the computation of England: our will is to testifie unto your good Honours, that they the said Anthony Hall, and Thomas Sockar, have generally so well used vs in all respects, that wee cannot but acknowledge our selues much beholding to so courteous and loving Officers: neuertheless comming along the Sea, and meeting with her Maesties Admirall in the Downes, who promised, that we should not be disturbed in our course into the Province of Normandy, according to your Honours said Commission, wee had not from him departed two leagues, when as a Flushinger with his people suddainly entred upon vs, being peaceably stowed under hatches, and in our quiet rest, with their drawne swords, their Calivers, and their Pistoles stored in their hands, to our great terrour and discomfort, the most of vs being very sore sea-sicke, expecting at that instant nothing, but either the rigorous dint of the sword or bullet of the Caliuar. Howbeit, partly being had by our Commissioners with them, they departed, after which time we considering the generall danger on the Seas, besought with one consent your Honours Commissioners to set vs on land at Calice: but they in no wise yeelding thereunto, at last by reason of our importunity in such danger and weakenesse, yeelded to set vs on shore at Bologne, partly by reason of the feare we were then put in, and partly for that wee feared afterward more unreasonable measure, but specially the greatest number of vs so sore sicke, that very tedious vnto vs it seemed to beare so long and dangerous a passage. In witnesse whereof to this our Certificate wee haue all subscribed our names, the nineteenth of September, 1585. William Gimlet, R. Fen, John Nole, Christopher Small, &c.

Frederick Lord Windsor, died at Westminster upon the 2. of December.

In the moneths of Nouember and December, many hoises and men were shipped at the Tower-Wharfe, to be transported ouer into the Low Countries. And on the 1st of December, the right Honourable Robert Dudley, Earle of Leicester, Lord Lieutenant Generall (after hee had taken his leaue of her Maiestie and the Court) with his traine (which was great) entred the Towne of Colchester in Essex, and was there honorably entertained and feasted by Sir T. Lucas Knight, where the Bailiffes and Brethren in scarlet gownes, and multitudes of people met him, and so with great solemnity entred the towne where he lodged that night, and on the next morrow set forward to Harwich, into the which towne hee was accordingly received and entertained. On the 8. of December, the said Earle accompanied with the Earle of Essex, the Lord North, the Lord Audley, Sir William Russell, Sir Thom. Sherley, Sir Arthur Basset, Sir Walter Waller, Sir Gervase Clifton, and other knights, Esquires, and Gentlemen, to the number of fiue or seuen hundred horse brauely appointed, all voluntaries, and of his friends, followers, and seruants, Captaines, and Souldiers, with his traine, to the number of fifty saile of ships and hoyes, set forward toward Flushing, with sound of Trumpets and Drums, howlets, and prayers of the people for happy and fortunate successe. On the tenth day hee arrived at Flushing, where with his whole traine, guarded in his owne person, by fifty Archers with bowes and arrowes, fifty Halbadiers, and fifty Gunners, he was with the entertainment of Souldiers, and shot of the Towne and his noble company before him, entertained by Sir Philip Sidney, Gouernour vnder her Maiestie of the same Towne by Count Maurice, second sonne to the deceased Prince of Orenge, by her Maesties Ambassadour Lieger there, and by the States of the Towne, passing honourably entertained, with ringing of bels, and making of bonefires after their manner, which is to fire great Pitch Barrels on the tops of high poles, and then to fire them: hee was there feasted and lodged in the Ambassadours house, where according to his accustomed disposition hee demeaned himselfe so humbly, that he purchased to himselfe no lesse loue and good-liking than among the English. The next day after a Sermon had and dinner ended, hee tooke shipping and sayled towards Middleborough: in the mid way betwixt Flushing and Middleborough standeth a strong fresse of Remikens, furnished with English men, at the which hee with some of his especiall traine landed, and viewed the same, who returning againe to their Ships, were presented on the top of the walls

Robert Earle of Leicester transported ouer into Flushing.

Sir Philip Sidney Gouernour of Flushing.

wals in the front of the sea with fifty pikemen, very brauely furnished, hauing their English Ensignes displayed, with triumph of shot, sound of trumpets and drummes, more two houres together. In the which honourable triumphs, the whole fleete hauing good winde, and faire weather, sayled along to Middleborough, where on the shore side at the landing place, were vnder nine Ensignes displayed with great store of shot, the best States of the Country attending my Lords landing: ouer the gates by the porte was painted the redde Croste of England, her Maesties armes, & the States: though which gates the Earle and his traine entring, hee was thus guarded from his landing to his lodging, guarded, though a lane of musket shot with the Ensignes borne before him, with trumpets and drums very royally, almost a quarter of a mile. In the middle of the market place, where the English Ensignes aduanced, and deliuered vnto him, with the which, & the rest borne before him he came to his lodging, where at the intreaty of the States, he stayed more then two houres at the gate, to see the souldiers marching and their strengths: after which, because it was neere night, he entred and made his dinner and supper all one. Three of those nine Ensignes were new: In the first were her Maiesties, and the Empresses armes quartered: In the second, the Earle of Leicesters, and the Prince of Orenges armes together: In the third were the seuen Prouinces yeelded vnto her Maiestie, all very excellently emblasoned. In a large table hanged ouer the gate of the English house in Middleborough, were emblasoned the armes of her Maiestie along aboue the rest, next vnder that the L. Lieutenants armes on the one side at large, hard by the which, was set out the armes of the States and their houses: all which artificially by a chaine were linked together, and fastened to the English armes, vnder which was written at the foote of this frame, *Quos Deus conjunxit homo non separet*. Thus with great ioy and continuall triumph, was hee entertained on Christmas eues eue, after the Romish computation, which they in Zeland, and Holland, obserue in that order.

Orenges death the Earle of Leicesters arriuall with a full army ouer the Low Countries.

At this time the States of Holland, and Zeland, with the rest of their confederacy, commonly called the vnited Prouinces, plainely perceiuing their own weakenes, to continue war, either offensiue, or defensiue, against the King of Spaine: whose ministers in Flanders, and Brabant, began to take freely root, by recouering many strong holdes, and Cities from the Hollanders: as Gaunt, Antwerp, Mechelyn, &c. And the sayd States hauing already bene beholding to diuers their neighbor Princes, taking their parts: viz. don Matthias, brother to the Emperor, Francis of Valois, Duke of Alanson, heyre aparant to the French Dyadem, and others, and hauing lost their late excellent gouernor, and sure friend, William of Nassau, Prince of Orenge, and his valiant brother, County Lodwicke, their chiefe leader, so as at this time the sayd States remained as a people destitute of Princely countenance, and direction, not knowing what course to take, for their proper safety against the Spaniards, and such Princes of their owne Nation, as with him conioyned, and hauing also iudiciously pondered with themselues, that of themselues they could hardly make their peace with Spayne, but vpon plaine submission, or very hard conditions, and that the long continued grieuances of the French were rife in memory: in good consideration wherof, with some what else, which for breuity I omit, they reioiced to try, if by any meanes they could procure her Maiestie, the Queene of England, to receiue them for a time into her gracious safety or her protection: vntill by her speciall meanes, or mediation of other Christian Princes, they might make peace with Don Philip the second of that name King of Spaine, from whom they had reuolted by reason of sundry oppressions, and had meanes imposed vpon them.

France kept them in awe many yeares before the Spaniards had any thing to doe with them.

The Queene after many Letters, Messengers, Oratours, and humble supplications: in meere pittie of their present misery, and hope to gayne them peace, vpon moderate termes, vtterly renouncing such benefits, high titles, and clayme to those Prouinces, as they offered her, and supposed thee would haue accepted: at length was pleased, vpon deliuery of Brill and Flushing, into her possession, as hostages for her men, and assurance for rebursing such summes of money, as vpon the agreement thee had already disbursed, not only to admit them her subiects voluntary and: but for both with, thee granted that the Earle of Leicester, of whom vpon ripe consideration, they had made choyce, as you may read in their publication at the great assembly at Dunbage, the 1st of February, one thousand fiue hundred eighty and six, and with him a power of eight thousand horse, and foot, well appointed, with other 1st habiliments for war: besides her ayde of great ordinance, and shippes, and therewithall prohibited all her subiects, vpon paine of Death, not to serue or ayde the Duke of Parma, or any other their enemies.

Upon consideration as aforesayd, Robert Dudley, Earle of Leicester, accompanied and followed, with the Flower, and chiefe gallants of England, were imbarked with fifty sayle of shippes, the eight of December, one thousand fiue hundred eighty and fiue: and arriued at Flushing the tenth day: the chiefe whereof, that went then with him and made hast after him, were the Earles of Northumberland, Derby, and Essex, the Lord Audley, the Lord Willoughby, the Lord Sturfield, the Lord North, the Lord Borroughs, Sir William Russell, Sir Philip Sidney, Sir Robert Sidney, Sir Henry Sidney, Sir Jernice Clifton, Sir Thomas Sherley, Sir William Pelham, Lord Marshall of the field, Sir Arthur Bosser, Sir John Borroughes, Sir Walter Walter, With many other of note, and quality, of honourable familie, to the number of seuen hundreth. All of them exceeding rich, braue and lustily mounted.

The Earle was very honorably and kind-

ly entertained, and Feasted: which kindnesse the Earle requited, and banqueted the States, and others all the Christmas holidayes, vsing all reciprocall Courtesies that might bee, which ended, the twenty fiue of January, the Earle was sworne vnto the States, and the States sworne vnto the Queene, and to obey the Earle her Lieutenant: and after many consultations, and meetings, concerning all matters whatsoeuer, vpon the first of February next ensuing, the States at their great assembly at Hage, made a very solemne publication as followeth.

The States Proclamation for authorising the Earle of Leicester.

The generall States of the vnited Prouinces, of the Low Countries: to all those, which shall see, or heare these present writings, health, and direction: Euen as it hath pleased her Maiestie of England, mercifully to send ouer into these Countreyes, the high and mighty Prince, and Lord, Robert Earle of Leicester, Baron of Denbeigh, and one of the Prime Councell, knight of the most honorable order of the Garter, and not only to admit and institute his Excellency as chiefe head, aboue all military souldiers, on horse or foote, Which her Maiestie hath sent, or shall send ouer hereafter, into these Countryes, and to the end to assist vs, with Councell and aduice, according to his great experience, policy, and wisedome, in the direction of publique affaires of the land, as well, touching the Feates of war, as otherwise, in consernation of all that, which most tendeth to the profite of the aforesaid Land, to bring backe, and reduce the same, into such good order, and Rule, as it hath bene in times past: to the end that so much the better, and orderly hee may resist the force and tyrannie of our enemy, and so frustrate all his practises: But also besides this, to honour and inrich his foresayd Excellency, with greater authoritie, might, and commaundement, aboue all her Maiesties Admirals, and Vice-admirals, and Shippes of warre, to command them all, and to employ them to the service of these Countries, and in such order, as his Excellency shall find needfull, for the same Country, and that his Excellency following her Maiesties commandement, desirous to shew the effect of the good will, and affection which hee beareth to these affayres, and to the preseruation of the same, and also, of the true Christian Religion, and hath employed himselfe, so willingly in the aforesayd matters, that his Excellency, for that onely cause hath left, and abandoned his native Countryes, and goods, and transported himselfe hitherwards amongst vs, So that her Maiestie, and his Excellency, could neuer haue done, or showed vs a greater benefit then this.

Therefore are wee resolued, with good and ripe deliberation, to certifie all men, by these presents, that we haue desired, accepted, and authorised the foresayd Mighty, and honorable Prince, Lord Robert, Earle of Leicester, &c. to bee our Gouernour, and Generall, Captaine ouer all the vnited Prouinces, and affected Cities, and members of the same: and we giue vnto his Excellency, besides the authority of her Maiestie giuen vnto him, the highest, and Supreame commandement, and absolute authority aboue, and in all matters of Warfare by Sea, and by land, to execute and administer the same, to the resistance of the enemie, euen as his Excellency shall thinke most commodious, to the preseruation of these Countryes, and so further to doe all things as doe belong or appertaine to the office of a Generall Captaine.

And furthermore, wee commit the administration, and vse of policy, and Iustice ouer the aforesayd vnited Prouinces, and aforsayd Cities, and members of the same, in to his hands to execute, and administer the same, with such power and authoritie, as haue had in times past, all the other Gouernours of these Low Countries before him, and especially, as haue bene exercised, and lawfully administred in the time of Charles the fift, Reserued onely the Lawes, and priuiledges of the aforesayde Countreyes, also with especiall power, to Collect Profits, execute and administer all the Contributions, which are agreede to the maintainance of the Warres, and also that which is, or shall be hereafter, deliuered into his Excellencies hands, and this all according to the vertue of other Letters, and Pittiures, written more at large touching the same agreement, all which former charge and Commission, his Excellency thoough our earnest desire hath accepted, and hath deliuered solemne oath, and assurance, into our hands, First of all, for the preseruation of the true Christian Religion, and maintainance of the Priuiledges, and Rights of these Lands and Prouinces, members and Cities of the same, Wee therefore ordayne and commaund all Gouernors of Prouinces, and Cities, all Admirals, and Vice-admiralls, all Officers, Coloners, Captaines, their Officers, and souldiers, by Sea, and land, and furthermore all other Counsellers, Officers, Treasurers, Receiuers, Bailiffes, Burgomasters, Marshalls, Magistrates, Gentlemen, Burgesses, and other inhabitants, and Subiects of these Lands, of what qualitie, or Condition soeuer, That they and euery of them, doe acknowledge his aforesayd Excellency, in the quality of Gouernour, and Captaine Generall, ouer all the foresayde vnited Prouinces, to honour, respect, and obey him, as they ought to doe, without making any difficultie in doeing the same, vppon payne of falling in the displeasure, and anger of his Excellency, and to be punished according to the heauinesse of the fault, as reason shall requite, and to the ende that no body shall pretend ignoyance, wee commaunde expressely, to make knowne these ordinances, to proclaime and publish them, where men are accustomed to Proclaime all publications, proceeding and commaunding to proceede with rigour, against all disobayners, and neglectors of the same, according to the order of punishment before mentioned, without any fauour or dissimulation to the contrary, because we haue thought the same to bee expedient for the preseruation of the Country.

Given in our Congregation and assembly in the Hage, the sixt day of February, one thousand fiue hundreth eighty and sixe: by ordinance of the aforesayd generall States.

Upon which publication with other secret vowed assurance of their entire loues, and approbation of all matters, which himselfe with his English Councell of warre should demaunde, attempt, or performe, for their behoofe, either in Campe, or Citty, hee with all his freshy Forte, and such other olde Souldiers, as hee found there vnder those most renowned English Commaunders, to wit, Sir John Norris, and his brother, Sir Francis Vere, Sir William Stanley, Sir Rowland Yorke, Sir Thomas Morgan, Sir Matthew Morgan, Sir Roger Williams, and others, entred into armes against the Illustrious Duke of Parma, wonne Dosborow, and Arill, relieued and victualled, many Cities, surprised many Castles, and Sconces, assaulted many strong Forte, maintayned sundry skirmishes, and forced the Spaniards to make retreate from the Ports of Holland, and to seeke their succour in Flanders, and vp toward Cullen, as you may read in sundry particular discourses following, he honoured many with Knight-hood for their valorous exployts, &c. he protested to performe all possible ease and honor to the States, but when he had well obserued (as he sayd) their desire of continuing warre, and with their full determinations of continuall hostilitie, and that notwithstanding all their protestations of desireous peace, their glorious titles, great trust and seeming authority which they had imposed vpon him, was but to serue their present turnes for maintenance of regall power within themselues, and not to permitt any kind of settled superiority ouer them, after his had planted a competent Garrisons in the Cautionary Townes, Brill, and Flushing, which Townes, the States surrendred into the Queenes handes, as security for monie and money, which they had already receiued, besides many thousands of men, and money which they yeerely receiue, euen vntill the comming of king Iames, hee embarqued for England, and arriued at Margate in Kent, the one and twenty of November, beeing the last time that hee came out of Holland.

The Earle of Leicester returneth to England.

And as hee sate in his chamber, hee clapped his handes vpon his legges, saying (if God giue mee leaue) these legges of mine shall neuer goe againe into Holland, Let the States gett other to serue their mercenary turne if they will: make themselues rich, for mee they shall not haue, after that the States made choice of Graue Maurice, second sonne to the foresaid famous Prince of Orenge, though young, yet of great obseruation, and good experience in their warres, who being native and of milde disposition, concurred better with the humor of the States, and common people, then any that was before him, and for a long time did the States many high honors, fought great battailes, conquered certaine Prouinces, sundry very strong Cities, Castles and Sconces won from the Spaniards, for the which he was worthily renowned throughout al Europe, and admired of all menne for his Martiall discipline, his derterite in all seruices, and sundeine exployts, his iudicious planting of a Siege, for Clemency, Munificence, and for many other Noble vertues, and Princely perfections, some of his auncestors hath beene Emperor, and hee him selfe liued and flourished as a most famous and fortunate Prince, at the publication of this Booke, viz. this yeere 1614. in which yeare he wonne diuers strong Townes, and holdes, towardes the Rheine, and serued his Countrey, when Marques Spinola as with a great Imperiall Army had taken Aken, Wesell, and diuers other strong Townes, and hadde vtterlie raced Mulham, *alias* Mullham, a new strong Towne builded vpon the Rheine, fowre miles beneath Cullen.

The States ordain Graue Maurice for their Generall.

On the one and twentieth of December, diuers ships of war, and others, with the States of Dort in them, met our fleete on the water, where betwixt their shippes and ours, where was at the meeting of the Earle great triumphs with shot. in which came many small scouts of succour to hasten the traines to those, where in good time they entred Dort, very royally, and triumphantly.

Lord Lieutenant entred Dort.

On the Port to guard his person was set his owne guard of Archers, Shot, and Halbards. And ouer the Gate of entrance was her Maiesties, the Earle, and the States armes emblasoned, When he was landed, and conducted by the States, he passed from the port through a lane of musket shot, all Dutch, brauc and well appointed with eight Ensignes displayed before him, in the middest whereof, was the English Ensigne aduanced, whence with eight hundred shot he was brought to his lodging. After whose entrance they and the great shotte continued triumphing: an houre and more, here he continued a day and two nights, with singular entertainement, and verses which I ouerpasse.

On the twenty three of December, the Earle tooke scouts to passe to Rotherdame, by a riuer of fresh water, very narrow, where the Boates or Scouts, are some by men, some by horses dragged along the riuer: but in his passage, the night being cleare, suddenly there arose so great a tempest, that it put the small vessels in great daunger, but after an houre, the weather waxed calme and the night cleare, onely a Dutch Captaine, and three or foure of his men were drowned: toward night he drew neere to the Towne of Rotherdame, where on the water hee was met with three barges of

pleasure, in euery of which was twelue saylers, the first all in blew veriuns and venetians, with red caps, and whole Cypres white Satire like. In the second, 12. all in buffe. In the third, twelue all in thag thrummed silke very brane, with their eares red and white: in these boates were great store of fier-workes, and rockets to cast into the ayre, and at the sterne were Cressets, which toward night were lighted, and on the water made an excellent shewe. Thus with trumpets sounding all the way, was he brought to Rotherdam by water, to his lodging in the midst of the towne, on the other side of them, on the bankes stood rankes of souldiers, all with musket shot, betwixt euery foure of them, was placed a torch, or cressct burning: and thus hee entred his lodging, where the States accompanied him to supper that night. Here the inhabitants were ioyfull of the Englishmens comming, making much of the traine. The townesmen had made very memorable in the middle of the market place, the whole proportion of the famous clearke Erasmus in a pulpit, as though he were preaching, holding a booke of the paraphrases on the Gospels in his hand, under whom was written, Erasmus Rotherdame. The Earle made haste toward Delph, hearing from thence accompanied with the States, his barges of pleasure, and whatsoeuer was thought honorable. They came late to Delph, somewhat darke, but lighted by cressets, along the narrow riuer, on the which many rockets and fire-workes were vsed. On the landing port, stood great store of musket shot, with many new ensignes like a lane for him to passe through, all which brought him to his lodging, which was the house wherein the Prince of Orange was slaine, ouer the gate of which house, were verses, which I ouerpasse. On the 25. of December, the Earle was feasted of the States very royally, and on the next morrow, the Earle feasted them, amongst whom was the Princesse of Dos, with a company of honorable Ladies, and Gentlewomen: at the table was Dutch musique of all kinds. And it is to be noted, that the further the Earle went vp into Holland, the brauer the Country was, and the better was his Lordship welcomed, as appeared by his excellent entertainement, from thence hee removed on the 27. of December to Dunhage, where he determined to keepe his standing Court. In the euening the Earle by cressct light, torches, and deuises of fireworke, entred into the towne of Dunhage with his traine of English-men, besides the States of Rotherdame and Delph, with those of Dunhage, that met him on the water, with musquet shot very many. At the entrance of my Lord by water, on the riuer met him certaine fisher-men, which presented Peter, Iames and Iohn, at their harborough: by them Christ walking on the water, who commaunding them to cast out their nettes the second time, they drew in abundance, wherewith they made shew of presentment to the Earle, for the which with great thankes hee passed by. Further on the riuer sate the representation of Mars and Bellona, who uttered speeches vnto him as hee passed. At his landing met him a troupe of horsemen, furnished, and trapped, antiquely in colours, before whom hauing fetched many courses, they rode away. At the entrance of the fayrest Streete, there were on each side of the same galleries, raised a mans height each against other, all hung with blacke bayes, on both which galleries, on each side stood fifteene virgines all clad in white, with braunches of palme, or bow wreathed about, ware candles light in their hands, euery of which did reuerence vnto the Earle, these stood a speares length distant each from other. Betwixt euery one hung a looking glasse, and betwixt euery glasse, vpon a pretty anticke pearch, stood a ware candle burning, and at each end of the gallery stood a champion, and a blacke Peeze, the one supporting the armes of England, and the other the armes of Holland. This shew was very proper: all the way as the Earle passed through were artificially made gates, raised of tagged staues, and vpon euery stag stood a small ware candle burning, by which hung the armes of diuers crafts-men of the towne. The Streete all the way was hanged with braid cloathes, vpon the which were placed store of red roses painted. Passing forward was a high scaffold very faire builded, with her Maiesties armes placed: on the top stood 7. virgins, representing the seauen Prouinces, euery virgin holding a speare, and the armes at large emblazoned, which Prouince the did signifie, in the midst of them stood Minerua armed, incompassed about the body, with the armes of England, vpon whom all the rest seemed to relie. All which were represented vnto her Maiestie, by Mercurie an olde Champion. Then next was on the like scaffold, seuen persons, presenting the seuen liberall sciences, in their kinds, yeelded to the Earl by Deuert: out of euery window hung lanthornes and candles, and euery Street was furnished with cressets, torches, and links light: one deuice that hung in the midst of the Streete contained eight and thirty lanthornes, and seuerall lights burning. Besides these, against my Lords gate, a barbar had on a wall, placed three score or more basons of bright copper, and in the middest of euery one, a ware candle burning was placed, in the midst of all was painted, a Rose and crowne, this made a faire shew. Ouer the entrance of the court gate, was placed aloft vpon a scaffold, as it had bin in a cloud, Arthur of Britaine, whom they compared to the Earle, within were hoboyes, cornets, and diuers kinds of musique: And thus they brought him to his lodging, and after he was entred in a great hal of that house, they discharged such volies of shot, as was wonderfull to heare. In the night they vsed fire workes of rockets, squibs, wheeles, and balles of fire, with a Dragon that continued casting out fire an houre, wonderfull artificially made. The next day, on the riuer aboyning to my Lords lodging, they deuised a running as it were at the tile in boats, which was thus: From each end of the riuer came a boat running with fire boares, in the Steame of which, on the top stood a man armed in a red wastecoate, with a staffe in his rest, hauing a but end of cozke: now each meeting other with these their staues, both fell into the water, where spare boats were ready to succour them, for away went their horses: this sport with fresh men they continued till the Earle was weary of it.

Lord Lieutenant entred Rotherdam.

Lord Lieutenant entring Delph.

1586. Lord Lieutenant entred Leidon.

On the 3. day of January, the Earle with 300. horses in their furniture very brauely with his retinue entred Leidon, where by the way, he was met by the best of the Towne, first by 12. Burgomasters, clad in long black gowns and on their shoulders was the Townes name in large letters of siluer: next them, twelue of the chiefest Burgesses, and then many on horse backs, all in blacke Velues. At his entrance into the Towne, all ouer his head and downe to the ground on each side, was hanged with fayre of diuers colours to his lodging, himselfe with a canopy carried ouer his head, was brought to his seate, against the which was a stage, on the which stood two men like Poets, who presented seuerall shewes, as first a woman representing the Towne, then famine assaulting her, then sickenesse, then Spanish tyrannie, then hope to bee succoured, ayde promised, and at the last, libertie, victory, and triumph, &c. And after the Lord Lieutenant had bin there feasted, and banqueted, on the 5th of January, he came from Leidon to Dunhage. The tenth he mustred part of his horsemen, to the number of 500. or more, and then pointed them into seuerall garisons and to seuerall gouernors, the Earle of Essex was that day made generall of the horses. The 11. day, the Lord Lieutenant came from Dunhage to Leidon. The 12. a generall fast was proclaimed through Holland Gelderland, and Friesland, which was kept with great zeale, the Lord Lieutenant spent that day till night, with hearing of preaching, reading, and singing of Psalmes, neither bee nor his, eating any thing till night: the 19. of January, hee came from Leidon to Dunhage.

Lord Lieutenant entred Leidon.

The Lieutenant feasteth the States.

A generall fast proclaimed.

The 24. of January, the Prince of Portingal came to Dunhage. The 25. the L. Lieutenant was installed and sworne, and likewise all the States sworne to the Queen. The manner of the installing was thus: At Dunhage is a maruelious faire hall, at the vpper end whereof, are 5. or 6. large steps ascending, which doe reach to a faire chamber, at the vpper end whereof, on high, was placed a cloth of estate, in the midst whereof were the armes of England, and against them my Lord was seated, on each side of him, 2. steps descending, sate twelue of the principal States, and below them sate the residue, to the number of 20, right before my Lord, but 4. or 5. steps descending. On the right hand of my Lord did stand the Prince of Portugale, next him, the Lord Morley, next master Norris, gouernor of Dunkirke, next Wil. Russell, and sir Robert Germin, with diuers men of great account. On the left hand of my Lord, did stand the Graue Maurice, next the Earle of Essex, sir W. Stanley, sir Robert Stapleton, and sir Tho. Parat, with diuers other of great account. Thus being placed, a dutchman made a large oration in Dutch, declaring the causes of the matter in hand, with thankes to the Queenes Maiestie, and the Lord Lieutenant. Then was read in Latine, the couenants betweene the States, the Queene, and my Lord, this done, the couenants were deliuered to my Lord, which he deliuered to the States, and the States deliuered another vnto him: then was my Lord demanded to vowe the same by oath, who holding his hand to heauen, did sweare to the couenants. The like did the States, holding vp their hands, vow to performe. Then againe were the States sworne to the Queen, and my Lord her Lieutenant in those affaires. This done, my Lord gaue to them seuerall thanks, and they seuerally did giue him the like, which being done, my Lord passed through to his chamber, the trumpets all sounding before him. This day my Lord feasted all the States most sumptuously, so that they had their fill both in their bellies, and heads. This day after dinner, the souldiers of the Towne, which were three ensignes, came into the Court furnished, and did there shew themselues with drum and fife: at night were aboue an hundred fires burnt about my Lords house. The 28. of January, the companies mustered by Thomas Digs, muster master Generall in Guelderland, Friesland, and Holland, were as followeth: Master Norris 6020. nell gentlemen 236. 6020 nell Morgan, two hundred and ninete, Captaine Wottons a hundreth thirty fiue, Captaine Powle, a hundreth and seuentaine, Captain Baskerfield, fourescore, Captaine Yorke, fourescore and fiue, Captain Hunnings a hundred and eleuen, Captaine Vdall, seuentie fourre, Captaine Powell, ninty foure, Captaine Hart, threescore and eight, Captaine Price, a hundred twenty three, Captaine Wilson, a hundreth sixty fiue, Captaine Blunt, a hundreth twenty seauen, Captains Burrowes, a hundreth and ten, Captaine Harstovy, a hundreth twenty foure, Captaine Shawe, fourescore and fourre, Captaine Enge, threescore and nine, Captaine sir Walter Wallar, a hundreth thirty seauen.

Captaines with their companies mustered.

The second of February, Captaine Willowby died at Vage, and was there honourably buried. On the third of February, all the Peomen of the guard, take their oath, whom remitting to the conscience of their charge, we purpose now to touch the peremptory authorite committed to the sayd Lord Lieutenant, by common consent of the States, and so by degrees to descend to other occurents concerning these Nether-lands.

Captaine Willowby died.

Wee therefore ordaine and command all Gouernours of Prouinces, and Cities, all Admiralls, and Vice-admiralls, all Officers, Cozoners, Captaines, their Officers, and souldiers by Sea and land, and furthermore all other Councellors, Officers, Treasurers, Receiuers, Bailiffs, Burgomasters, Marshals, Magistrates, Gentlemen, Burgers, and other inhabitants, and subiects of these lands, of what quality or condition soeuer, that they and euery of them doe acknowledge his aforesayd Excellency, in the quality of gouernment, and

The Prince of Portingal came to the Lord Lieutenant.

Ilands of barbers Basons.

The Earle of Leicester installed, and the States sworne to the Queene, Articles of honour and Lordship.

Captaine generall ouer the aforesayd united Prouinces, to honor, respect, and obey him, as they ought to doe, without any difficultie in doing the same, vpon paine of falling in the displeasure and anger of his Excellencie, and to be punished according to the heinousnesse of the fault as reason shall require. And to the end that no body should pretend ignorance, we commaund expressely to make knowne these ordinances, to proclaime and publish them, whereas men are accustomed to proclaime all publications, proceeding, and commanding to proceed with rigor against all disobayers and neglectors of the same, according to the order of punishment before mentioned, without any faueur or dissimulation to the contrary, because we haue thought the same to be expedient for the preseruation of the Countrey. Giuen in our Congregation and assembly, in the Hage, the sixt day of February, 1586. by ordinance of the aforesayd generall States.

This placard thus passed, The Lord Lieutenant did ordayne certaine speciall men, natiues borne, of the Councell, to the intent that such affaires as chanced to occur, might by them bee conuenientlie managed: the names of which Councellors, with the places of their charge, I ouer passe.

Hauing thus far discoursed of the Lord Lieutenants passing from place to place, and the manner of his entertainment: the obseruation of time doth vrge vs, ere we proceed any further, to deliuer a piece of seruice done by Cozenell Skinke, and then to proceede in the commemoration of the Lord Lieutenants entertainment in other places.

Skinke tooke the towne of Warle.

On the 21 day of February, Skinke not lying still from endamaging the enemie, did take the towne of Warle, and the Castle thereto belonging, the manner whereof was thus: himselfe lying in Vendelo, a Towne in part besieged, left his men with the Graue Maurice, charging them not to depart till such time as they heard from him, which they fulfilled: hee came with two or three men from Vendelo to his men, no man knowing his enterprise, caused them in the morning to be readie, and so passed on till munday, at which time they were not farre from Warle: Skinke espying a thirtie waggons, clad certaine of his men in the boores apparell, sent them into the Towne to sell that victuals, which they followed, and one of them brake his wagon in the gate, so that the gate could not bee closed: One of them shooting off a dag, gaue Skinke warning, and he suddainly entred the town, without resistance, and tooke both it and the Castle. This Towne is thought not so strong as profitable, yet very strong. In it are diuers salt pits, which doe make great store of salt, which salt doth serue a great part of that Country to Cullen, and further alledge her serued the enemie of salt, which now he wanteth. About the first of March he left the towne, burning it, and spoyling the Country, the cause was this. There was an army comming to stay his passage, which he, hauing 300. horses, did assaile, slue 1000. souldiers, tooke fiue Ensignes, and sent to the Lord Lieutenant. This did valiant Skinke, whom we will leaue, and returne to matter of delight.

The Lord Lieutenant came to Harlem.

On the first of March, the Lord Lieutenant came from Hage to Leidon, and the 3. of March from Leiden to Harlem, whose entertainment there, was with Stations, representations, verses, shewes, &c. not inferiour to those of other Townes. On the 4. of March the Lord Lieutenant saw the Earle of Esser Cozenel, and Sir William Russell Cozenell, Skutter and trayne by Harlem, to the number of 200. horse. He was there feasted and banqueted. And on the 10. of March, he came from Harlem to Amsterdam, and by the way was met with diuers men of warre, well shipped, which brought him by a long riuer that went into the Towne, ouer the which riuer were 3. strong bridges, placed full of armed souldiers, on the first bridge was planted tenne or twelue pieces of Ordinance, which after his honor was past, were shot off, the souldiers on euery bridge discharging by volies, in braue manner: being past these bridges, he was met with two great Pageants, in this manner: two boates were made in monstrous greatnesse, on the one the shape of a horse swimming, on the other the likenesse of a fish, on each of them a man riding, signifying the God Neptune, both these, one on the one side, and the other on the other side, did accompanie him to his landing, which was at the market place, where were planted great numbers of armed men with shot. Right before him where he landed, was a scaffold, whereon was placed diuers shewes, and representations with verses, &c. The day and night following, fireworkes, and afterward banketting, &c. The 20. of March, the Lord Lieutenant came from Amsterdam to a Castle called Sulen, 4 miles from Nozden, and there did dine, and from thence he came to Nozden, to supper and to bed. On the 22. he came from Nozden to Vtricht, where his receiuing was nothing inferior to most of the rest.

The Lord Lieutenant going to Amsterdam.

The Lord Lieutenant came to Vtricht.

On the 26. of March, the Earle of Esser went to Leger with his housemen, where he began a new worke. The 28. the Earle was seruded by Graue Maurice, on the which day in the morning there was charge giuen to all the English souldiers in the towne, that they should march from thence to Hage, which for that they wanted pay they refused, and raised a mutinie, for the which one of Captaine Poles men was taken and put in warde whereupon the rest of his followers seeing this, came to the gaole, burst the lockes of the doores, and tooke out the prisoner, for the which there was fiue apprehended, and three of them were hanged. On the same day was hanged the Secretary to the County Hollocke, which Secretary was a Counceller to the betraying of the Towne of Graue. The 30. of March, the Earle feasted the Nobility and Burgesses of Utricht, where there wanted nothing that might fill their bellies or their heads.

Earle of Esser went to Leger.

A mutinie among the Souldiers.

About the first of Aprill, Generall Norris tooke the Skonce called Lite. On the fourth of Aprill,

Generall Norris tooke a Skonce at Lite.

Aprill, was a sore conflict betweene the Malecontents, and the English, the enemies being foure thousand were banquished by Generall Noris, with one thousand men, whereof he lost a great number, and slew one thousand and two hundred Spaniards. As by letter of Generall Noris to the Lord Lieutenant, &c.

Fall of S. Vaage obtein'd by Captaine Vaight.

The three and twentieth of Aprill, the Earle of Leycester, Lieutenant & gouernor Generall of her Maiesties forces in the Low countries, of the united Prouinces, making his residence at that time in Utricht, (a great and goodly Towne vpon the frontiers of Holland) kept most honorably the feast of Saint George thereun, the proceedings whereof being so Princely performed, to the honor of our nation, in the view of so many thousand strangers, I could not chuse (hauing gotten the true and faithful description, by one William Segar, alias Portelose, an officer at armes in that seruice) to make some briefe remembrance of the manner thereof, to wit: The streets of Utricht being large and faire, were rankt and set with eight enfignes of Burgesses, richly appointed, wearing scarffes, knit like roses, white and red vpon their armes, betweene whom from the Court of my Lord, to the cathedrall Church, called the Dome, the proceading was on horseback. First rode the trumpeters, apparelled in scarlet, layd with siluer lace, sounding their trumpets most royally, their banner roles being displayed, and richly lined with my Lords armes, then followed the Gentlemen, Captaines, Colonels, and her Maiesties sworne men, to the number of sixty horse, richly adorned in cloth of gold, and siluer, and like of all colloures. After came 6. Knights, 4. Barons with the counsell of Estats, the Earl of Esser accompanied with the Bishop of Cullen Prince elector, & the Prince of Portugale rode by himselfe: next proceded the Captaine of the guard, the Treasurer, and controller of the houshold, bearing their white staues: after whom followed two Gentlemen vshers, and Portelose herault in a rich coate of the armes of England: then came my Lord most Princelike, inuested in his robes of the order, guarded by the principall Burgers of the Towne, which offered themselues to that seruice, besides his owne guard, which were fifty halbardiers in scarlet cloakes, guarded with purple and white veluet. Hee being thus honourably brought vnto the Church, after due reuerence done vnto the Queenes Maiesties state which was there erected on the right hand, hee tooke his owne stall on the left, by certaine degrees lower: then began prayers, and a Sermon made by Master Knewstubs, my Lords chaplaine, after which, my Lord proceeded to the offering, first for her Maiestie, and then for himselfe, the which he performed with such decorum, and Princely behauiour, that all generally spake most honorably of him. These solemnities being done, his Lordship returned as he came, leauing behind him the Earle of Esser, and certaine Gentlemen, to accompanie the Princes and the Ladies of the Court. His Court was a faire and large house, belonging in times past to the knights of the Rhodes, in which was a very great hall richly hung with Tapistrie: at the vpper end where of was a most sumptuous cloth and chaire of estate for the Queenes Maiestie, with her armes and stiles thereon, and before it a table couered with all things so requisite, as if in person shee had beene there: on the left hand, almost at the tables end, was my Lords trencher and stale, for he would haue no coate. The Tables being couered, and all degrees assembled, my Lord before the face of her Maiestie, knighted a Dutch Gentleman, called Martin Skinke, for his manifold seruices done to his Country, the which done, the where spashal, led the feast. At the Table on the right side of the hall, sate the yong Prince of Portugall, the Prince elector, and his wife, the princes Simele, the Earle of Esser, the Graue Maures and his Lady, and betwixt euery Lady was an English Lord, or Knight placed. On the left side, sate the States, and chiefe Burgers of the towne, and the grand prior of Amerford (who came to see the feast) was by my Lords appoynt ment, placed vppermost at the table. Then began the trumpets to sound in the seruice which was most Princelike and aboundant, serued on the knee, caried and tasted to her Maiesties trencher. The side tables being furnished all in siluer plate, and attended on by gentlemen, sumptuous feast, and full of deuises.

Martin Skinke knighted, for his seruices.

Portelose promoted to the ensignes that he had won in the field.

dry sorts of musicks, continued the entring of the first course, which done and auoyded, the trumpets sounded in for the second, which was all baked meats of beasts, and foules, the beasts, as Lyons, dragons, leopards, and such like, bearing plaines or armes, and the foules, as peacocks, swans, pheasants, turkie-cocks and others in their naturall feathers spread as in their greatest pride, which sight was both rare and magnificent. This seruice being placed on her Maiesties board, the beasses on the one side, and foules on the other, the Lyon lying couchant at her highnesse trencher, the others cryed, a hall, which being made, with much adoe (by reason of the multitude) they brought vp betweene them, with three reuerences to the state, Portelose Herauld, inuested with the armes of England, who in Latine, French, and English, pronounced the Queenes Maiesties stiall stile of England, France, and Ireland, defendresse of the faith, &c. crying three times, largesse. Then began the trumpets to sound, and the Dutch men to carouse to the health of her Maiestie, the welfare of my Lord, and to the prosperities of the united Prouinces, and nothing wanted wherein either estate, magnificence, or ioy might be expressed. To be briefe, the feast ended, and tables voyded, there was dancing, vaunting and tumbling, with the feazes of Hercules, which gaue great delight to the strangers, for they had not seene it before, and thus they passed the time, til euensong, and then departed. At supper being all assembled againe, great was the feast, and plentifull the cheere: and after supper began the barriers, betweene challengers, and defendants, men of armes, where in the Earle of Esser behaued himselfe so valiantly

antly that he gaue all men great hope of his noble prowesse in Armes.

The Warriers done, and either part retired with equall prayse (though not with equall blowes) there was a most sumptuous banquet prepared of Suger meates, for the men of Armes, and the Ladies: which banquet being furnished, my Lord wishing them all good rest, tooke his leaue, and so this honorable feast broke vp about 12. of the clock at midnight.

H. Archer.

On the foure and twentieth of Aprill, our English men that were in the enterprise before Graue returned, hauing set Graue in sufficiencie both of victuals and munition, and in their retracte set vpon a sconce called Knols sconce, which was yelded vpon composition. The nert day our men, or some part of them came before Simple sconce, and presently wonne it, without the losse of any man.

Knols sconce won, & Simplo sconce.

The 26. of Aprill, the Lieutenant of sir Martin Skinke, his Master being with my Lords Excellencie, knowing of a company of Footmen Spaniards, hee with certaine of his horse layd themselues in ambush, set vpon them, killed thirty of them, and tooke 81. and caried them to their Garrison.

The 4. of May, his Excellencie did view all his horsemen, being in number about 13. or 14. hundred by Newkirke, on a great Heath betweene Newkirke and Amerford. And this day his Excellencies Gard being sent to Newkirke to keepe the Towne, tooke 70. Boxes, that were purposed to haue spoyled Newkirke. The seuenth of May, his Excellencie removed from Amerford to Arnam, and passed through Reine, and Wagonet. Reine is a proper strong Towne, situate on the riuer of Reine, pleasant, and defenceable, roundly compact together. Wagonet standeth by a creeke of water coming to the Reine, and within twenty score yards of the Reine, this Towne is a strong Towne, and standes most pleasant, wanting nothing but peace. Arnam is a faire Towne, strongly enuironed with walls, ramparts, and other matter of strength, it also standeth on the riuer of Reine, on the one side of the Towne the ground is most fertile and pleasant, on the other side is a great heath most barren, all the Country is spoyled. Abbeyes, faire houses, and Boxes, are all wasted, neither any house standing, nor any man there dwelling. Ouer the Reine against this Towne is a sconce onely for defence of the Boxes, if the Enemie come to destroy and take from them their Cattell, to which sconce both the Boxes runne, and also driue their Cattell. Within one mile of this Towne is the sconce of Arnam, which our English men wonne the last yere; this sconce is wondrous strong, being compassed with such rampired walls, and deepe ditches, that it is almost inuincible. It standeth on the one side of the Reine. At this sconce was Captain Hennings, a braue Gentleman slaine at the winning of it, and there is buried: of other townes I leaue further to describe, and turne to the accidents.

Reine.

Wagonet.

Arnam.

The 9. of May, the Prince of Parma with others, came to view the Towne of Graue, which a Canoneere fell, and discharged his Canon, wherewith hee tooke away the hinder part of his horse, and misled the Prince but a little, so that hee hurled him sore. The same day they of Graue shot fire balls into the great sconce of the Enemie, and by good lucke one of them lighted among the powder in the sconce, set it on fire, which with such violence brake forth, that it blew vp the Spaniards most terribly, layd the sconce flat. About this time the Enemie battered the base Towne of Graue, and presently vpon the battery entered, which the Souldiers of the Towne suffered; but in fine they set on them, slue 400, and purged the Towne againe.

Prince of Parma in Graue.

A great sconce fired.

The Enemie repulsed out of Graue.

The 12. of May, Sir Martin Skinke obtained a little perce of ground enuironed with water, nere vnto Nemegan, where he entrenched himselfe, so that the Towne could not hurt him, and his ships of warre comming downe to him, nothing could passe by the riuer of Reine to the Towne but he commanded it. The 14. of May, our men lying at Nemegan sconce, there reuolted to them out of the Towne two Boyes. The 16. his Excellency passed from Arnam to the campe at Nemegan: this day the Castle of Lenow was yelded him, and the same day came siue Boyes to our men from Nemegan. The 18. of May, the Enemies entring Graue, lost 500. men.

This Martin Skinke was a chiefe Captaine vnder the Duke of Parma, and reuolted from him, because the Duke refused to make him Gouernour of Antwerp at the taking thereof: the Duke knew him to be very fantasticke, and therefore durst not trust him in so weighty a matter; whereupon Sir Martin Skinke practised all manner of malice against the Duke, euen to kill him if he could.

Hemart for his yelding of Graue, comming to Vomell, was there apprehended and carried to Vtricht, adiudged to die, and was executed with two other Captaines.

The 20. of May, early in the morning the strong Fort of Nemegah was yelded to his Excellency in this sort, to depart like souldiers, which was graunted, and they to the number of 156. souldiers very brane passed by his Excellencies lodging at Brankharst: there was in all at the siege of this sconce at Nemegan slaine about sorty souldiers and Pyoners, and twenty hurt. Now to returne to other accidents, such as in the meane time happened in England.

The strong Fort of Nemegan yeld to the Earle of Leycester.

This yere the Quenes Maiestie tooke order for the peopling and inhabiting of the Countries, late belonging to the Earle of Desmond and his rebellious companions, to which end diuers honorable and worshipfull Gentlemen prouided to be vndertakers of sigmories there, whereof some went into the said Countrie, others according to order taken, sent their people, amongst which were Sir Christopher Hatton, Sir Walter Rawly, Sir Wil. Courtney, Sir Richard Mollineux, Sir George Bourcher, Sir Edward Fitton, Sir Valentine Browne,

Desmond in Ireland proclaimed of the English nation.

Browne, Sir Walter Luson, John Popham, her Maiesties Atturney generall and other.

The 19. of January, Nicholas Deuorox was condemned for treason, in being made a Seminary Priest at Rhemes in Fraunce, since the feast of Saint Iohn Baptist, in Anno primo of her Maiesties raigne, and in remaining here after the terme of forty dayes after the session of the last Parliament.

Also Edmond Barbar being made a Priest as aforesaid, and comming into this Realme after the said terme of forty dayes, was likewise condemned of treason, and both drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered on the 21. of January. And on the same day a Wench was burned in Smithfield, for poysoning of her Aunt, and Husbande, and attempting the like to her Uncle.

Seminaries Priests executed.

On the feast day of the purification of our blessed Lady, Doctor Iohn Whitegift Archbishop of Canterbury, William Lord Cobham, Warden of the fiue Ports, and Thomas Lord Buckhurst, were chosen and taken to be of her Maiesties priuie Councell.

Archbishop of Canterbury called to be of the priuy Councell.

The 11. of February, Thomas Louelace was brought prisoner from the Lower of London to the Starre-chamber, against whom her Maiesties Attorney did informe, that the same Louelace, vpon malice conceiued against Leonard Louelace, and Richard Louelace his cousin germanes, had falsly and deuilishly contriued and counterfeited a very trapterous letter in the name of Thomas Louelace (another brother of the said Leonard and Richard then resident beyond the Seas) purporting, that the same Thomas should thereby incite and prouoke the said Leonard to procure the said Richard to execute her Highnesse destruction with other circumstances of treason. This letter he cast in an open high way, pretending thereby, that vpon the discouery thereof, his said kinsmen, Leonard and Richard should be drawne in question for the treasonable matter against her Maiestie in that bill contained, euen in the highest degree, for which offence her Maiesties Atturney prayed, that the said Thomas then prisoner, might receiue condigne punishment. Whereupon the Court adiudged that he should be carried on horseback about Westminster Hall, with his face to the horse taile, and a paper on his backe, wherein to be written: For counterfeiting of false and treacherous letters against his owne kindred, containing most trapterous matter against her Maiesties person. And from thence to be carried in that manner, and set on the pillorie in the Palace at Westminster, and there to haue one of his eares cut off: also to be carried in like manner into London and set on the pillory one Market day in Cheape, with the like paper. After that carried into Kent, and at the next Assize there to be set on the pillory with the like paper, and his other eare to be cut off. Also to be set on the pillory one Market day at Canterbury, and another at Rochester in the like manner: and at euery the foresaid places, this order taken touching his offence to be openly read, the sentence whereof was duly executed in the Palace at Westminster, in Cheape, &c.

Thomas Louelace his censure for treason.

The 14. of March, at the Assizes kept at the Citie of Exceter in Deuonshire before Sir Edward Anderson, Lord chiefe Iustice of the common pleas, Sergeant Horiday, one of the Barons of the Exchequer, and other Iustices there happened a strange sickneste, first amongst the prisoners, and then amongst other persons, and besides the prisoners, many of all degrees died thereof, namely Sergeant Horiday, Sir Iohn Chichester, Sir Arthur Basset, and Sir Barnard Drake Knights, Thomas Carew, R. Carie, Io. Forteseue, Iohn Waldron, and Tho. Ridone Esquires, and Iustices of Peace: of the common people died very many, Constables, Tithingmen, and Iurors, and namely of one Iury, they being twelue in number, there died 11. of them. This sickneste was imputed to certaine Portugals then prisoners in the said goale. For not long before, one Barnard Drake Esquire, had borne at the Seas, and marring with certaine Portugals some from new found land, and taken with them, hee tooke them as a good prize, and brought them into Southmouth hauen, and from thence they were sent, being in number about 38. persons, into the goale of the Castle of Exon, and there were cast into the deepe pit and stinking dungeon. These men had borne before long time at the Seas, hauing no change of apparell, nor lyen in bed, and now lying on the ground without succour or relefe were some infected, and all for the most part were sicke, and some of them died; and this sickneste very some after dispersed it selfe among all the refuse of the prisoners in the goale, of which diuerse many of them died, but all brought to great extremities, and very hardly escaped. These men when they were to be brought before the foresaid Iustices for their triall, many of them were so weake and sicke, that they were not able to goe nor stand, but were carried from the goale to the place of iudgement, some vpon hand-barrowes, and some between men leading them, and so brought to the place of Iustice. The sight of these mens pitifull cases, being thought to be hunger-stanued, rather then otherwise diseased, moued many to pity them, &c.

Strange sickneste and death at Exceter through stench of the prison.

Vowell.

The 17. of March, a strange thing happened, the like whereof before hath not beene heard of in our time. Master Doringto of Spaldwick, in the County of Huntington Esquire, one of her Maiesties Gentlemen Pensioners, had a hog'e which died suddenly, and being ript, to see the cause of his death, there was found in the hole of the heart of the same horse a strange worme, which lay on a round heape in a kall or skinne of the likenesse of a Toade, which being taken out, and spread abroad, was in forme and fashion not vnlike to be described, the length of which worme diuided into many graines, to the number of fifty (spread from the body like the branches of a tree) was from the snout to the end of the longest greine 17. inches, hauing 4. issues in the greines, from the which dropped forth a red water: the body in bignesse

A strange worme found in the heart of an horse.

bigneſſe round about was three inches and a halfe, the colour whereof, was very like a marrell. This monſtrous wo;me found in manner aforeſayd, crawling to haue got away, was ſtabbed in with a dagger and dyed, which after being dyed, was ſhewed to many honourable perſons of the Realme.

Seminarie Prieſts executed.

The 18. of Aprill, in the aſſizes holden at London, in the Iuſtice hall, William Thomſon, *alias* Blackborne, made a Prieſt at Rhemes, and Richard Lea, *alias* Long, made a Prieſt at Lyons in France, and remaining here contrary to the ſtatute, were both condemned, and on the twentieth day of Aprill drawn to Tybourne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Sir Henry Sidney deceaſed.

The 1. of May, deceaſed ſir Henry Sidney Knight of the Garter, Lord preſident of Wales and was honourably buried at Penſhurſt in Kent, on the one and twentieth of June.

Ambaſſador frō the King of Denmarke.

The 8. of May, being Sunday in the afternoone, Henry Ramelius Chancelor; for Germanny, Ambaſſador from Frederick the ſecond, King of Denmarke, vnto the Queenes Maieſty of England, came into the riuer of Thames with his ſhips ſo far as Blackewall, where hee was receiued by Gilbert Lord Talbot, and by him conueyed by water along to Greenwich, and ſo to the Tower where, where he remained and was honorably receiued of the Lord Cobham, and other great eſtates, and by them conueied through the Tower ſtreete, Fanchurch ſtreete, and Gracechreete, into Buriſh gate ſtreet, to Croſby place, where he was lodged, and remayned till he had finiſhed his Ambaſſage, at the Queenes charges, and returned on the 30. of May, towards Denmarke.

Earle of Arundell condemned to pay 10000. pounds.

The 17. of May, Philip Earle of Arundell, was conueied from the Tower of London to Weſtminſter, and there in the Starr chamber, by the councell condemned to pay 10000. pound fine for his contempt, and to remaine in priſon at the Queenes pleaſure.

League with the Scots.

A Commiſſion was directed from her Maieſty, tending to the ratifying of a firme league of amity betweene her Maieſtie and Iames King of Scots, which league being attended, commiſſioners were appointed, Edward Earle of Rutland, William Lord Euers, and Thomas Randolph Eſquire, who with their traine came to Warwicke on the 19. of June, where the Ambaſſadors of Scotland being preſent, they accomplished the matter according to the Commiſſion the articles of the ſaid leagne in all and euery part ſufficiently confirmed on the firſt of July, which being done the ſayd Earle of Rutland, with his traine returned home, Maiſter Randolph went into Scotland to take his leaue of the King, and returned into England about the 15. of Auguſt.

Elks executed for counterfeiting the Q. ſeale.

The 18 of June, Henry Elks Clearke and bachelor of Art, for counterfeiting the Queenes ſigne manuel to the preſentation of the Parſonage of All Saints in Haſtings, directed to the Archbiſhop of Canterburie, or to his Commiſſary generall (the dioceſſe of Chicheſter being voyd) that hee might bee inſtituted Parſon there, was drawne to Tybourne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

A lottery for marueilous rich, and beautifull armour, was begun to be drawne at London in Saint Paules Churchyard, at the great Weſt gate (an houſe of timber and boord being there erected for that purpoſe) on Saint Peters day in the morning, which lottery continued in drawing day and night, for the ſpace of two or three dayes. A lottery at London for rich armor.

This yeare, Maiſter Thomas Candiſh, hauing of his owne proper charges, new built from the keele, and furniſhed with all things neceſſary for two yeares preuiſion, a braue ſhip called the Deſire, of 140. tuns, and a leſſe of ſixtie tuns, named the Content, ioyning thereunto, a barke of ſixty tuns, named the Hugh Gallant, (in which ſmall ſkarce were 125. men) ſet ſayle from Plimmouth on the 21. of July, and began his famous voyage, round about the globe of the earth, entring in at the ſtreight of Magellan, and returning by the cape Bona Speranza, which voyage he finiſhed in the ſpace of two yeeres, and leſſe then two moneths, arriuing at Plimouth the 9. of September, in Anno 1588. of the which voyage, and other ye may read at large, in a booke entituled, The prince pall Nauigations, voyages, and diſcouries of the Engliſh nation, made by Sea, or ouer land, to the furtheſt diſtant quarters of the earth, publiſhed by Richard Hakluit, maſter of Art, in Anno 1589. The Caſe & his voyage about the worlde.

This yeare (as in the laſt proceeding) fell great troubles in Ireland in Connaught, which because they are memorable, and no leſſe happily (then valiantly appeaſed, I will ſet downe the cauſes and foundations therof, with all the particulare ſeruices and ſucceſſes, as I haue receiued them, confirmed vnder the hands and teſtimonies of diuers Captains, and Gentlemen employed in the ſayd ſeruice. Seruices of Friendſhip for Richard Burke againſt the Burkes

In the moneth of September, in An. 1585. at a Seſſions holden at Donmeenoug in the County of Mayo within the Prouince of Connaught, by ſir Richard Bingham, knight, chiefe Commiſſioner, and gouernor of the ſayd Prouince: ſir Nicholas White Maſter of the Rolles then being preſent, and employed with him for the perfecting of the laſt compoſition made within the ſayd Prouince) the County of Mayo, and the whole Countrey ſtood in generalitie, through the good and politicke gouernment, and the iuſt and vpright dealing of the ſayd ſir Richard Bingham, in peaceable & quiet termes, without any face of alteration. And the moſt part of the Gentlemen, and free-holders of the Countrey reſorted to the ſayd Seſſions before: neuertheleſſe, when now by meanes of this compoſition and agreement betweene her Maieſtie and them, they perceiued that the names, titles, and ſuperiorities of their cheefe Lords, and eſpecially of M. W. the cheefe of the ſepts of that Country ſhould ceaſe, extinguiſh, and for euer after bee determined: it did not a little grieue them, although ſome of them not long before had expoſtulated the like reformation. The plot of this compoſition was deuiſed by ſir Richard of purpoſe, to take away the greatneſſe of All Connaught through ſir Richard Bingham gouernour.

of the Iriſh Lords, with their names of Mies, and Oes, that the inferiour ſubiect might bee freed from their Iriſh cuſtomes, cuttings, and vnreaſonable exactions, and (by knowing what was their owne) be drawne to depend euer after vpon the ſtate, and not on thoſe Iriſh Lords, or Gentlemen: which alſo might not only much auaile her Maieſtie, in time of any ſtirs, or reuolts (by drawing the common people from following the great and chiefe Lords) but alſo bring a more certaine yearely rent, or reuenue, into her highneſſe coffers, then formerly was accuſtomed. When the people perceiued theſe their olde cuſtomes, and wages like to take end, they deuiſed with themſelues for the preuenting thereof, according to their old cuſtomed manner, euer by them vſed in all their diſcontentments, they tooke vp their weapons, armed them againſt the State, thinking by ſtirs, and broyles to win the reuocation of this ſetled, and determined reſolution, and ſo to be left againe in their old cuſtomes and wages. This their purpoſe appeared in one Thomas Roe Burcke, a chiefe Gentleman of the ſept, who at this very inſtant, durring the ſayd Seſſions at Donmeenony, kept himſelfe within a ſtrong Caſtle of his, ſtanding in an Iland on Loghe maske, euen within the ſight of the Gouernor and the other Commiſſioners, refuſing to come at them, albeit they had ſeuerall times ſent for him. Sir Richard Bingham perceiuing the coales of troubles were now laid together, and would ſhortly after kindle, and become an angry fire, if the ſame were not politikely and wartily preuented (diſſembling the matter, as if it were of no moment) he bethought him of the beſt and ſafeſt remedie to make with this inconuenience: And knowing well that theſe Burkes had euer bin very bad and braue people, ſuch as very hardly continued themſelues two yeares together, within a due courſe or compaſſe of obedience; he law that the onely way to ſtoppe this gap, was either to cut off, or to apprehend and lay vp in durance as pledges, two or three of the beſt of that ſept: ſuch as were moſt dangerous for the inciting of ſtirs, and the drawing of others into action. And therefore vpon his returne out of the County of Roſcommon, he dealt with the cheriffe of the County of Mayo, for the apprehenſion of the ſayd Thomas Roe. The cheriff not long after ſent his ſubcheriffe, to put this matter in execution, who being reſiſted and hurt by the ſayd Thomas Roe, and not otherwiſe able to apprehend him, wounded him in ſuch ſort, as he thereof died. This Thomas Roe being thus ſlaine, was not much lamented, no nor of his owne kinde red, for he was an oppreſſour of them, and doubtleſſe, it was thought by wiſe men, that the death of this man, and the hanging of two others of that ſurname at Roſcommon, which had deuiſed for the drawing of Scottes into the Prouince, had preuented the ſtirs, and troubles that after enſued, and at that time ſeemed to haue a beginning, had not ſome men depending on the State (through enuie and malice, to Sir Richard Bingham and his good happy gouernment) perſwaded diuers others of that ſect of the Burkes, to haue a care of themſelues, to bee vpon their keeping, and to truſt no Officer, nor to come to any ſuch, till their pardons ſhould be by them procured from the Lord Deputy. Theſe meere names I forbeare to remember; becauſe they haue ſince that time made it knowne before the Lord Deputy, and Councell of the Realme, that in giuing ſuch cauſeats to the Burkes, they meant nothing leſſe then to hearten them into rebellion againſt the State, and to attempt ſuch bad actions, as afterwards they did. Of this councell, the Burkes (which of themſelues were ſeditious enough, in whoſe mindes did ſtill ſticke the aboliſhing, and taking away of their M. W. with their old Iriſh cuſtomes and cuttings) take hold and conuerted the ſame to an apt and commodious occaſion offered them, for their better aſſembling together into a conuenient number. And more effectually to winne the hearts of many men to follow this their intended enterpriſe, they made Clan-ſoundes, the Loires, and moſt of the Countrey beleeue, that ſir Richard Bingham hauing already taken from theſe men their ancient cuſtomes and liberties, would alſo deliuer the like meaſure to them, and take from them alſo their liues, if they did not well looke vnto themſelues. By this meanes they drew many vnto them, perſwading themſelues that they might ſafely aſſemble together in companies, without feare of interruption, for by the friendſhip of their fourſcore Councellors (which were in Dublin, their aſſemblies ſhould there bee thought as a thing by them done for their defence and ſafety. They alſo knew, that ſir Richard Bingham being reſtrained from following them in this or other their actions, without direction from Dublin, could not ſtop or preuent them in their firſt beginning, by reaſon whereof, they would in that time draw together, and ioyne to them the greateſt part of the Countrey, whereof ſome ſhould be drawne to aſſiſt them in open hoſtility, and ſome others in ſecret and vnder-hand dealing, of which ſort, the latter ſhould ſtill ſeeme ſubiects, and liue (as neere as they could) in the boſome of the State. And to make themſelues the ſtronger, and to drawe the whole Prouince into action with them, they gaue it forth, that their caſe was euery mans caſe within the ſame: and that their ancient cuſtomes and liberties were infringed, and their liues ſought to bee taken away, ſo ſhould it alſo fare with the reſt of the ſayd Prouince. And here for an entrance into this rebellion, the ſonnes of Edmond Burke of Caſtle Barry, being many (which Edmond was an old man, one of the competitors of the M. Williamſhip) and a moſt bad affected member to the State, and his wife as bad as himſelfe, together with Edmond Berragh Burke, Richard Burks the Druiſs Hooks ſonne, Moyler Oge Burke, Walter M. Donnie Bune, Cahir, M. Connell, and diuers others, aſſociating vnto them many idle perſons, entring into a Caſtle in Loghmaske, called Caſtle Mecally, and manned the ſame together with Thomas Roes Caſtle, wherof mention

Sir Richard Bingham ſeeke to preuent a miſchiefe.

Thomas Roe Burke reſiſting the cheriffe is ſlaine.

Theſe two ſons Moyler Oge Burke and Theobot Keogh

Bad officers vſed by men depending on the ſtate.

I ſuffered Cahir Mac Rich. Bingham to ſtrengthen the gouernment, and Breadeneſſe Iuriſdict.

The Burkes returne the croſſe fall of Sir Richard Binghams backe friends to ſerue their purpoſe. Slanderous lies to ſet forwards rebellion.

The ſimple Iriſhrie are more wiſer then we take them to be.

Priuy trayterous deeds more hurt then open rebels.

The rebels deuiſe to make the action generall.

Caſtle Mecally manned and kept by the Burkes.

tion is made before, which Castle after Thomas Roes death, was now in the possession of his brother Richard Burke, called the Pall of Ireland: which Castles they kept in rebellious manner against the State refusing to come at any of her Majesties officers. About this time, sir Richard Bingham lay at the siege of Clanowen in Thomond, a strong pile, manned and kept against her Majestie, by Mahowne Obrian a most dangerous enemie to the State, a chiefe champion of the Popes, and a great practiser with forreine powers, for the inuasion of this Realme of Ireland. At this siege Sir Richard Bingham had but 100. English souldiers and some few kerne of the country, by reason whereof, he was driuen to no small paine in skirmishing, watching, and warding with so few men: neuertheless, within seuen dayes after he won the Castle, and slew the sayd Mahowne Obrin, and the ward within, and raced the said Castle, without the furtherance of any great ordinance. After that, sir Richard marched from this Castle, to Castle Mecalley, within the which the traytors were, and inclosed themselues. At his first comming thither, he parled with them, admiring them to remember the obedience, which they owed to her Majestie, and to yeeld themselues to her Majesties mercy, assuring them that in so doing they should finde that favour in all respects, that other her highnesse subiects did. But they (minding nothing lesse then to submit themselues, on any such conditions) sayd they would not doe any hurt, but kepe themselues in their safety, for that they were fearefull to trust any Englishman, alleadging many friuolous and impertinent causes, meaning them to stand vpon their guard. Hereupon Sir Richard proceeded to beseige them in the said Castle, which was a strong round fortresse, erected far within the Loghe, vpon a small compasse of ground, so scanted by the wall, that scarce a landing place was left vnto it. The siege was all by water in boates, and could not otherwise be attempted. Insomuch that Sir Richard going about to burne a boat or two of theirs, that they had bored, and layd by vnder the Castle wall, to the end they might not escape away, and that also he might watch and ward them with few men (hauing but a small company there, and those also sore wearied, buised with stones and galled with shot at the siege of Clanewen) was forced by the sudden rising of contrary weather, which much fauoured the enemie, to leaue the attempt with losse of his boats, and two or three of his souldiers, himselfe and others being in the sayd boate, hardly escaped by the helpe of other boats, which other boats came not in time to his succour, through the negligence of such as he had put in trust with them, and appointed to come, and ioyne with him. The boat which he so lost, the enemies got, in which and in another boate of their owne (before Sir Richard could returne to charge them with a fresh supply from his campe, lying on the shoare) they shipped themselues, and with great celerity escaped into the woods, fearing that at the next charge, sir Richard would haue won the Castle, Captaine Mordant and others had the chase of them by water. These Traytors being thus escaped to the woods and mountains out of the Castle Mecalley, their accomplices also fled out of the other Castle. Both which and one strong pile of Farrowe, M. Dowces, Sir Richard raced downe to the ground, for that they were not fit or stood seruiceable to be kept by the English, and were very dangerous to be in the possession of the Irishrie, Richard Burke alias the Pall of Ireland, a man of no small account among his sect, and all the ill affected Irishrie, repaired to Sir Richard at his first comming to Castle Mecalley, being indeed the chiefe of their confederacy. This man vnder colour of dutifull subiection, intended to haue betrayed Sir Richard and all his company: but (intelligence hereof being giuen, and many apparant proofes had of his traytorous intentions, and deuises) this Pall of Ireland was soone executed by Marshall law: this man was accounted the most dangerous member in all the County of Mayo, especially for the drawing in of Scots, a thing which Sir Richard euer doubted, and which the Burks vndoubtedly intended.

After this, the Gouernor Sir Richard Bingham tooke order for the following of those Burkes, to the woods and mountaines, which were now growne to be some reskue to woods, he lenied some forces on the Country, and with them and his owne company of an hundred souldiers, he so hunted them from bush to bush, and hill to hill, that in short time no newes was to be heard where any of them were. After this the gentlemen of the Country which had not combined with them, seeing the rebels to be driuen to their holes and fastnes in hyding matter, by meanes whereof the souldiers could doe nothing vpon them, offered to Sir Richard that if he would draw his forces out of the Country, they would vndertake the seruice against the rebels, and either kill them, or banish them at their owne cost and charges, without abating any peny of the composition rents, due to her Majestie by them in lew therof: hereunto Sir Richard assented, finding it a good policy to set one of them against another. But here (hauing these bad Burks at a great aduantage, and in a hard distressed case) when they were thus at the lowest ebbe, Sir Richard received a speciall and strait charge, and commandement from the Lord Deputie to protect them, and he receiued also a protection ready signed by the Lord Deputy to that end, which thing, though the matter and manner of it much grieued him, hee handled it in the best sort he could, to saue the credit of the State, and wrought deuises to driue them to seeke their protections, which when they did, he graunted it vnder his owne hand, and the Seale of the Province, as formerly was accustomed, and in such causes ought to be done. But although this was closely handled by the Gouernour Sir Richard Bingham, yet the Burks had intelligence that the Lord Deputy had protected them, and commaunded the Gouer-

Mahowne Obrian besieged in the Castle Clanowen by Sir Richard Bingham, Mahowne Obrian slaine, and Clanowen won and raced to the ground.

Sir Richard Bingham offereth mercy to the Burkes, but they refuse it.

Castle Mecalley besieged by Sir Richard Bingham.

Sir Richard Bingham frustrated of his purpose.

The traytors fly out of Mecalley.

Traytors of Ireland are cunning in running away.

Three strong Castles ouerthrowne by Sir Richard Bingham.

The Burkes are the second time.

The loues in Connaught murdered her Majesties officers.

The leuying of men to send into the Low countries cannoted by the Deputie to resist the rebels.

The Burks were so hunted in the woods and mountaines that noueenes could be heard of them.

The gentlemen of the Country offer to driue the traytors, at their owne charges.

The Burkes' hard vpon vnreasonable demaunds.

The gouernour willing to haue done vpon the Burkes to peace.

The Burkes are comprised and entertained vnder protections.

Things claimed by handled among the Englishare neuertheless knowne to the Irishrie.

Gouernour to performe it, which, as is to be gathered, they had learned from some well-willers of theirs out of Dublin: this made the Gentlemen very high and hauty minded, and was to them a Soueraigne preparatiue, for to vndertake new and greater stirs and broyles, then before they had begun. For the place being such as the State offered it, and they sought it not, continued but a small time, although they had giuen in a simple pledge for the performance thereof. After the Burkes were thus protected, Sir Richard Bingham repaired to his dwelling house and from thence vpon occasions to Dublin, where he had not long stayed, when the Burkes reuolted againe now the second time, ioyning vnto them the Clangibbons, the Clandonnels, and the loues in farre greater number then before, which sayd loues, the more to manifest their bad and traiterous intention, and the better to assure their complices of their fast dealing in this combination, murdered certaine of the officers of Percunnaught and their men, to the number of fiftene or sixtene. About this time order came from the Lord Deputy, for the leuying of men within this Prouince for the seruice in the Low Countreys. The bunte thereof and the repaire hither of Francis Barckley, sent by the Lord Deputy for the leuying of the sayd men, caused many idlemen, who had no scale to serue beyond the seas, to ioyne themselues with the sayd Barkes, then in action against her Majestie. And thus these Burkes hauing had an enterview of peace, and a pawling time to gather head againe, and increase their forces, stood on very lofty termes, and sayd they would haue a M. William, or else they would goe into Spayne for one, also they would haue no sheriffe within that County, nor be subiect to answere in appearance at any assise or Sessions. These points and termes they stood on, and articled the same accordingly, with many other vnreasonable demaunds which they would haue to be granted, or otherwise they would in no wise yeld to haue peace with the State. At the beginning of this second reuolt, for that the Gouernor was willing to haue drawne them to peace (if by any reasonable meanes he might haue done the same, without any indignity to the State) he sent vnto them Commissioners, viz. the Lord Archbishop of Tuam, the Lord Bremingham Barron of Athenry, Thomas Dillon, Esquire, chiefe Iustice of the Prouince, Gerrald Comerford, Esquire, Attourney of the same, and others to parley with them, and to examine the cause of those their insolent attempts: vnto whom they answered in effect, as is aforesayd, deliuering them the sayd Articles in writing. And euen during the time of the Commissioners abode in the Countrey, they did not forbeare to burne and spoyle the same. All which notwithstanding a time of peace was granted, vpon conditions in a scrit to them giuen, for eight dayes by the sayd Commissioners, that in the meane time the Lord Deputies pleasure might be signified to the Gouernour how he would haue them to be proceeded withall, and direction sent accordingly. But (after this also was granted them) the Commissioners were no sooner departed out of those parts, then they began to breake downe diuers Castles, and to burne many townes in the plaine and champaine Countries. And the more to make knowne their Traiterous and wicked purposes, they proceeded against her Majestie in most odious and vndutifull speaches, saying: What haue we to doe with that Carlatie, how dowtle are we, being so mighty a nation, to haue beene so long subiect to a woman? the Pope and the King of Spaine shall haue the rule of vs, and none other. Sir Richard (notwithstanding all this) did forbeare to raise forces, and to serue vpon them (great ye his disaduantage) for that he had receiued many and earnest cautions from the Lord Deputy to forbeare the beginning of warre against them. But in the meane time, the rebels grew to be very strong, and were now increased to the number of seuen or eight hundred men, and had also sent Edmund Kerragh Burke, and Iohn Ireleaue, brother to Water Kerragh Burke, to parley with the Scots, and to draw them into the Province, to their succour and aide, aduertising the Scots, by the sayd messengers, that the time was then to subdue Connah, for the Queene hadde few or no souldiers in the Realme, they were all imployed into the Low Countryes. This fire kindled and flamed in such sort, that it was high time to take in hand the quenching thereof: neuerthelesse, Sir Richard of himselfe durst doe nothing against them, for that his was aduised and willed by the Lord Deputy, to doe nothing in that case, without his Lordships aduise and direction, which (when he had long looked for) at length he receiued, although somewhat late, the effect whereof was thus: the sayd Lord Deputie and the Councell conuerted in opinion with Sir Richard, that the conditions which the Burkes required were so vnreasonable, as neither subiect ought to demaund them, ne yet the States (without great indignity) could yeld vnto them, and therefore resolued and willed Sir Richard to prosecute them, with such forces as he had, or could leuy, except he could find them to stand on more dutifull termes then afore is sayde. Hereupon the Gouernor leuied such forces as hee thought might suffice to answere the seruice both effectually and speedily, for he found and saw that lingering seruice could not but greatly charge her Majestie, and much encourage the enemy: (a soft kind of warre that hath beene too too long vsed in this realme.) First, hauing taken order for the assurance of the country behinde him, hee marched towards the County of Mayo, the 12. of July, 1586. with his owne garrison forces, which were 100. footmen, and 50. horsmen, and came to Billinrobe the 14. day of the sayd moneth: here he spent fiue or seuen dayes, as well in parleying with the said Burks, as also in gathering of his whole forces together, hither came to him the Earle of Clanricard with 30. horsmen, and one hundred kearne, also many gentlemen of the Country came by

They giue ill speeches of her Majestie.

Sir Ric. great patience and discretion, more actions of peace then warre.

The Burkes were growne to fiue or eight hundred men and sent for shoares to ayde them.

The much assistance of prouinciall lords hereof the seruice.

Sir Ric. seeks presently the discommodities of lingering warre.

Sir Ric. Bingham's forces assembly to him.

ther, namely the Lord Bremingham, Lord Wilton of Athenrie, Sir Thobbert M. Dary, Knight, Teig Okelley, and diuers others: hither also came in the supply of forces which he had leyed within the Prouince, viz. a hundred footmen of Captaine Mordaps, a hundred footmen vnder Captaine Merriman, and a hundred footmen vnder Captaine Mollean, besides diuers companies of light Kearne, to the number of 1200 seuen hundred: and then hauing imployed the Earle of Clanrickard, the Archbishop of Cham, Bishop of Kilmore, the Lord Bremingham, Thomas Dillon, Iustice of the Prouince and others, in parlying with the Burkes one day, and finding that no reasons nor perswasions might win them to peace, he executed certaine of their pledges, which they before had put in for their loyalty and good behauiour (for it appeared to this politique and wise Gentleman Sir Richard Bingham, that the sparing of rebels pledges heretofore, had done no small hurt in this Realme, by encouraging them to ill actions, trusting vpon the accustomed mercy shewed to the like pledges) and then he marched to the Abbey of Kallentubber, the 20 and twentieth of July: and from thence hee sent his forces of footmen, and Kearne, into the mountaines, and woods, to seeke the rebels in their fastnesse, which aforesayd forces was led by Captain Iohn Bingh in who had the charge of the garrison band, which behaued himselfe so well therein, that within the space of fiue or seuen weekes, they all submitted themselues to the State: himselfe with the Earle of Clanrickard, and the horsemen kept the champaine and plaine Country, as well for the defence of her Maiesties good subiects in those parts, as also to keepe the enemy from escaping away from the forces sent into their sayd fastnesse. About this time there came an espiall out of Mounster, being sent, if it were as he said, as a messenger from those parts, to Francis Barckley prouost Marshall of Connaught. This espiall, the meze to encourage the traitors, and to animate others to ioyne with them, gaue it foorth that the Earle of Leicester was dayne in the Low Countries, and the most of the English forces ouerthrowne there: that there were two great armies of Spaniardes landed in England, and that there was a great fleete of Spanish ships in Baltimore, that the King of Scots was in armes against her Maiestie, and that her Highnesse was sicke, and in great danger of death: vpon which wntrue seditious rumor and report, Sir Richard caused the Author and messenger thereof, being a bad runnagate, to be executed by martiall law. And now the footmen within the mountains, and himselfe in the champaine, so hunted the Burkes and their accomplices from place to place, that within the space of three weekes they beganne to be tame and they had taken from them in that time, the number of foure or fiue thousand head of cattell, whereof Sir Richard Bingham reserued towards the defraying of the extraordinary charges of the iourney, the number of one thousand. All the rest were bestowed on the Captaines and their companies, and the officers of the field as bootie, according to the custome in this Countrey seruices, or else giuen to the Kearne and light footmen, as a consideration of their entertainments, which thereupon were discharged and dismissed from that seruice. Besides the depriuing these rebells of their cattell, as aforesayd, there were slaine of them to the number of 5. or 6. score of all sorts. The rest in short time after diuided themselues, flying from cane to cane, from one greene of wood to another, where they might best hide themselues, sending in messengers to the Governor to beseech him of mercy and pardon, offering to submit themselues with all humblenes. Hereupon it was when they were thus broken, that the Governor discharged the Kearne he had, as aforesayd, together with all Irish horsemen of seuerall parts of the Prouince, contenting all of them either with some proportion of the preyes and bootes gotten, or else with his owne money, his owne horsemen and footmen, and the three bands of supplies aforesayd, he stayed from the seruice for a space, as well to refresh them, as also to giue time and leane to the enemies, to come in freely without feare, which otherwise would haue possessed them, had the forces beene still vp and downe the woods. This being done, they submitted themselues one after another, in sort following. Videlicet Ewster M. Donell, chiefe of the Gallowglasses came in, submitted himselfe, and put in his sonne pledge for himselfe and his sept; the next, Edmund Burke, M. Richard Euerarne, one of the strongest amongst them, came to the last M. Williams one, came in and submitted himselfe, giuing in his sonne as pledge: after whom William Burke *alias* the blind Abbot, the chiefe of that surname, Edmond Burke of Castle Barry being dead, which claimed to be M. William, submitted himselfe very humbly, offering one of his sons as pledge. But (for that Sir Richard liked not the son that he offered, but demanded his eldest sonne whom he knew to bee a good pledge) he departed againe, yet within two dayes after, when he saw the Governor would haue sent in his forces amongst them againe, he came to him, submitted himselfe, and brought his eldest sonne for a pledge: Meyler Oge Burke, submitted himselfe. The Ieies did in like manner submit themselues, and also Richard Burke, *alias* the Deuils Hookes sonne, all these gaue in good pledges for the obseruation of the peace. These men vpon their submission, were so pined away for want of feode, and so ghastled with feare within seuen or eight weekes, by reason they were so rounde followed, without any interime of rest, that they looked rather like to ghests then men, Edmond Burkes sonnes of Castle Barry persisted still in the action. Their father was the man whom they sought to haue made M. William, till he was executed by course of the common law. This man was very olde, yet he was put to death for these causes ensuing: he was a notable traytor, and the incouragor of his sons to this action, during whose life, both they, and he

The generall rout of the Burkes driuen to their holds by Sir Richard.

Sir Richard receiueth the pledges of the Burkes.

The Burkes diuided into two companies.

Dangerous newes forced in the champe by a Mounster messenger.

The lying messenger hanged.

Foure or fiue thousand head of cattell taken from the traitors.

The Burkes submit themselues and giue in pledges.

The rebels are pursued with fire & sword throughout their holds.

Newes came that the Burkes were coming into the Prouince with 4000. footmen & 400. horsemen.

Sir R. Bingham made ready to receiue all comers.

Sir R. Bingham stayed in the Prouince.

The Burkes submit themselues.

he had a hope he should be M. William. To the end therefore they should bee carryed away no longer with the deceitfull wings of this vaine hope, and so the sooner deawne to submission, he was indicted, arraigned, condemned, and executed, as in like cases is accustomed. The Governor might haue hanged him by martiall law, but rather made choice to haue it orderly done, as aforesayd, to the end her Maiesty might haue his lands by escheat vpon his attainder (for he had a good quantity of land.) After this the sayd sons of Edm. Burke (seeing their father and in him all their hope dead) offered to submit themselues, so as they might haue enioyed their fathers lands. But herein the Governor referred them to the resolution of the Lord Deputy and Councell, to be further heard in that point, which they somewhat liked of, and then they offered the eldest brothers sonne as pledge: but the Governor refused to take any child or other pledge, saueing one of those brethren, which were in number, 6. or 7. but that they vtterly denied to doe: whereby it was well perceiued, they carried very bad intentions. At this time, whilest these men stood thus vpon the punch of submitting them, newes came to the Governor, that 2000. Scots came ouer the riuer of Barne, toward Sligo, with Edmond Kerragh Burke, and Iohn Ieleaue, who were sent by the Burkes their kinsmen, as you haue heard before, to draw in those Scots, for the better defence of their quarrell, which Scots were promised by the Burkes, that they should inhabite the Countrey, so as they would banish out the Englishmen, and defend the sayd traytors. These newes hindred a thyough pacification within the county of Mayo: neuerthelesse, this prudent and circumspect Governor, Sir Richard Bingham, hee using already reuiued and hyought things there to so good a state, as before is said, dispatched the Earle of Clanrickard, with 30. or 40. horsmen, and 2. bands of footmen, sending also presently after them another band of footmen, all which ioyned with George Bingham, Esquire, brother to the said Sir Ric. who was then sheriffe of the County of Sligo, and leuied there some shot, and horsemen, before the comming of the sayd forces. These companies being thus united, stood vpon guard and defence of the borders of the Prouince, which caused the Scots not to make so much and so great hast to come forwards, as otherwise they would haue done. Sir Richard stayed in the County of Mayo a small time after the sending away of his sayd companies, of purpose to order things there more effectually, for the defence of the Country, and for the prosecution of those few bad Burks which yet continued in action against her Maiestie: which being done in such good sort as the danger and necessity of the time could afford, he then set forwards towards Sligo, with an hundred footmen, and 25. horsemen that were remayning with him: but vpon his setting forth, hee had newes hyought him, that the Scots were deawne thyough O Rowrks Country into the Dalwghery, or plaines by Rosomon to pyey and spoyle the same, by meanes whereof, he rode a great dayes iourney, and came that night neere to Rosomon, and lay that night 4. miles from it, from whence (vnderstanding contrary that the Scots were betweene Sligo and Boundpois) he rode the next day to the towne of Sligo, being well-nigh three score English myles, but the footmen hee left to march alway after him, with as much conuenient speed as they might. His high way was to passe by the Abbey of Boyle, where he found Sir Thomas Lestrange, and other the risings out of the Country, whom he had appointed to lye there for the defence of the Country of Rosomon, hee left them there for that time, and so came to Sligo the eight and twentieth of August. At his comming thither he was giuen to vnderstand that the Scots lay still incamped at the Carne, some on the one side, and some on the other side, to the number of so many as before hee was aduertised, with some increase of horsemen and footmen, for Sir Arthur Oneale, and Hugh M. Gwyyer, male 4 had hyaded hym with some forces, so as their MacGwyer forces was now about 2000. as it was sayd, of able men, besides women, boyes, and churles, of the Scots whereof they had great hope: I take it there are many more, with great hope of carriages. The forces between comming of Sir Richard to Sligo, and the newes of the pacification within the Countie of Mayo, made them stay long about the Carne and Boundpois, either to expect more forces to come and ioyne with them, or some new broyles to be raised in the Country behind the Governor by their confederats, which might cause him to diuide his forces, which were then 400. English, and Irish, and about 300. horsemen, besides the risings out of the Country, which were about a hundred horsmen, and two hundred Kearne: a force far too weake to haue encountred with the Scots, except they might haue bin gotten in a champaine ground. To which like place of disaduantage they had no intention to come, for of the 400 the Governor had 300. which were Irish, and for the most part, men but newly trained. He wrote to the Lord Deputy, to send him 2. other bands of 50. horsemen, for that there was no trust in the Irish horsemen, which horsemen and footmen (if they had come sooner then they did) had either cleane discouraged, or sufficiently withdrawn the Scots from comming into the Prouince at all. Sir R. lay at Sligo and the foot of the Curlewes with his sayd forces fronting the Scots, & withstanding their entry into the Country (expecting still a supply from the L. Deputy) the space of 14. dayes: the Scots drawing on by little and little, thyough O Rowrks country vpon mountaines, woods and bogs, towards the Curlewes, with intention to passe that wayes into Mayo, encamped euer in such fastnesse, as he could not by any meanes come at them, without great disaduantage. At the length although Sir Rich. kept the passage straightly vpon them (for the watching of which he was driuen to diuide his companies into sundry places, for distant from each other) yet in an ereceding tenle tempestuous, and darke night, they deceiued him, for after he had watched, and waited for their

The gouernor riseth great store of cattell.

The Scots encamped in O. Rowrks country.

Sir R. comes to Sligo.

The Scots were of all sorts a thousand.

The cause why the Scots stayed about the Carne.

The Scots would not come into champaine ground.

The Scots were the bolder to passe forward into the countrey because Sir Rich. stayed at Sligo with 400. of his forces.

Sir R. Bingham kept the passage of the Curlewes.

Newes brought to the gouernor that the Scots were deawne to Rosomon.

The gouernor riseth great store of cattell.

The Scots encamped in O. Rowrks country.

comming till 10. of the clocke at night, hearing before night, that they had remoued their camp, and were rather going backe againe, then comming towards him: he left to watch abroad any longer, & bestowed himselfe and his companies in places of succo, which he did, supposing that (by reason of the abundance of raine which fell that euening) their long absence till that time of the night, and the woods of Oceonnor Sligo, which allured him that the sayd Scots had incamped themselues againe for that night. But shortly after this, when the Scots by reason of some espialls of their owne, or some traiterous intelligence out of the Gouernors camp, had vnderstanding that Sir Richard and his company had reposed themselues to rest, stale towards the bridge of Killowney, more to which at a Castle not far off, Sir Ric. for the defence thereof, had placed his footemen, and fifty Irish hoselemen, and so hauing come priuily to the bridge 3. or 4. hundred of them gate ouer the same, before the English footmen came at them: who, as soone as they came in, beat the Scots backe, and wan the bridge. But here the Irish hoselemen did no seruice at all: when the alarum was, Sir Rich. himselfe was at a place called Knockmulleyn, about a mile from the bridge, being also another passage, where it was thought, the Scots would sooner haue passed ouer, then at the bridge. At this place the bridge was the only streight, and passage that Sir Rich. knew the Scots could find to passe ouer into the Country by: but they contrarily waded ouer at a ford not far from the bridge, neuer before known by any of the Country that had so would confesse the same to the English: Sir Rich. and the hoselemen, vpon the alarum hasted with great speede to the Bridge, and rode ouer the same without danger both of the enemie, and his own company (for the night was ereading darke) and the bullets and arrowes flew to and fro, without regard of any man that might march or ride betwixt them, and hauing passed the bridge (although the ground were ill for hoselemen to serue on) yet he charged the Scots, and killed and drowned about 40. or 50. of them. The most part of his hoselemen here failed him, some, because they were far off, & the said Irish forces he remained with his owne ordinary companies into the barrony of Dyserach, which he chiefly did for to saue the pray of that Country which was great: he left the great mountaines of Slowgarry on the left hand, which were before on his right, and marched downe eight myles into the said Barronie, consisting of plaine ground with some bog in it of twenty myles in length, lying all along by the sea. In the same he came to a towne or village called Ardoglasse, where he camped the second night, and hauing intelligence by espiall, that the enemie lay on the other side of the mountaines, not far from an Abbey called Dawneda, in marueilous fast and strong ground he tooke with him good guidethip, hee passed the said mountaines with his forces, and encamped that night at Oconnor, a towne of the Bishop of O Harres, & this being here, he gaue it forth in policy, that the enemy was marching vp thzogh Gallen toward the inner and ciuill countrys, as the Lord Brereinhams Countrey, & the County of Roscomon. And thereupon he hasted by great daies march, to a Castle called Spogary, which stood in a streight, and in a fit and apt place to answere the seruice vpon them, if they had passed into the sayd Countries. Sir Ric. did this to draw the Scots into an assured belieefe of their owne security, to win such aduantage of ground of them, as afterwards was gotten, for vpon the newes of Sir Rich. returning backe, they grew somewhat careleste, and perswaded themselues (as also they were informed) that he was returned home to Roscomon, and durst not by reason of his small forces, encounter with them, as after shall appeare well, Lying at Spogary, the munday at 3. of the clock afternoone, newes was brought him from his Brother George Bingham, that an hundred footmen of master vice-president, vnder the conduct of Lieutenant Hane, had passed the Curlewes, whereupon the Gouernour dispatched messengers to them: whereupon they came vnto him the same night. The morrow after being Tuesday, he removed to a Castle called Castle Poze, in the barony of Costellogh, 5. miles from Spogary, and a place as commodious to answere the service, as the other was. There came in to him 100. footmen, of sir Wil. Stanleis, vnder the conduct of Lieutenant Iaques & 50. of sir George Bowchers footmen, vnder the leading of Lieutenant Day, with 25. hosemen of sir Henry Haringtons, and 15. of master Wingfields. These men were brought in by Captaine Gren Omoloy, whom he had sent forth for that purpose 6. or 7. dayes before. Lying here, sir Richard and his company were in some distresse for want of victuals, but he was supplyed by Captaine Woodhouse, who brought him some boxes out of the plaine and champion countries. At this place sir R. with his companies, lay tuesday and wednesday till none, for it was long before the boxe was killed and made ready to sustaine them. By that time the spyals which were before sent forth to discouer the enemy, returned, bringing newes that at their last remoue from Clamary, they tooke their way toward Ardnary, a Castle neere to Strawly, and standing on the riuer of Boine, thinking to passe that way into the Barrony of Trawly. This being knowne, sir Rich. dealt with his guide, to bring him the nereest way he could thither. At twelue of the clocke at none vpon Wednesday afore sayd, he removed from Castle Poze, and marched towards the Abby of Dawned, all vnder the high woods and mountaines, through a place called the Litter, in the Barony of Costellogh, and came to the said Abbey, two houres within night. The Abby stands two miles from the woods, in a plaine and open place: here the guide whose name was Edmond Mac Costellogh found out a Priest which had that day broken from the Scots, with whom he had beene prisoner. The Priest the sayd Edmond brought to the gouernor, of whom he learned most assuredly, that the Scots were all encamped at Ardnary, and had there proclaimed that all the Country was theirs, that sir Rich. was returned to Roscomon, and that all his forces had forsaken him, and therefore vnlesse they would willingly come vnto them, they should be friendly receiued to their fauour, and haue no hurt. Sir Richard dealt with this Priest to be his guide, to bring him where the Scots were: but the Priest durst not vndertake it, except a couple of hosemen of the O Harres, which he named, might be sent with him: the gouernour willed him to fetch the two gentlemen of the O Harres, which he did, & returned to him again an houre after midnight. Those two gentlemen sent away two espialls, to discouer the Scots more certainly, and about three of the clocke in the morning the moone gaue light, sir Richard and all his company, marched towards Ballelane some miles from the Abbey, in the high way towards the enemie: here one of these spials came in, bringing newes, that the Scots lay still incamped at Dawned, which was 12. miles from the aforesaid Abby of Dawned, & 8. miles from the Abby of Ballelane. At this marching from hence, the night forsooke him and his company, and they forsooke the high way, and marched ouer the mountaines, both hosemen and footmen, with all their carriages, carrying them with a hearce also for ease, keeping the bottoms and lowe places by certaine couert wayes, with as great silence as was possible. This mountaine was in breadth, some fiue miles, which sir Rich. with his forces past about nine of the clocke. In order he had marched a mile into the said groues, and were not about two miles from the enemie, he made alte to bring all his forces together, and there gaue order and direction for the fight. First he appointed himselfe with his hosemen, rode towards the enemie, & left the footmen to follow after, with a speedy march. Sir Rich. with his horsemen being now come within a flight shot of the Scots Campe, sent out halfe a dozen of horsemen, as scouts aforesayd to discouer them, and the manner of their Campe, which had taken vp many their cabbins, and gaue them a volant and peaceefull alarum, and so returned to sir Rich. who that time came to the top of the hill neare to them, where he might take view of all the ground betweene him and the Castle where the Scots lay. Now he sent a man to post after part of the battell, and the last shot to come in to him, for the enemy was set on and armed in battell aray in the land betweene him, in their greatest strength: Sir Rich. entertained them with flattering speeches a while, and drawe them by degrees to high ground, till the footmen might come in, who approched with such silence, that the Scots neuer suspected any such companies to be at hand: when the shot began to approch them, Sir Rich. charged them roughly and thoroughly with his horsemen, but backe their loue comings to their battell, gaue them to a little bogge, and killed many of them. After which he againe retired, and caused some of his shot on horsebacke to alight from their horses, and there withall entertained them with a second charge, about which time, his last shot and the whole battell of footmen came in, and then the footmen charged them in the forward, and himselfe with his horsemen in the flanke, in such sort, that they soone discomfited & ouerthrew their whole force, and draue them to the riuers side, where hand his company slue and drowned them all sauing fourescore, or thereabouts, which stripped them cleane, and by swimming ouer the riuer of Boine, into Strawly, saued themselues, leauing their weapons and apparell behind them. There were no more saued of all their forces, and of all sorts of them but three and a 100. and so, that vnder the day before into Strawly for a prey with some of the Burkes. But such as swam ouer the riuer, as aforesayd, were afterwards killed in their returne, and fleing towards the North, in the County of Sligo, by George Bingham Esquire, brother to the gouernor beeing then cheefe of the County of Sligo, together with the helpe of the Gentlemen of the Countrey, diuers also of them which were absent for this sayd pray, whilest the battell was fought, and certaine of their hosemen, which were then also forraying abroad for horse meat, were all seuerally slaine in their returne, and the sayd hosemen, euen by some such as when friends. the same had formerly and were strong, were their speciall friends. The number of fighting men slaine & put to flight, as hath bin well knowne and tried out, were of all sorts one hundred, besides boyes and lookboyes women, churles, and children, more as in my mind, to as in the whole, there died of them that day, and the day after in flying homewards, three thousand persons, & all of the Sligh companies were not slaine, but ouer persons, and those also through their owne follies in running two seuerall wayes for the people, but in my mind 40 boyes were hunt and galled. This day the cheefest leaders of them, James Mac Conmara sonne, viz. Daniel Oconnor, and Alexander Oconnor, were slaine, together with all the rest of their leaders, and the cheefest Burkes which drew them into the Prouince. In this fornier warres was slayne Sir Richard Bingham, Captaine of 100. footmen. Nicholas Martin, Captaine of the like number, Captaine Mac Gwire, one of the like company, William Mac Sweeny Captaine of the like number, besides the Gentlemen aforesayd rehearsed, sent from the Lord Deputy, and certaine leaders of hosemen. And besides Captaine Woodhouse, Captaine Green, which had no charge, and S. Newton, & Captaine Bingham, which had charge of some hosemen, and the whole company were in name, about 600. footmen, and by poll about 500. besides 90. hosemen, whereof diuers were of the garrison of the Prouince, and the other forty were sent by the Lord Deputy. This ouerthrow was great, and the paines and policies therein taken and vsed great, but the seruices in deed, the which is trouble to the Country, which by vnmeet greater: but the more will care and industry of the Gouernor & his seruices, which continued out in it 13. or 14. dayes together, not once comming home to his house in that time, and fareing harshly, and lying on the ground, and on straw a great part of the sayd time, was to be noted

The Scots camp in Sligo to the bridge of Killowny.

The English beat backe the Scots from the bridge.

Sir Richard leap at another streait of passage.

The Scots find an vnknowne ford to passe ouer.

Danger of a streight.

Sir Richard charged the Scots.

Sir Richard hath remoue into Tyreragh to saue the pray of the Country.

Sir Richard marcheth ouer the mountaines.

Sir Richard incamped at Oconnor.

Sir Richard marcheth ouer the mountaines.

Sir Richard beat backe the enemie.

Sir Richard marcheth ouer the mountaines.

The Scots found out a Priest.

Edmond Mac Costellogh a gentleman of the Country.

The Scots proclaimed themselues Lords of the Country.

The Scots slaine and drowned.

Scots slaine by the Lord Deputy.

Some of the Scots slaine by their old friends.

Scots slaine and drowned, 300.

Two of the Englishmen slaine.

The names of the Captaines slaine.

The number of the English forces.

The great crouelties and cares taken by Sir Richard.

The good husbandry of Sir Richard for the Queen

mended and in him highly commended. Yea euer and anone all this, although he erected three seuerall companies of footemen, each of them consisting of a hundred men with their officers, and certaine horsemen which continued in pay during all the sayd time besides fiue or six hundred kearne, which also had pay euer and anone her Maiesties allowance, yet he to hands-led the matter, that with the goods of rebels, which by strong hand he got from them, and with 3. or 4. hundred pound of his money, hee defrayed the extraordinary expences of the sayd seruices, not charging her Maiestie with any one great thereof, or any of the subiects of the Country, either for victuals, or any other thing, other then some small matter, which the kernes out brought, or which soldiers in coming to him, or going from him gate, where they came for a night or two, gaue charged him selfe in this case (that being fearfull of powder from her Maiesties store in Dublin) hee was driuen to fiumish himselfe thereof for his ready money in Calleray. Lastly, this seruice was such as prouoked and enforced all the old beaten Scots, which vsed to haunt Ireland, inhumanly that now it is said there are not scarce such to beare vp head in all that realme of Ireland, to the great behoofe and comfort of the same, to the great ease and benefit of her Maiestie, and to the eternall commendations of this worthy Gentleman Sir Richard Bingham for euer.

Sir Iohn Perrot recalled to answer his proceed.

The ouerthrow of the Scots.

In the meeuen of July there was treacherous practises were apprehended, and detected of a most wicked and detestable conspiracie against her Maiestie, and also of minding to haue stirred vp a generall rebellion throughout the whole Realme, to ioy of whose apprehension the Citizens of London on the fifteenth of the same moneth at night and on the next morrow caused the bells in the Churches to be rung, and bone-fires in their streets to be made, and also banquetted euery man according to his ability, some in their houses, some in the streets with singing of Psalmes, and praising God for preserving her Highnesse, and people of this land, which doings of the Citizens were so well accepted of her Maiestie, as by her letters to them directed may appeare, the copy whereof being read openly in a great assembly of the Commons in the Guild hall of that City, the 22. of August, before the reading whereof, master Iames Dalton one of the Comissellers of the City, in the absence of the Recorder, made this speech hereafter following, but first her Maiesties letters.

Great reioycing for the apprehending of traytors.

To our right trusty and welbeloued, the Lord Maior of our City of London, and his brethren the Aldermen of the same.

The Citizens letters to the Lord Maior of London.

Right trusty and welbeloued, wee greete you well, being giuen to vnderstand, how greatly our good and most loyall subiects of that City did reioyce at the apprehension of certaine disloyall and wicked minded subiects of ours, that through the great and singular goodnesse of God haue beene detected, to haue most wickedly and traiterously conspired, not onely the taking away of our owne life, but also to haue ouer-throwen vp (as much as in them lay) a generall rebellion throughout our whole Realme: wee could not but by our owne letters witnesse vnto you the great and singular contentment we receiued vpon the knowledge thereof, assuring you that we did not so much reioyce at the escape of the intended attempt against our owne person, as to see the great ioy our most louing subiects tooke at the apprehension of the contriuers thereof, which to make their ioye more apparant, they haue (as we are to our great comfort informed) omitted no outward shew, that by any externall act might witnesse to the world, the inward loue and dutifull affection they beare toward vs. And as we haue as great cause with all thankefulnesse to acknowledge Gods great goodnesse towardes vs, though the infinite blessings he layeth vpon vs, as many as euer Prince had, yea rather as euer creature had: yet do we not for any worldly blessing receiued from his diuine Maiesty, so greatly acknowledge the same, as in that it hath pleased him to inclyne the hearts of our subiects, euen from the first beginning of our Raigne, to carie as great loue towards vs as euer subiects carryed towards any Prince, which ought to moue vs (as it doth in very deed) to take with all care, and by all good meanes that appertaine to a Christian Prince, the conformation of so louing and dutifull affected subiects: assuring you that we desire no longer to liue, then while wee may in the whole course of our government carry our selfe in such sort, as may not only nourish and continue their loue and good will towards vs, but also increase the same: we thinke meete, that these our letters should bee communicated in some generall assembly to our most louing subiects the commoners of that Citie.

Giuen vnder our signet at our Castle of Windsor the 17. of August 1586. in the 28. yeare of our Raigne.

Right worshipfull my good friends, my Lord Maior and citizens of this noble City of London: since the late hainie and horrible attempt of most wicked and traitorous conspiracie, not onely to take away the life of our most gracious Soueraigne (whom God grant long to liue and raigne ouer vs) but also to stir vp a generall rebellion throughout the whole Realme: the great and vnmeasurable ioy of you all of this Citie, vpon the apprehension of diuers of the most wicked conspiracy, as late declared & testified by many outward acts and shewes, hath wrought in the Queenes most excellent Maiestie such a gracious contentment, that it hath mooued her Highnes by her letters signed with her owne hand, to signifie vnto the Lord Maior and his brethren, her most Noble and Princely acceptation thereof, that in such sort as there by may appeare, that her Highnes hath not more, nor yet so much reioyced at the most happy escape of the wicked mischiefe intended against her owne person, as at the ioy which her louing subiects, and namely you of this Citie of London, take at the apprehension of the practisers of that intended treason. By occasion whereof her Highnesse brought to a thankefull remembrance and acknowledging of Gods infinite blessings bestowed vpon her, comparable with

with any Prince of our age in the world, no worldly thing more to be accounted of, then of the hearty loue of her louing and faithfull subiects, in my wayes and in my times before now, but especially by this our great ioy in this sort at this time, and vpon this occasion shewed.

And that her exceeding great loue, and acceptation of our reioycing may the more appeare vnto you, it hath pleased her Highnesse in the same Letters to declare, that she desireth not longer to liue among vs, then she shall maintaine, continue, nourish, and increase the loue and good will of her subiects towards her. And this her highnes hath willed to be made known vnto you all, with this, that she will not faile with all care, and by all good meanes that appertaine to a Christian Prince, to seeke the conseruation of you all, to louing and dutifull affected subiects. This her Maiesties pleasure in part now declared, and more to bee made knowne to you by her owne Letters, which you shall heare read: my Lord Maior and his brethren haue required me to declare vnto you all, that they doe highly reioyce and thanke God for the happy day of the good acceptation of this your great ioy, and my Lord himselfe hath willed me to giue you all hartythanks in his name, for that in the time of his seruice, your dutifull behaniours haue gotten to the City so noble and worthy a testimony of duty and loyalty, of so noble and worthy a Queene. Now forasmuch as Gods blessings wonderfully abound, and one ioy comes vpon another, let vs not be vnthankefull to God, but acknowledge his goodnesse, and attribute the same (as indeede we ought) to the sincere religion of Almighty God, most godly established by the Queenes most excellent Maiestie, which hath taught vs to know God aright, our duty to our Soueraigne, and to loue our Country, and hath made vs dutifull and obedient subiects, reioycing at all good things happening to her Maiestie, her Realme, or to any in her noble seruice, the true effects of a true and good religion: whereas the contemners thereof, and immoderate affecters of the Romish religion, and superstitions, being wyde of the true knowledge of God, haue declined from God, their allegeance to their Prince, their loue to their Country, and haue become inuentors of mischiefes, hunters and spreaders abroad of false and seditious rumors, such as ioy at no good thing, but contrariwise reioyce at euery cruell successe, the badges and markes of their profession, who haue before this, in this Realme, and in other her Highnes Dominions, stirred vp rebellion, foraine inuasion, and many times practised the very death, and destruction of the Queene her selfe, the ruine and subuersion of the whole Realm, the proper effects of their Romish religion. Who haue beheld all these things, and seene in our dayes the ruine and mischiefes inuented against others, fall vpon the inuentors themselues: and haue knowne the wicked and violent hands of diuers of them, diuilishly to kill and murther themselues, when most trayterously they would, and most happily they could not slay the Lords annointed. As we haue knowne all these things, so God be thanked, that by a better religion, hauing beene better taught, we haue beene no partakers of their wicked deuises, but haue put to our helping hands, as occasion hath serued, and euer ready to ouerthrow the authors and deuisers thereof. And I haue no doubt, but we of this noble City, who hitherto haue beene alwayes ready dutifully, and faithfully to serue her Maiesty vpon all occasions, (her Highnesse now so graciously accepting only of our reioycing at the apprehension of her enemies, euen the least part of the duetie of a good subiect to so good a Queene) will be ready euery one with all that he can make, and with the vttermost aduenture of all our liues, speedily to be reuenged vpon all such as shall disorderly, and traiterously attempt, or put in vre any mischiefe to her Noble person, and in the meane time will haue a better eye, and care to all suspitions and mislontented persons, to their sayings and doings, to their false bruits, and reports, to the places and corners of their haunt and resort, to their harborers, companions, abbers, and maintainers.

God vphold and continue his religion among vs, and increase our zeale thereon. Which hath made vs so louing and loyall, and so beloued, and acceptable subiects to so worthy a Prince, and roote out that wicked and Romish religion, that hath made so many disloyall and traiterous subiects: to whom is both owing and likewise the long life and prosperous Raigne of our most Noble Queene Elizabeth. God confound all such Traytors, and preserue her Highnes, long to liue and Raigne ouer vs.

Traytors indicted.

The 7. of Septemb. certaine of these diuelish and wicked traitors were indicted: first, for intending treason against the Queenes owne person: secondly, for stirring ciuill mars within the Realme, and thirdly, for practising to bring in forraine power, to inuade the Realme, seuen of them appeared at Westminster, on the 13. of September, who all pleaded guilty, and were condemned, but had iudgement on the next morrow. On the 15. of September, other 7. were likewise arraigned, who pleading not guilty, were found guilty by the Iury, and had iudgement.

Traytors executed.

These traytors, 14. in number, were executed in Lincolnes Inne fields, on a stage or scaffold of timber, strongly made for that purpose, euen in the place where they had vsed to meete, and conferre of their traiterous practises, there were they hanged, bowelled, and quartered, seuen of them on the 20. of September, to wit, Iohn Ballard, Preest, Anthony Babington, Esquire, Iohn Sauage Gentleman, R. Barnwell Gentleman, Chidiocke Tichborne, Esquire, Charles Tiney, Esquire, Hir. Abington, Esquire. The other 7. were likewise executed on the 21. of September, to wit, Thomas Salsbury, Esquire, Henry Dun, Gentleman, Edward Iones, Esquire, Iohn Trauerse Gentleman, Charnocke Gentleman R. Gage, Gentleman, & rom Bellamie, Gentleman, &c.

The Merchants of London, being of the corporation

The repall Merchant and other 4. ships of London then ready against the 3. Gallies of Castile and Spaine.

poration of the Turkie trade, intending onely a merchants voyage, prouided and furnished with all things belonging to the Seas, fiue tall and stout ships appertaining to London, to wit, the Merchant Royall, the Tobie, the Edward Bonauenture, the William and John, the Susan: these fiue departing from the coast of England, in the moneth of November, 1585. kept together as one fleete, till they came as high as the Ile of Sicilie, within the Leuant, where each ship tooke leaue of the rest, and separated themselues to particular ports, whereunto they were bound, one for Tripolis in Syria, another for Constantinople, and the rest to other places: but before they diuided themselues, they agreed, after the landing of their goods at their seuerall ports, to meete at Zante, an Iland neere to the maine, continent of the west part of Morea. These accordingly (their businesse first performed) failed not to keepe promise, and arriued at Zante, within the compasse of the time afore limitted, here they staid in this port, till the necessities of each ship were supplied, and nothing wanted to set out for their retoure. In this port the newes was fresh of two seuerall armies and fleets, lying in a wait to intercept them, the one consisting of thirty strong gallies, and that fleete hoouered about the Straits of Gibraltare. The other army had in it, twenty gallies, whereof some were of Sicilie, and some of the Iland of Malta, vnder the charge of Iohn Andreas Doreo, a captaine seruing the King of Spaine. The Persheant Royall was appointed Admirall of the English fleete, and the Tobie vice-admirall, by whose orders the rest promised to be directed, and each ship vowed not to breake from the other. Thus in good order they left Zante, and committed themselues to the Seas, and proceeded in their course without sight of any enemie, till they came neere to Pantalarea, an Iland betweene Sicily and the coast of Affricke, into the sight whereof they came the 13. of July, and the same day, they discryed thirteene sayles, 11. gallies, and two frigots lying in wayte for them. As soone as the English ships had espyed them, they made themselues ready to fight, the gallies more and more approched them, and in their banners the armes of Sicilia, and Malta: they sent their frigots to our Admirall, demaunding of him, whence they were: who answered, of England: they asked why they durst to send or come to Don Pedro de Luna their generall, to acknowledge their dutie to him in the name of the Spanish King, Lord of those Seas: our men replyed, that they ought no such duty to him, nor would acknowledge any: Whereupon, in the end the fight began betweene them, and continued very hote for the space of fiue houres, what slaughter was made among the Spaniards, the English were vncertaine: but they supposed the same to bee so great, that they wanted men to continue the charging of their peeces: whereupon with shame they withdrew themselues, and the Englishmen contented in respect of their seuerall lading, rather to continue their voyage, then to follow the chase, ceased from further blowes, with the losse onely of two men slaine, and one other hurt in the arme, whom when maister Edward Wilkenson Captaine of the Admirall, with his good word did so comfort, that he nothing esteemed the smart of his wound, in respect of the honor of such a victory, and shamefull repulse of the enemie. The English ships proceeded in their navigation as high as Algier, a port Towne vpon the coast of Barbary, where they refreshed themselues, and tooke such supply of fresh water and victuals, as they needed, and put to the Sea, looking to meete with the second army of the Spanish King, which waited for them about the mouth of the Streight of Gibaltare, which they were of necessitie to passe: but comming neere to the sayd streight, it pleased God to raise a very darke fog, so that one ship could not discerne another, by meanes whereof, together with the large Casterne winde that then blew, they passed with great speede through the streight: but yet the Spanish gallies had a sight of them, when they were come within three English miles of the Towne, and made after them in all hast possible, but in vaine: they shot off their ordinance in the Sea, as if they had bin in the middest of them. But thus it pleased God to deride and delude all the forces that King of Spaine had prouided to distresse the English, who notwithstanding passed through both his Armies: in the one little hurt, and in the other nothing touched, and arriued at Crith the eighteenth of September, in the yeare of our Lord, 1586.

Now to returne to the seruice of the Lowe Countries, done by his excellencie and other vnder his charge, after the yeelding of the strong fort of Menegan, which was on the twentieth of May, as ye haue heard before: it followeth, &c. that on the 21. of May, his Excellency returned to Arnam, and there soiourned. On the 22. of May, there passed towards Barrikes hoofe 11. or 12. hundred men most brauely furnished of our English nation. The 25. of May, was brought before Barrikes hoofe fourteene Canons, which shot at the fconce that day, and on the next morrow in the morning was the same fconce yeelded to his Excellencie, the souldiers putting themselues to his mercy, who pardoned them, and let them passe with life only. In this fconce were found aliue, about sixty persons, the rest were slaine in the siege. At the yeelding of this fconce, County Hollocke found one of his Cousins, which when he beheld, he sayd, Ha villaine, art thou become a traytor to thy Country, and his Excellency, I auouch, that thou art none of my blood, and with his rapier thrust him in and slew him.

The 24. day of May, the enemy played before Graue with their ordinance, and presently assailed it, but they of the town being led by the County Embrigh did repulse them so sufficiently, that the enemie lost neere a 1000. men.

On Whitsunday, Peregrine Bartie, Lord Willoughby of Eresby, lying at Bergenapsone vnderstanding of a great conuoy that was coming to Antwerpe, set vpon it, and tooke it, Antwerpe, there

there were of wagons 480. laden with victuals, oyle, salt, and wine taken, which had to draw those wagons, a thousand mares, and horses, there were 200. men slaine by our horsmen and footemen, and 400. taken prisoners that were sent with the conuoy to haue the defence thereof. The Lord Willowby tooke a thousand wagons into his Towne of Bargenapsome, and burned the rest, and for the salt, oyle, and wine, hee broke vp the heads of the vessels, and let them bee spoyled.

Barikes hoofe fconce ouerthrowne.

The 30. of May, sir Iohn Noris was sent to take order for the ouerthrowing of Barkes hoofe fconce, which was done, for that it was thought not meete to be kept with men, his Excellency hauing the fconce at Nemegan that kept the riuer of Wall, and the fconce made by Skinke at Thelhouse, kept both the riuer of Wall and the Reine, for that this fconce bardeth at the entrance of these two great Riuers: And for that his Excellency had Arnam fconce at the toyning together of Yell Reyne, and Dowsborough riuers. In this meane time, to wit, on the 26. of May, the enemy spared no shot to annoy the Towne of Graue, but thundred with Canons, as it had beene musket or caliuer. He had at it 28. canons, 20. smaller peeces as Culuerings, and demy-canons, &c. The Graue of Embrycke, seeing the assault to be so hot, and fearing the event (although hee had written to his Excellency, that hee should not care for Graue, but goe about his other businesse. On the 27. of May, entred parley with the enemie, and presently let in his souldiers, which hauing certaine Englishmen and others, more faithfull then the rest, straight take a place of strength, and kept without victuals three dayes in despight of their enemies, and after seeing no way to be relieued, they departed by composition. And thus was the strong Towne of Graue lost, by the County Embrough who after came to Vsdon, sent for foure of the Burgesses of the Towne, for what purpose was not knowne, but thought to perswade them to betray the Towne, but three of them returned, the fourth not found, but thought to be with the Prince of Parma. As for the County Embrough, as he was walking with three or foure other Captaines of Graue, hee was with foure other Captaines surprised by some of our side, and brought to his Excellency, on the second of June, to Bulkhurst, and were committed to prison.

Graue lost to the enemy.

H. Archer. Graue in the Lowe Countries. Commendations of his excellency.

Berkshaft Wolme.

County Hollocke.

Vncourteous guiues to the enemie at Graue.

Lord Willoughby tooke a conuoy at Antwerpe.

The last of May, his Excellency with his whole companies of souldiers and Gentlemen passed from Arnew to the camp before Nemegen, where his pauilion was pitched, and presently he sent 2000. men toward Tille, to keep the water from the enemies passage.

His Excellency remoueth from Arnew to Nemegan.

The fourth of June, his Excellency hauing sent Skinke, and Captaine Williams, with diuers other cosoners of horse and Gentlemen, towards Vendolo (for that the Prince of Parma had begunne to besiege it) came from the leagar at Nemegan to Tille, where hee rested that night. The Gouernor of Tille, called the Amon, being a man of great courage, and a Protestant, vsed the Prince of Parma in this sort, the Prince sending a Trumpet to parley with him, he straight waies without any talke hanged him vp. The Prince wondering hee heard not of his Trumpeter, sent a Drumme, to know what was become of him, vnto whom the Amon answered, your Trumpeter is hanged, and thou shalt bee drowned, and so it was done without any more words. This towne is situate in the Betto, whose ground is the most fertile of onely place of fertilitie in Guelderland. The towne is strong, the one side the Amon may at his pleasure drowne, the other is so strong, with ramparts, walls, and forters, that the Amon protesteth, that hee regardeth no Prince, no Princes power in the world. He hath halfe a score ships of war at his appointment, whereby he commandeth all the waters about him, he hath alwayes shewed a singular loue to our nation, especially to his Excellency, insomuch that hee vowed to keepe the Towne to his vse, so long as he liued.

Tille and the Amon there of his seuerall dealings with his excellency.

The 5. of June, his Excellency passed from Tille to Bomell, there was the Castle of the Warneborough, and for that hee tooke part with the Prince of Parma, his house was burnt and spoyled. The beauty of the Towne of Bomell is in two streets, crossing one the other, very large and fayre, at the crossing of which street there is a very faire Market place, the Towne is strong though little, and sufficiently appointed with ordinance, and munition.

The towne of Bomell. Warnes nere Castle spoyled.

It Kamdeth in an Iland very fertile and sweet, hauing such store of orchards, gardens, and other pleasures, as it passeth all others: on the top of the steeple of the Church in this towne, the Countrey doth so plaine about it, that one may see all these townes following, Nemegan, Wagaming, Arnam, Reyne, Weicke Colmbarough, Vtricke, Elana, Gurcom, Vsdon, Fatingbauselle, Graue, Tille, Hoarle Castle, and Baryn Castle.

Gurcom;

The 9. of June, his Excellency came from Bomell to Gurcom, downe the riuer Walle, leauing at Bomell, a garrison of three hundred Dutchmen, with those of the towne, who at the first could hardly be like the garrison, till they were perswaded by County Hollocke, passing toward the Towne. There was sixe or seuen Ensignes, of his Excellencies souldiers on the banke of the riuer, which did discharge their voles of shot, then was there on each side the riuer, a mighty fconce full of souldiers, which gaue their voles of shot, then ordinance of the towne went off: and entring the towne, he was entertained by the Burgesses, passing through the towne, on both sides were placed souldiers in great number. On the next morrow his Excellency went into the Castle of the Towne, which is maruellous strong. This Towne is very rich, for there are many rich Merchants, which passe to all partes of the world vsually. The riuer Walle, runneth through the middest of this Town, and the Riuers of Reine, and Mase, on each side. The Towne is very strong, so that round about the country may be drowned. His Excellency with his whole trayne were

were here maruellously welcommed, and well vsed for victuall, lodging, &c. There is by this Towne another Towne of great force, called Wolcome, by the Caſtle of Lutten, this Wolcome is in greatnes but a village, but in ſituation and ſtrength, a thing of great importance: it ſtandeth in the ſame Iland that Lutton ſtandeth in. It is Graue Maurice his Towne, and kept his garriſon of ſouldiers.

Wolcome.

The 10. of June, a poſt came vnto his Excellency, from Cozonell Skinke, & Captaine Williams, with Letters: the effect whereof were, that the ſaid ſir Martin Skinke, and Captaine Williams, ſtaying not far from Venlo (which the Duke as then beſieged) and longing to ſhew the zeale they had of the ſeruice of her Maieſtie of England, ſet out with their horſemen in the night, all the Dutchmen for the moſt part forſaking them, ſo that with him was not aboue 160. horſes, with thoſe he ſet forward, killed the ſtill watch, and paſſing farther, killed alſo two Courts of guard fully appointed, and entring, by force, the quarter that the Prince of Parma was in, they killed a number of Noblemen, and Gentlemen: but in the returne the enemy well appointed ſet on our men, and ſcattered them, to ſome loſſe, but the greater ſort eſcaped: the ſkirmiſh being ended, and our men retiring, Captaine Williams was one of the hindermoſt of them all, and he eyed (being yet in the enemies campe) where is Williams where is Williams, and another anſwered, before, before, and thus he eſcaped.

The 13. of June, his Excellency went to Dort with a ſmall traine, where being come about fiue of the clock in the afternoone, the Burgers made him ſuch great cheare, as was thought to haue bin impoſſible for ſo ſhort a time of prouiſion. The fourteenth he tooke ſhip towards Vtricht from Dort, being wafted with an Hoy full of ſouldiers of the Towne.

The 22. of June, the enemy attayned Venlo, a towne of great importance and ſtrength, there was in this towne, not only the wife of Skinke, and his children, but alſo the treaſure, horſe, and (for the moſt part) the furniture that Skink had. This town had in it ſouldiers to the number of fiue or ſixe hundreth, all of Skinks men, well appointed, and braue ſouldiers.

Venlo loſt to the enemie.

The 23. of June, his Excellency paſſed to Colimbozough, about nine Engliſh miles from Vtricht, onely to viſite the Graue of Colimborough, where he dined, viewed the Towne, and returned to Vtricht, taking with him the ſayd Earle of Colimbozough.

The 29. of June, his Excellency paſſed from Vtricht to Dort. The 30. of June he removed from Dort, to Williams ſtate, or Ragon hill. The ſame day County Hollocke ouerthrew a cornet of horſe, belonging to Breda, with the helpe of maiſter Robert Sidneys cornet, ſir Philip Sidneys cornet and other. The ſayd County Hollocke practiſed to haue a conuoy paſſe from out of Brabant, to Bargenapſome, which the enemy being warned of by ſpies, that this conuoy was guarded but with ſome ſixteene or twenty horſe, the Gouernor of Breda ſent out his cornet or ſtrength of horſemen to this employt: but ſome few of them, beeing either afraid to meddle with our men, or doubting the true occaſion that happened, ſtayed behind the reſt, Captaine Welch an Engliſhman, which a great time had ſerued the enemie, had the leading of the horſe at Breda, but paſſing to this employt, County Hollocke with maiſter Robert Sidney beſet them round, which the enemy no ſooner perceiued, but yeelded, ſo there was taken Captaine Welch, and a thirty horſe, and as many men. The 31. of June, his Excellency early in the morning paſſed from Williamſtate to Bargenapſome, and about three of the clocke in the afternoone hee arriued there, and preſently paſſed to the ſtrong Caſtle of olde Bergenapſome. Wlaw: this Towne is in the entrance of Brabant, 20. Engliſh miles from Antwerpe, vpon the ſame riuer that Antwerpe ſtandeth. It is a Towne now almoſt ruinated, though before in the proſperity of it, it was not much inferior to Antwerpe, there are few people but ſouldiers, the Burgers forſaking their goodly builded houſes, are gone to other places. This Towne is ſubiect in two places to hills of firme ground, which are the places that make this Towne far weaker then otherwiſe it would be, yet wonderfully rampiered with bulwarkes, walls, and flankers in all places. The Lord Willoughby hath wonderfully enlarged the ſtrength of this Towne: further he hath made two very ſtrong bulwarkes in two places of the towne, at the hauen of the towne, and from the towne a ſight ſhot or more, are two mighty Sconces, which ſtand by the riuers ſide, which vnſeede are of more ſtrength then the Towne, and they are to command the Towne, and two Engliſh miles from the Towne ſtandeth a ruinated Towne in an Iland, and by this riuer, whoſe ſituation is ſuch, as for ſtrength it might bee made a braue place, for ayde and otherwiſe this Towne is called Romars ward, againſt the which ſtandeth a ſtrong Sconce, and ſo along the riuer to the towne ſtandeth diuers the like to command the riuer and paſſage to the Towne: the Caſtle before named, that his Excellency went to view, at his arriuall at this Towne, is alſo ſuch, as no reaſonable force can winne, allwayes once a yeare victualled, and manned afreſh, this Caſtle regardeth not the Cannon ſhot, it is ſo rampered. The firſt of July, his Excellency paſſed from Bargenapſome, to Suricksea, a Towne in Zeland, and in an Iland ſo called. In this Iland is another Towne called Brewers hauen, a very ſtrong Towne, this Iland is moſt fertile. The ſecond of July, his Excellency paſſed to Dort. And the ſame day paſſed from Bergenapſome, three thouſand men that were newly arriued to Stenbergen, a towne greatly nopous to the garriſon of Bergenapſome, for when they paſſed into Brabant vpon any eruoyt, they were letted by the ſouldeirs of this towne: this iourney was ſo cloſely kept, that our men ſhotte at the walles of Stenbergen ere any of that Towne knew for what cauſe ſo great a number of men were gathered.

Roman ward.

Stenbergen.

The

Sir Philip Sidney entred Flanders.

The 3. of July, there entred into Flanders the Graue Maurice, the Prince of Spaines ſonne, and Sir Philip Sidney, Lord Gouernour of Flulhing with other, to the number of foure thouſand footmen, and three thouſand horſemen. The 4. of July Graue Maurice take on him to put the bankes of the Sea, to ouerwe the land of Walle, hauing with him two thouſand men, the reſt of the Army paſſed with ſir Philip Sidney into Flaunders, and ſurpriſed the Towne of Arell: there were ſlaine of ſouldiers of that Towne three hundred, beſides the Wonders that made reſiſtance, which were likewiſe ſlaine. This done, they came to Dampe or Dopre, a Towne of great importance, the ſame entred and take in it fiue hundred Boyes, which were kept to doe ſeruice, and to be ranſomed. Graue Maurice with his two thouſand men ſo plied the bankes, that in ſhort time hee had made it ſufficient for the water, not onely to enter, but to ouerwe all the Countrey, but the winde ſtred ſo contrary that no water to the purpoſe entred, at that time onely the bankes lay open. In the meane time our men take fiue ſconces, and put all to the ſword, that they found in them, and this was their entrance into Flaunders. The Towne of Arell is not far from Antwerpe, and about the ſame diſtance from Gaunt, and not fiue Engliſh miles from either: the land of Walle wherein this Towne ſtandeth, is the onely paradice of the Lande, and moſt fertile place of all other. The eight of July Graue Maurice returned to Middleborough, leauing all occaſions to Sir Philip Sidney Gouernour of Flulhing. The tenth of July, Cozonell Yorke brought to his Excellency to Dunhage, fiue Enſignes of the Enemies, all which were taken from the Enemie in the Towne of Arell and the Sconces.

Arell ſurpriſed by the Engliſh.

Dampe.

The Sconces taken by the Engliſh.

In this meane time, to wit, on the ninth of July was Paulus Buce, a great ſtate, and a politique man, taken at Vtricke and put in priſon, and very ſhortly after was taken another named Peter Fabaſtine, and likewiſe committed to priſon. The 14. of July, his Excellency commanded the gates of Vtricke to be enclozed, and all the Bridges to be drawne, all the men both Engliſh and Dutch Souldiers to bee in Armes, and further proclaimed, that all men that loued the Quéene of England, ſhould prezently be armed to the vttermoſt, which being done, the Engliſh Souldiers were placed on the walls, with commandement, that no Burger whatſoeuer ſhould come thereon, but preſently they ſhould take from them their vpper garments, which if they refuſed, they ſhould bee ſtraight ſlaine. Alſo a ſtraight ſearch was made in the Towne for ſuſpitious perſons, and there was taken three which were committed to priſon. The cauſe of this ſtirre was this, it was reported, that there were come into the Towne 500. of the Enemies, in Burgers apparell to betray the Towne, but it was not ſo.

Vtricke in Armes by Commandement of his Excellency.

About this time, Sir Philip Sidneys Cornet at Houſdon, and certaine Dutch Cornets to the number of a hundred horſe or more, with a two companies of footmen, entred into Brabant, taking bootes, and ſpoyling the Country, which being knowne to the Enemies, they ſought to entrap our men, and with a three hundred horſe, and certaine companies of footmen, they ſet vpon our horſe, put them to retreit, and purſued them farre: but our men by ſwimming and gowneſſe of their horſes, eſcaped for the moſt part, onely a Cornet of Dutch, and one other officer of them were ſlaine, our footmen brought their booty into their ſtreights and fennes, that the Enemies could not indomage them, ſo that they brought their bootes ſafe to Houſdon.

The 15. of July, Sir Philip Sidney, Lord Gouernour of Flulhing, the Lord Willoughby with thoſe powers they had received from the Gariſon of Arel, conſidering the comming in of the water into the land of Walle, which might ſufficiently defend that Countrey, remoued the campe. The Lord Willoughby to Bergenapſome where he was Gouernour, Sir Philip Sidney paſſed the Sea with a three thouſand men: whoſe cauſe, paſſe ſhall bee ſhewed hereafter. This Sir Philip Sidney, at or before the taking of Arel, within an Engliſh mile of the Towne, called ſo many of his Souldiers to gether as could heare him, and there made a long Oration, wherein hee declared what cauſe they had in hand, as Gods cauſe, vnder, and for whom they fought, for her Paſtie, whom they knew ſo well to be ſo good vnto them: that he needed not to them, againſt whom they fought, men of falſe religion, enemies to God and his Church: againſt Antichriſt, and againſt a people whoſe vnkindneſſe both in nature and in life did excell, that God would not leaue them vnpuniſhed: further, he perſwaded them that they were Engliſhmen, whoſe valour the world feared and commended, and that now they ſhould not either feare death or perill whatſoeuer, both for that their ſeruice they ought to their Prince, and further, for the honour of their Countrey, and credite to themſelues. Againe, the people whom they fought for, were their neighbours, alwayes friends, and well-willers to Engliſhmen. And further that no man ſhould do any ſeruice worthy the noting, but he himſelfe would ſpeake to the vttermoſt to preſerue him to his wiſhed purpoſe. Which oration of his did ſo linke the mindes of the people, that they deſired rather to dye in that ſeruice, then to liue in the contrary.

Sir Philip Sidney his Oration.

The 14. of July, Sir William Pellam, Lord Marſhall of the Field, came to Dunhage. The 16. of July his Excellency removed from Dunhage to Bill, in which paſſage hee take to croſſe the water at the Dorpe of Slice ſo called, being paſſed the water, he entred the Land betweene two Sconces, a quarter of a mile or more from the Towne, where hee was entertained with all the Sconces that both of great Ordnance and ſmaller ſhot, paſſing by Land he came to the Towne, where the Gouernour ſir Thomas Cecil entertained him both with cheare and otherwiſe moſt honourably. This Towne is on the mouth of Maze, where the water is in breadth ſome miles Engliſh. The Iland of Bill is great, more then twenty miles

Bill.

were here maruellously welcommed, and well vied for victuall, lodging, &c. There is by this Towne another Towne of great force, called Wlocome, by the Caſtle of Lutſen, this Wlocome is in greatnes but a village, but in ſituation and ſtrength, a thing of great importance: it ſtandeth in the ſame Iſland that Lutſon ſtandeth in. It is Graue Maurice his Towne, and kept his garriſon of ſouldiers.

Wlocome.

The 10. of June, a poſt came into his Excellency, from Cozonell Skinke, & Captaine Williams, with Letters: the effect whereof were, that the ſaid ſir Martin Skinke, and Captaine Williams, ſtaying not far from Venlo (which the Duke as then beſieged), and longing to ſhew the zeale they had of the ſeruice of her Maieſtie of England, ſet out with their houſemen in the night, all the Dutchmen for the moſt part forſaking them, ſo that with him was not aboue 160. horſes, with thoſe he ſet forward, killed the ſtill watch, and paſſing farther, killed alſo two Courts of guard fully appointed, and entring, by force, the quarter that the Prince of Parma was in, they killed a number of Noblemen, and Gentlemen: but in the returne the enemy vvel appointed ſet on our men, and ſcattered them, to ſome loſſe, but the greater ſort eſcaped: the skirmiſh being ended, and our men returning, Captaine Williams was one of the hindermoſt of them all, and he cryed (being yet in the enemies campe) where is Williams, where is Williams, and another anſwered, before, before, and thus he eſcaped.

The 13. of June, his Excellency went to Dort with a ſmall traine, where being come about fiue of the clock in the afternoone, the Burgers made him ſuch great cheare, as was thought to haue bin impoſſible for ſo ſhort a time of proviſion. The fourteenth he tooke ſhip towards Utricht from Dort, being wafted with an Hoy full of ſouldiers of the Towne.

The 22. of June, the enemy attayned Venlo, a towne of great importance and ſtrength, there was in this towne, not only the wife of Skinke, and his children, but alſo the treaſure, houſe, and (for the moſt part) the furniture that Skink had. This town had in it ſouldiers to the number of fiue or ſixe hundreth, all of Skinks men, well appointed, and braue ſouldiers.

The Holdſt to the enemie.

The 23. of June, his Excellency paſſed to Colinborough, about nine Engliſh miles from Utricht, onely to viſite the Graue of Colinborough, where he dined, viewed the Towne, and returned to Utricht, taking with him the ſayd Earle of Colinborough.

The 29. of June, his Excellency paſſed from Utricht to Dort. The 30. of June he removed from Dort, to Williams ſtate, or Ragon hill. The ſame day County Hollocke ouerthrew a cornet of horſe, belonging to Bzeda, with the helpe of maiſter Robert Sidneys cornet, ſir Philip Sidneys cornet and other. The ſayd County Hollocke practiſed to haue a conuoy paſſe from out of Brabant, to Barganapſome, which the enemy being warned of by ſpies, that this conuoy was guarded but with ſome fifteene or twenty horſe, the Gouernor of Bzeda ſent out his cornet or ſtrength of horſemen to this employt: but ſome few of them, beeing either afraid to meddle with our men, or doubting the true occaſion that happened, ſtayed behind the reſt, Captaine Welch an Engliſhman, which a great time had ſerued the enemie, had the leading of the horſe at Bzeda, but paſſing to this employt, County Hollocke with maiſter Robert Sidney beſet them round, which the enemy no ſooner perceiued, but yeelded, ſo there was taken Captaine Welch, and a thirty horſe, and as many men. The 31. of June, his Excellency early in the morning paſſed from Williams ſtate to Barganapſome, and about three of the cloche in the afternoone hee arriued there, and preſently paſſed to the ſtrong Caſtle of olde Waw: this Towne is in the entrance of Brabant, 20. Engliſh miles from Antwerpe, vpon the ſame riuer that Antwerpe ſtandeth. It is a Towne now almoſt ruinated, though before in the proſperity of it, it was not much inferior to Antwerpe, there are few people but ſouldiers, the Burgers forſaking their goodly builded houſes, are gone to other places. This Towne is ſubiect in two places to hills of firme ground, which are the places that make this Towne far weaker then otherwiſe it would be, yet wonderfully rampiered with bulwarkes, walls, and flankers in all places. The Lord Willoughby hath wonderfully enlarged the ſtrength of this Towne: further he hath made two very ſtrong bulwarkes in two places of the towne, at the hauen of the towne, and from the towne a flight ſhot or more, are two mighty Sconces, which ſtand by the riuers ſide, which indeede are of more ſtrength then the Towne, and they are to command the Towne, and two Engliſh miles from the Towne ſtandeth a ruinated Towne in an Iſland, and by this riuer, whoſe ſituation is ſuch, as for ſtrength it might bee made a braue place, for anye and o therwiſe this Towne is called Romars ward, againſt the which ſtandeth a ſtrong Sconce, and ſo along the riuer to the towne ſtandeth diuers the like to commaund the riuer and paſſage to the Towne: the Caſtle before named, that his Excellency went to viewe, at his arriuall at this Towne, is alſo ſuch, as no reaſonable force can winne, alwayes once a yeare victualled, and manned afreſh, this Caſtle regardeth not the Cannon ſhot, it is ſo rampered. The firſt of July, his Excellency paſſed from Barganapſome, to Zuricksſea, a Towne in Zeland, and in an Iſland ſo called. In this Iſland is another Towne called Bzewers hauen, a very ſtrong Towne, this Iſland is moſt fertile. The ſecond of July, his Excellency paſſed to Dort. And the ſame day paſſed from Barganapſome, three thouſand men that were newly arriued to Stenbergen, a towne greatly noyous to the garriſon of Barganapſome, for when they paſſed into Brabant vpon any exploit, they were letted by the ſouldeirs of this towne: this tourney was ſo cloſely kept, that our men ſhotte at the walles of Stenbergen ere any of that Towne knew for what cauſe ſo great a number of men were gathered.

Bergana-ſome.

Romars ward.

Stenbergen.

The

Sir Philip Sidney entred Flanders.

The 3. of July, there entred into Flanders the Graue Maurice, the Prince of Spaniſonne, and Sir Philip Sidney, Lord Gouernour of Flushing with other, to the number of fowre thouſand footmen, and three thouſand horſemen. The 4. of July Graue Maurice tooke on him to cut the bankes of the Sea, to ouerwe the land of Waſſe, hauing with him two thouſand men, the reſt of the Army paſſed with Sir Philip Sidney into Flanders, and inuyron the Towne of Axell: there were ſlaine of ſouldeirs of that Towne three hundred, beſides the Wonegers that made reſiſtance, which were likewiſe ſlaine. This done, they came to Doppe or Doope, a Towne of great importance, this they entered and tooke in it fiue hundred Boyes, which were kept to doe ſeruice, and to be ranſomed. Graue Maurice with his two thouſand men to plied the bankes, that in ſhort time hee had made it ſufficient for the water, not onely to enter, but to ouerwe all the Countrey, but the winde tred ſo contrary that no water to the purpoſe entred, at that time onely the bankes lay open. In the meane time our men take fiue ſconces, and put all to the ſword, that they found in them, and this was their entrance into Flaunders. The Towne of Axell is not far from Antwerpe, and about the ſame diſtance from Gaunt, and not fiue Engliſh miles from either: the land of Waſſe wherein this Towne of Axell ſtandeth, is the onely paradiſe of thoſe Lands, and moſt fertile place of all other. The eight of July Graue Maurice returned to Middleborough, leauing all occaſions to Sir Philip Sidney Gouernour of Flushing. The tenth of July, Cozonell Yorke brought to his Excellency to Dunhage, fiue Enſignes of the Enemies, all which were taken from the Enemie in the Towne of Axell and the Sconces.

Doppe.

Fiue Sconces taken by the Engliſh.

In this meane time, to wit, on the ninth of July was Paulus Baze, a great ſtate, and a politique man, taken at Utricke and put in priſon, and very ſhortly after was taken another named Peter Fabeſtine, and likewiſe committed to priſon. The 14. of July, his Excellency commanded the gates of Utricke to be enclozed, and all the Bzidges to be drawne, all the men both Engliſh and Dutch Souldiers to bee in Armes, and further proclaimed, that all men that loued the Queene of England, ſhould prezently be armed to the vttermoſt, which being done, the Engliſh Souldiers were placed on the walls, with commandement, that no Burger whatſoeuer ſhould come thereon, but preſently they ſhould take from them their vpper garments, which if they refuſed, they ſhould bee ſtraight ſlaine. Alſo a ſtraight ſearch was made in the Towne for ſuſpitious perſons, and there was taken three which were committed to priſon. The cauſe of this ſtirre was this, it was reported, that there were come into the Towne 500. of the Enemies, in Bzigers apparell to betray the Towne, but it was not ſo.

Paulus Baze, Peter Fabeſtine.

Utricke in Armes by Commandement of his Excellency.

About this time, Sir Philip Sidneys Cornet at Houſdon, and certaine Dutch Cornets, to the number of a hundred horſe or more, with a few companies of footmen, entred into Brabant, taking bootes, and ſpoyling the Country, which being knowne to the Enemies, they ſought to entrap our men, and with a three hundred horſe, and certaine companies of footmen, they ſet vpon our horſe, put them to retreit, and purſued them farre: but our men by ſwimming and gooneſſe of their hoſſes, eſcaped for the moſt part, onely a Cornet of Dutch, and one other officer of them were ſlaine, our footmen kyought their boty into ſuch ſtreights and ſtenes, that the Enemies could not indomage them, ſo that they brought their bootes ſafe to Houſdon.

The 15. of July, Sir Philip Sidney, Lord Gouernour of Flushing, the Lord Willoughby with thoſe powers they had receiued from the Gariſon of Axel, conſidering the comming in of the water into the land of Waſſe, which might ſufficiently defend that Countrey, remained in the campe. The Lord Willoughby to Barganapſome where he was Gouernour, Sir Philip Sidney paſſed the Sea with a three thouſand men: whoſe enſe, paſſe ſhall bee ſhewed hereafter. This Sir Philip Sidney, at or before the taking of Axel, within an Engliſh mile of the Towne, called ſo many of his Souldiers to other as could heare him, and there made a long Oration, wherein hee declared what cauſe they had in hand, as Gods cauſe, vnder, and for whom they fought, for her Maieſtie, whom they knew ſo well to be ſo good vnto them: that he warned not to ſhew, againſt whom they fought, men of falſe religion, enemies to God and his Church: againſt Antichriſt, and againſt a people whoſe vnkindneſſe both in nature and in life did excell, that God would not leaue them vnpuniſhed: further, he perſwaded them that they were Engliſhmen, whoſe valour the world feared and commended, and that now they ſhould not either feare death or perill whatſoeuer, both for that their ſeruice they ought to their Prince, and further, for the honour of their Country, and credite to themſelues. Againe, the people whom they fought for, were their neighbours, alwayes friends, and well-willers to Engliſhmen. And further that no man ſhould do any ſeruice worth the noting, but he himſelfe would ſpeake to the vttermoſt to preferre him to his wiſhed purpoſe. Which oration of his did ſo linke the mindes of the people, that they deſired rather to dye in that ſeruice, then to liue in the contrary.

Sir Philip Sidney his Oration.

The 14. of July, Sir William Pelham, Lord Marſhall of the Field, came to Dunhage. The 16. of July his Excellency removed from Dunhage to Will, in which paſſage hee tooke to croſſe the water at the Doppe of Slice ſo called, being paſſed the water, he entred the Land betweene two Sconces, a quarter of a mile or more from the Towne, where hee was entertained with all the Sconces that both of great Ordnance and ſmaller ſhot, paſſing by Land he came to the Towne, where the Gouernour ſir Thomas Cecil entertained him both with theare and otherwiſe moſt honourably. This Towne is ſeated the mouth of Maze, where the water is in breadth ſome miles Engliſh. The Iſland of Will is great, more then twenty miles

Will.

unles ouer, in it are Doppes not so well built as rich. On the 19. his Excellency returned from the Brill to Dunhage.

Nence burned by the English boyes.

In this meane space, on the 16. of July, the Enemy entred Nence, after a long assault, in which assault he lost 3000. men. This towne of Nence, was burned foorthwith to the ground by the Lackies and Boyes belonging to our Souldiers, there remayned whole but eight houses.

The 23. of July, his Excellencie made a banquet to diuers great personages of those Countries, as the Lady Bredo, Lady of Viana, the Pallsraues wife, the County Egmonts daughters, the Prince of Oranges daughter, with a number more. In which banquet wanted not what might be had to augment their cheare either in musicke, dauncing, fire-workes, or otherwise.

Of Sutfin.

The 22. of July, the Garison of Sutfin issued out to the number of neere two hundred, and came to Arnam, take some cattell and other things, and returned, whereupon Master Anthony Sherly came to Captaine Wilson Gouernour of Arnam, and required that hee and his company might issue out and reuenge this iniurie, which at length was granted: then Master Sherley chose out to the number of fourescore footemen, and 20. horsemen, and sent them out, which the Enemy leering, to intice our men forward, set the body not farre from Sutfin, on a hill, and laide a fourescore of their men in an ambush, betweene Arnam and the body, the twenty horsemen came to them, which they let passe in a streight, but no sooner past, but they discharged on them and seeing no more thought to slay or take them all, but no sooner had they charged the horse, but Master Sherley charging them behinde, the horse-men returned, and so what on the one side, and on the other, they slue of them the number of eighty, and take thirteene prisoners, which with the booty, they brought againe to Arnam, hauing lost but one man, and two men hurt.

About this time, Master Butlers Cornet, lying at Deuentry, issued out, and take from Suthfield or Sutfin, of Tattell to the number of foure hundred Cowes, and sixteene Mares of great price, in this manner. Those of Suthfield had by the riuers side a great marish, all so ditched in, that no horse could passe ouer by any possible meanes: but they of Deuentry and Campyn consulting together, did one night at a low water passe into the marish, ouer by the side of the Towne, and brought without losse of any man of our part, foure hundred and odde Beasts, and 16. Mares, most of them solde for fiue pound a Mare, amongst the Souldiers. This exploit with others did greatly pinch those of Suthfield, for that the milke of those beasts were to them a great reliefe.

Robert Sidn. Cornet, lodges a booty.

The 26. of July, Master Robert Sidneyes Cornet, lying at Gertrenberge, passed with some of County Hollecokes horse, to the number of an hundred, and passed on purpose onely to learn Pieda, but being within sight thereof, they espied a number of Tattell issuing forth of the Towne (for feare of our Garisons) in those parts by toward high Brabant, hauing to conuey them some 300. shot, and a 10. or 12. lances, our men seeing so fit a booty vnlacked of their part, charged and put to flight the shot a horse, cut betweene the Towne and the tattell, and take from them 600. Oxen, 700. Sheepe, and 60. Mares, and some Moares, all which they caried to Gertrenberge, to the great reliefe of the Souldiers there.

Mountioy.

The second of August, his Excellencie passed from the Hage to Utricht, he dined at Tergowe, from thence he came by Oden water, and from thence to Mountfoyd, a strong Towne, at night hee came to Utricht, where by the Lord North hee was receiued with great ioye of shot.

Newes yelded to the Enemy.

In this meane time, to wit, on the 29. of July, the Enemy lying part before Berke, the residue came before Newes, which Towne was no sooner summoned, then it yelded to the Enemie, and on the next day they take a little Towne called Alpin, both these Townes belonged to the Graue Maurice.

Berke.

The second of August, the Enemie hauing passed by Berke as before, diuers of his company were cut off as straglers, and further, a great spot of horse, the men that were taken were hanged: amongst whom, a young Lad which was taken, confessed to Skinke, that as the Prince passed by Berke, on a hill made this speech, My Souldiers (quoth hee) you may see here this Towne, neither great nor strong, but so manned, that assure your selues you shall receiue blowes enough, and no wealth, wherefore we may now passe with no dishonour, but if we stay here long, it will be dill, onour to passe away, therefore say what you minde to doe, and presently they were all contented to depart, and so ther passed from the Towne. The third of August, the Prince seeing he could not passe any thing by water, but Berke letted it, besides hee had a conuoy of venison, wine, &c. which was by them of Berke taken away with fifty men that had the conducting thereof, the Prince noting that the principall men that annoyed him, were there where the Prince saw the Towne weake, hee returned to it againe: for Skinke had no sooner taken the fifty men, and others, but asking them whose men they were, and they answering the Princes, they were streight waies hanged, which doings of Skinkes, caused the Prince to returne his Army to Berke, on the said third of August: on which day hee passed with three Cornets of horse from Alpyn where his Munition lay, to Oson, a Towne of the Duke of Cleues, a small league from Berke, and came with certaine to view the Towne of Berke, which Skinke perceiuing, streight issued out of the Towne with certaine horse and foote and charged the Prince which had three Cornets of horse, and 500. footemen, yet Skinke put him to the retreat to Alpyn to his quarter there.

The fourth day hee came with his maine Battell, and passed on the South side of the Towne, Towne, though often times he were charged and lost many of his men, yet he abode there.

Lord Vchal and Farnier slaine. Berns.

On the third of August, the Lord Marshall the generall of the Horse, &c. with some thousand horse and footmen, passed in the night far into Brabant, and came early in the morning, to the great Dorpe Dell Stilucring-benke, set it on fire, and burned it into the ground. There was with the Lord Marshall two hundred Kernes, who shewed their courages, for none were so ready to burne, nor so ready to kill all that came in their danger, so that few escaped them. Comming further, they came to a Dorpe, more like a good Towne, not farre from Sattingambusse, wherein is a Castle and a strong Sconce, but the wild Irish kernes neither fearing that nor threate, tanne by the sides of the Sconce, tooke it presently, and put to the sword all in it, and tooke the position to themselues. Those of the Towne had crossed the way with trees, in such sort as the horsemen could not passe to the Towne, but with great labour, but the Irish entred the Towne only, and burned it to the ground, saueing none that came to their hands, so our men returned to Gertenberge, not hauing foure of their Irish-men

Irish kernes

The 5. of August, his Excellency passed from Utricht to Tergowe, where he stayed till the 7. being honorably entertained: this towne is very strong, situate so, that all the Country round about may speedily be drowned. About this towne is the greatest nurserie of fruite that men there present had euer seene, and by them thought impossible to serue many Countries, with trees of all sorts, but peares especially. The ground about Tergow is a 14. foote broad, is nought else but the most braue trees that can be seene. This towne hath the most faire market place, that hath ben seene of many, in the middest whereof, standeth a faire State house, in the which his Excellency did eate and was lodged. The 7. of August his Excellency passed from Tergow to Utricht, by the which he must passe through Doon waters, by the Wargers of which town, he was honorably receiued, all the towne throughout ouerhead was hanged with garlands of flowers for his welcome. The 19. he passed from Utricht to Reine, and there stayed all night. The next day he passed to Arnam. About this time a ship was sent from the Bishop of Tullen to the Prince, laden with Canon shot, and powder, the master of which ship, either mistaking the Bishop, the Prince, or their Religion, so sone as he came where he might well recouer Berke, where Skinke and his force lay, he by one meanes or other, so opened the ship, that the water entred, so that he and the rest, were forced by that meanes to retire to Berke. In this ship was a Commissary of good account with the Prince, whom the master of this ship did conuey to Skinke, who was no sooner come, but Skinke entred iudgement with him, and he desiring to bee vsed like a gentleman, Skinke answered, he should bee hanged with his face towards the enemies Campe, for (quoth he) I know you desire to see your friends

Ship sent to the Prince, taken to Berke.

Maurice hanged Gentlemā.

and so it was done. This losse of munition made the Prince want of his will, for battery of the towne, only planting fiue Canons in two places. Further, at the same time, there came newes to his Excellency, that the horse and footmen of Gelder had often put the enemy to losse, and had taken 150. horses from them, besides a number of them slaine.

The 17. of August, Sir Iohn Norris passed ouer Iselll by Arnam iconce, (a bridge of boates being there made with some 3000. English footmen, and 600. 7. hundred horse.) And about the same time, the Prince remoued some part from Berke to Alpine, a dutch mile from Berke. The 21. of August, the Lord Marshall passed ouer the riuer by Arnam sconce, with 3000. footmen and 600. horse toward the leager. The 23. of August, his Excellency passed ouer the water by Arnam Sconce, with 2000. or more footemen, and 100. or more Launces. The Irish kernes were no sooner come to the Campe, but that they passed neere the enemies, and brought them 120. Cowes. The 24. of August, the Leger rose and passed to Eltham: there is nether Eltham and vpper Eltham, both haue beene houses of Religious women, most sumptuously built: the neather standeth neere the Reyne, the vpper standeth an English mile from the Reyne vpon an high hill, and in such a place as few the like for prospect: where a man standing may behold 100. Parish Churches. This cloyster was of such credit and estimation, that none came there by the order of the place, but thee was a Barrons daughter at the least. The Lady Anne of Cleue was brought vp in this cloyster. The 27. of August, his Excellency passed from Arnam to the Campe of Eltham. The 28. hee caused all the English to bee marshalled into squares, and two Preachers made to them 2. Sermons in the field by the hill side of Eltham cloyster. The 30. of August his Excellency passed from Eltham to Dowbrough with all his Army, except only those that the night before were sent to lie about the towne. On the North side was an Iland to the which was sent a Scottish Regiment: which that night with their pioners did intrench within 80. yardes of the North part: On the west side came the Regiment of Sir Th. Sherly. On the East side, was the Regiment of Sir W. Stanley, and the Lord Marshall: on the South-east side was his Excellency with the regiment of the Lord Audley. All the residue, as Sir Iohn Norris, Mr. Digby, and diuers other regiments, as well English as dutch, were placed between these quarters, euery one in part indeauoring to intrench neere the ports, so that the same night, though with some alarums from the Towne, were the whole ports of the Towne intrenched, so that none could issue without danger. The same night also that his Excellency came before Dowsborough, him selfe in person with the Lord Marshall in the night, with their guards went from their tents to view the South trench, being neere the Towne, there was a base shot at them, which though all were together, yet receiuing amongst them all, but the L. Marshall

The English men marshalled.

Dowsborough besieged by his Excellency.

his Excellency in danger, and Sir William Pelham L. Marshall hurt

on the belly, pierced his buffe ierkin, his dou-
blet, and hurt him somewhat: this shot missing
his Excellency, made them returne. The last of
August, there was nothing but intrenching,
and some vollies of each side, for that the or-
dinance was not come. The first of September
came our ordinance, which being landed, and
drawne neere the places of battery, some of
the demy-cannons discharged, to displace the or-
dinance of the towne, which was in part done,
but againe in other places mounted. This day
his Excellency removed from the East or south-
east side, to the west side, into an Iland, the ri-
uer Iffell running by it. The 2. of September
halfe an houre before sunrising, began the bat-
tery of Dowdzorough, & was so throughly plyed,
that with 9. battering peces, a marvilous breach
was made. In time of which battery, Captaine
Williams was shot through the arme, yet in this
siege not 20. men lost, and a 20. hurt. About
one of the clocke they agreed to parley, all our
battells being ranged in squares before the
towne to assault, the soulders had made the
breach more strong then before with feather-
beds, dung, timber, &c. and made in the midst a
great sight, but fearing an assault, which they
knew would be furious, they (as was sayd) a-
greed to parley: the conditions were, that the
soulders should passe away with their liues on-
ly, the 15 rogers should haue all they had at his
Excellence mercy, these things being agreed, a-
bout 4. or 5. of the clocke in the afternoone, all
the soulders with their wiues, passed out the
breach away. The women that passed with the
soulders, it was a grieuous thing to see how
they were ransacked till the Earle of Essex and
diuers other gentlemen came downe the breach,
& by smiting the soulders, made them leaue off
rifling them: his Excelencies expresse comman-
dement was, that none should take ought from
the towne, but that was not obserued, for much
of the goods was spoyled. Captaine Berroes
was appointed to keepe the towne, who's En-
signes with Captaine Prices colours was set in
the breach. The Captaines and soulders that
were sent to saue the towne from spoyle, did to
the contrary, for they made bouche & moll hor-
rible spoile, wherewith his excellency was great-
ly displeased. The 5. of Sep. his Excelency went
into the towne and there dined, and afterward
viewed the towne. The same day master An-
thony Sherley and other Captaines came to the
Campe, and declared that the enemie came to
Wesell, and with a piece of ordinance, beate
backe our shippes wherein our men were, and
killed some of them, and further, beate them
downe the riuer. The scituation Dowdzorough stan-
deth by the riuer Iffell, an arme, or illuing of
the Reine by Arnam sconce, and runneth along
through the country of Ouer Iffell, it runneth
also by Suthfield, and is in the Peruince of
Suthfield, and fiue English miles from Suth-
field, and fiue miles or more from Arnam. It
standeth in a most fertile soyle, pleasant, and
fruitfull ground. It is of reasonable strength,
hauing high walls, not rampired but in certaine
places, hauing a water running round about it,
it is about the bignesse of Arnam, nigh an Eng-
lish mile and a halfe compasse. The order of
the assault of this Towne (as it was determi-
ned) sir John Norris had the honor giuen him
to enter the great breach, sir William Stanley
with his regiment had the secounding of sir
John Norris, County Hollocke had giuen him
the small breach with his regiment. These
ranged themselues in the most brauest manner,
but his Excellency offered parley as yee haue
heard. The 9 of September word came that sir
Martin Skinke was gotten from out of Berke,
and the 11. the same Skinke, Captaine Tho.
with some other braue soulduers lances, came to
the Campe before Dowdzorough. The 13. of
September, his Excellency with all his forces
came from Dowdzorough, and that same night
incamped himselfe before Suthfield, but by for-
want of a bridge could not goe ouer the water,
this night he intrenched himselfe very neere in
diuers places, and on the morrow he made a
bridge, which passed ouer to the other side. The
15. of Sep. his Excellency leauing sir Martin
Skinke in his absence passed to Deuentry, but
shortly returned, for that he was informed that
the Prince with his whole forces was marching
towards Suthfield. This towne of Suthfield
is very strong, beeing in diuers places parted,
in all which places is such strength, as all must
be won ere the towne be wonne. It standeth a
good distance from the riuer Iffell, but hath a
sconce on Iffell of incredible strength, for Hol-
locke with all his force, and our Englishmen
a two yeares since lay at it three quarters of a
yeare, but could not winne it: but now his Ex-
cellency beganne to besege it, and for that his
forces were not sufficient to incampe it round
about, hee framed himselfe to doe his best to
winne the sconce, for by that meanes hee might
the more easily win the towne. The first night
our men intrenched at a Church beside the
Towne, but for that they thought after it was
not so commodious, they passed not for it, and
therefore went on the other side of the water
to intrench the Sconce, for that out of it, there
issued both horse and footmen which did greatly
annoy our Campe, for none could passe or re-
passe from Deuentry or otherwise for them the
strength of the Campe, but they were taken or
in danger, if not rescued. The 18. of Septem-
ber Skinke tooke on him to make a Sconce neere
the enemies Sconce, which the same night hee
beganne, though the Towne shot sore at him,
and also the Sconce, yet he followed his worke,
and so fortified it, that it was sufficient for
greatnesse, to hold men to keepe it, and sufficient
for strength, to hold out what the enemies
shot could doe against it, and this sconce Skinke
kept on that side the water, that passage could
not so well come to the sconce, but he did sinke
their boates. His Excellency the next night
caused another sconce to be made iust by the e-
nemies sconce, so that the enemie was by these
two sconces so kept in, that they were kept from
issuing out for their pleasure. The 20. of Sep-
tember, the enemy lyingnet far off at Langham
a towne of ours distant from Suthfield, an 8

Dowdbo-
rough yeelded
to his Excel-
lency.

His Ex-
cellency
before
Suthfield.

or 9. miles English, sent in the night to Suth-
field, certaine Cornets of horse, which were suf-
fered to enter by our men, and further to passe
away againe to the enemies camp they brought
nothing into the towne to relieue it: moreouer
all the whole English Campe lay on the other
side of the towne, ouer the water, so that readily
a sufficient po wer could not be made.

A fight be-
fore Zutphen

The 22. of September, was the most braue
fight performed of our side that could be. The e-
nemy this night put into Suthfield, some hun-
dred wagons with victuals, which being per-
ceiued, straight waies sir William Stanley went
with his owne company, which were some 200.
to stand as a baricado, sir John Norris ouertooke
him, being sent to the service and said to sir W.
Stanley. There hath bene (sayd he) one words
of displeasure betweene you and me, but let all
passe, for this day we both are employed to serue
her Maiestty, let vs be friends, and let vs dye to-
gether in her Maiesties cause. Quoth sir Wil.
Stanley, if you see mee not this day by Gods
grace, serue my Prince with a valiant & faithe-
full courage, account me for euer a coward, and
if not be bee, I will dye by you in friendship.
Thus the long quarrell begun in Ireland was
here ended with such friendship, as made all
men reioyce: both of them serued so forwardly
this day, that the one could not tell much how to
commend the other, onely the one serued with
footmen, the other serued with horse: sir Wil.
Stanley marched with his footmen, but the ene-
my was come to the Church, where our men had
at the first placed themselues, there was of the
enemies 2200. muskets and 800. pikes, which
were prouo to guard the place for their refuge, (to
wit, the intrenched Church.) The L. Audley,
with some hundred and fifty men, by great haste
made to his Excellency, attained at length to
goe, who made so great haste, that he ouertooke
sir William Stanley ere the skirmith beganne,
which was hote, but the Lord Audley and Sir
William Stanley, not liking the hot vollies of
musket shot, pressed neere the enemy, and them-
selues at the push of their pike with their men
put the whole company to retreat to the hold,
which done, they retired a little backe out of the
musket shot, and there made a stand: the Earle
of Essex Lord Generall of the horse, the Lord
Willowby, sir William Russell, and sir John
Norris, with three Cornets came to charge the
enemy. There were of the enemy 15. Cornets,
of which 5. or 6. were Albanoys, the rest were
Spaniards, or Italians. The Albanoys issued,
which our men charged so furiously, that it was
thought at the first shocke, there were a thirty
or forty of the enemies ouerthrowne, then our
men went to the curtelare, which they so furi-
ously plyed, that the enemy after some three
quarters of an houre retired to their pikes,
losing of foote and horsemen, as the prisoners
since taken confesse, besides hurt, an hundred
men of their bauell, amongst which was
County Anobal, also Captaine George, the
Commander of all the Albanoyses, was taken
prisoner, besides, more twenty Commanders,
some Captaines, some Ensigne-bearers, Lieu-

Sir William
Stanley and
sir John Nor-
ris became
friends that
before were
enemies.

tenants and other officers: but to sir John Nor-
ris he gaue the first charge, who with his pistol
in his hand, offered to discharge it on a braue
man, but his pistoll would not goe off, which he
seeing, strake it on the head of his enemy and
ouerthrew him. The Lord Willowby, with his
lance in his rest, met Captaine George, and
vnhorsed him, so that he fell into a ditch, and
cryed to the Lord Willoughby, I yeeld you
prisoner, for that you be a seemely knight (this
he spake in French) the Lord Willowby came
not to take prisoners, but passed on with his
curtelaxe in his hand, and his whole cornet after
so furiously, that it was wonder to see, the Lord
Willowby was so forward, that oftentimes,
but twice especially, hee was like to bee taken
prisoner, his bases were pulled off from him,
but rescued by our side: when the skirmith
was done, and all retratted, Captaine George
being in his Excellencies tent, would not grant
to be put ouer to any, but to him who vnhorsed
him, whom he knew, if hee saw him in his ar-
mor, the Lord Willoughby came in armor, this
is the knight that I am prisoner to, & I yeeld
to him, and so the Lord Willoughby had the
prisoner adiudged to be his. The 3. the Earle of
Essex charged with his Cornet: who so encou-
raged his men, for the honor of England, said he
my fellowes follow me, and with that he threw
his lance in his rest, and ouerthrew the first
man, and with his curtlax so behaued himselfe,
that it was wonder. Sir William Russell with
his Cornet, charged so terribly, that after he had
broke his lance he with his curtlaxe so plaid his
part that the enemy reported him to be a deuill
and not a man, for where he slew 5. or 7. of the
enemies together, thither would hee, and so be-
haued himself with his curtelax, that hee would
separate their friendship. Among all the rest sir
Phil Sidney so behaued himselfe, that it was
wonder to see, for hee charged the enemy thrise
in one skirmith, and in the last charge he was
shot through the thigh, to the great griefe of his
Excellencie, and the whole Campe, who being
brought to my Lord Lieutenant, his Excellency
sayd: O Philip, I am sory for thy hurt, and Sir
Philip answered, O my Lord, this haue I done
to do your honor, and her Maiesty seruice. Sir
William Russell, comming to him, kissed his
hand, and sayd with teares: O noble sir Philip,
there was neuer man attained hurt more ho-
nourably then yee haue done, nor any serued like
vnto you. Hee was conueyed to Arnham, where
he continued till this end, in such kinde of godly
behauiour, that both the Preacher did wonder
at it, and the chirurgions did admire, the one
seeing his wise godlinesse, the other his valia-
ant courage, with patience to abide all kind of
paines. The Cornet of Sir Philip Sidney was
at this time at Deuentry, vpon this occasion,
his Excellency feared Deuentry, for that it had
often beene in question of reuolting, but the
Prince of Parma hauing occasion to bee im-
ployed otherwayes, could not come that way:
now (as is aforesayd) his Excellency fearing
that while hee were winning one towne hee
might lose another, the Prince being so neere,

Sir Philip
Sidney hurt
to death.

sent Sir Phil. Sidneyes Cornet, his owne cornet, and maister Rob. Sidneyes Cornet, all into Denentry, and of footmen Captain [illegible], with his soulders, and Captaine Ward with his: thus was the cause Sir [illegible] Sidney was alone without his Cornet at this seruice, Sir Hen. Parker also was at this seruice, and serued most brauely. All the time this skirmish was with these Cornets, so our footmen were in fight with the enemie, and by fine force, made them once to gaine retire to their fastes. The enemy being retired to his strength, all our horse made a stand by the musket shot, which played on them sore, and braued the enemy, bidding him come forth if he durst, but he would not: which Sir Iohn Norris seeing rode to his Excellence and had him be merry, for had he not, he should this day the honourablest day that euer you had, for a handfull of your men haue driuen the enemy three times to retreat this one day. Further he willed his Excellency, either to send for more strength, or else to sound the retrait, which last request he granted, for that his strengths were otherwise employed, and so the retrait being sounded both by drum, and trumpet, our Captains came backe in good order euery man to his quarter with great praise and honor. We lost men of account at this fight, Captaine Matthew, and Captaine Tho. Wilford is thought to be dead, he came with Skinke from Werke in hope rest to be in more safety: We lost of Caterans, horse, dead, about sixty.

The 25. of September, our men seeing the great aduantage that a certaine Iland lying in the riuer betweene the fconce and the towne, would doe them, and further that there was therein some souldiers of the enemy, which greatly annoyed them in shooting as they passed any way, our men therefore set vpon it, furnished with the souldiers, and put them to flight, many of them leaping into the riuer were drowned, some were killed, but in fine, our men inconced there, and the towne shot at them, but did them little hurt.

The 28. of September, his Excellency with a great part of his Campe, remooued to the other side of the towne, and there beganne to intrench: leauing the Sconces well manned, it was thought the Towne was neuer so well victualled, for by his Excellency, the prouante was cut off, and euery Souldier had halfe a Crown a weeke, which greatly contented them, and this was payed to them truely, so that a Souldier might by this meanes be able to pay the vnqualler, and that made many resort to the Campe. Further Deuentry was so store that by that meanes, victuals were brought the more fully to the Campe, for at Deuentrie is great plenty of victuals. The Horsemen had fome shillings the weeke loane, to finde them and their horse, which was better then the prouante: his Excellency knighted maister William Harton, and maister Henry Vmpton, who were then sent for to returne into England to their friends.

W. Harton, H. Vmpton, knighted.

The 29. of September, our men set vpon the Ile pe sconce of the enemy, which with some difficulty they obtained, but after thinking to win another sconce there were many of them slaine, as well as on the other side, was the like or worse, there were of our men slaine and hurt about an 100. In this Ile sconce as was reported there were fiue fights, which were won that night, and certaine trenches of the enemie, and further intrenched almost round about the great sconce, so as they of the same could now hardly issue out, or any come in to them.

The 2. of October, in the night there passed into Zutphen, 5000. of the Princes folke, a 4000. footmen, and a 1000. horsemen, these passed into the towne, all in order vntrobled of our Campe, these companies brought no carriages into the towne, but all the wagons were to come after. The victuals which the Princes power had gotten in Dyent, and Duent, was conueyed into Zutphen, permitted by his Excellency, for that his men were otherwaies imployed, those of Longham did cut off some straglers of the Princes power as they passed by them. The 4. of October, they of the sconce at Zutphen called for a parly, which was granted, and County Hollocke for that he spake Dutch, stept out of our fconce, and parlied with them, and after long talke, one of the souldiers shot a musket, which as County Hollocke was speaking, shot into his mouth, and out by his eare, so that it smote away the iewel hanging at his eare. The 5. of Octob. came to Deuentry many of our horses, and about midnight, taking all the garrison of horses in the Towne, passed from thence to Langham where they all o take the horses of the garrison, and went about an exploit, which was, they hearing of a conuoy of victuals comming to Suthfield, they determined to haue cut it off, but they could not meete with it. There was of our men at this exploit pretended, a fine or fiue hundred horse, the leader whereof was sir William Russell. The same 5 of October early in the morning our canons being placed against the lesser sconce, they played at it till 3. or 4. of the clocke, at which time maister Edward Stanley, Leader of Sir William Stanleyes Company came to assault the breach, but before he came to the Breach, the Enemy had a Fight or Trench full of souldiers placed there for to offend vs, and defend the Sconce, which souldiers all at once discharged their muskets, killing onely one man, Edward Stanley entred the Trench with all his men, killing some of the enemies, and the rest fled. In this Trench he stayed till our Canons had made the breach cleare, then maister Edyward Stanley before his men clambred vp the breach, but a braue man of great stature, Captaine of the sconce stood alone in the breach with a pike, & thrust at him, which pike with the one hand he defended, and with the other caught hold to get vp till at the last he was throwne downe by a bullet throwne out of the sconce: the second time he assaulted the breach, but this Captaine so defended it, and kept him downe as was wonderfull: and although our men with the Cannon did play on the breach, yet he still fought, and did not flieee till at the last a Cannon cut of the Iland

County Hollock shot into the mouth.

Stroke

stroke the ground from vnder him, so that hee fell out of the breach into the Sconce: but in fine, this braue leader of our men, led them by the breach, and first entred the same, then was the fight in the Sconce, where at the first our men killed foure or fiue, at the second the like, at the length, they hauing made a traine, three or foure of our men were burnt, but the Souldiers of the Sconce fled out at a little wicket, which our souldiers chanced to light on, and killed to the number of thirty, so our men possessed the lesser Sconce, with the losse of three or foure of our men, and fiue or seuen hurt. This seruice being done, his Excellency seeing the valour of maister Edward Stanley, gaue him thankes, and calling Captayne Reade, knighted them both. This taking of the lesser Sconce, greatly terrified them of the greater Sconce. The next night, the County Williams men lying neere them, they with a foze volly of shot, discharged at them, and bad them hanse vp, for sayd they, you will play but as County Hollock, spend powder and shot, and lose your men, and hanse vp when you haue done. This sudden volley of shotte, put Graue Williams men in doubt that they would issue, wherefore they had thought to haue giuen alarum, but finding them so quiet after, they stayed their enterprise, and listened what would follow, and hearing no noyse or shew of Souldiers, they passed neare the Sconce to see the event, at length they might see a fire in the Sconce, which made them to passe neerer, and at length entred the Sconce, where they found a ten or 12. men, which fled (as was thought) into the water and were drowned. Thus had the cowardly praters made a fire, and ran away by the light thereof. Thus was the great sconce which was so well manned, so well prouided of powder and shot, that they wanted none, yet without all salt or charge, breach or any thing to distuay them, they ranne away, to their vtter infamy and reproch.

The seuenth of October, his Excellency passed to Arnam, there to visite Sir Phillip Sidneys lying of his hurt received as is afore shewed, before whose going he made Knights, these Captaines, and Gentlemen following: Sir Henry Goodyere, Captaine of the guarde, Sir Henry Norris, Sir Iohn Borroves, Sir Iohn Winkefield, Sir Roger Williams, Sir Robert Sidney, Sir Philip Butler. Those were knighted, Sir Henry North, Sir Thomas Dennis, Sir William Knowles, Sir George Farmer, Sir George Digby, Sir Stewyard. Sir Beauoyrd: besides these, were made Knights Bannarets, these following: the Earle of Esser, the Lord Willowsby, the Lord Audley, the Lord North.

There was (saith my cousin Henry Archar) a strange thing happened at Werke, in the time of Skinkes gouernement there, which I thought good to impart: as the Souldiers were repayring and working, to make the towne strong, a souldier comming by said, you worke and worke, but the enemy will haue the Towne within this weeke: which words being duly noted and taken grieuously, that hee should so discourage the Souldiers, hee was taken and carried to Skinke, who without any circumstances, condemned him to be throwne off the great steeple of the towne into the Reine, which was accomplished. But he falling off from a monstrous height light in the water, and rising againe, as the nature of the water is, to saue one by twise or thrise, he had both life and memory, such as he offered to submme, and scrabling got out of the water: but Skinke had taken such an hatred against him, that he caused him to be bound hand and foote, to haue bene cast againe into the Riuer of Reine, saying that Cotwell Mayor being there, so perswaded him, that the poore mans life was saued.

The ninth of October, County Hollocks Cornet of Horses, lying at Langham, take a fiue Waggons, which hadde carryed the Connoy before spoken of into Suthfield and a fifteene of them being laden with hurt men that were wounded in the Sconce, he put them all to the sword, and tooke the wagons into Lanham.

The 15. of October, his Excellency passed from Deuentry to Arnam, to Sir Phillip Sidney there lying sicke, as is afore shewed.

On the 17. of October, the sayd Sir Phillip Sidney, Knight, a valiant and towardly gentleman, sonne and heire to Sir Henry Sidney, (late aforesayd deceased) of his seruice received at Zutphen in Gelderland deceased, vpon whose departure he so like vp his minde & courage, that the preacher that came to instruct him in Christianity, might rather learne of him than teach him his assurance in the promises of Christ. From thence he was brought by water to Flushing where he was kept eight dayes, on the 1. of Nouember, he was brought to the sea side by the English garrison, which were 12. hundred, marching thare and thare, shot, halberts, pikes, & Ensignes, al trailing, the Burgers of the towne following: his body being imbarked, the small shot gaue him a triple volley, then the great ordinance, &c. On the fift of Nouember he was landed at the Tower wharfe, and conueyed to the Minories without Aldegate, on the East side of the City of London, from whence, he on the sixteenth of February next following, was conueyed to Saint Pauls Church in London in order, marshalled by Ro. Cooke, *alias* Clarenceaux King at armes. Imprimis, 9 rose men in blacke gownes 32. for hee was so many yeares old, Sergeants of the band fife, and drum. Ensignes trailed. Lieutenant of footmen, the Corpozals, trumpets, Gwidon trailed, Lieutenant of his horse, conductos to his seruants, the standard borne by a Gentleman, his gentlemen and Yeomen seruants, 60. Physitians & Chirurgions, Steward of house, Squires of his kindred and friends, 60. Knights of his kindred and friends, 12. the Preacher and Chaplaines, the penon of his armes borne the horse for the field led by a footman, a Page riding with a broken lance, the barbed horse led by a footman a Page riding carrying a battle axe, the head bowne ward, Yeomen vshers to the Heraults, the great

Sir Phil. Sidney deceas

Sir Phil. Sidney buried at London.

Knights made.

A souldier throwne from an high Tower into the Riuer of Reine.

banner borne by a gentleman, Portcolois bare the gilt spurs, Blewmantle the gauntlets, Rouge Dragon bare the helme and creft, Richmond the shield of armes, Somerset the coat of armes. Clarenceaux king at armes, Gentleman vsher to the corpes, two bannerrolles, the corpes couered with a Pall veluet, carried by 14. Yeomen, 2. bannerrolles, following. Sir Robert Sidney chiefe mourner, mourners assistant, 4 Knights two Gentlemen vshers to the Noblemen, the Earles of Huntingdon, Leicester, Pembroke, and Essex, Burrons, Willoughby and North, States of Holland seuen, all these in blacke, the Lord bearer of London riding on horseback, the Lord Maior and Aldermen riding on horseback in murry: the company of the Grocers in London in their liuery 120. Citizens of London practised in armes 300 marched three and three in the foreward, the Captain, Lieutenant, and 3. targets, musketers, 4. rankes, drums, 20 and fife, small shot, 20. pikes, 20. rankes, halbards some rankes, chiefe officers of the field, drumme, fife, and Ensigne. In the rereward, halbardars, three rankes, pikes fifteene rankes drums and fife, small shot, fifteene rankes, musketers three rankes, &c. And when his corps was thus conueyed into Pauls Church, where hee was honorably enterred, they honored him with a double volley of shot, and so departed.

Sir Phillip Sidney liues of the Grocers in London.

A politicke exployte, or Deuice by which Sir William Pelham Lord Marshall.

The 18. of October, his Excellency passed with great sorrow for the losse of his nephew, Sir Phillip Sidney, to Vtrike: and on the same 18. and 19. dayes of October, sir William Stanley gaue in charge to his officers, chiefetaynes, and commaunders, as also to his Souldiers, that they should goe into Deuentry by 15. by tenne, by fire, and by thee, which commaundement they did fulfill, so that for the most part they got them into the Towne, being nothing misstrusted of the Burgers, they got into harborow, and close places, that they were not espied. Also other Captaines sayd to their Souldiers, if you will goe fiue or six, or somewhat more to Deuentry, to recreate your selues, take with you store of powder and shot, for feare of the enemy, which liberty they were ready to take, and performed accordingly, so that there was by this meanes gotten into the Towne well knowne 1200. English souldiers: On the 19. day in the morning, came sir William Stanley, with some troupe of his men, and in the aftertoome sir William Pelham L. Marshall with his troupe. The Councell of States with master Killegrey, master Kely, and other were debating of matters all this day with the Burgomasters, nothing mentioned of the garrison that there should be placed: further those of Southfield in disdaine, did tell those that passed by their towne to Deuentry, that they should hye them, or the gates would be shut. The Lord Marshall being come to his lodging, sent for all the Burgomasters which were in the Counsell, as before, who being come, hee told them that his Excellency both for their owne safetie, and suppresse on of the enemy, was fully determined to put a garrison of men there, and for that before time hee had found them strange in graunting, he had sent him thither, for that the Camp was now ready to breake vp, to know in short their determination, whether they would receiue a garrison or not, and for that his haste required no long stay, they to giue him answere on the next morning by 8. of the clocke, that he might send word to Vtrike to his Excellency, which the Burgomasters promised to answere according to his request, now all this night did sir William Stanley and others with the Lord Marshall, take Counsell what were best to doe, which was agreed that all the souldiers secretly theuld on the morrow at 7. of the clocke bee in the market place with their furniture this order being taken, all with quiet rested, but the burgers which made that night a double watch, and chayned all the streets, made fast all passages, and further did make and man all the ports most strong.

In the morning early by fire of the clocke, al the Burgomasters were assembled in the state house, to agree of this purpose. About 7. of the clocke the Lord Marshal came to the statehouse with diuers gentlemen and others, who knocked and were let in, straight sir W. Stanley also entred with his traine all appointed for the purpose, by this time were all our Englishmen assembled in the market place, which the townesmen seeing were all in pitious feare, the women crying out for feare to be spoyled. The L. Marshall asked them for a direct answere, whether they would haue a garison or not giue me (quoth he) a direct answere, for I must so haue it. One of the principall Burgomasters rose softly and stole away, which being told to the Lord Marshall, hee sayd: fetch me presently him that is gone, or by the liuing God, before whom I stand, you shall all die for it, and delay not, sayd he, but doe it, and straight was hee fetched again. Then demaunded he for what cause this night euer all other, they had made so strong a watch, whereforee they had chayned their streets, &c. but they answered not: well sayd he, euery one of you set his hand to this bill and deliuer ouer your authority, to these whom his Excellency hath set down, or before God you shall all die, you haue not to deale with a nation simple or foolish, or such as wil be led in this or that like sort, comming hither to spend their goods, toile their bodies and venture their liues, & now be accounted such as your subtilty should ouer-reach. They forthwith at his commaund (being sore afraid) set their hands to the bill, and gaue their authority to protestants, appointed by his Excellency: well, sayd he, send one of you straight to all those Burgers, that are on the walls, and rampiers, and command them to passe to their dwellings, and to let them forthwith bee vnarmed, which was presently done. Then hee commaunded them to bring to him the keyes of all the ports or gates vppon the like paine before spoken of, which was also done, with sweating both the old, and new officers to the Queene of England. This being done, all that before were suspected to bee Enemies to the Englishmen, were turned out of their places of authority. There was a fowre thou-

Lord Marshall his coming at Deuentry.

thousand Souldiers, all Burgers in this towne, which for the most part watched and warded, besides a number others, as too rich for such paines, boyes, which are all counted to be a twelue thousand fighting men, wherefore it requireth great care and wisedome to deale in this sort. The campe at this time brake for the most part vp, to the Garrisons, and all those companies that were appointed to the Sconce, went from Vtrike on the two and twentieth of October.

The Earle of Leicester returneth from the Low Countries, and arriued in England.

The 23 of October, the States of those parts came from Deuentry to Vtrike, where with his Excellency they sat in Councell, of determining all the 24. day, from morning till night. The 28. early in the morning, his Excellency passed from Vtrike, and came that night late to Rotherdame: On the 29. his Excellency passed from thence to the Hage, where he stayed some small time. The 8. of November he went to Delph, where he was banqueted, and went that night to Dunhage. On the 16. he passed from Hage to Rotherdame: and on the 17. to Dort. On the 18. hee take shipping to passe from Dort to Flushing, and being passed a 7. English miles from Dort, the yce was so great, and so oppressed his ships, that it indomaged the most strong ship in the Flete, so that perforce his Excellency was forced to land at Dort a poore Village, and in a Wagon to passe by land to Rotherdam, and there prepared ships, and when the winde serued, he passed towards Flushing, but calmnesse of the winde caused his stay against the Iles of Alcop wherein Flushing standeth, but in the morning hee landed at Camphere, and thence in a wagon he passed to Middleborough, and from thence to Flushing, where he take shipping toward England.

The 23. of November, the honorable Lord Robert Earle of Leicester, Lieutenant generall of all her Maiesties forces in the united Prouinces of the Low Countries, returning from thence, arriued at London, and went late that night to the Court of Richmond, where he was not so suddenly come, as forwardly welcome of her Maiesty, and thus leaning the seruice done in those united Prouinces the Low Countries or Netherlands (whereof thus farre I had receiued aduertisements from my good friend and neere kinsman Henry Archer, one of his Excellencies Gard) I returne to matters at home.

Seminarie Priests executed.

The 8. of October last before passed, I. Low, I. Adams, and Richard Dibdale, being before condemned for treason, in being made Priests by authority of the Bishop of Rome, were drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Ludgate of London new builded.

One of the West gates of the City of London, commonly called Ludgate, was this yere new builded, at the charges of the Cittizens of the same Citie, amounting to fiftene hundred pound or more.

Parliament at westminster.

The 29. of October, the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Treasurer, and the Earle of Derby representing the Queenes Maiesties person, began the high Court of Parliament by Proroguing, which session of Parliament was at this time assembled, for triall of matters concerning Mary the Queene of Scots, &c.

The 2. of December, the session of Parliament brake vp, and was prorogued vntill the 15. of February, the substance of matter handled in the same session concerning the Queene of Scots, is set downe at large in a letter learnedly penned, and published in print, directed to the honourable the Earle of Leicester, &c. *An. Reg. 29.*

The 6. of December, the Lord Maior of London, assisted with diuers Earles, Barons, the Aldermen of London in their scarlet, the principall Officers of the Cittie, the greatest number of the Gentlemen of the best account in and about the Cittie, with the number of 80. of the most graueste and wealthiest Cittizens in coates of velure, and chaines of gold all on horseback, in most solemne and stately manner, by sound of foure trumpets, about ten of the clock in the forenoone, made open and publique proclamation and declaration of the sentence lately giuen by the Nobility against the Queene of Scots vnder the great Seale of England, bearing date at Richmond the fourth of December, being openly read by Master W. Sebright, Towne Clarke of London, and with loud voyce solemnely proclaymed by the Sheriffe at Armes of the same Citie, in seuerall places, to wit, at the crosse in Cheape, at the end of Chauncery lane in Fleetstreete ouer against the Temple at Leaden hall corner, and at Saint Magnus corner neere London bridge, during which time like solemne proclamation were made with great solemnity in the Cittie of Middlesex, namely in the Palace of Westminster, without Temple barre, and in Holborne, by the Sheriffes of London and Middlesex, assisted with sundry Noble men and Gentlemen of good account, and the Iustices of peace of the said County, to the great and wonderfull reioycing of the people of all sorts, as manifestly appeared by ringing of bels, making of bonfires, and singing of Psalmes in euery of the streetes, and lanes of the Citie. Proclamation against the Queene of Scots.

Douer hauen repaired.

The Queenes Maiestie granted to the towne of Douer towards the repairing of their hauen, the free transportation of 20000 quarters of wheate, 10000. quarters of barley, and maulte 4000 tunne of Bere, without paying custome or impost, this licence or patent was solde to a couple of Marchants of London, named Iohn Bird, and T. Wats, after the rate of three shillings foure pence the quarter of wheat, and two shillings eight pence for euery quarter of Barly or Mault. And the licence for Bere being sold to diuers, amounted to 4000. markes at the least: more there was granted by Parliament Anno 27. Elizabeth, that for euery vessell or carver whereof her subiects were owners or partners, being of burden twenty tunnes or vpward, loading or discharging within this Realm, or passing to or fro any forraine Country, during the space of 7. yeres then next ensuing, there should be payd for euery such voyage by the Master or owner of all such vessels, &c. three pence for euery tun of the burthen of

1587. Procuratis in for grain.

both a ship, which grew to 1000. pounds yearely at the least.

The Queenes Maiestie forseeing the generall dearth of graine, and other victuals, growne partly through the unseasonablenesse of the yeares past, partly through the uncharitable grandinesse of such as be great Corne-Masters, but especially through the unlawfull and overmuch transporting of Graine into forraigne Countries, under colour of licence graunted to Dover and Sandwich, by the advice of her honorable Councell published a Proclamation, and bake of Rovers to be taken by her Iustices for the reliefe of the poore: notwithstanding all which, the excessiue prizes of Graine still encreased, so that Wheat was sold at London for eight shillings the bushell, and in some other parts of the Realme, for 10. shillings, 12. shillings, 13. shill ings, &c.

Queene of Scots beheaded.

The 8. of February, being Wednesday (according to sentence lately given by the Nobility) Mary Stewart Queene of Scots, about 10 of the clock before noone, was executed, and suffered death, by beheading upon a scaffold set up for that purpose in the great Hall of the Castle of Fodringham, in presence of George Talbot Earle of Shrewsbury, Henry Grey Earle of Kent, principall Commissioners, and others the Gentlemen of the Countrey there adioyning, to the number of about 300. thee was (as appeareth to a Queene) royally buried at Peterborough on the fifth of August next following.

Parliament at Westminster.

The 15. of February, the Parliament began at Westminster, wherein was granted to her Maiestie towards her charges for the defence of this Realme, a Subsidie by the Clergie of five shillings the pound, and of the Temporalty two shillings eight pence goods, and foure shillings lands, with two Fifteenes, &c.

Traitor hanged, begged for dead, and lived three dayes after.

The 20. of February, a strange thing happened, a man hanged for Felony at S. Thomas Watrings, being begged by the Chirurgions of London, to have made of him an Anatomie, after hee was dead to all mens thinking, cut downe, stripped of his apparell, layd naked in a Chest, thrown into a Carre, and so brought from the place of execution, through the Borough of Southwarke over the Bridge, and through the Citie of London to the Chirurgions Hall neere unto Cripplegate: the Chest being there opened, and the weather extreame colde, hee was found to be alive, and lived till the 23. of February, and then died.

Gunpowder house blowne up.

The same 23. of February, a Gunpowder house at Radrife was blowne up, about 10. of the clock before noone.

Lord Chancellour deceased.

The 12. of Aprill, Sir Tho. Bromley Knight, Lord Chancelor of England deceased, and was honorably buried at Westminster on the second of May. About the same time deceased Sir Ralph Sadler, Chancelor of the Dutchy of Lancaster, and one of her Maiesties priuie Councell. Also on the 16. of Aprill, deceased the Dutchesse of Somerset at Hanworth, and was buried at Westminster. Item, Edward Earle of Rutland, Barron Ross of Hamlake, Lord of Trusbut and Beauoire, Knight of the honorable order of the Garter, departed this life at London on the 14. of Aprill, and according to his desire was honorably conveyed from thence to his Castle of Beauoire, and buried in the Parish Church at Belfoyd, the 15. of May, where many of his noble ancestors and parents are honorably intombed.

Rutland deceased.

Sir Christopher Hatton Lord Chancellour.

The 29. of Aprill, Sir Christopher Hatton Knight, Captaine of the Gard, Vice-chamberlaine, and one of her Maiesties priuie Councell, was made Lord Chancelor of England at Croydon, in the Archbishop of Canterburies house, where he received the great Seale in the gallery there. And the third of May, being the first day of the Terme, he rode from Elp place in Oldbourne, to Westminster, there to take his oath, before whom went about the number of forty of his Gentlemen in one liuerie blew, and chaines of gold, diuers Persuiuers, and other Gentlemen of the Court, vpon foote, cleathes, the Officers and Clarke of the Chancerie, and then the Lord Chancelor, hauing on his right hand the Lord Treasurer, and on the left hand the Earle of Leicester, after whom rode certaine of the Nobility, the Iudges of the Realme, many Knights: and lastly, a great troupe of their retinue.

In this meane time, the most fortunate seruice for England, performed by Sir Francis Drake in Cales: the 19. of Aprill, with his lateff erploits in Cape S. Vincent, and Capesaker, done the twenty one of May, written by a Gentleman of his company, was such as followeth.

T. Fenner. Seruice of Sir Francis Drake at Cales, and Cape S. Vincent.

He hauing discouered (by advice of two ships of Middleborough that came from Cales, with whom he met in 40. degrees the 16. of Aprill) and by them understanding that there was great prouition in Cales, and thereabout, appointed to come for Lisbone, he with all speed possible did bend his force thither, to cutte off their power and prouition: so on the nineteenth of Aprill, an houre before Sunsetting, he entred the harbour of Cales, and his Fleet: there checked with him at the entring thwart the Towne, fire Gallies: but they in short time retired vnder their fortresses. There fled some twenty French ships to port Royall, and some Spaniards which could not be hindered of the flight by reason of the shelos. There was sunke by Sir Francis, at his comming in with shot, one argosie of 1000. tun, furnished with thirty peeces of brasse, and richly laden. There were to the number of 38. ships undertaken before night, and victors of the Rode: thirty hulks Hollanders confiscated to the King, and their goods sold to the Kings vse, 24. of them were stered, the other five were at port Royall laden with wines and bread, and to be presently sull laden for Lisbone. One Carrike of 1400. tuns appertaining to the Marques of S. Cruse fired. Fiue great Biskeis fired, foure of them lading and taking in of victuall for the Kings prouision for Lisbone, the fift a ship of 1000. tun, bound for Lisbone, hauing in her great stoze of pipes, much yron, nailes, spikes, yron hoopes,

hoopes, and such like fired. One Whatley laden with wines, of 250. tonnes, for the Kings prouition, which the English brought to Sea, and discharged part of her wines for prouision of the Fleete, and then fired her. There fiue boates, of about 400. tuns, laden with Bisket, whereof they fired one, and kept the other two. Ten barkes more laden with wines, raisins, figges, oyle, wheate, and such like: they fired by supposition, 38. ships and barkes, fired, sunke, and brought away, amounting in iudgement to 13000. tun of shipping, &c. this was for the first erployt. The second was as followeth: about the 21. of May, they arriued at the Castle of Cape-saker, and three other strong holds all which they tooke, some by force and some by submission. They take at seuerall times of theyr ping, barks, and carrels, aboue 100. laden with hoopes galley oares, pipe staues, timber, and other prouisions of the King of Spaines, for the furnishing of his forces intended against England, which they burned, and consumed all the other boates, and nets thereabouts, to their great hinderance. Thence they came before the hauen of Lithboine, anchoring neere unto Cape Tales, where the Marques of Saint Cruse was with his gallies, and seeing them chase his ships a shore, to take and carry away his barks, and carrels, was content to suffer them there quietly to carry, and likewise to depart, and neuer charged them with Cannon shot.

Earle of Leicester Lord Steward of houshold. Earle of Leicester went into the Low Countries.

The 18. of June, Robert Earle of Leicester, was made Lord Steward of houshold, and Robert Deuereux Earle of Essex, was made master of her Maiesties horse. The 25. of June, Robert Earle of Leicester tooke shipping at Margate in Kent, towardes the Low Countries, where he remained not long, but returned. This yeare was a late spring and a cold summer, so that at midsummer, season in the cods at London (where they be most forward) were sold for 8. pence the pecke, yet afterward great plenty, and sold for 8. pence the bushell, or better cheape, no cherries ripe, till S. James tide, or Lammas, and then such plenty, that they were sold for a penny the pound, and not aboue. The moneth of September, vehement cold, white frosts, windes, boysterous in the Moyth, sometime haile, snow, and sleete, and yet a reasonable good harueste for corne, praised be God.

Very cold spring, sommer, and harueste.

The peere of wonder.

Although this peece of peere 1587. were but as the vigil of the next ensuing yere 1588. concerning which yeere many ancient and strange prophesies, in diuers languages, and many excellent Astronomers, of sundry nations, had in very plaine termes foretold, that the yere 1588. should be most fatall, and ominous vnto all estates, concluding in these words or to the like effect, viz. And if in that yeare the world doe not perish and vtterly decay, yet Empires ouerall, and Kingdomes after shall, and man to ease himselfe shall know no way, and that for euer after it shall bee called the yeere of wonder, &c. yet for diuers yeares past, by reason of the afforesayd generall predictions, all Europe stood at gaze, vehemently expecting more strange and terrible alterations, both in Imperiall and Regall estates, than euer happened since the world began. Which fayre mistaken reckoning hath ben put out neare halfe a hundred yeares, and plainly discouered, that England was the onelie subiect of that times operation: for albeit the Spanish prouision for those yeares past were to be wondered great, for speciall seruice by Sea, and Land, yet was there all possible seruice, concerning their intent, vtterly vnprouided fully furnished.

The Queene of England hauing certaine intelligence of her aduersaries great strength by Sea in Spaine: (the resistible power, and ambition of the Duke of Parma in Flaunders: and the secret practise of the Duke of Guise in France, for leauying of soulders, &c. whose particular purpose and pretension, follow in their proper place) sent Sir Francis Drake to Sea this summer with a strong fleete, who burned, sunke, and tooke an innumerable saule of Spanish Shippes, hoping thereby to haue preuented the Kings determination, yet in his Iudgement, which was singular, assured the Queene, that the Spaniards would attempt nothing in the next yeare, the which the as little beleeued as feared.

The Queene of Englands preparation.

Yet notwithstanding the premonent regard of her owne, her people and countryes safety, seeing her subiects creadine forwardnesse in their owne defences, knowing by experience the Auncient and Reuengefull minds of the Spaniards, for iniuries and damages done by Hawkins, Chr. Carlil, Norris and Drake, against the Portugals, entertainment and in vnkindnesse to Antonio, Competitor to the Crowne of Portugall, hauing out lerum, Manie Crowned in Lisbone: but aboue all other his earnest desire to reduce England to the Romish Catholique Religion, or rather indeede to possesse himselfe of the Imperious seat and sweet soile of England, by meanes whereof, at one instant he might be reuenged of the Hollanders, and seemed of his Indies being perswaded he should be backed and seconded by the English Romane Catholiques and Male-contents, wherein hee was vtterly deceiued.

The Duke of Parma, preparation against England.

English Ministers.

The Queene and Councell, for two yeares space, caused the Ministers to manifest vnto their Congregations, the furious purpose of the Spanish King, Dukes of Parma, and Guyse, with the dangerous dissimulation of the French King, by whose paines, and industry, the whole Communalty became of one heart, and minde, and began to retaine a stronger opinion touching the Spaniards setled resolution for the inuasion of England, than either Queene or Councell. The English nation were so tombled in heart, that I dare conclude, I want Art likely to expresse the sympathy or heat between the subiects and the Souldiers.

Anno 1588.

Means made from Spaine, vnder colour of peace, but more forcibly tending to warre, of infinite desire to grapple with the enemie, after many meetings both of Spaine and Rome, and diuersity of Councells thereof ensuing, to wit, Nauigation, Expeditions, Commanders, Leaders, and all other circumstances vnto their seuerall charges, euer all which I omit for feare,

English preparations by Sea and Land for defence.

Robert

Robert Earle of Leicester, was Lord Generall, and Henry Lord Houmdon, was Generall for the Queenes person.

England is diuided into 4. seuerall Armies for the defence of the Realme, and seruice of their Prince, and Country.

Cities, Countries, Townes, and villages, the Cinque Ports, and all other hauens of England manifested as great forwardnesse in their seuerall loue and duty, as either subiects could performe, or a Prince expect: To single out the admirable deuterity, and boldnesse of any one particular place, or people, were a iust wrong to all, yet for a tast of them all, thus much may be said for London: After the Councell had demaunded what the Citty would doe with their Prince, and Country in vre. the Lord Maior, and Aldermen, humbly desyred their Honours, to let downe what their wisedomes held requisite in such a case: the Lords demaunded that two thousand men, and fifteene ships, the Citie craued 3. dayes respite for answere, which was graunted, and then entreated their Lordships, in signe of their perfect loue, and loyaltie to their Prince and Country, kindly to accept tenne thousand men, and thirtie shippes, amply furnished: And euen as London, London-like gaue president, the whole kingdome kept true rancke and campaige.

London.

Gentlemen of the Inner Temple.

The Nobility.

The whole Nobility most nobly like themselues, and like Members of the higher Orders, in hart and confirmation knit their hearts in one, whose vnanimitie, valour equalling their loue, allured euer Spirit to gaine of triumphant victory.

Gentlemen of the Inner Temple.

About three yeares before that which tyme the Citie of London was greatly troubled, and charged with continuall musters, and trayning of souldiers, certaine gallant, active, and forward Citizens, hauing had experience both abroad, and at home, voluntarily exercised themselues, and trained vp others, for the ready vse of war, so as within two yeeres, there was almost three hundreth Merchants, and others of like quality, very sufficient and skilfull to traine, and teach common souldiers, the managing of their peeces, pikes, and halbards, to march, counter-march, and ring, which sayd Merchants, for their owne perfection in military affaires, and discipline, met euery Tuesday in the yeare, practising all y'nall points of war, and euery man by turne bare orderly office, from the Coppozal, to the Captaine, some of them this yeere had charge of men, in the great Campe, and were generally called Captains of the Artillery garden, and these tooke president from the Merchants of Antwerpe.

Ingenious.

Aarg.3.

The English Nauies hasten to the Seas, each squadron hath his charge, and know their time and place, for Rendeuous, & to hold new Councels as occasion serues, & first the narrow seas were strongly guarded, by the Lord Henry Seymor, to interrupt recourse twixt Port, and Port, vpon the French and Flemish coasts, or 60 flying fregates, with newes from Dunkerke, into Spaine, or from Spaine vnto the Duke of Parma, backe againe.

Lord Seymor guards the narrow seas.

In the west countrey they held a councel whether it were better

The English flottes appointed for the west, kept due watch, and watch vpon the Ocean, clearing all hauens, creekes, and corners, from suspition, in as great state, and bragge to behold, as if in hearty kindnesse they had come, to haue celebrated Neptunes great Festiual. The chiefe Commander of all this mighty Armado, was the Lord Charles Howyard, Englands high Admirall, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Sheffield, with many other Lords, and full thirtie Gentlemen, both of name, and note, of whom ye 70 may read, besides that man of fame and fortune, Sir Francis Drake, vice-admiral: in this expedition, Hawkins, and Frobisher, had worthy place, sure I am his auntrust, and both of them, with the aforenamed Lords, and maister Roger Town-end, were shortly after knighted by the Lord Admirall, for seruice done vpon the enemy. Thus the Queene hauing sent competent Sentinels, and strength, to guard her confines, and secure her land, from sudden inuasion: the Councell vpon mature deliberation, gaue order for the executing and disposing of land seruice, and chiefely what strength, and in what place were best to plant an army of defence, and in the end it was concluded, the Rauenes should be at Tilbury. The ground hauing bene surueyed before, forthwith were Trenches cut: their next thwart neighbour Graueseend, was then likewise fortified, and Westerne Barges thither brought to make a Bridge, like to that of Antwerp, to stop the entrance of the daring foe, and giue free passage, both to horse and foot, betweene Kent and Essex, as occasion serued.

To charge and encounter the chiefe Commander of this mighty Armado, the Lord Charles Howyard, Admirall of the narrow seas, was appointed Generall of the Queenes forces by Sea, and Vice-admirall of the Fleet.

All the Shires and Cities of the land, hauing their trained souldiers aptly furnished with Captaines, officers and fit abilliments for war, attended the hourely pleasure of the Prince, prouided alwayes, and was euer meant that all Frontier ports, either to the sea, or other nation, should still retaine their proper strengths, and from the Inland only to select such men as were fittest for the generall campe.

It was a pleasant sight to behold the souldiers, as they marched towards Tilbury, their cheerefull countenances, courageous words, and gestures, dancing and leaping, whereso euer they came, and in the Campe their most felicity was hope of fight with the enemy, where oft times diuers rumors ran of their foes approch, and that present battell would bee giuen them, then were they as ioyfull at such newes, as if lusty Giants were to run a race: in this Camp were many old souldiers, and right braue Commanders, who although in their greatest force, did neuer exceede the number of three thousand horse, and fifteene thousand foote, yet there were ready in all places, many thousands more to backe and second them, and it was found good policy, not on the sudden to keepe too great an Army in one place.

Preparation to the Campe at Tilbury.

Thus England being in al points furnished, and in good readines for their owne defence, I will speake a word or two concerning the Hollanders, then leaue them a while and report of their aduersaries estate, and preparation.

The Hollanders came roundly in with three-score sayle, braue ships of warre fierce and full of spleene, not so much for Englands ayd, as in iust occasion of their owne defence, knowing the originall, & ground of this hostility to procede from themselues, with thirtie peres continued sharpe warre. These men fostering the greatnesse of the danger that might ensue, if the Spaniards should chance to winne the day, and get the mastery ouer them, in due regard whereof their manly courage was inflamed to none.

The Hollanders.

Preparation in Spaine to inuade England.

The King of Spaine vpon pretence, and reasons before alleaged, after three yeares deliberate aduice, was three yeeres preparing this two-fold army in Spaine, whereof hee made Alphonsus Perenius, Duke of Medina Sidonia, chiefe generall, and Don Martino Ricaldo, of Cantabria, vice-admirall: which army by the ayde of the Clergy, the Princes of Italy, as well friends, as feodaries, the seuen Kingdomes in Spaine, the entire state of Portugall, together with the helpe of Mariners, Pylots, Munition, Tackling, and victuall from the Northwell parts of Europe, was now fully furnished, and boast the middle of May, riding at Anchor, in the riuer Tagus, neere Lisbbone, consisting of one hundreth twenty eight bessels for warre, viz. Carricks, Galleons, Argoseys, and foure Galliasses, two thousand fiue hundreth fiftie fiue pieces of great ordinance, twelue thousand Mariners, and twenty thousand land souldiers, besides voluntaries, pitlers, hospitals, and shippes of Artificers to attend them. When the King beheld this mighty host, obseruing well their matchlesse strength, and plenteous prouision for sea and land, as well for others, as themselues, to wit, oyle, wine, rice, salt, biskut, horses, mules, carts, carriages, powder, shot, saddles, apparell, pick-axes, and shouels. Hee sayd, it might well be called the Inuincible army, it was euer meant this army should haue beene at the Groyne, before this time, to haue taken the full aduantage of the yeere, for so the Dukes of Guyse and Parma did expect, whose preparations in all points, were in a better readinesse, at the beginning of June, according to the Kings appointment, then they were afterward: for seeing the Summer halfe spent, they doubted whether the King would send his Army this yeere, or no, but the King could not helpe it, for that his ships were furnished in diuers ports, and through contrary winds could not be united, vntill this present, so as they were constrained to anchor at Lisbone, when they should haue hoysed sayle at the Groyne, to wit, about the beginning of June, the King would not permit any wiues, or common women to bee in these ships, whereupon diuers women, hired themselues a shippe, and went along with the fleete, who in the great danger made their escape, by beeing thrust in at Curis, as the nauy pulled from Lisbone to the Groyne they were soze shaken with tempests and lost foure of their great ships.

Concerning the particulars both in Spaine and Flanders. You may read Mr Hacklait in his booke of English voyages.

This proud nauy was generally called by the Spanish faction, the inuincible Armada.

The English secure and negligent.

June and July being almost spent, and no appearance of the enemie, the English thought the Spaniards would not come, some shippes being better victualled then the rest made out vnto the Irish coast, others tooke harbour in the West Countrey, their Captaines, Officers, and others kept reuels on the shoare, daunting, bowling, and making merry, euen at the instant of the foes approch, and in their view, contrained to toe their ships by maine strength out of the Hauen, in whole ecrule, thus much may bee sayd, vpon delay of the Spanish Nauy, and behoues the calling backe of foure of the Queenes great shippes from the Lord Admirall, to come to Chatham, it was generally vnderstood, that at the beginning of July, the Duke of Parma, has slacked his Martine promtion, and dayune most of his land forces towardes the Rheme, and that the Duke of Guyse, had cleane dissolued his Campe, whereupon, notwithstanding an especiall aduertisement from forreine parts, certifying the very day, the Spaniards hoysed sayle from the Groyne, to come for England: there were some of right honorable ranke, and of great iudgement, that sayd it was a French tale, and a Popish bragge and that the Spanish King and Councell were too wise, and too well aduised to send an army of such consequence vppon so dangerous a coast a. England, especially in so farre spent season of the yeere: these words flewe quickely into the eares of the multitude.

The Duke of Parma, euer since the Spanish councell had concluded for Englands inuasion, with all diligence and industry, prepares all manner of Mauall force which his postes would beare, and to such ships as hee had made within the land, hee cut new riuers to conuey them downe from Gaunt Iper and Esse. here, into his coast Townes, Graueling, Donkerk, and Newport: hee proclamied liberall pay vnto all sorts of Mariners, and by that meanes was furnished from Holland, Lubecke, Hambrough, and Dantzic, with store of saylers, and some shippes, hauing by this time vnder his owne command, to yee hundreth and sorty ships, small and great, flat bottomed, to land his men with speed in any open strand: which lay neere vnto London, of the Queenes Campe, hee had likewise thirty thousand gallant souldiers, fiue thousand lustie horse, and excellent expert Leaders in the field, and in Cities neere vnto the Sea: hee had also prepared nimble engins called Cats, vpon which hee meant in haste to mount his ordinance, to make fierce battery at his first assault, faces of emptie casks, and other things, to make Bridges ouer Hauens, and Riuers, with many other things of timber, barred about with yron, for sundry vses both by sea and land, to stop Hauens, and land passages, besides the infinite number of large faggots, and bagges of earth two foote long, and halfe a yard wide, being prouided onely for his first landing, when euery man should carry a faggot or a sacke of earth, to make present shelter for their first defence, vntill by other meanes they might entrench themselues, knowing the English to be apt, and resolute to forbid them landing, and preuent their vtmost fortifications.

The Fleming a common pyrate, chancing to be 2. dayes in company with the Armado, he very iubtilly went from them, & the 16. of June by he ascertained the Lord Admiral, of the Spaniards approch, or els the Spaniards might haue burne the English ships lying in Harbour.

For this seruice Fleming obtained his owne pardon, and a pension during his life.

Preparation made by the Duke of Parma in Flanders, for inuasion of England.

About 2. yeeres before, or lesse, when Spaine and he were farre waded in this present preparation, to the great admiration of all men, especially to the expert commanders of his gallant

The Duke of Parmaes oration vnto his Lords & chiefe officers

lant Army, vnto whom hee would say some-times, I know you wonder at this great, and strange preparation for sea and land, which you see in this Country, and the daily newes of the like in Spaine, but concerning the Kings pleasure for their imployment, I assure you I am altogether ignorant, onely this it pleased his Maiestie in generall tearmes, to acquaint mee thus farre, by his letters, that with all conueniency, he meant to inuade & repaire a raging aduersary, that daily annoyeth him, & all Christendome: whose vallailes hourely vaunt, to take his Highnesse prisoner in his chayre, and force him to sue for mercy at their Soueraignes feete: their land is pleasant, plenteously flowing with milke and hony: the people proud, and full of wealth, no quoyne amongst them, but pure gold, and siluer in the poore mans purse: their houses rich, and stored with plate, the women faire and delicate: such is the people, and the land, whereunto I must lead you, take courage therefore, and thinke not long to gayne possessions, built by others spoyle, for there is good hope of great aduancement. To the meanest man, in briefe, I pray you stand assured, the present action now in hand, is chiefly enterprised for your generall good, and when my Master shall make more knowne to mee, then shall you know your hearts desire, &c.

The Dukes secret purpose for himselfe.

The Duke herein had a secret meaning for himselfe, for presently vpon the complot of this expedition, a pedigree was very priuately drawn, to proue the Dukes title to the English Crown, by which meanes, with his high command in Campe, together with his greatnesse in popularitie, as well amongst his enemies, as his friends, being generally famous for a most noble, wise, valiant, & mercifull Prince, if he could once set footing in England, he meant to prouide for one, and to that effect Monsieur Guerdor Gouernor of Calis, would many times say, ye Englishmen take heede of Parma, lest you find him a Cat, for if he once catch hold on you, it will be hard to shake him off.

The Duke of Parma dissembleth deeply with the Queene of England.

Notwithstanding all the foresayd practise and preuention for present war, yet the Duke to his greatest disgrace continued still smooth semblance of desired peace with the Queen, & vnder that pretence entertained the English commissioners this yeare in Flaunders, vntill the approach of Spaynes Armado, which double dealing of the Duke much displeased the Queene, and changed her wonted honorable opinion of him, which not long before she published in a pamphlet made in her owne defence, wherein she cleared her selfe of his imputation, hauing diuers times accused her to practise his death, and iustified him to be the worthiest man that euer possessed that place, &c. but this cauelelle dissimulation of the Duke, preuayled so farre with her, as shee resolued not to credit any forreyne estate, but wholly to rely vpon her subiects loue, and loyalty.

The Duke of Parma for the more speedy attraction of the English Catholiques vnto the speciall liking, and consent of his Kingly hope, when he had brought England vnder Spaines subiection, procured Father Allen, the English Iesuit to be made Cardinall, by whose Synons craft, and Ciceronian eloquence, he presumed much aduantage, and assuring the Cardinall, that if by any meanes he could obtaine the Regall estate, then next vnto himselfe, he should be as fortunate: but the Cardinal surfeiting with ioy of his present dignity, and future hopes, forgetting himselfe and his best friends, vpon the sudden, and before his time published in English, the whole proceeding of Pius Quintus, and Gregory the thirteenth, against the Queene, and therewithall signified her Fathers great disturbance of all Christendome, her continuing the same to the vtter ruine of Europe, and the Christian faith, if speedy preuention were not had, all this he manifested at large, with whatsoeuer scandall else might serue his present turne, or future drift; but the ensuing ouerthrow of the Spanish fleete at Calis, brake both their hearts and hopes, for neither of them liued long after.

Father Allen the English Iesuit made Cardinall to preter the priuate purpose of the Duke of Parma.

Henry Duke of Guyse, desirous to reuenge of the Queen, and pleasure his especiall friend Philip the Catholique King; This spring vseth his best meanes to raise a power, to conioyne with the Spanish Nauie, when it should approach, and passe by Normandy to the Flemish coast: his force in France was scarce 12. thousand strong, although the common bruite thereof was twice so much; but whether through want of pay, or his Kings long Iealousie of his exceeding greatnesse, or his owne doubt that the Spanish Nauy would not come this yeere, by reason it stayed two moneths longer then either Parma, Guyse, or the English expected, I cannot directly say, but about the end of June the Duke dissolued his Campe.

The Duke of Guyse seuereth forces in France to coniome with the Spanyardes to inuade England.

The plot and purpose of the Spanish King, for imployment of all his prepared forces, was thus. The Duke of Medina with his two-fold Army, should first directly bend his course for Flaunders, and from Alexander Duke of Parma to receiue order, and direction for all matters vnto whom the King had giuen especiall power and authority in that behalfe: the Duke of Parma with his shippes and souldiers, vnder safe conduct of the great Armado, should land in Kent or Esser, as neere the Campe or London as hee could. I shou'd haue told you that the Guyses force in France should first haue landed in the West Country, by protection of the Spanish nauy as it past along, and by that meanes vpon the sudden, to haue drawne the most part of the English force into Hampshire, Deuonshire, & those parts, whilest Parma with his great host might make inuasion. There were twelue thousand in the Armado, appointed to land in Pozkelbire, or thereabouts, presently after the arriuall of the Duke of Parma. Thus hadde they determined in one weeke to inuade England in diuers places, besides their assured hope of Irelands reuolt.

The Spanish plot.

The Spanish nauie hauing refreshed themselues at Groyne, after twenty eight dayes rest, set forward for England about the 11. of July, in the greatest Pompe that euer eye beheld. matchlesse in state, commaunding their passage where soeuer they came, exceeding far the force of those two thousand warlike sayle of great Symeramis, or like the number at commaund of the Egyptian Cleopatra, or these 12. hundreth well prepared ships, tailed by Charles of Fraunce, with like full purpose of Inuasion, for reuenge vpon King Richard the second, for dammage done by his grand-sire Edward the 3. in his French Conquest: but this proud Nauy hath moze skilfull guides, and in the ouerlooking of her strength, sets forward boldly to performe their charge (though in stealing wise) as if necessitie hadde constrained them to take aduantage of home-bred Traytors, or ambitious Rebels, risen against their state, and not like soudiers sent in cause of iust hostilitie, to encounter with an honorable enemy, without one summons, or defiance vnto Armes, according to the law of nations.

The Armado set sayle at the Groyne.

Monsieur Froyzart.

Monarchy of the Earth. Queen of Egypt.

The Spanish Nauy discouered.

The 19. of July, the English Admirall vpon direct knowledge of the enemies approch, sends speedy summons vnto the all English fleet, who still retained their former courage. The Spaniards by this time were entred the mouth of the narrow seas, whose number, state, & strength being well obserued by the Lord Admirall, and rightly conidered, that it was now no time to dally, or flatter in so imminent dauger, in depth of humane iudgement, and discharge of duetie to his Prince, and Country, inkantinently dzessed his Letters by his brother in Law, sir Edward Hobby, vnto her Maiestie, signifying the great difference in power betweene the English, and the Spaniard, and therefore seeing the English Nauall forces far inferior to the Spanish Army, aduised the Queene to send more ayde to the Sea, and to make ready the cheefe strength of her Land forces: at which newes the Queene foorthwith commands more Ships to the Sea, whereupon, yet in voluntary manner, the Earles of Oxford, Northumberland, and Cumberland, sir Thomas Cecill, Sir Robert Cecill, Sir Walter Rawleigh, maister Thomas Gerrard, maister Arthur Gorge, Sir Thomas Vaughan, and many other honourable personages, were suddenly imbarked, committing themselues vnto the present chance of warre.

The Lord Admirall sendeth word to the Queene of the Spanyardes approach and strength.

Fresh supplies from England to the Sea.

Gentlemen and Yeomen of sundry shires, bordering on the Sea, knowing many of the English shippes to bee very weakely furnished with victuall and munition, out of their singular zeale, and loyalty: sent chearefully such prouisions, as either they could make or was prouided for their families, yea, such was the integrity of the English, as the Recusants offered their seruice, and were desirous to take their fortune with the common soudiers.

The integrity of the English.

The first fight of the English with the Spaniard.

The 21. of July, the Spaniards came as high as Plimmouth, where diuers English shippes lay fast in Harbar, the rest gaue charge vpon the enemie, the Armado then draines it selfe into the fashion of the cresent Moone, each side prepares themselues speedily to fight, with Braues and Brauadoes, their shrill sounding trumpets, and their rattling drums, lends mutuall courage vnto both Battailes, and lowd thundring Cannons, sends swift messengers of death: both Armies striue to get aduantage of the wind, but the English hauing much more quicke and yare, winne their desire, and Englandes Admirall in person came the onset, and for two houres space, maintained a valiant fight, vntill night drew on, and wanting store of the English fleete, which as yet could not by any meanes come into their ayde, they backt about.

The second fight, and after foure continuall fighting.

The next day the English nauy hauing well increased, gaue charge and chace vpon the enemie, Squadron after Squadron, seconding each other like swift bozsemen, that could nimbly come and goe, and fetch the wind for most aduantage. Now begins the furious fight on either part, and manly soudiers sirmely kept their stand vpon the Seruoord and Larboord side, and as occasion serues, some cry keepe a lake, others come hoe: if the seas waxe calme, it serues the English well to charge vpon the greatest Bulwarke of the Spanish fleete: and then their Gallialles, as Sergeants of the band would ofte fourth sometimes to succour their distressed friends, and other whiles with purpose to surpasse such English as they saw becalmed, whose vnmoueable oft the English with their brand fires would requite, sending their dole, vntill the Spaniardes blad ranne out at scupper hole, but if the winde grew bigge, and billowes playd aloft, then the Spaniardes with their lostie towers make full account to from the English comming in their way: sometimes the English in their eager fight fell foule vpon the daunger of their enemies, and so continued from the euening, vnto the breake of day: the Lord high Admirall himselfe was one whole night vnto the maine Battell of the Spanish Armie: both Nauies shewed great valour in their dayly fight, which commonly continued within the reach of Musket shot, and many times at pull of pike without intermission, saue onely when through want of winde, they were restrained: the English chiefe taines euer sought to single out the great Commanders of the Spanish hoste, whose lotte Castles beare great sroyne of their encounter: but whilst left both Armies were thus contioyned, Don Pedro de Vaides, a Chiefe Commander of the Army, fell foule vpon one of his fellowes and brake his foze-mast, who being maimed and left behind, lay like a little Elephant, in the open field beset with eager Hounds, who hearing commanded to yeelde, sayd he would yeelde to none, but to his equall, and asked in whose squadron hee was fallen, they answered into Drakes squadron, then he said fetch him for I will yeelde to none but to a Commander like my selfe, Drake being returned from chacing certaine Easterlings, Don Pedro began to articulate, but Drake peremptorily told him, it was now no time to stand vpon tearmes of Composition, whereupon hee yeelded, hauing caused all their Money, Plate, Iewels, Apparrell, with whatsoeuer else, their

Don Pedro taken.

Sir Francis Drake was appointed by the Lord Admirall to carry the light boat night, but he neglecting the L. Admirals commandement followed after certaine Dutch Hoies, which were not of the Spanish sorte, whereby the L. Admirall followed the Spanish Admirals light, & was like to haue beene cast away.

In the meaning fir Francis Drake came after the L. Admirall, and found the Rose, Barke a ship of Sir Walter Raleighs, aboard of Don Pedro de Valdes, to whom he sent word that Don Pedro from Captaine Iacob Whitlocke, who commanded in the Roe-Buck, and sent word also vnto Dartmouth with two Pinnesses, having taken the best prisoners & other money, and Iewels into his owne ship. The Spaniards cut the Anchor cables.

Great reioycing in England to behold the Armada.

present state could any way afford, to be layd open, to prevent the fury of the English when they came aboard.

After that another Galleon, by negligence was set on fire, and therewith consumed to the lower Decke, vnder which lay stoge of gunpowder, neuer touched: The Lord Thomas Howvard pitying their extreame misery, but not being able to lay aboord through extreamity of weather, saued the remainder of those scorched men to be sent ashore.

The Spanish Fleete for fiue dayes space hauing encamped many sharpe fights, and fierce assaults, roasting and diseasting from England to the coast of Flaunce, and from thence to England, and then to Flaunce againe, the fourth and twentieth of July, towards night, they cast Anchor neere to Calis Roade, the English likewise cast Anchor very neere vnto them.

Now rides the Armado at her wished port, 20 vnto whom the Duke of Parma sends present woord, that within three dayes, their forces should conioyne, and with first aduantage of Wind and Tyde, transport their Armes to the English coast, in meane space they would personally meete, and then determine betweene themselues, what was further to be done.

The Flemings, Wallons and the French, come thicke and three-fold to behold the sight, admiring the exceeding greatnesse of their shippes, and warlike order: the greatest hope 30 the outside neer the enemie, like strong Castles, fearing no assault, the lesser placed in the middle-ward: fresh victuals straight were brought aboord, Captaines and Gualters for their money, might haue what they would, who gaue the French so liberally, as within twelue houres, an egge was worth fiue pence, besides thankes.

Perfect notes.

Whilest this little Nauy like a Deuise Conquered, two thus at Anchor, the Spanish faction in sundry Nations had diuulged that England was subdued, the Queene taken and sent prisoner ouer the Alpes to Rome, where hauing vow, shee should make her humble reconciliation, &c.

In Paris, Don Bernardino de Mendoza, Ambassadour from Spaine, entred into an Ilady Church, aduancing his rapier in his right hand, and with a loud voyce cryed, Victorie, Victorie, and it was forthwith hunted, that England was vanquished.

But the next day, when truely was knowne, of the Armadoes ouerthrow, certaine Pages of aduerse faction vnto Spaine, in bitter scoffing manner, humbly prayed his Lordships Letters vnto the Duke of Parma, in fauour of their good fortune, to bestow vpon them some odde waste rak Mownes or Villages, as London, Canterbury, or Yorke, or so, whereat Mendoza hauing much disnayed, obscured himselfe, not daring to shew his face.

France, Italy, and Germany, were very doubtfull of the English state, and in those places, at this time, the English Merchants well perceiued their double eye, one while smyling on Spaines behalfe, and then vpon the English call a flearing looke.

The Queenes Nauy hauing well obserued the martiall order, and inuincible strength of the Spaniards, and that it was not possible to remoue them by force of fight, and therewith all considered the present purpose of the Duke of Parma, and their owne imminent danger, omitted no time, but according to the present necessity, the Generall with his Councell of warre, concluded to make their first stratagem by fire, and thereupon, the eight and twentieth of July, they emptied eight of their baselt Barkes, and put therein much combustible matter, which in the euening were subtilly set on fire, and with aduantage both of Wind and Tyde, guided within the reach of Canon shotte, before the Spaniardes could discerne the same, and then the same grewe fierce with sudden terrour to the enemy, who thought those floates to haue bene like the sundry workes of wilde-fire, lately made to breake the Bridge of Antwerpe, in which feare, they all amazed with shrikes and loud outcryes, to the great astonishment of the rare Inhabitantes, crying the fire of Antwerpe, the fire of Antwerpe, some cut Cables, others let the hawsers slippe, and happiest they could first be gone, though few could tell what course to take.

The Tirmade driuen from Calis.

The first whereof that ranne a ground, was a Gallialle, hard by Calis walles, where the English freely tooke the common spoyle, vntill they began to take the Dominance, and to fire the shippe, whereat the gouernour hauing sore displeased, knowing the royalty thereof to be appropriate to himselfe, discharged his Canons from the Citadell, and draue the English from their benefite.

Captaine Iermy a Tunes worth who best tooke aboue thirty banneres & streamers out of the Gallias.

The next was a Galleon, which ran a shoare in Flanders.

Diuers others fell into the hands of the Hollanders.

The rest endeauoured by all meanes possible to cast Anchour before Gaualyn or Donkerke, hoping still to haue supply from Parma.

But the English forces being now wholly united, preuented their enemies conioyning together, and followed their footsteps to the Vttermost, continuing foure dayes fight in more deadly manner then at any time before, and hauing incessant cause of fresh incouragement, chased the Spaniardes from place to place, vntill they hadde driuen them into a desperate estate, so as of necessitie, as well for that the Wind was Westerly, as that their enemies encreased, and their owne prouision of Sayles, Cables, and Anchors, greatly wasted, resolued to shape their course by the Orcades, and the Moyth of Ireland: In whole pursuit, if the English had beene but meanly furnished with Victuall, and munition, they would haue brought them all vnto their mercy, but when they saw them past the Orcades, and the Scottish Seas, they made retreate. And if the Spaniards had but two dayes longer continued fight,

The English forces being all united, beat the Spaniards from Donkerke.

The Spaniardes betake themselues to flight.

fight, the English must haue made a retreat for want of shot and powder, and left the Spaniards to their most aduantage.

The Duke of Medina arryued in Spaine

About the end of September, the Duke of Medina, arryued in Spaine, being as much discountenanced at Court, as discouraged in his Journey, and of all his Royall Nauy which hee carryed fourth, there returned only thirteene sayles, foure distressed, the rest whereof, some were taken and spoyled by the English in the narrow Seas, and some taken by the Hollanders, and some made a fayre escape by landing in Scotland but the most perished vpon the Irish coast and taine by Gallowglasses, whose generall losse was much lamented, though Spaine, for that euery noted family had lost a kinsman, or a neere Allie.

The Queene goeth in person to the Campe at Tilbury.

The Queene vpon certaine knowledge of the Spaniards comming, as aforesayd, forthwith setled all her land forces in warlike readinesse, but ordayned no more Campes then that at Tilbury, and when shee saw her enemies to consist onely of two parts, to one purpose, that is to say, the Dukes of Parma, and Medina, minding directly to conioyne, and that the Duke of Guyse was silent, so as the inuasion could but be in two places at most. Shee went in person to Tilbury, where her presence and Princely encouragement, Bellona-like, instilled a second spirit of loue, loyalty, and resolution into euery Souldier in her Army, who hauing at it were ramished with their Soueraignes sight, that as well Commanders, as common Souldiers quite forgate the fickleneese of fortune, and the chance of warre, and prayed heartily, the Spaniardes might land quickly, and when they knew they were fleated, began to lament. The Camp being disclosed, both Prince, and people prayed God for their deliuerance.

A Prophesie of this yeare 1588.

Post mille expletos à partu virginis annos;
Et post quingentos rursus ab orbe datos,
Octogesimus octauus mirabilis annus,
Ingruet, infecunis tristia fata ferat:
Si non hoc anno totus malus occidet orbis,
Si non in nihilum terra fretumque ruit:
Cuncta tamen mundi sursum ibunt atq; retrorsum,
Imperia, & luctus vndiq; grandis erit.

The same in English.

When after Christs birth there be expired,
Of hundreds, fiftene yeres, eighty and eight
Then comes the time of dangers to be feard,
And all mankind with dolors it shall fright:
For if the world in that yeere doe not fall,
In Sea and Land then perish no decay,
Yet Empires all, and kingdomes alter shall,
And man to eate himselfe shall haue no way.

Touching these Prophesies or predictions, I wholly referre you to the Reader, called the second comming of Christ, published in the yeere 1583. by Walter Thomas Rogers, Dedicated to Edmond Archbishoppe of Poyke, wherein you may find many things to this purpose: Reade aduisedly, and Iudge Christianly, &c.

Ships vnder the Command of the Lord high Admirall of England, this yeere, 1588.

Of shippes Royall.	17.
Attended by other warlike ships.	12.
And of lusty pinaces.	6.

From London.

There were sent of braue warlike ships.	16.
And of pinaces.	4.

From Bristow.

There were sent of seruiceable ships.	3.
And one pinace.	1.

From Barstable.

There were sent in this expedition of ships	3

From Excester.

There were sent of ships	2.
And one pinace.	1.

From Plimmouth.

There were sent of ships well appointed	7.
And one fyre Boat.	1.
There was sent a pinnace of the Lord Admirals.	
Also a pinace of the Lord Sheffields.	1.
And a pinace of Sir William Winters.	

The Merchant aduenturers of England.

They set fourth at their proper charges of lusty shippes.	10.

Ships vnder the Lord *Henry Seymor*, in the narrow Seas.

Of shippes Royall, accompanied with other very warlike shippes well appointed, being in number. 16.

Besides all these, there were many other barkes, shippes, and pinaces, sent out of the North partes, and West parts, as also particularly by diuers persons, as by the Lord Admirall, by diuers other Lords, Knights, and Gentlemen, and some others his followers, and by diuers other Noble, and vallerous Gentlemen, and gallant Marchants, whereof I could neuer attaine the certaine knowledge, though I gre thy sought it.

The Campe at Tilbury vnder the charge and gouernment of the Right Honorable the Earle of Leicester, of horsemen and of foote men which were raised out of all these Shires following.

The particulars of the Campe at Tilbury.

Horsemen. Lances.		Light horse		*Footmen.* Footmen.	
Bedfordshire.	179		40.	Bedford	500.
Buckingham	18.		83.	Buckingham	500.
Hartfordshire.	25.		60.	Hartford	1000.
Kent.	50.		100.	Surrey	1000.
Suffolke.	50.		200.	Barkeshire	1000.
Essex.	50.		100.	Oxford	1000.
Middlesex.	35.		38.	London	1000.
Surrey.	8.		39.	Suffolke	3000.
				Essex	5000.
Summe	253.		769.	Kent	5000.
				Norfolke	3000.
				Summe	22000.

This number of footmen was allotted for the Campe at Tilbury, but the number assembled, amounted onely to 16500.

The Army for the guard of her Maiesties person, vnder the charge of the Lord Chamberlaine, consisting both of horse and foote, leuyed out of these three following.

Horsemen Lances.		Light Horse.	*Footmen*	
Glocester	20.	100.	Glocester	2500.
Somerset	50.	100.	Somerset	4000.
Sussex	20.	100.	Sussex	2500.
Wilton	25.	100.	Wilton	2300.
Barkeshire	10.	100.	Cambridge	700.
Oxford	23.	85.	Northampton	600.
Cumbridge	13.	103.	Leicester	500.
Northampton	20.	40.	Warwicke	500.
Leicester	9.	80.	Huntington	400.
Warwicke	17.	70.	Dorset	1000.
Huntington	6.	76.	Suffolke	3000.
Dorset	10.	26.	Hartford	500.
Suffolke	70.	0.	Surry	500.
Norffolke	80.	230.	Barkshire	500.
		321.	Oxford	500.
			Worcester	400.
Summe	481.	1431.	Southampton	2000.
			Deuon	2000.
			London	9000.
			Middlesex	1000.
			Summe	24050.

A muster before the Queene.

The Lords and other of her Maiesties Counsell, and sundry others of the Nobility of the realm, being appointed to repaire to the Court, to attend vpon her Maiesties person, of their free & voluntary disposition, furnished arrayed, and put in very comely order their troups both of horsmen and footmen, and presented the same vnto her Grace, view at her manor of S. Iames.

Sermon of thankesgiuing at Pauls.

On the 20. of August, Ma. Nowell Deane of Paules, preached at Pauls Crosse, in presence of the Lord Maior, and Aldermen, and the companies in their best liueries, mouing them to giue laud and prayse vnto Almighty God, for the great victory by him giuen to our English nation, by the ouerthrow of the Spanish fleete.

Nine Seminaries and eight other executed.

The 26. of Aug. at the Sessions hall without Newgate of London, were condemned 6. persons, for being made Priests beyond the seas, & remaining in this realm contrary to the statute thereof made, 4. temporall men for being reconciled to the Romane Church: and 4 other for receiuing and abbetting the others. And on the 28. W. Deane, and H. Webley, were hanged at the Tiles end, W. Gunter, at the Theater, Ro. Moorton and Hugh Moor, at Lincolnes Inne fields, T. Acton at Clarkenwell, I. Felton, and James Carkson, betweene Bainard Castle and Pountlow. And on the 30. of August, R. Flower, Ed. Shelley, R. Leigh, R. Martin, Roch, and Margaret Ward, Gentlewoman (which Margaret had conueyed a rope to a Priest in Widewell, whereby hee let himselfe downe and escaped) were hanged at Tyborne.

Robert Earle of Leicester deceased.

The 4. of September, deceased Robert Dudley, Earle of Leicester, Lord Steward of her Maiesties houshold, Lieutenant general, and Marshall of all England, at Cornebury in Oxfordshire, from whence he was conueyed to his Castle of Kenelworth, and from thence to Warwicke, where he was honorably enterred. In which towne of Warwicke, he had in his life time, of an old guild (giuen him by the townes men for that purpose) founded an hospitall for 12. poore men, indowing the same with lands, to the yerely value of two hundred pound and better, and 52. load of wood ready cut and made out of Kenelworth wood, &c.

The eight of September, the Preacher at Pauls Crosse mooued the people to giue God thankes for the ouerthrow of our enemies the Spaniardes, and there were shewed eleuen Enignes, or Banners, taken in the Spanish shippes

Enignes taken from the Spaniards, and shewed at Pauls Crosse.

shippes by our men, these Enignes were set vpon the lower battlements of Paules Quyere before the preacher and the audience, (where was great) all sauing one streamer, wherein was an image of our Lady, with her Sonne in her armes, &c. and this was held in a mans hand ouer the pulpit.

And the same banners were on the next morrow hanged on London bridge towards Southwarke, where they was kept our Ladyes fayre, for all beholders to their great reioycing.

The 23. of September, a Seminarie Priest named Flower, was hanged, headed and quartered at Kingstone.

Seminary Priests executed.

The 5. of October, Iohn Weldon, and William Hardey, made Priests at Paris, and remaining here contrary to a statute, were hanged, the one at the Tiles end, the other at the Theatre, and Robert Sutton, for hauing concealed to the Sea of Rome, was hanged at Clarkenwell.

Sermons & thanksgiuing vnto God for vnsuccessfull the Spaniardes.

The 17. of Nouemb. being Sunday, Doctor Cooper Bishop of Winchester, preached at Paules Crosse, at the which sermon her Maiestie appointed to haue bene present, for whose receiuing great preparation was made, but her Highnes comming thither, was put off till the Sunday next following. The 19. of this moneth being Tuesday, was there kept generall throughout the Realme, with Sermons, singing of Psalmes, bone-fires, &c. for to render thankes giuing vnto God, for the ouerthrow of the Spaniardes our enemies on the Sea, and the Citizens of London assembled in their liueries, had that day a sermon at Paules Crosse, tending to that end.

her maiestie came to Pauls and there heard the sermon.

The foure and twentie of Nouember, being Sunday, her Maiestie hauing attendant vpon her the Privy Counsell, and Nobility, & other honorable persons aswell Spirituall as Temporall, in great number, the French Ambassador, the Iudges of the Realme, the Heralds, Aldermen peters, and all on horse backe, brought in a chariot-throne, made with foure pillars, belong to haue a Canopie, on the topper whereof, was made a Crowne Imperiall, and two lower pillars before, whereon stood a Lyon and a Dragon, supporters of the Armes of England, drawne by two white horses from Sommerset house, to the Cathedrall Church of S. Paul, her seruants and Pensioners about her: next after rode the Carle of Essex, Master of her Horse, leading her Maiesties horse of Estate, richly furnished: after them a great number of Ladies of honor, on each side of them the guard on foote, in their rich coates, and halberds in their hands. At what time before they came at the Temple bar, Edward Seimer Counsaile and officer of her Privy Chamber, gaue her Maiestie a Iewell, containing a Crapen, or Stone bone set in golde, which shee graciously accepting, sayd, it was the first gift she had receiued that day. The same day also her highnesse receiued a booke entituled, the Light of Britaine, by the gift of Henry Lee of Litchfeary gentleman, the author thereof. Ouer the gate of the Temple bar, were placed the warres of the Earle. And

Sites to her Maiestie.

at the same bar the Lord Mayor and his brethren the Aldermen in skarlet, receiued and welcommed her Maiestie to her Citie and Chamb r, deliuering to her hands a Scripsit, which after certaine speeches had, shee againe deliuered to the Mayor, and her Highnes taking his horse, bare the same before her. The companies of the Citie in their liueries, lined in foure rankes of number, coates and blew cloth, all of them saluting her Highnes, as shee proceeded along to Paules Church, where at the great West doore, his Remembraunce from her Chariot-throne, beeing the number of twelue and one, was receiued by the Bishop of London, the Deane of Paules and other of the Clergie, to the number of more than fiftie, all in rich coapes, where her Highnes on her knees made her hearty prayers vnto God: which prayers hauing finished, she was vnder a rich canopie brought through the long Quyere, to her Closet in the quyre, the clergie singing the Letany: which being ended, shee was brought to a closet, of purpose made out of the North wall of the Quyre Window: the pall, the Crosse, where in the Sermon was made by Dom. Piers, Doctor of Diuinity was then returned through the Church to the Bishops Palace, where she dined, and returned in like order as afore, but more great right of Lords to Somerset house.

Seminarie Priests in the moneth of December executed at Pauls Crosse, to wit, William Hamden, and Anthony Hall.

Seminary Priests executed. 1589.

The first of Ianuary at night, a great wind in the South-east, blew many houses, ouerthrew trees, and ouerwhelmed great barnes, both in Kent and Essex.

Tempestuous winds.

The 30. of Ianuary the Queenes Maiestie came from Richmond to Westminster, and was receiued by the Maior, Aldermen, and Commissioners of her City of London, in robes of Veluet, and chaines of gold, all on her charge, with the Captaines of the City, to the number of three hundred 5. and 20. of the cleerke by torchlight.

The tenth of Februarie began the Parliament at Westminster.

Parliament at Westmin.

In this moneth of February, diuers seuerall Letters for leuying foure Companies in the Low Countries and for raising foure moneths of two hundred Footmen, were presented at London, & elsewhere in other places, some were set on the pillorie with their eares nailed vnto, some their tongue pierced with an yron, and hanged on trees, &c. which the Queene sent to other.

Francis Kett burnt at Norwich.

About this time one Francis Kett, Master of Art of Cambridge, was conuented before Iohn Bishop of Norwich, for hee hauing diuers detestable opinions against Christ our Sauiour, and was burnt here in the City of Norwich.

The 29. of March by the Queene the Parliament brake vp: at the which Parliament was granted vnto her Maiestie 32. subsidies of 2. s. 8. pence the pound, and foure fifteenes, and a tenth.

Parliament dissolued.

The 14. of April, Charles Howard Earle of Nottingham

rundell was arraigned at Westminster of high Treason, and was found guiltie by his peeres, and had iudgement accordingly.

Portugall voyage, and cause thereof.

When the whole kingdom had giuen thanks vnto God as aforesayd, for their ease obtained victory, against the late glorious Spanish Armado: then the Queen & Councell vpon deliberate consultations, aswell concerning the prelention of a second inuasion by the Spaniards, whose fifty reuenfoegements, and generall preuision for the like purpose, was by good intelligence made known, as also to manifest vnto the whole world, the power, and valour of the English, to propagate their honor vpon the greatest Potentate of the vniuerse, being ascertained that the entire Nation retained still their late courage, and resolution. Thereupon concluded with the prime of the ensuing Spring, to furnish a lusty army to the sea, of meet skilfull saylers, valiant leaders, & expert commanders, and for the more prosperity, and abetting of this expedition, the Queene was pleased to accept into her protection, Don Antonio, late King of Portugal, hauing from time to time, vsed all possible inducements, to moue the Queene thereunto, assuring her, that in his cause of quarrell for the Crowne, there should be no hazard of battell, nor slaughter of her subiects, but only to land him in Portugall, and there leaue him to his fortune, where he allured himselfe, the Portugals would ioyfully receiue him, and conioyne other forces against the Spanish faction, but neither preued true, vpon consideration whereof, and the premisses, the Queene made Sir John Norris, a most valiant renowned man at armes, and of singular iudgement in martiall discipline, and Sir Francis Drake, a most excellent Nauigator, famous, and fortunate, Generalls ioyntly together.

Don Antonio deliuered the Queene to land him in Portugall.

Two Generalls in this voyage.

In this present enterprise, the Queen aduentured 6. ships, and about three score thousand pounds in money: the two generalls, and their particular friends aduentured fiftie thousand pounds, the rest of the charges concerning ships, seamen, victuall, munition, &c. was wholly supplyed by London, the Cinque ports, and Hauens in the West Country, Ipswich, Warwich, New-Castle, and other Port Townes Northwards, being in all, one hundreth sixtie and six sayle, small and great.

The Aduenturers.

The Generals by vertue of their Commissions pressed foure thousand men, which was more then needed by forty hundred, because the number of voluntaries did not onely exceede that rate, but were dayly sued vnto by many to accept their free service in this expedition, yet notwithstanding they exceeded their commission further, and pressed more, for which they both received a checke, by reason it was very apparant, the admirable forwardnesse of all men, who from the highest to the lowest, so much loued and honoured the Generalls, and affected the present enterprise, that if was superfluous to presse any, whose number so dayly encreased vpon them, as they refused many, yea at this time such was the frowardnesse not onely of Sayelers, and Souldiers, but also of Aduenturers in the voyage, that contrary to expectation, and wonted dexterity of other former voyages, they were fully furnished, and ready to sette forward, according to the first appointment, a matter seldome performed by the English, to the great aduantage of their enemies.

The people forward onelie.

The Earle of Essex, though much suspected, yet vnknowne to the Queene, by meanes of sir Roger Williams, made his secret position to make the Generals vpon the coast of Portugal, Colonell Williams having sent his Regiment with the Generalls, lingered vpon the coast, to receiue the Earle, and his company, and then set forward.

The Earle of Essex by knowne to the Queene goeth to Portugall.

The eighteenth of Aprill, the sayd Generalls with fourteene thousand haue land souldiers, and some thousand expert Saylers, with many Gallant Knights and Gentlemen, right valiant leaders, and meet skilfull Nauigators, set sayle at Plimmouth for this expedition, viz. first to goe to Saint Andreas, and all other Hauens, where knowledge should be giuen them of any remainder of the Kings shippes, in his last yeeres voyage, or any other assembly of ships, prouision, or munition, and doe to their best, to burne & destroy them, then to land Don Antonio safely in Portugal, and to surprize and spoyle the Ilands, and returne, but contrary to this direction and determination, whether through diuision of the Generals, or sinister instructions, sent them after their departure, or whether through improuisnesse of their fierie spirited souldiers, whose liues were loathsome to themselues, vntill they were in action. The simple truth could neuer be plainly vnderstood, though the pretext were, that they onely came why the English crost their best fortunes in Portugal and the Ilands, by attempting to win the Groyne, was, first to burne a Galleon, two hulkes, and certaine Gallies of the last yeares seruice, and then to winne the towne for a Rendeuous, if they should be driuen to retreat, &c. and thereupon after 6. dayes sayle, hauing contrary winds, they landed in a Bay, within two myles of the Groyne, and instantly besieged the base towne.

The whole number of souldiers and sayers.

The purpose of this voyage.

The next day early, Generall Norris surueyed the strength and situation of the towne and Hauen, and where it was aptest to be assaulted and vndermined, because it standeth vpon a Necke in an Iland: this Iland is as pleasant, and healthfull a place, as any is in Spayne, vnto which many repaire to recouer health. But if those Townes be once infected, they are longer in recouery of their wonted health, then other places of grosser aye: And at this time it was infected, by entertayning sicke persons, of the last yeres voyage for England, and when the Generall had obserued as aforesayd, the strength of the wall, and manner of the bay ditch, made a fierce tryall by Escalade, which in that space he might land his great Artillery, to preuent the former danger of the kings shippes, which liewisely annoyed him the day before, at which time Generall Drake with fiue hundred men, made the like attempt

The English arriue at the Groyne.

attempt by Sea at the wall of water, in which space, Collonell Bret, Collonell Vmpton, Captaine Winkefield, Captaine Hunter, and others with their regiments, made hot assault vpon the base Towne, in diuers places, whereat the Inhabitants all amazed flodde quickly for the most part into the high Towne, which could not be impeached by the assaylants, because they knew not their secret passages, and though the most part escaped, yet many were slaine at first entrance, and many which hid themselues in secret places, were dayly discouered and taken, amongst whom of note then taken in the base Towne, was Don Iohn de Severa, a Commissary of victuals, who informed the Generals of many matters, concerning the Kings purpose and prouision, &c. In the base Towne was great quantitie of victuals, and all manner of munition, which the Commissary sayd was for a new Armada, or store-house, for a second voyage into England, the common souldiers, finding store of wine in euery Celler, careleste of their proper healths, present danger, and imployment, or ought thereof vntill they were senseleste, and vnserniceable, which immoderate drinking bred the plague of pestilence extreamely. The Generalls for redresse thereof, caused the heads of all wine vessells to be stricken out, according to a former president, vpon the like occasion in the conquest of Saint Domingo, Lago, &c. lest the whole Army should haue perished by that disorder, they were faine also to sinke two ships which were infected, thinking thereby to haue cleared themselues of that contagion, but could not. The aforesayd Gallions and Hulkes, perceiuing the base towne to be taken, they ouercharged their Ordinance, fired their ships, and then.

A great disorder in drinking a mong the English.

The plague began a mongst the English.

The resolution of the Englih.

The Generalls perceiuing their souldiers to be very apt, and resolute to performe any exployts, omitting neither time or opportunity, presently attempted to winne the high Towne, in which attempt, they take a Cloyster adioyning to the Towne, for reseue whereof, and to releeue the Towne, there appeared two thousand Spanyardes marching towards them, in such violence, as though they would haue entred in despite of their enemies: but at first resistance, they turned their backes, and fled in as great disorder as they made approach, whose Celeritie in running, exceeded the English, who pursued them a large myle, and could not ouertake them.

The high towne besieged and assaulted.

The Spaniards made a bauado.

The Generals caused many executions to be made into the land, who continually brought in much Cattell, and other prouision.

The high towne besieged.

The Artillery being planted neere the wals of the high towne, attempt was made to take a great store-house of munition, adioyning to the wal, which the Spaniards preuented by setting it a fire. The greatest want the English had to maintaine this siege, was great Artillery, els doubtlesse the higher, with the lower, must haue known England for their gouernor, but hauing warily planted such as they had for their owne safety, and most preiudice of the enemy, hauing well prepared to make assaule, summoned the towne to a parley, whereat some in the towne shot at the drummer, and vnmercifully after that, there was one hanged ouer the wall, and a parley desired, wherein they signified that the parties executed, was he that shotte at the English drum, requiring safe warres with promise to performe the like.

The English vndermine vnminable, yet hee found one place hopefull; the high towne where his peoners in three dayes labour, being the seauenth day after the winning of the base Towne, bedded their powder, but not farre enough into the wall, by which time the great Artillery had made a breach in another part of the wall, hauing all men readie at an instant, some to enter the breach, others to make a fierce attempt vppon that place, which the powder should blow vp, &c. but contrary to expectation, the powder being fired, found a vent, and bake out backward, by meanes whereof, their present labours were all lost: the same night the miners beganne to worke againe, and within two dayes attayned the foundation, against which time, all things were in their former readinesse, then was fire giuen to the trayne, which blew vp halfe the Mower, vnder which the powder was planted: the resolute assaylants appointed for that place, with speede, and courage, gaue a fierce assault, and were entred the top of the new made breach, but on the sudden the other halfe of the Mower fell vpon them breaking their limbes, beating their weapons out of their hands, and ouerwhelmed many in the heap of stones, at which strange accident, the soulders all amazed, forsooke their leaders in their most distresse. Amongst others that perished in the ruines of the mine, was Captaine Sydenham; hauing some or fiue great stones lying on his lower parts, could neither stirre himselfe, nor bee relieued by any reasonable meanes, and beeing the next day slaine, there perished twelue persons attempting to releeue him.

Generall Norris vpon certaine intelligence that the Conde de Andrada, with 8. thousand men lay in Camp, within 6. miles, vnto whose aide, the Conde de Altemira, had leuied twelue thousand, meaning forthwith to conioyne their forces to reseue the Groyne, to besiege the English in the base Towne, to stop them from further inuasion, and to set vpon them when they should imbarke, &c.

The Spanish Army to reseue the Groyne.

For speedy preuention of their conioyning as otherwise, the next morning early, the Generall in person onely with nine regiments, went to visite them, viz. in the vaunt Guarde, the regiment of sir Roger Williams, sir Edw. Norris, and Collonell Sidney, in the Battell of the Generall, Collonell Lane, and Collonell Markeriye, and in the reareward, Sir Henry Norris, Collonell Huntley, and Collonell Brett, leauing the other fiue regiments with Generall Drake, to guard the Cloyster, and Artillery, Generall Norris, being as aforesayd, some by breake of day, marched towards the enemy, very faire and easily, hauing com-

manded his men, vpon paine of death, not to stirre, or bring any cause whatsoeuer, either to discharge or breake array without a signall giuen them, and being come to the top of the hill, they marched by three, and three, in a ranke, which made a great shew vpon the side of a mountaine, so as the Spaniards deemed their number to be far greater then they were.

Heere vnto the Spaniards Campe was a riuer, which had a foord, and a bridge, where they lay strongly fortified, the Generall still marched on, as if he meant resolutely to passe the foord whereupon the Spaniardes drew some of their forces from the bridge to the foord, from whence came many large volleyes of musket shot, as thicke as hayle, and lighted oft vpon the English Army, who obeying their Generals command stirred not, nor discharged one peece, the neerer the English approached the Foord, so much the more the Spaniards thundred out their shot, vnto euery which volly flying round about their eares, the General turning his face towardes the enemy, would bow his body, and vale his Bonnet, saying, I thanke you sir, to the great admiration of all his Campe, and of Generall Drake, who by this time was come to the hill top, to make supply and to behold the fortune, but vpon the sudden, the Generall bent his course towards the Bridge, and hauing giuen his Souldiers a signall vnto battell, made a fierce assault, being at first very sharply resisted, where sir Edward Norris, and others being at push of pike, and Pel-mell was striken downe, and very oūgerously wounded in the head, with an arming sword, and was instantly relieued by the Generall; the Spaniards perceiuing the resolution of the English, notwithstanding the competency of their owne number, and prouision as Baracadoes, and defences, against all assaults, betooke themselues to flight, after whom the Vauntgarde of the English, being in number some thousand, made pursuit foure miles, three seuerall waies, killing all they could ouertake, and in their returne they found many hid in vines, and hedges, which they slew also. After that Captaine Merkes went three miles farther, and surprised a Cloyster wherein he slew two hundreth persons, in the Spanish camp was store of victuals, Ammunition and good apparell.

Burning this seruice, the Saylers also went a shore, into an Iland next adioyning to their shippes, burning and spoyling whatsoeuer they found.

The Generalls hauing held diuers Counsels, and seeing the infection to increase exceedingly amongst their people, and wanting great Artillery, to performe any great Matterry, and hauing by the last conflict freed themselues from common daunger of their enemies, so as without hazard or interruption they might depart at pleasure. The eight of May, they imbarked themselues, after they had fired euery house in the base Towne, and whilest they were at Sea, being vnreached by contrary winds, the Generalls were diuided in opinions concerning the rest of their purpose, and imployment, but in the end, they agreed vpon these Articles following.

Articles set downe, and agreed vpon by sir John Norris, and sir Francis Drake, Generals of her maiesties forces written aboard her Maiesties good shippe, called the Reuenge, the fourteenth of May, Anno Dom. 1586.

First, our landing place, with Gods fauour, to be within the Burlings, twelue leagues on this side Lithoone, if winde and weather permit it.

2 That fiue Souldiers shall be left aboord, euery one of the smaller vessels, ten aboard of euery ship of the second sort, and fifteene aboord euery one of the best.

3 That no manner of spoyle bee made in Portugall, and that euery Captaine haue speciall charge giuen him to command his officers that no man in any wise be suffered to straggle from his Colours.

4 That no house be burned in Portugall, or any fire vsed, but such as must needes bee of necessitie, vpon paine of death.

5 That no man, woman or child in Portugal be hurt or spoyled, by any person whatsoeuer, vpon payne of death.

6 That no Church, Monastery, Image or Crosse, bee spoyled in Portugall vpon paine of Death.

7 That no souldier spend his powder, bullet, or match more then that as shall bee needfull, whereunto euery Captain shall specially charge his officers, to looke carefully to this and all other necessarie matters.

8 Finally it is agreed by the Generals, that no manner of Hospitality, whatsoeuer bee at any time vsed to any Portugall, vpon paine of death.

The winde beeing contrary, it was nine dayes before they could recouer the Burlings, where they met the Earle of Essex and his brother Walter Deuereux, Sir Roger Williams, Sir Phillip Butler, and Sir Edward Wingfield, after they had run, as farre as Cadize in Andaluzia, seeking the English Army, beeing for the most part ignozant of the Generalls secret determination, and of their being at Goyne.

The Earle of Essex meeteth the Generals.

The fifteenth of May, they landed within two miles of Peniche in Portugall, with great daunger of shot from the Castle, and of drowning the wind being bigge. The Conde de Fuentes issued forth of the Towne with fiue companies: the Earle of Essex with his company and leaders, seeing them approch, prepared to giue encounter, then the Conde changed his course, as if hee meant to charge vpon the Generall, who was marched vp to the Sand hills, But when hee beheld the English hold on their course, he retired into the land, and being pursued he made a stand, and stood a while at push of pike, then the Generall and the Earle of Essex with their Forces made Approach neere vnto the towne, which they found vnfortified and

Peniche taken by the English.

and the inhabitants fled: and hauing possessed themselues thereof, they summoned the Castle to a parly, and when the gouernor thereof vnderstood for certaine, that their late king Don Antonio, was there, he yeelded the Castle, with such munition as he had, promising the neighbor Country should come vnto their ayde, who when they came, were only a few religious persons, and other poore people.

So soone as the Generals had planted garrison in the Towne, and Castell, with prouision for cure of sicke, and wounded persons, then they absolutely concluded, that General Norris with his land forces, should presently march towards Lithbone, where Generall Drake, should meet him with his nauall forces, Artillery, and other furniture within so many dayes, and then conioyne their strength, to make a resolute assault by Sea, and Land, vpon which solemne Agreement, Generall Norris, with the Earle of Essex, and the rest appointed for Land seruice, continued their course toward Lithbone, in which iourney, the common people of the Country would shally cry, Viue el rey Don Antonio, which was the greatest ayd the English had of the Portugalls. The Campe being lodged within three miles of Lithbone, there died many English men, which some say, was by eating of hony, others say they were poysoned by drinking of standing water, the foure and twentieth of May, the Earle of Essex and sir Roger Williams, with a thousand men, went forth in the night, and lay in Ambush, neere vnto the City: and caused an Alarum to bee giuen, meaning to performe some speciall exployt, but notwithstanding, the loud Alarum, neither Citizens nor garison would issue forth, which the Earle perceiuing, hee departed by breake of day.

General Norris and the Earle march to Lithoone.

The 25 of May, in the euening, the Generall with his Campe came to the Suburbes of Lithbone, where Sir Roger Williams, and Captaine Anthony Winkefield, with fifty shot scoured all the streets vntill they came neere the high Towne, and met with none but old folkes and beggars, crying, viue el re Don Antonio, &c. The rest fled into the City, who though they fired many chiefe houses, yet they left much wealth behind them.

The Suburbes of Lithbone taken by the English.

The English after fiue dayes tedious march, were extreame weary, which the Spaniards plainely perceiuing, issued forth vpon them very lustily in three places, especially vpon Colonell Bretts quarter, who being at rest, with as much spade as might be, set his men in order, in which fight himselfe with Captaine Karsey, and Captaine Carre were slayne, the Earle of Esser strongly resisted, and chased them backe to the high Towne, Captain York encountred their horsemen, and forced them to fly into out houses which stood open, where they were found and slaine instantly, in this attempt the Spannish garrison of Lithbone, lost many of their Commaunders, and common souldiers.

The Spaniardes sally out of Lithbone.

And whereas Generall Drake, contrary to the expectation of Generall Norris, and the Earle, came not vnto their ayde according to his faithfull promise, but had altered that pernicious course and found an easier exployt, being now possest of Calacais without resistance, in whose Apology, for not performing what hee freely vndertooke, notwithstanding any former imputation touching his personall vallour thus much may be sayd.

Generall Drake breaketh his promise & commeth not to Lithbone.

1 First, hee was expressly commaunded by the Queene, not to endanger any of the Ships Royall,

2 Secondly, hee could not assay to passe the Riuer vp to Lithbone, without extreame hazard of Saint Iulians Castle.

3 If in the attempt, any of his vauntgard should by shot or any otherwise founder in the Riuer, then could not the rest follow.

4 If any of the vereward by any misfortune should perish in the Channell, or that the enemie of purpose after the nauy was past, should sinke some of their owne great vessels in the streame, then could hee not returne without great losse, and extreame danger.

Lastly, if none of these should happen as aforesayd, and that hee had gone in full strength vnto Lithbone, in which space the English land forces should be discomfited, and the winds holde contrary, then had he no meanes of relefe, but rest subiect to the spoyle, or mercy of the enemy, &c.

The English by this time had performed many valorous attempts, neere Lithbone, and other places, sufficient to manifest vnto the Portugalls, their faith, and forwardnesse to conioyne with them, for re-establing of their late King, but finding them rather careleste, then otherwise, and seeing very apparantly that all hopes, plots, and protestations, made by Don Antonio, to bee of none effect, or likelihood, and that their men by sickenesse decreased dayly, and the most part of their Artillery and field furniture was with general Drake, whom they knew to haue alienated his determination, as also vnderstanding that the King of Spaines power dayly increased, and would shortly take aduantage of their diuision, being vpon experience to well assured, that the Portugalls onely sought wealth, not warres, Generall Norris, in Marshall order, prepared to retire himselfe and all his Traine, towards Calcais, being the day in which generall Drake should haue come vp to Lithbone.

General Norris and the Earle return from Lithbone.

The Portugals faint hearted.

Within two dayes after they were come to Calcais, they had intelligence that the Spaniards in Lithbone had made head of purpose to bid them battell, whereat the English greatly reioyced, and marched foorthwith in very good order vnto the place where the Spaniards pretended to try their fortune in the open field, but the night before the comming of the English, the Spaniards had dislodged their Campe, then the Generall and the Earle caused a trumpet to follow them to Lithbone, with a particular Challenge from the Earle, that fifty they durst not abide the hazard of a set battell, yet if they would try the Iustice of their cause in single fight, or any fiue, eight, or ten, if they had any

The Spaniards would come to pitch a field.

any of like qualitie, but the messenger could get no answere, neither to that, nor to other former Letters written by the generall to the like effect, with reprehension of their scandalous and false reports, depraving the Generall and his Government, accusing the English to sly disorderly, from Lisbone, &c. Presently after that, the Generalls took the Castle of Calcais, which being in their possession, they imbarked at pleasure, and from the second of June, they employed their time in taking a fleete of Easterlings, many of them being laden with coyne, and munition. And whereas their chiefe determination, next unto the replanting of Don Antonio, was to surprise the Ilands, as well to possesse them as to take the spoyle, such was the extreamitie of pestilence at this time amongst their souldiers, who by that meanes were almost halfe wasted, so as in their best iudgement, they saw themselues altogether unable to performe any great matter, they bent their course for England.

Reasons why the English attempted not to winne the Ilands.

The Generals arrive in England.

Generall Drake arrived at Plimmouth, the one and twentieth of June, and Generall Norris arrived the third of July, with great indignation one against the other.

Certain rude Souldiers punished to burne Bartholomew faire.

Concerning their Saylers, and souldiers, some of them went into Barbary, some into France, others into Flanders, and the rest came to Plymmouth, where they had fine shillings in money, and their furniture allowed them.

Certaine of those furious vndaunted spirits, after they had performed many vnruly prankes, in diuers shires, began to plot how they might atchieue some speciall act, to relieue their present want; and in the end concluded to surprise Bartholomew faire, and to that purpose fine hundred of them were assembled about Westminster: the Lord Maior hauing knowledge thereof, vppon the sudden raised almost two thousand men very well appointed and about tenne a clocke at night, they marched as farre, as Temple barre, to repulse that Rout, and then the Lord Treasurer sent word by the Chamberlaine of London, that the rable was dispearst and gone, and then the Citizens returned.

London in Armes.

Don Antonio, returned into England with the Generals, and after that went into France, where he liued and died in very poore estate.

The Warlike fleet vnder these two Renowned Generalls, in this Portugall expedition, was diuided into fiue Squadrons.

The first Squadron, consisted of thirty shippes. 30.

The second Squadron, was of like number. 30.

The third Squadron, was Twenty and eight shippes. 28.

The fourth Squadron, was Twenty and nine ships. 29.

The Fift Squadron, was as many in number. 29.

Principall officers of this Navy.

The two Generalls, Sir Iohn Norris, Sir Francis Drake.

Vice-admirall, Captaine Thomas Fenner.

Collonels of the fiue Squadrons, Sir Francis Drake, Sir Iohn Norris, Captaine Tho. Fenner, Sir Roger Williams, Sir Edward Norris.

The Vice-Admirall, Captaine William Fenner.

The Lieutenants, Collonels, of the Squadrons, Captaine Thomas Drake, Captaine Sackfield, Captaine Garton, Captaine Gorin, Captaine Winter.

The Secretary of the Navy.

The Surueyor generall of the victuals, Marmaduke Dorrell.

The Vice-treasurer of the navy, Walter Sealenge, the Surueyor, Captaine Flick.

The Captaine Generall of the watch, Captaine Bowyer, Lieutenant of the Ordinance, Captaine Lancaster, the Prouost Marshall, Captaine Crispe, Gunnermaster, Captain Dehars, the master of the Discoueries, Captaine Foxcroft, Transporter, Captaine Mulgraue.

The Corporals of the Squadrons, Captaine Yoong of the Reuenge, Captaine Segar, of the Nonpareilla, Captaine Baker, of the Dreadenought, Captain Wilde, of the Swiftsure, Captaine Crisp of the fourth.

Captaine of the watch, Captain Wall of the Reuenge, Captaine Champnell, of the Nonpareilla, Captaine Gifford, of the Dreadnought, Captain Norwood, of the Swiftsure, Captain George Drake, of the fourth.

Clearke of the Scoze Master Iohn Aud.

Principall Masters, Thomas West, Robert Wignol, Iohn Bennet, Robert Hart, Roger Talent, Richard Burnell, Roger Morrice.

The 18. of April, sir Iohn Norris, and Sir Francis Drake Generals, with fiue of her Maiesties shippes, twenty shippes of warre, and a hundred and fourty, fit for burden, hauing in them a choise company of Knights, Captaines, Gentlemen, and souldiers, departed from Plimmouth, and on the 23. of the same moneth, arrived at the Groyne. The 26. they tooke the lower towne by assault, together with great store of Ordinance, Victuals, Cables, Ropes, and other furniture for shipping.

Voyage for Portugall.

About the first of May, they fought with the Spanyardes at Puente de Burgos Bridge, where the enemy feeble with losse of seuen hundred men.

The seuenth of May, the lower Towne of Groyne was burned, and on the ninth, our fleete set sayle, the thirteenth the Earle of Essex, with master Walter Denoreux his brother, sir Philip Butler, sir Roger Williams, and sir Edward Winkefield, met with our fleete. The fifteenth, the whole nauy arrived at Peniche in Portugal, where in despight of the enemies, our people were set aland, and the same day wanne both the Towne and Castle of Peniche. After this they diuided the Army, whereof part marched with sir Iohn Norris, by land to Lisbone, the rest with sir Francis Drake passed by Sea to Castcales. The 24. our men entred the suburbs of Lisbone, where they obtained rich spoyles

spoyles, and plenty of euery good thing. The twentie seuenth, the army being viewed, was found to be weake, and of sm all force to sustaine so great a siege as that was like to bee, besides the want of powder, and some other necessaries: for which causes, after Counsell taken, they left Lisbone, and came to Castcales, without any great fight or skirmish, where they tooke the Castle, & thence returned for England. There followed them nine Gallies, who fighting with two English Marchants ships, by comming of the Queenes shippes discharging but one piece at them they retired, and so our ships came safely to Vigo, where landing our men, the towne was taken, and the Country walked, &c. More at large this matter is published in print both in Latine and English.

The one and twentieth of June, sir Francis Drake arriued at Plimmouth, and on the third of July, Sir Iohn Norris, with the rest of the Fleete arryued there also.

Great lightning and thunder.

The 1. of August at night, was the greatest lightning and thunder, that had at any time bin seene or heard about London, in the memory of any man liuing, and yet thankes be giuen to God, little hurt heard of.

Sir Iohn Norris and Sir Francis Drake, being returned, as ye haue heard, many of their Saylers, and Souldiers, shortly after their landing, fell sicke, and dyed of a stanch bred amongst them on ship bord, other some of them so rudely behaued themselues about the Country, about the Court, & elsewhere, that many men mistiked of their doings, and diuers of them being appzehended, on the 27. of August, one was hanged on the end of a signe, at an Inne dooze in the Towne of Kingstone vpon Thames, for a tzaytoz to the reit. The 29. of August, two moze were hanged in Smithfield, two at the Mowerhill, two besides Westminster, and one at Dyborne.

Disordered Souldiers executed.

About the 21. of September, the Citizens of London furnished a thousand men to be sent ouer into France, to the ayding of Henry late King of Navarre, then challenging the Crowne of France as rightfull inheritor by lawfull succession. Also diuers shires in England sent into France to the same ayde, some shires a thousand, as Kent and other shires, and some shires lesse. All which companies were sent ouer into France, vnder the conduct of Peregrine Bart, Lord Willoweby, and Ereby.

Men furnished into France.

Lodowicke Grinell pressed to death.

The first of November, Lodowike Grinell, of Wilcote in the County of Warwick Esquire was brought from the Mower of London, to Westminster, and there at the Kings bench bar, being accellary to murder, wherewith he was charged, was arraigned, and found guilty: but standing mute, had iudgement to be pressed to death: and was accordingly executed in the goale of the Kings bench in Southwark on the fourteenth of November, on the which day for committing the murther, as principall, his man was hanged in the Palace Court at Westminster.

Citizens of London fined by Star. *An. Reg.* 32.

In this moneth of November, the Citizens of London were sundry times fright ed by casualtie of fire about new Fishstreete; that times in one weeke, the Citizens raised lights, hanged out at euery doore, and euery man laboured for his owne safety.

This present yeare 1589. had also a share of the last yeares planetary influence in France also, betweene the French King and the Duke of Guyle, the King vpon long conceiued iealousie of the Dukes estimation and greatnesse in generall reputation, as well with the Clergie, Peeres, and common people of France, as with the Emperour, Kings of Spaine, and Polland, as with the conclaue, all which greeble had ostentimes from his father, who winne Callis from the English, and after that obtained the rest by his owne valour, prowesse, and discreete carriage of himselfe in his sundry services for the King, against all forraine occasions, and domesticque insurrections, so as for diuers yeares past, and at this time the Dukes reputation, honor, and credite in Fraunce, was farre greater then the Kings. The Queene of England had often animated the King to suppresse the Guyse, and his faction: but doe what the King could, such was the generall loue of all men vnto the Duke, as all attempts were baine, vntill this time, and notwithstanding the kings secret practise to cut him off, yet the Duke had tane intelligence of the Kings intent, and that the next morning early, there would be a dangerous Councell held, for performance of some deadly purpose, concluded vpon last night, by the diuelish Councels against his person, and it was further told him, that his chiefe aduersaries onely for 2. dayes space, were bourely whispering in the Kings eare, had spectall offices given them, and with hurrying intercourse from place to place, deliuered them as if they were distract, and that his inward friends, were much discountenanced, and Duke Dispernon, the Kings great Fauourite, was made Commander of a new, and vnknowne guard, &c. vnto all which aduertisemences, the Guyse gaue no credite, saying, the King is as honorable, as mighty, and therefore will not murder me, he is wise, and considerate of my euer loyalty, and many wounds in my body, giuen by his enemies in his sull defence, &c. and therefore will not intend any hard measure against me: Thus the Duke flattering himselfe rested secure, and by any meanes would not vnite his friends for his owne defence, early in the morning it was told the Duke, that his Maiestie had sent for him to come to Counsel immediatly, and when the Duke came to the Court, he saw watches in corners, and the gates double guarded, and well armed, and at the great Chamber dooze stood his deadly enemies in armes, at sight whereof, proffering to draw his rapier, some ssued forth from behind the Arras and slue him, when the Dutchesse of Guyse vnderstood thereof, then went she and her husbands mother vnto the King, and begged the body of the Duke to bury it, but he roughly denyed their request, whereat the old Dutchesse was extreamely bered, and with a furious spirit rayled vpon him liberally, whereupon the King committed her

The Duke of Guyse, and the French King staine.

1588.

An. Reg. 32.

to

Cardinall Guyse slaine.

to prison: About that time when the Duke of Guyse was slaine, the King had sent diuers to the lodging of Cardinall Guyse, who strangled him with his Lyppet: The death of these two Noblemen being knowne vnto the people, they instantly like mad men, and swarmes of Bees, seeke out the Duke of Guyses Brothers and friendes, implozing vengeance on their King, amongst which, a Capuching Fryer, in his owne person, moze forward then the rest, tooke vpon him to auenge the death of the Duke and his brother, vpon the person of the King, and being asked if he durst loke an angry King in the face, hee answered, yes, yes, yes, and kill him to, and in this rage, makes haste vnto the King, vnto whom with his left hand offered a petition, and as the King stooped to take it, the Fryer with his right hand stabbed the King into the body, with an ouenomed knife, wherewith he died, and the Fryer stabbed to death, with the same knife, by such as were about the King. The King being dead, which was called by the name of Henry the third, of the ancient house of Valois, there remained none of that kamily. After him rightly succeeded Henry of Burbon King of Nauarre, amongst whom the Leagers very strongly and straungely for many yeares, made such resistance, as in the end, the King consented vnto most of their demaundes.

The French King slaine.

The French King to forced to flee to Diepe, he is encouraged onely by the English.

The Duke de Maine forceth the King to fly to Diepe.

The Queene of England reliueth the French King at an instant, & in his most neede.

The said Henry the fourth being altogether too weake to attaine the French Diadem, by reason the greatest part of Princes, Peeres, and common people of Fraunce, had long before combined themselues in league against him, and were sustayned by the Emperor, the King of Spaine, and the Dukes of Parma, and Sauoy, by meanes whereof, they forced their new King this present yeere in September to fly into Diepe for his last refuge, and shippes were come into the hauen, to haue transported him into England: But at this instant the Duke de Maine, had taken the full aduantage of his fortune, and resolutely continued his siege, the King must either haue yeelded or imbarked for England, the King thus distressed sent speedily post to the Queene of England: as to his best and sweet friend for ayde: who with all expedition leuied 6000. lustie soulders, well appointed vnder the commaund of that excellent braue soldier Sir Peregrine Bartt, Lord Willoughby, son to the late Dutches of Suffolke, the sudden repast of whose approach to Diepe, caused the Duke de Maine very hastily to raise his siege and goe into the field: the King was not a little animated and cheered at sight of the Lord Willoughby, with the Queenes kind letters, and the English forces. And from that time forward the leaguers fainted, and the King by degrees preuayled in France, hauing incessant successes of munition, victuall, men and money from England, besides the Queenes singular care, and great expence of men, money and shippes, for the extirpation of the selled Spaniardes in Britany, which was performed only by the valour and industry of the English, vnder Captain Iohn Norris and his brethren, with many other of like noble disposition.

Note.

And albeit, the Kings wars against the Leaguers, and their Alyes, continued very fierce for diuers yeares, and his greatest wants hourely supplyed from England, yet the King would neuer permit the English to possesse any particular City, Towne, or Castell, for their Rendeuous or safety, neither doth any French Chronicler truly expresse or acknowledge the Queen of Englands fauours, manifold great expences of money, & waste of her people, directly imployed in this needfull seruice, although the King with his owne mouth, hath diuers times acknowledged it.

The Duke de Mayne, as aforesayd, after hee had neglected his great aduantage vpon the King at Diepe, and for feare of the six thousand English which came with the Lord Willoughby by reason their number, and prouision, was famed among the French to be thrice as great, as indeed they were: The Duke vpon diuers pretences retyred with his Campe vp into the land, after whom the King with his forces marched, as well to giue Battell, as to besiedge Townes, and Cities, for at that time his most best friendes were present with him, because there were not ten Colonies of note throughout all France, that could enduce to heare him named: The chiefe Princes and Peeres with the Commons of the land, in their Aristocracy, like to the Netherlanders vpon semblable pretence, Confederated against his Legitimation and right of succession to the Crowne, hoping and presuming to bee backed, like vnto their next neighbours, but the King perfilled in his vndoubted right, being forced for the most part to beare his passage with the sword: the Duke with his friends and confederates, chiefe of the Leaguers, which name of holy League, and Leaguers, they imposed vpon themselues by way of Catholique combination, for conseruation of their established Religion, by reason the King was generally reputed amongst them as an heritique, and for nine yeares space they distinguished themselues, and their faction by that title from all others, the Queene of England dayly animated the King against them, who of himselfe, after he had regained possession of the field performed all kingly valour and resolution, and in a plaine set Battell, ouerthrew the Duke with all his strength, as well Spaniards and Wallones, as native French, and forced him to flie with small attendance vnto Paris, where fearely he was receiued, and his chiefe friend, Count Egmond, retyred as hastily into Flaunders, vnto the Duke of Parma, yet the Duke after sundry encouragements as well by his forraine, as domestique friends, reinforced himselfe, and very stoutly kept the field, encountring his enemies, & relieuing his friends: the King not beeing a little heartned with this great victory, forthwith prepares to besiedge the great City of Paris, and Saint Dennis, who hauing taken diuers Townes, and done his best to stop reliefe, by land and water, approached with his whole Campe, before Paris, the fifteenth of Aprill, omitting neither time nor opportunitie, yet neuertheless in all his actions,

The French King retyreth the field and ouerthroweth the Duke of Maine.

The cause of the League.

The Duke de Maine retyreth.

The Duke de Mayne recouereth strength.

The King besiegeth Paris.

The beginning of miseries in Paris.

actions, and attempts, not only there, but in all other places, hee shewed himselfe a true King and kind father, preserving lenity, and suppressing seuerity, the City of Paris hauing but bare fiftene dayes warning, to prouide themselues, and repaire their many ruines, being at this day the most populous City of Europe, and altogether vnprouided of competent munition, or ten dayes victuall for the multitude: notwithstanding there were many, that forsooke the City for feare of the Kings coming, with as much speede and diligence as was possible, increased their prouision, fortified their weake walles, beate downe such outhouses as might giue annoyance, and euery one according to their ability, gaue frankely towardes the common charge, the poorer sort that had no coyne, bestowed their labour as occasion serued. This headlesse people, and distracted multitude, vpon certaine knowledge of the Dukes late ouerthrow, with their dayly decrease of their other friends, were as loath to endure the apparant misery of warre, if they resisted, as to admit the Kings Gouernment if they yeelded, yet through perswasion of their Preachers, and encouragement of the Nobility, they became wonderous resolute to abide all extreamities, rather then to giue place to Heresie, executing imaginarie Iustice without the Authority of some of Law, vpon all such as either desired peace or impugned their setled determination, of which kind of offendors, to the number of twenty were throwne into the riuer.

And whereas the Parisians were neuer knowen to admit any garison but of themselues, yet at this time of their owne earnest desire, they entertained three thousand Lance Knights and made them Maisters of their Store-houses, munition, and chiefe passages, because neither the Citizens nor other inhabitants should presume of fauour, either through kindred or acquaintance, and after much adoe, they chose the Duke de Nemours for their Generall, in whose name all things were ordered. The King as fast as he could procured them of all manner of succour, both by land and water, and destroyed all their milles, neere vnto the City, his whole force at that time, was but twelue thousand foote, and three thousand horse, wherewith he besieged that mighty City with the suburbs of S. Dennis, which not long after for want of foode yeelded, as diuers other strong holdes had done before.

About the middle of May, the chiefe rulers of the City began exactly to survey their store and prouision, and to calculate their number of people, that could not make their owne prouision: and they found two hundred thousand of that sort remaining with them, and that there was a pound of bread a day for euery one if the siege should continue yet a moneth longer, within which space or within few dayes after they perswaded themselues, that the Duke de Maine, had practised with the King of Spain, that the Duke of Parma and his brauo leaders should conioyne with the Army of Leaguers to raise the siege and driue the King from all his hopes in France, but through delayes the King tooke heart of grace, and the Cities misery dayly encreased, in whom the olde Prouerbe was truely fulfilled, Viz. while the grasse growes the horse starues, for about the end of June, the former alowance of a pound of bread a day was come to sixe ounces, and within few dayes after, to foure ounces, and in the beginning of July, an Egg was well worth six pence, and within few dayes after, worth twelue pence, hauing by this time eaten vp almost all their horses, Mules, and Asses, so as dogges, cats, Pyes, and rats, either quicke or dead, were of the best sort holde for dainty meate, and solde for much money, and in August a pound of bread was worth sixe shillings, and a pound of butter fiueteene shillings, Rich Iewels, plate, braue apparell, and gallant coaches might haue beene bought for the wealth of their poore possessors wanted Almes basket, many poore people were seene to eate raw Dogs flesh in the streetes, the intrailes whereof they would hide in stinking places for another time, was secretly found by others and eaten lustily with the soueraigne sauce of all meate namely hunger, the Popes Legate and the Spanish Ambassadour, Don Bernardine de Mendosa, allowed forty pound of money euery day during this extreamity, to be bestowed in bread, and giuen to the poore, at this season it was hard to distinguish the poore from the rich, the seruant from the maister, and the Noble from the peasant, this intolerable penury pinched the Nobility, and great Ladies, as well as the Communalty, and albeit through hayly preachings, and other perswasions, the most part of the Multitude, still sore against their mindes, endured this vnspeakeable calamity, yet some murmured, and cryed outright for peace with the King, who were euer answered with the vsuall or common Answere of all Leaguer Women, when the King summoned them to yeeld: viz, that if the King would submit himselfe into the bosome of the Church, then they would prostrate their liues, and seruice at his feete, otherwise they would take warning by Germany, England and Flanders, &c. and rather endure the extremity of death and famine as they had begun, then admit his gouernment.

And as the Duke de Mayne practised abroad to increase his strength, hoping speedily to raise the siege: so the King for his owne behoofe, stirred vp a faction within the Towne vpon aduantage of their misery and diuision, which faction, preuailed so farre, shewing many reasons why they should yeelde, and affirming it was impossible, to hold out twenty dayes, though they should eate one another: so as the Gouernour with other Dukes, Earles, and Barrons, were faine to vse all policy, paynes and industry, to appease that daungerous vproare, with promise to yeelde within eight dayes, if in that space the Citie were not relieued, and the siege raised: & from that time vntill the comming of the Prince of Parma, which was not within 20. dayes after, they

holp the people in great obedience, but by that meanes the Kings purpose was preuented: who determined not to depart, vntill he had brought them to his proper obedience. And they as resolutely bent themselues in resistance, & in their dayly discourse, touching the Kings ayders, Ordinance, Hoyse, and Munition, they would say, be of good cheere, the King is only backed and furnished from England, but wee and our friends, are seconded from Italy, Spayne, Flaunders and Germany, besides the matchlesse strength of resolute Leaguers in this holy Vnion: but amongst other things of note, concerning their present hopes, and feares, and encrease of hearts griefe, to their emptie stomacks, it was now harueſt time, and the hungry Parisians, might be hold round about them, in their enemies possessions, but of their owne sowing great store of goodly ryge corne, and being rauished with the sight and desire thereof, many of them perished by their enemies, in issuing forth to gather some. The King and the City skirmished oft; and prisoners taken on either part, by whom their seuerall estates were made knowne, especially the misery of Paris, was now familiarly vnderstood of the King, and thereupon he made no doubt but to win it within few dayes: but vpon the suddayne, and contrary to his expectation, the Duke of Parma, with his well ordered Campe, and expert Commanders, entred Fraunce, coniopned with the Duke of Mayne, and marched towards Paris, vpon the certayne knowledge hereof, the thirtieth of August, the King withdrew all his forces from Paris, being in number fifteene Thousand Footemen, and almost fiue thousand Hoysemen, and in all haste prepares himselfe to encounter with the sayd Duke. The Parisians, seeing their enemies retired, and knowing their chiefe friends were come, and with them all hope of reliefe and liberty, issued forth and found all their Churches thereabouts vtterly defaced, whereat they were soze vexed, saying, this is the vsuall custome of Heretiques, to spoyle and ruinate Churches, then they returned into the City with all possible gladnes, and notwithstanding their present vncertayne estate, and long sillayned daunger and misery, became instantly secure and negligent, and the same quickely was made knowne vnto the King, who within few dayes sent certaine companies of his most resolute souldiers in a darke night, vnseene and vnsuspected they came into the suburbes, and hauing quietly rayled their ladders, vpon the wall, with great silence began to make assault, and would haue surprised that place, if it had not bene for two Iesuites being more Zelous then the rest of such attempts, who of their owne accord, watched that night, and perceiuing the first man that ascended the wall, one of them stroke him on the head with his Halbard, wherewith he fell from the ladder into the Ditch, and then the Iesuites made an Alarum, whereupon the assaylants leeude, and left all their Ladders behinde them.

The Duke of Parma with eleuen thousand foot & three thousand horse, marcheth through France to Paris.

The siege of Paris raised.

The King had like to haue surprised Paris on the sodaine.

And from this time during that vnnaturall bloody and intestine warres, the City was neuer in like danger, and had the King continued his siege but only 3. or 4. dayes longer, the City muſt haue bene glad to open their gates with prayers that it would please his Maiesty, to accept their humble submission, by reason they had long since, not only eaten by all their Oxen, sheep, Hozses, Mules, Dogs, Weares, Mice, and Rats, with all kind of carrion whatsoeuer, but also all vine leaues, and all manner of Beasts skinnes, and greasie Leather, and all kind of Rots, and Herbes, and for almost three weekes space there was no manner of bread to bee found in the Towne, Neither in Monasteries, nor Noblemens houses, there were many that did beate bones to powder, and boyle it in water, vntill it were thicke, and then eate it, by meanes whereof, for more then halfe the time of the siege there were found dead in the streetes that dyed of famine, at the least thirty thousand, and as Mounsieur Pier Cornex affirmeth in his Booke, the which Duke he Dedicated to the Dutchesse of Nemours, touching the whole siege; being then an eyewitnesse of the premisses, sayth, that of his proper knowledge, there were eaten in the Towne, two and twenty Children, the like was neuer knowne since the destruction of Samaria and Ierusalem, the most part of the people wanted shirts, hats, shoes, and all manner of apparell. And in all places in stead of pleasant Consorts, and melodious musicke, maine shricks and outcryes, of men, women and children, whose best medicine and meanes of reuenge was patience.

The great misery of Paris.

The fift of January, about fiue of the clocke in the euening, before the Twelfth day, began a great and terrible Tempest of Wind in the South west, which continued with great vehemency till about 11. of the clocke of the same night, this in the City of London blew the Tiles off mens houses, and ouerthrewe many chimnies, and caused many men feare the ouerthrow of their houses: one of the three West gates of Saint Paules Church, to wit, that next to the Bishoppes Palace was broken with the bolts, barres, and lockes of the same gate, so that it was blowne ouer. In the Country, houses and barnes were blowne ouer, and some of them blowne farre from the places wherein they stood, besides Trees in great numbers blowne vp by the rootes. Of the Seas, no man can tell what harmes were done, by ships and barkes cast away. About Southampton, the ships, and barkes riding at Anchor, were driuen a land and sunke, the like was neuer seene thereabouts.

Tempest of Wind great and violent.

South west gate of Paules blowne open.

In this moneth of January, Nicols one of her Maiesties purueiors was hanged, for that hee conuerted to his owne vse certaine prouision taken of her subiects for her Maiesties vse.

Purueior hanged.

The 21. of February, Ambrose Dudley, Earle of Warwicke, deceased at his house in Strand streete, neere with Bay Bridge towards Westminster, and was honorably buried at Warwicke.

Ambrose E. of Warwicke deceased.

Christo-

Bales and others executed.

Christopher Bales, made Priest beyond the Sea, was conuicted of Treason, for remaining in this Realme contrary to a Statute. Also Nicholas Horne, and Alexander Blage, conuicted of felony, for relieuing of Bales, contrary to the like Statute, these were all executed on the 4. of March, Bales was hanged, bowelled, and quartered in Fleetstreete at Fewterlane end, Horne hanged in Smithfield, and Blage hanged at Gaies Inne lane end.

The 5. of March, a Wench was burned in S. Georges fields, without Southwarke, for poysoning of her mistrisse and other.

1590. Sir Francis Walsingham deceased.

The 6. of April, about midnight, deceased sir Francis Walsingham Knight, principall secretary to her Maiesty, and Chancellor of the Dutchie of Lancaster, at his house in Seeding lane of London, and was about ten of the clocke in the next night following, buried in Paules Church without solemnity.

This yeere on the Wednesday in Easter weeke, by shooting off a gun in the Towne of Wolfrumhampton, in Staffordshire about the number of 80. houses were burnt.

An. Reg. 33. Imbassadour to the Princes of Germany.

The Account of Dureine, now Duke of Bulian, by the late marriage of his wife, was sent in Imbassage from Henry the 4. now King of France, vnto her Maiestie, to intreat her to interpole her credite with the Princes, Protestants of Germanie, for the raising and sending of an Army of Raitters, or horsemen vnto the ayde of the sayd French King his master, against those of his owne subiects, &c. that doe oppose themselues against him, vnder the name of the Holy League: whereupon her Maiesty addressed Sir Horatio Palauicino Knight, with Commission to ioyne with the sayd Princes, touching those preparations. In the performance of which Imbassage, was spent all the Winter season with such good successe, that thereupon this Army of the Almaine horsemen was leuyed and sent into Fraunce about the end of the summer following.

A Cow brought forth foure Calues.

This yeere 1590. neere Bologna, a Cow calued foure Calues in one day.

1591. Men sent into Britaine.

In the moneth of April, three thousand footmen were sent from hence into Britaine in France vnder the conduction of sir John Norris Knight, to ioyne with the Prince Dombes, son of the Duke Montpensier, and Generall of the French Kings forces in that Prouince: which companies haue sithence beene from time to time supplyed.

The 16. day of July in the morning, Edmond Coppinger, and Henry Arthington, Gentlemen, repaired to one Walkers house, neere vnto Broken-wharfe of London, where conferring with one of their sect, named William Hacker, of Dwndale, in the Countie of Northampton Yeoman, they offred to annoint him King, but Hacker taking Coppinger by the hand, sayd: you shall not neede to annoynt me, for I haue beene already annointed in heauen by the holy Ghost himselfe. Then Coppinger asked him what his pleasure was to bee done. Go your way both (quoth he) and tell them in the City, that Christ Iesus is come with his fan in his hand to Iudge the earth. And if any man aske you where he is, tell him he lyes at Walkers house by Broken-wharfe, and if they will not beleeue it, let them come and kill me if they can: for as truely as Christ Iesus is in heauen, so truly is he come to Iudge the world. Then Coppinger said, it should be done forthwith: and thereupon went forward, and Arthington followed, but ere he could get downe the staires, Coppinger had begunne below in the house, to proclaime newes from Heauen of exceeding great mercie: that Christ Iesus was come, &c. with whom Arthington also cryed the same wordes aloud, following him along the streets from thence by Watlingstreet, and Oldchange toward Cheape, they both adding beyond their Commission, these words: Repent England, repent. After they had both thus come (with a mighty concourse of the common multitude) with an vniforme cry into Cheape nere vnto the Crosse, & there finding the throng and preasse of the people to encrease about them in such sort as that they could not well passe further, nor bee conuenently heard of them all, as they desired: therefore they gotte them vp into an emptie Cart which stood there, where in they stood not onely vpon the words of their former cry, but they reading something out of a paper, went more particularly ouer the offices of Hacker, how he represented Christ by partaking a part of his glorified body by his principall spirit, and by the office of seuering the good from the bad, with his fan in his hand, and of establishing the Gospell in Europe, &c. telling also the people, where they saw him, where he lay & remained: that they were two Prophets, the one of mercy, the other of Iudgement, sent and extraordinarily called by God, to assist him in this great worke, and were witnesses of these things, &c. And thereupon the one of them pronounced Mercie, great comfort, and vnspeakeable ioyes, to all that should repent presently, bee obedient and embrace this acceptable message, and opportunity offered: And the other denounced terrible iudgement if they repented not, which should euen presently (also) fall vpon them, and especially vpon the City of London: affirming that all that beleeued them not, were condemned body and soule: with other matter against her Maiesty, and some of her Maiesties honorable Prime Councell, which I ouerpasse: And whereas they had purposed to haue gone with the like Cry, & Proclamation, through other the chiefe parts of the Citie, but the preasse was so great, as that they were forced to goe into a Tauerne in Cheape, at the signe of the Sperneyo, the rather because a Gentleman of his acquaintance plucked at Coppinger, whilest he was in the Carte, and blamed him for his demeanour and speeches.

Coppinger and Arthington preached on a cart in Cheap and vpon the sodaine so beladed the people, that they held them as Prophets from God.

From thence they went by backe lanes, crying as (before) Repent England, repent, &c. to Walkers house at Broken Wharfe. This strange accident being quickly blowne through the City, all was in a Buzze, and a kind of astonishment, what to thinke of the

matter, and being speedily brought to her Maiesties eares, two of her honourable Councell were presently dispatched vnto London, to take further notice of the whole matter: so that about one of the clock in the afternoone Coppinger was sent for, whilest Hacket and Arthington were brought, before those honorable Councellors and others at the Lord Mayors, to be examined: whose examinations I ouerpasse: but in the end it was thought good, that Hacket should come to tryall: so that on the twenty sixt of July, hee was brought from Bridewell to the Sessions house, neere to Newgate, before the Lord Mayor, and other Iustices, where being arraigned, hee was by two seuerall indictments found guilty: as to haue vttered and spoken diuers most false, and Traiterous words against her Maiestie, to haue rased and defaced her Maiesties armes: as also a certaine Picture of the Queenes Maiestie, and did maliciously, and traiterously thrust an yron instrument into that part of the said Picture, that did represent the brest and heart of the Queenes Maiesty, &c. He had Iudgement, and on the twenty eight of July, he was brought from Newgate, towards the place of execution, after tenne of the clocke in the morning, albeit by reason of the incredible multitude then in the streetes, but especially in Cheape.

Hacket agreat impostor.

He practised vpon the Picture how he might kill the Queene.

Hacket hanged in Cheap.

All the way that he was dragged vpon the Hurdle, he continued his counterfeit vaine, one while crying out, Iehouah, Messias, Iehouah, Messias: another while crying out, thus, Iohn, Iohn, Iohn, how the Heauens open wide, and the Son of God comneth downe to deliuer me: when he came vnder the gibbet (which was reared hard by the Crosse in Cheap) he was exhorted to aske God and the Queene forgiuenesse, and to fall to his prayers: but he, instead thereof, fell to railing and cursing of her Maiestie, most villanously, and then began a most blasphemous and execrable prayer, against the diuine Maiesty of God. They had much adoe to get him vp the ladder, where he was hanged, and after bowelled and quartered.

Coppinger died in Bridewell.

On the next day being the nine and twentieth day of July, Edmonde Coppinger, hauing wilfully abstained from meate (as was sayde) died in Bridewell. And Arthington long after in the Counter in Woodstreete, was referred in hope of perfect Repentance. Note of this you may reade in a Booke nowe extante, intituled, Conspiracie of pretended reformation, &c.

Earle of Essex sent into France.

In the moneth of July, Robert Earle of Essex, master of her Maiesties Horse, a yong Noble man of great Valour and expectation, was by her highnesse appointed to haue the charge and Conduction, as her Maiesties Lieutenant generall, of 4000. footemen, and some number of horsemen, and pioners sent into France, for the assistance of the French King, against the confederates of the League. In which expedition his Lordshippe was also honourably accompanied with sundry Gentlemen, and Souldiers, that voluntarily followed him in this seruice. During the time that the Earle intended these French wars, Walter Deuereux a yong Gentleman, and forward in Marshall actions, and brother to the Earle, was slaine with a small shot before Roane in Normandy.

Proclamation against the Iesuites and Seminaries.

In the moneth of October, a Proclamation was published, conteining a declaration of the manifest troubles pretended against the Crowne, and estate, by Seminaries and Iesuites, subborned by the Pope, and King of Spaine, to infect her Maiesties subiects, with the poyson of their seditious Religion, and vnder colour thereof, to trayne them vnto their pretended Treasons, for the betraying of this estate vnto the Spanish Tyranny and inuasion. For the better preuenting of which imminent dangers, a speciall charge was thereby giuen to all her Maiesties officers and ministers, vigilantly to looke vnto their seuerall charges, of the forces appointed to bee in a readinesse for the necessary defence of the Realme. And for the better expelling of the fraudulent attempts of those Iesuites, the very seducers of all treason, and rebellions, disguising themselues in their habite and apparell, sometimes like Gentlemen, and sometimes like Seruing-men, and so insinuating themselues into the Families, and seruices of Noblemen, Ladies, and Gentlemen, to couer themselues from suspition, and apprehension: It was by the sayd Proclamation prouided, that special Commissioners should be appointed in all Shires, Cities, and Port Townes of this Realme, to inquire out this pernicious brood, and such as may bee reconciled by their inchantments, thereby farther charging all manner of persons, of whatsoeuer degree or condition, to retaine none into their houses, without due examination of their conditions, manner of life and conformity in the religion, and to keepe thereof a Register, to bee theirein vnto the said Commissioners, if they shall demande the same, vpon suspicion of the disloyalty of any such persons.

Commissions for inquisitions.

Not long after the publishing of this Proclamation, her Maiesty addressed Commissions vnder the great Seale of England, generally into all partes and diuisions of the Realme, for the purpoles aforesayde: The faithfull execution whereof, according to the order prescribed, will in time discouer and vnmaske, these Iesuiticall hypocrites, and diminish the ouergreat swarmes of them, spreading the secrete poyson into the heart and bowels of this politicall body, indangering the sense, feeling, and life thereof.

Bren O Royrke of Ireland arraigned.

The twenty eight of October, Bren O Royrk, a great man of Ireland, was arraigned at Westminster, where he was found guilty of high Treason.

The articles contained in the indictment against Bren O Royrke, Lord of a great territory, and Country in Ireland, named Breny O Royrke, who accounted himselfe to haue descended of one of the Monarches that were in Ireland heretofore: at his arraignement at Westminster, on Saint Simon and Iudes day, master Iohn Ly of Kathbride, a Gentleman out of Ireland, being assigned by the Lords of the Coun-

Councell and Commissioners to interpret betwixt the Iudges, and the sayd O Royrke, who did expound and declare in Irish, the articles ensuing, and also all speeches vttered by the Iudges, and the sayd O Royrke.

That the sayd Bren O Royrke, sought the deposition of her Maiesty, from her Regall seate, the destruction of her person, and the ouerthrow of her realme of Ireland, at Dromaher, and other places in Ireland, the 2. of July, in the 28. yeare of her Maiesties raigne.

That the sayd O Royrke stirred vp and procured Alexander Mac Coonel, and Dwell Mac Coonell, being enemies to her Maiestie and her sayd Realme of Ireland: to raise forces against her maiestie in Ireland and after that, releeued and succoured them, the second of August, the 28. of her Maiesties Raigne.

That the sayd O Royrke at Dromaher aforesayd, caused the picture of a woman to bee made, setting to her Maiesties name, and caused it to bee tyed to an horse tayle, and to bee drawne through the mire in derision of her Maiesty. And after caused his Gallioglasses to hew the same in pieces with their axes, vttering diuers traiterous and rebellious words against her Maiestie.

That the sayd O Royrke, when Sixtus the fift of that name was Pope, and Philip the Spanish King, had bent their forces against England, and after dispersed by her Maiesties fleete, till they came about Scotland, and so to Ireland, and arriuing there, the sayd O Royrk, did entertaine, releeue, and succour, at Dromaher aforesayd, and other places, diuers of the sayd Spaniards, which were imployed to this intended inuasion. And after Proclamation, giuen by the Lord Deputy, vpon paine of death, that no man should keepe any of the Spaniards, but they to bee sent to his Lordship, by a day limited: yet the sayd O Royrke, kept the sayd Spaniards till the sayd L. Deputy went with her Maiesties forces to the South, at which time the said O Royrk, conueyed them thorow the North with a Spanish Fryer, and an Irish Fryer in their company, and so to Spaine, without making the sayd Lord Deputy acquainted therwith: and after receiued letters by the Fryer, from the said King of Spain, gratulatory for the entertainement he gaue to the sayd Spaniardes, Anno 30. of her Maiesties raigne.

That the sayd O Royrke, procured and caused one Thady O Harte, and his sect, with diuers other to enter into actuall rebellion against her Maiestie, so that the sayd Thady and others did burne Ballymote, and other places, and after that done, the sayd O Royrke did releeue and succour the sayd Traytors that were entred into the sayd rebellion.

That the sayd O Royrk, did enter and burne Ballingasse, with diuers other villages in the County of Roscomon, and murthered O Kane, at Cozlier, Christopher Caddell, and diuers others of her Maiesties Loyall Subiects, and spoyled and carryed away the prayes of the sayd Townes.

That the sayd O Royrke, did violently enter into the Towne of Knocke Mullen, and diuers other villages in her Maiesties Realme of Ireland, in the Barrony of Tyzerell, in the County of Sligo, and burned the sayd Towne, and murthered one Chenem-Wood, a Gentleman, with diuers other of her Maiesties loyall subiects within the sayd Barrony of Tyrill, and so continued his outrages, vntill hee was constrained by her Maiesties forces to fly into Scotland.

That the sayd O Royrke, being fledde into Scotland, did stirre vp certaine Scots there to insurrection, and to ioyne with himselfe their forces against her Maiesty in the Realme of Ireland. And also offered at Glasco, to the King of Scots, if hee would maintaine him, and suffer his subiects to goe, and ioyne with him, that hee would bring the Realme of Ireland to his subiection, contrary to his duty, and in contempt of her Maiesties Lawes, the ninth of March, Anno thirty three of her Maiesties Raigne.

Also it did appeare by the sayd Bren O Royrke, his speeches made in the Tower, where he sayd, that if the Spaniardes had first come in to Ireland, as they did into England, that Ireland had beene their owne, and that he would do them a piece of seruice.

To conclude, the sayd O Royrke, after many speeches by the Iudge and him vttered, beeing at the barre, sayd, that hee would not consent that any inquest, or Iury should passe vpon him, vnlesse hee might haue a weekes respite to bee giuen him, and all those witnings sent by William Fitz Williams, Rysten Bingham, and others in Ireland to bee deliuered him, and a good man of Law to bee assigned vnto him, and the same man of Law to bee sworne to deale as truely for him, as hee would doe for the Queenes heire apparant, if he were in his place. And besides this, that hee would haue the Queenes Maiestie to bee one of the Iury to passe vpon him. This his refusall to bee tryed, was entred at the request of her Maiesties Learned Councell. And after entry so made: the sayd Iohn Lye, beeing interpreter, was willed by the Lord chiefe Iustice, to tell him that the law was, if hee would refuse to bee tryed by twelue men, then Iudgement must bee giuen, according to the quality of those Articles of Treason, wherewith he was charged, and beeing obstinate therein, was guiltie of his owne death; yet that notwithstanding hee refused tryall. Then the sayd Iohn Lye, expounded vnto him his iudgement which was as ensueth.

That the sayd Bren O Royrke, should bee taken from thence to the place from whence hee came, there to be layd vpon an hurdle, so to bee drawn to the place of execution, there to be hanged vntill he were halfe dead, then to bee let downe, and his members and bowels to bee taken out, and burnt in the fire, his head to bee stricken off, and his body to be deuided at her Maiesties direction. This being expounded vnto

him by the sayd Lye, he answered nothing but sayd, if that were their will, let it be so.

Bren O Royrk executed at Tyborne.

Upon Wednesday being the thirde of Nouember, Bren O Royrke was drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, his members and bowels burned in the fire, his heart taken out and holden vp by the hangeman, naming it to be the Archetraytors heart, and then did he cast the same into the fire, then was his head stricken off, and his body quartered. But before this was done: the sayd O Royrke yet standing vpon the cart, Walter John Lyes as foresayd, willed him in Gods behalfe, to remember the filthy and odious treasons that he committed against her Maiestie, with many other good exhortations, to drawe him to repentance, and to aske her Maiesty and all the world forgiuenesse: and how to forgiue all the world: yet he obstinately answered, that hee would not, but sayd that if the Queene would haue granted him space, and all such writings as the officers in Ireland, viz. William Fitz Williams, and Dicke Bingham, sent against him, to be giuen him to make answere to them, and also to giue him his life, that then he would aske her forgiuenesse, and from henceforth serue her truely. And further sayd, that hee did little thinke that the King of Scots would haue sent him to the Queene, without safety and good assurance of his life, and remittall of his offences.

The said Iohn Ly, did further vrge and intreat the sayd O Royrke to repent, and to aske forgiuenesse (as aloze) and likewise to forgiue, and that, that was the onely way for him to come to the heauenly Kingdome: and also told him, that all the Flanders by, requested and prayed him to do so: he answered and willed them to make meanes for themselues to come to God, and that hee would make meanes for himselfe, but no moze could be had of him, but fell to his prayers. The said Ly told him againe that he could not lawfully pray, being so obstinate, hard hearted, and to die without repentance, but it would not bee, and so the Cart went from him. Also Mylerus the Lord Archbishoppe of Tashell in Irelande, being present, was willed by the Flanders by, to counsell the sayd O Royrke, and the sayd Archbishoppe requesting him to call to God, with other good exhortations. The sayd O Royrke, turned vpon him and sayd, he had moze need locke to himselfe, and that, hee was neither here nor there.

An. Reg. 34.

Christopher Hatton Lord Chancellor deceased.

The twentieth of Nouember, Sir Christopher Hatton Knight, Lord Chancellour of England, deceased at his house in Holborne, commonly called Elyhouse, because it belongeth to the Bishop of Elie. On the sixteenth of December, hee was honourably buried in Saint Paules Church at London, one hundred poore people hauing gownes and Cappes giuen them, going before him, of Gentlemen and Yeomen, in Gownes, Cloakes, and Coates, moze then three hundred, with Lords of the Counsell, and other, besides fourescore of the guarde that followed, a most sumptuous Monument is since for him raysed in Paules Church.

After whose death none hauing elected to succeede him in that office and dignity, her Maiesty committed the charge and authority of the enlealing of all Writings, with the great Seale of England, (wherevnto it shall bee requisite to haue the same annexed) vnto the Lord Burghley, Lord Treasurer of England, the Lord Hunsdon, Lord Chamberlaine of her Highnesse houshold, the Lord Cobham, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and the Lord Buckhurst, hauing all Lords of her Maiesties most honourable Priuy Councell. And for the Administration of Iustice, during the time of this vacancie, of the Office of the Lord Chauncellour, her Maiestie likewise authorized by speciall Commission, vnder the great Seale of England, Walter Cranche, and Sir Francis Gawsey, 2. of the Iustices of her bench, and Walter Windam, and Walter Pirram, two of the Iustices of the Court of the Common pleas, to sit as chiefe Iudges for the determining of causes in the Court of the Chancery, and to continue their turnes successiuely during the tearme time, according to the order prescribed in their Commission.

Order taken for the enclosing of writings in absence of a L. Chancellor.

The tenth of December, three Seminary Priestes for being in this Realme contrary to the statute, and 4. other, for relieuing them, were executed, two of them, to wit, a Seminary named Iremonger, and Swytchen Wels, Gentleman, in Gayes Inne field, Blaston and White, Seminaries, and three other their abbetters at Tyborne.

Seminaries and their abbetters executed.

The fourteenth of January, Captaine Arnold Cosby, an Irishman, did forcibly set vpon Iohn Lord Burke, (also an Irishman) neere to the towne of Wansworth in the County of Surrey, and there vpon a Duellish and malicious intent (for they had fallen out twelue moneths before, and sought at Greenwich, but were made friendes) did wilfully murther him there, giuing him one mortall wound with a Rapier, by meanes whereof, the sayd Lord Burke fell downe, and after that the sayd Arnold Cosby, with a Dagger gaue vnto the sayd Lord Burke, one and twenty or moze grieuous and seuerall wounds, of the which sayd great woundes, the foresayd Lord Burke died within two houres after, for the which fact, the sayd Cosby was hanged on a gibbet neere vnto Wansworth.

John L. Burke murthered.

Arnold Cosby hanged.

The eighteene of February, Tho. Pormorte was conuicted of two seuerall high treasons, the one for being a Seminary Priest, and remaining in this Realme, and the other, for reconciling Iohn Barwys, Haberdasher. The said Iohn Barwys was likewise conuicted of high Treason, for being so reconciled, and also of Felonie, for relieuing the sayd Priest, against the forme of the Statute.

Thomas Pormorte, was Executed in Paules Churchyarde, on the West end towards Ludgate, on the 20. of Febzuary, in the afternoone.

Thomas Pormort executed.

In the moneth of Febzuary, Sir Edmonde Yorke,

Yorke, Knight, conducted ouer into France two thousand footemen well appointed, sent from thence for seruice of the French King, which vpon their arriuall, remained vnder the charge of Sir Roger Williams, being then generall of the English companies there.

Soulders sent into France.

1592. The 30. of March, certaine Saylors, fire in number, were hanged on the Tower Wharie, for stealing of gun-powder, pertaining to her Maiesties seruice.

Hanged executed on the Tower Wharfe.

The 17. of Aprill, Sir Iohn Parrat Knight, was arraigned at Westminster, found guilty of Treason, and had Iudgement in the same place on the 16. of June, but was returned to the Tower, wherein he fell sicke and died.

The 4. of May, the Tilthoate of Gaueling hauing in the same boat, to the number of fozty persons, was ouerrun by an hoy, so that the greater part of the people were drowned ouer against Greenwich, the Court then being there, at sight whereof, the Queene was much affrighted.

Tilthoate drowned.

The 4. of June, Sir Iohn Puckering being made Lord keeper of the great Seale Rode to Westminster, and was there sworne.

Sir Iohn Puckering L. keeper.

The 21. of June, one Kerby a Gentleman in countenance, but a coyner in quality was set on the pillory without Alder gate, and lost one of his eares there, and on the 23. of June, he was on the pillory in Cheape.

A coyner on the pillory.

In this moneth of June, a young man was hanged in Smithfield, and a woman there burned, both, for poysoning of her husband, a Goldsmith.

A woman burnt in Smithfield for poysoning her husband.

The Marchant Taylors of London did this yeare found, and builded fayre almes houses of bricke, and timber couered with slate, vpon a plot of ground, neere vnto East Smithfield, by the Tower of London, which plot of ground was giuen to them by Richard Allen sometime maister of that company, as also one hundred loade of timber, by Anon Rotell, of that Societie, Alderman: In those Almeshouses fourteene charitable men, brethren of the sayd Marchant Taylors yet liuing, haue placed fourteene poore aged sole women: which receiue euery of them of their founder, fifteene pence or better weekely, besides eight pound sixteene shillings yearely payd out of the common treasury of the sayd company.

Almes houses founded by a Merchant Taylors.

A woman burnt in Smithfield.

The fourth of September, a woman was burnt in Smithfield, for poysoning of her husband.

River of Thames nigh hand of water.

Wednesday, the first of September, the wind West and by South, as it had beene for the space of two dayes before, very boysterous, the riuer of Thames was made so voyd of water, by forcing out the fresh and keeping backe the sault, that men in diuers places might goe 200. paces ouer, and then sling a stone to the land, a collier on a mare, rode from the North side to the South, and backe againe on either side of London bridge, but not without danger of drowning both wayes.

The Tearme kept at Hertford.

This yeare, Michaelmas tearme was kept at Hertford in Hertfordshire, 20. miles from London, and began on *Crastino animarum*.

The third of Nouember, at night deceased sir Iohn Parrat, prisoner in the Tower of London.

An. Reg. 35.

The 13. of December, a certaine Gentlewoman, by the Councells commandement, was whipped through the City of London, for affirming herselfe to be the daughter of Philip King of Spaine as she had beene perswaded, but became accompted of shippers, after many yeers, for they was knowne to be but Iewes daughter in Eastcheape.

A Butchers daughter whipped for affirming her selfe to be a Kings daughter.

The seauenteenth of Febzuary, a boy was hanged in Fanchurch-streete, for murthering of his master.

One hanged for murthering his master.

The 19. of Febzuary, the Parliament began at Westminster.

Parliament.

The 21. of March, Henry Barrowe Gentleman, Iohn Greenewood, clearke, Dauid Lewes, Gentleman, Sayer Billiot, Gentleman, Robert Bowley, Fishmonger, were indicted of Felony at the Sessions hall without Newgate before the Mayor, the two Lord chiefe Iustices of both benches, and sundry of the Iudges, and other Commissioners of Oyer, and determiner: the sayd Barrowe and Greenewood for writing sundry seditious Bookes, tending to the slaunder of the Queene and State: Study by Billiot, and Bowley, for publishing and setting forth the same Bookes, and on the 23. they were all arraigned at Newgate, found guilty, and had Iudgement. On the last of March, Henry Barrowe and Iohn Greenewood were brought to Tyborne in a carre, and there fastened to the Gallowes, but being staide and returned for the time, they were there hanged on the first of Aprill.

Barrowe and Greenewood arraigned.

1593.

The 10 of Aprill, the Parliament beake vp at Westminster, for the time, wherein was granted three subsidies of 2. s. 8. d. the pound goodes, and 4. s. lands, and 6. fifteenes.

Parliament, vpsake by.

My Lords, and you my commons of the lower house, were it not that I know no speeches preferred by any other, nor words deliuered by any substitute, can be so deeply imprinted into your minds, as spoken by her selfe, whose order and direction was but followed and deliuered by the Lord Keeper, I could bee content to spare speech, whom silence better pleaseth then to speake: And because much hath beene spoken much lesse shall I now need to speake of mine owne indisposition of nature, and small desire in priuate respect to be enriched by you present, which words shall not witnesse, but deedes by your former experience, hauing expended what I haue receiued, to the preseruation and defence of your selues. And thus much I dare assure you, that the care which you haue taken for my selfe, your selues, and the common weale, that you doe it for a Prince, that neither careth for any particular, no, nor for life, but so to liue, that you may flourish. For before God and in my conscience, I protest, wherevnto many that know me can witnesse, that the great expence of my time, the labour of my studies, and the trauell of my thoughts, cheefly tendeth to Gods seruice, and the gouernment of you to liue in a flourishing and happy estate, God for-

Oration of her Maiestie to the Parliament men.

bid you should know any change thereof. Many wiser Princes than my selfe you haue had, but one onely excepted (whom in the duties of a child I must regard, & to whom I must acknowledge my selfe far shallow) I may truely say, none whose loue and care can bee greater, or whose desire can be more to fathome deeper for prevention of danger to come, or resisting of dangers, if attempted towards you, shall euer be found to exceede my selfe: In loue I say towards you, and care ouer you. You haue heard in the beginning of this Parliament, some doubt of danger, more then I would haue you to feare: doubt onely should be, if not prevented; and feare, if not prouided for.

For mine owne part, I protest, I neuer feared: and what feare was, my heart neuer knew. For I knew that my cause was euer Iust, and it manifestly vpon a sure foundation that I should not faile, God assisting the quarrell of the righteous, and such as are but to defend. Glad might that King my greatest enemie be, to haue the like aduantage against me, if in trueth for his owne actions, he might truely so say. For in ambition of glory I haue neuer sought to enlarge the territories of my land nor thereby to aduance you. If I haue bled my subiects to keepe the enemy farre from you; I haue thereby thought your safety the greater, and your danger the lesse. If you suppose I haue done it in feare of the enemy, or in doubt of his reuenge, I know his power is not to preuaile, nor his force to feare mee, hauing so mighty a protector on my side. I would not haue you returning into the Country to strike a feare into the minds of any of my people, as some vpon the arriuall of the late Duke, dwelling in a Spaniard shyre, fled for feare farther into the middle of the land, but if I had bene by him, surely I would haue taught him to haue shewed so base and cowardly a courage, for euen our enemies hold our nature resolute and valiant, which though they will not outwardly shewe, they inwardly know. And whensoeuer the malice of our enemies shall cause them to make any attempt against vs, I doubt not but wee shall haue the greater glory, God fighting for those which truely serue him, with the iustnesse of their quarrell. Only let them know to be wary, and not to bee found sleeping, so shall they shew their owne valour, and frustrate the hopes of the enemies. And thus far let mee charge you that bee Lieutenants, and you that in shires haue the leading of the most choice and seruiceable men vnder your banners, that you see them sufficiently exercised and trained, so oft as need shall require, that the wants of any of them bee supplyed by others to bee placed in their roomes, and that all decayes of armour bee presently repaired and made sufficient. The enemy finding your care such, and so great to prouide for him, will with the lesse courage thinke of your disturbance. To conclude, that I may shew my thankefull minde, in my conscience neuer hauing beene willing to draw from you, but what you should contentedly giue, and that for your selues, and hauing my head by yeres and experience better stayed, whatsoeuer any shall suppose to the contrary, then that you may easily beleeue that I will enter into any idle expences. Now in all I giue you all as great thankes, as euer Prince gaue to louing subiects, assuring you that my care for you, hath, and shal exceede all my other cares of worldly causes, whatsoeuer.

About the same time Penry a Welchman, a principall penner and publisher of bookes, intituled Martin marre prelate, was apprehended at Stebenheth, by the Vicar there, and committed to prison. In the moneth of May, he was arraigned at the Kings bench at Westminster, condemned of felony, and afterward conuaied from the Gaile of the Kings bench to S. Thomas Waterings, and there hanged. Penry apprehended and hanged.

The 19. of July, the Court of assise for Surry was holden & kept in Saint Georges field, many prisoners were there arraigned, condemned, and had iudgement, nintene were burnt in the hand but none executed. This assise was ended the same day, which was thought would haue bene three dayes worke, for the Iustices (all duties being paid) made hast away, for feare of being infected with the pestilence. Court of Assise kept in S. George-field for feare of the plague.

This yeare also, no Bartholomew faire was kept at London, for the auoyding of concourse of people, whereby the infection of the plague might haue increased, which was then very hot in that City, so that on the three and twentieth of October, deceased Sir William Roe, then Lord Maior, the first of November, William Elken Alderman: The fift of December, Sir Rowland Hayward Alderman, and the ninth of January, Sir Wolstone Dixie, Alderman. The whole number deceasing this yeare in the City, and Suburbs adioyning, from the nine & twentieth of December, in the yeere 1592. vntill the 20. of December, 1593. was within the walles of all diseases 8598. whereof of the plague, was 5390. without the walles, and in the liberties, 9295. of the plague 5385. so that within the Citie, and liberties of all diseases died, 17893. whereof the plague was 10675. No Bartholomew faire at London.

Number of the plague dyed in London. *Ann. Reg. 36.*

The 18. of February, Harington a Seminary Priest, was drawne from Newgate to Tyborne, and there hanged, cut downe aliue, stroken with the hang-man, but was bowelled, and quartered. A Seminary executed.

The last of February, Rodericke Loppez, a Portingale (as it was said) professing Physicke, was arraigned in the Guildhall of London, found guilty, and had iudgement as of high Treason, for conspiring her Maiesties destruction by poyson. Rodericke Lopez arraigned.

The 19. of February, this yeare, 1593. at Edenborough in Scotland, was borne Prince Henry, the eldest sonne of Iames the first, King of Scottes. Prince Henry borne.

In this moneth of March, great stormes of wind ouerturned trees, steeples, barnes, houses, &c. namely, in Worcestershire, in Beaudley forrest many Oakes were ouerturned. In Horton wood more then 1500. Oakes were ouerthrowne in one day, namely on the thursday next Great winds ouerturned trees 1594.

next before Palme Sunday. In Staffordshire, the steeple in Stafford Towne, was rent in pieces along through the midst, and throwne vpon the Church, wherewith the sayd roofe was broken. Houses and barnes were ouerthrowne in most places of those shires. In Canke wood more then 3000. trees were ouerthrowne, many steeples, about 50. in Staffordshire were perished, or blowne downe.

Great raine. The eleuenth of Aprill, a raine continued very fore, more then twenty foure houres long, and withall, such a wind from the North, as pearced the walles of houses, were they neuer so strong.

The 14. of Aprill, a woman was burnt in Smithfield for murthering of her husband.

Ferdinando Earle of Darby deceased. The 16. of Aprill, Ferdinando Earle of Darby deceased at Latham, whose strange sicknesse and death, gathered by those who were present with him at the time thereof, was such as followeth: his diseases apparant, were vomiting of lower or rusty matter with blud, the yealowe iaundies: melting of his fat, swelling, and hardnesse of his splene, a vehement hickocke, and foure dayes before he died, stopping of his water. The manner of his death, was wondrous strange, whereof I haue bene often required to set it downe plainely, but I could neuer get the particulars Authentiquely.

The causes of all his diseases were thought by the Physitians, to be partly a surfeit, and partly a most violent distempering himselfe, with vehement exercise, taken foure dayes together in the Easter weeke.

The fift of Aprill, about five of the clocke at night, he fell sicke at Lucowby, where he vomited thrice.

The 6. he returned to Latham, and feeling healthy to sinke more and more, sent to Chester for a doctor of physicke.

The 7. before the comming of the doctor, he had cast seuen times, the colour of his vomits was like to soutie or rustie yron: the substance very grosse and fattie: the quantity aboue seuen pints, the smell not without offence, his waters were in colour, smell, and substance not vnlike his vomits. The same night he tooke a glister to draw the course of the humours downe-ward, which wrought fiue times and gaue some ease.

The 8. he tooke a gentle infusion of Rubarb and Manna, in a draught of chickin broth, which wrought very well nine times.

The 9. because of his continuall bleeding by mouth, with his vomits, hee was instantly intreated to bee let blood, to diuert and stay the course thereof, but by no meanes hee could be perswaded thereunto, wherefore that day onely fomentations, oyles, and plaisters were outwardly applyed, to stay and comfort his stomacke.

The 10. he tooke one other glister, which wrought well fiue times.

The eleuenth, hee tooke one other purge which wrought with great ease, nine times, vpon the humours. The same night hee tooke a little diascordium, with the syrope of limons, and scabious water, which somewhat stayed his stomacke, and gaue him some rest.

The twelfth, because his vomiting continued still, hee was moued to take a bomit, that thereby the bottome of his stomache might be cleared and cleansed from so vile and loathsome matter wherewith hee was troubled: but by no perswasion hee would yeeld thereunto, notwithstanding the same day hee tooke a medicine to procure sweat, but pacuayled not, the very same night his water stayed vpon a sodaine, to the astonishment of all.

The 13. all meanes were offered to prouoke water, as glisters, iniections, fomentations, oyles, pultises, plaisters, and stirrings, but nothing happily succeeded.

The 14. and 15, was vsed an instrument called a Catheter, which being conueyed into his bladder, was strongly sucked by the Chirurgion but no water followed.

The sixteenth day, about fiue of the clocke at night, hee most deuoutly yeelded his soule to God.

In all the time of his sicknesse, hee often tooke Bezars stone, and Vnicornes horne, his pulse was euer good, his strength indifferent, the number of his vomits were 52. and of his stooles 29. his Physitians were Doctor Canon, Doctor Iaymar, Doctor Bate, Doctor Case.

A true report of such reasons and coniectures, as caused many learned men to suppose him to be bewitched.

The first of Aprill, being the munday before his honour fell sicke, a woman offered vnto him a supplication, or petition, wherein her request was, that it would please him to giue, or assigne her a dwelling place neere vnto him selfe, that shee might from time to time reueale vnto him such things with speed, which God reuealed vnto her for his good. This petition was thought vaine and therefore refused.

On the fourth of Aprill he dreamed that his Lady was most dangerously sicke to death, and in his sleepe being sore troubled therewith, he wept, sodainly cryed out, started from his bed, called for helpe, sought about the chamber, but sleeping and waking, but being fully awaked was comforted, because he found her well: here we omit strange dreames, or diuinations of diuers graue men, which happened before or about the time of his sickues.

On the fift of Aprill, in his chamber at Bromley about fiue of the clocke at night, there appeared suddainly a tall man, with a gastly and threatning countenance, who twise or thrise seemed to crosse him, as hee was passing through the chamber, and when hee came vnto the same part of the chamber where this shaddow appeared, he presently fell sicke, and there vomited thrise. After, Goborne one of his Secretaries attending then vpon him saw nothing, which more amazed him. The same night he dreamed that he was in fighting, and twise or thrise stabbed to the heart, and also wou nded

wounded in many other places of his bodie.

The tenth of Aprill, about midnight, was found in his bed chamber, by one master Hallall, an Image of ware with haire, like vnto the haire of his honours head, twirled through the belly thereof, from the nauell to the secrets: this Image was spotted, as the same master Hallall reported vnto master Smith, one of his Secretaries, a day before any paine grew, and spots appeared vpon his sides and belly. This Image was hastily cast into the fire by master Hallall, before it was viewed, because hee thought by burning thereof, as hee sayd, hee should relieue his Lord from witchcraft, and burne the witch, who so much tormented his Lord, but it fell out contrary to his loue and affection, for after the melting thereof, he more and more declined.

The twelfth of Aprill, one Lane a witch demanded of maister Goodrie, whether his honor felt no paine in his lower partes, and whether he made water as yet or no: and what very time, notwithstanding all helpes, his Water vtterly stopped, and so remained till he died.

Sir Edward Filton, who with other Iustices examined certaine witches, reporteth, that one of them being bidden to say the Lords prayer, sayd it well, but being conjured, in the Name of Iesus, that if shee had bewitched his honour, shee should not be able to say the same, shee could neuer repeat that petition, Forgiue vs our trespasses, no not although it was repeated vnto her.

A homely Woman, about the age of fifty yeeres, was found mumbling in a corner of his honours Chamber, but what God knoweth. This wise woman (as they termed her) seemed often to ease his honor, both of his vomiting and hickocke, but so it fell out, which was strange, that when so long as he was eased, the woman her selfe was troubled most vehemently in the same manner, the matter which she vomited, being like also vnto that which passed from him. But at the last, when this woman was espied by one of the Doctors tempering and blessing (after hermanner) the iuyce of certaine herbes, her potte wherein to shee strained the iuyce, was tumbled downe by the sayd Doctor, and shee rated out of the Chamber, notwithstanding shee did still say that shee would not cease to ease him, although she could not perfectly helpe him, because he was so strongly bewitched. All physicke wrought very well; yet had he none or little ease thereby, his diseases were many and his vomits, with stopping his water grieuous, yet euer his pulse remained as good and perfect as euer it did in time of his best health, till one quarter of an houre before hee died. Hee himselfe in all the time of his sicknesse cryed out that the Doctors laboured in vaine, because hee was certainely bewitched. Hee fell twise into a trance, not able to moue hand, head, or foot, when he would haue taken Physicke to do him good. In the end he cryed out often against all witches and witchcraft repoling his only hope of saluation vpon the merits of Christ Iesus his Sauiour.

One excellent speech, cannot be omitted amongst many in the time of his sicknesse, especially the day before he departed, at which time he desired one of his Doctors, whom hee especially loued, to perswade him no longer to liue, because (sayth hee) although out of the loue, thou wouldst stir vp hope of life: and dost employ all thy wit, art, and trauaile to that end; yet knowing for a certaintie that I must now die, I pray thee cease, for I am resolued presently to dye, and to take away with mee only one part of my armes, I meane the Eagles wings, to will I fly swiftly into the bosome of Christ my only Sauiour, and with that he sent for his Lady, and gaue her his last Vale or farewell, desiring her to take away and loue his Doctor, & also to giue him some Iewell, with his armes and name, that he might be remembred: the which thing, immediatly after his death was most honorably performed. His spirituall physitians, were the Bishop of Chester, and maister Lee his Chaplaine.

In the moneth of May, namely on the 2. day came downe great water floods, by reason of so- Great water floods.
daine showres of haile & raine that had fallen, which bare downe houses, vpon milles, the provision of coales prepared for the sayd milles, it bare away cattell, &c. in Surrey and Surry: to the great losse of many.

The third of Iune, deceased Iohn Elmer, Bishop of London. Bishop of London at Fulham, and on the 26. of Iune, was solemnly entered in his Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul, before Saint Thomas Chappell.

The 7. of Iune, Roderick Loppez, with two other Portingales, were conueyed from the Tower of London by the Lieutenant, vnto the old Swan, and from thence by water to Westminster, where being brought before the Kings bench barre, the Lieutenant was called to bring in his prisoners, which he there deliuered, and was discharged of them. Then was it by the Court declared vnto them, how they had bene charged with high Treason against her Maiestie: had bene tryed, found guilty and had receiued iudgement; wherefore it was demanded of them, what they could say for themselues, and should not suffer death accordingly: whereunto one of the Portingales began in his language to tell a long tale, but was willed to be short, which he answered could not be done without circumstance, &c. whereupon he was willed to hold his peace. The second answered by writing in his language, which being read by an interpeter, the Queenes attourney bad stay; for it was not true. Roderick Loppez in English made his submission, and affirmed, hee neuer thought harme to her Maiestie, &c. Then was called the marshall of the Kings bench, and appearing, he was charged with the prisoners, to conney them to the prison of the Kings bench, and there to deliuer them to the Sheriffes of London, with a writ to see them executed: so were they conueyed by water from Westminster to the Bishoppe of Winchesters staires in Southwarke, from thence to the Kings bench, there layd on hurdles, and conueyed by the Sheriffes of London

Doctor Loppez and diuers Portingales executed.

vpon ouer the bridge, vp to Leaden hall, and so to Mybourn: and there hanged, cut downe aliue, holden downe by strength of men, dismembred bowelled, headed, and quartered, their quarters set on the gates of the Citie.

Ships sent to the seas by the Citizens of London.

The 15. of July, by a common Councell in the Guild hall was granted (according to precept from her maiesty) that fiue ships, and two pinaces should be set forth to the Seas at the charges of the Citizens, the same to be ready with men, munition, and victuals for three monethes, by the last of July. More on the seuenteenth of July, the same common Councell according to another precept, graunted 450. men on foote to bee likewise set out by the Citizens, towards the charges whereof, a fifteene was ceassed, and collected.

Souldiers set out by the Londoners.

Great raines

This yere in the moneth of May, fell many great showres of raine: but in the moneths of Iune and July, much more: for it commonly rained euery day or night, till Saint Iames day, and two dayes after together most extreamely: all which, notwithstanding in the moneth of August, there followed a faire haruest, but in the moneth of September fel great raynes, which raised high Waters, such as stayed the carriages, and bare downe Bridges at Cambridge, Ware, and elsewhere, in many places. Also the price of grayne grewe to be such as a strike or bushell of Rie was sold for fiue shillings, a bushell of Wheate for six, seauen, or eight shillings, &c. for still it rose in price, which dearth happened (after the common opinion) more by meanes of euermuch transporting, by our owne Merchants for their priuate gaine, than through the vnseasonablenes of the weather passed.

Bridges at Cambridge and at Ware borne downe.

Price of grain great when God sendes plenty.

Thames water conueyed into the Citie of London.

This yere Iewis Bulmar, a most ingenious Gentleman, set vp an engine at Broken wharfe, therby, from thence to conuey Thamis water vp into the City, sufficient to serue the whole west part thereof, being conueyed into mens houses by pipes of lead.

Siluer Mine found in England.

The same Gentleman on the 18. of October, gaue vnto sir Richard Martine then Lord Maior of the City of London, and to the City for euer, one vp of siluer with a siuer, waighing 137. ounces of fine, better then the sterling, the siluer of which cup, with other, was by his meanes digged out of the mine in England, in the moneth of August last before passed.

An. Reg. 37. A woman burnt.

The 30. of December, a woman was burnt in Smithfield for coyning of money.

Doctor Fletcher Bishop of London.

The same 30. day, doctor Fletcher Bishop of Worcester, in Pauls Church was elected Bishop of London.

Earl of Darby married.

The 26. of January, William Earle of Darby, married the Earle of Oxfords daughter at the Court, then at Greenewich, which marriage feast was there most royally kept.

Southwell executed.

The twentieth of Februarie, Robert Southwell, a Iesuite was arraigned at the King Benchbarre, and the next day executed at Tyborne.

1595. Dearth of corne and other victuall.

This yere by meanes of the late transporting of graine into forraine countries, the same was here growne to an excessiue price, as in some places from fourteene shillings to foure markes the quarter, and more, as the prize did fale, for all things else, whatsoeuer was sustenance for man, was likewise raised without all conscience and reason. For remedie whereof, our Merchants brought backe from Dantzike much Rie, and some whoate (not of the best) but pasling deare, yet serued the turne in such extremity: Some prentises and other young people about the City of London, being pinched of their victuals, more then they had beene accustomed, take from the market people in Southwarke, butter for their money, paying for the same but three pence the pound, whereas the owners would haue had 5. pence. For the which disorder, the said young men, on the twenty seauen of Iune were punished by whipping, setting on the pillory, and long imprisonment.

Disordered youths punished.

After the same time, certaine men for coyning were hanged: Also a scriuener in Holborne was hanged, bowelled, and quartered, for counterfeiting of a new Pattent, and setting to the seale of an old.

Coiners hanged.

The 29. of Iune, being Sunday in the afternoone, a number of vnruly youths on the Tower hill, being blamed by the warders of Tower straete ward, threw at them stones, and drawe them backe into Towerstraete, hasting hartened thereunto by sounding of a Trumpet, but the Trumpetter hauing bene a souldier, and many other of the company, were taken by the Sheriffes of London, and sent to prison. About seuen of the clocke the same night, sir Iohn Spencer Lord Mayor, rode to the Tower hill, attended by his officers and others, to see the hill cleared of all tumultuous persons, where, about the middle of the hill, some warders of Tower, and Lieutenants men being there, tolde the Mayor, that the sword ought not in that place to be borne vp, and therefore two or three of them catching hold of the sword, some bickering there was, and the sword-bearer with other hurt and wounded: but the Lord Mayor, by his wise & discreete pacification as also by Proclamation in her Maiesties name, in short time cleared the hill of all trouble, and rode back, the sword-bearer bearing vp the sword before him.

Vnruly youths on the Tower hill apprehended.

Proclamation for staying of vnlawfull assemblies.

The Queenes Maiestie being informed of these, and sundry other disorders committed in and about her Citie of London, by vnlawfull assemblies: And some attempting to rescue out of the hands of publike officers, such as had bin lawfully arrested, whereby the peace had bene violated and broken: Her Maiestie for reformation thereof, by Proclamation dated the 4. of July, straightly charged all her officers, both in the City, and places were adioyning to the Counties of Middlesex, Kent, Surrey, and Essex, that had authority to preserue the peace, and to punish offenders, more diligently to the best of their powers, for to the suppression of all offenders against the peace, vpon paine to be not only remoued from their offices, but to be also punished, as persons maintaining or comforting such offenders. And because the late vnlawfull assemblies and routs were compounded of sundry sorts of base people, some prentiseg,

ses, and some others wandring idle persons, of condition, Rogues and vagabonds, and some colouring their wandring by the name of souldiers, her Maiestie, for better direction to her Officers of Justice, and inquision to bee made, notified her pleasure to her Councell, to prescribe orders to be published, and straightly observed, and for that purpose a Provost Marshall with sufficient authority to apprehend all such as should not be readily reformed and corrected by the ordinary officers of Justice, and that without delay to execute upon the Gallowses by order of martiall law. The orders prescribed were the same day also by proclamation published. Sir Thomas Wilford Knight, was appointed Provost Marshall for the time, he rode about, and through the City of London dayly, with a number of men on horsebacke armed, with their case of pistols, &c. This Marshall apprehended many vagarant and idle people, brought them before the Justices, who committed them to diuers prisons. On the 22. of July, were arraigned in the Guild hall of London, fiue of those brutish youths that were apprehended on the Tower hill, they were condemned of high treason, had iudgement to bee drawne hanged and quartered, and on the twenty foure of the same moneth, they were drawne from Newgate to the Tower hill, and there executed accordingly.

Sir Thomas Wilford prouost marshall for London and demeaned himselfe very discreetly.

Tumultuous youths executed on the Tower hill.

In this time of dearth and scarcity of victualls at London, an hens egge was sold for a peny, or three egges for two pence at the most, a pound of sweet butter for 7. pence, and so the like of fish or flesh, exceeding measure in price, such was our sins deserving it.

Dearth of victuals.

An. reg. 38. The seuentaenth of November, a day of great triumph, for the long and prosperous raigne of her Maiestie at London, the pulpit Crosse in Paules Church-yard new repayred, painted, and partly inclosed with a wal of bricke: Doctor Fletcher Bishop of London preached there in prayse of the Queene, and prayer for her Maiestie, before the Lord Mayor, Aldermen, and Citizens in their best liueries. Which Sermon being ended, vpon the Church leades the Trumpets sounded, the Cornets winded, and the Quirristers sang an Anthemne. On the steeple many lights were burned: the Tower shot off her Ordinance, the Bels were rung, bonefiers made, &c.

Two Marshals at London.

The fift of February, two Marshals were chosen and appointed in the City of London, for the apprehending of vagrant and other disordered persons.

A ship built in Leaden hall.

This yeere maister Stickles the excellent Architect of our time, did onely to try conclusion, build a pinnace in Leaden hall, being of burden about fiue or fiue tun, which at pleasure might be taken a sunder, and ioyned together; it was drawne vpon a sled with wheeles to the Tower docke, where it was launched, but there came no good of it.

1596. Souldiers pressed and discharged.

The 9. of Aprill being good Friday, in the afternoone, the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London, being in Paules Church-yard, hearing the Sermon at Paules Crosse, were sodainly called from thence, and forthwith by a precept from her Maiesty and Councell, pressed 1000. men, which was done by eight of the clocke the same night, and before the next morning they were furnished of all manner of furniture for the warres, ready to haue gone towards Doner, and so to the ayde of the French in Calois against the Spaniarders, but in the afternoone of the same Saturday they were all discharged; notwithstanding on the 11. of Aprill being Easter day, about ten of the clocke before noone, came a new charge, so that all men being in their parish Churches ready to haue receiued the Communion, the Aldermen, their Deputies, Constables, and other Officers, were faine to close vp the Church doores, till they had pressed so many men to bee souldiers, that by 12. of the clocke, they had in the whole City one thousand men, and those, forthwith furnished of armour, weapons, and all things necessary, were for the most part that night, and the rest on the next morning sent away towards Douer as the like out of other parts of the Realme: but about a weeke after they returned backe againe, for the French had lost Calois. The Earle of Essex had the command of these men.

Souldiers pressed on Easter day.

Souldiers sent to Doner to haue bin transported ouer to Calis. Calis woone by the Spaniardes. *An. Reg.* 39.

In this moneth of Aprill 1596. whilest the French King busily besieged Laferre, Albertus the Cardinall, with a little Campe, pretending at first as if hee would raise the King from his siege, suddainly turnes his course and seates himselfe round about Calis, and in few dayes, though his valour and industry, gained both Ryse bancke, and part of the Towne wall: the Gouernour of Calis with his chiefe strength was forced to retire to the Citadell, the Queene of England vpon the first newes thereof, sent word to the French King, that if he doubted his owne ability, to send competent succours from his Campe to Calis, that then shee would instantly according to the present necessitie, supplie the City against the Spaniards, to his best behoofe: And to that purpose the States sent foure hundred resolute olde souldiers, who in despite of all the Cardinals forces, attained the Walles, and parlyed with the French, to giue them entertainement, comming only for their ayde, which sayd souldiers, not being receiued nor able to make long resistance without the Walles, were all slaine by the Spaniardes: for the French were al of one mind, being willinger the Spaniardes should possesse it, then to permit either the English, or other their friends to relieue it, saying, if the Spaniards win it, yet there is good hope by mediation of the Church to regaine it, but if the English repossesse it, they will neuer restore it.

The French refuse all English ayde, and wish the Spaniards should possesse Calis rather then the English should relieue it to the French K. saying we are neuer old enemies.

The Cardinall within twelue dayes won it, and in many places made it farre stronger then before, all which charges was repayed him according to the agreement made by Clement the seuenth and 8. betweene the Kings of France, and Spaine, by a day prefixed at the surrendering of Calis againe vnto the French.

About this time was publiched a booke intituled, A declaration of the causes mouing the Queenes Maiestie of England, to prepare and send

send a Nauy to the Seas, for the defence of her Realmes, against the King of Spaines forces, to be published by the Generals of the sayd Nauie, to the intent that it shall appeare to the world, that her Maiestie armeth her Nauy only to defend her selfe, and to offend her enemies, and not to offend any other, that shall rebeard to strengthen her enemie, but to vse them with all lawfull fauours.

A declaration of causes why the Q. sent her Nauy, and vpon the seas.

To all Christian people, to whom this declaration shall come to bee read, or heard, greeting. Wee Robert Earle of Essex, and Ewe, vicount Hereford, Lord Ferrers of Chartley, Bourgcher, and Louaine, &c. and Charles Lord Howard, Baron of Effingham, Lord high Admirall of England, &c. hauing the charge of a Royall Nauy of shippes, prepared and sent to the seas, by the most excellent Princesse, the Lady Elizabeth, Queene of England, France, and Ireland, &c. doe giue all men knowledge that the sayd Nauy vnder our charge is by her Maiestie prepared and sent to serue on the Seas, for defence of her Maiesties Realms, Dominions and Subiects, against such mighty forces, as we are aduertised from all parts of Christendome, to bee already prepared by the King of Spaine, and by further promisions of men and shippes dayly sent for, are to bee mightily increased, to inuade her Maiesties Realmes: as heretofore in the yeare of our Lord, one thousand fiue hundred eighty and eight, was attempted (euen when there was a Treatie continued by both their Commissioners for peace) with a greater Army then euer before in his time was set to the Seas: though by Gods gouernesse, and the valour and wilesome of her Noble and faithfull Subiects, the same was notablie made frustrate. And because her Maiestie hath good intelligence of perfite amittie with all Kings and Princes of Christendome, sauing with the King of Spayn, who hath this many yeres most vniustly prohibited openly great enmitie by diuers actions, both against her Royall person, and her people, and Countries, without any iust cause first giuen on her Maiesties part. Therefore we the sayd Earle, and Lord Admirall, doe ascertaine all persons, that we are most straightly commanded by her excellent Maiestie to forbeare from offending in this our Voyage of any manner of persons of what Nation soeuer, except the sayd Kings naturall subiects, or such others borne strangers, as shall giue to the sayd King manifest ayde, with men, ships, Artillery, victuall, and other warlike prouisions for inuasion of her Maiestie. Which her Maiesties commandements we meane diligently to obserue: and doe therefore giue strait charge to all persons that shall serue in this Nauy vnderneath vs, vpon paine of extreme punishment to obserue the same, &c. R. Essex. C. Howard.

The fleet of Nauy, Sir Thomas Edgerton maister of the Rols, was made Lord Keeper, and had deliuered vnto him the great seale. The 11. of May, he rode accompanied of the Nobility, and others (the great number) to Westminster, and there tooke his place.

On Sunday the 8. of August, great triumph was made at London, for the good successe of the two Generalls, and company in Spaine, the winning, sacking, and burning of the famous towne of Cadiz, the ouerthrow and burning of the Spanish Nauy, and other accidents, as here followeth.

Triumph at London for good successe at Sea.

Anno Domini 1596. her Maiestie sent a great fleete to the Seas, consisting of seuenteene or eighteene of her Royall shippes, and three of the Lord Admirals, and of marchants shippes and men of warre, and victuallers about a hundred, and to these the States added foure and twentie: so that the whole fleete being assembled at Plimmouth, was about an hundred and fifty saile.

In abstract of the expedition to Cadiz 1596. drawne out of Commentaries written at large thereof, by a Gent. who was in the voyage.

This Royall fleete was commanded by the most Noble, & fortunate in all his aduentures, the Lord Charles Howard (now Earle of Nottingham) high Admirall of England, in the Arke Royall, wherein (by Gods fauor, and her Maiesties auspices) he defeated the great Spanish fleet, in the yeere 1588. And by the right honorable and renowmed L. Robert Deuereux Earle of Essex and Ew, and maister of her Maiesties horse and Ordinance: both loyntly her Maiesties Lieutenants Generall for this expedition by Sea and Land, their authority and power being equall, sauing that the one had the precedence at Sea, the other at land: the Earle was shipped in a new built 4 very warlike ship called the Du repulse. The Viceadmirall of the whole fleet was the Lord Thomas Howyard, second sonne to the Duke of Norfolke in the Prisance. The Rere-admirall, was Sir Walter Rawleigh, Captaine of her Maiesties guard, and Lieutenant of Cornewall in the Wallspite, both new ships. The Admirall of the fleete of the States, was Ion van Duyenvoord Lord of Warmount, in the Neptunus, a ship of foure hundred tuns.

The fiue squadrons with their Admirals and vice-admirals.

This whole fleete was diuided by the Lords Generals into fiue squadrons, euery one of these Chiefs aforesayd had their particular squadron and vice-admirall. The first squadron was led (as it was his right) by the Lord high Admirall of England: the second by the Earle of Essex: the third by the Lord Thomas Howard: the fourth by Sir W. Rawleigh, the fift by Monsieur Duyenvoord: And strait commandement was giuen throughout all the fleete that euery shippe should waite vpon the Admirall of his squadron. The Vice-admirals of these squadrons were, Sir Robert Southwell (son in law to the Lord Admirall of England) in the Lyon, to the Lord Admirall: Sir Francis Vere Lord marshall in the Rainbow, to the Earle of Essex: Sir Robert Dudley son to the Earle of Leicester, in the Nonparoille, to the Lord Thomas Howyard: Captaine Robert Crosse, in the Swiftsure, to Sir Walter Rawleigh: and Ion Gerbrantson in the N. of Holland, vice-admirall of the Hollanders.

The Lords Generalls, while they lay at Plimmouth (to arme & furnish themselues with euery thing necessary for so great an army) gouerned their charge with very good

Iustice and Martiall discipline: and for instance hereof briefly this I observed: Two souldiers were hanged vpon the Hauen with papers vpon them shewing their offences: vpon the one paper was written: For drawing his sword and raising mutinie against his Commander. Vpon the other, For running away from his Colours.

His name was Hamnion.

There was also a Lieutenant that had taken fiftie pounds to discharge men that were pressed in Wales, hee was disarmed by Proclamation, and adiudged to repay the money, and banished the Army.

A souldier also in a dutch Regiment that had killed one of his companions, was by order of martiall law, tied to the party murthered, and so throwen both into the sea: And in Faro afterward an English souldier was shot to death of other souldiers, for killing a dutch sea Captaine. The Lords Generalls at Plimmouth also published a declaration of the iust causes which mooued her Maiestie to set forth this fleete against the King of Spain: admonishing also the subiects of all other Princes and States, of their daunger, if they vpon the sayd King with shipps, victuals or munition, which was translated into Italian, French, Dutch and Spanish, and dispersed.

The Souldiours were mustred at Plimmouth, and trained euery day by their Captaines, Collonels and Commaunders. The chiefe Commaunders and Officers of the army by land (besides the Earle of Essex, and the Lord Admirall, ioynt Generals as afore-sayd) were, Sir Francis Vere, Lord Marshall, Sir Iohn Winkfield, Campmaster generall, Sir Conyers Clifford, Sergeant Maior, Sir George Carew Master of the Ordinance, Master Astley, Secretary, Captaine Iohn Bucke Prouost Marshall, Captaine Oliuer Lambert, quarter master. The Collonels of the regiments of the army were, the Earle of Sussex, Sir Christopher Blunt, Sir Thomas Gerrar, Sir Richard Winkfield, and Sir Edward Winkefield, of the voluntaries: besides the Regiments of both the Generalls, whole Lieutenants Collonels were, Sir Matthew Morgan, and Sir William Woodhouse, of equall ranke with Collonels: and besides the Regiments of the Lord Marshall, of the Campmaster, of the Sergeant Maior, and of the Dutch commanded, or to haue bene commanded by the Count Lodowicke, and all these regiments contayned not aboue ten thousand men.

The Queens Prayer.

And in this meane time of all this businesse at Plimmouth, the Queenes Maiestie (well considering, that the Lord of hostes blesseth the hostes, and forces of godly Princes, and giueth victory to the faithfull armies) made a very deuout prayer to Almighty God for the good successe of the fleete, and sent it by Captaine Edward Conway, to the Generalls, commanding that it should bee dayly said throughout all the Fleete. And here also they receiued instructions for appointing their priuate counsell for this expedition, viz. the Lord Thomas Howard, Sir Walter Rawleigh, Sir Francis Vere, Sir George Carew, and Sir Conyers Clifford, and here they ordered that there should be two flags vsed to hang in the toppes of the Lord Admirals ship about Councell causes, the one a flagge of the Armes of England, with a warning piece to call the select Councel, and the other the flagge of Saint George, hanged in the same place to call the common councell of all Sea Captaines and masters of ships, and besides that euery ship in the fleete should hang vpon their misen yeard, a white pendant foure elles long.

By these instructions the Way of Caliz was appointed the Rendeuous.

And they sent to euery ship certaine instructions sealed vp with straite commaundement to the Captaine thereof not to open them vntil such time as they were come to the South cape, vnlesse they happened in the meane time to be seuered from the fleete by storme, or other misfortune: and if they hapned to bee taken by the enemy, then to hurle them so sealed ouer board. But for breuities sake I passe ouer thus these and other like preparatiues to this iourney: and come to the matter.

The 1. day of June, all the souldiers and mariners being embarked and the wind comming to the Southwest and by South, the Lord Admirall of England being aboord the Arke, commanded his Maister Gunner to shoote off a peece to giue warning to all the Fleete to weigh Anchors and set sayles: which they did incontinent, and thus being vnder sayle (the Lord Admiral leading) they sailed the same day & night as farre as a promontory in Cornewall called Dodmans point: but the wind scanting, they were faine to returne againe, the greater ships into the sound of Plimmouth, & the lesser ships into Causon bay, by speciall caution of the LL. Generals, lest any Mariners should returne & gaine to Plimmouth: which they also preuented by sending commaundement to the Maior and Gouernor of Plimmouth, that they should suffer no boates from the fleete to come a shoare.

The next day following being the 3. of June we set sayle againe, and in a good houre, for from that time till we came to Cadiz, wee had faire weather, and the Wind prosperous: but wee neuer came within sight of Spaine till we came to the cape of Saint Vincent, and thereabout vpon the 18. day of the same moneth the Lord Admiral tooke an Irish Barke that came but a day or two before from Cadiz, of this Irishman the Lord Admirall enquired what forces were in Cadiz, what shipping in the Bay, what newes in the English Fleete: to whom the Irish man answered, that in the Towne were no forces more then ordinarie, but in the Bay there were 25. galles, and about 50. sayle of shippes, whereof foure or fiue were of those Gallions of the kings which are called the 12. Apostles, and two great Galliasses, three Frigates, three Zenanisses or Argosies, two great Biskaines, the rest were Merchants shippes rich, and most of great burden, and the lading of these ships, was munition, coyne, wine, oyle, silkes, cloth of gold, gold lace, quicke siluer, and aboue 150. quintalls of waxe, and diuers other rich Marchandise: and some were bounde for

for the Indies, some for Britaine, some for Lisbone, and some for other places: and that there was no speech (that he heard) of the coming of an English fleet thither. By this time the Earle of Essex was come aboord the Arke, and there was a flag of the armes of England hanged in the shrowdes, and after consultation, and euery man returned to his owne ship, the Lords Generals hastened their course to Cadiz and vpon the 20. day of this moneth, being Sunday early in the morning, we came all to Anchor, within halfe a league of S. Sebastian a Fryery at the West end of Cadiz.

The Ships had aduertisement from Cadiz the day before we came thither, at 80. sayle of English ships, some off it Rayon, 20 of Portugall.

The Generals attempted presently to land neere to this Fryery at a desert called the Caliette, they filled many boates and barges with souldiers, and leaders, but the weather was very foule, and the Water went so high that two boates with some 80. souldiers armed, sanke, whereof some were drowned, the others by helpe of other boates were saued, and set aboord their owne shippes againe. This mischance did not happen as any token that God was displeased with our enterprize (as the sequell shewed) but that wee mischose the day attempting so great a worke vpon his day of rest. And it was also a mercy of Almighty God: for we could not haue landed there without great difficultie and much losse, for besides that the place was strong of it selfe, the Spaniardes had brought all the strength that they could to it.

The next day being Munday early in the morning, the Spanish fleete which rode at our comming before the Towne vnder the forts and bulwarkes thereof (by the aduise of Diego Soto maister of the S. Philip, the Admirall ship) shot with the tyde within the point of the maine land, and Castle of Puntall in the straites of the Bay: immediatly after the English fleete weighed, and came to Anchor neere the same place where the Spanish Fleet rode before, and there the fast S. Philip, and the rest plainly vpon our ships with their great Ordinance, and the Galles were very busie: but by the Generals commandement, sir Iohn Winkfield in the Vantgard, hauing some other lesser shippes ioyned to him, take them to taske, and so lamed them that they were glad to seeke to saue themselues: they crept by the shoare, first to the Puntall, and from thence into the Bay, and so to the bridge called Puente de Suaco, where striking their maskes and by helpe of certaine engines vpon the Bridge (contrary to the expectation of the Generals) they went round about the Ile of Leon, and came to Rota. But the eye & care of the Lords Generals was chiefly fixed vpon the Galions and other great ships before mentioned: whereupon they resolued to send that most noble Gentleman and great Sea-captaine, the Lord Thomas Howard to encounter with them in the Nonpareille, adioyning to him some few ships of the Queenes, (for the place was so narrow that hardly ten shippes could come to fight:) The other that were imployed in this enterprize with the Lord Thomas, were sir Walter Rawleigh, sir Robert Southwell Sir Francis Vere, Captaine Robert Crosse (aboard whom the Earle of Sussex was) Sir George Carew in the Mayrose, Captaine Alexander Clifford, in the Dreadnought and the Alcede of London. And although it were agreed in Councell, that the Lords Generalls should not hazard their shippes of greatest burthen, and of most charge in those straits and holes; yet the Earle of Esser could not endure to bee onely a Looker on in so honorable an action, but he put in amongst the thickest of them, and fought very Gallantly: which the Lord Admirall seeing (and being not able to bring in his owne ship) take his long boate and went presently aboord the Mirangoe, and went into the fight also, taking with him his Noble young son, now the Lord William Howard, of Effingham, being at those yong yeres very desirous to seeke and share honour with the oldest Captaines at all hazards.

The Battail at Sea.

This fight lasted till past none, and then the Gallions being cruelly rent and torne, and so much slaughter in them, that the blood gushed out at the scuppit holes, some resolued to fly to Porto Read, some to burne their ships, some ran their ships a ground: diuers Spaniards leapt into the water, whereof some swam a shoare, some were drowned, some taken, some slaine.

The Lord Admirall beholding this miserable spectacle of a Conquered fortune in these distressed Spanyardes, swimming about their ships, and crauing mercy, had compassion of them, and tooke his boat and row vp and downe amongst them, forbidding these cruelties, and preuenting the firing of the Spanish ships to much as was possible, which the Spanyardes remaining aboord in this desperate beaten estate chiefly intended, and first they fired the S. Philip, a ship of 1500. tuns, by whose fire a pinnace of Sir Robert Southwels was burned, but the men were saued. They fired also the S. Thomas, and the S. Iuan (as Signior Iantono affirmed to me in his house in Cadiz) but the other two Apostles, Saint Mathew, and S. Andrew, ships of 1200. tuns a piece were preserued from fire, and gates, and brought safe vnto England.

The battaile by Sea being thus happily fought, & victory obtained, the Lords Generalls (not willing to lose any opportunity) presently set in hand the landing of the souldiers, and in a very little space, there was such diligence vsed, that the Earle of Esser was aland neere the Puntall about a league from Cadiz, with 8000. shot and pikes: hee was accompanied with the Earle of Sussex, the Earle Lodowicke of Nassaw, the Lord Harbert sonne and heire to the Earle of Worcester, the Lord Bourke of Ireland, Sir Edward Winkefield, sir Robert Drury, Sir Thom. German, Sir Anthony Standen, maister S. Laurence, maister Alexander, and maister W. Ratcliffes brothers, and diuers other gallant Gentlemen aduenturers.

As soone as this Lord Generall was landed, hee dispatched presently three Colonels with their regiments to the Puente de Suazo, the sergeant Maior, and sir Christopher Blunt, and sir

Thomas Gerrard, with charge so to impeach the passage of that bridge, that there might be no meanes left for any succours to come into the Isle of Leon to helpe the Spaniards, to breake downe that Engine, by helpe whereof the Gallies might passe, and also to surprise or force the Castle at the bridge foot called by the dutch Herods house: they did somewhat ruinate the Bridge, and returned to Cadiz that same night. But the Dutch (which presently after the Earles landing tooke the fort at Puntall) tooke also afterward that Castle at Leon, at the bridge foot (as E. Meteranus writeth) but I never heard so much before. The Earle of Esser hauing for his guid Captaine W. Morgan, marched apace with his army toward the Towne, although in no hope to lodge within it that night: vpon the way hee was encountred with 400. or 500. Caualleroes or horsemen of Xeres, and 600, or 700. footmen, but they were without any great difficultie beaten backe, and ran into the Towne, offering to shut the gates; but the Earle made such haste, as he entred with his troupes Pell mell with them: and some made such shift to get into the Towne that they climbed ouer the walles, shewing our men by that meanes another way to enter the towne if they could not haue got in at the gates, which they soone learned and put in practise: & by this the Lord Admiral was landed with his battaile of some 12. or 15. hundred, and followed the Earle with a very round march: hee was accompanied with all the chiefe commanders by sea, and Captaines of ships and their retinue, as the Lord Thomas Howard, and sir Walter Rawleigh, who was not able to march so fast as the rest by reason that he was hurt in one of his legges with a splinter in the fight with the Gallions. There were also in this march the young Lord Wil. Hovvard, sir Rob. Southwell, sir Ed. Hoby, who bare the Lord Admirals ensigne, maister W. Pager, sir R. Leuson, Master Philip Woodous, Master I. Townesend, Master Ri. Wes[illegible], Master Mathew Brown, Captaine Robert Mantell, Master Miles Corbet, Master George Bucke, Master Iohn Morgan, Master Tho. Woodous, and diuers other Gentlemen aduenturers, and men of quality, whose names I doe not now remember.

The Captaine of this Castle was Don Martin Chaydia Biskaine.

When the Lord Admirall came into the towne, he found the Earle of Esser skirmishing and fighting with the Spaniardes, who fought and fled still before him, others threw downe stones from the battlements of their houses, which annoyed much our souldiers, and some were hurt thereby. But after that the forces of both the Generalls were ioyned together, the fight and resistance of the Spaniards continued not long, but they fled into the Castle and into the Citadel or town house in the market place adioyning to the Castle, and into other their strong places. And here sir Iohn Winkefield riding vpon a nag wounded, hauing bin hurt before in the thigh, was shot in the head from a loop in the Castle, whereof he instantly died: yet before night the Citadel was taken, and therein the Generalls lodged that night, and they were maisters of the whole Moln (the Castle and the fort Saint Philip excepted) hath which also in the morning were rendred, the one to the Earle of Esser, and the other to the Lord Admiral, and their red ensignes displayed vpon the tops and walls of them. And the next night the Earle lodged in the Friery of S. Francis, and the Lord Admirall in the house of Don N. Ruygoes, whose son was Captain of S. Philips fort, where hee had three or foure hundred pikes and shot, & 8. faire brasse pieces of Ordinance, and wine and bread good plenty, as I my selfe saw being at the taking in of this fort by the commandement of the Lord Admirall.

The conditions whereupon the Corrigidor and the rest of the chiefe of the Towne yeelded, were these: they should haue their liues saued, and only their wearing clothes permitted them: all the rest of their goods and wealth should be spoyle and pillage to the souldiers, and should pay besides to the Generals for their ransome, fiue score thousand Ducates: and for the payment hereof, the Generals tooke sixty of the chiefest Regidores, Caualleroes, Clergie men, and Merchants for Rehenes or Pledges, and brought them to England, and here kept them till the money was payd. And now Proclamation was made, that no English man should offer violence to any religious person, to any woman or child, or any other of the Spanish nation in Cadiz: and the Generalls sent away boates, barges, and pinaces, first with the Ladies and the Religious, and then the men and all other of the inhabitants of Cadiz to Porto Santa Maria, excepting the Rehenes, and the prisoners of some English Captaines. The women were suffered by the Generalls to weare so much apparell as they were able to beare vpon them, and all their Iewels: and because none of them should be spoyled by our rude souldiers and Mariners, the Lordes Generalls themselues stood at the water gates and saw their safe imbarking. The Lord Admirall also let goe the rich Bishop of Cusco, who was his prisoner without any ransome, only he promised to send him a horse which he hath not yet performed. In this interim also the Lord Admirall appointed the reereadmiral to take some of the lesser of the Queens ships and Merchant ships (that drew but little water) for their more safety) to goe after the Spanish shippes which were fled to Porto Real, and there either to take them or to sinke, or to fire them, if they would not yeeld. But whiles this was determined, offer was made of two millions to the Earle of Esser, for the sauing and ransoming of those ships and their lading: The L. Admiral would by no meanes agree that the ships should be left to the Spaniards, nor ransomed; but only the Merchandise. But the Duke of Medina Sidonia Admirall of Spaine, decided this controuersie: for he being then at Porto Santa Maria, and alwayes ill affected to them of Cadiz, gaue order that the next morning before day, the whole Fleete at Porto Reall should be fired, which was put in execution: yet nevertheless our men made such haste thither that they recouered

recouered much Merchandise and diuers pieces of Ordinance and other things, but none of the ships could be saued.

Thus this whole fleete which was valued by some of the best of the Spaniardes at ten or twelue millions of Ducates, was all either taken, sunke, or burned in a short space. In the towne of Cadize were 1500. pipes of wine, 2000. chests of Sugar, great store of Rice, much come and plate, and rich furniture in their houses: The King had also much rich merchandise in Duanas or Ware-houses, and a great deale of Treasure in the Castle, at which should haue bene preserued (and all whatsoeuer else was the Kings peculiar goods) for her Majestie by her right, if some had, or could haue performed the trust committed to them. But the losses which pinched the King most (his ships excepted) were the 1200. pieces of Ordinance which were taken or sunke in his shippes and his forts, and armour in his armory to arme fiue or sixe thousand men. All which riches, Treasure, Munition, Merchandize, Victuall, &c. of the Kings and of his subiects, there aboard the shippes and in the Towne, I heard valued by Pedro de Castilla, the Kings Iudge of the contratation, and Don Iuan de Soto, a principall Seaman, and Signior Fantonio the rich Florentine (three graue and well experienced men) to be worth twenty millions of ducates at the least.

These things being thus happily atchieued, and Sir Iohn Winkefield very honourably buried in Santa Cruz, the chiefe Church of Cadiz, with all the funerall solemnities of warre, the Drums and Trumpets sounding dolefully, the shot bearing the noses of their pieces downeward, the pikes trayled, his body was borne by fiue Knights, the Generals threw their handkerchiefs wet from their eyes into the graue, and at the instant the most part of all the shot great and small, aboard and a shoare were discharged.

The 27. day of Iune being Sunday, the Lords, Generals, with all the chiefs and Gentlemen of the army, heard a Sermon at Saint Francisco, where after dinner they made a great many Knights, euen all almost that did deserue it, or affect it, or not neglect and refuse it (as some did:!) this great indulgence of fortune, and exceeding accesse of honor to them in this atchieuement, mave them not onely bountifull, but prodigall of honour. But two very worthy Captaines (which were hurt in the fights at the entring of the Towne) were Knighted before the Towne was all won: Sir Samuell Bagnol, and Sir Arthur Sauage. The rest which were Knighted at the Friorie, and afterward, were.

Robert Earle of Sussex
Count Ludouike of Nassaw
Don Christiforo Prince of Portugall
The Lord Harbert Somerset
The Lord Richard Bourke of Ireland
Sir William Hovvard, son of the Lord Admirall
Sir Robert Dudley
Sir George D'Eureux
Sir Henry Neuill
Sir Edwin Rich
Sir Richard Leueson
Sir Anthony Ashley
Sir Henry Lenard
Sir Horatio Vere
Sir Arthur Throckmorton
Sir Miles Corbet
Sir Edvvard Conway
Sir Oliver Lambert
Sir Anthony Cooke
Sir Iohn Townesend
Sir Christopher Heydon
Sir Fr. Popham
Sir Philip Woodous
Sir Alexander Clifford
Sir Maurice Barkley
Sir Charles Blount
Sir George Gifford
Sir Robert Crosse
Sir James Skydmore
Sir Vrien Leigh
Sir Iohn Lee
Sir Richard Weston
Sir Richard Wainman
Sir James Wootton
Sir Richard Rudall
Sir Robert Mansell
Sir William Mounson
Sir Iohn Boules
Sir Edvv. Bowes
Sir Humfrey Drurell
Sir Amias Preston
Sir Robert Remington
Sir Alexander Ratcliffe
Sir Iohn Bucke
Sir Iohn Morgan
Sir Iohn Aldridge
Sir William Asfinden
Sir Matthew Browne
Sir Thomas Acton
Sir Thomas Gates
Sir Iohn Stafford
Sir Gylly Merike
Sir Thomas Smith
Sir William Pooley
Sir Thomas Palmer
Sir Robert Louell
Sir Iohn Gilbert
Sir William Harucy
Sir Iohn Gray
Sir Iohn Van Duvenvoord
Sir Melchior Lebben
Sir Pegemorte
Sir N. Medkerke
} Dutch

There was great dispute about the keeping of Cadiz, and the opinions of all the olde souldiers and Sea-men asked: but because it appeared not how it might certainly at all times be relieued with men, munition and victuals, and for other causes best knowne to the Generalls, it tooke no effect.

The next day being munday, the Lord Admirall went aboord, to set things in order in

the fleete, and to make ready for a new enterpriſe: and by his example alſo to draw the ſeamen and mariners to their ſhippes, that were loath to come out of the towne.

The Duke of Medinaes letters to the Lord Admirall.

About this time the Lord Admirall received (from his old acquaintance, ſince 1588.) the Duke of Medina Sidonia Admirall of Spaine, two very honorable anſwers to 2. letters which he had before written to him about the exchang of priſoners, Spaniſh for Engliſh in the Gallies: the Dukes anſwere was, that he liked well of the motion, and would doe in it ſo much as lay in him. But (he ſayd) that that charge was more particularly in the Adelantado of the Gallies, to whom he would write, which hee performed ſo effectually, that within a day or two, the Adelantado ſent a principall Captaine to the Lord Admirall, and he made a full agreement for the exchange of Engliſh priſoners in the Gallies for Spaniſh priſoners in our hoyes: and vpon the firſt of July following, about forty of our Engliſh priſoners were deliuered aboard the Arke by the Gally called La fama, and promiſe for the reſt which was afterward duly accompliſhed. This gally La fama, whereof Don Iulian Hurtado was Captaine, came from Rota to the Engliſh fleete, with a white flagge of ſafe conduct, according to the order of warre, but an ignorant Sea Captaine made a ſhot at her as ſhe paſſed by him, and hurt and killed three men in her, wherent the Lord Admirall was much grieued, and greatly offended with the Captaine, and threatned to haue hanged him: but the Captaine of the Gally and Don Pavo Parin one of the Rohenes, made earneſt ſuite to the Lord Admirall for his pardon, which they obtained.

The Earle of Eſſex ſtayd all this while in the Towne, with the reſt of the Commanders and Captaines, and companies of the Army by land, which he ſuffered not to be idle. Vpon the twenty eight day, the Ordinance was taken from the walles, Caſtles, and forts. Vpon the 30. day of June in the night, hee made a rode into the Ile, and burned, and raſed, and ſpoyled all that mought ſerue the enemie to any ſtrength or reliefe. The next day hee ſet pioners a worke, to raſe and deface the fortes and Caſtle in the Towne. The firſt of July, the Tower of the Cinadra was battered down. And laſtly, vpon the fourth of July ſet the whole Towne on fire (the Churches excepted) and ſaw all his men imbarqued, and came aboord laſt. And the next day the whole fleete ſet ſayle, and ſteered their coaſt to the weſtward: and in the meane time beſides the negotiation (which I ſpake of before) with the Gallies) the 6. of July the Generalls ſent a pinnace into Barbary with 40. ſlaues which had eſcaped out of the gallies, and came to them for ſuccour. And about this time ſir Anthony Aſtley was ſent into England to make report to her Majeſtie what had paſſed hitherto, and for other ſecret affaires of the Lords Generals.

From this time till we came to Faro, there was nothing done, but often meetings for conſultation about their next enterpriſe, and how to get victuals and freſh water: ſaving that the Gallies in a calme caught vp a fly-boat of ours bound for England. In this courſe we paſſed firſt by Rota, and by the point of Chipiona neere vnto which lie the Rockes called the Salmedinas, and by the Duke of Medinas tower or Almadzana for Tunny fiſhing: and by Arenas Gordas, in the mouth of the Bay of S. Lucar, and by Aymont in Portugall, and then we doubled the Cape Saint Mary, and ſo came before Faro a principall Towne of Algarua, where they reſolued to land.

But the firſt Generals ſent both their Lieutenants of their ſhips, Sir Amias Preſton, and Sir William Mounton, and Captaine William Morgan, to diſcouer the paſſage to the Towne by the channell in their pinnaces, in the euening, and to view the place, to eſpy the forces, and to learne what ſtagge that was, which they ſaw at their comming before the Towne, and to ſeeke for freſh water and victuals, and ſuch like inſtructions. They brought anſwere the next morning, that the people were fledde, and had carryed away their goods, and that they could not as yet finde any freſh water nor victuals: but yet for all this in the afternoone the Lords Generals landed with all their forces: but the Lord Admirall being not well, and hauing little hope of any reliefe there for their wants, returned aboord his ſhip, taking ſir Edward Winkefield with him, who was lame of a hurt which he had received at Cadiz in one of his legges, and indeede, it was the Earle of Eſſex his earneſt deſire that the Lord Admirall (ſeeing him ſo ill) ſhould returne to his ſhipper, and take that valiant Knight with him. Whileſt the Lord Admirall lay here at Anchor, the fleete of the Gallies came, and Anchored cloſe by the Engliſh fleete: but the Lord Admirall ſent a ſhip preſently to them to command them in his name, to depart from thence and goe further off: which commandement they obeyed as readily, as if the Admirall of Spaine had ſent it, and I rather note this becauſe I thinke it was the firſt commandement that euer they obeyed, being giuen them by an enemie vpon their owne coaſts.

The obedience of the Gallies.

The Earle of Eſſex being landed (as I ſaid before) and being deſirous to doe ſome exployt vpon the terra Ferma of Spaine, being alſo prouoked hereunto the rather by the enemy (who made braue ſhewes of horſe and foote vpon the coaſt all alongſt as we ſayled by) hee marched with his army that night to Faro (being about ſome two leagues from the place where wee landed) he tooke the Towne with eaſe, for the inhabitants had abandoned it, and carryed away moſt of their goods (as he was informed before) there was in the Nunnery ſome ſtuffe left, and in the Biſhops palace, and a Library of Bookes, valued at 1000. markes: there was alſo in the Towne ſome fruits, and wines, and a few hennes: and in the Fort there was ſome pieces of great Ordinance, whereof one was the fairеſt and longeſt Culuerin which the King of Spaine had, as it was eſteemed. And here the Earle appointed Captaine Brett a valiant Gentleman, and of very able body, to march into the Countrey with 800. Souldiers of the ſtrongeſt, choſen out of diuers bands: he marched ſome two or three leagues, and found a Towne called Loth, which he tooke and burnt, without any reſiſtance, but hee ſaw a farre off troupes of horſe and foote, (but none approached him:) but if any of his ſoldiers ſtraggled, or were left ſicke vpon the way (as many were) he found them at his returne pitifully mangled, ſome with their hands chopt off, ſome had their noſtrills ſlit, and others killed.

In this iourney he had got aboue a hundred Cowes and oxen, and ſome ſwine, for victuall, and was brought by an old Portugall to a well of good freſh water, but ſmall ſtore: and ſo returned to Faro to the Lords Generall, who after he had ſacked and fired the Towne, the third day returned to the Fleete.

And now being all aboord againe, the Generals with their councell held a new conſultation on what was elſe to be done, & how victuals and freſh water might be ſupplied: ſome had great deſire to goe for Lagos: but ere any thing was reſolued, the fleete was paſt the cape S. Vincent, where a ſtrong Eaſterly wind tooke vs and forced vs to ſtall off into the Sea ſome 80. leagues from the Cape, and towardes the Iles of Azores: & here they called a Councell againe, and reſolued to goe for thoſe Iſlandes, there aſſuring themſelues to haue plenty of freſh water and victuals, and there to lie for the Carakes and Weſt Indian fleete, and to encounter with the 25. Spaniardes men of War, which lay at the Iles (as the Generals were aduertiſed.) But neither did this purpoſe hold, for the winds comming contrary, they held a new conſultation, and that was to beare in with the coaſt of Spaine and Portugall, and to ſearch what ſhipping was in the harbours thereof as they paſſed. And this courſe was thought the beſt, and kept for the moſt part vntill wee came before the Groyne and Ferola. From thence Maiſter George Buck was diſpatched by the Lords Generals to her Majeſtie to make relation of that which had paſſed in the army ſince the fleetes departure from the Bay of Cadiz: and other particular buſineſſe of their Lordſhips for her Majeſties ſeruice.

The Lords Generals thus being come before the Groyne, the firſt of Auguſt, and finding no ſhipping there nor in Ferola, now lately reuicted to come for England, and the rather by reaſon of the generall wants of victuals and freſh water, and for that there were many ſick men in the Warſpite and in diuers other ſhippes of the fleete, and for a great leake that was ſprung in the Mainyard, and for that (which moued their Lordſhips moſt of all) her Majeſties commandement, that they ſhould lay forth but fiue moneths in this voyage. All which reaſons duly conſidered, the Lords Generalls now ſhaped their courſe directly for England, and vpon the 7. and 8. dayes of Auguſt they arriued with their whole fleete in Plimouth ſafely, thanks be giuen to Almighty God, who hath ſo bleſſed her Majeſty and her miniſters in all her deſignes and enterpriſes, with ſo much honour and good ſucceſſe, as he hath made her the mirrour of all Princely felicity in this world.

The firſt of Auguſt.

Thus farre of the expedition to Cadiz.

In this meane ſpace, to wit, on the 15. of June Rich. Fletcher, Biſhop of London decea- Biſhop of London deceaſed. ſed at his palace in Paules Churchyard, and was buried in his Cathedrall Church.

The 22 of July, the right honorable H. Cary Lord Chamberlaine of Hunſdon, and Lord Chamberlain to the Queene, deceaſed at Sommerſet houſe in Strand ſtreete, without Templebar, and was honorably buried at Weſtminſter. Lord Chamberlaine deceaſed.

About the ſame time alſo deceaſed the right honorable Sir Francis Knowles, one of her Majeſties Priuy Councell, hee was father to the Lord Knowles

The 15. of Auguſt betweene the houres of eight and nine of the clocke at night, a houſe of timber lately ſet vp very high, and not fully finiſhed, neere to Saint Brides Church in Fleete ſtreete, ſuddenly fell downe, and with it one olde houſe adioyning, by the fall whereof the ſaid goodman named Cox, with a man ſeruant and a child were killed. Men ſlaine by fall of an houſe.

The twentie nine of Auguſt, the Duke of Bolonie being arriued in England, came to the Court then at Greenwich, and there by her Majeſties oath confirmed the league of amity and peace betwixt the two Realms of England and France: and ſhortly after ſouldiers were ſent ouer to ayde the French in their warres againſt the Spaniards. Duke of Bolonie came to England.

Preſently vpon the departure of the Duke of Bullion, the right honorable Gilbert Earle of Shrewſbury Shrewſbury was ſent into France to take the reſ- The Earle of Shrewſbury ſent Ambaſſadour into France. pect of Henry the fourth French King, for the ſure confirmation of the late league, as alſo to intreate the ſaid King with the order of the Garter: the manner whereof being carefully obſerued by Walter Williams Segar, then Somerſet herauld I haue ſet downe according vnto his owne deſcription as followeth.

We departed from Douer on thurſday the 16. day of September, 1596. and arriued at Dieppe in France the thurſday ſeuen night following, where both the Ambaſſadours, the right honourable the Earle of Shrewſbury, and Sir Anthony Mudnay Knight, were very Nobly entertained and feaſted, the firſt night by the Commander de Dieppe, Mounſieur de Chaſtes, who was inuited the next day to dinner and requited by the Earle, and in diuing the viſhipping of their houſe, and other their prouiſions, their Lordſhips paſſed the time in hunting for two or three dayes.

Sunday the 27. following, the Earle ſet forward to Roane, the Capitall towne of Normandy, and was met on the way by Mounſieur Feruagues, and his Traine, who conducted his Lord that night to the Caſtle of Cleere where he lodged.

Munday his Lordſhippes proceeding on, was encountred within two miles of the Citie of Roane, by the Duke Montpenſier, the Kings Lieutenant thereof, and about 200. horſe, of Nobles and Gentlemen his attendants, who

bringing his Lordship to his lodging after some ceremonies of honorable entertainment to the his lodge: his Lordships lodging was in the market place, called Le March Veux, in a very faire house furnished with rich hangings, and tapits, their cloathes of estate, and two standing beds.

The Wednesday seuen night following being the first of October, the King made his royall entry into Roan, in which entring sundry messages passed betweene the King and the Ambassadors, praying them not to thinke the time long of his comming, for that he was to attend a preparation, which the Townes men had purposed for his welcome, hauing neuer bene in the City before: the manner whereof (for it was very Princely and full of rare deuises) I haue thought good to insert.

In the Suburbs of the Towne on the farther side of the riuer, was newly erected for the King, a most stately rome made of plaister of Paris, where his Highnesse stood with his Nobilitie to behold the companies, and generall Clarkes both of horse and foote, and to receiue the Townes meane submissions as they passed, which was most humbly performed by sire of euery company, and of his Maiestie most graciously accepted.

Fifth, the order of the Fryers Capuchins followed their Crosse, being of wood, vpon which a Crowne of Thornes, and three great nayles were fixed, their habit was russet, all bepatched, girt with hempton Cords, shirted with hairecloath, and barefooted, wearing sandales only. This order may haue but one habit for a man during his life, they lied standing and slept sitting, they liue by almes, and are much esteemed of the people.

Large Library of bookes in Roane.

Secondly, the Gray Friers being Cozeleers followed their Crosse of siluer. This order haue a Library in their house, containing sixand fifty paces in length, with three rowes of Deskes all along, replenished with many excellent bookes both of Philosophy, and the fathers, the most part manuscript.

Thirdly, followed the Carmelites and Celestines, fourthly the Jacobins, fiftly the Augustines. Then proceeded the Priests and Chauntries of the Towne in their Surplices, singing, bearing 42. Crosses of siluer, which was the iust number of the parishes and chappels in the towne, and euery Crosse had a great banner of a Saint richly painted thereon, besides two tapers of white wax in Aulter candlesticks, borne by youths, and euery taper armed with an Escutchion of the Kings armes.

Then followed the Print-maisters of Normandy, the Merchants of the Vicountyshippe, of the Riuer, Receiuers, Customers, Treasurers, Honorates, Procurators, and other officers of the palace.

Then came Batchelers, and Maisters of Arte, Doctors of Physicke, Ciuil Law and Diuinity. All these degrees were cloathed in very fayre, and reuerent Garments of Damaske, sattan, and blacke velure, long and large, and for the most part riding vpon Mules, distinguished by Virgers that made way before them.

Then followed in Gownes of purple cloath, and hoods of the same, with square Caps on their heads, the Officers and Councellours of the Chamber of Normandy, in which is kept their high Court of Chauncerie, and Parliament.

Then came riding on Mules to the number of forty in Scarlet, called De la robe rouge being Iudges, and Officers of estate, belonging to the sayd Chamber.

After them to he place, the foure Presidents of Normandy in robes of Scarlet, furred with Calaber, wearing on their heads great Caps of maintenance of blacke velure.

Then proceeded the seuerall bands of the Towne, containing foure regiments of foote, and three cornets of horse, suted in greene, russet, and Carnation satten, and velure, garnished with siluer lace, their hatts, plumes, scarfes, and shoes white: the furniture of their muskets, sether staues, and partisants, suitable to their colours, their ensignes, cornets, and standarts all white, emblasoned with the Kings armes, and enriched with his deuice, which was a Roman H Crowned, betweene two branches (as I take it) the one an Olive, the other a Laurell, his motto, or word, *Hac dedit, His dabit vltra*.

After vpon great Coursers rode forty enfant d'Honour or Henchmen, the properest and chiefest yong men of the towne, suted in greene velure, horsemens coates richly laced with siluer, their Caparisons and trappings answerable, their plumes, scarfs and backs, white.

Then came all the Gallants and young Gentlemen of the French Court, (conuetting and fetching vp their great horse) accompanied with diuers of the Nobility, as Barons, Viccounts and Earles, the Knights of the Saint Esprite were knowne by their blew Ribbands, and white Crosses hanging thereat.

The Chancellor, Mounsieur Cheuerny, rode alone after his place.

The Archbishop of Rhemes, did ride betweene the Bishops of Amiens and Eureux.

Then marched the Kings three guards after their Drums and Fifes. The Swissers with Shot and pikes, the Scottes and French with Halbards, the Kings Trumpets in hosemens coates of greene velure, and very well mounted, then tooke they place, and sounded oftentimes as they passed.

Mounsieur Straine, Maister of the ceremonies and one of the Captaines of the Guard rode together, after whom followed 3. Heraults, Anjow, Picardy, and Britaine, inuelled in rich coates of Purple Velure, embroydered with the Armes of France, each bearing his name in Capitall letters of gold vpon the left manch.

Then followed two Sergeants of Armes carrying Maces before the person of the King, who that day was mounted on a white courser, his owne apparrell, plumes, and hoses white, wearing the order of the S. Esprite at a broade blew Riband about his neeke.

About

About his person were his guard of Scots, and certaine footmen in white. And after him followed the Duke de Nauers, Duke de Namours, Duke Ioyeuse, and others.

Leaue we the King going to the City, and let vs by the way of preparation, know how the same was ordered for his entertainement.

Some 5. or 6. dayes before the King made his entry, the Bailiffes of Roane commaunded by sound of trumpet that all the streets through which his Maiestie should passe, should be cleansed, sanded, and their signes taken downe, hanging forth their fairest coueringes, and Tapits at their Windowes, and to cry, Viuele Roy as hee passed. All which being in a readinesse, the Windowes full of people of all degrees, the Greetes guarded with certaine Ensignes of muskets and infinite numbers of common people in euery quarter.

His Maiestie by this time was come to an vtter gate betweene the bridge, and the suburbs, which in the late warre had beene more than halfe ruined. This gate in two or three dayes with plaister of Paris they had halfe repaired, and the other halfe remained in ruine, for explication of a deuise which was thus. On the toppe of the gate were certaine personages maps of plaister, some carrying of stones, some Porter, some hewing, some leueling, and all so liuely that they seemed to want nothing, but very motion. Vpon the Arch of the part repaired sate Apollo with his lyre, vnder whom in golden letters was written this Prophesie.

Henrico iterum reparabitur aussice regnum.
And ouer the Portall.
Gallicarum vrbium restitutorem.

The King being past this gate, he came to the first gate of the bridge, which was made of 12. columnes about fourescore foot of height, the base bony Capitoll, Frize and Cornish, after the order Ionica. Ouer the Arch whereof in a table of embossed worke sate a personage representing Normandie, seeking her backe against two Leopards (the armes of the Dutchie) in her left hand, she held a Hart, her right hand she put forth to a figure, resembling the King, who seemed to raise her vp, vnder her was written, Da miteræ Dextram, and ouer her certaine drops distilling from the heauens. Then in goulden letters vnder the Kings armes (which was embraced with low Palmes) were these verses in French thus Englished.

O doubled Branches for Conquerors ordain'd,
If *Henries* name, for Crownes hath you not gain'd,
Bowing downe your topps, for to be wreathed
You cannot giue him your honours triumphant,
No more then this streame, can yeeld water currant,
Vnlesse from higher spring it be receiued.

The King hauing viewed the deuice, and read the verses, passing further, vnder the roofe or vault or gate, ouer his head certaine cloudes opened, and there descended vpon him the similitude of the holy Ghost, and an Angell presented vnto him a Sword, called the Sword of peace, before the opening of which cloud, a voyce was heard, as from God, saying.

Heauenly mouing spirits, stable intelligences,
Cleaue through, make way for this spirits discent,
Presenting from one heauen, of thousand influences,
To one speciall Monarke, one speciall present.

Henries mine annointed, he feares me, I him loue,
Yeeld him due honour, the honour shall be mine:
All Kings are Gods, and as my selfe aboue,
Dispose both good, and bad, on earthly line.

The Angell descending saith:

Stay mighty Monarch, stay, the heauenly Monarch sends,
To thee this Sword of peace, with good and happy day:
Take it, but in thy blisse a modest heart entends,
Himselfe who raiseth, fals, and Gods loue looseth aye.

He hath giuen thee the sword in fields victorious,
And that which to no other could be giuen so:
One more of peace, did rest for thy hand glorious,
Receiue it from aboue, for to command belouv.

Threefold great by these, thou maist thrice happy make,
France vnder thee to yeeld, thy Sceptre greatnesse bring,
Pursue this good (therefore) the price for gracious take,
The which about thy browes, makes thousand Laurels spring.

The

The Angell ascending saith:

Reioyce ye heauens since peace which yore hath left,
Returned is on earth, to dwell vvith *Henry*,
Who for his neighbours good, of ioy bereft,
Merits for his that men one day be sory.

Earth doe as much, tapet thy selfe vvith flowers,
And sundry fruites, that henceforth may increase:
All things without mans Art, are handy labours,
For golden age is where there raigneth peace.

Then live thrice happy, and content this Prince,
Who chiefe of World, and peace is made this day,
Of all the World heele make but one prouince,
If there be Kings, these Kings shall him obey.

After these words deliuered by the Angell, the King proceeded ouer the Bridge of Roane, which was guarded by fiue or six hundred Swissers all in bright armour, and Spanish pikes, vntill he came to the other gate of the bridge, which entred into the Towne, the building of which gate, was after the order rustique, rising three degrees, hauing vpon the one corner of the first degree, a hound with a Cupid riding on his backe, vnder which was written, *Dux Amor est fidei.* And on the other corner, an Ore with another Cupid, subscribed, *Vires fœnantur Amore.* Vpon the corners of the second degree, stood foure Tritons, or Mareemen, with tridents in their hands, and aboue them on the third degree, was placed a personage representing Roane, with a Lambe standing, and laying one foote vpon the knee of the figure, ouer which was written, Now, it is to be vnderstood, the Lambe is the Armes of the Citie, which in an Epigram made vnto the King was thus described.

O King your Lambe before our vvretched broyle,
Was wont to beare vpon her humble backe:
The golden fleece, like that of Colchos Ile,
But certaine nevv-come Argonauts (alacke)
Haue her oftimes so barely cut and shorne,
That on her body poore, and all forlorne,
You scarce with paine, can find at all to pull,
One simple fleece, or little locke of Wooll.

The King passing through this gate, the towne had prepared for him a Canopie of purple velvet, richly embroydered with his armes and deuice, and flower-deluces strewed all ouer, which Canopy was carried ouer him by six honchmen, apparelled in one suite. From thence hee went by the streete called la Rue du Pont, where was set vp a very stately Pyramide, about a hundred foote of height, on which was set forth in painting of Copper colours the labours of Hercules, on the toppe wher of was a great sum of gold, bearing the King Crowned H. vpon the points of his beames: the spire of his Pyramide was carried from the Vale or pedestall, by foure Sphinxes guilt, and on the one side of the said Vale, was written Hercules Gallicus, and on the other side in letters of gold vpon sable, French verses thus Englished,

Hercules and *Henry*, are semblable,
In vertues, vvords, and acts,
But that *Hercules*, is in the fable,
And *Henry* in the Facts.

Here the King turned downe the street called Ozon, where were set vp two statues of plaister, vpon Antique bases, both vndernamed in Greek characters. The first called Stable victory, held in her one hand a Palme, and in the other, an Imperiall Crowne, & Scepter, treading vpon Armour, and other marshall engines. The other figure was quick-sighted Iustice, holding a sword and ballance, and treading vnder her feete, a number of visors, or maskes, signifying falsehoods, betweene them both was written in golden letters vpon Azure, certaine French verses to this effect.

Kings which for honor beare name of August.
(Or happy Cæsars) preferr'd by History,
Acknowledge *Henry* more valiant and iust,
Would beare no other but the name of *Henry*.

So the Kings Maiestie, riding through the streete named Le Rue de la Viscount, at the streets end opposite his comming forth into the high streete, there was raised a boyshe piller about twenty foot of height, on the top whereof, stood Fame treading vpon death, holding a Crowned H. in one hand, and a Trumpet with a banneroll of France in the other, which when the Kings Trumpets in passing by, sounded, Fame raised her Trumpet to her mouth, and seemed to sound also, turning her selfe round about, which motion was most cunningly wrought by an engine below within the Base. And vpon the outside of the Base, leaning against the pedestall, sate Pallas, and Peace: treading vpon Envy, who was set forth like a fury, with haires of Snakes, and a murthering knife in her hand. Ouer these figures sate History writting, and looking vp to Fame, vnder whom were written these Latine verses.

Delicium historiæ, & famæ sed vera canenti,
Henricum voges exemplar habere futuri:
Vt fausto populos, & bello, et pace regatis.

O future Kings example take by *Henry*,
Histories delight, and Fames most true report,
That you may rule, and governe prosperously,
Your people both in vvar, and peacefull sort.

Vnder these verses was painted a Lyon breathing fourth Bees, but without either motto, or allusion.

The King passing on through the Dial gate, there was an Arbor resembling Apollos temple curiously wrought of herbage, and fashioned like vveathed pillers, adioyning to which was a little vvood, where on a wall was painted in prospect diuers Metamorphoses, as Daphne pursued by Apollo, and turned to a Lavvrel: Pan embracing Siringa, as thee became Reedes: Europa and Iupiter, and such like. In which Arbor was excellent musique heard, both for voice and Instruments. All which being a while listened vnto by his Maiestie, he proceeded to the streetes ende, turning to our Lady Church (called Nostredame) where was erected a most Magnificent Arch Triumphall of plaister after the order Corinthique, on the top whereof vpon a great Globe of the world, stood the figure of the King in his Royal robes supported by two personages, the one Prudentia, who Crowned him with a Crowne of Bayes, the other Fortitude, who offered him a Scepter, vveathed about with Laurell: before him sate Occasion, behind him Clemency, and round about him lay Armours, Ensignes, Drummes, Trumpets, and other marshal instruments: at either corner sate a huge Lyon of Gold, supporting the Armes of France and Nauarre, and on the other side of the Gate, stood Envy bound in chaynes, feeding of her owne heart, and on the other side a man of Armes, sitting a sleepe on a drummes head, by whom was written, Security. Ouer the portall gate, vnder the Globe were written in Latine, these verses thus translated.

To some for feare, to some for Clemency,
Are prizes giuen: but fourth King *Henry*,
Excelling other Kin both, and both conioyn'd,
In him by wisedome hath also adioyn'd,
Vnto these three, a fourth (occasion)
Which if it stand with lawes probation,
Hath sworne her selfe to be companion,
Yoking worlds to *France* by King *Borbonion*.

Opposite to this Arch Triumphall, vpon two Rustique pillers (distinguished aboue 20. foote asunder) stood 2. figures of plaister, the one of S. Lewis in his Kingly robes, holding a Scepter in one hand, and a verge in another, on the top whereof, was a hand pointing to the King which stood on the Globe with this verse vnder written. *Maßæ tua virtutemea maxima sirpi.* The personage on the other piller, was Sambetha, one of the Sibils, who likewise pointed to the Kings proposition, and presented to the beholders a table, with this prophesie in Latine, Englished thus.

Sambetha I. of Sibils chiefe, in *Hebrew* by ofspring,
Glad Oracles bring to the *French*, and vnto thee O King,
The earth did never boast herselfe, of any Child so much,
As France (*O Henry*) shall reioyce, that thou th ir King art such,
Peace being to the people brought, a thousand Armies strong,
Dreadlesse shall march and follovv farre, thy Battailes all along,
Where *Tagus*, and *Durius* swell, with goodly golden sand,
And where *Idumea* for thy selfe, holdes worthy Palmes in hand,
Thou being Captaine, souldiers shall returne with laden spoyles,
Of Basterne and the Westerne wealths, and shall bring to their soyles,
Triumphant signes, and Trophies backe: O King their Country vvoane,
Fame shall eternall Crownes thee giue, for that which thou hast done,
Liue thou therefore now all our yeeres, and *Nestors* longest date.
Worlds loue, to people giving Lawes, made quiet by thy State.

The King going through this Arch Triumphall, hee presently entred the Cathedrall Church of Nostredame, with all the Ecclesiasticall Pompe that might be, from whence, after certaine Ceremonies, which entertained him for a time, hee returned more priuatly, in his Coach to his Court, being some times a Cardinals house, adioyning to Saint Owins Church, and thus the Kings entrie ended with the day, being performed with great honour, Charge, and Applawdements of all sorts of people.

Thursday the 7. of October, the right honorable Lords Ambassadours had audience of the King, who most Princely received, embraced and welcomed them both, as also all other the Lords, knights, and Gentlemen their attendants.

Death of Edelitie taken by the French King.

Saturday the ninth of October, the Edelitie or Oath of confederation betweene the King and the Queenes Maiestie of England, was very solemnly taken in the Church of Saint Owen, in the presence of the French Nobi-

Nobility, Lords, Spirituall, and Temporall, who that day tooke the right hand of the quire.

The French K. inuested with the order of the Garter

Sunday being the morrow after, the Order of the Garter was most royally performed in the said Church, where both the Princes, had their ensignes and armes erected. The Queenes Maiestie being Soueraigne of the Order, had that day the right hand of the Quire, & so had the right honorable Earle, her Maiesties Ambassador his Armes, Kile, and Stall accordingly. Before her Maiesties ensigne, sate Walter William Dethicke, Garter, principall King of Armes, in his Robe of the Order. Before the Earle stood William Segar, Somerset Herault. Next vnto the Earle sate the Lord Ambassador Lieger. Then the Lord Cromwell, the Lord Rich, and all other Knights and Gentlemen, according to their quality. On the left hand, sate the King betweene the two Bishops of Aniow, and Cureux. Before the Kings estate, sate his Chancellor, Monsieur Cheverney alone. And before him stood, Aniow, Picardy, and Burany, Heraulds of Armes. In the stalls sat the Knights of the Saint Esprite, who (as farre as I doe remember) were these, Duke Montpensier, Duke de Neuers, Duke de Namours, the Prince de Vandemont, Duke Montmerancy Constable, and his brother the Admirall, Duke Ioyeuse, Duke de Bullon, the Marshall de Rorz, and the Marshall Matignon.

All things being accomplished with much honor, the Kings Maiesty inuested and sworne, the Vespers ended, and the Benediction giuen by a Bishop in his Pontificalibus, the King taking the Earle by the hand, they returned as they came, attended vpon by the Nobilitie, who two, and two, proceeded before them. That night the King and the Earle supped together vnder one estate, in the house of Duke Montpensier, where also was a generall feast for all the English.

Thursday, the fourteenth of October, the King tooke the Earle into his Coach, and went to the Bridge of Roan, to see a seasight vpon the River, which was performed by two French Shippes, against two supposed Spanish, and one Brasilian (large boates, armed and prepared for that purpose, with muskets, pikes, and Hargubuza-Crook) where after one houres fight, the Brasilian was sunke, and the Spaniyards forced to flie, by the French. This pastime was done by the Mariners, for the Kings more delight.

On Friday, the right honorable Earle with his attendants, tooke leaue of the Kings Maiesty, and kissed his hand, departed with great loue, honor, and reputation.

Saturday, the sixteenth of October, his Lordshippe set forth from Roane, and came that night to Depe, being accompanied with the Commander thereof, Monsieur de Chaste, where he remained for conuenient passage, ten dayes after.

The 29. of October, the Queenes Maiesties ships being come, his Lordship embarked himselfe in the Admirall, and arriued at the Downes neere Dover the next day following.

Rewards giuen by the Right honourable *Gilbert* Earle of *Shrewsbury* in his Ambassage of *France*.

To Mounsieur Suraine, a Chaine of gold, of a hundred pound.

To the chiefe Comptroller, a Chaine of eighty pound.

To the second Comptroller, a Chaine of sixty two pound.

To the third Comptroller, a Chaine of fifty eight pound.

To Madam Matrings, a marshall woman, a Iewell of twenty pound.

To Mounsieur Ciuille, one Hundred Crownes.

To the Cookes and other Officers of the Kings, fiue hundred Crownes.

To the Musitians, twenty pound.

To Sir Henry Palmer Admirall of the Queenes shippe, in which his Lordship went, a Iewell of the Queenes Picture, and a Ring sent to his Lady.

To the Mariners of the Queenes shippes, in way of largesse amongst them a hundred and fiftie pound.

Rewards giuen by the King.

To the Earle her Maiesties Ambassador, a Iewell with a rich Diamond therein.

To Walter Garter principall of Armes, 500. Crownes.

To Somerset Herault, Two hundred Crownes.

Sunday the 1st of December, 1596. Master Rogers Doctor of the Ciuill Law, being newly made a Preest by the Bishop of Wels, made his first Sermon in the Cathedrall Church of Wels, where were assembled a very goodly Audytory: in his Sermon according to a Text that hee had chosen, and hauing made no prayer, hee began to discourse of Spirits and their properties, and within a while after, there entred in at the West Window of the Church a darke and vnpozpottionable thing of the bignesse of a foteball, and went along the wall on the pulpit side, and sodainly it seemed to breake, but with no lesse sound and terrour, then if an hundred double Canons had beene discharged at once, and therewithall came a most violent stozme and tempest of lightning and thunder, as if the Church had beene full of fire; in this strange tempest all the people were sore amazed, and many of them stricken downe to the ground, the Preacher himselfe was stricke downe in his pulpit, and many in the body of the Church were marked in their garments, armes & bodies, with the figures of Starres, or Crosses, but there was no maner of marks vpon any that were in the Quyer, this tempest brought with it a most terrible stench, and sodainly as it ceased, it brake downe some stone worke, melted the wyers and yeons of the clock, but burned no timber, this stozme ended, the people began to come againe to themselues, and then

A Preachfull fodaine tempest in the Cathedrall Church of welles. *An. Reg. 39.*

then the Bishoppe hauing firste the Quyer Make generally vnto them, and inuited them to a Sermon there in the afternoone, whereby he recomforted them all.

A dearth of graine.

This Summer, by reason of much raine, and great floods, came wonderfull scant, so as in London wheate was sold for ten shillings a bushell, and Rye for fiue shillings, and Otemeale at eight shillings a bushell.

A strange story touching

In the County of Kent, in the parish of Welkam, a mile and a halfe from the towne Southwarde, not farre from the Citie of a common high way, called Dolhamhill, leading from London towardes Rochester in Sussex, two elmes lying toyether, separated with a hedge of hollow aldzes, &c. On the 18. of December was found a plot thereof twelue perches long to be sunke fiue foote and a halfe deepe, the next morning fifteene foote more, the third morning eighteene foote more, the fourth morning eighteene foote more, and so from day to day, the great breach of ground containing in length, about eighteene perches, and in breadth twenty eight, began to the heads of the trees thereon to lose it selfe from the rest of the ground lying round about it, and therewithall to runne, slide, and hyde Southward day and night, for the space of 11. dayes. The ground of two water pits, the one fiue foote deepe of water, the other twelue at the least, and about foure perches ouer in breadth hauing sundry tuffes of Alders and Asbes growing in the bottomes, with a great rocke of stone vnder them, were not onely removed out of their places, and carried towardes the South, at the least foure perches a piece: but withall, mounted aloft, and become hilles, with their sedge, flags, and blacke mudde vpon the tops of them, higher then the face of the water (which they had forsaken) by nine foote, and in place from which they are removed, aboue ground (which lye higher) is discouered, necessary the water lying now vpon it. Moreouer in one place of the plaine field, there is a great hoale in the by sinking of the earth, to the depth of thirty foote at the least, being in breadth in some place two perches ouer, and in length fiue or sixe perches. Likewise there is a hoale of three perches long, carryed Southward with his tresse, fouer perches at the least: sundry other sinkings there be in diuers places, one of fifty and fiue foote, another of fortie and seauen, and another of thirty and fiue foote, by meanes of which confusion, it is come to passe, that where the high hilles were, there be the deepest dales, and the lowest dales are become the highest grounds.

The whole measure of the Breaking Ground, was at the least nine Acres, seuen dayes workes, and fonre perches, &c. Euidences for testimony of both hereof, were Robert Bostocke Esquire Iustice of peace, James Austin, Sir John Scuttey, Vicar of, William, John Downing Gentlemen, and many others.

This yeare in the moneth of May, great preparation being made to the Seas, Souldiers were pressed in the City of London, vntill the number of fiue hundred and fiftie, and all their furniture was prepared at charges of the Citizens: these were duly for a long time trayned in the fieldes, also at the charges of the Citizens, out of which number was picked foure hundred, the residue were dismissed: these and other like picked men out of diuers shires (besides sayleres) consisted of 6000. able men for land seruice, amongst the which were of Knights and Gentlemen voluntaries, to the number of 500. or better, very gallant persons, and as lightly furnished for all things necessary (besides superfluitie in gold lace, plumes of Feathers, and such like.) These Commanders were as followeth, Robert Deuereux, Earle of Ewe, as well Admirall by Sea, as Generall of the Army by land, his lieutenant Generall, Lord Thomas Howard, Knight of the Order, his vice Admirall, Sir Walter Raleigh, Knight, Captaine of the guard, and Lord of the Stannaries. For the land seruice, his Lieutenant Generall was, Charles Lord Mountioy, Knight of the Order: his marshal of the field, Sir Francis Vere, Knight Capitall, Generall of the English forces in the Low countries, master of the Ordnance, Sir George Carew Knight, Lord president of Munster, his Seriant Maior, Sir Fernando George Knight, Gouernour of the forte at Plymmouth: the treasurer of the army Sir Hazlebelt an Knight, &c. The whole naumber deuided into three squadrons, consisted of 6. seuerall companies, 3. seuerall Lord men of warre: the rest victuallers, ships of transportation: of her Maiesties ships, the number was 17. or 18. there were of the Nauy Royall of good men of warre, sent from the States of the Low Countries, to attend her Maiesties fleet in this seruice, well manned and furnished. The returne of the fleete, and all the shipping of London and other the Port Townes together with sundry vessells belonging to the Londoners Gentlemen aduenturers in this voyage. The purpose of this preparation was for the taking of the Islands of Azores, which was resolued to haue been taken & possessed by one Christmas, there to haue planted a certaine garrison: Victualling and many martiall men were then inuited and set vpon about the 30. of July, but being some 600. leagues on waies their tourney, there sodainly arose a storme and tempest from the East against them and so continued for foure dayes, in so great violence, that they were all forced backe againe into Plimmouth hauen, where they victualles new vpon, & all things could be viewed and repayred. On the 17. of August they againe weighed Anchors, and set saile, meeting with many stormes, and foule weather, wherby they were altogether disseuered: but on the 31. of September, they vnderstood by Letters sent to the Generall and assembled themselues to him, bringing with them fruites, & other fresh victuals, because that they had suffered much penury for want of victuals, which was grounded vnder this estate.

Voluntary gallants to the Seas in great bravery.

Those in this fleete, Earle of Rutland and Southampton. Lords Grey, Rich, and Cromwell.

Flores an Iland, and Fernernes.

At the Iland of Fayal they tooke a Carrick of 1200. tuns loaden with Indian commodities, and sent her into England, before the vanquishing of the Tun Generall

Generall thither, who refreshing himselfe and his followers there for some foure dayes, or better, he burnt the Towne, and brought away the ordinance both of the towne and forts.

Pike an Iland.

In the meane time, the squadron of Flemmings were playing their parts in the Ile of Pike, rausacking the wines, and burning all that was within their power. The 26. of September, from Fayal the fleete made toward the Ile of Gratiosa, where they cast anchor, and presently came aboard our Generall, the chiefe men of that Iland submitting themselues and craving mercy, which they obtained upon condition to send refreshing to the fleete, which they willingly performed.

Gratiosa an Iland.

S. Michaels Iland.

From thence our fleete made for S. Michaels Iland, and as they came very neere unto it, two of the foremost shippes of that fleete shot off twise or thrise, and bare up towardes the Admirals ship, these brought newes of the Indian fleete, by them discovered, comming for the roade of Gratiosa, which the Generall had so lately left: upon this intelligence our Admirall shotte off a piece and cast about, the like was done by the vice admirall, and so thorough the fleet. Within few houres after, our fleet encountred, t tooke the Spanish ships comming from the Havana. These ships made relation of 40. sayles of Indian men (whereof some 8. were fraighted with the kings treasure) upon this intelligence of the passing by of those Indian ships, our fleete followed after them to the Terlores, where they were some 6. houres entred before, and had mowred their shippes so fast under the towne and fort (being one of the best ports of al Europ) that after a long dispute our Generall and Lord Mountioy, in the defiance, and other tall ships bare in as close along the shore as they could, exchanging some 15.20. great shot with them, and so left the Ile of Terlores, and returned againe to S Michaels Iland, let fall their anchors before the towne, where after diuers viewes, taken for a conuenient landing place, it was at length agreed, that Sir Walter Rawleigh should with all the strength of the fleet lie before the town, whilest the Generall with all the land Commanders, and some 2000. embarked into small barkes, and pinnaces, secretly in the night did convey themselues about the point, to land at a Towne called Villa Franca, some fiue miles off, where they arrived safe, and were landed by the next morning, without any resistance. Those left in the best ships before the towne of S. Michael did all that night vse their alarmes, to give the land army the better meanes to goe in secret, and to come vnlooked for on that land side of the town of S. Michaels as was promised. They in the shippes looked out all the next day hoping to see their troupes marching over the hils, & plains, but the towne of Villa Franca, being seated in a pleasant soyle, full of fruits, vines, and fresh victuals, the sellers stuffed full of Wade, wheate, the army was content there to ingarrison themselues together, feasting themselues and carrying abonde of Wheate, Wade, and other merchandise into priuate mens ships, that followed

Terlores an Iland.

Villa Franca a rich towne of Merchandize, and fresh victuals.

for that purpose, whilest the fleete before Saint Michaels gaped for the comming of their land army. A Brazell man, laden with Sugar, and Brazell-wood, let fall his anchor in the midst of them, whom they tooke as prize: and a little after him a mighty Caracke followed, thinking (as the Brazell-man did) our fleete to have bene the Spanish Armado, on the Rere Admirall Sir Walter Rawleigh, commanded all the Flags to bee taken dowue off our shippes, that no man should weye Anchor, shoote off a peece, or put off one Boate, but by direction, all which time the Carracke bare in with full Saile: but suddainely one of the Flemmish squadron contrary to all direction given before, wayed Anchors, hoysed Sayle, and made towardes the Carracke (now ready to double the point that entred the Roade) and made a flotte at her, whereupon the discouering our fleete to be enemies, changed her course and ranne herselfe a ground hard vnder the Towne and Forte, and there set herselfe on fire in many places at once, shee was a ship of 1300. or 1400. tunnes, laden with Sugar, and other rich commodities. This tragidie thus ouerpast, our fleete againe lookes out for the comming of our land Army, but all in vaine, for they neither came nor sent, and thus was a great piece of seruice very vnfortunately neglected and Lost. The same night the Generall sent to commaund, all the fleete to wey, and to come for Villa Franco, so they left Saint Michaels good Towne, and then approached the time of yeare, that brought with it violent stormes, and foule weather, to those Ilands, whereof vpon the meeting of the whole fleete before Villa Franco, a generall commaundement was giuen, that all forts should with speed repayre abord their ships, for the Wind, and Seas began to rise. Thus on the ninth of October they set sayle for England, and landed on the west coasts there of, about the end of October. There were in this voyage taken, besides Brazell men, the good prizes that came from the Havana, laden with Cochinella, and other rich marchandise, besides the Silver, Golde, Pearles, Stuit, Muske, and Ambergreece. And these three prizes (whereof one was about 400. tun) by report of those Merchants that came in them, were valued to bee worth aboue 400000. Duckets, and thus much for this voyage to the Iles of Azores, wherof Sir Arthur Gorges Knight, then Captaine of her Maiesties ship called the Warspight, hath largely written, and learnedly discoursed in his booke intituled, A plaine and true relation of the voyage made vnto the Iles of the Azores, &c.

A Brazell man let fall anchor amongst our fleete.

And a great Caracke tooke off.

1400. tun.

A rich Carrack burned.

Sir Arthur Gorges Knight.

This Summer arrived at London an Ambassador from the King of Polonia, Sigismond, the third, Sonne to Duke John of Finland, that after was King of Sweden, and was a long while here in England. This Ambassador was named Paulus de Ialine, a Gentleman of that Countrey, he brought letters of credence from the King dated the 19. of May last past, and had audience the 25. of July, at the Court then at

In Ozator from the king of Powland.

Greene-

Greenwich: whose Oration in Latine beginning, *Serenissima princeps, domina Clementissima, sacra Regia Maiestas, Polonia dominus meus Clementissimus, &c.* The effect of his speech after Princely congratulations, what good entertainment her Maiesties subiects had in his dominions, as his owne subiects, and contrary to which, his subiects were in England deprived of all their former olde priuiledges, and liberties of trade, graunted them by her Maiesties predecessors, and con equently were deprived of all trade and traffique on her Kingdome. And notwithstanding his subiects haue made seuerall complaints, of the which he must haue a care, he could not bee moued to diminish any part of his good will toward her Maiesty and her subiects, but there was of late set forth certaine Edicts and Proclamations, by the which contrary to the law of nature, his Subiects were forbidden the Nauigation and trade into Spayne, and vnder colour thereof, diuers Shippes of his subiects had bene taken at Sea, and their goods made prize, and confiscated, with more the like iniuries, all the which were such, that it touched not onely his Merchants, of whom he must haue a care, but likewise all the vniuersall Nobility of his Kingdomes, and Dominions, for that by the trade, doth consist all their liuings, and reuenewes, so that no greater iniurie can be done to the King his Master and the States of his Kingdomes: yet for his brotherly loue to her Maiesty, he hath suppended those meanes of doing the like to her Maiesties subiects, which meanes her Maiestie doth know, he doth not want: he thought good to proceede with patience, and to aduertise the Queenes Maiesty thereof, as a good neighbour, and Princes duty doth require. And for that Letters hitherto haue not bene regarded, hee had now sent him to require her Maiestie according to equitie, to make reparation, and restitution, and that the trade Westward to Spaine might be free, as it ought to be to all men, by the Law of Nations, otherwise the King his Master, would no longer neglect his subiects losses, but to take in hand such necessary meanes as might be required. As for the Queenes Warres with Spaine that ought not to hinder his subiects Nauigation, by the common Law of nature, and there was very old and good friendship betwixt the King his Master, and the King of Spaine, and betwixt the House of Austria, and the King his Master, hauing now renewed the olde amitie, by marriage with a daughter of Austria, so that hee is bound to maintaine the friendship with the King of Spaine, as well as with her Maiestie, euer his request bearing such equitie, hee doth trust that her Maiestie, will take regard of his protestations, and commaund satisfaction, &c. commending withall some particular suites, and causes. This Oration was prelently, learnedly, and very Eloquently, answered by her Maiestie, also in Latine: the effect whereof, in English followeth.

Answers of the Oration of the Ozator of Poland.

My how I was deceiued, I looked for an Ambassage, but thou hast brought a complaint vnto mee, I vnderstood by thy Letters, that thou wert a Legate, but I finde thee a Peraunt, never in my life heard I such an Oration, truly I marueil at so great and such vnaccustomed boldnesse, in a publique assembly. Neither doe I thinke, if the King were present, that he would say so much, but if peraduenture hee hath committed any such thing to thy charge (which surely I much doubt) this is the cause: That where the King is young, and not by blood, but by Election, and newly Elected, doth not so perfectly vnderstand the cause of handling these Businesses with other Princes, which either his auncestours haue observed with vs, or perhaps others will observe, that afterward shall succeede in his place. For thy part: Thou seemest to me, to haue read many bookes, but not to haue come vnto the bookes of Princes, but altogether to bee ignorant what is conuenient amongst Kings. For thou that makest often mention of the law of nature, and nations, know, that this is the law of nature and nations, that when warre doth happen amongst Princes, it is lawfull for the one of them to intercept the warlike helpes of the others, brought from any place, and to beware lest they fall to the losse. This I say is the law of nature and nations.

Where as thou doest rehearse A new affinitie with the house of Austria, which now thou makest so famous, forget not that there haue beene of the same house, that would haue bereft the Kingdome of Polonia from thy King. But for the rest, which bee not to bee spoke of, at this place, and time, because they are many, and to bee considered of, one after another: Thou shalt expect that, which thou shalt vnderstand of some of my Councell, to whom I will assigne this matter. In the meane time farewell and bee quiet.

Shortly after, the said Ozator, or Poland Embassador, was called before certaine of her Highnesse honorable Priuy Councell, to wit, the Lord Burghley, then high Treasurer, the Lord high Admirall, Sir John Fortescue, and Sir Robert Cecill, Principall Secretary: to whom, after the said Poland Embassadour hadde deliuered his speech, which hee made before the Queene in writing, and excused his rough kind of speakings, shewing that by his Commission signed, and sealed by the King in the assembly of the States of Polonia, hee was thereunto entoyned: he receiued a large answere in the name of her Maiestie, which properly pertaining to the matter of the Hanses, and answering fully and very pertinently, the question made by them about their olde priuiledges, and is set downe to the full, in a booke intituled, A Treatise of Commerce.

In this moneth of August, the price of Wheat at London fell from thirteene shillings the bushell, to ten shillings: Rie from nine shillings, to sixe shillings, and so to fiue shillings

Great prizes of bread corn.

two pence, but then arose againe to the late greatest price.

Embassage from Denmark.

This yeere also, Arnald Whitfield, Chancellour of the Realme of Denmarke Embassadour, and Christian Barnikan his assistant, from the King of Denmarke arrived heere, and were lodged in Fanchurch-streete: these had audience at the Court then at Theobalds in Essex, on the seuenth of September, they made certaine requestes, which her Maiestie presently answered without paule, to euery point of their Embassage.

Embassadors.

Who first, hee required that whereas there had remained a long League of amitie betweene the two Crownes of England and Denmarke, both in the life of the late deceased King and his predecessors, that it might please her Maiestie to confirme and continue the same to the King his maister, now newly adopted and Crowned.

Her Maiestie.

Her Maiestie granted thereunto, on condition the King his maister would vowe no woyle then his progenitors had done, and in all Christian tone accepted thereof.

Embassador.

His request was, that whereas there was great and continuall warres betweene her Maiestie and the King of Spayne, whereby much Christian blood was shedde: to the King his maister, and all other Christian Kings great Griefe, and to the great domage, and daunger of Christendome, that it would please her Maiestie, if in her wisedome thee did see it conuenient to giue her consent, that the King his Maister might make a motion of Peace, and if hee found both parties thereto addicted, to proceede further for the effecting thereof.

Her Maiestie.

Her Maiestie replying, sayd, the thought the King his Maister was too young to know the cause of the breach of the League betweene her Maiestie and Spayne, and as it was not broken by her Royall Consent, nor by any of hers, so it should not bee sued nor sought for by her Maiestie, nor any in her behalfe, for sayd thee, know now, and bee it knowne to the King your Maister, and all Princes Christened, or Heathen, that the Queene of England hath no neede to craue Peace, for I assure you (sayd thee) that I neuer endured one houre of feare, since my first comming to my Kingdome and subiects.

Embassador.

Hee was to desire, if it might stand to her Maiesties good liking, open traffique with Spayne, and that the goods might not bee stayed on the Narrow Seas, as it hath beene heretofore.

Her Maiestie.

Her Maiestie said, if any his Makers or subiects goods were so stayed, it was to her vnknowne, but if he had any such iust complaint, he should (the matter being made to her Councell knowne) haue such redresse, as should well content his Maister, and subiects.

Embassador.

He was to returne the Garter, that her Maiesty had bestowed vpon the King lately deceased as the manner of all forraine Princes is to do.

Her Maiestie.

Her Maiestie accepted thereof, but told him she was sory to receiue it of him, for thereby she was put in minde of the losse of a most honourable brother and louing friend, and so that shee were assured of his Kings loue and friendship in the like sort, shee would hereafter to the King his master doe the like fauour.

Embassadors.

The Ambassadour hauing his audience the day that her Maiesty was borne, tooke thereby occasion to say, that sithen it hath pleased God, on that day (which hee was informed was her Maesties birth day) to glorifie the world with so gracious a creature, who had brought so great happinesse to the Realme, & the neighbor Kingdomes, hee doubted not but that the King his Master should in that happy day, haue an happy answere of his request, &c.

Her Maiesty.

I blame you not to expect a reasonable answere, and a sufficient, but you may thinke it a great miracle, that a child borne at foure of the clocke this morning, should bee able to answere so wise and learned a man as you are, sent from so great a Prince as you bee, about so great and waighty affayres you speake of, and in an vnknowne tongue, by three of the clocke in the afternoone.

And with him more prudent and gracious wordes, thee ended, and gaue him leaue to depart.

Earle of Nottingham created.

The 23. of October, the Right honourable Lord Charles Howvard, Lord high Admirall of England, was created Earle of Nottingham at Westminster.

The foure and twentieth of October, began the Parliament at Westminster: on the which day diuers people were smothered, and crushed to death, pressing betwixt Whitehall, and the College Church, to haue seene her Maiesty, and Nobilitie riding to the sayd Parliament, Sir Thomas Gerrard Knight Marshall and his meane, making way before them.

The 27. of October, her Maiestie went by water to the Parliament house, and prorogued the sayd Parliament, till Saturday the 5 of Nouember.

An. Reg. 40. Pepper 8.s the pound.

This yere against Christmas, Pepper was solde at London for eight shillings the pounde, a matter then much noted, considering that not many yeares since, a great Carricke richly laden with diuers Marchandises, was taken at Sea, brought to our coastes, the goods thereof in smaller bessells conuayed to London, and layd vp in the Leaden hall, where the Pepper by Merchants of the Citie, was valued to be worth one hundred thousand pounds, appoynted there to be solde, which was done, with restraint that no Pepper (by way of Marchandise) should bee brought into this Realme, before sale of the former. Also raysons was this yeere solde for fiue pence the pound: Gascoine wine two shillings eight pence the Gallon, and sweet Wines for foure shillings the Gallon, &c.

The 20 of December, being S. Thomas eue, the Parliament was put off till their 11. of January, on the which day they sate againe.

Sir Robert Cecill, principall Secretary, Walter Harbert, Master of the requests, Sir George Carew, Master of the Ordinance, and others

Embassadors into France.

others prepared for their Embassage into France, and set sayle from Dower, about the 19. of February.

Ainger hanged for murthering his father.

The 25. of January one named Ainger was hanged at Wyborne, for wilfully, and secretly murthering of his owne father, a Gentleman and Counsellor of the Law at Grayes Inne, in his chamber there.

Parliament dissolued.

The ninth of February, the Parliament hauing graunted for defence of the Realme three subsidies of 4.s. the pound Lands, and 2.s. 8.d. the pound goods, and fiue fifteens: was dissolued and brake vp.

Tiuerton knowe burned.

On the third of Aprill, the fayre and rich Towne of Tiuerton a town in Deuonshire was burnt by casualty of fire, beginning in a poore cottage, a woman there frying pancakes with straw (for lacke of other fewell) the same fired the house, and so the Towne about one of the clocke in the afternoone: the rage of which fire, lasting one houre and an halfe, consumed 409. houses, burned downe: one hundred and fifty thousand pound consumed in money, plate, merchandise, houshold stuffe, and houses, fiftie persons, men, women, and children consumed: an almes house preserued with poore men therein, in the midst of the flames: 2000. li. weekely was bestowed there in the market on mundoines, in Deuonshire Karseis: 9000. people maintained by the cloathing of that towne, in Deuon, Cornewall, and Somersetshires. It was the Earle of Deuonshires chiefe seate, where yet standeth his Castle, or Court place, thus much of this towne, was certified to her Maiestie, and was thought of many to bee a iust punishment of God vpon that Towne for the vnmercifullnesse of the rich, and small regard of the poore, which were dayly faine to perish in the streetes of that Towne for lacke of relefe.

Our Embassadors returned out of France.

The first of May, Sir Robert Cecill Secretary, Iohn Harbert Esquire, maister of requests, Sir George Carew maister of the Ordinance, and other the Ambassadors, returned out of France, and came to the Court.

Calcis returned to the French.

About the latter end of May, or beginning of June, Calcis, and other Townes in France, lately holden by the Spanish Nation, were vpon Compositions of peace, rendred to the French King.

Lord Zouche Embassador into Denmarke.

The Queene of England for the Congratulations of the late marriage, solemnized at Capinhage, the Capitall Citie in the Realme of Denmarke, betweene Christian the 4. King of Denmarke, and the Daughter of the Marquesse of Brandenburge, one of the Princes Electors, of the Empire: addressed the Lord Zouche thether in Ambassage, being assisted by Christopher Parkins, Doctor of Law, who departed from Lee in Esser, the tenth day of June. The second point of this legation, contained the recommendation of certaine complaints exhibited vnto her Maiestie, by her Merchants trading into the Balt parts, touching a late arrest and detention of their goods in the Sounde, amounting vnto to the value of one hundred thousand Talers, vpon a pretext of false and vntrue entries of their merchandises, to the defrauding of the Kings customes, of which dealements and imputations of fraude, the Marchants neuertheless pretended in themselues a clearenesse, iustifying the making of their entries agreeable vnto their custome and vsage in all other places, for Marchandises of the like natures. Wherefore it was on her Maiesties behalfe desired, that it would please the King to enter into some indifferent and honourable considerations thereof, according to Equity, and to extend his Clemency vnto the Merchants in the Release, and Restitution of their goods, if there should not appeare any fraude in them, vpon some debating of the cause betweene her Maiesties Ambassador, and his assistant, and some other of the Kings Councel, appointed to conferre with them thereabouts, and these Danish Commissioners, still iustifying vpon the matter of the confiscations, the King in conclusion condiscended in regard of her Maiesty, to yeeld vnto a restitution of thirty thousand Talers. Of which offer, it should please her Maiesty to accept, hee would expect her resolution, vntill the feast of S. Michael the Archangell next. The Lord Zouche and Doctor Parkins, hauing received this finall answere from the King, departed from Capinhage the thirteenth of July to Helsdenere, where the next morning they set sayle for England, and returned to her Maesties presence, the first of August following.

Doct. Parkins sent into Denmarke.

In the moneth of September following, Doctor Parkins was againe dispatched in Ambassage vnto the King of Denmarke, to demaund a generall restauration of all such goods of her Merchants as had beene arested and confiscated: for considering that they still complained of the rigor of his confiscation, and adiourned the manner of their entries according to the vsage accustomed both here in her Maesties Custome-house of England, and in all other Countries, whither they resort for traffique. The Queene vsed nothing satisfied with the late offer of the thirty thousand Talers made vnto her by the King. Wherefore in regard of this her Maesties second legation, the King added vnto the sayd graunt of thirty thousand Talers, other ten thousand, to bee reduced Tallars or Dollars. backe, partly in wares yet extant, and partly in ready money, which summe vpon certaine agreed by Doctor Parkins, was afterwards receiued, and distributed among the Merchants damnified by the arrests.

In this meane time, to wit, on the tenth of July, 19. persons for felony were hanged at Wyborne, and one pressed to death at Newgate of London.

A challenger of all men at defence hanged.

Also Iohn Barrose a Burgonian by nation, and a Fensor by profession, that lately was come ouer and had challenged al the Fencers of England, was hanged without Ludgate, for killing of an Officer of the City, which had arested him for debt, such was his desperatnesse, and brought such reward, as might be an example for other the like.

The 12. of July, one Iones *alias* Buckly a

A seminary Priest executed at S. Thomas of Waterings.

Priest made beyond the Seas, having beene arraigned at the Kings-bench, and there condemned for treason, for reuniting into this Realme, contrary to a statute, was drawne to Saint Thomas Waterings, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered, his head set vpon the pillory in Southwarke, his quarters in the high-wayes towardes Newington Lamb-eth &c.

Lord Treasurer deceased

On the fourth of August Sir William Cecil Knight of the order, Lord Burgley master of the Wardes and Liueries, high Treasurer of England, a famous Councellor to the Queene Maiestie all her Raigne, and likewise had beene to Edward the 6rt, who for his singular wisedome was renowned throughout all Europe, departed this mortall life at his house by the Strand, his body was conueied to Westminster with solemne funerall, and from thence secretly to Stamford, and there buried amongst his ancestors.

Lightning & Thunder.

The 5. of September, being Tuesday in the afternoone, lightning, and thunder at London, two great Crackes, as it had bin the shooting of great Ordinance, some men smitten at the Postems by the Tower of London, and one men slaine at the Bridge-house in Southwarke ouer against the Tower of London.

Earle of Cumberland returned from Sea.

The second of October, the Earle of Cumberland returned from the Seas, hauing amongst other valiant Acts, made spoyle of the strong Colone and Castle of Saint John de Porto-rico &c.

Squire executed.

The ninth of November, Edward Squire of Greenwich was araigned at Westminster condemned of high Treason, and on the 13. drawn from the Tower to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

The 14. of November, the Queenes Maiesty came to Westminster, and was there by Commandement from her Councell, most Royally received by the Mayor of London, Aldermen, and Sheriffs in Scarlet, and a great number of the wealthy Citizens in Velvet coates, and chaines of gold, all on horseback, in the euening by Torchelight.

Great frosts.

In the moneth of December great frosts, the Thames nigh ouer frozen at London bridge, but thawed about one weeke before Christmas, and began againe to freeze on Sainct Johns day, the 27. and a great snow on the 28. so that the Thames was againe nigh frozen as before, but on New-yeares day it thawed.

Souldiers sent into the Low Countries.

In the beginning of the moneth of January, Souldiers in Essex, and diuers other Shires, as also in the City of London, were pressed, and being furnished of all things necessary for the warres, sent into the Low Countries, and to remaine in seruice, and place of olde Souldiers, from thence to bee transported and sent into Ireland. All Subsidy men in the City were sessed at 8. pence the pound goods for lands towards this charge.

Also in this moneth great loanes of money, were demanded, and at length granted by the Citizens of London, besides all other charges rate that time imposed vpon them.

In the moneth of February, about the 28. a fifteene was granted and payed by the Citizens of London, for the setting forth of more souldiers into Ireland.

The Earle of Essex sent to Ireland Iohn Stow. And Rog.

The twentie seuen of March 1599. about two a clocke in the afternoone, Robert Earle of Essex, Viceregerent of Ireland, &c. tooke horse in Seeding Lane, and from thence hieing accompanied with diuers Noblemen, and many others, himselfe very plainely attired, rode through Grace-streete, Cornehill, Cheapeside, and other high streetes, in all which places, and in the fields, the people prayed exceedingly to behold him, especially in the high wayes for more then seuen myles space, crying, and saying, God blesse your Lordship, God preserue your honour, &c. and some followed him vntill the Euening; onely to behold him; when hee and his company came South of London, the Skie was very calme and cleere, but before hee could get past Islington, there arose a great blacke cloud in the Northeast, and suddainly came lightning and thunder with a great shower of haile and raine, the which some held as an ominous prodigie.

The moneths of March, April, and May, cold and dry, but on Whitsunday great raine, and high waters, the like of long time had not beene seene: the moneths of June, and July, hot and dry for the most part, thus much for weathering.

Shippe prepared to the Seas to bin trayned by the Seamen for the Queene.

This yeere in the moneth of August, the beginning thereof, politickly preuenting danger feared to happen, by occasion of some preparation of shipping to haue beene made in Spaine (as was pretended) to the annoyance of this our estate. The honourable Charles Howard Earle of Nottingham, Lord high Admirall of England, was by her Maiestie made Lieutenant Generall of all England, as well by Sea, as by land, &c. The Citizens of London were charged with the furnishing and setting forth to Sea, of twelue shippes, since increased to fifteene: Also with fiue thousand men, and furniture for the warres, which men with all speed were made in a readinesse: three thousand of them dayly trayned in the field vnder Captaines, Citizens of the same Citie, from the first of August, &c. The other three thousand appointed to attend vpon her Maiesties Royall person, were also likewise trayned vnder Captaines, in braue furniture, for they were householders of good accompt, all which charges was partly borne by themselues; the residue performed by subsidies leuied of the Citizens. Vpon commandement from her Maiesty, the chaines were dayly vnbarred in the streets and lanes of the Citie, and Lanthornes with lights of candles hanged out at euery mans doore, there to burne all night and so from night to night, vpon paine of death, and great watches kept in the streetes, which hanging out of lights so continued some fourteene nights or better.

Horsemen and footmen trayned in the Shires & mustered in London.

In this meane space, many thousandes of horsemen and footmen, chosen persons, well appointed for the warres, trayned vp in Armour,

mour with braue liueries, vnder valiant Captaines, in diuers Shires, were brought vp to London, where they were lodged in the suburbes, Townes and villages neere adioyning: from the 8. of August, til the twentieth day: and twentieth; in which time the horsemen were shewen in Saint Iames field, the footmen trayned in other grounds about the City, and then all discharged homewards, with charge to bee alwayes ready at one houres warning. And so it followed that on the fine and twentieth of August, being Saturday at night, postes were sent after them, to recall the horsemen, presently to returne to London with all speede possible: which charge they prepared to performe. But on Sunday following, the sayde postes, were likewise sent to stay them at home, or to returne them backe, whose forewardnesse in seruice of her Maiestie was such, as the like hath not beene seene or heard of, towards any Prince of this Realme, or other, for the great happinesse and comfort of her Maiestie, whom God hath blessed with so dutifull, louing and obedient Subiects.

The Earle of Essex being thus restrayned, the Queene and Councell warily foreseeing the imminent danger of those desperate Irish Rebels, whose strength and fury would instantly increase to the vtter ruine of that Kingdome, if present preuention were not had; And thereupon they made choice of Charles Blunt Lord Mountioy being also of a milde disposition, and very gracious with the Peeres and common people, which the said Lord Mountioy set forward from London for the Irish expedition the seuenth of February next following, hauing sent many companies of Souldiers before him from London, and diuers Shires, being in all points very honourably accompanied and attended: thought not in such magnificence as was the Earle of Essex, Sir George Carew Knight Lieutenant of the Ordinance in England, was sent into Ireland with the Lord Mountioy, to bee Lord President of Mounster, and they embarked in one ship at Beaumaris in Anglesie, and landed at Dublin in Ireland.

The Lord Mountioy goeth into Ireland.

On the 26. of August being Sunday, before six of the clocke in the morning, by commandement from her Maiestie, the 3000. Souldiers trayned by the Citizens, were all in Armour in the streetes, attending on their Captaines, till past 7. of the clocke, at which time being throughly wet by a great showre of raine, they were sent home againe for that day.

On the next morrow being the 27. the other thirty thousand Citizens, houlders, and substance men, viewed on the Piles end, where they trayned all that day, and other dayes vnder their Captaines, also Citizens, vntill the 4. of September, and so ceased their training for that time, and what other had beene feared (a thing vnknowne to the Communaltie) and peace within this Realme hath since followed, which God long time continue and increase among vs.

The Earle of Essex returneth out of Ireland.

The Earle of Essex had made speciall choyce, of all the nobilitie, as well for his Martiall experience, and generall loue of all sorts of people as other wise most fit for that speciall employment, was as afore sayd sent by her Maiestie into Irelande in March last, to suppresse the strong Rebell Hugh Tyrone, whose faction at that time had almost ouer-run the whole land, and the sayd Earle of Essex hauing spent all that summer in suppressing and preuenting many Practises and Attempts of the sayd Tyrone, and being incensed by some of his vnduteful friends concerning many matters in England, whose instigations were strongly seconded by the opinion of diuers about him, besides his owne particular Iealousie, that during his absence, her Maiesties wonted kindnesse, and Princely Graces were many wayes declined, his friends discountenanced, and his hope of further preferment frustrated, for redresse whereof hee was much perplexed, and after diuers consultations with his sure friends, who dissuaded him from attempting any violent course, because the Earle meant to returne into England with three thousand choyce Souldiers and competent Leaders: making no doubt to haue friendes inough at his Arryuall for Corroboration of his plots laid against all common encounters, but when he to present well perceiued it would proue a dangerous him, disturbance of the estate, hee enclined to the aduice of Sir Christopher Blunt, and his priuate, came to the Court at Nonsuch the twentie eight of September, 1599. where hee prostrated himselfe before the Queene: who gaue him good wordes, and layd, he was welcome: and willed him to goe to his lodging, and rest him after so weary a iourney: the second of October hee was committed to the custody of the Lord Keeper. The Earle being

Eyptizent of the Earle of Essex being in England and plots laid

Mountioy and people bownded by writtenesse of the watermen following against an Insurrection.

The 11. of January, Henry Adlington, a Frenchman was hanged without the barre of Aldgate for killing of a man there, and after hanged in chaines on the Piles end.

Prisoners sent to Wisbeche Castle.

The 19. of January, 16. Priests and some lay men, were removed out of diuers prisons, in and about London, and sent from thence to the Castle of Wisbech in Cambridgeshire, where of one was a Bishop of Ireland, and another a Franciscan Fryer, of the rule of the Capuchins, which wore his Fryers weede all the way he went, a thing not seene in England many yeres before.

1600. The 23. of March being Easter day it snowed and was extreame cold, and so continued till the last of March.

It snowed on the fourth of Aprill, which whole moneth following, with also the moneth of May was cold and dry, frosts every morning (except some three dayes little raine) which coldnes of the spring, and drinesse of the ground, made men doubtfull of any good haruest to succeede, whereupon, and by meanes of some late transporting ouer the seas, procured by the Iustices of the shires, but more by vnconscionable Farmers, hoording vp their corne, badgers, and other corne-mongers, keeping the same from the Markets, or exacting what price they listed, euen vpon a sodaine, namely, Wheate was raised from 3.s.6.d. to six, seuen, and eight shillings the bushell, still increasing their price. Vntill the Queene published by Proclamation that her Maiesty had not only recommended precisely to her Councell, & other principall ministers, that all manner of graine might be kept within the Realme, but likewise directed them to punish such ingrossers, and forestallers of corne, as by greedinesse laboured to racke things vp to vnreasonable prices. &c.

Lohe the proclamation.

The 21. of June, Iohn Rigby was drawne from the Kings bench in Southwarke, to Saint Thomas Watrings, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered, for being reconciled contrary to the Statute.

Also in the moneth of July, were drawne, hanged, and quartered at Lincolne, two Priests named Hunt and Sprat, for comming into this Realme, contrary to the Statute: two other Priests, Edward Thing, and Robert Nutter were likewise executed for the like offence at Lancaster. Also Thomas Palafar a Priest executed at Durham, and a Gentleman with him, for releasing and lodging him in his house.

Souldiers sent to Ireland.

In the moneth of July, the Citizens of London set out fiue hundred souldiers into Ireland, with their furniture, also out of diuers shires were likewise furnished and set out for the warres.

Bishop of London sent Ambassador.

This yere in the moneth of Aprill, Richard Bishop of London, who with two other Commissioners, to wit, Christopher Parkins, Doctor of Law, and Doctor Swale, was sent in Ambassage to Embden, there to treate with Commissioners from the King of Denmarke, according to appointment, but the Danish Ambassadours, hauing beene there, and their Commission expired, were returned, whereupon our Ambassadors also returned into England the eight of July next following. In which seruice the sayd reuerend Father, so wisely, bountifully, and honourably behaued himselfe, that her Maiestie very graciously accepted of his proceedings.

Earle of Essex suspended from vse of Offices.

The 5. of June the Earle of Essex was called before the Councell at the Lord Keepers, where for matters layd to his charge, he was suspended from vse of diuers offices, and till her Maiesties pleasure to the contrary, to keepe his house as afore, &c.

Tempest of haile.

Vpon Wednesday the 16. of June, in the County of Norfolke, at a Towne called Ryxle, and other townes adioyning, a great tempest of haile, most of the stones as great as Walnuts, to bee taken by the fryday following by handfulls, wasted to the bignesse of hazell nuts, many of the stones the length of a mans finger, bent and rugged, the force of the fall of them was so great, that they brake the glasse Windowes of houses, beate downe the leaues of trees, store downe the weate, and hempe to a very great quantity. &c.

Conspiracy against the King of Scots.

Tuesday the 5. of August, Charles Iames King of Scots in Scotland, escaped a strange and strong conspiracy, practised by the Earle Govvry and his brother, as at large appeareth in a booke thereof extant, first published and printed in Scotland, and since in England.

Weames for an intreatie of peace to be had.

A peace being concluded at Verain in France, in the yeere 1598. betweene Henry the fourth, King of France and Nauarre, and Philip the second, King of Spaine: the Queenes Maiestie of England was likewise united by the French King, her Confederate and Allie, to dispose her selfe vnto a like treaty of Amitie with Spaine. To the effecting whereof, he had procured the consent of the King of Spain then liuing. After whose decease, Philip the third, succeeding his father in the Crowne, the same was againe renued and solicited by Andreas of Austria, the Gouernour of the Low Countries, and the Bishop of Constance, both for the house of Burgundy, and the Kingdome of Spayne, afterwards ratified by the Archduke Albert returned out of Spaine with the Infanta his wife. Vpon which former poynts made vnto her Maiestie, she was at the length induced, to condescend vnto a treaty of peace at Bologne in France, a place chosen by mutuall agreement on either side, with the assent and good liking of the French King: whither both Princes sent their Ambassadors, furnished with ample power and authoritie in that behalfe, where the English Ambassadors arriued the 16. day of May, in this present yeere of our Lord God, 1600. being the day prefixed for this assembly, and the Spanish the 17. of the same moneth. The Commissioners on the English side were these: Sir Henry Nevill Knight, her Maiesties ordinary Ambassador resident with the French King, Iohn Harbert Esquire, her Maiesties second Secretary of Estate, Robert Beale Esquire her Maiesties Secretary in the North parts, and Thomas Edmonds Esquire, her Maiesties Secretary for the French tongue. The Commissioners for Spain, were Baltazar de Caniga and Fonseca, Ambassador resident for the King of Spaine, with the Archduke of Austria in the Low

Commissioners sent ouer to intreat of a peace to be concluded

Low Countries, and Ferdinando Carillo, doctor of the Ciuill law: vnto whom were adioyned on the Archdukes part, Iohn Richardot president of the Councell of the sayd Archduke, and Lewes Verreyken the sayd Archdukes Audiencer. The Commissioners on both sides being viewed and considered of, some question for the precedency and superiority of place fell into disputation and debate, her Maiestie challenging the same as due vnto her before the time of the Emperor Charles (as appeareth by Volateran) in the time of King Henry the seauenth, her Highnesse grand father, when this selfe same difference betweene both these Crowns comming into question, the Pope preferred England, & adiudged vnto this Crowne the most honorable place. But for as much as the same was contradicted by the Spanish commissioners, who not only refused to yeeld precedencie vnto her Maiesty, but also to admit of an equality, or of any other indifferent and middle course, whereby the honour of her Maiesty might bee preserued: the present treatie (which hitherto was performed onely by some priuate visitations and conferences of some one or two of the Commissioners on either side, without comming to any Generall meeting or colloquie) was on the second day of August in the yeere aforesayd for this time delaid, and by mutuall assent of the Commissioners on both sides, according to their seuerall authorities respectiuely granted vnto them in this behalfe, suspended, vntill the end of fiftey dayes following, in which meane while it might be vnderstood what should be the determination of both Princes, for a further proceeding in the sayd colloquie of peace, at some other time and place, whereon as yet no certaine resolution hath beene hitherto taken.

Our Commissioners for peace remain and treat at France.

Ambassadors from Barbary.

The 8. of August, 1600. there arriued at Douer, Mully Hamet Xarife, Secretary & principall Ambassador from Abdola Wayhot Anowne King of Barbary, and with him in Commission two Marchants, to wit, Areathadgel Messy, and Alhadg Hamet Mimon. These with thirteene others by Sir Thomas Gerrard, Knight Marshall, diuers Gentlemen, and the chiefe Barbary Marchants were brought to London the 15. of the same moneth, being carefully prouided and lodged neere the Royall exchange in Alderman Ratcliffes house.

Within fiue dayes after that they deliuered their letters, and had audience, the Court being then at Nonsuch.

The tenth of September, they receiued answere, the Court being then at Dielands.

The seuenteenth of Nouember, being the Queens day, the Queene being then at Whitehall, a speciall place was builded onely for them neere to the parke doore, to behold that dayes triumph.

Notwithstanding all that kindnesse shewed them together with their dyet, and all other prouision for fiue moneths space, wholly at the Queenes charges: yet such was their inueterate hate vnto our Chiistian religion & estate, as they could not endure to giue any manner of almes, charity, or relefe, either in money or broken meate vnto any English poore, but reserued their fragments, and sold the same vnto such poore as would giue most for them. They kild their owne meate within their house, as theepe, lambes, poultrie, and such like, and they turne their faces Eastward when they kill any thing: they vse beades, and pray to Saints: and whereas the chiefe pretence of their Embassy was to require continuance of her Maiesties speciall fauour towards their King, with like entreaty of her Naual ayd, for sundry speciall vses, chiefly to secure his Treasure from the parts of Guynea, &c. yet the English Marchants held it otherwise, by reason that during their halfe yeeres abode in London, they vsed all subtilty and diligence to know the prises, waights, measures, and all kindes of differences of such commodities, as either their Countrie sent hither, or England transported thither: they carried with them all sorts of English waights, measures, and samples, of commodities. And being returned, it was supposed they poysoned their interpreter, being borne in Granado, because he commended the estate and bounty of England, the like violence was thought to be done vnto their reuerend aged pilgrime, lest he also should manifest Englands honor to their disgrace, it was generally iudged by their demeanors that they were rather espials, then honorable Ambassadors, for they omitted nothing that might dammifie the English Marchants.

It was an abhominable vse to them to giue any kind of almes vnto Christians.

This aged pilgrime had bin twice in pilgrimage at Mahomets Tombe, and therfore they highly reuenced him, as they doe all others in like cases.

In the moneth of September, souldiers prest in, and about the City of London, to the number of three hundred and fifty maisterlesse men, vagrant persons: and such like out of other parts of this Realme to be sent into Ireland: diuers of them running from their Captaines and colours, being afterward taken, were hanged for example to other.

Souldiers sent to Ireland.

Ambassadors from the new Emperor of Russia.

The Lord Boris Pheodorowich hauing by many deuices won the peoples hearts. After he had as he supposed made away Demetrius, the immediate heire, vpon the death of Pheodor Vasilouvich, his generall loue and reputation was such among the common people together with all other the principall officers of Estate, which by his meanes onely obtained their preferment, who strongly help together to the discountenancing and displacing the auncient nobility, was by the vyce of his generall faction chosen Emperor of Russia, which after a faint refusall, he accepted. And then with all expedition sent his Ambassadors vnto such Princes as he knew most imminent and propicious for his present fortunes. The 18. of September 1600. his Ambassadour with twenty persons arryued at London. The 14. of October, he had audience, and deliuered his Letters, wherein the new Emperor, otherwise generally, and more truely termed the great Duke, signified his speciall desire of amitie with her Maiestie, with what fauours hee had done and would doe vnto her subiects, confirming their Charter, and admitting them free passage vnder his golden Seale, manifesting therwithall with what agenerall

neral consent, or rather compulsion of the whole Nobility and Commons, besides the earnest desire of the reuerend Clergie, and their most holy Patriarch, hee tooke vpon him that dignitie, arrogating vnto himselfe, an hereditary interest vnto the Crown: amongst other things he desired the Queen to send him some men of quality, as Doctors of Physicke, learned men, and skilfull Artificers, into whom he promised kind entertainment, and condigne reward. Concerning the rest of this smooth-face usurping Tyrant, looke in the 3. yeere of King Iames: his Ambassadour was very honorably entertained, feasted, and entreated by the Queene, and as kindly vsed and dieted for 8. moneths space, at the sole charges of the companie of the Muscouie Marchants, and then returned.

Trinitie hospitall in Croidon founded.

This yeere the most reuerend Father John Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterbury, did finish that notable and memorable monument of our time, to wit, his Hospitall of the holy Trinitie in Croyden, in the County of Surry, by him there founded and builded of stone, and bricke, for releefe and sustentation of certaine poore people. As also a faire Schoole-house for the increase of litterature, together with a large dwelling house for the Schoole-master his vse, and these premises he thrugh Gods fauourable assistance in his owne life time performed and perfited, for that (as my selfe haue heard him say) hee would not vse to his executors, a cause of their damnation, remembring the good aduice that the auncient Father hath left written to all posteritie: *Tutior via est vt bonum quod quisquis post mortem sperat agi per alios, agat dum vivit ipse per se*: It is a way more safe for a man to doe good and charitable deeds by himselfe whilest hee liueth, then to hope that others will doe the same for him after his death.

Gregory.

An. reg. 43.

On Thursday the thirteenth of Nouember, her Maiestie being most honourably attended on, by the Prelates, Nobles, and Iudges of the Realme, was receiued neere vnto Chelsey, by the Lord Maior of London, with his brethren the Aldermen all in Scarlet, besides to the number of 500. Citizens in coats of velues, and chaines of gold, on horseback, euery of them hauing two faire torches to attend on them; And they all waited on her, to her Royall Palace at Westminster.

Tempest.

The first of February in the morning, being Sunday, a great tempest of Wind beyond S. Giles field without London, towardes Tyborne, brake the Wind-mill there, the Miller was throwne one way, another man another way, one towards the North, the other South, a part of the mill-roofe, and halfe the millstone, on the like manner throwne one way, the other halfe another way.

Galleys prepared by the Citizens of London.

The Citizens of London, were by the Queen commaunded, to cause certaine Gallies to bee made and furnished to Sea, towards Charges whereof, three fifteenes were at that time collected of the Citizens.

Muscouites hunted in Marybone Parke.

The third of February, the Ambassadours from the Emperour of Russia, and other the Priuentes, rode through the Citie of London to Marie-bone Parke, and there hunted at their pleasure, and ghostly after returned homeward.

Crosse in Cheape repaired.

The Crosse in West Cheap of London, was by commandement of the Queene, and letters from her Maesties honourable Councell, to sir William Rider, then Lord Maior, partly repaired, the old Crosse on the top being rotten, was taken downe, a new Crosse of tymber guilded, the body of the Crosse downeward, was cleansed of dust, &c.

The comming of the Earle of Essex into London.

Sunday the 8. of February, 1600. the Earle of Essex vpon the aduise of his friends, came to London about ten a clocke, assisted with the chiefe gallants of the time, viz. the Earle of Southampton, Sir Charles Danuers, Sir Christopher Blunt, Robert Caresby, and many others, and as they passed Fleetestreete, cryed, for the Queene, for the Queene, and in other places they sayd, that Cobham and Rawleigh, would haue murdered the Earle of Essex in his bed: the generall multitude being entirely affected to the Earle, sayd, that the Queene, and the Earle were made friends, and that her Maiestie had appointed him to ride in that triumphant manner through London, vnto his house in Seeding lane, and at the way he went, the people cryed, God saue your honour, God blesse your honor, &c.

The Lord Maior being at Paules Crosse, receiued warning from the Councell, to looke to the City, and by 11. of the clocke the gates were shut and strongly guarded.

The Earle kept his course towardes Fan-Church, and entred into maister Thom. Smiths house, Sheriffe of London, where the Earle dranke, in which space the Sheriffe went out at a backe doore vnto the Lord Maior, offering his seruice and requiring direction.

The Earle went into an armorers house, requiring munition, which was denied him: from thence the Earle went to 4 fro, and then came backe to Grace Church streete, by which time the Lord Burghley was come thither, hauing there in the Queenes Name proclaimed the Earle and all his company traytors, as hee had done before in Cheape side.

At hearing whereof, one of the Earles followers shotte a Pistoll at the Lord Burghley, whereupon hee well perceiuing the stout resolution of the Earles followers, together with the peoples great vnwillingnesse, either to appreheud the Earle or ayde him, returned to the Court, assuring the Queene, that notwithstanding the great loue the Londoners bare vnto the Earle, yet they will not ayde him. The Court being now fortified, and double guarded, the streetes in diuers places set full of emptie Carts and Coaches, to stoppe the Earles passage, if hee should attempt to come that way.

Pou are to vnderstand, before that the Earle came foorth of his house, the Queene vpon Iealousie that the Earle intended some practise, by reason that but the night before, being by the Councell required to come to Court, which in plaine

Plaine termes hee refused, sent vnto him the Lord Keeper, the Lord chiefe Iustice, Sir William Knowles, and the Earle of Worcester, not by ming then a Councellor of estate, to conferre with him, whilest some further course might be taken, concerning the Earle, the which said Councellors of estate, being come to Essex house, the Earle entertained them kindly, saying, he was sory he could not stay with them, bcing now a going to take order with the Lord Maior of London, but he would presently returne vnto them, commanding his chiefe seruants to attend, and keepe them safe vntill his returne, hoping to haue found them there when he came backe, and by them to haue made his peace with the Queene, but whilest he was in London, they were enlarged.

The Earle repulsed.

About two of the clocke, the Earle hauing passed to and fro through diuers streetes, and beeing forsaken of diuers his gallant followers, hee resolued to make his merest way home, and comming towardes Ludgate, hee was strongly resisted by diuers companies of well armed men, leuyed, and placed there by the Lord Maior of London, then he retired thence, Sir Christopher Blunt being taken, and sore wounded in the head, from thence the Earle went into Fryday streete, and being spent, desired drinke, which was giuen him, and at his request vnto the Citizens, the great chayne which crosseth the street, was held vp to giue him passage, after that hee tooke Boat at Queenehith, and so came to his house, where mustring the aforenamed Councellors, fortified his house with full purpose to die in his owne defences.

The Earle perceiueth himselfe.

But when he beheld the great Artillery, and the Queenes forces round about the house, being sore vexed with the cryes of Ladies: about ten of the clocke at night, he yalded himselfe vnto the Lord Admiral, earnestly desiring his tryall to be seuere, and honourable, which was performed.

Amongst others his faithfull followers, Captaine Owen Salsbury, seeing all hopes frustrate, stood openly in a Window bare headed, of purple to be slaine, and one in the streete hit him in the toe of his boot, with a Musket Bullet, Oh quoth Salsbury, that thou hadst beene so much my friend, to haue hit but a little lower: shot the next morning of that hurt.

From this time vntill all arraignements, and executions were past, the Citizens were exceedingly troubled, and charged with double watches, and wardings, as well about the Court as the City.

Captain Tho. Lee executed.

The 17. of February, Captain Thomas Lee, was drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, and quartered, being before condemned, for conspiracy against the Queene, about deliuerance of the Earle of Essex out of the Towers: he tooke his death constantly, confessing he had diuers wayes deserued it, but to be innocent of that he was condemned for, &c.

John Pybush executed.

The 18. of February, John Pybushe a Seminary Priest, after 7. yeeres imprisonment in the Kings Bench, was hanged, bowelled, and quartered, at S. Thomas Waterings, for comming into England, contrary to the statute of Anno 27. of the Queene.

The Earles of Essex and Southampton arraigned.

The 19. of February, the Earle of Essex, and the Earle of Southampton were arraigned at Westminster, they were lawfully and seuerally inuited. The cheefe points were for holding of priuate Counsels, conspiring to oppresse the Queene of life and gouernment, for attempting to surprise the person of the Queene at White-hall: the imprisoning of the Lords, which the Queene sent vnto him as his good friends vpon the day of his rising, and his perswading them to stand for him: his warlike entrance into London, and to surprise the Tower: vnto all which they pleaded not guiltie, and very willingly submitted themselues to be tryed by their Peeres. Their tryers were twenty seuen in number, viz. 8. Earles, one Viscount, and 15. Barons: there were present diuers others of right honorable name and quality, besides the reuerend Iudges of the Law; at this arraignement the Lord Buckhurst, Lord high Treasurer of England, was then Lord Steward. The prisoners were found guiltie, and the sentence of death was pronounced against them. This arraignement begun about nine a clocke in the morning, and continued vntill neere at night, where there there was a world of people pressing to see the event. The prisoners demeaned themselues very temperately, and discreetly, and gaue the Queene and the Lords most humble and hearty thankes for so speedy and honorable a tryall.

The newes of all this dayes businesse, was soudainly diuulged throughout London, where at many for ioyfull their suppers, and ran hastily into the streets to see the Earle of Essex, as he returned to the Tower, who went a swift pace, bending his face towards the earth, and would not looke vpon any of them, though some spake directly to him, concerning which, with other passages, and the Earles obiections and answeres, &c. I haue written a more large discourse, according to the generall expectation, whereunto, by multitudes I haue beene instantly prayed, but for diuers reasons it must bee omitted at this time, therefore let this suffice without taring.

Earle of Essex executed.

The 25. of February, being Ashwednesday, about 8. of the clocke in the morning, was the sentence of death executed vpon Robert Deuereux Earle of Essex, within the Tower of London, where a scaffold being set vp in the court, and a some neere vnto the place, whereon sat the Earles of Cumberland, and Hartford, the Lord Vice-count Bindon, the Lord Thomas Howard, the Lord Darcy, & the Lord Crompton: The Lieutenant with some 18. Partizans of the guard was sent for the prisoner, who came in a Gowne of wrought Velues, a blacke Sattin iute, a Felt hat blacke, and a little Ruffe about his necke, accompanied from his chamber with three Diuines, Doctor Montford, Doctor Barlow, and Master Albon his Chaplaine: them hee had requested not to part from him, but

Tho. Montford
W. Barlow.

but obserue him, and recall him, if either his eye, countenance, or speech, should bewray any thing which might not beseeme him for that time: All the way hee behaued the Preacher to pray for him, and so arriuing on the Scaffold, he vayled his hat, and with obeysance vnto the Lords, to his estate he spake, viz.

His confession.

My Lords, and you my Christian brethren, who are to be witnesses of this my last punishment, I confesse to the glory of God, that I am a most wretched sinner, and that my sins are more in number then the haires of my head; I confesse that I haue bestowed my youth in wantonnesse, lust, and vnchastnesse; that I haue beene puffed vp with pride, vanitie, and loue of this worlds pleasures, and that notwithstanding diuers good motions inspired into me from the Spirit of God: The good which I would, I haue not done, and the euill which I would not, that haue I done. For all which I humbly beseech my Sauiour Christ, to bee a mediatour to the eternall Maiestie for my pardon especially for this my last and this great, this bloody, this crying, this inuterate sinne, whereby so many haue for loue to mee beene drawne to offend God, to offend their Soueraigne, to offend the world: I beseech God to forgiue it vs, and to forgiue it me, most wretched of all. I beseech her Maiestie, and the Estate, and ministers thereof, to forgiue it vs, and I beseech God to send her Maiestie a prosperous raigne, and a long, if it be his will: My Lords grant her a safe and vnderstanding heart: And God blesse her, and the Nobles, and the Ministers of the Church and State. And I beseech you and the world, to hold a charitable opinion of mee, for my intention toward her Maiestie, whose death I protest I neuer meant, nor violence towards her person: I neuer wisht, I thanke God Almighty, nor beleeuing the words and Scriptures: neither Papist, trusting in mine owne merits, but hope for saluation from God, onely by the mercy and merites of my Sauiour Christ Iesus. This faith was I brought by in, and herein I am now ready to die: beseeching you all to ioyne your soules with mine in prayer, that my soule may be lifted vp by faith aboue all earthly things in my prayers. For now I will giue my selfe to my priuate prayer: yet for that I beseech you to ioyne with mee, I will speake that you may heare me. And here as he turned himselfe aside to put off his Gowne, Doctor Montford desired him to remember to pray to God to forgiue all his enemies, if he had any: To whom he answered, I thanke you for it: and so turned himselfe against to the Lords and the rest, he said: I desire all the world to forgiue me, euen as I doe freely, and from my heart forgiue all the world. Then putting off his Gowne and Ruffe, and presenting himselfe before the blocke, kneeling downe, hee was by Doctor Barlow encouraged against the feare of death. To whom he answered, That hauing beene diuers times in places of danger, where death was neither so present, nor yet so certaine, he had felt the weaknesse of the flesh, and therefore new in this great conflict, desired God to assist and strengthen him: and so with eyes fixed on heauen, after some passionate prayer, and breathings, he began his Prayer in effect following.

His prayer.

O God, Creator of all things, and iudge of all men, thou hast let mee know by warrant out of thy word, that Satan is then most busie when our ends is nearest, and that Satan being resisted will flee. I humbly beseech thee to assist me in this my last Combat: and seeing thou accepteſt euen of our desires, as of our acts: accept I beseech thee, of my desires to resist him as of true resistance, and perfect, by thy grace, what thou seeſt in my flesh to bee fraile and weake, giue me patience to beare as becometh me, this iust punishment inflicted vpon me by so honourable a tryall: Grant me the inward comfort of thy Spirit: let thy Spirit seale vnto my soule an assurance of thy manifolde Mercies: Lift my soule aboue all earthly cogitations: and when my life and body shall part, Send thy blessed Angels, which may receiue my soule, and conuey it to thy ioyes in Heauen. He was wonderous patient and penitent.

When concluding his prayer for all estates of the Realme, hee shut vp all with the Lords prayer, reiterating this petition: Lord Iesus forgiue vs our trespasses, Lord Iesus receiue my soule: Then desiring to be informed what was fit for him to doe for disposing himselfe fitly for the blocke, the executioner on his knees presented himselfe, asking him forgiuenesse: to whom the Earle sayd, I forgiue thee, thou art welcome into me, thou art the Minister of Iustice. At which time Doctor Montford requested him to rehearse the Creed, which he did, repeating euery Article after the Diuines. So opening and putting of his doublet, he was in a Scarlet Wastcoate, and then ready to lie downe, he sayd he would only stretch foorth his armes, and spread them abroad, for then he was ready: so bowing toward the blocke, the Doctors requested him to say the two first verses of the 51. Psalme, which he did: and then inclining his body, hee sayd: In humility and obedience to thy Commandement, in obedience to thy Ordinance, to thy good pleasure O God, I prostrate my selfe to my deserued punishment: Lord be merciful to thy prostrate seruant so lying flat along on the boordes, and laying downe his head, and fitting it vpon the blocke, stretched out his armes, with these words, which hee was requested to say, Lord into thy hands I commend my spirit. His head was seuered from his body by the Axe, at three strokes, but the first deadly and absolutely deprauing all since, and motion. The hangman was beaten as he returned thence, so that the Sheriffs of London were called to assist and rescue him, from such as would haue murthered him.

Priests executed.

The 27. of February, Marke Fokworth, and Thomas Filcock, Seminary Priests, were drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, and quartered, for comming into the Realme contrary to the Statute. Also the same day and in the same place, was hanged a Gentlewoman, called Pikeris Anne Line, a widdow, for relieuing a Priest contrary to the same Statute.

A Gentlewoman hanged.

One hanged for libelling.

The last of February, a young man named Woodhouse, was hanged in Smithfield, for speaking and libelling against the Queenes Proclamation, and apprehending of the Earle of Essex.

Ambassadors from Scotland.

The 5. of March, the Earle of Marre, the Lord of Knowtors, Ambassadors, and others in Commission out of Scotland, came to London, and were lodged by the Exchange, in the house of Anthony Radcliffe late Alderman.

Merike and Cuffe executed.

The 13. of March, Sir Gilley Merike Knight, and Henry Cuffe Gentleman, were drawne to Tyborne, the one from the Tower, the other from Newgate, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered, as being actors with the late Earle of Essex. They both died very resolutely.

The speeches of Sir Charles Danuers and Sir Christopher Blunt at the time of their execution.

Sir Charles Danuers the 18. of March, 1600 being brought from the Tower vnto the new built scaffold vpon Tower hill, ascended the place wonderous cheerefully, and after a while, when hee had saluted many of his friendes, namely, amongst others, Sir Henry Carew, vnto whom he vsed some speech, but vnderstanding that the Lord Gray was there on horseback neere the scaffold, and hauing saluted him, sayd, I haue already spoken something vnto Sir Henry Carew, concerning your Lordship, which I prayed him to tell you: but seeing your Lordship present, I will tell it you my selfe, speaking to this effect: my Lord Gray, I am perswaded that your Lordship since the quarrell betweene you and my Lord of Southampton, thought me to haue borne you great malice, I must confesse you had some cause to thinke so, and yet I protest the ill will I bare you, proceeded not out of any cause giuen me by your Lordship, for any thing that concerned my selfe, for you neuer iniured mee, it was onely my loue to my Lord of Southampton, to whom I acknowledge my selfe so much beholding, as to no man I could beare more, and this it was which drew me into that cause against you: indeed I knew that my Lord of Southampton accounted of you, as of one by whom hee held himselfe to bee iniured, and that was cause enough for mee not to loue you as you otherwise deserued. And my Lord I must confesse, that I had alwayes more reason to loue my Lord of Southampton, then I had to loue your Lordship, and both your loues I could not retaine, as the case stood betweene you: But howsoeuer, I doe now very heartily and humbly beseech your Lordship to forgiue me: Then the Lord Gray said, I do forgiue you with all my heart, and intreat you that it may not trouble you at this time, but to proceede in what you haue else to say. Then Sir Charles sayd, I am come hither to pay a double debt, one to nature, which is my death, the other to law, which is the forme of my death, and though in the eye of the Law, I am iustly condemned, yet in my owne conscience, which is onely knowne to Almighty God, of whose power any iustice I am not ignorant, and in whose presence I now speake, I am cleare of any intent of violence to be offered to her Maiesties person, or harme to my Country, which I haue euer held deere. Then he pawsed a while as not knowing what to say next, which hee did diuers times, and after that began againe saying, that since his imprisonment, it hadde pleased God to touch his heart, and to let him know the grieuousnesse of his sinnes, especially this great offence against God, her Maiestie and his Country, and to giue him a repentant and sorrowfull heart, most humbly craning pardon of Almighty God for all his sinnes, and pardon of the Queene for this offence, and most humbly and heartily thanked the Maiestie of God for the affiance which he had giuen him of his saluation in Iesus Christ, by the merites of whose death and passion all his sins were pardoned, in which faith he prayed and dyed constantly. These and many other such Christian speeches he vsed, which gaue full satisfaction to the auditory of his penitence and Christian piety. And hauing prayed for the preseruation of his Prince and Country, from danger of all forreyne and domestique enemies. When the Sheriffe commanded him to bee short, hauing vsed the like words diuers times before, saying, time was farre spent, well quoth hee, I haue but this to say: That I forgiue all the world, and pray you all to forgiue me. There are many of my friendes, to whom I am much bound for very great kindnesses, if I had liued, I would by Gods grace haue made requitall, and now I desire them to accept my good will and thankes, and amongst the rest I hold my selfe very much beholding to my Lord Burley, and desire that my thankefull minde may bee made knowne vnto him, with my humble commendations, and to will that those of my kindred and posterity would acknowledge it and requit it as farre as they may: and therewith taking his leaue of his friends, namely of the Lord Gray, to whom hee most bent his speech, hauing put off his Gowne and Doublet in milk cheerefull manner, rather like a Bridegroome, then a prisoner appointed for death, prayed very deuoutly, kneeling before the blocke, expressing all signes of true deuotion, his prayer ended, vpon the sudden, as if hee had flowne, thrust his necke vpon the blocke, and whilest he there held it seemed to smile, his head was cut off at one stroke, leauing a little which an officer cut off with his knife. It was obserued as he spake, that although the flesh of his cheekes trembled, yet were al his speeches, lookes, and behauiour such, as gaue the world full satisfaction, that hee dyed religious and resolute, his head and body being drawne aside and couered ouer with strawe, and all signes of any execution beeing cleane removed.

Then Sir Christopher Blunt who abode an houre pale, was brought from the Gate-house in Westminster, and was priuately kept in a house neere the Tower-hill vntill Sir Charles was executed, but knew not so much, and being ascended the scaffold, he was desirous to speake,

and vnderstanding that the Lord Gray, and sir Walter Rawleigh, were neare vnto the Scaffold he made a speech vnto them, the summe whereof was in these words saying.

When the Earle of Essex was in Ireland, and had the consent of his secret friends and Councell, to haue returned into England with 3000. of the best souldiers and chiefe Leaders, & by them with other his assured friends which he doubted not to find at his arrivall, to haue made his way to the Queene, to haue redressed all his wrongs, &c. From the which I only disswaded him, shewing him reason and good proofe, that it was too apparent to proue a more bloody course then could bee expressed, wishing him to goe peaceably, and speedily, only with two or three of his friends and knele before the Queene, the which hee did as you all knowe, and what became of it you all saw. And now lastly, when my Lord tolde mee my former Counsell had preuented him of his brauenes, and that hee was resolued to take his course as he did, I then answered, I would not crosse his purpose any more, and so came with him into London, being very glad that God preuented our determinations, for that I now see it would haue proued farre more dangerous and bloody then at first could haue beene discerned, &c. after that he asked forgiuenesse of God and the Queene, and of the Lord Gray, Sir Walter Rawleigh, and of all others, desiring the world to witnesse hee dyed a Catholique: then prayed kneeling, which done fitted his head to the blocke, and received the stroke of death.

Galleys set out.

In the moneth of May, fiue fifteenes were soiled in London, towards setting out of Galleys to the Seas (as was appointed by the Queene) and charges about the Earle of Essex when he entred the City.

1601

The 20. of June, Proclamation was made at London, for deliuerance of prisoners, to serue in the Galleyes, made at charges of the Citizens.

Men on the pillory with gags in their mouthes.

Two men were set on the Pillory in Fleetstreete, whipped with gags in their mouthes, and their eares cut off, for attempting to haue robbed a Gentlewoman in Felster lane, in the day time, hauing put gags in the mouthes of the seruants of that house, because they should not cry: one of those theeues was afterwardes hanged and quartered at Saint Thomas Waterings.

Earles of Shrewsbury and Worcester of Councell.

Gilbert Talbot, Earle of Shrewsbury, Edward Earle of Worcester, and Sir Iohn Stanhope, were called to be of the Queenes Councell.

Souldiers into the low Countries.

This moneth of June was very cold frosts euery morning.

In the moneth of July, one thousand souldiours were prepared and sent to the Lowe Countries, set out at the charges of the Citizens of London, three pound tenne shillings a man: more, eight thousand Souldiours were set out by the Shires abroad in the Country.

Desmond brought out of Ireland.

The 26. of August, Desmond and another Knight, sent out of Ireland, were conueyed to the Tower of London.

The Duke of Biron and other Noble men of France.

About the 5. of September, certaine Noble men, and other of France, to the number of 300 persons, arriued at the Tower wharfe, the chiefe of them were conueyed in Coaches from thence through the Citie, into Lincolnes-gate streete, and there the principall, namely Marshall de Biron, was lodged in Crosby place, the other neere adioyning in Cornehill.

The principall Noblemen, and Gentlemen of France were these.

Mounsieur Duke of Biron, Marshall of France, the Kings Lieutenant of the Countie of Burgon and Brest.

Mounsieur the Prince of Auergne, the Kings Lieutenant in Auergne, and Limcler, ballard to Charles of Valois late King of France.

Mounsieur Duke of Aumont, Knight of the Order of the Holy Ghost, Marshall of the field, and Captaine of 50. men of armes.

Mounsieur, Earle of Pauabene, Lieutenant of the Countie of Poicten and Berie.

Mounsieur Earle of Croque, Lieutenant of the Countie Valentinois, Captaine of 50. men of armes.

Mounsieur Earle of S. Mary, Gouernour of Roan, and Captaine of the Kings guards.

Mounsieur Earle of Vignolet, Campe-master and Gentleman of the Kings Chamber.

Mounsieur Earle of Guerson, Marquesse of Saint Pont, and Lieutenant of the Country of Bourbon.

Mounsieur Lord Baron of Biron, brother to the Duke of Biron, Campe-master for the King of 1500. footmen.

Mounsieur Baron of Tornes, Cozonell of all the horsemen in France.

Mounsieur Baron of the Signory, Viscount of Pleine, Captaine of 1200. men.

Mounsieur Viscount of Sardigne, a Gentleman of the Kings Chamber.

Mounsieur Viscount of Cassaneule, Gouernor of Cinquantine.

Mounsieur Baron of Ferre, Captaine of 50. men.

Mounsieur Baron of Pansacke, of Ceane, vpon Loire.

Mounsieur Lord Baron de la Barre, Campmaster and Captaine of 1000. men.

Mounsieur Baron of Rurdire, Campmaster of 1000. men.

Mounsieur Baron of Cuelles, Lieutenant of the Leune of Poullirs.

Mounsieur Baron of Bullogne.

Mounsieur Baron of Moralles.

Mounsieur Baron of Delbine.

Mounsieur de Verdon, Gouernor of Barreau.

Gentlemen of the Kings Chamber.

M. de Fraige.
M. de Stroffe.
M. de Narnes.
M. de Padamestia.
M. de Gattonois.
M. de Peneste.
M. de Monplaiger.

Besides 30. Gentlemen attending the Duke Biron, 8. officers, 3. Pages, and fiue Ladies.

Tennis

Ten Gentlemen for euery Duke and Earle foure Officers, two Pages, and three Ladies.

Sixe for euery Baron, three Officers, one Page, two Ladies.

Euery one of the rest had three seruants, and three Ladies.

The Queene Progresseth into Hamphire.

The sayd 21. of September, the Queene in her Progresse entred into Hamphire, and vpon Ch. Ichester heath was receiued by the Shrieffe of that shire, Francis Palmes, accompanied by many Gentlemen of accompt in the same shire, so that her Maiestie sayd she was neuer so honorably receiued into any shire, for as Hamphire is a Country pleasant of soile, & full of delights for Princes of this land, who often make their Progresses thither, so it is well inhabited by auncient Gentlemen, cuillly educated, and who liue in great amity together. Her Maiestie was that night attended on to Basing, a house of the Lord Parquesses, where thee tooke such great content, alwell with the seat of the house, as honourable carriage of the worthy Lady Lucie, Marquesse of Winchester, that thee stayed there thirteene dayes, to the great charge of the sayd Lord Marquesse. The fourth day after the Queene comming to Basing, the sayd Shrieffe was commanded to attend the Duke of Biron at his comming into that Country: where vpon the next day being the tenth of September, he went towardes Black water, being the vttermost confines of that shire, towards London, and there met the sayd Duke, accompanied with a bone 20. of the Nobility of France, and attended on with about 400. Frenchmen, who were met by George Earle of Cumberland, and by him conducted from London into Hamshire. The sayd Duke was that night brought to the Vine, a faire and large house of the Lord Sands which house was furnished with hangings and plate, from the Tower, and Hampton-Court, and with seuen score beds, and furniture which the willing and obedient people of the Country of Southampton vpon two dayes warning had brought in thither to lend the Queene. The Duke abode there 4. or 5 dayes, all at the Queenes charges, and spent her more at the Vine, then her owne Court for that time spent at Basing. During her abode there, her Maiestie went to him to the Vine, and he to her to Basen, and one day he attended her at Basen-parke on hunting, where the Duke stayed her comming, and did there as her in such Royalty, and so attended by the Nobility, so coftly furnished, and mounted, as the like had seldome bin seene: but when she came to the place where the Duke staied, the sayd Shrieffe (as the maner is being bare headed, and riding next before her, stayed his horse, thinking the Queene would then haue saluted the Duke, wherat the Queen being much offended, commanded the shrieffe to goe on: the Duke following her very humbly bowing low towards his horse mane, with his cap off, about 20. yards, her Maiesty on the sudden tooke of her maske, looked backe vpon him, and most graciously and courteously saluted him, as holding it not beseeming so mighty a Prince as shee was and who so well knew all Kingly Maiestie, to make her stay directly against a lubiect, before he had shewen his obedience in following after her. She tarried at Basen 13 dayes as is aforesayd, being very well contented with all things there done: affirming she had done that in Hamshire that none of her ancestors euer did, neither that any Prince of Christendome could do: that shee had in her Progresse, in her subiects houses entertained a royall Embassador, and had royally entertained him. At her departure from Basen being the eighteenth of September, she made ten Knights (hauing none) in all her raigne made at one time so many before) whose names were, Sir Edward Cicell, second sonne to the Lord Burley: Sir Edward Hyngerford, next heyre to the Lord Hyngerford: Sir Edward Bainton of Willtshire, Sir W. Ingefild, sir Care Rawleigh, Sir Francis Palmes, then Shrieffe of the shire: Sir Beniamin Tichborne: sir Hamden Paulet: Sir Rich. Norton of Hampshire: Sir Francis Stoner of Oxfordshire: and Sir Edmond Lutcovv of Willtshire. That day shee went from Basen toward Farnham, a Castle belonging to the See of Winchester, and in her way to Farnham, she knighted Sir Richard White in his owne house, hauing feasted her and her traine very Royally, neere vnto which towne the Shrieffe of Hamphire tooke his leaue and the Shrieffe of Surrey met her: but the Shrieffe of Hamphire, and the Gentlemen of that Country went to Farnham by command, and there attended the next day, where they were feasted and kindly entertained, by the learned Prelate Doctor Bilton Bishop of Winchester, vpon whose onely commendation, two ancient and worthy Gentlemen of Hamshire, sir Rich. Mill, and Sir William Vdall, received there the dignity of Knighthood. And thus much for that progresse to be noted.

Words of the Queene at Basen.

Knights made at Basen.

Souldiers sent into Ireland.

About the 13. of October, 400. Souldiours were sent out of the Citie of London towards Ireland.

17. poore people crushed to death.

The 13. of Nouember, the Lady Mary Ramsey, widow to Sir Thomas Ramsey, sometime Maior of London, was buried in the Parish Church of Hospital of Christ Church by Newgate market. A charitable deale of almes, was giuen for her on the same day in the afternoone at Leaden-hall, where seuenteene poore and weake people were among the sturdy beggars, crushed and troden to death.

Parliament dissolued.

The 19. of December, after the graunting of foure great subsidies, and eight fifteenes, the Parliament was dissolued.

An. Reg. 44. Lightning; and thunder at Christmas

Lightning and thunder oftentimes before Christmas, and in Christmas holydayes, and an earthquake at London on Christmas eue at none.

Victories in Ireland.

Of the late long warres in Ireland vnder the Earle of Essex, and then the Lord Mountioy, Generalls, haue I hitherto received small intelligence, worth the noting and therefore in this place, I thinke good to set downe the copie

of a letter from a souldier of good place in Ireland to his friend in London, touching the notable victory of her Maiesties forces there, against the Spaniards, and Irish rebels, and of the yeelding vp of Kynsale, and other places there held by the Spanyards, dedicated to Sir W.D. Knight.

Sir, in my last of the 19. of December, I wrote to you at large of the arriuall of the new supplie of Spaniards at Castle-hauen, Baltymore and Berehauen, and of their intents and beginnings to fortifie, in all those three important places. Likewise that Sr Richard Leuison towing out of Kynsale hauen against wind and weather, fought with them within Castle hauen most valiantly, and of their shippes being fire, smoke and made vnseruiceable flue: the men being most landed before he could come to them, by reason of the weather, and beating vpon him very daungerously from the land with their ordinance. That they were sayd to bee two thousand in number, with great store of ordinance and munition, and that as they reported, some thousands moe were comming after. That a great part of the Irishry of Munster becommen Rebels of new, were reuolted to them, and receiued into the King of Spaines pay. That Odonell with good forces of horse and foote out of the North, by the benefite of the then extreame and sudden frost, gat passage almost vnlooked for by him else, and slipping by the Lord President of Munster (who was sent to impeach him) with such forces as could be spared from the Army, was ioyned with them. That Tyrone with Orourcke, Redman Bourke, Mac Guyre, Mac Mahone, Randall Mac Surley, Oconor, Slygoes brother, Tyrell the Barron of Lixenho, and the rest of the old fugitiue Rebells of Munster, with the greatest and choicest force that was euer amassed in Ireland, were drawne neere our Campe. And that these all together with sir ensignes of those newly arriued Spaniards, in all to the number of 6000. foote, and 500. horse, by Powle, were on foote ready to march towardes Kynsale and our Campe, with intent and most assured confident hope, with helpe of them in the Towne, which should haue sallyed out on the Campe, vpon the attempt of Tyrone and Odonell, and were aboue 2000. Spaniards, almost all olde Souldiers, aswell to releeue and rescue the Towne, as to remoue our siege, and vtterly to breake, dishonour, and defeate vs. And truely Sir, when I did then consider, on the one side this great strength, the newly ioyned men and horses to bee all fresh, bigorous, and strong, hauing all the Country open to them, abounding with victualls, forrages, armies, munition, and all furnitures: those in the Towne, the most of them experienced Souldiers, well armed, and in no such want as was supposed: On the other side, our men in numbers scant equall to them, all almost tyred and wearied out with the misery of a long Winters siege, our horses decayed, leane and very weake, our best meanes of victualls and forrage likely to bee cut from vs, with many other impediments whereof I speake not; When I say, I well waged and pondred with my selfe these points, and layed together withall, this one of great importance, that when we should bee forced (as it was likely) to answere three forces at once, one from the Towne, another without, a great part of our men were like enough to thinke, or at least not to sticke firmely to vs, (which by good coniectures I could make probable to you,) Blame me not if vpon these considerations I wrote to you then somewhat distrustfully of our estate, as touching indeed our liues and honours, this seruice, and by consequence this whole Country likely to bee put to an vnequall iumpe. And so I may well say they were, although by the goodnesse of God especially, and by the most vigilant circumspection and valiant prowesse of our worthy Generall, thinges out of these difficulties, haue now fozed to so happy successe, as by that which followeth you shall sufficiently perceiue. To continue therefore my accustomed relation to you, and to begin from that sayd day of the 19. of December. It may please you to know, that on the Sunday the 20. we still plying our attempts to the Towne, with face and shew as though wee nothing cared for Tyrone and his company, at night certaine intelligence was brought vs, that hee would bee the next night within a mile and a halfe of vs, with all the aboue recited forces. And accordingly vpon Munday the twenty one towardes night, hee shewed himselfe with most part of his horse & foote on a hill betweene our Campe and Corke, a myle off vs. At which time seeing two Regiments of our foote, and some horse drawne out of our Campe, and making a resolute march towardes him, hee fell backe to the other side of the hill, where he encamped that night, strengthened with a fastnesse of Wood, and Water. Whereby though his retire might bee imputed to some touch of credite, yet had he this aduauntage, that hee might keepe from our Army, all passages and meanes of forrage; The other side ouer the Riuer of Ovvnibuoye being wholly at his disposition, by reason of the generall reuolt of those parts.

On Tuesday the 22. some of Tyrones horse and foote made show againe in the place where they had done the day before, and that night were some of their horse and 500. foot discouered, searching if they might finde fit way to the Towne.

On wednesday the 23. aswell by intelligences otherwise as by letters of Don Iohn d'Aquila, Generall of the Spaniardes, and Captaines of the Towne newly intercepted, wee found that hee had importuned Tyrone and his company very much, to giue an attempt vpon our Campe; intimating vnto them his owne necessity, and likelihood to bee shortly forced within the towne, their faithfull promises to succour him, the facility and vndoubted successe of the enterprize, he assuring them, that

our numbers could not be but much lessened, and those that were remaining, greatly decayed and weakened with the long Winter siege, so that it was not possible wee should be able to maintaine so much ground as wee had taken when our strength was full, if they on the one side, and he on the other, put vs well to it: which he for his part promised them assuredly to doe very soundly from the Towne, whensoeuer they should thinke fit to doe the like from their Campe. And it seemeth that vpon this aduise they tooke their determinate resolution for this course, and to put it in execution with all speed, either that night or the next at the furthest. Those of the Towne in the meane time gaue vs alarums, made Sallies, and did by all meanes what they could to keepe our men in continuall trauell, that they might be the lesse able for resistance when this attempt should come to bee performed. The Lord Deputy till now applyed himselfe in show wholly towards the Towne, but indeede not meaning any forceable effectuall attempt vpon it, till hee saw what would become of Tyrone and his forces: And therefore had an especiall eye, by continuall espiall, vpon his mouings, and least suddaine hurt should bee taken from him, or the Towne, if both he without, and they within should inuade at once, hee made Fozes and Barracadoes, heightned the ditches, depened the Trenches, stopped and strengthened all the Auenues to the Towne, had the whole army in a readinesse vpon euery suddaine warning, and kept strong and watchfull guards alwayes in all places. And now late in the night of this Weeke day, the three and twentieth day, being assuredly enformed of their intent of attempt vpon his Campe that night, or the morrow after, his Lordship gaue order to strengthen the ordinary guardes, and to put the rest of his Army in readinesse, but not as yet into Armes: commanding that the Regiment volant, which was a squadron of eight Companies of foote, selected out of all the old bands conducted by Sir Henry Poore, and appointed to bee alwayes in a readinesse to answere all Alarumes, and therefore exempted from all other duties, should drawe out beyonde the West part of the Campe, and there stand in Armes, not farre from the maine guard of Horse.

A little before the breake of day, Sir Richard Greame, who had the guard of horse that night, sent the Lord Deputy word, that the scoutes had discouered the rebels matches in great numbers, whereupon his Lordship caused the Army presently to arme, and 300. choyce men to bee drawne out of the quarter, where the Earle of Thomond and three other Regiments lay, to make stand betweene that quarter and the Fozt vpon the West-hill, himselfe with Sir George Carew, Lord President of Munster, Sir Richard Wingfield, Marshall of Ireland, aduanced forward towards the scout, and hauing giuen order to Sir Henry Dauers Lieutenant Generall of the horse, for the ordering of those troupes, sent the Marshall, to take view of the enemy, who sent word hee was aduanced horse and foote, neere the toppe of the hill, where the Earle of Thomond first quartered, within lesse then 2. Musket shot of the towne. Whereupon the Lord Deputie calling to him, Sir Oliver Lambert Gouerno; of Connaught, who beeing there without charge, was commanded to attend his Lordship that day, made choice of a peece of ground betweene that and the Towne, of good aduantage, both to embattell, and fight, as hauing on the backe a trench drawne from the Earle of Thomonds quarter, and so secured from the Towne: And on the front, a boggish glyn pallable with horse onely at one foord: The ground whereon the enemie must haue drawne in grosse to fozce the passage flanckered from the Earles quarter by the Cannon, and situate in the midst of all our fozces, and returned word to the Marshall, that in that place hee was resolued to giue the enemy battell, if he came fozward: commaunding further the Regiment of Sir H. Folyat and three olde companies of the Regiment of Sir Oliver Saint-Iohn, to bee brought thither, the rest of the Armie being already in Armes, together with 500. Sea-men, brought by Sir Richard Leueson to attend, when, and what, he should command.

But Tirone, whose meaning ouer night, was to haue beene with vs before day, and as we since learned, to haue put all the Spaniards into the Towne, with eight hundred of the best Irish vnder Tirril, seeing it now faire day light, and discouering the Marshall and Sir Henry Dauers to bee aduanced with all the horse, & Sir Henry Poore with his Regiment, stopt at the foote of the hill, and anon, thinking it to be no nay for him, retired the troupes hee had aduanced againe, to the bodie of his Army beyond the Fozd. Presently the Marshall sent the Lord Deputy word, that the enemie retired in some disorder, whereupon his Lordship commanding the foremanned troupes to follow him with all speed, aduanced himselfe into the head of all, to see with his owne eye, the manner of the enemies, & in what fozt there vpon he might determine to proceede. But before he could either well view, or direct, a violent showre, during some quarter of an houre, gaue the enemie opportunity, not yet perfectly discouered, to draw off ouer a plaine, in three great bodies of foote, all their horse in the Rere, and the wings with all their other loose men fallen vp into the head. Which the Lord Deputy, that day now clearing, perceiuing and discouering, by this their disorderly march, that they were in feare, being certified also, that there was not before them any place of so good aduantage to make head on, as those they had passed and quitted, resolued to follow, and to see what profit might bee made of an enemie thus troubledly retiring. Whereupon dispatching presently Sir George Carew, Lord President of Munster, with 3. cozonets of horse, back to the Campe, to attend there against the towne, and whatsoeuer other attempt, became

he was to bee the fittest Commaunder in his Lordships absence, and because there had otherwise no horses beene left in the Campe, himselfe having with him, in all, betweene three & foure hundred horse, and under 1200. hundred foote, made after the enemie. And advancing some myle further on, pressed him so hard, that he was forced to stand firme in three bodies upon a ford of a bogge (which bogge to assaile them, we must of necessity passe) and in al apparance with a Resolution there to abide vs and fight. They maintained a good skirmish on our side the bog, with their loose wings, newly drawne out of their bodies, and hurt some of our men and horses, till with our wings they were at length beaten backe.

The Marshall being somewhat advaunced, espied a Foord, a myllket shott off on the left hand, neglected by their foote, and onely guarded by their horse: whereof advertising the Lord Deputy, with desire of leave to force them that way: the Lord Deputy approuving it, and commanding to draw up the foote with all expedition, the first wings of foote once arrived, seconded with Sir Henry Poers Regiment, the Marshall, with the Earle of Clanrickard, who neuer ceased urging to fight, taking with them Sir Richard Greame, and other companies of horse: with them, and those foote, forcing the enemies horse that kept the passage, passed over, and with that advantage, finding themselues side by side with the enemies battell, & further on then their Rere, charged their battell in flanke, but finding them to stand firme, wheeled about. At which the enemies taking courage, drew on their horse, with a cry to a charge, who came on brauely within little or little paces of our horse, and there after their Country fashion stopped, shaking their staues, and raylingly vaunting, but durst charge no further. Which the Lord Deputy seeing, sent presently ouer the Foorde to them his owne Cornet of Horse, vnder Sir William Godolphin, and the Lord Presidents Cornet vnder Captaine Minshow (which two Cornets hee had appointed before, to keepe still a grosse in the Rere, to answere all accidents) together with two of our three bodies of foote vnder Sir John Barkely, Sergeant Maior of the Campe. Whereupon the Marshall and Earle of Clanrickard, seeing a second at hand, vniting themselues with Sir Henry Dauers, hauing with him Captaine Taffe, Captaine Flemming, and other Companies of Horse, charged againe the enemies Horse, who not abiding the shocke fledde. At the sight whereof, the battell dismaying, our men thought it better to charge againe vpon them, then to follow the horse, and so courageously doing, vtterly brake them. The Rere-ward of the enemie, in which was Tirrell, and all the Spaniardes, stood firme vpon the bogge on the right hand, vnto whom, within Caliuer shotte, the Lord Deputy had drawne vp our Rere, which was Sir Oliver Saint-Johns 3. Companies, commaunded by Captaine Roe in absence of Sir Oliver (dispatched few dayes before by the Lord Deputy, and Counsayle, for speciall affaires to her Maiestie) charging him first, not to stirre, till he received direction from him. But seeing Tirrell, and the Spaniardes drawing betweene our horse, being on the execution, and the bodies of our foote, his Lordship hauing hitherto, by direction, let all other mens swords on worke, himselfe now in the head of our said Rere, where he had before resolued to fight, charged the enemie in flancke, and put them to a disorderly retreat after their fellowes to the top of the next hill, where they made a stand a little while. But the Irish quitting the Spaniardes, the Spaniardes in short time were broken by the Lord Deputies Horse, commanded by Sir William Godolphin, and most of them slaine. The vantgard of the enemie, with all the loose wings, which were many, seeing what happened, threw away their armes (and all our men being otherwise busie) escaped. The chiefe Commaunder of the Spaniardes, Don Alonso d'Ocampo, was taken Prisoner, with three Captaines, five Alferres, and fortie souldiers. Tyrone and Odonell, with the rest of the Irish Lords, ranne apace, and saued themselues. Those of the battell were almost all slayne, and there were (of the Irish Rebelles onely) found dead in the place, about twelue hundred bodies, and about eight hundred were hurt, whereof many dyed that night: and the chase continuing almost two myles, was left off, our men being tyred with killing. The Enemie lost two thousand Armes brought to reckoning, besides great numbers imbeseled, all their powder and drummes, and nine ensignes, whereof 6. Spanish. Those of the Irish that were taken prisoners, being brought to the Campe, though they offered ransome, were all hanged. On our side onely one man was slaine, the Cornet of the Sir Ric. Greame. Sir Henry Dauers was hurt with a Sword slightly: Sir William Godolphin a little raced on the thigh with a Halbert, Captaine Crofts, the Scout-maister with a shotte in the backe, and not aboue three more common souldiers hurt. Many of our horses were killed, and moe hurt. And thus were they vtterly ouerthrowne, who but the very night before, were so brauue and confident of their owne good successe, as that they reckoned vs already theirs, and as wee since haue vnderstood, were in contention whose prisoner the Lord Deputy should bee, whose the Lord President, and so of the rest. The Earle of Clanrickard carryed himselfe this day very valiantly, and after the retreate sounded, was knighted by the Lord Deputie, in the field amongst the dead bodies. So did all the rest of the Captaines, Officers, and souldiers, named and vnnamed, and especially the Lord Deputy himselfe, who brake in person, vpon the Rowre of the Army of the Spaniardes, and omitted no dutie of a wise diligent Conductor, and valiant souldier. Vp on the fight ended, he presently called together the Army, and with prayers, gaue God thanks for the victory. A victory indeede giuen by the God of Hostes, and marueilous in our eyes, if all circumstances be duly considered, and of such consequence for the preseruation and assurance to her Maiestie, of this deepely endaungered Kingdome, as I leaue to wiser consideration, contenting my selfe with this, that I see the God of power and might, disposed to protect the iust cause of his seruant our gracious Queen Elizabeth, against the pride, malice, and powerfull disdaine of the greatest Potentates, her enemies, To him be the glory.

1200. Irish slaine.

After this glorious victory thus valiantly atchieued, the Lord Deputy the same day hasted to his Campe, least any thing (in his absence) might happily haue beene attempted there. But, not finding the enemie to dare any Sally, which indeed had beene but vaine for him, considering the small fruit he reaped by them heretofore, euery one that he made hitherto redounding still to his owne detriment and losse, and euery place of our Camp, at this time, being so well and sufficiently strengthened and prouided for against him, as is sayd before.

The next day his Lordship commaunded Captaine Bodiegh, Trencher-maker Generall of the Campe, who as well in the fight, as in the workes, had deserued speciall commendation, to see the formerly begunne Fort and platformes, to be vndertaken againe, and neerer approaches to be cast out towardes the towne. But after fiue or sixe dayes labour Don John di Aquila, Captaine of the Towne and Forces within, offered a parle, sending the Dymmie-Maior of the Towne, with a sealed Letter to the Lord Deputie, by which he required, that some Gentleman of speciall trust and sufficiency, might be sent into the Towne from his Lordship to conferre with him, whom he would acquaint with such conditions, as hee then stood vpon. His request being assented vnto by his Lordship, Sir Wil. Godolphin was imployed in the negotiation, which was carryed in this sort, word for word, as it is taken out of the originalls here, viz.

Don John told Sir William, that hauing found the Lord Deputy (whom he termed the Viceroy) although a sharpe and powerfull, yet an honorable enemie, and the Irish not onely weake and Barbarous, but (as he feared) perfidious friends, he was so farre in his affections reconciled to the one, & distasted with the other, as did inuite him to make an ouerture of such a composition as might bee safe and profitable for the State of England, with least preiudice to the Crown of Spaine, by deliuering into the Viceroy his power, the Towne of Kynsale, with all other places in Ireland, held by the Spanish, so as they might depart on honorable termes fitting such men of warre, as are not (by necessity) inforced to receiue conditions, but willingly inuoced, for iust respects, to disingage themselues, and to relinquish a people, by whom their King and maker had beene so notoriously abused, (if not betrayed.) That if the Viceroy liked to entertaine further parley touching this point, hee would first bee pleased to vnderstand them rightly, and to make his propositions such as might bee suitable to men thoroughly resolued, rather to bury themselues aliue, and to endure a thousand deaths, then to giue way to one Article of accord, that should taste of basenesse or dishonour, being so confident of their present strength, and the Royall Second of Spaine, that they should make no doubt of yeelding good account of themselues, and their Interest in this Kingdome, but that a iust disdaine, and Splene conceiued against the nation, disswaded them from being further engaged for it, then of force they must. Sir William Godolphin being commanded by the Lord Deputy onely, to receiue Don Johns propositions and demaundes. Hauing made his Lords and Councell this Relation, was by them returned with the answere following. That howbeit the Lord Deputy hauing lately vanquished their succours, did so well vnderstand his owne strength, and their weakenesse, as made him nothing doubt of forcing them within a short time, whom he did know to bee pressed with vnresistable difficulties, how much soeuer they laboured to cover and conceale the same, yet knowing that her sacred Maiestie out of her gracious and mercifull disposition would esteeme the glory of her victory to bee blemished with a voluntary effusion, and an obstinate expence of Christian bloud, was content to entertaine this offer of Agreement, so as it might bee Concluded, vnder such Honourable Articles for her Highnesse as the aduantage that hee had against them, gaue reason to demaund: being the same which are set downe in the Articles following, signed by the Lord Depatie and Don John and others: saying that there was in them besides the leauing of his Creature, munition, Artillery, and the Queenes naturall Subiects to her disposition, all which points he did peremptorily refuse, with constant asseueration that both he, and all his would rather indure the last of misery, then bee found guilty of so foule a treason against the honour of his Prince, and the reputation of his profession, though he should finde himselfe vnable to subsist, much more now, when he might not only hope to sustayne the burden of the warre for a time, but with patience and constancy, in the end to ouercome it. That he tolde it so ill, to be misvnderstood in hauing Articles of that nature propounded vnto him, as were they but once againe remembred in the Capitulation, the Viceroy should from thence foorth vse the aduantage of his sword, and not the benefit of his former offers: adding, that the Viceroy might rather thinke to haue made a good and profitable purchase for the Crowne of England, if with the expence of 200000. Duckets, hee had procured Don John to quit his interest and seating but in Baltimore alone, to say nothing of Kynsale, Castle-hauen, and Beere-hauen: for (sayd he) suppose that all wee with the rest of our places here bodie perished, yet would that Pen-Insula (being strong in it owne nature, bettered by our Art and industry, pro-

nided as it is of victualls, munition and good store of Artillery) preserue vnto the King of Spaine, a safe and commodious port for the arriuall of his fleete, and bee able to maintaine it selfe against a land Army of ten thousand, vntill Spaine (being so deepely engaged) did in honor relieue them, which would draw on a more powerfull inuasion then the first, being vndertaken vpon false grounds, at the instance of a base and barbarous people, who in discouering their weaknesse, and want of power, haue armed the King my Master to rely vpon his owne strength, being tyed in honour to relieue his people, that are engaged, and to Cancell the memory of our former disaster.

But thus was spoken (sayd hee) in case the Viceroy were able to force this towne, as I assure my selfe, he cannot, hauing vppon mine honour within these walles at this instant, a bone two thousand fighting men, that are strong and able, besides those which hauing beene sicke and hurt, recouer dayly the greatest part of these, composed of old Souldiers, which fall not by the sword, and those that were new, being now both trayned to their Armes, and growne acquainted with the climate, are more able to endure then at the first: our meanes as good as they haue beene any times these two moneths, such as the Spaniards can well away withall, and thereof to suffice vs for three moneths more. We lodge in good warme houses, haue store of munition, and which is best of all (I hand well assured that our succorers will be hastily here. So be plaine, wee preserue our men, and reserue our strength the best we may, hoping to front you in a breach, which if our hearts faile vs not, wee haue hands and breasts, enough to stopp against treble your forces, though I will giue the Viceroy this right, that his men are passing good, but spent and tyred out with the misery of a Winter siege, which he hath obstinately maintayned beyond my expectation, but with such caution, and vppon so good guarde, as hauing nicely watched all aduantages, I could neuer take a Sallie yet vpon him, but with losse to my selfe: wherein I must acknowledge my hopes deceiued, that grounding on some errour in his approaches, promised my selfe the defeate of at the least a thousand men at one blow. But when we meete on the breach, I am confident in good reason, to lay fiue hundred of your best men on the earth, and reft hopeful that the losse of those will make a great hole in an army, that hath already suffered so much extreamity.

But to conclude our businesse, the King my Master sent me to assist the Condes, Oneale, and Odonnell, presuming on their promise, that I should haue toyned with them within few dayes of the arriuall of his forces. I expected long in vaine, sustained the Viceroyes Army, saw them draw to the greatest head they could possibly make, lodge within two miles of Kinsayle, reinforced with certaine companies of Spaniardes, euery houre promising to relieue vs, and being toyned together to force your Campes, saw them at the last broken with a handfull of men, blowne asunder into diuers parts of the world. Odonnell into Spaine, Oneale to the furthest of the North, so as now, I finde no such Condes in rerum natura (for those were the very wordes he vsed) as I came to toyne withall, and therefore haue moued this accord, the rather to dis-engage the King my Master, from assisting a people so vnable in themselues, that the whole burden of the war must lye vpon him, and so perfidious as perhaps might bee induced in acquitall of his fauour, at least to betray him. Vpon relation made by Sir William Godolphin, to the Lord Deputy and Councell, of these offers of Don John, which at seuerall conferences had beene brought to such heads, as are spoken of before, it was thought good, for diuers important reasons, to proceede roundly to the agreement. For whereas in the propositions by him made there was not any thing that admitted exceptions on our part, but onely that he required to carry with him his ordinance, munition, and treasure, that being no way preiudicial to the maine scope or drift of our Treaty, which chiefly respected the common good and safety of the kingdome, deserued not almost to bee thought vpon. Besides that, the Treasure being at the first but a hundred thousand Duckets, with foure moneths payment of so many men, and other necessary deductions, could not but be very neere wasted: and that little remainder, more fit for a prey to the poore Souldiour, after his tedious trauell, then for a clause in the composition. Furthermore how needfull it was to embrace this accord, may clerely bee seene by whosoeuer considereth the state of our Army, almost vtterly tired: how full of danger and difficulty it was to attempt a Breach, defended by so many hands: how long time it might haue cost vs, if wee had lodged in the Breach, before wee could haue carried the towne, it being full of strong Castles: how her Maiesties ships and others lying in the harbor, should haue beene forced speedily to forsake vs for want of victuals: how by a long contrariety of winds, our selues were not prouided for aboue fiue dayes, at the time of this parley, though within few dayes after good store arrued: it being indeede worthy of obseruation, that by her Maiesties great care, and the diligence of her Ministers, so good prouidence was vsed, as though this discent of Spaniardes drew into that Quarter, all the forces, power, and strength of the Kingdome, which could bee spared, all which were only to liue by prouision out of England, notwithstanding all the Difficulties of Transportation, in so vnseasonable a time, no notorious wantes were found in the Army, but that which is inseparable, from a Winter Siege, in that Climate: that wee had neither Munition, nor Artillery left but for one battery, in one place at once, fiue of our pieces being before crazed: and finally, that if we had missed of our purpose, the whole Countrey had beene hazarded. Furthermore, that which seemeth of greatest consequence to induce his Lordshippe to this agreement, was: That the Spaniardes, in Baltymore, Castle-hauen, and Bere-hauen by vertue of this contract, were likewise to surrender those places, and depart the Country, which would haue prooued a matter of more difficultie, and haue drawne on a long warre, in a corrupted Kingdome, to roote them out, being strongly fortified and well stored with victuals, munition and Artillery, for that of necessity the Army for some space, must haue rested, and in the end haue beene constrayned after a new supply of all necessaries, to her Maiesties intollerable charge, to transport themselues thither by Sea, the way by land, being altogether impassable. In which time their succours out of Spaine in all likelyhood, would haue bene come into them: the King being so far engaged in his honour to second his enterprise, and we barred of that prosecution of the Rebels which now by this agreement wee may wholly entend.

The Treaty therefore, was thus concluded as by the Articles ensuing, signed on both parts appeareth.

Mountioy.

In the Towne of Kynsale, in the Kingdome of Ireland, the second day of the moneth of January, 1601. betweene the Noble Lords, the Lord Mountioy, Lord Deputie, and Generall in the Kingdome of Ireland, for her Maiestie the Queene of England, and Don Iohn d'L Aquila Captaine, and Campemaster, Generall and Gouernour of the Army of his Maiestie the King of Spaine, the said Lord Deputie being encamped, and besieging the sayd Towne, and the said Don Iohn within it, for sull respects, and to auoyde shedding of blood, these conditions following were made, betwixt the sayd Lords Generalls, and their Campes, with the Articles that follow.

First, that the sayd Don Iohn d'L Aquila, shall quit the places which he holdes in this Kingdome, as well of the towne of Kyntale, as those which are held by the Souldiers vnder his command in Castle hauen, Baltymore, and in the Castle of Ber hauen, and other parts to the sayd Lord Deputie, or to whom he shall appoint, giuing him safe transportation, and sufficient for the sayd people, of shippes and victualls, with the which the sayd Don Iohn with themmay goe for Spaine, if he can at one time ferst, in two shippings.

Item, that the Souldiours at this present being vnder the commaund of Don Iohn, in this Kingdome, shall not beare armes against her Maiestie the Queene of England, wherefore euer supplies shall come from Spaine, till the sayd Souldiers be imbarqued in some of the Ports of Spaine, being dispatched as soone as may be by the Lord Deputie, as he promiseth vpon his faith and honor.

For the accomplishing whereof, the Lord Deputy offereth to giue safe passport to the said Don Iohn and his army, as well Spaniards as other nations whatsoeuer, that are vnder his commaund, and that he may depart, with all the things he hath, Armes, Munitions, Money, Ensignes displaied, Artillery, and other whatsoeuer prouisions of warr, and any kind of sluffe, aswell that which is in Castle-hauen, as Kynsale, and other places.

Item that they shall haue ships and victualls sufficient for their money, according and at the prices which here they vse to giue. That all the people and the sayd things may be shipped if it be possible at one time, if not, at two, and that to bee within the time aboue named.

Item, that if by contrary winds, or by any other occasions there shal arriue, at any Port of these Kingdomes of Ireland or England, any ships of these in which the sayd men goe, they be entreated as friends, and may ride safely in the harbor, and be victualled for their money, and haue moreouer things which they shal need to furnish them to their voyage.

Item, during the time that they shall stay for Shipping, victuals shall be giuen to Don Iohns people, at iust and reasonable rates.

Item, that of both partes shall bee cessation of armes, and securitie that no wrong bee offered any one.

Item, that the ships in which they shall goe for Spaine, may passe safely by any other ships whatsoeuer of her Maiesty the Queene of England, and so shall they of the sayd Queene and her Subiects by those that shall goe from hence, and the sayd shippes being arriued in Spayne, shall returne as fone as they haue vnshipped their men, without any impediment giuen them by his Maiestie, or any other person in his name, but rather they shall giue them fauour and helpe them if they needs any thing, and for securitie of this, they shall giue into the Lord Deputies handes, three Captaines such as he shall chuse.

For the security of the performance of these Articles, Don Iohn offereth that he will confirme and sweare to accomplish this agreement and likewise some of the Captaines of his charge shall sweare and confirme the same in a seuerall writing.

Item, that hee in person shall abide in this Kingdome where the Lord Deputy shall appoint till the last shipping vpon his Lordships word: and if it happen that his people be shipped all at once, the said Don Iohn shall goe in the same Fleete without any impediment giuen him. But rather the Lord Deputy shall giue a good ship in which he may goe, and if he sayd men be sent in two shippings then he shall goe in the last.

And in like sort the sayd Lord Deputy shall sweare

sweare and confirme, and giue his worde in the behalfe of her Maiestie the Quéene and his owne, to keepe and accomplish this agreement and iointly the Lord President, the Lord Marshall of the Campe, and the other of the Counsell of State, and the Earles of Thomond and Clanrickard shal sweare and confirme the same in a seuerall writing.

George Carew
Thomond
Clanrikard
R: Wingfield
Ro: Gardemor
Geo: Bourcher
Rich: Liueson

I Promise and sweare to accomplish and keepe these Articles of agreement, and promise the same likewise on the behalfe of his Maiestie the Catholique King my Master.

Don Iohn d'l Aquila.

And so is this troubled cloud of most likely perillous daunger for this time dissolued, to her Maiesties most singular renowme: for so much for the glory of the euent, as for her owne Magnanimity and Princely resolution, to leaue nothing vndone which might preserue that Crowne, how deere so euer it cost her, to the great honour of our generall Leaders, and Soudiers by Land and Sea, actors therein, who if it be well considered, that after the enemies arriuall, the 28. of September, it was the 26. of October before they could get all things ready to sit downe neere the Towne, the 19. of October, before their Ordinance could play, and that by the first of Nouember, they had gotten Ricorren Castle. And then the seuenth of Nouember, were driuen likewise to diminish their strength, by sending the Lord President from them with two regiments of foote and 325. horses against Odonell, That he returned not till the 25. of Nouember, his companies were 26. And then that the shippes of Spaine were landed. That the most of our shipping that did vs speciall seruice were gone towardes them: that Odonell was already come: Tyrone shortly after: and the 20. of December all in sight: 24. beaten. That 31. of December, the Parley begun, the second of January the Articles were sworne: the 9. the Towne yeelded, &c.

1602. The 18. of January at night, bonefires were made at London, with ringing and other

wise reioycing for the newes out of Ireland, the victory of our English men obtained there as is before declared.

Execution. The 18. of Aprill Peter Bullocke Stationer, and one named Ducket, for printing of Bookes offensiue were hanged at Tyborne.

Seminaries executed. The 20. of Aprill, Stichborne, William Kenton, and Iames Page, Seminary Priests, were drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered, for comming into this Realme, contrary to the Statute of Anno 27. &c.

Soudiers sent into the Low Countries. In the moneth of May, great pressing out of Soudiours was made about London, to be sent into the Low Countries.

A man lost his eares. The twelfth of May, a man was set on the Pillory, and lost one of his eares at Westminster, and the other at Chauncery lanes end, by the new Temple, for giuing false witnesse and false Oathe, in an Indictment against another.

Here followeth a briefe relation of some of the chiefe English soudiers and Sauigators of the Queene Raigne with other things of note.

It is very euident by sacred Scriptures how from time to time the seuerall properties of people, time and State haue beene manifested whose diuine writing thereto that the originall and true purpose of Chronologie was to expresse the continuing goodnesse of Almighty God, from age to age, as documents vnto all posterities, wherein is set downe the rare and excellent gifts wherewith Kings and Kingdoms were endued, honoured, and enriched, and what sorts of people flourished in their dayes, and for strong warrant of what I say, although I might alleadge many places therein, besides diuers other authenticke writers, yet for brieuity I will onely cite the chiefe Iudge of Israell, and the second, and third, Kings after him. Samuell Writeth that in his dayes being about fiue hundred yeeres after their coming out of Egypt, there was not a Smith in all the land of Israell, and thereby a reason for the same; King Dauid diligentlyeth the seuerall qualities of his chiefe men of warre by the name of worthies in sundry degrees and of others that were left handed, and wonderous cunning to throw stones at a haires breadth, and Solomon reporteth the strange aduentures and long voyages of his Subiects, saying that his shippes went foorth and returned not in three yeeres, a matter to be greatly admired considering they wanted the knowledge and frée vse of the Sea compas, from which holy writers derive I my president for that which followeth concerning the daily encrease of arts and Sciences, with a briefe commemoration of the most famous and illustrious English soldiers, serving most vnder forraine Princes in their seuerall occasions, and against the common enemy the Turke, who in their proper valors and high merits haue many wayes dignified their names, and nation, as also the like taste of the most renowned English Nauigation & Nauigators, whose like were neuer since the worlds creation, and by whose tedious voyages, long trauells, and strange discoueries as you may read at large in master Hacklyts worthy worke of the English voyages, they haue not

not only acquired great riches to themselues, but brought much more wealth and honour to their Prince and Country, and touching some other matters which happily, thou doest as in reason thou maist expect to follow in this discourse, know, that vnwoorthy I am wanting here, thou shalt finde them plainly set downe in the third yeere of King Iames.

Death and buriall of Sir Iohn Norris. Sir Iohn Norris, second sonne to the Lord Norris, in his youth brought vp in the vniuersity, and in the Court, and being of an excellent wit, and manly courage, he affected Military seruice. Hee at first serued in Ireland, where, amongst other things of worthy note he rescued his eldest brother by fine force from the rebels. After that he serued the States, and in that space, though desert, was made Colonel vpon Lamas day, hee manfully defeated the army of Don Iohn nére Gunt, the memory whereof is registred by diuers Nations, after that was made Generall of the English, and by authority of the Prince of Dzenge, and all the States, had all command in Frizeland, where he was sharply repulsed by Verdugo, in the time of Don Iohn, after that, he did many excellent services and hauing taken yong Monsieur La Nouy prisoner, was by others denied his right, thereupon he appealed for iudgement to Monsieur Lapere, Pensoult Prince all of the French, then at the States sée, who being partiall against him, the next time sir Iohn met him in Antwerpe, in the open Exrate, gaue him the backhand, a little before that, by counsell of Captaine Temple, hee surprised Pecheline, at Utricht, in the time of Duke Francis of Valois, his Soudiers mutined, and hemd him in round, where hee onely with his dagger drawne, accompanied with Sir Francis Vere, and two or three other Gentlemen appeased the mutinie, the States well perceiuing his valour, and resolution, with his opposition to the French, after Mounsire sought to surprise Antwerpe, gaue him fresh power, and command, and for many yeeres after, was knowne by the name of Lord Generall, in the yere 1588. hee was Lieutenant Generall of the greate Campe at Tilbury, the yeere insuing, he was Lord Generall of a mighty Army into Portugall, for the re-establishing of Don Antonio late King of Portugall, hee ayded Henry the fourth, against the Leaguers in France, hee did Admirable service at Zwetsconce, and draue the Spaniardes out of Britaine, he serued in Spaine, Portugall, and Ireland, where he dyed.

Many and singular exployts hee performed, which are not here mentioned: it was commonly said, hee foretold the time of his death, and dyed of Melancholy: hee was renowned through the world, he was excellent, either to plant a siege, or raise a siege, and could pitch a battell dexterously: hee had fiue brethren, all of them valiant and expert Commanders, viz. William Norris slaine in Ireland, Sir Edward Norris dyed in England, Sir Henry Norris slaine in Ireland, Sir Thomas Norris slaine in Iceland, Maximillian Norris dyed in Britaine.

Since whose death in honourable remembrance of their Noble actes, true valour, and high worth, their kindred haue erected an honourable monument in the Abbey Church at Westminster. Notwithstanding, that there were so many brethren, and their elder brothers some married, yet within thirty yeeres after this, there was no heire male of that house.

Captaine Carlile. Christopher Carlile of London Esquire, after his being in the Vniuersitie, where hee attained vnto perfection of good letters, and vnderstood many Languages. He followed the fortune of the warres in Flanders, and by desert was made a great Commaunder in the States Campe. After that, hee serued the French King at Rochell. He was Admirall of the English Merchants into Russia, for the Danes threatned interruption: after that he serued in Ireland, from whence by meanes of his Father in Law, Sir Francis Walsingham, principall Secretary of Estate, hee was made Lieutenant Generall of the land forces in S. Domingo voyage. Sir Francis Drake being Generall of the Nauall forces: at which time in one Sommer they subdued foure strong Indian Cities, that is to say, Saint Domingo, Saint Yago, Carchagina, and Saint Augustino.

The chiefe service in this conquest consisted most in the valor of the land Souldiers, although the same was no way obserued of the Spaniards, nor Indians, nor of the English, sauing of such as were there present. After that the Quéene sent him into Ireland, and made him chiefe commander in Knoc-fargus.

He aged in London (as it was supposed) for griefe of his friends death, he was quicke witted, and adable, valiant and fortunate in war, well read in the Mathematikes, and of good experience in Nauigation, whereupon some haue Registred him for a Nautgator, but the truth is his most inclination, and profession, was chiefely for land seruice, he vtterly abhored Pyracy.

The life and death of the Earle of Essex. Robert Deuereux, Earle of Esser, being but ten yéres of age, at the death of his father, was for a time trayned vp in the Vniuersity, and in the Court. And at the age of nineteene, went into Flaunders, and there serued against the Duke of Parma, being very forward in all actions seruing for knowledge, and experience in warre and Martiall discipline.

Then he returned into England at the age of one and twenty yéres, was made master of the Horse, and grew very gracious with the Quéene, and in great hope and estimation with the Péeres and common people.

In the yeere, 1588. he was made Lord Generall of the horse at Tilbury.

In the yeare following, when the Lord Norris, worthy Generall of all Land forces, with a most excellent Army of resolute Soudiours went to reestablish Don Antonio, King of Portugall, the Lord Earle, secretly, and vnknowne to the Quéene, made his owne prouision, and was in Spaine, and Portugall, as soone as the first

selfe, and in euery attempt as forward as the formost, not hauing any charge or commaund.

His brother Walter Deuereux was slain before Roan.

After that, the Queene made him Generall of her forces in Fraunce, for the ayde of King Henry the fourth, against the Leaguers, at foure and twentie yeeres of age; hee was sworne a Priuy Councellour of Estate. In the yeare 1596, the said Earle was made Lord Generall of all the Queens forces, ioyntly with the Lord Charles Howard Baron of Effingham, high Admirall of England, now Earle of Nottingham, now in the voyage to Cadiz, where the said Lord Admirall of England led the first squadron in the Arke Raleigh, Ro. Earle of Esser led the second squadron in the Repulse, Lord Thomas Howard Baron of Walden, now Earle of Suffolke, led the third squadron in the Mere-honor, Sir Walter Rawleigh, led the fourth squadron in the Warres-spight, vnto euery which squadrons there were thirty ships.

For Land service.

Each of these had their vice Admirals and vice Admirals.

The Earle of Esser, and the Admirall of England commanded loyntly. The Lord Thomas Howard vice-Admirall of the whole fleete, Sir Walter Rawleigh vice-Admiral generall of the whole fleet. All of them in their proper merits appeared themselues most worthy souldiours Noble Gentlemen, and discreet commanders.

But to the purpose of the aforesayd Earle, who in the conquest and taking of the sayd rich City of Cadiz, shewed so much mercy to the enemie, and bounty to all his souldiers, friends, and followers, as he gained thereby confirmation of the peoples loue, his name, fame, and honor was spread into all nations.

The like valour and kindnesse he shewed as the winning of the Iles of Terceraes. And at this time, such and so great was the hearty loue and deepe affections of the people towards him, by reason of his bounty, liberalitie, affabilitie, and mild behauiour, that as well Scholiers, Souldiers, Citizens, Saylers, &c. Protestants, Papists, Sectaries, and Atheists, yea women, and children which neuer saw him, that it was held in them a happinesse to follow the worst of his fortunes.

He was sworne of the priuie Counsell, and after that maister of the Ordinance, Earle marshall, vicegerent in Ireland, Knight of the Garter, and Chancellour of the Vniuersity of Cambridge.

His brother Walter Deuereux *alias* Colonell Deuereux was slain at Roane.

And as in his life he euer shewed himselfe right Noble, valorous, & resolute, euen so at his death, hee came to the world full satisfaction of his most Christian patience, & piety; dying in the world, as if he had neuer knowne the same, in true charitable zeale, praying for his enemies and as it was wel obserued by diuers there present, his eyes were fixed vp towards heauen, vntill the second fatall stroke was past.

The maine cause of his misfortune was
- Affectation of Popularity.
- Desire of reuenge.
- Endeauouring to get more offices of command into his priuate possession, then the Lawes could permit in any one subiect.

There were also two other mighty subiects liuing in his time in forraine nations of like generall loue, and reputation, that is to say Henry Duke of Guyse in France, who was slaine by the appointment of Henry the third.

And Borris Pheodorowich Godoónoua, who in the yere 1598. became Emperor of Russia, and perished in the yere 1604. as you may read in the third yeare of King Iames.

Sir Thomas Morgan, *alias* Colonell Morgan a right valiant and discreete Commander: Sir Roger Williams, a Collonel, and of great command in France, Flanders, Spaine, Portugall, and Ireland, he wrote a Booke of all the English warres in his time, wherein he mentioned all the chiefe Commaunders in the Queenes raigne, wherein also was contained the difference betweene the auncient and the moderne wars. Sir Thomas Baskerville Serieant Paior in France, vnder the Lord Willowby, Peregrin Bartu, Baron of Eresson at Dieppe, where the sayd Lord Willowby with fiue thousand men relieued the French King, when the Duke de Mayne, with a great power of Leaguers, had almost expulst the King out of Fraunce, and made him take Dieppe for his last refuge, and from thence he must haue come for England, if the English had not speedily supplied him, this Lord Willoughby was a most excellent souldier; and famous for many sundry services, in diuers nations: the sayd Serieant Baskervile, after that, was Lieutenant Generall vnder Francis Drake in Spaine and Portugall. Sir Philip Sidney of whose Noble birth, education, life, death, and singular good parts, Sir Iames Parrat hath written a booke, Sir John Borrough brother to the valiant Lord Borrough, a Commander in Spaine, France, Flanders, Portugall and Ireland, Collonel Thomas Sidney, a man of no lesse renowme, Sir Nicholas Clifford Sir Conies Clifford, Sir Nicholas Bagnal, Sir Ralph Bagnall, Sir Henry Bagnal, Sir Samuell Bagnall, Sir Row. Yorke, Sir Iohn Wingfield, Sir Ed. Wingfield, Sir Ri. Bingham, Cap. Bingham and Cap. Bing Sir Ri. Grenuile, Cap. Baskerville, Ca. Honings, Ca. Chester, Ca. Nowel, Ca. Vaughan, Sir Ge. Bewser, Cap. Bewser, Cap. Conovvay, Cap. Ratclif. Cap. Hal, Cap. Savage, Cap. Wilson, Cap. Bosvvell, Cap. Court.

The Lord Willowby was a verie worthie Souldier whose seuerall employments memoryes here haue remembred by any meanes I could haue obtained certaine knowledge of them.

All of them very valiant Souldiers and men of Commaund.

Some late writers vpon hope of reward or to curry fauour, with time and date, haue very vainegloriously recommended vnto emples memory, many land leapers, bragging cowardes, and Campe crapers, to be right noble valiant & aduenturous, the said parties being then liuing to the reproch of the writer, griefe of the reader and dishonor of the high merit, of deceased and well deseruing, renowned seruitors, and worthy souldiers, whose true fame, is neuer gained but by the price of his dearest blood, the number of which haue English chiefetaines, lyed in this Queenes raigne, atchieuing honor by their proper valour, in many forraine nations, haue receiued more right, and respecting honor and reward in seuerall strange nations, then by any

English

English promotion, as so much, as mentioned in the Chronicles of England: namely vnder the Emperor, in true seruice against the common enemy the Turke, in France seruing with the King, and with the Leaguers against the King in Spain, and diuers other Prouinces in Italy, in Poland with the King against both Turke & Tartar, as also with Duke Charles against the King, and in my seruing in both Indies, late by the vnknowne number of excellent souldiers, brane Leaders, and discreete Commanders, seruing in the Low Countries, in either side, of all which if for their takes, or our Countries credits you would know any thing, you must reade beholding to the Chroniclers of those seuerall Nations, there came to my hand, a catalogue of fiue hundred notable Captains and Commaunders, all of them deceased, seruing in the aforenamed forreine parts, besides such men of renowme as for forty yeeres space perished in Ireland; all which to auoid tediousnes and fear of offending, I haue this time, omitted to set downe.

And concerning such Gallant English coutriours as are now liuing, I will forbeare to name them, lest the enuious should taxe me with verball Simony, euer acknowledging that the number and valour of such as are now liuing, with those that haue beene slaine within the space of thirty yeres, to exceed the number of any precedent Kings Raigns.

I haue also recommended, vnto the generous obseruation the like touch of Nauigators of this time, as I haue done of land seruitors hee being indeed no more answerable to their number and true worth, then if a bankrupt should pay a mite for a Million.

The life and death of Sir Iohn Hawkins

Iohn Hawkins, of Plimmouth Gentleman, in his youth studied the Mathematicks, went diuers voyages into Spaine, Portugall, and the Ilands, which at that time was very strange and difficult, after that he went to Guinea, and Hilpaniola, which then likewise was most strange and wonderfull, by reason he was the first Englishman, that discouered and taught the way into those parts. After that, by Commission from the Queene, and with her ships he made diuers voyages, aduentures, and discoueries, of many riuers, Ilands, and harbors in the Indies, after which in the yere 1567. with some of the Queens ships, & some of his owne, he did many excellent services in Guinea, and the west Indies. He surprized Rio de la Hacha, and wan great treasure at S. Iohn de Vlloa, in the yere 1588. he did great service vpon the inuincible Spanish Armado, for which he was knighted. In the yere 1595. he went ioynt Admirall with Sir F. Drake, hauing 28. haue shippes in their charge, the whereof were her Maiesties, bound for the West Indies, being the rather drawne thereunto, vpon hope to haue redeemed his son Ri. Hawkins: who in the yere before, was taken prisoner in the South Sea, after long fight with the Kings Gallions, in which voyage hee dyed as it was supposed of mellancoly, & being coffined he was cast into the Sea, neere Porto Rico: hee was very wise, valiant & true hearted: he was 48. yeeres Generall to the Queene, and 22. yeres Treasurer of the Nauy Royall. He & his brother W. Hawkins, had at one time of their owne, thirty sayle of good ships, with which they performed many memorable services for this Kingdome. He was the first that inuented the cunning stratagem of kaile nettings for ships in fighting in the first yere of the Q. in the wars of France he also deuised the chaine pumps for ships, and perfected many defects in the Nauy Royall.

The life and death of Sir Francis Drake.

Sir Francis Drake, sonne of Edmond Drake, of Tauistocke in Deuonshire Sayler, which sayd Francis was the eldest of twelue brethren, brought vp vnder his kinsman Sir Iohn Hawkins vntill eighteene yeeres of age, he was made Purser of a ship to Biscay: at twenty yeres of age, he went to Guynea: at 22. yeares of age, he was Captaine of the Iudith, at Saint Iohn de Vllna, in the Bay of Mexico, within that space after, hee went twice into the Indies, presently vpon that, he went againe, tooke Nombre de Dios, with the Kings Treasure, he went twenty sayes iourney ouer land, toward the South Sea, where he surprized diuers Fozts, immediately after his returne thence, he furnished at his owne proper charge, three friggots with men, and munition, and serued voluntary in Ireland vnder Walter Earle of Esser: where he did excellent seruice, both by Sea, and land, at the winning of diuers strong Fozts.

After the death of the sayd Earle of Esser, he returned into England, and was entertained by Sir Christoper Hatton, then Vice-Chamberlaine to the Queene, and a Priuie Councellor of Estate, by whose meanes, hee became well knowne vnto her Maiestie.

Then with fiue shippes, and two barkes hee went to the straights of Megallan: but passed through, only with two ships: viz the Elizabeth which presently returned backe againe through the straights, and the Pelican, which afterward being in the South Sea, hee called the Hinde, wherein hee himselfe was imbarked: hee then passed through the South Seas, by the Moluccos, and East Indies: where amongst other things of strange note, you shall vnderstand that from Iaua Maior, he neuer touched, nor watred in any place vntill he came to Serpa, Leona in Guynea vpon the coast of Affrica, not after that, vntill he arriued at Plimmouth about the end of the yere, 1580. being very richly fraught with golde, siluer, silke, Pearles, and pretious stones.

The newes of this his great wealth, so farre fetcht was maruellous strange, and of all men held impossible, and incredible, but both proouing true, it fortuned, that many mislked it, and reproched him: besides all this, there were others that deuised and diuulged, all possible disgraces against Drake, and his followers, terming him the Walker theefe of the vnknowne world, yet neuertheless, the people generally with exceeding admiration applauded his wonderfull long aduentures, and rich pyze, chiefely for some reasons following.

The Queene not yet perswaded, to accept and approoue his vnknowne purchase: paw-

Yyy ses

led a while, and heard euery opinion, which at that time were many: the principall points wherof, were: that if this action of Drake should be iustified: it would call in question, the late Pyracy of Captaine Chrishmaſſe: the ſtaying of the Spanish Kings Treaſure, by Martin Frobusher: hinder Commerce: breake the league: cause reprysh: bredd warre with the house of Burgondy: and cause iubergo of the English Ships, and goods in Spaine. Where, vnto answer was made, that it was neither pyze, nor Pyracy, nor Ciuill policy, to call so much Treasure out of pure possession: neither could any Pryze, or priuate subiect rightly challenge it: nor by it any offence committed, or intended to any Christian Prince or State.

And that it was very needfull, to retaine it, as well, for further tryall of the Spanish malice, shewed to the English Merchants, in Spaine: as for the deserving, of secret enemies at home, against both which: it would proue a present remedy: as also, that if warres ensued, which the Spaniards long threatned: then the said Treasure of it selfe, would fully defray the charge of seauen yeeres warres, present, and saue the Common Subiect from Mayes, Loanes, Privy Seales, Subsidies, and fifteenes, and giue them good aduantage, against a hating aduersary, the which said opinion strongly preuailed.

Yet Captaine Drake, all this while being therewithall and by his friends much encouraged, reaped doubtfull of the event, vntill the day that the Quæenes Maiestie came abyde his Weather-beaten Barke: where being as highly graced as his heart could wish, with Knightly honour, Princely commendations, and encouragement: forthwith bitted his friends in Court, Towne, and Country: his name, and fame, became admirable in all places, the people swarming dayly in the streets, to behold him, bowing hatted to all that vouchsafe him.

Bookes, pictures, and ballads, were published in his praise, his Opinion, and Iudgement, concerning Marine affaires: Rode currant.

In the yeare one Thousand fiue hundred eighty and fiue, he was Generall by Sea, and Land, and that yeere hee Conquered fiue strong Indian Cities, that is to say Saint Domingo, Carthagina, Saint Yago, and Saint Augustino.

He surprized the delicate Ile of Bayon, raced diuers Fortes, and returned with great spoyles.

In the yere, one thousand fiue hundred eighty seuen, with sixe of the Quæenes ships, and diuers Merchants ships, he went into the bay of Cadiz, and into the mouth of the riuer of Lisborne, where hee surprized, and raced many Fortes, Sunke, tooke and burnt an hundred sayle of Spanish shippes, diuers of them being prepared for inuasion of England, the yeere ensuing, he brought thence great store of Ordinance, and brought from the Ilandes the great Carracke, called the Saint Philip, which was the first Carracke, that euer came into England.

The first Carracke that euer came into England.

In the yeere one thousand fiue hundred eighty and eight, he was vice-admiral of the whole Fleete by Commition, against the inuincible Spanish Armado, his former fortune continuing with him, he tooke one of their great Gallions, and in her Don Pedro de Valdes, A renowned Spanish Commander, after that being accompanied with the Earle of Northumberland, and diuers other Lords, whose names I haue forgot, hee shewed great valour vpon the said great Spanish Armado.

In the yeere one thousand fiue hundred eighty nine, hee was Admirall of the great Nauie, wherein was contained the most resolute Souldiours, and skilfullest Mariners that euer went out of England, being specially prouided, for the re-establishing of Don Antonio late King of Portugall: and for requitall of the Spanish bold attempt vpon England, the yeere before: in which expedition albeit they sayled of the maine purpole, either for inuasion of the King, or replanting of Don Antonio, yet they entred into diuers parts of his Dominions, and spoyled many of his ships, and Gallies.

In the yeere one thousand fiue hundred ninetie and fiue, he was ioynt Admirall with Sir John Hawkins, of a great fleete for the Indies where hee dyed neere Porta Bella, and being Coffined, was cast into the Sea, some suppose he was poysoned, others Imagine he died of Melancholly, seeing his fortunes crost by his friends, and persecuted by his enemies, he brought a River to Plimmouth, of three foote deepe, and fiue foote wide, which River in a right line, from the Towne to the head thereof, is eight miles, but in turning and winding, to come from the head to the Towne, is two and twenty miles.

He was more skilfull in all poyntes of Nauigation, then any that euer was before his time, in his time, or since his death, he was also of a perfect memory, great Obseruation, Eloquent by Nature, Skilfull in Artillery, Expert and apt to let blood, and giue Physicke vnto his people according to the Climats, hee was Low of stature, of strong limbs, broade Breasted, round headed, browne hayre, full Bearded, his eyes round, Large and cleare, well fauoured, fayre, and of a cheerefull countenance.

His name was a terrour to the French, Spaniard, Portugal, and Indians, many Princes of Italy, Germany, and others, as well enemies as friends in his life time desired his Picture. He was the second that euer went through the straights of Magellan, and the first that euer went round about the world: he was married vnto two wiues both yong, yet he himselfe and ten of his brethren dyed without Issue, hee made his youngest brother Thomas his heire who was with him in most and chiefest of his Imployments, in whose he was as famous in Europe, and America, as Tamberlaine in Asia, and Affrica.

In

In his imperfections hee was { Ambitious for Honor. Vnconstant in amity. Greatly affected to Popularity.

Martin Frobusher, borne neere Doncaster, in Yorkshire, in his youth gaue himselfe to Nauigation; he was the first Englishman that discouered the Zoath way to China, and Cathay, and at his first discouery of the way to Cathay, at which time for tryall of what hee could find there, brought thence a blacke soft stone like Sea coale, supposed to be gold, or siluer Mare, and in that perswasion made two seuerall voyages againe to Cathaye, bringing with them great quantitie of the said supposed Mare, the which after due tryall, much greeued, proued not worth any thing, neither fitte for any vse, a great quantitie of which stuffe was layed in the nursery at Darford, no man regarding it, he was vice-admirall to Sir Francis Drake, at the winning of Saint Domingo, Saint Iago, Carthagina, and Saint Augustino.

Hee did great seruice in the yeere one thousand fiue hundred eighty and eight, vpon the inuincible Spanish Armado, for which he was Knighted, after that hee was General of seuen ships, to keepe Weslehaven in Britaine, where the Spaniardes neere thereunto had strongly fortified themselues, in whose extirpation he did speciall seruice by Sea and Land, and was there shotte into the side with a Pusshet, the Wounde not mortall, hee liued vntill hee came to Plimmouth, though the negligence of his Surgeon that onely tooke out the Bullet, not sufficiently searches the Wound, to take out the Bombaste stucke in with the shotte the soze festered, whereof he dyed, and was buried in Plimmouth, he was very valiant, yet harshly and violent.

Commendation of neither Thomas Candish.

Thomas Candish of Tremly in Suffolke, Esquire, being finely Seated, and of good possessions, neere the pleasant Towne of Ipswich, after some experience at Sea, had owned the best part of his estate, in furnishing shippes, for the South Sea, where he gayned great purchase, enough to haue redeemed a whole Earledome, but within short space after, the most part thereof being spent, Attempted to obtaine the like.

And being at the mouth of the Straights, altred his course, and returning for England dyed, he was the second Englishman in that went about the World, hee was of a delicate wit, and personage.

And albeit, for breuities sake, I haue singled out, and onely set downe these fewer as chiefe, in publique fame for excellence, in the Science, practise, and knowledge of Nauigation: yet were there infinite numbers of others worthily famous, which before their times the like were neuer heard of: neither may this present age nor after ages, imagine that euer any before them, were in any measure of marine experience, able to compare with them: Reasons to proue the same are many, and principally for that the knowledge, and vse of the Sea Compass of Needle, was neither familiar nor vnderstood but few yeeres before their time, and so of necessitie were constrained to direct their course by Land-markes, or dead reckonings as they terme it: for which cause, and to shewe the boundlesse blessings of God in this latter age, I haue hereunto annexed, the Originall of that most excellent engine the Sea Compasse.

Nauigation.

You are also to know that at this time aboue mentioned, there were many youthes of Eighteene, Nineteene, and Twenty yeeres of age, very sufficient to take charge of Shippes, into most partes of Europe, and many places of both Indies, there were also diuers Shippe-waights, that could make Shippes of any fashion and burthen, and with their owne knowledge, and experience, carry them to the furthest continent.

He was fifty & fiue yeeres old when he dyed.

And concerning the rest of the English Nauigators and voyages, I will referre you vnto the reuerend Father, Master Richard Hacklut, Batchelor of Diuinitie, in his booke of English voyages.

In the yeere one thousand three hundred eighty fiue, and in the eight yeere of Richard the second, the French King in reuenge of Edward the thirds inuasion, slaughter of people, and incredible damage done vnto the French, Charles of Fraunce with full consent, and ayde of all his subiectes, Dukes of Lorayne, Britayne, Flaunders, and all the Netherlandes, in hauing also the speciall assistance, of money, souldiers, Shippes, and Saylers from the King of Spayne, the Dukes of Saxony, Bauaria, and the Duke of Sauoy, by whose meanes he furnished two mighty Nauies, the one in Britaine, the other at Sluce, the which fleete at Sluce, consisted of 550. and nine sayle, many of them hauing their Sayles, and Cabines guilded, carued, and timbopered very curiously, and deftly, lying at Anchor, bound for present inuasion of England, the French King with his friends, in all readinesse to make an assured Conquest, hauing determined what they would doe with King Richard, his people, and Country, &c. vpon the instant when they should put to Sea, they wanted Sailers and Pilates to bring them to England, this being in August, and they not daring to way Anchor, lingred vppon hope vntill the end of September, at which time there arose a great tempest, that scattered the whole fleete, many of them driuen vpon the coastes of England, and some of the best of them taken in the Thames, where in was great preuision of diuers Pshipes, and the Strange, and wonderfull great Machina, in which the King himselfe, with al his Peeres and houshould should haue kept his Court, and from that time after the French durst neuer attempt the like, this haue I here set downe not onely to shew the goodnesse of God in preserving this Land, by preuenting the powerfull practise of the proud: but therewithall to let you vnderstand, that but eleuenteene yeeres past there could not bee found in fiue seuerall

The greatest number of ships of war, that euer was in the west parts of the world.

Voyeart.

nations, sufficient Mariners to guide the Army twenty Leagues into the Sea.

Who deuised and in what time, the compasse of the plot, and for Nauigation such as now is vsed by the Mariners.

The Mariners of sea Compas who was the first discouerer thereof, and of the variation of the points, &c.

The honour of that inuention, as touching the property of the Magneticall needle in pointing towardes the Poles, is attributed by Bonifacius, in his Italia illustrata, (in the description of Campadia felix) and by Paulus Iouius in lib. 25. of his history in the end, to the Citizens of Amalfi, a Sea Towne, about eight or nine myles distant from Salerne, in the Kingdome of Naples. The Authors name is no where particularly recorded, then to be one Flauio of Amalfi, for to him that honour is giuen by Francis Lopez of Gomara in his West Indian history, lib. 1. cap. 9. and by Peter Ciezius, in lib. 2. cap. 9. of his Indian story: and by Pandulp: Collenutius, in his history of Naples, who 300. yeares since, namely in the yeere of our Sauiour, 1305. discouered that propertie in the Magnes, and applyed it to Nauigation. Doctor Gilbert in his booke de Magnete. lib. 1. cap. 1. imagineth the bringer of this knowledge into Europe, to haue beene Marcus Paulus Venetus, who returned some few yeeres afore that time out of Tartary and China, and is supposed to haue brought that point of knowledge with him out of China, (where it is certaine that they haue the vse of that instrument, and as is verily thought, more anciently then we.) But yet I see not in that imagination, any great reason, why Amalfi should be deprined of that long kept reputation, touching that inuention of the compas, because neither doth Paulus Venetus himselfe in all his relation of those parts, write a word of any such obseruation he learned among them, nor is it likely that he should bee so vnthankefull to his Country, (by which his father and he had beene honoured) as to conceale such an excellent secret from the Venetians, if he had any such, and to communicate it to Anafi, being of a forraine dominion, and almost foure hundred myles off, on the other side of Italy, and depriue himselfe with all his kinsfolk commendation of enriching Chyttendome with such a rarity.

But touching the diuision of the Plot or playne of the Compasse into the 32. points, although that be somewhat later, yet the author is not knowne, nor is it a matter of so great importance. But yet is thought by Goropius, in his lib. 3. de Origin. Hispanicis, to haue beene the inuention of some Germane, and that betwixt the riuers of the Mase and Scheld, because the names of all the windes, vsed also by Sayleiners, as the French, and Spanish, are all Dutch names (and we of England vary but little from them:) and the dialect argueth them to haue proceeded from no other part of Germany then that.

And yet I doubt of the force of this reason because although the nations aforenamed vse the Germane names in their compasse, yet the Italians haue peculiar names for them in their owne language.

In what manner and by what meanes, saylers vsed to sayle, before they attained the knowledge of the Compasse.

As touching their manner, it was by Nauigation, that is by the helpe of Dares, for so were all their swift Vessels of sayle stirred, as Bayfius instructeth in his booke, de re Nauali, and you may partly note it, in the Historie of the Prophet Ionas, where the Mariners are sayd to haue striued to row the shippe to land.

In which sort of Nauigation, notwithstanding, they were growne to that dexterity, that they were able to make way farre aboue a hundred miles a day, as wee see by the limitations of a dayes sayle, set downe by Ptolemee in lib. 1. Georg Cap. 9. to bee a thousand furlongs, and by Aristides in his Oration intituled Egyptius, (with the fauour of the wind) a thousand two hundred, that is an hundred twenty fiue, or an hundred and fifty miles a day.

But yet notwithstanding, the huge great vessels of burthen, had the vse of the sayles and not of Dares, as Iosephus in Liuie lib. 7. Decad. 3. I sayd, the lesse and larger vessels: for the lesse of that sort also, to haue beene mouued with Dares, I find in Homer in the ninth booke of Odyss, where mention is made of shippes of burthen stirred with twenty Dares.

Now as touching their meanes of direction in sayling, by what skill they were able, without the loadstone to hold any course, it consisted in these two points.

First in the obseruation of the coast markes, in the sight whereof all Nauigation in the Ocean was made, (for in the Mediterranean, by reason of the narrownes being but two, or three dayes passage ouer, it was no aduenturous matter to crosse it, except by violence of Tempest, they were carryed into the maine (and for that cause anciently, the Sayleers sate in the prowe, and were thence called prozete, as now they doe in the poope.

So as hauing well acquainted with the bayes and bendings of the coast, and specially with the Capes the Positions, and distances, where of former experience had registred, it was no hard matter for them to make a sure, although a slow sayle.

The second point of their Art was, in the obseruation of the Stars, for the night: of which it is remembred by Ouid in Fastis, and Cicero, in his Academicke questions, that the Phenicians obserued Cynosura, and the Grecians Helice, the second next constellatine to the North pole, that is the one the lesse, and the other the greater beare.

In the day time, the Sunne was their director, by whose Meridian altitude they were able to know, both the latitude of the place, where they were, and what course they held: for they neither wanted tables of the Sunnes declination (although not very exactly Calculated) nor instruments wherewith to take the altitude of Starres, long before Ptolomies time.

But if they were by force of weather carried from kenning of the coast, and the skie day and night ouerspread with clouds: then were they in a manner vtterly confounded, & left to guesse at their course, only by the qualitie of the winds which was known (although the coniecture was often deceitfull) ordinarily to be of differing temperatures, in heate, and coldnesse, in moysture and drinesse, and of diuers other dispositions, in the boysterousnesse, or mildnesse, in the continualnesse, or intermission of the blastes, &c. for in all these there is obserued ordinarily a sensible difference, in the diuerse sorts of windes.

And this in such a case (till they recouered the sight of the shoare or starres) was their only and silly reliefe.

And in this case is seene the necessitie, and principal excellency of the Magnes for direction of course, for although otherwise it serue for compendiousnesse of Nauigation, yet in this case it is almost merely necessary, being without it, left destitute of all certaine direction to the silly coniectures before spoken of. And this their dependency, of their direction from the Sun and Starr, you may obserue euidently in the seuen and twentieth Chapter, 20. of the Acts of the Apostles, in Paules voyage toward Rome, where the desperatenesse of their condition in sayling being in a tempest) is noted, for that neither Sun nor Starr in many dayes appeared.

Who obtained first the knowledge of the alteration of the Compasse, for the Pole Antarctique.

If you meane by alteration of the Compasse, any change of his propertie in pointing to the North and South, (which some men haue thought it was subiect to, passing the equinoctiall line) it receiueth no alteration at all, but pointeth still with the same end toward the North, as well vnder the Antarctique hemisphere of heauen as vnder the Arctique, and in the same forme. But if you meane by the alteration of it, that which we call the variation of the Compas, that is the declination of it from the Meridian, (the North point declining from the true North, toward the Northeast, or North West) the first obseruer of that (for ought that euer I could reade) is but of small antiquitie, namely Sebastian Cabot in the time of King Henry the eight, and afterward entertained for grand Pilot by King Edward the first, for before his time, euer since the first finding of the Magneticall needle, it was generallie supposed to lie precisely, in place of the Meridian, and crosse the equator at right Angels, respecting with the points onlie North and South.

But afterwards it was found by Nauigators, that although vnder some Meridians it hath no variation at all, as at the Iland Corue, in the Azores, & at wardhouse in Finmarke, &c. yet in most places it variety some where more, some where lesse, and in some places three points of the Compasse.

The life and death of Master Iohn Stow.

Master Iohn Stow of London, Marchantaylor, a painefull writer of the English Chronicle for the space of forty and seuen yeres, who purposed if hee had liued but one yeere longer to haue put in print Reyne Woolfes Chronicle, which Chronicle he began & finished at the request of Doctor Wrigtit, late Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, but being preuented by death, left the same in his study orderly written ready for the presse, but it came to nothing, he wrote also the Survey of London.

He was tall of stature, leane of body, and face his eyes small and Chyttaine, of a pleasant and cheerefull countenance, his sight and memory very good, very sober, mild, and courteous to any that required his instructions, and retained the true vse of all his senses, vnto the day of his death, being of an excellent memory, he alwayes protested neuer to haue written any thing, either for malice, feare, or fauor, nor to seeke his owne particular gaine, or vaine glory, and that his only paines and care was to write truth, he could neuer ride, but trauelled on foote vnto diuers Cathedrall Churches, and other chiefe places of the land to search records, he was very carelesse of scoffers, backbiters, & detractors, hee liued peacefully, & died of the stone Collicke, being fourescore yeres of age, and was buried the eighth of Aprill 1605. in his parish Church of Saint Andrewes-vndershaft, whose Mural monument neere vnto his graue was there set vp at the charges of Elizabeth his wife.

And as precedent writers, in fauour of vertuous merrit, in their seuerall times, haue recollected such as were most famous in the high mistery of Poesie: by whose singular paines, and inuentry, our native language, hath from time to time, beene much refined: and at this time directly by them, brought to great perfection: and the abuse of time, and populer absurdities many wayes deciphered, and amended: the chiefe of our ancient Poets, recommended vnto vs, by worthy writers, are Fryer Bacon, Thomas Wickliffe, Sir Ieoffry Chaucer Knight, Iohn Gower Esquier, Iohn Lidgate monke of Bury, doctor Skelton, Sir Thomas More Lord Chancellour, master Iasper Heyward, Gentleman, &c.

Our moderne, and present excellent Poets which worthily flourish in their owne workes, and all of them in my owne knowledge liued together in this Queenes raigne, according to their priorities as neere as I could, I haue orderly set downe (viz). George Gascoigne Esquire, Thomas Church-yard Esquire, Sir Edward Dyer Knight, Edmond Spencer Esquire, Sir Phillip Sidney Knight, Sir Iohn Harrington Knight, Sir Thomas Challoner Knight, Sir Francis Bacon Knight, and Sir Iohn Davie Knight, Master Iohn Lillie Gentleman, Master George Chapman Gentleman, Ma. W. Warner Gentleman, Mast. Wil. Shake-

speare Gentleman, Samuell Daniell Esquire, Michael Draiton Esquire of the Bath, Master Christopher Marlo Gen. Mr. Beniamin Johnston Gent. John Marston Esquire, Master Abraham Francis Gent. Master Francis Meers Gentle. Master Iohn Sliuester Gentle. Master Thomas Decker Gentleman, Mr. Iohn Hecher Gentle. Mast. Iohn Webster Gentleman, Mr. Thomas Heywood Gentleman, Mr. Thomas Middleton Gentleman, Master George Withers.

These following were Latine Poets.

Master Gualeer Hadon Gentleman, Master Nicholas Carre Gentle. Mr. Christopher Orland Gent. Matheuv Gwyn doctor of Physick, Thomas Lodge Doctor of Physicke, Mast. Tho. Watson Gentle. Thomas Campion doctor of Physicke, Richard Lateware doctor of diuinity Master Brunsverd Gentleman, Master doctor Harnie, and master Willey Gentleman.

The life and death of sir Humfrey Gilbert.

Sir Humfrey Gilbert, borne in Deuon. at his Fathers house called Greeneway, vpon Dart riuer, he gat his first reputation at Newhauen, where hee serued with singular commendation.

He was afterward President of Munster in Ireland, and with 400. foot, and 100. horse appeased that great Rebellion of the Macartes, and draue out all the Rutlers, but the Earle of Ormond: he draue out of Ireland, that famous Irish Captaine, Iames Fitz Morris, he was one of the twelue Gentlemen that charged Oneale, when the Generall sir Randall was slaine; and was of all the English in our age the most feared among that nation.

His brother Sir Walter Rawleigh was with him in all these actions.

He was the first that carryed a Regiment of English into Zeland, when the States had no footing therein but flushing, and in a shorttime he beat the Spaniards out of that Iland, and did many famous seruices in those parts.

He vndertooke an enterprize vpon the Indies, but his fleete was broken with tempests, he sought to plant a Colony betweene Florida and new found land, in which iourney he perished. He was a great fauourer of Arts and learning, he despised Piracy.

Proclamation against late buildings and Inmates.

The 22. of June, Proclamation was made for the pulling downe of the late builded houses and bodies of Inmates in the Cities of London, and Westminster, and for the space of three miles distant of both those Cities, but little was done, and small effect followed more then of other the like Proclamations before time made, and also an Act of Parliament to that purpose: these Cities are still increased in buildings of Cottages, and pestered with Inmates to the great infection, and other annoyances of them both.

Men set on the pillory.

The last of June, Atkinson a Customer of Hull, was set on the Pillory in Cheape, and with him three other, to wit, Wilkinson, Alson and Govvloy, brought thether on horsebacke, with their faces towards the horse tailes, and papers on their heads. They were there whipped on the Pillory, and lost their eares by iudgment giuen in the Star-Chamber, for slanderous words by them spoken & written against the Lord Treasurer, and other of the Counsell.

Tempest of thunder and haile.

The same last of June, in the afternoone, fell great lightning, and thunder, with haile stones in many places of nine inches compasse, which at Stanwitch in Kent lay a foote deepe on the ground, brake the glasse windowes of their Churches, and tyles of their houses, some barnes were fired by the lightning.

Souldiers to Ireland. *Anno reg.* 45.

About the first of August, the Citizens of London, were caused to set out and furnish 200. Souldiers towards Ireland.

Citizens of London charged with ships.

In the moneth of January, the Citizens of London were charged with ships to sea, they to lye before Dunkerke, two ships and a pinnace furnished, manned and maintained with the charges of 6000. pounds the yeare.

A Seminary executed.

The 17. of February, W. Anderson, a Seminary Priest, was drawne to Tyborne, and there hanged, bowelled and quartered, for being found in England contrary to the Statute of Anno. 27.

Straight watches.

In the moneth of March, the Queen lodging at Richmond, & lying dangerously sicke straight watches were kept in the City of London, with barding at the gates, Lanthornes with lights hanged out to burne all the night.

Queene Elizabeth deceased.

Thursday the 24. of March, about two of the clocke in the morning, deceased Queene Elizabeth at her Mannor of Richmond in Surry, shee being then aged, threescore and ten yeres and had raigned 44. yeres, 5. moneths, and odde dayes, whose corps was princly conueyed to Whitehall, and there remained till the night and twentieth of Aprill, and was then buryed at Westminster.

It is a note worthy to bee remembred, that Thursday hath beene a fatall day to King Henry the eight, and all his posterity, for himselfe dyed on Thursday the eight and twentieth of January, King Edward on Thursday the first of July, Queene Mary on Thursday the seuenteenth of November, and Queene Elizabeth on Thursday the foure and twentieth of March.

King Iames proclaimed K. of England Scotland, France, and Ireland.

The same day aforesaid, the Princes, Peeres & Privy Councellours of estate, with as great peace, prudence, and providence, as the heart of man could imagine, assembled themselues together, far beyond the general imagination of all men, being a matter most remarkable, both speedie and, as well for the instant manifesting the Queenes death, as in publishing to the whole Realme for their lasting comfort, the true and lawfull successor: And being all of one mind like louing brethren, they came all together from the Palace of Whitehall vnto the Citie of London, where their comming was seriously expected of all, and about 11. of the clocke, the same Thursday in the forenoone, which according to the computation of the Church of England, is the last day of the yeare 1602. The Lord Maior and Aldermen of London met them, & their great traine at Ludgate: And thereupon certaine knowledge of the cause of their comming, and whom they resolued to Proclaime King, caused the gates to be opened and guarded, and brought them

Sir Robert the Lord Maior.

them to the high Crosse in Cheape side, and there Proclaimed Iames the first of that name: King of Scotland to be the right King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, defender of the faith, being lineally descended from Margaret the eldest daughter to King Henry the seuenth, by Elizabeth his wife, who was the eldest daughter of King Edward the fourth, the sayd Margaret was married to King Iames the fourth of that name, King of Scotland, in the yeere of our Redemption 1503. who had issue Iames the first, who was father to Mary Queene of Scotland, and the same Mary was mother to Iames the first, now sole Monarch of the whole Iland of great Britaine, and King of France, and Ireland: this Proclamation was most distinctly, and audably read by Sir Robert Cecill principall Secretary vnto Queene Elizabeth, also the Lords and Privy Councellors of Estate vsed as great care and diligence in all things else that concerned these high affaires and sudden businesse, and sent speedily condigne Messengers vnto his Maiestie into Scotland, who manifested their whole proceedings with tender of their zealous loue and duty, and the peoples vniuersall ioy and great desire to see their King, which his Maiesty most graciously accepted, approued all their proceedings, and returned them all Princely thankes and authorized all the Lords and others late Privie Councellors to the Queen, to persist as they haue begun, vntill hee came personally vnto them. There were 37. Earles and Barons that dyned that day with master Iames Pemberton one of the Sheriffs of London, and at his house the Nobility, with others of the Privy Councell of Estate late in Councell all that afternoone, and from that time, they held their Councels at the Court of Whitehall, and in the Kings name governed all things vntill his Highnesse came in person.

This change was very plausible, and well pleasing vnto all the Nobilitie and Gentry, and generally to all the Commons of this Realme, without faction or interruption, amongst whom the name of a King, was then so strange, as but few could remember that they had seene a King before, except they were aged persons, because the gouernment of the Kingdome had continued almost fifty yeres vnder the Raigne of two Queenes, which is the greater part of an old mans age. The King being aduertised of all things as aforesayd, called his Councell vnto him, and hauing setled his Kingdome of Scotland in good and peaceable order, he began his iourney towardes England and came to London, the 7. of May.

A Commemoration of Queene Elizabeth.

SHee was tall of stature, strong in euery limbe and ioynt, her fingers small and long, her voyce lowd and shrill, shee was of an admirable ready wit and memory, very skilfull in all kind of Needle-worke, had an excellent eare in Musicke, played well vpon divers Instruments, shee spake the Greeke, Latine, Italian, and French tongues well, and vnderstood the Spanish, she was resolute, and of an vndaunted Spirit, of all which speciall vertues apparantly approued, and publiquely knowne to the whole world, during all the time of her owne raigne, and besides her wisdome and great discretion shewed in preventing and escaping many imminent daungers, wherewith shee was strongly environed during her sisters Raigne, holding this (*Maxime*) firmely in her minde, being a subiect, she would obey obediently, and being a Soveraigne, she would be obeyed accordingly: doe but read these few lines following, and I doubt not but thou shalt receiue full satisfaction.

And first, whereas I should set down the particular Ambassadors that in the first yeere of her Raigne, came from the Emperour, the Kings of France, Spaine, Denmarke, Scotland, Poland, Portugall, and divers Princes in Italy, and Germanie, vnto her Maiestie, to congratulate her happinesse; all which having delivered their severall Ambassages, and received their answeres, and being returned to their seuerall Lords, and made report of her Princely behaviour, her fame euer became admirable vnto all Estates; the particularity thereof as I sayd before, I will omit only to avoid tediousnesse, and onely recommend vnto thy judgement, certaine briefe essentiall observations.

In August, 1564. shee made along Oration in Latine vnto the whole assembly of the Vniversitie of Cambridge.

The 5. of September 1566. she on the sodaine made an Oration in Latine vnto the whole Vniversitie of Oxford, in the presence of the Spanish Ambassadours.

The sixt of August 1578. at Norwich where her Maiesty at her first entrance heard a solemne Oration in Latine, made by the Maior, whereunto her Highnesse gaue present answere in the presence of all the assembly, at her being the same time at Norwich: master *Stephen Lymbert* the publique Schoole-master, made a long and learned Oration, the principall points thereof pleasing, pleased her Maiestie very well, and made condigne answere thereunto immediatly.

In the yeere 1581. at which time her Highnesse entertained in all state, loue, and kindnesse, *Francis* of *Valois* Duke of *Alan-*

ſon, brother to the French King, and heire apparent to the Diadem, who vpon the worlds blazon, of her matchleſſe vertues, came then as an earneſt ſuter vnto her M. for marriage; albeit the difference of their age, *viz.* ſhee 49. and he but 25. yet when himſelfe with his beſt iudgement & ſtrict-eſt obſervation, after divers meetings, conferences, and paſſages of all things, as well in matters of Princely pleaſure, as dauncing, muſicke, diſcourſing, perfecti-on of many Languages, good reading in auncient Hiſtoryes, and excellence in obſervation, as well as in the true man-naging of the high affayres of her Imperi-all Crowne and dignity, was drowned in admiration of her vnequalled giftes and graces, and ſayd to thoſe that were with him, both eye & eare witneſſes of the pre-miſſes, that the world yet knew her not, and that *Fame* wanted vtterance to tell her worth: And being returned into France, & relating vnto his Kingly brother, what rare wonderous and infinite perfections, hee had heard and ſeene in one Woman, anſwered him thus: It is not the hundreth time, that I haue heard hundreths ſpeake in her deſeruing prayſe, and ſingular gifts, both of God and nature, & will therefore give my cenſure with your ſelfe, and other Chriſtian Princes, that ſhe worthily me-riteth the name of a ſecond *Saba*.

In the yeere 1583. *Albertus* Duke of *Va-laſco*, & Palatine of *Stradia*, otherwiſe cal-led the Duke of *Poland*, a Prince of great wiſedom, learning, gravity, and of long ex-perience in warre, having beene a great Commander in 17. ſet battells, againſt the *Turke*, and was at this time aboue three-ſcore yeeres of age, came of his owne free motion and earneſt deſire onely to ſee her Maieſty, ſaying: he had heard, and read ſo much of her rare vertues, and high perfe-ction, that if his good ſtarres had not fa-uoured him to behold her, he ſhould haue held it the worſt of his fortune; who a-bode here from Aprill vntill September: and the Queene giving him divers Prince-ly entertainments, wherein ſhe excelled, and that hee had had many conferences and diſcourſes with her, as well touching the publique hoſtilitie, againſt the gene-rall enemie the *Turke*, and of the particu-lar eſtates, ſcituation, ſtrength, and gouern-ment of all the Chriſtian Princes, with o-ther pleaſant and variable entertainment of time, ſuch as himſelfe beſt pleaſed to preferre to try her wit, experience, and iudgement: all which conferences & diſ-courſes was begunne, continued, and en-ded either in Latine, French, or Italian. And within few dayes before, hee was embarked for Poland, and being at his lodging in Wincheſter houſe, I my ſelfe heard him ſay theſe wordes: I haue now heard and ſeene more worth in one Wo-man, then fame could haue told mee, or I vntill this time could haue beleeued, and when I ſhal arrive in Poland, & that death prevent not my determination, I proteſt I will faithfully record vnto all poſteri-ties, the bleſſednesſe of this time and ſtate that hath ſo rare, ſo wiſe, and benigne a Soveraigne.

The 29. of Iune, 1585. the 13. Deputies of the States of Holland, Zeland, Friezland Gelders, &c. having audience made an oration, or narration vnto her Maieſtie in French, of their preſent eſtate, & diſtreſſe, and likelihood of vtter ruine, if her gracio-us hand helped them not, vnto whom in the ſame Language ſhe inſtantly gaue great conference and comfort.

In the yeare 1588. when the famous ſouldier, *Alexander Farneze*, Duke of Par-ma, with 346. flat bottomed Boates, and 30000. old ſouldiers were appointed to land in Kent, or Eſſex. And the Duke of *Medina* with 128. great ſhippes, Galliaſſes, and Gallions, with twelue thouſand land ſouldiers, all which being in great readi-neſſe to invade the middle or heart of the land, beſides tenne or twelue thouſand le-uyed by the Duke of *Guyſe* in France, to invade the Weſt countries: the newes and purpoſe of all their forces and practiſe, & their hope of private friends here to enter-taine them, was publickely knowne vnto all nations, the moſt part whereof in their better conceiued opinion, held it impoſſi-ble for England to eſcape ſubverſion, yet neuertheleſſe, & notwithſtanding the pre-miſſes, with ſomewhat more then may here be ſpoken, her Maieſtie was euen as cheerefull in her private chamber, and as hearty & comfortable vnto all the Lords of her Councell, as euer ſhee was at any time before. And commig to view her Campe at *Tilbury*, being brauely mounted ſhee gaue ſuch encouragements with her words, lookes, and geſtures, that neither the feare of death, nor misfortune could bee diſcerned, neither in Commaunder, Captaine, nor common ſouldier.

The yeere 1597. the Polonian Embaſ-ſadour comming with ſpeciall meſſage from his Lord vnto her Maieſty, being of a blunt and harſh behaviour, deliuered his minde accordingly, contrary to all expec-tation: whereat the Queene being much amazed, was driven into admiration, and vnawares and vnprouided on the ſodaine what to ſay, with a ſharp looke, and earneſt mind, ſpake theſe words following.

minde

Angliæ Reginæ reſponſum, Regis Polo-niæ, Legato, menſe Iulij. An. 1595.

Oh! quam decepta fui, expectaui legationem, tu vero querelam mihi adduxiſti. Per lite-ras accepi te eſſe Legatum, inueni vero Herald-um; nunquam in vita mea audiui talem ora-tionem: miror ſane, miror talem, et tam inſolen-tem in publico audaciam: neque poſſum cre-dere ſi Rex tuus adeſſet quod ipſe talia verba protuliſſet; Si vero tale aliquid tibi fortaſſe in mandatis Commiſit (quod quidem valde dubi-to) eo tribuendum: quod cum Rex tuus ſit iu-uenis, et non tam Iure ſanguinis, quam iure e-lectionis, et nouitur electus, non tam perfecte in-telligat rationem tractandi iſtiuſmodi negotia cum alijs principibus, quam vel maiores il-lius nobiſcum obſeruarunt, vel fortaſſe obſerua-bunt alij qui locum eius poſt hac tenebunt.

Quod ad te attinet, videre mihi libros mul-tos perlegiſſe, libros tamen principum ne at-tigiſſe, ſed prorſus ignorare quid inter Reges conuenit. Nam quod iuris naturæ et Genti-um tantopere mentionem facis; hoc ſcito, iuris naturæ Gentiumq;, vt cum bellum inter Re-ges intercedit, liceat alteri alterius bellica ſub-ſidia, vndicunque allata intercipere, et ne in damnum ſuum conuertantur præcauere: hoc (inquam) eſt Ius naturæ & Gentium.

Quod nouam affinitatem cum domo Auſtria-ca comemores, quam tanti jam fieri velis; non te fugiat ex eadem domo non defuiſſe; qui Regi tuo Poloniæ regnum præripuiſſe voluerunt.

De cæteris vero, quæ non ſunt huius loci & temporis cum plura ſint, et ſingulatim conſide-randa; illud expecta quod ex quibuſdam meis Conſiliarijs huic rei deſignandis intelliges, In-terea vero valeas, et quieſcas.

And during the moſt part of her raigne and chiefely towards the latter end, there came divers Grecians that were oppreſt with Turkiſh tyranny, as well Biſhoppes, Barons, & men of ſort, as others vnto her Maieſtie for reliefe, vnto whom ſhe vſed to give perſonall anſwere in their owne tongue, and very often and directly by her meanes they re-obtained their former e-ſtates, and free dome of themſelues, their wiues and families.

Laſtly, in the yeere 1600. when at one time ſhee entertained two Ambaſſadours and one Duke, that voluntarily came to ſee her maieſtie, that is to ſay, the Muſco-uy Ambaſſador, the Barbarian Ambaſſa-dor, and the Duke of *Brachiano* a Roman, whom the Queene entertained in all ſtate, loue and kindneſſe, in whoſe preſence her Royall perſon dauncedy being then 69. yeres of age. The which with all other circumſtances and obſeruations by them ſeuerally made, and full anſwere touching their Ambaſſages, they all returned in as great ſatisfaction and admiration as any other formerly mentioned. For breuity ſake, here I do omit the particular memo-ry of many wiſe and learned ſpeeches her Maieſtie made in the Parliament houſe, & in her owne Court, vpon manifold occa-ſions, three whereof are ſpeciall, that is to ſay: firſt, her modeſt anſweres to thoſe that in the youth of her Raigne, would haue conſtrained her to marry: ſecondly, her Iudicious anſwers to ſuch as ſought inno-uation and change of orders eſtabliſhed: thirdly, her politicke anſwers to ſuch as ſought reſtauration or tolleration, with o-ther matters of too high a compaſſe for common capacitie.

Her ſubiects loue dayly increaſed vpon her without ceaſing or intermiſſion, du-ring all her whole raigne, and ſo continu-ed during her life and after, as al men may iudge by theſe few lines following.

The 28. day of Aprill, being her fune-rall day, at which time the citie of Weſt-minſter was ſurcharged with multitudes of all ſorts of people in their ſtreetes, hou-ſes, windows, leads, and gutters, that came to ſee the obſequie, and when they beheld her ſtatue or picture lying vpon the cof-fin ſet foorth in Royall Robes, hauing a Crowne vpon the head thereof, and a ball and ſcepter in either hand: there was ſuch a generall ſighing, groning, and wee-ping, as the like hath not beene ſeene or knowne in the memory of man, neither doeth any hiſtory mention any people, time, or ſtate, to make like lamentation for the death of their ſoueraigne.

Shee was the firſt that ſuppreſſed all manner of baſe Moneyes, and reduced al the Engliſh Coyne into gold and ſiluer.

THE

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF King IAMES.

1. Reg. 1. 1603

THe 24. of March, about two of the clocke in the morning, dyed Queene Elizabeth, of worthy memory, surrendring this mortall Kingdome for an immortall. And forthwith the Princes, Peeres of the Land, and Privy Councellors of estate, in their wisedoms foresight, for the preseruation and continuance of our long enioyed peace and tranquilitie, being a matter which all nations held impossible to performe, by reason of so many Lawes, made not onely against Competitors and pretenders, but against all future right of succession; The Lords afore-said, (knowing above all things delayes to be most daungerous) within fiue houres after her highnesse death, made Proclamation at the Court gates in the open assembly, signifying and assuring the people her Maiestie was dead, and that the right of succession was wholly in Iames the King of Scots, now iustly intituled vnto the Crowne of England: And the same made knowne vnto all his louing subiects by this Proclamation, by the name of Iames the first, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. And about 11. of the clocke the same forenoone, at the West end of the high Crosse in Cheape-side, where were assembled the most part of the Cn. Princes, Peers, diuers principall Prelates, and extraordinary and vnexpected number of gallant Knights, and braue Gentlemen of note well mounted, besides the huge number of common persons, all which with great reuerence gaue attention vnto the Proclamation, being most distinctly and audibly read by Mr. Secretary Cecil, at the end thereof with one consent cryed aloud, God saue King Iames, being not a little glad to see their long feared danger, so clearely preuented: After that, the Lords went vnto Sr. Sheriffe Pemertons house, where their wisedomes consulting what was further to be done in so waighty businesse, sent three Heraulds and a Trumpeter to Proclaime the same within the Tower, at the hearing whereof, as well prisoners as others reioyced, namely the Earle of Southampton, in whom all signes of great gladnesse appeared: great care and diligence was vsed to giue notice of this happy and peaceable proceeding vnto Iustices of Counties, rulers of Townes and Cities, forthwith to doe the like, yet notwithstanding the swift expedition of this publication, there were diuers Gentlemen had former secret intelligence, and in diuers places Proclaimed the Kings right, without warrant, but not without welcome.

His purpose and God fulfilleth.

No want of foresight.

And I should haue told you before, that at the first, Sr. Rob. Cary vnknowne to the Lords, rid post vnto his Maiestie with wondrous expedition, and by the way sent certaine knowledge of all things to Barwicke vnto his brother Sr. Iohn Cary, who presently proclaimed the Kings right. His Maiestie vpon receipt of the letters deliuered him by Charles Percy, and Maister Thomas Sommerset, from the Princes, Peeres, and estate of England, wherein was expressed the death of the Queene, their griefes for so great a losse, The sole right and tender of the imperiall Crowne and dignitie vnto his Highnesse by them, in the behalfe of the whole Nation, already acknowledged and in all places Proclaimed, and of all sorts most ioyfully receiued, most humbly beseeching him to accept the same as a pledge of their true allegiance, religious loue and duty, which his Maiestie as graciously accepted, highly commending and approuing their singular wisedomes and prouident preuention of that which all the world feared, namely dissention and factions, promising to acknowledge and requite their seuerall loues and kindnesse, as time and occasion should permit, and to that effect his Maiestie returned present answere vnto the Princes, Peeres, and Prime Councellors of estate, assuring them continuance of all such rights and honors as they then enioyed, requiring and authorizing all the Lords and others being Priuy Councelors of estate vnto his late sister Elizabeth of famous memory, in Gods name and his right to continue, and enioy their former power, strength, & authority, giuing them and all the rest of the Nobility, due acknowledgment and kingly thanks for their singular and admired wisedomes, so excellently well gouerning and disposing of the highest, & most mighty affaires concerning his imperiall Crowne, and Kingdome, promising euer to keepe in memory their extraordinary manifestations of their true allegeance, loue and duty, signifying his further pleasure was to adde vnto their most honourable number the Earles of Northumberland, and Cumberland, the Lord Thomas Howard, and the Lord Mountioy, notwithstanding his then being in Ireland.

The Lordes sent messengers to the King.

The King returneth kind answere to the Lords.

New Councellors appointed.

And forthwith to enlarge the Earle of Southampton, whom personally, and speedily, hee required to meete him in his iourney for England

England, and from this time forward euen vnto the comming of his Maiestie in person, the Estate was wholly and onely ruled and swayed by the Lords, and others of the Priuie Councell.

Warwicke willingly yeldeth to the King.

Sunday the 28. of March, his Maiestie sent the Lord Abbot of Holli-rood house to take possession of Warwick, to the Kings vse, who being readily possest of the Keyes and Keepe, which after the Oath of allegeance by him giuen vnto the Maior and gouernour, he cheerefully in the Kings name, re-deliuered backe the Keyes and Keepe, manifesting his Maiesties good pleasure was, they should enioy all their ancient Priuiledge, Charters, & Liberties, and not only they: but also all other his louing & well affected subiects, hetwing and continuing the like obedience. The Abbot being returned and hauing made true report, not only with what triumph, loue, and kindnesse, he had bin entertained, and entreated: but also with what heartie and generall applause, the name of King Iames was receiued, his Maiestie was fully satisfied, touching his peaceable entrance into England, and true obedience of all his English Subiects.

By this time many Noble men and Gentlemen, of both Nations, came to signifie their loues and duties to his Maiesty, amongst whom Walter Iohn Payton, sonne to Sir Iohn Payton, Lieutenant of the Tower of London, vpon whom the King bestowed the first honour of Knighthood, the King being dayly, more and more aduertised and aceertained of the exceeding ioyfull and generall applause of all the English nation, without exception of any one particular place & person, and aboue other the wonderfull readinesse, and heartie gladnesse of the great City of London, where the Magistrates, and all other inferiot Citizens shewed all possible tignes of perfection, and contentment: and his Maiestie which was euer found most Benigne and gracious, presently directs his special letters vnto the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Citizens, as followeth.

To our Trustie and Welbeloued Robert Lee, Lord Maior of our Citie of London, and to our Welbeloued the Aldermen, and Commoners of the same.

The Kings letters to the Lord Maior and Citizens of London.

Trustie and Welbeloued, wee greete you heartily well, being informed of your great forwardnesse, in that Iust, and honorable action of Proclaiming vs your Soueraigne Lord, and King, immediatly after the decease of our late deerest Sister the Queene, wherein you haue giuen a singular good proofe of your auncient fidelitie (a reputation hereditary to that our Citie of London) being the Chamber of our Emperiall Crowne, and euer free from all shadowes of tumults, and vnlawfull courses, we could not omit) with all speede possible wee might, to giue you hereby a taste of our thankefull mind for the same: and withall assurance that you cannot crane any thing of vs fit for the maintenance of you all in generall, and euery one of you in particular, but it shalbe most willingly performed by vs, whose speciall care shal euer be to prouide for the continuance and increase of your present happinesse; desiring you in the meane time to goe constantly forward in all doing in and what soeuer things you shall find necessary and expedient for the good gouernment of our said Citie, in execution of Iustice, as you haue beene in vse to doe; in our said deceased Sisters time, till our pleasure be knowne to you to the contrary. Thus not doubting but you will doe, as you may be fully assured of our gracious fauours towards you, in the first degree, wee bid you heartily farewell. Hally-Rude house, the 28. day of March, 1603.

His Maiestie hauing likewise expressed his speciall and particular loue and good liking, of all his English subiects, and manifested his most princely and gracious acceptance of all their designes, as well concerning their particular, and general performance of their loues, and duties, as their singular and prudent managing the high affaires of estate, tooke deliberate aduice with his Councell, and Nobility of Scotland, for the present, and future well gouerning of that people and Kingdome, which vpon due consideration and profound iudgement, concluded: his Dignetie then prepares himselfe with conuenience to set forward on his iourney for England, the which with other memorables things that happened in that space, followeth in their seuerall times and places.

The King Proclaimed at Yorke.

NOtwithstanding the speedy and publique knowledge giuen of the Queenes death, together with the Proclamation of the immediate and vndoubted lawfull Succession to the English Crowne and Kingdome, by the Nobility & late Priuie Councellors as is before declared, yet the certaine newes thereof came not to the Citie of Yorke (which is but 150. miles from London) vntill Sunday the twelfth seuen of March, neither did the Lord Maior and Aldermen of Yorke giue full credit vnto the newes then, though they had receiued the same from the Lord Burleigh, being then Lord President of the established Councell in the North, and Lieutenant of Yorkshire, and thereupon the same Sunday morning, whereas Robert Water, Lord Maior of the Citie of Yorke, with the Aldermen his brethren had prepared themselues to haue made Proclamation, in their chiefe market place of the death of the late Queene, and of the present right of the King to the Succession, yet such was their generall doubt, of the truetly of the Queenes death, that they stayd their proceedings there, and instantly sent selected persons to the Lord Burleigh, viz their Recorder, and Thomas Harbert, and Robert Askwith Aldermen, to know what certaintie his Lordship had of her Maiesties death, vnto whom hee answered, that hee had no other intelligence but onely by a secret friend whom hee beleeued: and whilest they were thus in the house of the Lord President, there arriued a Gentleman of his with a packet of letters from the Nobility and late Priuie Councellours, wherein was related the death of the Queene, and how the Lord Maior of London with the Nobilitie had proclaymed King Councellors had Proclaimed Iames of Scotland, the first of that name, then King of Scots, to be now their true and lawfull King, that is to say, Iames by the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland defender of the faith, &c. And then instantly the Lord Maior of Yorke, with his brethren hauing by this time receiued the former Proclamation in Print, Proclaimed the same with all dutie, loue and integritty, and ioyfull acclamations.

Prisoners discharged.

The 10. of Aprill, diuers prisoners discharged out of the Tower the same day, namely, the Earle of Southampton.

The Maundy

The twenty fiue of Aprill, being Sunday the Maundy was kept at Westminster, and performed by the Lord Bishop of Chichester, where thirty fiue poore men had their ancient allowance.

Gun-shine.

The 27. of Aprill, being wednesday in Easter weeke, there were thirteene persons slaine and blowne in pieces with Gunpowder by misfortune, at the Gunpowder mill at Redriffe, and vtt much other hurt in diuers places.

Proclamation.

The same twenty seuen of Aprill, Proclamation was made for the apprehension of William and Patrike Ruthuen, brethren to the late Earle of Gowrie.

Funerall of Queene Elizabeth.

The 28. of Aprill being Thursday, the corps of Queene Elizabeth, imbalmed, lapped in lead, couered with purple Veluet, laid on a Chariot: drawne by foure great horses, trapt in blacke Veluet, the picture of her whole body, counterfeited after life, in her Parliament robes with a Crowne on her head, and a Sceptre in her hand lying on the Corps, was attended on, by the Nobilitie, honourable of Estate, the worshipfull Officers and seruants of the houshold, all in blacke, Gentlemen of the Chappel and Quire, of the Colledge all in rich Copes, singing: was Royally conueied from White-Hall, to the Colledge Church of Saint Peter of Westminster and there after a learned Sermon preached by the Reuerend Father in God Anthony Warton Bishop of Chichester, interred in the Vault of her Grandfather, Henry the seuenth, in his most beautifull Chappell.

There were esteemed mourners in blacke about the number of one thousand fiue hundred persons.

The Kings iourney into England

The first of Aprill, the King with diuers Noblemen, and Gentlemen of England, and Scotland, went from Edenborough, to Dunglasse, and from thence, the next day to Barwicke, where hee was receiued with great ioy, and triumph, and by the Maior presented with a purse of gold, and as the King entred in at the gate, Walter William Seley, the younger, being Gentleman Porter, met him and deliuered him all the Keyes of the Towne gates, then the King drew his sword and made him Knight.

An assembly of tyrannous persons.

The next day after came newes that certaine of the West Parches, to the number of two or three hundred persons, habit all assembled themselues, and committed horrie great robberyes, and spoiles, as farre as Peroth, whereat the King was greatly troubled, and for speedy redresse thereof by aduice of such of his Councell as were present, sent the aforesayd Sir William Seley, with two hundred footemen, and fifty horse out of Barwicke Garrison, and at his request Maister Henrie Widdrington, and Maister William Fenwyck, were ioyned in Commission with him, to Command all Officers and others, as well Scots as English bodderers to assist them: they marched along the bodders with a thousand horse, and those footmen before mentioned, and when they came to the habitation of those disordered men, they found them fled from their houses, many whereof they blew by, and raced to the ground, and in pursuite, some of the offendors were apprehended, and committed to the Castle of Carlile, where they were executed according to Law, and so the Countrie was quiet for that time.

Sir Henry Ley Deputy Warden of the North-west bodders.

For the more assurance of peace and quietnesse in those Bodders, the King at his coming to London, with the aduice of the whole body of his united Councell, ordained seuerall Commissioners, and a Deputy Warden, and after that allwell for preuention of all manner bill temperature on either part, as for the speedy executing of Ciuill Iustice vpon all sorts of offenders, both Scottes and English, it was ordayned vpon Penaltie, that no bodrerer of England or Scotland, should weare any manner of weapon offensiue, or defensiue, except a knife onely, of a certaine length wherewith to cutte their meate, neither should they keepe any hosses, Geldings, or Mares, aboue the value of forty shillings: those parts thus restrayned, on the English side, are Tyndale, and Rice Dale, in Northumberlande, Eske, and Lyne, in Cumberland: and on Scotland side, is Eall and Gilsh Tweedale, bodering vpon Northumberland, Lyddisdale, Annerdale, and Eusdale, bodering vpon Westmerland. This Decree was Proclaimed three yeeres after, by meanes whereof, the Northerne Bodders, became as safe and peaceable, as any part of the three Kingdoms, so as in the fourth yeare of the Kings Raigne, as well Gentlemen as others inhabiting the places aforesayd, finding the auncient wall ground to be very good, and fruitfull, began to contende in Law about their Bounds, challenging them, that for their hereditarie right, which formerly they disauowed onely to auoyde charges of common defence.

The Maych bodderers restrayned from wearing any manner of weapon.

A good alteration.

You are to vnderstande that there was yet more care taken for conseruation of mutuall peace in the parts aforesayd, viz. concerning the transplanting of certaine noted Great families, whose pride in greatnesse of name, and alliance menaced apparant danger of disturbance.

Great prouidence in the King.

The King stayed in Warwicke three dayes, in which space hee sumnoned the Towne, with the strength thereof, and took knowledge of all English servitors, serving in those parts, namely Master Ralph Gray, whom he Knighted there; and olde Captaine William Selby, whom afterward hee Knighted at Grænewich, Henry Wodderington, William Fenricke, and others: and as the King stood upon the Wall, beholding the Captains and Souldiers in warlike order, hee himselfe made a shotte out of a Cannon to sayze, and with such judgement, as the chiefe Canoniers held themselues well satisfied of the Kings good experience in great Artillerie.

At his departure hee confirmed all their Charters, and gaue them Princely thankes for their kindnesse, and having bestowed his bountie upon the Garrisons, according to their degrees, hee set forwardes, being met by the Sheriffe of Northumberland, very honorably accompanied, who attended the King unto the next County, and was in like manner so received, and attended into euery Shire, by the seuerall Sheriffs, throughout his whole Progresse, and the eight of Aprill hee came to Wodderington, where hee Knighted Henry Wodderington, and William Fenricke, aforenamed, with diuerse others.

The eight of Aprill the Trumpets warned for the remoone, and all that morning, his Maiestie with Royall liberalitie bestowed amongst the Garison Souldiers, and euery officer for warre according to his place, rich and bountifull rewards. After dinner, his Highnesse mounted on horsebacke, and tooke leaue of Warwicke, and proceeded into England, where hee was received by Nicholas Forrester, high Sheriffe of Northumberland, accompanyed with a number of Gentlemen of the Shire: who riding before his Maiestie, leade the way to Mitthington, where, by the matter of the place Sir Robert Cary, and his Lady, he was received with all dutie and affection, the house being plentifully furnished for his entertainement.

The ninth of Aprill, he sett forward towards Newcastle, (being sixteene myles from Mitthington) where his Highnesse was met by the Maior, Aldermen, Councell, and best commoners of the same, in ioyfull manner: the Maior presenting him with the Sword and Keyes, with humble submission: giuing to his Maiestie also in token of loue and loyaltie, a purse full of golde. His Highnesse returned to the Mayor the Sword and Keyes, ratifying all their Customes and Priuiledges that they were possessed of: and so was conducted to a Knights house where hee was richly entertained, and remained there three dayes.

Sunday the tenth of Aprill, his Maiestie went to the Church, before whom preached the Bishoppe of Durham: Sunday he beheld in viewing the Towne, the manner and beautie, the Bridge and Key, being one of the fayrest in all the North parts. Besides he released all paysoners, except for Treason, murther, and papistrie, giuing summes of money for the release of many that lay for debt. So ioyfull were the Counsellmen of Newcastle of his Maiestie lying there, that they thankefully bare all the charge of his houshold, during the time of his abode with them.

The thirteenth of Aprill, his Maiestie set forwards toward Durham, and when hee came neere, the Magistrates of the Citie met him, and behauing themselues as others before them it was by his Highnesse as thankfully accepted. And passing through the gates, whence hee entred the market place, there was an Oration made vnto him, which being ended, hee passed towards the Bishops house, where he was royally receiued, the Bishop attending him with 100. Gentlemen in Tawnie liuery coates.

The 14. of Aprill, his Maiestie tooke leaue of the Bishoppe of Durham, whom he greatly graced, and commended for his learning, humanitie, and grauitie, promising to restore diuers things taken from the Bishoppricke: his Maiestie removed towardes Walwoyth, fiveteene myles from Durham, where by the Gentlewoman of the house, named mistresse Genilon, hee was bountifully entertained.

The 15. of Aprill, his Maiestie set forward toward Yorke, his traine still increasing by the numbers of Gentlemen from the South parts, that came to offer him fealtie: whose loue although he greatly tendred, yet did their multitudes so oppresse the Country, and make provision so deare, that he was fayne to publish an inhibition against the inordinate and dayly accesse and resort of the peoples comming, that many were stopped of their way.

The high Sheriffes of Yorke very well accompanied, attended his Maiestie to Master Inglebyes, beside Topcliffe, being about fiveteene myles from Wallwoyth, who with all ioy and humilitie received his Maiestie, where he rested that night.

The Lord Maior and Aldermen of Yorke, vpon certaine knowledge of the Kings iourney into England, with all diligence consulted what was fittest to bee done for the receiuing and entertaining of so mighty and gratious a Soueraigne, as well within the Citie, as at the vtmost bounds and limits thereof, as also what further service or dutious respect they ought to shew his Maiestie, vpon so good and memorable occasion as now was offered vnto them: and thereupon they sent Robert Askwith Alderman, vnto Newarke, and there in the behalfe of the Lord Maior and Citizens of Yorke to make tender of their zealous loue and dutie, for the which his Maiestie

The King receiued into Yorke.

iestie gaue them heartie thankes.

And vpon Saturday, the sixteenth of Aprill, Iohn Robinson and George Bucke Sheriffes of Yorke with their white Rodds, being accompanied with an hundred Citizens, and threescore others, Esquires, Gentlemen, and others, the most substantiall persons, being all well mounted: they received the King at the East end of Skip-bridge, which was the vtmost bounds of the liberties of the Citie of Yorke, and there kneeling, the Sheriffes deliuered their white Rodds vnto the King, with acknowledgement of their loue and allegeance vnto his Maiestie: for the which, the King with cheerefull countenance thanked them, and gaue them their Rodds againe, the which they carryed vpright in their hands, riding all the way next before the Sergeants at Armes.

And before the King came to the City, his Maiestie had sent Sir Thomas Challenor to the Lord Maior and Aldermen to know who formerly had borne the Sword before the Kings of England, at their comming to Yorke, and to whom of right that Office for that time appertayned: because it had beene aunciently performed by the Earles of Cumberland, as Hereditary to that house, but was now challenged by the Lord President of the North, for the time being, as proper to his place: but after due search and examination, it was agreed that the honour to beare the Sword before the King in Yorke, belonged vnto George Earle of Cumberland, who all the while the King was in Yorke bare the Sword, for so the King willed, and to that purpose sent Sir Thomas Challenor againe to the Lord Maior: and the Lord Maior bare the great Mace of the Citie, going alwayes on the left hand of the Earle.

The 24. are those who haue beene Sheriffes but not Aldermen.

And when the King came to the City, which was well prepared to giue his highnesse, and his Royall traine entertainment, then the Lord Maior with the twelue Aldermen in their Scarlet robes, and the foure and twentie in Crimson Gownes, accompanied with many others of the grauest men, met the King at Micklegate, his Maiestie going betweene the Duke of Linneor, and the Lord Hume, and when the King came neere the Scaffold, where the Lord Maior with the Recorder, the twelue Aldermen, and the foure and twentie, all kneeling, the Lord Maior sayd: Most high and mighty Prince, I and my brethren doe most heartily Welcome your Maiestie to your Highnesse Citie, and in token of our duties, I deliuer vnto your Maiestie, all my authoritie of this your Highnesse Citie, and then rose vp and kissed the Sword, and deliuered it into the Kings hand, and the King gaue it to the Duke of Linneor, who according to the Kings appointment deliuered it vnto the Earle of Cumberland to beare it before his Maiestie.

The Lord Maior also deliuered vp the Keyes of the Citie, the which the Lord Hume receiued, and carryed them to the Mannor: And when the Recorder had ended his graue Oration, in the behalfe of the Citie: then the Lord Maior as the King commanded, tooke Horse, and bare the Cittie Mace, riding on the left hand of the Earle of Cumberland, who bare the Sword of the Citie, and so attended his Maiestie vnto S. Peters Church, and was there Royally receiued, by the Deane and Prebends, and the whole Quyer of Singing men of that Cathedrall Church, in their richest Coapes: at the entrance into the Church, the Deane made a learned Oration in Latine, which ended, the King ascended the Quyer: the Canopie being supported by fiue Lords, and was placed in a Throne prepared for his Maiestie, and during diuine seruice there came three Sergeants at Armes with their Maces, pressing to stand by the Throne, to attend the person of the King: but the Earle of Cumberland put them downe saying, that place for that time belonged to him, and the Lord Maior, and not to them.

Diuine seruice being ended, the King returned in the same Royall manner he came: the Canopie being carryed ouer him vnto the mannor of Saynt Maryes, where the Lord Burleigh, and Counsell gaue their attendance, and receiued his Maiestie; where Doctor Benet hauing ended his eloquent Oration, the King went into his chamber, the Sword and Mace being there borne by the Earle and Lord Maior, who left the Sword and Mace there that night: and when the Lord Maior was to depart, the Lord Hume deliuered him againe the Keyes of the Citie.

The next day being Sunday, the seauenteenth of Aprill, one thousand fiue hundred and three, the Lord Maior with the Recorder, the Aldermen and Sheriffes, and the twenty foure with all their chiefe Officers, and the Preacher of the City, and Towne Clearke, in very comely order went vnto the Mannor: of whom so soone as the King had knowledge of their comming, willed that so many of them as the roome would permit, should come into the Priuy Chamber, where the Lord Maior and the rest presented his Maiestie, with a faire Cuppe, with a couer, of siluer and gilt, weighing seauentie and three ounces, and in the same two hundreth Angels of golde: and the Lord Maior sayd: Most high and mighty Prince, I and my brethren, and all the whole Communalitie of this your Highnesse Citie, present vnto your most excellent Maiestie this cuppe of gold, in token of the dutifull affection and loue wee beare your Highnesse in our hearts, most humbly beseeching your Highnesse fauourable acceptance thereof, and your most gracious fauour to this your Highnesse City of Yorke, the which his Maiestie very graciously accepted, and sayd vnto them, God will bleese you the better for your good will towards your King. The Lord Maior humblie besought the King to dine with him vpon the next Mundey: the King answered,

The King stayed in Warwicke three dayes, in which space he surveyed the Towne, with the strength thereof, and tooke knowledge of all English territory, serving in those parts, namely Master Ralph Gray, whom he Knighted there; and olde Captaine William Selby, whom afterward hee Knighted at Greenewich, Henry Wodderington, William Fenricke, and others: and as the King stood upon the Wall, beholding the Captains and souldiers in warlike order, hee himselfe made a shotte out of a Cannon so fayre, and with such Iudgement, as the chiefe Cannoners held themselues well satisfied of the Kings good experience in great Artillerie.

At his departure hee confirmed all their Charters, and gaue them Princely thankes for their kindnesse, and hauing bestowed his bountie upon the Garrisons, according to their degrees, hee set forwardes, being met by the Sheriffe of Northumberland, very honorably accompanied, who attended the King unto the next County, and was in like manner so received, and attended into euery Shire, by the seuerall Sheriffs, throughout his whole Progresse, and the eight of Aprill hee came to Wooderington, where hee Knighted Henry Wooderington, and William Fenricke, aforenamed, with diuerse others.

The eight of Aprill the Trumpets warned for the remoone, and all that morning, his Maiestie with Royall liberalitie bestowed amongst the Garison souldiers, and euery officer for warre according to his place, rich and bountifull rewards. After dinner, his Highnesse mounted on horseback, and tooke leaue of Warwicke, and proceeded into England, where hee was received by Nicholas Forrester, high Sheriffe of Northumberland, accompanyed with a number of Gentlemen of the Shire: who riding before his Maiestie, leade the way to Withyngton, where, by the maker of the place Sir Robert Cary, and his Lady, he was received with all dutie and affection, the house being plentifully furnished for his entertainement.

The ninth of Aprill, he sett forward towards Newcastle, (being fifteene myles from Withyngton) where his Highnesse was met by the Maior, Aldermen, Counsell, and best commoners of the same, in loyfull manner: the Maior presenting him with the Sword and Keyes, with humble submission: giuing to his Maiestie also in token of loue and loyaltie, a purse full of golde. His Highnesse returned to the Mayor the Sword and Keyes, ratifying all their Customes and Priuiledges that they were possessed of: and so was conuoied to a Knights house where hee was richly entertained, and remained there three dayes.

Sunday the tenth of Aprill, his Maiestie went to the Church, before whom preached the Bishoppe of Durham: Monday he beholdeth in viewing the Towne, the manner and beautie, the Bridge and Key, being one of the fayrest in all the North parts. Besides he released all paysoners, except for Treason, murther, and papistrie, giuing summes of money for the release of many that lay for debt. So ioyfull were the Townesmen of Newcastle of his Maiesties lying there, that they thankefully bare all the charge of his houshold, during the time of his abode with them.

The thirteenth of Aprill, his Maiestie set forwardes toward Durham, and when hee came neere, the Magistrates of the Citie met him, and behauing themselues as others before them it was by his Highnesse as thankfully accepted. And passing through the gates, whence hee entred the market place, there was an Oration made unto him, which being ended, hee passed towards the Bishops house, where he was royally received, the Bishop attending him with 100. Gentlemen in Tawnie liuery coates.

The 14. of Aprill, his Maiestie tooke leaue of the Bishoppe of Durham, whom he greatly graced, and commended for his learning, humanitie, and grauitie, promising to restore diuers things taken from the Bishoppricke: his Maiestie remooued towardes Walwoyth, fifteene myles from Durham, where by the Gentlewoman of the house, named mistresse Genilon, he was bountifully entertained.

The 15. of Aprill, his Maiestie set forward toward Yorke, his traine still increasing by the numbers of Gentlemen from the South parts, that came to offer him fealtie: which how although he greatly tendred, yet did their multitudes so oppresse the Country, and make prouision so deare, that he was fayne to publish an inhibition against the inordinate and daily accesse and resort of the peoples comming, that many were stopped of their way.

The high Sheriffes of Yorke very well accompanied, attended his Maiestie to Baster Inglebyes, beside Topcliffe, being about fiftetene myles from Walwoyth, who with all ioy and humilitie receiued his Maiestie, where he rested that night.

The Lord Maior and Aldermen of Yorke, vpon certaine knowledge of the Kings iourney into England, with all diligence consulted what was fittest to bee done for the receiuing and entertaining of so mighty and gratious a Soueraigne, as well within the Citie, as at the vtmost bounds and limits thereof, as also what further seruice or duetous respect they ought to shew his Maiestie, vpon so good and memorable occasion as now was offered vnto them: and thereupon they sent Robert Askwith Alderman, vnto Newcastle, and there in the behalfe of the Lord Maior and Citizens of Yorke to make tender of their zealous loue and dutie, for the which his Maiestie

The King entred into Yorke.

iestie gaue them heartie thankes.

And vpon Saturnday, the fifteenth of Aprill, Iohn Robinson and George Bucke Sheriffes of Yorke with their white Rodds, being accompanied with an hundred Citizens, and threescore others, Esquires, Gentlemen, and others, the most substantiall persons, being all well mounted: they received the King at the East end of Skip-bridge, which was the vtmost bounds of the liberties of the Citie of Yorke, and there kneeling, the Sheriffes deliuered their white Rodes vnto the King, with acknowledgement of their loue and allegeance vnto his Maiestie: for the which, the King with cheerefull countenance thanked them, and gaue them their Rodds againe, the which they carryed vpright in their hands, riding all the way next before the Sergeants at Armes.

And before the King came to the City, his Maiestie had sent Sir Thomas Challenor to the Lord Maior and Aldermen to know who formerly had borne the Sword before the Kings of England, at their comming to Yorke, and to whom of right that Office for that time appertayned: because it had beene aunciently performed by the Earles of Cumberland, as Hereditary to that house, but was now challenged by the Lord President of the North, for the time being, as proper to his place: but after due search and examination, it was agreed that the honour to beare the Sword before the King in Yorke, belonged vnto George Earle of Cumberland, who all the while the King was in Yorke bare the Sword, for so the King willed, and to that purpose sent Sir Thomas Challenor againe to the Lord Maior: and the Lord Maior bare the great Mace of the Citie, going alwayes on the left hand of the Earle.

The 14. are chose who haue beene Sheriffes but not Aldermen.

And when the King came to the City, which was well prepared to giue his highnesse, and his Royall traine entertainment, then the Lord Maior with the twelue Aldermen in their Scarlet robes, and the foure and twentie in Crimson Gownes, accompanied with many others of the grauest men, met the King at Micklegate, his Maiestie going betweene the Duke of Linnoor, and the Lord Home, and when the King came neere the Scaffold, where the Lord Maior with the Recorder, the twelue Aldermen, and the foure and twentie, all kneeling, the Lord Maior sayd: Most high and mighty Prince, I and my brethren doe most heartily Welcome your Maiestie to your Highnesse Citie, and in token of our duties, I deliuer vnto your Maiestie, all my authozitie of this your Highnesse Citie, and then rose vp and kissed the Sword, and deliuered it into the Kings hand, and the King gaue it to the Duke of Linnoor, who according to the Kings appointment deliuered it vnto the Earle of Cumberland to beare it before his Maiestie.

The Lord Maior also deliuered vp the Keyes of the Citie, the which the Lord Home receiued, and carryed them to the Mannor: And when the Recorder had ended his graue Oration, in the behalfe of the Citie: then the Lord Maior as the King commanded, tooke Horse, and bare the Cities Mace, riding on the left hand of the Earle of Cumberland, who bare the Sword of the Citie, and so attended his Maiestie vnto S. Peters Church, and was there Royally received, by the Deane and Prebends, and the whole Quyer of Singing men of that Cathedrall Church, in their richest Coapes: at the entrance into the Church, the Deane made a learned Oration in Latine, which ended, the King ascended the Quyer: the Canopie being supported by fiue Lords, and was placed in a Throne prepared for his Maiestie; and during diuine seruice there came three Sergeants at Armes with their Maces, prelling to stand by the Throne, to attend the person of the King: but the Earle of Cumberland put them downe saying, that place for that time belonged to him, and the Lord Maior, and not to them.

Diuine seruice being ended, the King returned in the same Royall manner hee came: the Canopie being carryed ouer him vnto the mannor of Saynt Maryes, where the Lord Burleigh, and Counsell gaue their attendance, and receiued his Maiestie, where Doctor Bonet hauing ended his eloquent Oration, the King went into his chamber, the Sword and Mace being there borne by the Earle and Lord Maior, who left the Sword and Mace there that night: and when the Lord Mayor was to depart, the Lord Home deliuered him againe the Keyes of the Citie.

The next day being Sunday, the seuenteenth of Aprill, one thousand fiue hundred and three, the Lord Maior with the Recorder, the Aldermen and Sheriffes, and the twenty foure with all their chiefe Officers, and the Preacher of the City, and Towne Clearke, in very comely order went vnto the Mannor: of whom so soone as the King had knowledge of their comming, willed that so many of them as the roome would permit, should come into the Privy Chamber, where the Lord Maior and the rest presented his Maiestie, with a faire Cuppe, with a couer of siluer and gilt, weighing seauentie and three ounces, and in the same two hundreth Angels of golde: and the Lord Maior sayd: Most high and mighty Prince, I and my brethren, and all the whole Communaltie of this your Highnesse Citie, present vnto your most excellent Maiestie this cuppe of gold, in token of the dutifull affection and loue wee beare your Highnesse in our hearts, most humbly beseeching your Highnesse fauourable acceptance thereof, and your most gracious fauour to this your Highnesse City of Yorke, the which his Maiestie very graciously accepted, and sayd vnto them, God will bleste you the better for your good will towards your King. The Lord Maior humblie besought the King to dine with him vpon the next Tuesday: the King answered,

he thould ride thence before that time, but he would breake his fast with him in the next morning.

This Sunday the King went to the Minster, and heard a Sermon made by the Deane who was Bishoppe of Limericke in Ireland, the Lord Maior, Aldermen, the Shrieffes, and foure and twenty attended upon the King, the Earle ſtill bearing the Sword; the Lord Maior the Mace, and the Shrieffes bearing up their rodds as well within the Church as in the Streetes marching before the King unto the Manner, the next day being Monday at nine a clocke the Lord Maior came to the Manner, being accompanied and attended with the Recorder the Aldermen, the foure and twenty, and others, and attended there: And at twelue of the clocke, the King with his Royall traine, went to the Lord Mayors house and there dined, after dinner, the King walked to the Deanes house, and was there entertained with a banquet, at the Deanerie, the King tooke horſe, and paſſed through the Citie footh at Micklegate, towards Grimſton, unto the house of Sir Edward Stanhope: the Earle of Cumberland, and the Lord Mayor bearing the Sword and Mace before the King, until they came unto the house of Saint Katherine, at which place the Earle ſayd, is it your Maiesties pleaſure that I deliuer the Sword againe unto my Lord Mayor, for he is now at the vtmoſt parts of the liberties of this Citie: then the King willed the Earle to deliuer the Mayor his Sword againe: then the Mayor alighted from his horſe and kneeling, took his leaue of the King, and the King pulling of his Gleue tooke the Mayor by the hand, and gaue him thankes, and ſo rode on towards Grimſton, being attended by the Shrieffes unto the middle of Tadcaſter bridge being the vtmoſt bounds of their liberties: the next day the Lord Maior according as he was commaunded by a Purſiuie man, came the next morning unto the Court at Grimſton, accompanied with the Recorder and foure of his brethren, viz. William Robinſon, Iames Barkby, William Greenburne and Robert Askwith, and certaine cheſe Officers of the City, and when his Maieſty vnderſtood of their comming, he willed that the Mayor with Maſter Rampton and Maſter Brooke ſhould bee brought vp into his bed Chamber, and the King ſayd, my Lord Maior our meaning was, to haue beſtowed a knighthood vpon you in your owne house, but the company being ſo great, wee rather thought it good, to haue you here, and then his Maieſty knighted the Lord Mayor, for which honour the Lord Maior gaue his Maieſtie moſt humble and hearty thankes and returned.

The nineteenth of Aprill his Maieſtie rode to Pomfret, to ſee the Caſtle, which when hee had viewed, hee rode to Doncaſter, where hee lodged at the ſigne of the Beare and Sunne.

The twentieth of Aprill, his Maieſtie rode towardes Worſop, to the Earle of Shrewſburies house: and at Watine the high Sheriffe of Yorkſhire tooke his leaue of the King, and Maſter Aſkoth high Sheriffe of Nottinghamſhire received him, and ſo conducted him till hee came within a myle of Lithe, where his Highneſſe alighted, and ſate downe on a banke ſide to eate and drinke. After which feaſt repaſt hee rode forwardes to Worſop, but in the Parke hee was ſomewhat ſtayed: for there appeared a number of Huntſmen all in Greene: the chiefe of which in a Woodmans ſpreſſy did welcome him, offering to ſhew ſome Game, which hee gladly condiſcended to ſee, and with a Crane ſet, hee hunted a good ſpace, and went into the houſe, where hee was ſo Nobly and Royally received, with abundance of all things, that ſtill euery entertainment ſeemed to exceede other.

The one and twentieth of Aprill, his Highneſſe tooke his way towardes Newarke vpon Trent, where that night hee lodged in the Caſtle: the Aldermen preſented him with a faire guilt Cuppe, which was kindly accepted. In this Towne, and in the Count, was taken a Cutpurſe doing the deede, and being a baſe pilfring Theefe (yet was all Gentlemanlike in the outſide): this fellow had good Rope of Coyne found about him, and vpon examination confeſſed, that hee had from Ratwicke to that place, played the Cutpurſe in the Count. The King hearing of this Gallant, directed a warrant to the Recorder of Newarke, to haue him hanged, which was accordingly executed, and all the reſt of the priſoners in the Caſtle were pardoned.

The two and twentieth of Aprill, his Highneſſe rode toward Beaner Caſtle, hunting all the way as he rode: at Beaner Caſtle, his Highneſſe was Royally received of the Earle of Rutland and his Countteſſe, and plentifully entertained.

The three and twentieth of Aprill, his Maieſtie ſet forward towardes Burleigh, and by the way dined at Sir John Harringtons, where that worthy Knight made him moſt Royall entertainment: From thence he rode to Burleigh, where his Highneſſe with all his Traine were received with great magnificence, the houſe ſeeming ſo rich as if it had beene furniſhed at the charges of an Emperour.

The next day being Eaſter day, there preached before him the Biſhoppe of Lincolne, and the Sermon was no ſooner done, but all Offices in the houſe were ſet open, that euery man might haue free acceſſe to butteries, pantries, kitchins, to eate and drinke in at their pleaſures.

The 27. of Aprill, the King removed from Burleigh towardes Hichingbrooke, to Sir Oliver Cromwells, and in the way, hee dined at Sir Anthony Mildmayes, where nothing wanted in a Subiects dutie to his Soueraigne. Dinner and banquet being paſt and his Maieſtie at point to depart, Sir Anthony preſented him with a gallant Barbary horſe, a rich Saddle,

Saddle, and furniture ſuteable, which his Highneſſe thankefully accepted, and rode toward Sir Oliver Cromwels, and about ſome halfe mile ere hee came there, his Maieſty was met by the Bayliffe of Huntington, who made to him a long Oration, and there deliuered him the Sword, which his Highneſſe gaue to the Earle of Southampton to beare before him to Maſter Oliver Cromwels houſe, where his Highneſſe and his followers, with all commers had ſuch entertainement, as not the like in any place before, there was ſuch plentie and varietie of meates, and diuerſities of Wines, and the Sellars open at euery mans pleaſure. There attended alſo at Maſter Oliver Cromewells, the heads of the Vniuerſitie of Cambridge, all clad in Scarlet Gownes, and corner Capps, who hauing preſence of his Maieſtie: there was made a learned and Eloquent Oration in Latine, welcomming his Maieſtie, as alſo intreating the confirmation of their Priuiledges, which his Highneſſe moſt willingly graunted. Maſter Cromwell preſented his Maieſtie with many rich and acceptable gifts, as a very great and fayre wrought Standing Cuppe of gold, goodly horſes, deepe mouthed hounds, diuers Hawkes of excellent wing, and at the remoove gaue fifty pounds amongſt his Maieſtie Officers.

Godmanche-ſter.

The 29. of Aprill after breakefaſt, his Maieſtie tooke leaue of Maſter Oliver Cromwell, and of his Lady, late widow to Signiour Horatio Paulo Vicino. From thence he departed to Royſton: and as hee paſſed through Godmanchester, a towne cloſe by Huntington, the Bayliffes of the town with their brethren met him, acknowledging their allegeance, there conueying him through the towne, they preſented him with three ſcore and ten teems of horſe, all traced to faire new ploughes, in ſhew of their husbandry: which, while his Maieſtie being very well delighted with the ſight, demaunded why they offered him ſo many Horſes and ploughes: hee was anſwered, that it was their ancient cuſtome, whenſoeuer any King of England paſſed through their towne, ſo to preſent him. Beſides they added, that they held their lands by that Tenure, being the Kings Tenants: his Maieſty not only tooke well in worth their good minds, but bad them vſe well their ploughs being glad he was Land-Lord of ſo many good husbandmen in one Towne.

His Maieſty in his way towards Royſtone, the Sheriffe of Huntingtonſhire tooke his leaue and was there received by Sir Edward Denie high Shirriffe of Hartford ſhire, attended on by a goodly company, in number ſeuen ſcore ſuitable apparelled in blew liuery Coates, and white Dublets, Hats and Feathers, and all well mounted on Horſes with red Saddles, Sir Edward after his humble dutie done, preſented his Maieſtie with a Gallant horſe, a rich Saddle, and furniture correſpondent, being of great value: which his Highneſſe accepted graciouſly, and cauſed him to ride on the ſame before him, the Knight quickly mounted the ſayd horſe, and in braue manner conducted his Maieſtie to one Maſter Cheekars houſe, where his Highneſſe lay that night, on his owne Kingly charge.

The 30. of Aprill, his Maieſty rode to Standon to Sir Thomas Sadlers, and by the way the Biſhop of London met him, attended on by a goodly company of Gentlemen in tawny coates and chaines of gold. At Sir Thomas Sadlers, his Maieſtie was Royally entertained for himſelfe and his Kingly traine; Where his Maieſtie ſtayed Sunday, before whom the Biſhop of London preached.

The ſecond of May, being Monday, his Maieſtie removed to Stockeſbourne, a houſe of Sir Henry Cocks, Cofferer to the late Queene Elizabeth, and now alſo cofferer to his Maieſtie, where met him, the Lord keeper of the great Seale, the Lord Treaſurer, the Lord Knowlt with moſt of the Nobilitie of the land, and Councell of State, who were fauourably received. At which time the ſayd Lord Keeper made a briefe and learned ſpeach to his Maieſtie: To which his Vig meſte anſwered with great grace and Princely wiſedome, but to ſpeake of his Highneſſe entertainment at Stockeſbourne, it was ſuch and ſo abundant, as there was no man of what condition ſoeuer, but had what appetite deſired; his Maieſtie alſo receiued thereby great contentment: And continuing there but one night, he departed the next day, thanking the good Knight for his great expences.

The third of May, his Maieſty came to Theobaldes, Theobaldes, a houſe belonging vnto Sir Robert Cecill, where the Lords of the late Queenes, moſt Honourable Priuie Councell, attended the Kings comming, and making downe did their homage, in whoſe behalfe, and for the reſt of the Queenes cheife Officers there then preſent, the Lord Keeper made a graue Oration ſignifying their aſſured loue and allegeance, &c. where vnto his Highneſſe gaue immediate anſwere to their full content, &c.

Alſo in this houſe of Theobaldes the 4. of May, his Maieſty made diuers Noble men of Scotland, of his honorable Councell, viz. the Duke of Lennox, the Earle of Murre, the Lord Hume, Sir George Howme Treaſurer of Scotland, Sir Iames Elpingſtone, Secretary to the King. The Lord of Kynneſſe now Maſter of the Roles. Alſo of the Engliſh Nobility, he made of his Councell, the Lord Henry Howard, brother to Thomas Howard late Duke of Norfolke. Thomas Lord Howard, ſonne to the ſayd Duke who was alſo made there Lord Chamberlaine. And the Lord Mountjoy not then returned out of Ireland. His Maieſty ſtayed at Theobalds foure dayes, with entertainment ſuch and ſo coſtly as hardly can be expreſſed, conſidering the multitude that thither reſorted, beſides the Traine, none going thence vnſatisfied. The King made Knights there (as it was ſayd) twenty eight.

Saturday the ſeauenth of May, he went from Theobalds, towards London, and to auoid

the extremitie of dust, hee rode through the Medowes, and within two miles on this side Waltham, one of the Sheriffes of London, and Middlesex, attended his Highnesse, viz. Master Iohn Swinnerton, the other Sheriffe beeing then sicke: Master Sheriffe Swinnerton had threescore men in fayre liuerie Cloakes, where Richard Martin of the middle Temple Esquire, made an eloquent and learned Oration vnto his Maiestie.

The Lord Maior met the King three miles from London.

At Stamford hill, the Lord Mayor, Knights and Aldermen of London in Skarlet Robes, presented themselues before his Maiestie, and with them fiue hundred Graue Cittizens, in Veluet Coates, and chaynes of golde, beeing all very well mounted, like the Sheriffes and their Trayne: there met him also the chiefe Gentlemen of the hundreds, the Sergeants at Armes, and all the English Heraulds in their Coats of Armes, with other Officers of Estate, with the Trumpetters, and others, euery one in due place. The Duke of Linnox bare the Sword: multitudes of people swarming in Fields, Houses, Trees, and high wayes, to behold the King: vnto whom, the name of King was very strange, beeing full fifty yeres since there was a King in England: the King as much admired at the infinite numbers of people that continually mette him in his iourney, albeit the former numbers were no way comparable vnto those hee mette neere London: about sixe of the clocke hee came to the Charter-house, where for foure dayes space, the Lord Thomas Howard gaue his Maiestie, and all his Trayne most royall entertainment, the King at his departure made fourescore Knights.

Noble personages sent to attend the Queene from Scotland.

The Earle of Suffex.
The Earle of Lincolne.
The Lord Compton.
The Lord Norris.
Sir George Carew Knight, Lord President of Munster Sir Iohn Bucke Knight.
The Countesse of Worcester.
The Countesse of Kildare.
The Lady Anne Harbert, daughter to Henry Earle of Pembrooke.
The Lady Scroope, wife to the Lord Scroop.
The Lady Rich wife to the Lord Rich.
The Lady Walsinghan.

These Noblemen, Knights, and Ladies, by especiall direction from the Lords of the Councell, were sent to attend the Queen in her iourney from Scotland into England: they departed from London the second day of May, and were directed to remaine at Warwicke, vntill her Maiesties comming thither, which was not many dayes after their arriuall to the sayd Towne: Before the departure of these personages aforesayd, diuers Ladies of honour went voluntarilly into Scotland, to attend her Maiestie in her iourney into England: as the Countesse of Bedford, the Lady Hastings, the Lady Cecill, the Lady Hatton, the Lady Harrington, and diuers others; and also sundry Gentlemen of good qualitie, which I here omit, so as the Queene was very honorably attended with the English, besides sundry of the Scottish Nobilitie.

The iourney of the Queen the Prince, and Lady Elizabeth into England.

The Queene being in all respects prepared, accompanied, and attended, as was meete for so great a Princesse, being likewise accompanied with her two elder children, that is to say, Prince Henry, and the Lady Elizabeth: they made their most happy iourney from Scotland into England, and were in all places wheresoeuer they arriued, most ioyfully receiued, and entertained in as louing, duteous, and honourable manner, as all Cities, Townes, and particular Knights, and Gentlemen had formerly done vnto the Kings most excellent Maiestie, which for breuities sake I here omit. And for a taste of all, will onely speake briefly of their comming to the City of Yorke, where the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Citizens attended their comming at their vtmost bounds of their liberties, and with all Magnificence brought the Queene, the Prince, and the Lady Elizabeth, vnto the Citie of Yorke the eleuenth of Iune, where they reposed themselues certaine dayes, in which space the City spared not for any cost to giue them royall entertainement, and presented them with seuerall giftes, as true signes of their zealous loue and dutie: The Queene came thither vpon Whitson Eue, and vpon wednesday following, her Maiestie with the Prince, and the Ladie Elizabeth, and with all their Royall traine went from Yorke to Grimstone. And the 27 of Iune, the Queene came to Estneston in Northamptonshire, vnto the house of Sir George Farmer Knight, and that day the King with a very great Traine came thither to dinner, and that afternoone they both rode thence, to the house of Sir Iohn Fortescue.

The Duke of Yorkes iourney into England.

And, seeing I haue spoken of the peacefull and ioyfull comming into England of the King the Queen, the Prince, and the Lady Elizabeth, I will likewise record the comming of the Lord Charles Duke of Albany, sonne to our Soueraigne Lord the King: the said Duke beeing at this time an Infant, not full three yeeres of age, remained still in Scotland, vntill the next yeere following, where being very sicke, the King sent vnto him Doctor Atkins, one of his Physitians, who in sixe weekes cured the childe of a Feauer, and within a while after, viz. the sixteenth of Iuly, hee beganne his iourney for England, being accompanied by the Lord Fivie, Lord Chancellour of Scotland, whom the King shortly after created Earle of Dunfermelyne.

Besides the Kings Physitian, there were many of the Kings Officers that attended vpon the Duke in this iourney, and brought him to Windsor the first weeke of October, one thousand sixe hundred and foure: the King being then at Windsor.

The sayd seauenth of May, Proclamation was

Proclamation against Monopolies and Purueyors.

was made at London, to cease the exacting of all Monopolies and Protections, that hindred mens suits in Law, and to forbid the oppressions done by Salt-Peeter-makers, Purueiers, and Cart-takers.

The eleuenth of May, the Lord Zouche, and the Lord Burghley were sworne Priuy Counsellors at the Charter-house, and the same day the King rode in a coach, so newly closely from the Charter-house to Whitehall, and from thence he was conueyed by water to the Tower of London, attending on him the Lord Admirall, the Earle of Northumberland, the Lord of Worcester, Lord Thomas Howard, and others. The first day his Maiesty viewed the Offices in the Tower, as the Armory, the Wardrobe, the Artillery, &c. The next day he saw the Ordinance house, the Mint-houses, and at the last the Lyons.

Barons and Knights made in the Tower.

The 20. of May being Friday, his Highnesse made Barons, and Knights, as followeth, Sir Robert Cecill, Lord Cecill of Essenden. Sir Robert Sidney, Lord Sidney of Penshurst. Sir William Knowles, Lord Knowles of Grayes. Sir Edward Wotton, Lord Wotton of Morley. And at the same time, William Dethicke *alias* Garter, King at Armes was made Knight, and in the afternoone, the same day were made ten Knights, to wit, Sir Iohn Deane, Sir Iohn Trauer, Sir Thomas Smith, sometimes one of the Sheriffes of London, and prisoner in the Tower of London, about the late Earle of Essex: but quit him else so well, that he was long since discharged: and now in the same place, by the King graced with the Order of Knighthood, and since by the sayd Kings appointment, sent Lord Ambassadour, to the Emperour of Muscouie, Sir Thomas Hubbard, Sir Robert Markenam, Sir George Merton, Sir Edmund Bolt, Sir Thomas Parton, Sir David Fowles, Sir William Gardener, which made vp (as was accompted) the number of two hundred thirtie and seuen Knights, or better, made since the King entred Barwicke.

Proclamation against spoilers of game in hunting.

The sixteenth of May, Proclamation was made to prohibite and forbid all manner of persons from killing of Deere, and all kindes of Wilde foule, vsed for hunting, and Hawking, vpon paine of the seuerall lawes, and penalties to be executed vpon them.

The 17. of May, Proclamation against robberies on the borders.

The 19. of May, was also Proclamation made for the vniting, and quieting of the people inhabiting vpon the Borders of England and Scotland, to liue in loue and quietnesse, from al spoyles, and robberies each from other, &c.

Knights made at Greenwich.

From the Tower of London the Kings Highnesse remoued by water to his Mannor of Greenewich where on the 20. of May he made Knights, Sir Iulius Cæsar, Master of Requests: Sir Roger Wilbram, also master of Requests. Sir William Wade. Sir Thomas Smith. Sir Thomas Edmonds, Clearkes of the Councell, and Sir Thomas Lake Clearke of the signet.

On the 22. his highnesse Knighted Sir Robert Lee, Lord Maior of London, Sir Iohn Crooke Recorder of London, and Sir Edward Cooke Atturney Generall, his Maiestie was that day most Royally serued, and at night diuers fire-workes on the Thames were shewed for Triumph.

Sergeants Feast.

In Hilary Terme, the 45. yeere of the late Queene, these eleuen, viz. Thomas Couentry of the Inner Temple, Robert Houghton of Lincolns Inne, Lawrence Tanfield of the Inner Temple, Iohn Cooke of the Inner Temple, Thomas Foster of the Inner Temple, Edward Phillips of the middle Temple, Thomas Harris of Lincolnes Inne, Iames Altham of Greys Inne, Henry Hubbert of Lincolnes Inne, Augustine Nicholas of the middle Temple, and Robert Barker of the middle Temple, receiued writs from the Queene, de statu & gradu seruientis ad legem suscipiendo, returnable tres paschæ, then next following, beeing the second returne in Easter Terme, but the Queen dying in the meane time, their writs abated: howbeit the King being aduertised into Scotland, from the Councell of England of this election of Sergeants at the Law made by the Queene his late predecessor, gaue good allowance thereunto, so farre forth, as that by new writs returnable at the day aforesayd, hee chose all the first elected number vnto the sayd degree onely adioining vnto them three more, viz. Iohn Sherley of the middle Temple, George Snigge of the middle Temple (they beeing ancients to all the first) and Richard Hutton of Grayes Inne Puisne to them all. These foureteene now in number, on Tuesday the 17. of May, being the next day after their returne of their writs made their appearance before Sir Thomas Egerton, Lord Keeper of the great Seale of England, in the High Court of Chancery, and were then sworne Sergeants at Law, vpon tuesday following, being the twenty foure of May, they were admitted to the common place barre, and the same day kept their Feast in the middle Temple hall.

At which day Edward Phillips, being chosen the Kings Sergeant meane, after their appearance in the Chancery, and before their Feast day, had by reason thereof, the precedencie before all other his ancients. And Iohn Croke beeing Knighted by the King vpon Sunday in the said meane time before their Feast: yet notwithstanding tooke his place but in due order of his antiquitie.

Sir Lewis Lewknor made Master of the Ceremonies.

At this time the Kings Maiestie, in regard of the great repayre into this Kingdome of forraine Princes, and their Ambassadours from all parts of Christendome, and other places, did therefore erect an Office by the name of Master of the Ceremonies: to receiue and entertaine, Ambassadours, and Princes, during their abode in England: in all honorable manner, as is vsed in France and other places; and by Pattent vnder the great Seale, ordayned Sir Lewis Lewkenor, Knight to be Master of the Ceremonies, and allowed him two hundred pound a yeere Fee.

Valentine Thomas executed.

The fourth of June, Valentine Thomas, that had many yeres layne prisoner in the Tower of London, was arraigned at the Kings bench barre at Westminster, and there condemned of Treason, for conspiracy against our late Queene, and some of her Counsell, and on the seuenth of June, after fire a clocke at night, the same Valentine was drawne from the Kings bench in Southwarke, to Saint Thomas Waterings, and there hanged, bowelled, and quartered.

Lord Mountioy returned out of Ireland.

About this time the honourable, Charles, Lord Mountioy, returned out of Ireland, and with him Hugh Onele Earle of Tyrone, they were both lodged at Mawfod in Essex, for a season, and then repayred to the Court where they were honourably received. The Lord Mountioy was sworne of his Maiesties honorable Priuie Councell.

On the seauenth of June, and on the eight of June, Proclamation was made, that the sayd Earle of Tyrone, was restored to the Kings fauour, and should be of all men honorably vsed.

Ambassadors

Also in this moneth of June, diuers Ambassadours, from sondry Princes, arriued here at London, and were there lodged: namely from the Palsgraue of Rheine in Germany, one of the Electors, these after their message of gratulation to the King returned the tenth of June.

From the States of Holland and Zeland, and from the rest of the vnited Prouinces, came the youngest son of William Prince of Orenge, Monsieur Fulke, and learned Monsieur Barneuile, Commissioners, these were lodged within Bishopsgate Street.

From the Archduke of Austria.

An Ambassadour from the Arch-Duke of Austria, with his company was lodg'd without Bishops Gate, by the late dissolued hospitall called Saint Mary Spittle, in the house sometime pertaining to Sir Horatio Paulasine and from thence remoued to Stanes, neere vnto Windsor, &c.

From the French King

The eight of June, arriued at London, Monsieur de Rosny, great Treasurer of France: accompanied with Noblemen, and gallant Gentlemen in great number, the same night, they in thirty coaches, rode to the French Ambassadors leager, then lodged at the Warbrane by Redcrosse Street, they supped with him, and returned to Crosby place, (now belonging to Sir John Spencer) in Bishopsgate Street, where the principall was lodged, and the other in places neere adioyning.

The Earle of Rutland is sent Ambassador to Denmarke.

The King beeing as mindfull of his friends abroad, as prouident for his friends at home, appointed the right honorable Roger, Earle of Rutland to prepare himselfe for Denmarke, to Christianus the fourth, to solemnize in his behalfe the Baptizing of the sayd Kings Son, and to present the King with the most Noble Order of the Garter: Which Earle accompanied with his Brethren, and many Gallant Knights and Gentlemen, set forward from Greenes-end the twentie eight of June, and arriued at Elsenor, the ninth day following, where his Lordship was visited, saluted, and entertained by speciall Gentlemen from the King.

And after vpon the way (betweene Elsenor and Copenhauen) Romelius a great Councellor of Estate met him, and with great kindnesse, and complements re-saluted his Lordshippe, and his company. The tenth of July in the morning being Sunday, the King gaue audience to the Ambassadour, and hauing read his Lordships Commission and letters of credence, hee most kindly welcomned him and all his Lordshippes followers, taking knowledge of euery man in his degree, and giuing them his Princely hand to kisse, immediatly the King in great Estate and Royall manner proceeded to the Baptizing of his Son, which was performed in our Lady Church, in Copen-hauen, where a Bishoppe with one Deacon in rich vestments, standing before the Altar (according to the Lutheran Church) read certaine prayers, both in Latine and the Danish tongue and then descended to the Font which stood in the body of the Quyer where the Queene, the Kings mother being led by the Lord Ambassadour, and the Duke Vincke, the Kings brother, bore the child in her Armes and there deliuered it to be held by the Ambassadour, whilest the Bishop backe the head after the Baptisme.

The Bishoppe prayed againe in both languages, and then sayd name de Barne, whereunto the Ambassadour, and the other deputies of Princes, by the King the Fathers consent, answered Christianus, by which name the Bishop Baptized the young Prince with the signe of the Crosse, all which being moit solemnly performed, the Bishop made a Sermon in Latine vppon the Gospell for that day, and so the whole assembly returned as they came the streets being adorned with Arras, and set with certaine Ensignes of Townesmen, with shotte and Pikes.

The same day the King made a solemne feast, for the Ambassador, and the other Deputies of Gossips, placing the English Ambassadour vppon the right hand of the Queene Mother at the tables end, the King himselfe sat on the one side, and his Queene on the other. The Duke his brother, the Bishop of Bremne and other great Estates, were placed according to their degrees, and so were the English Knights, and Gentlemen as many as the table could containe.

Eight dayes the King entertained the Ambassadour with diuers Princely pastimes, as in viewing of his shippes, his strange deuices, of waterworkes, for the forging, and boring of Ordinance, his storehouses of munition, his stables, and other things of State, with huntings, and banquettings, &c.

The fourteenth day of July, the King receiued the Order of the Garter, in the Castle of Elsenor, by the hands of the right honourable, the Earle of Rutland, assisted by William Segar *alias* Norroy King of Armes: the King in person brought the Ambassadour aboord, where the

the Ambassadour made the King and all his Traine a sumptuous banquet.

The 28. of the same moneth the Lord Ambassadour tooke his leaue of the King, and the nineteenth set sayle for England, & afterwards being fourteene dayes at Sea, was by contrary windes forced to land at Skarborough in the North parts.

The feast of S. George.

His Maiestie hauing deferred the feast of Saint George, vntill his being at some of his own houses, held the sayd feast at Windsor, the second of July, where the young Prince was enstalled Knight of the most Noble order of the Garter: and after that being in his robes presented vnto the Queenes Maiestie, and whilest he was in the Chamber with her, I heard the Earles of Nottingham, & Northampton highly commend him for diuers his quicke wittie answeres, Princely carriage, and reuerend performing his obeysance at the Altar, all which seemed very strange vnto them, and the rest of the beholders, considering his tender age, being vntill then altogether vnacquainted with the matter and manner thereof.

Prince Henry and other installed Knights of the Garter.

Where were likewise with his Highnesse enstalled Knights, and companions of the most Noble order of the Garter, the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Southampton, the Earle of Mar, the Earle of Pembrooke: there were also elected the King of Denmarke, and the Duke of Wertenberg.

Sir Francis Gawdy.
Sir Thomas Wanesly.
Sir William Clarke.
Sir Edward Fenner.
Sir John Savell.
Sir George Kingesmell
Sir Peter Warberton.
Sir Christopher Yelverton.

Judges.

The great Lords of England doe their homage vnto Queen.

The same time the great Ladies of England in honor of the Queene, and discharge of their duties came to the Court, to performe their homage vnto her Highnesse, who with great reuerence kneeling one by one, kissed her Maiesties hand, being hard to discerne whether the mildnesse of the Soueraigne, or humility of the Subiect was greatest: the names of which Ladies, as I then knew and now remember, were the young Lady Marquesse of Winchester, the Countesse of Arefoyd, the olde Countesse of Darby, and her daughters, the Countesse of Shrewsbury, the Countesse of Pembrooke, and her daughter, the Countesse of Sussex, and her daughter, the Countesse of Bedford, neere attendant vnto her Maiestie, the Countesse of Hartford, the Countesse of Suffolke, the Countesse of Kildare, hauing then the chiefe charge of the Lady Elizabeth, the Lady Bartier, the Lady Rich, the Lady Peter, the Lady Guilford, and the Lady Hatton, wife to Maister Attourney Generall: there were diuers other right Noble & honourable Ladies, whose names I knew not, being all of them most sumptuous in apparel, and exceeding rich and glorious in Jewels like the wearers.

Sir John Hale.
Sir Edward Philips.
Sir Thomas Harris.
Sir David Williams.
Sir William Daniell.
Sir Edward Heron.
Sir Henry Hubard.
Sir Thomas Fleming Solicitor.
Sir Francis Bacon.
Sir Henry Mountague.

Sergeants.

Proclamation for the apprehension of Copley, and others.

The 31 of July, Anthony Copley was proclaimed to be apprehended. And on the 16. was also the like Proclamation for sir Gruffin Markeham Knight, William Watson, and William Clarke Priests.

Sir Edward Stanhope.
Sir John Tyndall.
Sir Matthew Carew.
Sir Daniell Dune.
Sir Christopher Parkins.
Sir Richard Swale.
Sir Thomas Crompton.
Sir John Gibson.
Sir John Bennet.

Doctors Ciuill.

Abant that time were apprehended, and committed, diuers persons, namely Henry Brooke, Lord Cobham, George Brooke brother to the sayd Lord Cobham, Thomas Lord Gray of Wilton, Sir Walter Rawleigh knight and others.

Sir George Copin.
Sir John Willoughby.
Sir John Tyrrell.
Sir Phillip Skidamore.
Sir Thomas Dabridg.Court.
Sir William Roper.

Sir Richard Conisby.

Sir

Earles and Barons created.

Who 21. of July were created at Hamptoncourt, in the great Hall, by the Kings Maiestie vnder his estate, and the Queene present, Henry Earle of Southampton, restored and created: Thomas Lord Howard of Walden created Earle of Suffolke: Charles Blunt Lord Mountioy created Earle of Devonshire, Sir Thomas Egerton Lord Chancellor, created Baron of Ellesmor: Sir William Russell Lord Russell of Thornaugh: Sir Henry Gray, Lord Gray of Groby: Sir John Peter Lord Peter of Writtle: Sir John Harrington Lord Harington of Exton: Sir Henry Danvers Lord Danvers of Dauntsy: Sir Thomas Gerarde, Lord Gerard of Gerards Bromley in Comit. Stafford: Sir Robert Spencer Lord Spencer of Wormeleyton.

Knighthoods bestowed at Westminster.

Friday the two and twentieth of July, the King and Queene removed to Westminster. On Saturday the three and twentee, the King Dubbed knights in his Garden, the Iudges, Sergeants at Law, Doctors at Law, and many others, three or foure hundred.

Gentlemen Vshers.

Sir John Dromond.
Sir Thomas Conceway.
Sir John Gilbert.
Sir Francis Vincent.
Sir John Cotton.
Sir Robert Lane.
Sir Robert Edwards.
Sir Nicholas Gilborne.
Sir William Sandes.
Sir Thomas Mildmay.
Sir Thomas Hamond.
Sir John Whitton.
Sir Alexander Cave.
Sir Samuel Saltenstall.
Sir Robert Varnam.
Sir Thomas Penrudock.
Sir Edward Cooke.
Sir Thomas Vmfrey.

Clearkes of the Signet, &c.

Sir Thomas Windbanke.
Sir Thomas Clarke.
Sir John Wood.

Knights of the Bath.

Sunday the 24. was performed the solemnitie of Knights of the Bath, riding honourably from Saint Iames to the Court, and made shew with their Squires and Pages, about the Tilt-yard, and after went into the Parke of Saint Iames, and there lighted all from their horses, and went vp to the Kings Maiesties presence in the gallery, where they received the order of knighthood of the Bath.

Sir Phillip Harbert.
Sir Thomas Barkely.
Sir William Euers.
Sir George Wharton.
Sir Robert Rich.

Names of the Knights of the Bath.

Sir Robert Carre of Newboth.
Sir John Egerton.
Sir Thomas Compton.
Sir James Erskin.
Sir William Anstruder.
Sir Patricke Murrey.
Sir Iames Hayes.
Sir John Lindsey.
Sir Richard Preston.
Sir Oliver Cromwell.
Sir Edward Stanley.
Sir William Harbert.
Sir Foulke Grevill.
Sir Francis Fane.
Sir Robert Chichester.
Sir Robert Knollis.
Sir William Clifton.
Sir Francis Fortescue.
Sir Richard Corbet.
Sir Edward Harbert.
Sir Thomas Langton. Baron Walton.
Sir William Pope.

Sir Arthur Hopton.
Sir Charles Morison.
Sir Francis Leigh.
Sir Edward Mountague.
Sir Edward Stanhope.
Sir Peter Manwood.
Sir Robert Harlye.
Sir Thomas Strickland.
Sir Christopher Hatton.
Sir Ed. Griffin of Dingly.
Sir Robert Beuell.
Sir William Welby.
Sir Edward Harewell.
Sir John Mallet.
Sir Walter Aston.
Sir Henry Gawdy.
Sir Richard Musgrave.
Sir John Stowell.
Sir Richard Amcoates.
Sir Thomas Leeds.
Sir Thomas Iermy.
Sir Ralph Hare.
Sir Willam Foster.
Sir George Speake.
Sir George Hide.
Sir Anthony Felton.
Sir William Browne.
Sir Thomas Wise.
Sir Robert Chamberlaine.
Sir Anthony Palmer.
Sir Edward Heron.
Sir Henry Burton.
Sir Robert Barker.
Sir William Norris.
Sir Roger Bodenham.

Also by reason of Gods visitation for our sinnes, the Plague of Pestilence there raigning in the City of London, and Suburbes, (the Pageants and other shewes of Triumph, in most sumptuous manner prepared, but not finished) the King roade not from the Tower through the Citie in Royall manner as had beene accustomed, neither were the Citizens permitted to come at Westminster, but forbidden by Proclamation, for feare of infection to be by that meanes increased, for there dyed that weeke in the City of London, and Suburbs, of all diseases, 1103. of the plague, 857.

The 25. of July being Sunday, and the feast of the blessed Apostle Saint Iames, King Iames of England, first of that name, with the Noble Lady and Queene Anne, were together Crowned, and anointed at Westminster, by the most reverend Father in God, Iohn Whitgift, Archbishop of Canterbury, in the presence of the Nobilitie, and other, namely Sir Robert Lee, Lord Maior of London, in a Gowne of Crimson Velvet, his brethren the Aldermen, in Gownes of Scarlet, and twelue principall Citizens admitted to attend on them: these in the morning early entred the Maiors barge at

Coronation at Westminster.

at the three Cranes Vintry and were rowed to Westminster, all other Citizens staying from passing thither, either by water or by land, as much as might be.

Aldermen of London knighted.

The twentie first of Iulie, all the Aldermen of London were sent for, to come to Westminster, there to be knighted by the King.

The first of August were forbidden by Proclamation, all Suters repairing to the Court, til winter following: and all men out of ordinary commanded to depart the Court to their dwelling houses, there to remaine till by occasion of service they should be recalled.

The 1. of August kept holyday.

Friday the first of August, by commandement from the ordinary, was kept hollyday, with Morning prayer, Sermon, and Euening prayer that day, and Bonefires at night, all men to praise God for the Kings escape for being murthered by a most wicked Traytor in Scotland, Earle Gowry, on the first day of August some three yeares since.

Wednesday kept holiday.

Wednesday the tenth of August, was by the Ordinary appointed to be kept holy day, and fasted, the Church to be frequented with prayers to Almighty God, Sermons of repentance to the people, and charity to the poore to be Collected, and distributed, and the like commanded to bee done weekly every Wednesday, while the heavy hand of God, by the Plague of Pestilence continued amongst vs.

Bartholomew Fayre kept as other Fayres within fiue miles of London were forbidden.

Bartholomew Fayre at London and all other Fayres within fiue miles of London were forbidden by Proclamation not to be kept.

The fourteenth of August Sir William Dethick Gartter principall King of Armes being sent to Peterborough in Northampton-shire with a rich Pall of Velure embroydered with the Armes of the mighty Princesse Mary Queene of Scots, hauing letters directed to the reverend Lord Bishoppe of Peterborough in that behalfe, which Pall of Velure embroydered was by him solemnly carryed and laid vpon, and ouer the Corps of the late late Queen attired by many Knights, and Gentlemen, and much people at the time of diuine seruice, and then the sayd Lord Bishoppe preached a Sermon in that behalfe in the morning, and made a great feast at dinner, and the Deane preached of the same, in the afternoone: the sayd Queene of Scotland, was Royally and sumptuously interred by the sayd Garter, on the first of August, in the yeere one thousand fiue hundred eightie seuen.

Pall of Velure borne ouer the Corps.

Tearme adiourned.

The fourteenth of September Proclamation was made for the adiourning of Michaelmas Tearme, vnto the fourth returne commonly called Mense Michaelis, and then to be continued at Westminster.

Proclamation against Inmates.

Proclamation was made against Inmates, multitudes of dwellers in straight roomes, and places, in and about the Citie of London, and for the razing and pulling downe of new erected buildings the fifteenth of September: but nothing was done touching that matter: dangerous Rogues to bee banished, as appointed by the Lords of the Councell, and confirmed by the King, the seuenteenth of September, the Statutes against Rogues, Vagabonds, Idle and dissolute Persons, to be put in Execution.

Soone after his Maiesties Coronation, order was given that the high and mighty Prince Fredericke Duke of Wirtomberge, &c. who had beene elected to bee one of the Company of the Noble Order of the Garter, by the late Queene Elizabeth, at Saint Georges feast in the thirtie nine yeare of her raigne, should now forthwith be inuested with the ornaments of that order, whereupon the right honourable, the Lord spencer of Wormleyton, and sir William Dethicke Garter knight, principall King at Armes, was sent to the sayd Duke in that behalfe. In which iourney went sir Robert Lee, and diuers other knights and Gentlemen, they tooke shipping the eight of October, and landed the next day at Calice, and by Lonning came to Stutgard the second of November, where the sayd Lord Spencer was received with much honor and loue, and the same day, the Duke heard the cause of their comming, and highly contented therewith, caused his principall Noblemen and Officers to be sent for. Vpon the first of November (which was the day appointed for that action) the Duke was inuested, the robes, Garter, and other ornaments of the sayd order, and other Ceremonies were performed in the Cathedrall Church of that Citie, in as religious and solemne manner as in the like hath bene vsed, and all the residue of that day was spent in great feastes, and Triumpes, fower dayes after were spent in hunting the wild Boze, and other pastimes, the eleuenth, before they departed, were made very amicable and costly Brewarkes, and nothing was omitted that might seeme to serue to celebration of that Feast, and Triumph, and for the honorable entertainement and satisfaction of the said Lord spencer, and the whole company, finally they departed from Stutgard, the fourteenth of November, and returned all safe into England, before the feast of the Natiuitie following.

Lord Spencer sent to Fredericke Duke of Wirtomburg the 1. of October.

The eighteenth of October, the Tearme was Proclaimed to be adiourned till Crastino Martini, then to bee kept at Winchester in the County of Southampton.

Tearme adiourned to Winchester.

The Courts of the Exchequer, Wards, liueries, and the Dutchie of Lancaster, to bee kept in the Kings Mannor at Richmond, in the County of Surrey.

The twenty foure of October, Proclamation was made for quietnesse to be obserued in matters of Religion.

Proclamation.

Sunday the fourth of November, Henry Brooke, Lord Cobham, late Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports, and Thomas Lord Gray of Wilton, were in two Coaches conueyed from the Tower of London towardes Winchester, in the County of Southampton, also on Friday the tenth of November, Sir Walter Raley, Sir Gruffin Markeham Knights, George Brooke Esquire, brother to the Lord Cobham,

Prisoners remoued from the Tower of London.

Anthony

Anthony Copley Gentleman, William Watson and William Clearke Priests, were conueyed from the Tower of London towards Winchester: the same day, out of the Gatehouse at Westminster, Sir Edward Parham Knight, and Bartholomew Brooksby Esquire of Leicestershire, all these stayed at Waggelhotte in Surrey, Foure and Twenty Miles from London.

On Wednesday the ninth of November, Henry Lord Cobham, vnder the Custody of Sir Thomas Vausor Knight Marshall, and Thomas Lord Gray, vnder the Custody of Sir Richard Leueson Knight, were conducted by Sir Henry Wallop, and Sir Hamden Pawlet, Knights of the County of Southampton, well and strongly garded with fifty light horsemen of the same County, from Waggelhotte to the Castle of Winchester, thirtie miles from Waggelhatte.

And on Saturday the twelfth of November, George Brooke Esquire, brother to the Lord Cobham, vnder the Custody of Sir William Wade Knight: Sir Walter Rawleigh Knight, vnder the Custody of Sir Robert Mansel Knight: Sir Griffin Markeham Knight vnder the Custody of Sir Robert Wroth, Sir Edward Parham Knight, Bartholomew Brooksby of Leicestershire Esquire, Anthony Copley Gentleman, Watson and Clerk Priests: euery one of these last fiue, attended on by the warders of the Tower, and Sir Edward Parham, and Bartholomew Brooksby, by the keeper of the Gatehouse besides: for they two came out of that prison, were by the said Sir Henry Wallop Knight, Sir Francis Fulmes Knight, Sir Richard Touchborne Knight, sen and heire to Sir Beniamin Touchborne then high Sherriffe of the sayd Countie of Southampton, together with fiftie light horsemen of that County conducted from Waggliotte aforesaid to the sayd Castle of Winchester, and there deliuered in to the Custody of the said high Sheriffe: where they together with the sayd Keepers (all saue the sayd Warders of the Tower, and the keeper of the Gatehouse) remained, till they were brought out to their seuerall arraignments into the great Common hall of the Castle of Winchester.

Arraignment at Winchester.

Arraigned at Winchester the 15. of November, George Brooke brother to the Lord Cobham, Sir Griffin Markeham, and Sir Edward Parham Knights, Watson and Clarke, Priests, Bartholomew Brookesby Esquire, Copley Gentleman, indicted.

1 To conspire to kill the King.
2 To raise Rebellion.
3 To alter Religion.
4 To subuert the estate.
5 To procure inuasion by strangers.

To effect these Treasons on the fourteenth of June, one thousand fiue hundred and three the first yeere of King Iames the first: they intended their act against the King and his sonne and to carry them to the Tower, and there to enter, and with the Kings Treasure in the Tower to maintaine their intent, but if the Tower could not bee taken, then to take the Castle of Dower, and to carry the King thither, and then and there to obtaine of the King these things, viz.

1 Pardon for their owne presumptions.
2 Tolleration of Religion.
3 To remoue some from the Councell.

Watson the Priest deuised Oathes in writing by which the parties were bound to conceale their Treasons. Clearke and Watson Priestes, did say the fourteenth of June, the King, was no King, vntill after his Cozonation

Master George Brooke, and Sir Griffin Markeham, opened their intents to the Lord Gray, to which the sayd Lord did consent. That the 15. of June, they did consent to take Greenwich, and to take the Lords in their Chambers there, and then to carry the King & his Counsell to Dower, or to the Tower, and there would hold the King halfe a yeare. And they would diuide places of authority amongst themselues, viz. Watson Lord Chancellor, George Brooke Lord Treasurer, Sir Griffin Markeham, Secretary, Lord Gray Master of the horse, and Earle Marshall of England: and they would send for the Mayor and Aldermen of London, and keepe them in the Tower.

The eighteenth of June they opened to the Lord Gray the Treasons, whereto the Lord Gray gaue consent, and then the Lord Gray himselfe desired to be Earle Marshall. They did also meete the sayd eighteenth day, and there did meue others to ioyne in their Treasons. And also the twentie of June the Lord Gray, George Brooke, and Sir Griffin Markeham, agreed that the Lord Gray should attaine the leading of two thousand men for the defence of the Low Countries, and that with those men he should effect this enterprize: most of them conseiling the Indictment in part, not in the whole, and pleaded not guiltie: but Master Brooke, before did make this argument: That which is not the rule of my action, can not be Iudge of my action, but the common law cannot bee Iudge of my action. Hee affirmed he had Commission from the King, which hee intended about the common Law, to doe that hee did, viz. to trie faithfull Subiects: but beeing willed to shew the letter of Commission, hee answered hee had such a one, which hee did not shewe, wherefore his Argument was of no force.

Watson the Priest affirmed hee was the man that drew in all these Gentlemen to their Treasons as now they are held to be, as he said, but he held them not so, the King being not Crowned: alleaging Saule was anointed in Ramath, and after ward Ecclus Rex in Mispa and Cleark the Priest alledged Rehoboam, but it was answered, our King was King presently after the Queens death, as any other to heire to his Father before liuery sued: and that the Kings Cozenation was but a Ceremony, to declare him to the people to be King for

euer.

King neuer dies, and in Eng. is no Interregnum

Sir Griffin Markeham confessed his discontentment, his liuing being taken from him, but desired to cleare himselfe, of all intention of blood, and desired the Lords to moone the King for mercy, confessing his fault very penitently.

Sir Walter Rawleigh arraigned.

The 17. of November was Sir Walter Rawleigh arraigned, being indicted the 21 of Sept. at Staines, for combining with Henry Lord Cobham the 9. of June at S. Martins in the fields to compasse to destroy the King: raise scottion: commit slaughter: moue rebellion: alter religion: subuert the State: to procure inuasion: leuie war: & to set vp the Lady Arabella Seward, &c. as in the indictment with other arguments, which continued from morning til about 6. of the clocke at night, that the Jury in halfe an houre found him guilty of high Treason.

The Lord Cobham arraigned at Winchester the 29. of November: the Lord Chancellor of England being Lord Steward, and late vnder the cloth of Estate, and none in the vpper end of the hal but himselfe, the Lords sitting on benches along the sides of the hall, halfe on the one side and halfe on the other, & at their feet on either side fate 4. Iudges, and the Kings eldest Gentleman vsher, sitting at the feet of the Lord Steward: the Clarke of the Crowne, with a very low curtesie, deliuered to the Lord high Steward the Kings Maiesties Commission, which he with great reuerence receiued and deliuered the same back againe to the Clarke of the Crowne. Then a Serieant at Armes made Proclamation for silence, and the Clarke read the Commission, then the Sheriffe was called to returne his writ, and to bring in the body of the Lord Cobham, then Master Hamdon Serieant at Arms, returned the Summons of the Lords and Peeres, who were called euery one of them by name.

Henry Lord Cobham arraigned.

When the Lord Cobham was arraigned vpon an Indictment taken the 24. of September last, for that he together with Sir Walter Rawleigh, and George Brooke, the 9. of June last, at S. Martins in the fields, did compasse to depriue the King, and him and his to bring to death, to cause slaughter, and stirre rebellion, and the gouernment, and Religion now established to change, and to subuert the Estate, and to perswade strangers, enemies of this land to inuade the same, & to effect these Treasons, the sayd 9. of June did meet with Sir Walter Rawleigh, & did consult about inuasion, and rebellion, and to stirre vp and deprine the King, and him and his to bring to destruction, and to aduance Arabella Steward, and that hee should intreate with Count Arenberge, for six hundred thousand Crownes, and there if it was agreed that he the Lord Cobham, should goe to the Arch duke to perswade him to assist Arabella, and Sir Walter Rawleigh agreed the Lord Cobham should goe to Spaine, to perswade the King to assist Arabella, &c. As in the indictment to which he pleaded not guiltie, and put himselfe to be tryed by God and his Peeres, who found him guilty, and he had iudgement, The 26 of November Thomas Lord Gray, was arraigned at Winchester

Thomas Lord Gray arraigned.

vpon an indictment taken the 24. of September at Staines, for ioyning with George Brook Sir Griffin Markeham, and Sir Ed. Parham Knight, Watson and Clerke Priests, Bartholomew Brooksby Esquire, and Copley Gentleman, the 14. of June last, to compasse, the king to kill and deprine, the gouernment & religion, to change, and to perswade strangers to inuade, &c. and to effect the sayd practises, the said 14. of June did meete at Westminster, and there did treate to bring into their power, the King and his Son, and them to carry to the Tower, and there to find money to maintaine their action, & there would obtain three things, viz. pardon for their presumption, tolleration of Religion, and to remoone some from the Councell, and if the Tower would not be taken, then to carry them to Dower Castle, and Watson the sayd 14. of June, did deuise oathes in writing to conceale & their intent, and they did affirme the King was no King till after his Coronation, and did declare that to the Lord Gray and he assented, and conferred to effect these treasons, & how to take Greenwitch, and to take the Lords there and detaine them, and then would carry them and the King to the Tower or to Dower Castle, and there imprison them halfe a yeere.

And the said day it was agreed at Westminster, that Watson should be Lord Chancellor, Brooke Lord Treasurer and Sir Griffin Markeham Secretary, & that they would send for the Mayor and Aldermen of London, and keepe them in the Tower, till they had gotten hostages not to hinder their enterprises, and to effect more, the 18. of June they declared all this to the Lord Gray whereto he consented, and there they would ioyne with them, and there desired to bee Earle Marshall, and did conclude to effect the premises on S. Iohn Baptist day, & that they would moue others to ioyne with them. And the Lord Gray, Brooke and Markeham did consult that the Lord Gray should obtaine the leading and conducting of 2000. Souldiers for defence of the Low Countries, and then to turne them to effect this intent, and the Lord Gray promised to procure 100. Gentlemen to ioyne with them and to fauor of the inuidement.

The Lord Gray made a long speech full of fine words but not to the matter. Then the Lord Steward spake to the Lord Gray, & willed him to answere boldly and without feare. Then to the Peeres, doubting them though they stood vnwoone, yet to try indifferently betweene the King and the prisoner, then to the Kings Councell at Law, willing them, not to confound the prisoner with vnnecessary matter. Serieant Heale opened the Indictment, and master attorney answered the Lord Graies speeches, and aduised him not to vse shifts, for they hap not serued the other day the Master of shifts.

In the course of proceeding against the Lord Gray, it appeared by the examination of Georg Brooke, Sir Griffin Markeham and other, that hee was acquainted with the Kings surprise to haue bin at Wanworth or at Greenwitch, but the Lord Gray stood vpon it, that the conspiracy was not opened to him til after it was dead, and

meant no further to be proceeded withal, which was prouch contrary, for the Lord Gray, afterward consented to bring an hundred Gentlemen for that purpose, which he sayd was but to deliuer a petition to the King for reformation of some abuses in the Common wealth, nevertheleste he lingred to attempt, for feare the Catholike faction should out-goe his, and he sayd he would haue his Religion the superior which seemed to be the reason why they did not attempt their wicked purpose: then the Lord Gray would haue extenuated the fact, saying it was but a verball matter and never take effect, and therefore could not bee Treason, but when the Judges told him his fact was Treason, he began to make an invective speech against the Law, which would not serue his turne, then the Lords went together and returning found him guilty.

Watson and Clarke executed.

The 29. of November, Watson and Clarke, Priests, were executed at Winchester, Watson first acknowledged his offence, secondly asked mercy of the King and State, desiring God to prosper both in peace and amitie. Thirdly he was sory, he had drawne so many into that action, wishing he had so many bodies as might satisfie the Kings Maiesty for all that had conspired and were in durance, and like to suffer for that action: fourthly, he forgaue and desired to bee forgiuen of all, namely, that the Iesuites would forgiue him, if he had written ouer eger-ly against them, saying also it was occasioned by them, whom he forgaue if they had cunningly and covertly drawne him into the action for which he suffered, he desired all to witnesse that he dyed a true Catholike, and all true Romish Catholikes to pray for him, Clarke in little differed from Watson, only he seemed not engaged in the action so much, he was drawne in by Watson, he sayd he had written a dialogue betweene a Gentleman and a Scholler, concerning the obedience and loyalty of Subiects towardes their King.

And did therefore mention the booke, lest happily if it were after printed, it might not be thought to haue bin written by him, his death was with more penitencie and constancy then Watsons was: hee confessed hee relied only on the merries of God; not his owne merites, desiring all Christian Catholiques, and all which were in the vnitie of the Church to pray for him.

When both acknowledged that they suffered the Iudgement of death, not for their Religion or their function of Priesthood, but for that their treasonable act, which the Iudges by the Lawes whose wisedomes they rather commended then would blame, had conuicted for Treason, though their intents and hearts to God were cleare in that point, onely Clearke sayd he knew not the certaintie, yet he thought his Priesthood at least by accidence had hastened his execution.

George Brooke beheaded.

George Brooke beheaded at Winchester the fifth of December, being brought forth vnto the scaffold by the Sheriffe, and the Bishop of Chichester, to perswade him to die well, after many godly exhortations and prayers by them vsed vnto him, he vttered these few speeches, after a still kind of fashion, with a very low voice, and cheerefull countenance being by very few heard: That he would neither excuse nor accuse any more, for any matter of Treason, or practises against the King or State, but that hee did assure vnto hope, that in time it would be knowne vnto the world, manifestly discouered, and that he dies free and innocent from any action worthy of death, and would not by any meanes seeme to acknowledge himselfe guilty, he desired the Gentlemen and those by him, to be witnesse to his last will and Testament, wherein since his last act, had bereft him of all goods and lands, where withall he might benefite his beloued and deare wife and children, for had nothing left to bequeath them but onely his earnest prayers to the Almighty to blesse and prosper them, which he did there earnestly offer vp vnto him, in the sight and hearing of them all.

Hee sayd to die it did not grieue him, neither was it in any sort fearefull vnto him, onely his greatest care was, that he should leaue his wife and children, by his act wholly destitute and vnprouided.

He was in the whole time of his being on the Scaffold never seene to alter his countenance or to make any show of griefe, vntill he came to talke of his wife and children, at which time the water stood in his eyes, and his countenance somewhat changed, for matters of religion, he shewed himselfe a well deuoted Christian, and in each respect obedient, and cheerefull in his prayers, humbly desiring mercy and forgiuenesse of his sinnes, when he came to prepare himselfe to lay his head on the blocke, he told them they must giue him instructions what to do, for he was never beheaded before.

Hauing laid downe his head, his hand being not fitte, he rose againe, the headsman pssting to helpe him, he put him from him, and called his owne man to doe the last service for him, he layd downe his head and had it taken off at a blow, hee was apparelled in a blacke damaske gowne, a suite of blacke satten with a wrought night-cap, his Gowne being taken off it was deliuered to the Sheriffes man, which the headsman demanded, and being denied it, hee made answere that vnlesse hee had it, the Sheriffe should execute the office himselfe.

Of the Lords Cobham and Gray, and Sir Griffin Markeham.

Here you must vnderstand, that as soone as the arraignments were passed at Winchester, the Priny Counsell (to the number of fourteene or fifteene, of which company all of them had either bene tryers of the Noblemen as their Peres, or sitten as high Commissioners vpon the Gentlemen) were called before his Maiestie (in his Priuie chamber) at Wilton, where he commanded them to deliuer (without respect to any person) the true narration onely of the order in the tryall of these persons, that had bin condemned by the Law, and of the nature and degree of their offences, as had appeared in euery one of them by their seuerall answeres. All which beeing clearely and iustly reported by them, (each speaking in hearing of the rest) his Maiesty hauing concluded in his owne

owne heart, in what manner to proceed) (and that without asking of any earthly person) it pleased him to resolue (betweene God and himselfe) that their execution should be stayed euen at the instant. And therefore, after the two Priests were executed on Tuesday the 29. of November, and George Brooke on Munday following, his Maiestie on the same day, being the first of December, signed three warrants, for the execution of the late Lord Cobham, Lord Gray, and sir Griffin Markham Knight, with particular direction to the Sheriffe, to performe it on Friday after, before ten a clocke in the morning, all these directions being now become notorious, both by the writhe of Execution (which passed vnder the great Seale) & by the making ready the scaffolds at Winchester, his Maiestie very secretly withdrew himselfe into his Cabenet, on Wednesday before the day of execution, and there priuately framed a warrant written with his owne hand to the Sheriffe, by vertue whereof, hee countermanded all the former directions, alleaging the reasons therein mentioned. First his Maiesty resolued it should bee a Scottish man that should carry the warrant, being thereby like to be freest from particular dependency vpon any Noble man, Councellour, or other their friends or allies. Next he resolued to send a man of no extraordinary ranke, because the Standers by should not observe any alteration, nor the delinquents themselues should take any apprehension of such a mans being there at that time.

This being his Maiesties speciall desire, that euery one of them (being seuerally brought vpon the scaffold) might quietly breath forth their last words, and true confession of his secretest conscience. And so his Maiesty made choice of Master Iohn Gibb, a Scottish man, a man that had never dealt with any Councello, or other, for suite of businesse, but one that had borne sent backe into Scotland, from whence he was but now freshly arrived at Wilton some few dayes before.

This party being by the King appointed for an auncient truckie and secret seruant, and a man little knowne, receiuing the warrant secretly on Thursday, from the Kings owne hand, and telling his fellowes that he must lye that night at Salsbury vpon some priuate businesse of his owne, hee rode directly to Winchester, and there keeping himselfe priuate all night, rose early in the morning, on Fryday, and went obscurely to the Castle greene, where the people flocking in all the morning, as the time drew neere, hee put himselfe with the tryong close by the Scaffolds, and there leaned till the Sheriffe brought vp Sir Griffin Markeham to the place, who was the man appointed first to die.

There Sir Griffin Markeham, hauing ended his prayers, and made himselfe ready to kneele downe (Master Iohn Gibb (while the Are was preparing) to giue secret notice of his charge, called Sir Benjamin Tichbourne, the Sheriffe, and then deliuered him (priuatly) his Maiesties warrant, with further directions how he should vse it.

Hereupon, the Sheriffe perceiuing his Maiesties intention, so discreetly ordered the matter, as hee onely called Sir Grifin Markeham vnto him on the Scaffold, and told him that he must withdraw himselfe into the hall, to bee confronted with before those two Lords that then were to follow him, about some points that did concerne the Kings seruice: and so carrying Markeham into the hall, he left him there and went vp to the Castle for the Lord Gray, who being likewise brought vp to the Scaffold, and suffered to powre out his prayers vnto God at great length, and to make his confession, as he would answere vpon his soule, when hee was ready to kneele downe to receiue the stroke of death, Master Sheriffe caused him to stay, and told him that he must goe downe into the hall for a while, and willed him there to tarry till he returned.

Last of all, he went for the Lord Cobham, who hauing also ended his deuotion to God, and making himselfe ready to receiue the deadly blow, the Sheriffe caused both the Lord Gray, and Sir Grifin Markeham, to bee brought backe to the Scaffold, and there before them all three that were condemned, and in the hearing of all the company, notified his Maiesties warrant, by which hee was authorized to stay the execution.

The Lord Cobham (holding vp his hands to heauen) applauded this incomparable mercy of so gracious a Soueraigne, aggrauating his owne fault, by comparing it with the Princes clemencie, wishing confusion to all men alive that euer should thinke a thought against such a Prince, as neither gaue cause of offence, nor take reuenge of ingratitude.

The Lord Gray, finding in what measure this late King had recompenced good for euill, and for bore to make him an example of discouragement, and terrour to all men that hereafter might attempt to breake the bands of loyaltie, vpon the passions of any ambition began to sob & weepe for a long while, with most deepe contrition, protesting now that such was his zeale and desire to redeeme his fault by any meanes of satisfaction: as he could easily sacrifice his life, to prevent the losse of one finger of that royall hand, that had dealt so mercifully with him, when he had least looked for it.

Sir Griffin Markeham (standing like a man astonished) did nothing but admire and pray. The people that were present, witnessed by infinite applause and shouting the ioy and comfort, which they tooke, in these wonderfull effects of grace and mercy in a Prince, whom God had inspired with so many royall gifts, for their conseruation. Thus farre out of a letter written by T.M.

A Copy of his Majesties Warrant, written with his owne hand, and directed to Sir *Beniamin Touchborne*, high Sheriffe of Hampshire, for stay of the execution of the late

Lord *Cobham*, Lord *Gray*, and Sir *Griffin Markeham* at Winchester. 1603.

Although it be true, that all well governid and flourishing Kingdomes and commonwealths, aire established by justice, and that these two Noblemen by birth, that aire now upon the point of Execution, aire for thair treasonable practises condemnid by the Lawe, and adiudgit woorthy of Execution thairof, to the exemple and terror of otheris: The one of thaim having filthily practised the ourthrow of the quhole Kingdome, and the other for the surprise of our owin Person: Yet in regaird that this is the first yeere of our Raigne, in this Kingdome, and that neuer King was so farre obleissed to his people, as we haue bene to this, by our entry here with so hairtie and generall an applause of all sorts; Among quhom all the kinne freindis, & allies of the saidis condemned persones, vaireas sindurat, & dueitsul as any other our good Subiectis, at also that at the very time of thair Arrainment none did more freely and readily giue thair assent to thair condemnation, and to deliuer thaim into the handis of Iustice, then so many of thair neerest kinsmen and allies (as being Peeris) vaiere vpon thair Iurie; as likewise in regaird that Iustice hath in some sort gotten course already by the execution of the two Priests, and George Brooke, *that vaire the principall plotteris and intisaris of all the rest, to the embracing of the saidis treasonabill Machinations, We thair fore (bing resoluid to mixe Clemency with Iustice) aire contented, and by thise presents command you, our present Sheriffe of Hamshire, to supersseide the execution of the saidis two Noblemen, and take thaim backe to thair person againe quhile our further pleasure bee knowin. And since we will not haue our Lawis to haue respect to persons, in sparing the great, and strikking the meaner sort, It is our pleasure, that the like course be also taken with* Markeham, *being sory from our hairt, that such is not onely the heynous nature of the saidis condemnid persons crime, but euen the corruption is so great of thair naturall disposition, as the care we haue for the safety and quiet of our State, and good Subiectis, will not permit us to vse that clemency towardis thaim, quhich in our owin naturall inclination, we might vary easily bee perswadit vnto.*

On the 15. of Decemb. Sir Griffin Markham Barrlemew Brooksby, and Anthony Copley, with the Lords Cobham and Gray, and Sir Walter Rawley, were all returned to the Tolor or of London. In the former yere to wit, 1602. the plague of pest. being great in Holland, Zealand, and other the Low Countries, and many Souldiers returning thence into England, the infection was also spread in diuers parts of this Realme, namely in the City of London, and liberties thereof, it so increased, that in the space of one whole yeare, to wit, from the 23. of December 1602. vnto the 22. of December, 1603. there died of al diseases (as was weekly accompted by the parish Clarks and so certified to the King) 38244. whereof of the Plague. 30578. God make vs penitent, for he is merciful.

The 11. of January was Proclamation made for summons of a Parliament to bee holden at Westminster. A conference graunted by the King, and Proclaimed to be holden the 12. of January, before his Maiestie, in his priuy chamber at Hampton Court, betweene the Bishops and other of his Clergie: was vpon occasion deferred till Saturday the 14. of January, on which day was holden the first conference: on day the 16. was the second, and wednesday the 18. the third. Agents for the Millenary plaintifes were Doct. Reynolds, Doct Sparks, Master Knewstubs, & Da. Chatterton, commandement was giuen by his Maiestie, that none should be present but only the Lords of his Priuy Councell, and the Bishops, to wit, the Archbishop of Canterbury, Bishopps of London; Durham, Winchest. Worcester, S. Davids, Chichester, Carlile, and Peterborow, 5. Deanes, viz of the Chappell, Westminster, Paules, Westchester, and Salisbury: who being called in, the doze was close shut by my Lord Chamberlain. The first day his Maiestie consulted with the Bishops about some speciall points, wherein himselfe desired to be satisfied, first concerning the Booke of Common Prayer and diuine Service vsed in the Church, second excommunication in the Ecclesiasticall Courts: Third, the prouiding of fit and able Ministers, for Ireland, &c.

The second day, the foure opponents brought in their complaints, who kneeling dolune doton Reynolds reduced all matters disliked to foure heads & so into branches, all which was heard and answered by his Maiesty and the Bishops, to their contentments, as it seemed.

The third day, the Kings Maiestie shut vp all with a pithy exhortation to both sides, for vnitie, perswading diligence in each mans place without violence in the one partie, or disobedience in the other: to which they all gaue their vnanimous assent, taking exceptions against nothing that was sayd or done, but promised to performe all dutie to the Bishops as their reuerend Fathers, and to ioyne with them against the common aduersaries, &c.

For as much as by this time, many Iesuites and Seminaries, were come into this land which neuer had beene heere since they were made Priests, & many others having remained here contrary to sundry statutes, and Proclamations in that behalfe, as also for that they presumed vpon the benefit of the 11. generall pardon swarming in many places, and in a manner making open shew of their religion and profession, all which together with the remembrance of the practise of three Iesuites not long since executed, caused his highnesse to publish a speciall Proclamation against them which proclamation being especially obserued, and recorded by

by diuers forreine Chronicles, I haue thought good to set downe the same verbatim as follow, eth:

The Proclamation, &c.

HAuing after some time spent in setling the politique affaires of this Realme, of late vouchsafed no small labour in composing certaine differences, late found amongst our Clergy about Rites and Ceremonies heretofore established in this Church of England, and reduced the same to such an order and forme, as We doubt not but euery spirit that is led only with Pietie, and not with Humor, shalbe therein satisfied: It appeared vnto vs in the debating of those matters, that a greater contagion to our Religion, then could proceede from those light differences, was imminent by persons common enemies to them both, Namely, the great number of Priests both Seminaries and Iesuites abounding in this Realme, as well of such as were here before our coming to this Crowne as of such as haue resorted hither since vsing their functions and professions with greater liberty then heretofore they durst haue done, partly vpon a vaine confidence of some innouation in matters of Religion to bee done by Vs, which wee neuer intended, nor gaue any man cause to expect, and partly vpon the assurance of our generall pardon, graunted according to the Custome of our Progenitors at our Coronation, for offences past in the dayes of the late Queen, which pardons many of the said Priests haue procured vnder our great Seale, and holding themselues thereby free from the danger of the Lawes, doe with great audacitie exercise all Offices of their profession, both saying Masses, perswading our Subiects from the Religion established, and reconciling them to the Church of Rome, and by consequence seducing them from the true perswasion, which all Subiects ought to haue of their dutie and obedience to Vs. Wherefore, forasmuch as by way of prouidence to preserue their people from being corrupted in Religion, Piety and obedience, is not the least part of Royall dutie: we hold our selfe Obliged both in conscience, and in wisedome, to vse all good meanes to keepe our Subiects from being infected with superstitious opinions in matters of religion, which are not only pernitious to their owne soules but the ready way and meanes to corrupt their dutie and allegiance, which cannot be any way so surely performed, as by keeping from them the Ministers and instruments of the infection, which are the Priests of all sorts ordained in forraine parts, by authoritie prohibited by the Lawes of this Land, concerning whom therefore we haue thought it fit to publish to all our Subiects this open declaration of our pleasure. That where there be of Priestes at this present within our Kingdome, be they regular or without rule, diuers sorts, some in prison, some at liberty, and of both, some hauing obtained our pardon vnder our great Seale, & some hauing no such pardon; And again, some that were here before our coming into this Realme, & some common hither since: For all such as are in prison we haue taken order that they shalbe shipped at some conuenient port, & sent out of our Realme as soone as possible may be, with commandement not to returne againe into any part of our dominions, without our licence obtained, vpon paine and perill of the Lawes being here in force against them, and for all others who are at liberty, whether hauing such our pardon or not, which we doe aduertise them and all our Subiects, that extending onely to matters done before the death of the late Queene, doth not exempt any Priest from the danger of the law for his abode here since our accession to the Crowne, aboue the time by the Statute limited.

In especiall Proclamation for the banishment of all Iesuites and Seminaries.

We do hereby will and command all maner Iesuites, Seminaries, and other Priests, whatsoeuer, hauing ordination from any authoritie by the Lawes of this Realme prohibited, to take notice that our pleasure is, that they do before the nineteenth day of March next ensuing the date hereof, depart forth out of our Realme and Dominions. And that for that purpose it shall be lawfull to all Officers of our Ports, to suffer the said Priestes to depart from thence into any forraine parts, betweene this and the said nineteenth day of March: admonishing and assuring all such Iesuites, Seminaries, & Priests of what sort soeuer, that if any of them shall be after the said nineteenth day, taken within this Realme or any our Dominions, or departing now vpon this our pleasure signified, shall hereafter returne into this Realme or any our Dominions againe, that they shall be left to the penalties of the Lawes here being in force concerning them, without hope of any fauor or remission from vs. Wherefore We will & command all Archbishops, Bishops, Lieutenants, Iustices of Peace, and all other our Officers and Ministers whatsoeuer, to be vigilant and carefull after the said nineteenth day of March past, to do their duties and diligence in discouering and apprehending of all Priests that shall remaine here contrary to this our declaration. Which though perhaps it may seeme to some to presage a greater seuerite towardes that sort of our subiects, who differing in their profession from the Religion by Law established, call themselues Catholicks, then by our proceedings with them hitherto we haue giuen cause to expect: yet doubt we not, but that when it shall be considered with indifferent Iudgement, what causes haue moued vs to vse this prouidence against the said Iesuites, Seminaries and Priests, all men will institute therein. For to whom is it vnknowne, into what perill our person was like to be drawn, & our Realme vnto confusion not many moneths since, by a conspiracy first conceiued by persons of that sort, who hauing preuailed with some, had vndertaken to draw multitudes of others to assist the same, by the authority of their perswasions & motiues grounded chiefly vpon matter of conscience and religion? Which when other Princes shall duly obserue, we assure our selues they will no way conceiue that this alteration groweth from any change of disposition now more euaporate then heretofore, but out of necessary prouidence to preuent their perills, otherwise inuentable, consi-

touring that absolute commission to Forraine Iurisdiction at their first taking of orders, only leaue to conditionall all authoritie to Kings ouer their Subiects, as the same power by which they were made, may dispense at pleasure with the straitest band of loyalty, and tone betweene a King and his people. Amongst which forraine powers although wee acknowledge our selues personally so much beholding to the now Bishop of Rome for his kind offices, and priuate temporall carriage towards vs in many things as we shall be euer ready to requite the same towards him, (as Bishop of Rome in state and condition of a secular Prince.) Yet when wee consider and obserue the course and claime of that Sea, We haue no reason to imagine, that Princes of our religion and profession, can expect any assurance long to continue, vnlesse it might be affented by mediation of other Princes Christian, that some good course might bee taken (by a generall Counsell free and lawfully called) to plucke vp those roots of dangers and iealousies which arise for cause of Religion, as well betweene Princes & Princes as betweene them and their Subiects, and to make it manifest that no State or Potentate either hath or can challenge power to dispose of earthly Kingdomes or Monarchies, or to dispense with Subiects obedience to their naturall Soueraignes: In which charitable action, there is no Prince liuing, that will be readier then We shall be to concurre euen to the vtmost of our power, not onely out of particular disposition to line peaceably with all States and Princes of Christendome, but because such a setled amity might (by an vnion in Religion) bee eftablished among Christian Princes, as might enable vs all to resist the common enemie.

Given at our Pallace at Westminster the two and twentieth day of February, in the first yeere of our Raigne of England, France and Ireland, and of Scotland the seuen and thirtieth.

Archbishop of Canterbury deceased.

The 29. of Febr. at his house at Lambeth, deceased the most reuerend Father in God (and my very good Lord) Iohn Whitgift Archbishop of Canterbury, a man borne for the benefite of his Countrie, and the good of the Church, wherein he ruled with such moderation, as he continued in his Princes fauour all his life, by preuenting such new sects as in his time began to rise, as his learned workes of purpose written by him against such Schismes doth well appeare, whose aduancements for his good life, and sincere manners in the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, and Common Wealth grew to these degrees. That hee was after some preferments taken in the Schooles, as Master of Arts, Batcheler of Diuinitie, Master of Peterborough house, Master of Pembrooke hall, Master of Trinitie Colledge, and Doctor of Diuinitie, and twise Vice-Chancellor: made Chaplaine to Queene Elizabeth, after Deane of Lincolne, in the yeere, 1573. next in the yeare 1577. he was entitled Bishop of Worcester, and shortly following, Vice-President of Wales, and vpon the Death of Grindall, 1583. he was made Archbishop of Canterbury: in the yeare 1585. sworne one of her Maiesties Priuy Councell, wherein he conti nued during his life. At whose funerall at Croydon (where hee had founded a famous hospitall) were mourners of the Nobilitie (besides the Bishops) the Earle of Worcester, and the Lord Zouche, which among other Noblemen had beene his pupiles, when they were brought vp in Cambridge, of whom I will say no more in this place, saue onely that he was very deuout, mercifull, and free from malice, or practise of reuenge.

The Proclamation of the vniformity of Religion.

MAny the Kings subiects & others as well Sectaries, as Romane Catholiques, according to their seuerall inclinations, diuulged and expected an inner Regnum in Religion, and alteration of the booke of Common prayer, &c. whereupon to manifest his Maiesties minde therein, and to giue due satisfaction vnto all men, Proclamation was made the 5. of March 1603. that the same religion which for so many yeeres, & vpon mature deliberation confirmed, together with the Episcopall Iurisdiction of Bishops, in matters Ecclesiasticall should fully and onely be publikely exercised in all respects as had beene vsed in the late raigne of Queene Elizabeth, without hope of tolleration of any other, in this Proclamation there was mention made of former Proclamations to the like effect, and of the solemne disputations had before the King, betweene the reuerend graue Bishops and other learned of the chiefe selected Sectaries who endeuoured strongly to haue ouerthrowne the state of Bishopry, and vse of the booke of Common prayer, which disputation is registred by sundry forraine Pilkotians.

The Kings Maiestie lodging in the Tower of London on the 13. of March, after he had surueyed all the Offices, Storehouses, and the Mint, where both the King and the Queene coyned money, & gaue to diuers persons there present, being told of the Lyons he asked of their being & how they came thither, for that in England there were bred no such fierce beastes, whereunto was answered, that no mention is made in any record of Lyons breeding here, neuertheless Abraham Ortelius, and other forraine writers doe affirme that there are in England beasts of as great courage as the Lyon, namely the Spaltife Dog. Whereupon the King caused Edward Alen, late seruant to the Lord Admirall, now sworne the Princes man, and Master of the Beare-Garden, to fetch secretly three of the fellest dogs in the Garden, which being done, the King, Queen and Prince, with some fiue Lords, went to the Lions Tower, and caused the fiercest Lion to be separated from his mate, and put into the Lyons den one Dog alone, who presently flew to the face of the Lion, but the Lyon suddenly choake him off, & grasht him fast by the neck, drawing the dog vp staires & downe staires. The King now perceiuing the Lyon greatly to exceede the Dogge in strength, but nothing in Noble heart and courage, caused another Dogge to bee put into the Denne, who prouoked as hotte and lustie as his fellow, and tooke the Lyon by the face, but the Lyon began

A Lion taken and kept with more ease in the Tower of London.

began to deale with him as with the former, whereupon the King commanded the third dog to be put in before the second dog was spoyled, which third dogge more fierce and fell then either of the former, and in delight either of clawes or strength, tooke the Lyon by the lippe, but the Lyon so tore the dog by the eyes, head, and face, that he lost his hold, and then the Lyon tooke the Dogs necke in his mouth, drawing him vp and downe as hee did the former, but being wearied, could not bite so deadly as at the first, now whilest the last dog was thus hand to hand with the lion in the vpper roome, the other two Dogs were fighting together in the lower roome, whereupon the King caused the Lyon to be drawn downe, thinking the Lyon would haue parted them, but when he saw he must needes come by them he leapt cleane ouer them both, and contrary to the Kings expectation, the Lyon fled into an inward den, and would not by any meanes endure the presence of the dogs, albeit the last dog purshed eagerly, but could not find the way to the Lyon. You shall vnderstand the last two dogs whilest the Lyon held them both vnder his pawes, did byte the Lyon by the belly, whereat the Lyon roared so extreamely, that the earth shooke withall: and the nert Lyon rampt and roared as if hee would haue made rescue. The Lyon hath not any peculiar or proper kind of fight, as hath the Dog, Beare, or Bull, but only a rauenous kind of surpassing for prey. The two first dogs dyed within few dayes, but the last Dog was well recouered of all his hurts, & the yong Prince commanded his seruant Ed. Allen to bring the dog to him to Saint Iames, where the Prince charged the said Allen to kepe him, and make much of him, saying, he that had fought with the King of beasts, should neuer after fight with any inferiour creature.

The 15. of March King Iames, Queen Anne his wife, and Henry Fredericke the Prince, passed Triumphantly from the Tower of London, through his Royall Citie and Chamber of London, towards Westminster. The companies of the Citie marshalled according to their degrees, were placed, the first beginning at the vpper end of Barke lane, and the last reaching to the Conduit in Fleet-street, or thereabout: their seates being double railed, vpon the vpper part whereof they leaned: the Streamers, Ensignes and banners of each particular company, decently tired. And directly against them, quite through the body of the Citie, so high as Temple barre a single raile, in faire distance from the other, was likewise erected to put off the multitude: the King richly mounted on a white Gennet, vnder a rich Canopie, sustained by eight Gentlemen of the Priuie Chamber, for the Barons of the Cinque Ports, entred his Royall City of London, and passed the same towards Westminster, through seuen gates, of the which, the first was erected at the East end of Fanchurch, ouer the which gate, was represented the true liknesse of the notable houses, Towers, and Steeples within the City of London.

The first gate or Pagiant.

The second gate, a most sumptuous peece of workemanship, was lokely raised in Gracestraete by the Italians.

The second gate or Pagiant.

The third gate vpon Cornehill by the Companies of Belgia, or the Dutch nation, and by them raised.

The third gate or Pagiant.

Close to Saint Mildreds Church in the Poultrie, a Scaffold was erected, where (at the Cities coste) to delight the Queene with her owne Country Musicke, nine Trumpets and a kettle Drumme, did very actiuely sound the Danish March.

The fourth gate, where through his Maiestie passed, was (at charges of the Citizens) raised in West-cheape, at Soper-lane end.

The fourth gate or Pagiant.

Adioyning to the East front of the great Crosse in Cheape, was erected a square low gallery some foure foote from the ground, set round about with Pilasters, where stood the Aldermen, the Chamberlaine Maiwne-Clearke, and Councell of the Citie, with Sir Henry Mountague, Recorder of the Citie, who made to his Maiestie a gratulary Oration as followeth.

Recorder his Oration at the Crosse in Cheape.

HIgh Imperiall Maiestie, it is not yet a yeare in dayes, since with acclamation of the people, Citizens, and Nobles, auspiciously here at this Crosse was Proclaimed your true succession to the crown. If then it was ioyous with hattes, handes, and hearts lift vp to heaven, to cry King IAMES, what is it now to see King IAMES: Come therefore O worthiest of Kings, as a glorious Bridgrome through your Royall Chamber: but to come neerer *Adeste quem quærimus*. Twenty & more are the Soueraignes we haue serued since our Conquest, but conquerors of hearts, it is you, and your posterity, that wee haue vowed to loue, and wish, to serue, whilest London is a City: In pledge whereof, my Lord Mayor, the Aldermen, & commons of this Citie, wishing a golden Raigne vnto you, present your Greatnesse with a little Cup of gold.

At the end of the Oration, three cups of gold were giuen (in the name of the Lord Maior, and the whole body of the City) to his Maiestie the young Prince, and the Queene.

From thence his Maiestie passed to the little Conduit at Paules-gate, where was placed the fift gate Arbour-like, and so called the Arbour of Musicke, from thence hee passed through S. Paules Church-yard: vpon the lower battlement of which Church an Antheme was sung by the Quiristers of the Church, to the musicke of lawe instruments: which being finished, a Latine Oration was delinered by one of maister Mulcasters Schollers, at the house of the free Schoole, founded by Doctor Coller sometime Deane of Paules Church.

The fift gate or Pagiant.

The fift Arch or Gate of triumph, was by

The fift gate or Pagiant.

reeted aboue the conduit in Fleetstreete, where on the Globe of the World moued, &c.

The seuenth gate or Pageant.

At Temple-bar, where his Maiestie was vpon the point of giuing a gracious and Princely farewell to the Lord Mayor, and the Citty, a seuenth Arch or gate was erected, the forefront whereof was proportioned in euery respect like a Temple, being dedicated to Ianus, &c.

A Pageant at the Strand.

The City of Westminster, and Dutchy of Lancaster at the Strand, had erected their inuention of a Raine-bow, the Poore, Sunne, and Starres, aduanced betweene two Pyramides, &c. which piece of worke was beginne and ended in twelue dayes: of all which Pageants, deuises, speeches and songes, deliuered in them, yee may read at large in a Booke intituled, The Magnificent entertainment giuen to King Iames, &c. vppon the day of his triumphant passage from the Tower, through his honorable Citty of London, the 15. of March 1603. by Thomas Dekker.

A Parliament at Westminster.

The 19. of March, the King the Prince, with all the Lords Spirituall and Temporall ryd to the Parliament house at Westminster, being the first day of the Parliament, and there in the full assembly of the Lords aforesaid, and of the Knights, and Burgesses of the lower house of Parliament: his Maiestie made a most excellent speech, as followeth.

THE

Kings Maiesties Speech as it was deliuered by him in the vppor house of the Parliament, to the Lords Spirituall and Temporall, and to the Knights Citizens, and *Burgesses* there assembled on Monday the 19 of March. 1603. &c.

The Kings speech in the Parliament.

NOT did no sooner please God to lighten his hand, and relent the violence of his deuouring Angell against the poore people of this City, but as soone did I resolue to call this Parliament, and that for three chiefe and principall reasons: The first whereof is, (and which of it selfe, although there were no more, is not onely a sufficient, but a most full and necessary ground and reason for conuening of this Assembly.) This first reason I say is, That you who are here presently assembled to represent the Body of this whole Kingdome, and of all sorts of people within the same, may with your owne eares heare, and that out of mine owne mouth, may deliuer vnto you the assurance of my due thankefulnes for your so ioyfull, and generall applause to the declaring and receiuing of mee in this seate (which God by my birth-right and lineall descent, had in the fulnesse of time prouided for me) and that immediatly after it pleased God to call your late Soueraigne of famous memory, full of dayes, but fuller of immortall trophies of honor, out of this transitory life. Not that I am able to expresse by words, or vtter by eloquence the viue image of mine inward thankefulnesse, but onely that out of mine owne mouth you may rest assured to expect that measure of thankefullnesse at my handes, which is according to the infinitenesse of your deserts, and to my inclination and abilitie for requitall of the same. Shall I euer? nay, I can euer be able, or rather so vnable in memory, as to forget your vnexpected readinesse and alacritie, your euer memorable resolution and your most wonderfull conjunction & harmony of your hearts in declaring and embracing me as your vndoubted & lawfull King and gouernour: Or shall it euer bee blotted out of my mind, how at my first entry into this Kingdome, the people of all sorts ryd and ran, nay rather flew to meete me: their eyes flaming nothing but sparkles of affection, their mouthes and tongues vttering nothing but soundes of joy, their handes, feete, and all the rest of their members in their gestures discouering a passionate longing, and earnestnes to meete and embrace their new Soueraigne. *Quid ergo retribuam?* Shall I allow in my selfe, that which I could never beare with in another? No I must plainly and freely confesse heere in all your audiences, that I did euer naturally so far mislike a tongue to smooth, and diligent in paying their creditors with lip payment and verball thankes, as I euer suspected that sort of people meant not to pay their debtors in more substantiall sort of coine. And therefore for expressing of my thankfulnesse, I must resort vnto the other two reasons of my conuening of this Parliament, by them in action to vtter my thankfulnesse: Both the sayd reasons having but one ground, which is the deeds, whereby all the dayes of my life, I am by Gods grace to expresse my sayd thankefulnesse towards you, but diuided in this, That in the first of these two, mine actions of thankes, are so inseparably conjoyned with my Person, as they are in a maner become individually annexed to the same: In the other reason mine actions are such, as I may either doe them, or leaue them vndone, although by Gods grace I hope never

never to bee weary of the doing of them.

As to the first: it is the blessings which God hath in my Person bestowed vpon you all, wherein I protest, I doe more glory at the same for your weale, then for any particular respect of mine owne reputation, or aduantage therein.

The first then of these blessings, which God hath ioyntly with my Person sent vnto you, is Outward peace: that is, peace abroad with all forraine neighbours: for I thanke God I may justly say, that neuer since I was a King, I either received wrong of any other Christian Prince or State, or did wrong to any: I haue euer, I prayse God, yet kept Peace and Amity with all, which hath beene so farre tied to my Person, as at my comming here you are witnesses I found the State embarqued in a great and tedious warre, and only by mine arrivall here, and by the Peace in my Person is now amitie kept, where warre was before, which is no small blessing to a Christian Common wealth: for by peace abroad with their neighbours the townes flourish, the Merchants become rich, the Trade doth encrease, and the people of all sorts of the Land enioy free liberty to exercise themselues in their severall vocations without perill or disturbance. Not that I thinke this outward peace so vnseparably tyed to my person, as I dare assuredly promise to my selfe and to you the certaine continuance thereof: but thus farre I can very well assure you, and in the word of a King promise vnto you. That I shall never give the first occasion of the breach thereof, neither shall I euer be moued for any particular or priuate passion of minde to interrupt your publike peace, except I bee forced thereunto, either for reparation of the honor of the Kingdome or else by necessitie for the weale and preservation of the same: In which case, a secure and honourable warre must bee preferred to an vnsecure and dishonourable peace: yet do I hope by my experience of the by-past blessings of peace, which God hath so long euer since my birth bestowed vpon mee, that hee will not bee weary to continue the same, nor repent him of his grace towardes me, transferring that sentence of King *Dauid* vpon his by-past victories of warre to mine of peace, That, *that God who preserved mee from the deuouring iawes of the Beare, and of the Lyon, and deliuered them into my handes, shall also now graunt mee victory ouer that vncircumcised Philistine.*

But although outward peace bee a great blessing: yet is it as farre inferior to peace within, as ciuill wars are more cruell and vnnaturall then wars abroad, And therefore the second great blessing that God hath within my person sent vnto you, is peace within, and that in a double forme, First, by my descent lineally out of the loynes of *Henry* the seauenth, is reunited and confirmed in me the Vnion of the two Princely Roses of the two Houses of *Lancaster* and *Yorke*, whereof that King of happy memory was the first Vniter, as hee was also the first grownd-layer of the other peace. The lamentable & miserable events by the ciuill and bloody dissention betwixt these two Houses was so great and so late, as it need not bee renewed vnto your memories: which, as it was first settled and vnited in him, so is it now reunited and confirmed in me, being justly and lineally descended not onely of that happy conjunction, but of both the Branches thereof many times before. But the Vnion of these two Princely Houses is nothing comparable to the Vnion of these two auncient and famous Kingdomes, which is the other inward peace annexed to my Person.

And here I must craue your patiences for a little space, to give mee leaue to discourse more particularly of the benefites that doe arise of that vnion which is made in my blood, being a matter that most properly belongeth to me to speake of as the head wherein that great Body is vnited. And first, if we were to looke no higher then to naturall and Physicall reasons, we may easily bee perswaded of the great benefites that by that vnion doe redound to the whole Iland: for if twenty thousand men be a strong Army, is not the double thereof, fortie thousand, a double the stronger army? If a Baron enricheth himselfe with double as many landsas he had before, is he not double the greater? Nature teacheth vs, that Mountaines are made of Motes, and that at the first, Kingdomes being divided, and euery particular Towne, or little County, as Tyrants or Vsurpers could obtaine the possession, a Segnorie apart, many of these little Kingdomes are now in processe of time, by the ordinance of God, joyned into great Monarchies, whereby they are become powerfull within themselues, to defend themselues from all outward invasions, and their head and governor thereby enabled to redeeme them from forreine assaults

assaults, and punish private transgressions within. Doe wee not yet remember, that this Kingdome was divided into seauen little Kingdomes, besides Wales? And is it not now the stronger by their Vnion? And hath not the Vnion of Wales to England added a greater strength thereto? Which though it was a great Principality, was nothing comparable in greatnesse and power to the auncient and famous Kingdome of Scotland. But what should we sticke vpon any naturall argument, when it is manifest that God by his Almighty prouidence hath preordained it so to be? Hath not God first vnited these 2. Kingdomes both in Language, Religion, and similitude of Manners? Yea, hath hee not made vs all in one Iland, compassed with one sea, & of it selfe by nature so indivisible, as almost those that were borderers themselues on the late borders, cannot distinguish, nor know, or discerne their own limits? These 2. Countries being separated neither by Sea, nor great Riuer, Mountaine, nor other strength of nature, but onely by little small brooks, or demolished little wals, so as rather they were diuided in apprehension, then in effect, and now in the end and fulnesse of time vnited, the right and title of both in my Person, alike lineally descended of both the Crownes, whereby it is now become like a little world within it selfe, being intrenched and fortified round about with a naturall, and yet admirable strong pond or ditch, wherby all the former feares of this Nation are now quite cut off: The other part of the Iland being euer before now not onely the place of landing to all strangers that was to make invasion here, but likewise mooned by the Enemies of this state by vntimely incursions, to make inforced diversio from their Conquests, for defending themselues at home, and keeping sure their backe-doore as then it was called, which was the greatest hinderance and let that euer my predecessors of this nation gat in disturbing them from their many famous, and glorious conquests abroad. What God hath conjoyned then, let no man separate. I am the husband, and all the whole Ile is my lawfull wife; I am the head and it is my body; I am the shepheard, & it is my flock: I hope therfore no man will be so vnreasonable as to thinke that I that am a Christian King vnder the Gospell, should be a Polygamist & husband to two wiues; that I being the head should haue a diuided and monstrous Body; or that being the Sheepheard to so faire a Flocke (whose fold hath no wall to hedge it but the 4. Seas) should haue my flocke parted in two. But as I am assured, that no honest Subiect of whatsoeuer degree within my whole Dominions, is lesse glad of this joyfull vnion then I am: So may the friuolous obiection of any that would be hinderers of this worke, which God hath in my Person already established, be easily answered which can be none, except such as are eyther blinded with ignorance, or else transported with malice, being vnable to liue in a well governed common Wealth, and only delighting to fish in troubled waters. For if they would stand vpon their reputation & priuiledges of any of the kingdoms, I pray you was not both the Kingdomes Monarchies from the beginning, & consequently could euer the bodie bee counted without the Head, which was euer vnseparably joyned thereunto? So that as Honour and Priuiledges of any of the Kingdomes could not bee divided from their Soveraigne. So are they now confounded and joyned in my Person, who am equall and alike kindly head to you both. When this Kingdome of *England* was divided into so many little Kingdomes as I tolde you before, one of them behoued to eate vp another, till they were all vnited in one. And yet can *Wiltshire* or *Devonshire*, which were of the *West Saxons*, although their Kingdome was of longest durance, and did by Conquest ouercome divers of the rest of the little Kingdomes, make claime to Prioritie of place or honor before *Sussex*, *Essex*, or other shires which were conquered by them? And haue wee not the like experience in the Kingdome of *France*, being composed of diuers Dutchies, and one after another Conquered by the Sword? For euen as little Brookes loose their names by their running and fall into great Riuers, and the very name and memorie of the great Riuers swallowed vp in the Ocean: so by the conjunction of divers little Kingdomes in one, are all these private differences & questions swallowed vp. And since the succesSe was happy of the *Saxons* Kingdoms being conquered by the speare of *Bellona*; How much greater reason haue we to expect a happy issue of this greater vnion, which is onely fastened and bound vp by the wedding Ring of *Astrea*? And as GOD hath made *Scotland* the one halfe of this Isle to enioy my Birth, and the first and most vnperfect halfe of my life, and you heere to enioy the

Mars.

Love and Peace.

the perfect and the last halfe thereof; so can I not thinke that any would bee so injurious to me, no not in their thoughts & wishes, as to cut asunder the one halfe of me from the other. But in this matter I haue farre enough insisted, resting assured that in your hearts and mindes, you all applaud this my discourse.

3 Now although these blessings before rehearsed of Inward and Outward peace, be great: yet seeing that in all good things, a great part of their goodnes and estimation is lost, if they have not appearance of perpetuitie or long continuance; so hath it pleased Almightie God to accompanie my person also with that favour, hauing healthfull and hopefull issue of my body, whereof some are here present, for continuance and propagation of that vndoubted right which is in my person: vnder whom I doubt not but it will please God to prosper and continue for many yeeres this Vnion, and all other blessings of Inward and Outward peace which I haue brought with me.

4 But neither peace Outward nor peace Inward, nor any other blessings that can follow thereupon, nor appearance of the perpetuity thereof, by propagation in the posterity, is but a weake pillar & a rotten reede to leane vnto, if God do not strengthen and by the staffe of his blessing make the durable: for in vaine doth the watchman watch the Citie, if the Lord be not the principall defence thereof: in vayne doth the Builder build the house, if God give not the successe: And in vayne (as Paul sayth) doth *Paul* plant and *Apollo* water, if God give not the increase. For all worldly blessings are but like swift passing shadowes, fading flowers, or chaffe blowne before the Wind, if by the profession of true Religion, and workes according thereunto, God bee not mooued to maintaine and settle the Thrones of Princes. And although that since mine entry into this Kingdome, I haue both by meeting with divers of the Ecclesiasticall Estate, and likewise by divers Proclamations clearely declared my mind in points of Religion, yet doe I not thinke it amisse in this so solemne an Audience, I should now take occasion to discover somewhat of the secrets of my heart in that matter: For I shall never (with Gods grace) bee ashamed to make publike profession thereof at all occasions, lest God should bee ashamed to professe and allow mee before men and Angels, especially lest that at this time men might presume further vpon the misknowledge of my meaning to trouble this Parliament of ours then were convenient. At my first comming, although I found but one Religion, and that which by my selfe is professed, publiquely allowed, and by the Law maintained: Yet found I another sort of Religion, besides a private Secte, lurking within the bowels of this nation. The first is the true Religion, which by mee is professed and by the Law is established: The second is the falsly called Catholikes, but truely Papistes. The third, which I call a Secte rather then Religion, is the Puritans and Novelists, who do not so farre differ from vs in points of Religion, as in their confused forme of pollicy and parity, being euer discontented with the present gouernment, and impatient to suffer any superioritie, which maketh their Secte vnable to be suffered in any well governed common wealth. But as for my course toward them I remit it to my Proclamations made vpon that Subiect. And now for the Papists, I must put a difference betwixt mine own private profession of mine owne salvation, and my politique government of the Realme for the weale and quietnes thereof. As for mine owne profession, you haue mee your Head now amongst you of the same Religion that the Bodie is of. As I am no stranger to you in blood, no more am I a stranger to you in Faith, or in the matters concerning the house of God. And although this my profession bee according to mine education, wherein (I thanke God) I sucked the milke of Gods trueth, with the milke of my Nurse: yet do I here protest vnto you, that I would neuer for such a conceite of constancy or other prejudicate opinion, haue so firmely kept my first profession, if I had not found it agreeable to all reason, and to the rule of my conscience. But I was never violent nor vnreasonable in my profession: I acknowledge the Romane Church to bee our Mother Church, although defiled with some infirmities and corruptions, as the *Iewes* were when they crucified Christ. And as I am none enemie to the life of a sicke man, because I would haue his body purged of ill humoures: no more am I enemy to their Church, because I would haue them reforme their errors, not wishing the downe-throwing of the Temple, but that it might bee purged and cleansed from corruption: otherwise how can they wish vs to enter, if their house be not

first

first made cleane? But as I would be loather to dispense in the least point of mine owne conscience for any worldly respect, then the foolishest Precisian of them all: so would I be as sorry to straight the politique government of the bodies & minds of al my subiects to my priuate opinions: Nay, my mind was euer so free from persecution, or thralling of my subiects in matters of conscience, as I hope that those of that profession within this Kingdome haue a proofe since my comming, that I was so farre from increasing their burdens with *Reboboam*, as I haue so much as eyther time, occasion, or law could permit, lightened them. And euen now at this time haue I bin carefull to reuise and consider deepely vpon the lawes made against them, that some overture may be proponed to the present Parliament for clearing these Lawes by reason (which is the soule of the Law) in case they haue bin in times past further, or more rigorously extended by Iudges, then the meaning of the Law was, or might tend to the hurt aswell of the innocent as of guiltie persons. And as to the persons of my subjects which are of that profession, I must diuide them into two rankes, Clericks, and Laylcks; for the part of the Layickes, certainly I euer thought them farre more excusable then the other sort, because that sort of religion containeth such an ignorant, doubtfull, and implicit kind of faith in the Layicks grounded vpon their Church; as except they doe generally beleeue whatsoeuer their teachers please to affirme, they cannot bee thought guiltie of these particular points of heresies and corruptions, which their teachers do so wilfully professe. And againe I must subdivide the same Layicks into two rankes, that is, either quiet & well minded men, peaceable Subiects, who either being olde, haue retayned their first drunken in liquor vpon a certaine shamefastnesse to be thought curious or changeable: Or being young men, through evill education haue neuer beene nursed or brought vp, but vpon such venim in place of wholesome nutriment. And that sort of people I would bee sorry to punish their bodies for the error of their minds, the reformation whereof must onely come of God & the true spirit. But the other ranke of Layicks, who either through curiositie, affectation of Novelties, or discontentment in their priuate humours, haue changed their coates, onely to be factious stirrers of Sedition, and Perturbers of the Common-wealth, their backwardnesse in their religion giueth a ground to me the Magistrate, to take the better heed to their proceeding, and to correct their obstinacy. But for the part of the Clerickes, I must directly say & affirme, that as long as they maintaine one speciall point of their doctrine, and another point of their practise, they are no way sufferable, to remaine in this Kingdome. Their point of doctrine is that arrogant and ambitious Supremacy of their Head the Pope, whereby hee not onely claimes to be Spirituall Head of all Christians, but also to haue an Imperiall civill power ouer all Kings and Emperors dethroning and decrowning Princes with his foot as pleaseth him, & dispensing and disposing of all Kingdomes & Empires at his appetite. The other point which they observe in continuall practise, is the assassinates and murthers of Kings, thinking it no sinne, but rather a matter of saluation, to doe all actions of rebellion & hostilitie against their naturall Soueraigne Lord, if he be once cursed, his subiects discharged of their fidelitie, & his Kingdome giuen a pray by that three crowned Monarch, or rather Monster their Head. And in this point, I haue no occasion to speake further here, sauing that I could wish from my heart, that it would please God to make me one of the members of such a generall Christian Vnion in Religion, as laying wilfulnesse aside on both hands, we might meete in the middest, which is the Center & perfectio of all things. For if they would leaue and be ashamed of such new & grosse corruptions of theirs, as themselues cannot maintaine, nor deny to be worthy of reformation, I would for mine owne part be content to meete them in the mid way, so that all nouelties might bee renounced on either side. For as my faith is the true, ancient, Catholike, and Apostolike faith, grounded vpon the Scriptures & expresse word of God: so will I euer yeeld all reuerence to antiquitie in the points of Ecclesiasticall pollicie; and by that meanes shall I euer with Gods grace keepe my selfe fro either beeing an Heretieke in Faith, or schismaticke in matters of pollicy. But of one thing would I haue the Papistes of this land to be admonished, that they presume not so much vpon my Lenitie (because I would be loth to be thought a persecuter) as thereupon to thinke it lawfull for them dayly to increase their number and strength in this Kingdome, whereby if not in my time, at least in the time of my posterity

posteritie, they might be in hope to erect their religion againe. No, let them assure themselues, that as I am a friend to their persons if they bee good subiects: so am I a vowed enemie, & doe denounce mortall warre to their errors: And that as I would be sory to be driven by their ill behauiour from the protection and conseruation of their bodies & liues; so will I never cease as far as I can, to tread downe their errors and wrong opinions. For I could not permit the encrease and growing of their religion, without first betraying of my selfe, & mine owne conscience: Secondly, this whole Isle, aswel the part I am come from as the part I remaine in, in betraying their Liberties, and reducing them to the former slauish yoke, which both had casten off, before I came amongst them: And thirdly the libertie of the Crowne in my posteritie, which I should leaue againe vnder a new slavery, having found it left free to me by my Predecessors. And therefore would I wish all good subiects that are deceiued with that corruption, first if they find any beginning of instinction in themselues of knowledge and loue to the truth, to foster the same by all lawfull meanes, and to beware of quenching the spirit that worketh within them; And if they can find as yet no motion tending that way, to bee studious to reade and conferre with learned men, and to vse all such meanes as may further their resolutio, assuring themselues, that as long as they are disconformable in Religion from vs, they cannot be but halfe my subiects, beable to doe but halfe seruice, and I to want the best halfe of them, which is their soules. And here I haue occasion to speake to you my Lords the Bishops. For as you, my Lord of Durham, sayd very learnedly to day in your Sermon, correction without instruction is but a Tyranny: So ought you, & al the Clergy vnder you, to be more carefull, vigilant, and diligent then you haue bin, to win Soules to God, aswell by your exemplary life, as doctrine. And since you see how carefull they are, sparing neither labour, paines, nor extreme perill of their persons to diuert you: (the deuill is so busie a Bishop) yee should bee the more carefull and vakefull in your charges. Follow the rule prescribed you by S. Paul. *Be carefull to exhort, and instruct in season, and out of season*; and where you haue bin any way sluggish before, now waken your selues vp againe with a new diligence in this point, submitting the successe to God, who calling them either at the second, third, tenth, or twelfth houre, as they are alike welcome to him, so shall they be to me his Lieutenant here.

The third reason of my convening of you at this time, which conteineth such actions of my thankefulnesse toward you, as I may either doe, or leaue vndone, yet shall with Gods grace euer presse to performe all the dayes of my life. It consists in these two points: In making of lawes at certaine times, which is onely at such times as this in Parliament; or in the carefull execution there of at all other times. As for the making of them, I will thus far faithfully promise vnto you, That I will ever preferre the weale of the body and of the whole common-wealth, in making of good lawes and constitutions, to any particular or private ends of mine, thinking ever the wealth & weale of the common wealth to be my greatest weale: an I worldly felicitie: A point wherein a lawfull King doeth directly differ from a Tyrant. But at this time I am onely thus farre to forewarne you in that point, That you beware to seeke the making of too many Lawes, for two especiall reasons: First, because. *In corruptissima Republica plurima leges*; and the execution of good Lawes is far more profitable in a common-wealth, then to burden mens memories with the making of too many of them. And next, because the making of too many lawes in one Parliament will bring in confusion, for lack of leisure wisely to deliberate before you conclude. For the Bishop said wel to day, that to deliberation would a large time be giuen, but to Execution a greater promptnesse was required. As for the execution of good Lawes, it hath bene very wisely and honourably foreseene & ordered by my predecessors in this Kingdome in planting such a number of Iudges and all sorts of Magistrates in conuenient places for the execution of the same. And therefore must I now turne me to you that are Iudges and Magistrates vnder me, as mine eyes and eares in this case. I can say none otherwise to you, then as *Iehoshaphat* the good King of *Iuda* said to their Iudges, *Remember what the Thrones you sit on are Gods, and neither yours nor mine*. And that as you must be answerable to me, so must both you and I be answerable to God for the due execution of our offices. That place is no place for you to vtter your affections in, you must not there hate your foe nor loue your friend, feare the offence of the

The third reason of assembling the Parliament.

greater party, or pittie the misery of the meaner; yee must be blind and not see distinctions of persons: handlesse not to receive bribes: but keep that iust temper and mid-course in all your proceedings, that like a iust ballance yee may neither sway to the right nor left hand. Three principall quallities are required in you; Knowledge, courage, & Sincerities that you may discerne with knowledge, execute with courage, & doe both in vpright sincerity. And as for my part, I doe vow and protest here in the presence of God, & of this honourable audience, I never shall be weary, nor omit no occasion, wherin I may shew my carefulnesse of the execution of good Lawes. And as I wish you that are Iudges not to be weary in your office in doing of it; so shall I never be weary, with Gods grace, to take account of you, which is properly my calling.

And thus having told you the 3. causes of my convening of this Parliament, all 3. tending onely to vtter my thankefulnesse, but in divers formes, the first by word, the other two by action; I doe confesse that when I have done & performed all that in this speech I have promised, *Invitis fervus sum*. Invite, because the meaning of the word *Invitis* in that place of Scripture is vnderstood, that in doing all that service which we can to God, it is but our due, & we do nothing to God but that which we are bound to do: and in like manner, when I have done all that I can for you, I do nothing but that which I am bound to doe, & am accomptable to God vpon the contrary. For I doe acknowledge, that the speciall & greatest point of difference that is betwixt a rightfull King & an vsurping Tyrant is in this: That whereas the proud and ambitious Tyrant doeth thinke his Kingdome and people are onely ordained for satisfaction of his desires and vnreasonable appetites; The righteous and just King doth by the contrary acknowledge himselfe to be ordained for the procuring of the wealth and prosperity of his people and that his greatest & principall worldly felicity must consist in their prosperitie. If you be rich, I cannot be poore; if you be happie, I cannot but be fortunate, and I protest that your welfare shall ever be my greatest care and contentment: And that I am a Servant it is most true, that as I am Head & governor of all the people in my Dominion, who are my naturall vassals & subiects, considering them in numbers & distinct Rankes; So if wee will take the whole people as one Bodie and Masse, then as the Head is ordained for the bodie and not the Bodie for the Head: so must a righteous King know himselfe to bee ordained for his people, and not his people for him. For although a King and people bee *Relata*: yet can he be no King if he want people and subiects. But there be many people in the world that lacke a Head, wherefore I will never be ashamed to confesse it my principall honour to bee the great servant of the common wealth, & ever thinke the prosperity thereof to be my greatest felicity, as I have already said.

But as it was the whole body of this Kingdome, with an vniforme assent and harmony, as I told you in the beginning of my Speech, which did so farre oblige me in good will and thankefulnesse of requitall by their alacritie and readinesse in declaring and receiuing mee to that place which God had provided for me, and not any particular persons (for then it had not beene the body) So is my thankefulnesse due to the whole state. For euen as in matters of faults, *Quod à multis peccatur, impunè peccatur*: Euen so in the matter of vertuous and good deeds, what is done by the willing consent & harmony of the whole bodie, no particular person can justly claime thankes as proper to him for the same. And therfore I must here make a little Apology for my selfe, in that I could not satisfie the particular humours of euery person, that looked for some aduancement or reward at my hand since my entry into this Kingdome. Three kind of things were craved of me: Advancement to honor, Preferment to place of credit about my person, and Reward in matters of land or profit. If I had bestowed honor vpon all, no man could have bin advanced to honor: for the degrees of honor doe consist in preferring some above their fellows If every man had the like accesse to my priuy or Bed chamber, then no man could haue it, because it cannot containe all. And if I had bestowed lands and rewards vpon every man, the fountaine of my liberalitie would be so exhausted & dryed, as I would lacke meanes to bee liberall to any man. And yet was I not so sparing, but I may without vaunting affirme, that I haue enlarged my favour in all the three degrees, towards as many and more then ever K. of England did in so shorta space: No, I rather craue your pardon that I haue beene so bountifull: for if the meanes of the Crowne be wasted, I behoued then to, haue

haue recourse to you my Subiects, and be burdensome to you, which I would be lothest to be of any King alive. For as it is true, that as I have already sayd, it was a whole Body which did deserue so well at my hand, and not euery particular person of the people: yet were there some who by reason of their office, credit with the people or otherwise, tooke occasion both before, and at the time of my comming amongst you, to give proofe of their loue and affection towards me. Not that I am any way in doubt, that if other of my Subiects had beene in their places, and had had the like occasion, but they would have vttered the like good effects, (so generall and so great were the loue and affection of you all towardes mee:) But yet this having beene performed by some speciall persons, I could not without vnthankefulnesse but require them accordingly. And therefore had I iust occasion to advance some in Honour, some to places of service about me, and by rewarding to enable some who had deserued well of mee, and were not otherwise able to maintaine the rankes I thought them capable of, and others who although they had not particularly deserued before, yet I found them capable & worthy of place of preferment and credit, and not able to sustaine those places for which I thought them fit, without my helpe. Two especiall causes mooued me to be so open handed: whereof the one was reasonable & honorable; but the other I will not be ashamed to confesse vnto you, proceeded of mine owne infirmitie. That which was iust and honourable, was: That being so farre beholding to the bodie of the whole State, I thought I could not refuse to let run some small brookes out of the fountaine of my thankefulnesse to the whole, for refreshing of particular persons that were members of that multitude. The other which proceeded out of mine owne infirmitie, was the multitude and importunity of sutors. But although reason come by infusion *in a manner*, yet experience groweth with time and labour: And therefore doe I not doubt, but experience in time comming will both teach the particular Subiects of this Kingdome, not to bee so importune and vndiscreete in craving: And me not to be so easily and lightly moued, in granting that which may be harmefull to my estate, and consequently to the whole Kingdome.

And thus having at length declared vnto you my mind in all the points for the which I called this Parliament: My conclusion shall onely now be to excuse my selfe, in case you have not found such Eloquence in my Speech, as peradventure you might have looked for at my hands. I might, if I list, alleage the great weight of my affaires, and my continuall businesse and distraction, that I could neuer have leasure to thinke vpon what I was to speak before I came to the place where I was to speake: And I might also alleage that my first sight of this so famous and honorable an Assembly, might likewise breed some impediment. But leauing these excuses, I will plainely and freely in my manner tell you the true cause of it, which is: That it becommeth a King, in my opinion, to vse no other Eloquence then plainnesse and sincerities. By plainnesse I meane, that his Speeches should be so cleere and voyd of all Ambiguitie, that they may not bee throwne, nor rent a sunder in contrary fences like the olde Oracles of the Pagan gods. And by sincerities I understand that vprightnesse and honestly which ought to be in a Kings whole speeches and actions: That as farre as a King is in Honour erected aboue any of his subiects, so far should he strive in sincerities to be aboue them all; and that his tongue should bee euer the true messenger of his heart: and this sort of Eloquence may you euer assuredly looke for at my hands.

This Parliament continued till the 7. of July, and was then prorogued vnto the 7. of February next following. *An. Reg. 2.* 1604

Thomas Smith, a worthy Gentleman, late Aldermam of London, was sent Ambassadour from King *James* of England, to the Emperor of all Russia, great Duke of Volodemer, Mosco, and Novograd King of Cazan, King of Astracan, &c. Hee beganne and entred on his Journey thitherwarde on the twelfth of June. Ambassador to Russia.

The third of August, about 10. of the clock in Great raine the forenoone, great claps of thunder was heard and haile at London, and great raine and haile followed, such as the like hadde not beene seene in the memory of man, for one houres space, to wit, till, eleuen of the clocke, and then ceased, but the Channels and water courses rose so high, that many Sellers by them were ouerflowed or filled, and the goods or wares in them drowned. London.

Sunday the 15. of August, a Lioness named Elizabeth, in the Tower of London, brought forth a Lyons whelpe, which Lyons whelpe liues not longer then till the next day. whelped in the Tower.

Commissioners from the King of Spaine and the Archduke to treat of peace.

About the beginning of this Summer, there came Commissioners from the King of Spaine and the Archdukes, to treate of peace, not in respect of any warre, or dissention betweene King Iames, and the said Princes, for vntill the King came into England, hee was in perfect Amitie with all Christian Princes, in which peace hee was borne, raigned thirtie eight yeeres in Scotland, and Crowned in England, yet neuertheleste at his first comming into England, found the same in tearmes of hostilitie, to the great hurt of both Nations, effusion of blood, disturbance of other Christian Princes, aswell in Commerce, as otherwise, &c. and to the great aduantage of the common enemie the Turke: whereupon in his most Christian consideration, and redresse thereof, his Maiestie authorized diuers wise graue, and Noble personages, to be Commissioners in this treatie of peace, which sayd Commissioners on either side, vpon due, and mature deliberation, agreed and concluded vpon all such articles, as concerned the vniuersall good of either parties viz. the Kings of England, Spayne, and the Archdukes, and for the better ratification whereof, the Spanish King vpon knowledge of the sayd agreament, sent Don Iohn de Velasco, Constable of Castile, and Legion, Duke of the Citie of Fryas, Earle of Hare, Lord of the Townes of Villapand, and Pedraca de la Syerra, Lord of the house of Velasco, and of the seuen Infants of Lara, great Chamberlain vnto Philip the third King of Spaine, &c. accompanied with Marquesses, Earles, Barons, Knights, and Gentlemen, to the number of one hundred persons, all which arriued here Dooer the first of August, where according to the Kings expresse commandement, they were honorablie, and kindly entertained by the Nobilitie, and Gentrie of Kent. The Kings Barges brought them from Gaueslend, to Somerset house, where the Spanish Commissioners kept residence: the Archdukes Commissioners remayned at Durham house, both which houses with the aforesayd Lotraine Commissioners and Ambassadors, were dieted at the Kings cost serued and attended by the speciall seruants and officers of the King, Queene and Prince, viz. the Gentlemen vshers, Sewers, Cookes, Yeomen of the guard, and Groomes of the chamber, &c. the foresayd Duke came to Somerset house the tenth of August, and had audience the 15. of the same moneth: the 19. day of the same moneth being Sunday, the Earle of Deuonshire accompanied him to the Court, where the King in his Chappell in the presence of all the aforesayd Commissioners, as well English as others: the Duke holding the Kings hands betweene his hands; the King tooke his corporall oath vpon the holy Bible, religiously to keepe the sayd Articles of peace, League, and Amitie lately agreed vpon, the Articles being then written in Latine, were openly shewed vnto all there present.

The King sweareth league and amitie.

Which solemne oath performed, the King feasted them all most royally in the Vnicorne house, & after dinner rode the Course gate, they saw Bull baytting, and Beare baytting, and in the preaching place, they beheld dancing, and running vpon Ropes, with other pleasant feats of activity, &c. And then taking their leaues of the King, they returned to their lodgings.

The same afternoone at the Crosse in cheape side, this ioyfull peace was Proclaimed in these words following, Iames by the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France and Ireland. To all our louing Subiects, and to all others that these presents, shall heare or see, greeting. Know ye that this day to the honor of Almightie God, the welfare of all Christendome, and specially to the welfare, and tranquillity of this our realme of England, a league of peace, and Amitie, is concluded, ratified, and sworne on our part betweene vs, our Realme, and Dominions, and the high & mighty Prince Philip the third of that name, King of Spaine, &c. and Albert, and Isabel, Archdukes of Austria, Dukes of Burgundy, &c. which as we hope shall bee of long continuance and for the Comfort of our people, so doe we hereby make knowne the same to them, requiring them all to obserue and keepe the same, and from henceforth to accompt all Subiects of the sayd King of Spayn, Archdukes of Austria, Dukes of Burgundie, to bee our friendes and allies, and so to vse them as they will answere the contrary at their perills, giuen at our Pallace of Whitehall the day, and yeare abouesayd. This was Proclaimed by William Seager alias Garter, principall King of Armes, assisted by William Romney Sheriffe of London in his Scarlet robe, eight Heraulds in their Coates of Armes, the Sergeant Trumpetter, and seuen others, all of them on horseback.

This peace was more ioyfully accepted then the people made shew for, by reason the multitude of pretended Gallants, Bankcrouts, and vnruly youths were at this time setled in Pyracy, accompting whatsoeuer they got good purchase, young Citizens, Prentisses, Yeomen, and Seruingmen disdayned their honest laudable professions, taking aduauntage of the time, became Rouers to the great discredite of the English nation.

The true Merchant, and honest Citizen, was exceeding glad and right ioyfull of this peace, hoping thereby to haue free trade with all nations, preuention of bloodshed, quiet enioying of their sonnes, and seruants, which yearely were prest for Lotraine seruices, and sometime one Constable in malice would presse another, offering like violence vnto honest husbandmen and others comming to London to the Fearm, and for want of them, Prest they cared not whom comming out of the Churches, hauing newly receiued the Sacrament, & that hereafter they should be eased of the continual charge of setting forth of Souldiers, making of Galies, and setting forth of Ships, &c. besides many other blessed benefits which they enioyed euen as their hearts wished, but within short space, all these benefits were generally forgotten, and the happinesse of their generall peace, was

was of the most part contemned, such is the wonts of corruption, and manis vile ingratitude, despising all blessings and benefits which being obtained are seldome or neuer thankefull for any, no nor so much as to make acknowledgement, least thereby they should be forced to sin their errors.

The twentie five of August the aforenamed Duke departed, and gaue very bountifully vnto all that attended him, he was honorablie vsed in all places at his departure, as at his first arriuall, the Kings ships which brought him from Donkerke to Dooer, transported him and at the rest of the Commissioners with their traine, from Dooer vnto Donkerke, notwithstanding the Hollanders Bauado. Now followeth the Articles lately sworne & agreed, with the names of the commissioners on either side.

ARTICLES OF PEACE, ENTERCOVRSE, AND COMMERCE.

Concluded in the names of the most high and mightie Kings, and Princes, IAMES by the grace of God, King of great *Britaine, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c.*

And *Philip* the third, King of Spaine, &c. And *Albertus* and *Isabella Clara Eugenia*, Archdukes of *Austrice*, Dukes of *Burgundy, &c.*

In a Treatie at London the 18. day of August, after the olde Stile, in the yeare of our Lord God 1604.

The Commissioners for the most renowned KING of great BRITAINE, &c.

THOMAS *Earle of Dorset, Baron of Buckhurst, high Treasurer of England.*

CHARLES *Earle of Nottingham, Baron Howard of Effingham, chiefe Iustice, and Iustice itinerant of all forrests on this side Trent, high Admirall of England, and Captaine Generall of the Nauies and seas of England, Ireland, and the Iles, and Dominions thereof.*

CHARLES *Earle of Deuonshire, Baron of Mountioy, Lieutenant in the Kingdome of Ireland, Master of the Ordinance, Gouernour of the Towne, Iland and Castle of Portesmouth,* Knights of the most honourable order of the Garter.

HENRY *Earle of Northampton, Lord Howard of Marnehill, Lord Warden and Admirall of the Cinque Ports.*

ROBERT *Lord Vicount Cranborne, Lord Cecill of Esenden, Principall Secretary, Master of the Court of Wards, and Liueries.* All Lords of his Maiesties Priuy Councell.

Commissioners for the King of Spaine, &c.

IOHN DE VELASCO *Constable of Castile, and Legion, Duke of the City of Fryas, Earle of Haro, Lord of the Townes of Villalpand, and Redraca de la Sierra, Lord of the house of Velasco, and of the seuen Infants of Lara, great Chamberlaine vnto* PHILIP *the third, King of Spaine, &c. Councellor of State, and Warre, President of Italie.*

IOHN BAPTISTA DE TASSIS, *Earle of Villa Mediana, Gentleman of the Kings Chamber, and Postmaster Generall in the Kingdomes and Dominions of the sayd King.*

ALEXANDER ROVIDIVS *Professor of the Law in the Colledge of Millaine, and Senator of the Province of Millaine.*

Commissioners for the Arch dukes.

CHARLES *Prince and Comte of Aremberg, Knight of the order of the golden fleece, Councellor of State, and Admirall Generall to the sayd Arch dukes.*

IOHN RICHARDOT *Knight, President of the Priuy Councell, & Councellor of State.*

LODOVIKE VERREIKEN, *Knight, Principall Secretary, and Audiencier.*

ARTICLES OF THE TREATIE.

FIrst it is concluded, & accorded, that from this day forward, there shall be a good sincere, true, firme, and perfect Amity, League, & Peace to endure for ever, and inviolably to bee observed and kept, as wel by Land as Sea, and fresh Waters, betwixt the most renowned King of *England, Scotland, France*, and *Ireland*, &c. And the most renowned King of *Spaine*, &c. And the most renowned Archdukes of *Austrice*, Dukes of *Burgundie*, &c. and their Heires and Successours whomsoeuer, their Kingdomes, Countries, Dominions, Lands, Peoples, Liegemen, and Subiects now being, or which hereafter shall be, of whatsoeuer condition, state, or degree they are or may be, so as the sayd Vassalls and Subiects from henceforth are each of them to fauour other, and to vse one another with all kind and friendly offices.

II.

AND that from henceforth all hostilitie, and enmitie shall cease, and all offences, iniuries, or damages which eyther part (in time of the troubles) hath sustayned by the other, shalbe taken away and forgotten, in such sort, as that hereafter neither party against other, for, or vpon occasion of any damages, offences, depredations or spoyles past, may pretend any matter, but that there shall be a perfect abolition of all and every of them vntill this present day: and that all actions for the same shall be held and reputed to be extinguished: excepting onely such depredations as hane bin committed since the 24. of Aprill, one thousand sixe hundred and three (because of these an accourt is to bee made:) And each partie shall hereafter abstaine from all depredations, offences and spoyles, as well by Sea, as Land, and fresh waters, in whatsoeuer the Kingdomes, Dominions, Places, or Gouernments of the other: neither shall the aforesayd Princes consent, that any of the grieuances before mentioned, bee done by any of their Vassals, Inhabitants, or Subiects: and they shall also cause restitution to bee made of all depredations and spoyls which hereafter shall be committed and of the damages growing by meanes thereof.

III.

ITem, that none of the forenamed Princes, their heires, or Successors whosoever, by himselfe or by any others, shall doe, treat, or attempt any thing against the other, or against their Kingdomes, Landes, or Dominions whatsoeuer in any place, on Land, or Sea, or in the Ports, or fresh Waters, by pretence of any cause, or vpon any occasion; neither any of them shall give assistance or consent vnto any Warre, Counsell, Attempt, or Treaties, had, made, or to be made in the preiudice of either, or against the other.

IIII.

ITem, that neither of the former parties, shall themselues giue, or shall consent to bee given, by any of their Vassals, Subiects, or Inhabitants, ayde, fauour or Counsell, directly or indirectly, on Land, Sea, or fresh Waters: nor shall supply and minister, nor consent to bee supplyed and ministred, by their sayd Vassalls, Inhabitants, and Subiects, vnto the enemies or rebels of either part, of what nature or condition soever they bee (whether they shall invade the Countries and Dominions of either of them, or withdraw themselues from their obedience and subiection) any Souldiers, provision of victuals, Moneyes, Instruments of Warre, munitions, or whatsoeuer other ayde else to maintaine Warre.

V.

AND furthermore, the foresayde Princes shall renownce, as by the Tenour of these Presents euery of them hath, and doeth renounce, whatsoever League, Confederation, Capitulation, and Intelligence made by what manner soeuer, in the prejudice of the one, or the other, which doth or may repugne against this peace, and concord, and all, and singular the contents thereof, all which and every of them, so farre as they doe concerne the effect aforesayd, they shall adnull, and make voyd, and declare to bee of no force, or moment.

VI.

ITem, it is agreed and accorded, that the sayd most renowned Kings, and Archdukes, shall take care, that their subiects shall from henceforth abstaine from all force, and wrong doing, and that they likewise shall revoke all Commissions, and Letters of Reprisall, and Mart, or otherwise containing Licence to take prizes, of what condition, or kinde soever they are, being to the prejudice of the one or other of the sayd Princes, or of their Subiects, whether the same haue beene given or graunted by them vnto Subiects, or Inhabitants, or vnto Strangers, and shall declare the same to be void, and of no force, as by this Treaty of Peace they are delared so to bee; And whosoeuer shall doe any thing to the contrary, hee shall be punished not only criminally according to the merrit of his offence, but shall also bee compelled to make restitution, and satisfaction for the losses to the parties Damnified, requiring the same.

VII.

ITem, as concerning the townes of *Flussing, Brill, Ramekins*, and other Fortes and places thereunto appertaining, in which the garison souldiers of the renowned King of *England, Scotland*, &c. do now remaine, forasmuch as the renowned King of *England*, &c. affirmeth that by contracts heretofore made betweene Q. *Elizabeth* of most happy memory (vnto whom his Maiestie in his Kingdoms doth succeed) and the States of the vnited Provinces of the Low Countries, hee standeth in such sort bound, not to redeliuer the sayd Townes, Forts, and places to any others, then vnto those who delivered the same for Caution, as that by the sayd contracts, his Majesties faith, and honour, (which he resolveth religiously to keepe towards all persons) being ingaged, it is not free for him now to restore those places vnto the Archdukes; yet in the word of a King, he doth promise to enter into Treatie hereafter with the said States wherein his Maiestie will assigne a competent time vnto them, to accept and receive Conditions agreeable to Iustice, and equitie, for a pacification to bee had with the most renowned Princes his deare brethren: which if the States shall refuse to accept, his Maiesty from thenceforth, as being freed from the former conventions will determine of those Townes according as he shall iudge it to be iust, and honourable, wherein the sayd Princes his louing brethren, shall find, that there shall be no want in him of those good Offices which can bee expected of a friendly Prince.

VIII.

ITem, that the sayd most renowned K. of *England, Scotland, France*, and *Ireland*, &c. will commaund as he seriously promiseth shall be commanded, that his garison Souldiers vpon what cause or pretext soeuer, shall not serue, succour, victuall, or furnish with Artillery, Gunpowder, Bullets, Saltperter, or any other Munition, or assistance for warre, the *Hollanders*, or other enemies of the King of *Spaine*, and the Archdukes: neither that they shall give vnto them Ayde, or doe any hostile Act against the sayd King of *Spaine*, and Archdukes, or their subiects: As also on the part of the King of *Spaine*, and the Archdukes, no hostile Act shall be committed, or done against the sayd garison Souldiers, or against the most renowned King of *England*, &c. or his Subiects.

IX.

ITem, it is agreed and accorded, that betweene the most renowned King of *England, Scotland, &c.* and the most renowned King of *Spaine, &c.* and every of their Vassalls, Inhabitants, or Subiects, as well by Land, as Sea, and fresh Waters, in all and singular their Kingdomes, Dominions, Islandes, and other Lands, Cities, Townes, Villages, Havens, and Straights of the sayd Kingdomes, and Dominions, there bee or may be free Commerce, in which before the Warres there hath bin Commerce, like, and according to the vse and obseruance of the ancient Leagues, & Treatises, before the Warre, in such sort,

and manner, as that without any safe conduct, or other Licence generall, or speciall, the subiects of the one, or other King may freely, as well by Land as by Sea, and fresh Waters, goe, enter, and sayle, in, and to the sayd Kingdomes, and Dominions, and all the Cities, Havens, Shoares, Scaroades, and streights thereof, and put themselves into whatsoever Havens of the same, where before the Warre there hath beene Commerce, like and according to the vse, and observance of the antient Leagues, and Treaties before the Warr, with Carriages, Horses, Burdens, Shippes as well laden as to bee laden to bring in Merchandizes, and there to buy or sell as much as they will, and in the same places vpon iust prices to procure, and haue provision of Victuals, for their sustenance and voyages, and likewise as occasion shall require, to repaire such shipping, and carriages, as either appertaine vnto them in property, or else they haue hired or borrowed, and from thence also with their Merchandizes, Goods, and other commodities whatsoever, (the Customes, and Tolles, as they are presently rated according to the Ordinances of the places being paid) they may with like freedome depart, and go to their owne Countryes, or any other places at their pleasure without let or impediment.

X.

ITem, it is likewise agreed and accorded, that it may bee lawfull to haue access, vnto the Ports of the sayd Princes, and thereto make stay, and from thence with the same libertie to depart, not only with their shippes of Merchandizes, and burthen, but also with other shipping furnished for Warre, and prepared to withstand the force of enemies: whether they shall arrive there, either by force of tempest, or for repairing their shippes, or for provision of victuals, so as they exceede not the number of sixe or eight shippes, when they come in of their owne accord, nor that they continue, nor make stay in the Havens or about the Ports longer then they shall haue just cause for the repaire of the same shipping, or for provision of other necessaries, lest they should be any occasion of interruption vnto the free Commerce and entercourse of other friendes and Nations of amitie. And whensoever any greater number, of ships of Warre then is before specified, shall haue occasion of accesse into those ports then shall it not bee lawfull for them to make any entrance without the Priuitie and consent of the Prince. Provided also that they doe no hostile Act, within the sayd Ports, to the preiudice of the Princes but demeane themselues there quietly, as friends and Confederates, with speciall Caution euer to bee had, that vnder the colour and pretext of Commerce, no warlike ayde, provision of victuals, or of armes or of munition, or other such like materials for the Wars, bee carried by the subiects, Vassals, or inhabitants of those Kingdomes, to the commoditie or benefit of th' enemies of the one or other King. And whosoever shall attempt to the contrary, shall be punished with those sharpe paines and punishments, vsed to bee inflicted vpon seditious persons, and breakers of Faith and Peace. Provided also, that the Subiects of the one, in the Dominions, and Territories of the other, bee not worse handled then the naturall Subiects in their sales and contracts for their Merchandizes, as well in respect of the Prices, as otherwise, but that the Condition of Forreiners be equall and like herein, vnto naturall Subiects: Notwithstanding any Satutes or Customes to the contrary.

XI.

ITem, it is agreed and accorded, that the most renowned King of *England*, *Scotland*, &c. shall prohibit, and after the confirming of these present Articles, by Proclamation forthwith provide, that no one of his Subiects, Inhabitants, or vassals shall lade, or carry over by any meanes directly, or indirectly, in his owne name or in the name of any others, neither shall lend his ship or other vessell for carriage, or vse his name for the transporting or conveying of any shippes, Merchandizes, Manufactures, or any other thing out of *Holland*, and *Zeland*, into *Spayne*, or other the Kingdoms or Dominions of the King of *Spaine*, or the Archdukes, neither shall carry in his shippes, any *Holland*, or *Zeland*, Merchant vnto the sayd Ports, vpon perill of his Majesties indignation, and other punishments vsually inflicted on the contemners of his Highnesse Commandements. And to effect that fraud (which through the likenesse of Merchandize might happen) be the better auoyded: it is also provided in this present article, that the Merchandizes to be carried and conueyed

ueyed out of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, to the Kingdomes and Dominions of the King of *Spaine*, and Archdukes shall bee Registred and Sealed with the Seale of the Towne or City from whence they shall be Laden, and that they being so registred and Sealed, shall without any difficultie or question whatsoeuer, bee reputed, and held for English, Scottish, and Irish Merchandises, and so respectively according to the Seale or Marke, bee allowed and admitted: alwayes accepted, that in case of fraude, proofe shall bee admitted, without stay notwithstanding or let of the course or venting of the Merchandizes in the meane time. And touching such Merchandizes, as shall not be Registred nor Sealed, the same are to bee Confiscated and taken for good Prize. And likewise all *Hollanders* and *Zelanders* which shall bee found in the same shippes, may also be taken and detayned.

XII.

ITem, it is agreed that *English*, *Scottish*, & *Irish*, Merchandizes may be conueyed, and transported out of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland* into *Spaine*, and other of the Kingdomes of the King of *Spayne*, (before mentioned) without the payment of the Imposition of thirtie in the hundred, lately imposed, but paying only the Custome and Tolles vsually required, before the sayd imposition of 30 in the hundred.

XIII.

ITem, it is likewise agreed, that for the Merchandises which *English*, *Scottish*, & *Irish*, Merchants shall buy in *Spaine*, or other the Kingdomes, of the sayd King of *Spaine*, and shall carry in their owne ships, or in shippes hired, or lent vnto them (except as before hath beene sayd the shippes of *Hollanders* and *Zelanders*) they shall pay onely such Tolles as were accustomed to bee payed before the imposition of thirty in the hundred, yet so as they conuey and carry the same goods and Marchandises to the Kingdoms of the sayd most renowned King of *England*, *Scotland*, &c. or to the Ports of the Provinces, being in obedience to the Archdukes. And for the more suerty that fraude bee not committed herein, and that the sayd Merchandises bee not transported to other places and Kingdomes, and especially into *Holland*, or *Zeland*, it is concluded, that the sayd Merchants shall bind themselues at the time that they doe lade their shippes in *Spayne*, or in the other Kingdomes & Dominions of the King of *Spaine* aboue declared before the Magistrate of the place in which they shall lade, to pay the sayd imposition of thirty in the hundred, in case they carry the sayd goods and merchandize to other Dominions and Countries: And to obtaine also within the space of twelue moneths following a Certificat from the Magistrate of the places, where they shall discharge or vnlade the same goods testifying their discharge to haue beene eyther in the Kingdomes and Dominions of the King of *England*, &c. or in the Ports of the Provinces vnder the obedience of the sayd Archdukes: vpon the exhibiting whereof, the obligations concerning those matters shall bee deliuered vp, vnto the bringers of the same certificates.

XIIII.

AND also that the sayd most renowned King of *England Scotland France* and *Ireland*, &c. shall prohibite soone after the confirming of this accord, that none shall export any merchandise out of *Spayne*, or other Kingdoms of the King of *Spayne*, to be carryed to other places then to his Maiesties Kingdomes, and the sayd Ports of *Flanders*, vpon penaltie of confiscation of all their merchandises, to the vse of the sayd King of *England*, &c. to bee payed into his Majesties Exchequer, of which merchandises, or the value thereof, one halfe is to bee giuen to the informer (the imposition of thirtie in the hundred being first deducted) to bee payed to the Ministers and Deputies of the King of *Spayne*, and the proofes lawfully receiued in *Spayne*, and transmitted into *England* in Authenticall forme, are to bee credited.

XV.

ITem, that the Magistrates of the sayde Towns or Cities of his Maiesties Kingdomes, which shall make Certificates of the vnladiug of shippes, and are to give testimony of the registring of the merchandises, shall not commit any fraud therein vnder perill of indignation of the Kings Majestie, and paine of losse of their offices, and other more grieuous punishments

ments at the Kings pleasure. This declaration being added, that when the King of *Spaine* and Archdukes shall agree with the French King, or with any other vpon the last placard of thirtie in the hundred, and the Commerce betwixt them bee restored, then it shall bee lawfull to the Subiects of the sayd most renowned King of *England, Scotland, &c.* to transport their merchandises to the Kingdomes and Dominions of him, or them vnto whom Commerce shall bee restored without the payment of thirtie in the hundred, but only paying the Tolles, and Customes, vsed and payed before the sayd Imposition.

XVI.

THat which hath before beene expressed concerning the free Commerce graunted vnto the Subiects of the sayd renowned Kings, is to be vnderstood to be likewise agreed on, for the Subiects of the most renowned King and Princes, the King of *England, Scotland, France*, and *Ireland*, &c. And the Archdukes, to wit, that in all places whatsoeuer, their subiects are bound reciprocally, to respect and to fauour each other, and by mutuall kind offices friendly to entertayne the one the other, and that by Land, sea, and fresh Waters, without any safe conduct or other licence generall or speciall, they may vnto the sayd Kingdomes, Dominions, Lands, Villages, Townes, Cities, Sea-shores, Havens, sea-roades whatsoever, freely, safely, securely, come, enter, sayle, carry and recarry their merchandizes, buy, sell, and remaine, abide, and converse in the same, so long as it shall please them, any kind of prouision for victuall, and things necessary for sustenance, and for voyages at iust and reasonable prises, and there repaire also (as occasion shall require) their shipping and carriages, whether the same bee their owne, or whether they be hired or borrowed: As also to depart from thence with like libertie, with Merchandizes, goods, and other things whatsoeuer (the Customes, and Tolles, according to the Statutes of those places being payed) and to dispose and follow their businesses freely, and to returne at their owne pleasure, eyther into their owne Countreys, or to any other place, without any impediment or let, so as the Subiects of the most Renowned KING of *England*, &c. vse not the shipping of the *Hollanders*, or the vnited Prouinces, and bring not into the Prouinces of the Archdukes any of the manufactures of *Holland*, or of the vnited Provinces bought wheresoeuer, neither any other thing, for which there was payed in *Holland* any tribute, nor that they transport any thing from the Archdukes Prouinces, vnto them of those Prouinces, vntill a pacification bee accorded: Nor that they receiue any the goods of *Hollanders*, or of those other places vnited into their ships, nor trust any of their owne goods in the ships of *Hollanders* nor fraudelently by lending their names, colour the goods of any *Hollander*, or other of the vnited Provinces, for that if any thing bee committed to the contrary, and the same be found, it shall be held for just and lawfull Prize.

XVII.

AND the foresayd Prouisoes are not only to be vnderstood of ships laden or to be laden in cause of Commerce, but also of ships of war, which the said Princes have or shall haue armed, to represse the Attempts of their enemies: insomuch as that it may be lawfull for such shippes of Warre, not exceeding the number before mentioned, if they happen to be constrained either by force of tempest, or for buying of Victuals or other things, or for repayre of shipping, to vse the same liberty in arriving, staying and departing: so that they doe no hostile act in the sayd Ports, but demeane themselues honestly & quietly, as it becommeth confederates and friends: and so that they stay, and remaine not in, or about the same Ports any longer then shall bee needfull for reparation and prouison of necessaries, that thereby they bee not a hindrance or interruption to the free Commerce and entercourse with other Nations that are in Amity and friendship. but where occasion shal fall out of arrivall of any greater number of shipping then before specified, it shall not bee lawfull for them to enter but with the knowledge and allowance of the Prince.

XVIII.

AND as the sayd Kings and Archdukes doe religiously promise, that they will not at any time yeeld any Warlike succour to any of the other enemies so it is provided that their subiects, or the inhabitants of their Realmes, of what nation or qualitie soeuer they be, may not vnder

vnder colour of Entercourse and Commerce, nor vpon any other colour or pretence give any ayde or helpe to the enemies of the sayd Princes, or of either of them, or conferre, or supply them with money, provisions of Victuals for Warre, Armour, Munition, Ordinance; Artillery, or other Warre-like provision, and those which shall doe the contrary, are to take knowledge, that they shall bee punished with the seuere punishments accustomed to be inflicted vpon breakers of League, and seditious persons.

XIX

AND that also greater benefit may through this concord come vnto the Subjects of the most renowned King of *England, Scotland*, &c. and of the Archdukes, it is accorded and concluded, that the sayd most renowned King of *England* &c. and Archdukes joyntly and seuerally, will doe their endeavours, that their subjects haue not the passages stopped or letted vnto any of their Portes, Kingdomes, and Dominions that thereby they be not hindred, freely and without impediment to come and goe, with their shipping, Merchandise, and Carriages (the ordinary Customes and Tolles being payed) to all the said Ports, Kingdomes, and Dominions: and with the like liberty (when it shall seeme good vnto them) with other Merchandises from thence to depart.

XX.

BVt as concerning the ancient Treatises of Entercourse and Commerce, whereof diverse are extant, betwixt the Kingdomes of *England, Scotland*, and *Ireland*, and the Dominions of the Dukes of *Burgundy*, & Princes of the Low Countries, which notwithstanding during the late troubles haue bin intermitted, and peradventure in some parts impayred: it is agreed by way of prouision. That they shall retayne and haue their ancient force and authority, and that they shall be vsed on both parts, as they were before the warres: and if it happen that either by both parts or any one part, any breach thereof be alleaged, or that the subjects shall complaine that the Conventions, are not observed, or that more grieuous burdens then were accustomed are imposed on them, there shall bee deputies appointed on either part which may meete and calling vnto them (if need be) Merchants experienced in such matters, may friendly Treat, and equally renew, and restore such things as shall bee found eyther to haue slipped out of course, or to haue beene changed by the injury of time or by corrupt custome and vse.

XXI.

AND for the rights of Commerce which doe ensue by Peace ought not to be made vnfruitfull, as they would be if the Subjects of the most renowned King of *England, Scotland*, &c. whilest they haue recourse to and from the Kingdomes and Dominions of the sayd King of *Spaine* and Archdukes, and do remaine there for Commerce, should be molested in the cause of conscience: therefore to the intent their traffique may be safe, and without danger, as well on Land, as Sea, the sayd renowned King of *Spaine* and Archdukes shall take care, and prouide, that for the sayd cause of Conscience they shall not be molested, nor inquieted in vsing their Trade and Commerce, so as they giue not scandall vnto others.

XXII.

ITem, that if it happen any goods or Merchandises prohibited to bee carried, or conueyed out of the Kingdomes and Dominions of the sayd most renowned Kings and Archdukes, by the Subiects of the one or of the other, that in such case the person onely offending shall incurre punishment, and the goods onely prohibbited shall be Confiscated.

XXIII.

ITem that the goods of the subiects dying within the Kingdomes or Dominions of either shall, bee conserued to the right heires and successours of the deceased, the right of a third Person alwayes reserued.

XXIIII.

ITtem, that the grauntes and Priuiledges giuen by the Princes to merchants of eyther of the Kingdomes comming to their sayd Kingdomes and which Priuiledges through the Warres haue ceased, shall from hencefoorth wholly bee reuiued and haue their full force and strength.

Item

XXV.

ITem, if it shall happen hereafter, (which God forbid) that any displeasure doe arise betweene the sayd most renowned Kings, the King of *England*, *Scotland*, *Fraunce*, and *Ireland*, &c. And the King of *Spaine*, or the Archdukes, whereby daunger might grow of the interruption of entercourse and commerce, then the subiects of either Prince are thereof so to bee admonished, as that they may have sixe moneths from the time of the monition, to transport their Merchandises without any arrest, disturbance, or hurt in the meane season, to be done or given vnto them either in their persons or Merchandises.

XXVI.

ITem, that none of the foresaid Princes shall imbarge or stay for their provision in warre, or for any other service to the prejudice of the owners, the shipps of the Subiects of any of the others, beeing in their Ports, or Waters, vnlesse the Prince, of those parties to whom the shippes doe appertaine, shall first be admonished thereof, and shall also yeeld his consent therevn to.

XXVII.

ITem, it is accorded, that if during this Peace and Amitie, any thing happen to bee attempted, committed, or done, against the force and effect therof, by land, Sea, or fresh waters, either by any of the sayd Princes, their Heires and Successors, their Vassals, Subiects, or Allies comprehended in this league, or of any the heires or successors of those Allies their subiects or Vassals, yet notwithstanding this peace and Amitie, shall remaine in his strength and vertue, and the attempters, and such as doe offend therein onely, and no other, shall bee punished for their attempts.

XXVIII.

ITem, that such as haue bene taken in warre, and are Captives on either part although they bee condemned to the Gallies shall bee released and dismissed, the charges of the dyet of such, as are not in the Gallies being first discharged, and the ransomes of such as haue bf ore agreed for the same, beeing by them payed.

XXIX.

ITem, it is concluded, that all Civill actions, which at the time when the last warres beganne, were of validitie, and of force, may yet bee executed and pursued, notwithstanding any lapse of time during the same Warre, so as no prejudice shall be vnderstood to haue growne vnto them by the continvance of the Warre, those onely excepted which are already come to the Exchequor or Princes Treasurie.

XXX.

ITem, if any controversie happen to be mooued in the Kingdomes and Dominions of the one or other of these Princes by any person not beeing Subiect to the same Prince, for, or vpon occasion of any depredations or spoyles committed, the cause is to bee remitted to the Iudge of the Iurisdiction, vnder that Prince against whose subject or subjects the suite is commenced.

XXXI.

ITem that if the Hollanders and other confederate States, will accept of conditions of pacification with the most renowned Archdukes, or their successors, through the meanes of the most renowned K. of *England*, &c. the said Archdukes and their successors, will alwayes willingly hearken vnto that which shall bee proposed therein, and will desire that by the helpe of the sayd most renowned King of *England*, &c. they may be brought to embrace equall conditions, wherein they shall well vnderstand, how much the sayd Archdukes do attribute vnto the authoritie of the most renowned King of *England* &c. their louing Brother.

XXXII.

ITem, it is concluded and accorded, that in this present treaty of peace, there bee comprehended the adherents, friends, and confederates, of the aforenamed Princes: That is to say, on the part of the most renowned King of *England*, *Scotland*, *France*, and *Ireland*, &c. *Randulph* Roman Emperor, with the Archdukes of *Austrie* and the Electors of the Empire, together with the States, and Cities of the Empire

pire, the Duke of *Lorraine*, the Duke of *Sauoy*, the Dukes of *Brunswicke*, *Lunenburge*, *Mecklenburge*, *Wirtemberg*, the *Landgraue* of *Hesse*, the Marquesse of *Baden*, the Duke of *Pomerane*, the Prince of *Anhalt*, the Earle of *East Friezeland*, the *Cantons* of *Helvetia*, and the *Grisons*, the *Haunse-cities*: *The French* King, the King of *Poland* and *Swethland*, the King of *Denmarke*, the Duke and State of *Venice*, The Duke of *Holst*, the Duke of *Florence*.

XXXIII.

ON the part of the King of *Spaine*, and Archdukes, *Rodulphe* Romane Emperour, and his brethren, and other Princes, Archdukes of *Austrice*, Princes of the Empire, the Electors, Cities, and States subiect to the Empire, the *French* King, the King of *Poland*, and *Swethland*, the King of *Denmarke*, the Duke and State of *Venice*, the Duke of *Sauoy*, the Duke of *Bauaire*, the Duke of *Cleue*, the Duke of *Holstein*, the Duke of *Lorraine*, the Duke of *Parma* and *Placentia*, with his brother the Cardinal, the Bishop & Prouince *Liege*, the D. of *Florence*, the Duke of *Mantua*, the Duke of *Mutina*, and *Regium*, the Duke of *Vrbine*, the confederats and Cantons of the *Helvetians*, and *Grisons*, the Cities of the *Haunse*, the Earles of *East Friesland* (without notwithstanding, any prejudice of the right by the King of *Spaine* and Archdukes, pretended for their states) the Duke and Common wealth of *Genua*, the Common wealth of *Lukes*, the Principall of the house of *Columna*, the Prince of *Oria*, the Principall of the house of *Vrsine*, the Duke of *Sermoneta*, the Lord of *Monacho*, the Earle of *Mirandula*, the Marquesse of *Massa*, the Earle of *Sala*, the Earle of *Colorno*,

XXXIIII.

ITem, it is likewise accorded and concluded, that the sayd most renowned Kings and Princes, IAMES by the grace of God, King of *England*, *Scotland*, *France*, and *Ireland*, &c. And *Philip* King of *Spayne*, &c. *Albert*, and *Isabella Clara Eugenia*, Archdukes, &c. shall sincerely, and faithfully obserue and keepe, and procure to be obserued and kept, by their subiects and Inhabitants, all and singular the Capitulations in this present Treaty accorded, and concluded, neither shall they directly or indirectly infringe the same, or consent that the same shall bee infringed, directly or indirectly, by any of their subiects or Inhabitants, and they shall ratifie authorise and confirme, all and singular the Conventions as before accorded and concluded by Letters Patents, inscribed with their owne handes, and Sealed with their great Seales, in sufficient availeable and effectuall forme, and the same so formed and made, shall vpon the first occasion deliver or cause to bee delivered faithfully, really, and effectually: And they shall make the like promise to obserue all and singular the premisses, in the word of a King and Prince, and shall also sweare to obserue and performe the same by oath vpon the holy Evangelists, (whensoeuer they shall, by either part be thereunto required.) And the sayd Kings and Archdukes, shall take care that this present Peace and amitie bee published in places accustomed, so soone as conveniently the same may be.

Articles Concerning Merchandise of high *Germany* to be transported into *Spaine*, free of the Imposition of 30. in the 100.

THE more to expresse obseruance towardes the most renowned King of *England*, &c. and for the commoditie of his Maiesties Kingdomes, the Illustrious and excellent the Constable of *Castile*, &c. Procurator speciall of his Cath. Maiestie, hearing how much the Subiects of the most renowned King of *England*, *Scotland*, *France*, and *Ireland*, doe desire to bee permitted to vent the Merchandize of *Germany* in *Spaine*, doth by these presents promise, that it shall bee lawfull for the sayd Subiects of the most renowned King of *England*, &c. to convey merchandize out of high *Germany*, being subiect to the Imposition of thirty in the hundred, and which without payment of the sayd Imposition could not be carried into *Spaine*, and the same merchandize hauing first bin conveyed into *England*, and there discharged and Customed, from thence after to be transported into *Spayne*, or other the Dominions of the King of *Spaine*, without payment of thirty in the hun-

dred, so as the saide merchandise hath payed nothing to the Hollanders and Zelanders, and other enemies of the king of *Spaine*, and the Archdukes, and so as they be conveyed in the proper shippes, of the most renouned K. of *England* &c. or his subiects, and not in others of any other Prince, or Nation, or of other whomsoever. And to the effect that fraude herein may bee avoyded, the merchandises of high *Germany*, which are to bee transported forth of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, to the Kingdomes and Dominions of the King of *Spayne*, and the Archdukes, shall bee Registred and marked with the Seale or marke of the Towne from whence they shall be laden, and certified by a Certificate from the Majestrate of the said Town or City, testifying, that the sayd merchandises were discharged in *England*, *Scotland* or *Ireland*, and that they have payed Custome there, as well vpon perill, of the Kings Maiesties indignation, as also vpon payne of losse of their offices, and other more grievous punishments, to be inflicted at the Kings pleasure, vppon the Magestrates of the Townes and Cities, of the Kingdomes of the most renowned King of *England*, &c. which are to certifie the vnlading of ships, and to restifie of the Registring thereof, if they shall herein commit any fraude.

II.

ITem, that whatsoeuer merchandises of high *Germanie*, shall not bee discharged in *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, and yet shall be conveyed into Spayne, and other Kingdomes of the King of *Spaine* as such merchandises, shall be Confiscated, and be reputed as good prize.

Three Articles Concerning a *moderation to bee had in the proceedings* of the Inquisition toward the Kings Maiesties Subiects in *Spaine*.

FIrst, if they have exceeded in any thing before their entrance into *Spaine*, they shall not be called into the Inquisition for the same, neither shal be molested for any of those things committed, out of *Spaine*, neither shall any account for the same bee demanded of them.

II.

ALso, if they will not enter into the Churches, no man shall compel them thereunto, but if they doe enter into the same, they shall performe those duties and reverence, which are vsed towards the holy Sacrament of the Altar being there, and if they shall see the holy Sacrament comming towardes them in any streete, they shall doe reverence by bowing their knees, or else to passe aside by some other streete, or turne into some house.

III.

AND if any of the sayd persons being masters or masters mates, or any other officers of ships, which be not their owne, doe exceede in any matter herein, the Inquisition proceeding against them by office, is onely to sequester their owne proper goods, and are to leaue free the ships and all other goods not belonging to the offenders, the same is to be vnderstood for the Traders and Factors.

The same Articles were sworne, and ratified by the French King, Henry the fourth, at Fountaine Bleau, the second of Octob. next ensuing, and the yeare following the King of Spayne, as the Archdukes tooke the same Oath the King of England had done, as you may read.

This yere his Maiesty, by a letter Patents did incorporate the Feltmakers of London, by the name of Master and Wardens and Comminalty of the Art or Mistery of Feltmakers of London: graunting vnto them thereby diuers Priuiledges and liberties for the good government of the same Corporation: this was the first Company that the King incorporated, John Sounds, being Master, John Harrison, Richard Banister, Lewis Price, and John Tomlen Wardens, these were the first Master and Wardens. The King incorporateth the Feltmakers of London.

In this Moneth of August, 1604. the strong Towne of Ostende, was surrendred vnto Archduke Albertus of Austria after he had besieged it three yeares, and three moneths, during all which siege, there was on either side performed as much true valour, stoute resolution, labor and industry, bold attempts, & ingenious practises as either witte of man could deuise, or the ability of man could execute: as well in the besieged, as in the besieger, many Nations during the siege came from farre to behold it, and all the World admired it, many valiant Gentlemen and good Commanders perished in that seruice, many English men of name within the Towne and defence thereof, shewed themselues perfect souldiers: the chiefe whereof was Sir Francis Vere Generall, Syr Horatio Vere Collonel, besides which, there were many other braue Captaines and most noble and right valiant The siege of Ostend.

valiant commanders, and leaders in the Towne whose meritorious fame should neuer haue died if by any meanes I could haue learned their names, notwithstanding the sundry hard measures offered me by some Thrasonical or rather pretended souldiers, who instead of Instruction, gaue me scoffes, disgrace and derision, &c.

Spinola. There were slaine on both sides during the siege, one hundred and twenty thousand, the most of them old Souldiers, by meanes whereof, the fury both of the assailant, and defendant was much spent, but towardes the end of the sledge, Marquise Spignola, a merchant of Genua, who not long before in despight of his aduersaries, had brought six Gallies from Spain to Sclusa, hauing vowed himselfe to the fortune of warre, and being now the chiefe commander of the Spanish forces, maintained the assaults with such violence, that hee won the Towne.

Genes Mauritius wonne Sauls the last moneth. For which seruice, and for diuers losses, and expences when Genes Maurice take his 6. galies at the winning of Sclusa, The King of Spaine sent for him into Spaine, made him Duke of Santa Severina, and the yere ensuing made him Lord Generall of all his forces in the Low Countries.

After the Town was lost, those of the States side sayd, that if they had bin but a little more prouident at the first comming of the enemie, he should neuer haue won it.

And those of the Archdukes side, sayd that if at their first approach they had bene but a little better armed, they might haue won the Town within three moneths sledge, and with small losse of men.

The 20. of August, Robert Lord Cicell of Essenden, was created Viscount Cranborne.

No wrestling nor shooting at Bartholomew Faire. Bartholomew Faire was this yeare kept at London, but no wrestling, or shooting, as had beene accustomed.

In the moneth of September, the King sent Byame Scales to the wealthiest Citizens of London, for monies, certaine summes to be borrowed of them.

In the moneth of October, the Cullomes of merchandizes, both inward and outward being raised, were then letten out to farme.

King James Proclaimed King of great Britaine. The 24. of October, King James was in most solemne manner at the great Crosse in West-Cheape, Proclaimed King of Great Britaine, Fraunce, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c. Syr Thomas Benner Lord Maior of London, his brethren the Aldermen in Scarlet, with Heraulds, and Trumpeters all on horsebacke, being present.

New coines of moneys Proclaimed. The 16. of Nouember, was Proclaimed at London, certaine new pieces of coine, both of Gold and Siluer, with the true valuation and weights of them, according to the Mint of both Nations, English, and Scottish.

Sir Edward Cecill knight first put a thousand fresh souldiers into Ostend.

Bishop of London. On the 24. of December, or on Christmas eue in the afternoone, the reuerend Father Richard Vaughan Doctor of Diuinitie, Bishop of Chester, being translated, was installed by his deputie, D. D. in Paules Church Bishop of London.

Parliament Prorogued. The 27. of December, Proclamation was made to prorogue the Parliament till October next following.

Sir Phillip Harbert married. The fourth of January, Sir Phillip Harbert, brother to the Earle of Pembroke married the Lady Susan Vere, youngest daughter to Edward Earle of Oxforde, late deceased, the King gaue this Lady in marriage, the Court being at Whitehall, where the marriage was performed with very great state, haue Masks of the most Noble Ladies, and other fit pleasures and entertainements of time.

Duke of Yorke created. Friday the fourth of January afternoone, Charles Duke of Albany (a child of some foure yeares old) second sonne to King Iames; Robert Lord Willowby, the Lord Chandoys, the Lord Compton, the Lord Norris, William Cicell, sonne and heire to the Marquis Cranborne Allaine Piercy brother to the Earle of Northumberland: Thomas Somerset second Son to the Earle of Worcester: Francis Manners, brother to the Earle of Rutland: Francis Clifford, brother to the Earle of Cumberland: Thomas Howard, second Son to the Earle of Suffolke: and John Harrington Son and heire to the Lord Harrington, were appointed to bee made Knights of the Bathe, the Earles of Oxforde Essex, being Esquires to the Duke tooke their lodgings at Whitehall in the first gate house going to Kings-Streete, where they were all after supper, at which they sate by degrees a row on the one side, with the armes of euery of them, ouer the seate where he was placed and lodged vpon seuerall pallats in one Chamber, with their Armes likewise ouer them hauing their Bathes prouided for them in the Chamber vnderneath. The next morning being Saturday, they went about through the gallery down into the Parke in their Perriots weedes, the Musitians playing, and the Heraulds going before them into the Court, and so into the Chappell there after solemne confesses, like to the Knights of the Garter, first to the Altar, and then to the cloth of State euery one take his place in the Stalles of the Quier, and heard solemne seruice, which done, euery one with his Esquiers, went and offered: the Deane of the Chappel in a rich Coape holding the Basen. After they went vp vnto their lodging as they came, and there new attired themselues in Robes of Crimson Taffata, with Hats and white Feathers, then they went backe to the great Chamber, where the King sate vnder the cloth of Estate, and by him were there girded with the sword, and had the guilt Spurres put vpon them. This done they were solemnly serued at dinner, and after dinner went againe to the Chappell, and there offered their swordes.

The next day being Sunday, and Twelfe day, in Robes of purple Sattin, with Doctors hoods on their shoulders, and hats with white Feathers, they proceeded out of the Reuestry with the Duke of Albany (being then to be made Duke of Yorke) into the Hall where the King sate most Royally vnder the cloth of Estate, at what time the Heraulds going be-

fore the Knights of the Bathe followed after them, the Lord Chamberlain Earle of Suffolke, in his robes of Estate going alone, then Henry Howard Earle of Northampton, and Charles Blunt Earle of Deuonshire, carrying the Robes of Estate for the Duke of Yorke, after Henry Writhesly Earle of Southampton, carried the Coronet: George Clifford Earle of Cumberland, carrying the Golden Rod: the Earle of Worcester the Cap of Estate, and the Earle of Nottingham bare the Duke of Albany in his armes, supported by the Earle of Dorset, Lord Treasurer, and the Earle of Northumberland, who all comming in this order before the King, the duke of Albany was after the Patent read, created Duke of Yorke, with the robes and Coronet put on him, and the golden Rod deliuered into his hand: all which performed they went to dinner: the Duke of Yorke and the Earles sitting at one table in the vpper part of the great chamber in their Robes of Estate, and the Knights of the Bathe by themselues at another table on the side of that Chamber.

A Lion whelped in the Tower.

The 26. of February, was another Lyon whelped in the Tower of London, by the foresayd Lioness, which was taken from the Dam assone as the same was whelped, and brought by by hand according as the King commanded: but this Lyon whelp also dyed about some 16. dayes after in the moneth of March. Thus much of these whelps haue I obserued, and put in memory, for that I haue not read of any the like in this land, before this present yere, to wit, one on the 5. of August, and the other on the 26. of February next following.

A great plague in London and most parts of England.

In the former yeere, 1603. the Plague of Pestilence being great in Ostend, and diuers other parts of the Low Countries, and many Souldiers returning thence into England, and many ships of War lying long at Sea, became also infected, who in their returne brought that contagion into diuers parts of this land, chiefly into the Citty of London: by reason whereof many Citizens, and other inhabitants thereof, for their better safety, went into most shires of this Kingdome, where in diuers places they were kindly entertained, & entreated, and in many places most liberall kindly, and bountifully vsed, and not suffered to haue recourse, neither for loue, nor money, saying, God must needes plague you for your monstrous wickednesse, for many died in high wayes, fields and Barnes, neere vnto good Townes, and villages, where too many of them, were let remayne too long vnburied, but God whose mercy is aboue all his workes, hayed his visitation in London, to the honour of his owne name and admiration of all men. The Citie of London the yeere ensuing viz. 1604. was cleared of all infection, and the other Cities of this Kingdom, most billages, and Mowises Corporate, more extreamely visited, and some by Proclamation prohibited from comming to London, and it was Christianly obserued in the yere 1604. in the which it pleased Almighty God, to visite the whole land with Pestilence (London only excepted) that all those places, were vsed, or not at all visited, with the yeere before had relieued the distressed, there died in London, and the Liberties thereof, from the 23. of December 1602. vnto the 22. of December 1603. of all diseases, thirty eight thousand, two hundred sixty seuen; whereof of the plague, thirtie thousand, fiue hundred seauenthe, and eight: the next March following, against the time, the King should ride in triumph through London, to behold the state and beautie thereof beeing the Clergye, Nobilitie and chiefest Gentry, of euery Countrey, and great numbers of Strangers from beyond Seas, there repaired thither such great multitudes of people from all places, as the like in London was neuer seene vntill that day, all which notwithstanding, there died that yeere of all diseases within London, and the liberties of London but foure thousand, two hundred, sixtie and three: for euerlasting remembrance whereof, I beseech thee right Christian reader, to note the sweete mercy of our most gracious God, in so speedy and fatherly staying his hand of Iustice from greater or longer punishment of this Citty and Kingdome, hauing so many wayes sinned, and incessantly prouoked his wrath and indignation, as well in wilfull, and forgetfull ingratitude, as in outward pride of habit, Gluttony, and all other sinnes. It is most evident by the plain testimony of very many Chronicles, that other Cities and Kingdoms, for the like transgressions, haue beene more seuerely punished not only by Pestilence, but with extreame famine, spoiled by the enemies, ouerwhelmed with swaine inundations, vtterly consumed by fire from heauen, swallowed quicke with Earthquakes, and deuoured by wild beastes, and for yet better satisfaction hereof I thought good to recommend vnto thy good consideration a briefe abstract of former vniuersall Pestilences, and mortalitie as followeth:

There died in one weeke within the liberties and the adioyning parishes. 7094.

Aboue all things temporall, it is the corruption of humane nature and the daily practise and instigation of our ancient enemie Satan Prince of this world, to hearken and encline more to worldly pleasures, and the vaine attempts of Kings, in their lust, and wilfull conquests and actions, being farre more delighted with the remembrance of their owne follies and deuices, then any way desirous to be reformed or to note the sinnes of former Ages, and Gods iust visitation for the same: to put them in minde, and feare of the like or worse punishment: thereby to cause them to auoyd sinne, and to grow more penitent: in Christian charitable consideration whereof, sith at this day all sinnes are as great and notorious in all sorts of people as in any former age, I haue thought good for discharge of my dutie, and for prescient vnto our selues, and successors to shew one of the great visitations of Almighty God, vpon the world for sinne: you shall therefore vnderstand, that in the yeere of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ, 1346. was the conjunction of three superiour Planets in the signe of Aquarius, of which conjunction the

I most truely and vniuersall Pestilence.

the Astronomers sayd Saturne was Lord, the like conjunction hauing beene diuers times before seene, and their influence obserued, but the diuine Iustice of God, for sinne in so short space like the deluge, was not like vnto this wonderfull pestilent mortalitie, which began this yeere, in the East part of the world towards Cataya, the higher India, and in their bordering confines, and towards the great Sea, there fell a pestilence amongst all sorts of people, of all ages estates, degrees, and seres, they at first began to spit of bunnt blood, and so died soundly of within two or three dayes, and it happened, that such as kept or attended any of these infected persons became also presently infested with the same corruption & sickines: and died in like manner, this sickneste was discerned by seuerall signes either in their fingers, or some other part of their bodies of such as were infected, and by such tokens it was generally obserued and knowne: this strange and terrible pestilence by little and little was spread from people to people, and from Countrey to Country, almost ouer the third part of the world, and namely ouer all Asia, and at last it was into the nations of the great Sea, and alongst the coast of the said land Sea, and was continued with Syria, Turkye, Egypt, the Red Sea, and from thence it came into the North parts of Russia, Grecia, Armony, and their bordering Prouinces, and at this time it was most extreame in Italy, and diuers other Countries, whereunto sundry shippes and Galleys, with their goods and Merchandize, and sayled into Islands, and into the maine Sea, hoping thereby to haue escaped this vnheard of Pestilent mortalitie, whereof many died at Sea, and the rest wheresoeuer they arriued brought with them the furie of that infection and gaue it vnto such as conuerst or kept company with them, but not all in generall, by this time as God had appointed, this mortalitty was spread ouer all the parts of Africa, and the Leuant Sea, & after that by time and time, a little, and a little, it also possest the West parts of Europe, it ran also into the South countries where it assailed them in more sharpe manner then in other places.

Christ the consolation hath beene diuers times before, but continued not so long, as the effect of this consolation continued almost 16. yeares.

Such houses and Ballaces as were infected with this noysome Pestilence made Saints or sanctuaries for more safetie from the Murderers vnnatural.

And in the yeare 1348. were likewise heauily infected all Italy, as also Italy, the Alpes, and also Germany, where few perished, and vnto the dead Sea, as also the Kingdomes of France, Spayne, and Granada: and in the yeare 1349. it came into England, Scotland, Ireland, and other Ilands of the West, and into the Low countries with like infectious mortalitty, Brabant onely excepted, where it did sin all offence, and in the yeare 1350. it spred ouer Friseland, Egipt, Denmarke, the Goths Vandals, and other people and nations Northwards and in that place where this deadly Pestilence came, the people began to know it, by their observation and experience, that they could tell by feeling and seeling who was infected, as well of youth as aged persons, and so soone as they discouered any to be infected, all the rest would instantly flee from them, and leaue them helpeselfe, and by that meanes, very great numbers perished for want of succor, and things necessary which might haue escaped. This vnkind & cruell forsaking of one another, began first amongst the Turkes and Infidels, where the Parents forsooke their children, and the children their parents, brothers and sisters forsooke one another, the wife left her husband, and husband the wife, and this monstrous barbarous cruelties, which is strange to tell, was also very much vsed amongst Christians, some went into sweete and solitary places, where they thought themselues secure from hazard of infection, others kept and concealed themselues in their houses and Castles, keeping their ports and doores safe locked and guarded, being plentefully furnished with all manner of food and Phisicke: but all this did not any way preuaile or preuent Gods diuine Iudgement, with whom locker nor guard neuer made any resistance, whereupon many became more kind and resolute and with a holy kinde of resolution, prepared themselues for death, and therewithall became kind, and seruiceable vnto the sicke, and ministred all things needfull vnto them, and by that meanes very many recouered health, and became secure, and then they shewed like kindnesse vnto others, in which Christian course, it pleased God to bestow their indeauors, and very many of them were healed by helping one another, the fury of this fierce mortalitty, wherefoeuer it came, it lasted vsually fiue moneths viz. from Aprill to September, the Phisitians in all places were vtterly confounded in their iudgements concerning the cure of this disease, either by naturall Philosophy, Astrology, or art, they could not finde any argument either for remedy or preuention: yet neuertheless there were certaine that for the getting of great summes of money, would vndertake and attempt to cure the diseased, and secure the whole, but fayled in both, and themselues perished, but very honestly restored backe all such summes as they had receiued.

Many wise could neuer preuent Gods will.

Touching the Originall of this disease, some write, that a little before it beganne, in the parts of the higher Asia, there issued out of the earth, or fell from heauen a mighty fire, which stretched toward the West, which burned and consumed great Countries, and that from the stench of this fire grew the matter of corruption, which breede this generall pestilence, but this opinion was least beleeued, but others of greater credit, write that in the Citie Lanchen, it rained Snakes and Blood, three dayes and three nights together, wherewith the whole Countrey was infected, and in that Mempell, part of Mahomets Temple was beaten downe, and part of his Sepulcher broken, during the extremitie of this sickneste, Pope Clement the first, gaue pardon vnto all that confessed their sinnes, and were contrite, and whilest this heauy mortalitie lasted euery Christian became zealous, deuout and penitent, preparing to yeeld their soules to God,

The Pope kept his Court then at Auignon in France.

and by seeing the visitation of Almighty God, vpon their Countrey, Kindred, friends, and neighbour Nations, became very Religious, with fasting and prayer, patient, humble, and mercifull, thus was it for a time with those whom it pleased God to preserue from this pestilence, but they perished not long in that piety for in many Countreys to some as they perceiued the mortality to cease, they inclined their hearts and actions quite contrary and ran vtterly into worse course of life then formerly, and like vnbridled horses ran headlong into all manner of disordered life, and voluptuous nesse, giuing themselues ouer to pride, cloth, lust, dunnekennesse, and enuie, and became extreame fantastique in new deuices of their vsuall garments, which they studied to make rich & costly: these sins raigned as well in women, as in men, perswading themselues, that hence-forth they should neuer neede to till the earth, worke, builde houses, plant vines, or doe ought else that appertained vnto humane life: hauing, as they supposed, more store of fode, and all other necessaries left vnto them then they could spend whilest they should liue, and perswaded themselues likewise that they were now secure, the fury of Gods iustice being past, and that the hand of God being weary, forgetting the saying of the Prophet Esay, to wit, that the arme of God is neuer shortned, nor his hand wearied. Thus they secured themselues euery man accounting himselfe rich, inclined to sloth, & sought no more then what the earth brought forth, whereupon God sent a great and vniuersall famine, and in short space a greater scarcitie and want of apparell and all other necessaries, then was at any other time before this mortality: they also became contentious, falling at strife for euery matter and went to Law for possessions and other things, whereupon ensued sharpe wars in most nations, as may appeare by the seuerall Chronicles of all Kingdomes: of this you may reade more in many forraine authors, but most readily in the chronicle of the two brothers of Florence, viz. Signior Iohn Villano, and Matheo Villano, the first booke, and 12. 13. and 14. Chapters: and at this time presently after the Mortality was founded the vniuersity in Florence, by authozitie and consent of the Pope and Emperor.

In the yeere 1552 in Barbary the famine began to be wonderous great, whereupon Italy, France and Spaine vpon hope of receiuing gaine, transported so much coyne thither, that the Famine became so extreame in those Kingdomes and other places of Europe as there was but three ounces of bread to be allowed a man for a day.

The vniuersities of Florence founded

Two other great and vniuersall mortalities.

This foresayd Mortalitie, was one of the three greatest mortalities that euer happened since the great deluge so far as I reade: the other were in the time of Marcus Aurelius Antonius Emperour of Rome, in the yeere after Christ 171. the which began at Babylon in Egypt, it endured fifty Yeeres in the parts of Asia, whose fierce infection spread it selfe in horrible manner to destroy the Romish Legions in the East parts, and from thence it came into Rome where it brought destruction to her inhabitants the other was in the dayes of Gallus Hostilius, Aurelius, and Valerius, rulers of the Empire together with the extreame persecution of the Christians, the which began in the yeare of our Sauiour, two hundred fiftie and foure, and continued in diuers kindes, yet alwayes a cruell and incredible Pestilence ouer many Regions of the world, and continued for the space of fiftene yeares: by which mortality, as many Historicall Authors affirme, there perished in the people for sin, then did in the great deluge, by reason of the worlds great and generall enormitie which was not so in the dayes of Noah, & thus hauing said somewhat in order of sundry notorious and heauy visitations of Gods iuditie Iustice vpon the world for sin, all which haue happened since the birth of our Lord and Sauiour Iesus Christ I haue likewise thought good, to giue a briefe touch, of some former Pestilent Mortalities, which were before the birth of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, thereby to put our selues and posteritie the more in remembrance that the sins of the world without true repentance, neuer escaped vnpunished. In Rome it rained bloud two dayes together, then followed a mighty Plague that yeere together, by which meanes Rome, and all Italy, was well nigh dispeopled: this raining of bloud was the yeare after the death of Asdrubal and Scipio the said Hannibal died 188. yeeres before the birth of our Sauiour Christ, (and within few yeeres after that, the Macedonians affliced the Romanes grieuously after that, the Romanes destroyed Corinth, and Carthage, both in one yeere, but by seuerall Armies, and vpon sundry occasions. In the time of Apius Claudius, viz. of Rome, fire hundred and twelue, there happened such a Plague in Rome, that the liuing could scarce bury the dead and the stench of the dead bodies, poysoned the liuing, yea the eye became so infectious, that for a good while after none durst come neere Rome.

188 yeeres after the birth of our Sauiour Christ.

And within a few yeeres after that, was a vniuersall plague in Africa, where there dyed thirtie thousand Romane soulduers in sundry garrisons, and ten hundreth and fourescore thousand of the African, and yet it ceased not there, but was dispersed further into other partes. I could set downe many other Pestilences, and mortalities and sundry great earthquakes, and extreame famine, slaughter of people, with the vtter spoyle of rich Cities, States, and strong Kingdomes, and diuers nations driuen from their habitations, by Serpents of sundry kinds, hornets frogs, toades and flies, but that I feare I should seeme to be tedious to the generall Reader, knowing that this is the most scoffing, Carping, respectlesse, and vnthankfull age that euer was.

Romulus betaketh himselfe to Rome in the yeare of the world 3961. and 3961. before the birth of our Sauiour Iesus Christ.

Rudolfus.

The twenty eight of March Charles Earle of Nottingham, Lord high Admirall of England, being accompanied and attended with one Earle, three Barons, thirty Knights, and many Gentlemen of note and quality, one Herauld, two Doctors of Physicke, besides thirty Gentlemen of his owne in clokes of blacke velues, fiue Pages in Cloaks of Orenge tawny Velues like to the rest of their apparell: he had also fourescore Yeomen in Liuery Cloakes of Orenge tawny cloath 6. Trumpeters in Orenge colour Damaske, and Liuery Cloakes of tawny cloth, and the Footemen in Orenge tawny velues:

An. Reg. 1604.

The Admirals departure into Spaine to take the oath for confirmation of the Articles of peace.

Velues: hee was well furnished with diuers Coaches and Chariots, very richly adorned, the like whereof haue not beene seene in former dayes.

The aforenamed Lord Admiral after fourteene dayes being at Sea, vpon Munday the 15. of Aprill, Stilo Anglicæ recouered the harbour of the Groyne, & there stayed a ship-board vntill the next day, at which time his Lordship and all his traine were as kindly and loyally entertained, as was possible, as well by the gouernour Don Lewis Conde de Caracena, and the other Magistrates of the Towne, as by the common people in generall, hauing formerly receiued expresse commandment from the King to doe their vtmost and best endeauours for the honour of their King and country during their abode at the Groyne, his Lordship solemnized the Feast of S. George, and was for that day onely serued by his owne seruants, and chiefe followers as is accustomed in England, but at all other times and places hee was altogether serued and attended by the King of Spaines Officers and others.

Many Noble Lords & Gentlemen of great account take the state vpon them for honour of the Feast.

The King kept his Court at Vallodolid, which is about three hundred English myles distant from the Groyne, and vnderstanding of the Ambassadors arriuall, in respect of his age & long trauaile, considered it was very conuenient for his Lordship and all his traine to rest and refresh themselues a while, before they set forward on their land iourney. The ninth day after their landing, the King sent a messenger vnto the Gouernour of the towne, signifying that Don Baltodor Aragon, Nephew to the Conde de terra nous, a man of speciall regard with the King, was vpon the way comming to salute the great Ambassador, who came accordingly: and declared that the King his Master expected his Lordships personall presence, with such other as he best pleased to bring along with him. And thereupon the English were numbred, and found to be about fiue hundred and fifty persons, and therewithall considering how vnable the Countrey was to sustaine them, through which they should passe, his Lordship abated part thereof, and sent some a ship-board with much of his owne prouision, as coaches, carriages, and diuers other things, whereof he should haue little or no vse, by reason the way was bad, and that the King had prouided more conueniently for them.

Friday the third of May, his Lordship being amply furnished all at the Kings cost with coaches, litters, mules mulets, and all other necessaries, that might serue for ease and pleasure for euery man, they set forward on their iourney, being in all respects and in all places, whersoeuer they came as kindly vsed as they were at their first arriuall, and continued the same vnto their departure at Saint Anderas.

The English as they trauailed were entertained into euery Towne, by the chiefe Rulers and Magistrates of the County, with great signes of gladnesse as appeared by their planting of high mayes with boughes, strawing the Streates with flowers, and decking their walles and windowes with their richest furniture. After 12. dayes trauaile, they came to Vallodolid, and there rested two dayes, and then his Lordship with the rettume were sent for by the Court being accompanied and attended thither with diuers Lords and others of chiefe estimation with the King: And by the way as they passed from Simancca, his Lordship was presented with a horse, wherein the King vsed to ride himselfe very gallantly furnished.

The passage into Vallodolid was wonderously replenished with Ladies, Noble women and Gentlemen in Coaches, being at least fiue hundred coaches of them, and a great many of Lords and others of honourable quality, highly mounted, attending the comming of the English into the Towne, whose extraordinary bauery on either part was at an infinite suppresse, and disgraced by an extraordinary shower of raine, which fell so suddenly & vnexpected, as it was a wonder to see, especially to raine hauing bin there in thy moneths before. After two dayes rest being at a hon'e of the Conde de Salua where his Lordship was most honorably entertained and attended in all respects: and during his abode there, was often visited by diuers, as well from the King and Queene, as from the generall Ambassadors there resident, viz. from the Emperour, the French King, the Dukes of Sauoy Florence, and Venice, and other great Lords both Spirituall and temporall, of the Kingdom of Spaine, and other regions. His Lordship being sent for to Court, diuers Dukes, Marquesses, Earles, and Barons, came to attend him, obseruing therein the best order and decorum they could, much people beeing assembled to behold them, and was receiued with the greatest state that might be, and by the King himselfe, he was extraordinarily entertained, respected and vsed all the while his Lordship abode at Vallodolid the King manifested great signes of his especiall good affection towards the English vpon sundry occasions, but chiefly and in the highest degree, he expressed it at the Christening of the young Prince, the Churching of the Queene, in seuerall processions before his Lordships lodging, where the King himselfe carried a burning Taper in his hand: their desperate hunting of the Bull, their play at Iocode Canas, the shew of his armed men, diuers sumptuous feastes, masses, and dauncing, at all which his Lordship and his followers were with all care and kindnesse prouided for, to their content, so as they might both see and obserue the same.

The very like accident happened vnto the Earle of Cherroyd and his company at Burgos.

At the deliuery of the presents by Thomas Knoll Esquier, the King and Queene came in person to view and receiue them with a very kind and Princely acceptation.

Presents sent to the King and Queene of Spaine.

The Presents were.

Fiue stately Hoyles with saddles and saddle-clothes, very richly and curiously embroydered, that is to say, three for the King, and three for the Queene.

Two Crosse-bowes with theakes of arrowes,

Foure fowling pieces with their furniture very richly garnished, and inlaid with plates of gold.

A couple of Lyme-hounds of singular qualities.

Thursday the 30. of May, being Corpus Christi day, his Lordship was sent for to Court in greater state then before: the English Lords Knights, and Gentlemen had gallant Coates provided for them, the Grandes and others of the Spanish Nobilitie accompanied them to Court, and brought them into a very large and spacious roome, which they called the Grand sala, at the upper ende whereof sate the King in royall Estate, who with great kindnesse arose, and entertained his Lordship, and caused him and the Ambassador Leiger to sit downe upon a forme on the left hand. The Grandes and nobles of Spaine were placed upon a forme on the right hand about two degrees lower: then was there brought before the King a little Table, and a Bible very reverently layd upon it, and with the same a Crucifixe: then the Archbishoppe of Toledo read the Oath, at part of which oath his Lordship held the Kings hands betweene his, and so the King kneeling layd his hands upon the Booke, and after his Oath, his subscribed to the aforesayd Articles formerly concluded upon.

The King of Spain sweareth to the former Articles.

The 7. of June, his Lordship with the rest of the English Nobilitie, tooke their leave of the King and Queene, in as kind and Royall manner as at any time before. In his returne to S. Anderas himselfe and all his traine, in all places, by all persons, were as kindly and respectively entertained and bred, and with as great manifestation of their love, as when his Lordship made his first arriuall: hee imbarked the 19. of June, and arryued at Portesmouth the 29. of June.

The Lord Admirall returneth.

Presently upon their departure from Spaine the Spaniardes published a Booke by authoritie, concerning the demeano; of the English in the Embassie, wherein they highly commended the graue and Noble behauiour of the Lord Ambassador, and other the Lords and Gallant Gentlemen of his company, and the sober and peaceable behauiour of all his seruants, friends and followers.

The generall behauiour of the English in Spaine.

The Earle of Hertfords voyage into Flanders to take the oath of the Archduke and Marchesse for confirmation of the Articles of peace

The 19. of Aprill 1605. the right honorable Edward Earle of Hertford, Baron Beauchamp, and the Lord Lieutenant of the Counties of Somerset and Wiltes, take shipping at Dower in the Vantgard, and was sent Lord Ambassador by his Maiestie vnto Albertus and Isabella, Archdukes of Austria, &c. to take their Othes for confirmation of the Articles of peace, concluded, ratified, and sworne the 18. of August last past, the which said Earle was accompanied and attended, as followeth.

He was accompanied and attended with two Barons, 16. Knights, and many Gentlemen of note and qualitie, two Chaplaines, with other Gentlemen and Yeomen, to the number of three hundred persons, the most of them being his owne seruants in very rich Liueries.

Sir Thomas Edmonds Ambassador Leger in Flanders.

The same time Sir Thomas Edmonds went Ambassador Leger.

The 20. of Aprill, his Lordship arriued at Dunkerke, and was received in great state and kindnesse by Don Diego de Ortes Gouernour thereof, and stayed there two dayes.

From thence to Newport, then to Bridges, from Bridges to Caunt, from Caunt to Alst, and from Alst to Bruxells the 27. of Aprill. At all which sayd places, at his proper cost, hee bountifully feasted the chiefe Commanders of the Armies, and head Burghers and officers of euery Towne.

During his 12. dayes abode at Bruxels, his Lordship was entertained with all state, loue, and kindnes, with sundry Showes and pastimes with two seuerall great Triumphs in the market place, and lately Masques, and Reuels, at night.

The first of May, the Archdukes very solemnely take their oathes as followeth, but first the Ambassadours Commission was read and then the oath, viz.

Nos Albertus, et Elizabetha Clara Eugenia Hispaniarum Infans, dei gratia, Archiduces Austriæ, Duces Burgundiæ, Lotharingiæ, Brabantiæ, Limburgi, Luxemburgi, et Gelriæ, Comites Hasburgi, Flandriæ, Artheſiæ, Burgundiæ, Tirolis, Palatini, et Hanoniæ, Hollandiæ, Zelandiæ, namurci, et Zutphaniæ, Marchiones sacri Imperij Romani, Domini Phrizia, Solmarum, Mechliniæ; Ciuitatum, Oppidorum, et Territorij Traiecti, Transiculaniæ, et Groenig, Promittimus, et juramus in manus illust. viri, Eduardi, comitis Herfordiæ, Baronis Beachampij, locum tenentis generalis prouinciarum, Somersetiæ, et Wiltoniæ, hic præsentis legati, et procuratoris, potentissimi et excellentissimi Principis Iacobi, Dei gratia, Magnæ Britaniæ, Franciæ &c. Regis, fratris nostri Charissimi, & super hac sacro-sancta Dei Euangelia, quod nos inuiolabiliter, et sine fraude, aut dolo malo, obseruabimus confœderationem, ligam concluſam, et concordatem, inter Deputatos potentissimi et excellentissimi principis, Phillippi *eius nominis tertij, Hispaniarum Regis, fratris nostri Charissimi, et nostros ex una: et dicti Regis magnæ Britaniæ, ex altera, partibus: die decimo octauo mensis Augusti, stilo veteri, et vigesimo octauo eiusdem mensis, stilo nouo anni præteriti, millesimi sexcentesimi quarti, secundum omnes et sing. articulos in eodem tractatu contentos: neque consentiemus, quod per nos, aut subditos nostros, aliquid tentetur, seu innouetur directe, aut per indirectum, contra dictam confœderationem, et ligam: vel in præiudicium dicti tractatus. In cuius rei testimonium, manus nostras hic apposuimus, in ciuitate nostra Bruxellensi, die vndecimo mensis Maij, Anno Domini millesimo Sexcentesimo quinto.*

Albertus Elizabetha.

Paries

During the reading of the Oath, the Archduke and Duches held hand in hand, as at a marriage, and the Ambassador held both their hands within his hands, the Oath ended, then they layd their hands upon the Gospell, which was held by the Archbishoppe of Mechelenyne, which with great reuerence they both kissed.

The Ambassadour signified vnto the Archdukes, that the Kings new Stile of King of great Britaine, neither was nor should bee any impeach or doubt of performance, of the Articles formerly agreed and sworne.

His Lordship at his departure thence in honour of his King and Countrey, gaue vnto the Dukes seruants and others that did attend him the full some of three thousand pound. The night before his departure the Archduke presented him with a Jewell worth nine hundred pounds, and a suite of Arras, worth three hundred pounds. And whiles his Lordship abode in Bruxells the Archduke defrayed all charges of the Ambassador and all his traine, being all of them excellent well vsed.

The 9. of May, his Lordshippe went from Bruxells to Antwerpe, being conducted thither with a strong guard of the Archdukes soldiers, and carriages in the same manner, as his Lordship was first received and brought to Bruxells: from Antwerpe his Lordship went by water to Flushing, where he stayed for a wind 4. dayes: being very honorably entertained and feasted.

The Lord Ambassadour still continued his former bounty vnto all persons, in all places where-soeuer he came.

He imbarqued himselfe at Flushing and arriued at London the twentieth day of May, in all which his Journey, amongst other things of note, and Englands honour: it was so well and carefully ordered by his Lordship as there was no offence giuen or taken, either with strangers or themselues.

Iust charitable petitions.

Master Robert Dow of London Merchant Maylor, in his most Christian charitie, pitying the miserable or rather desperate Estate of the poore condemned prisoners in Newgate, where very often and very many of them after Iudgement of Death, and at their very Execution remaine most carelesse of their Soules health, Iesting, and deriding their imminent danger and to the Iudgement of the world doe reprobate.

Vpon tender Consideration whereof, and good hope of after reformation of such poore prisoners there, as through temptation of Sathan are, and will be too apt to fall into like danger the said Master Dow, hath giuen competent Maintainance for euer, vnto Saint Sepulchers Parish for the tolling of the great Bell and fo; some especiall man, by them to bee appointed to come to the said Prison, the midnight before execution, and then distinctly and solemnly to ring a hand bell: then togoo;nounce with a lowd voice at the prison grate, a Godly and Christian remembrance of erhortation, appointed by the Lord Bishopps, beginning thus.

At the day of execution the great Bell shall toll from ten of the clocke, vntill ten the same forenoone.

O ye prisoners within condemned, this day to dye, remember your sinnes, call to God for Grace, whilst yet you haue time.

And in the Morning when they are in the Cart, iust against the Church, the parties aforesayd to put them in minde againe of their former liues, and present death, saying the great bell of this Church, which I told you last night should Toll for you from five of the clocke vntill ten, now tolleth to the end to moue good people to pray to God for you whilest your sinnes with them may pray for remission of your sinnes, &c. And at ten a clocke or at such time as knowledge may be truely had of the Prisoners execution the said great Bell shall bee rung out for the space of a quarter of an houre, (to the end all people may vnderstand the execution is past) and then cease.

The Prisoners kept at the Church wall.

Robert Peake of London goldsmith gaue to the Parish of S. Sepulchers Church a communion Table of two yards long, and three quarters and halfe broad, and three quarters and halfe high, all richly gilded ouer, and round about as well below as aboue, both trestels and footpace, and at euery vpper corner imbolt with siluer plate.

Master Dow's bounty.

The forenamed Master Dow, many yeres before his death, did many other charitable deedes: as founding 18. or 19. pensioners for euer: erabblished a free singing Schoole in Christs Hospitall, for the better education of those poore children, he gaue money to prisoners yearely, and to his owne parish for the releefe of the poore besides many other Godly deeds done all in his life time.

The Lady Mary borne.

The Lady Mary, borne at Greenwitch vpon the eight of Aprill, about 11. or 12. of the clocke at night, for ioy whereof the next day after, the Citizens of London made bonefiers throughout London, and the Belles continued ringing all the whole day.

The Prince of Spayne borne.

Don Philip Victor Dominico, Prince of Spaine, was borne of Quéene Margaret, vpon good Friday the 29. of March about eight or nine of the clocke in the forenoone, for ioy whereof Don Iohn de Taxis, the Spanish Liedger vpon Monday the 15. of Aprill at his house in the Strand, made bonefires, discharged diuers peales of Chambers, set vp a red crosse at his doore, with diuers great Cressel lights: and the most part of the afternoone he continued throwing diuers summes both of Gold, and siluer amongst the multitudes: taking great pleasure to see the people catch one from another.

Pope Clement died.

Clement the eight Pope of Rome, died the 21. of February last, who for his vertue, temperate life and discreete gouernment, was held in great estimation amongst all Christian Princes hee raigned full thirteene yeeres, and died of the Goute.

Pope Leo died.

After him was Leo the eleuenth, who died within foureteene dayes after his election hee being 69. yeeres of age.

And

Paul the first chosen.

And after him was Paul the fift, chosen the fortieth of May, borne in Siena, of fifty eight yeares of age.

S. Georges Feast.

The King kept the feast of Saint George at Greenewich, where the Gentlemen and others that of long continuance had used to attend their Lords in honour of that service, in their chaines of gold and liueries, were now wholly omitted. And the Kings guard commanded to supply their places. but the next yeere, blew coates, chaines of gold, and feathers began againe to flourish. and euer since haue continued, as was formerly accustomed.

Two knights of the Garter made.

The King made two new Knights of the Garter, viz. the high & mighty Prince, Duke Vlricke, heire of Norway, administrator of the Bishoprieke of Helwerin Duke of Slesuicke, Holstein, Stormar, and Ditmars, Earle of Oldenburgh and Delmenhurst, and brother to our most gratious Queene Anne.

And the right Noble Lord, Henry Howard Earle of Northampton, Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports.

Creation of Earles and Barons.

Upon Saturday the fourth of May, the hall at Greenwich being richly hanged with Arras, and a cloath of Estate being there erected: the Kings Maiestie standing there vnder, accompanyed with the Princes his children: the Duke of Holstein, the Duke of Lennox, and the most part of the great Nobilitie, both of England, and Scotland, created three Earles, one Viscount, and foure Barons, that is to say, Robert Cecill, Viscount Cranborne, Baron of Essington was created Earle of Salisbury.

Thomas Cecill Lord Burghley, elder brother to Robert Cecill, was created Earle of Exceter.

Sir Phillip Herbert, younger brother to the Earle of Pembroke, was created Baron of Shirland, and Earle of Montgomery.

Robert Sidney, Baron of Penshurst, Lord Chamberlaine to the Queene, was created Viscount Lisle.

Sir John Stanhope, Vicechamberlayne to the King, was created Lord Stanhope of Harington.

Sir George Carew, Vicechamberlaine to the Queene, was created Lord Carew of Clopton.

Master Thomas Arondell of Deuonshire, was created Lord Arondell of Warder.

Master William Cauendish, was created Lord Cauendish of Hardwick.

The next day being Sunday, betweene foure and fiue of the clocke in the afternoone, the Lady Mary was Christened in manner, as followeth.

The Lady Mary Christened.

First, the three Courts at Greenwich were rayled in, and hung about with broad cloath, where the proceeding should passe.

The childe was brought from the Queenes lodgings through both the great Chambers, and through the presence, and downe the winding staires into the Conduit Court: At the foot whereof attended a canopy borne by eight Barons, before which went the Officers of Armes, and diuers Willoppys, Barons, and Earles. The Earle of Northumberland bore a couered gilt Basen, after followed the Countesse of Worcester, bearing a Crysen couered with Lawne, which had thereon many Iewels of inestimable price.

Vnder the Canopy went the Countesse of Darby, bearing the child, and the Lrs supported by the Dukes of Holstein & Lennox, the trayne of the Mantle was borne by two of the great The Mantle was purple Velure. felt Countesses: then followed the Godmothers, the Lady Arabella, and the Countesse of Northumberland, after whom followed many Countesses, and other great Ladies.

At the entrance of the Chappell, stood the Doctor Neal Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, assisted with Dean. Meuerthe Deanes of Canterbury and of the Chappell in rich Copes receiued the child, and bringing the child vnto the Trauerse: the Quier sung certaine Anthems, and the Lords tooke one side of the Rails, and the Ladies the other:

In the midst of the Quier was erected a most stately Canopy of cloth of gold, 12. foot square, within the which vpon a foote pace of foure degrees, stood a very rich and stately font of siluer and gilt, most curiously wrought with figures of Beasts, Serpents, and other antickeworks, and after a while the Gentlemen Vshers opening the barryers of the Canopy, the Lord Archbishop with the two Deanes entred the same, then followed the Countesse of Darby with the child, the Duke of Holstein Godfather, and the two Godmothers, attended on each side of the Font,

During the solemnitie of Baptisme, which in all points was fully read and performed according to the Church of England, naming the childe Mary, then the child was carryed backe into the Trauerse, and the God-father and Godmothers ascending, offered at the Altar. The Lord Almoner bishop of Chichester receiued their offerings. Doctor Watson.

Then the Earle Marshall, and the Lord Chamberlaine placing Seager Garter, principall King of Armes betweene them, Master Garter making low reuerence vnto the Kings Maiesty, who stood in the closet windowe, began to pronounce with a loud voyce, these words following.

The childes name ordained & pronounced. Almighty God of his infinite grace, and goodnesse, preserue & blesse with long life, in health, honour, and all happinesse, this high and right Noble Lady Mary, daughter to the most high and mighty Prince, Iames by the grace of God, King of great Britaine, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, and of the most excellent Princesse Queene Anne, Amen.

Which being ended, then the Gentlemen Vshers, and Seruers, brought in a voyde of wine and confections, & the trumpets sounded, the whole trayne returned the same way and order that they came, hauing that the gifts of their Godsips were carryed by six Earles.

Richard Haydock, of New Colledge in Oxford, a professed Phylitian pretended to preach in his sleepe, and hauing an imperfection in his vtiall or dayly speech, yet by his nightly practise

Hypocrites counterfeiting Preacher.

practise in his priuate chamber, hee attained a very good delinery of his mind, and carried himselfe so cunningly, that hee would often come in his priuate chamber, to preach in his sleepe. And being diuers times heard by such as were neere him, who though they called or spake vnto him neuer so oft, or earnestly: yea though they stirred or pulled him by the hands and feete, &c. yet would hee make no manner of answere at all, but perfitt smoothly on, keeping his countenance: whereupon his fame was spread throughout the land, by the name of the sleeping preacher: at last the King commanded him to bee brought to the Court, where his Maiestie sate vp the most part of the night, attending the event, and at length, the seeming sleeper began to pray: then pronounced a text, made his diuision of his text: and applying it to his purpose, for in his preaching he vsed to inueigh against the Pope, against the Crosse in baptisme, and against the last Canons of the Church of England: and hauing ended his Sermon seemed to continue sleeping: his Maiestie hauing throughly obserued, what hee had there heard and seene, departed to his lodging, and within few dayes after called the sayd Haydocke before him: after some conference, the King in his Princely wisedome discouered all his drifts, and practise. The offender being no way able to Iustifie himselfe, acknowledged his abuse vnto God, to his Maiestie, and the world, and humbly besought mercy of his Maiestie: the King most graciously pardoned him conditionally, that in all places hee would acknowledge and confesse his offence, because the people greatly supposed, and many verily beleeued, his nocturnall preaching was either by inspiration or by vision,

And vpon May day the said Haydocke came to Lambeth, and acted particular forgiuenesse, of the most reuerend Father in God Richard Bancroft, Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.

Words of the sayd sleeping Preachers confession: copied by the originall of his owne hand.

I doe in the naked simplicitie of a thankfull, and most penitent heart ingeniously confesse, and acknowledge, that this vse of my nocturnall discourse, seeming to bee in a sound and dead sleepe, when indeed I was waking and had perfecter sence of that I conceiued, and spake, then when by day I attempted the same, was from the beginning, a voluntary thing done with knowledge, vpon a discovery in my selfe of a greater abilitie and freedome of inuention, memory, and speech in that milde quiet, and silent repose of the night: then in the day time I found.

Vpon Whit-sunday, the 19. of May, the Queenes Maiestie was Churched, in manner and forme following.

The Queene Churched.

First the King accompanied with the most part of the Peeres of the Realm, went into the Closet, and there heard a Sermon preached by Doctor Watson, Almner Bishop of Chichester, from thence he went solemne into the Chappell, and offered. When withdrew himselfe into a rich trauerse on the right hand of the Altar.

Then came the Queene from her lodging, and went into her Closet, and staying there a while, with a great Trayne of Ladyes, was brought from thence into the Chappell by the great Lords, supported by the Dukes of Holsteyne, and Lenox, and being come before the Altar, thee made low reuerence, and offered her besant, and then went into the Trauerse which stood on the left side of the Altar, and after the vsuall prayers and thanksgiuing for her health, and safe delinery, according to the booke of the Common Prayer, and sundry Anthemes sung with Organ, Cornets, Sagbot, and other excellent Instruments of Musicke.

The King and Queene came both forth of their Trauerses, and met before the Altar, and imbracing each other with great kindnesse, went hand in hand together, vntill they came to the Kings presence Chamber doore, where they parted, doing great reuerence each toother. And the same day the King dined openly in the presence Chamber, accompanied with the Archdukes Ambassador, Prince Henry and the Duke of Holsteine.

Twelue Knights made.

Upon Wednesday following, in the afternoone, the King made twelue Knights, that is to say, Sir John Mewes, of the Ile of Wight, Syr William Kirkham of Deuonshire, Sir Ambrose Button of Hamphire, Sir Robert Payne of Medlow in Huntingtonshire, Sir Hugh Plat of London, Sir Edward Cope of Northamptonshire.

Sir Henry Mallery of Tambridgeshire, Sir Hals of Deuonshire, Sir Anthony Wildgoose of Kent, Sir John Lee of Surrey, Sir Robert Albancy of Surrey, Sir John Fitz-Williams of Berkshire.

Duke Vlrick returneth to Denmarke.

Saturday the first of June, the Kings Maiestie, Prince Henry, and diuers Lords, Knights and Gentlemen, accompanied Duke Vlricke, to the Citie of Rochester, where he tooke shipping for Denmarke.

Petty Treason strangely discouered.

Anne Waters, through the often and importunate perswasion of a certaine louer of hers, at length consented with him to kill her husband: and thereupon her lustfull louer and his man, with her consent, strangled the husband of the sayd Anne by night, and buried him as secretly in a Cow-house, and vnder the Cow-baighill: within few dayes after, the dead man was generally mist by his neighbours: vnto whom the wife made seuerall answeres and reports: but within fourteene dayes it chanced that one of the inhabitants of the Towne, dreamed that his Neighbour Waters was strangled, and buried vnder the Cowdung-hill in an out house: after he had thus dreamed diuers nights, he told his wife, how hee was nightly troubled in his dreames, which being presently told to other neighbors, the Constable searched, and found the dead body: then Shee vtterly denied her guiltinesse vntill she saw no hope of life and then shee came penitent, was Anne Waters committed to the Gaole, in Lancaster: for her louer and his man were fled,

fled, and the 22. of August. 1608. she was condemned of petty Treason, and burned: Barons Altham, and Serieant Phillips, being then Iustices of the assize, for Lancashire.

This spring of the yeare, the King builded a wall, and filled up with earth, all that part of the mote of ditch, round about the West side of the Lyons den, and appointed a drawing partition to be made towards the South part thereof, the one part thereof to serue for the breeding of Lionnesse: when she shall haue whelps, and the other part thereof, for a walke for other Lions. The King caused also three trap doores to be made in the wall of the Lyons den, for the Lyons to goe into their walke, at the pleasure of their keeper, which walke, shall be maintayned, and kept for especiall place, to baight the Lyons, with Dogges, Beares, Bulles, Horses, &c.

The King made a wall and appointed place for the Lyons.

Monday the third of June, in the afternoone, his Maiestie being accompanied, with the Duke of Lenox, the Earles of Worcester, Pembroke, Southampton Suffolke, Denonshire, Salisbury and Montgomery, and the Lord Hoskins, Captaine of his highnesse guard, with many Knights, and Gentlemen of name: came to the Lyons Tower, and for that time was placed, ouer the platforme of the Lyons, because as yet, the two Galleries were not builded the one of them for the King and great Lords, and the other for speciall personages.

A tryall of the Lyonesse quality.

The King being placed as aforesayd, commanded master Ralph Gyll, keeper of the Lyons, that his seruants should put forth into the walke, the male, and female breeders, but the Lions would not go out by any ordinary meanes, that could bee vsed, neither would they come neere the trap doore, vntill they were forced out, with burning Links, and when they were come

The King trieth conclusions.

downe into the walke, they were both amayed, and stood looking about them, and gazing up into the ayre, then was there two rackes of mutton throwne vnto them, which they did presently eate: then was there a lusty liue Cocke, cast vnto them, which they presently killed, and sucked his bloud, then was there another liue Cocke cast vnto them, which they likewise killed, but sucked not his bloud.

After that the King caused a liue Lambe to bee easily let downe vnto them, by a rope, and being come to the ground the Lambe lay vpon his knees, and both the Lyons stood in their former places and only beheld the Lambe, but presently the Lambe rose vp, and went vnto the Lyons, who very gently looked vpon him, and smelled on him, without signe of any further hurt, then the Lambe was very softly drawne vp againe, in as good plight as he was let downe.

A Lyon baited with Dogge.

When they caused those Lyons, to bee put into their denne, and another male Lyon only to bee put forth, and two lusty mastiffes, at a by ooze, to be let into him, and they flew fiercely vpon him, and perceiuing the Lyons fierce to bee so defended with haire, as there they could not hurt him, sought onely to bite him by the face, and did so, then was there a third Dogge let in, as fierce, as the fiercest one of them, a brended Dogge, tooke the Lyon by the face, and turned him vpon his backe, but the Lyon spoyled them all, the best Dogge, dyed the next day.

Saturday, the 15. of June, Thomas Dowglas was committed to the Tower of London, having Irons vpon him, and but three dayes before arriued in England, being sent prisoner by the County Palatine of the Rheme.

Tho. Dowglas committed to the Tower.

Vpon Wednesday, the twenty first of June, the foresaid named Thomas Dowglas, was brought from the Tower, vnto the Sessions house without Newgate, and there arraigned, and condemned of high Treason: and the next day was drawne on a Hurdle into Smithfield, and there hanged, and quartered, who at his death acknowledged, and confessed, all that to be true whereof he was Indicted, and Conuicted, and protested before God, that there was not any one person, so much as accessory in any one point of his Treasons, the Abstract whereof followeth.

Tho. Dowglas arraigned.

First, whereas the last yeare Iames Steward was executed for counterfeiting the Kings hand, thinking thereby, to haue procured the great Seale of England, vnto a forged Letters Patents, for the passing and conueying of an hundred markes by the yeare, of Crowne land vnto himselfe, you shall vnderstand that this Dowglas was his Councellour, and Coadiutor, who seeing the foresayd reward apprehended, presently prepared himselfe to gaine wealth, or preferment, by deuice of forraine Employment.

And whereas at first he pretended, to haue obtained the Kings Priuy Signet, from the Lord Secretary of Scotland, by meanes of his brother, that then serued the Lord Secretary. The sayd Dowglas, after his conuiction confessed, that in truth he caused the sayd Priuy Seale to be counterfeited, and therewith sealed fiue letters, vnto fiue Princes of Germany, counterfeiting the Kings hand to euery one of them, and changing his name, in diuers of them.

The first whereof was to the Archbishoppe of Cullen, the Coppie whereof, was deliuered me out of the Record, by Henry Fermor, Esquier, following verbatim, the other fiue were in a manner to the like effect.

Iacobus dei gratia, Magnæ Britaniæ, Franciæ, & Hiberniæ Rex, Fidei defensor, &c. Ernesto dei gratia, Archiepiscopo Colonensi, Principi Electori, primo comiti Palatino ad Rhenum, vtrinsque Bauariæ Duci, Consanguineo, affini, ac fratri Charissimo, amicitiam plurimam, fraternam benevolentiam ac salutē sempiternā Consanguinitis affinitatis & fraternitatis cum deo optimo maximo, per sororis nostræ Elizabethæ defunctæ, Angliæ, Regi-

næ obitum, ad iuris nostrum hereditarium vocare placuit: non deo solum, sed etiam hominibus, nos gratos præbere conuenit: ijs præcipue quos nostræ felicitatis fautores satis scimus. Ac licet parua, huicusque inter nos, intercesserit familiaritas: non tamē immemores amicitiæ, ac fauoris, quam plurimi nostrum apud vos reperiere, cum aduc in Scotia regnaremus: ea de causa generosū hunc Robertū Gray, Camerarium nostrum, ad vos mittere placuit: & quadam vobis oretenus dicenda iniunximus. Nos itaque vt semper bene amet serenitas vestra, certo sibi persuadeat, nihil in nobis deesse: cumque se occasio obtulerit, quin omnem fraternum amorem, quantum in nobis est, referre pollicemur: serenitatem vestram bene valere Cupio.

Ex palatio nostro Westmonasterij, Septimo Nouembris, Anno Salutis humanæ, Sexcentesimo quarto, supra millenum: Regnique nostri, magnæ Britaniæ, Franciæ & Hiberniæ, Secundo.

Serenitatis vestræ amicus, consanguineus, affinis, at Frater Charissimus, IACOBVS REX.

The same in English.

Iames by the grace of God, King of great Britaine, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, vnto Ernestus, by the grace of God Archbishop of Cullen, Prince elector, first Count Palatine of Rheine, Duke of both the Bauares. Our most welbeloued Cozen, kinseman and brother, wisheth much friendshippe, brotherly loue, and healthy euerlasting. Well deere Cozen kinseman, and brother, whereas it hath pleased Almighty God, after the death of our Sister Elizabeth, Queene of England, to call vs to our rightfull inheritance, it well beseemeth vs, to shew our selues thankefull, not onely to God, but euen vnto men also, and especially such as whom we well know, to be fauourers of our felicitie, and Albeit, that small acquaintance, hath as yet bin betwixt vs yet we not diminishfull of the friendshippe and fauour, which many of our Subiects found with you, whilest we yet raigned in Scotland, haue therefore thought good to send vnto you, this Gentleman Robert Gray, our Chamberlaine, with certaine instructions also to be vnto you deliuered by word of mouth, wherefore, that your Excellency, may alwayes loue vs, I would it should bee certainly persuaded nothing to bee on our part wanting, assuring you in requitall thereof, so much as in vs lyeth of all brotherly loue, as occasion shall be offered. And so I wish your Excellency well to fare.

From our Pallace of Westminster, the seuenth of November, in the yeare of our redemption, one thousand fiue hundred and foure, and of our raigne of great Britaine, Fraunce, and Ireland, the second.

Your Excellencies most deere Friend, Cozen, and Kinseman, and Brother, Ia. R.

The second was to Fredericks Counte Palatine of the Rheyne.

The third, to the Lord Archbishoppe of Myer.

The fourth, to the Citie of Cullen.

The fift, to Iohn William, Duke of Cleaue, wherein hee named himselfe Robert Turner.

The last, to Iohn Lord Archbishop of Guauntia, wherein hee named himselfe Robert Gray, of the Priuy Chamber.

For as much as all gifts and graces, proceede onely from God, and that his mercy and benefits haue bayly encreased more and more, whereof euery man is bound, in Religious duetie, to acknowledge euery particular, &c. (especially such as haue the trust, to Register the same, to the honour of whose inestimable goodnesse, and discharge of my duty, being intrueth, the reason of Originall Chronologie.) hauing already in the forty fourth yeare of Queene Elizabeth, mentioned the royall benefit, and Art of Nauigation.

The first knowledge, and comming of diuers things into England.

I haue here thought good to set downe, the Inuention of diuers things in this latter age, together, with the great encrease of generall Commerce, and the vnimaginable enlarging of London, and the Suburbes, within the space of fifte yeares.

Inuention of letters and Characters.

But that it is my meaning, to auoide tedious nesse, I would set downe, the seuerall opinions of the Christians, who differ in opinion amongst themselues, and of heathen writers, touching the deuising and inuenting, of Characters, and Letters, being things that brought the generall knowledge of Philosophie, succession of times, Estate, and Arte, which some say, was first inuented in Assyria, some say in Egypt, some say in Italy, others say in Greece, and about the time of Abraham and Iob, and that three was but seuentene Letters then in vse, neither had they then the vse of knowledge of Printing Inke, or of Paper, but onely writ vpon leaues of date trees, and such like, whereof to this day, the word leafe, or leaues of bookes tooke originall.

Goyn leaues in stead of paper.

And that the word Paper, taketh his name of a tree called papirus, whereof they then made paper, of the pap of rotten linnen, whereof it is now made, and that the word Carta in Latin, beareth the name of the Citie Cartago where it was first brought to perfection, and solde, the generall opinion of all Christians is, that Adam, and his sons before the flood were the first inuenters of letters, and Characters and so much by the way for letters Characters and Paper.

The first, and principall inuention which I according to my promise, will briefely set downe is, the singular Art of Printing, which rare and commodious Art, as Pollidor Virgill, affirmeth was deuised, by Iohn Catenburgus, a Knight of Germany, of the City of Maguntia, in the yeere of our Lord, 1442. and 16. yeeres after that, he deuised Inke to Print withall, in the yere 1458. at which time the professors thereof, and for diuers yeeres after, carried their letters

by and downe sundry Prouinces, in bagges, hanging at their backs, and only printed in Noblemens houses, small pamphlets, Epistles, Epitaphs, and such like, vntill about the yeere, one thousand foure hundred and seauentie, as Raphaell Volateranus, and Don Pedro de Mexia, indifferently agree. There came two brethren out of Germany to Rome, and one Iohnton a Frenchman in their companies into Rome, and there set vp certaine printing presses the first, and the chiefe Bookes that was then printed, was S. Augustines Booke, *De Ciuitate Dei*, and Lactantius, diuine Institutions, this Art of all Artes, is the most kindest, vnto all men of Learning, desert, and qualitie, and most friendly vnto Poets, by meanes whereof, their eminence is encreased, and knowne which happily, else the flowing number of this time, might easily haue beene kept in equipage, with those of former ages.

There is at this time a booke, in the Popes Library, made onely of leaues of trees, plants, or hearbes, which is sayd to come from China, and hath in it Letters, or Characters of that Countrey, in which kingdome of China, as dayly experience sheweth vs, bee many fraile vessels, curious workemanshippe, and fine stuffes that are brought from thence, the people thereof to be ingennious, and skilfull in all handicrafts, yet notwithstanding, there is not any pregnant proofe, that they haue the true vse of Printing, but only certaine number of Letters or Characters as aforesayd, whereof any one of them, with little difference they make it serue, and signifie diuers things, albeit some haue held an opinion that the Chinyans haue had the full number of Letters answerable to the largest Alphabet, with Inke, and Paper, and full perfection of Printing, for more then a thousand yeeres past.

Guniues and Gunpowder.

About the same time, and in the same Countrey where and when Printing was first deuised was also Inuented, the making of Guns, and Gunpowder.

Wine.

In the time of Henry the eight, and Edward the first, Vinteners and Tauerners houses, were not in any such measure, manner nor plenteous store and variety of wines of all Nations in any one mans house, as now at this time there is in euery Vinteners house, for in those dayes wholesome Well-tasted Claret, and red Wine, sold at three Pence the Gallon, the Dutch then sold salt Rennish Wine, as now they doe, and at that time, when Anne of Cleeue came with Greeke and Spanish Wines, Sir Sutcliffe, Chalmley, Greene, and Ballard, the Apothecaries of London then went into those Merchants, and euery man bought such Hundreds, Tonnes, and Hogsheads of those rich Wines, as they thought they should receyue in the Cittie, vnto such as vsually bought of them only for Physicke, and for the Communion Table, and for Speciall Country Chapmen that dwelled in Cities or Speciall good Townes, who likewise solde them againe in the Country for the vse of the Communion, and vnto aged, and sicke persons, and the generall phrase of the people in all Shires at that time was, when I goe to such a City or such a Market Towne, I will goe to the Vintners and buy some Wine.

Apothecaries sold Wine.

In the second yeere of Queene Elizabeth, one thousand fiue hundred and three, her Silke woman Mistris Mountague, presented her Majestie, with a payre of blacke knit Silke stockings, for a new yeeres gift, the which after a few dayes wearing pleased her Highnesse so well, that shee sent for Mistris Mountague, and asked her where she had them, and if shee could helpe her to any more, who answered saying I made them very carefully of purpose only for your Majestie, and seeing these please you so well, I will presently set more in hand, do so quoth the Queene, for indeede I like silke stockings so well because they are pleasant fine & delicate, that henceforth I will weare no more cloth stockings, and from that time vnto her death, the Queene neuer wore any more cloath hose, but only silke stockings, for you shall vnderstand that King Henry the eight, did weare only cloath hose, or hose cut out of all broade peeces of Taffaty, or that by great chance, there came a payre of Spanish silke stockings from Spaine, King Edward the first had a payre of long Spanish silke stockings sent him for a great present, Dukes Daughters then wore Gownes of Satten of Bridges, vpon solemne dayes, Cuthens, and window pillowes of Veluet, and Damaske, &c. were onely vsed in the houses of the chiefe Princes, and Peeres of the Land, though at this day those Ornaments of Estate and other Princely furniture, be very plenteous in most Citizens houses, and many other of the like rankie.

The first silke stockings made in England.

The like Order for Gentlewomen.

Cushens, Pyonts, quilts and bolsters.

In the yeere 1564. Guilliam Boonen, a Dutchman, became the Queenes Coachman, and was the first that brought the vse of Coaches into England.

Coaches.

And after a while, diuers great Ladies, with as great Jealousie of the Queens displeasure, made them Coaches, and rid in them vp and downe the Countries, to the great admiration of all the beholders, but then by little and little, they grew vsuall among the Nobilities, and others of sort, and within twentie yeeres became a great trade of Coach making.

The first Earle of Lincolne that had a Coach.

Long waggons.

About that time, began long Waggons to come in vse, such as now come to London, from Canterbury, Norwitch, Ipswich, Glocester, &c. with Passengers, and commodities.

Carriers.

Lastly, euen at this time 1605. began the ordinary vse of Carroches.

The first vse of Carroches.

In the third yeere of the Raigne of Queene Elizabeth, 1562. began the knowledge and wearing of Lawne and Cambrike, which was then brought into England by very small quantities, and when the Queene had Ruffes made thereof, for her owne Princely wearing, there was none in England could tell how to starch them, for vntill then all the Kinges and Queenes of England wore fine

fine Holland in Ruffes, but the Queene made speciall meanes for some Dutch woman that could starch, and Guilliams wife, was the first starcher the Queene had, and himselfe was the first Coachman.

Starching.

Dutch people come into England.

In the yeere 1563. at which time began the ciuill dissention, in Flanders, and very many Netherlanders fled into this land, with their wiues, Children, and whole Families, and that in such abundance, that whereas before their comming, faire houses in London were plentious, and very easie to be had at low and small rents, and by reason of the late dissolution of Religious houses, many houses in London stood vacant, and not any man desirous to take them at any rate, were all very suddainly inhabited, and stored with Inmates, to the great aduantage of the English Nation, and aduantage of Landlords, and Lease-mongers.

French people become into England.

London sodainly encreased.

And presently after that, beganne the great factions, and brawles in France, by reason whereof, very many Families fled into this land, and chiefly vnto London, all which together with the encrease of our owne Nation, who from that time, haue infinitely conioyned in marriage with Straungers, and the great Freedome, of Traffique, and commerce into France, Spayne Italy, and Turky, &c. that then, and foo many yeeres after, this Land enioyed, was, and is the maine cause of our encrease of wealth, and great Byppes, the vndecernable and new building of goodly houses, shoppes, sheds, and loadgings within the Cittie, in many vacant places, with the conuerting of the Cities Bulwarkes, into houses of pleasure, and the great and wondrous enlarging of the Suburbes, and skirts thereof, namely Ratcliffe, Limehouse, Rederiffe, and Southwarke, Shoredich, Whitechappell, and Saint Katherines, the new buildings about the Tolver Ditch, Holmdolditch, Petty France, Longlane, Great Saint Bartholomewes, Holborn, Chancery lane, and the Strand, Drury lane, now called the Princes Streete, the West side of Saint Martines lane, the building about Saint Iames Parke, with other new encrease of infinite buildings in Tuthill field, and on the South side of Westminster Abbey, besides many others in sundry other places.

Eye cause of London so wealthy and greatnelle.

Princes Street.

The great and sodaine enlarging of all the Innes of Court and Chancery.

The like may well bee iustified, by the ancient, famous, and honourable Innes of Court, and by their sufficient houses, cols, or Quinzies the Innes of Chancerie, the particular increase of euery one of the sayd Innes of Court, and Chancery, both in building, and students, is such and so great since the first yeere of Queene Elizabeth, vnto this present yeere 1614. that except some present, and speciall notice thereof be made, and carefully kept, it will seeme vnto after ages, impossible, and incredible that so manifold an encrease, should be in so short a space.

London in plenty of all commodities recouerly all other Cities.

Dangers from Egypt, Arabia, India, and diuers other places Silkes from Persia Spain, China, Italy, and many other Prouinces; fine linnen from Germany, Flanders, Holland, Artois, and Hainault war and tar, pitch, Tarre, Waxes, Cables, and Hony, from Denmarke, Poland, Swethland, Russia, and other Northen Countries, and the superfluities in abundance of French and Reynish Wines; the vnmeasurable, and vncomparable encrease of all which commodities, comming into this Cittie, and the encrease of houses, and inhabitants, within the compasse and tearme of fiftie yeeres, is such and so great, as were there not now two third parts of the people yet living, hauing bin eye witnesses of the premises, and the bookes of the Custome house, which remaine extant, the truth and difference of all things afore mentioned were not to be Iustified, and beleeued.

Fiue Yeeres not knowne.

Fellowes, or Haberdashers had not then any gloues imbroydered, or trimmed with Golde, or Silke, neither Golde nor Imbroydered Greek and Hangers, neither could they make any coftly wash or perfume, vntill about the fourteenth or fifteenth yeere of the Queene, the right honorable Edward de vere Earle of Oxford, came from Italy, and brought with him Gloues, sweete bagges, a perfumed leather Jerkin, and other pleasant things, and that yeere the Queene had a paire of perfumed Gloues trimmed onely with foure Rolles, or Roses of coloured Silke, the Queene tooke such pleasure in those Gloues, that she was pictured with those Gloues vpon her handes, and for many yeeres after, it was called the Earle of Oxfords perfume.

The Earle of Oxford.

Cost six shillings.

After the Royall Exchange, which is now called the Eye of London, had beene builded two or three yeeres, it stood in a manner Empte, and a little before her Maiesty was to come thither to view the beautie thereof, and to giue it a Name, Sir Thomas Gresham, in his owne person, went twise in one day round about the vpper pawne, and besought those few shoppekeepers then present, that they would furnish, and adorne with wares, and wax lights, as many shops, as they either could or would, and they should haue all those shops so furnished rent free that yeere, which otherwayes at that time was fortie shillings a shoppe by the yeere, and within two yeeres after hee rayled that rent, vnto

The Royall Exchange.

foure marke a yeere, and within a while after that, he raised his rent of every shoppe, unto foure pound ten shillings a yere, and then all shops were well furnished according to that time, for then the Millioners, or Haberdashers in that place, solde Pouse-trappes, Bird Cages, Sponing-horns, Lanthornes and Jewes trumpes, &c. there was also at that time that kept shoppes in the upper pawne of the Royall Exchange, Armorours, that sold both olde and new Armor, Apothecaries, Booke-sellers, Goldsmiths, and Glasse-sellers, although now it is as plentifully stored, with all kinde of rich wares and fine commodities, as any particular place in Europe, unto which place many forraine Princes daply send, to be well served of the best sort.

Cheape side.

At that time Cheapside, which is worthily called, the Beauty of London, was on the North side, very meanely furnished, in comparison of the present estate.

The first that openly taught starching in England.

In the yeere one thousand fine hundred sixty and foure, Mistris Dinghen, van den plasse, borne at Mænen in Flaunders, daughter to a worshipfull Knight of that Province, with her husband came to London, for their better safeties, and there professed her selfe a Starcher, wherein shee excelled, unto whom her owne Nation presently repaired, and imployed her, and payed her very liberally, for her worke.

Some very few, of the best and most curious wives of that time, observing the neatenesse, and delicacy of the Dutch for whitenesse, and fine wearing of linnen, made them Cambricke Ruffes, and sent them to Mistris Dinghen, to starch, and after a while they made them ruffes of Lawn, which was at that time, a stuffe most strange, and wonderfull, and thereupon rose a generall scoffe of by-word, that shortly they would make Ruffes, of a Spiders Web, and then they began to send their Daughters, and neatest kinswomen, to Mistris Dinghen, to learne how to starch, her usuall price, was at that time, foure or five pound, to teach them how to starch, and twenty shillings how to seeth starch.

This Mistris Dinghen was the first that ever taught Starching in England.

The Bandora devised.

In the fourth yere of Queen Elizabeth, John Rose dwelling in Widewell, devised and made an Instrument with wyer strings, commonly called the Bandora, and left a Son, far excelling himselfe in making Bandores, Voyall de Gamboes, and other Instruments.

The first making of wouen stockings in England.

In the yeere, one thousand fine hundred sixtie and foure, William Rider, being an apprentife with Master Thomas Burder, at the Bridge foote, duer, against Saint Magnus Church, chanced to see a paire of knit Worsted stockings, in the lodging of an Italian Merchant, that came from Mantua, bespreaded those stockings, and caused other stockings to be made by them, and these were the first woollen stockings made in England.

The Earle of Pembrooke the first nobleman that ware woollen stockings.

Within few yeeres after, began the plentuous making both of Gersey, and Woollen stockings, and so in short space they waxed common.

Merchants sold by retaile.

The Dutch Merchants, who onely at that time sold Lawne and Cambricke, did cut and retayle, unto all shoppe keepers, both Lawne and Cambricke, by ells yeards, halfe ells, and halfe yeards, for there was not then one shopkeeper amongst forty, durst buy a whole peece, either of Lawne or Cambrick, and at that time there was not so much Lawne, and Cambricke to be had in all the Merchants houses in London, as at this day may easily bee had in one Linnen drapers shop.

Within few yeeres after, diners Noble personages, and other of speciall note, made them Ruffes, a full quarter of a yeard deepe, and 12. Lengths in one Ruffe: this fashion in London, was called the French Fashion, but when Englishmen came to Paris, the French knew it not, and in derision called it the English monsker.

The first use of the diffaffe in England.

And whereas untill about the twelfe or thirteenth yeere of Queene Elizabeth the auncient English fight: of Sword and Buckler, was onely had in use; the Bucklers then being but a foote broad, with a pike of foure or five inches long then they began to make them full halfe ell broad with sharpe pikes ten or twelve Inches long, wherewith they meant either to breake the Swords of their enemies, if it hit upon the pike or els suddenly to run within them and stabbe, and thrust their Buckler with the pike into the face, arme, or body of their adversary; but this continued not long, every Haberdasher then solo Bucklers.

The old Engl. fight was Sword and Buckler.

Long tucks, Rapier and dagger.

For shortly after, began long Tucks, and long Rapiers, and he was held the greatest Gallant, that had the deepest Ruffe, and longest Rapier: the offence to the Eye of the one, and the hurt into the life of the Subiect, that came by the other: caused her Majestie to make Proclamation against them both, and to place Selected graue Citizens, at every gate to cut the Ruffes, and breake the Rapiers points, of all passengers that entended a yeard in length of their Rapiers, and a naple of a yeard in length of their Ruffes.

The Queene much offended by wearers of Rapiers.

Walter John Tyce, dwelling neere Shoreditch Church, the first Englishman that deuised, and attayned the perfection of making all manner of Tufted Taffeties, Cloth of Tissue, wrought Velvets, branched Sattins and all other kinds of curious silke stuffes.

Velvet and silke stuffes made by Englishmen.

In the yeere 1599. was deuised, and perfected the Art of knitting, or weauing silke stockings, Waistcoates, and diuers other things, by engines, or steele Loomes, by William Lee, master of Arts, of Saint Johns College, in Cambridge, and after that hee went into France, where hee obtained a Patteut of the King, and there taught them that Mistery, his seruants were entertained in forraine Nations, as in Spayne, Venice, and in Ireland, and in other places, where they taught the secret of their Art, and so it went through the world.

A newe kind of weauing.

And albeit the making & weauing of woollen cloth in England, be very ancient, and beyond record, yet it is most certaine that the English weauers neither did, nor could make sufficient cloth to serue the English Nation, for which cause in the 2. yeere of Edward the third there was special permition, and liberty giuen, for the bringing in of forraine Clothes to serue this land. After that, the King drew in Dutchmen and Frenchmen, and made them teach his native people a more perfection of cloth making, and then the King restrained all his wool from being transported upon great penalties, and prohibited, the bringing in of any forraine cloathes upon paine of forfaiture, within few yeeres after that, came many Weauers out of sundry Prouinces, and dispersed themselues into diuers parts of this Realme. In the first yeere of Richard the third, began the making of cloathes full two yardes broad within the list, which before were but seauen quarters and vnder, and the said Size of seuen quarters of all broad clothes, was confirmed in the 27. yeere of Henry the 8. About the 20. yeere of Henry the seuenth, Anthony Bonvise an Italian came into this land, and taught English people to spin with a distaffe, at which time began the making of Denonthire Kersies, and Cotall clothes.

Weauers and clothing.

A Greatis teration.

Great Ruffes.

Boyes.

About the first yeare of Queene Elizabeth, began the making of Boyes in England by Dutchmen.

About the beginning of Henry the 8. began the making of Spanish felts in England, by Spaniards and Dutchmen, before which time and long since, the English vsed to ride and goe Winter and Summer in knit caps, cloth hoods, and the best sort in silke thrumb hatts.

Spanish felts

The 2. yeere of King Iames, the feltmakers of London obtained a strong Corporation, and then they hired themselues a hall neere Christ Church, and thus much in briefe for these matters, now follow they other.

In wicked vnlawfull assembly of Ministers.

The 2. of this moneth of July, 1605. Anno Reg. 3. seuenteene Scottish ministers, contrary to the Kings expresse command, held a solemne assembly at Aberdeene in Scotland, who being for the same conuented before the Councell of Scotland, vtterly denied, not only their Lord. Bishops authoritie in that behalfe, but the Kings also, saying, that in matters Ecclesiasticall they neither owe, nor ought to acknowledge themselues in any subiection, either to the King or to any temporall Councell, and that all spirituall differences should be tried & determined by the Church, as competent Iudges, &c. iustifying their voluntary meeting to be good, and warrantable by the word of God, alleadging the great assembly of the Apostles, without knowledge or consent of any temporall estate, &c. for which riot, and for denying the Kings supremacie in causes Ecclesiasticall, six of the chiefe the 10. of January following, at Blackneste were arraigned and condemned of high Treason.

A Proclamation against Pyrats and peace breakers.

Rodulphus, the 2. of that name Emperor of the Romanes, sent into the Kings Maiestie an Embassie, the most illustrious and high borne Prince, George Lodwicke Landgraue of Lichtenbourg, Earle of Halis Lord Chamberlaine to the Emperor, and Prince of the Empire, attended with three Earles, one Baron, twenty foure Gentlemen of note, twelue musketteires, and others to the number of 100. persons, they came to London vpon Friday the first of July, and were lodged in Lombard streete.

A Proclamation.

Monday the 2. of July, the King made Proclamation for the recalling home of all Saylers, Pyrats and Souldiers serning at Sea, vnder forraine protection, robbing & spoyling the Kings friends contrary to the knowne Articles of peace, this is the second Proclamation to that purpose.

The King commeth from Windsor to White-hall, to giue audience and entertainment vnto the Emperours Ambassador.

Vpon Friday the 12. of July the King came from Windsor to White-hall, to giue audience and entertainment vnto the Emperours Ambassador.

The next day being Saturday, the aforenamed Prince Lodwicke with his traine, was by the Duke of Lenox, accompanied to the Court, where Prince Lodwicke, made an Oration in high Dutch, and then deliuered his letters vnto the Kings Maiestie, the which with himselfe and Traine the King receiued and entertained in all loue and kindnesse.

Amongst other matters of his Embassy, these were three Articles

Articles.

First a gratulation from the Emperor vnto the Kings Maiestie, for the peacefull obtayning and enioying this Kingdome his lawfull inheritance, and for the preseruation, and continuance of the amitie that hath been betweene the Emperour, and the late deceased Queene Elizabeth.

Secondly for the continuation of that Treaty which was begun in the Citie of Breame, a little before the Queene died, concerning the Hanse Townes and their Priuiledges.

Thirdly, for ayd and assistance against the common enemy of Christendome namely the Turke.

The King feasteth Prince Lodwicke.

Monday the 15. of July, the King in all state, loue and kindnesse, feasted Prince Lodwicke at his owne table, the Queen and Prince Henry being there present, the King both drancke and pledged a healthy unto the Emperiall majesty of the Emperor, after dinner they saw Bearbaiting, and Bull-baiting, and then returned vnto their lodging, and the next day after the King began his Progresse to Oxford.

Prince Lodwicke departeth.

The two and twentieth of July, Prince Lodwicke imbarked for Calice, the King gaue him a present of plate, valued at fifteene hundred pound.

The Kings bounties.

The foresaid Lionelle whelped two yong Lyons the 27. of July.

A Proclamation.

The tenth of August the King made Proclamation to repeale the Disimploiment of lands, goods, and other things, given to charitable vses.

Strange cruelty.

Walter Calverly, of Calverly in Yorkshire, Esquier, murthred 2. of his yong children, stabbed his wife into the body with full purpose to haue murthred her, and in Cruelty went from his house to haue slain his youngest child at

Nurse, but was presented. For which fact at his triall in Yorke, he stood mute, and was iudged to be prest to death, accordyng to which iudgement he was executed at the Castell of Yorke, the 1st of August.

A Special Ambassador from Denmarke.

Christianus the fourth, King of Denmarke, hauing three yeeres since received the order of Knighthood of the Garter, sent Henricus Ramelius, his principall Secretary and Counsellor of Estate, attended onely with thirty Gentlemen, and twenty others of inferior nature vnto his Maiestie, to be solemnly enstalled in his right: which Ambassador arriued at London the last of August, and at the Kings appointment and charge lodged, and dieted, at Somerset house: attended, and serued by the Kings Gentlemen vshers, 6 Sewers 3 women of the Guard, 6 Grooms of the Chamber, their meate dressed by his Highnesse chiefe Cookes. He was enstalled at Windsor the 8. of September, after, Feasted at Hampton Court the 15 of September, and embarked for Denmarke the 28. of September.

The L. Archbishop of Canterbury made a Bishop Counseller.

Sunday the twenty nine of September, Doctor Bancroft, Lord Archbishop of Canterbury was sworne a Priuy Councellor of Estate at Hampton Court.

Crocodiles aliue in England.

Captaine Christopher Newport brought two young Crocodiles, and a wild Boze from Hispaniola, and were presented alme vnto his Maiestie.

Sir Thomas Smith returneth from Moscouia.

Sir Thomas Smith returned out of Russia about the twentieth of September, being the last yeere, by his Maiestie sent Lord Ambassador, with Commission vnder the great Seale vnto Borris Theodorowich the Emperor, vnto whom he performed the charge imposed, and became so gracious with the Emperor, that he fully obtained what soeuer he desired: and hauing dispatched his dispatch, he departed, from the great Citie of Moico, and came downe by Wlodga, vnto Vollogda, where he stayed till the yce brake vppe, in which space the aforesayd Borris died, and his sonne Theodor Borilowich succeeded, vnto whom all the Nobilitie and State swore fealtie vpon knowledge whereof, the Lord Ambassador speedily dispatched his letters, which the yong Emperor most kindly accepted, and detained present with me, he would willingly write what euer his Father had promised: which sayd Theodor lyued also withe in the space of eight weekes after his Father, and Demetrius his brother, came to the assistance Duke Wasilowich the second, which said Demetrius hauing in armes against both the Emperors aforesayd, presently vpon the arriuall of his Lord Ambassador, [illegible]

The Lord Chancellor, Master Treasurer, with others of the Councell, hasting [illegible] with Emperor of the Empire, [illegible] his Kingdome, and of his diuerse carriage, and the condition of his Subiects: the Lord Dembelad taught with [illegible] Countries with the Lord Ambassador, with Counsellors to giue him an Audience [illegible]

The very words of the Messenger.

Idus and amitie with King *Iames* of England, aboue all Kings in the world, promising, that when his Daughter was Crowned, hee would send his especiall Ambassador vnto King *Iames*. This message was deliuered when the Ambassador was come downe to Archangell to be imbarked for England, but contrary to his purpose and promise, the ancient diuine prouerbe was fulfilled in him, to wit, Man purposeth and God disposeth: being by vntimely death and his Countries disquiet, not only preuented of the premises, but of lundry others his Kingly determinations: concerning the manner of whose death, with the death of Borris and his sonne, and the aduancement of a third person to the Imperiall throne, all which happened within the space of one yeere, hereafter followeth, with some other things of note, which happened of late yeares in Ru[illegible]

A briefe relation of Russia.

The Estate of Russia, and the death of their Emperours in one yeare.

After the death of Basilius, great Duke of Moscouia succeeded in the regall throne, Knez Euan Vassiliwich, his onely Sonne and heire apparant, who in processe of time married seuen wiues, but the issue he had was only by two of them. the first whereof brought forth two male children, Euan and Theodor, who after was Emperor, by the latter wife yet liuing, hee had the Prince Demetrius, who afterwards was sayd to haue beene slaine by the procurement of Borris. Phedrowich Godonou, a man though of a meane descent, yet at length obtained the Crowne, which hee had long desires: whereof more God willing, shall bee sayd hereafter.

Knez Euan eldest son to this Emperor, liues to wife a Noble Gentlewoman, against whom his Father concealing dislike notwithstanding his former consent to the marriage, caused them to be diuorced, and that Noblewoman to become a professed Nunne: the Prince liued not long after, but died as it is thought a violent and vnnaturall death.

Theodor his second sonne espoused the sister of the aforesayd Borris Godonou, esteeming his desire aboue his dignitie, and with her liued all his life, notwithstanding that his father would haue done it like vnto his wife as he had formerly done by his eldest sons: but this man would by no meanes assent to his purpose, considering the weake ground of his fatherdetary.

Fiftie and foure yeeres swayed he the Emperiall Sceptre, in which time, what tiranies he wanted, what Countries he subdued, as also his fatherlie vertues and vices, would aske a larger discourse. This I say that he was the first that broke vpon him the name of Tcher, which is as much as Emperor, clayming that title by the conquest of Cazan, and Astracan, they say the Kings Interpret hee brought presents in abundance Britaine, and Poland, Holdeers Celtic, and that [illegible] hee [illegible] he [illegible] he [illegible] his [illegible] his second [illegible] yeares, eldest

eldest liuing: ouer whom for his great imbecillitie, and weake capacity, vnable to gouerne so large Territories, (especially where the Princes word is a Law, and his Commaund a Statute.) His father ordayned foure principall Noblemen, to whom he committed as well the care of his son, as the charge of the Kingdome: but little enioyed these Noble personages their rule or their liues, being soone after bereaued of both, by the Lord Borris, brother in Law to the Emperor, who now began to flourish, and by meanes of the Empresse his sister, became at length to be the master of the house (the principallest place of honor in that Countrey) and consequently the onely man in all the Empire.

But his aspiring thoughts, not contented with that alone, aymed at no lesse then the Imperiall Crown, to which he must wade through streames of blood, as he did indeed, for first he practised against the lines of those foure Nobles, the Kings protectors, the one of them, Vncle to the Emperor that now raigneth, he caused to be smoaked to death: the second for feare became a Fryer: the third dyed of griefe, and the fourth being a man of small power, to hinder his intendements, he permitted to liue, yea, (and that his murthers might be the lesse suspected) he protected him against the rage of the Commons, who deadly hated him as the chiefe instrument of the last Emperors tyranny, whose especiall fauorite he was: a thing of note that called the cruelty of Borris, was Prince Demetrius, whole life denyed what the other desired: but within a while he was bereft thereof, by the procurement of Borris, at a Citie called Ouglets, distant from the Moico about 130. myles, the hate of whose death comming to the eares of his brother the Emperor, he bitterly bewayled the same three daies together, silly man not once dreaming, that he dyed by the meanes of Borris, who yet enioyed not the fruition of diuers, who gessed him the author of that cruell deed, whereof he hauing vnderstanding, knew no better meanes to driue men as well from deploring the Princes death (sayd to be slaine) as suspecting his truth, then to fire their houses in diuers parts of the Citie, which he secretly did, and afterwards to gratifie the people, caused their houses to bee built against at the Emperors charge, which so well pleased them, that whatsoeuer they thought, they ceased to murmure any more against Borris.

Fiftene yeeres raigned this Emperor Theodor, and dying without issue, left the Kingdome void of succession, which happened well for Borris, who was presently chosen King, by the generall consent of all men; but he denied that saluerly, which he wished intirely, yea, and he sayd further, that a Fryers cowle was fitter for him then a Kings Crowne, which hee vtterly refused to take vpon him, but hee well knew what his denyall would aduantage him, for whereupon the people cry, no King but Borris, who's wife and politique gouernment they had long experienced, desiring the Empresse to giue them her brother to bee their Emperour, then whom they knew no man fitter. This hauing wonne to condescend to their requests, he was elected, and forthwith Crowned Emperor of Russia, the Kingdome confirmed to him and his heires for euer: and by the way to speak somewhat of this Noblemans proceedings, in the whole course of his gouernment, as also of the qualitie and disposition of his mind, and body, sure it is that for naturall politie (for so I call and terme it in him, being vtterly voyd of litterall knowledge) few or none euer went before him, intricate his deepe deuises and subtile plots to obtaine the Crowne being at first but an ordinary attendant at Court, yet continuing to places of honour, spared nothing that he surmised might any way further his purpose, which at length effected as himselfe desired: louing and liberall he was to all that sued to him for fauour, and withall so affable, yet intermingled with grauitie, that he wrought both loue and feare in the hearts of his beholders.

Of countenance he was to his friends amiable and pleasant, but to his foes sterne and of a cruell aspect, which he would notwithstanding often times smother and restraine his passions vntill such time as hee obtained the Crowne, when he might with more boldnesse make his eyes the messengers of his heart, nor can I let passe as a slender point of wisedome and politicie in this Noble Prince, his loue to Strangers, especially (that it may bee sayd without lying) to the Englishmen, whom he preferred before all other nations whatsoeuer: but howsoeuer he was constant ouer the strangers, yet much suspected his owne people, and would often complaine of their falshood, whom (whether it were the experience he had of their inconstant dealing, or the torment of his owne guiltie conscience, I haue not to say) once hee tooke but little ioy in wearing the Crowne, especially towards his latter time, in which he seldome came abroad, which, and his insatiable coueteousnesse, now far greater then euer it was his former bounteе, lost him more hearts then euer he gained.

He had not raigned full three yeeres, but hee beganne to practise to make himselfe the Noblest, as well in blood, as estate, which how could by no meanes be, but by extirpating the houses and families of all that exceded him in noble race: and first hee began with a Gentleman of a royall descent, Competitor to the Crowne, suggesting by false accusations, many trecherous plots entended to haue bin practised by that Nobleman, his wife, his brethren, and all his allies, against his Crowne and dignity, yea and the lines alio of himselfe, and his Queene, and Prince, who should all haue beene destroyed by roots, and braches, which he was so ledged, those noble personages had procured to worke vpon by inchantment, how true it was the Lord knoweth, once those Gentlemen were miserably entreated: the eldest to saue his life became a Fryer, all the rest dyed in banishment onely the youngest still liueth, and is now restored to his former honor.

The murmuring of the Commons, for the wrong done to the Noble men, made Burris desist from offering further violence to others, who else, had no doubt, drunke of the same cup, yet he forbare not to oppresse the grudge he bare them without cause, by his seruile subiects on he kept them in, nor was himselfe free from iealous thoughts, allwayes ready to mistrust the worst by them: In briefe thus he reigned and thus hee lived the space of seauen yeres, at what time the threefolde yeeres of Famine (whereof for continuance in extremitie the like hath seldome beene heard of) were now ended, and that he thought himselfe secure on all sides allwell by peace with the Pole (whereto himselfe and the King were lately solemnely sworn for one and twenty yeres: as also beeing in teames of amitie with all other neighbouring Princes, to diuers of whom he had sent his Ambassadours for his childrens marriage, though nothing effected, and euen now when hee attended the answere of the King of Georgia, to whom hee had sent to the like end: Euen now came newes to the Psoico of Prince Demetrius who was sayd to be slaine, yet escaping away into Poland, came with foure thousand men onely to the borders, requiring aydes to recouer his estate usurped by Burris, the suit that came to him, were the fields Cazzacks, Souldiers both in warre and peace retained continually in the Emperors pay: and vnto whom, who so long as they were payed duly, serued faithfully, but now hauing their wages detained foure yeres together, through the wretched mind of Simeon Mekwich Godonowa, hating of a detected humour yet ouer-laden with honours by Burris, with whom by reason that all men feared his informations, wherewith he so often acquainted the Emperor, hee was the onely man in fauor, nor was the Souldiers salary detained without the consent, and peraduenture command of Burris, who towards his latter end was so led by the perswasions of this man, and withall thinking to redeeme his former misdeedes with large gifts to the Church, that hee altogether neglected those whom hee ought most to haue regarded: yea and rewarded for their faithfull seruice, and losse of their deerest blood, spent in the defence of his wurped title.

This occasioned his souldiers reuolt, who to the number of eight thousand, in good equipage went to the forsaid Demetry, who notwithstanding that his forces were small, yet he had store of treasure lent him by diuers Nobles of Poland, especially by the Palatine of Sendiuere, whose daughter hee promised to marry if he euer obtained the Crowne, besides hee was saluted by the boyarers with 50000. markes, a 10000. able horse, taking him for the true Prince Demetrius whatsoeuer he was, so much he relyed vpon his souldiers valour, and his pretended title that within two moneths he besieged and won many Townes, yea and with that handfull of men, had giuen the ouerthrow to Burris his army of 200000. sent against him, hadde not a stratagem of fiue hundred strangers amongst the Muscouians by giuing them a watch-word in the Dutch language prevented the same, by which policy the Cazzacks, but chiefly the Poles taking the most part for strangers whose valour they had after approued, turned their backes, and left the field. Demetry himselfe very narrowly escaping, yet would he not surcease his claims, but seconding his attempt, in fine, by the reuolt of Burris: his armie, he won the field and consequently the Crowne: but ere this newes came to Psoico, Burris who well perceiued how his peoples hearts were inclined, departed this life as it was thought by poyson, which his owne hands ministred vnto him, the 13. day of April. 1605 in the eight yere of his raigne.

The 11. of June following, his wife and son were openly shewed dead, smothered by expresse commaund from Demetry, till which they were effected to be denied to come to the Psoico, the chiefe and Imperiall Citie: The daughter of Burris onely remained aliue, who receiuing at Demetrys handes, 500. marks, and there withal a proffer of marriage with any one she would chose of the Nobles, she became a Nouall Nun in a Monastery farre from the Psoico.

Thus in lesse then foure moneths this supposed Prince ended his warre and begunne his raigne presently after: whose comming to the Psoico, the body of Burris was taken by out of the Sepulchre of the Russian Kings, where it was first layd together with his Queene and Prince, interred in an obscure place of buriall without either signe or monument of mourning or memory.

The 21. of July 1605. was this Conquerour Crowned by the name of Demetry Ivanowitch, and forthwith began to settle an estate of government according to his owne liking. Some after the Pope sent to him his Ambassador with a faire present, viz. a rich chaine and Crucifixe and a picture, as also foure stately horses, willing him to remember his promise, which (as it after appeared by the contract betwixt him and the Pope) was to establish Popery, allwell by fire as by faire meanes within the space of a twelvemoneth after his comming to the Crowne: what answere the Ambassador had is not knowne, but he was soone dismissed, and preparation made for receiuing the Palatines daughter of Sandiuere, assianced to the Emperour by his Ambassador lately returned out of Poland, in briefe she came to the Psoico with her father & brother, and a great traine to the number of 7000. persons, & hauing solemnly married, and the Crowned in the Cathedrall Church of our Lady, the 9. day after, this Demetry was Slaine, vpon the 17. of May, ending his Coronation, and with him to the number of 1100. Polonians sute for a bride honorably bid, and afterward sent to her fathers lodging, with whom as yet she remaineth in the Psoico.

The body of this false Emperor was dragged into the market place, where three dayes together it lay, for a spectacle to all that would view the same, and then he was carried out to be buried, and after burnt as

as well for the hatred they bare him, reputing him as a counterfeit: as also for that the night ensuing his death, there fell so great a frost, that the coyne will neere two hundred miles about the Citie, was all spoyled, which they imputed to his sorcery, vsed as they say, allwell in death as life.

Foure dayes after was Kneaz Vassily Evanowich (who now raigned) elected Emperor, and forthwith Crowned, at whose hands as we English men haue receiued especiall fauours, so wee cannot but applaud his aduance: And thus haue you heard the briefe relation of those mighty Emperors, their liues and deaths: with the election and establishment of the fourth, all which happened within the space of thirteene moneths.

The Patriarch of Greece resigneth his Patriarchship and dignitie vnto the Archbishop of Psico.

In the yere 1588. the Patriarch of the Greeke Church, vpon priuate discontentment came from Chio, *alias* Sio in Greece, vnto the City of Psoico: And vpon seuerious consideration of twenty thousand pounds, hee not onely translated his Sea, but absolutely yeelded and resigned all his Ecclesiasticall Iurisdiction and dignity from himselfe, and all his successors, and conferred the same vnto the Archbishop of Psico. Whereupon the Emperor of Russia, in his reuerend respect towardes his new dignified Clergie, not only allowed the alteration of the stile, and title of his Archbishop, who for many hundred yeeres before themselues highly graced with the ancient stile and title of Archbishop of Psico, but also ratified & confirmed the agreement betwixt the Patriarch and the Archbishop, and from that time the Archbishop and his successors, are and haue beene called the most holy Patriarch of all Russia, and for the more constant continuance, and better maintenance of their new established Patriarchie. The Emperour forthwith encreased his reuenues, landes, and possessions, and obtained vnder him foure Archbishops, whereas formerly there was only one Archbishop, and one Archbishop. And it is written from diuers Prouinces, that the old Patriarch aforesayd, who vpon discontent translated his Sea, and for some sold his spirituall promotion and Graces, within a while after as hee returned backe towardes Grecia, purposing with his money speedily to aduance himselfe, and his family, the Turkes robbed him and slew him.

The practise of blowing vp the Parliament house in *Anno* 3.

Whereas for more then thirtie yeeres of the raigne of Queene Elizabeth, especially during the hostilitie with Spaine: many English Iesuits incessantly solicited diuers forreine Princes, to attempt inuasion vpon England, retaining opinion amongst themselues, that the sayd diuision of the Queene, with other Christian Princes, was very auayleable for their generall good, allwell because it vnpeached any further proceeding against them, and their faction, as hopefull through continuall hostilitie and vexation of Warres, either to subdue the Kingdome, or force the Queene vnto toleration: whose sundry vnnaturall practises, and treasonable attempts remaine freshly in memory, and though many of those old plotters, and practisers be dead, whose deepe deuices neuer attained desired effect: yet are there others of more violent & fiery spirits sprung vp in their place, amongst which of most note are, Archer Croswell, Oliwell, Tesmond, and other Iesuites residing in forreigne parts, chiefly within the Dominions of Spaine, attending from time to time all opportunities to preferre, and solicite any thing tending to the disturbance of this State, and to that purpose in the highest degree: the parties aforesayd with others, in the last yeere of the sayd Queene, with the speciall ayde of Henry Garnet, a principall Iesuite, residing in England, procured Robert Catesby, and Francis Tresham Esquires, to send Thomas Winter Gentleman, vnto the King of Spaine, which sayd Winter vsed all meanes possible to intreate the sayd King, forth with to furnish a royall Nauy, for present inuasion vpon England, and to land his men in Milford hauen in Wales, promising the King by whom he should be receiued & seconded by the English Catholiques: and thereupon in consideration of their importunity and protestations, and the long continued open hostility with the Queene, he promised not only to make inuasion, but withall to send fifty thousand pound into England, to be disposed by the aforenamed Robert Catesby, and others for leuying forces, and making prouision against the time of inuasion: but it happened that whilest this b sinesse was in contriuing, the Queene of England dyed.

A practise vpon the death of the Queen.

In the moneth of March, in which the Queen dyed, Catesby sent Christopher Wright into Spaine, to negotiate with the King of the late purpose preferred by Winter, vnto whom the King answered, saying: Your olde Queene is dead, with whom wee had Warres, and you haue a new King, with whom wee haue euer been in good peace, loue, and amitie, and for confirmation of our mutuall continuance thereto, we haue sent our speciall Commissioners, and whilst wee see what will become of this Treatie, wee will not hearken vnto any other course whatsoeuer, leaning you to your best fortunes, and wishing as much good to the English Catholiques, as to our proper Subiects, &c.

This determination of the King, was nothing pleasing vnto Catesby, who perceiuing the peace likely to goe forward, without any fauourable clause, or Article, concerning the English Catholiques, and that the King of Spaine, and Archdukes fought onely their generall good, without any respect of him and his adherents, began to cast about againe, how o' themselues they might perfourme some domestique exployt, to ease them of their greeuances, sith all forreine friendship had forsaken them, and hauing recall himselfe to mind, who were the greatest Malecontents, and most resolute spirits, both at home and abroad, fit, tell for his purpose, burning in agony of spirit, vntill hee had, as he thought deuised some speedie way, either to restore the Catholique Religion, or eternize his name, as appeared by his

his owne woords at his death: At last resolued himselfe, that now he had continued the onely meane, without the ayd of any forreine Prince, to change the State, and restoare the Romane Catholique Religion, hauing before received encouragement from Sir Wil. Stanley Knight, Hugh Owen gentleman, and William Baldwin Iesuite, remaining in the Low Countries, with direct notice of diuers others, most apt, and resolute Gentlemen, such as were familiar with extreamest stratagems, and ready to undergoe any hazard for the Catholike cause, all which notwithstanding, Catesby yet concealed his purpose from all men.

The Kings first Parliament ended in July, the second yeere of his raigne, wherein Catesby, Percy, Wright, and the rest, seeing therein nothing done to their ease or content, began to consider of such encouragement as they had receiued from Flaunders in June the yeere before: and Percy sware hee would undertake to kill the King, whereunto Catesby answered, if you doe kill him, it is to no purpose, in respect of the Generall cause, but stay a while, for I haue deuised a fairre fairer course, and readier way to effect what we desire, and that without the helpe of any forreine Nation: but as yet he did not impart his secret proiect to any man, vntill after the returne of Thomas Winter, whom hee sent to conferre with the Constable of Castil, being now in Flaunders, readie to come for England, to take the Kings oath for confirmation of the Articles of peace, agreed vpon by the Commissioners, all which being consummate, and the parties before named, observing that the purpose of this peace, was onely for the Vniuersall good of all Christendome, without respect of any particular place, or people, and therewithall noting the carelesse inclination of the Constable, to their desire, which was earnestly to moue the King of England in fauour of the Catholiques, as al o that the Generall peace would procure a continuall meane for their aduersaries, to procede at all times in any course whatsoeuer, against the English Catholiques, and prouent them of all hope of succour and sustentation from any forraine Potentate: and from thistime, one increased another, speedily to attempt some hope of remedy for themselues, by themselues: Percy more prone then diuers other, with a great oath, Kay, let vs now doe something, and not alwayes talke.

The contriuance.

Catesby being now resolued to put in practise his long concealed proiect, being well assured he had found fit persons for his purpose, acquainted Thomas Piercy, Thomas Winter, John Wright and Guydo Fawkes, with his deuice, viz. to vnderminte the vpper Parliament house, and to blow it vp with gun-powder, at the very instant of the great assembly, the 7. of February next following, hauing before giuen them the oath of secrecy, which they as willingly embraced as his heart desired: and after that for more assurance of secrecy they receiued the Sacrament. This combustible combination thus concluded, each man prepares to doe his vtmost in the enterprise, like those headstrong Horses, of whom the Kingly Prophet speakes, bend themselues to run a deiperate course, respectlesse what misery might befall on King, Country, or Common Wealth, and if their deepe deuice, borrowed from the lowest hell, had taken effect, yet the chiefe purpose of their proiect, if well weighed, had beene neuer the nearer, but rather further of, with apparant likelihood of sudden slaughter of themselues, their faction and their friends.

Presently vpon the compact aforesayd, Percy hired a house close adioyning to the vpper Parliament, and from this time vnto the day of discouery, by a generall consent amongst themselues, Guydo Fawkes changeth his whole name, and is called Iohn Iohnson, Master Percies man, and about the beginning of December, those fiue began the mine, hauing at first entrance, made competent prouision for twenty dayes, of wine, beere, and baked meates, because their being there should neither be seene, nor suspected of any, neither came they foorth vntill Christmas eue, and for certaine dayes ceast their labour, then they tooke into their ayde Christopher Wright, hauing likewise taken Oath and Sacrament for secrecie, and so about the twentieth of January, they began to worke a fresh and for that they would be secure from any sudden discouery, or apprehension they caused Iohn Iohnson, whom they knew to bee an excellent skilfull and resolute Souldier, to keepe warp Sentinell, who continually gaue them warning vpon the least signe of suspition, when to cease, and when to worke againe: they had also furnished themselues with weapons, shot and powder, being determined rather to die there in their owne defence, then to be apprehended. When they came to the foundat on of the wall, which was three yards thicke, and found it a matter of great difficultie they tooke vnto them Robert Winter, after hee had taken oath and Sacrament like vnto the rest. About Candlemas they had wrought the wall halfe through, and as they were at worke, they heard a rushing of Sea-coales in the next rome, which was a Celler right vnder the Parliament house, and then they feared they had beene discouered wherevpon Iohnson went thither, who being returned, told them it was a Cellar full of Sea-coales, which were now a selling; and that the same was to be let for yeerely rent, assuring them withall, that he had well obserued the manner of that Cellar, and that it was most commodious for their purpose, and then Master Percie forthwith hired the same for yeerely rent, being now fully perswaded, they should doe Iustice vpon that place, where their religion was suppressed, and where so many seuere Lawes had past against them; and then they layd into the Cellar twenty barrels of powder, which were formerly prouided, and couered them with Billets, and Faggots, prouided for that purpose.

But when they vnderstood that the Parliament was adiourned to October, they dispersed themselues, hauing held many Councels how to manage the affaires of State, if the deed were done, one while they purposed to surprize the person of the Prince, another while the Duke of Yorke, and for performance of either of those, Percy was the man that with his friends would vndertake that charge, then they considered, that if they could not ceaze vpon the person of any of them two, because the Prince would be at the Parliament-house, and the Duke being kept in neare London, where they wanted friends, how they might surprize the person of the Lady Elizabeth, being in the Custodie of the Lord Harrington in Warwickeshire: and in the end resolued to aduenture their fortune vpon her, whom they meant to Proclaime Queene, and in her name to proceed in all things, hauing in readinesse a proiect of a Proclamation to that purpose, wherein was no mention of Religion, neither would they haue answered the deed to haue beene theirs, vntill they had tryed their friends and strength, as well abroad, as at home and then they would haue answered both. Secondly they considered vpon forraine aide, and in their opinion Spaine was too remote, and slow to helpe them in their most extremitie: France was too neare and to mighty, and hauing command of Holland ships, would easily make away with them, marry Sir William Stanley, Owen, and others on the hither part of Flaunders, with their particular friends, and forces, might giue them more fit and friendly ayde. Lastly, they considered what Lords to take from the Parliament, as well in respect of Religion, as for policy: vpon all which particulars though they often conferred, yet concluded nothing, sauing only to send one to Rome, to acquaint the Pope with their proiect, and to know whether the Pope would approue or condemne it, carrying a kind of Iealousie amongst themselues, that their seducers had already run too far in reuelation, and thereupon vnder pretence to bee ascertained, they sent Sir Edmond Bayn ham for a Breuiat from his Holinesse, which sayd Sir Edmond departed from England but in August before the Parliament, in which space the aforesayd conspirators neuer staued their intent, nor omitted any thing that might preter their pernicious course.

They send a messenger to Rome but he neuer returned.

The chiefe conspirators hauing many wayes spent great sums of money in this action, especially Catesby, vpon whom lay the most part of expence, being now quite destitute of forraine ayde, and hauing already taken vp as much money in London vpon interest, as either his owne credit, or his friends would extend vnto, obtained by a generall consent, in consideration of further supplyes of powder, money, munition, and horse, it shall be lawfull for him to acquaint any whom himself thought good, without making the same knowne vnto any of the aforesayd conspirators, and thereupon he acquainted Iohn Graunt, Ambrose Rookewood, Francis Tresham, Sir Eucrard Digby, and some others vnknowne, which sayd Sir Eucrard Digby, hee acquainted with all matters, towards the end of September, who at first misliked the proiect, but hauing taken oath of secrecy, agreed to cause a great assemblie neere vnto Dun-church, vnder pretext of a great match of hunting by the chiefe gentlemen of the Country the 1st of November, being the day after they purposed the fatall blowe should be giuen, at which time also it was determined, that Graunt and others, should possesse themselues of their neighbors horse, and armour, and conioyne with other confederates comming to the purposed hunting, and surprize the Lady Elizabeth from the Lord Harrington, and from that time Catesby and his combination rested secure, by reason that hitherto there was not any of them cald in question, nor terrified with any vulgar speech, or suspect of Treason. But when the day of Parliament grew neere, they heard of diuers reports tending to the discouery of some terrible Treason, especially by a Letter which the Earle of Salisbury shewed the King, wherevpon they pondered amongst themselues, from whom such a letter might come: and their generall Iealousie was, that if any such letter were sent by any of them, it should be from Tresham, but hee vtterly forsware it, and therevpon notwithstanding that the rumour of discouery dayly encreased, so as they might plainly perceiue that their treason either was or would be discouered, yet in their wilfull blindnesse: some would stay about the Court to see the euent, and the rest being drunke with the same follie, went to the appointed hunting at Dun-church.

The discouery of the great Treason.

About ten dayes before the Parliament should begin, the Lord Mounteagle, Son and heyre to the Lord Morley, being then in his lodging at the Strand, ready to goe to bed supper at eight of the clocke, one of his seruants whom hee had sent of an errand ouer the streete, was met with an vnknowne man of different stature, who suddenly deliuered him a Letter, charging him to put it presently into his Lords hands, the which Letter so soone as his Lord could open it, began to peruse, and perceiuing the same to bee an vnknowne, and lowmishat an vnlegable hand, without either date or subscription, called one of his men vnto him, to helpe him reade it, the tenor whereof followeth.

My Lord, out of the loue I beare to some of your friends, I haue a care of your preseruation, therefore I would aduise you as you tender your life, to deuise some excuse to shift off your attendance at this Parliament. For God and man haue conspired to punish the wickednesse of this time, and thinke not slightly of this aduertisement, but retire your selfe into your Country, where you may expect the euent in safety: for though there be no appearance of any stirre, yet I say, they shall receiue a terrible blow this Parliament, and yet they shal not see who hurts them: this counsell is not to be contemned, because it may doe you good, and can doe you no harme, for the danger is past, so soone as you haue burnt the Letter, and I hope God will giue you the grace to make good vse of

of it, to whose holy protection I commend you.

And when with quicke apprehension, hee beganne warily to obserue the strange contents thereof, being greatly perplexed what construction to make thereof, as of a matter of consequence as indeede it was, or some foolish pasquill wherewith the time abounded, or whether some deuise of his enemies to doe him from his attendance at the Parliament, hee could not tell, and therefore in his loue and alleageance to his Prince and Country resolued not to conceale it any further, and thereupon notwithstanding the lateneſſe and darkenes of the night, went presently to the Court at White-hall (the King being then in person a hunting at Royston) and deliuered the same to the Earle of Salisbury the Kings principall Secretary of Estate.

And when the Earle had read the Letter, and conſidered the contents: and manner of the comming thereof vnto his hands, gaue condigne thankes: and encouragement vnto the Lord Mounteagle, telling him plainly that whatſoeuer the purpoſe of this Letter might proue: either now or hereafter, yet this accident put him in minde of diuers aduertiſements hee had receiued from beyond the Seas, wherewith he had already acquainted his Maieſtie, and diuers of his Priuy Counſell, concerning ſome practiſe of diſcontented Papiſts, both at home and abroad: by way of combination amongſt themſelues, againſt this Parliament, for enabling them to deliuer at that time ſome petition vnto his Maieſtie for toleration of Religion, which petition ſhould ſo cunningly be deliuered: and ſo ſtrongly backed as the King ſhould bee loth to deny their requeſts. Then the ſayd Earle acquainted the Lord Chamberlaine therewith: who likewiſe in depth of loue and dutie brought with himſelfe, what concerned his officeſ as well in places of the Kings vſuall repayre as otherwiſe, and then thoſe two Counſellors agreed to remoue vnto themſelues three other, that is to ſay, the Lord Admirall, the Earles of Worceſter, and Northampton, who hauing likewiſe peruſed the letter: became all of one minde, notwithſtanding the ſlightneſſe of the letter at firſt appearance, and dayly throwing of ſcandalous libells, in Court and City, to reproch and diſturbe both King and ſtate, many of them purporting more danger then this did, they concluded it was not abſolutely to be contemned, whereupon they in all ſecrecie entertained an eſpeciall care for preſeruation of the Kings perſon, and theruppon reſolued to acquaint the King withall: acknowledging amongſt themſelues his Maieſties extraordinary wiſedome, learning and experience in deepe and difficult matters, being Alholloudny, and the King being returned, but the day before from hunting, the Earle of Salisbury alone in the Priuy Gallery, acquainted the King with all their proceedings: the King hauing read the letter once, paused a while, then read it againe, and ſayd he thought it was not to bee contemned, for that Kile ſeemed to be more quicke and pithie then was vſuall in paſquils and libells, or ſuperfluities of idle braines. The Earle perceiuing the King to apprehend it deeplier then he expected, knowing his milde nature, ſayd he thought by one ſentence in it, if ſhould be written either by a foole or a mad man, (by (ſay the danger is paſt, ſo ſoone as you haue burnt the letter) for if the danger were paſt ſo ſoone as the letter was burnt, then the warning muſt needes be of ſmall auaile, when the burning of the letter onely might abolyſhe the daunger, but the King conſidering the former ſentence in the letter (by (that they ſhall receiue a terrible blow at this parliament) and yet ſhall not know who hurts them, ioyning it to the ſentence following before rehearſed, and therupon conſectured, that the propoſed daunger ſhould bee ſome ſuddaine daunger by blowing vp with powder, by reaſon it was not poſſible for them to endaunger the King, and ſtate, eyther by inſurrection, inuaſion, rebellion, or any other of like nature, that might be ſuddainly attempted in this time of Parliament, and therefore the King ſayd, it muſt onely be performed by Gun-powder by one traytor, onely in ſome darke and vnſuſpected place, about the Parliament houſe, which ſtratageme might bee done, as ſoone as the burning of the letter, the King all this while was neither amazed, nor iealous of any particular treaſon towards his owne perſon, yet neuertheleſſe in tender regard of the great aſſemblie of all the eſtate of this land, and to make the beſt vſe of this vnknowne and vnexpected admonition, wiſhed there ſhould be preſently a very ſecret, and exact ſearch made, in the Parliament houſe, and of all other roomes: and lodgings neere adioyning. The Earle obſerving the King to retaine ſtill his wonted free ſpirit, inſiſted no further concerning the imminent daunger, and ſo after ſome accuſtomed pleaſant ſpeeches, the Earle returned vnto the Lordes, being ouercome with care of this buſineſſe, could find no reſt within himſelfe, vntill he had told the Lordes all that paſt betweene the King and himſelfe, which being done they all agreed that the ſayd Earle the next day being Saturday, ſhould repaire againe vnto his Highneſſe, who when he came, found the King in the ſame gallery, accompanied with the Lord Chamberlaine, vnto whom the Earle renewed the former matter, and there it was determined, that the Lord Chamberlaine, according to the vertue of his office ſhould view the Parliament houſe and all other places adioyning thereunto: wherein if the leaſt cauſe of ſuſpition might be had, and withall to doe it with ſuch couerture as might preuent idle rumors, or giuing of any ſuſpition vnto the workers of this miſchieuous miſtery, and vpon Munday in the afternoone being, the day before the Parliament, the Lord Chamberlaine being accompanied with the Lord Mounteagle, ſpalous in this ſeruice, entring the Cellar vnder the vpper houſe, found great Roze of Faggots, Billets, and Coales, and enquiring of Whinyarus the keeper of the Wardrobe, to what vſe he bee had put thoſe lower Roomes, anſwered, that

Friday.

that Maiſter Thomas Percy had hired both the houſe, and part of the Vault vnder it, and that the wood and coale thereon was Maiſter Percies owne prouiſion, and as the Lord Chamberlaine looked about him, eſpied a fellow ſtanding in a corner, called him vnto him, who ſaid hee was Percies man, and keeper of that houſe for him, who ſtyled was the aforenamed Fawkes, ſole agent for this Tragedy.

The Lord Chamberlaine, who ſtill carried a ſeemely careleſſe ſuruey of things: yet in and a very ſerious, and prouident eye, obſerued him ſelfe to the King, whom he met in the Gallery, accompanied with thy Lord Treaſurer, the Lord Admirall, thy Earles of Worceſter, Northampton, and Salisbury, vnto whom after report what he had ſeene, ſaid, that ſo ſoone as the Lord Mounteagle heard Percy named, and that the houſe, vault, and prouiſion, was his, and therewithall calling to mind his backwardneſſe in Religion, and the olde neareneſſe in friendſhip betweene himſelfe and the ſaid Percie, vehemently ſuſpected the matter, and that the Letter ſhould come from him; all which together with the extraordinary prouiſion of fuell aforeſaid, for Maiſter Percy who came but ſeldome thither, and the ſuddaine anſwares, and dangerous aſpect of Fawkes, who from the firſt confederacy ſtill termed himſelfe ſeruitor, and Percies man, poſſeſt the Lord Chamberlaine with full reſolution, that hee was a deſperate fellow, and that the ſaid Roome muſt be very narrowly ſearched.

The King vpon knowledge whereof encreaſed his former appreheniion, and inſtantly agreed to ſearch thoroughly: many there arole a queſtion amongſt them vpon what pretence they ſhould make apparent ſearch, leſt finding nothing worthy their labours, a generall ſcandall might grow vpon the King and State, in being too credulous, and fearefull of the euaporation of idle braines, and alſo to lay an imputation vpon the Earle of Northumberland a chiefe Peere, and Councellor of State, for that this Percy was very inward with him, and by his meanes became the Kings ordinary ſeruant, as alſo for that the King in his owne nature, was neuer iealous of any his good Subiects, by reaſon hitherto all things had beene manadged with ſuch calm-neſſe, and ſecrecie, as neither Court nor Cittie ſuſpected any thing, yet retayn'd amongſt themſelues a thouſand Iealouſies of the Kings ſafety, whereupon it was diuiſed, that eſpecial ſearch was to be made for certaine Robes, and other furniture, of the Kings lately taine out of the Wardrobe: whereupon Sir Thomas Knuet, Gentleman of the Kings priuy Chamber, was ſelected for that buſineſſe, accompanied with a ſmall number, fit for that imployment, went the next midnight, and comming before the entry of the houſe, ſpied Percies pretended ſeruant ſtanding without the doore, booted, and ſpurred, apprehended him, and hauing removed ſome Billets and Coales, found one of the ſmall barrells of powder, and after that all the reſt being 36. in number ſmall and great, with other inſtruments fitte for that purpoſe.

And vpon the hearing of ſome ſuch, Sir T. Knewet required Maiſter Edmond Doubleday Eſquire, to goe vp into the Chamber ouerhead and the cauſe thereof, the which he diligently had there ſome ſpace: with Fawkes, being there with all very buſineſſe to ſearch and ſee what bookes, or inſtruments Fawkes had about him, but Fawkes being wondrous vnwilling to bee ſearched, very violently griped Mr. Doubleday by his fingers of the left hand, through paine whereof Mr. Doubleday offered to draw his dagger to haue ſtabd Fawkes, but ſodainly better bethought him elſe and did not, yet in that heat he ſtruck by the traytors halſes, and there with all fell vpon him and ſearched him, and in his pocket found his Garters, wherewith Mr. Doubleday, and others that aſſiſted, thy bound him, there was alſo found in his pocket, a peece of Touch-wood, a Tinder-box to light the touch-wood, and a Watch which Percy and Fawkes had bought the day before, to try concluſions, for the long or ſhort burning of the Touch wood, which he had prepared to giue fire to the traine of Powder. Fawkes apprehended.

When Fawkes ſaw his Treaſon diſcouered, inſtantly confeſſed his owne guiltineſſe, ſaying, if he had beene within the houſe when they firſt layd hands vpon him, hee would haue blowne vp them, himſelfe, and all.

After that being bound, and well guarded, Sir Thomas went to the Lord Chamberlaine, and the Earle of Salisbury, who preſently drew all the reſt of the Councell together, which lay within the Court, and about fours of the clocke they all came to the Kings bed chamber, the Lord Chamberlaine ſurchargd with ioy at the firſt entry, in a confuſed haſt, tolde the King all was diſcouered, the Traytor taken, and faſt bound, immediatly vpon this, all the Councell that lay abroad, with the reſt late in Councell and examined the ſaid Fawkes, who would acknowledge no other name but Iohn Iohnſon, Percies man, ſtiffe denying to know any complotters in this horrible treaſon, iuſtifying the fact to be good, and warrantable by Religion, denying the King to be his Liege, Lord, or Gods annointed becauſe hee held him an heretique, he was quick and careleſſe in his anſwers vnto all obiections that touchd not this treaſon, ſlearing and ſcoffing at all that miſliked him, and onely repented him the deed was not done, ſaying, that God would haue concealed it, and the deuill onely diſcouered it.

The Councell not knowing how farre this treaſon might extend, nor what degrees of perſons were in this conſpiracy, yet well perceiued to be commenced, and practiſed by ſome diſcontent Papiſts, gaue order to the Lord Maior of London, and the Cittie of Weſtminſter, to ſet a ciuill watch at their gates: the common people muttered, and imagined many things: the Nobles knew not what to ſay, nor whom to cleare or ſuſpect, and for certaine dayes a generall iealouſie poſſeſt them all. This day of diſcouery being the appointed day of Parliament, the King deferred his going vntill Munday following,

following, and the Tuesday there were as many bonefires in, and about London, as the streets could permit, the people praising God for his most gracious deliuery, wishing that day for euer to be held festiuall.

The Spanish Ambassadour made bonefires, and threw money amongst the people: the like gladnesse was shewed by the Ambassadour of the Archduke; and by those of the French, and Dutch Church.

Now to returne to the rest of the Conspirators, who notwithstanding the silent and secret dispose of the affaires afore-said, yet I. Winter, the next day after the delinery of the letter, told Christopher Wright, that he vnderstood of an obscure letter deliuered to the Lord Mounteagle, aduising him not to appeare at the Parliament house the first day, and that the Lord Mounteagle had no sooner read it, but instantly carried it to the Earle of Salisbury, which 20 neuerthelesse was presently made knowne vnto the rest, who after diuers conferences, agreed to set further triall, but howsoeuer resolued to stay the last houre, vpon Monday morning the fourth of November, Caresby rode away. Percie hearing then at Ston: the next day early in the morning, being the very day of their desperate attempt, Percy, and the rest plainely perceiuing by generall speeches, vnusuall watches, as also by hearing a Noblemen say to the Lord Mounteagle, alias discouered, Percy, Winter, Wright, and diuers other presently take horse, to meete at the appointed hunting, at Dun Church, where comming late that night, said to Digby, and the rest, all was discouered, who thereupon left hunting, and prepared to stand in Armes, and raise rebellion: the same Tuesday morning, Grant broke vp S. Bennocks stable in Warwicke, a horse rider, and tooke from thence diuers horses, belonging to Noblemen and Gentlemen; the suddaine rumour whereof no sooner spread abroad, but all the Country was iealous of rebellion, and with all speede armed themselues.

The next day being Wednesday, all but Mr. Winter met at Dunchurch, where they diuulged many detestable vntruths, against the King and State, omitting no scandall which they thought might serue their trayterous purpole: and that they were now assembled, and prepared to some special seruice for the aduancement of the Catholique cause hoping thereby to haue drawne into their rebellion all those of their religion, and other wilfull malecontents, and in that manner past by diuers places in Warwickeshire, laying hands vpon all Munition they could for warre, namely at the Lord Windsors &c. From Wednesday vntill Friday, they were chased by Sir Ric. Verney the Sheriffe of Warwickeshire, into the shirre of Worcester-shire, where Sir Rich. Walsh Sheriffe of that County, knowing them to be entred into Stephen Littletons house at Holbach, raised his forces and beset them round, which at first they derided, saying, they had needs of better assistance, &c. thinking themselues to be of greater strength then in deede they were, being neuer full 30. strong, besides many of their houshold seruants forsooke them hourely, and being vnto desperate of any further succour, resolued to come forth together, and dye at once: but whilst they were thus concluding, they hauing before layde certaine Gunpowder to dry in the rome, which had taken wet, being carried through a fire, and diuers a blunt spiller chanced to let a cole of fire fall into the powder, which blasted them all more or lesse; young Winter was shot into the arme with a Pistoll, then issued forth Caresby, and Percy, who were both slaine with one shotte in their breasts, after them issued both the Wrights, who were slaine outright, Thomas Winter, thinking to haue beene as fortunate, was taken aliue: Caresby at his death said, The plot and practise of this Treason was onely his, and that all others were but his assistants, chosen by him selfe to that purpose, and that the honour thereof onely belonged vnto himselfe.

Some of the Traytors slaine, and some taken.

The Sheriffe hauing entred the house, apprehended all hee found, and sent them vnto sundry Gaoles and from thence conueyed to the Tower of London.

The heads of Percy and Caresby, after they were dead, were cut off, and set vpon the ends of the Parliament house.

Notwithstanding all accidents afore-said, yet Francis Tresham remained still about the Court, who vpon the first and second newes of outrages, and attempts done by the rebellious rout, offered his speciall seruice, desiring present imployment for their suppression, and apprehension, but within few dayes hee was restrained, examined, and then sent to the Tower, where he confest all, &c.

The practise of rebellion.

By this time the King had made three Proclamations, the first signifying the truth of the present discouery, and order for the apprehension of Thomas Percy, the second was as followeth, viz. that whereas Thomas Percy, Gentleman, and some other of his Confederates, persons knowne to be vtterly corrupted with the superstition of the Romish Religion, seduced with the blindenesse thereof, being also of lewd life, insolent disposition, and for the most part of desperate estate, cloaked with the zeale of superstitious Religion, ha. beene discouered to haue contriued the most horrible Treason, that euer entered into the hearts of men against our Person, our Children, the whole Nobility, Cleargie, and Commons, in Parliament assembled, &c. shewing the full practise of those Traytors as afore-said, willing if possible, they should be taken aliue, and for as much as many factious persons diuerly affected, had giuen out, that this Treason could not be attempted without the consent of the King of Spayne, the French King, or the Archduke, others strongly reporting, that against the aforenamed Teachers, the French King, and the King of Denmarke should haue beene murthered, and that the Duke of Saxony, the Lantgraue of Hessen, and Count Maurice, should be offered like violence, thereupon the King in the same Proclamation saith,

faith, wee doe declare that we cannot admit so inhumane a thought, as to conceiue that any Prince of what Religion soeuer, could giue care vnto so strange and barbarous imagination, and that by such examinations, as hitherto had been taken, we finde them all, and their Ministers, cleare from any such pitton, of priuity thereunto, whereof an infallible argument to vs, is, that all the Ministers of forraigne Princes which are now here, made earnest suite to vs to bee present in the place that day, charging, and commanding all his subiects not to speake, of any his neighbour Princes, or their Ambassadours, but reuerently: and vnderneath the same, set downe the names of eight of the chiefe Traytors: Dated at Westminster the seauenth of Nouember.

The other was for as much as it appeareth now in part, who were the complices in this detestable Treason, published by our former Proclamations, in their assembling together, to moue our people to rebellion, although perhaps, many of them did neuer vnderstand the secret, and depth of his abominable purpose, &c. shewing the difference betweene Percies Treason, and other mens, signifying further the Kings most especiall care to take Percy aliue, to the end, that by his confessions, the whole plotte and Confederates might bee discouered, promising, that if any the said offenders should bring him aliue, he should haue pardon of his life, Lands, and Goods, and haue a thousand pound reward, &c. His bore date the eight of Nouember: all which Proclamations, could not speedily enough be knowne in the foresaid Shires, by reason of the great distance, shortnesse of the dayes, and foulenesse of the weather, so as whatsoeuer was performed against them by the Sheriffes, was meerely out of zeale and loyalty.

The seauenth of Nouember, the Earle of Northumberland was commaunded to keepe his house, and after a while was committed to the custody of the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury at Lambeth: and the twenty seauenth of the same moneth, the said Earle was sent to the Tower.

The King goeth to the Parliament house.

Saturday the ninth of Nouember, the King, Queene, and Prince, with all the Nobility, and Commons, went to the Parliament house, where in the presence of the Lords spirituall and temporall, and Commons of the Parliament, and of the Ambassadors of Spaine, and the Archdukes, the King made an excellent Oration, wherein hee fully expreft the whole nature, and practise of the Treason, and the state and quality of the Traytors.

Proclamation for the speedy apprehension of the principall Traytors.

The 18. of Nouember, the King made Proclamation for the apprehension of Robert Winter, being knowne to be a principall, and deu for the same, lurking in secret places, &c. and in the same Proclamation order was giuen for apprehension of Stephen Littleton, with speciall caueat, to take them aliue: his praise in another Proclamation, promised reward vnto the dutifull apprehenders, and consigne punishment vnto all the disloyall reuolters, and Concealers, the which was truly performed vpon either parties.

The 22. of Nouember dies Francis Tresham in the Tower of the Strangurion: after that, his head was cut off, but not set vpon London Bridge, vntill the rest of that combination were executed.

The 4. of January, the Spanish Ambassador deliuered a present, from the King his Master, vnto the King of great Britaine, that is to say, five Iennets of Andalusia, with Saddles very richly Imbroydered, and Saddle cloathes of cloath of Tissue, Imbroydered in the middest with the Armes of the King of Spaine, and all other furniture suteable, they were led blindefold through the Stables by Grooms of the Stable, bare headed, clad in crimson Veluet, trimmed with gold Lace, one of the Iennets was snow white, and his maine would reach to the ground. I Present frō the King of Spaine.

The 19. of January, the Lord William Knowles, Baron of Grayes, married Elizabeth Howard, eldest daughter vnto Thomas Goathes of Suffolke.

The 19. of January, a great Porpus was taken aliue at Westham, in a small creeke, a mile and a halfe within the Land, and presented to Francis Cotton Esquire, chiefe Iustice of the Marrets, and within few dayes after, a very great Whale came by within eight mile of London, whose body was seene diuers times aboue water, and iudged to exceede the length of the longest Ship in the Riuer, and when she tasted the fresh water, and sented the land, she returned into the Sea. A great whale came vp as high as Woolwich.

The 22. of January, being Tuesday, all the Nobility and Commons, as the King had formerly appointed assembled themselues, and so continued vntill the 27. of May following, in which Parliament, they gaue the King and his Successours three entire Subsidies, and five Fiftanes, and then the Parliament was prorogued vntill the 18. of November next following 1606. Three Subsidies, and six Fifteenes granted by the temporalty.

The Cleargie at that time gaue very frankly vnto the King and his successours foure entire Subsidies. The Cleargie gaue foure Subsidies.

The chiefe Traytors afore-said, were indited and arraigned at *Westminster* vpon Monday the 27. of Ianuary in manner following, where there was two new Closets erected for Ambassadours, and other most Noble personages to sit priuately, and obserue their Trials.

Commissioners.

CHarles Earle of Nottingham, Edward Earle of Worcester, Thomas Earle of Suffolke, Charles Earle of Deuonshire, Henry Earle of Northampton, Robert Earle of Salisbury, Sir Iohn Popham Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, Sir Thomas Fleming Lord chiefe Baron of the Exchequer, and Sir Peter Warberton, one of the Iustices of the common Pleas. Arraignement at Westminster,

following, and the Tuesday there were as many bonefires in, and about London, as the streets could permit, the people praising God for his most gracious delivery, making that day for euer to be held festiuall.

The Spanish Ambassadour made bonefires, and threw money amongst the people: the like gladnesse was shewed by the Ambassadour of the Archduke, and by thole of the French, and Dutch Church.

Now to returne to the rest of the Conspirators, who notwithstanding the silent and secret diligence of the officers afore-said, yet I. Winter, the next day after the delivery of the letter, told Christopher Wright, that he understood of an obscure letter delivered to the Lord Mounteagle, admiring him not to appeare at the Parliament house the first day, and that the Lord Mounteagle had no sooner read it, but instantly carried it to the Earle of Salisbury, which newes was presently made knowne unto the rest, who after diuers conferences, agreed to set further in hand, but howsoever they resolved to stay the last houre, vpon Monday morning the fourth of November, Catesby rode away, Percie being then at Sion: the next day early in the morning, being the very day of their desperate attempt, Percy, and the rest plainely perceiuing by generall speeches, unusuall watches, as also by hearing a Gentleman say to the Lord Mounteagle, all is discouered, Percy, Winter, Wright, and diuers other presently take horse, to meete at the appointed hunting, at Dun Church, where comming late that night, said to Digby, and the rest, all was discouered, who thereupon left hunting, and prepared to stand in Armes, and raise rebellion: the same Tuesday morning, Grant tooke up S. Bennocks Stable in Warwicke, a horse rider, and tooke from thence diuers horses, belonging to Noblemen and Gentlemen; the suddaine rumour whereof no sooner spread abroad, but all the Country was zealous of rebellion, and with all speede armed themselues.

A practise of rebellion.

The next day being Wednesday, all but Th. Winter met at Dunchurch, where they diuulged many detestable untruths, against the King and State, omitting no scandall which they thought might serue their trayterous purpose: and that they were now assembled, and prepared to some special service for the aduancement of the Catholique cause, hoping thereby to haue drawne into their rebellion all those of their religion, and other willfull malecontents, and in that manner pass by diuers places in Warwickshire, laying hands vpon all Gunnes they could for war, namely at the Lord Windsors &c. From Wednesday vntill Friday, they were chiefly by Sir Ric. Verney the Sheriffe of Warwickshire, vnto the skirts of Worcestershire, where Sir Rich. Walsh Sheriffe of that County, knowing them to be entred into Stephen Littleton's house at Holbach, raised his forces and beset them round, which at first they verified, saying, hee had needs of better assistance, &c. thinking themselues to be of greater strength then in deede they were, being neuer full 80. strong, besides many of their household seruants forsooke them hourely, and being now Some of the desperate of any further succour, resolued to Traytors come forth together, and dye at once: but whilst slain, and some taken. they were thus concluding, they hauing before layde certaine Gunpowder to dry in the Oouen, which had taken wet, being carried through a fine and tuyers a blunt Striker chanced to let a cole of fire fall into the powder, which blasted them all more or lesse; young Winter was shot into the arme with a Musket, then issued forth Catesby, and Percy, who were both slaine with one shotte in their breasts, after them issued both the Wrights, who were slaine outright, Thomas Winter, thinking to haue beene as fortunate, was taken alive: Catesby at his death said, The plot and practise of this Treason was onely his, and that all others were but his assistants, chosen by him selfe to that purpose, and that the honour thereof onely belonged vnto himselfe.

The Sheriffe hauing entred the house, apprehended all hee found, and sent them vnto sundry Gaoles and from thence conueyed to the Tower of London.

The Heads of Percy and Catesby, after they were dead, were cut off, and set vpon the ends of the Parliament house.

Notwithstanding all accidents afore-said, yet Francis Tresham remained still about the Court, who vpon the first and second newes of outrages, and attempts done by the rebellious rout, offered his special seruice, desiring present employment for their suppression, and apprehension, but within few dayes hee was restrained, examined, and then sent to the Tower, where he confest all, &c.

By this time the King had made three Proclamations, the first signifying the truth of the present discouery, and other for the apprehension of Thomas Percy, the second was as followeth, viz that whereas Thomas Percy, Gentleman, and some other of his Confederates, persons knowne to be vtterly corrupted with the superstition of the Romish Religion, seduced with the blindenesse thereof, being also of lewd life, insolent disposition, and for the most part of desperate estate, flocked with the zeale of superstitious Religion, had been discouered to haue contriued the most horrible Treason, that euer entered into the hearts of men against our Person, our Children, the whole Nobility, Clergie, and Commons, in Parliament assembled, &c. shewing the full practise of those Traytors as afore-said, wishing if possible, they should be taken alive, and for as much as many factious persons directly affected, had giuen out, that this Treason could not be attempted without the consent of the King of Spayne, the French King, or the Archduke, others strongly reporting, that against the aforenamed Tuesday, the French King, and the King of Denmarke should haue beene murthered, and that the Duke of Saxony, the Land Graue of Hessen, and Graue Maurice, should be offered like violence, thereupon the King in the same Proclamation said,

faith, wee doe declare that we cannot admit so inhumane a thought, as to conceiue that any Prince of what Religion soeuer, could giue care vnto so sauage and barbarous imagination, and that by such examinations, as hitherto had been taken, we finde them all, and their Ministers, cleare from any suspition, of priuity thereunto, whereof an infallible argument to vs, is, that all the Ministers of forraigne Princes which are now here, made earnest suite to vs to bee present in the place that day, charging, and commanding all his subiects not to speake, of any his neighbour Princes, or their Ambassadours, but reuerently: and vnderneath the same, set downe the names of eight of the chiefe Traytors: Dated at Westminster the seauenth of November.

The other was for as much as it appeareth now in part, who were the complices in this detestable Treason, published by our former Proclamations, in their assembling together, to moue our people to rebellion, although perhaps, many of them did neuer vnderstand the secret, and depth of his abominable purpose, &c. shewing the difference betweene Percies Treason, and other mens, signifying further the Kings most especiall care to take Percy aliue, to the end, that by his confessions, the whole plotte and Confederates might bee discouered, promising, that if any the said offenders should so bring him aliue, he should haue pardon of his life, Lands, and Goods, and haue a thousand pound reward, &c. This bore date the eight of November: and which Proclamations, could not speedily enough be knowne in the foresaid Shires, by reason of the great distance, shortnesse of the dayes, and foulenesse of the weather, so as whatsoeuer was performed against them by the Sheriffes, was meerely out of zeale and loyalty.

The seauenth of November, the Earle of Northumberland was commaunded to keepe his house, and after a while was committed to the custody of the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury at Lambeth: and the twenty seauenth of the same moneth, the said Earle was sent to the Tower.

Saturday the ninth of November, the King, Queene, and Prince, with all the Nobility, and Commons, went to the Parliament house, where in the presence of the Lords spirituall and Temporall, and Commons of the Parliament, and of the Ambassadors of Spaine, and the Archdukes, the King made an excellent Oration, wherein hee fully expreft the whole nature, and practise of the Treason, and the state and quality of the Traytors.

The King goeth to the Parliament house.

The 18. of November, the King made Proclamation for the apprehension of Robert Winter, being knowne to be a principall, and fled for the same, lurking in secret places, &c. and in the same Proclamation order was giuen for apprehension of Stephen Littleton, with speciall caueat, to take them aliue: his Maiestie in another Proclamation, promised reward vnto the dutifull apprehenders, and condigne punishment vnto all the disloyall reuolters, and Concealers, the which was truly performed vpon either parties.

Proclamation for the hasty apprehension of the Principall Traytors.

The 22. of November dies Francis Tresham in the Tower of the Strangurion: after that, his head was cut off, but not set vpon London Bridge, vntill the rest of that combination were executed.

The 4. of January, the Spanish Ambassador deliuered a Present, from the King his Master, vnto the King of great Britaine, that is to say, five Jennets of Andaluzia, with Saddles very richly imbroydered, and Saddle cloathes of cloath of Tissue, imbroydered in the middest with the Armes of the King of Spaine, and all other furniture suteable, they were led blinde-fold through the streetes by Grooms of the Stable, bare headed, clad in crimson Veluet, trimmed with gold Lace, one of the Jennets was snow white, and his maine would reach to the ground.

I Present from the King of Spaine.

The 19. of January, the Lord William Knowles, Baron of Grayes, married Elizabeth Howard, eldest daughter vnto Thomas Earle of Suffolke.

The 19. of January, a great Poppus was taken aliue at Westham, in a small creeke, a mile and a halfe within the Land, and presented to Francis Cotton Esquire, chiefe Auditor of the Imprests, and within few dayes after, a very great Whale came vp within eight mile of London, whose body was seene diuers times aboue water, and iudged to exceede the length of the longest Ship in the River, and when she tasted the fresh water, and sented the land, she returned into the Sea.

I great whale came vp as high as Woolwich.

The 22. of January, being Tuesday, all the Nobility and Commons, as the King had formerly appointed assembled themselues, and so continued vntill the 27. of May following, in which Parliament, they gaue the King and his Successours three entire Subsidies, and five Fifteanes, and then the Parliament was prorogued vntill the 18. of November next following 1606.

Three Subsidies, and six Fifteanes granted by the temporalty.

The Clergie at that time gaue very frankly vnto the King and his successours foure entire Subsidies.

The Clergie gaue foure Subsidies.

The chiefe Traytors afore-said; were indited and arraigned at *Westminster* vpon Monday the 27. of January in manner following, where there was two new Closets erected for Ambassadours, and other most Noble personages to sit priuately, and obserue their Trials.

Commissioners.

CHarles Earle of Nottingham, Edward Earle of Worcester, Thomas Earle of Suffolke, Charles Earle of Denonshire, Henry Earle of Northampton, Robert Earle of Salisbury, Sir John Popham Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, Sir Thomas Fleming Lord chiefe Baron of the Exchequer, and Sir Peter Warberton, one of the Iustices of the common Pleas.

Arraignement at Westminster.

The parties indicted.

Thomas Winter, late of Hodington in Warwick shire Gentleman.
Guydo Fawkes late of London Gentleman.
Robert Keyes late of London Gentleman.
Thomas Bates late of London Yeoman,

which said fourte were arraigned.

For
- Plotting to blowe vp the Parliament house with Gunpowder.
- Taking Oath and Sacrament for secrecie.
- Hiring a house nere vnto it.
- Digging a Pine.
- Finding the Pine faulty, then hiring the Sellor.
- Bringing of Powder, Match, and Touchwod into the Sellor, to effect their Treason.

Robert Winter, late of Hodington afore-said Esquire, elder brother to the afore named I.

Iohn Graunt, late of Pozthybrokes in Warwickshire Esquire.

Ambrose Rookwood, late of Stamingfield, in Suffolke Esquire.

These three were inditea

For
- Being acquainted with the Treason afterward.
- Giuing their full consents thereunto.
- Taking Oath and Sacrament for secrecie.

Sir Everard Digby late of Gothurst in Buckinghamshire Knight, arraigned.

For
- Being made acquainted with the said Treason.
- Yeelding assent.
- Taking his corporall Oath for secrecy.

Amongst other things of note contrary to the generall expectation of all persons, as well present at the arraignement as otherwise, seauen of the afore-named prisoners at the barre, pleaded not guilty to the admiration of all the hearers, confessing their severall private confessions, and the publique confessions of Fawkes, Tresham, and Winter, of all which during their imprisonment, euery of them take particular acknowledgement, & only Sir Everard Digby confessed the inditement, and desired pardon, the rest after conuiction besought the Kings mercie.

The next Thursday after Sir Everard Digby, Robert Winter, Graunt, and Bates, according to their iudgement, were drawne, hanged, and quartered, at the West end of Saint Pauls Church in London, where all but Graunt died very penitent, Sir Everard Digby protested from the bottome of his heart, he asked forgiuenesse of God, the King, the Queene, the Prince, and all the Parliament, and if that, hee had knowne it at first to haue ben so foule a treason, he would not haue concealed it to haue gayned a world, requiring the people to witnesse he died penitent, and sorrowfull for this vile Treason, and confident to be saued in the merits of his sweet Sauiour Iesus, &c. He prayed, kneeling about halfe a quarter of an houre, often bowing his head to the ground: in the same manner they all prayed, but no voyce heard, saueing now and then, *Iesu, Iesu saue me, and keepe mee*, &c. which words they repeated many times vpon the Ladder.

Friday the last of January, in the Parliament yard at Westminster, were executed as the former, Thomas Winter, Rookewood, Keyes, and Fawkes, which Fawkes at his death was more penitent, then any of the rest, and besought all Catholiques neuer to attempt any such bloody Act, being a course which God did neuer fauour nor prosper, Keys in obstinacie coheared much with Graunt, they all craued Testimonie that they died Romane Catholiques, their quarters were placed ouer London gates, and their heads vpon the Bridge.

Saturday the 22. of March, about halfe an houre before 7. a clock in the morning, was suddainly spread throughout the Court and the Citie of London, for certaine newes, that the King was slaine at Oking, which is about twenty miles Westward from London, and the same newes held firme vntill past nine a clock, in which space the Court being fore frighted, as well the great Lords as others, speedily that the Court gates with double Guard in all places, and thereupon London did the like, the Lord Maior gaue forthwith precepts vnto the wards to leuy traind Soulders, and they to repaire vnto their knowne London Captaines.

A most strange and terrible rumour of the Kings death.

Sir Wil. Wade Lieutenant of the Tower, summoned his Hamlets, drew his Bridge, shut close his prisoners, charged diuers Peeces of great Ordnance, tooke all the keyes from all inferiour Officers, being well prepared in all points to stand vpon his Guard by reason for two houres space & more, the newes grew more and more, that not only the King was slain, but with him in his defence, the Earle of Mountgomery, Sir Iohn Ramsey, and Sir Iames Hay, which Treason some said was performed by English Iesuites, some by Scots in womens apparell, and others said by Spaniards and Frenchmen, most reports agreed that the King was stabd with an inuenomed knife, which bitter newes was more grieuous vnto all sorts of people, then can well bee here expreſt, great weeping and lamentation both in old and young, rich and poore, maydes and wiues.

The Author of this booke was an eare certainly knowne.

The Councell vpon extraordinary expedition, hauing true knowledge of his Maiesties safety, to quiet the peoples distracted mindes, made present Proclamation as followeth.

VVHere a seditious rumour hath beene raised this morning, that some ill accident should bee befallen our Person, and thereupon the people there-abouts haue beene raised in Armes by direction from Constable to Constable, but with vncertaine knowledge from whom the first ground should be rayſed, or by what Warrant, which was held to bee done purposely by some tumultuous spirits, to draw our subiects together in Armes, to what intent we know not, vntill further Examination may make it manifest. Wee doe hereby make it knowne vnto all our loving Subiects, that (God be thanked) Wee remaine in good and perfect health.

And do require them to containe themselues from Assemblies & gathering together in Armes or in Conuenticles: Assuring themselues, that after due examination of this seditious rumour, Wee will make knowne to them the Authors and intent thereof. And whosoeuer shall not obey this our Commandement, Wee shall hold them for seditious, and breakers of our peace. And doe command all our Lieutenants, Deputy Lieutenants, Iustices of Peace, Maiors, Sheriffes, and all other our Officers, Ministers, and loving Subiects, to doe their duties in containing our people within their due Obedience, and to aduertise Vs of Our present Councell, of all disturbers thereof.

Giuen at our Pallace of Westminster the two and twentieth day of March in 1605. and in the third yeare of our Reigne of Great Britaine.

This was Proclaymed at the Court Gate a little past nine of the clocke, and in Cheapside at eleuen of the clock by which time Londons vniuersall feare, and griefe, was quite abated.

The afore-said terrible rumour came to the commons house of Parliament, some what before eight of the clocke, and ten tained vntill towards tenne, in which space, the whole assembly being mightily perplexed, sent euery fift quarter of an houre vnto the Earle of Salisbury and others of the Councell to bee truely certained, and for almost two houres space, they receiued newes that the King was safe, and shortly after in his bed, and shot with a Pistoll as he was riding.

At the hearing hereof, the whole house began seriously to debate, what was then best for them to doe. Some said let vs rise and goe hence for our better safety, lest we be suddainly surprised, &c. Some said one thing, and some another; but in briefe it was agreed that they should sit still in their accustomed peaceable manner, vntill the truth were knowne, lest their suddaine rising, should adde more terrour both to Court, City, and Country, continually sending Gentlemen of the house, for almost two houres space, to learne newes, by which time a speciall swift Messenger sent by the Lords, brought certaine knowledge of the Kings perfect health, and safety, who vntill then had not heard of any rumour of Treason, and that his Maiestly would come to Whitehall about two or three a clocke, and that afternoone, the prince, the councell, with other Lords and Iustices, met the King about Kingsbridge, and thousands of people flocking that way rauished with ioy, to behold the King.

Also that afternoone, the Lord Maior and Aldermen went to Court, where the Recorder, in all humble, and hearty manner, signified vnto his Highnesse the deepe sorrow that his Subiects sustained by the late dismall newes and the vnconceiuable ioy, there vpon conceiued vpon the assurance of his Princes safety, vnto whom the King cheerefully returned all princely thankes, and knowledgement of their singular loue, and loyalty, assuring them of his royall merrit, howlo, such equall thankfulnesse and duty.

Whilst the terrour of this terrible rumour lasted, wherewith all sorts of people were soe frighted, the Court Gates being made fast, strongly kept, and strongly guarded, the Queene, the Prince, and the Lords of the Councell, and many other Lords and Gentlemen, being then assembled at Whitehall and hearing all exceedingly amazed, and full of ioy, to see, both in their hearts and eyes, so soone as certaine newes came from the King vnto them, that he was well, and onward of his way towards London, they receiuing new spirits, thought fit that the Ambassadours of forraigne Princes, resident in this Realme, should be made sparke partakers of this most happy newes of his Highnes safety.

The great care of the Queene, the Prince and Councell, to feare and terrifie traytors raigne damnable deuises.

Thereupon they sent Sir Lewis Lewkenor, Master of the Ceremonies, willing him instantly to aduertise them all of this comfortable tidings, and therewithall commanded him to take order with the Common Sergeants to see their houses and persons secured, together with one of the Gentlemen Pensioners, which two knight performed, very speedily and discreetly, and as he reported this newes vnto Don Pedro de Zuniga, at the Family of the Duke of Bejar, the Ambassadour of Spaine, hee was almost rauished with suddaine ioy, and gaue vnto Sir Lewis Lewkenor, a very great Chaine of Gold of a large value.

Friday the 28. of March, Henry Garnet the Prouincall, or principall of the English Iesuites, was arraigned in Guild Hall by foure seuerall names, for concealing the foresaid treason of blowing vp the Parliament house, the Commissioners at his Triall, viz. the Lord Maior, the Earles of Worcester, Suffolke, Northampton, and Salisbury, the Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, the Lord chiefe Barron of the Exchequer, and Iustice Yelverton, his Iurors were selected, grand Iury-men, and being iustly condemned, he acknowledged his errour, and was adiudged to bee drawne, hanged, and quartered, according to which sentence the third of May, he was drawn from the Tower to the West end of Paules Church, and there executed, after he had freely acknowledged his foule offence, in concealing the Treason and said I am iustly sorry for it, and I aske forgiuenesse for the same, of God and the King, and I beseech God blesse the King, and all his issue, and I doe abhorr all Catholiques, neuer to attempt any inforcement, rebellion, treason, or violent practise, either against the King or State, for all such courses are bitterly against the Catholique religion, &c. and concerning diuers others, both Gentlemen and Yeomen, not formerly mentioned, which were guilty in this Treason, for harbouring and concealing some of the forenamed Traytors and others, after they were made knowne by Proclamation, were likewise arraigned & executed in the Country nere to their habitations.

An. Reg. 4. Iacobi. 1606.

Garnet executed vpon a Saterday, which is said was vnlucky to him.

Tenne or twelue executed in the Country.

The King rewarded by the Lord Mountegle.

Speedily after the full knowledge, and discovery, of this horrible powder Treason, and due execution of the plotters, and practisers thereof, then his Maiesty, in his wisedome, and kingly disposition, for the euer good encouragement of all his Subiects, of what degree or quality soeuer, being all bound by obligation of their duties, to God and their Soueraigne to conceale nothing that may carry probability, or suspition of danger, to the King or State. And therefore in this particular, and perilous Treason, the King hauing seriously obserued, as well the measure of the loue, and dutifull affection; as the strength of the loyaltie of the Lord William Mountegle, by whose discreete, timely, and dutifull imparting vnto the Councell, the priuate letter before mentioned, out of which they had the first ground, and onely meanes that discouered the powder Treason, the King gaue in reward vnto the Lord Mountegle two hundred pound a yeere of Crowne land, in fee farme of him and his heires for euer, and fiue hundred pound a yeere pention, during his naturall life.

Great winds, floods, and shipwracke, the winde west and by South.

The nine and twentieth, and thirtieth of March, the winde was so extraordinary great and violent, that it caused great shipwracke, in England, Scotland, France and the Low countries, it blew downe part of the Pauonet Church, at Diepe, and diuers other Churches in the lower Belgia, and in Germany, in euery of which said places, and some others, it blew downe Villages, Trees, and Windmills, it also caused the Sea, and diuers Riuers to ouerflow their bounds, and drowned many people, and much Cattell.

A Proclamation for bearing of Flagges in Ships.

VVHereas some difference hath arisen, betweene our Subiects of South and North Brittaine trauailing by Seas, about the bearing of their Flagges: for the auoyding of all such contentions hereafter, We haue with the aduise of our Councell ordered: That from henceforth all our Subiects of this Ile, and Kingdome, of great Brittaine, and the members thereof, shall beare in their maine toppe, the red Crosse, commonly called Saint Georges Crosse, and the white crosse commonly called Saint Andrewes Crosse, ioyned together according to a forme made by our Heraulds, and sent by vs to our Admirall to be published to our Subiects: and in their Foretoppe our Subiects of South Brittaine shall weare the Red crosse onely as they were wont, and our Subiects of North Brittaine in their Foretop the White crosse onely as they were accustomed.

Wherefore we will and commaund all our Subiects to bee conformable and obedient to this our Order, and that from henceforth they doe not vse to beare their Flagges in any other sort, as they will answere the contrary at their perill.

Given at our Pallace of Westminster the twelfth day of April, in the fourth yeare of our Reigne of great Brittaine, France and Ireland, &c.

The 24. of Aprill Don Iohn de Mendoza, Marquesse of Henat Iermayn, Captaine Generall of Portugall, accompanied with Don Iohn Blasco de Aragon, of the Councell of Millayne, with others arriued at London, from the King of Spaine, to congratulate the King of Englands happy deliuerance, from the late pretended Treason, by Gunpowder, he brought a Present from the Queene of Spaine, vnto the Queene of England, viz. A robe of murry Sattin Imbroydered all ouer with Amber leather, and vpon the leather, in euery seame and skirt twice Imbroydered about with Gold, the foresaid part whereof was adorned with eight and forty tagges three inches long of beaten Gold hollow within, and filled with Ambergreece.

Imballadge from Spaine.

A Present from the Queene of Spaine to the Queene of England.

Two large Chaynes of Ambergreece.
Two Barkanets of Ambergreece.
A Velvet Cap with Gold Buttons curiously enamelled like the Lagges, a Girdle suteable to the Buttons.

Euery of these seuerally inclosed in an Quall Pot of Gold.

These were presented altogether in a large Pedestall of Gold, in forme of a Basen, hee came to London vpon Thursday, had audience vpon Saturday: the next day the King feasted them all very Royally, vpon Sonday hee deliuered his Presents, and returned vpon the Wednesday.

Knights of the Garter made.

Tuesday the 20. of May, at Windsor were installed Knights of the Garter, Robert Earle of Salisbury, who set forward from his house in the Strand, being almost as honourably accompanied, and with as great Traynes of Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, and Officers of the Court, with others, besides his peculiar seruants very richly attired, and brauely mounted, as was the King when hee rid in state through London: and the Lord Thomas Howard Viscount Bindon, being also very honourably accompanied and attended.

The Lady Sophia borne at Greenwich.

The Lady Sophia a daughter to our Soueraigne Lord the King, was borne at Greenwich vpon Sonday the 22. of June, at three of the clocke in the morning, and dyed the next day: and vpon Thursday following, was very solemnly conueyed by Barge, couered with blacke Veluet, accompanied with three other Barges, couered with blacke cloath vnto the Chappell Royall, in Westminster, and was there enterred by Doctor Barlow, L. Bishop of Rochester, where were present all the great Lords of the Councell, with the Heraulds, and the chiefe Officers of the Court.

The L. Mordant, and the Lord Stanton conueyed to the Starre Chamber.

The three of June, Henry Lord Mordant, and Edward Lord Stanton, were brought from the Tower to the Starre Chamber, before the Lord Chancellour, and other the great Lords of his Maiesties most honourable priny Councell, and the chiefe Iudges of the Realme, and there conuicted of diuers misprisions, and contempts, the chiefe whereof was, that whereas the said Noblemen, being peeres of the Realme, and

and Warres of the high Court of Parliament, and either of them hauing seuerally to them directed, and deliuered his Maiesties Writs of Summons to the Parliament, vnder his Highnesse great Seale of England, requiring and commanding either of them seuerally to his Highnes court of Parliament, to haue bin holden at Westminster on the 5th day of November last, where they should haue conferred *De arduis & vrgentibus causis Regni, &c.* To haue consulted with his most excellent Maiestie, and the rest of the Nobility and Peeres of the Realme, about the defence of the King, Realm, and State, of the Church of England, but contrary to the tenor of the Writ, their honours allegeance, and discharge of their duties in that behalfe, neither of them made their appearance, and being by the said high Court found guilty, they both acknowledged their error, and for the same the foresaid Lord Henry Mordant was adiudged to pay vnto his Highnesse the summe of ten thousand Markes: and the foresaid Edward Lord Stanton, was censured to pay vnto his Highnesse the summe of fiue thousand Markes and that both of them should be returned to the Tower of London, from whence they came, there to remaine during his Maiesties most gracious pleasure.

The Earle of Northumberland committed to the Starchamber.

The 27. of June, Henry Earle of Northumberland was brought from the Tower vnto the Starre-chamber, before the great Lords and Iudges aforesaid, and there conuicted of misprisions, contempts, and offences, that is to say.

1 For endeauouring to bee the head of the English Papists, and to procure them Toleration.

2 For admitting and placing Thomas Percie to be one of the Kings Gentlemen Pentioners, without making vnto him the oath of Supremacie, knowing the said Percie to be a Recusant.

3 Whereas the said Earle being, and sitting in Councell with the other Lords, and saw apparant inducement, that the said Thomas Percie was a chiefe practiser and contriuer of the most horrible treason newly discouered, and the said Earle being by the good and iust reason of the King and Councell, restrained and commanded to keepe his house; yet the said Earle wrote two seuerall letters into the North parts, vnto his friends and seruants, to haue a sure of his money and reuenues, supposing the said Thomas Percie to be fled into those parts, negotiating them to preserue the same from the hands of Thomas Percy, and to bring the same treasure by vnto him, and in the same Letters did vtterly neglect and forbeare to take any order, or giue any commandement for apprehending the said Thomas Percy, being knowne for so damnable and dangerous a Traytor.

4 In presuming to write and send Letters abroad, after his restraint, without leaue of his Maiesty or his Prime Councell.

5 That hee being a Prime Councellour, sworne to preserue the Kings Maiestie and the State; to haue more care of his treasure, than of the King or State, without any endeuour to apprehend so dangerous a Traytor, as he knew the said Percy was.

6 Lastly, his letters into those parts where Percy was fled, the said Earle knowing at the Councell table how the state of all things stood against him: was to giue him a warly word and intelligence for his further flight & escape, besides the Earle confessed, that since his speaches Raigne, hee had conference concerning the King's Nobility, and how long, and in what manner he should raigne, &c.

For the which the said Earle was censured and adiudged to pay for a fine to the vse of his Maiestie, the sum of thirty thousand pounds, and to be displaced and removed from the place of a prime Councellor, and from being Captaine of his Maiesties Pentioners, and from being Lieutenant of any of his Maiesties Counties, and from all and euery other offices which he held of his Maiesties grace and fauour, and hereafter to be disabled to take vpon him, or exercise any of the said Offices and places, and to returne prisoner to the Tower of London from whence hee came, and there to remaine prisoner as before, during his life.

A Proclamation against Iesuites, Seminaries, Priests, and Friers.

For as much as by this time the King hauing made many tryals touching the discouery of the late treason, with the plotters, aydors, and animators thereunto, and finding diuers Iesuites not only to be aydors and abettors of the same, but very great fautors of any false seeds or course of beuice, against his Crowne and dignity, and obtaining therewithall that notwithstanding many of them had priuate knowledge of the foresaid treason, yet none would discouer it, vpon consideration whereof, and his tender care of peace, proclamation was made the 10. of June, against all Iesuites, Seminaries, Priests, and Friers, regular, or irregular, commanding them to depart the Land before the first of August next, and neuer to returne vpon paine of death, according to the tenour of diuers Statutes in that behalfe prouided.

Read the Proclamation against Pirates.

And whereas the King by his seuerall Proclamations, very carefully published, to recall and reclaime sundry his subiects from their life of all Pyracies, robbing at Sea, vnder pretext of serueing forraigne States: the premises notwithstanding, such and so great was the continuing offence of many English Pyrates vpon many the Kings friends, who found themselues and their subiects highly offended therewith, vpon certaine knowledge whereof, the King at this time made strict proclamation against diuers persons by name, hauing committed many pyracies, murthers, and depredations, as well within the Straights, as without.

A monstrous murther.

Tuesday the 15. of July 1606. the wife of Richard Homewood, of East Grinsted in Sussex, most vnnaturally murthered her owne three children, first cut their throats, and then threw them into a pitte, and presently cut her owne throat, and leapt into the pit after them, her selfe being quick with childe, as was generally

supposed: thee was taken vp and buried in a cruell way, according to Law.

The King of Denmarke arriueth in England.

All this Sommer here was great expectation of the comming of Christianus the fourth of that name, King of Denmarke, brother vnto our Soueraigne Lady the Queene, whose princely purpose was hearty kindnesse, to see his said sister, and royall brother our dread Soueraigne King *James*, with their children the young Princes of this Land, but through contrary windes he was fire weekes hindred in his expedition, so as it was Thursday the 17. of July, before hee came into the River of London: And that night with eight ships small & great, rid at Anchor before Gaines end, being accompanied and attended with fire of his prime Councell, that is to say, Christian Ruch his Danish Chancelour, Peter Munck Admirall, Henry Ramelius his Germaine Chancelour, Eske Brooke, Gerbrut Rantzow, and Steenbrat, and with all manner Royall estate, and attendance of Officers, Gentlemen Pensers, and such like, hauing a very kingly Traine as well Officers of Honour, and Armes, according to the late custome of his Countrey, euer since the suppression of their whole Nobility, and all manner of Knighthood.

King *James* vpon long tarrying of the said King, rested very doubtfull of his comming by reason the Summer was so farre spent, yet neuertheless, vpon hope that he would come, kept continuall scoutes at sea, and land, to giue intelligence of their first approach, and vpon the first newes sent instantly to salute the King, and all his traine, with all kindnesse, and kingly welcome: the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Rutland, with others, but it was past eleuen of the clocke vpon Thursday night, before the Lords could come to Gaines end, where the Danes lay at Anchor; the Lords were desirous to haue gone aboard the Admirall, but the Captaine of the shippe told them, they might not come aboard, for that the Queene was fat, and the King a sleepe, whom now they durst not wake being so late, but prayed their Lordships to haue patience vntill the morning, in the meane space hee would signifie vnto the King his Master, the singular care and kindnesse of the King of great Britaine, and their Honours great paines, and then the Lords returned.

King *James* and Prince Henry, goeth in person to entertaine the King of Denmarke.

The next morning, King *James*, with Prince Henry, the Duke of Lenox, the Lord Admirall, the Lord Chamberlaine, the Earles of Rutland, Pembroke, Mountgomery, with others, the Lord Spountagle, the L. Compton, and diuers other Barons, went by Barge from Greenewich to Gaines end: And when the K. of Denmarke beheld them neere vnto his ship, he went to discend to entertaine them, but perceiuing the narrownesse of the staires, would not permit that, but once either to ascend or discend, he stayed in his ship, and with all princely courtesie, entertained the Nobility, as they came aboard, taking euery man by the hand, and kissed the Prince: and when the Kings met they embraced each other: then the King of Denmark led the king of great Britaine into his Cabin, which was very beautifull, and placed him vpon the vpper hand, with his Councell all the while they were aboard, which kindnesse King *James* requited vnto Christianus in all places, vntill his departing, during his abode in England; both Kings dyed in the Cabin, and the Lords with others were very honorably feasted in another ship. After dinner both Kings tooke Barge, and sight whereof, the Danish ships proclaimed their ioy by the Cannons mouth, and so did the English ordnances all the way they fell, vntill they arriued at Greenewich, where the rest of the great Lords of the Councell, with others, attended to receiue them, and brought them into the Queene, whose mutuall gladnesse to behold each other, I cannot here expresse, and hauing with teares of ioy kissed the young Princes, viz. the Duke of Yorke, the Lady Elizabeth, and the Lady Mary, retired themselues a while, and after supper King *James* brought his brother of Denmarke vnto his lodging, which was within the Garden on the Eastyard side. The next morning they rode a hunting into Eltham Parke, and the morrow after being Sunday, King *James* seated King Christianus, and all his traine: the two Kings and the Prince dyned at one Table, and their Councellours at another, placing a Cane still, and then a Bottaine throughout the Table, &c.

By this time King *James* vnderstood that his brother by reason of his late remouing, as before is mentioned, might not be long soiourning, to visite so many parts of the Kingdome as hee purposed, hee hath full prepared it come see England: gaue forth an order to the Lord Maior of London, to prepare the Citie against Thursday following, and to make such deuices and deuises, as the time would permit, and that the graue Cittizens should sit in their accustomed state, and order, in their liueries as is vsed at coronation of Princes, which they very dutifully performed.

Upon what day the Queene was crowned.

How many Kings were in England.

Thursday the 24. of July, both Kings rode to Theobalds, where the Earle of Salisbury for some dayes space feasted them, and all their traine, according to their estates and dignities, shewing them many ingenious signes of loue, duty, and hearty welcome, &c.

How long both the Kings were in progresse.

On Saturday the last of July, these said mighty Princes, with Prince Henry, after Dinner came by Barge from Greenewich, to the Tower of London, who before they landed, caused the Barge to row neere the Bridge, to obserue the strength and manner thereof. About three of the clocke they set forward, being accompanied and attended with the chiefe of the Clergie, the whole Nobility, and most of the English and Scottish Gentry, and Officers of Honor, and Armes, in as great pompe as when the King and Queene rode through London, two yeres past: And as the King of great Britaine in his princely kindnes, gaue place vnto the King of Denmarke, so likewise did the Nobility and others, according to their place, saue the vpper hand to the English Councellors, and Officers.

Officers. The King of Denmarks Pentioners rode on Bosse-backe, but his Guard went on foote, hauing no ammunition the carrying of their Pusketts, and marched with guilded Halberds, which King *James* had caused to be giuen them, at their first entrance into London, they were receiued by the Lord Maior, at the East end of Tower Streete, in a robe of Crimsin veluet, bearing a golden Scepter in his hand before the Kings, vntill he came to Temple-barre, as

The Imbassadours of France, Spaine, and Venice, were placed in Parrall lels to the Kings and the Queene.

these great Potentates, with their sumptuous traine passed along the Streetes, the King of Denmarke seriously obserued the huge multitudes of common people thronging in euery corner, and the vnimaginable number of gallant Ladies, beauteous virgins, and other delicate Dames, filling the Windowes of euery house with kinde aspect, saluting their worthy mate with health and hearty welcome wheresoeuer they past. Vpon the great Fountaine in Cheapeside, was erected the bower of the Muses, with pleasant Musicke: At the West end of Cheapeside, by the Goldsmiths row neere vnto the Pageant, sate the great Citizens of the Citie in scarlet Robes, where the Recorder after he had made a solemne Oration in Latine, in the behalfe of the Citie, and for testimonie of their loue and zeale vnto their liege Lord, and his louing friends, presented the King of Denmark with a faire cup of gold, who with as great kindnesse accepted it: then the Pageant after it had ceased her melodious harmony, began to expresse the purpose thereof, viz. Diuine concord as sent from Heauen, descended in a cleud from the top vnto the middle Stage, and with a loud voyce, spake an excellent speech in Latine, purporting their hearty welcome, with the heauenly happines of peace, and vnity, amongst Christian Princes, &c. but though the extremperature of the vnruly multitude, the Kings could not well heare it, although they emptied their eares very seriously thereunto. At the faire Fountaine in Fleetstreete was a pleasant Pastorall deuice, with Songs, wherewith the Kings were much delighted: this Fountaine and diuers other rarine deare Time. And after they were come to Whitehall in the euening, they were entertained with fireworkes vpon the water.

Sir Henry Mainwaring Recorder of London.

The next morning King Christianus, and Prince Henry, with others of both Nations, went vnto the Abby of Westminster, and in, to the Chappell royall of Henry the seauenth, to behold the Monuments, against whose coming the Image of Queene Elizabeth, and certaine other images of former Kings and Queenes, were newly beautified, amended, and adorned with royall vestures, but he tooke most notice of Saint Edwards Shrine, and therewithall admired the whole Architecture and fabrication. After dinner the King being accompanied with the Lord Admirall, the Lord Chamberlaine, and others, went by Coach vnto Pauls Church, and into the Quyer, and other Chappels therein. And then the King, and the Lord Chamberlaine, with some others, ascended the steeple of the Steeple, and when hee had surueyed the Cittie, he held his hat still whilest Edward Soper, keeper of the steeple, with his knife cut the length and breadth thereof, in the Lead: And for a lasting remembrance thereof, the said Soper within few dayes after, made the Kings Character in gilded copper, and fixed it in the middest of the print of the Kings foote, which was no sooner done, but some rakehinnies of this yeon age, thinking all gold that glittred, with violent instruments attempted to steale it. From thence the King rod to the Royall Exchange, and walked twice about the vpper Pauane, obseruing the riches, and beauty thereof, and when he had walked twice about below, all the Merchants walke, he sate downe vpon the long Bench at the East end, and beheld the manner of the building. Then tooke Coach, and with the foresaid Lords, went to the Tower of London, and surueyed all the Offices, and Munition, and hauing walked a while vp and downe, hee ascended the white Tower, commonly called Iulius Cæsars Tower, where himselfe discharged a peece of Ordnance, and being descended, Sir William Wade, Lieutenant of the Tower entertayned him, and his chiefe attendants, with a very Royall Banquet, and the rest of their traine were likewise very honorably banqueted in another roome, which kindnesse the king very graciously accepted, and then returned to White-Hall, where King *James* expected his comming, and vpon Saterday they went both to Greenewich, to the Churching of the Queene, which was solemnized the next day, being the third of August.

The Queene Churched.

From this time the King of Denmarke, during his abode in England, in his daily exercises vsed either to hunt, hawke, play at Tenis, or the manly play of the English Fences, or of the best being selected, and played at those weapons, according to the manner of fight: there was also the like play betweene a Scotish Scot, and a Germane: or running at the Ring, or Tilt; he ran at Tilt against the Duke of Lenox, the Earles of Arundell, and Southampton and the Lord Compton: or else in riding to see the Kings pleasant Parkes, and stately Houses within twenty miles of London: and vpon Thursday the 7 of August, he was installed Knight of the Garter at Windsor, and in his Robes of order he did his beyfance at the Altar, and the next day, all his prime Councellors were very solemnly and honorably feasted by the Earle of Rutland at Detford, where both Kings were expected, but it was late before they returned from Windsor.

The King of Denmarks daily exercises.

The King of great Britaine feasteth the King of Denmarke and all his chiefe traine in the Citie of Bethlehem.

Sunday the tenth of August, both the Kings, the Queene, Prince Henry, with all their Councellors, chiefe Officers, and Attendants, were most sumptuously feasted at Chatham, in the Elizabeth Ionas, which gallant ship was wonderously adorned with Cloth of Gold, and in the halfe deck a rich Chayre of Estat. After dinner they went from that ship to the white Beare, vpon a bridge, aboue twelue score yards long, made of fierre masts, rayled in on either side, which

The King of Denmarke goeth by water to Westminster, Paules, the Royall Exchange, and the Tower.

The King of Denmarke feasted by the King, Queen and Prince a board his owne ship.

which floted vpon the water, and was so broad as foure men might easily walke together: at the middle of this Bridge was a great Hoye, which they called the Kitchin, wherein the diet for that day was dressed, and when the Kings and the rest in ere gone past the vttermost hills, then the Gallies, Ships, and the Castle discharged their ordinance, to the number of almost twelue hundred shot.

The next day being Monday, King Iames, Queene Anne, Prince Henry, with certaine other Britayne Princes, and Peeres about ten a clocke in the forenoone, went aboord the King of Denmarkes greatest shippe, commonly called the Admirall, riding at Anchor before Graues-end, which was a gallant shippe of a very hie and narrow building, the beake-head, the sterne, and her three galleries were fairely gilded, the waste and halfe decke adorned with Arras, and other rich ornaments, wherein the sayd Princes were very royally feasted, and as they sate at Banquet, greeting each other with kindnesse and pledges of continuing amity, and hearts desire of lasting health, the same was straight wayes knowne, by sound of Drumme and Trumpet, and the Cannons lowdest voyce, beginning euer first in the Admirall, seconded by the English block-houses, then followed the vice Admirall and after her, the other fiue Denmarke ships ending alwayes at the smallest.

About foure a clocke when the banquet was ended, and the sayd Princes fully performed all Kingly complements, King Iames began to take his leaue to depart, but his brother being lothe to leaue his royall presence so soone, hauing prepared against that time, for their entertainment, an ingenious deuice of his owne vpon the water floating neere vnto them, and would therefore haue had the King Queen, and Prince with the great assembly, stayd vntill the cunning, to haue seene the rarenesse of his inuention, but when he saw the King of great Britaine and his Traine ready to depart, notwithstanding the brightnesse of the sonne, he caused fire to be put vnto it, and whilest that deuice continued, there were certaine Danes in another barge that blew vp strange and extraordinary lofty rockets into the ayre.

The King of Denmarks fire workes.

He that gaue fire to the great worke fled presently into an other Boat.

The manner and meaning of the great worke of wild-fire.

This deuice of wild-fire was in Pageant wise, betweene foure round pillars, vpon a Lighter framed, where the seuen deadly sinnes in their liuely colours, shape, and Caracters, sate chained fast, and for their wickednesse bound to endure eternall punishment, and ouer their heads in the middest of them, vpon the toppe of a pinacle, was a fierce Lyon couchaunt, signifying sudden vengeance, holding in his teeth the loose end of his chaine, which compassed them about, and from the Lyons mouth the fire first did issue forth, and from thence without any confusion, or further ayde, by degrees and diuers proportion, descended into all parts, making simply sorts of sounds, with lofty Rockets, and fire-flakes mounting in the ayre, and great number of thunder crackes like peales of ordinance, and for the space of more then a quarter of an houre, the foresaid Images sate burning in Grimes flame resembling hells endlesse torments prepared for such offendors, but in the end they were consumed, and so were the foure great wooden pillars one after another, being in all nigh three yards in square distance from the rest, this nocturnall pastime of pleasant variable fire workes lasted about halfe an houre, and onely was disgraced by too much light, wanting Egypts darkenesse to haue made it bright. The on the wednesday following the King with his eight ships went a little lower, and the next day after being Thursday hee set sayle and with fauourable winds returned home in eight dayes.

There was but only once fire put to the Kings mouth

The King of Denmarke gaue many gifts and rewards, as Chaynes, Iewells, Buches, and such like, besides twenty thousand markes in money, vnto such as either did him seruice or courtesy, this Christianus the fourth is son to Phredericke the second of that name: King of Denmarke, his mothers name was Sophia of very famous memory, hee was borne the twelfe of Aprill, one thousand fiue hundreth seuenty seuen, and succeeded his father, in the yeere one thousand fiue hundreth eighty and eight, and married Anne Katherine, the daughter of Ioachim Phredericke, Marquesse of Brandenburge, his Sister Anne Daughter of the foresaid Phredericke and Sophia, was borne the twelfe of February, one thousand fiue hundreth seuenty foure, and married vnto Iames the first, in the yeere one thousand fiue hundreth and ninetie, then King of Scots, now King of great Britaine, Fraunce, and Ireland, defender of the faith, &c.

The King of Denmarke returneth.

The King Denmarkes bounty.

Queene Anne borne.

Francois Prince of Lawdemont, third sonne to Charles Duke of Lorraine: arriued at London the 23. of September, with seuen Earles, ten Barons, fortie Gentlemen of qualitie, and fiue score common persons, all the Lordes and Gentlemen, were very braue and comely in their apparell, end as ciuill in their behauiour. The 25 of September, they went all by Coach vnto the King at Hampton Court where for fourteene dayes space, they were all very Royally entertained and feasted, and rode a Hawking and hunting, with the King to diuers places, and then returned: the afore named Charles hath two other sonnes, viz. Henry Marquesse Dupont, and Charles, Cardinall of Ments, and Straſsburgh, hee hath also foure daughters, being Cozens Germaine to our Soueraign Lord the King by the mothers side, and the sayd Dukedome of Lorraine, is a free and absolute estate, and was of auncient time a famous Kingdome, then called Austrasie, but through long warres with the Kings and Emperors it was reduced into a Dukedome, and made a limbe of the Empire) as Mounsieur Bernard, de Girard, Signieur de Haylan, frenge lyably affirmeth in his Booke called the Estate of Fraunce. folio. 248. 249. 250. &c. This most noble and renowned Dukedome of Lorraine, lieth betweene France, and Germany bordering vpon the Rheine.

The Prince of Lawdemont arriued at London.

The Dukes of Orleans mounteth much to the Kings honour.

Thestates of Britaine and petty Britaines.

The French King the 23. of October, following

Sonnes of the French King Princes Chyldren in one yeere.

lowing with great Pompe and Solemnitie, Dyalogen his three Legittimate children, viz. his sonne Lewes, the Dolphin of Fraunce, being full fiue yeares of age, vnto whom Pope Paule the first was Godfather, and his two Daughters, both of them being younger then their brother the Dolphin, all were both Baptized before him, their names are Christine, and Elizabeth.

Great flood in England and Wales.

The 20. of January, it pleased God to send a mighty Westwinde, which continued full fifteene houres, and with extreame violence and rage brought in the Sea, by reason whereof, and of the spring tides, both which furiously encountred the Land waters, presently after a great rayne, and caused the riuer of Seauerne, beginning as farre as S. Michaels Mount in Cornewall, to ouerflow the bankes, and bounds, all along on both sides vp into Somersetshire, and Glouc. shire, in some places fiue foote, and in some places the water ouerflowed their bankes three foote, in some places fiue foote and in some places almost eight foote, and ranne into the land in some places almost twenty miles in length, and some miles in breadth, and in all places where euer it ran, it came so fiercely, that it was hard for man or beast to escape by flight, at the very first comming in of the waters, besides the horror of the noyse, and the terrour to the eye, to behold the swift outrage of waters, comming vpon them like great mountaines, which of many were more seene then suspected to approach vpon them, and their habitations so hastily and thereupon stayed and attempted to remoue and set things as they thought in order and more safe in their houses. Others stayed to haue their horses sadled, and then to ride away: others taking the first aduantage of the time, and being onward on their way to escape, some a slight shote, some more, some lesse, would needes returne home, vpon hope to saue their mens, children, friends, iewels, or euidences of their lands, from which space the floods came violently vpon them, and ouerwhelmed many of them, and their beasts, and their cattell, for the waters in diuers Townes and Villages, vpon the suddaine in respect of time, grew higher then the tops of their houses, trees, and Churches, and in many places, many saued themselues by climing into trees, vpon the tops of houses, and Churches, others by swimming, and some by sitting vpon the new ruines of houses floating vpon the water, many heards of cattell perished: in this great extremity, there were some that with shew of pittie, made out Boates pretending to relieue the distressed, but performed no such charitie, for they went onely a boot-halling and made a prey and spoyle of all they could lay hands on: and among other things of note, it happened that vpon the tops of some hilles, diuers Beastes of contrary nature had got vp for their safetie, as Dogs, Cats, Foxes, Hares, Conies, Poales, Mice, and Rats, who remained together very peaceably, without any manner of figne of feare, or violence one towardes another. There were drowned in the parts of Somersetshire, fourescore persons, and damages done vnto the sayes almost of one fifty thousand pound, in twentie Townes, as I was certified a yeere after, vnder the hand of Daniel Seth, Lord Bishop of that diocesse, and vnder the hands and seales of Sir Nicholas Halswell Knight, Iohn Stert, Iohn Adams, Esquires, and Iustices of peace of that shire, considering the generall losse of men, and damage otherwise in other places, I could not obtaine the certaintie, but to certaine it is, that it was very great and greeuous. There was also great damage done in Glocestershire. At this time in Russia, especially towards Colmogro, there happened the like terrible inundation, where it carryed away Churches, and houses, but other images it did not so much damage there, as in England, by reason the Ice brake not, but held fast, wherevpon men and beasts saued themselues, but if the Ice had broke it had bin farre more great and grieuous then in England, for the the ouerflowing was not knowne in those partes, the Ice continued there vntill the eleuenth of May, which was neuer seene before.

Chese fellowes were more inured to pitty then pitty.

An. 1607.

Ice great in Russia.

Churches ouerflowed in Russia as in England, by reason the Ice brake not, but held fast.

The Citie of Couentry is seated vpon the mount or rising of a small hill, vpon which place there arose a most strange and dreadfull sodayne inundation, the manner whereof following with the words, as I receiued it vnder the Seale of the Citie, and signed by Henry Sewell, Mayor of Couentrie. I write it as well of mine owne knowledge, as of the credible report of our honest neighbours. Citizens of Couentry, who haue sustayned great losses lately by a sudden flood, which vnexpected and suddenly came first into the Suburbes of the Citie, from whence or where the rayne that caused that sodayne flood came, we know not, but vpon Friday morning being the seauenth of Aprill, 607. about seuen of the clock, no man suspected any such flood to be, and suddainly betweene eight and nine of the clocke that morning, there was a great flood comming towards the Citie, wherevpon some seeing it came halfe a myle of, and made it knowne vnto some Citizens to make present hast to saue some of their goods, but the water came so abundantly, like the surges of the Sea, into the Suburbes and Citie, that it rose within one houre, in some places, three yards, and better in height, more then it was that morning, and ouerflowed diuers Meadowes, and grounds, and entred through the streetes and houses of the Inhabitants that dwelt nere the riuer, to the number of two hundreth, fifty, and seauen houses, besides twelue houses, and other houses of offices, Nere the Riuer, to the great hurt of Tanners, Whittawers, Dyers, Bakers, and Brewers, not onely in their household goods, but in carrying away many things to their great losse and damage. In witnesse whereof, we haue hereunto put the common seale of the Citie, for such like causes, ordained the 17. of May 1607. Henry Sewell Maior. Thus much at my request it pleased the Maior & Aldermen to certifie, because this sudaine flood was more strange

A Irondrons strange flood at Couentry.

Ye the first notice hereof, some laughed the messengers to scorn, others began to take to their safety, but few of none did escape, so sudaine and so great an Inundation, &c.

strange and admirable, considering that neither Sea, nor any great riuer commeth neere the Citie, but onely a very small brooke, but halfe a yard deepe at most, ouer which at all times of the yeere a man may either stride or leape ouer it, neither was there euer might any such great raine, as might raise so great and violent waters: onely there happened vpon Thursday at night, great rayne and thunder, being but such as they had often heard and seene, after which there neuer followed any inundation: this fierce and vnheard of flood came with vnwonted fury and violence, and when it was risen to his full height, it stayed so for the space of three houres, and then began all expectation, and with as great admiration, it vanished as it encreased, being in comming and going of equall wonder, for it stayed there as long time when it was risen, as it did in rising and falling, being in the growing, staying and decreasing about foure houres and a halfe, if this had happened in the night, most of the Citty had perished, but at this time there was no liuing soule drowned: there were abundance of white Snailes that came downe with the waters, and there were a great number crept vp into Willow trees in clusters like ropes of Onions, and the like were seene in mens houses, and were supposed to be so assembled before the comming of the waters, but not obserued vntill the waters were come.

An insurrection for the laying open of enclosures.

About the middle of this moneth of May, 1607. a great number of common persons, soddainly assembled themselues in Northamptonshire, and then others of like nature assembled themselues in Warwickshire, and some in Leicestershire, they violently cut and brake downe hedges, filled up ditches, and laid open all such inclosures of Commons, and other grounds as they found inclosed, which of auncient time had beene open, and imployed to tillage, these tumultuous persons in Northamptonshire, Warwicke, and Leicestershire grew very strong, being in some places of men, women, and children, a thousand together, and at Hill Morton in Warwickshire there were three thousand, and at Cottesbich there assembled of men, women, and children to the number of full fiue thousand: these riotous persons bent all their strength to leuell and lay open inclosures, without exercising any manner of theft, or violence vpon any mans person, goods, or cattell, and whersoeuer they came, they were generally relieued by the more inhabitants, who sent them not onely many Carts laden with victuall, but also good store of Spades and Shouells, for speedy performance of their present enterprize, who vntill then, some of them were faine to vse Hills, Pykes, and such like tooles in stead of Pattacke and Spades.

The twenty seauenth of this moneth, there were seuerall Proclamations made, straightly charging them to surcease their disorder, yet neuertheless they ceased not, but rather persisted more eagerly, and thereupon the Sheriffs and Iustices, had authority giuen them to suppresse them by force, by vertue whereof they raised an Army and scattered them, vsing all possible meanes to auoide bloudshed, and after that the king sent Henry Earle of Huntington, Thomas Earle of Excester, Edward Lord Zouch, William Lord Compton, John Lord Harrington, Robert Lord Spencer, George Lord Carew, Sir Edward Coke Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas, with diuers other learned Iudges, assisted by the Maior of Couentry, and the most discreet Iustices of peace, and of Oyer and Determyner in their seuerall Counties, to doe iustice vpon the leauellers, according to the nature of their offences.

And the 28. of Iune, the king made Proclamation, signifying his great vnwillingnesse to haue proceeded against them, either by Martiall law, or ciuill iustice, if leuity or gentle admonition mought any wayes haue preuailed with them, to desist from their turbulent, rebellious, and trayterous practise.

At the first those foresaid multitudes assembled themselues, without any particular head or guide, then start vp a base Fellow called John Reynolds, whom they surnamed Captaine Powch, because of a great leather pouch which he wore by his side, in which purse he affirmed to his company, that there was sufficient matter to defend them against all commers, but afterward when hee was apprehended, his Pouch was searched, and therein was onely a piece of greene cheese. Hee told them also, that hee had Authority from his Maiestie to throw downe enclosures, and that hee was sent of God to satisfie all degrees whatsoeuer, and that in this present worke hee was directed by the Lord of heauen, and thereupon they generally inclined to his direction, so as hee kept them in good order, hee commaunded them not to sweare, nor to offer violence to any person: but to ply their businesse, and to make faire worke, entending to continue this worke, so long as God should put them in mind, at the beginning of these ordered assemblies vntill their suppression, and one examination of many of the offenders, it was generally found throughout the land, that the special cause of their assemblies and discontent was concerning Religion, and the same part currant with many according to their seuerall opinions in religion, some sayd it was the Puritane faction, because they were the strongest, and thereby sought to enforce their pretended reformation, others said it was the practise of the Papists, thereby to obtaine restauration or tolleration, all which reports proued false as appeared plainelie, by the examination of all such as were examined, whose generall pretence of grieuances and cause of stirring in this riotous, and trayterous manner was ouerlay for the laying open of inclosures.

The preuention of further depopulation, the encrease and continuance of tillage to releeue of their wiues and children, and chiefely because it had beene credibly reported vnto them by many, that of very late yeeres, there were three hundred and sixty Townes decayed and depopulated, and that they supplied by this insurrection, and casting downe of inclosures to cause reformation.

Their indictments.

House of them were indicted of high treason, and executed for leauying warre against the King, and opposing themselues against the Kings forces, Captaine Powch was made exemplary.

Others for fellonie in continuing together by the space of an houre, after proclamation to be soone and depart according to the Statute, the rest were indicted for Riots, vnlawfull assemblies and throwing downe of hedges and ditches.

A Parish Church built in the North countrey.

Sir Iames Altham Knight, Baron of the Exchequer, told me that in the North Countrey as he rode Circuit, he was found a goodly Parish Church, very large and beautifull, newly builded, but by whom, and at whose charge it was builded hee could not directly learne, but willed the Parish Priest to enquire who were the founders, and to send me true instructions, but I neuer heard of him as yet, and as he sayd led me in this, so haue many others in very many things of worthy note, vnto whom I vsed all diligence, paines, and expences, all which preuayled little or nothing.

The King hauth with the Lord Mayor of London, and is made free of the Cloth-workers.

Friday the 12. of June, his Maiestie being attended with diuers Lords of the priuy Councell and others, came priuately vnto the Maiors house, and dined with him as hee hadde appointed the day before, and after dinner Sir Iohn Watts Lord Mayor, presented his Highnesse with a Purse of Gold, which he very graciously accepted, and signified therewith, all as he did in like manner whilest hee sate at dinner, his most especiall loue and care of the Citty of London, with her Sister Cities and Citizens. And when the King was ready to depart, the Lord Mayor humbly besought his Maiestie, of his most especiall grace and fauour to the Citie in generall, and to that Society in particular, that he would be pleased to be free of the Cloth-workers, which he also very graciously accepted, then the King descended the lining Chamber, and went into Cloth-workers-hall, the Lord Mayor bearing the Sword as he did before, after hee had presented it vnto his Maiestie at his first coming, and by the King deliuered him backe again, and being entred into the Hall, hee was receiued by the Maister, and Wardens, and Assistants of that company, in very graue and comelie manner, vnto whom the King gaue good respect and kinde speeches, and accepting to their humble generall request, it pleased the King to dignifie the Citie and that Societie, and being in the open Hall, he asked who was Maister of the company: and the Lord Mayor answered, Syr William Stone, vnto whom the King said, Will thou make mee free of the Cloth-workers? presently the Maister, and thinke my selfe a happie man that I liue to see this day:

depopulated, and that they supplied by this insurrection, and casting downe of inclosures to cause reformation.

Their indictments.

House of them were indicted of high treason, and executed for leauying warre against the King, and opposing themselues against the Kings forces, Captaine Powch was made exemplary.

Others for fellonie in continuing together by the space of an houre, after proclamation to be soone and depart according to the Statute, the rest were indicted for Riots, vnlawfull assemblies and throwing downe of hedges and ditches.

A Parish Church built in the North countrey.

Sir Iames Altham Knight, Baron of the Exchequer, told me that in the North Countrey as he rode Circuit, he was found a goodly Parish Church, very large and beautifull, newly builded, but by whom, and at whose charge it was builded hee could not directly learne, but willed the Parish Priest to enquire who were the founders, and to send me true instructions, but I neuer heard of him as yet, and as he sayd led me in this, so haue many others in very many things of worthy note, vnto whom I vsed all diligence, paines, and expences, all which preuayled little or nothing.

The King hauth with the Lord Mayor of London, and is made free of the Cloth-workers.

Friday the 12. of June, his Maiestie being attended with diuers Lords of the priuy Councell and others, came priuately vnto the Maiors house, and dined with him as hee hadde appointed the day before, and after dinner Sir Iohn Watts Lord Mayor, presented his Highnesse with a Purse of Gold, which he very graciously accepted, and signified therewith, all as he did in like manner whilest hee sate at dinner, his most especiall loue and care of the Citty of London, with her Sister Cities and Citizens. And when the King was ready to depart, the Lord Mayor humbly besought his Maiestie, of his most especiall grace and fauour to the Citie in generall, and to that Society in particular, that he would be pleased to be free of the Cloth-workers, which he also very graciously accepted, then the King descended the lining Chamber, and went into Cloth-workers-hall, the Lord Mayor bearing the Sword as he did before, after hee had presented it vnto his Maiestie at his first coming, and by the King deliuered him backe again, and being entred into the Hall, hee was receiued by the Maister, and Wardens, and Assistants of that company, in very graue and comelie manner, vnto whom the King gaue good respect and kinde speeches, and accepting to their humble generall request, it pleased the King to dignifie the Citie and that Societie, and being in the open Hall, he asked who was Maister of the company: and the Lord Mayor answered, Syr William Stone, vnto whom the King said, Will thou make mee free of the Cloth-workers? presently the Maister, and thinke my selfe a happie man that I liue to see this day: then the King sayd Stone giue me the charge and now I am a Cloth-worker, and after that hee walked into the Garden, and into the great Parlour, the Lord Mayor bearing the Sword before him, and whilest hee sate there, the Earles of Shrewsbury, and Cumberland, being both free of that company, presented his Maiestie with Bread and Wine, the King rose vp and sayd then: now I drinke vnto all my good brethren the Cloth-workers, and I pray God to blesse them all, and all good cloth weauers: and for proofe of our especiall fauour to this fraternitie, and for their encrease of mutuall amitie, I doe here giue vnto this company, two Buce of Buckes yearely for euer, against the time of the election, of the Maister and Wardens of this Society, then the Lord Mayor, the Maister, the Wardens and Assistants, humbly thanked his Maiestie, for those high fauours done to that company: and hauing kissed his hand, the King departed: at this time also there were diuers Noble men and Gentlemen made free of the Cloth-workers.

The third of July, the Kings Maiestie repayed three score thousand pound vnto the Citizens of London, which summe the Lord Mayor and Aldermen had lent vnto Queene Elizabeth, the third of February, one thousand fiue hundred nineteene eight.

The Kings Maiestie payeth 60 000. pound which was lent vnto Queene Elizabeth.

The fourth of July, Sir Thomas Knewet Knight, was called by writ to the Parliament, by the Name and Title of Baron of Effingham, and sate that day in his Robes among the Barons, being the last day of that Parliament, holden vpon Prorogation, and so againe Prorogued vntill the fifteenth of November following.

Sir Thomas Knewet made a Baron.

Sunday the fifth of July, Sir Iulius Cæsar Knight, Chancellour of the Exchequer, was sworne a Priuie Counsellor of Estate.

Sir Iulius Cæsar made a Priuy Counsellor.

Thursday the fifteenth of July, his Maiestie, and Prince Henry being accompanied and attended with very many of the Nobilitie, and other honourable personages, came in priuate manner to Merchant-taylors Hall to Dynner, (the Queene being also expected) where they were very Royally and ioyfully Feasted and entertained, with great and pleasant variety of Musique, of voyces and Instruments, and ingenious speeches, being the Feast day of the Merchant-taylors for the election of the Master and Wardens. Against the comming of the King, the Lord Mayor gaue his attendance there, and at the Hall gate, presented his Maiestie with the Sword, who presently gaue it him againe, who bare it before the King into the vpper large dining roome, anciently called the Kings chamber: and a while after the Lord Maior with license returned to his owne house with his owne Sword borne before him, after he was past the Hall gates, and in the same manner hee re-

Prince Henry made free of the Merchant-taylors.

strange and admirable, considering that neither Sea, nor any great riuer commeth neere the Citie, but onely a very small brooke, but halfe a yard deepe at most, ouer which at all times of the yeare a man may either stride or leape ouer it, neither was there euer-night any such great raine, as might raise so great and violent waters: onely there happened vpon Thursday at night, great rayne and thunder, being but such as they had often heard and seene, after which there neuer followed any inundation: this fierce and boysterous flood came with vnusuall fury and violence, and when it was risen to his full height, it stayed so for the space of three houres, and then began to fall with as great admiration, it vanished as it encreased, being in remaining and going of equall wonder, for it stayed there as long time when it was risen, as it did in rising and falling, being in the growing, staying and decreasing about foure houres and a halfe, if this had happened in the night, most of the Citty had perished, but at this time there was no liuing beast drowned: there were abundance of white Snailes that came downe with the waters, and there were a great number crept vp into Willow trees in clusters like ropes of Onions, and the like were seene in mens houses, and were supposed to be so assembled before the comming of the waters, but not obserued vntill the waters were come.

In insurrection for the laying open of Inclosures.

About the middle of this moneth of May, 1607. a great number of common persons, ioyntly assembled themselues in Northampton-shire, and then others of like nature assembled themselues in Warwickshire, and some in Leycestershire, they violently cut and brake downe hedges, filled vp ditches, and laid open all such inclosures of Commons, and other grounds as they found inclosed, which of auncient time had beene open, and imployed to tillage, these tumultuous persons in Northamptonshire, Warwicke, and Leycestershire grew very strong, being in some places of men, women, and children, a thousand together, and at Hill Morton in Warwickshire there were three thousand, and at Cotsbrooke there assembled of men, women, and children to the number of full five thousand: these riotous persons bent all their strength to levell and lay open inclosures, without exercising any manner of theft, or violence vpon any mans person, goods, or cattell, and where euer they came, they were generally relieued by the neare inhabitants, who sent them not onely many Carts laden with victuall, but also good store of Spades and Shouells, for speedy performance of their present enterprize, who vntill then, some of them were faine to vse Bills, Pykes, and such like tooles in stead of Mattocke and Spades.

The twenty seauenth of this moneth, there were seuerall Proclamations made, straightly charging them to surceasse their disorder, yet neuertheleste they ceased not, but rather persisted more eagerly, and thereupon the Sheriffs and Iustices, had authority giuen them to suppresse them by force, by vertue whereof they raised an Army and scattered them, vsing all peaceable meanes to auoide bloudshed, and after that the king sent Henry Earle of Huntington, Thomas Earle of Exceter, Edward Lord Zouch, William Lord Compton, Iohn Lord Harrington, Robert Lord Spencer, George Lord Carew, Sir Edward Coke Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas, with diuers other learned Iudges, assisted by the Maior of Couentry, and the most discreet Iustices of peace, and of Oyer and Determyner in their seuerall Counties, to doe iustice vpon the leauellers, according to the nature of their offences.

And the 28. of Iune, the king made Proclamation, signifying his great vnwillingnesse to haue proceeded against them, either by Martiall law, or cruell iustice, if lenity or gentle admonition meight any wayes haue preuailed with them, to desist from their turbulent, rebellious, and trayterous practise.

At the first those foresaid multitudes assembled themselues, without any particular head or guide, then start vp a base Fellow called John Reynoldes, whom they surnamed Captaine Powch, because of a great leather pouch which he wore by his side, in which purse he affirmed to his company, that there was sufficient matter to defend them against all commers, but afterward when hee was apprehended, his Powch was searched, and therein was onely a peece of greene cheese. Hee told them also, that hee had Authority from his Maiestie to throw downe enclosures, and that hee was sent of God to satisfie all degrees whatsoeuer, and that in this present worke hee was directed by the Lord of heauen, and thereupon they generally inclined to his direction, so as hee kept them in good order, hee commaunded them not to sweare, nor to offer violence to any person: but to ply their businesse, and to make faire worke, entending to continue this worke, so long as God should put them in mind, at the beginning of these disordered assemblies vntill their suppression, and one examination of many of the offenders, it was generally bruited throughout the land, that the special cause of their assemblies and offerment was concerning Religion, and the same past currant with many according to their seuerall opinions in religion, some said it was the Puritane faction, because they were the strongest, and thereby sought to enforce their pretended reformation, others said it was the practise of the Papists, thereby to obtaine restauration or tolleration, all which reports proued false as appeared plainelie, by the examination of all such as were examined, whose generall pretence of grieuances and cause of stirring in this riotous, and trayterous manner was onely for the laying open of inclosures. The preuention of further depopulation, the encrease and continuance of tillage to relieue their wiues and children, and chiefely because (as it had beene credibly reported vnto them by many, that of very late yeeres, there were three hundred and forty Tenants decayed and depopulated,

depopulated, and that they supplied by this insurrection, and calling downe of inclosures to cause reformation.

Their indictements.

Some of them were indicted of high treason, and executed for leauying warre against the King, and opposing themselues against the Kings forces, Captaine Powch was made exemplary.

Others for follonie in continuing together by the space of an houre, after proclamation to be seaze and depart according to the Statute, the rest were indicted for Riots, vnlawfull assemblies and throwing downe of hedges and ditches.

A Parish Church builded in the North countrey.

Sir Iames Altham Knight, Baron of the Exchequer, told me that in the North Countrey as he rode Circuit, he was shewed a goodly Parish Church, very large and beautifull, newly builded, but by whom, and at whose charge it was builded hee could not directly learne, but willed the Parish Priest to enquire who were the founders, and to send me true instructions, but I neuer heard of him as yet, and as he sayd mee in this, so haue many others in very many things of worthy note, vnto whom I vse all diligence, paines, and expences, all which preuayled little or nothing.

The King dineth with the Lord Mayor of London, and is made free of the Cloth-workers.

Friday the 12. of June, his Maiestie being attended with diuers Lords of the priuy Councell and others, came priuately vnto the Maiors house, and dined with him as hee hadde appointed the day before, and after dinner Sir Iohn Watts Lord Mayor, presented his Highnesse with a Purse of Gold, which he very graciously accepted, and signified therewith, all as hee did in like manner whilest hee sate at dinner, his most especiall loue and care of the City of London, with her Magistrates and Citizens. And when the King was ready to depart, the Lord Maior humbly besought his Maiestie, of his most especiall grace and fauour to the Citie in generall, and to that Society in particular, that he would bee pleased to be free of the Cloth-workers, which hee also very graciously accepted, then the King descended the dining Chamber, and went into Cloth-workers-hall, the Lord Maior bearing the Sword as hee did before, after hee had presented it vnto his Maiestie at his first coming, and by the King deliuered him backe againe, and being entred into the Hall, hee was receiued by the Master, and Wardens, and assistants of that company, in very graue and comelie manner, vnto whom the King gaue good respect and kinde speeches, and according to their humble generall request, it pleased the King to dignifie the Citie and that Societie, and beeing in the open Hall, he asked who was Master of the company: and the Lord Mayor answered, Syr William Stowell, vnto whom the King sayd, Will thou make mee free of the Cloth-workers? Yes (quoth the Master, and thinke my selfe happie man to day: then the King sayd Stowe giue me thy hand and now I am a Cloth-worker, and after that hee walked into the Garden, and into the great Parlour, the Lord Mayor bearing the Sword before him, and whilest hee sate there, the Earles of Shrewsbury, and Cumberland, beeing both free of that company, presented his Maiestie with Bread and wine, the King rose vp and sayd then: now I drinke vnto all my good brethren the Cloth-workers, and I pray God to blesse them all, and all good cloth wearers: and for proofe of our especiall fauour to this fraternitie, and for their encrease of mutuall amitie, I doe here giue vnto this company, two brace of Bucks yearely for euer, against the time of the election, of the Master and Wardens of this Society, then the Lord Mayor, the Master, the Wardens and assistants, humbly thanked his Maiestie, for those high fauours done to that company; and hauing kissed his hand, the King departed: at this time also there were diuers Noble men and Gentlemen made free of the Cloth-workers.

The Kings Maiesty payeth 60 000. pound which was lent vnto Queene Elizabeth.

The third of July, the Kings Maiestie repayed three score thousand pound vnto the Citizens of London, which summe the Londoners hadde lent vnto Queene Elizabeth, the third of February, one thousand fiue hundred ninetie eight.

Sir Thomas Knewet made Baron.

The fourth of July, Sir Thomas Knewet Knight, was called by writ to the Parliament, by the Name and Title of Baron of Estrycke, and sate that day in his Robes among the Barons, beeing the last day of that Parliament, holden vpon Prorogation, and so againe Prorogued vntill the fifteenth of November following.

Sir Iulius Cæsar made a Priuy Counsellor.

Sunday the fifth of July, Sir Iulius Cæsar Knight, Chancellour of the Exchequer, was sworne a Priuie Counsellor of Estate.

Prince Henry made free of the Merchant-taylors.

Thursday the seuenteenth of July, his Maiestie, and Prince Henry being accompanied and attended with very many of the Nobilitie, and other Honourable Personages, came in priuate manner to Merchant-taylors Hall to Dynner, (the Queene beeing also expected) where they were very Royally and ioyfully Feasted and entertained, with great and pleasant variety of Musique, of voyces and Instruments, and ingenious speeches, beeing the Feast day of the Merchant-taylors for the election of the Master and Wardens. Against the comming of the King, the Lord Mayor gaue his attendance there, and at the Hall gate, presented his Maiestie with the Sword, who presently gaue it him againe, who bare it before the King into the vpper large dining roome, anciently called the Kings chamber: and a while after the Lord Maior with license returned to his owne house with his owne Sword borne before him, after he was past the Hall gates, and in the same manner hee re-

tenuous after Dinner, and attended untill the King departed.

Whilest the King sate at Dinner, the Maior, the Wardens, with diuers Aldermen, and the Recorder of London, all of them being free of that Society, came into the King, and in the behalfe of the whole company, humbly thanked his Maiestie, that thus it pleased him to grace their Fraternitie with his Royall presence: and therewithall the Maister presented him with a purse of gold, and the Clearke of the Hall shewed him a Role, wherein was Registred the Names of seuen Kings, one Queene, seauenteene Princes and Dukes, two Dutchesses, one Archbishoppe, one and thirty Earles, fiue Countesses, one Viscount, foureteene Bishoppes, sixtie and sixe Barons, two Ladies, seauen Abbots, seauen Priors, and one Subprior, omitting a great number of Knights, Esquiers, &c. who had beene free of that companie, which his Maiestie very graciously accepted, and sayd that hee himselfe was free of another Companie: yet he would so much grace the Company of Merchant-taylors, that the Prince his eldest Sonne should bee free thereof, and that hee would see and bee a witnesse, when the Garland should bee put on his head. Then they all descended into the great Hall, where the Prince dined, and in like manner when they had saluted him with hearty and chaerefull welcome: Then the Maister presented him also with a purse of Gold, and the Clearke of the Companie deliuered his Highnesse the like Role, which hee also as graciously accepted, and sayd, not onely himselfe would bee free of the Merchant-taylors, but therewithall commaunded one of his Gentlemen, and the Clearke to goe to all the Lords there present, and require all of them that liued him, and were not free of other Companies, to be free of his Companie: whereupon all those Lords, whose names are recorded in my Abridgement, with humble thankes vnto his Highnesse, accepted the freedome.

The King during this and the Election of the new Maister and Wardens, stood in a new Windowe made for that purpose, and with a gracious kingly aspect, beheld all their Ceremonies: and being descended into the Hall to depart, his Maiestie and the Prince were there againe presented with like Musique of voyces and instruments, and speeches, as at their first entrance.

This Musique consisted of twelue Lutes, equally diuided and placed by fire and fire in a Windowe on either side the Hall: And in the Ayre betweene them was a gallant shippe Triumphant, wherein was three men like Saylors, being eminent for voyce and skill, who in their seuerall songs were assisted and seconded by the cunning Lutenists. There was also in the Hall, the Musique of the Citie, and in the vpper chamber the children of his Maiesties Chappell sung a grace at the Kings Table, and also whilest the King sate at Dinner, Iohn Ball Doctor of Musique one of the Gigamites of his Maiesties Chappell Royall, and free of the Merchant-taylors, being in a Citizens Gowne, Cappe, and Hood, played most excellent melodie vpon a small payre of Organes, placed there for that purpose onely. Concerning the bountie of this Feast and plenty of all things as well for pleasant Princely entertainements of the King, the Prince, the Nobilitie, and the rest, where were very many braue Courtiers and other Gallants, as was most rare and excellent.

The Company of Merchant-taylors also after that gaue very kinde reliefe with full and honourable rewards vnto euery man according to their highest measure of desert, that did them any service or kindnesse either by voyce or Instruments, making of Speeches, or setting of Songs or otherwise. The kindnesse and bounty of the Company of Merchant-taylors.

About the beginning of September, there fled out of Irelande, into the parties beyonde the Seas, Hugh Earle of Tyrone, Tercconel, Hugh Baron of Don Gannon, Caffar Oge Oconnell, brother to the Earle of Tercconel, Arto Oge Oncale, Nephewe to the Earle of Tyrone, the Countesse of Tyrone, and two of the younger Sonnes of Tyrone. And the sonne and heire of the Earle of Tercconel, being an Infant scarce a yeere olde, with diuers their seruantes and followers: they embarqued themselues at Lughwilly. The Earle Tyrone and other Irish Lords go out of Ireland.

And the seuenth of Nouember, Proclamation was made concerning the soudaine flight of Tyrone, and the rest, wherein was declared their purpose and practise to extirpe the English Nation out of Irelande, and to conferre and yeelde the Kingdome of Ireland vnto the Pope and the Earle of Tyrones soliciting forraine Princes to attempt the conquest thereof. The Earle Tyrones treason discouered.

The seauenth of September, was borne Duke Charles second sonne to Philip the third King of Spaine. The King of Spaines second sonne borne.

Sir Iervais Clifton, of Layton Bromswold Knight, was called to the Parliament by writte, by the name and Title of Baron of Layton Bromswold, and sate in his Robes with the Barons in the Parliament hous the seuenth of Nouember: at which time the Parliament was againe prorogued vnto February following, and the twenty day of July next following, the Lord Elmie Stewart, Baron of Aubigny in France, Gentleman of the Kings bed-chamber in England, the sole brother of Lodowicus Duke of Lenox, married Katherine, the only daughter and heire

of the sayd Clifton.

The fifteenth of September last, died the Lady Mary, daughter to our Soueraigne Lord the King, and was solemnly interred at Westminster. About two yeeres past there were diuers Churches in London, well repayred, and some wholy beautified, the first and chiefe whereof, was Christs Church: by which example within few yeares, most of the Churches within London were likewise repaired and trimmed: and then the Countrey began also to make their Churches handsome and cleanly, and not without good cause, for there was not any Church worke done in fiftie yeeres vntill now, and notwithstanding, the generall repaire of Churches, yet Paules escaped repairing, pauing, and beautifying. The Lady Mary dead. The repairings of Churches.

But aboue all the Churches in London, Saint Stephens in Walbrooke, was trimmed most curiously and Church like, for all the decayed windowes in that Church, were pleasantly repaired with new coloured glasse made onely for that purpose: Doctor Fenton being Parson, and Maister Thomas Langton Fishmonger Church Warden, this was done in the yeere one thousand fiue hundred and thirteene.

The last yeere, the King pulled downe the old rotten, sleight builded Banqueting house at Whitehall, and new builded the same this yeere very strong and stately, being euery way larger then the first, there were also many fayre lodgings new builded and increased. The royall Banqueting house at Whitehall new builded.

Notwithstanding, the late great generall ruine and infirmitie, especially within the Citie and Suburbs of London, yet neuertheles the Citie by this time was wonderfully increased in people, and new buildings, and albeit that in the Queenes time there were diuers straict Proclamations against Inmates, and increase of new buildings, yet they tooke small effect. And vpon the first of March, in the second yeere of his Maiesties raigne Proclamation was made straightly forbidding all increase of new buildings within the Citie of London and one mile thereof: expressely commanding all persons to build their fore-fronts and Windowes of all their new buildings either of Bricke or Stone, by reason all great and well growne woods were spent and much walled, so as timber for shipping waxed scarce, but it tooke small effect: whereupon the twelfe of October this present yeare one thousand fiue hundred and seuen, Proclamation was made againe to the same purpose, wherein they were commanded to build all their vtter walles for fore-fronts and windowes, either of Bricke or Stone, and the fifteenth of October, some were Censured in the Star-chamber for building contrary to the tenor of the first Proclamation. Proclamation for building and preuention of Ipswher. Conteminors punished.

Doctor Aylmer, late Bishop of London, and Elizabeth, Countesse Dowager of Shrewsbury gaue certaine summes of money towards the better maintenance of Sermons hereafter at Paules Crosse, also Thomas Russell Draper, gaue likewise ten pound a yeere for euer, to be giuen vnto such vnbeneficed Preachers as shall preach at Paules Crosse. Also Maister George Bishoppe, Citizen and Stationer of London gaue ten pounds a yeere for euer to the same vse, whereupon, the Lord Mayor and court of Aldermen for the due imployment of the foresayd summes and increase of the same, as is fit for so honourable a purpose, haue further promoted for the sayd Preachers, so as euery of them being vnbeneficed shall not onely receiue a gratuitie in money, but also euery one that shall preach there, may at his pleasure bee freely entertained for fiue dayes space, with sweete and conuenient lodgings, fire, candle, and all other necessaries, viz. from Thursday before their appointed day of preaching vntill Tuesday morning following, this promotion tooke good effect. Promotion for such Preachers as shall preach at Paules Crosse.

The eight of December began a hard frost, which continued seuen dayes, and then thawed gently fiue dayes space: and the two and twentieth of the same moneth, the Frost began againe very violently, so as within foure dayes many persons did walke halfe way ouer the Thamis vpon the Ice, and by the thirtieth of December, the multitude at euery ebbe, and halfe flood passed ouer the Thamis in diuers places: and although the violence of the frost abated now and then, yet it held from the third of Ianuary, vnto the fifteenth of the same, so as many set vp booths and standings of sundry things to sell vpon the Ice, and some that at pastimes, and played at bowles with other exercises of pleasure vpon the Ice, whereof I haue spoken sufficiently in my abridgement. From the same and twentieth of Ianuary vnto the thirtieth of the same, the frost was most violent, and the next morning it began to thaw, and the first of February the Ice began to breake by little and little, and the next day in the afternoone all the huge rockes and ouerspreading Ice was either quite dissolued or sanke, so as then there remained no manner of signe of frost. And although this great frost continued of and on, by the space of seuen weeks yet the Ice was not so delicate smooth and euen and pleasant, as was that great frost in the yeere 1564. by reason that frost held firme, from the beginning vnto the ending, but this did not so: this frost brake downe and spoyled many faire bridges and destroyed much wild fowle, especially water foule and small byrds, and much fish perished, as well in the sea, as in freshwaters, and were found dead vpon the shore in diuers parts of this Land: this frost destroyed many Herbage in gardens, especially Hartichokes and Rosemary, this frost was more grieuous in Fraunce, then in England. The Russians, Mosqwayes, and other nations of the North: vpon the certaine knowledge of this frost, laughed the French & English to scorne, saying, how foolishly and shamefully, you complaine of one poore sixe weekes A great frost.

cold, which happeneth not in your countries, but once in fiftie yeeres, when wee in fiftie yeeres space, haue seldome lesse frost then fiue moneths, continually euery yeere, and with more extremity: this frost was also very violent in Ireland.

The Viscoume Haddington married.

The ninth of February, John Viscount Haddington married Elizabeth, the eldest daughter of Robert Earle of Suffer.

Aldgate new builded.

The tenth of March, was layd the first stone for the new building of Aldgate, but not finished vntill the end of the next yeere: this gate was new builded at the charges of the Citizens. The last yeere at the taking downe of the olde ruinate gate, there were found in the walls, certaine auncient Romane Coynes, the formes and superscriptions whereof, Master Martin Bond Merchant, being surueyor of the worke, caused to bee carued in Free Stone, as you may now see set ouer the Conduit neere without the gate, viz. Clodius Alonius, Vespasianus, Domitianus, Carausius, Valentinianus, and Traianus.

The 11. of Aprill, George Iervis, a Seminary Priest, according to his iudgement was executed at Tyborne.

An. Reg. 6. 1608. A Seminary executed.

The 11. of Aprill, being Monday, the quarter Sessions was holde at Saint Edmondsburie, where by negligence an out Malt house was set on fire, from whence in most strange and suddaine manner through fierce winds the fier was carried to the farther side of the towne, and as it went, left some streetes and houses free and vntouched: the same flue cleane ouer many houses neere vnto it, and did great spoyle vnto many faire buildings further off: This fire ceased not vntill it had destroyed 160. dwelling houses, besides many other, and besides the damage of much wares and goods. Many of the inhabitants when they perceiued the fire to encrease, threw great quantitie of houshold-stuffe and goods into their wells, for their best safetie, by reason whereof in diuers places many wanted water in their great extremitie, which otherwise might haue helped themselues and their neighbours. The King shewed great grace and kindnes to the distressed inhabitants, hee gaue them a new Charter, and preferred their best meanes to raise euery mans decayed estate, and gaue them 500. load of Timber to repaire their buildings: the Knights and Gentlemen of that Country extended their beneuolence: And the City of London gaue more bountifully towards their reliefe, then halfe England besides: and the Towne was forthwith new builded, in farre fairer manner then it was before.

St Edmundsbury burned.

Their wells were so choked with all kind of stuffe that they could not come by water.

The 17. of Aprill, Doctor Mountague Deane of the Kings Chappell, was consecrated Bishop of Bath and Wells.

Doctor Mountague made Bishop.

The 19. of Aprill, at White-hall dyed Thomas Earle of Dorset, Lord high Treasurer of England: he dyed suddainely at the Councell Table.

The Earle of Dorset dyeth The oath of allegeance to bee ministred vnto the seuerall persons.

The 29. of Aprill, Proclamation was made commanding the oath of Allegeance to be ministred vnto all persons, that should come from beyond the Seas, onely to distinguish honest Subiects, from trayterous practisers, and not for any point in matter of religion: all known Merchants and others of honest qualitie, were exempt from taking this oath: this Edict was made by reason that many suspitious persons of base sort, came dayly from beyond the Seas and refused to take the oath.

At this time Henry Earle of Northampton, was made the Lord Priuie Seale.

The Earle of Northampton made L. Priuie Seale.

The 1st of May, Robert Earle of Salisbury was sworne Lord high Treasurer of England at Westminster.

The Earle of Salisbury made Lord Treasurer.

The twentieth of May, at Windsor were made Knights and companions of the Garter, George Earle of Dunbar, Lord high Treasurer of Scotland, and Philip Earle of Mountgomery.

The Earle of Dunbar and Mountgomery made Knights of the Garter.

About this time, the King Knighted Sir Alexander Hay, Secretary for the Scottish affaires. And the thirtieth of January, one thousand fiue hundred and ten, dyed the foresaid George Earle of Dunbar, and his funerall rites were very honorably performed at Westminster, the eighteenth of Aprill, one thousand fiue hundred and eleuen.

The 23. of June, Thomas Garnet a Iesuite was executed at Tyborne hauing fauor offered him, if hee would haue taken the oath of allegeance aforesayd, but he refused it.

A Iesuite executed.

The ninth of October, Doctor Nevle was consecrated Bishop of Rochester, and the next yeare one thousand fiue hundred and ten, he was translated to Couentry and Lichfield, and in the yeere 1613. he was made Bishoppe of Lincolne.

Doctor Nevle made Bishop.

The first of December, one thousand fiue hundred and eight, William Viscount Cranborne, son and heire to Robert Earle of Salisbury, Lord Treasurer of England married Katherine Howard, the third daughter of Thomas Earle of Suffolke.

The Viscount of Cranborne married.

Notwithstanding many Proclamations, and all other publique meanes to giue full knowledge vnto all men of his Princelies most Christian inclination, and League of peace and Amitie with all Christian Princes, for the vniuersall good of Christendome, and the generall tranquilitie, and freedome of all his Kingdomes and Subiects, to all lawfull trades and traffique, both at home and abroad, yet such was, and is the impious, Trayterous, and bloody mindes of many men, hauing of late yeeres beene inured to liue insolently by the spoyls of others: of which sort for these fiue yeeres last past, many Englishmen haue furnished themselues with good ships and became fierce and outragious pirates, and incessantlie committed robberies, spoyles, pyracies, murthers, and depredations, as well vpon English Merchants, as vpon all other Christian nations, but especially vpon the Venetians, and Florentines, with whose complaints the King being much grieued, made sundry Proclamations to restrayne all such offenders, and their abetters, denouncing all such persons to bee

Pyrats and their notorious abuses.

Rebells: and therewithall gaue expresse order for their suppression, and apprehension as trayters, and peace-breakers. But all this preuailed nothing, for they still encreased, waxed worse, and not only persisted in their former villanies, but also diuers of them doubting their offences to bee vnpardonable by law and nature, became Runagates, renouncing their Christian faith, and wilfully submitted themselues vnto Pahometisme, making their chiefe residence in Tunis, and other places of the Turkes Dominions, exercising all manner of besprites, and speaking of blasphemy against God, their King, and Countrey, and taught the Infidels, the knowledge and vse of Nauigation to the great hurt of Europe. With which transgressors, there were some English Merchants, who very cunningly vnder hand, for their priuate gaine, vsed commerce, trucke and traffique, for some goods to the great derrision, and abetting of these haynous malefactors and dishonour to this Nation. For speedie redresse whereof, the King by Proclamation the eight of January, prohibited all English Merchants from any manner of medling or dealing with them, vpon great penalty commaunding the Iudge of the Admiralty to proceed seuerely in Iustice against all such offenders, and that from him there should no appeale bee graunted to any person touching the premises: all which notwithstanding, yet the number of these beastlish pirates still encreased, the chiefe whereof was Ward, Bishoppe, Sir Francis Verney, Glanville, and others: besides these, there were Hollanders and Easterlings, that at this time, and before were bloody Pyrates, and bebs consort with the English robbers, whereupon the King of Spayne to suppresse this deane of Thaues, which had committed many Pyracies vpon his people, sent certaine ships of Warre vnder commaund of Don Lewes Faxardo, who very politiquely came suddenly vpon them, about the middle of July, and at an instant burned about twenty of their shippes lying in harbour, at which time though Captaine Ward escaped in person by being then a shoare, yet his greatest strength with much riches of his, and his confederates, perished in the fire. And the twentie two of December following, there were nineteene Pyrats executed at Wapping, some whereof were of note, and had beene in consort with the forenamed Pyrates.

Though all these pyrates did not turne Turkes, yet they all submitted themselues vnder the protection of the Turkes or Barbarians.

Pyrats executed

Strange shifting of the Tydes.

Sunday the 19. of February, this yeere 1608. it should haue beene dead low water at London bridge, but quite contrary to course it was then high water, and presently it ebb almost halfe an houre, the quantitie of a foote, and then sodainly it flowed againe almost two foote higher then it did before, and then ebb againe vntill it came neere the right course, so as the next flood began in a manner as it should, and kept his due course in all respects as if there had beene no shifting nor alteration of Tydes, all this happened before twelue of the clocke in the forenoone the Weather being indifferent calme, and the first of February the next yeere following, the Thamis againe shifted Tydes very strangely.

The twentie first of February, Richard Earle of Dorset married the Lady Anne Earle of Clifford, the onely childe of George late Earle of Cumberland.

The younger Earle of Dorset marryed to Earle of Cumberlands daughter.

In this month of March, one thousand fiue hundred and nine, vpon full three yeeres deliberation, and with the aduice and consent of most Christian Princes, was concluded and Proclaimed, a generall and particular truce, and cessation from all manner of hostilitie by Sea and Land for twelue yeeres, betweene Philip the third of that name King of Spaine, and Albertus and Isabella, Archedukes of Austria, on the one part: and the generall States of Holland, Zeland, and Friezland, on the other part.

An. Reg. 7. 1609. Peace treated with Spaine.

In this truce were included all the adiacent Newter Coūnes, Forres and Cities: the intestine Warres betweene the Princes, and Estates before named, began at first about breach of Priuiledges, and raising of Taxes, and Customes, and then by degrees the Cities and Countries vnder the Estates with great willingnesse and eagernes, maintayned fierce Warre, for maintenance of their reformed Religion, and the suppression of the Romane Catholique Religion, hoping thereby vtterly to extirpe the house of Spayne, and Austria from all State and gouernment in the Low Countries, which by the ayde of diuers their neighbour Princes, they very politiquely persisted: so as the Spanish King and Arch-dukes for their owne ease and better proceeding in their ciuill affaires of State, were in a manner constrained to yeelde now vnto diuers Articles, which formerly they would neuer vouchsafe the hearing, and therefore this Truce was not concluded vntill eyther side had tryed their best friendes, and vtmost forcunes, hauing felt the bitter sting and cruell misery of almost fiftie yeeres blody warres, to the great damage and diuision of all Christendome, and aduantage of the vnreconcilable enemie the Turke.

This Warre of the Netherlands continued longer then any of the great Warres of former times, for the Warres of Troy continued not full eleuen yeeres. Alexander the Great dyed a young man, and his Warres continued but seauen yeeres. Pirrhus Warred with the Romanes but foure yeeres. Hanibal Warred with the Romanes seauentene yeeres. Mithridates Warred with the Romanes forty yeeres, and for many ages after, it was called the Mithridatique Warres. And although Cæsar and his Hoste were thrice in great perill of drowning, comming to conquer England, and sustained many damages in his seuerall conquests: yet he conquered France Germany, England, and other countries within nine yeeres: and who so with a free spirit & indifferent eye, shall read the Chronicles written

The contined warres of former warres

on either five, shall plainely see more slaughter of ciuill people, and more rich Cities wort and lost, then in any of the particular warres aboue mentioned.

The first generall planting of Mulberries, and making of silke in England.

It is not very many yeeres since the Kingdomes of Spayne and Portugall, haue obtayned the perfection of breeding Silke-wormes, and making of silke, neither is it but twenty yeeres since the first generall making of silke, came into France, which knowledge Fraunce had from Spaine and Italie, euery of which Nations, by time and time haue brought thereby, not onely good imployment of their poore and idle people, but also great profite to each Common-wealth: the which his Maiestly well knowing, and being desirous by all laudable meanes to imploy his poorest subiects, and preserre the generall profite of this Kingdome, and hauing made seuerall trialls and experiments, that silke-wormes would liue and breed in England: And that of their silke here was made sundry things as pieces of Taffata, stockings, and Sowing silke, equall to the best that is made in Granado: And as apt to take all fine colloures, whereupon the last yeere, and this spring, according to the Kings expresse order, vpon apparant reason and likelihood of great vtilitie to this Kingdome: there were many hundred thousands of young Mulberrie trees brought out of France, and planted in many Shires of this Land: And many began to breed wormes and make Silke, and albeit this is the first publique notice of keeping wormes, and making Silke in England, yet true it is, that many yeeres past, there were diuers industrious gentlemen that kept worms and made good silke, amongst which of late yeeres, William Stalledge Comptroller of the Custome-house, hath taken ingenious paynes in breeding wormes, and making of fine silke for all sorts: he had a pattent for seauen yeeres, to bring in mulberry seed, and this yeere he and Monsieur Verton, by order from the King planted Mulberry trees in most shires of England.

Whitaines Burle burned.

In the Strand, on the North side of Durham house, stood an olde long stable, the ontward wall whereof, to the streete side, was very rude and ruinate, all which was taken downe, and a stately building substantially erected in that place, by Robert Earle of Salisbury, Lord high Treasurer of England. The first stone of this beautifull building, was layd the tenth of June last past, and was fully finished in Nouember following. And vpon Tuesday the tenth of Aprill this yeere, one thousand fiue hundred and nine, many of the vpper shoppes were richly furnished with Wares, and the next day after that, the King, Queene, and Prince, the Lady Elizabeth, and the Duke of Sozke, with many great Lords, and chiefe Ladies, came thither, and were there entertained with pleasant speeches, giftes, and ingenious deuices, and then the King gaue it a name, and called it Whitaines Burse.

The eight of May, the King by Proclamation prohibites all forraine Nations, that after August next, they should not fish vpon any of the coastes of England, Scotland, or Ireland, nor the Iles adiacent, without the speciall licence from the Commissioners in that behalfe ordayned.

All forraine nations forbidden to fish vpon the coast of England, Scotland, or Ireland, without speciall licence.

The first, second, and third of June, the King in person heard the differences betweene the Ecclesiasticall, and Temporall Iudges, argued touching prohibitions out of the Kings Bench, and common pleas.

The King hearesh the difference betweene the Bishops and Secular Iudges.

The eyght, ninth, and tenth of June, his Maiestie also in proper person accompanied with the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Priuy Seale, the Lord Admirall, the Lord Chamberlaine, and others, heard the manifolde complaynts of the abuses of the victuallers, and other officers of his Houle Royall, all which he heard with great patience.

The King hearetly complaines touching his House.

The 23. of June, the King, Queene, and Prince, the Lady Elizabeth, and the Duke of Sozke, with diuers great Lords, and many others, came to the Tower, to see a tryall of the Lyons single valour, against a great fierce Beare, which had kild a child, that was negligently left in the Beare-house. This fierce Beare was brought into the open yard, behind the Lyons Den, which was the place for fight: then was the great Lyon put forth, who gazed a while, but neuer offred to assault or approach the Beare: then were two mastiffe Dogs put in, who past by the Beare, and boldly seazed vpon the Lyon: then was a stone horse put into the same yard, who suddenly sented, and saw both the Beare and Lyon, and very carefully grazed in the middle of the yard between them both: and then were fiue dogs put in, the most whereof at the first seazed vpon the Lyon, but they suddenly left him, and seazed vpon the Horse, and had wearyed him to death, but that three stout Beare-wards, euen as the King wished, came boldly in, and releeued the horse, by taking off the Dogges one by one, whilest the Lyon and Beare stared vpon them, and so went forth with their Dogs: then was that Lyon suffered to goe into his den againe, which he endeuoured to haue done long before. And then were diuers other Lyons put into that place one after another, but they shewed no more spirit nor valour then the first, and euery of them so soone as they espied the trap-doores open, ran hastily into their dens. Then lastly, there were put forth together the two young lusty Lyons, which were bred in that yard, and were now growne great: these at first began to march proudly towardes the Beare, which the Beare perceiuing, came hastily out of a corner to meete them, and suddenly offered to fight with the Lyon, but both Lyon and Lionesse skipt vp and downe, and fearefully fled from the Beare, and so these like the former Lyons, not willing to endure any fight, sought the next way to their Den. And the fift of July, according to the Kings commandement, this Beare was baited to death vpon a stage: and into the mother of the murthered child, was giuen twenty pounds out of part

A tryall of fight betwen a Lyon, a stone horse, a Beare, and of mastiffe dogs.

of that money, which the people gaue to see the Beare kild.

And the 20. of Aprill following, viz. 1610. Prince Henry, with the young Duke of Brunswicke, being accompanied with the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Arundell, and others, came priuately to the Tower, and caused the great Lyon to be put into the yard, and some dogs sta course to be set vpon him, & they all fought with him instantly, sauing such as at their first coming into the yard in their fury, fell one vpon another, because they saw none else with whom to fight for the Lyon kept close to the trap dooze at the further end of the yard: these were choise dogges, and slew all at the Lyons head, whereat the Lyon became enraged, and furiously bit diuers dogges by the head and throat, holding their heads and neckes in his mouth, as a Cat doth hold a Rat, and with his clawes, he tore their flesh extreamely, all which notwithstanding, many of them would not let goe their hold, vntill they were vtterly spoyled: after diuers courses, and spoyle of diuers dogges, and great likelyhood of spoyle of more, which yet lay tugging with the Lyon, for whose rescue there entred in three stout Beare-wards, and set a lustie dogge vpon the mouth of the Lyon: and the last Dogge got full hold of the Lyons tongue, pulld it out of his mouth, and held it so fast, that the Lyon neither bit him, nor any other: whereupon it was generally imagined that these dogs would instantly spoyle the Lyon, he being now out of breath, and hard from biting: and although there were now but three dogges vpon him, yet they bered him sore, whereupon the aboue mentioned young lusty Lyon and Lionesse, were both put out together, to see if they would rescue the third, but they would not, but fearefully gazed vpon the Dogs, then two or three of the worst dogges, which had left the first Lyon, ranne vpon them, chased them vp and downe the yard, seeking by all meanes to auoyd the Dogges, and so soone as their trap dooze was open, they both ran hastily into their Den, and a Dog that pursued them ran in with them, where they all three like good friends stood very peaceably, without any manner of violence eyther to other, and then the three Beare-wardes came boldly in againe, and tooke off all the Dogges but one from the Lyon, and carried them away, the Lion hauing fought long, and his tongue tone, lay staring and panting a pretty while, so as all the beholders, thought he had beene vtterly spoyled and spent, and vpon a soddaine gazed vpon that dog which remained, and so soone as hee had spoyled him, espying the trappe dooze open, ran hastily into his Den, and there neuer ceast walking vp and downe, to and fro, vntill hee had brought himselfe into his former temperature.

Whilest hee was hot hee would neuer offer to lie downe but walked to and fro.

Kingly paynes beyond all precedents.

The great blessings of God, through encrease of wealth, in the Common subiects of this land, especially vpon the Citizens of London: such within mans memory, and chiefly within these few yeeres of peace, that except there were now one mention in some sort made thereof; it would in time to come bee held incredible, to the great obscuring of the gracious bountie of Almighty God, and disgrace of the King and Common Wealth. For in the fifteenth yeere of Richard the second, the generall weakenesse of wealth in the Cittie of London, was such, as the whole City hazarded the losse of their Charter, which at that time to them was most precious, for refusing to lend the King one thousand pound: since which time though the Citizens haue encreased in riches, yet the loane of ten thousand pound, a good while after was held a great matter, and in tract of time, after that, the lending of twentie thousand ponnd was held a wonderous matter, euen within mans memory: and in the yeere 1587. when the Queene sent to the Citizens to borrow three score thousand pound, I well remember it was made a matter of great admiration, which way and of whom it should be leuied: since which time to the eternall prayses of the Almightie God, such is his boundlesse blessing vpon the whole Kingdome in generall: And London in particular, that certaine priuate Citizens, farmers of the Custome house in December, 1607. lent the King one hundzeth and twentie thousand pound, for one whole yare, whitch sum his Maiestie most graciously and carefully repayd in December, 1608. with full royall confideration for the same, and in May the last yeere 1608. the King borrowed also of certaine other Citizens, three score and three thousand pound, for fifteene meneths, and this Midsommer day, 1609. the King not onely repayed all that summe, but allowed them likewise their full content for that time, viz. seuen thousand and fiue hundzed pound as a Royall recompence: the King sent them word, hee had the money ready for them, and would haue payes them before their day, but they refused it, and touching this Kingdomes wonderous encrease of traffique and Nauigation, I shall somewhat speake thereof (though not so much as I ought) when I come to speake of the East Indya Company.

Many ingenious persons of late yeeres by their diligent endeuors, haue atchieued the perfection of many strange Arts, and found out the invention and making of many excellent things here, very profitable to this Kingdome and Common Wealth, whose paines and industrie deserues publique thankes, and acknowledgement, concerning whom I am oft enforced through ignorance, not knowing the parties to leaue many of them in oblivion, which otherwise to their honour and good encouragement of others, I would duely haue registred: In the 8. yeere of Queene Elizabeth, an Act of Parliament was made for confirmation of certaine Letters Pattents granted two yeers before vnto Cornelius de vos, a Merchant stranger for the sole making of Copperris, and Allom within the Queens dominions for twenty one yeeres: as a reward for his new invention, thereby to encourage others to doe their endeuors in the like actions, for the good of the common wealth, which Letters Pattents were

The first making of Copperris and other things in England.

set ouer vnto Iames Lord Mountioy, at whose great Costs the making of Copperris, was then brought to good perfection: and then the making of Allom, after many attempts, was giuen ouer in Deuonshire, where some small quantitie was made: also some was made in Ireland, and the like was attempted in Yorkshire, where there was a farre greater hope to prevaile therein: as indeed it did by the cost and industry of Iohn Bourcher Esquier, who afterward was Knighted, who ioyning with the Lord Sheffield, then Lord President of the North, Sir Thomas Challenor, and Sir David Fowles, and other having land in those parts, obtained Letters Patients, from the Kings Maiestie, for the sole making thereof, for thirty and one yeeres, and then they conioyned with certaine Merchants of London, viz. William Turner, Nicholas Gisp, Eliis Chrispe, and Abraham Chamberlaine, who vsed to lay the Allom Oare, or earth, in the open ayre, and after purification, to take the strength thereof, by the lequo, as it is vsed in making salt Peter, which being found very chargeable caused them to send into Germanie, where Allom had formerly beene made, from whence they fetcht certaine skilfull workemen, who taught them the true working by Calcination, which course they haue followed.

And then in short space Sir Iohn Bourcher, and his associats, brought their worke vnto desired effect, to serue this Kingdome which vntill now was serued from the territories of Rome: whereupon the first of July, the King by Proclamation prohibited the bringing in of any Allom from beyond the seas, into any part of his Dominions, vpon paine of confiscation: the King also assigned fit places of Store-houses of Allom, for the ready vse thereof, to such as would buy the same: the King gaue also very gracious reward, and Princely remuneration, vnto all those whom he know to haue taken paines and beene at expences in the practising, and atchieuing to bring this royall commodity vnto due perfection, and then tooke the whole traffique thereof to himselfe.

In ancient time. This yeare the King had ayde of his Subiects, through the King ome of England, for Knighting his Sonne Prince Henry, according to the law of the Land, in the leuying whereof the Subiects were very fauourably dealt with all, for whereas by the ancient Laws of this Land, the Subiects ought to haue paid twelue pence in the pound, of the yeerely value of their Lands, his Maiestie most graciously ordayned seuerall Commissioners in the seuerall Shires, who according to the purpose of their Commissions, did so moderately demeane themselues, as no man was compelled to pay any more then he would willingly giue, being a very ancient duty due vnto the King, and was now in a manner quite forgotten.

Prince Henry his first feates of armes. The first of January, at the Pallace of White Hall in the presence of the King and Queene, and the Ambassadors of Spaine, and Venice, and of al the Peeres & great Ladies of the land with a multitude of others: in the great banquieting-house, all these were assembled; at the vpper end whereof was the Kings Chayre of State, and on the right hand thereof, was a sumptuous paulien for the Prince and his associats, from whence with great bravery and ingenious deuices, they descended into the middle of the Roome, and there the Prince performed his first feates of armes, that is to say, at Barriers against all commers, having assisted onely with five others, viz. the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Arundell, the Earle of Southampton, the Lord Haye, Sir Thomas Somerset, and Sir Richard Preston, who was shortly after created Lord Dingwell. Against these Gallant Challengers came five and fiftie brave defendants, consisting of Earles, Barons, Knights, and Esquires, who in the lower end of the Roome, had erected a very delicate and pleasant place, where in priuate manner they and their traine remained, which was so very great, that no man imagined that the place could haue concealed halfe so many, from whence in comely order they issued, and ascended into the middle of the Roome, where then sate the King and the Queen, and Ambassadors to behold the barriers, with the seuerall showes and deuices of each combatant. Every Challenger fought with eight seuerall defendants, five seuerall combats at five seuerall weapons, viz. at push of pike, and with single sword, the Prince performed this challenge with wonderous skill, and courage, to the great ioy and admiration of all the beholders, the Prince not being full fifteene yeares of age vntill the nineteenth of February. These feates of armes with their triumphant shewes began before ten a clocke at night, and continued there vntill the next morning being Sunday: and that day the Prince feasted all the combatants, at Saint Iames, and then gaue rich prizes vnto those of the best deserters defendants, viz. vnto the Castle of Mountgomery, Walter Thomas Darcie, son and heire to the Lord Darcy of Chich, and vnto Sir Robert Gourdon.

The Lord Viscount Fenton made a priuy Councellor. The 31. of January the L. Viscount Fenton was sworne a priuy Councelor at White hall.

The curiosity and presumption of the people of this time. The 26. of March, 1610. the King by Proclamation straightly prohibited the reading or publishing of a pernitious booke lately printed, called the interpreter, made against the honor and prerogative of the King, and the dignitie of the common law of this land. By this edict, all persons that had any of those bookes, were chatged vpon the Kings displeasure, forthwith to deliuer them either to the Lord Mayor of London, or to the Sheriffs of Counties, in this speciall Proclamation his Maiestie declared how grieuously, the people of this latter age and times are fallen into verball profession, as well of religion, as of all commendable morall vertues, but wanting the actions and deeds of so specious a profession, the insatiable and vnmeasurable itching boldnesse of the spirits, tongues and pens of most men: so as nothing was now left vntouched from the top to the bottome, neither in talking nor writing of the highest mysteries of the Godhead

and the inscrutable counsells of the trinity, nor of the confused actions of the deuils in the lowest pit of hell, such is the misery of this age, that most men in their extreame impious niceneese and curiositie, spare not to aspire Gods diuine secrets, and audaciously to inuade the deepest mysteries that belong to Kings and Princes, and to all regall gouernment, &c.

The French King Henry the 4. murthered. *An. reg.* 10. 1610. Thursday the 3. of May 1610. *Stilo Angliæ*. Henry the fourth of that name, king of France, having beene tenne yeares married vnto Mary de Medecis, daughter to the Duke of Florence, vpon that day with great and solemne tryumphes, caused her to be Crowned in Paris, and was thereby inuested vnto the Crowne and title of Queene of France and Nauarre. And the next day, the King with great solemnity appointed to see his Arsenall, and to visite Duke Sully his Treasurer, who was then ill at ease. And albeit that some skilfull Astronomers and others, forewarned and besought him from going abroad that day, as being an ominous day, foreseene to threaten great danger to his person, yet he Cæsar like, who also was forewarned of the Ides of March thought it not conuenant vnto Christian Religion, to hearken vnto Wizards, take his Coach about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, being accompanied with the Dukes of Espernon, Montchallon, and others, and riding through Laferronerye, which leadeth vnto S. Dionis streete, in a straight passage, his Coach was stopped by reason of Carts and Coaches thereabouts, vpon aduantage whereof Francois Rauillack of Angolesme, who oft and long before had sought opportunitie to kill the King, espying the King sitting in the head end of the Coach, and leaning towards the boote, to speake to Espernon, whereby hee discouered all his left side, thrust a knife of a foote long into the Kings side, but made no mortall wound because it struck against a bone, which the audacious Traytor perceiuing, suddainly stabd the King againe vnder the short ribbes, which second stab bereft the King of speech, and life, that instantly he fell dead into the Coach, and was carried into the Louer. This traytor attempted to haue done this treason in the forenoone, as the King was walking in his new great gallery at the Mwillery, and had performed it then, but that hee was put back amongst the people, by such as attended neere the King, who esteemed him as a rude rascall: this blondie villaine, whose name imports so much, in his youth was of the order of the Feliants, but misliking their order of fasting, eating of beanes, and strictnesse of life, vtterly forsooke their house and order. Then he married a wife, being sometime a kinsse of Lawyer: and lastly, a Schoolemaister. Presently vpon the death of the King, the new crowned Queene, with full consent of the Nobility and Cleargie, was made Regent during her sonnes minority, viz. Lewis the thirteenth, and hauing speedily and peaceably setled the whole Kingdome, in her late tranquility, the aforenamed traytor after many examinations, and promises of life, was

If Princes be not as proudent as powerfull, they are as subiect to misfortunes as common people.

fauour to confesse truely, who animated him to do this horrible murther, and for what cause he did it, his vsuall answere was, that he did it onely of himselfe, without the instigation of any man, because the King maintayned two Religions, then they put him to torture but it preuayled not, whereupon at his death, they take the aforenamed knife, which hee had made of purpose to kill the King, and fastened it in his right hand, and forced him to hold it in a burning furnace, vntill the flesh of his hand, and arme was burnt to the bone, after that they pulled off the flesh of his brests, leggs, and Armes, with hot pinchers, and powred burning oyle and brimstone, into his toorne flesh, and yet he would not confesse any thing no; accuse any person to bee guilty, but onely himselfe, in the end he was toorne in pieces with Horses, and the people trampled his flesh to dust, as not worthy of being for burriall. This French traytor may bee compared vnto Iohn Lawryguie the Malloone, that killed William Prince of Orange, of whom I haue formerly made some mention, for this Malloone during the time of his imprisonment, was often told that the Prince was in good health, and free from danger of death, whereunto he would boldly reply saying, if I knew assuredly that my Dagge had misst the Prince, I would cute this hand that misst him, being in prison amongst other tortures, hee had his body pricht full of holes with knives, and had salt vineger and other things put therein to torment him, but it moued him not, then was shoes put on his feete made of a raw hide, and boring layde along with his feete before a great fier, he was there held vntill his feete and anckles were shrunke exceeding small, yet all this mooued him not so much as to require any ease or fauour, and at his death his flesh was toorne from his bones, as was the French Traytors, and so dyed carelesselly vpon assured hope that hee had killed the Prince: the French Court of Parliament at this time, made a Law, that all those that were of this French traytors name should forthwith change their names, or be banisht France for euer. And touching this murthered King, famous by the name of Henry the fourth, whose valour was renowned throughout the world, being as happy in peace as victorious in warre, hauing made three pitcht fields, and encountred thirty fiue strong armies of his enemies, endured a hundred and thirtie combats, and besieged three hundred Cities and Castles, Fortes, and Sconces, was at last thus murthered by a base villains: and as touching the other three Henries, two of them misfortuned, viz. Henry the second was slaine in running at Tilt, and Henry the third was killed by a Frier, in reuenge of the Duke of Guyse, and his brother: and among other Kings of France that came to vntimely death, one was killed as he alighted from his horse, and another was slaine by a Sow as hee rode through Paris, and I doe finde in the French Chronicles, and other histories, that in the yeere 620. Theodobert, King of Lorraine and his children,

were

were despightfully murthered by his Warens, and in the yeare 1347. Lewes the Emperour, the fourth of that name, as hee was hunting in a Wood, fell from his horse, and thereof dyed. In the yeare 1390. Iohn King of Spaine, as he was hunting a Hare, fell from his horse, and brake his necke. And in the yeare 1396. the King of Aragon riding after a Hare, fell from his horse, and brake his necke.

Ceremonies vsed at the Creation of the Prince of Wales.

Prince Henry created prince of Wales, and 24. Knights of the Bath made with many fantzy other things of note.

Wednesday the thirtieth day of May 1610. the Prince being accompanied with diuers young noble men, and also by his owne seruants, rode about twelue of the clocke the same day, from Saint Iames beyond Charing-Crosse to Richmond, where hee supped, and reposed himselfe for that night, and vpon Thursday morning following, being the one and thirtieth day of May, the Lord Maior of London, with his Brethren the Aldermen, and fifty foure of the Companies of London, being in their Barges adorned with diuers faire Banners, and Streamers, passed along the riuer of Thamis, in formerly order, viz. the Lord Maior his Barge first, and the rest of the Companies following, in which order they proceeded to Chelsey, where they attended the comming of the Prince, who's dinner was prepared at the Court of Whitehall, and the Maior and Companies, at their seuerall Halles: but by reason of the low Ebbe, his Highnesse could not come vntill foure of the clock in the afternoone, being first entertained by the way, about Barnelms with a Banquet: and comming to Chelsey where the Lord Maior with his traine attended, there was a Delphin, vpon whom sate Neptune, and vpon a Whale sate a water Goddesse, who made certaine speeches vnto the Prince; which being done, they proceeded towards the Court, the inferiour Companies first, and the Lord Maiors Barge betweene the two Sea monsters next before the Princes Barge, after which followed his owne Seruants, in seuerall Barges, and the Barges of diuers Noblemen that attended his Highnesse on the way: and when they came within the sight of the Court of Whitehall, the Companies of London were commanded to keepe along on London side: and the Princes Barge, with some other of the chiefest Lords to goe on Lambeth side, & so to make ouer to the Bridge at Whitehall, which was done accordingly. His Highnesse taking leaue of the Lord Maior, and the Aldermen, landed: and there was a peale of Chambers, placed directly ouer against the Court on Lambeth side, which were discharged when his Highnesse landed, and there hee was receiued by the Officers of the Kings houshold, in seuerall places according to their Offices, viz. first at the gate where his Highnes landed by the Knight Marshall, and the Seriant Porter: in the Hall by the Treasurer, and Comptroler of the houshold, and in the great Chamber by the Captaine of the Guard, and in the presence, by the Lord Chamberlaine, and so into the privy Chamber, where the King and Queene met him: and the Saturday after the Knights of the Bath, being in number twenty fiue met at Durham house betweene foure and fiue of the clock in the afternoone, and proceeded from the great Chamber round about the hall: not in any robes or habites that night, but in their ordinary apparell, the Heraulds going before them with their coats vpon their armes, and then entred the Chappell of the said house, and there euery Knight took his seat, the eldest first, with solemne reuerence placed, and then heard diuine Seruice: which being ended, they returned directly forth of the Chappell to the Chamber where they supped, sitting all on one side, and attended by Gentlemen Vshers, and the Kings Guard, euery Knights Scutcheon being placed ouer his head, as he sat that night at Supper, and after Supper they withdrew themselues into the next roome, where all their Bathes were prepared, euery one hauing his seuerall tub lined within, and without, with white linnen cloath, and couered on the top with red Say, and a ticket of euery mans name set vpon his Tub very orderly: and when they were bathed, there were beds set vp in the roome where they had supped for euery man: viz. a Pallet with a canopie, with an escutcheon of his armes placed there as he sat at supper, the next morning being Saturday, about leauen of the clocke they were all ready in their Heremeticall weedes, viz. each Knight in his gray Gowne: girded vnto him with a russet silke girdle, and a Handkerchiffe hanging thereat, and a linnen Coyfe vpon his head, and vpon that, his Hood of gray suitable to his Gowne, with a paire of cloath stockings, soaled with white Leather, called Cathambles, and being thus apparelled they went forward, the younger Knights marching first, and went round about the hall of the said house, in like manner as they had done the night before: the Kings Musitians, with their winde Instruments, and the Heraulds inuested in their coats of Armes, going before them, and so came vp againe to the Chappell, and tooke their seates, as they did the night before, with their accustomed reuerences, where diuine Seruice being ended, they tooke their oathes, the which was ministred vnto them by the Lord Chamberlaine, and the Earle of Worcester, the eldest Knights first, and so vnto the last, the manner whereof was thus: first, the two eldest Knights made their reuerence within their Stalles, and being come forth, made the like reuerence againe, and stood before their Stalls, one against another, and so two by two orderly, vntill they were all come forth and stood before their Stalles, then Clarentiaux and Norroy went down, and made their reuerence to the Altar: and brought vp the two first Knights to the Altar, where the Commissioners aforesaid sate to giue them their oathes, which being done, they returned downe as they came, and tooke their places before their Stalles, as they did before, then the two eldest Heraulds conducted the next two Knights

But the right name is Sheffe Sea.

Sir Richard Cornwhy Knight, his Maiesties, and Iames Claregius, Esquiers.

Serieant only the Earles of Oxford who was Seruant.

Worcester knew that the Sacrament did none of them.

Knights in like manner, and so by course and turne vntill they had all receiued their oathes, the forme of which oath followeth.

Right deere brother, great worship be this order vnto you, and the Almighty God giue you the vprising of all Knighthood, you shall honour God aboue all things, you shall be Leofast in the faith of Christ, and the same maintaine and defend to your power, you shall loue your Soueraigne aboue all earthly creatures, and for your Soueraigne, and your Soueraignes right and dignitie, liue and die, you shall defend Widowes, Maydens, and Orphants in their right, you shall suffer no extortion as farre forth as you may, nor sit in any place where any wrongfull Iudgement shall bee giuen to your knowledge, and as great honor be this Noble order vnto you, as euer it was to any of your progenitors.

This oath being giuen, and the Lords departed, the Knights standing still before their Stalles, were presented with a banquet of wine, and diuers delicate sweete meates, and after the same, they resorted to the Chamber where they had bin bathed the night before, and there put of their Heremeticall habits, and inuested themselues in their Crimson Taffaty Robes which was in this manner, first a Surcot of Crimson Taffaty, lined with white sarlenet girt vnto them, and ouer that a long Robe of like Crimson Taffaty, edged with White, hauing Tardoises of White Silke, with tassels of the same, at which Tardoises were tyed a payre of White leather gloues, their hatts bootes and feathers, were white also. and so they tooke their horses in Durham house yard about ten of the clocke, being furnished with blacke Leather Saddles, garnished with white, and white crelles ouer their horses foreheades, and perunells, and so rode vnto the Court, euery one betwixt his two Esquiers, and his Page before him bearing his Sword, the hilt vpwards, with his guilt spurres hanging thereon, the Heraulds riding before them, and the Trumpetters sounding all the way to the Court Gate: where they all alighted, and went on foot in such sort as they came on horsebacke, viz. the eldest Knights first, where they attended the Kings comming. And his Maiesty being come and placed vnder the cloth of Estate, he Knighted them according to their degrees as followeth: the eldest Knight being led vp by his two Esquires, and his Page before him, bearing his Sword and Spurres, deliuered them to the Lord Chamberlaine, and the Lord Chamberlaine presented them to the King, who put the belt about their neckes, and the sword hanging bend wayes, in which manner they were all one after another Knighted, and one of their Spurres was put on their right heele by a great Lord, and the other Spur by their Page, which being ended they Rode backe againe to Durham house in the same order as they came: but that the youngest Knight rode formost, and their Pages came behinde them.

All this time they were entertained with sundry sorts of excellent Musicke.

The dinner was prepared in the Roome where they supped the night before, with euery Knights Armes ouer his head as aforesayd, sitting all vpon one side of the table: yet did they neither eate nor drinke, of that which was there prepared for them, but hauing fate a conuenient time in this gentle abstinence, they all arose, and withdrew themselues into another roome, leauing their well furnished Table to the pleasure of their Esquires and Pages. And after dinner about foure of the clocke they rode againe to the Court in like manner as they returned home in the morning, viz. the youngest Knights first, and his Page behind him, and so came to the chappell where with accustomed reuerences, to God and the King, they entred, and ascended their Stalles as they had formerly done in the morning at Durham house, and presently after the second Lesson, the Musique of the offertory being begun, the Knights with their vsuall reuerences came forth, and stood before their Stalles: where the Earle of Orford (Garter going before him) first offered his Sword at the Alter, the pommell vpwards, and redeemed it againe for an Angell of gold, and receiuing a short exhortation of the Deane, he returned before his Stall againe, then two other of the eldest Knights were brought vp by two of the Kings of armes, who in like manner offered their Swords and redeemed them and returned, and so the rest one after another, offered their Swordes vntill the youngest. The wordes of the Deanes exhortations were these.

By the oath that you haue taken this day, you shall be these Swordes to the honour of God, and his word, to the defence of your King and Country, and to the mantenynance of Iustice and Equitie.

Euening prayer being ended, there stood at the Chappell doore, the Kings maister cooke with his white Apron and sleeues, and chopping knife in his hand guilded about the edge, and challenged their Spurres which they redeemed with a noble a piece: and he sayd to euery Knight as they passed by him these or the like wordes.

Sir Knight looke that you bee true and loyall to the King my maister: or else I must heiw these Spurres from your heeles.

And so they marched through the Hall into the Court yard, and at the Gate tooke their horses and returned to Durham house in the same order as they came, the Trumpets sounding, the Heraulds still attending them till they came there, and then euery Knight alighted and put of his Robes, and then euery one went priuatly to his owne lodging: for that night they had no Supper there prouided. The next morning about eight of the clock they met all in the Queenes closet, where they put on long purple Sattin Robes, lined with white Taffaty without any Tardoises: and about their neckes, a hood like a Batcheller of Law, edged about with Taffaty beeing then ready to

to attend the Prince vnto his creation, but for want of good and true direction, the Prince who should have gone in a Barge by himselfe, and these Knights in another before him, went with the King in his Barge, and the Knights of the Bathes, stayed behind, vntill they were sent for, and being landed at Westminster Pallace Bridge: they were met at the Hall Gate, by the Heraulds only, and so conducted vp to the doore of the Court of Wardes, where the Prince was to proceede to his creation, and they went in next before the Lordes that were employed in seuerall services at the sayd Creation; and the Heraulds before them, and proceeded into the Parliament Chamber, where he was created in this manner following, the Lords performing their seuerall offices here vnder written.

Master Garter, bearing the Letters Patentes.

The Earle of Sussex, the Robes of purple Velvet.

The Earle of Huntington the Traine.
The Earle of Cumberland the Sword.
The Earle of Rutland the King.
The Earle of Darby the Rod.

The Earle of Shrewsbury the Cappe and Coronet.

The Earle of Nottingham and the Lord prime Seale, supported the Prince being in his surcote only, and bare-headed.

And so in this manner, proceeded into the great white chamber, which for that time was prepared and appointed to bee the Parliament house, where the King was already set with all the Lords Spirituall and Temporall of the Realme in their Robes of Estate, and with all the Knights, and Burgesses of the lower house, vpon Stages made for that purpose, and also diuers other Stages, namely one for the Lord Mayor and Aldermenne of London, another for Ambassadours, and another for great Ladies, and such like: and proceeding vp in the same manner as aforesayd, they made three seuerall low reuerences vnto his Maiestie, and when they came vp to the King, Master Garter tooke the Letters patents, and gaue them to the Lord Chamberlaine, who presented them to the King, and the King to the Earle of Salisbury, principall Secretary, who read them, the Prince kneeling all the while before the King, and at the words accustomed the King put on the Robe, the Sword the Cap, and the Coronet, the Robbe and Ring, his Patteut was read, the King kissed him on the cheeke, and the Earle Marshall, with the Lord Chamberlaine, brought him and placed him in his Parliament Seate, viz. on the left hand of the King. All which being ended, they returned downe through Westminster Hall, to the Pallace Bridge, in this manner: first the Masters of the Chancery and other Officers of the Law, viz. the Kings counsell, and others, then the officers of Armes, then the Knights of the Bath, next after them the Judges, and after them the whole Parliament house in order, as the commen proceeding is, the Barons, Viscounts, Earles, and Marquesses, having Coronets on their heads, Master Norroy, and Master Clarenceaux going next before the Lord Treasurer and the Lord Chauncellour, and Master Garter next before the Sword, and so proceeded to the Stayres, where all tooke Water, in seuerall Barges, the Heraulds, and the Trumpets going in the tow Barge next before the Knights, and so landed at White Hall Bridge: where the Officers of Armes, the Knights of the Bathe, and Lords being first landed attended the King. And when the King and Prince were landed, they went all before him into the Hall, and so by into the great Chamber, from whence the Prince came downe to Dinner into the Hall, where were two Tables set longwayes downe the Hall, one of them Roode in the middle, where the Prince himselfe sate at the vpper end, accompanied with the Lords that attended him in his creation, all placed on both sides of the same Table, and at the other Table on the left hand of the Prince, sate the Knights of the Bath in their purple Robes, all vpon one side, where they were all royally feasted, and attended by the Kings seruants.

Ambassadors of Spaine, Venice, and the States.

The Earle of Salisbury was then Lo. Treasurer of England.

At the second course, Master Garter with the Heraulds in very reuerend manner came to the Princes boord, and proclaimed the kings stile, with these Largesses as is accustomed, viz. King of England, Scotland, Fraunce, and Ireland, defender of the faith &c. and also Proclaymed the Princes stile, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornewall, and Rothesey, and Earle of Chester, and Knight of the Garter, with two Largesses.

This is in briefe, the whole state, course, and manner of this most ioyfull creation, which was long wished for: Now followeth a compendium of the precedent Princes of Wales, with other things of worthy note: but first the names of the Knights of the Bath, and then a word or two of the Triumphs and entertainements of time, in honour of his highnesse happy Creation.

The names of the Knights of the Bath.

Earle of Oxeford.
Lord Gourdon.
Lord Clifford.
Lord Fitz Walter.
Lord Fitz Warren.
Lord Hay.

Lord Erskin.
Lord Windsor.
Lord Wentworth.
Master Charles Somerset.
Master Edward Somerset.
Master Francis Steward.
Master Dudley.
Master Cary.
Master Oliuer S. Iohn.
Master Gerrard.
Master Charles Stanhope.
Master William Stewart.
Master Edward Bruse.
Master Sidney.
Master Tuchet.
Master Perigrine Barty.
Master Henry Rich.
Master Edward Sheffield.
Master William Candith.

In honour of this creation of the Prince, there was the next night at the Court, a most rich, and Royall Maske of Ladies, viz. the Queene, the Lady Elizabeth, daughter to our Soueraigne, the Lady Arbella, the Countesse of Arundell, the Countesse of Darby, the Countesse of Oxford, the Countesse of Dorset the Countesse of Pountgomery, the Viscountesse of Haddington, the Lady Elizabeth Gray, the Lady Elizabeth Gilford, the Lady Katherine Peter, the Lady Winter, and the Lady Windsor, and vpon Wednesday in the afternoone in the Tilt yard, there were diuers Earles, Barons, and others being in rich, and glorious Armour, and hauing costly Capariſons, wonderous curiously Imbroydered with Pearle, Gold, and Siluer, the like rich habiliaments for horses, were neuer seene before, presented their seuerall ingenious deuices, and Trophies, before the King and Prince, and then ran at Tilt, where there was a world of people to behold them: and that night there were other Nauall Triumphs, and pastimes vpon the water, ouer against the Court with Shippes of warre, and Gallies fighting, one against another, and against a great Castle, builded vpon the water. After these Battels then for an houres space, there were many strange and variable fier workes in the Castle, and in all the Shippes, and Gallies without any manner of hurt to any person, the Thamis being in a manner close couered with Boates, and Barges full of people, besides the Shoare on both sides, neere thereunto, was surcharged with people.

Triumphs in honor of the Prince his Coronation.

Before I speake of the Precedent Princes of Wales, I thought good, to insert here a briefe note out of Matthew of Westminster, page foure hundred fifty eight, where he sayth: that King Edward the first, in the feast of Penticost, made his Sonne Edward Knight, at Westminster, at which feast in honor of the Prince, were dubbed three hundred Knights more, but the Prince by the Kings appoyntment, kept his wake with the princi pall, and worthiest men of his company, in Westminster Church, and the King dubbed his Sonne a Knight, in his owne pallace, and therewith gaue him the Dukedome of Aquitaine: the Prince beeing thus created Knight went presently into Westminster Church, for to grace with like dignity his friends, and companions: but the presse of people was so great in the Church thronging to the high Altar, to behold this Ceremony, that two of these Knights were crushed to death, and diuers other in great hazard, notwithstanding that euery one had three Souldiers to lead him and defend him, and the Prince himselfe by reason of the multitude, hauing made a lane amongst them, by meanes of great horses of seruice, was faine to get vp vpon the high Altar, to girt his aforesaid companies with the order of Knighthood.

The first Duke of Cornewall.

King Edward the third, in the yeere one thousand three hundred thirty and seuen, and the twelfe yeare of his Raigne, with the full consent of his Parliament then holden at Westminster, made the auncient Earledome of Cornewall, a Dukedome, and then gaue it to his Eldest Sonne, Prince Edward, and gaue him therewithall, the Earledome of Chester, the King in honour of his Sonnes being created Duke of Cornewall, made fiue Earles, and in the eighteenth yeere of his raigne, he also by Parliament, at Westminster created his Sonne Edward Prince of Wales, and in the three thirtieth yeere of his raigne at Windsor vpon Saint Georges day, in the presence of the Kings of Fraunce, and Scotland, and of all the chiefe Nobilitie, with wonderous solemnities, in honour of high Chiualry, Instituted the most noble order of the Garter. And the next yeere after, in the moneth of July his Sonne Iohn Earle of Richmond, maryed the Lady Blanch, Daughter and heire to Henry Duke of Lancaster, and presently after her fathers death, the sayd Iohn in his wiues right, was made Duke of Lancaster. At this Nuptiall was performed in Smithfield at London the greatest Iusts, and Tilting, that euer was in England: for notwithstanding a generall challenge, with free permission for all knights that thither came. The King himselfe primly with foure of his Sonnes, viz. Edward, Prince of Wales, Lyonell, Iohn, and Edmon, and with them 19 great Lords. And the same yeere King Edward gaue direct order, for the making and placing of his tombe, or Sepulcher, in the Abbey Church at Westminster, but hee lined 17. yeeres after, and in the 35. yeere of his raigne, being in France he dubbed 400. Knights at once. The forenamed Prince Edward, surnamed the blacke Prince, dyed vpon Trinity Sunday, one thousand three hundred seauenty and fiue, viz. the yeere before his father dyed, and was buried at Canterbury, and presently after the obsequies, his son Richard borne in Bourdeaux, was by the King created Prince of Wales, at Yauering bing ten yeeres of age.

The Institution of the honorable order of Knights of th Garter. And in the 13 yeere of Rich. the 2. there were also great Iusts and Turnaments in Smithfield 24 dayes together, at this time Smithfields field was a large pleasant place. And from thence with out interruption men might haue fame a great way Eastward, Westward, and Northward, as vnto Shordich, Hygate, Gil sand into the Strand, for then there was no houses to hinder the sight.

The originall of the Prince Dolphin of Fraunce.

Phillip of Vallois, the nine and fortieth King of Fraunce, in the yeere of our Lord and Saviour Iesus Christ, one thousand three hundred foztie and nine, bought the Prouince, and Dolphine of Imbertus Dawphin, for a small Summe of Money: vpon condition that for euer after, the eldest Sonnes of the King of Fraunce, should be called the Prince Dawphin: which our English Chronicles call Prince Dolphine, and the French Chronicles call our Prince, the Prince of Wales, Prince of Gaules.

The order and succession of the former Princes of Wales, of English blood

Edward the sonne of King Henry the third, who was afterward King of England, by the name of Edward the first, was the first of English blood that was made Prince of Wales, and after him his sonne Edward, that was borne at Carnarbum, which was afterward called Edward the second, was the second Prince of Wales, this King Edward the second, I haue read did conferre the principalitie of Wales, vpon his sonne Edward, and was created at Bayke, which was afterward called Edward the third, and during his fathers Raigne was also intituled Earle of Chester, and Flint, but this Edward the third, created his sonne Edward the blacke Prince, Prince of Wales, with a solemne inuesture, who being taken away by vntimely death, before his father, Richard the sonne of the sayd blacke Prince, succeeded in all his fathers dignities, and after the death of his Grand-father was King of England, by the name of Richard the second, and was afterwards deposed by King Henry the fourth, whose sonne Henry, was the next Prince of Wales, who was after, King Henry the fift, but his sonne Henry the first, not being a yeere olde when his father dyed, neuer received that dignitie, but the sayd Henry the first, bestowed it vpon his sonne Edward, that was afterward slaine at Tewkesbury. Not long after that, King Edward the fourth hauing obtained the Kingdoome: made his young son Edward, Prince of Wales, who was afterward called Edward the fift, and presently his brother Richard made him away, And being King himselfe, created his son Edward Prince of Wales, who dyed shortly after. Afterward King Henry the seuenth, constituted his eldest son Arthur, Prince of Wales, who dying without issue, his brother Henry succeeded him in that dignitie.

The originall of the compasse of the Merchants of the East Indies with other things of note.

So gracious, mercifull, and bountifull euer were, and are the fauours, and blessings of Almighty God, vpon the Welleene Christian Princes, not onely in giuing them the full knowledge, and free possession, of his diuine Gospell, the most vse, and best practise of all excellent Artes, and Sciences, as well for warre as peace, especially in building of Shippes, and profoundnesse in the Admirable Art of Nauigation.

But also in discouering, Conquering, and conuerting many farre remote Kingdomes and Nations, by which diuers Christian Princes, haue obtayned vnspeakeable riches, whereby they are, and haue beene inabled to resist the bagly rigorous Inuasions, tyrannous oppressions, and dangerous attempts of their common and vnreconcilable enemy the Turke, whose deuoted malice vnto Christendome, neuer sleepeth: against which it hath pleased Almighty God, to make the Christian Princes, not onely the great masters of the Ocean, the Leuant and mid-land Seas, but also commanders of all other the great Seas, and deepest waters, and chiefly within this last hundred yeeres, viz. in the yeere 1492. by the discouery of the West Indies, by the renowned Christopherus Columbus, and in the yeere one thousand fiue hundred and nineteene, when the famous Magellanes, discouered the great Straights, of whom it now rightly beareth the name, consisting in length of one hundred and ten Leagues, where blew snow is vsually seene.

And in the same yeere one thousand fiue hundred and nineteene, Hernando Cortesio, began his prosperous Conquest, of the great West Indian Empire, now called noua Hispania, wherein standeth the great Citty Mexico, since which time this our royall Kingdom, and Noble Nation: partly through necessity, and by diligence and industrie, hath got the expert knowledge of making great Shippes, and by ingenious practise, singular profoundnesse in the Art of Nauigation, hauing made many great and memorable aduentrous Voyages, vnto the farthest Continent, as you may read at large in those excellent volumes, of the reuerend Master Hacklmit, in due consideration whereof, in generall, and for my full discharge in particular, I haue here thought good to record vnto all that are present, and to come, the great and manifold blessings of Almighty God, bestowed vpon England, and the English Nation, being but the halfe of the famous ancient Ile of great Britaine, which Kingdome and people though truely auncient, and right worthily renowned throgh out the whole world, as well for Scituation, as for Martiall prowesse, profoundnesse in learning, perfection of curious Artes, and the liberall Sciences, the which although this Famous Nation was not the first Plantasse of inuentes, nor the first of the West Nations, that attained true perfection in all Arts, and Sciences, because it is an Iland diuided by the Ocean from the maine land, yet by degrees through the prouidence of her Princes, together with the diligence and industry of the people, they are now possest with as full measure of knowledge in all things, as any Kingdome in the World, especially in Nauigation, and discouery of remote Nations, to their euerlasting honor, increase of Wealth and Traffique, to this Kingdome, besides all which such hath beene their publique Estimation that all forrayne Nations, haue euer held themselues greatly beholding vnto the English, endeauouring by all meanes to haue Commerce and Trade for the naturall fruites and Commodities of this Land whereof, they euer stood in

in neede the chiefe whereof was Woolll, Tinne, Leather, and Leade, but chiefely Woolll, for which choice commodities the English Merchants obtained many gracious priuiledges, and Immunities both at home and abroad, and became famous by the name of Merchants of the Staple. in such sort that so soone as King Edward the third had wonne Callis, he called them from Gaunt, Burges, and other places, and eskablished the Staple at Callis, where for many yeeres, they payed the Garrison, continued a great trade, builded a fayre Chappell, and maintained a very honorable reputation, yet neuertheleste by time, and time, it was found most necessary, that the common Subiects of this Land, as they encreased, should bee taught the full knowledge of Spinning, Carding, and making of sundry sortes of Cloathes, broade and narrowe. And for that purpose in the dayes of King Edward the second, and King Edward the third, and since their time there were many workemen brought from Fraunce, Flaunders, and Artoys, by whose instructions the English attayned the full knowledge of making Woollen cloath, and in short space excelled their teachers, and so this Kingdome hath continued the making of great store of excellent Cloath, which all Nations hitherto haue alwayes desired for their generall vse.

For Transportation whereof, certaine Merchants vpon very good consideration, obtayned a strong Corporation for themselues and their successors, and grew very famous, whose rising, and encreasing, was the Staplers decreasing, calling themselues the Merchant-aduenturers, of which Name they are now ashamed: for then their vsuall voyages were but to Callis, Selues, or Middleborough, and after that to Antwerpe, their Shippes, or skill in Nauigation, was then but small in comparition of this time, and it is recorded in the Guildhall in London, for a most memorable matter, that in the yeere there was one Citizen that aduentured fifty pounds, which is vnto vs at this present, a sufficient Testimony of the wonderous encrease of trade and Wealth in this Kingdome: when at this day there are a great number of Merchantes, that aduenture particularly fiue thousand pounds, and some twenty Thousand: not onely such as are of the Vnnice Company, otherwise called the Merchantes-Aduenturers, but also Merchantes of other companies, which haue obtained Corporations within mans memory, as the Muscouy, Turkey, Spayne, Barbary, and now lastly, the East Indian company, which company Queene Elizabeth, in the fozty third yeere of her raigne vpon good consideration, granted Letters Pattents, for fifteene yeeres vnto the East Indian Marchantes, Trading to the East Indies, who then and before had discouered many farre Kingdomes, and Nations Eastward, the chiefe whereof were Achine, the chiefe Cittie of the Kingdome of Sumatra, and Pryamam, Hauen Townes in Sumatra, and the Cittie Bantam, in Iaua Maior, whose chiefest wealth consisteth in Cloues, and Pepper. In the Mountaines of Iaua Maior, are many Canyballs, who are at mortall hatred with the other Inhabitants, like as it is with the Inhabitants of Sumatra, yet neuertheleste vpon the three weekely market dayes, which are alwayes kept at Bantam, the Canyballs goe and come peaceably to Bantam market, without any interruption or violence, either to or fro: but at all other times, it is quite contrary, for the cruell people striue to take, and make slaues of the Canyballes and the Canyballes, by all meanes possible, practise to kill, and eate, all other the inhabitants of Iaua Maior. The East India Merchantes haue also recourse vnto many other places as Amboyna, Tarenate, Machean, and Tidore, which are Iles of the Molluccoes, and the Iles of Banda: in all which places aforesayd the people for the most part, are Mahometists, except those vpon the coastes of Cambaya, but amongst the people and Nations aboue named, notwithstanding, that they are for the most part Mahometists, yet are there sundry sortes of Religions amongst them. Whereof none so worthy of note as the Banyany, who erroniously beleeue that there is no greater sinne then to kill, or depriue any liuing creature of life, and in that consideration, they doe absolutely abstaine from killing, or eating of any manner of thing, that hath breath, and liue onely by hearbes, and such like. these people are the subtilest, and haue the readiest memory, and best comprehension, of any people in that part of the world. In some of those Iles aforesayd are sundry beasts, and birdes of strange shape, and qualitie, as in Banda, from whence Captaine William Keeling, hearing generall of the third voyage, brought hither a Foule called Calluare, as bigge as a Turkie, and it hath no wings: it will eate and digest hote burning coales, and also eate wood, and any manner of mettall, being in small peeces. The English shippes in their long voyages, going vnto the Kingdomes and places before named, are constrayned to touch by the way, in diuers places for victuall and fresh water, as in the Ile of Saya, which is one of the Iles of Cape Verde, and at Capo de bona Esperanza, in Ethiopia, where plenty of Cattell so abound, that our English Merchants at their first comming thither to mend their prouision, bought many hundreds of good fat bullockes, and payed for euery Bullocke, but a pound of olde Iron, and for euery fatte Lambe, fower small pinnes, beeing such as are bought here in England for ten pence a thousand, but now of late they haue rayled the prices of their cattell foure fold.

These Ethiopians are generally heathens, the English ships also touch at Madagascar, alias Saint Lavrence, where there is often extreame

Chamber, and lightning, continuing many dayes together, and sometimes many weekes, and the lightning burneth as blew as Azure, and is as noysome as Brimstone, the people of the Countrey, although they be Heathens, yet they are very courteous.

The English Shippes touch also at Nycobar, and at other places, and by their painefull and industrious trauaile, haue discouered great Kingdomes, and strange Nations, besides many other Portes, and Prouinces, rich and full of Traffique, to the great honour of this Kingdome and Nation: yet neuertheless for as much as these Indian voyages, were very long and chargeable, consisting of threescore or fourescore thousand pound, the well setting forth of one voyage, besides great wages, and other expenses, with three yeeres vnknowne aduenture in the voyage. They were somewhat discouraged to persist, except their Charter were greater.

Whereupon, at their humble suite, vnto his Maiesty, the King was pleased for their better encouragement, and for the encrease of Trade, Shippes, Mariners, and skilfull Nauigators, for the more enriching, and better strengthning of this Kingdome, and good likelyhood, to preuent both the Turke, and Persians of their richest Trade.

In May one thousand fiue hundred and nine, to graunt vnto them an enlargement of their first Letters Pattents, and gaue them a Charter, to continue for euer, enabling them thereby, to be a Body Corporate and politique. At which time this company, who right worthily deserue the name of Merchant aduenturers, builded a very Stately Shippe, of the burthen of twelue hundred Tunne, being the greatest and fayrest Shippe that euer was made in this Kingdome by Merchants: or was bought in former time, in any of the Hanse Townes, or else where, when the Kings of England vsed to buy forreyne Shippes: vntill this Nation had obtayned the full perfection of building Shippes, which is within mans memory, although at this day, they excell all other Nations therein.

The lesse of Lubeck which sir Iohn Hawkins lost in the West Indies, was the last great Ship which was either builded or bought beyond the Seas.

They also builded a lustie pinnace, of two hundred and fifty Tunne, and sent it with two other to attend the great Ship: for in these East Indian voyages there is more imployment of extraordinary great Shippes, then in any other: this company had formerly set out fiue seuerall voyages, whereof some by this time, had made a prosperous returne, with Spice, and other commodities, but chiefely Cloues and Pepper. Whereupon the King in fauour of that Company, the fourth of December by Proclamation, absolutely prohibited the importation of Pepper, from all forreyne parts, except onely by the society of Merchants, of the East Indies: In this Proclamation it was ordained that no retayler should sell Pepper for aboue two shillings sixpence the pound, at the most: and the thirtieth of December, the King, with Prince, with diuers of the chiefe Nobilitie, went to Debtford to see the great Shippe Launched, and when they had seene euery roome in the Shippe, they were royally Banquetted in the chiefe Cabin: and their followers were Banquetted at a long Table in the halfe decke, plentifully furnished with delicates serued in fine China Dishes, all which were freely permitted to be carried away by all persons.

The King shewed many fauours vnto the Merchants of that company, and gaue vnto Sir Thomas Smith, Gouernour of that societie, a very fayre Chayne of Golde, with a Iewell thereon was the Kings Picture, and commended his sundry good endeauours, for the Company and common wealth: the Chiefe Clerck of the Company, kissed the Kings hand. The King called the great Shippe, the Trades Increase, and the Pinnace, the Pepper Corne, these two Shippes with two other, were sent forth in March following, vnder commaund, of Sir Henry Middleton Knight, Generall in this expedition, being the first voyage, the charge whereof was fourescore thousand pound: and in Nouember one thousand six hundred and ten they sent forth one Shippe, at twelue thousand pound charge.

And the next spring went forth a voyage of three Shippes, the charge whereof in setting forth, amounted vnto fiftie six thousand Poundes, and this was the eight voyage, whereof Captaine Iohn Sayres went Generall.

And for full conclusion of this thirde discourse of the East India Merchants, you shall vnderstand that the Trades Increase, after long and tedious trauaile, and hauing beene in the red Sea, they returned to Bantam, and was there lost, and there dyed the generall and most of his men.

And in the yeere, one thousand fiue hundred and eleuen, the Company sent forth foure other Shippes, the chiefe whereof was the Dragon being a thousand Tunne of burthen, ouer which, Captaine Thomas Best, went Generall: his voyage was for the Coast and Countrey of Cambaya, which is in the Kingdome of the great Maghoore. This Generall with part of his fleete arriued vpon that Coast of Surat, at the end of fiue moneths, which formerly had not beene performed in lesse then or eightene moneths: he was there very honourably entertained, and setled a Factory there vpon very good conditions, to the great aduancement of the Company, and obtained of the great Maghoore, his firma or Letters Pattents, as wee call it, for full establishing of this factory.

The Maghoore is the ninth Prince from Tamberlayne, being lineally descended from Tamberlaine.

And whilest this was in working, the Portugalles, viz. the vice Roy of Goa: secretly prepares, and sets forth foure great well furnished warlicke Galleons, assisted with twenty fire lustie Fryggots or Gallies, being all well appointed with men and munition of purpose to defeat or take Generall Best, and his Company.

The

The Portugales presuming of their great strength, viz. 5000. fresh men, and 130. peeces of great Ordinance, in their foure Galeons, besides the force of their Frigots or Gallyes, in very proud manner set vpon the English Generall being in the Dragon, assisted onely with her lusty Pinnace, making full account to surprise them, and dispose of the English at their pleasure: but by Gods prouidence they found it otherwise, for after fiue seuerall Fights, the Portugales were so sore beaten and spoyled, with losse and slaughter of about 1200. of their men, that from that time they permitted the English quietly to ride in the Rode, and to doe their businesse without any further interruption: and they themselues desired of the heathen people, for their great pride and couardize. This Fight thus ended, and the factory confirmed and established: then Generall Best, who hauing warely obserued the estate of the businesse in generall, and of the condition of the former, and present course vsed in trading to the East Indies, and there with all deeply looking into the mischiefe that dayly happened to the company in sundry places by their seuerall Factors, crossing and preuenting one another: to preserre seuerall voyages wherein they were sent and imployed: did therefore in the yeare 16.2. not onely aduertise the company of all his proceedings, but also very iudiciously aduised them for their future businesse, and sent his letters ouer-land by one of his owne men to the Gouernour and Company. Who hauing well deliberated thereupon, at length they decreed, that from that time forward, there should be a tryal Stock for euer. Generall Best went from Surat to Archin, to the great Iland of Sumatra, where being honourably entertained by the King thereof, and hauing receiued his letters and Present to the King of England, he went thence to Bantam, in the Ile of Iaua Maior, where hee fraughted his ship with Cloues, Pepper, and Beniamine, and with the same returned in safety to London in July, in the yeare 1614. Sir Thomas Smith Knight, being then Gouernour and Master, William Greenewell Deputy gouernour of that Company. At this time Paul Canning was left Lieger and Agent in the Court of the great Maghoore, for the Company of the East India Marchants: and at the end of this Summer, Captaine Sares returned in the Clone, which was very richly fraught: and in January 1614. Sir Thomas Roe was sent Lord Ambassadour to the great Maghoore, of whom I haue written more at large.

Iesuites and Seminaries banished.

The fourth of June, this yeare 1610. the King by Proclamation, commanded all Romane Priests, Iesuites, and Seminaries, to depart this Kingdom by the fourth day of July next, and not to returne, vpon paine of seuerity of the Law, this Proclamation also straightly commanded all Recusants, to returne home to their dwellings, and not to remaine in London, nor to come within ten miles of the Court without especiall licence: but to depart from London and the Court, by the last day of this moneth of June, and to remaine confined according to the tenour of the Statute in that behalfe ordained.

The Oath of Allegeance administred vnto all persons, vpon seuera[illegible] occasions.

Presently after this Proclamation, the oath of Allegeance was minister vnto all Officers, Barresters, Attournies, and Clarkes, belonging vnto any of the Courts of Westminster Hall, the Exchequer, and Court of Requests, and also vnto all Doctors of the Lawes, Auocates, and Proctours of the Spirituall Courts: this Oath was also ministred vnto all other sorts of Lawyers: as Students in the Innes of Court and Chauncery, and vnto all Students and Schollers, in both the Vniuersities: and I should haue told you before, that presently vpon the murther of the French king, all our English Lords and Commons of the Parliament of England, humbly beseeght his Maiestie to haue a more especiall care then formerly had beene, for the preseruation of his Royall person, and likewise to take speedy order for auoyding of imminent danger: and keeping his Subiects in their one obedience, and forthwith the Commons of the Parliament for manifestation of their allegeance, loue, and duty, they voluntarily of their owne accord tooke the Oath of Allegeance: and after them the Lords of the vpper house did so likewise, and they ministred the same Oath vnto all their seruants and followers, and those that refused to take this Oath, were put from their Lords seruices.

And the Bishops in their Conuocation house, ordained that euery Bishop in his seuerall visitation, should administer the same Oath vnto all their Clergie and Officers, which they performed accordingly. After which the Oath was ministred vnto others, as is last before mentioned: and vpon further occasion, the next yeare following, viz the 4. of June 1611. the King by Proclamation straightly commanded the Oath of Allegeance to be then also administred vnto all sorts of people, and a true certificate thereof to be made vnto the great Lords of the Priuy Councell, of the due administration thereof, with the names of such as should refuse to take the Oath, vnder the hands of two Iustices of Peace, according to the meaning of the Statute in that behalfe lately prouided.

Whereas in the yeare 1586. as I haue formerly made mention, there were certaine Merchants, and other Citizens of London, who practised Armes and Martiall discipline in the Artillery Garden without Bishops-gate, which ground was anciently belonging to Saint Maries Spittle there, and was since granted for many yeares, by the last Prior thereof, to the vse and practise of great and small Artillery: which of all others, is most worthy to be commended and exercised, hauing beene discontinued, euer since the yeare, one thousand fiue hundred eighty eight, was this present yeare one thousand fiue hundred and ten, by meanes of Philip Hudson, (now Lieutenant of the Company there) Thomas Lauerocke, Robert Hughes, Samuell

The practise in the Artillery Garden reuiued.

Arthois, Robert Greenehurſt, and diuers o-ther Gentlemen, and Cittizens of London, aſſociated in the ſayd Artillery Garden, now newly erected, exerciſed, and ſet on foote a-gaine, with ſufficient warrant, and tollerati-on graunted them, by the Lords of his Maie-ſties moſt Honorable Priuie Councell, vnto whom they became humble ſuitors in the be-ginning, for preuention of all future miſtructi-on of their honeſt intent, and Actions there, and hauing duely conſidered the neceſſitie of the knowledge of Armes in ſo populus a place, and the inconueniences that happened, to Ant-werpe, and other their late populous and flou-riſhing neighbour Cities, principally by reaſon of their negled, of that moſt Noble exerciſe of Armes, and martiall diſcipline, in times of Wealth, and peace. They haue now therefore for preuenting the like miſchiefe in this their nurſing mother, ſo farre as in them lies, like louing ſonnes to ſo glorious a Citty, vnderta-ken at their own priuate and particular charge a weekely exerciſe of Armes, and military diſcipline, after the moderne, and beſt faſhion, and inſtruction now in vſe. And for their bet-ter eaſe, and more conuenience, they haue e-rected a ſtrong and well furniſhed armory in the ſayd ground, in which are Armes of ſeue-rall ſortes, and of ſuch extraordinary beauty, fa-ſhion, and goodneſſe for ſeruice, as are hard to bee matched elſe where. Of which ſayd com-pany Captaine Edward Panton, was their firſt Captaine and Nic. Speering, a Merchant of this City, their firſt elected Ancient or En-ſigne bearer, thoſe that were formerly of the olde Artillerie Garden, did good ſeruice many yeares in their owne perſons, and in teaching others, and theſe now laſt, are more likely to doe much more particular and generall ſeruice, by reaſon their practiſe is greater, and more ſkilfull.

This yeere one thouſand fiue hundred and ten, the King builded a moſt goodly Shippe for Warre, the keele whereof was an hun-dred and foureteene foote long, and the croſſe beame was forty foure foote in length, the will carry threeſcore and foure pieces of great ordi-nance, and is of the burden of foureteene hun-dred Tunne this royall ſhip is double built, and is moſt ſumptuouſly adorned, within, and without, with all manner of curious carning Painting, and rich gilding, beeing in all re-ſpects the greateſt, and goodlieſt Ship that e-uer was builded in England, and this glorious Shippe, the King gaue vnto his ſonne Henry, Prince of Wales, the twenty fourth of Sep-tember, the King, the Queene, the Prince of Wales, the Duke of Yorke, and the Lady Eli-zabeth, with many great Lordes went vnto Woolwich, to ſee it Launched: but becauſe of the narrowneſſe of the docke, it could not then be Launched, whereupon the Prince came the next morning by three of the clocke, and then at the Launching thereof, the Prince na-med it after his owne dignity, and called it the Prince, the great workemaiſter in building this Shippe, was maiſter Phynies Pet Gentleman, ſoure times Maiſter of Art, of Emanuell Col-ledge in Cambridge.

The King buildeth the greateſt and goodlieſt ſhip of warre that e-uer was built in England.

The King ſent the Lord Wotton Ambaſſa-dor into France to take the Oath of the young King, and the Queene Regent his Mother, for performance of a League newly made betweene the two Kingdomes, he came to Paris the ſea-uenth day of September, and the King was ſworne the twelfth of the ſame moneth, and the Ambaſſadour returned into England the ſeauenth of October: this French King, Lewis the thirteenth, was Crowned at Reynes in Champaigne, the French King ſent Monſieur de la Verdyne, one of the Marſhalls of France, Gouernour of Maine, accompanied and at-tended with ſixſcore perſons, all in mourning habit, for the death of their olde King. This Ambaſſadour with his whole Traynes, came to Lambeth the ſixteenth of January, and were lodged in the Archbiſhops Palace, which the King cauſed to bee very Royally furniſhed for that purpoſe, and during their abode, they were alſo entertayned at the Kings charge: the Ambaſſadour had audience vpon Sunday the twentieth day of January, and the next Sunday the King was ſworne to the new League, which was made betweene the two Kingdomes.

Iuly betweene England and France.

Sunday the one and twentieth of October, by Commiſſion from the King to the Lord Bi-ſhop of London, the Lord Biſhop of Ely, the Lord Biſhop of Worceſter, and to the Lord Biſhop of Rocheſter, they did conſecrate in the Chappell of the Lord Biſhop of London, Ma-ſter Iohn Spottyſwood Archbiſhop of Glaſco, Maſter Gowen Hamelton, Biſhop of Gallo-way, and Maſter Andrew Lambe, Biſhop of Weachyne: this conſecration was performed *Mutatis, Mutandis*, according to the Church of England.

Three Biſhops conſecrated.

Notwithſtanding, the generall and particu-lar former plentifull prouiſion in London, as well by the ſeuerall Halls of Companies of the Cittie, as in building and furniſhing ſundry Granaries, and Stoze-houſes for the generall ſeruice thereof, for preuention of ſuddaine Fa-mine: yet ſuch is the late vnſpeakeable en-creaſe of people within, and about the Citie, as well of Stranngers as Natiues: ſo as the Magiſtrates in their prouidence, for preuenti-on of Famine, and for prouiſion for the poze: very carefully, about two yeares paſt began to build at Bridewell, twelue new faire Granaries, being ſufficient to kepe fiue Thouſand quarters of Corne, and two Stoze-houſes, for Sea-Coale for the poze, which will kepe foure thouſand loade of Coales: theſe neceſſa-ry Houſes were not finiſhed vntill this time; Maſter Alderman Leman, tooke great care and paines to continue and accompliſh this Memo-rable worke.

The City of London buil-deth new gra-naries and Stoze-houſes.

This Summer there was warres in Cleaue-land, and the vnited Protеſtant Princes, with their ſeuerall forces, ayded the Marqueſſe of Ba-denbergs, in his clayme to that Duke-dome, and the Dukedoms of Gulich, after the death

The Prince of Anhalt ſo-liciteth the King.

death of the olde Duke Iohn, who dyed with-out heyres male: in which warres and at the taking of Gulich, againſt the Emperors Fozces, Chriſtianus Prince of Anhalt was chiefe generall of all the vnited fozces, and Sir Ed-ward Cecill, otherwiſe called Collonell Cecill, was then Lord Generall of the Engliſh and Scotts Army, where the Engliſh and Scottes did great ſeruice, ſome whereof the King hoz-by after honozed with Knighthood: this Prince Chriſtianus, arriued of late at Dower, and came to ſee the King, who entertained him and all his Trayne very royally: he ſurnayed the Citie of London with great pleaſure and admiration, and beheld the pleaſant triumphs vpon the water, and within the City, which at this time were extraozdinary, in honoz of the Lozd Maioz and Cittizens, and that day this Prince with all his Germayne traine, were entertained at the Lozd Maiozs Feaſt in the Guild hall, where hee manifeſted his fozmer admiration, touching the greatneſſe, ſcituati-on, State, and Wealth of the Citie, and there he obſerued, and admired the goodly vniforme ozder and rich habite of the Cittizens, and ſayd, there was no State, no Cittie in the Woꝛld, that did elect their Magiſtrates with ſuch mag-nificence, except the Cittie of Venice, vnto which the Cittie of London commeth very neere, &c.

George Palyn, Citizen and Girdler of Lon-don, at this time gaue to good vſes, three thou-ſand and fiue hundred pound, that is to ſay, twelue hundred pound, vnto the two Vniuer-ſities, and nine hundred pound for an Almes-houſe, and a certaine ſumme of money to buy two Mels, and make a chime in Bow Church: and the reſt he gaue to other goodly and cha-ritable vſes, being better part of all his Wealth.

Maſter Palyns bounty.

Thomas Tealdale of Glimpton in Oxfoꝛd-ſhire Gentleman, at this time gaue fiue thou-ſand pound to purchaſe land, for perpetuall maynteinance of ſeuen Fellowes and fiue Schol-lers, to be placed in Baliol Colledge in Oxfoꝛd, and to be choſen thither from time to time, out of the free Schoole of Abingdon in Barkeſhire, vnto which he gaue land for perpetuall maiꝛ-teinance of an Vſher in the Schoole: hee gaue ſundry other charitable Legacies, and dyed the thirteenth of Iune, this yeere one thouſand fiue hundzed and ten.

Maſter Tealdale his bounty.

The Prince of Wales ſeteth his houſhold.

This moneth of December, 1610. Henry Prince of Wales, kept his Court in very Princely manner, at Saint Iames neere Cha-ring Croſſe, and ſetled his houſhold, and ordai-ned his officers, as well the officers of his hig-neſſe Reuennews, as thoſe of his houſhold, the names of the chiefe whereof follow,

Of his Highneſſe Reuenewes.

Sir Edward Phillips, Chancellor.
Maſter Adam Newton, Secretary.
Sir George Moore, Receiver generall.
Sir William Fleetwood, ſurveyer gene-rall.
Sir Auguſtine Nichols, Sericant.
Maſter Thomas Stephens, Atturney.
Maſter Richard Connock, Auditor.

Of his Highneſſe Houſhold.

Sir Thomas Challoner, Chamber-layne.
Sir Charles Cornwalleys, Treaſurer.
Sir Iohn Hollis Comptroller.
Sir David Fowllis, Cofferer.
Sir David Murry, Gentleman of his Bed chamber.

Fulmer, a Towne ſo called in Buckingham-ſhire, hauing their parith Church aboue a myle diſtant from thence, in the open field, hauing now growne very olde and ruinate: in regard whereof, and for the generall eaſe and good of poſterities, it pleaſed Sir Marmaduke Dorrell Knight, maſter of the Kings houſholde, to take downe the ruines of that decayed Church, and at his owne charge, to build a new large fayre Parith Church, with a Font, a Pulpit, and all Church ornaments, with ſeates, and all other neceſſaries, and enuironed it with a fayre Church-yard, and was builded within the Towne of Fulmer, this Knight being Lozd thereof: and from this time the Pa-riſhioners were freed from the offence of Sommers heate, foule wayes, and Win-ters weather, which vntill now were held great impediments in their duteous repayze vnto the houſe of God. This Church thus fully finiſhed and adorned, was conſecrated the firſt day of Nouember, this yeare one thouſand fiue hundzed and tenne, by the right reuerend Father in God, Doctoz Barlow, then Lozd Bi-ſhop of Lincolne: the manner whereof briefely followeth, and the firſt Church-yard was hal-lowed, which the Biſhop and all the aſſembly compaſſed, and as they marched, they ſung the 100. Pſalme: this ceremte finiſhed, the Biſhop made a compendious ſpeech, expreſſing the rea-ſons of this, and the like enclozures about Churches, two whereof were chiefe, the one was to giue due diſtinction, ſtate, and reuerence to the Temple of Almighty God, from all pro-phane wayes and baſe places, and that no other building ſhould bee neere vnto it: and to this purpoſe he cited the 43. chapter of Ezech. The other reaſon is, becauſe the Church-yard is a Dozmitozy, or place of reſt, for Chriſtians to ſleepe in, vntill the reſurrection, for ſo much the woꝛd in Greeke and Latine ſignifieth: in this ſpeech he diſtinguiſhed all differences of places and perſons, &c. with the diuine reaſons, cauſe, and holy inſtitution of theſe things in the Primitiue Church, and duly obſerued by all the holy Fathers, &c. This done, the Biſhop ſayd to the Feunder, this parcell of ground which we haue compaſſed for the buriall of the dead within your parith is yet your owne, if it now therefoze your free mind to giue it for euer to this vſe, whereunto hee anſwered, I

Sir Marmaduke Dorrell buildeth a new Church, and is conſe-crated by the Lozd Biſhop of Lincolne.

The Church-yard.

gins it freely, and with an earnest desire to that purpo e: the Bishoppe likewise askes the Parish Priest, and the Church-Wardens of the same Parish Church, if they all had the same desire, and they all answered affirmatively, humbly beseeching the Bishoppe to perfit in what he had so well begunne: then the Bishop read the instrument of consecration, wherein was contained an interdiction, that the olde Churchyard should not bee layd open to any common or prophane use: then the Priest with due reverence read the 90. Psalme, and the 23. chapter of Genesis. Then the Bishop prayed, saying, O blessed Jesus, our onely Saviour, and Redeemer, who being the Resurrection, and the life, hast of thy mercy promised, and by thy power art able to raise agayne unto life the bodies of the dead, that lye in their graues, whether rotted with corruption, or ren vnred to dust, wee humbly beseech thee of thine especiall favor to vouchsafe that all those thy servants, which shall within this cleuate be buryed, may leade their lives in thy feare, and leaning them in thy faith, may rest in peace within their graues, untill the great day of thy second comming, and may then bee raysed anew in assured hope to raigne with thee in that everlasting glory, which with thy most precious blod thou hast purchased for them, and for all that love thee and looke for thy appearance. heare us O blessed Jesus, for thy passion sake, heare us O loving Father for thy Sonnes sake, to whom with thee and the holy Ghost, three equall persons, and one eternall God, be rendred all thankes prayse, and glory, Amen.

The Church it selfe.

Then the Bishop entred into the Church porch, and turned his face to the Founder that was lead in thither betweene two knights, and said vnto him, now verily this Church yard is exempt and free from any challenge of yon or yours, but this house as yet remaines wholly your owne, say now therefore, if you renounce all your right, clayme, and interrest to the same, he answered affirmatively: then the Bishop asked him if his hearts desire were to haue it dedicated to the Almighty God, and consecrated to his divine service onely: whereunto the Founder answered, saying, most joyfully and willingly: then the Bishop required the Founder to read this Psalme, viz. One thing have I desired of the Lord, which I will require, that I may dwell in the house of the Lord, all the dayes of my life, to beholde the fayre beautie of the Lord, and to visit his Temple, and so read on to the 7. verse: which done, the Bishop tooke him by the hand, and went forward, saying, I was glad when they said vnto me, we will goe into the house of the Lord. And at the second verse of this Psalme, they both kneeled towardes the East, and devoutly said the rest, with glory be to the Father and to the Sonne, and to the holy Ghost, &c. After this the Bishop made a devout prayer, acknowledging Gods omnipotence and divine power, and that heauen is his seat, and the earth his footestoole, so that his Majestie and glorious presence could not bee confined within materiall Temples, &c. and prayed that it would please his Fatherly goodnesse, that his servants might assemble together in that place, to heare divine service, and to make their humble and devout prayers, and supplications, and to heare his will and word revealed vnto them, and that this place consecrated to his service, and severed from all prophane imployments: that it would please his divine Majestie to bless it, and accept it at their hands, as a fit place for the vsuall assembly, a house wherein his sacred word should bee reverently read and truely preached, his holy Sacraments truly administred with feare and reverence, &c. which most excellent prayer, and benediction ended, hee turned to the new Font, and prayed likewise saying. Almighty and everlasting God, whose most dearely beloued Son Jesus Christ, for the forgiuenesse of our sinnes, did shed out of his most precious side both water and blood, and commanded his disciples that they should goe teach all Nations, and baptize them in the name of the Father, and of the Sonne, and of the holy Ghost, and to that purpose did sanctifie, not onely the flood Iordan, but all other waters also, to the mysticall washing away of sinne, wee beseech thee heare the supplications of thy congregation, and graunt that all thy servants which shall bee baptized in the water of this Font, may receive the fulnesse of thy grace, and may euermore remayne in the number of thy elect Church, through Jesus Christ our Lord, Amen.

The Font.

Then the Bishop and the Founder went by the middle Ile, and betweene the chauncell and the bodie of the Church, the Bishoppe turning his face to the people, read the instrument of consecration, and dedicated this Church to God in the memory of Saint Iames the Apostle, for so was the name of the olde Church. After this the Parish Priest layd the divine service and in stead of the Psalmes appointed for that day, he read the 26. the 84. and the 134. Psalmes, and for the appointed chapters, the 2. of Samuel, the 6. chapter, and the 10. chapter of Saint Iohn, verse the 22, and so read to the end: and in place of the collect, was layd this prayer. We beseech thee, O Almighty God, that thou wilt bee pleased continually to dwell in this house, which this day we have dedicated to thee, and vouchsafe to receiue the sacrifices of thy servants, whether of almes, or prayers, or thanksgiuing which shall be offred herein, graunt also a blessing to thy sacred word herein read, or preached, that like seede sowen in good ground, it may fructifie in those that shall bee here assembled, to the instruction of their understanding, the comfort of their consciences, the amendment of their liues, and the saving of their soules, to the glory of thy blessed name, through Jesus Christ our Lord and Saviour.

This ended, then began a Sermon, his text, Psalme 5. verse 7. the people sang two psalmes viz. the 27. and 113. the Sermon being ended: Then the Bishop celebrated the Communion, where the Founder by the Bishopps direction kneeled

kneeled by himselfe in the middle of the Quier right before the Altar, and hauing a collection for the poore, he offered a piece of gold: and towards the end of the celebration, the Bishoppe prayed as followeth: Most gracious God, after the religious example of thos holy Prelats in the Primitive Church, which in celebrating the Communion, remembred the Saints departed, and their benefactors living, wee humblie beseech thee to accept in good part our commemoration of this worthy Gentleman thy servant here present, by whose meanes, and at whose charge in these demolishing and destroying dayes, this house was transla o, reedified, enlarged, and dedicated to thy service, bless him we pray thee with his whole offspring and familie, establish him and his seed vpon earth, and when that house of clay his body shall bee dissolued, clothe him with immortalitie, and give him an everlasting habitation in the heauens, with thee and thy sonne Jesus Christ, to whom with thy holy Ghost, be all glory, honor, prayse, and thankes, now and for euer, Amen. And so the Communion being ended and the benediction pronounced, the Congregation was dismissed. And thus much by way of abstract, I have thought good to set downe, because it is the first new built Church, with a new Churchyard to it, that came to my perfect knowledge.

Pastor Thomas Watson his bounty.

Churches, Chappels, & Churchyards new built and consecrated.

In Waymouth and Melcombe Regis in the yeare 1605. there was a new Church builded, and was consecrated the next yeare, 1606. by Doctor Zouch, Suffragan to the Lord Bishop of Bristoll, who named it Christ Church: and at this Melcombe Regis, there was a very faire Bridge of Tymber built, over a branch of the Sea consisting of 17. Arches, the best benefactours both towardes the building of this Church and Bridge, were certaine Citizens of London. Sir Iames Altham Knight, one of the Barons of the Exchequer, builded a fayre new Chappell at Orbey, in the parish of Watford in Hertfordshire, and was consecrated the fourteenth of September, one thousand six hundred and twelue, by Doctor King, Lord Bishop of London.

There was also a new Church builded in Surrey, and was likewise consecrated by the said Lord Bishop of London.

Saint Mary Mount-haw, neere silly-streete in London, was all taken downe and new built, and was also consecrated by Doctor King, Lord Bishop of London, and retained still the former name of Saint Mary Mount-haw.

Within the liberties and suburbes of London, there were diuers Churchyards new layd apart, dedicated for reuerend places to bury the dead: some whereof were consecrated by Doctor Abbot, late Lord Bishop of London, and others after him by Doctor King, Lord Bishop of London,

Sir Iulius Cæsar Knight, Chancellor of the Exchequer, builded a Chappell at his house on the North side of the Strand, and it was consecrated vpon Sunday the eight of May, 1614. by Doctor King Lord Bishop of London, and called it, Cecil Chappell.

Thomas Watson of Halsted in Kent Esquire in the yeare 1569. did new build a faire Chappell on the North side of the parish Church of Halsted, of free stone from the ground, and adorned the East end thereof, with a very faire and curious glasse window, wrought in rich colours, he likewise new builded the steeple with stone from the ground: he repayred both the Church and Chancell within, and new tyled them: he also built a porch to the same Church, and gaue to it foure faire new Bells, and two new Pulpits, the one for diuine service, and the other for Sermons, and made a wall from the North side of the Churchyard, to the West side.

The Parliament dissolued by Proclamation the 11 of December.

WHereas the Kings most excellent Majestie hath continued this Parliament together, longer then hath beene vsuall, or might have well stood, either with his important affaires of State, or with the publique businesse of three whole Termes, spent in the two last Sessions, or with the occasions of the Country, where the service and hospitalitie of many persons of qualitie hath beene missing, and diuers Shires, Cities, and Burrough Townes have beene burdened, with allowances made to the Knightes, and Burgesses, whom they imployed, besides the particular expence of the Nobilitie, and others attending that service, And all this in expectation of a good conclusion of some of the weighty causes, which have beene there in deliberation, not onely for the supply of the necessities of his Majesties estate, but for the ease and freedome of his subiects, in many things proposed by his Majestie in Parliament, far differing and surpassing the fauors and graces of former times, both in nature and value: His Majestie hath now resolued, (for preuenting of further trouble, of all those that would prepare themselues to be here against the time limitted by the last prorogation) to declare by these presents, that they shall not needs to giue their attendance at the day appointed, for any seruice to be done, as members of this Parliament, because his Majestie (for many good considerations, knowne to himselfe) hath now determined to dissolue this Parliament, by his commission vnder the great Seale of England: this Proclamation was dated the last day of December, this yeere one thou and five hundred and ten.

The Prince of Wales his Feaste.

Upon New-yeeres night, the Prince of Wales being accompanied with twelue others viz. two Earles, three Barons, fiue Knights, and two Esquires, they performed a very faire Maske, in which was an excellent Scoane, ingenious speeches, rare songs, and great varietie of most delicate Musique, in the beautifull roome at Whitehall which roome is generally called the Banqueting house: and the King new builded it about foure yeeres past.

The Viscount Fenton made a Priuie Councellor.

Thursday the last of of January, the Lord Viscount Fenton Captaine of the Guard, was sworne a Priuy Councellour of Estate at Whitehall.

The

A Sergeant at Law made

The 11. of Februarie, Syr Henry Mountague Recorder of London: was made Serieant of the Law, and presently after he was made the Kings Serieant, and yet remained Recorder of London diuers yeares after.

An. Reg. 9. 1611.

Upon our Lady day, being Easter Monday, the King at Whitehall, created Sir Robert Carre Lord Viscount Rochester.

The Lord viscount Rochester created.

Tuesday the ninth of Aprill, one thousand fiue hundred and eleuen, Doctor Abbot, late Lord Bishoppe of London, was translated to the Archbishoppricke of Canterbury, and was very honorably enstalled at Lambeth. And the twenty third of June next following, hee was sworne a Priuy Councellour of Estate, at Greenewitch.

Doctor Abbot Lord Archbishop of Canterbury

The King in person commeth into the Star-chamber to make tryall of his moneys.

Thursday morning the ninth of May, one thousand fiue hundred and eleuen, the King in person came into the Starre Chamber, and hauing viewed it, then went into the Receipts and other Offices, his Maiestie likewise went into Westminster-hall, and into the Court of Orchequer, and into the other Offices, and presently after, came the Prince of Wales, and imparted all those places in like manner: and this morning the King, and the Prince of Wales, being accompanied and attended with the Lord Chancellor, the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Priuy Seale, and the Lord Chamberlaine, and fiue other Earles, and fiue Barons, and Syr Iulius Cæsar Chancellor of the Orchequer, being all in the Star-chamber, where his Maiestie was then come of speciall purpose, to see his Moneys of gold and siluer to be taken out of the pire, and to be tryed, as well for their weight as for their finesse, for which purpose, Thomas Lord Knowles, and Edmond Downbie, ay Esquire, Wardens of the Mint, Richard Martin Esquier, maister and worker of the moneys, and Richard Rogers Esquier, comptroller of the Mint, as the King had appointed, caused the pire to be brought from the mint thither, where in the presence of the King they with their seuerall keyes opened the pire, and powred forth the gold and siluer, to be assayed and tryed by their seuerall Standardes, according to the forme of the indentures made betweene the King and the maisters, and workers of his Mayesties moneys: there were also present, Walter Williams, and Andrew Palmer, Esquires, being the Assay-masters of the mint: this kind of tryall though it bee vsuall once euery yeere, for our examination and plaine proofe, whether the moneys bee as they ought to bee, or not, yet is it beyond all memory and mention, for an hundreth yeeres space, that euer any King or Queene, came in proper person to see any of these tryalls yet neuertheless at this time his Maiestie in person gaue a Iurie of fifteene of the most honest skilfullest, and best reputed Goldsmiths their oathes, and charge for tryall of the moneyes, and the Iurie proceeded in all things according to their charge, and then gaue vp their verdict the same day, at the Court of Whitehall, and the King shewed them great grace and fauour.

The names of the Iurors.

Hugh Middleton.
Alexander Prescot. } Wardens.
Richard Lancastel. }
John Terry.
George Smithes Alderman.
William Beareblocke.
Gayus Newman.
Edmond Wheeler.
John Brode.
Richard Goffon.
Beuell Mowlsworth.
Edward Greene.
Humphrey Westwood.
John Williams The Kings Goldsmith.
John Moth.
William Diniocke,

His Maiestie hauing diligently viewed and examined the Rate of his moneys and mint, as is mentioned, he also with like Kingly care and prudence, searched and examined the abuses of the Common Wealth, practised by very many persons vpon all sorts of moneys, for redresse whereof, his Maiestie made Proclamation the eightteenth of May, as followeth.

A Proclamation for the preseruation of moneys.

VVHereas we are daily informed by the officers of our mint and otherwise, that aswell diuers of our naturall borne Subiects, both Goldsmiths, Merchants, & men of other trades. As also, Strangers inhabiting within this our realme of England, haue presumed for their priuate lucre and gaine, and daylie doe presume to weigh all sorts of moneys current within this our realme of England, to the end to cull out the olde and new moneys, which either by not wearing, or by any other accident in the making thereof are more weightie then the rest, Some part of which moneys so culled out, we haue found (when it pleased our selfe to enter into the examination thereof) to be daily openly sold to goldsmiths, and by them employed for the making of plate, and vessell of all sorts within this our realme of England: And some part to be transported into forraine parts, for priuate mens particular gain, whereby there is a great scarsity of good money likely to ensue, if present remedy be not prouided for the same: Wee therefore in our Princely care intending with all conuenient speed to redresse so great and insufferable a mischiefe, doe by this our Proclamation make known vnto all men, that our will and pleasure is, and wee doe hereby straitly charge and commaund, that no goldsmith, or other person, or persons, of what estate soeuer he or they be, (other then the master and officers of our Mint, for the seruice and imployment thereof) presume or enterprise to melt any moneyes of gold or siluer, being the proper coynes of any our Realmes or Dominions, or current within the same, or any of them, either to make Plate or Vessell thereof, for any other vse whatsoeuer, or doe presume to cull or chuse out from the rest any waighty

waighty moneyes, to the intent to conuey the same out of the realme, or to melt, or otherwise to alter it from Coyne, vpon paine of our heauie displeasure, and of such paines and punishments, as vpon the contemners of our Royall commandements, grounded vpon the publique good, may be inflicted.

Proclamation vpon the increase of price and variation of gold.

The King hauing prudently proceeded in the true tryall of his Mint and moneys, as aboue mentioned, his Maiestie with like Royall care and diligence, searches farther into the enormities of this Kingdome, and Common Wealth, wherein his highnesse found, that notwithstanding many excellent Lawes, aswell ancient as moderne, being all yet in force, containing seuere penalties and strict prouisions, and cautions, and very iustly to bee brought within the compas of fellony, all such persons as transport and carry away gold into any forreyne parts, yet such was the presumption of this time, that very great quantities of English gold, were exported by Merchants aswell English French, as Dutch, but chiefely by the Dutch, being all stirred thereunto by the great & present gaines arising thereby, so as English gold was verie plentifull in forraine Nations, and very great payments were there ordinarily made thereof, whereby gold beganne to ware so scant in England, that for the space of almost two yeeres here was not any vsuall payments made in golde, because of the vnmeasurable, subtile, and bold carrying forth of English golde, for priuate gaine, as is aboueſayd, for the piece of golde called the Vnitie, which was heretofore worth but twentie shillings, was valued in forayne partes at two and twentie shillings, and so were all other English Coynes of golde ratably. For redresse whereof, and preuention of any other imputation, seeing that neither penalties, nor diligent searches could keepe gold within this Kingdome: his Maiestie with the aduice of his Priuy Councell, and conference with diuers Gentlemen of qualitie and discretion, and with Merchants of euery trade, officers of the Mint, and goldsmiths of best experience, hauing iudiciously looked into this matter, made Proclamation the twenty three of November following, wherein was published, declared and authorized, that all these seuerall Coynes hereunder mentioned, to bee currant within this Realme, respectiuely at the values following, being full weight, or within the proportion of the accustomed allowances of grains in their seuerall abatements.

The piece of Gold called the Vnitie	at	xxii.s.
The piece of Gold called the double Crowne		xi.s.
The piece of Gold called the Brittaine Crowne		v.s. vi.d.
The piece of Gold called the Thistle Crowne		iii.s. iii.d. ob. q.
The piece of Gold called the halfe Crowne		ii. s. d.
The piece of Gold of Scotland called the 6.p. peece		xi.s.

All other pieces of Gold of the Coyne of any former Kings of this Realme, at this time current, to beare the like encrease of price in proportion with these Coynes already specified, viz.

Euery piece of Gold formerly currant for xx.s.	to be now current for	xxiii.s.
xv.s.		xvii.s.
xb.s.		xvi.s. vi.d.
x.s.		xi.s.
b.s.		b.s. vi.d.
ii.s. vi.d		ii.s. iy.

Gate.

From the second yeere of his Maiesties raign and for fiue yeares after, here was more plenty of golde then euer was before: and so would haue continued, if it had not beene so much exported. In the 18. yeare of Henry the eight: was the like increase of price and valuation of gold, for the old Noble was raysed to vii.s. vi.d. and the olde Angell was raised to eleuen shillings foure pence, and the old French Crowne was raised six pence aboue the former value: at this time began the first Crownes of the Rose, being then valued at fiue shillings: And at this time also that is to say, in the yeere 1527. and the eighteenth yeare of Henry the eight, began the first George Noble, valued then at six shillings eight pence.

The Duke of Yorke, the Earle of Arundell, and the Viscount Rochester, made Knights of the Garter

Vpon Whitsun Monday, the 13. of May, at Windsor were made Knights of the most Noble order of the Garter, Charles Duke of Yorke, second son to our Soueraigne Lord the King: and Thomas Earle of Arundell, and Robert Viscount of Rochester.

The 9. of June, there were two Bishoppes consecrated at Lambeth, viz. Doctor Tomlinson, Deane of Windsor, was consecrated Lord Bishoppe of Glocester: and Doctor Buckeridge, was consecrated Lord Bishoppe of Rochester.

Two Bishops consecrated.

The 23. of June, here arriued Prince Otto, Son and heire vnto Morris Landgraue of Hessen, attended with thirtie persons, and accompanied with the young Count of Nassaw: this Prince was very honourably entertained of the King, Queene, and Prince of Wales: hee went vnto both the Vniuersities, and tooke great pleasure to behold the Kings Parkes and Pallaces: he was 17. yeeres of age & demeaned himselfe in all things very princely and bountifully: he returned the third of August: the King honored with Knighthood two of his chiefe attendants, who were Commissioners to his Maiesty, viz Otto Starchedell, President of Hessia, and Gasper Widmarker, a Colonell, next vnto whom his chiefe Gentleman,

The young Landgraue of Hessen comes to the King, Queene, and Prince.

man, and director of his affaires, was master Francis Seager, an Englishman, a sworne Counsellour vnto Prince Morris, the Father of this young Prince, and one of his Cap...nes in Ordinary.

Doctor King Lord Bishop of London.

Sunday the eight of September, 1611. Doctor King Deane of Christ Church in Oxford, was consecrated Lord Bishop of London, at Lambeth.

The Earle of Pembrooke made a priuie Counseller.

Vpon Sunday, the 29. of September 1611. William Earle of Pembrooke was sworne a priuy Councellor at Hampton Court.

Two heretickes burned.

Wednesday the 18. of March, Bartholomew Legat, an obstinate Arian heretique, was burned in Smithfield: he refused all fauour, and contemned all Ecclesiasticall gouernment. And vpon Easter eeue, the 11. of Aprill following Edward Wight nan another obstinate misereant heretique, was burned at Litchfield, hauing likewise more fauour offered him then he had reason to accept.

An. Reg. 10. 1612.

The 22. of Aprill 1612. the Right Honorable the Lord Viscount Rochester, was sworn a priuy Councellor of Estate.

The Lord Chamberlain his graue speech at the Star-chamber.

Thursday the 25. of June, the Lord Sanquire was indicted at the Court of the Kings Bench, by the great inquest of the County of Middlesex, by the name of Robert Creighton Esquire, Protestors of for being accessory to the murder of Iohn Turner before the fact committed, viz. for counselling, abetting, and procuring Robert Carlile, to performe the said murder: vnto which indictment, he then stood very vnwilling to make any answere, and humbly besought the Iudges to graunt him respit for a day or two to make his answere, whether he were guilty or not guiltie: but when he saw that the Court would not permit any further delay, hee sayd, that because as yet, he had not settled his estate, nor prepared himselfe for death as hee entended, he would then plead not guiltie, though he neuer meant to deny the fact, nor what hee had priuatly confest: and the next Saturday he was brought to the Kings bench barre againe, and was then tryed by a Iury of Middlesex, viz. of Esquires and Gentlemen who found him guilty by his owne voluntary confession, and vpon Munday the 29. of June, hee was executed before Westminster hall gate, and dyed very penitent. Iohn Turner was a Maker of Fence, and was murthered the 11. of May, by Robert Carlile, for the which he was executed the 25. of June.

The Lotterie.

The Kings Maiestie in speciall fauour for the present plantation of English Collonies in Virginia, graunted a liberall Lotterie, in which was contained fiue thousand pound in prizes certaine, besides rewardes of casualty, and began to be drawne, in a new built house at the West end of Pauls, the 29. of June 1612. Out of which Lotterie, for want of filling vp the number of lots, there were then taken out and throwne away, threescore thousand blankes, without abating of any one prize: and by the twentieth of July, all was drawne and finished. This Lotterie was so plainly carried, and honestly performed, that it gaue full satisfaction to all persons, Thomas Sharpliffe a Taylor of London, had the chiefe prize, viz. foure thousand Crownes in fayre plate, which was sent to his house in very stately manner: during the whole time of the drawing of this lottery, there were alwayes present diuers worshipfull Knights and Esquires, accompanied with many graue discreete Citizens.

It began the 20. of June, and ended the 20. of July.

The Earle Rutland deceased.

Fryday the twentie first of June, dyed Roger Earle of Rutland, Lord Roos of Hamlacke Trausboote and Belvoire, at Cambridge, and from thence hee was transported to Belvoire Castle: and the 22. of July, his corps was honourably enterred at Bottisford with his Ancestors: he was endued with many noble vertues, and well beloued of all sorts of people: his brother Sir Francis Manners was his next heire, and succeeded him in that Earledome.

The King rode Progresse to Theobalds, Hartfordshire.

This Sommer the King rode Progresse to the forrest of Shirwood, and the seuenth of August, his Soueraigne and the Prince of Wales came to Belvoire Castle, being accompanied and attended with many Earles, Barons, and Knights and there stayed vntill the next Munday in the afternoone during which space, Francis Earle of Rutland, Lord of that Castle gaue them very honourable entertainment.

The King receiued a rich all tombe of his mother, and translated from Peterborough to Westminster.

At this time the corps of Queene Mary late Queene of Scotland, was translated from Peterborough, vnto Saint Peters Church in Westminster, being thither attended by the Lord Bishop of Couentry and Litchfield. And vpon Thursday the eight of October, the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Chancelor the Lord Priuy Seale, and the Earle of Worcester, and other Noblemen, and the Bishop of Rochester, and the Deane of Westminster, met the Corps at Clearkenwell, about fiue a clocke in the euening, and from thence with plenty of Torch lights, brought the body of the sayd Queene vnto the Chappell royall at Westminster, and on the South side thereof, it was there interred that night, where the King had builded a most royall Tombe for her, where she now resteth.

Great Winds and much shipwracke.

In the moneths of October, Nouember, and December, this yeere 1612. there hapned many great Winds, violent Stormes, and Tempests, as well by land as Sea, which did exceeding great damage, with extreame shipwracke throughout the Ocean, chiefely vpon the coast of Spaine and Portugall, where there perished aboue an hundred ships within the space of two houres: and in the Spring time following, yea euen vntill Saint Iames tyde, there fell rayne continually, which caused great floods, which did great damage vpon the earth, and put all men in feare of a present dearth, whereupon there was prayers made in all Churches vnto Almighty God, to send a blessed season able harueste, and that yeere there was far greater plentie of corne and Hay, then in many yeeres before.

Sir Robert Sherley, second sonne to Sir Thomas Sherley of Sussex Knight, about fiue taene yeeres past, betooke himselfe to trauaile, and

and serued diuers Christian Princes for the space of fiue yeeres, but chiefely vnder Rodulphus the Romane Emperor, who employed him in Ambassie, wherein he so discreetely and honorably demeaned himselfe, that he was made the Earle of the Empire. After that he went into Persia, and serued the Persian ten yeeres very faithfully and valiantly against the Turke, and was by the Emperor of Persia made generall of the Artillery, who held him in so high estimation, that he gaue him the Lady Teresia in marriage the daughter of Ismy Haven, Prince of the City Hercadia Maior, whose sister is one of the Queenes of Persia. The Persian employed him vnto sundry Princes in Europe, and sent him in especiall Ambassie into England, vnto King Iames: he arriued here in Sommer 1611. And the 2. of October following he has audience at Hampton Court, where he deliuered his letters, and shewed his Commission. All which, purported the Persians great loue & affection vnto his Maiestie, with hearty desire of amity with the K. of great Britanne with franke offer of free commerce vnto all his Highnesse subiects throughout all the Persians dominions, &c. This Earle Sherley was entertained and respected as an honorable ambassador: he brought hither with him Teresia his wife, bigge with child, who was shortly after deliuered of a son, vnto whom the Queene was godmother, and Prince Henry was Godfather. who called the child Henry after his own name: the Ambassador stayed in England aboue a yere after that, & hauing receiued the kings gracious letters to the Persian, by which time as his Spare had appointed there was a well furnished ship prouided to transport him, his wife, & seruants, into the parts of the East Indies, and to land him as neere the Persians dominion as they could, and vpon his departure from the ship that then as the King had ordayned, they should deliuer vnto the Ambassador 500. pounds in money to beare his charge by land, and to doe him what farther kindnes they could: he imbarked at Douer this moneth of January 1612. he left his son Sir. in England. Captain Tho. Powel of Herefordshire whom the King now honoured with Knighthood accompanied the Ambassador both comming & going: he was colonel of 700. horse vnder the Persian: hee at this time married an English woman who went now ouer with him. Captaine Newport was selected Captaine of the ship for transportation of this L. Ambassador & his retinue, and because this voyage is extraordinary from others, I haue here set it down very briefly. They went hence by the Canaries, and in Aprill they came to the Cape of Bono Speranza, where they refreshed themselues with water & victual. From thence they sayled to the great Iland called S. Lawrence, formerly called Madagascar, where they take in freely water againe. From thence they went to an Iland called Mohilla, & there they refreshed themselues with all manner of delicate flesh and pleasant fruits, this is one of the most pleasant and fertile places of the world: and from thence they sailed into Arabia Felix, vnto a city called Dophar, where through extreame foule

Stayed thr ee 15. dayes.

In Innuasador from the Emperor of Persia, to the King of great Britanne.

weather, they remained there 28. dayes: and from thence they sayled into the mouth of the gulfe of Persia, where it was ment the Lord ambassador should haue landed, but finding the place very inconuenient, they sailed thence to Gudel where a reuolted Duke from the Persian, with his forces being there, sought treacherously to surprise the Ambassadour, and to take the ship with the Merchants, their goods and all, but by Gods prouidence, the Duke's Treason was discouered by a Persian Hermit, by which meanes the English were miraculously deliuered from extreame danger. From this place they set saile againe, & went into the riuer Synde, where Captaine Newport very safely landed the L. Ambassador, Sir T. Powell with their wiues, and all their company, that embarked with them from England, where they were most ioyfully & honorably receiued of the gouernor & of the inhabitants of the country, which country is vnder the great Maghoore, vpon the borders of Persia. Captaine Newport returned into England in July the next yeere following viz. 1614. the foresaid great Maghoore whom some very corrupts by call the great Magull, is a very royall and potent Prince of large Territories, very populous & opulent, valiant & warlik, rich in treasure & plentifully furnished with munition. It is written that this great Maghoore is lineally descended from the famous Tamberlain, & is the 9. or 10. in orderly race from Tamberlain, who tooke Suaz the Turkish Emperor prisoner in the yere 1397. whereof I haue made some mention in my Abridgement. The King by his letters Patents dated the 7. of June in the 7. yere of his gracious raign did Enfeoff 15. Knights & Esquires of the county of Middlesex, of a piece of ground being in S. Iohns street in the county of Middlesex, to be for euer vsed and imployed for a session house for the county, & for the keeping of a prison or house of correction for the same countie vpon which piece of ground aforesayd, & according to the extent of the K. Letters Patents, Sir Baptists Hicks Knight one of the Iustices of the County, builded a very stately session house of brick and stone, with all offices thereunto belonging, at his owne proper charges: and vpon wednesday the 13. of Ian. this yere 1612. by which time this house was fully finished, there assembled 26. Iustices of the county being the 1. day of their meeting in that place, where they were all seated by Sir Baptist Hicks & then they all with one consent gaue it a proper name, & called it Hicks Hall, after the name of the founder who then freely gaue the same house to them & their successors for euer. Vntill this time the iustices of Middlesex held their shiall meeting in a common Inne called the Castle.

Hicks Hall founded.

The aboue named Sir Baptist Hicks knight, also founded a very faire hospitall, builded of free stone, at Camden in Glocestershire, for 6. men, & 6. women, allowing euery of the for the present yeerely a gowne, and 2.s. a weak, and each one of them hath 2. rowmes & a garden: the said founder is yet liuing, who meanes to enlarge their pencions. And hath also done reparations to the parish church, and guiuen them a bell of about 11. or 1200. waight, to make them 5. bels in number

Sir Baptist Hicks his farther bounty.

Apparance of great famine by prayer and prouidence preuented.

The last Sommer through want of raine, both graile and hay waxed very scant in most shires of this kingdome, so as such persons as had not extraordinary meanes of prouision of winters food for their Cattell, were extreamly dismayd and perplexed, lest the ensuing winter, should proue hard like as did this Sommer, by reason whereof they should be constrained to suffer them to perish for want of food, or to sell them to rich farmers and graziers, at vnreasonable low prizes, and such monopolists and greedy engrossers of cattell, as had made their full prouision for that purpose, had so fully assured themselues of their expected excessiue gaines, the nert ensuing winter & spring, that many of them vaunted, that this winter and at Easter, they would sell fat oxen after the rate of 8.d. a pound & all other flesh accordingly. But it pleased Almighty God to send a mild open winter, and a forward spring, which releeued the whole kingdome, and preuented the greedy deuourers of the common wealto, of all their hopes and expectation. Also the king in his prudent care for the better preuention of the great feared famine that might ensue by the dearth or murreyne of cattell to command his subiects in generall that all the time of Lent they should vtterly abstain from eating all manner of butchers flesh, and that no Butcher should be suffered to kill flesh within London nor any the Citie, as had bin vsed in many late yeeres, which restraint being so great & generall the multitude began againe to feare a new scarcity of victualls, and that it would exceedingly enhaunse the prices of all kind of fish) by reason the like restraint of flesh had not bin in the memory of man & therefore they held it impossible to make halfe prouision of fish to serue the common subiects: all which dread and terror of famine or extreame scarcitie was likewise wholy suppressed for it pleased Almighty God, to send great plenty of all kinds of fish, that the most was spent the more came daily in, for Merchants and fishermen seeing there was reason inough for sale for fish, they brought in continually great store of seafish, euen vnto the last day of Lent & was sold at indifferent prices during the whole Lent: by this means all sorts of cattell was preserued & neuer eased, and at Easter all maner of flesh being very plenteous was sold at common rates: and the Merchants, the fishmongers, and fishermen were much encouraged, and the common subiects as much benefited. The Lords of the Priuy Councel inceslantly sent word to the L. Maior & Sheriffs to look and search diligently that no flesh should be kept or sold within London and their liberties: in which seruice they vsed all diligence & strictnes, committing the offenders to the goale, and gaue their meat to prisoners. The Iustices of Surrey and middlesex vsed like care and diligence.

Lent strictly kept in London.

Note the benefit of order and obedience

The Palsgraue arriueth in England.

Friday the 16 of October, 1612. at 11. a clock at night arriued at Graues-end, the most Illustrious Prince, Frederick the fift of that name, Count Palatine of the Rheine, &c being very Princely accompanied and attended, where sir Lewes Lewkenor as the king had appointed him, attended the comming of the Palsgraue, and there entertained his Highnesse: and vpon Saturday morning early, the King sent the Lord Hay vnto him, to congratulate his safe arriuall and to signifie his hearty welcome.

And vpon Sunday in the forenoone the Duke of Lenox, with diuers Earls and Barons, being sent by his Maiestie, came to Graues-end, and they likewise saluted this yong Prince, and all his traine with hearty welcome: and that afternoone they accompanied him by Barge to the Court at White-hall, where at his landing, he was receiued & welcomed by the Duke of York and diuers Earles and Barons, who brought him vp into the great Banquetting house, and there the King, the Queene, Prince Henry, and the Lady Elizabeth, entertained him in all kind manner, where after performance of Princely complements, the Palsgrave with his retinue went by barge to Eller house, which was prepared for them very royally, and were attended by diuers of the kings gentlemen and officers: and during his abode in England, all things were defrayed by his Maiestie.

The Palsgraue dineth at the Lord Hayes feast.

Thursday the 29. of October, being the day that the L. Maior takes his oath: the Palsgraue dined in the Guildhall, accompanied with the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, the Duke of Lenox, the Lord Bishop of London, and diuers Earles and Barons, and during the whole dinner, the Palsgrave and the Lord Archb. entertained the time with sundry discourses in Latine: to this great feast, Prince Henry was likewise inuited, and would haue bin there, but that hee was sicke and could not come. After dinner the Lord Mayor and his brethren in the behalfe of the City and Citizens of London, for testimony of hearty welcome, and their loue, presented the Palsgrave with a very large Bason and Ewre of siluer, richly gilded, & curiously wrought, and two great guilded liuery pots, suitable to the rest, in euery of which was engrauen *Ciuitas London*.

Prince Henry diseased.

Friday the 6. of Nouember, between 7. and 8. a clocke at night, died the most famous & hopefull Prince, Henry, Prince of Wales, at his Court of S. Iames. He died of a popular malignant Feuer, which raigned that yere in most parts of this land, & tooke away a great number of people of all sorts and ages, and vpon Sonday the 7. of Decemb. with all magnificence and solemnitie, his Corps was drawne in a Chariot vnto the Abby Church at Westminst. being thither accompanied by the young Prince Charles, who was the chiefe mourner, accompanied with the Palsgraue: at this obsequy besides his owne late seruants and officers, there mourned diuers Bishops, the Duke of Lenox, with many Earles and Barons & the Palsgraues councell, with the Earls of his traine, & others, as also the gentlemen of the K. chappell, being all in rich coapes attended the corps to Church, singing very solemnly as they marched: the L. Archbi. of Canterbury preached the funerall Sermon: and the Prince was enterred in the chappell royall. He died at the age of 18. yeres 8. moneths, and 17. dayes, & was endued with all princely gifts and perfections, his death was lamented throughout this kingdom, & in many forraine parts concerning which, the full report of his noble & princely vertues, you may read at large, written by many in his deserued commemoration.

The Palsgrave and Graue Maurice elected Knights of the Garter

Vpon S. Thomas day, the Palsgraue & Graue Maurice, were elected knights of the Garter, and forthwith the order of the Garter was sent to Graue Maurice, by William Seager, *alias* Garter, principall King of Armes, who receiued it very acceptably, and rewarded the bringer very bountifully. And the 27. of December, the Palsgraue was betrothed to the Lady Elizabeth.

Sunday the 7. of February, the Palsgraue in person was enstalled knight of the Garter at Windsore, viz. the high and mighty Prince Frederick, by the grace of God, Count Palatine of the Rheyne, Arch-Sewer, and Prince Elector of the holy Empire, Duke of Bauyer, and knight of the most noble order of the Garter.

And the same time likewise was Graue Maurice enstalled by his Deputy Count Lodwick of Nassaw, cozen to Graue Maurice: the Graues Titles were there aduanced, viz. The high and mighty Lord Maurice, Prince in Orenge, Earle of Nassaw, Catzelbogen, Diets, Moers, Linghen, Marquesse of Vere, & of Flushing, Baron of the Towne of Grane, and of the Countries of Culick, Leke, and Neyruert, Gouernour and Captaine Generall of Gueldres, Holland, Zeland, West freezland, Zutphen, Vtricht, and Ouerisell, Admirall Generall of the vnited Prouinces of the Low Countries, and knight of the most noble order of the Garter.

Triumphs vpon the enterim, in honor of the ensuing marriage of the Princesse Elizabeth to the Palsgrave.

The appointed day of Parriage of the Lady Elizabeth, with the Palsgraue drew neere. In honour whereof, there were prepared, and that with great speed, diuers kindes of triumphs, pastimes, and fancy deuises vpon the water, the first was vpon the Thursday night before the wedding day, and about 10. of the clock that night was performed many pleasant, strange, and variable sights vpon the Thames ouer against White-hall: these entertainements consisted of fantasticke or enchanted Castles, Rocks, Bowers, Fortells, and other deuises floating vpon the water, being as pleasant to behold by day, as they seemed strange by night, each properly in one course seconded one another.

And vpon the Saturday, though suddainly prepared, yet very well appointed a stately fleet of ships, galeons, argoses, galleys, and bergantines, which all this week in most triumphant manner lay at anchor betweene London bridge and White-hall, being in all warlike manner furnished with skilfull Mariners, and nimble saylers, and with great Artillery and small shot, in as ample manner as if it had bin for the best of service, and in such sight & bauery, as might well haue daunted a daring aduersarie: for amongst these imaginary vessels of warre, there were some that were ships of warre in deed, one whereof was the Kings Pinnace, such as vntill then neuer shot the Bridge, nor thought possible to be brought so high into the riuer: to encounter this Armado, there was also built a faire Castle at Stangate, and was fully furnished with small shot and great artillery, sufficient to haue foild the pollage of a proud enemy. This Castle with the forts, rocks, beacon, and store of warlike Turkish galleys, resembled Argier, to surprise and spoile the Christians ships comming in their way: or to be imagined the battell of Lepanto, betweene the Christians & the Turke, in the yeere 1571. for such was the signification of this dates triumph, which was very well performed: it began about two a clocke in the afternoone, and held on vntill the euening, but the cloud comming in, and the winde being casterly, in preeht some part of their intended pastimes.

The Princess Elizabeth weds to the Palsgrave.

Shroue-sunday the 14 of February & S. Valentines day, was this happy marriage of the Palsgrave vnto the Lady Elizabeth in the chappell at Whitehall, the Bridgroome being then accompanied & attended with the nobility, and chiefe gentry of England and Scotland, diuers Bishops, and with his owne nobility & gentry, besides others: the King being also there in person, the earle of Arundel bearing the sword, they proceeded from the Kings presence Chamber, and from thence in state and order marched through the great chamber, and so along the old gallery through the new built rome towards the banqueting house, and then descended a lower new built gallery in the first Court that led them into the great hall, & from thence into the chappell so as many people might well behold them. After them came the faire and chearefull Bride, led by two batchelers, that is to say, her brother Prince Charles, and the Earle of Northampton, Lord privy seale: she was attired all in white, hauing a rich crowne of gold vpon her head, her haire hanging down at length in faire and seemely tresses, plenteously beset with rich pearles & pretious stones: her traine supported by 12 faire young vrains in white garments. All the gallant Ladies of the Court & many others accompanied and attended the Bride. The Duke was also there in person. The king gaue her in marriage. The L. Archbishop of Cant. married them, and the L. Bishop of Bath preached the Nuptiall Sermon, which ended they returned from Church in the same royall state & order as they went: the Bride being then led by two married men, that is to say the duke of Lenox, and the Earle of Nottingham Lord Admirall. The Bride and Bridegroome, prince Charles, count Henrick, with other noblemen strangers. At the great Lords of the priuy counsel: the chiefe Ladies of the Court & others, dined that day in the new large rome builded for that purpose, which rome was adorned with stately hangings, curiously wrought, representing the sea fight betweene the English & Spanish fleets, Anno 1588.

A Maske of Lords and Ladies.

And that night in honor of this ioyful nuptiall, there was a very stately Maske of Lords and Ladies with many ingenious speaches, delicate deuises, melodious musicke, pleasant daunces, with other princely entertainments of time, all which were singularly well performed in the Banqueting house. The foure honorable Inns of Court, aswell the Elders and graue Benchers of each house, as the towardly young actiue gallant Gentlemen of the same houses, being of infinite desire to expresse their singular loue and duteous affection to his Maiestie, and to performe some memorable & acceptable

The seuerall Maskes of the Inns of Court.

ſeruice worthy their olone reputation, in honor of this nuptiall, & thereupon with great expedition they ioyntly and ſeuerally conſulted, and agreed amongſt themſelues to ſet out two ſeuerall rich and ſtately Maſke, & to performe them brauely, without reſpect of charge or expences, and from amongſt themſelues they ſelected the moſt pregnant and actiue gentlemen to be their maſkers, who to the lifting honour of themſelues and their ſocieties performed all things as worthily, they imployed the beſt wits and ſkilfulleſt artizans in deuiſing, compoſing, and erecting their ſeuerall ſtrange properties, excellent ſpeeches, pleaſant deuiſes, and delicate Muſique, braue in habite, rich in ornaments, in demeanor Courtly, in their going by Land and Water, very ſtately and orderly: all which with their rare inuentions and variable entertainements of time were ſuch, as the like was neuer performed in England by any Societie, and was now as graciouſly accepted of by his Maieſtie, the Queene, the Prince, the Bride, and Bridegroome, From whom they receiued all Princely thankes and encouragement: concerning which two Maskes, with the multiplicity of deuices, depending vpon thoſe entertainements of time, though I may not ſette downe the particulars, nor ſay all I ought in their deſerning commendations, by reaſon it would require a very large diſcourſe: yet for diſtinction ſake, I will briefly ſet downe their ſeuerall times, and order of going to the Court. Vpon Shroue-munday at night, the gentlemen of the middle Temple, and Lincolns Inne, with their Traine for this buſineſſe, aſſembled in Chancery-lane, at the houſe of Sir Edward Phillips, maſter of the Roles and about eight of the clocke, they marched thence through the Strand, to the Court at Whitehall in this manner. Firſt rode fifty choyce Gentlemen richly attyred, and as gallantly mounted, with euery one his footemen to attend him: theſe rode very ſtately like a Vauntgard. Next after with ſit diſtance marched an antique or mockmaſke of Babions, attired like fantaſtique trauailers, in very ſtrange and confuſed manner, riding vpon Aſſes, or dwarfe Iades, ſinging all Aprill and mocking trickes to the people, mouing much laughter as they paſt, with Torches on either ſide to ſhew their ſtate to be as ridiculous as the reſt was Noble: After them came two Chariots triumphal, very pleaſant and full of ſtate, wherein rode the choyce Muſitians of this Kingdome, in robes like to the Virginian Prieſts with ſundry deuices, all pleaſant and ſignificant, with two rankes of Torches: Then came the cheife Maskers with great ſtate in white Indian habite, or like the great Princes of Barbary, richly imbroydered with the golden ſun, with ſuitable ornaments in all pointe, about their necks were ruffs of Feathers, ſpangled and beſet with pearle, and ſiluer and vpon their heads, lofty coronets ſuitable to the reſt: they wore long ſilke ſtockings, curiouſly imbroydred with golde to the midleg: their buſkins were likewiſe imbroydred, and in their hands as they rode, they brandiſhed Cane darts of the fineſt gold: their vizards were of Oliue colour their haire long and black down to their ſhoulders: the hoales for rich ſtiew equalled the Maskers: their capariſons were enchaſt with ſuns of gold, and ornamentall Jewels, with ſiluer ſcaſſing ouer the whole capariſon, and about their heads, which made ſuch a ſtrange and glorious ſhew, that it dazled the eyes of the beholders with great admiration: euery of theſe hoyſe had two Moyres to attend them, attired like Indian Slaues with wreathes of gold, and watchet about their heads, being about an hundreth in number: the Torch-bearers carryed Torches of Virgin ware, the ſtaues whereof were great Canes guilded all ouer, and their habites were likewiſe of the Indian Garb, but more extrauagant then thoſe of the maskers, the maskers rode ſingle, and had euery man his torch-bearer riding before him. All which with the laſt triumphall Chariot, wherein ſate many ſtrang attired perſonages, with their emblems, conceitfull, and variable deuices, made a wondrous pleaſing ſhew. And thus they marched through the Strand to Whitehall, where the King, the Prince, the Bride and Bridegroome, and the cheife Nobility ſtood in the gallery before the Tilt-yard, to behold their approach, and becauſe there ſhould be a full view had of their ſtate & traine, the King cauſed them to march one turne about the liſt, and being diſmounted, they were honorably attended through the gallery to a chamber, in which they were to make them ready for performance of their Scoane in the hall, in which place, were erected their ſundry prop erties and deuices formerly mentioned where they performed all things anſwerable to the beſt of expectation, and received as royall thankes and commendations.

The middle Temple and Lincolns Inne.

The next day being Shroue-tueſday, the gentlemen of he Inner Temple and Grays Inne with their traine, and many other gallant yong gentlemen of both theſe houſes as their conuoy, aſſembled themſelues at Winchester houſe being the appointed place for their Rendeuous: this nights entertainment conſiſted of three ſeuerall maſks, 1. an Antick-maſke of a ſtrange and different faſhion from others, both in habit and manners, very delectable: a rurall or country maſke, conſiſting of many perſons, men and women, being all in ſundry habits, being likewiſe as ſtrange, variable and delightfull. The third, which they called the maine maſke, was a maſke of Knights, attired in arming doblets of carnation ſattin richly imbroyded with ſtars of ſiluer plate, beſet with ſmaller ſtarres, ſpangles, and ſiluer lace, betweene gorgets of ſiluer male, with long Venetian hoſe imbroyded ſuitable to the reſt, like Carnation ſtockings imbroyded all ouer: their Garters and Roſes anſwerable their hats were of the ſame ſtuffe and imbroyded, cut before like a Helmet & the hinder part like a Scollop, anſwering the ſkirts of their doublets, their hatbands were wreathes of ſiluer, in forme of garlands of wild Oliues, their feathers white and carnation, their belts imbroyded, ſiluer ſwords little Italian falling bands, & cuffs imbroyded: their haire, faire and long

The Inner Temple and Grayes Inne.

long, their vizards faire and young, and concerning their ſundry ingenious properties and deuiſes already erected in the Court hall: they were all excellent, fraught with Art, State, and delights, hauing all their Actors correſpondent. Theſe Maskers with their whole traine in all triumphant manner and good order, ſtoke barge at Winchester ſtarres, about 7. of the clock that night, and rowed to White-Hall againſt the tyde: the cheife Maskers went in the Kings Barge royally adorned, and plenteouſly furniſhed with a great number of great wax lights, that they alone made a glorious ſhew: other Gentlemen went in the Princes Barge, and certaine other went in other faire Barges, and were led by two Admiralls: beſides all theſe they had foure luſty warlike Gallies to conuoy and attend them, each Barge and Galley being replenished with ſtore of Torch-lights, made ſo rare and braue a ſhew vpon the water, as the like was neuer ſeene vpon the Thamis: they had three peales of great Ordnance, in three ſeuerall places vpon the ſhore, viz when they imbarked, as they paſt by the Temple, and at Strangate when they arriued at Court, where the King, Prince Charles, the Bride & Bridegroome, ſtood in the vpper Gallery to behold them vpon the water, and to view them in particular at their arriuall, they landed at the private ſtaires, and were receiued by the Lord Chamberlaine, and conducted to the Tilt-yard: for the Hall wherein they ſhould performe their ſcene, was by this time filled with company, who although they were of very good faſhion, yet were there many principall Ladies, and other noble perſonages, beſides Ambaſſadors and other ſtrangers of account not come, ſo as when they ſhould be placed, the roome would be ſo ſcanted, as it would proue very inconuenient, wherevpon his Maieſtie was moſt graciouſly pleaſed with conſent of the Gentlemen Maskers, to put it off vntill the next Saterday, and that then they ſhould performe all their preſent intended entertainments in the great banqueting houſe, adding this ſauour withall, that this deferring ſhould be no impediment vnto the outward ceremony of magnificence vntill that day: and vpon Saterday at 7. of the clocke at night, they came priuately in troopes, and were brought to their places by the Lord of Northampton, and a choyce roome was reſerued for the Gentlemen of both theſe houſes, and that night they braue ly performed their Scene, to the great delight and full ſatisfaction of all the beholders, and from his Maieſtie they receiued as kingly thanks, and gracious acceptation.

Prince Charles 25th hopped.

Vpon Easter day, the King, the Palſgraue, and the Lady Elizabeth, receiued the Sacrament in the Kings Chappell and the next day Prince Charles was confirmed or bilhopped in the ſame Chappell, by the Lord Archbiſhop of Canterbury, in the preſence of the King, and Queene: the Prince hauing bin formerly conferd withall, by the Lord Archbiſhop and the Lord Biſhop of Bath and Wels, touching the principles of Religion, vnto whom he manifeſted ſuch Princely vnderſtanding and forwardneſſe, and vpon the ſuddaine gaue ſuch ready anſwers and reaſons of his faith, as braue them and all the reſt that heard him into great admiration: the Prince being but twelue yeares of age the 19 of Nouember laſt.

A Preſent from the Citie of London.

The Lord Maior and Aldermen in the behalfe of themſelues, and the Citizens of London, gaue vnto the Ladie Elizabeth a fayre chaine of Orientall pearle, which coſt aboue two thouſand pound, and it was preſented vnto her by Sir Iohn Iſſe by the Recorder and fiue Aldermen.

The Palſgraue during his abode in England, ſo nobly and diſcreatly demeaned himſelfe in all reſpects, that he worthily gained the generall applauſe and loue of all men, and plainly expreſt the vertue of his Princely minde, by the bounty of his free gifts, preſents, and rewards vnto all ſorts whatſoeuer, that did him any manner of ſeruice or courteſie, for he gaue away to the full value of an hundred and twenty thouſand French Crownes.

The Palſgraues bonnarie.

Saturday the 10. of Aprill, the King, the Queene, the Prince Charles, the Palſgraue, and the Lady Elizabeth, went by Barge from the White-hall to Greenwich, and the next Sunday they all accompanied the Palſgraue, and the Lady Elizabeth to Rochester, where the next morning they tooke their leaue of the King, Queene, and Prince and then rode thence to Canterbury, and ſo to Margate in the Ile of Thanet, where the Lord Admirall in perſon with nine of the Kings Ships and Pinnaces, attended their comming, to receiue them, and conuey them and their traine ouer: they imbarked vpon Friday being S. Georges day, intending to ſet ſaple for Flushing, but by reaſon of contrary winges they put back againe: and vpon Sunday about noone, the 25. of Aprill they imbarked, and came to Flushing the 29. of Aprill. The Lord Admirall hauing brought them to Camphere, then hee with the Fleete returned for England. The King alſo ſent with them foure principall Commiſſioners to conduct them to Rocchrack, a Cittie of the Palſgraues, viz the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Arundell, the Viſcount Liſle and the Lord Harrington, who at the requeſt of the Palſgraue, accompanied him further into his Countrey, vnto his cheefe Cittie of Heidelbergh: There was likewiſe another Commiſſion, viz vnto the Lord Harrington, vnto Maſter Henry Martine, the Kings Aduocate, and Doctor of the Law; and Maſter Leonius Monke, one of the Clearks of the Signet: and theſe were to ſee the Lady Elizabeths ioyniture, formerly in quantity agreed vpon, to be accompliſhed and aſſured in forme of Law, and poſſeſſion to be taken according to the ſame, all which was well performed to the good content of his Maieſtie; and in their returne homeward the Lord Harrington dyed at Woomes, a Cittie Imperiall, his corpes was brought ouer and buried in England. Now followeth the particularities of their iourney from Margate to Heidelbergh.

The Commiſſioners.

The Palſgraue and the Lady Elizabeth ſet forward for Heidelbergh.

The Magnificent, Princely, and most Royall Entertainements

given to the High and Mighty *Prince*, and *Princesse*, FREDERICK, *Count Palatine, Palsgraue* of the *Rhyne*: and ELIZABETH, sole Daughter to the High and Mighty King of *England, Iames*, our Soueraigne Lord.

Together with a true Relation of all the Gifts, Presentations, Showes, Pageants, Fire-workes, and other sumptuous Triumphes in euery place where the said Princes were lodged, and receiued, after their Landing vpon the Coast of Germany.

NOthing can better set forth the Greatnesse of *Princes*, nor more expresse the affection of friends, together with the duty, loue, and applause of Subiects, then those solemne and sumptuous *Entertainments* which are bestowed on great and worthy Persons: the outward face of Cost and Disbursements, being the true and liuely picture of that hearty loue which is locked vp in the bosomes of the Giuers.

Behold here therefore a *Dutch-piece* drawne to the life; no expences being spared to make expression of noble friends, or to giue content to those Princely receiuers of such loue, (the *Palsgraue*, and the excellent Lady *Elizabeth*, Daughter to our *Soueraigne*.) Who vpon the 28. of *Aprill* last past, (in the yeare of our Lord 1613.) after a short and prosperous passage ouer the Seas, cast Anchor as happily before *Vlushing*. Which Arriuall of theirs being no lesse welcome, then it was generally and heartily expected, the first honourable Salutations were giuen to these two Princes, by *Graue Maurice* and *Graue Henrick*, who went a Dutch mile by water, and lay that night aboard, being as Nobly and gladly receiued by the *Palsgraue* and his *Lady*.

The next day (being the 29. of *Aprill*, they went to Land, honourably accompanied with *Graue Maurice*, *Graue Henrick*, the Duke of *Leu'nox*, the Earle of *Arundell*, the Lord *Admirall*, the Lord Viscount *Lisle*, the Lord *Harington*, the Lord of *Effingham*, Generall *Cecill*, besides diuers Knights and Gentlemen: the *Princesse* hauing attending on her, the Countesse of *Arundell*, the Lady *Harington*, the Lady *Cecill*, Mistresse *Anne Dudley*, Mistresse *Elizabeth Dudley*, Mistresse *Apseley*, Mistresse *Matame*, with many other English Gentlewomen: infinite multitudes of the Dutch Nation standing on the shore, to behold their Arriuall.

No sooner did they set footing on the Land, but (to make Heauen and Earth eccho forth the report,) the Lord *Admirall* sent vnto them a volley of Great Shot, to the number of 400. the Towne of *Vlushing* answering in the like Thunder of 200. Great shot. All the Captaines with the Souldiers in Garison, standing in Armes on the shore, to receiue these *Princes*, and conducting them to their Lodgings: the beginning of the night being spent in excellent Artificiall Fireworkes, besides other Showes and Deuices, which gaue to the beholders admirable pleasure.

The next morning (being the 30. of *Aprill*) the *Palsgraue* hauing a small Trayne) departed from *Vlushing*, and went to the *Hage*, the *Princesse* (his wife) stayed and dined in the Towne. In the after-noone shee went to *Middleborough*, being accompanied with *Graue Maurice*, *Graue Henrick*, and the rest of the English Lords and Ladies, where the Burgers of the Towne, after a Warlike manner, gaue her Grace a Royall and heartie entertainement, with loude and lusty volleyes of Shot, and so conducted her to her Lodging.

The day following, shee was magnificently feasted at the *State-house*, no words being able to expresse the bounty, royalty, and cost of so Princely an entertainment. And in this Towne of *Middleborough*, she continued three dayes.

Vpon the third of May, the *Princesse* (nobly accompanied as before) went to a Towne called *Treuer*, being distant a Dutch mile from *Middleborough*: and at this place, the Lord *Admirall*, the Lord of *Effingham*, with all those who had charge in her conuoy ouer the Seas, tooke their leaues of the Princesse, and departed for *England*. Her Grace taking ship, went by water, and passed by a Towne called *Tergouze*, and so thorow *Zurie-seas*; first by *Armen*, then by *Old-Towne*, then by *Plat*, and at last to *William-state*, where she was lodged that night, her trayne of followers lying on ship-board.

The next day the Princesse and her Company left *Zealand*, and went vp the Hauen, to a towne in *Holland*, called *Doort*, where she stayed but one night.

Vpon Wednesday, (being the fift of May) shee went by water to *Rotherdame*, where shee dined, and here the *Palsgraue* met her, both of them hauing Princely entertainement, sitting vnto their Estates.

In the after-noone of the same day, the Prince, and Princes, with their Honourable friends, passed by Coach thorow *Delft*, and from thence went to the *Hage*, being there Nobly receiued by the Burgers of the Towne, in Armes, with peales of Shotte, and so by them conducted to *Graue Henrick*, his house, during their abode there, the entertainment was as Royall as his minde, that freely bestowed it: nothing wanting that was in the inuention of man, held fit to giue contentment to such Princely Guests: fiue dayes being spent in Hunting, in Playes, and other costly Showes, still varying pleasure, because it should take no loathing in society. And here the *Palsgraue* tooke leaue of the Princesse, taking his iourney before to *Neidleborough*.

At her departure from hence, the States Generall presented to her these gifts, *viz.* a Carcanet garnished with 30. Diamonds in faret worke, two great Pearles pendant waying 35. karrats, and one graine, a string of Pearles of 25. peeces, a great Needle or Bodkin, garnished with a rich Cuble-Diamond, very large, and foure other Diamonds about it: of which three were pendants in faret worke. All these Iewels were laid in a small Cabinet of Cloath of Gold, betweene a perfumed Cushion. And besides these, shee had likewise giuen her a Looking-glasse of Siluer, and Guilt, the worke being all imbossed. More, ten peeces of rich Tapestry, wrought by *Francis Spiring*, with sixe other peeces of Tapestry for a Cabinet, of the same Workemaster. More, very rich peeces of fine Iinnen Damaske, packed vp in sixe cases, containing in all, (for Napkins and Tablecloathes) about 60. peeces. More, an exceeding rich furniture for a Cabinet of China worke, (blacke and Gold) containing a Bedsted, a Cupboard, a Table, two great Chests, one lesser Chest, fiue small Chestes, two Voyders, twenty foure Dishes, twenty foure lesser Dishes, twelue fruit Dishes, and sixe Sawcers, all being valued at 10000. pounds.

Vpon Tuesday the 11. of May, the Princesse went to a towne called *Leyden*, where in Warlike manner, the Burgers gaue to her a glad and Royall welcome, and there she tarried onely one night.

Vpon Wednesday (the twelfth of May) shee departed from *Leyden*, and went vnto *Harloam*, and lay there likewise one night.

Vpon Thursday (the thirteenth of May) from *Harloam* to *Amsterdam* by water, where her first welcome was a volley of sixe hundred great Shott, sent from the Ships; and then being landed, the Burgers of the Towne stoode ready in Armes, to receiue her on the shore, and so conducted her to her lodging, presenting her in her passage, with two rich and sumptuous Pageants, erected in the streets. In this Towne shee stayed two dayes, and then on the Saturday, (being the fifteenth of May) shee left Holland, departing from Amsterdam, to Vtricht, which is a Free State-Towne of it selfe. In Vtricht lyes 17. Companies of Foote, and two troopes of Horse, who all in faire martiall order marched forth, and meeting the Princes, conducted her to her Lodging, and tooke their leaue of her with lustie vollyes of Shott. In this Towne shee continued two dayes.

On Monday, the seauenteenth of May, the Princesse and her honourable friends passed from Vtricht, vnto a Towne called Ryne, in Guilderland, staying onely one night.

Vpon Tuesday, the eighteenth of May, shee departed from Ryne, to a Towne called *Arnham*, being there very Nobly entertained, by *Graue Vernies*, and here shee stayed two dayes.

On Thursday, the twentieth day of May, the Princesse departed from *Arnham* to *Embrick*, where shee lodged onely one night.

Vpon Friday from Embrick she went to Wesell, and there likewise stayed one night.

On Saturday following, leauing Wesell, shee went to Deusbrooke to dinner, and from thence to *Thistle-dorpe* to bed, where she continued two dayes, being magnificently entertained by the young Duke of Brandenburgh. In this Towne the olde Duke of Cleue lies vnburied.

From *Thistle-dorpe* vpon Monday, being the 24. of May, her Grace went to a new Towne called *Mullame*, and so crossing the water, came to Cullen, where be-

ing worthily receiued, shee stayed two dayes.

Vpon Wednesday (the 26. of May) shee went to a Towne by the Riuer side called *Boune*, and there dined; where *Graue Maurice* and *Graue Henricke* tooke their leaues: and then shee departed to a towne called *Ouerwinter*, where she lodged that night.

Not farre from this Towne, are seauen great mountaines standing close together, with three faire Castles; In one of which the people of the Country report, that the Deuill walkes, and holds his infernall Reuels.

Vpon Thursday (the 27. of May) from *Ouerwinter* her Grace removed to *Andernach*, and there lodged that night in a Nunnery, being there receiued, welcommed, and entertained by the Bishop of *Cullein*.

And from *Andernach* (on Friday the 28. of May) shee went to *Coblentz* to dinner; and had there Princely entertainment at the hands of the said Bishop of *Cullein*: and after dinner she removed to *Brobgech*, being there receiued by the Bishop of *Trier*, and stayed in that place that night. Here standeth that Castle, in which by report, a Germane Bishop was eaten vp by Rats.

From this Towne (the 29. of May) she departed and went to *Sankeuore*, being welcommed thither by the young *Lantzgraue* of *Hessen*, with whom shee stayed two dayes.

Vpon the first of Iune (being Monday) shee removed to a place called *Poupurd*, (another house of the said *Lantzgraue* of *Hessen*) and hauing beene lodged there one night onely, the next morrow shee went to a Towne not farre from thence, called *Baguay*; this being the first Towne within the *Palsgraues* Dominions: from whence her next remoue was to a Village called *Couissome*, where the *Palsgraue* met her, and with her went to a Towne of his owne called *Gulsham*, standing neere the Riuer of *Rhene*, and there they lodged that night.

The next day following, the Kings Officers, who all this while had attended the Princesse in her Iourney, tooke their leaues, and returned towards *England*. At which time the Lady *Elizabeth* went to *Mentz*, (a chiefe Cittie in higher Germany) and had there a solemne, bounteous, and Royall entertainment from the Bishop of *Mentz*, (being Arch-Chancellour in Germany, and an Elector in the Empire;) and was by him feasted for two dayes. Sundry excellent Fire-works, helping likewise to weare out the time, and to make her welcome appeare more Princely and sumptuous.

Vpon the 5. of Iune, her Grace came to a Towne called *Oppenham*, and hauing lyen there one night. The next day passing thorow the Cittie of *Wormes*, she was ioyfully receiued with an infinite concourse of people into *Franckendal*, (the Towne which the *Palsgraue* hath giuen to her for her Ioynter.) The Burgers of this Towne came forth to meete their Prince and Princesse, in a warre-like manner, attiring themselues like Turkes, Poles, and Switzers, and so with a solemne and orderly march conducted them to their Lodgings, being a House belonging to the Princesse.

At night there was a presentation before her of a Regall Throne, in which were lighted 100. Lampes: being a figure of that Throne of *Salomon*, when he entertained the Queene of *Sheba*.

The next night following was spent in a Martiall presentation of the Siege of *Troy*, which was thus performed. A Castle of exceeding greatnesse was strongly builded, representing *Troy*, and in it were placed 100. Shot; another Army lay before the walls, in the habits of Greekes, who after this manner began the Siege: First, the Horse-men gaue the on-set, and they retyring, the foot-men or the Infantery seconded them with great courage and violence. And at last the Troianes giuing them a repulse, the Greekes subtilly sounded a Retreat, and seeming to retire, lay hidden in Ambush, leauing a Horse of extreame proportion and greatnesse before the walls, which by the Troianes being drawne into the Cittie, the Alarum in the night was giuen, *Troy* fired, and the Greekes remained Conquerours, and in that Triumph marched away.

The day following, the Princesse removed to *Heidelberg*, being encountred in her passage by a 1000. Horses (all Gentlemen of the Countrey) very richly attired, and brauely furnished with Armour, and other warlike abiliments: of the foot there were 16. Companies, which gaue to their Lady and Princesse a volley of small shott, whose thunder was seconded by 25. pieces of great Ordnance. And this being done, they marched in martiall order, conducting her to *Heidelberge*, where the Burgers of the Towne, with all expressions of loue

Loue, Ioy, and Duty, received her with hearty welcomes, the windowes of every house being filled with men, women, and children, of all degrees, and the Streets covered with throngs of people, drawne thither by the fame of such shewes, and Pageants, as were builded to adde honour to this entertainement, but especially, to behold her, upon whom all their eyes were fixed, with Loue and admiration.

After that shee had thus, in great and magnificent state passed through *Heidelberg*, with the like solemnitie was she conducted into the castle, where the *Palsgraues* Mother, with other great Ladies, and Gentlewomen, gaue to the Princesse glad, and loving entertainement.

The following day was honoured with many Princes of the Empire, who on Horsebacke gallantly entred the Tiltyard, prepared both for Tilt and Turney. And albeit the night (enuious of such triumphs) had shut vp all the glory of this first day in darkenesse, yet in despight of that and night, the second day shone more glorious, in Courtly Honors, Shewes, and Pastimes then before. And in this magnificall manner came the Combatants into the Lists aforesaid.

The first that entred into the Tilt-yard was the *Palsgrave*, accompanied with others: before whom in decent and stately order, was this *Presentation* set forth to the admiration of the beholders, and great content to the Princesse, and the other Ladies, who in fit places stood spectators.

Formost of all came *Iupiter*, riding in a very rich Chariot, drawne by two *Griffons*, and those *Griffons* guided by *Mercury*, who sat as Coachman. Next followed *Iuno* in another Chariot, drawne by *Peacocks*, and driuen by *Iris*. After her came the *God of Husbandry*, with three Ploughs. After him entred *Neptune*, the god of the Sea, in a Chariot fitted to the state and condition of such a *Marine Deitie*, the Chariot drawne by three *Sea Horses*: upon *Neptune*, attended a *Merman*, sitting on a Rock with a glasse in his hand, and behinde him on another Rocke, sate three *Mermaydes*, Singing and playing on Instruments.

After these *Mermaydes*, the next that entered was a *Centaure* (halfe a man, halfe a Horse) holding in one hand a Booke, and in the other a Mace.

Then followed *Arion* playing on a *Lute*, and sitting on a *Sea Vnicorne*. After all these came in the seuen deadly sinnes, all of them chained, and driuen forward by a *Dragon*, who continually spet fire. Immediatly after which, entred the *Palsgraue*, with two more in a Ship, hee himselfe resembling *Iason*, attended by sixe Squires, bearing shields and Launces: in the ship was to be seene the Golden *Fleece* which *Iason* fetcht from *Greece*: and at the sterne, *Enuie* was dragged, eating her owne heart.

The next that entred was *Mars*, drawne in a Chariot, adorned with all the Ensignes of Warre, and attended by three Knights and sixe Squires bearing Launces. After whom, in one Chariot drawne by *Swannes*, sat *Venus*, and *Cupid*: before the Chariot went sixe *Virgins*, and behinde it followed *Hercules*, the *Sun*, artificially gazing on the Chariot, and three Knights following *Hercules*.

Then came *Victorie* in an Imperiall Chariot, (betokening Soueraignty) on the top of the Chariot stood a displayed *Eagle*, vpon this Chariot attended three knights, and sixe Squires bearing Launces. Next vnto *Victory* entred *Diana*, in a Chariot made like a Forrest, set out, and adorned with liuing Birds, and Beasts, and thus attended: first came sixe *Satyres* playing on Musicke wildly: after whom sixe other *Satyres*, came leaping, and dancing antickly: then twelue more leading *Dogges* and *Deere*: then the *Wood men*, and after them *Nymphes* with Bowes and Arrowes, and then the Chariot where other *Nymphes* sate playing, and singing: after whom followed three Knights.

The day after, (being the 11. of Iune,) they repayred againe to the Tilt yard: the *Palsgraue*, with those other two, came in riding on horsebacke, hee himselfe still resembling *Iason*, attended by sixe Squires, eight Trumpets, seauen Footemen, and seauen Horses of state, led single. After him came two other, personating, *Apollo* and *Bacchus*, and they were in this manner accompanied: First, three *Wildemen* playing on strange Musicke, sixe *Satyres* fustiquely dancing to those tunes: these followed three *Nymphes* on Horse-backe, crowned with Garlands: after them, *Musæus*, *Orpheus*, and *Emolpus*, on horse-backe with Musicke: then *Mydas* sitting on an *Asse*, hee himselfe hauing *Asses* eares for comparing *Pan* to *Apollo*: and next him, miserable *Marsyas*, and a *Satyre*, fleaing off his skin, because he durst contend with *Apollo* in Musicke. In a short distance from these came in the nine *Muses*, placed in seuerall seates vpon the mountaine *Pernassus*, and

and playing vpon seuerall Instruments of Musique: after whom followed closely the three *Graces*, accompanied with *Hercules* and *Mercury*: then *Silenus* (the Steward of *Bacchus*) with a Tunne and a Glasse, which as fast as hee filled with *Wine*, he euer and anon drasike off: and after him entred *Bacchus* in a Chariot drawn by *Dogges*, and attended by these sixe: *Inuus*, *Pomona*, *Hymenæus*, *Zephirus*, *Flora*, and *Vertumnus*.

Then followed an other person, wearing an Imperiall Crowne, foure others bound in *Scarfes* as Prisoners, going before him, and three after him with drawne Swords, besides foure Squires carrying Launces. After whom entred, three being attyred in the habites of *Turkes*, wayted vpon by sixe Squires, bearing Launces. And last of all, one in compleate Armour came riding in, being followed by three persons, that led Barbed Horses single. This was the honour, Glory, and Tryumph of the second, ending with as great State, Ceremony, and Courtly performance as the day did before.

Vpon the twelfth of Iune, the Princes went on hunting: the *Palsgraue*, with other Germaine Princes, the Duke of *Lenox*, the Earle of *Arundell*, the Lord Viscount *Lisle*, and many others, hunted the Deere with Launces.

Vpon the 13. of Iune, a merriment was presented to her, of mad fellowes, with Tubs set vpon their heads, apparelled all in straw, and sitting on Horse-back, did in this manner runne at Tilt, one at another with Staues, and made excellent pastime to the Beholders.

Vpon the foureteenth of Iune, the Duke of *Lenox*, the Earle of *Arundell*, and his Lady, the Lord Viscount *Lisle*, Generall *Cicill*, and his Lady tooke their leaues of the PRINCE and PRINCES.

And thus, in fewe Lines, you haue a true Relation set downe of this Noble and Princely Progresse: the Entertainements in euery place, being all honourable, bounteous, magnificent, and costly, fitting for such a *Nation* to bestowe vpon a Person, then whom none is more worthy.

(.•.)

A briefe Narration or description of the Countrey of this most Noble Prince Elector *Palatine*, Prince *Frederick* the fifth, Duke of *Bauaria*, &c. with the magnificence, and estate of his Court at *Heydelbergh*, with other things of worthy memory.

Translated out of high Dutch into English by Doctor Medus, *one of his Maiesties Chaplaynes.*

The deſcription of the Palſgraues Country, and Court at Heydelberg, &c.

COnsidering, indifferent Reader, how sinisterly some of Ignorance, and others of malice conceiue of the state, and dignity of the high and mighty Prince, Elector *Palatine*, Duke of *Bauaria*, &c. of his Countrey, of his receiuing his most honoured Lady, the Princesse *Elizabeth*, and entertainement of my Lords the Commissioners, and accordingly make report thereof, as also how desirous others are to be rightly informed of the truth: I could not, in my duty, knowing the place, and hauing certaine aduertisements thence from honourable personages, and others of great worth, and credit, but adde this short and plaine, yet true narration thereof, as well for the easier stopping of intemperate mouthes, as for the better satisfying of all honest mindes, that bee desirous of the truth.

First therefore concerning the Prince Elector *Palatines* originall & state, though those many pedegrees published here already of his Highnesse discent, sufficiently shew his ancient, and high blood rising from many great Emperours and Kings, yet giue me leaue to fetch it from the very beginning.

The *Palatinate*, and *Bauaria*, were once a Kingdome, yet subiect (as other States) vnto alteration and change. The Kingdome continued from *Adelgerius* the first King vntill *Tassilo* the last, all in lineall discent, three hundred thirty two yeares, from the yeare of Christ his incarnation, 556. vntill the yeare 788. This *Tassilo* the last King, for that hee would neither be subiect, nor friend vnto *Charlemayne*, was at length, after much Warre subdued by him taken prisoner, and both hee and his sonne *Dedon* depriued of their Kingdome, and kept prisoners in the Monastery of *Laureack*, neere vnto *Heydelberge*, where they both ended their dayes in Misery.

Chron. Chaldrian lib. 4. Chronolog. Franc.

After

After this, the posterity of *Charles* the great held those Countries, vntill the seauenteenth yeare of *Otto* the first Emperour, not full a hundred yeares: at which time the Bauarians ioyning battell against *Otto*, were ouercome. The Emperour *Otto* gaue *Bauaria* and the *Palatinate* vnto his brother *Henry*, whose sonne *Henry*, and *Henry* the holy his Nephew enioyed them, which third *Henry* hauing no child, gaue the lands and honours vnto *Henry* his wife *Gunigundes* brother, who also dying issuelesse, it returned vnto *Henry* the third Emperour, after 96. yeares, in the yeare 1033. who tooke it by force from *Conrad* the true heire without iust desert, to the great discontent of all the Princes of the Empire, and gaue it the next yeare after vnto his owne sonne *Conrad*. Yet at last againe in the 32. yeare of the Empire *Frederick Barbarosse* 1183. *Henry* then Duke of *Bauaria* and *Saxony*, being for his rebellion against the Emperour depriued of lands and honour, the Emperour gaue and restored the *Palatinate* and *Bauaria* vnto *Otto* of *Witelsbach*, the ancient heire of *Conrad* afore deposed, and suppressed by *Henry* the third. In whose issue male these Countries haue euer since continued now the space of 430. yeares, and still doe in this Prince Elector *Frederick* the fifth, the first and chiefest Prince of the Empire, and is the 26. in the gouernement since the said *Otto* of *Witelsbach*: and God grant (if it be his will) the issue of this marriage bed, may in their Highnesses seede still remaine so long as the Sunne and Moone endure.

Now for his Highnesse Country, it is neither so small, vnfruitfull, or meane, as is by some supposed. It is in length about 200 English miles the lower and vpper Country. In the lower the Prince hath 26. walled Townes, besides an infinite number of good and faire Villages, 22. houses; and the land is very fruitfull of wine, corne, and other comfortable fruits for mans vse, hauing the Rheine & Neckar running through it. The vpper Countrey hath not so many walled Townes and Princely houses, but those that are be generally fairer then in the lower, especially *Amberg* and *New market*.

For her Highnesse receiuing: After that shee had passed the low Countries, the Dukedomes of *Gulick*, *Cleue*, and *Mont*, the Bishopricks of *Collen*, and *Trier*, with a part of the *Landgraue* of *Hessens* Country; in all which places she had so great welcome, entertainement, and honourable Presents, as truely expressed the loue and applause of the people, the affection of friends, and greatnesse of those Princes, through whose territories she passed. She came at last happily to *Cowlsome*, where the Prince Elector *Palatine* met her Highnesse Post, with a few Horse, and went together to *Gauelshemi*, another small village of his, the first of Iune 1613. inconuenient for the prouiding for, and lodging of such a traine, being contrary to expectation, encreased to aboue a thousand persons, whereof sixe hundred were horsemen, that flocked thither from all parts to see her Highnesse, which was occasioned by reason *Coub*, *Bacrahe*, and all other good Townes of his there-abours were infected.

Here the Princes Elector and Princesse earnestly inuited my Lords the Commissioners, and others his Maiesties Officers, who had attended in the voyage to goe along with them vnto *Heidelberg*, whereby they might not only haue a better view of some part of the Country, but also finde entertainment, to their more content. The Commissioners condiscended vnto so gracious a ioynt request, and the rather to see her Highnesse well arriue at her owne home. But the other Officers could not by any intreaty be perswaded to goe further, desirous (perhaps) to make speedy report vnto their Maiesties and state of her Highnesse safe arriuall in the *Palatinate*, and so returned the next day for *England*. And this is the cause they saw not any memorable thing worthy of praise in the *Palatinate*, as my Lords the Commissioners did, and will not forbeare to speake honorably thereof, though some haue done otherwise: for answering of whom, and satisfying of others, I haue thought good to touch thus much by the way, and no more then I am informed of.

Thence they rid the next day the second of Iune vnto the Citty of *Mentz*, whither the Archbishop, and Prince Elector thereof, Chancellour of *Germany*, had inuited their Highnesses, where they stayed two nights, and were of him royally entertained, with great and bounteous feasting, and sundry excellent Fireworkes, the better to expresse their welcome, and passe out the time in Princely manner.

The fourth of Iune they rod to *Oppenheim*, an ancient Citty, with a Castle therein of the Prince Electors, and there lodged all night.

The 5. of Iune, their Highnesses hauing passed

passed thorow the Citty of *Wormes*, they approached vnto *Frankendale*, a fine, and neate new Citty, where the Prince hath a house, which with all the territory about, is part of her Highnesse ioynture. Here the Towns-men came forth, and met their Prince and Princesse in a warlike manner attired like vnto Turkes, Polonians, and Switzers, and so conducted them in an orderly and braue march vnto their lodgings, in her Highnesse owne house.

Here she stayed two nights, hauing sundry goodly and well deuised shewes presented vnto her, as the first night a Regall Throane, representing *Salomons* Throane, when hee receiued the Queene of *Sheba*, which had therein a hundred Lamps lighted. The next day the Prince left her Highnesse riding to *Heidelberg*, 16 English miles off, to welcom the Princes that were come thither to honour him, and fetch her Highnesse in.

The fifth day at night, was presented the martiall siege of *Troy*, after this manner: there was a strong Castle of exceeding bignesse erected, representing old *Troy*, wherein were placed a hundred shot. Before the walls whereof, there lay another Army attired like Greekes, who thus began the siege. The horse-men first gaue the on-set, who retiring, were in great furie, seconded by the footmen. But yet the Troians repelling them, the Greekes politiquely sounded the retreat, seemed to retire, but hid themselues in Ambush, leauing a high horse of exceeding bignesse, with men in it before the walls, which the Troians drew into the Citty; in the night the Alarum was giuen, *Troy* fired, and the Greekes in triumph marched away Conquerours.

The next day, the seauenth of Iune, the Princesse remoued towards *Heidelberge*, after shee had passed the walled Towne of *Ladeberge*, was met three miles from *Heidelberge*, with the Prince Elector, accompanied with twelue other Princes, the rich Coach, thirty Earles, one thousand Gentlemen of the Countrey richly attired, and brauely set out with gallant Horse, Armour, and other habiliments of Warre: the Horsemen attending the Princes, were besides these, two thousand more, so that all the Horse were three thousand, and all great Horse. The Princes alighted, and welcommed her Highnesse, who ascended into her rich Coach. After a while shee was againe encountred in three seuerall places, with three Regiments of Foote, two thousand in a Regiment, who first welcommed their Princesse with vollies of small Shott, and had after, the thunder seconded with twenty peeces of great Ordnance: then they marched all together orderly in good array, conducting her to *Heidelberge*, where the Cittizens wanted no expressions of ioy, loue, and duty, in hearty welcomming of her, and praying for her, all windowes being replenished with people of all ages and degrees, and the streetes thronged with multitudes of people, drawne thither from all parts, not so much to see the *Pageants* that were erected to further this Honourable entertainement, as to haue their eyes filled in beholding of her Highnesse, whom all honoured and admired. And thus hauing passed in Magnificent great state thorow the Citty, shee was in like pompe conueyed into the Castle, where the Prince Electors mother, with many other great Princesses, Ladies, and Gentlewomen, receiued her with all fitting honour due to so great a Princesse.

The morning of the day following, being the eighth of Iune, was dedicated vnto God with singing of Psalmes, Prayer, Thankesgiuing, and a Learned Sermon, as was meete for so great mercies receiued from God. The next dayes, the ninth, tenth, and eleauenth, were appointed for Tilting, Tourning, and running at the Ring, the night for Fireworkes, and Dancings, two nights, after the Germane manner, the other times according to the English and French custome. Where let me not omit to shew, that my Lords the Commissioners, and all the Princes were lodged within the Castle, in lodgings well accommodated, and richly furnished with beddings, hangings, and all other necessaries.

The Princesse and other great Ladies, with the Commissioners, being fitly placed at the Tilt-yard in the Princes Garden: the first that entred the Tilt-yard the ninth day, was the Prince Elector himselfe, accompanied with other Princes of the Empire, gallantly mounted, but were interrupted for that time from their martiall sports by night: but the next day being the tenth, recompenced the same, for there came before the Prince Elector sundry stately shewes, pleasant triumphes, and Princely entertainements, as are formerly expresst.

Thus nothing being omitted, in Royall feasting, Princely entertainement, and honourable triumphes, which might serue either

either now to set forth the magnificence of so great a Prince, or to please the eyes and content the mindes of all that illustrious presence.

Before I conclude, let me yet informe the Reader of one thing not mentioned, and which serueth out the Prince Electors greatnesse not a little: That besides their 6000. trained footmen who stated there at the solemnity, and were fed by the Prince abroade in the fieldes: there were euery meale (during the abode of the Commissioners and the German Princes there) aboue 500. Tables furnished, and about 6000. persons, guests, & seruats fed at them.

But because this was extraordinary, know that Court is euer great: for it hath 1000. persons in ordinary, dayly fed and clothed twise a yere at the Princes charge, and he keepeth 300. great horse. Besides his highnes hath many gouernors, Lieuernants deputies, receiuers, clarks, Captaines, & other officers abroad in seuerall gouernments, who haue all large salary. And is serued in such state, that euery meale a marueilous great Kettle-drum striketh, and 24. Trumpets sound the seruice: 2. & 12.

Wherefore let enuy, malice, and ignorance cease, euer henceforth to carpe at that they cannot paralel, now they may know it: and all honest mindes rest satisfied herewith.

Thus hauing briefly related indifferent Reader, that I promised, concerning the Prince Elector Palatines ancient state, his Country, the receiuing of his most honoured Princesse, and Royall entertainment which all degrees found at his highnesse Court, to their full content, during the whole time of these solemnities, I betake their highnesses, and our selues, and all the Israell of God euery where, vnto the Almighties euer safe protection; who preserue his, and conuert or confound all his aduersaries that wish euill vnto *Zion*.

1 Iames Boyne

The 17 of April this yere 1613. in the townships of Adlington, in the parish of Standish in Lancashire: there was a mayden childe borne, hauing foure legs, foure armes, two bellies, proportionable ioyned to one backe, one head with two faces, the one before, and the other behind, like to the picture of Janus: the like of this with two seuerall faces vnder one scull, I neuer read of before in any Chronicle, except by way of a Poeticall report. And vpon Saturday the 26. of June this yeere also, in the parish of Chyrks Church in Hamshire Iohn Hichel a Carpenter, a man of honest report, being in bed with his wife hauing a yong child lying with them. About midnight there happened a great and soudaine lightning, which came so fierce that an old woman, mother to this Hichels wife, hauing by vndiscernable meanes received a terrible blow vpon her cheeke, was therewithall awakened, and amazed, and cried out to her daughter and son in law, to come & help her, but they not answering her, she start vp and went into their bed, and awoke her daughter, who was vpon the soudaine very grieuously burned all the one side of her, and her husband & child lay dead close by her, which when she beheld, being soze hurt, and extreamly amazed, yet neuertheless she did her vtmost to haue comforted oz to help her husband and her child as also being wounded, yet shee drew her husband out of the bed, and perceiuing that he still burned inwardly, she brought him into the open street, where through the vehemency of the fire, she was constrained to forsake him, and there he lay burning vpon the earth for the space of almost three dayes: you shall vnderstand that there was no outward appearance of fire about him, but only a kind of smoke and glowing heat ascending from his body, vntill it was quite consumed to ashes, except only some small peeces of his bones, which some of the sad beholders cast into a pit made neere the place.

3 men burned to ashes with lightning.

Dorchester destroyed by fire.

And vpon Friday the 6. of August, the glouriching corpozat town of Dorchester, was quite consumed with fire, which began first in the house of a tallow Chandler, who hauing made a great a fire vnder his caldron, the flame tok hold of the Tallow, set fire on the house vpon an instant, and from thence the fire seized vpon his neighbours, the wind being then great, yet still encreased, and carried the flame ouer the whole towne, in all violence, without ceasing, vntill it had vtterly destroyed all their wares, goods, mony plate, and rich houshold-stuffe, and all their habitations, except onely a few houses standing neere the church, which with the church by Gods especiall prouidence were preserued: the losse of wealth which the inhabitants sustained, was full 200000. p. oz more, besides about 300. houses, yet it pleased Almighty God that neither man noz woman perished in the fire: it began about 2. a clock in the after-noone, when many were ioyfully busy in the field, about their haruest, who although they sodainly returned, and endeuoured to make all possible meanes to saue their goods, and houses, yet it preuailed not, so as many who at midday were men of wealth and great substance, before the sun went downe, were poore and destitute. If I should here set downe the seuerall terrors and damages done this yeare by fire, in very many and sundry places of this Kingdome, it would containe many a sheete of paper, as is euident by the incessant collections throughout all Churches of this Realme, for such as haue bin spoyled by fire.

The globe and Fortune play house burned with other things of note.

Also vpon S. Peters day last, the Play-house oz Theater, called the Globe, vpon the Bankside neere London, by negligent discharging of a peale of Ordnance, close to the South side thereof, the Thatch tooke fire, and the wind sodainly dispersed the flame round about, and in a very short space the whole building was quite consumed, and no man hurt: the house being filled with people, to behold the play, viz. of Henry

the eight, And the next spring it was new builded in farre fairer manner then before.

And about foure yeeres after, a fayre strong new built Play-house, neere Goulding lane, called the Fortune, by negligence of a candle, was cleane burnt to the ground, but shortly after, rebuilt farre fairer. In the yeere one thousand six hundred twenty nine, there was builded a new faire Play-house, neere the white Fryers. And this is the seauenteenth Stage, or common Play-house, which hath beene new made within the space of three score yeeres within London and the Suburbs, viz.

Fiue Innes, or common Hosteryes turned to Play-houses, one Cock-pit, S. Paules singing Schoole, one in the Black-fryers, and one in the White-fryers, which was built last of all, in the yeare one thousand six hundred twenty nine, all the rest not named, were erected only for common Play-houses, besides the new built Beare garden, which was built as well for playes, and Fencers prizes, as Bull baytings; besides, one in former time at Newington Buts. Before the space of three score yeares aboue said, I neither knew heard nor read of any such Theaters, set Stages, or Play-houses, as haue beene purposely built within mans memory.

This yeere were also great damages done by extraordinary Inundations of the sea vpon many parts of this Kingdome, and chiefely in Essex, Suffolke, Norfolke, and Lincolneshire, where the Sea ouerflowed so far into the Land, that the neere inhabitants suppose it will neuer bee recouered, for in one place the sea entred into the Land, twelue miles, and the next summer viz. 1614. the towne of Stratford vpon Auon was burned, and in this space many other strange things hapned, not here mentioned, as well in dumbe creatures as otherwise.

Stratford vpon Auon burned.

The plantation of Ireland by the Citizens of London.

The Kings Maiesty in his Princely prouidence, for the present, and future good of his Kingdomes, and chiefely for preuention of rebellion in the Kingdome of Ireland, and of his especiall fauour, and kingly respect vnto the City of London, did in July, 1609. make a liberall offer vnto the Lord Mayor, and Citizens of London, for the instant possession, and plantation of Englishmen, in the Province of Vlster: and when the Lord Mayor, and Citizens had well aduised themselues therein, then in August following viz. 1609. they sent foure discreete expert persons, accompanied and directed by Sir Thomas Philips, as the Lords of the Councell, had appointed to survey that Prouince, and to obserue the Estate, profits, and condition thereof, and to report what ruines were to bee repayred, and what new Cities, Castles, and Townes were presently to bee builded, and when the foure surueyours were returned, they ascertayned the Lord Mayor, and Citizens of the true estate and valuable thereof, and of the seuerall commodities, honour and dignities that would ensue thereby, and then they humbly accepted to the Kings most gracious, and bounteous offer, then the Lord Maior and Citizens, vpon graue aduise, leuied twenty thousand pounds to bee imployed towardes this seruice, and by vertue of their Act of Common Councell, they constituted twenty foure committies, consisting of fiue graue Aldermen and eighteene commoners, the two chiefe whereof, were called the Gouernour and Deputie, all which are to bee new chosen euery yeere, hauing power and authoritie giuen them to order, and dispose of all matters, for plantation, Traffique, Rule, and gouernment in that North part of Ireland, whereupon the fourteenth of February next following, they made publication thereof, signifying vnto all handicrafts men, their present entertainement, and imployment in this expedition, and that they should haue their full wages, with their dwelling houses, and other good meanes for honest maintenance of themselues, and their families, vpon knowledge whereof, there came about three hundred persons, who were presently furnished with all things necessary, and with all speed were sent to Vlster, and thus the foresaid Gouernour Deputie, and committies very industriously ordered, and disposed all matters touching this plantation, as also by their Letters, and messengers with direcions vnto their agents, resident in that Prouince, and so continued vntill the moneth of June this yeare 1613. by which time his Maiestie, being truly informed of many negligences, and abuses touching this entended plantation, the which the King imitated at Greenewich, vnto the gouernour, diuers Aldermen and Citizens, being of the Committies and afterward sent Sir Henry Mountague, his Highnesse Serieant at Law, vnto the Lord Mayor, and Citizens, who in a great Court of common Councell vpon Midsommer day, this yeare 1613. declared vnto them, the errors in the due prosecution of their purposed Plantation, and that it was his Maiesties pleasure, they should forthwith send ouer some of themselues and others a better, and more speedy course in this plantation, as well to plant, fortifie, constitute, gouerne, and build, and to take exact survey of all places, and of all persons, and expences, imployed in this weighty businesse. Whereunto the Lord Mayor, and Citizens, after deliberate consideration, condescended to send ouer one Alderman and one commoner, they nominated three Aldermen, out of which number, by erection of hands, George Smithes, Alderman was selected, and in like manner, Ma. Matthias Springham, Citizen & Merchantaylor, was chosen to be his assistant by act of Common Councell, and for the better effecting of this businesse, the Gouernour and Committies, sent to ayde them in their Negotiation, Captaine Panton, for his direction in fortification, Master William Southes, A skilfull man, Surueyour of Buildings, and Master Clement Mosle, Solicitour of London, was their secretary, these in the moneth of July this yere one thousand six hundred and thirteen, imbarked for Ireland, and after a hard passage arriued at Dublinne, where the Lord Deputie

Captaine Panton twice sent thither againe, after his returne into England to fortifie the Citie of London Derry.

wed them with all kindnesse and respect, and from thence they went vnto the Prouince of Vlster, surueyed the two chiefe Cities belonging to their plantation, viz the Citty of London-Derrie, and Colerayne, with the scituation, fortification, and obserued what Offices and Officers had beene formerly constituted, and which were fit to be continued or changed, as also to settle the best course for commerce, with good gouernment, in Peace and Warre, and hauing diligently spent full three moneths time in those parts, touching the premisses, they returned, hauing established their Townes, Lands, and Buildings, in the best manner the time would permit, and made report by writing vnto the Gouernour, and Committies, very exactly, answering the fourty foure Articles of Instructions, giuen them in charge by the Committies, and also deliuered vnto the common Councell, a Relation in writing of the whole manner of their proceeding in this businesse, & their aduises for the proceedings here after, which they well accepted, and approued, Alderman Cokayne was the first Gouernour.

Sir Peter Hayman doth pledge vpon nine.

Monday the foure and twentieth of October, 1613. Sir Peter Hayman Brocers Knight, did open pennance at Paules Crosse he stode in a white sheete, and held a stick in his hand, hauing beene formerly conuicted before the high Commissioners for secret, and notorious adulteries with diuers women &c.

Sir Edward Coke made Lord chiefe Iustice of England, and Sir Henry Hobart made Lord chiefe Iustice of the common Pleas.

Monday the 25. of October, Sir Edward Coke Knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of the Court of Kings bench, was remoued to the Court of Kings bench, and was made Lord chiefe Iustice of England, and the next day Sir Henry Hobart Knight and Baronet, the Kings Attorney generall, was made Lord chiefe Iustice of the Court of common Pleas, and Sir Francis Bacon Knight, the Kings Solicitor, was made the Kings Attorney generall, and Sir Henry Yelverton Esquire, was made the Kings Solicitor, whom the King honoured with Knighthood, within few dayes after.

The Lord Viscount Rochester created Earle of Somerset.

Thursday the 4. of November, the Lord Viscount Rochester, was created Earle of Somerset, and Baron of Branspeth, the Court being at Whitehall, and the 10. of July next following, he was made Lord Chamberlaine.

Sir Edward Coke made a privy Counsellor. The Earle of Somerset married.

And the 4. of Nouemb. aforesaid, in the aforenamed, Sir Edward Coke knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of Eng. was sworne a priuy Councellor.

The 26. of December, 1613. Robert Earle of Somerset, married the Lady Frances Howard, daughter to the Earle of Suffolke, this wedding was solemnized at the Court of Whitehall, and was honored with the royal presence of the king, the Queene, Prince Charles, most of the Nobility, and diuers reuerent Bishops, the Lord Bishop of Bath and Welles married them, & Doctor Mountaine Deane of Westminster, made the Nuptiall Sermon, and that night there was a gallant Maske of Lords, and vpon the Wednesday night, there was a Maske of the Princes Gentlemen, which pleased the king so well, that he caused them to performe it againe vpon the Monday following, and vpon Tuesday the 4. of January, the Bride and Bridegroome being accompanied with the Duke of Lenox, the Lord priuie Seale, the Lord Chamberlain, the Earls of Worcester, Pembroke, Mountgomery, and others, with many honorable Barons, knights, and Gentlemen of quality, came to Marchant-Taylors Hall, where the Lord Maior, and Aldermen of London, in their Scarlet robes, entertained them with hearty welcome, & feasted them with all magnificence: at their first entrance into the Hall, they were receiued with ingenious speeches, and pleasant melody, at this Princely feast all the meate was serued to the Table, by chosen Citizens of comeliest personage, in their Coloures of rich Faynes, selected out of the 12. honorable Companies: after supper, and being risen from the Table, these noble guests were entertained with a Maskall, two seuerall pleasant Maskes, and a Play, and with other pleasant deuices, all which being ended, then the Bride & Bridegroome with all the rest, were inuited to a princely Banquet, about three a clock in the morning they returned to Whitehall, and vpon the like night there was a Maske of Gentlemen of Graies Inne. Sunday the 2. of January 1614. betwixt the houres of 12. and 1. of the clock in the morning, was prince Henry Frederick born at Heidelberge in Germany, the first borne sonne of the high borne Princesse the Lady Elizabeth, eldest daughter to the most high and mighty Prince, our soueraigne Lord King Iames, King of great Britaine, and wife to the right noble Prince Frederick, the fifth, Count Palatine, chefe of the princes Electors of the holy Empire, for ioy of the birth of this his eldest son, the 9. of this moneth the Cittizens of London were very ioyfull, and manifested the same, by ringing of bels, and making bonefires. The 5. of March, which was the day before the Christning, his Highnesse the Prince Palatine met the Prince of Anhalt with 200. great horse, and receiued him as Ambassador from the kings Maiesty of great Britaine, & was in like manner so receiued by the Administrator, the Duke of Den-pons, by another troupe of great horse, and so conducted into the Castle, and lodged in that place which is called the Emperors quarter, and serued by Earles and Barons, subiects to the Prince, and the same day there arriued also Prince Henry, with 80. men in his company, and was also receiued by his Highnesse, and the two young Dukes of Den-pons, and lodged in a place by himselfe according to his quality: also there arriued the same day the Deputies of the Nobility and Knighthood of Sweuia, Franconia, and the Rhine, with 60. great horse. The next day being the 6. of March in the morning, there was sounding of trumpets, Sagbots, and sundry other Instruments of Musick, which attended the comming of the princes vnto the Sermon where the said Musick with Organs & voyces, expelt the ioyfulnes of that happy day: after the great Bell had rung 3. times, then the prince of Anhalt, as his Maiesties Ambassador, came into the Church, hauing before him the high & inner Marshals, with Earls, Barons, & diuers gentlemen, accompanied with the

Prince Henry Frederick born at Heidelberg.

Prince Henry Frederick Christened.

administrator on his right hand, and his Highnesse the Prince Palatine on his left hand, with a very rich Canopie carried ouer him, so as the said Prince as his due, kept his state and place, hauing his Chaire aduanced three foote higher then the others, & was attended by M. Thomas Lewiston Esquire, Cup-bearer to the Princes Palatine. After this the Princes Electrix Dowager, and the Administratrix, mother and sister vnto his Highnesse, came in, conducted between the Prince Henry, with the former ceremony of Marshals, with others, &c. and were placed vnder a Canopy right against the Prince of Anhalt, and Master Scultetus, his Highnesse Chaplaine preached, who hauing ended his Sermon, then the Marshalls and the Nobility conducted the young Prince into the Chappell, and in the meane time there was Musique in the Church, as Organs, Cornets, and Hoyces, besides Trumpets and Sackbots which were without, &c. At this time there was a new Gallery built, euer which was carried the young Prince, conducted by the Marshals Carles, Barons, and Gentlemen aforesaid, being carried by the Princesse Katherine, second sister vnto his Highnesse, conducted by the two yong Dukes of Deuonshire, and the traine of the couering, which was wonderous rich, was borne vp by the two Countesses of Hanow, and ouer him a Canopie, borne by foure Gentlemen, and being come into the Chappell, the Prince of Anhalt alone, presented the childe at the Font, who was named Frederick Henry: the ceremony being ended, the young Prince was presented vnto Madame the Electrix Dowager as Godmother, and whilst she held him, came the Administratrix on the right hand, and Prince Henry on her left hand to stay and beare vp the Infant, and afterward it was deliuered vnto the Administratrix, and by her presented vnto the three Deputies before mentioned who take him, and gaue him vnto the Princesse Madame Katherine: presently after that the Christening was ended, there was a great peale of Ordnance, and the childe with the former state and traine, returned in the same manner as it was brought vnto the Chappell. The Prince of Anhalt made a briefe speech before his Highnesse, and the rest, shewing the affection, loue, and great respect the Kings Maiestie had vnto the little Babe.

Afterward there were great Presents giuen, viz. from his Maiestie a wonderous large Basen and Ewer, all of pure gold, weighing full fiue hundred ounces.

The Princesse Electrix Dowager, the Administratrix, and the Administratrix gaue Presents, Prince Henry presented from Anne Maurice vnto her Highnesse a Ship of Christall valued at nine hundred pounds, and from the States to the young Prince two Cups of gold, valued at three hundred pound, and a Iewel of gold of two hundred pound, in which there was a Pension of foure hundred pound a yeare during the Princes life, and from the Nobility a substantiall Goblet of gold, valued at two thousand Duckets, with assurance of a thousand horse at neede, and to his Highnesse sister a thousand pound in Iewells, to Ioachim Ann. Dudley two hundred pound in Iewells, and to the rest of the Gentlewomen of her Highnesse Chamber, there were Iewels giuen to the like value. The Duke of Deuonsheire gaue a Basen and Ewer, and a standing Cup of two hundred pound value. The Princesse Dowager gaue foure and twenty faire Boles, valued at three hundred pound, and to euery Gentlewoman of her Highnesse Chamber a standing Cup with a couer. The free Gentlemen of the Countrey presented her Highnesse with a Carkanet of eight hundred pound value. The Earle of Solmes, and the Chancellour made a speech of congratulation in French and high Dutch, which being ended, they went to their feast, where they dranke vnto his Graces health: at which there was instantly a great peale of Ordnance, and after that day, they spent the residue in sundry pleasant entertainements of time, as in seeing Players Maskes, and Hunting, with sundry other Pastimes, which continued eight dayes after, during which time, there was almost one thousand Horse at his Highnesse charge.

A true Copie of the contract of Peace, and Friendship, concluded in Ianuary last, *Anno* one thousand, six hundred, and thirteene, betwixt the two mighty Princes, *Christian* the fourth King of *Denmarke*, &c. and *Gustauus Adolphus* King of *Sweden*, &c.

Translated out of the Originall Latine Contract, brought out of Denmarke *by his Maiesties Ambassadour, confirmed by his Maiesties hand, and great Seale, and sent backe againe to* Denmarke.

Beati pacifici.

A Preface of his Maiestie the King of great Britaine.

IAMES, by the grace of God King of great *Britaine*, *Fraunce*, and *Ireland*, defender of the faith, &c. by these wee make it knowne, and doe testifie, that vpon a godly and religious respect through our intercession, by sending our Ambassadours from great *Britaine*, a treaty of Peace, hath beene enterprised, betwixt the most renowned, & most mighty Princes, and Kings, *Christian* the fourth of that name, King of *Denmarke*, *Norroway*, *Vandales*, and *Gotthes*: Duke of *Sleswich*, *Holster*, *Stormarie*, and *Dithmarsie*, Count in *Oldenburg*, *and Delmenhurst*, our dearest Cousins allied, our best beloued brother, and Gossip, and his Kingdomes vpon that one part: and the Prince *Gustauus Adolphus*, chosen King, and Prince by heritage of *Sweden*, *Gotthes*, and *Vandales*, great Duke of *Finland*, Duke of *Estland*, and *Westmanland*, &c. and the Kingdome of *Sweden*, on the other part, and it hath beene so farre aduanced, that by the fauour of the Grace of God all discords and controuersies being reconciled and taken away, whereupon hath followed the end of Warres, Hostility, and all enmities, practised vnto this time, and a firme, stable, and perfect peace, is renewed and concluded on both sides, which shall perpetually remaine without interruption, and shall be continued faithfully betwixt the said Princes, and their Kingdomes, and Subiects, like as it is contayned in this contract of pacification, hereafter following.

The King of Denmarke his stile and true Titles.

Christian the fourth, by the grace of God King of *Denmarke*, *Norroway*, *Vandales*, and *Gotthes*: Duke of *Slesswick*, *Holster*, *Stormarie*, and *Dithmarsie*, Count in *Oldenbourg*, and *Delmenhurst*, wee make it knowne to all men, that whereas betwixt Vs and our Kingdomes of *Denmarke*, and *Norroway*, &c. on the one part, as also betwixt the most high and mighty Prince, King *Charles* the ninth, and then after he being departed this life, betwixt *Gustauus Adolphus*, chosen King, and Prince by heritage of *Sweden*, *Gotthes*, and *Vandales*, great Duke of *Finlande*, Duke of *Eastlande*, and *Westman-lande*, &c. and the Kingdome of *Sweden* on the other part, by the space of certaine yeares, diuers offences, dissentions, and controuersies haue risen, and fallen out, which from time to time haue beene so farre enlarged, and spread abroad, that at the last they haue burst out in an open warre.

The King of Sweden his stile, names and Titles.

And the most renowned High and Mighty Prince, *Iames* by the Grace of God, King of great *Brittaine*, *Fraunce*, and *Ireland*, defendour of the Faith, &c. our best beloued Cousin allyed, and neighbour, out of that faithfull affection, and inclination of minde, wherewith his Royall Maiestie doth embrace all Christian Princes, and namely those that make profession of the reformed Religion, and of the vniforme Doctrine of the Churches, amongst whom we on both sides, by the benefit of God are reckoned, with our Subiects of our Kingdomes, of *Denmarke*, *Norroway*, and *Sweden*, and his fore-said Maiestie of great *Brittaine*; first, by his Letters diligently written, hath very earnestly exhorted vs on both sides, to enter in peace and concord one with another, and at last like a friendly mediatour, and concorder, by meanes of his Royall Ambassadours, being noble and discreete men, to wit, [a] *Robert Anstruther* Esquire, and Gentleman of his Maiesties Priuie Chamber, and [b] Sir *Iames Spens*, of *Wormestone* Knight, hee hath vsed all diligence, and labour, that this Warre which at this time is, and sometime heretofore hath continued betwixt vs, and our Kingdomes, vpon some godly, iust, and equall conditions, and by mediation, and intercession of his Maiestie, might be taken away, and extinguished, and in place therof, a friendly concord, louing neighbourhood, and a firme peace, sure, and constant, to both parties might be renewed, and established. Therefore in regard of such a louing, and faithfull admonition of his Royall Maiestie, it is agreed vpon betwixt vs, and the King *Gustauus Adolphus*, in this manner as followeth.

First by his Letters. Next by his Ambassadours. And who they were.

a For Denmarke.

b And for Sweden.

The time and place appointed for eight Commissioners of both the kingdoms to meete together.

That vpon the twenty ninth day of Nouember, in the yeare by-past a beginning of a parlee should be graunted vpon the frontiers, which doe lye betwixt *Knerod*, and *Visbeck*: where eight Commissioners of both Kingdomes, should assemble themselues with sufficient Commissions, and instructions, to treat vpon, and finish the controuersies which are betwixt the Kingdomes on either side; as also to weigh, and examine, the godly, iust, and honest conditions, by which the fore-said warres and enmities which now are, and vnto this houre haue continued amongst vs, and our Kingdomes may cease and take an end.

These were the foure Commissioners for Denmarke.

We haue dispatched and sent vnto the said parle, or meeting, our well beloued, noble, and honourable men *Christian Frys* of *Borrebij*, our Chauncellour: *Mandrup Pasberg* of *Hagisholme*, Gouernour of our Castle of *Olbourg*, *Axell Brahe* of *Ellued*, Commander of the Abbey of *Dalum*, and *Eitrie Brech* of *Eitrup*, Gouernour of our Castle of *Droningbourg*, our faithfull Counsellours.

His Maiesties request drew him to the peace.

And reason why.

And vpon the King *Gustauus Adolphus* his side, did compere these noble and honourable Lords, Lord *Axel Oxenstiern* Baron of *Fiholm*, Chancellour of the Kingdome of *Sweden*; the Lord *Nicol Bielke* Baron of *Falstade*, and the Lord *Gustauus Stenbuck* Baron of *Cronebeche*, and *Oreiten* an inheritour of *Thorup*, and *Lehna*,

And these other for Sweden.

and *Henry Horn* of *Ranhas* Marshall, counsellors of the Kingdome of *Sweden*, which Eyght Councellors and Commissioners aforesayd, of *Denmarke*, and *Sweden*, hauing earnestly and heartily; called vpon the name of the eternall and Almighty God whom we do acknowledge to be the fountaine, and cause of all peace, and good policy; after they had surrendred on eyther side their Commissions of full power to examine diligently all causes of controuersies betwixt vs and our Kingdomes.

All doe meete at the day and place appointed.

And also the foresayd Ambassadours of great Britaine being present with them; who in like manner, in the name and behalfe of their most gracious King, and Master, with a speciall care, and singular diligence did handle, and intreate vpon these points of controuersie: At the last by meanes of the helpe of God they haue ordayned and decreed betwixt vs and the foresaid King *Gustavus Adolphus*, our Kingdomes and Subiects, a finall and irreuocable peace, in this forme and manner as followeth.

with his Maiesties Ambassadors who at their meeting were present with them.

And first of all, concerning the foure principall controuersies, to wit, first *Sonnebourg*, secondly, the three Crowns, thirdly, the *Laps* dwelling on the Sea coast in *North land*, and the government of *Ward-house*, & fourthly, the tole or customes: which foure cases although in the assembly, holden at *Flachebech* in the yere 1603. they were determined with contrary opinions by the Commissioners of both the Kingdomes, and for that reason they were given over to an arbiter, that by him they might bee finally decided: notwithstanding by this present meeting, and pacification they are reconciled and agreed vpon by these meanes hereafter following.

Foure maine controuersies betweene *Denmarke* and Sweden neuer agreed vpon vntill now.

1 The first *Sonnebourg* Castle given ouer to the Crowne of *Denmarke*.

First, concerning the controuersie, & discord fallen out, about the Castle of *Sonnebourge* in the Isle of *Oesele*, we haue agreed in this manner: That the foresayd King *Gustavus Adolphus*, in his owne behalfe and in name of the Crowne of *Sweden* shall give ouer and renounce the sayd controversie, and Castle: so that never, nor at any time hereafter, it may bee renewed or redemanded by any King of *Sweden*. But that the said Castle of *Sonnebourgh*, with all things belonging thereto, without all disputation, lette, or hinderance, shall remaine perpetually, vnder our power, and authoritie of the Crowne of *Denmarke*.

In like manner for asmuch, as both before, and after the contract of *Stetine*, there hath alwayes beene a dissention betwixt these Kingdomes, concerning the Armes, of the three Crownes: which the Kings of *Sweden* haue thought to be the proper and peculiar Badges, or Markes of the Armes of *Sweden*: but wee on the contrary, Iudge them to be a token of vnion (that is, when the Kings of *Denmarke*, were chosen to bee Kings of *Sweden*) and therefore it belongeth with equall right, to the vse of both the Kingdomes: where through wee haue agreed concerning this controuersie, vpon this condition: that all dispute, and contention for these three Crownes shall hereafter be abolished, and all vtterly extinguished, and shall neuer be raised againe by the succeding Kings of *Denmarke*, or *Sweden*: but both of them shall haue free liberty to vse, and inioy, perpetually, without impediment the foresayd Armes of three Crownes, providing nevertheless, that neither wee, nor our successours Kings of *Denmarke*, by vsing in our Armes of these three Crowns, shall challenge to vs any right, or Title ouer the Kingdome of *Sweden*, but that we shall stand to the renunciation, made to that purpose, which is conteined in the Articles of the contract of *Stetin*.

2 The armes of three Crownes now permitted to both the Kings indifferently.

Moreover seeing by the course of certaine yeeres dissentions, and disputes haue risen concerning the supriority, Regalities, iuridiction, and dominion of the Sea ouer the *Laplanders*, dwelling on the Sea coast of the North Ocean, betwixt *Titisiford*, and *Weranger*, which disputes haue remayned vnreconciled to this houre. Yet neuertheless we by this treaty of peace haue given ouer and tendred to the King *Gustavus Adolphus*, the strengths, and Castles that we haue ceazed vpon during this Warre (as more largely shall be declared hereafter) therefore touching these dissentions that doe concerne the seacoast, betwixt *Titisiford*, and *Weranger*, wee haue agreed and made transaction in this manner following.

3 The Iurisdiction and Dominion ouer the *Laplanders*, dwelling on the Sea coast of the North Ocean betwixt *Titisiford* and *Weranger*.

That the King *Gustavus Adolphus*, for himselfe, & his highnes successors Kings of *Sweden*, and for the Crowne of *Sweden*, shall renounce vnto vs, and the Crowne of *Norroway*, all the olde revenues, rents, and toles, which the Kings and Crowne of *Sweden*, were wont to possesse in those former yeeres in *Norroway*, and the coast of *Northland*, & government of *Wardhouse* from *Titisiford*, vnto *Weranger*, from the foresayd *Laplanders*, dwelling in the coast of

Giuen ouer by the *Swedens* to the Crowne of *Norroway*.

of the Ocean. Moreouer, his Highnesse doth renounce, and giue ouer all rights and titles whatsoeuer hath beene by contract purchased to the Crowne of *Sweden*, from the *Ruthenians*, or *Russes*, in the said territory of *Wardhouse*, vnto *Weranger*. In like manner the said King *Gustavus Adolphus*, doth renounce the right, superiority, and dominion, or commaund of the Sea, and other Regalities or Kingly Rights which he did claime to himselfe in NORROWAY, NORTH-LANDE, and the territorie of *Wardhouse*, vpon the said Ocean Sea, in such fort, that neither the fore-said King *Gustavus Adolphus*, neyther his Highnesse successours, nor the Crowne of *Sweden* shall neuer hereafter challenge, or clayme to themselues any title, or right of that which lyeth towards the *Norroway* Seas, in the fore-said *Northland*, and territorie of *Wardhouse* from *Titisiford* to *Weranger*: But that the foresaid Rent, Tribute, or Custome of the Crowne of *Sweden*, the right and soueraignty in matters as well Ecclesiasticall as Temporall, the commaundement of the Sea with the fore-said *Russian* rent, shall perpetually, generally, and altogether hereafter remaine by proper right to our power, and to the Crowne of *Norroway*, yet neuertheless, those Villages of *Finlanders*, and *Laplanders*, which are placed amongst the hills, aboue the said territories, shall not be comprehended amongst them of our iurisdiction, seeing they doe not belong to these dissentions for the Sea and Sea coast, in the which we pretend to haue the whole right.

4 The Dance in *Swethland*, and the Swethen in *Denmarke* free from customes.

As concerning the variance and dissention of the tole, vpon that wee haue agreed in this manner: that the subiects of *Denmarke*, and *Norroway*, and other Prouinces subiect to them, shall haue freedome and liberty without impediment to traffique, and vse Marchandise, to buy and sell in *Sweden*, and in the Prouinces thereto belonging, without imposing any tole, or bording, which either for the present is in vse, or in time comming may be thought vpon, or inuented vpon their persons or goods, whither they be bought or solde. In like manner the Kingdome of *Sweden*, the Prouinces, Subiects, and Inhabitants, belonging thereto, shall haue freedome and vnforbidden liberty of buying and selling, in the Kingdomes of *Denmark* and *Norroway*, and Prouinces to them belonging: And also free passage to goe and come through the Sound with their goods, without imposing of any Customes, or bourding either vpon their persons, or their goods, which neither is in vse, or hereafter may be inuented. Neuertheless we haue reserued this poynt to our selues on both sides, that whatsoeuer kinde of forraigne drinkes shall be brought in our Kingdomes by our subiects on both sides, it shall pay the same Customes, which the rest of the Inhabitants of the Kingdome doe pay to their King.

Except for forraigne drinks broughe in.

5 Concerning the title or title of the Duke of *Lapland*.

Concerning the title of the Lappes in *Northland*, we haue concluded in this manner: That if the King *Gustavus Adolphus*, or his Highnesse succeessours, shall now, or at any time hereafter take it vpon them, notwithstanding the Sea coast dwelling Laps, towards the Ocean betwixt *Titisfiord*, and *Weranger* in *Northland*, and the gouernment of *Wardhouse*, shall not be reckoned in the number or title of Laps, belonging vnto the Crowne or Kings of *Sweden*: but onely shall be interpreted of those Laps of Finmarke which dwell farre from the Sea, in the mountaines, which are only subiects to *Sweden*, as is afore-said vpon the third controuersie.

6 *Gottenberg* shall haue no liberties prejudiciall to the King of *Denmarke*.

Concerning the difference for the Towne of *Gottenberg*, it is concluded and agreed vpon betwixt vs, that if in time of comming, as now being raised, it shall bee repayred againe, and indowed with liberties, and priuiledges, the same shall no wayes be graunted, if in any case they shall be prejudicible to our Royall right of the Sounde.

7 Navigation free to *Rie* and *Churland*.

As to the Navigation towards *Rie*, and *Churland*, to the end it should not hereafter giue any matter of discord to our Kingdomes on any sides: If from henceforth the Towne of *Rie* shall begin to bee besieged by his Highnesse of *Sweden*, during the siege, our Subiects shall altogether abstaine from sayling vnto *Rie*: and whosoeuer doth the contrary, let them doe it vpon their owne perill. Otherwise the said Navigation shall be free, and without hinderance, both to our Subiects, and to Strangers that shall passe through the Sound: except it may chance to be ordained otherwise betwixt vs, and his Highnesse in respect of the friendship that now is contracted betwixt vs.

Except *Rie* be besieged by the Swethen.

8 What things are restored by the King of *Denmarke* to the the King of *Sweden*.

And for as much as we, *Christian* King of *Denmarke*, &c. for the respect of peace and concord, no lesse then in fauour of our welbeloued brother allied, neighbour and friend, the King of great *Britaine*, doe quit claime, and giue ouer, by this treaty

of peace, all right, power, and commaundement which by right of war-fare is due vnto vs, over all the Castles, Fortresses, Provinces, Townes, and Territories, which by the benefit of Almighty God, and strength of Warre, wee haue seazed vpon and possessed, and doe restore the same againe to the foresayd King *Gustavus Adolphus*, and to the Crowne of *Sweden* in manner as after followeth.

That *Kalmer* Castle, *Risby* Castle, *Borckholme* and the Ile of *Oeland*, with all the Townes, strengths, and territories, which are subiect to the sayd fortresses, and Castles, the third day of Easter next, and nothing els but the bare Castles and Landes shall be restored to King *Gustavus Adolphus*, his assignaries, or deputies: and that they bee hereafter adiudged to pertayne for euer without impediment to his highnesse, and vnder the authoritie of the Crowne of *Sweden*.

1 Kalmer. 2 Risby. 3 Brockholme. 4 Oeland.

The K of *Sweden* restoreth to the K. of *Denmarke* 1 Iemptland. 2 Northland.

And in behalfe and change thereof, the foresaid King *Gustavus Adolphus*, doeth yeelde, and give ouer vnto vs, and to the Crowne of *Norroway*, first *Iemptland*, and all other things that haue beene taken from vs, or our Kingdomes in time of this warr: together with these things which appertaine to *Northland*, as here before hath beene sayd.

9. And ten hundred thousand Dolors to bee payed at fiue termes within fiue yeares.

Moreover, his Highnesse doth gratifie vs in the payment of ten hundred thousand dolors, within the terme of six yeeres after the date of the Obligation given to vs thereupon: The first three termes of which payment shall bee dispatched, and discharged in the Castle of *Elsbourg*, and the fourth, and last in our Towne of *Halmestade*, as more at length is contained in the letters of obligation giuen vnto vs by his highnesse aforesayd, and ratified, confirmed, and sealed by the most illustrious Prince, the Lord *Iohn*, Prince by birthright of the Kingdome of *Sweden*, Duke of *Ester*, *Gothland*, and the whole Councell of the Kingdome of *Sweden*.

10. The Townes, Castles, and Lands given in pawne to the King of *Denmarke*, for the said summe of money.

By the which letters it is made manifest that the Castle of *Elsbourg*, the fort of *Golberry*, with the townes of *Nyllosse*, and *Gamellosse*, and *Gottenburg*, together with the strayts and lands vnderwritten, that is to say, *Sendall*, *Athenis*, *Hissing*, *Baltebrigd*, *Alley*, *Vette*, and *Flonder*, with the customes, setled rents, and casualties which in the forenamed places and straits were in vse and custome to be payed yeerely, shall remaine vnto vs, in stead of a profitable pawne for the foresaid sum of ten hundred thousand dolors.

That is to say, vpon these conditions, If in case the foresayd sum of money, by tenor of the sayd obligation giuen, in neglecting the termes, shall not bee satisfied and fully payed: That then and in that case, the foresayd Castle of *Elsbourg*, with the Townes, strayts and landes aboue named, shall be iudged to perteine in perpetuall property to vs, and to the Crowne of Denmarke, as more at large is conteyned in the letter Patent of the sayd obligation.

And in case of none paiment at the termes appointed, to remaine forever to the Crowne of *Denmarke*.

But neuertheleſſe, the administration of Ecclesiasticall iurisdiction, shall remayne in the power of the Bishop of *Scare*, who shall do right, and *give iustice* to our commissioners, conforme to the iniunctions of *Sweden*, whensoeuer they shall desire to call any persons in iudgement. The Nobility, and all others of the dignity of Knighthood, that doe dwell within the iurisdiction of *Elsbourg*, or haue their farmes or mannors lying there, they shall possesse and enioy the same according to the rule of the Lawes and Priuiledges of *Sweden*, and shall do their Knightly seruice vnto the King of *Sweden*, and shall come to their owne publique conuentions, Parliaments, or assemblies. All others dwelling as well in the City as in the Country, shall receiue iustice according to the lawes of *Sweden*.

Vpon these conditions and exceptions of liberties granted to the Clergie.

Nobility and Commons.

11. Ships and Artillery shall remaine on either side in possession of the takers.

All Shippes, Canons, and munitions of Warre, and other of that nature, which haue beene taken on eyther side, during the time of this warre, either in the Fortresses, or in the Field, or on the Sea, or by any other meanes, they shall bee iudged to pertaine to that Prince, who hath taken them, and shall neuer be sought backe againe.

12. Prisoners set at liberty with out any ransome.

All Prisoners whatsoeuer degree, place or quality they are of, shall bee put at libertie without any ransome, and shall not be constrayned to pay any thing for their victualls.

13. The agreemit made at the towne of Stetine since shall stand in his full strength.

The agreement and contract made at the towne of *Stetine*, in the yeere of God, 1570. & established betwixt the two kingdomes, and shall stand on either side, shall bee kept vnbroken in any manner of the same strength and vigor, as it was before the beginning of this warre, neyther shall any thing bee taken away or derogated from it, by this forme of pacification, except onely in these Articles which are agreed vpon, and specially abolished by this present pacification.

And in regard that our best beloued kinse-

14 Both the K of *Denmarke* and *Sweden* do bind themselues vnder their Maiesty our great Britaines, in the strength of this contract vpon his Royall hand and great Seale.

kinseman, and brother, the King of great Britaine, hath with great diligence aduanced this treaty of peace: it is agreed vpon betwixt vs that his Highnesse shall be intreated by the first occasion that shall bee offered, to confirme this peace concluded with hand and seale, that euery one of vs, for the greater strengthening and establishment of this peace, may haue one particular and seuerall coppy thereof.

15 Conclusion of the peace, and establishing of same friendship to last for euer. God of his infinite mercy grant it be so.

By these Articles now all dissentions, discord, controversies, enmities, warres, and hostilities, which have beene betwixt vs, and the subiects of our Kingdomes are taken away, and altogether finished: In stead and place of them, a safe, sure, firme, and irreuocable peace, friendshippe, and neighbourhood shall be established, approued, and confirmed in such manner that the Kings on either side shall entertaine each other with mutuall friendship: they shall maintaine, defend, and aduance, by word and deed one anothers profite and commoditie, no lesse then their owne, and whatsoeuer thing may preiudice, or bee hurtfull to either of their persons, states, Kingdomes, prouinces, and subiects: they shall as it becommeth, with all their power withdraw, divert, and impeach it.

For the greater testimony, and confirmation, that this reconciliation of peace shall be kept firme, and found, in all the words, poynts, and articles thereof by vs, and our successours Kings of *Denmarke*: wee haue confirmed, and established the same with our hand, and Royall Seale, adioyning thereunto the handes of the Councellours of our Kingdome, which are these.

Thirteene Councellors of *Denmarke* who doe set their handes to confirme this contract.

1 *Christian Ferijs* of *Borreby*, our Chancellour.

2 *Magnus Vlfeld* of *Sieſſo*, admirall of our Kingdome, and our governour in *Tranethier*.

3 *Steene Brahe* of *Kundſtrup*, gouernour in *Callnhourg*.

4 *Mandrop Paſberg* of *Hagilholme*, gouernour in *Aalbourghus*.

5 *Breda Ranzow*, of *Ranzowhuiſholme*, Lieutenant in our Citie of *Copenhaven*, and governor in the Ile of *Moen*.

6 *George Ferrijs* of *Kraſtrup* governour in *Segelſtrup*.

7 *Prebierne Gilleleaſtierne* of *Woſbourgh* governour in *Boijling*.

8 *Axell Brahe* of *Eliud* commaunder of the abbey of *Dalum*.

9 *Olaus Rozenſſar* of *Scavolt*, governor in *Draxholm*.

10 *Elkie Brock* of *Eſtrup*, governour in *Droningborgh*.

11 *Christian Holch* of *Soeboe*, governour in *Silcborgh*.

12 *Iames Vlfeld* of *Vlfelſholme*, Chancellour of the Kingdome, and governour in *Nenbourgh*.

13 *Enowald Criſe* of *Hiirmiklofgaard*, our Lieutenant and Viceroy in our Kingdome of *Norroway*, and gouernour in *Agerſhus*.

Given in our Castle of *Coppenhaven* the thirtieth day of Ianuary, in the yeere 1613. vnder our Seale.

This contract of peace aboue written, as it is begunne and finished betwixt the foresayd high and mighty Princes, and of Kings, *Christian* the fourth King of *Denmarke*, *Norroway*, &c. And *Gustavus Adolphus* King of *Sweden*, &c. and their Kingdomes, Prouinces, and subiects, both by sea and land by vertue of the foresayd appointments, and vpon conditions. Euen so we, *Iames* by the grace of God King of great *Britaine*, *France*, *and Ireland*, &c. Defender of the Faith, &c. to the end that the foresayd contract according to the words and true meaning thereof, may be the more diligently with sincere fidelitie, firmely, and constantly obserued for euer, on both the sides, and that the peace it selfe may stand perpetually secure, and vnbroken, and be entertained with mutuall vsing kindnesse and good friendlihip: we haue confirmed the same with our royall hand, and the great seale of our Kingdome of great Britaine.

Conclusion & confirmation of his Maiesty of great Britaine.

Vnder his royall hand and great Seale.

Given in our Pallace of Westminster, the twenty fourth day of Aprill, in the yeere of our Lord 1613. and of our Kingdome of great Britaine, the eleuenth yeere.

Beati Pacifici.

An. Reg. 12. 1614.

Tuesday 29. of March, 1614. Sir Ralph Winwood Knight Master of the Requests, was sworne principall Secretary of Estate, and Sir Thomas Lake, Knight, a Clarke of the priuie Signet, was sworne a Priuie Councellor.

Sir Ralph Winwood made Secretary. Sir Thomas Lake, a priuy counsellor.

The 15 of June 1614. died Henry Earle of Northampton, Baron of Marnhill, Lord Priuie seale, Lord Warden of the Cinque ports, Knight of the Golt noble order of the Garter, Chancellor of the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, and one of his Maiesties most honorable priuie Councell: hee dyed at his new built house neere Charing Crosse called Northampton house: his body according to his appointment was

The Earle of Northampton deceased.

was buried in the ancient Chappell of Dover Caſtl. the 26. of June, where he ordained a monument to bee there erected for him, by his executors: in his life time hee founded three faire hoſpitalls, and endowed them ſeuerally with full maintenance for euer. That is to ſay, one Hoſpitall at Ring in Norfolke for twelue poore women and a gouernour, the ſecond at a place called Otin in Shropſhire, for twelue poore men, and a gouernour, and the third at Greenwich in Kent, for twenty poore men, and a gouernor, eight whereof are to be choſen out of Shorethham in Norfolke, where the ſayd Earle was borne, and the other twelue out of the Towne of Greenwich. He alſo gaue ſundry Legacies vnto diuers Pariſhes for the vſe of the poore.

This moneth of July 1614. the King of Denmark with three ſhips arriued at Yarmouth being royally attended with his Lord chancelor & Lord Admiral of Denmark, with diuers other his officers and ſeruants, and aboue twenty of his guard: the King came from Yarmouth by land in very priuate manner, accompanied only with the Lord Chancelor, & the Lord Admiral. Chriſtianus the fourth of that name K. of Denmarke his ſecond comming into England.

He rode through Ipſwich, and lay one night at Burnt wood, not being knowne to any what he was, no not ſo much as to his guides that came with him. And furniſhed him with horſe in this manner, and vpon Friday the 22. of July about noone he tooke coach at Alegate and being yet vnknowne, he rid through London vnto Somerſet houſe, where the Queen then kept her Court, who was not a little ioyfull to ſee her Royall brother, whoſe ſodaine and vnexpected comming was chiefely to ſee her.

The King of great Britaine, at this time was at Apthan in Bedfordſhire, going in progreſſe towards Ruſſord in Rutlandſhire, and vpon Saterday the 23. of July about 8. a clocke in the morning, King Iames had certaine intelligence of his brothers priuate and vnexpected arriuall at London, returned back to Lond. that ſame day at euening, & by the way was encountred with a very fierce ſtorme of haile & raine, the violence whereof was ſuch, that as they were comming downe a hill, it forced the Kings Coach-horſe, and the reſt of the horſes in their company to turne their heads from the ſtorme.

The next day being Sunday, both the Kings the Queene and Prince Charles, and the great Lords of the Priuy Councell, were at Somerſet houſe, and there Doctor King, Lord Biſhop of London preached before them.

All the next weeke following, the King of Denmarke entertained the time, either in hunting, Hawking, running at Ring, Beare baiting, and Fier workes, and was alſo entertained with playes by night. And vpon Saterday the 30. of July, hee beheld feates of armes performed by the moſt skilfull Fencers about London, who played at ſundry weapons according to the manner of fight.

The next day being Sunday both the Kings were at White-hall, and Doctor Mountaine Deane of Weſtminſter, preached before them in Latine, and that day the King of Denmarke was royally feaſted in the beautifull baqueting houſe, where both the Kings dined together, in great ſtate, from thence they returned to Somerſet houſe, where that night in the Garden by the King of Denmarks deuice and charge, and by his owne men there was performed moſt excellent and ingenious fier-workes.

The next day being Sunday the firſt of Auguſt, the two Kings and Prince Charles tooke Barge early in the morning, and went firſt to Woolwich, where hauing viewed certaine ſhips in the docke, they went thence to Graueſend, and there dined at the ſigne of the ſhippe, after dinner King Iames and Prince Charles accompanied the King of Denmarke aboard vnto his owne ſhippe, where hauing ſtayed about two houres, and performed all kingly complements the King of England tooke Barge and returned to blackwall, and there tooke Coach and rode that night to Theobarides, and ſo went forward againe of his progreſſe.

And the next day the King of Denmark and Prince Charles rode to Rochester, and there beheld the great new ſhip called the Prince, and when they had well obſerued the ſtrength and ſtatelineſſe thereof, they returned to Graueſend to dinner and after dinner the Prince accompanied his vncle aboard his owne ſhip, there ſtayed a while, and hauing taken their leaues either of other, Prince Charles returned that night to London, and the next day Chriſtian King of Denmarke with his three braue ſhippes and kingly traine ſet ſayle for Denmarke, where they all arriued ſafely.

And though he ſtayed in England but a few dayes, yet his Princely kindneſſe and bounty was royall vnto all perſons, according to their degrees that did him any ſeruice or attendance, viz. vnto ſome hee gaue faire chaines of gold, to others, iewells, rings or bouches, beſides his liberall reward in money, &c. The Kings Princely bounty.

The 26. of October, the laſt yeare 1613. there arriued Olexſe Eranowich Ifwzen Lieutenant of Shatſkey, Ambaſſador from Michael Pheodorowich vriouc, the new young Emperor of Ruſſia, vnto the King of great Britaine, to congratulate with his Maieſty, to deſire his continuall loue and amitie, and to make attonement betweene the King of Sweathland and the Ruſſian Emperour, and that it would pleaſe his Maieſtie to ſend an Ambaſſadour to his maiſter the Emperour this ſpring 1614. this Ambaſſador returned, hauing in all reſpects beene very honorably entertained, and his preſents of Furres, which hee gaue to the King Queene and Prince, were very graciouſly accepted. And this moneth of June 1614. the King ſent Sir Iohn Merrick Knight Ambaſſador to Polco, this Knight hauing euer from his youth beene of great and graue experience in thoſe parts, and as well knowne and beloued of the Princes and people of Ruſſia: he went honorably attended. The Emperor of Ruſſia his Ambaſſador.

Wednesday the 13. of July, 1614. Thomas Earle of Suffolke, late Lord Chamberlaine, was ſworne Lord Treaſurer of England, he was accompanied to Weſtminſter-hall with many of the Nobility of the Land and with many other of honourable ranck and quality to the number of three hundred thirtie and ſix, being all well mounted, and at this time, Robert Earle of Somerſet was made Lord Chamberlaine. The Earle of Suffolke made Lord Treaſurer. The Earle of Somerſet made Lord Chamberlaine.

Sir Fulke Grevill knight Chauncelor of the exchequer was ſworne a priuie Counceller.

Watterday the firſt of October, Sir Fulke Grevill knight Chauncelor of the exchequer was ſworne a priuie Counceller.

The 20. of October this yeare, 1614. there was a Call of Seariants at Law, being 11. in number, viz. George Wilde; W. Towes, Richard Bawtrey, H ury Finch, Tho. Chamberlaine, Fraunces Moore, Thomas Atthow, Iohn Moore, Fraunces Haruy, Charles Chibborne & Thomas Richardſon, and in Trinity Tearme before therowere 2. Seargeants made viz. Sir Randal Crew of Lincolnes Inne knight, & Sir Robert Hicham, of Greies Inne knight. 3 generall call of Seriants at law.

At this time was new builded, the faire Councell Chamber for the Lord Maior and Aldermen of London, the former Councell chamber being too little, and inconuenient, cauſed them to build this: it ſtandeth at the North end of their old councell Chamber. Sir Thomas Middelton, was now Lord Maior, who much furthered this worke. Councell chamber of London new builded.

This yeare at the end of Haruest the King appointed a generall muſter of horſe and foote throughout England, the which euery ſhire perfourmed, and very many were faine to buy new furniture, by reaſon their old was much decayed and out of faſhion, and greatly ſpoyled for want of vſe. This muſtering and training of Souldiers at this time was done with great chearefulneſſe, and chiefely by the Citizens of London, who were wonderous forward, as well in making new prouiſion of what they wanted, as with all willing dexteritie to practiſe all points o warre & military diſcipline, and for the well managing of this buſineſſe, the Lord Maior and communaltie ordained twentie Captaines to be ſelected of the moſt active and forward Citizens, and vnto euery of them were allotted three hundred ſhot, and pikes, viz. ſix thouſand in all for that time, being for the moſt part all houſholders, brauely furniſhed, theſe 20. captaines perfourmed all things with ſuch expedition, bountie and brauery, as but in the yeare 1588. the like was neuer before, and ſuch of them as were not formerly of the martiall Societie and practiſe of the artillerie Garden, became then admitted of that warlike company, whereof I haue made mention in the yeare 1610. which company at this time was growne great and in good eſtimation, vnto which Garden at the vſuall times of their militarye exerciſe, many countrey gentlemen of all ſhires reſorted, and diligently obſerued their exerciſe of armes, which they ſaw was excellent, and being returned, they practiſed and vſed the ſame vnto their trained bands in their countries. 3 generall muſter throughout England.

The names of the Captaines of the trained bands, for the City of London and the Liberties

Captains of London.	Bond.	Styles.	Herſhaw.	Robinſon.
	Towe ſon.	Ven.	Hallſey.	Speering.
	Lear.	Garraway.	Hamerſley.	Sidney.
	Swinnarton.	Smith.	Walker.	Dike.
	Williams.	Walthall.	Androwes.	Lather.

Young boyes of London. Alſo at this time the young Schollers, and other youthes, from the age of nine or ten yeares vnto ſeauenteene, of their owne voluntary diſpoſitions, choſe themſelues Captaines and Lieutenants out of their Companies, and with ſound of drum, and their enſignes ſpread, marched into the field, vpon play-dayes, and holy-dayes, and practiſed all points of Warre, which they had ſeene their elders teach, hauing made them pikes and peeces fit for their weake handling.

At this time through the diligent and extraordinary charge and care of the Lord Maior and Citizens of London, dayly perfourmed by the ouerſight and diligence of the Waterbailie, all ſalle nets and vnlawfull engines are now ſuppreſt and reduced to a lawfull and true forme of fiſhing, inſomuch as through the ſayd reſtraint, the riuer of Thames (being the beauty and ornament of all riuers in the world) is now become rich and plentifull, and yeeldeth great ſtore of fiſh of diuers and ſundry kindes, and that at more reaſonable price then hath beene theſe many yeeres paſt, as appeareth by the great abundance, plenty, and ſtore, weekely brought in, into the Markets of the Citie.

The ſayd Lord Maior, hath now lately by his ſayd ſubſtitute the Waterbaylie, vpon a great complaint made, concerning the Timbers, ſtanding in Tilbury hope, below Graueſend, very daungerous for paſſengers, as alſo for the infinite deſtruction of brood and frie of fiſh, which the ſayd Timbers made in Fiſhermens Nets which ſtood continually night and day, in the full courſe and ſwift paſſage of the ſtreame, to the great perudice, and annoyance of the ſayd Riuer: Cauſed them to be pulled vp, and taken away, and brought to the Guild hall in London, to the example of all Malefactors in that kinde, by which courſe and prouidence it is credibly reported, there is ſaued and preſerued aline, foure buſhels of ſmall fiſh and frie, euery Tyde, night and day throughout the whole yeare, which being computated, doth amount to a great matter. The riuer of Thamis cleared of ſtops pyles and weeres.

The ſaid Lord Maior and communalty hath within theſe three yeeres now laſt paſt, cleanſed and cleered the riuer of Thamis Weſtward of 79. ſtops or hatches, which conſiſted of diuers great ſtakes, and pyles, built vp by fiſhermen, and ſtanding very dangerouſly and neere vnto

vnto the faire deepe, insomuch as there now remaineth none of them vpon the sayd Riuer, but such only as stand out of the faire way, and out of daunger of passengers, being otherwise a great succour and nourishment to young birds and frie of fish, at the foote, and bottome of the same, and being placed in remote, and by-places vpon the sayd Riuer, it greatly succoureth, and comforteth diuers poore fishermen, dwelling vpon the same, and besides that, makes the water so high in the heate, and drought of Somer, that Barges may passe with all kind of goods to the honorable City of London, which otherwise would lie vpon ground, in great numbers, and could not else passe by reason of the lownesse of the Water, &c.

There bee likewise, a number of Fishermen belonging to the sayd Riuer of Thamis, some called Tankermen, others called Pebbermen, Peter-men, Trawler-men, and such like, who in times past, haue vsed very vnlawfull fishing vpon the same, but now through the sayd former restraint, they are likewise reduced to a better, and a more ciuill gouernment &c.

And least this prouident care for preseruation of passengers, and conseruation of fish, as aforesayd, should be thought needlesse, or not worthy the knowledge or memory, you shall vnderstand, that the like course vnto the same end was performed in the seauenth yeere of Henry the fourth, viz. in the yeere of our Lord God one thousand foure hundred and six, and likewise in the time of Henry the eight as is recorded in former Chronicles.

Walter Hugh Middleton bringeth a new Riuer to the City of London.

The sacred Scriptures, and all ancient Historians, make great mention of Welles, and Riuers, and of their names, and situation: the Annales of Rome, and the Chronicles of other Cities, make due memory of their Aquataries manifesting the vtilitie, obtained by Riuers in their seuerall kindes, and some ancient writers affirme, Riuers to be of such matchlesse vtility as but man himselfe excepted, there is nothing so precious; and all men confesse they are vnualuable.

Which being euery way true, it were monstrous wrong to omit the memory of a worke of wonder, done to that effect, in these our dayes, viz, the bringing of a sweete Riuer to the North side of the Citie of London, for the generall seruice of that Cittie, and her Suburbs, knowing that time and enuie hath destroyed the state and memorie of farre greater Monuments: when Recordes haue fayled the euer-giuing lights of deedes of worth from age to age, in spight of time, enuie, and oblition.

Therefore let not the eye of enuy, nor the heart of malice, taxe me with politritie, for making more large and particular mention of this Riuer, then of some other things, wherevnto they had a greater expectation and affection.

The glorious Citie of London, most famous by that name, being indeede, one of the most auncient flourishing Cities of the whole world, and without wrong to any other Citie, it may iustly bee sayd to bee the onely, auncient Cittie, that since her first founding, hath beene preserued from destruction, and Alteration from her first Seate and foundation: and for these late yeeres so much encreased in people, and building, as no knowne Citie of the Vniuerse, may compare with it, and is euery way the more strange and wonderfull, in beeing but a Cittie in an Iland, lying quite out of all common passage, or thorough fayre to any other Nation, which sayd encrease of beautifull buildings, and inhabitants, as well without the Walles and Liberties, as within the Cittie, consisting now of very ingenious people, as well natiues as of all other, Christian Nations, professours, and practisers of all Arts and Sciences, vsed and knowne vpon the vpper face of the earth, besides great multitudes of other people, of lesse deserning commendations, residing within the Cittie and suburbs, for whose generall and particular vse of Water, the former prouision would no way suffice, notwithstanding fyfteene common Conduits, and the great supply from that most delicate and seruiceable Riuer of Thamis.

Vpon consideration whereof, and to make a plenteous supply, it hath pleased Queene Elizabeth about the tenth yere of her raigne, to grant the Citizens of London, full power, by Act of Parliament, to make, cut and bring a Riuer from any part of Middlesex, or Hartfordshire, to serue the Cittie, prouided alwayes, that they should performe it within ten yeeres after the date of the Acts. In which space, to that purpose many things were propounded, and consulted, but nothing to any purpose concluded or attempted, though diuers well affected and ingenious persons much preferred the necessitie and worthinesse of this worke: most men being ouercome with the daunger, difficultie, and feare of the great charge and endlesse expence in atcheiuing it, and was diuerly holde a thing impossible to bee duely performed, and so this worke ceased, beeing in a manner vtterly reiected, vntill the comming of our Soueraigne Lord King Iames, at which time the great confluence of people was more and more encreased, so as the supply of Water was more and more needed and desired. It then pleased his Maiestie by Act of Parliament to graunt them full power for euer to bring a Riuer as aboue sayd, which Act of Parliament beeing afterwardes by the Citizens more warily considered of, in so weighty a businesse, they found it somewhat defective, and therevpon the next Parliament, they became againe humble suters to make that Act more perfect in their behalfe, which they obtained: yet neuertheless, and notwithstanding all their former surueay of Riuers, Springs, and ground, and due examination of all charges from head to foote, with certaintie that it was feesible and possitable. This worke in all respects remayned in silence as it did before, being hyanded by a generall boyce of impossibilitie, which caused some that formerly affected it, and were very forward to

to further this worke, began now, not only to thinke backe themselues, but vtterly discouraged all others, arging the great daunger and extreame difficulty thereof, concluding directly it was insesible, and therefore impossible to be effected. By which generall desperate opinion, it was wholly neglected, and vtterly refused of all, for the space of two or three yeeres, except the cittie or Chamber of London would contribute thereunto, but that could not be obtained.

All which the generalitie too well perceiuing, remained desperate to be supplyed of their great want of water.

After all which, vpon deliberate aduice, and diligent search into the depth of all difficulties, impediments, and charge, touching the premises. Then Walter Hugh Middleton, Cittizen, and Goldsmith of London, borne in Denbigh-shire, with great courage, and resolution, vndertooke to bring a Riuer to the North of London, &c. And then the Cittie conferred vnto him and his heyres, the full right and power of the Act of Parliament, graunted vnto them in that behalfe.

And forthwith the sayd Walter Middleton, with his choyce men of Art, and painefull labourers, sets roundly to this businesse, hauing formerly taken exact Surueay of all Springs and Riuers, in Middlesex, and Hertfordshire that might serue his turne, he made his choyce of Chadwell and Amwell Springs, being two bountifull Spyings, and are described as followeth, by Master Haslall, Vicar of Amwell.

Amwell, a Village in Hartfort shire about twentie miles from London, not to obscure in it selfe (if wee consider eyther aptnesse of the seate, sweetenesse of the ayre, delicacy of the soyle, mixture of pleasant hilles, and fertile valleyes, thicke woods, and seruiceable Riuers, both fully and plentifully enterlaced, all which may yeeld both pleasure and profit to the inhabithants) as by reason that it is ouertopt by feare Townes of note, barring it on either side from the eye of obseruation. (Hartford to the West, Stanstead to the East, Ware to the North, and Hodsdon to the South) hath in these latter times gained both an eminent name, and eternall memorie, by the meritorious and happy aduenture of that man of honourable memory, Hugh Middleton, who like a faithfull and industrious Lapidary, gayning the knowledge of her rich treasures (concealed by long neglect and buried in the bedde of their owne birth) I meane two precious Spyings of liuing water, hath after fiue yeares aduenture (notwithstanding manifolde oppositions and discouragements) by commendable Art, infatigable industrie, and vnlimitted expence brought them from the rockieste walke of their owne woyth, to serue the City of London, the Metropolis of this Kingdome, and wonder of this Welborne world.

Chadwell the remotest of the two Spyings, riseth at the foote of a hill neere vnto Ware, in a meddowe called Chadwell meade (But whether it giues the name to the meddowe, or the meadowe to it, tradition determines not. This spring is not more commendable in respect of the pureness of the water the admirable both in regard of the strangeneslle of her birth issuing out of a hole of an incredible depth, as also in respect of the richnesse of her current, which of her selfe, instantly growes into a riuer of aboue twenty foot in breadth, yet euer heretofore emptied her walled waters into the riuer of Lea, ranning alongst by Ware, vntill now being taught a new course, the runneth along the high way a full mile in length and polyeth her rich spoyles into the bosome of her sister, and so hand in hand comming a long with her to London.

The other spring bubbleth vp in the heart of the Towne of Amwell, at the foote of a double steepy hill, (inferiour to the other for abundance yet superiour to it for the excellency of the water) which heretofore spouting it selfe vpon a playne bed of grauell, was wont wantonly to wash the Pebbles with her christall waters, (not aboue one inch in deepenesse) and so (as carelesse of her owne worth) to bury her pearls in the lappe of Lea: But now being taught to esteeme better of her selfe by him who hath raysed her name to dignitie, hath beene pleased to view her selfe in a faire square poole (at his great charge contrined to that purpose) and there spoutfully to wraste with her sister Chadwell, to try who can outstrippe other in running swiftest to offer their seruice to our mother Cittie, whither they passe a long together in one channell, consisting of about three-score myles in length, in turning and winding to come frō the head to the great Recipient, cut through the byest of the variable earth, vntil at length they happily stoze themselues in a goodly faire Cesterne of an Acre in compasse, from whence they deliuer out their welcom waters.

Master Middleton, began this worke of lasting memory, the twenty of Febyuary, 1608. Thys time after the continuation of her two heads, Chadwell and Amwell, by wonderous paines and industry, hath her passage thyough ground of extreame different quality in some place, Moye and muddy, in other places, extreame hard and rockey, where he was constrained to cut his Trench thirtie foote deepe, and in diuers other low and vncertaine grounds, compelled to adde thereto a second strength by force of Art, and at the end of Enfield great parke, for the length of about a quarter of a mile it is carryed with great Art ouer a valley betweene two high hills thyough an open trough well neere fiue foote wide, and two foote deepe, which trough is suppozted by Arches of wood, fired in the ground: some whereof are foure and twentie foote in heigth. This Riuer runneth thyough diuers parks and Chases, as Chesson Parke, Theobald Parks, Enfield little parke, & Enfield great parke, and crosseth many high wayes, as at Ware ende, Saint Margarets at Worbozne, Hoddesdon, Holloway, King Crosse, and in diuers places at Islington, and so to the new Cesterne, which of former time was an open Idell Poole, com-

Alias Iesly den.

monly called the Ducking pond, being now by the Maior of this great worke, reduced into a comly pleasant shape, and many wayes adorned with buildings, &c. of new Bridges great and small, made to giue particular and generall passage ouer this Riuer, there are about eight hundred, some whereof are of Bricke and Stone, and the rest of Timber: of Workemen in this Businesse, there haue beene 600. imployed at once, and hauing spent much money, endured much despight and derision of the vulgar and ignorant, assuered many causelesse hinderances and complaints of sundry persons, through whose ground he was to cut his water passage, and hauing made deuises to carry land waters, and common Brewers from annoying his riuer, sometime by conueying them ouer his Riuer, and sometimes vnder, hee finished his Riuer to the Cesterne in fiue yeares, and vpon Michaelmas day the last yeare, one thousand six hundred and thirteene, being the first day that this Riuer ranne into that new Cesterne, there came thither with great ioy to behold it, Sir Iohn Swinerton, Lord Maior of London, Sir Thomas Middleton Knight, the Lord Maior elect for the yeare ensuing, brother to this Maister Hugh Middelton, and most of the Aldermen of London, and many of the chiefe Cittizens, besides multitudes of people, and were there entertained with Musique, the chiefe or Maister workemen marching round about in warlike manner. The royall sound of Drum and Trumpets, and with Speeches and Oations. And when the great Sciuse of the Cesterne was lift vp, and the Riuer ran gushing in, they all reioyced, and gaue God praise and thankes for so great a benefit, and as it were with one consent, they wisht the memory thereof might neuer bee forgotten, and went away with great gladnesse.

Since which time vnto this present, all possible diligence hath beene performed, in conueying water from this Cesterne into the Citty, and Suburbs, by pipes of Elme and Lead but for the most part Elme, from which pipes, many high Stretes and Lanes within the Citie are plentifully serued.

M. Sutton his great bounty.

Thomas Sutton Esquire, borne at Snaith in Lincolneshire, in his youth trayned vp in all good learning, then trauailed into forraigne nations, where he attained perfection of sundry Languages, hee was a Student in Lincolnes Inne, and was Maister of the Ordnance of the North parts of England to Queene Elizabeth, where hee serued full fourteene yeares, hee was indued with many excellent gifts of Art, and Nature, and by his proper industry and prudence hee attayned vnto very great wealth and faire possessions, the greatest part whereof hee imployed and bestowed vpon Charitable vses.

And namely, in the Erecting and founding of a most goodly and royall Hospitall, intituled, the Hospitall of King Iames, founded in Charter-house in the County of Middlesex, at the humble petition, and onely cost and charges of the above named Thomas Sutton Esquire, who endowed the same with aboue three thousand pound of yearely rents.

In this bounteous Hospitall, there is maintained fourescore poore men, with fwet Lodging, wholsome diet, and allowance in money for apparell, therein is also maintained forty poore children, with competent Diet, Lodging and Apparell, and a Grammar Schoole, ouer which there is a Master and an Vsher to teach those Boyes, for the which they haue their diet, and lodging, and faire stipends.

And whereas at this time there is yet but fourescore poore men as aforesaid, the reuerend Gouernours, whose names follow, are purposed to augment the former number, as it shall please God to encrease their reuenewes.

And for the orderly gouernment of this most worthy Hospitall, the founder ordained that for euer there should be a discreet learned man, chosen to be the Master of the Houshold, ouer which he is to haue the inward gouernment. And also a learned Diuine to teach & instruct them, &c. besides these and all other necessary Officers for so great a family they likewise haue allowed them a Physitian and a Chirurgian.

The names of the sixteene most Reuerend and right Honourable, and Worshipfull Gouernours of this famous Hospitall; Nominated in the Kings Letters Pattents are these.

1 George Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, Primate and Metropolitane of all England.

2 Thomas Lord Ellesmer, Lord Chancellour of England.

3 Robert Earle of Salisbury, Lord Treasurer of England.

4 Iohn Lord Bishop of London.

5 Launcelot Lord Bishop of Ely.

6 Sir Edward Coke Knight, then Lord chiefe Iustice of the common Pleas, and now Lord chiefe Iustice of England.

7 Sir Thomas Foster knight, one of the Iustices of the common Pleas.

8 Sir Henry Hobart knight then the Kings Atturney generall, and now Lord chiefe Iustice of the common Pleas.

9 Doctor Ouerall Deane of Paules.

10 Doctor Mountaine Deane of Westmin.

11 Henry Thurseby Esquire, one of the Masters of the Chauncery.

12 Ieffery Nightingall Esquire.

13 Richard Sutton Esquire, Auditor of the Impriests.

14 Iohn Law Gentleman.

15 Thomas Browne Gentleman.

16 And the Master of the Hospitall for the time being for euer, who is one of the sixteene Gouernours.

And when any of these sixteene Gouernours doe die, then the survivers according to their authority giuen them in that behalfe, make present Election of others: as for example, in the place of the late Earle of Salisbury, they chose Henry Earle of Northampton Lord high Seale, and vpon his death they elected the Earle of Pembroke, and vpon the death of sir Thomas

Thomas Foster they chose Sir Iames Altham knight, one of the Barons of the Exchequer.

Concerning the better description of the particulars of this great Founder, and his worthy Hospitall, you may reade more at large in the tenth booke of Repaits, made by the right honorable Sir Edward Coke knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of England, and one of his Maiesties most honorable priue Counsell.

Master Allen alias Alleyne his bounty.

Edward Allen *alias* Allein, of Dull-wich Esquire, at this time builded a very faire Hospitall at Dull-wich in Surrey, for six poore men, and six poore women, and for 12. poore Children, from the age of 4. or 6. yeares, to be there kept, maintained, and taught, vntill they come to the age of 14. or 16. yeares: their Schoolemaster to haue his dyet, lodging, and a competent stipend: He intends also to haue a Master to reside in the same Hospitall, whose name shal be Allen or Alleyne, and by that name to bee chosen to that gouernment of his Hospitall for euer, as the place shall grow vacant.

This said Founder told me (that he intends also forthwith to build) thrice twelue poore folkes lodgings in London, viz. twelue lodgings or rowmes in three seuerall Parishes, and giue vnto euery of them some maintenance: without two yeares this house will be finished, and the poore in possession, and then there is more to be said of it. In the meane time thus much deserues thanks and memory, &c.

Greenland discouered by the English.

This yeare 1614. in the moneths of September and October, there returned home the fleete, which in the beginning of the Sommer was set forth, and furnished by the Marchants of the Moscouia Company, towards King Iames his Newland, commonly called Greenland, consisting of 14. Ships and two Pinnaces, employed for the killing of Whales, and further discouery of the North climate.

This worthipfull Company hauing about the yere 1552. first discouered by sea, all the coaste reaching from the North Cape of Norway vnto and through the straights of Vaigars, towards the coast of Cathaya, and established a trade in the dominions of the Emperour of Rufsia, continued to this present with great credite to themselues, and benefit to the common-wealth, obtained for their further encouragement, and towards their excessiue expences, certaine priuiledges, confirmed by act of Parliament, granting to them solely, the vse both of the said trade, and of what places and lands soeuer should afterwards bee found and discouered by them, situate betweene the Northwest and Northeast regions of the earth, within the compasse whereof, they haue since established factories at Saint Nicholas in Rufsia, Cola in Lappia, Pechora, and other places on the coast, and haue pierced within the continent through the Caspian Sea into Persia and Media, and haue certaine yeares past discouered towards the North, the Iland commonly called Cheries Iland, whither they continued their Trade for certaine yeares, for killing of Horses, which is the Sea-horse, or rather the Sea-cowe, the oyle, teeth, and skinnes whereof, haue proued to be of good vse. From which Iland proceeding further they arriued and landed in this vnknowne Iland, which at first was supposed to be a part of the great North Country, called Groniland, but since found to be wholy seperated from it, and imagined to bee the same which Sir Hugh Willoughby discouered, and therefore since called by the name of king Iames his Newland, and by erecting his Maiesties Standards in diuers eminent parts thereof, received as parcell of his Maiesties Dominions.

Here they found the Seas to abound in the Monsters called Whales, for fishing and killing whereof, they procured the yeare following, Biskaines, being expert in that Art, and reladed their Ships with the oyle and finnes of the said Whales, which proued to be very commodious Merchandizes.

The report whereof being spread into our neighboure Countries, of France, Spaine, and Holland, animated them to intrude themselues into the said trade of Whale-fishing, so that the yeare last past there came thither out of these seuerall Nations diuers Shippes: all which to the number of twenty and two sayle, the English Generall M. I. hauing speciall order and authority for the same, with his Fleete of seauen Shippes, did force to depart and returne home, discharging onely some of the Dutch, for their contempt and treachery, of some small quantity of their purchases: whereupon the said Hollanders entruding by force to establish themselues in their said pretended Fishing trade, prepared for this present Sommer a Fleete, consisting of 16. sayle: whereof three Ships of warre of the States, and foure others, and procured a great number of Biskaines to helpe them in their Whale-fishings, of which helpe the English failed this yeare, by reason of suggestions and oppositions made against them both in Fraunce and Spaine, for the former yeares action. All which notwithstanding the said Company for maintenance of his Maiesties prerogatiue, and for defence of their trade and people, set forth to the Sea the aforesaid Fleete, and almost eight hundred men imployed therein, which arriued on that coast before any others, deuided themselues into such seuerall harbours, as the conuenience of their fishing required, and brought the Hollanders, who arriued after them, to conditions, of forbearing any harbour, which the English occupied, and to seeke their trade to the North or South of these parts, which the English vsed, and that for this voyage onely: whereupon our people proceeded in their businesse, and by their owne dexterity and industry without other help, killed fifty and foure Whales, whereof thirty and foure were killed by the Company of the ship Darling, wherein the Generall was: the whole producing about seauen hundred Tunnes of Oyle, and fifty fiue Tunnes of Fins. The Hollanders hauing onely killed twenty and two Whales.

The originall and plantation of the English in Virginia.

Virginia, is a Countrey in America, lying betweene the degrees of thirty foure, and fourty

fine of the North Latitude. The bounds wher-
of on the East side, are the Ocean, on the South
lyeth Florida, on the North Nova Francia and
New found land, as for the west thereof, the li-
mits are vnknown: of all this Country, my
occasion nor purpose is not to speake, but onely
of some part, whereof the English, viz. the
Londoners and their adherents, haue made
plantation: which said country was first disco-
uered in the yeare 1584. as aforesaid, and
Queene Elizabeth called it Virginia, and assig-
ned the same vnto Sir Walter Raleigh, as be-
ing the chiefe discourer thereof. And in the
yeare 1587. there were sent thither aboue an
hundred men, women and children, and from
that time vntill the third yeare of King *Iames*,
all yearely sending thither for plantation ceas-
ed: and then vpon more exact discoueries, there
were yearely supplies of men, women and chil-
dren sent thither with all necessaries, vnder
the conduct of Captaine Newport.

And about three yeares after this time, Cap-
taine Samuel Argall discouered a direct passage
through the Ocean to Virginia, and not to goe
by the West Indies, as they did formerly. Also
in the moneth of May the yeare last aboue said,
there were sent thither 9. ships with fine hun-
dred men women and children, with all neces-
sary prouision, vnder command of Sir Thomas
Gate knight, a graue expert souldier now ap-
pointed Lieutenant generall in Virginia, Sir
George Somers knight, a man very industrious
and forward was now made admirall of Vir-
ginia, and Captaine Newport an excellent Na-
uigator was made Vice-admirall: with these
at this time went other expert Captaines and
very resolute gentlemen, these attued at Virgi-
nia in the yeare 1609. and likewise at the end
of the yeare 1609. there was sent an other sup-
ply of 3. ships with 150 men being for the
most part artificers, vnder command of the
Lord De la Ware, who by free election of the
Treasurer and counsell of Virginia, and with
the full consent of the generality of that compa-
ny was constituted and authorized, during his
naturall life to bee Lord Gouernor and Cap-
taine Generall of all the English Collonies
planted or to be planted in Virginia, according
to the tenor of his Maiesties letters patents
granted that yeare 1609. vnto that company.
Captaine Argall conducted the Lord De la
Ware by Sea,

The Lord De la Ware being arriued in Vir-
ginia ordered all things in the best manner he
could, & with his forces marched vp into diuers
parts of that country, with full purpose to make
further discoueries: built new Townes and
forts, and to bring the Saluages vnto his obe-
dience: and sent captaine Argall to the Bermo-
does, & to discouer the North parts of Virginia.
The Lord De la Ware shed his best diligence
and industrie and therewithall tooke such extra-
ordinary paines that hee fell into extreame
sickness, which preuented all his designes, and
forced him to goe thence and seeke a bath in the
West Indies, but being at Sea, his sickneese so
encreased, that he was constrained to beare vp
for the Iles of Assoris, where hee recouered
some part of his strength, and so from thence
hee with Captaine Argall came for England:
the next yeare following Sir George Somers
went from Virginia to the Bermodes, to fetch
Pork, where he dyed of a surfeit in eating of a
pig. Captaine Newport seeing the necessary
yearely supplies for this plantation not to pro-
ceed as was requisite for so honourable an acti-
on: he left the seruice, being chosen one of the 6
masters of the Many royall, and being imployd
by the company of the East India Merchants:
he transported Sir Robert Sherley into Persia.

And this yeare 1614. Sir Thomas Gates came
from Virginia into England, vsing his best
meanes for more supplies to continue their
plantation, hauing left behind him not full
400. men of all that were sent thither, ouer
whom Sir T. Dale knight, a valiant souldier and
discreet gouernour had the full charge and rule.
In this plantation there were builded diuers
townes and forts, the first was called Iames
towne, builded by Captaine Smith, the 2 other
townes were called Henricus & Charles, which
the Lord De la Ware builded: At this time
their seuerall discoueries vp into the land were
no further then to the falls, a place so called, by
reason of the fall of waters: of which Captaine
Smith, sometime president there made a plaine,
and wrote a booke of euery particular place and
of all that hapned there.

And amongst other of worthy memory in
this plantation, you shall vnderstand that Cap-
taine Gotnoll, a braue souldier and very ingeni-
ous, spent much money and aduentured his per-
son, and drew in many others, at the beginning
of this plantation. Captaine Argall being an
ingenious actiue, forward, young gentleman, a-
mongst other his discoueries and bringing of
victuall, from the enemy to the Collony, which
at that time was like to haue perished for want
of food: hee take a French ship and a pinace
which had brought forces to plant within the
English limits: hee razed their forts and sup-
planted them, for their comming was to haue
supplanted the English Collony. Hee also the
last yeare tooke the daughter of the great Po-
howhatan prisoner, who being well entreated be-
came a Christian: and then married Master
Iohn Rolfe an English gentleman in Iames
towne, by meanes whereof Powhatan dischar-
ged and sent home all English prisoners in
most kind manner, besides the generall peace
which ensued vpon it. Through the sin-
gular industrie and policy of Sir Tho. Dale being
marshall of Virginia, and principall comman-
der there. And in July this yeare 1614. Cap-
taine Argall brought letters from Sir Tho. Dale
and others certifying the Treasurer, and whole
company of Virginia, of the present estate of
their Collony, and that the English were now
become laborious and industrious, & were plen-
teously stored with food of their owne, and well
furnished with good houses in sundry places for
their habitation, & most indiciously manifested
vnto the company the iust cause of good hope &
great profit to ensue in short time by this plan-
tation, if they would speedily and competently
supply the Collony, whereupon, there was sent
the first weeke of November, this yeare 1614. a
ship with 34. men, and 11. women, with appa-
rell and other necessaries, for the reli of the
Collony there resident. And thus much at this
time, and in this place, touching this Planta-
tion shall suffice, by reason M. Hacklute, Cap-
taine Smith, and others, haue written sundry
ample discourses thereof.

The first plantation of the English in New-found-land.

For more then 50. yeares past, the English
hauing had recourse to a remote Country, cal-
led New found-land, the which was first disco-
uered by Sebastian Gabot, and hath euer since
beene yearely frequented by the English in fish-
ing time, as being the most commodious, and
best stored place for fishing that is yet knowne,
for the great quantity of fish that is there taken,
is such as the English transport the same to o-
ther Nations, & as this Sea is plenteous with
fish, so likewise the land adiacent was found to
be fertile, the ayre and clime wholesome, fit for
habitation, and so it would proue a great che-
rishing to the Fishermen, in the time of their
yearely fishing, whereupon his Maiesty in the 8.
yeare of his raigne, by his letters Patents vnto
the Earle of Northampton, Sir Lawrence Tan-
field Knight, Lo. chiefe Baron of the Exchequer,
sir John Doderidge Knight, the K. Serieant at
Law, sir Francis Bacon knight, the Kings So-
licitor generall, sir Daniel Dun sp. of the Ar-
ches, with diuers other Knights, Esquires,
Gentlemen, and Cittizens, whose names are
mentioned in the Patent, that they and their
successors should be a body corporate, and to be
called by the name of Treasurer, and company
of Aduenturers, and planters of the Cittie of
London and Bristol, for the Collony & planta-
tion of new found land, in the Southerne and
Eastern-parts, lying between the degrees of 52.
and 46. by vertue of which Patent, this Com-
pany sent Ships, with men, women, and all ne-
cessaries thither, and obtained of Iohn Guy
a Cittizen of Bristoll, a man very industrious,
and of good experience, to be their Generall in
this Plantation, who planted a Collony in the
Ile of New-found-land, with Englishmen
and women, and with them for their vse, and to
encrease there: hee also transported Hennes,
Duckes, Pigeons, Conies, Goates, kine, and
other liue creatures, all which did very well
there; this Generall Guy stayd there with the
Collony both Winter and Summer, whose na-
tures and conditions in generall agreed well
with the soyle and clime, in this Plantation,
there were sent none but men of cuill life, and
of some honest trade, or profession, by which
course they liued and prospered the better, since
the date of their Charter, which was the se-
cond of May the yeare aboue said, they haue sent
yearely supplies thither, vnto this present yeare
1614. Master Iohn Slaney Esquire was the
first Treasurer of this Company.

Guyana first discouered.

In the yeare 1595. Sir Walter Raleigh,
Knight Captain of her Maiesties Garde, Lieu-
tenant generall of Cornwall, and Lord War-
den of the Stannires, went to the seas to disco-
uer the long and rich Kingdomes of Guyana,
neere the equinoctiall line, whereto hee was
incouraged by the reports of certaine Spanish
gentlemen his prisoners, as also by certaine re-
lations printed in the Spanish tongue wherein
are set downe the names of diuers noble Spa-
niards that had formerly attempted the Con-
quest of that Country but with ill successe.

The whole relation of which enterprise of
Sr. Walter Raleigh is written by himselfe,
since that time translated almost into all lan-
guages, and into Latine copiously by Theo-
dore de Bri, in his three volumes of the Naniga-
tions of latter ages, and therefore I shall not
neede to set downe any particular discourse
thereof.

This goodly large Country, on the North
part is bounded with the Sea, and on the
South parts, with the famous River of Ama-
zones, and on the West parts the mountaines
of Peru, this pleasant fertile and opulent
Country is very lately described, by Robert
Harcourt, of Stanton Harcourt Esquire, in
a booke of his voyage to Guyana, published the
last yeare, one thousand fiue hundred and thir-
teene, and this yeare one thousand fiue hundred
and fourteene hee was very industrious and
forward to plant a Collony of English there,
in his booke of the discovery of this Country,
hee tells that Captaine Charles Lee, had for-
merly taken possession of this country at Wya-
poco, to the vse of the Kings most excellent
Maiestie King *Iames*.

The North-west passage.

And as touching the discovery of the North-
west passage, there hath bin as great diligence
and industry vsed as was possible, by the most
skilfull and resolute Navigators of this prege
mant age, with promise of good reward to the
discoverer: and many braue adventurous spirits
haue diuers times attempted it, most whereof
in their best opinions, supposed they had plain-
ly discouered a passage through those frozen
straights, into the great sea, and consequently
a very short cut and speedy passage to the East
Indies, &c. as may appeare by sundry Mapps, and
as you may read at large in Master Hackluites
booke of English voyages.

And for the good effecting of this hard discove-
ry so much desired & endeavoured: It pleased the
Kings most excellent Maiestie about two yeres past, to incorporate
certaine Knights Gen. and merchants of Lon-
don, and by letters patents, made them a Soci-
ety, commonly called the company of Merchants
of the North-west passage, since which time
they haue sent yerely to make perfect that nice
discovery, & by Gods permission they intend to
send thither again this next ensuing spring not-
withstanding all former expences & difficulties.

The first plantation of the English in the Bermodes, otherwise called the Sommer Ilands.

In the yeare 1609. the aduentrurers and
Company of Virginia sent from London, a
fleete of eight shippes with people to supplie
and make strong the Collonie in Virginia, sir
Thomas Gates, being Generall in a shippe of
300. tun in this ship was also sir George Som-
mers, who was Admirall, and Captaine New-
port vice-Admirall, and with them about 160.
persons, this ship was Admirall, and kept com-
panie

panie with the reſt of the Fleet to the height of 30 degrees, and being then aſſembled to conſult touching diuers matters, they were ſurpriſed with a moſt extreme violent ſtorme which ſcattered the whole fleet, yet all the reſt of the fleete bent their conſe for Virginia, where by Gods ſpeciall fauour they arriued ſafely, but this great ſhip, though new, and farre ſtronger then any of the reſt, fell into a great leake, ſo as Mariners, and paſſengers were forced for three dayes ſpace, to doe their vtmoſt to ſaue themſelues, from ſudden ſinking: but notwithſtanding their inceſſant pumping, and ſtring out of water by Buckets, and all other meanes, yet the water couered all the goods, within the hold, and all men were vtterly tired, & ſpent in ſtrength, and ouercome with labour, and hopeleſſe of any ſuccour, moſt of them were gone to ſleepe, yeelding themſelues to the mercy of the Sea, being all very deſirous to die vpon any ſhoare, whereſoeuer, Sir George Somers ſitting at the ſtearne, ſaw the ſhip deſperate of reliefe lacking euery minute when the ſhip would ſinke, eſpied land, which according to his, and Captaine Newports opinion, they iudged it ſhould be that dreadfull coaſt of the Bermodes, which Iland were of all Nations, ſaid and ſuppoſed to be inchanted and inhabited with witches, and deuills, which grew by reaſon of accuſtomed monſtrous Thunder, ſtorme, and tempeſt, were vnto thoſe Ilandes, alſo for that the whole coaſt is ſo wonderous dangerous, of Rockes, that few can approach them, but with vnſpeakeable hazard of ſhipwrack. Sir George Somers, Sir Thomas Gates, Captaine Newport, and the reſt, ſuddenly agreed of two euills to chuſe the leaſt, and ſo in a kind of deſperate reſolution, reared the ſhippe mainely for theſe Ilandes, which by Gods diuine prouidence, at a high water ranne right betweene two ſtrong Rockes, where it ſtuck faſt without breaking, which gaue leaſure, and good opportunitie for them to hoyſe out their boat, and to land all their people as well Saylors, as ſouldiers, and others in good ſafety, and being come a ſhoare, they were ſome refreſhed, and cheered the ſoyle and aire being moſt ſweet and delicate: the ſalt Water did eat ſtyple to moſt of the ſhips lading and vnſtuall yet ſome meale was well recouered, with many particular things for their common vſe, and they all humbly thanked God for his great mercy in ſo preſeruing them from deſtruction.

It theſe Ilands the Sea doth not ebbe and flow full foure foot.

Then preſently, they ſought farther into the Iland for foode, which being neuer yet inhabited by any people, was ouergrowne with woods, and the woods replenished with wilde ſwine, which Swine as it is very probable ſwom thither, out of ſome ſhippewracke, they found alſo great multitude of fowle of ſundry kinds, being then in a manner very tame, they found ſome fruit, as mulberies, peares, and palmytoes, with ſtately Ceader Trees, and in the Sea, and in the Rockes, great plenty of moſt pleaſant and wholſome fiſh.

Here of neceſſity they were conſtrayned to ſtay almoſt tenne Moneths, in which ſpace by the ſpeciall mercy, and diuine prouidence of almighty God, to make good the diſcouery of the Ilands vnto them, that they by diligence and induſtry, ſaued ſo much of the timber, tackling and other things out of their great ſhippe which lay wracke, and ſtuck faſt betweene two Rockes, as therewithall, and with ſuch ſupply of fiſhe as they found in thoſe Ilands, they builded their two veſſels, the leſſer whereof is ſome as it was finiſhed, it was manned, and ſent to goe to the Colony in Virginia, to ſignifie vnto them how all things had hapned with their commanders, and their company, and that they would ſhortly ſet ſayle for Virginia, and when the bigger veſſell, was finiſhed, and victualled with ſwines fleſh, and with what elſe that place would afford them, theſe Commanders, with all their company imbarked themſelues, and by Gods great mercy, arriued ſafely at Virginia, when all Engliſhmen deemed them to be vtterly caſt away.

When theſe three worthy Commanders, had ſetled the Colony, then Sir George Somers returned againe to the Bermodies, where he died of a ſurfeit, viz. eating Porke: his ſhip returned, hauing left three men there to keepe poſſeſſion of thoſe Ilands.

Theſe Ilands are within the limits of Virginia, and the company finding land enough to plant vpon the maine in Virginia, ſold theſe Ilands of the Bermodies vnto 120. perſons of the ſame company, who ſince that time they obtayned a Charter and ſo they now hold thoſe Ilands from his Maieſtie. And in April 1612. the ſaid new company ſent thither a ſhip with 60 perſons, who arriued and remayned there very ſafely.

And when the ſaid new company was truely informed of the wholeſomneſſe of the Aire, and pleaſantneſſe of the ſoyle, and the aptneſſe thereof, of it ſelfe in all reſpects to maintaine a Colony, the ground being ſo fertile that it will yeild two harueſts in one yeare: great plentie of woods and lofty Ceaders: well ſtoyed with Fowle, and great plenty of good fiſh: and that beſides the fertilitie of the ſoyle, which they had tryed, would beare with great encreaſe, all kind of Engliſh graine, fruits, trees, hearbes, and vines, beſides the great hope of Amber-greece, and ſome pearle, which is found there; they ſent yearely ſupplies thither of men, and ſome women, with all things neceſſary for ſo worthy a plantation, ſo as at this time there are ſix hundred perſons well fortified, with plenty of great ordnance, beeing now very well able to reſiſt a proud daring Aduerſary, by reaſon there are but two Inlets, and they both ſo narrow, as but one ſhip can come at once into the harbour and the Ilands are inuironed with Rockes inacceſſable, and within there is a moſt excellent harbour, for a Navie of great ships.

The Bermudes are about 500 leagues from Virginia.

The great Iland is diuided into eight Cantons, or Tribes, bearing the name of eight of the chiefe Planters. viz. the Earle of Northamptons Tribe, the Earle of Pembrookes Tribe, the Lord Paget, the Lord Cauendiſh, the

Lord

Lord Harrington, Sir Thomas Smith, Sir Robert Mawſel, and Sir Edwin Sands Tribe, ſome of the leſſer Iſles are one mile, and ſome two and three miles of groumd, in which if they digge, they find good freſh water. The companie hath by this time ſpent twenty thouſand pound in this plantation and purchaſe. The company named theſe Ilands, by the name of the Sommer Ilands: they lie in thirty two degrees of the North latitude: Richard Moore was ſent thither as deputy gouernor there for the company, Sir Thomas Smith Knight, was then gouernor, and Maſter William Caning the deputie Gouernor of this company.

Theſe Ilands for diuers yeeres were of many ſuppoſed, and reported to be fleeting and ſhifting Ilands: and at certaine ſeaſons in the yeare, with ſtrong winds and tempeſts, they floated and removed from one place to another, which fooliſh opinion began, by reaſon that diuers ſhips in ſundry voyages by ſeuerall chances, being by tempeſt driuen vpon the danger of the rocks of thoſe Ilands and frighted with terrible long thunder, lightning, and fierce rayne, which happened at their then being, diuers of which Maſters, and Saylers, certaine yeeres after being ſent of purpoſe to make a diſcouery of thoſe Iſles, but could not find them, and being returned, they ſayd they were removed, or elſe they would haue found them, &c.

Amongſt the manifold tokens and ſignes of the infinite bleſſings of Almighty God beſtowed vpon this Kingdome, by the wonderous, and merciefull eſtablishing of peace within ourſelues, and the full benefite of conioyd with all Chriſtian nations, and others: of all which graces let no man dare to preſume bee can ſpeake too much, whereof in truth there can neuer be enough ſayd: neither was there euer any people leſſe conſiderate, or leſſe thankefull then at this time, being not willing to endure the memory of their preſent happineſſe, as well in the vniuerſall encreaſe of Commerce, and traffique throughout the Kingdome, great building of royall ſhips, by priuate merchants, the repeopling of Cities, Townes, and Villages, beſides the vndiſcernable, and ſudden encreaſe of fayre and coſtly buildings, as well within the City of London, as in the ſuburbes thereof: eſpecially within theſe twelue yeeres for pregnant witneſſe whereof, I referre all that are preſent, vnto the vnimagined, and vnthought-of buildings at this day, ſcarcely finiſhed betweene Saint Katherines and Radcliffe with the reſt there adiacent, and vnto the new buildings on the Weſt end of the City, namely the two new ſtreets neere Charing Croſſe, and the Strand, aunciently called Saint Martines lane, and Drury lane, and the innumerable new buildings there adiacent, beſides the world of new buildings at the weſt, and South parts of Weſtminſter, &c. And therewithall, the ſudden encreaſe, and new building of fayre and ſtately pallaces in euery Village. And in all Townes Corpoate within twenty mile compaſſe of the City, as alſo the plantation of Engliſh in Ireland, Virginia, and new found Land, in the Bermodes, and new England, and diuers other Ilands, the diſcouery of the Northweſt paſſage, and the making of new riuers, namely that which is brought to the Northpart of London, of all which, due mention is made in their proper places, beſides the generall repaire of Parith Churches, the amending of ſtreetes, by taking away ſundry the cauſeys, reforming high-wayes, & throughfayres in city, and Countrey, within this laſt ſeauen yeeres, more then in fifty yeeres before, as alſo the plenteous encreaſe of orchards, and gardens, more then in all former times. And laſtly whereof there is a more generall, and particular notice taken by all perſons, reſorting, and reſiding in London, the new and pleaſant walkes on the Northſide of the City, anciently called Moſefield which field (vntill the third yeere of King Iames) was a moſt noyſome and offenſiue place, being a generall laykall, and often moſth ground, whereof it firſt tooke the name. This field for many yeares was enuironed, and croſſed with deep ſtanking ditches, and noyſome common ſhewers, and was of former times euer held impoſſible to be reformed, eſpecially to bee reduced to any part of that fayre, ſweete, and pleaſant condition, as now it is. And likewiſe the two other fields adioyning, which vntill the late time aforeſayd, were infectious, and very grieuous vnto the City, and all paſſengers, who by all meanes endeauoured to ſhun thoſe fields, being loathſome both to ſight and ſent: yet neuertheleſſe vpon the good opportunitie of ſweete peace, whereof theſe three fields, will euer remaine a perfect teſtimony, the firſt of which is, that fayre ſquare, next the City wall, was greatly further-ed, by Sir Leonard Holliday, in the time of his Maioralty, and through the great paynes, and induſtry of maſter Nicholas Leate, reduced from the former vile condition, vnto moſt faire, and royall walkes as now they are, which worke whileſt it was in doing, being very difficult, the people ſpake very bitterly, and rudely againſt thoſe two worthy men, and their good endeauours therein, and in deriſion ſayd it is a holiday worke. All which they patiently endured, and perſiſted, but when the multitude ſaw this worke brought vnto deſired effect, then their vnconſtant mindes changed: and applauded the effect; vnto this worke there were diuers Citizens deſirous to put to their helping hands: amongſt which there was none like to maſter Nicholas Leate, a very graue, wiſe, and well affected Citizen: who tooke very great paines, in the beginning, and finiſhing the firſt field called Moſefield, and diſburſed diuers ſummes of money, as well for mending the high way, as for reducing the two other outward fields, into that comely ſhape, and pleaſant manner as now they are, as well in making the walks, as planting the trees, without whoſe eſpeciall ayde this worthy worke had neuer bin accomplyſhed. He purpoſeth to make the vtmoſt walke, the fayreſt of all the three walkes: all which was done at the generall charge of the Citizens of London, and other

This From Fidgate to Towerhill.

From Fidgate to white-chapell, from Biſhopsgate to Shoreditch Church, in Redcroſſe ſtreete, in Workeſter, Saint Johns ſtreet, in Holborne, and the Strand, and in other places about London.

The new walkes on the North ſide of London, formerly called Moſe-fields, with other things of note.

the inhabitants: and what else is to be said touching the particulars of the first field, I referre you vnto my abridgement.

Sir Thomas Roe sent Ambassadour to the great Maghoore.

Toward the end of this present yeare 1614. viz. in the beginning of January, his Maiesty at the request of the East India Company, sent Sir Thomas Roe Knight Ambassadour to the great Maghoore, whom some corruptly call Mogall, a mighty Prince of Asia, hauing all the maine land betweene the famous River, Indus, and Ganges, and the Dominions of Porus, subdued by Alexander the great, he is a mighty, opulent, and ciuill Prince, and is the ninth in descent from the Scithian Tamberlayne, vnto whom this Ambassadour had Commission to make, and contract a league betweene his Maiestie, and his Subiects, for commerce, and Traffique in his Dominions, and to procure and establish a factory for our Nation in sundry parts of his Dominions, as well Sea-ports, as Inland Townes, with other instructions, yet vndiscouered, hee is the first that euer was imployed in this high nature, to any of those so farre remote Eastерne Princes.

In this expedition, there were sent out foure great Ships well furnished, like Ships of so honourable a Company, for defence, and Trade: ouer which Captaine Kelling went Admirall, and Generall, for the said Company, with commission for the charge, and service committed vnto him.

The fore-named worthy young Knight, and right valiant Gentleman, in the yeare 1609. at his, and his friends charge, builded a Ship, and a Pinace, for the discouery of Guyana, hee set sayle from Plimmouth the 24. of Febru. and in the end of Aprill, fell with the great River of the Amazons, which is vnder the Equinoctiall line, and is in breadth at the entrance there of, 100. and 50. miles fresh water, and full of Islands, which River hee first discouered, and entred with his Shippe 200. miles, and then with Boates 100. more, and made diuers incurseyons into the maine among the Indians being well inhabited, and full of good commodities, though not so plentifull as it might be, by reason the natiues prouide no more then for their necessity, from thence he came along the coast into diuers Riuers, and entred the Country by Indian Boates, and went ouer the Chatozants and hills, passed ouer thirty two falles in the River of Wia Poco, from whence hee descended, hauing with great labour and perill, spent 13. moneths in this discouery, viz. from the riuer of Amozones, to the riuer of Oronoque, at the end whereof, not finding all the West Indies to be full of Gold, as some suppose, hee returned by Trenydado, and the Westerne Ilands, and arriued at the Wight, in July, one thousand six hundred and eleuen: and thus much in honour of his forwardnesse, paines, and industry. I thought fit to mention, though not in his proper place, lest vertue should bee forgotten, and others reape the honour of his labours, since which time hee hath twice sent thither to make further discoueries, and maintained 20. men in the River of Amozones, for the good of his Countrey, who are yet remaining there, and supplied.

The names of the chiefe persons that attended and accompanied the Palsgraue into England.

John Albert, Earle of Solmes, great Master of his Court at Heidelberg.

Sir Meinhardt of Schoenberg, Master of his Youthold in this expedition.

Vollracht of Plessen.

Sir Pleickhardt of Helmstat, high Marshall of his house at Heidelberg.

Dieterech of Schoenberg, Bongraue of Stockenberg, Pleickhardt, Landtschadt, Marshall gouernour of Germersheim, Peter Dathenus, principall Secretary of Estate, and of the Chauncery, all these were his Counsellours of Estate, and had 22. Seruants, Gentlemen, and Grooms allowed to attend them.

The Earles of his Trayne.

Count of Erpach.
Count of Wirgensteine.
Count Iohn of Nassaw.
Count Lewensteyne.
The two Earles of Hollock.
The Count of Hoherloe, one of the Reingraues.
Count Nassaw of Sandbruck.
Count Hanaw
The Baron of Limpringh.
These Noblemen had 32. Gentlemen and Grooms allowed to attend them.

His Highnesse Pages of honour.

Count of Eisenberg, Count of Solme, and Baron Zeratin, there were foure other Pages, with their Tutors and Seruants.

There were 25. gentlemen of blood also that attended the Prince, Master Abraham Scultetus Chaplaine, Doctor Rumpfey Phisitian, Master Colb Treasurer: the number of his whole traine was about 200.

60

A CON-

A CONTINVATION OF OVR CHRONICLE OF *ENGLAND*,

from the yeare 1614. being the 12. yeare of the Raigne of our Soueraigne Lord, King IAMES of blessed memory, vnto the yeare 1632. being the eighth yeare of the Raigne of our Soueraigne Lord King CHARLES.

Great Frost and Snow.

THe 17. of January 1614. began a great Frost, with ercreame snow, which continued vntill the 14. of February: And albeit the violence of the Frost and Snow some dayes abated, yet it continued freazing and snowing much or little vntill the 7. of March, whereby much Cattell perished, as well old as young: and in some places diuers deuised Snow-Ploughes to cleare the ground, and to fodder Cattell; this Snow was very dangerous to all Trauailers.

The King at Cambridge.

Tuesday the 7. of March, the King was Royally receiued into the Vniuersity of Cambridge, and stayed there vntill Saturday, and being much delighted with their Entertainements, hee came to them againe the 25. of the same moneth.

Reg. 13. 1615.

Monday the 23. of Aprill 1615. George Villiers Esquire, was sworn Gentleman of the Kings Bedchamber, and the next day hee was Knighted.

George

The 29. of June, the Lord Hay was created Baron of Sawley: and about three yeares after he was made Viscount of Doncaster.

Lord

Friday the last of June, Sir Robert Dormer Knight and Baronet, was created Lord Dormer of Wyng.

Dormer.

The King in the second yeare of his Paleftes raigne, vpon good aduice, for preseruation of Timber, preuention of all further excessiue encrease of Buildings in London and the Suburbs, and for the reducing of all their Buildings into a more safe, comely, and vniforme Building, Proclamation was then made, streightly commanding, that from that time forward all their fore-fronts of all their new Buildings, should bee made either of Brick or Stone but neither that, nor diuers other Proclamations wholly to that purpose prenailes: whereupon diuers were censured in the Starchamber: and yet many still persisted contrary to all the Kings Proclamations, which were made from time to time, euen vnto this present, in which was mentioned the tenour of all the former Proclamations, and commanded all Commissioners to proceede with all strictnesse vpon all such wilfull offenders: and from this time began the new reformation of Building: and the first house of note was Collonell Cecills house in the Strand, and after that a house neere Drapers Hall toward Broadstreet, and after that a Goldsmithes house in Cheapside, ouer against Sadlers Hall: and a Leather sellers house in Paules Churchyard neere the North gate, ye was compelled thereunto after his house was set vp being all of Timber.

Proclamation against building in London.

Such was the great encrease of Roagues and Vagabonds, in London and Middlesex, that Bridewell could not containe them, nor implay them, nor willingly receiue any from the Iustices out of the County of Middlesex, because they held it contrary to the Charter of London, and the foundation of Bridewell, whereupon the Iustices of Middlesex by licence from his Maiestie, builded a house of Correction, for the County of Middlesex, neere vnto the East end of Clarkenwell Church, for the punishment and imployment of sturdy Roagues and Vagabonds of the County of Middlesex, and for the furtherance of the said house; the Citty of London gaue vnto it fiue hundred pounds in money, to make a stock, for the employment of their Poore, and the Iustices ordained two Maisters and a Matron to gouerne the house: This was done this yeare 1615.

A new house of Correction for the County of Middlesex.

And this Sommer 1615. the Citty of London reduced the rude vast place of Smithfield, into a faire and comely order, which formerly was neuer held possible to be done, and paued it all ouer, and made diuers shewers to conuay the water, from the new Channells which were made by reason of the new Pauement: they also made strong rayles round about Smithfield, and sequestred the middle part of

Smithfield paued.

the said Smithfield, into a very faire and cimill Walke, and rayled it round about with strong Rayles, to defend the place from annoyance and danger, as well from Carts, as all manner of Cattell, because it was intended hereafter, that in time it might proue a faire and peaceable Market-place, by reason that Newgate Market, Cheapside, Leaden-hall, and Gracechurch street, were unmeasurably pestred, with the unmaginable increase, and multiplicity of Market-folkes, as well by Carts as otherwise, to the great vexation of all the Inhabitants, annoyance of the streete, trouble, and danger to all passengers, as well Coaches, Carts, & Horses, as otherwise: so as the Magistrates of the Citty, for diuers late yeares, tooke great care, and deuice, how to make some new conuenient Market-place, for the generall ease of the Citty, and to auoyde danger and offence to all passengers: and at this time the Cittizens began their new Pauement of broad free stone, close to their Shops: and the taking down of all high Causies about London, namely, in the Strand, in Holborne, Saint Johns streete, Barbican, Redcrosse streete, Whitecrosse streete, without Bishops gate, and Aldgate, and at the Hynoones, and other places.

The first paning of London streetes with broad Free stone.

And the generall taking downe of all high Causies

And concerning Smithfield, why it was so called, I read not, though some imagine it to be anciently the habitation of black Smithes and Farriers, for the generall seruice of the Citty: which opinion is easily refelled, by reason there were alwayes many Smiths in all the parts of London yea euen in the North side of Cheapside, betweene the Standard & the Crosse there was a Smiths Forge within this 80. yeares; neither is it yet full threescore yeares past, since a great part of Cheapside was vnpaued: and likewise the South Churchyard of Paules, anciently called the Close: And lest in time to come some capticus Cockbraines should either deme this to be true, or not worthy the Chronicling: you shall vnderstand, that the Citie of Paris in France, was not paued vntill the yeare 1186. nor the Citie of Lubeck in Germany in many yeares after, as appeares by their seuerall Chronicles.

This field commonly called Well-Smithfield, was for many yeares called Ruthans field, by reason it was the vsuall place of Fraye and common fighting, during the time that Sword and Bucklers were in vse.

Ruthans hall.

Sword and Buckler in great vse.

When euery Seruingman, from the base to the best, carried a Buckler at his backe, which hung by the hilt or pomell of his Sword which hung before him.

This manner of Fight was frequent with all men, vntill the fight of Rapier and Dagger tooke place and then suddenly the generall quarrell of fighting abated, which began about the 20. yeare of Queene Elizabeth, for vntill then it was vsuall to haue Frayes, Fights, and Quarrells, vpon the Sundayes and Holidayes, sometimes twenty, thirty, and forty Swords and Bucklers, halfe against halfe, as well by quarrells of appointment as by chance.

Especially from the midst of Aprill, vntill the end of October, by reason, Smithfield was then free from durte, and plashes. And in the Winter season, all the high Streetes, were much annoyed and troubled with heurely frayes, of Sword and buckler men, who take pleasure in that bragging fight; and although, they made great shew of much furie, and fought often, yet seldome any man hurt, for the thing was not then in vse: neither would one of twentie strike beneath the waste, by reason they held it cowardly and beastly. But the ensuing deadly fight of Rapier and Dagger, suddenly suppressed the fighting with Sword and Buckler.

The 27. of September, 1615. died the Lady Arbella in the Tower, and was buried in the Chappell Royall at Westminster. The Lady Arbella dies.

Sunday the 23 of October 1615. Richard Weston yeoman, was indicted and condemned in the Guildhall of London for poysoning Sir Thomas Overbury knight, being of late prisoner in the Tower, and this Weston was then his Keeper, hee was executed at Tiburne: the next Wednesday after his iudgement. Weston executed.

Thursday the 9 of November, Anne Turner widow, was condemned in Westminster for being accessory before the murther of Sir Tho. Overbury, and was executed at Tiburne three dayes after. Mrs. Turner executed.

Thursday, the 16 of November, Sir Ieruas Elwese knight, Lieutenant of the Tower, was condemned in the Guild-hall, for being accessory before the murther of Sir Tho. Overbury, and was executed vpon the Tower-hill, the 20. of November. Sir Ieruas Elwese.

Monday the 27. of Novemb. James Franckling Gentleman was condemned at Westminster, for being likewise Accessory before to the murther, of the forenamed Sir Tho. Overbury, and was executed at Saint Tho. Awaterings vpon Saterday, the 9 of December. Franckling executed.

The next yeare following, viz. Friday, the 24 of May, the Lady Frances Countesse of Somerset, was brought to Westminster hall, and the next day Robert Earle of Somerset, was brought thither likewise, and had their seuerall Trialls by their peeres touching the busines lately mentioned, and then returned againe to the Tower, and there remained. The Earle & Countesse of Somerset.

The 23 of Decemb. the Earle of Pembroke was sworne a priuie Counsellor. The Earle of Pembroke a priuie Counsellor.

The 11th weeke of Lanuar. Sir George Villers knight was made master of the horse. Sir George Villers master of the horse.

In Aprill this yeare 1616 Sir John Digbie knight was sworne a priuie Counceller, & was made vice Chamberlaine. Anno Reg. 14. 1616. Sir John Digbie a priuie Counceller. Vice Chamberlaine.

At this time Master William Iones merchant gaue about eighteene thousand pound to found a free Schoole in Wales where hee was borne, with Almes houses, and pensioners in London: and a hundred pound a yeare for euer to a learned Preacher in London: and ordained all things for euer to be ordered by the company of haberdashers of London, whereof hee himselfe was free. M. Ienes bountie.

The 9 of Iune 1616. Sir Francis Bacon knight, was sworne a priuie Counseller. Sir Francis Bacon a priuie Counceller.

Such hath beene the plenty of wood in England for all vses, that within mans memory, it was held impossible to haue any want of wood in England; But contrary to former imaginations, such hath beene the great expence of timber for Nauigation; with infinite increase of building of houses, with the great expence of wood to make houshould furniture, caskes and other vessels not to be numbred, and of Carts, Wagons, and Coaches besides the extreame waste of wood in making Iron, burning of brick and tile: That whereas in the yeare of our Lord God 1306. King Edward the first by proclamation prohibited the burning of Sea coale, in London, and the Suburbs, to auoid the sulferous smoke and fauour of that firing; and in the same proclamation commanded all persons to make thei fires of wood, which was performed by all, (Smiths only excepted) yet at this present through the great consuming of wood as aforesaid, and the neglect of planting of woods, there is so great scarcitie of wood through out the whole kingdome, that not only the Citie of London, all hauen townes and in very many parts within the Land the inhabitants in generall are constrained to make their fiers of Sea coale or pit coale; euen in the Chambers of honourable personages, and through necessitie which is the mother of all arts, they haue of very late yeares deuised the making of Iron, the making of all sorts of glasse and burning of bricke with Sea coale or pit coale. The making of Glasse brick and Iron with Sea coale and pit coale.

The 20. of Iune 1616. the King in person being accompanied with Prince Charles, and the great Lords of the Councell sate in the Starre Chamber, and made an Oration vnto the Iudges by way of charge and Instruction. The King maketh an oration in the Starr Chamber.

This summer 1616. Sir John Iolles, Lord Maior of the Citie of London, with foure Aldermen, and one of the Shrieffes: Master Iones common Sergeant, the Sword bearer and many officers in all honourable manner, went by boat to Dertford, and to Graueseend: and there kept Court for the reformation of vnlawfull fishing, and for the remouing of all stops, piles, and weires, and all other enormities from London, Eastward to the riuer of Medway, from thence hee and his traine rode to Rochester, and were very kindly entertained by the Maior of Rochester and his brethren: the next day, the Lord Maior with all his traine went from Rochester by barge to Lee in Essex, and there kept Court, and gaue a Iurie for the reformation of all abuses of the River, as hee had done before at Dertford and Graueseend. The Lord Maior, with the Iurors of the riuer of Thames and diuers Iurors in Kent, Essex, Surrey and Middlesex. With a Barge.

After that from London Westward there was a Court held at Putney, for Surrey, and at Fulham for Middlesex, and there gaue Iuries, as formerly for the conseruation of the River, and safety for Passengers from London, vnto the great stone beyond Staines Westward. And Sir George Bolles, in his time kept Court at Staines and at Kingston, and there gaue Iuries for Middlesex and Surrey.

It is more then fourescore yeares, since that any Lord Maior kept Court at Graueseend and Lee, for as the auncient custome of the Lord Maior was almost forgotten, concerning the visitation of the bounds of the River Eastward within 30. yeares last the riuer of London would not come into any house of diuers when the coales were burned, nor willingly out of the great that vses either for rosted with sea coale fire.

Sunday, the 7. of July, 1616. were enstalled Knights of the Garter: Frauncis Earle of Rotland, Sir George Villers knight, master of the horse, and the Lord Viscont Lisle. Knights of the Garter.

The 9. of July, Sir John Hollis, knight was created Baron of Hawghton, and Sir John Rooper knight, was created Lord Denham of Denham in Kent. Barons created.

Tewsday, the 16 of July, 1616. the Earle of Arundell was sworne a priuie Counceller. The Earle of Arundel a priuie Counseller.

The 20. of July, the Lord Carew was sworne a priuie Counceller. The Lord Carew a priuy Councellor.

At Woodstocke vpon Tewsday, the 27. of August, 1616. Sir George Villers knight, of the Garter, and Master of the Horse was created Viscont Villiers, and Baron of Whaddon. Viscont Villiers created.

Vpon Michaelmas day, Doctor Andrewes B. of Ely was sworne a priuie Counceller. B. Ely a priuie Counceller.

This summer the Citie of London, by vertue of a speciall Commission, from his Maiestie: sent diuers Aldermen, and other chiefe officers into Ireland, to view, order, and settle their new plantation in the Province of Vlster, viz. London Derry and Colerane, and the Territories vnto them belonging: concerning which I purpose by Gods grace to say more hereafter. London sent diuers of the Com millioners into Ireland to order their plantation in Vlster.

This yeare, 1616. the old ruinous Gate, called Aldersgate, was quite taken downe, and more strongly and stately builded, then formerly euer from the foundation: towards the building of which Gate William Parker Citizen, and Merchant tailor of London gaue one thousand pound besides which he gaue many legacies to good purposes. Aldersgate new builded.

Thursday the last of October 1616. viz. All Saints Eue, Prince Charles came in great state by Barge from Barne Elmes to Whitehall accompanied and attended by diuers great Lords, and others of honourable Rancke and quality, besides his owne traine, and was most ioyfully met at Chelsey by the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Citizens of London: each company in a seuerall Barge, and distinguished by their seuerall Armes in their rich Banners and stately Streamers besides the Royall sounds of Drum and Trumpet, and great variety of excellent Musicke, besides all which and the infinite number of people vpon the shoare and in Boates and Barges, to behold this ioyfull day there was also at the Cities charge in honour of his highnesse creation, more particular, pleasant Trophies and ingenious deuices met him vpon the water then euer was at any former creation of any Prince of Wales. Prince Charles created Prince of Wales.

And vpon Monday the fourth of November, at Whitehall where the Kings Maiestie inuested and crowned Prince Charles, Prince of Wales: at this solemne creation were present most of the Nobility of the Land: The Lord Archbishop of Canterbury and diuers other Bishops and reuerend Prelates, all the Iudges of the Law: There were present also the Lord Maior and Aldermen of London in their scarlet Robes, as were the Iudges. The Earle of Arundell was then Earle Marshall.

In honour of this ioyfull Creation, there

were made fine and twentie knights of the Bath, who performed all their Ceremonies in the vpper Parliament house: and the next Sunday both all pageantrie being lustily mounted, they rode to Whitehall, and were there knighted by his Maiestie.

25 knights of the Bath made.

Knights of the Bath.

Iames Lord Maltreuers.
Algernon Lord Percy.
Iames Lord Wriothesley.
Edward Lord Clynton.
Edward Lord Beauchamp.
Lord Parkley.
Lord Mordant.
Sir Alexander Erskin.
Sir Henry Howard.
Sir Edward Sackuill.
Sir William Howard.
Sir Edward Howard.
Sir Mountague Barry.
Sir William Stourton,
Sir Henry Parker.
Sir Dudley North.
Sir Spencer Compton.
Sir William Spencer.
Sir William Seymor.
Sir Rowland Sain. Iohn.
Sir Iohn Candish.
Sir Thomas Nevil.
Sir Iohn Roper.
Sir Iohn North.
Sir Henry Carey.

In honour of this ioyfull Creation there were solemne Triumphs performed at London in the County of Surr. the fourth of November, and published by Walter Pandel Herald of Gent.

Also in honour of this Creation there were foure young Gentlemen selected out of the foure Innes of Court, who fought at Barriers viz. the one halfe against the other.

Barons created.

Thursday, the seuenth of November, Thomas Elmer Lord Chancellor of England, was created Viscount Brackley: and William Lord Knowles was created Viscount Wallingford: and Sir Phillip Stanhope knight, was created Baron of Shelford: and vpon the next Saturday, the Lord Maior feasted the knights of the Bath.

The Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings bench put from his place.

Saturday, the 16. of November, 1616. Sir Edward Cooke knight, was discharged from his office, viz. from being Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench.

Sir Henry Montague Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings bench 20 Sept. Sommer.

Monday, the 18. of November Sir Henry Mountague knight, the Kings Sergeant at Law, was sworne Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench.

This Sommer and harueſt was so dry, that Passengers were anoid with dust in the high wayes, the 20. of November.

The Archbishop of Spalato arriueth in England.

Monday the 16. of December, 1616. Marc Antonius de Dominis, Archbishop of Spalato in the Territory of Venice, was very honourably entertained and receiued at Lambeth by the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, with whom he remained, and writ a briefe declaration of his reasons, for leaving that Prelacy, and forsaking his native Country, which booke was presently published in eight languages, and dispersed through Europe: And in Sommer following, he painted in London the first seame of his tenth Booke of the common weale of the Church: For was afterwards made Deane of Windsor, and Master of the Sauoy.

Sir Thomas Edmonds a Priuy Councellor.

Monday the two and twentieth of December, Sir Thomas Edmonds Knight Ambassador Leger in France, was chosen a Priuy Councellour, and made Comptroller of the Kings household, and the Lord Norris was made Treasurer of the Kings household.

Earle of Buckingham created.

Sunday the fift of Ianuary, the Lord Viscount Villers, was created Earle of Buckingham at Whitehall.

Earle of Buckingham a Priuy Councellor.

Tuesday the fourth of February 1616. the Earle of Buckingham was sworne a Priuie Councellor.

The King in person sate in the Starchamber.

The day the thirteenth of February, the King in Person sate in the Starchamber, and made an excellent Oration to the Lords, and to the Iudges, vnto whom he gaue a charge, and direction, how they should proceede in their Circuits.

Disordered people.

Saturday the fourth of March, many disordered persons of simple kindes, amongst whom there were many young boyes, and lads assembled themselues in Lincolne-Inne field, Lin-bury field in Ratcliffe, and Sydney field, where in riotous manner, they did beate downe the walles and windowes of many dwelling houses, and of all other houses which they suspected to bee bawdie houses. And that afternoone, they erected a new Play-house, and did likewise more hurt in diuers other places, in pulling downe walles and windowes, and spoyling of household-stuffe: and were so head strong, that they did pitifully vex and resist the Sheriffes of London and the Constables and Iustices of Middlesex: Whereupon the Lords of the Councell by the Kings appointment ordayned diuers of the chiefe Iustices of Middlesex to be Iayeuott Marshalls and to execute Marshall Law, if the like occasion should happen.

Denmarke house.

Sabboth-day the fourth of March, this yeare 1616. the Queene feasted the King at her Palace in the Strand, formerly called Somersetset house and then the King commanded it should no more be so called, but that it should from henceforth bee called Denmarke house which sayd Denmarke house the Queene had many wayes repaired, beautified new builded, and enlarged, and brought to it a pipe of Conduit water from Hyde Parke.

Sir Francis Bacon Knight Lord Chancellor.

These vnderwritten of March, the great Seale of England was be intred to Sir Francis Bacon Knight, the Kings Attorney, and was then made Lord Keeper, and within few dayes after, dyed the Lord Ellesmer, Lord Chancellor, and the fourth of Ianuary following Sir Francis

Francis Bacon Lord Keeper, was made Lord Chancellor.

Sir Henry Yelverton the Kings Attorney.

When Sir Francis Bacon was made Lord Keeper, then was Sir Henry Yelverton knight, the Kings Solicitor, made the Kings Attorney, and Walter Thomas Couentry Esquier, Recorder of London, was made the Kings Solicitor, and was Knighted the 16. of March.

The King goeth into Scotland.

Friday the fourteenth of March, 1616. the King being accompanied with the Queene, and Prince Charles, and many of the chiefe Nobilities and others, went from Whitehall to Theobaldes, and from thence the King with his appointed traine, set forward toward Essenborough, the next Monday being Saint Patricks day.

The King returneth from Scotland.

And vpon his Maiesties returne to London: viz. the fifteenth of September next following, the King came from Windsor to London, and was met at Hyde Parke, by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen, and aboue foure hundred of the chiefe Citizens with chaines of gold, and well mounted, the Lord Mayor presented the King with a Purse, and in it fiue hundred pieces of gold, and there the King knighted Sir Anthony Ben Recorder of London.

An. Reg. 15. *Anno Dom.* 1617.

The twentieth of March, 1616. the Lord Hay was sworne a Priuy Councellour at Hinchingbrooke.

The Lord Hay a Priuy Councellor. Lord Nouell created.

Sunday the twenty third of March 1616. at Burley on the hill in Rutland shire, Sir Edward Noell Knight and Baronet, was created Lord Noell of Rydmgton.

Newe chappell of ease builded.

At this time neere Wapping, in the parish of Whitechappell, was new builded a very faire large Chappell, and a Churchyard to it, which were consecrated the seuenth of July, 1617. by the Lord Bishop of London.

The Bishop of Winchester a priuy counsellor.

Vpon Michaelmas day, Doctor Mountague, Bishop of Winchester, was sworne a Priuie Councellor at Hampton Court, and that day at that place Sir Iohn Villers married Francis the daughter of Sir Edward Cooke knight.

Ambassadors from Russia.

Tuesday the fourth of November here arrived Stephen Euanowich, Lieutenant of Rosco, and Marke Euanozin Poddeoi, one of the three Chancellors of Russia, from the late mentioned Michaell Theodorowich, Emperor of Russia, they had audience the next Sunday, and vpon New yeares day the King feasted them, and their chiefe followers & attendants at Whitehall, being fifty in number, their whole traine was seauenty fiue, with this Ambassador, and in the moneth of November abouesayd, Sir Iohn Merrick Knight, returned into England, who as you may reade, was sent Ambassadour into Russia, in the yeere 1614. by his Maiestie, to mediate a peace betweene the Emperor of Russia, and the King of Sweden, which with great difficultie he performed, the manner whereof here followeth.

The King sendeth a Speciall Ambassador to make peace between the Emperor of Russia and the King of Sweden.

The kings Maiesties of Great Britaine, his Ambassador Sir Iohn Merricke, came to Moſco, the twenty one of December, 1614. was very honorably met and receiued into the Citie by the Nobilitie, Gentry, and others, and so conducted to his appointed Lodgings, within the Citie: The third day after, hee had audience with the Emperor, deliuered his Letters from his Maiestie of Great Britaine; wherein was fully expressed the Emperors request; by his late Ambassadour vnto the Kings Maiesty, he had now giuen full power and Commission vnto Sir Iohn Merricke Knight, to Arbitrate, vnder, and compound, all quarrells and controuersies, as well touching Iustitia, as otherwise, betweene the Emperor and the King of Sweden: According to which Commission and with speciall good liking of both these diuided Princes; The sayd Sir Iohn Merricke went from Moſco towards the King of Sweden, the 22. of March, and by reason it was the breaking vp of the Riuers, the waters high, was forced in diuers places to stay vpon the way, so that it was the 11. of July 1615. before he came to Narue, where he found the King of Sweden, Gustauus Adolphus there, with a prepared Army of about twelue thousand soulders of diuers Nations, with full purpose to beſiege the City of Pleſco, alias Vobleo, and to inuade Russia.

The sayd City of Pleſco is distant from Narue 120. English miles.

The English Ambassadour before his entry into the City of Narue, was conducted through the whole Army, and had an honourable warlike entertainment, and the second day after, had audience with the King, and agreed for Commissioners to be sent, and place appointed for the Treaty, and the English Ambassadour according to his Commission, to end the difference betweene both Princes. But there was a long time spent in priuate contending, about the titles of the Princes, and the Commissioners, and of their precedence, and place of meetings setting the Seats, and who should first begin the speech, with many other vnimaginable differences, before they could proceed to the maine businesse, all which in the end was reconciled, in the name of his Maiestie of Great Britaine by his Ambassadour. The second of Ianuary, began the first Treaty, which continued till the end of February the same yeere 1615. but the difference betweene them was so great, that at those meetings could nothing bee done: Whereupon the Ambassadour tooke a truce betweene them for three monethes, in which time the English Ambassadour with the Russian Commissioners, repaired to the Moſco, and there continued till May following, who had diuers times accesse to the Emperor, and conferences with his Councell about those businesses, & was earnestly by the Emperor intreated againe to repaire vnto the second Treatie, in hope of ahappy issue: About the 21. of May, the Ambassador tooke his Journey from the Moſco, but it was the 21. of December, 1616. before he could bring both the Commissioners to meet together at the appointed place, called Stolb, where the Ambassador was lodged, before which time, the English Ambassador was with the Sweden Commissioners at Lodiga, twenty miles from Stolba, who with them made an agreement of all the maine points, onely left diuers Ceremonies, which the Ambassador could not end without the Rus-

sian Commissioners, was referred til both their meetings, and after many meetings, conferences, and vnparlances, in the end his Maiesties Ambassadour with much difficultie, deuised, ratified, and confirmed, a perpetuall peace: the particulars of all which apparently more at large, by a contract firmed, sealed, and oathes taken on both sides, by the Commissioners: as also the English Ambassadour was intreated as witnesse, to firme, and put his seale to the sayd Contract; to all which conditions and like Contract it was agreed, the Princes themselues should confirme, by hand, seale, and oath, which accordingly since is performed. Thus this happy peace, not without great difficultie, labour, and paines of the English Ambassador, was concluded and finally ended the 27. of *February* 1616. in Stolbe, through the onely and sole mediation, and authority of the Kings Maiestie of Great Britaine. to his euerlasting honour, the great content of both the Princes, and much reioycing of their Subiects, who acknowledged his Maiestie to be the onely meanes of the auoyding the effusion of much Christian blood, which would otherwise haue ensued: which no lesse hath beene acknowledged by the Princes themselues, by their Ambassadors sent of purpose vnto his Maiestie, and a token of thankefulnesse from the Emperour of Russia, of a large present, sent vnto his Maiestie, deliuered by his said Ambassador.

The last Article of the Contract betweene the Commissioners of both Princes followeth.

AND for more ample and firme assurance, that all the premises of this Contract, bee concluded and agreed betweene vs the Commissioners of their said Royall and Princely Maiestie, fully authorized in the presents, and by the mediation of the Ambassadour of his Royall Maiestie of Great *Britaine*, often before mentioned, and shall by our great Lord *Gustauus Adolphus*, King of *Sweden*, and his Royall Maiesties heires and successours Kings of *Sweden*, be faithfully, firmely, and inuiolably holden and obserued, in all the points and clauses thereof, without craft or guile. And so we the Ambassadour of our great Lord *Gustauus Adolphus* King of *Sweden*, fully authorized *Iacobus Delagardy*, Earle of *Lexe*, &c. and one of the Kings Priuy Counsell, and *Henry Horne* Lord of *Rancks* and *Wonden*, &c. likewise Counsellour to his Maiestie, and *Aruey Tonnison* Lord of *Tuisbury*, &c. and *Mous Martinsin* the Kings Secretary, haue established and confirmed this Contract of peace, with our Oathes vpon the holy Gospell, and by vertue of the Authority which wee haue on this behalfe, haue subscribed it with our owne hands, and sealed it with our Signets, and hauing louingly desired and entreated his Royall Maiestie of great *Britaine*, his Ambassadour fully authorized the Noble and Worthy Sir *Iohn Merricke* Knight, that he on the behalfe of his Royall Maiestie of Great *Britaine* as Mediatour, will together with vs subscribe and seale these presents, in witnesse of all that is here agreed. And wee the Commissioners of his Royall Maiestie of *Sweden*, haue deliuered this Instrument of our present Contract vnto the Ambassadour of his Princely Maiestie of *Russia*. Yeouen at *Stolba* the 27. of February 1617.

The like Article word for word is in the Russian *Contract, firmed and sealed by them to the* Swedens *Commissioners.*

BEATI PACIFICI.

Thursday the 6. of Nouember, the Lord Hay married the Lady Lucy, daughter to the Earle of Northumberland. The Lord Hay marryed

Sunday the last of Nouember 1617. the Lord Archbishop of Spalato, Preached at the Seruants Chappell in the Italian tongue, there were present the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Chancellour, the Earles of Arondell and Pembroke, Lord Zouch, the Lord Compton, and many others of great note, hee preached there againe vpon Sunday, the nineteenth of Aprill 1618. and did so vpon sundry Sundayes diuers yeares after. The Lord Archbishop of Spalato preacheth in London.

Sunday the 14. of December at Lambeth, were two Bishops consecrated, viz. Doctor Felton Master of Pembroke Hall, was consecrated Lord Bishop of Bristow, and Doctor Montaigne Deane of Westminster, was consecrated Lord Bishop of Lincolne; at this Consecration were present and assistant at the imposition of hands, with the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Archbishop of Spalato, the Bishops of London, Ely, Rochester, and Lichfield. Two Bishops consecrated.

Monday the 24. of December 1617. was borne Charles Lodowick at Heydelberg, about foure a clocke in the morning, and was christened in March following, Prince Charles was one of his Godfathers. The second son of the Lady Elizabeth borne at Heydelberg.

At this time the Apothecaries of London, obtained a Corporation for themselues & their successours for euer, and by letters Patents were made a body Politique and Corporate, and that all such as vse and professe the Art and Mistery of Apothecaries within London and the Suburbs thereof, and within seauen miles compasse thereof shall be ordered and gouerned by the Master Wardens, and society of the Art and Mistory of the Apothecaries, Edmond Phillips was the first Master, Stephen Higgines and Thomas Fanes, were the first Wardens. The Apothecaries of London made a particular Company.

New-yeares day being Thursday 1617. George Earle of Buckingham, was created Marquesse of Buckingham created.

Marquesse of Buckingham at Whitehall.

Thursday the eighth of January 1617. Sir Robert Naunton Knight, was sworne the Kings Secretary. Sir Robert Naunton Secretary.

At the end of February this yeare 1617. the Company of the East India Merchants, sent nine braue goodly Ships well appointed to the East Indies. And Sir Thomas Dale Knight went Generall, this was the first Fleet of the second ioynt Stock. This yeares Fleet to the East Indies.

At the beginning of this moneth of Aprill 1618. the Lord De la Ware, with about eight score persons, viz. men and women went the second time to Virginia, to make a plantation. The Lord De la Ware at his first being in Virginia, through extremity of sickenesse, was constrained to returne to England, about sixe yeares past, and could not recouer his perfect health, vntill the last yeare, in which hee builded a very faire Ship, and went now in it himselfe, and after him one Captaine Henry Spilman with thirty persons: this Captaine Spilman had beene formerly ten yeares in Virginia, knew most of the Kings of that Country, and spake their Languages very perfectly and rightly, in this voyage died the said Lord De la Ware at Sea. An. Reg. 16. 18. The Lord De la Ware goeth second going to Virginia. The Lord De la Ware dieth in his Voyage to Virginia.

The seauenth of March this yeare 1617. about one a clocke at midnight, there was seene in the ayre ouer the Palace of Paris in France a flame of fire, as it were a Starre of a Cubit long, and a foote broad, which ioyned the Palace with extreame terrour and violence, burnt it downe, and therewith all burned the auncient Records of France, and the Pictures and Statues of the Kings of France: this Fire notwithstanding the readinesse of Water, and twenty thousand of willing persons endeauouring to quench it, yet it continued about twenty houres, in which space it also burned a prison, with great damage to other houses and Trades-men; great Pillers and Arches of Stone burned with great flames, as if they had beene made of Timber, and consumit with Brimstone: And the first weeke of this moneth of March, it happened in the Towne of Chagford in Deuonshire, at a Court at Stanery that a wall fell downe, and after part of the house, and slew Master Nicholas Budligh, then Steward of that Court, and two of his seruants, and Mr. Richard Cotrell of the Middle Temple Esquire, and seauen other, there were also about thirty persons sore hurt. The 7. of March also aforesaid, the Townehouse of Delph in Holland, by negligence was set a fire, and quite burned downe: this yeare happened so many fires in most parts of England, that to set them downe particularly, would fill vp a large roome. The Lord Treasurer put from his Office. The Earle of Paris burned. Chagford in Deuonshire.

Martine Fotherby, Doctor of Diuinity, and Chaplaine to the Kings Maiestie, one of the Canons of Christ Church in Canterbury, borne at Grimsby in Lincolneshire, he was kinsman, Pupill, and Chyplaine to the good Archbishop Whitegift, was consecrated Bishoppe of Salisbury, vpon Sunday the nineteenth of Aprill 1618. by the most reuerend Father in God Doctor Abbot, Lord Archbishop of Canterburie. Doctor Fotherby Bishop of Salisbury.

This moneth of May 1618. the foresaid Russia Ambassadour, with his Traine returned, and Sir Dudley Digges Knight, was sent Ambassadour to the Emperour of Russia from his Maiestie. Sir Dudley Digges sent Ambassador to the Emperor of Russia.

William Parker, Citizen & Merchant Taylor of London, died about two yeares past, and amongst other things which hee gaue to pious and publique vses, hee gaue a thousand pounds towards the new building of Saint Saviours, which was imployed therein, according to the tenour of his Will, hee gaue also fiue hundred pounds towards the new glazing of the decayed Windowes, in the vpper part of Paules Church in London, and the same to be done in rich coloured glasse, with Effigies and holy Stories as it hath been formerly glased and adorned: The first Windowe whereof being now made, was set vp on the North side of the Quire, at the beginning of Winter, this yeare 1618. and much of the olde glasse, repaired the decayes of diuers broken Windowes. The vpper part of Paules new glazed and repaired.

Friday the 19 of June, John Traske a professed Puritan, was censured in the Starr-Chamber, for despising the Ecclesiasticall gouernment, and for teaching diuers Iudaicall opinions, viz. That it was not lawfull to doe any thing forbidden in the olde Law; nor to keepe the Christian Sabbath, for the which hee was set on the Pillory at Westminster, and from thence whipt to the Fleete, and there to remaine prisoner. And about three yeares after, he writ a Recantation of all his former heresies, and Schismaticall Opinions. An. Reg. 16. 18. John Traske censured in the Starr-Chamber.

Sonday the 12. of July, George Carleton, Doctor of Diuinity, was consecrated Bishop of Land-port at Lambeth. Doctor Carleton Bishop of Landaffe.

Sonday the 12. of July, at Otelands Sir Francis Bacon Knight, Lord Chancellour of England, was created Baron of Verulam. Sir Francis Bacon Baron of Verulam created.

Friday the 17. of July, the Lord Maior and Recorder, with fiue Aldermen, and the common Sergeant, kept Court at Staynes, and gaue a Iury for orderly Fishing, and the well gouerning of the River of Thames for passengers, and thence he went and kept the like Court at Kingston for that County of Surrey. And the next Monday hee did the like at Dartford for Kent, and at Stratford Langton for Essex. The Lord Maior of London keepeth Courts for the preseruation of the River of Thames.

Sonday the 19. of July in the afternoone, the King tooke away the Staffe from the Lord Treasurer at White hall. The Lord Treasurer put from his Office.

This Summer the King created 4 Earles, viz. the Viscount Lysle, was made Earle of Leicester. Foure Earls created.

The Lord Compton was made Earle of Northampton.

The Lord Rich was made Earle of Warwicke.

And the Lord Candish Earle of Deuonshire.

And the Lady Compton, wife to Sir Thomas Compton, was created Countesse of Buckingham, thee is mother to Maiques Buckingham. Countesse of Buckingham created.

The 17. of October, 1618. here arriued Vz-

Ambassador from the great Turke.

ahyn Chaws, attended with twelue persons, from the great Turke, viz. Sultan Osman the first, he had audience vpon Tuesday the third of Nouember.

Sir Walter Rawleigh released.

About two yeres past, Sir Walter Rawleigh obtained his liberty, and was discharged out of the Tower, and within a while after, he builded a goodly Shippe of warre, for a voyage to Guyana, to gaine possession of a rich mine, which himselfe and one Captain Keymish had formerly discouered by the information of the Indians inhabitants in that Country, and for the further prosecution of this voyage, diuers Knights and Gentlemen of qualitie, furnished diuers shippes, and went in consort with him. And whereas it was by them generally intended to haue bin at Guyana, in the moneth of April, they lingred so long that it was August before they set sayle cleare from the Coast of England, by which tract of time, all Christian Nations vnderstood the purpose of his voyage, and being come to Guyana, could make no manner of discovery of any mine, but found many new fortifications, which were not formerly: And there they assaulted the new Citie of Saint Thome, and at the taking thereof, his sonne Walter Walter Rawleigh was slaine, and hauing sackt the Cittie, and taken the full spoile thereof, they burnt it, and foure Churches in it. Then Sir Walter Rawleigh with his Shippe returned for England, against whom the Spanish Ambassador had made diuers complaints of damages, slaughters and spoyles, done against the King of Spaine and his people: Whereupon Sir Walter Rawleigh was againe committed to the Tower, for he neuer had his pardon for his former Treason. And vpon wednesday the eight and twenty of October, viz. the Feast of Simon and Iude, Sir Walter Rawleigh was brought from the Tower to the Kings Bench barre, and by the Lord chiefe Iustice, was asked what hee could say for himselfe, why he should not suffer execution of death, according to the Iudgement of death, for his Treason in the first yeere of the King: whereunto hee could not make any sufficient answere. And from thence he was carried to the Gatehouse, and the next morning about eight a clocke, hee was brought vpon a Scaffold in the Parliament yard, where for more then an houres space, he made sundry speeches, as Apologies to sundry imputations formerly layd vpon him, and about nine of the clocke his head was stucke off. He dyed very resolutely, his head and body were buried at the discretion of his wife.

He bayke his last early in the morning and tooke Tobacco.

There was a bayke published by authoritie, concerning the manifestation of his offence, in the breach of peace, and his exceeding the tenor of his Pattent, the some whereof, briefely followeth.

For these his great and haynous offences, in Acts of hostilitie, vpon his Maiesties confederates, oppressions, and abuses, as well of his Commission, as of his Maiesties Subiects vnder his charge, Impostures, attempts of escape, declining his Maiesties Iustice, and the rest euidently proued, or confessed by himselfe, he had made himselfe vtterly vnworthy of his Maiesties further mercy: And because hee could not by Law bee Iudicially called in question, for that his former attainder of Treason is the highest, and last worke of the law (whereby hee was Ciuiliter mortuus) his Maiesty was inforced (except Attainders should become Priuiledges for all subsequent offences) to resolue to haue him executed vpon his former Attainder.

Wednesday the 18. of Nouember, a blazing Starre begon to be seene in the South-east about fiue a clocke in the morning, the flame or streame thereof, enclined towards the West.

A blazing starre.

Doctor *Bembridge* the worthy Mathematician of Oxford, in his booke to the King saith thus.

Doctor Bembridge touching the Comet.

The motion of the Comet from my first obseruation was on Wednesday morning the 18. of Nouember, 1618. to Wednesday the 16. of December, the which whirled about the earth, euery 24. houres, and declined twelue degrees toward the South, making his diurnall gyre ouer that terrestriall circle, wherein lye New Guinea, the Iles, Timor and Iaua, in the East, the North part of Saint Laurence, Mozambique in Affrica, the middle of Brazil, and Peru in the West. About the 22. of Nouember, it entred the Æquinoctiall, plaine ouer the Molucas, Malaca, Sumatra, Abassia, Saint Thomas, Guyana, euery day ascending higher towards our Pole Arctick, about the 27. entring the Tropick of Cancer, afterward pulling ouer all the Regions of the earth, euen ouer the vtmost limits of the Brittish Empire.

About the 11. of December, his declination was 81. degrees and a halfe, and therefore passed ouer London in the morning, and so hasted more Northwards, euen as farre as the Orcades.

I may not forget that the Comet, in the latter part of his period, was North-west after Sunset, which gaue occasion to some, not skilfull in Astronomie, to affirme a second Comet. But from the beginning I fogetold (which was no great matter to do) that if the Comet continued a while: it would aduance neere to the tayle of Vrsa Maior, and be seene in the morning after the Sun. The ascending length of it was 45. degrees and namely the first of December, ouershaddowing the left hinder knee of Vrsa Maior.

Hee sayd that this Comet, was as farre aboue the Moone, as the Moone is from the earth, and that the Comets distance from the earth, was not lesse then 2300000. English myles, whereas the Moone (when shee is nearest) is little more then 200900.

The Irradiation of this Comets streame, (though in the end it seemed very short) was sometime extended to a wonderfull length, more then 2000000 which is nothing to the Sunns etamulation of his beames vpon the earth, more then 6900000 myles.

The

The Comets bignesse.

The Comets bulke, was at least 3. of the whole earth, and not fully twise greater then the Moone, viz. the Comet compared to the Moone, was scarce 1. to 8000. so littles this great Comet in respect of the glorious Lamp, and yet the Starre but a point to the Imminese Spheare of fixed Starres and all this lesse then nothing in comparison of that infinite circle Cuius centrum est vbique circumferentia nusquam. The Center of whose presence, and perfection, is euery where and his limits no where.

But whatsoeuer was the materiall of this Comet, howsoeuer compact and dissolued, I am enforced in conclusion, to lye prostrate at the Almighties seate, in the Globositie: thereof, to admire his wisedome in the motion, and adore his goodnesse in the present apparition.

Whatsoeuer cunll this new Comet may presage the same he to them that hate vs, and the interpretation thereof to our enemies: But whatsoeuer good it can promise, the God of heauen (who there placed it) conforme them all to his Royall Maiestie, and great Britaines Monarchie. Amen.

Since which time, euen from the next yere after, there began great warres in Germany, betweene the Emperour and some Germane Princes, and the Prince of Transiluania, betweene the King of Denmark and the Emperor, betweene the Swethard and the King of Polonia, betweene the Turke, and the King of Poland, where it pleased Almighty God, to giue the Polonians a great victory vpon the Turke, which caused the Turke to make League with the King of Polone, the French King made a long fierce and terrible warre vpon the Citie of Rochell, diuers yeeres, which at length, through extreame famine and misery, yeelded vnto the King. The Emperour made sharpe warres in Italy, and wonne diuers and assisted diuers other Prouinces, The French King taking part with Mantua, tooke Sauoy, and made great spoyle therein, the young King of Swetland with a great Army, stoutly inuaded the Empire, there followed also in diuers other places sundry attempts, battels, and assaults, in sundry other Prouinces, and Territories, euen to the day of the publication of this Chronicle 1631.

Sir Iohn Digby Baron of Shirbourne.

The 25. of Nouember, Sir Iohn Digby Knight, Vice-chamberlaine to the King, was created Lord Digby Baron of Shirbourne, by Patent to him and his heires Male, he had bin formerly three times Lord Ambassador to the King of Spaine for his Maiestie.

The Lady Elizabeth borne at Heydelberg

Friday the 27. of Nouember, the Lady Elizabeth, daughter to the Palsgrave, and the Lady Elizabeth, was borne at Heydelberg, betweene one and two of the clocke in the afternoone.

The beautifull banquetting house burnt.

About ten a clocke in the morning, vpon Tuesday the 12. of January the faire banquetting house at Whitehall, was vpon the sodaine all flaming a fire from end to end, and side to side, before it was discerned or descryde, by any persons or passengers, either vp sent or smoke, at sight whereof, the Court being so amazed, sent speedy newes to the great Lords of the Councell, who were then but newly set in the Guild-hall in London, about excessiue and dispoyerly buildings, but they all arose and returned to White-hall, and gaue directions to the multitude of people, to suppresse the flame, and by pooles to pull down some other adioyning buildings, to preuent the furious fire and to vp their care, and the people to labour the flame was quite ouer, and by castine a clocke, besides the banquetting house, there were diuers lodgings burned, and the writings in the office of the Privy Signet, which was vnder the banqueting house, and for one whole yeares space, there was great damage done by fire in most shires and Cities of England. And the aforenamed banquetting house was againe new builded within foure yeares after.

About the end of January, Marquesse Buckingham was made Lord Admirall of England.

Marquesse Buckingham Lord Admirall.

Wednesday the 17. of Ianuary, Sir George Vill Caucer Knight, was sworne one of the Clerkes of the Councell vpon Sir Edward Conway's death.

Sir George Vill sworne Clerke of the Councell.

The 18 of February, Dr. Lancelot Andrewes Bishop of Elye was translated to Winchester.

Bishop of Elye translated to Winchester.

Tuesday the 24. of March, about three a clock in the morning the Queene Anne, at Somerset house in the Strand, and there remained vntill the Thursday before Whitsonday, viz. the 13. of May, and was that day Royally buried in the Chappell royall of Westminster. Prince Charles was there a mourner, and the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury preached the funerall Sermon: And vpon Trinity Sunday, all the Aldermen and other the cheefe Officers of the City, went to Pauls Crosse in their mourning habit, the Lord Mayor was then sicke, so as he could not come with them, as was appointed.

Queene Anne deceased.

An. Reg. 17. 1619.

The next Sunday, viz. the 25. of May, the King hyld the Feast of Saint George at Greenewich.

S. Georges Feast kept.

Vpon the death of the Queene, the King being at Newmarket, he regreeued for her death, and became infinitely extreame sicke, and was then come to Royston, onward of his iourney, to haue come to London, but could not then trauaile any farther, by reason hee was very weake and extreame sicke: And vpon Sunday the 29. of March, the Preacher at the Spittle, as hee was appointed, signifies vnto the Lord Mayor, Aldermen and Citizens, that the King had of late beene very dangerous sicke, but thanke be to God he is now much amended: after this, the King fell into some relaps, which frighted the people more then formerly, yet by Gods mercy, the King amended, and recouered strength: the which to make knowne, the Bishop of London, as hee was appointed, preached at Pauls Crosse vpon Sunday the eleuenth of April, his Text was out of Esay 38. verse, 17. at this Sermon, were the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Duke of Lenox, the Earles of Arundell, Pembroke, Leicester, Lord Carew, with other Bishops and Bargns, they all dyned with the Bishopps

The King dangerously sicke.

of London: And after dinner, the great Lords sate there in Councell and then departed, at this Sermon were all the Companies in London, in their Liuery Coomes and Hoods, vnto whom and the rest, the Bishop manifested the Kings hopefull recouery, happy health, and long Raigne.

Earle of Southampton a Privy Councellor.

Friday the last of Aprill, the Earle of Southampton was sworne a Priuy Counsellour.

A libeller executed.

Monday the third of May, one Walter Williams, a Barrester of the middle Temple, was arraigned at the Kings Bench, for libelling, and for writing bookes against the King, and vpon Wednesday following he was hanged, and quartered at charing Crosse.

Viscount Purbeck created.

This moneth of June, 1619. Sir John Villiers Knight, Gentleman of the Princes Bedchamber, Brother to Marquesse Buckingham, was created Baron of Stoke, and Viscount Burbecke.

Calvers sprig by Laurence and re-leased from Calis.

Saturday the seauentéenth of July 1619. Bernard Caluert of Andouer, about three a clock in the morning, tooke boate at Saint Georges Church in Southwarke, and came to Douer about seauen of the clocke the same morning, where a Barge with eight Oares formerly sent from London thither, attended his suddaine comming, he instantly tooke Barge, and went to Calice, and in the same Barge returned backe to Douer about three of the clocke the same day, where as well there as in diuers other places he had layed sundry swift horses, besides guides, he rode backe from thence to S. Georges Church in Southwarke the same euening, a little after eight of the clocke fresh and lusty.

The 31. of July 1619. there was a Proclamation published by the Kings Maiestie for reformation and alteration of diuers Coynes of Gold, with direction therein for weighing the same and other pieces of Gold thereafter to be Coyned; the names of the pieces, their weights, remedies and abatements doe follow, viz.

In euery piece of Gold current for	33 shillings.	The remedie and abatement shall not exceede	4 graynes and a halfe.
	22 shillings.		3 graynes.
	16 shillings. 6. pence.		2 graynes and a halfe.
	11 shillings		2 graynes.
	5 shillings 6. pence.		1 grayne.
	2 shillings 9 pence.		Halfe a grayne.

And all other pieces of Gold hereafter to be Coyned, which shall be lighter then according to the remedies or abatements hereafter ensuing, that is to say,

In euery new piece of Gold current for	30 shillings.	The remedie and abatement shall not exceede	3 graynes.
	20 shillings.		2 graynes.
	15 shillings.		1 grayne and a halfe.
	10 shillings.		1 grayne.
	5 shillings.		Halfe a grayne.

The Act and manner of the Creation and foundation of the Colledge of Gods Gift *in* Dulwich, *in the County of* Surry. *Formerly mentioned in the yeare of our Lord* 1614.

The confirmation and establishment of Master Alleyns bounty formerly mentioned.

MOnday the thirteenth day of September, in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand six hundred and nineteene, and in the yeares of the Raigne of our Soueraigne Lord, *Iames* by the grace of God, of *England*, *Scotland*, *Fraunce*, and *Ireland* King, defender of the Faith, that is to say, of *England*, *Fraunce*, and *Ireland* the seauenteenth, and of *Scotland* the three and fiftieth. The day and yeare aboue said, *Edward Alleyn* of *Dulwich*, in the County of *Surry* Esquire, the Founder and Erector of this Colledge, called the Colledge of *Gods Gift*, consisting of one Master, one Warden, foure Fellowes, of which three of them are Ecclesiasticall persons, and the fourth a skilfull Organist; also twelue aged poore persons, and twelue poore Children in *Dulwich*, in the County of *Surry*, did very publiquely and audibly, in the Chappell of the same Colledge, reade and publish one writing Quadrupartite in Parchment, bearing date the day and yeare aboue said, whereby hee did Make, Create, Erect, Found, and stablish the said Colledge, according to the power and liberty giuen him by his Maiesties Letters Patents, vnder his great Seale, bearing date at Westminster, the one and twentieth day of June the yeare aboue said. And after the said *Edward Alleyn* had read and published the said writing quadrupartite in manner afore-said, he did subscribe his name, and fix his Seale vnto euery part of the writing quadrupartite. And the said Writing was read, published, sealed, and subscribed in manner afore-said, in the presence and hearing of these persons heere vnder named: who did also subscribe their names to euery part of the said Writing quadrupartite in witnesse thereof, *viz. Francis* Lord *Verulam*, Lord Chancellour of *England*, and one of his Maiesties priuie Counsell. *Thomas* Earle of *Arundell*, Knight of the Garter, and one of his Maiesties priuie Councell. Sir *Edward Cecill* Knight, *alias* Generall *Cecill*, second sonne to *Thomas Exceter*.

Sir John Howland, high Sheriffe of the County of Suffex and Surry.
Sir Edmond Bowyer of Cammerwel knight.
Sir Thomas Grymes of Peckham Knight.
Sir John Bodly of Stretham Knight.
Inigo Jones Esquire, Surueyor of the Kings workes.
John Finch of Grayes Inne Esquire.
Richard Jones Esquire, Secretary to the Lord Chancellour.
Edmund Howes Gentleman & Chronicler.
John Anthony Gentleman.
Richard Talboyes of the Inner Temple Gentlemen.
Lyonell Fitchborne of Greyes Inne Gentleman.

These foure knights were Iustices of the Peace for the County of Surrey.

Besides these which did set to their hands, there were many others then present to testifie this Dedication of this Charitable worke.

The 4. quadrupartite Writtings aboue said, were placed in foure Parishes, viz. St. Bartolphes without Bishopsgate, S. Giles without Cripplegate, S. Saviours in Southwarke, And in the Parish of Cammerwell.

Transporters of re-ales fore-tenced in the Starr-chamber.

The 8. of December, in the 17. yeare of the King, William Curtine, Robert de Leau, and Robert de la Barre, with diuers other Dutch Marchants dwelling in London, were sentenced in the Starre-chamber, for transporting Coyne into forraigne parts contrary to the Lawes and Statutes of this Kingdome.

Sir Lionell Cranfield made a Priuy Counsellour.

An. Reg. 18.

Tuesday the 4. of January 1619. Sir Lionell Cranfield Knight, Master of the Wardrope, and Master of the Wardes and Liueries, was sworne a Priuy Counsellour.

Prince Charles his first Tilting.

Friday the 24. of March 1619. Prince Charles, Marquesse Hamelton, Marquesse Buckingham, with diuers Earles and others, performed great Justing at White-hall in honour of the day.

The King commeth to Pauls crosse.

An. Dom. 1620.

The next Sunday being Palme Sunday, the King in great state came from White-hall to Paules Church, accompanied with Prince Charles, many of the chiefe Nobility, and seauen or eight Bishops, and at Temple barre, the Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Recorder, receiued him, and presented him with a purse of gold, and from thence attended him to Paules, the streets being rayled on both sides, and the seuerall Companies of London in their seuerall places, in their Liueries and Banners, gaue their attendance all the way to Paules.

The King entred in at the great West doze of Paules where he kneeled, and hauing ended his Deuotions, he was receiued by the Deane and Chapter of that Church, being all in rich Copes the Canopy was supported by the Archdeacons of the Diocese, and other Doctors of Diuinity, being also in rich Copes. The Gentlemen of the Kings Chappell, and the Quire of Pauls, were likewise all in rich Copes, and so with solemne singing brought the King into the Quire, through which he went into his trauerse which was set vp for that purpose on the South side of the high Altar: and being then three of the clocke, they began to celebrate Diuine seruice, which was solemnly performed with Dygans, Cornets, and Sagbots. The Euening prayer being ended, the King was conducted thence to a prepared place, and heard the Sermon at the Crosse, where the Bishop of London preached, his Text was the hundred and second Psalme, the 13. and 14. verses. The Sermon being ended, the King obserued the greatnesse and state of that Church, and the great Windo was newly glazed, in rich colours, with the story of Saint Paul, and then went into the Bishops Palace, where he was entertained with a Banquet, and about six of the clock he returned to White-hall. The Lord Maior, Aldermen, and Recorder, attended him to Temple-barre, and there tooke their leaue, vnto whom the King gaue very gracious speeches.

The Kings Attorney censured in the Starr-Chamber.

Tuesday the 27. of June 1620. Sir Henry Yelverton Knight, the Kings Attorney generall, was sequestred from his Office: and the tenth of Nouember next following, he was sentenced in the Starr-chamber to lose his Office, to pay foure thousand pound, and imprisonment in the Tower, during the Kings pleasure, for adding of new priuiledges to the Charter of London without the Kings allowance.

In especiall Imbassadour from the Emperour.

Wednesday the third of April, arriued at London Count Swartzenberk from Ferdinando the Emperour, accompanied with one Earle and six Barons, and thereafter others in his traine, braue in apparell, and rich in Iewels: They were lodged in Denmarke house in the Strand: and the next Sunday he had audience in the vpper Parliament house, where he made an excellent Oration to his Maiestie, signifying the Emperours great loue, and hearty desire of lasting amity with the King of great Britaine, for the vniuersall good of Christendome. And vpon Sunday the 14 of Aprill, the King feasted him, and all his company in the same place, and the next weeke after they returned. And in few weekes after Sir Richard Weston Chancellour of the Exchequo, was by the King sent to Bruxells in Flanders, there to treate with other Ambassadours, and Commissioners of the Emperour, the King of Spain, and of Isabella the Infanta.

Sir Richard Weston sent Commissioner to Bruxelles.

Reformations of annoyances neere Saint Pauls church.

Wednesday the 28. of Iune 1620. by vertue of a Warrant vnder the hands of eleauen of the Priuy Councell, the Sheriffes of London pulled downe a house, at the North-West end of Paules Church ouer against the Crosse, this was the first house that was pulled downe, after the great and speciall Commission for the repairing of Paules Church, and the reformation of Intrusions and annoyances of that Church.

Monday

The Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings bench made Treasurer.

Monday the fourth of December, Sir Henry Montague knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, was made Lord Treasurer of England at New Market, where the King gaue him the Staffe, and created him Lord Montague, Baron of Hinchinton, and Viscount Mandeuile. And upon Saterday the 16 of the same moneth, he was sworne at the Orehouse, and not long after made Earle of Manchester.

A speciall Ambassador from France.

Friday the 29. of December, arriued Monsieur Carlo-ey, Gouernour of Calice from the French King, being accompanied with many great Marquesses, and Earles: and next Sunday following, the King gaue him audience in the vpper Parliament house: And the next Thursday, being the third of January, the King feasted him there, the rest of his company were feasted in the great Chamber of the Court of Requests, both which rooms were very stately adorned with rich Hangings.

A Parliament at Westminster.

Thursday the 30. of January, the King and Prince in great state rode to the Parliament house, being accompanied with the Bishops, and all the Nobility. This Sessions held vntill Tuesday the 27. of March; in which were two Subsidies granted, and the Parliament was then adiourned vntill Tuesday the 17. of Aprill: The Clergie gaue also three Subsidies, and the Parliament continued vntil Monday the 4. of June, and was then by Commission adiourned, vntill Wednesday the 14. of Nouember 1621.

Sir Giles Mompesson and Sir Francis Michell sentenced.

In this Parliament Sir Giles Mompesson was sentenced by the Parliament to be degraded, disnobled, and disabled to beare any Office in the Commonwealth, for practising sundry abuses, in erecting and setting vp new Innes and Ale-houses, and erecting great summes of money of people, by pretence of Letters Patents, to him graunted for that purpose: but he sudainly fled the Land, and Sir Francis Michell, one of his chiefe Agents, was likewise sentenced in the same manner, and to remaine perpetually in Finsbury Goale, vpon whom the sentence of degradation was executed in the Kings Bench, before the Earle Marshall.

A great frost.

The last weeke of Nouember, began a great Frost, which continued the first weeke of December, so as the Thames was frozen all ouer, so as the people went ouer the River in diuers places, and then it thawed, and the weather continued very milde and gentle, vntill the 20. of January, and then it began to Freeze more extreamely then it did before, and continued vntill the 12. day of February, so as all sorts of people went ouer all places ouer the Thames; in which space, the people not onely paced ouer at London, aboue the Bridge, but also in most parts of the River, westward. And also there was diuers Booths that sold drinke and other things vpon the Ice, yea such was the greatnesse of the Frost, that people went ouer the Ice in diuers places the fourteenth day of February, which was two dayes after it began to Thaw.

The Lord Chancellor deposed.

In this Parliament also the Viscount St. Albon, Lord Chancellour of England, was deposed, and committed to the Tower, where hee remained prisoner diuers dayes, and then was enlarged.

The Deane of Westminster sworne Lord Keeper.

Sunday the 18. of June, Doctor Williams, Deane of Westminster, was sworne a Priuy Councellor: and Tuesday the tenth of July, he was made Lord Keeper, and after that, Bishop of Lincolne.

About the end of June, Sir Edward Mountague knight, elder Brother to the Lord Treasurer, Viscount Mandeuile, was created Lord Mountague, Baron of Boulton.

The Lord Rich made Earle of Warwick.

And the beginning of July, the Lord Darcie, of Esser, was created Viscount Colchester, and the Lord Huntdon, was created Viscount Rochford, and Sir Lyonell Cranfield knight, Master of the Wards, and of the Warrobe, was created Lord Cranfield, of Cranfield in Bedford-shire.

The Lord Treasurer remooued from his office.

Wednesday the 18. of July, Henry Earle of Northumberland, was discharged out of the Tower.

The Lord Treasurer remooued from his office of Priuy Councell.

Vpon Michaelmas eue, Viscount Mandeuile, Lord Treasurer of England, surrendred his Office vnto the King, and was made President of the Priuy Councell, and the next day but one, being Sunday: the Lord Cranfield was made Lord Treasurer.

The Lord Cranfield made Lord Treasurer.

About foure yeares past, the olde decayed Standard in Cheap side, was taken downe to the foundation, and new builded in more strong and beautifull manner then the former, and at this time it was fully finished.

The Parliament adiourned.

The 10. of October, the Parliament was adiourned, vntill the 8. of February, but after by a Proclamation, according to the summons thereof, they sate againe in Parliament vpon the 20. day of Nouember, and so continued till the 19. of December, and then broke vp, with purpose to sit againe the 8. of February next after, but the 9. of January, the King by Proclamation dissolued the Parliament, and so the appointed day for their meeting being the 8. of February was discharged.

Foure Earles created.

In the moneth of September, 1622. the King made foure Earles, viz. The Lord Viscount Doncaster, was created Earle of Carlile; the Lord Viscount Feelding was created Earle of Denbigh, the Lord Digby was created Earle of Bristow, he being then a speciall Ambassador from his Majestie to the King of Spaine, and was sent thither this last Somer: And the Lord Cranfield, Lord high Treasurer of England, was created Earle of Middlesex.

Sr. John Bennet sentenced in the Star-chamber.

Friday the 29. of Nouember, Sir John Bennet, Iudge of the Prerogatiue Court, was found guilty of bribery, and other foule corruptions and was sentenced in the Star-chamber, for to pay twenty thousand pounds, and disabled from bearing any Office in the Common Wealth, and to remaine prisoner, during the Kings pleasure, his cause was foure dayes in hearing in the Star-chamber.

Thursday the 2. of January, 1622. a new built Church, neere Cræd-church, within Aldgate,

was consecrated by the Lord Archbishopp of Canterbury, and the Bishop of London, by the name of Saint Iames Church, and there the Quires of Saint Paules, with sundry Instruments of Musique, with great solemnity, sung Te Deum, and diuerse Antheams, and after the Sermon was celebrated, the Sacrament of the Lords Supper, & a child was baptized, and was named Iames, at this consecration there were present the Lord Mayor, and Aldermen in Scarlet.

Strange thriuing of the Dyce.

Thursday the 3. of January 1622. the East India Merchants Feasted certaine Holland Fates, and many English Lords at Merchantailors Hall, at night: The next morning the Thames thirteen foure Tydes, within the space of fiue houres, That is to say, two floods, and two ebs, and then kept her wonted course.

Tuesday the 18. of February, Charles Prince of Wales, being accompanied with George Marquesse of Buckingham, Endimion Porter of the Kings Bed-chamber, and Francis Cottington, the Princes Secretary set forward from Douer, arriued at Bologne, and from thence rode post vnto Madrill in Spaine.

Lincolnes Inne Chappell new built.

The new built Chappell of Lincolns Inne, was consecrated vpon Ascension day, 1623. by the Lord Bishop of London.

Prince Charles his returne from paine.

Sunday the 5. of Oct. 1623. Prince Charles, with the Duke of Buckingham, and their retinew, with 11. of the Kings thipsan, Merchants arriued at Portmouth, about eight a clock in the euening, and next morning he came to Porke house, where hee dined, and about 11. of the clocke, went by Coach to the King at Royston, for ioy of his safe arriuall, there were infinite Bone-fires early in the morning, notwithstanding there was a very great Raine all that day, with bells ringing, and thanksgiuing in all Churches, in Cities, Townes, and Villages, in the euening Bone-fires likewise.

A call of Sergeants.

This Michaelmas terme, 1623. there was a call of 15. Serieants at Law, whereof Sir Heneage Finch Knight, Recorder of London, was one, and Master Hoskines, Recorder of Hereford, was another, they held their Feast in the middle Temple hall, on Thursday the 23. of Octob. at which Feast, was the Duke of Richmond, the Lord Keeper, the Lord Treasurer, with others of the Priuy Councell, and also Alderman Lumley, Lord Maior elect, and 17. Aldermen of London.

A strange thing in the Black-fryers.

Sunday the 24. of October, 1623. about foure of the clocke in the afternoone, a Romane Catholique Priest preached at Huntdon house, in the Black-fryers in London, in an vpper Chamber, where was assembled aboue three hundred men women, and youths, and about the middle of the Sermon, a great part of the floore brake, and fell downe, and all that stood thereon, it fell with such violence, that it brake downe the next floore vnder it, the chiefe Somer thereof, was about foureteene Inches, in which fall was slaine, the preacher, and almost one hundred of his Auditory, and well nigh as many more hurt: The next night after, the French Ambassador Leger, dwelling then in Aunsdon house, buried foutie seuen in his Court yard, in his Garden, the rest were buried in sundry places by their friends, and diuers that were there and escaped, perished by sundry Accidents within few dayes after.

A great fire in Southwarke.

Wednesday the 12. of Nouember, 1623. the house of Sir William Cockayn Knight, Alderman of London, in Broad Strate: In the euening one of his Ware houses began to take fire by negligence as was suspected, of laying vp wett flaxe, in the place, which fired it selfe, and ceased not, till two of the clocke the next morning in which space, it burnt his whole house, and three of his neighbours houses, to the great damage and danger of many more inhabitants, and to the great fright and terrour of the whole Citie, chiefely the East part of the Citie. Sir Hugh Middleton knight Baronet, vpon the first knowledge thereof caused all the Seluers of the Water Cesterne in the field, to be let open whereby there was plenty of water to quench the fire, this water hath done many like benefits in sundry like former dis-streles.

The Duke of Richmond and Lenox deceased.

Sunday the 16. of February, 1623 the King with the Nobility prepared to goe to the Parliament house, but that morning early dyed Lodowicke, Duke of Richmond and Lenox, sodainly at his lodging at the Court of Whitehall, whereupon the King deferred his going to the Parliament till Thursday, the 19. of February, where he made a solemne speech to the Barons, Knights, and Burgesses, wherein his Maiestie expressed the causes of that Parliament, and vpon Monday the 19. of Aprill, Anno 1624. Anno R. Iac. 22. the copps of the sayd Duke with all Magnificence, was brought from Ely house in holborne to Westminster Abbey, where it was honorably interred.

The Lord Treasurer deposed.

And vpon Saturday the 29. of May, 1624. the Parliament brake vp, and was adiourned, till the second of Nouember next following. In this Parliament, Lionel Earle of Middlesex, Lord high Treasurer of England was deposed, and sentenced to pay fifty thousand pound to the King, and imprisonment during the Kings pleasure, he was committed to the Tower on Tuesday, the 20. of May, and was discharged thence the first of June next following. This Parliament gaue the King three Subsidies, and three fifteenes.

Three Subsidies and three fifteens by the Temporalitie.

The Clergy gaue the King foure Subsidies.

Sunday the 21. of Nouember, 1624. there were many bon-fires in London and elsewhere, for ioy of conclusion of marriage, betweene Charles Prince of Wales, and the Lady Mary, daughter to the late French King, Henry the fourth, after to Lewes the thirteenth, that now raigneth.

Foure bon-fires for ioy of a match concluded between Prince Charles and the Lady Mary sister to the French King.

This moneth of Nouember, there was a great pestle throughout the most shires of England, and the Citie of London, for the leaping of ten thousand Souldiers, of which number, London leuyed two thousand, and by the end of December following, the whole Army met and were assembled at Douer, where Count Mansfield their appointed Generall, tooke

Count Mansfield.

their master, and trayned them, and at the end of January, the General with the whole Army embarked at Dower, and arrived in Holland, and were put into diuers Townes to garrison.

The Duke of Brunswicke made Knight of the Garter

The young Duke of Brunswicke, being at Christmas last, made Knight of the Garter, was at Lieutenant generall of this Army.

Sir James Ley Lord Treasurer of England.

At this time also Sir James Ley Knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, was made Lord Treasurer.

Marquesse Hambleton deceased.

Wednesday the 2. of March 1624. died Marquesse Hambleton, Lord Steward of the Kings houshold, at Whitehall, he was buried in Scotland among his ancestors.

King James deceased.

Sunday the 27. of March. 1625. in the forenoone died King Iames, of most renowned memory, he was surnamed the King of peace, honored and admired of all Kings of the earth, for his prudent gouernment, he dyed at Theobalds, the day aboue-said, and the same afternoone about five of the clocke, his Son Prince Charles was proclaimed King, at the high Crosse in Cheapside, as it had beene before at Whitehall and other places.

Prince Charles Proclaimed King.

The body of King Iames was brought from Theobalds, on monday the fourth of April, and came to London about ten of the clocke at night, being met by the way by the nobility and Clergy, the Lord Maior and Aldermen of London, with thousands of torches lighted, and was placed in Denmark house, in the Strand, where the Body remayned vntill the funerall day.

Verses made vpon the Death of King IAMES.

All who have eyes awake and weepe,
He whose waking wrought our sleepe,
Is faine asleepe himselfe, and neuer
Shall wake againe, till wak't for euer:
Death's Iron hand hath clos'd those eyes,
Which were at once three Kingdomes spies;
Both to foresee, and to prevent
Daungers, as soone as they were ment:
That head whose working braine alone,
Wrought all mens quiet, but it's owne,
Now lyes at rest; O let let him have,
The Peace he lent vs in his grave:
If no *Naboth* all his Raigne,
Was for his fruitfull Vineyard slaine;
If no *Vriah*, lost his life,
Because he had too faire a wife;
Then let no *Shemies* curses wound,
His honour, or prophane his grownd;
Let no black-mouth, Ranck-breath Carre,
Peacefull *Iames*, his Ashes stirre:
Princes are Gods; O doe not then,
Rake in their graves to prove them men;
For two and twenty yeares long care,
For providing such an heire;
Who to the Peace, we had before,
May adde twise two and twenty more:
For his dayes travailes, and night watches,
For his Craz'd sleepe stolne by snatches:
For two faire Kingdomes ioyn'd in one,
For all he did, or meant t'have done:
Doe this for him, write on his dust,
Iames the Peacefull, and the Iust.

THE

King Iames *his Bounty*.

The Kings bounty.

THe King at his first comming, made *Iames Montague* Doctor of Diuinity, Deane of his Highnesse Chappell, which Deanry stood voyd full eight yeares.

The King enlarged the yearely Fee of the Gentlemen of his said Chappell, being thirty three in number, from thirty pound a yeare, vnto forty pound a yeare vnto euery of them.

And in the same manner, hee enlarged the yearely fees of the Sergeants of the Vestrie, and added 4. pence a day vnto the two Yeomen and Groomes of the Vestry.

The King also enlarged the Auncient allowance of six pence a day for euery childe, vnto the Master of the children of his Chappell, vnto tenne pence a day for euery of them, being 12. in number.

The King enlarged the Pension of his Almes Knights, *alias* poore-Knights in *Windsor*, being thirteene in number, from 12. pence a day, vnto two shillings a day.

The Auncient office of the Ceremonies, hauing of long time beene voyd and almost forgotten. The King made Sir *Lewes Lewkenor* Master of the Ceremonies, allowing thereunto all auncient fees.

And whereas for the space of one hundred yeares past, there were but foure Iudges in euery of the three right honourable Courts of Law, that is to say, the Kings Bench, the Common-pleas, and the Exchequer; by reason whereof, and for want of a fifth voyce, when the Iudges were deuided into equall opinions, and therefore could neither decide, nor determine many deepe and difficult matters, wherewith they were often troubled, but onely by a greater meeting of Iudges in the Checquer chamber. Vpon hope of remedy, whereof and for the good of all honest Subiects, his Maiesty re-established a fift Iudge, in euery of the said Courts, *viz.* Sergeant *Williams* in the Kings Bench, Sergeant *Daniell* in the Common-pleas, and Sergeant *Snigge* in the Exchequor: yet notwithstanding so long vacancie, Master *Brewster* shewed me the Records, wherein I found, that in the time of *Edward* the second, there were six Iudges in the honorable Court of Common-pleas: in the first yeare of *Edward* the fourth, there were seauen Iudges, *viz. Iohn Pryset, Nicholas Ashton, Peter Ardern, Robert Danners, Robert Danby, William Moile*, and *Iohn Needeham*: and in the first yeare of *Henry* the seuenth, there were but fiue, and after that but foure, vntill the comming of our Soueraigne Lord King *Iames*. Master *Ployden* in his Commentaries reporteth, that my Lord *Cattlin*, arguing in *Stowells* case, reciteth many Fines of Antiquity, whereof some touching the possession of the Abbot of *Crowland* before the Conquest. It is also to be proued by Records in the Tower: that the Conqueror himselfe tooke acknowledgement of fines, and caused the English Lawes to be written in the Norman tongue, thereby to draw his owne people to the conformity of the auncient English Lawes, which hevpon experience preferred before all other, whereupon it may very well bee gathered, and vnderstood that the common Lawes of England now in vse, were auncient before the comming of *William* the Conquerour, and not brought in by him, as some affirme.

Antiquity of the common Lawes of England.

And whereas the auncient number of the Guard was but seauen score, his Maiestie hath increased them, and made them full two hundred: whereof six score are to attend by turnes, vpon his owne royall person, and three score to attend the Queenes Maiestie, and the other twenty are to attend vpon the person of our most noble Prince, and whereas the wages of the said Guard at the Kings comming was two shillings a day for three moneths in Summer, and but twenty pence a day for nine moneths in Winter.

At the humble and earnest suite of the right honourable the Lord *Erskin*, Baron of *Dixleton*, Captaine of his Maiesties Guard, the King hath giuen them two shillings and foure pence a day, for the Summer six moneths, and two shillings a day for the Winter six moneths.

Hee hath enlarged the wages of the Warders of the Tower, from eight pence a day vnto foureteene pence a day, at the suite of the said Lord *Erskin* afore-said, and since that increased their number, by adding ten more vnto them, allowing them as much wages as the former.

The Captaines, Lieutenants, Officers, and common Souldiers, of the late Garrison in Barwicke, being all discharged of their seruice and daily attendance, yet neuertheless euery one of them by the Kings appointment and allowance, receiueth the full one halfe of their former pay. The second yeare of this Kings Raigne, all the great Ordnance in Barwicke, was brought from thence vnto the Tower of London.

His Maiestie hath enlarged many other Pensions, and many more things of honour and piety, to his eternall praise and glorious memory, besides his Royall Rewards, and gracious bounty to well deseruers, the particulars whereof I could not attaine at this time by any meanes.

An. Reg 20. 1086. In the Whitson weeke, King William honoured his son Henry with the order of Knighthood at Westminster, where he then held his Court, but how the same was minstred by the King, or by Lanfrancus Archbishop of Canterbury, we can he made William Rufus a Knight, I reade not.

The manner o making Knights in old time. Guilielmus Malmesburiensis fol. 67. Ingulphus fol. 512.

But Ingulphus setteth downe the manner of making of a Knight by the Abbot of Peterborough, in the second yeare of King William the Conqueror, in this sort.

King William distributed the Bishoprickes, Earledomes, and Baronies of this Realme to his Normanes: and one Hereward, a valiant Englishman, being then in Flanders, and hearing that king William had subdued the Realme, and that his Fathers inheritance was given vnto a Norman, commeth with spare into England, and gathering together vnto him a company of his kindred, goeth vnto his Vncle by his Fathers side then Abbot of Peterborough, and first making confession of his sinnes, and absolution received, watcheth all night in the Church, in praying and fasting, and the next day hearing diuine service, offered his Sword vpon the Altar, and after the Gospell, the Abbot put the same hallowed sword about Herewards neck. And communicating the holy Mysteries of Christ, from thence forth remained a lawfull Knight, but afterwards by a Prouincial Counsell holden in the Church of Saint Peter at Westminster, in the yeare of our Lord God one thousand one hundred and two, being the third yeare of King Henry the first, by consent of the Lords spirituall, and temporall, the authority of Abbots, for making of Knights was taken away, notwithstanding afterwards the same King Anno Domini one thousand one hundred twenty fiue, being the fifth and twenty yeare of his raigne, by his Charter made vnto the Abbot of Reading, reciting his prerogatiue, Ecclesiasticall, and Temporall, did graunt vnto the said Abbot, authority to make Knights, as by the words of the same charter, remaining in the custody of Master Ioseph Holland, of the Inner Temple in London Gentleman, doth appeare as followeth.

Tus Elmus Malmesburiensis fol. 130.

That the Abbot should make no Knights, but in the sacred vestures of Christ, in which garment let him be admodum prudent, that he entertaine not young ones, but men of ripe age, or discrete: he may receiue as wel Clerks as Lay men.

Obseruations not altogether vnworthy remembrance.

Carpes, and Pippins, as Walter Leonard Mascall affirmeth, were brought into England by Walter Mascall of Plomked in Sussex, and since that time came in Apricocks, and many other delicate fruites, Turkies, which all other Nations call Guyney Cockes, are generally said to be brought into England betweene the tenth and fiftenth yeare of Henry the eighth: and about the same time came in the planting of Hoppes, brought from Artois, and presently vpon that, and for many yeares after was vsed this Rime.

Read his booke of fishing, fowling, and planting.

Turkeyss, Carps, Hops, Pickarels, and Beere,
Came into England all in one yeere.

Apricocks, Mellycatons, Musk-Millions and Tobacco, came into England about the 20. yeare of Queene Elizabeth, and since that time many other strange fruits and flowers.

Sir Walter Raleigh first brought Tobacco in vse, when all men wondred what it meant.

Womens Partes, Kuttes, Puffes, Fanns, Perriwigs and Bodkins, were first deuised, and vsed in Italy by Curtezans, and from thence brought into France, and there receiued of the best sort for gallant ornaments, and from thence they came into England, about the time of the Massacre of Paris.

Richard Mathewes at Flet-bridge, was the first Englishman that attained the perfection of making fine knines, and knive hafts, and in the fift yeare of Queene Elizabeth, hee obtained a prohibition against all Strangers, and others for bringing any knives into England from beyond the seas, which vntill that time were brought into this land by Shippes lading from Flanders and other places. Albeit at that time, and for many hundred yeares before, there were made in diuers parts of this Kingdome, many coarse and vncomely knives, and at this day the best, and fineft knives in the world, are made in London.

Knives.

He attained his skill by trauelling, and reading in diuers nations.

This knives were marked with the halfe moone, according to his Letters patents.

About that time Englishmen began to make all sorts of Pinnes, and at this day they excell all Nations, and it may easily be proued, that Strangers haue sold Pinnes in this land to the value of three score thousand pound a yeare.

Pinnes made in England.

About the 10. yeare of the Queene, Richard Dyar, after he had bin many yeares in Spaine, where he learned the making of earthen furnaces, earthen fire-pots, and earthen Ouens, transportable, he taught his Countrymen the making of the same at London without Moregate, and for a time enioyed the whole profit thereof to himselfe by Patterne.

About the 16. yeare of the Queene, began the making of Cole poking-sticks, and vntill that time all Lawndzelles vsed setting sticks, made of wood or bone.

Tobacco was first brought, & made known in England by Sir John Hawkins, about the yeare 1565. but not vsed by Englishmen in many yeares after, though at this day commonly vsed by most men, and many women: the making of Spanish Needles, was first taught in England, by Elias Crowse a Germane, about the eight yeare of Queene Elizabeth, and in Queen Maries time, there was a Negro made fine Spanish Needles in Cheapside, but would neuer teach his Art to any.

Spanish Needles.

About

About the first yeare of Queene Elizabeth, began the planting and growing of Licorish in England.

The flower de luce of the Royall Exchange furnished with shops, and all sorts of fine wares.

And concerning the Royall Exchange in London, whereof I haue formerly made some discourse: I forgot to set downe that about fiue or sixe yeares after it was furnished with wares, as formerly mentioned, Sir Thomas Gresham constrained all the shoppe-keepers that had shoppes about, to take shoppes below, in the lowest vault vnder ground of the Royall Exchange, where was equall no more of Shops to those aboue. At which time euery man payed foure marks a yeare for euery shop aboue, and he would haue as much rent for euery shop below as aboue, or else they should not haue any shoppes aboue, and after they had kept shoppes below a short season, what with the dampe of the vault, the darkenesse of the place, and the vnwillingnes of Customers to buy their wares there, they were so wearied, that they agreed among themselues, to giue foure pound a yeare for a shoppe aboue, so that they might be freed from keeping shoppes below, and that Sir Thomas Gresham should turne the vault to what other vse he would, either for Merchants goods or otherwise, which offer he accepted, and these Tenants onely furnished the shoppes aboue, as they are at this day, according to the time.

Shoe roses scarfes and garters.

Buckles worne vpon mens shoes, and no roses worne or knowne.

Sir Walter Raleigh first brought Tobacco in vse, when all men wondred what it meant.

Silke shoes of late yeres.

Womens white knit caps.

Minevor caps.

Christenday shewes giuen in deed of peace.

At this time, and for many yeares before, it was not the vse and Custome (as now it is) for Godfathers and Godmothers, generally to giue plate at the Baptisme of children (as Spoones, Cupps, and such like) but onely to giue christening shirts, with little bands, and cuffs, wrought, either with silke or blew thred, the best of them for these persons weare edged with a small lace of black silke and gold, the highest price of which for great mens children, were seldome aboue a noble and the common sort, two, three, or foure, and fiue shillings a piece.

Gardners Sonnes in Gresham Colledge, and Gardners of Hatfield.

And it was then the Custome for maydes, and Gentlewomen, to giue their fauourites as tokens of their loue, little handkercheifs of about three or foure inches square, wrought round about, and with a button, or a tassell at each corner, and a little in the middle, with silke or thred: The best edged with a little small gold lace, or twist, which being doubled vp in foure cross foldes, so as the middle might be seene, Gentlemen and others did vsually weare them in their hatts, as fauores of their Loues, and Mistresses, some cost fiue pence a piece, some twelue pence, and the richest fifteene pence.

Silke buttons.

Likewise at the same time, the making or wearing of silke buttons, was very little, or not at all knowne to the generality, but onely to the very best sort, who at that time, made buttons of the same stuffe, their doublets, coats or Jerkins were made of.

Great cheare and full buttons worne by great personages.

At which time likewise, many very honorable personages, and others, as well women, as men, did weare hoopers of great Tassell buttons about their cappes, or hatbands, as a worthy garment, to distinguish betweene the Gentry and others. But about the tenth yeare of Queene Elizabeth, many young Citizens and others, began to weare Tassell buttons vpon their doublets, coats, and Jerkins and then the former wearing of hoopers, and hatbands, set with Tassell buttons ceased. And within few yeeres after, began the generall wearing of buttons, of thred, silke, haire, and of gold and siluer threed.

And about the same aboue mentioned, and many yeares before many honourable personages, wore their hose with buckles, viz. the common sort wore copper buckles, and the best sort wore buckles of siluer or copper gilded.

But concerning shoe Roses, either of silke, or of what stuffe soeuer they were not then vsed nor haue one, neither any scarffes, aboue the value of foure nobles, or thirtie shillings at the most, by any person whatsoeuer: neither was there any Garters aboue the price of fiue shillings a payre, although at this day men of meane cracke weare Garters, and shoe Roses, of more then fiue pounds price, and some weare scarffes from ten pounds a piece, vnto thirtie pounds or more. The like may be truly sayd, concerning wrought Wastcoates, when no workeman knew how to make a Wastcoate wrought, worth fiue pound, nor no Lord in the Land wore any of that value, although at this day, many millainers shoppes are stored with rich and curious imbroydered Wastcoats, of the full value of tenne pound a piece, twentie pound, and some forty pound.

Wastcoats.

And vntill the tenth or twelfe yeere of Queene Elizabeth, there were but few silke shoppes in London, and those few were onely kept by women, and maide seruants, and not by men, as now they are: At which time all the silke shoppes in London had not so much, nor so many sorts of silke, gold, or siluer thred, nor sorts of silke lace, and gold and siluer lace, as is at this day in diuers particular shoppes in Cheapside, and other places.

At which time last abouesayd, and for three or foure yeares after, all Citizens wiues in generall, were constrayned to weare white knit Caps of woollen yarne, vnlesse their husbands were of good value in the Queenes booke, or could proue themselues Gentlemen by descent, and then ceased the womens wearing of Minevor Caps, otherwise called three corner Caps, which formerly was the vsuall wearing of all graue Matrons. These Minivor Caps were white, and three square, and the peakes thereof, were full three or foure inches from their head, but the Aldermens wiues and such like, made them Bonnets of Velues, after the Minevor Cappe fashion, but larger, which made a great show vpon their heads, all which are already quite forgotten.

In the time of Queene Mary, and the beginning of the Raigne of Queene Elizabeth, and for many yeares before, all Apprentizes in London wore blew Cloakes in the Summer, and in the Winter blew Gownes, but it was not lawfull for any man either seruant or others, to weare their Gownes lower then to the calues

Wide gowns and Cloakes for Apprentizes.

of their legges, except they were aboue three score yeares of age, but the length of Cloakes being not limited, they made them Cloakes downe to their Shoes, their Breeches and Stockings were vsually of white broad cloath, viz. round Slops, and their Stockings sowed vp close thereunto, as if they were all but one piece, they also wore flat Caps, both then and many yeares after, as well Apprentizes as Journeymen, and others, both at home and abroad, whom the Pages of the Court in derision called Flat-Caps.

Flat Caps vsually worn.

When Prentizes and Journey-men attended vpon their Maisters and Mistresses in the night, they went before them carrying a Lanthorne and Candle in their hands, and a great long Club on their neckes, and many well growne sturdy Apprentizes vsed to weare long Daggers in the day time at their backes or sides.

Apprentizes vsed to carry Clubs.

At this time, and likewise formerly, and diuers yeares after, it was a very great matter to giue ten pound to binde any youth Apprentize, although at this day it is vsually to giue twenty, fourty, 60. or an 100. pound with an Apprentize; for then it was the generall vse and custome of all Apprentizes of London, Porters onely excepted, to carry the water Tankerd, to serue their Maisters from the Thames, and the common Conduits of London.

At the comming of Queene Elizabeth, and for diuers yeares after, there was very small store of Plate belonging to any of the Halls of London, although at this day they are all generally very plentifully furnished.

Plate in Halls of Companies.

The first making of Venice glasses in England, began at the crotched Fryers in London, about the beginning of the Raigne of Queene Elizabeth, by one Iacob Venalino, an Italian.

Venice glasses.

The cutting of yron barres in a mill for the ready vse of Smiths, to make long rods, and all sorts of nayles, was brought first into England in the yeare 1590. by Godfrey Box, of the Prouince of Liege: who set vp the first mill for that purpose, neere Dartford in Kent.

Cutting of Iron barres.

He likewise set vp the first mill for the making of Copper plate, called a battery mill.

Copper Plates.

And vpon the same River (called Dartford Riuer) not long before, was set vp a mill to make white Paper, by Maister John Spilman, (a Germane) who was, long after, Knighted by King Iames, this was the first mill in England, wherein fine white Paper was made.

White paper.

In the raigne of King Iames, course Paper (commonly called browne Paper) was first made in diuers places (as about Windsor and Surrey, this Paper was called white browne Paper, seruing for Grocers and such like.

Browne paper.

THE

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF KING *CHARLES*, VNTILL 1632.

KIng Charles began his Raigne, on Sunday the 27. of March 1625. with great applause, and hearty loue of all his Subiects: and the next day after by proclamation, signified and commanded that all maner of Officers, and Magistrates throughout all his Dominions, should still hold, vse, and exercise all such power and authority as they held of his late deerely beloued Father, vntill his Maiesties pleasure were further knowne.

Saturday the 7. of May 1625. were performed the Funerall rights for King Iames, and his corpes, with all magnificence and state, were carried by Chariot from Denmarke house in the Strand, to Westminster Abbey Church, King Charles being the principall Mourner, accompanied and attended by all the Nobility, and chiefe Clergie of the Land, with diuers Ambassadours, and all his Seruants and Officers, and a great number besides, all in mourning habites, the like number of Mourners cannot be said to haue beene at any time. His Hearse was more Royally adorned, than hath beene knowne for former Princes, his corpes was interred in the Chappell Royall.

The Marriage being solemnized in Paris by Proxie, the King of Englands Ships attended at Bulloigne the comming of the Queene, and the weeke before Whitsuntide King Charles went to Canterbury, where he stayed her Highnesse arriuall at Douer, which was vpon Trinity Sunday in the Euening, vpon knowledge whereof next morning, the King being attended, and accompanied by the chiefe Nobility, with diuers Reuerend Bishops and others, rode to Douer, and entertain'd her Highnesse, with all state and kindnesse, and the same day it was made knowne in London: For ioy whereof all Churches rang their Bells, and the streetes were fill'd with Bonfires.

The Queene arriueth at Douer, and is receiued by the King.

The next Thursday, being Corpus Christi day, viz. the 16. of June, they came to Graues-end, where the King and Queene, with the foresaid Nobility, and great Ladies of the Land, and others aforesaid, tooke Barge, and arriued at White-hall, about 6. of the clocke in the afternoone, Duke Buckingham with his traine were lodged at Denmarke house, in the Strand.

Vpon Saturday the 18. of June, the King in person went to the Parliament house, where in the presence of the Nobility, Clergie, and Commons of the Parliament, he signified vnto them the seuerall reasons, that moued him to summon this Parliament.

The King maketh a speech in the Parliament house.

And the next Munday, he held a very Royall Feast at White-hall, in honour of his Nuptiall or Wedding day.

The King holdeth a great Feast, in honour of his wedding day

Vpon Munday the 11. of July, the Parliament was aduanced to Oxford, there to be held on Monday the first of August, by reason of the sicknesse great increase of the Plague, viz. the 7. of July, the total of the dead was twelue hundred, and three more following aboue seuenteene hundred, the Parliament continued vntill the 12. of August, and then brake vp.

The Parliament adiourned to Oxford.

The 25. of September, an Dearbe-wife neere Moore street in London, was brought to bed of two Girles, which grew fast together face to face, hauing all seuerall limbes and members, proper to the sex, which died immediately.

Children of strange birth.

At this time Sir Thomas Coventry Knight, Attorney generall, was made Lord Keeper of the great Seale.

Sir Thomas Coventry L. Keeper.

Sir Robert Heath knight, Solicitor, was made Attourney generall.

Sir Robert Heath the Kings Attourney.

There was this yeare a great Mortality in London, and the neere Townes adioyning; That is to say, from the 22. of December 1624. to the 23. of December 1625. there died within London, the Liberties, and the Cities of Westminster, Lambeth Newington, Stepney, Hackney, and Islington, three score and three thousand and one, whereof of the Plague, fourty one thousand, three hundred and thirteene, whereof in London and the Liberties, and the nine out Parishes, fifty foure thousand, two hundred sixty fiue, whereof of the Plague, thirty fiue thousand foure hundred and seuenteene.

A great Plague in London.

There died in the Citie of Westminster of

all diseases, two thousand fine hundred & fourty, and in Stepney parish, foure thousand fourescore and nine, this being the greatest sickness that euer happened in London, except that in the time of Edward the third, whereof mention is made in his proper place, and in the second yeare of King Iames.

Towards the end of Summer, before King Iames dyed, here was great preparation for the well setting out of a strong Army by Sea, and this last Sommer, 1625. being the first yeare of King Charles, it was fully furnished, consisting of about 120. ships, whereof six were of the Kings Royall: And being assembled in the South Countries, they set sayle the first weeke of October, and bent their course for Cadiz in Spaine, where they arrived, and had taken it, if that Fryer and some other Cowards here aboord, had not fondly discouered their approach, yet nenertheless, they made a faire attempt, spoyled a strong fort, and returned, having returned many sharpe Bullets, and Gunpeeces.

This yeare 1625. Michaelmas Terme was kept at Reading, and Bartholomew Faire holden, and the repaire of Londoners to any Faire.

On Roman day being Thursday, K. Charles was Crowned at Westminster, being attended by the chiefe Nobilitie and Clergie.

In honor of this Coronation, the King created eight Earles, and made 58. Knights of the Bath. At this Coronation, the Lord Maior and Aldermen attended his Maiestie, the Lord Maior bearing the Scepter before the King.

The next Monday being the 6. of February, 1625. A Parliament began at Westminster, and continued until Thursday the 15. of January next following, and then was dissolued by Commission.

The same day the Earle of Bristow was committed to the Tower.

Monday the 12 of June 1626. at two of the clocke in the afternoone, there happed a strange tempestuous whirle-wind vpon the Thames, neere to the West end of the Bankside, with which wind, much water was lifted vp into the ayre, which made great darkenes in that place, so as diuers passengers being in seuerall boats, could not discerne one another, the water ouer head seemed to fight, and the boates were turned round, to their great danger and amazement, and in short space, the Tempest ran ouer towards Westminster side, passing by Whitehall, and Yorke house it vanished, presently after followed a great Thunder, and Lightning, with extreame hayle, in such abundance, that they layd it vp in heapes, whereof much remayned two dayes after vnmelted: In this Tempest, part of S. Andrewes Church-yard wall in holborne next Shoe-lane, was beaten downe, so as all passengers might behold many coffins and coapes of the dead, and the new wall of the Church-yard of S. Bartolphs at Bishops gate, was likewise throwne downe, and diuers coffins and coapes of the dead fell into the Towne ditch, which with all speed were taken vp, and new buried. Vpon Friday the weeke before, there was the like whirle-wind vpon the Thames, betweene Purfleet & Erith in Kent, where it tore the grasse from the ground, and carryed it vp into the Ayre.

Shi weeke there dyed within London, the Liberties, and Out Parishes, of all diseases, but 101. whereof of the plague none.

This weeke the frames of all the great Pageants, were taken downe, which were set vp the last yeere, but were neuer finished, nor put to vse, though all things were in readinesse.

At this time also the great Crosse in Cheapside was fully repaired, and neatly gilded, in farre more curious and richer manner, then at any time before.

This yeare there was a generall muster throughout all the Shires in England, and the City of London, mustered the trayned bands, with the Captaines and Collonels vpon Tuesday the 18. of Aprill, Master Alderman Hame dyed being their Generall.

Thursday the 9. of December, 1626. Sir Randall Crew Knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, was commanded to forbeare his sitting in the Court, and the next day after he was by writ discharged from his Office.

Tuesday the 28. of November, Sir Thomas Richardson Knight, the Kings Sergeant at Law, was sworne chiefe Iustice of the common Pleas that place hauing bin voyd ten meneths before.

Thursday the first of February, 1626. Sir Nicholas Hyde of the middle Temple, was made Sergeant at Law, and the 8. of February hee was sworne Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench.

At the Feast of Saint George, 1626. it was ordained that the Soueraigne and Knights of the order of the Garter, should weare on the left shoulder, and side of the cloaks, and riding coats the Crosse of Saint George within the Garter, and certaine beames of Silver, such as the Knights of the holy Ghost in France doe vse to beare, which beames doe spread in forme of a Crosse.

This Somer 1626. aboue 100. sayle of English ships, in the time of vintage, went into sundry parts of France, and being arrested at Vrdraun, and other places, the French King caused them all with their men and furniture, to be arrested, and detained, whereupon the Citizens of London, according to the Kings command, sent out 20. ships of warre, well appointed, to secure the coasts, and to take such French ships as they could meete, who hauing taken sundry prizes, and indured extreame stormes, Thundring and Lightning, chiefely vpon the fourth of January, they returned.

About ten yeares past, the picture of King Iames was set vp in the open square of the Royall Exchange, and after him, by seuerall men, by seuerall and at seuerall times, were all the Kings of England set vp, euen vnto Edward the confessour, all which were fully finished by this present time 1627. for vntill this time, all their places stood emptie, although the former Kings

images were made in Flaunders, to haue bene set vp at the first building of the Royall Exchange, but they miscarryed, and so the places had stood voyd fifty yeeres.

At the end of this moneth of Aprill, 1627. Doctor Neale Bishop of Durisme, and Doctor Laud, Bishop of Bath and Wells, were sworne Priuy Councellours, and shortly after, the said Doctor Laud, was made Bishop of London.

This moneth of May, the King of Sweden, an Henry Prince of Orange, were made Knights of the most honourable Order of the Garter.

Wednesday the 27 of June, 1627. the Duke of Buckingham, with a very Royall Nauy, consisting of diuers of the Ships Royall, and many other shippes of Warre, to the number of almost one hundred, set sayle from the West parts of England, and the 10. and 11. of July following, the Army arrined at the Ile of Ree, neere Rochell, and won it by force, and continued there vntill the 29. of October, and won the Citie of Saint Martine, but could not win the great Fort: In which moneth the enemie vere subtilly by night, landed multitudes of French horse, and foot, and forced the English to make their retreat out of the Iland, with great losse of Souldiours, and Commanders. And the next day hee imbarqued, who with all the rest of the Fleete, returned to the West part of England, the about 12. of November; What more may bee said of this voyage and action, I referre you vnto other bokes written to that purpose.

Munday the 13. of August, 1627. a great fish called a Grampas, of ten yeards long, about fiue foote high, and of like breadth, was taken neere Woolwich, eight miles from London, where being seene aboue water, was shot with musquets, and drawne into a small bocke, where for three dayes space, many thousands came from all parts to see it.

Sunday morning the 2. of March, 1627. whilest the people were at diuine Seruice, a great part of the Towne of Sandwich was burned, which began in a malt house, by negligence of a man.

Monday the 17. of March 1627. the King with the Nobilitie and Clergie, rode in great state from Whitehall to the Parliament house where he signified vnto the Nobility, and Commons, the cause of their assembly at this present Parliament, which continued vntill Thursday the 26. of June 1628. many Statutes were enacted, and fiue intire Subsidies giuen to the King, to be payd within 2 yeere and was Prorogued vntill the 20. day of October next following, and then the 20. of January, began againe, and continued vnto the beginning of March following, but concluded nothing. And vpon Wednesday the 4. of March, the King by Proclamation dissolued the Parliament, and the next Thursday following, the King went in State by Barge, to the Parliament house, and there in the presence of the Nobility, and Commons, dissolued the Parliament.

Wednesday the 9. of Aprill, 1628. at two of the clocks in the afternoone, neere Hatford in Buckshire, there happened a strange tempest of thunder and lightning, with a dreadfull storme in the ayre, and withall great thunder-claps, like dilting peales of double canons, & the beating of a drum, sounding a retreat, with such terrour that it affrighted all the neere Inhabitants, and caused great beastes to runne roaring vp and downe the fields.

Friday the 13. of June 1628. one Lamb of fourescore yeeres of age being no way learned, yet of the multitude surnamed doctor Lambe, by reason he pretended physicke, and telling of fortunes, hauing borne formerly condemned of sorcery, witchcraft, and a rape, as you may read in a book published of his life and death, was assailed by the multitude at a Cookes house, within Newgate, where he discerning the danger of their hatred, they hauing pursued him in diuers streets, and through the fields, slipping certaine saylors, he called them in, and gaue them money to guard him, who by a strong hand guided him through coale-man streete, where for shelter, hee entred into a Tauerne, the saylors defending the doore, but the enraged multitude with stones and dirt, beat the saylors, brake the windowes of the house, so that the Maid was forced to convay him forth out at a backe doore, leading into the old Jury, where the rout met him againe, and one with a great stone, broake him ouer the eye, and felled him to the ground, and then he arose by to crosse the street, but with that, and other blowes, he fell into the kennell, where being still beaten & wounded, he remayned senceless, and then was carryed to the Counter in the Poultry, where being layd downe, he neuer spake, nor stird, but dyed that night.

Saturday the 12. of July 1628. a poore woman of Westmin was burnt in Smithfield for stabbing her husband to death with a knife.

The Somer the drawe bridge of Lond. being old and decayed, was taken downe, and new built, hauing stood full fourescore yeeres.

This Sommer also Crechurch within Aldgate being very old and ruinous, was cleane taken downe, new builded and enlarged, in farre fairer and larger manner then before, vpon equall ground without descent of steppes, as the former: This Church called Katherine Crec-Church, was not fully finished vntill the yeare 1630. Vnto the building whereof, the Court of Aldermen, the chiefe companies of London and others, gaue very liberally: and the Lord Cranen gaue 300. pounds, the charge whereof with the mending of the steeple, cost aboue 3000. pounds: This Church was consecrated vpon Sunday the 16. of January 1630. by doctor Laud Lord Bishop of London.

Also the steeple of Aldermary Church, neere Bow-lane, was new built from 12. foot aboue the ground, according to the foundation which was begun many yeres since, by Alderman Kibbie, who builded that Church aboue 100. yeeres since but dyed before hee could finish the steeple.

About the 13. yeere of King Iames, the Scriuenors of London, obtained Letters Patents to be made a body politique and corporate, and in the 4. yeere of King Charles, they bought them,

K. goes to Cadiz.
The Terme kept at Reading.
King Charles Crowned.
Eight Earles created.
The Earle of Bristow committed to the Tower.
The Tower Seruants whirle-winds and temp. ths.
Note this from the last yeare.
The frames for the last Pageants taken downe.
A generall Muster in London.
The lord Chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench discharged from his place.
Sir Thomas Richardson Lord chiefe Iustice of the common pleas.
Sir Nicholas Hyde, Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench.
The order of the Garter.
English ships arrested in France.
Images of the Kings of England, set vp in the Royall Exchange.
The Bishop of winchester and Bath and Wells, sworne Priuy Councellors.
The King of Swethen and the Prince of Orange made Knights of the Garter.
The English inuaded the Ile of Ree, and were driuen out.
A Grampas taken at Woolwich.
Sandwich burned.
A Parliament at Westminster
Doctor Lamb killed by the multitude.
A woman burnt for killing her husband
London bridge new made.
Crechurch within Aldgate new built and enlarged.
Aldermary steeple finished.
The Scriuenors of London made a Corporation.

Blew gowns and Cloakes for Apprentizes.

of their legges, except they were aboue three-score yeares of age, but the length of Cloakes being not limited, they made them Cloakes downe to their Shoes, their Breeches and Stockings were vsually of white broad cloath, viz. round Slops, and their Stockings sowed vp close thereunto, as if they were all but one piece, they also wore flat Caps, both then and many yeares after, as well Apprentizes as Journeymen, and others, both at home and abroad, whom the Pages of the Court in derision called Flat-Caps.

Flat Caps vsually worn.

When Prentizes and Journeymen attended vpon their Maisters and Mistresses in the night, they went before them carrying a Lanthorne and Candle in their hands, and a great long Club on their neckes, and many well growne sturdy Apprentizes vsed to weare long Daggers in the day time at their backes or sides.

Apprentizes vsed to carry Clubs.

At this time, and likewise formerly, and diuers yeares after, it was a very great matter to giue ten pound to binde any youth Apprentize, although at this day it is vsually to giue twenty, fourty, 60. or an 100. pound with an Apprentize; for then it was the generall vse and custome of all Apprentizes of London, Porters onely excepted, to carry the water Tankard, to serue their Maisters from the Thames, and the common Conduits of London.

At the comming of Queene Elizabeth, and for diuers yeares after, there was very small store of Plate belonging to any of the Halls of London, although at this day they are all generally very plentifully furnished.

Plate in Halls of Companies.

The first making of Venice glasses in England, began at the crotched Fryers in London, about the beginning of the Raigne of Queene Elizabeth, by one Iacob Venadine, an Italian.

Venice glasses.

The cutting of yron barres in a mill for the readie vse of Smiths, to make long rods, and all sorts of nayles, was brought first into England in the yeare 1590. by Godfrey Box, of the Prouince of Liege: who set vp the first mill to that purpose, neere Dartford in Kent.

Cutting of Iron barres.

He likewise set vp the first mill for the making of Copper plate, called a battery mill.

Copper Plates.

And vpon the same Riuer (called Dartford Riuer) not long before, was set vp a mill to make white Paper, by Master John Spilman, (a Germain) who was, long after, Knighted by King Iames. this was the first mill in England, wherein fine white Paper was made.

White paper.

In the raigne of King Iames, course Paper (commonly called browne Paper) was first made in diuers places (as about Windsor & Surrey, this Paper was called white brown Paper, seruing for Grocers and such like.

THE

THE LIFE AND RAIGNE OF KING *CHARLES*, VNTILL 1632.

KIng Charles began his Raigne, on Sunday the 27. of March 1625. with great applause, and hearty loue of all his Subiects: and the next day after by proclamation, signified and commanded that all maner of Officers, and Magistrates throughout all his Dominions, should still hold, vse, and exercise all such power and authority as they held of his late dearely beloued Father, vntill his Maiesties pleasure were further knowne.

Saturday the 7. of May 1625. were performed the Funerall rights for King Iames, and his corpes, with all magnificence and state, were carried by Chariot from Denmarke house in the Strand, to Westminster Abby Church, King Charles being the principall Mourner, accompanied and attended by all the Nobility, and chefe Clergie of the Land, with diuers Ambassadours, and all his Seruants and Officers, and a great number besides, all in mourning habities, the like number of Mourners cannot be said to haue beene at any time. His Hearse was more Royally adorned, than hath beene knowne for former Princes, his corpes was interr'd in the Chappell Royall.

The Marriage being solemnized in Paris by Proxie, the King of Englands Ships attended at Bulloigne the comming of the Queene, and the weeke before Whitsontide King Charles went to Canterbury, where he stayed her Highnesse arriuall at Douer, which was vpon Trinity Sunday in the Euening, vpon knowledge whereof next morning, the King being attended, and accompanied by the chiefe Nobility, with diuers Reuerend Bishops and others, rode to Douer, and entertain'd her Highnesse, with all state and kindnesse, and the same day it was made knowne in London: For ioy whereof all Churches rang their Bells, and the streetes were fill'd with Bonfires.

The Queene arriueth at Douer, and is receiued by the King.

The next Thursday, being Corpus Christi day, viz. the 16. of June, they came to Graues-end, where the King and Queene, with the forenamed Nobility, and great Ladies of the Land, and others aforesaid, tooke Barge, and arriued at White-hall, about 6. of the clocke in the after noone, Duke Ernestus with his traine were lodged at Denmarke house, in the Strand.

Vpon Saturday the 18. of June, the King in person went to the Parliament house, where in the presence of the Nobility, Clergie, and Commons of the Parliament, he signified vnto them the seuerall reasons, that moued him to summon this Parliament.

The King maketh a speech in the Parliament house.

And the next Munday, he held a very Royall Feast at White-hall, in honour of his Nuptiall or Wedding day.

The King holdeth a great Feast, in honour of his wedding day.

Vpon Munday the 11. of July, the Parliament was adiourned to Oxford, there to be held on Monday the first of August, by reason of the seuerall great increase of the sickenesse, viz. the 7. of July, the Bill of the dead was twelue hundred, and the weeke following aboue seuentene hundred, the Parliament continued vntill the 12. of August, and then broke vp.

The Parliament adiourned to Oxford.

Die 25. of September, an Hearbe-wife neare Dower Street in London, was brought to bed of two Girles, which grew fast together face to face, hauing all seuerall limbes and members, proper to the sex, which died immediately.

Children of strange birth.

At this time Sir Thomas Coventry Knight, Attorney generall, was made Lord Keeper of the great Seale.

Sir Thomas Coventry L. Keeper.

Sir Robert Heath knight, Solicitor, was made Attourney generall.

Sir Robert Heath the King Attourney.

There was this yeare a great Mortality in London, and the neere Townes adioyning; That is to say, from the 22. of December 1624. to the 23. of December 1625. there died within London, the Liberties, and the Citie of Westminster, Lambeth Newington, Stepney, Hackney, and Islington, three score and three thousand and one, whereof of the Plague, fourty one thousand, three hundred and thirteene, whereof in London and the Liberties, and the nine out Parishes, fifty foure thousand, two hundred fifty fiue, whereof of the Plague, thirty fiue thousand foure hundred and seuenteene.

A great Plague in London.

There died in the Citie of Westminster of

themselues a Hall, called Bacon house, close adioyning to the Church of Saint Mary Staynings by London Wall. And upon Tuesday the 29. of July, this yeare 1628. they held their first Assembly and chosing of Maister and Wardens.

The Duke of Buckingham slaine.

This Summer there was a great Army prepared for forraigne seruice, whereof the Duke of Buckingham was Generall, who went to Portsmouth, to set all things in readinesse for present dispatch: And upon Saturday the 23. of August, as hee was going thorow his Hall, which was filled with Commanders, and Strangers, suddainly and vnexpectedly Iohn Felton a Lieutenant, stabd the Duke into the breast, with a knife, and fitly withdrew himselfe, vndiscerned of any to doe the fact, the Duke stepping to lay hold on him, drew out the knife and began to dagger, the bloud gushing out at his mouth, at which dreadfull sight, certaine Commanders with their strength held him vp, the Duke being depriued of speech and life. And then all the doores and passages being stopped, and many with their weapons drawne to kill the murtherer, the offender himselfe seeing the vproare, boldly confessed, saying, I am the man that did it and being examined by the Lords, was committed. The King at that time was but five miles from Portsmouth: The Coppes was brought to London, on Saturday the 30. of August, the Nobility, Friends, and Officers brought the Coppes by night with Torches lighted, to Wallingford house neere Charing-Crosse: the Murtherer was brought to the Tower the 5. of September.

The Duke buried.

Vpon Thursday the 18. of September, all the Coppes of the Duke was honourably buried in the Chappell Royall at Westminster, and within two yeares after, the Dutchesse payd all the Dukes debts, which were very great.

The Lord Weston made Lord Treasurer.

Tuesday the 14. of October, the Lord Weston, Chancellour of the Exchequer, was sworn Lord high Treasurer of England.

The Earle of Lindsey Generall.

Vpon the death of the Duke, the Earle of Lindsey was made Generall of the Fleet, who set sayle from England about the 10. of September, with full resolution to relieue the distressed Rochellers: but the French King had so fortified the Ile of Ree, and Barricadoed all other places, so as the English could make no passage to Rochell. The Rochellers seeing their friends preuented, and themselues depriued of Releife, they yeelded the Cittie and themselues to the French King, who gaue them their liues, goods, and liberties. The English Fleet hauing endured many extreame stormes and tempests, returned about the middest of November.

The 18. of November, Wimbleton house in Surrey, by negligence of Gunpowder, a part thereof was blowne vp.

A faire house burnt in the Strand.

The next day being Tuesday, the Lord Wimbleton had his other in the Strand burnt cleane downe.

Felton arraigned and condemned.

Thursday the 27. of Nouember, the aforenamed Iohn Felton, was brought from the Tower, and Arraigned at the Kings Bench, where he very penitently confessed the fact, saying, I haue slaine a most Noble loyall Subiect, and wish that this my right hand might be here cut off, as a true testimony of my hearty sorrow, and had his Iudgement to be hanged; from thence he was sent to the Gate-house, where he remained till Saturday, and then sent to Tyborne, and there executed, where hee humbly and heartily repented his offence, and asked forgiuenesse of God, the King, and the Dutchesse, and of all the Land, saying, he had slaine a most Noble loyall Subiect, and desired all men to pray for him. The next day being Sunday, his Body was sent by Coach towards Portsmouth, and was there hanged in Chaines.

A Speciall Ambassador from Russia.

About the 16. of November 1628. arriued in London a Messenger from the Emperour of Russia Michaell Phedorowich, as also from the Patriarke, Lord Philobert Nechetick of Molco and all Russia, his name Vasilowicke Demetrewicke, who is entitled in the Emperours letter, a Gentleman of his Princely house, of note, and well respected, his comming to congratulate with our Kings Maiestie, his happy comming to the Crowne, of his great Kingdomes of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, and was honourably received into the Cittie of London, and conducted to his Lodging. It pleased his Maiestie to giue him Audience the 7. of December.

The 14. of December, the L. Viscount Conway, then Secretary of State, was made Lord President of the Counsell, and in his place the Lord Viscount Dorchester, was sworne Secretary at Whitehall.

Anno Dom. 1629.

This yeare the King kept the Feast of S. George very solemnly at Whitehall. And the next Sunday being the 26. of April, eleauen of the Lords, Knights of the Garter, each of them hauing fifte men in their Liueries, Mantles, Chaines of Gold, and Feathers, came to the Lord Maior of London, betweene six and seauen of the clocke, where they were honourably entertained and feasted.

An Regni 5. The Lord Maior feeth the Knights of the Garter.

Sunday the 10. of May 1629. a ioyfull peace was proclaimed in London betweene England and France; the Lord Maior and Aldermen, and diuers principall Heraulds at Armes, being present. And forthwith the said Proclamation was sent into all Hauens and chiefe Townes corporate of this Realme.

Peace proclaimed betweene England and France.

The 13. of May 1629. the Queene was brought to bed of a Sonne at Greenewich, who liued by reason of weaknesse, was forthwith Christened by the name of Charles, and the same morning died, and the next day being Ascention day, was very honourably interred in the Chappell Royall at Westminster, where were sent the Nobility, Iudges, and many others, of honourable ranke and quality, with the Heraulds at Armes.

The Kings first borne.

Trinity Sunday being the whall day for the Lord Maior of London, to doe his homage, he was then Knighted, and Sr. William Acton one of the Sheriffes of London, the same day, was made Knight and Baronet, the Court

Sheriffe Acton made Knight Baronet.

Court being then at Greenewich.

3 great ryot and broyle in Fleetstreet.

Friday the 10. of July, a Gentleman being arrested, in Fleetstreete, diuers Gentlemen by Violence attempted to Rescue the Prisoner, wounded a Sergeant, and enforced the Officers to put their prisoner into a house, vntill the Sheriffe might come to their ayde, and Sheriffe Bacchus being come, carried away the Gentleman prisoner. The Vproare being great, there were slaine two Apprentizes and a Gentleman, surnamed Sergeant Dawson, for the suppressing of which tumult, the Lord Maior with his trapned Bands, came into Fleet-streete, and by degrees quieted the place and then returned.

The principall offendors in the aforenamed Ryot executed.

Thursday the 23. of July, according to the Kings especiall Commission, vnto diuers great Lords of the Priuie Councell, the Lord chiefe Iustice, and others, Nicholas Ashenhurst, and Iohn Stamford, were arraigned and condemned in the Guild-hall, as principall Actors in the aforesaid Ryot, and the next forenoone they were both executed at Tyburne.

This Summer diuers Pick-Pockets, and other Malefactors, as well women as men, were openly punished by drawing in little Carts, called Cumbrills, throughout the high Streets of London.

The League betweene England and France ratified. High floods at London.

Sunday the sixth of September 1629. the King at Windsor, tooke his Oath for confirmation of the new made French league, and feasted the French Ambassadour very Royally.

Thursday the 22. of October, at night, the River of Thames ouerflowed her bankes, and bounds, and drowned much Cattell, and ouerflowed Westminster-hall, in greater measure than hath bin knowne in any mans memory.

At the end of this moneth of October 1629. Sir Francis Cottington, Knight Chancellour of the Exchequer, was sent Ambassadour into Spaine, about a Treaty of Peace.

Sir Francis Cottington sent Ambassadour into Spaine.

The Lord Archbishop of Yorke sworne a priuie Counsellour.

Tuesday the tenth of November, Samuell Harsnet, Doctor of Diuinity, and Archbishop of Yorke, was sworne priuie Councellour, and the Lord William Compton, Earle of Northampton, President of the Marches, and the Lord Viscount Wentworth, President of the North, the Court being at Whitehall.

Alderman Dacy made Knight Baronet.

In the moneth of December, Robert Dacy, Alderman of London, was made Baronet by Patent.

2 Speciall Ambassadours from Spain.

Vpon New-yeares day, arriued at London Don Carolo de Columba, Ambassadour from Spaine, about a Treaty of Peace, he had audience vpon Twelfe day being Wednesday.

1 Fleet of Ships and people for Plantation in new England.

At the end of this moneth of February 1629. here was a Fleet of 14. sayle, furnished with men, women, and children, and all necessaries, and men of Handicrafts, & others of good condition, wealth, and quality, to make a firme Plantation in the parts of America, called New England, betweene the degrees of fourty two and fourty eight, but they staid at Southhamptou, and there about, vntill May, to take 260. Kine, and other like Cattell, for their vse at their arriuall; since which Fleete, there haue gone at seuerall times, diuers Shipps and people, for the same Plantation.

5 Knights of the Garter made.

This moneth of Aprill 1630. there were made Knights of the Garter, the Lord Weston, Lord Treasurer of England, the Earle of Lindsey, and the Earle of Exeter.

Sellers of fish in the Strand supprest.

For diuers yeares of late, certain fishmongers haue erected and set vp fish-stalles in the middle of the street in the Strand, almost ouer against Denmarke house, all which were broken downe by speciall Commission, this moneth of May 1630. least in that space they might grow from stalles to sheds, and then to dwelling houses, as the like was in former time in olde fishstreete, and in Saint Nicholas Shambles, and in other places.

Change of Trade in Goldsmiths Rowe.

At this time, and for diuers yeeres past, the Goldsmiths Row in Cheapside was, is much abated of her wonted store of Goldsmiths, which was the beauty of that famous streete, for the young Goldsmiths, for cheapnesse of dwelling, take them houses in Fleetstreet, holborne and the Strand, and in other streets and Suburbs, and in the place Goldsmiths shops were turned to Milliners, Booksellers, Linnen-Drapers, and others.

Prince Charles borne.

Saturday the 29. of May 1630. betweene the houres of 10. and 11. in the forenoone, was borne the most High and Mighty Prince Charles, at Saint Iames, neere Charing crosse. The next day being Sunday, the King with the great Lords of his Councell, and others came to Pauls Church by Coach, about 8. of the clocke, in the forenoone, and was by the Bishop, Prebends, and Quier of Paules met and received at the great West doore with solemne singing of Te Deum Laudamus, assisted with Sagbut, and Cornets, and being attended neere the Quier, the Organs gaue like Assistance: The King late in the Bishopps seate, during the celebration of Gods diuine seruice, the Creed being sung, the King went vp to the Altar, and made his offering, all being finished, hee went into a roome and heard the Sermon at Paules Crosse, which done, he with his Lords, returned to S. Iames, his intent of comming thither was not knowne to any, vntill that morning early.

The King commeth to S. Paules Church.

Prince Charles Christened.

Sunday the 27. of June, 1630. the said Prince Charles was Christened with all state and solemnity, where the Lord Maior and Aldermen gaue their attendance, and the Lord Maior, and Sir Heneage Finch Recorder, presented the King with a Cup of Gold, of a thousand pound value.

The Godfather was Lewes the French King, whose Deputy was the young Duke of Lenox: The other Godfather was the Prince Palatine, and his Deputy was the Marquesse Hamelton.

And the Godmother was the Queene Mother of France, & her Deputy was the Dutchesse of Richmond and Lenox.

Bartholomew Faire and others forbidden by Proclamation.

The 5. of August this yeare, 1630. the King by Proclamation forbad Bartholomew Faire, and all other Fayres, within 50 myles of London, and specially Sturbridge Fayre, neere Cambridge, by reason that all this Summer the sickenesse was very great in that Towne, which

which caused not only the Scholiers and others to flye their Colledges, but also many chiefe Citizens and others to forsake their dwellings, leaving the Townes very desolate, onely replenished with the poore, and meaner sort, who through want of trade, and their wonted imployments, & heavy visitation, had many wayes perished, but that they were very charitably relieved by their neighbour shires, euen vnto Middlesex, and London, by which their want was much supplyed.

London extreamely frighted with the feare of the sicknesse.

At the first beginning of the Spring this yeere in diuers out Parishes, there dyed diuers of the sicknesse, which wonderfully frighted the Citizens, and also the inhabitants of London, and the Suburbs, so as with more fright and terrour vpon the remembrance of the late great sicknesse, they fledde the Citie, into all parts of the land, where in many places before their comming, as well Villages, as other Townes, were visited with the sicknesse, from whence many of the aforesayd Lon-

doners, in the moneth of August and Septemb' ber, returned to London as to a place of the best refuge, for health and reliefe, for the Country failed in both.

Wednesday the 15. of September 1630. Proclamation was made to adiourne the terme from the 9. of October, vnto the 27 of the same, and that week there dyed in London, Libarties, and the Suburbs, and Out Parishes, two hundred threescore and one, whereof of the plague, threescore and eight.

Sunday the 5. of December, 1630. a joyfull Proclamation of peace, was made betweene England and Spaine, and was first Proclaimed neere Paules Crosse, then at Cheap-side, then at the Royall Exchange, and at the Bridge foote, neere Fishstreete, at which were present, the Lord Maior and Aldermen, and the Kings and Heraulds at Armes in their rich Coates, and brauely mounted, and that night the people expressed their gladnesse, by making Bone-fires, and ringing of Bells.

I peace proclaimed, claime only Spaine.

SIR FRANCIS COTTINGTON

Knight, Chancellour of the Exchequer, and one of his Maiesties most honorable Privie Councel being Ambassador *Spain*, tooke the Kings Oath for confirmation of the League in manner following.

Madrid the 16. of December 1630.

The King of Spaine by oath confirmeth the league.

On the 15. of this moneth, the peace betweene England and Spaine, was Proclaimed with great Solemnitie, and the manner of it was thus.

Scaffolds were erected in three places of the Towne, one before the Palace, another before the Church of S. Mary, neere the Duke of Vzedas house, and the third in a broad streete called the Puerta de Guadalajara.

In the first place, went two and forty Alquazills, who are certaine Ministeriall Officers of Iustice; Then foure heraulds of armes, after them two Secretaries of the Councell Royall, who I thinke doe somewhat resemble in Office, our Clearkes of the Councell, and last of all foure Alquazills decarte. The two and forty that led the rancke, remained on horseback, while the rest ascended the Scaffold.

The chiefe Secretary deliuered a paper with many ceremonies, curtesies, and basamanos, to the chiefe herauld, who read it aloud. This was done by sound of drumme, and trumpet, and there were fier-workes of all kindes, both for that night, and two nights after.

On the 17. day it was agreed, that the King should sweare the peace, and my Lord Ambassadour intended that day to goe to the Palace in Coach: But the Kings will being to doe greater honour to the day, as also to my Lord, desired that his Lordship with his attendants, would come on horseback, and to that end his Maiestie commanded many choice horses of his owne stable, to be sent to my Lord Ambassadors house for his vse. Don Francisco Zapata, Master of the Ceremonies, came to his Lordship at two of the clocke, and desired his Lordship not to stirre, till he should returne, because that the Kings pleasure was, that his Lordship should bee nobly accompanied to the Palace; some after, the Ambassadors of France, Savoy, and Venice, were so ciuill, as to send diuers of their Gentlemen to attend on his Lordship that day. About foure of the clocke, Don Francisco Zapata returned, and prayed his Lordshippe to take horse, because the Duke of Gandia, Major Domo Major to the Queene, with many other Grandes, were in the streete attending for him: As we passed forward we found the streets on both sides so full of Nobilitie, as we had hardly roome to ride on betweene them; there were no lesse then seuen hundred on horseback, among whom were the Duke of Gandia, the Duke of Medinade las Torres, the Duke of Villa Hermosa, the Duke of Infantado, the Duke of Pastrana, the Duke of Ixar, the Conde of Nielola, sonne and heire to the Duke of Medina Sidonia, the Conde of Alvade Liste, the Marquesse de la Puerta, the Marquesse of Alcamiza, the Marquesse of Torres, the Marquesse de Valle, the Conde de Villanes, the Marquesse Don Frederick de Toledo, Generall of the Armado of the Ocean, the Marquesse of Trotes, the Conde of Villa Alua, the Count de Montreagnde, with diuers other Titulados whose titles I cannot remember.

There were also diuers of the Kings Chamber,

ber; with many principall Officers of the Kings house, and about a hundred Caualleros de Abito. The Duke of Gandia, and the Duke of Medina de las torres were the last, and they receiued the Ambassadour into the middest betweene them. We came to the Pallace halfe an houre before Moone-light, but staied there a good space of time before we could get into the Kings quarter, for the Pallace being thronged with Nobility and Caualleros, striuing to get to see the Ceremony: order was giuen that all passages into the Kings quarter should be shut vp till the Ambassadour had entred. His Lordship was still conducted by those great persons into the Kings quarter. At our entring into the great roome of Presence, wee sawe in the Front thereof, the King seated with great Pastelts. His Grandes had placed themselues round about him, appearing like a circle of glory, but as we drew any thing neere to him, they opened a way in the middest, whereby the Ambassadour might passe, which was conuenient for vs to see the Ceremony (for none might enter within that circle but the Ambassadour) when his Lordship did reuerence, the King vncouered, and when the King had couered, his Lordship also couered, and was entreated to sit downe in a Chaire, placed on the Kings side, with his right hand towards the King; Right against the Ambassadour at a little distant, sate the olde Cardinall zapated in a Chaire, And when the Secretary of State read the Oath to the King, the King kneeled, the booke lying open before him, with a Crucifix standing by it, and the Ambassadour stood vp, and vncouered; As soone as the Secretary had read it, he asked the Ambassadour aloude, whether he liked the forme, to which the Ambassadour answered, that he did; then the Captaine Maior presented the booke to the King, who was still kneeling till the Secretary had done reading the Oath, and his Maiestie answered, Anssi lo iuro, which is (This doe I sweare) to this the Ambassadour made an answere in Spanish, which in English is this, And I accept it on the part of the King of great Brittaine my Lord and Master.

This bee pronounced so loude, as that the Cardinall (who was somewhat thicke of hearing) could vnderstand him, and therefore hee asked the Ambassadour what he said: whereupon the Ambassador repeated the same words againe more loudely.

The King in the meane time returned towards his seate, and drew the Ambassadour neere him, who still doing reuerence to the King, put on his Hat shortly after, and the King said thus to him, I am most cordially glad to haue seene this day, which I haue so much desired, And I haue made as great demonstration of ioy for it as I could and I hope so our Lord that it will proue to the great glory of his diuine Maiesty, and the good of both the Crownes: And the Ambassadour prayed God that the peace might be prosperous and permanent, and so after lowe obeysance made he tooke his leaue.

From thence he was conducted by the Duke of Gandia, and the Master of the Ceremonies to the Queenes quarter, we found the Queene sitting in as great Maiestie as the King. She was richly adorned with Iewels, yet all her riches and glory was not so delightfull as her person, for she is still more and more beautifull since the bearing of her last childe. Her Ladies were standing against the Hangings on both sides of the roome, distant one from the other foure or fiue foote, for their verdugados or hums of their garments being stiffned with so much gold, and siluer, and rich embroidery, did spread so large, as they could not well stand nearer: My Lord as he passed on did thrice reuerence to the Queene, and being come neere to her, he bended downe to kisse her left, and then couered; shee was pleased to hold him a quarter of an houre, for there wanted not matter to speake of for a longer time, shee hauing her sister in England our Queene. With the Queenes leaue his Lordship was conducted by the Master of the Ceremonies to all the Ladies on both sides, And his Lordship passed some complements with the Countesse of Olivares, and some others of the greatest, and saluted all the rest one by one as he passed round; which being done, hee returned againe to the Queene, and shortly after doing low reuerence to her, he tooke his leaue. The Duke of Gandia and the rest accompanied his Lordship home to his house, and then did the Fire-workes begin.

January the 4.

Vpon the first of this moneth there was a mighty feast made to the Ambassadour in the Kings Pallace, at which there were none but Grandes, and men of the golden Key, who are Gentlemen of the Kings Bedchamber. The Ambassadour sate at the boards end, and the English Gentlemen who had leaue went to sit with my Lord Ambassadour at his owne Table, were placed aboue all the Grandes, and both the Feast and the conducting him to the Pallace, was of the greatest state that euer hath beene expressed there to any Ambassadour.

Monday the 25. of April 1631. Meirvin Lord Audley, Earle of Castle haven, was brought from the Tower, and arraigned at Westminster for a Rape and Sodomy, he was tryed by his Peeres, and was found guilty. The Lord Audley Earle of Castle haven arraigned.

Anno Dom. 1631. *Anno Reg.* 7.

The Lord Audley tryed.

The Lord Coventry, Lord Keeper of the great Seale, was then Lord Steward, who gaue sentence of death against him, viz. to returne to the place from whence hee came, and from thence to the place of Execution, and there to be hanged vntill his body was dead, his Iudgement being past, he bowed himselfe very lowely vnto the Lords, and humbly besought their Lordships to be Intercessours vnto his Maiestie, that he might not dye so base a death, but dye the death of a Noble man, and then returned to the Tower, and was often visited by learned graue Diuines, namely Doctor Wynniffe Deane of Paules, and Doctor Wickham

one of his Speciffies Chaplaines, who also accompanied and assisted him to his last end.

The Lord Audley beheaded.

Saterday the 14 of May, about 9. of the clocke, hee was brought to the scaffold upon Tower hill where with great meekenesse hee demeaned himselfe, and with very temperate speeches, he spake to the people and others that were about him, hee very contritely confessed his sinnes, and prayed very deuoutly for Remission: He gaue his Maiestie all humble and hearty thanks, for so honourable a death, hee drew a paper out of his Pocket, and caused a young man with a full voyce to reade it to the assembly. The copie whereof followes word for word: his prayers being ended, he layd his necke upon the blocke, and was beheaded with one blowe.

In the name of God Amen.

The Lord Audley Earle of Castle-hauen, his Confession of his Faith.

I Meruine Earle of Castle-hauen, being in my full strength and memory (thanks be giuen to my Maker) hauing beene brainded, and openly accused for change, alteration, and doubtfulnesse of my faith and religion, I thought fit like a Christian man to giue satisfaction vpon what grounds I stand for my beliefe, and to expresse it vnder my hand for the satisfaction of all charitable people and Christian men.

First, I doe beleeue in the blessed and glorious Trinity, three persons and one eternall and euer liuing God, God my Maker, God my Redeemer, and God my Sanctifier.

I doe rely wholy vpon the Merit, Death, and Passion of our blessed Saviour Christ Iesus, and vpon his mediation for the remission of my sinnes.

I doe beleeue and vse with most humble reuerence the Lords Prayer, the Creede of the Apostles, and the ten Commaundements, as they are set downe, and allowed by the Church of England.

I doe beleeue the Canonicall Scripture, and that it is written by the inspiration of the holy Spirit.

I doe beleeue the Booke of Common Prayer allowed in the Church of England, to be an excellent forme for the seruice of God and for that purpose the same. And for the rest of my beliefe, I doe referre it to the true Orthodox faith of our Church of England, and from the Articles received at this present in the Church of England, and confirmed by authority of Parliament. I differ not in any point (renouncing all the superstitions and errours taught or beleeued in the Church of Rome, or any other Church whatsoeuer. In which faith I will continue (God willing to my liues end) In testimony whereof, I haue hereunto subscribed my hand the 3. of May 1631.

Castle-hauen.

Broadway and Fitz Patrick executed.

Monday the 27. of June 1631. Gyles Broadway Gentleman, and Florence Fitz Patrick Yeoman, were arraigned at the Kings Bench barre at Westminster, and found guilty, as parties offending in the crime whereof the foresaid Earle of Castle-haven was condemned. The Sentence of death being pronounced against them, they were committed to the Sheriffs of Middlesex, and were executed at Tyburne the first of July next following, where they with hearty contrition confessed their owne guiltinesse, desiring the people to pray with them and for them.

They were tryed by a Jury of Wiltshire.

King Iames of most happy memory, who not only for his wisedome, learning, and iudgement, worthily renowned through the whole world, but also his religious paines, care, and diligence, to aduance truth, and establish peace of conscience, new translated the whole Bible as is extant and euident; but with like Sanctimonious Integrity, endeuored to haue repayred and beautified the decayed Cathedrall Church of S. Paul in London, being the most sumptuous Christian Monument in this part of the world, and the most glorious and chiefe ornament of this Cittie; but being preuented by death, that holy worke rested for a season, and within short space after, it pleased God to possesse his sonne King Charles with a like Religious spirit and deuotion in his zealous Resolution, and affection to the aduancement of the Temple of Almighty God, by most profound aduice ordayned most especiall Commission and Commissioners, for the speedy and ample repaire of that Church. In this Commission was the Lord Maior of London, the most Reuerend Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Keeper of the great Seale, the most Reuerend Lord Archbishop of Yorke, the Lord Treasurer of England, the Lord privy Seale, the Earle Marshall of England, the Lord Chamberlaine of England, the Lord Chamberlaine of the Houshold, and with them many other great Lords, and others of his Highnesse privy Counsell, and other right Noble personages, the right Reuerend Lords, Bishops of London, Winchester, Ely, and Norwich, the chiefe Iudges of the Court of Kings Bench, the Court of Common-pleas, and Lord chiefe Barron of the Exchequer, besides Knights, Deanes, the Recorder of London, many of the Aldermen of London, and sundry learned Doctors of Diuinity, and Doctors of the Law and many Esquires of Accompt, as both and may appeare in the Record, and by his Maiesties Booke published to that purpose, dated the 10. of Aprill 1631.

The Bible new translated.

Speciall Commission for the repaire of Paules.

I haue formerly made mention of a great seeming encrease of buildings in London round about the Suburbs, with the skirts and Townes adiacent as you may reade, since which time, there hath beene much increase of Buildings in all parts aforesaid, chiefely whereof, I now speake, is from the West part of Holborne and Bloomesbury, and the parts on that side and on the other side of the way in a place anciently called the Elmes, of Elmes that grew there, where Mortimer was executed, and left hang two dayes and two nights to be scene of the people as you may reade, which place hath now left his name, and is not knowne to any man of a syllian where that place was, and from thence the New faire buildings called Queenes Streete leading into Drury lane, and then on the other side the high way in the great Field,

Late new encrease of buildings, with other things of note.

The Elmes.

Long Acre, Couent Garden.

Field, anciently called Long Acre, with the South side of the Street called Couent Garden, that leadeth into Saint Martins Lane which is newly made a faire Streete, you shall reade that in the Rebellion of Wat Tylor, with his great Army, lay neere Smithfield barres, which was then a voyde open place, and the Kings friends, with their assembled forces, being placed before Saint Bartholomewes gate in Smithfield, espied King Richard with his Nobility comming to their ayde riding ouer long Acre, which they plainely and loyfully beheld, not being any way hindered of that sight in that place by any manner of Buildings, either in Smithfield, Holbourne, Chancery lane, or other places: Let the vnderstanding Reader iudge of the vnspeakeable and incredible encrease of Buildings in those parts within the space of two hundred and forty yeares, the like suddaine and vndiscernable encrease of Buildings vpon the North side of the River of Thames, within these last forty yeares betweene Saint Katherines and Radcliffe, beside the vpper high way and other places, &c. In the fore-named Couent Garden there is a particular parcell of ground layd out, in the which they intend to build a Church or a Chappell of ease; At this time also neere Hammersmith, there was built a new Chappell of Ease, and was consecrated this Spring.

Sir Francis Cottington Knight made a Baron.

Sunday the 10. of July 1631. Sir Francis Cottington Knight, Chancellour of the Exchequer, was created Lord Cottington Baron of Hanworth at Greenwich.

Concerning Greenland, scituate about seauenty seauen degrees toward the North pole, I haue formerly made mention amongst other late discoueries and Plantations: but at this time I am only to speak of a most strange and vnheard of aduenture of eight English men, which by chance were left there, where they remained full nine moneths, & all of them liued there vntill the coming of the next yeares London Fleet, who brought them all alme home.

Eight men left in Greenland, and liued there full nine moneths.

The last Summers voyage 1630. about the 6. of August, eight lusty men were appointed to take a great Boat or Shallop to goe to certaine places to kill Deere, to augment their Ships prouision, who take with them two Dogges, one Snaphance, and some Speares, and hauing sayled and rowed into diuers parts, they killed 14 Deere, which they layd in their Shallop, and then set sayle to returne to their Ship, but mysts, fogges, and contrary windes so resisted them, that for two dayes space they were distracted, not knowing what course to take, nor hauing any Card or Compas being endangered with Ice, & frighted with the sight of great Mountaines, and other places couered with Snowe, with extreame dread and danger, and no lesse labour going to and fro thorow Snowe and tempest, were constrained to cast much of their Venison ouerboord. The 21. day they attayned the place which they sought for, but finding there neither friends nor reliefe, sent two of them ten miles ouerland to another Port or Rode, at which place finding the Ships gone, and no comfort nor hope left.

The 20. day of August, being the very last day limitted to ride in those parts, by reason of great Frost and drifts of Ice was past, they returned this sad newes vnto their Fellowes, who seeing all danger of death and famine to threaten them, most resolutely consulted and agreed to shake off all base feare, and instantly to vse all labour, diligence, and industry for their present and future defence, of Frost, Snowe, Rayne, and tempestious weather hauing hetherto made their Sayles their shelter, supported with their Oares; after which they found a receptacle called the Tent, which was a house made, and couered with boords, which they new boarded within and without with boards, which they found left for the vse of the next yeares Voyage, and filled vp all hollow places, stoes, and ends with sand. They found also a thousand Bricks, and two Hogsheads of Lyme, wherewith they made a Hearth, and a Chimney, and layd in great store of empty Caskes, and other things for firing; they found also some trayne Oyle, and certaine loathsome fragments of Whales, called Graues, which they likewise brought into the Tent to augment their prouision, and eate it till sauoury, for it was not their Venison, nor Beares, nor Sea-horse could haue supplyed them, notwithstanding their care and stint for euery mans eating; they Fasted Wednesdayes and Fridayes, and religiously obserued the Sunday and Christmasse. Their Shoes and apparell wasted, to mend which and whatsoeuer else, they were faine to vse the raueling of ropes, and fish bones, in stead of Awles and Needles, Deere skins serued them for bedding, being lodged by two and two in a Cabin much more was their misery, then may be expressed, for many dayes they neuer saw the glorious Sun, and for many dayes when they wanted water, they were faine to drinke Snow broath, which they melted with hot stones; nay was there euer any to this day but themselues that liued there in Winter, although diuers tryalls had beene formerly made: some whereof were hired, and fully furnished with all necessaries to Winter there, yet they all perished: and some condemned malefactors being sent thither, with assurance of pardon, if they would aduenture one Winters being there, being furnished with lodging, weapons, foode, and rayment, yet when they beheld the terrour of the time, and condition of the place, where no trees, nor hearbs growe, but only Mosse, Sorrell and Scuruie-grasse, they willingly returned to receiue their doome of death in England, rather then to be left one Winter in Greenland.

About the end of May the London Fleete being come thither, found out those eight men aboue layd, and tooke them into their Shippes, where within a few dayes being refreshed with food & apparel they became very serviceable for the killing of Whales, & making of Oyle, & returned back with the Fleet, which safely arriued and cast Anchor in the riuer of Thames this present September 1631.

Sir Thomas Richardson Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings bench.

Monday the 24. of October 1631. Sir Thomas Richardson Knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas, was made Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench.

Sir Robert Heath knight Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas.

Thursday the 27. of October 1631. Sir Robert Heath knight, the Kings Attorney generall, was made Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas.

William Noye Esquire, the Kings Attorney generall.

At this time the famous Lawyer and renowned Antiquary William Noye Esquire, was made the Kings Attorney generall.

The Lady Mary borne.

Friday the fourth of November 1631. betweene fiue and six a clock in the morning, was borne the Lady Mary, daughter to our Soueraigne Lord King Charles, at Saint Iames neere Charing Crosse.

I haue heretofore in the yeare 1613. made mention of the names of the Captaines of the trayned Bands for the Citie of London and the Liberties, with the number both of Pikes and shot trayned vnder euery seueral Captain, but because the most part of the Captaines are altred, some by death, others by remoue to higher places (as namely Captaine Richard Fen, and Captaine Smith, being since that time chosen Aldermen, surrendred their Captaineships to the Court of Aldermen, by which Court they were both elected Colonells, and their two eldest sonnes by the same Court chosen Captaines in their steads) I haue therefore in this place set downe the names both of the Colonells and Captaines, as now they are this present November 1631.

Colonells for London.

	Hamersley.	*Fen.*	*Smith.*
Captaines for London	Bond, Williams, Halsey, Henshawe, Andrewes,	Lee, Langham, Walker, Miller, Wilde,	Royden, Fen, Crips, Couell, Smith,	Stiles. Ditchfield. Ven. Foster.

The seauen Ages of the World.

THe first Age from the Creation of *Adam* to the Floud of *Noe*, which continued yeeres. 1659

The second from *Noe* to *Abraham*, 292

The third from the Birth of *Abraham*, till the departing of Israell out of Egypt, 503

The fourth from the departing of Israell out of Egypt, till the building of the Temple, 482

The fift, from the Building of the Temple, vntill the Captiuity of Babylon. 414

The sixth, from the Captiuity of Babylon, till the Birth of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, 614

The seauenth, beginning at the Birth of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, hath continued till this present yeere of our Lord 1632. and shall last to the worlds end.

The Age of the World at the Birth of our Sauiour Christ, was 3962

The Age of the VVorld this present yeere of our Lord 1632. 5594

AN APPENDIX OR COROLLARY OF THE FOVNDATIONS AND DESCRIPTIONS OF THE THREE MOST FAMOVS VNIVERSITIES OF ENGLAND:

VIZ.

CAMBRIDGE, OXFORD, AND LONDON.

The matters whereof concerning the former two Vniuersities, were gathered by that Industrious, and much reading Chronist, M. IOHN STOVV, Citizen of *London*, and supplied, and continued by EDMOND HOVVES, of London Gentleman.

THE THIRD WAS COLLECTED AND Written by Sir GEORGE BVCK *Knight, one of the Gentlemen of the KINGS Priuie Chamber, and Master of his Maiesties Office of the REVELS.*

LONDON:
Printed by AVG. MATTHEVVES, for RICHARD MEIGHEN. 1632.

nnnn

Sir Thomas Richardson Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings bench.

Monday the 24. of October 1631. Sir Thomas Richardson Knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas, was made Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench.

Sir Robert Heath knight Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas.

Thursday the 27. of October 1631. Sir Robert Heath knight, the Kings Atturney generall, was made Lord chiefe Iustice of the Common pleas.

William Noye Esquire, the Kings Atturney generall.

At this time the famous Lawyer and renowned Antiquary William Noye Esquire, was made the Kings Atturney generall.

The Lady Mary borne.

Friday the fourth of November 1631. betweene fiue and six a clock in the morning, was borne the Lady Mary, daughter to our Soueraigne Lord King Charles, at Saint Iames neere Charing Crosse.

I haue heretofore in the yeare 1613. made mention of the names of the Captaines of the trayned Bands for the Citie of London and the Liberties, with the number both of Pikes and shot trayned vnder euery seuerall Captain, but because the most part of the Captaines are altred, some by death, others by remoue to higher places (as namely Captaine Richard Fen, and Captaine Smith, being since that time chosen Aldermen, surrendred their Captaineships to the Court of Aldermen, by which Court they were both elected Cozonells, and their two eldest sonnes by the same Court chosen Captaines in their steads) I haue therefore in this place set downe the names both of the Cozonells and Captaines, as now they are this present November 1631.

Cozonells for London.

	Hamersley.		*Fen.*	*Smith.*
Captaines for London	Bond, Williams, Halsey, Henshawe, Andrewes,	Lee, Langham, Walker, Miller, Wilde,	Royden, Fen, Crips, Couell, Smith,	Stiles. Ditchfield. Ven. Foster.

The seauen Ages of the World.

THe first Age from the Creation of *Adam* to the Floud of *Noe*, which continued yeeres. 1659

The second from *Noe* to *Abraham*, 292

The third from the Birth of *Abraham*, till the departing of Israell out of Egypt, 503

The fourth from the departing of Israell out of Egypt, till the building of the Temple, 482

The fift, from the Building of the Temple, vntill the Captiuity of Babylon. 414

The sixth, from the Captiuity of Babylon, till the Birth of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, 614

The seauenth, beginning at the Birth of our Sauiour Iesus Christ, hath continued till this present yeere of our Lord 1632. and shall last to the worlds end.

The Age of the World at the Birth of our Sauiour Christ, was 3962

The Age of the VVorld this present yeere of our Lord 1632. 5594

AN APPENDIX OR COROLLARY OF THE FOVNDATIONS AND DESCRIPTIONS OF THE THREE MOST FAMOVS VNIVERSITIES OF ENGLAND:

VIZ.

CAMBRIDGE, OXFORD, AND LONDON.

The matters whereof concerning the former two Vniuersities, were gathered by that Industrious, and much reading Chronist, M. IOHN STOVV, Cittizen of *London*, and supplied, and continued by EDMOND HOVVES, of London Gentleman.

THE THIRD WAS COLLECTED AND Written by Sir GEORGE BVCK *Knight, one of the Gentlemen of the KINGS Priuie Chamber, and Master of his Maiesties Office of the* REVELS.

LONDON:
Printed by AVG. MATTHEVVES, for
RICHARD MEIGHEN. 1632.

AN ADVERTISEMENT TO THE READER, CONCERNING THE THREE VNIVERSITIES OF ENGLAND.

IT is not vnknowne to any that haue read the Chronicles, or Annales of this Kingdome, especially written by that auncient Industrious Antiquarie Master *Iohn Stow*, that hee was accustomed to ioyne to his Historicall worke, the foundations, and descriptions of all the Colledges, and Houses of Learning, erected within the most famous Vniuersities of Cambridge and Oxford: since whose death, I hauing done my true endeauour for the augmentation, and continuation of our English Chronicle, haue thought it fit for worthy memory: not onely to set downe his relation of the said Vniuersities, and also all the supplement, and encrease of other new Colledges in those two Vniuersities since his death: but also to adde thereunto a Treatise of the third Vniuersity of England, to wit London; which Treatise was lately gathered, and written by Sir GEORGE BVCK Knight, Gentleman of the Kings priuie Chamber, and Master of his Maiesties office of the Reuells, and by him giuen and dedicated, to the right honourable Sir EDVVARD COKE Knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of England, and one of his Maiesties priuie Counsell, to be disposed at his Lordships pleasure; whereof I hauing aduertisement, became an humble sutor to his Lordship, that I might haue it to publish with the rest; whereunto his Lordship very fauourably condescended, and forthwith deliuered it vnto mee, with speciall commendation, and approbation, as of a worke worthy the publique Light, and to that purpose gaue his honourable allowance vnder his owne hand. The publication whereof accordingly, I haue with all diligence performed, not doubting but that the Ingenious Reader will kindly accept thereof, and of their loue and paines by whom it is friendly, and freely imparted vnto them.

Your euer well willer,

EDMOND HOWES.

OF THE VNIVERSITIES IN ENGLAND, and Colledges in the same, with the founders and principall Benefactors.

IHaue before time reioyced (saith Erasmus Roterdam) that England was so well furnished with so many men of excellent Learning, but now I begin to enuie her felicity, for that thee so flourisheth with all kinde of litterature, that by taking the commendation thereof from other Regions, thee only as it were mentionally obscure them. And yet this commendation is not as now first one to England, in the which (if it is well knowne) haue beene of long time, men of great learning. The Vniuersities prooue this to be true, which haue for their antiquities, and worthinesse, contended with the most ancient, and worthiest Vniuersities in the world.

Colledges and Halls, in the Vniuersitie of Cambridge, to the number of 21. indowed with lands and possessions for maintainance of Students in all manner of Sciences, strictly accounted according to the time of their beginnings, although at this day by the altering of foundations they are but 16. left.

The common Schooles.

THe common Schooles of the Vniuersitie haue beene of such auncient continuance, as there is no certaine mention how, or when, they began. But the latte new building which now standeth foure square, like unto the fashion of a Colledge, was made by accelle of times vpon the coits of the Vniuersity and diuers Benefactors in order, as hereafter followeth.

First the Physosophie Schoole, aboue, and beneath, sometime called the Schoole of Canon law (that is to say, the West side of the same quadrant) was builded at the charges of the Vniuersity, and other good Benefactors, since the yeere of our Lord God 1136. The Schoole of Diuinity, and ouer that the new Chappell, (that is to say, the South side) was begun by the Vniuersity vpon contributions, and collections of sundry persons: But the same was finished in the yeere of Christ 1400. by the executors of Sir William Thorpe Knight, sometime chiefe Iustice of England. The Schoole of Art, and ouer that the olde Libzarie (that is to say, the South side) was made by the Vniuersity of the ruines of the olde Schooles. The gate of the same Schooles, with the walkes on each side thereof, and the new Library (that is to say all the East side) was builded at the cost of Thomas Rotheram, Archbishop of Yorke, with some contribution of the Vniuersity in the yeare of Christ 1479. And in the yeare 1480. was perfected as now it standeth.

Peter Colledge.

Saint Peters Colledge, commonly called Peter House, was founded in the time of King Henry the third, by Hugh Balsham Bishop of Ely, in the yeere of Christ 1256. Who was after enlarged in the time of King Edward the second by Master Robert Eyrling, who gaue a house with the appurtenances wherein sometime dwelt the religious men called *Fratres de sacco* or *de penitentia Iesu Christi*. Likewise another was given by Rybernus de Ayrsham and Iohn of Kemingham. But the indowment was giuen by the said Hugh Balsham, who was after the 15. Bishop of Ely, and finished the Colledge in *Anno* 1284.

Michaells house.

The Colledge or house of Saint Michaell, was founded by Henricus or Henricus de Stanton, sometime Chancelour of the Exchequer, and a Canon of Yorke and Wels, who obtained lycence of King Edward the second, in the fourteenth yeere of his raigne, to erect the same Colledge for a certaine number of Scholers and Chaplaines, to be governed by a Master, according to his owne ordinances, and rules, granting further by the same lycence to the said Henricus, power to vnite vnto his Colledge the aduowson of St. Michaels Church in Cambridge, which was after more largely indowed with lands, and rents, as well by him as by diuers other good Benefactors of latter time. At this day it is taken into Trinitie Colledge, founded by King Henry the eight.

Vniuersity hall.

The Vniuersity Hall or Colledge was founded by the Chancellor and Masters of the Vniuersity of Cambridge, in the yere 1326. And the 19. yeere of King Edward the second (Master Richard Badew being then Chancellour) vpon a ground, whereupon stood two houses belonging of olde time to the said Chancellour, and Vniuersity, in Milnstreete. King Edward the third in the 20 yeere of his raigne, gaue licence of Mortmaine to the Master and Scholers of the said new erected Colledge, to take Lands and Tenements to the yeerely value of of forty pounds for euer, for their maintainance in Study, at the request of the Chancelour and Masters of the said Vniuersity. Since that, it was much increased by Master Walter Tachsteer, Master of the same Colledge. But now it is vnited into the foundation of the Lady Elizabeth de Burgo, Countesse of Clare.

Kings Hall.

The Kings Hall or Colledge had his first originall of King Edward the second, who of his owne deuotion maintained there for a time 32. Schollers, in Study of learning, and knowledge, who for certaine yeres after were payd, their salaries or Stipends, sometime by the Sheriffe of Cambridge, sometime by the Maior

and reuent of Saint Neetes or Needes, and sometime out of the Exchequer. But King Edward the third by his Charter dated the 7. day of October, in the 11. yeere of his raigne erected there a Colledge in the honour of God, and his blessed Mother, S. Mary the Virgin, and all holy Saints, for a Master and 32. Schollers, calling it by the name of the Kings Hall. The ground whereof hee purchased of Master Robert Croiland, and after indowed it with lands and possessions, which so continued a Colledge till the time of King Henry the eight, who united the same to his new foundation of Trinity Colledge.

Clare Hall. Clare Hall was founded by the Lady Elizabeth de Burgo, widdow, sometime the wife of John de Burgo Earle of Vlster in Ireland, daughter of Sir Gilbert of Clare Earle of Gloucester, and one of the heires of Sir Gilbert of Clare her brother, the last Earle of Gloucester, shee was first married to John Burgh Earle of Vlster in Ireland, after to Theobald of Verdon, and thirdly to Sir Roger Damary, and had issue by them all, the taking into her foundation the foresaid vniuersity Hall, by the resignation of Master Walter Thackstead, Master of the said house, and the consent of M. Richard Badew the first founder, called it all vnder the name of Clare Hall: and became the onely founder thereof in the time of King Edward the third, about the yeere of our Lord 1347.

Pembroke Hall. Pembrooke Hall was founded by the Lady Mary of Valentia, Countesse of Pembrooke, wife of Audomare de Valentia Earle of Pembrooke, and daughter of Guido Earle of Saint Paule in Fraunce, shee obtayned lycence of King Edward the third (whose Cosin the was) to found this Colledge of a Master and thirtie Schollers or more, at her pleasure: and to assigne them for their habitation a place in Cambridge of her owne inheritance, with three other messuages which shee purchased, and 100. pound of yeerely rent, in aduowsons of Churches for euer, and called it Aula de Valence Maria, *Anno* 1347.

Corpus Christi College. The Colledge of *Corpus Christi*, and our blessed Lady commonly called Benner Colledge, was founded by the Alderman, and brethren of *Corpus Christi* guilde, and the brethren of our Lady guilde in Cambridge, at the instance of the first Henry Duke of Lancaster, who in the 26. yeere of King Edward the third, obtained a lycence of Mortmaine for the said Alderman and brethren, that vpon a messuage to them belonging in Cambridge, they might erect this Colledge for Schollers, Chaplaines, and others, to be governed by a Master, according to their rules and ordinances. By the same lycence was also appropriated vnto the Colledge for euer the aduowson of Saint Bennets Church, standing before their gate. This Duke of Lancaster, in the 28. yeere of the said King Edward the third, was elected Alderman of the said guildes, who recognized the statutes of the Colledge not by the Dukes Seale, but by the Seale of the Alderman of those guildes.

Trinity Hall. Trinity Hall was of old time an hostell or house of study. And in the time of King Edward the third, John Crendell Prior of Ely, and his conuent procured the same hostell for their Monkes to study in. To this house were added three other dwelling houses by Master Richard Ling, Chancellour of the Vniuersity, and Archibald of Norwich, Master Walter Bluedon, and Master Simon Rokinghale Parson of Rolesby, either of them one house. And in the 28. yeere of the raigne of King Edward the third, Master Robert Stratton, I. Trunch, Walter Bakton, Walter de Aldeby, and Peter de Bitterings, gaue toward the enlargement thereof, one messuage, and seuen peeces of voyd ground. And likewise the said Walter Bakton, and Peter Bitterings, and Thomas Walsingham, gaue one other messuage called Draxes Entry. All which being thus layd together, were after purchased by Master William Bateman Bishop of Norwich, who by the Kings licence builded thereon the Colledge, as now for the most part it standeth, in the worship of the holy Trinity, and indowed it with lands and possessions, and became founder thereof, though since it hath beene increased by diuers good Benefactors: he deceased at Auinion in Fraunce (where hee was sent on the Kings message) the first day of January, in the 11. yeere of his consecration, and of our Lord God 1354.

Gonuile Hall. Gonuile Hall was founded by Edmond Gonuile Parson of Terington in Norffolke, in the 22. yeare of King Edward the third, who for that purpose obtained a licence at the suite of Sir Gualter de Manney, to erect a Colledge for a Master and 20. Schollers to be Students in the Art of Logick and other Sciences, vpon a ground where sometimes stood three houses and a garden in Lurthrowhlane, which he purchased for his money. And in the 26. yeare of the same King, the name of that Colledge was inlarged by the gift of two other houses, the one by the Chancellour and Masters of the Vniuersity, and the other by the Master and Brethren of Saint Johns Hospitall in Cambridge. This Edmond Gonuile at his decease hauing a good summe of money, commended the further finishing of the same Colledge, to Master William Bateman Bishop of Norwich, which hee performed both in the building, and indowment with Lands, and caused it to be named Gonuile Hall. At this day it is united into the Colledge of Iohn Caius, and called by the name of Gonuile and Caius Colledge.

Gods-house. The Colledge of Gods-house was first founded by M. William Bingham, Parson of Saint John Zacharie in London, vpon a Tenement, and three garden plats in Clunstreet, which he bought for his money, and procured lycence of King Henry the first, in the 20. yeare of his raigne, to erect thereon his said Colledge for 25. persons and a Prouost, to be governed by such Rules, and Statutes, as should be assigned vnto them by the said William Bingham, and by William Wimbell, William Millington, and William Gull, Doctors of Diuinity, and John Tilney Doctor of Law, and the longest liuer of them. This Colledge was chiefely erected for such

such as should profest the study of Grammar, whereof (as it seemeth) there was great want in the Colledges not onely in both the Vniuersities, but also throughout the Realme. In two yeeres after King Henry being determined to found his great Colledge of our Lady and S. Nicholas, obtained of the said William Bingham a resignation of the house and ground for his said new Colledge, and in stede thereof gaue vnto him two other places in the Pyeschers streete, belonging sometime the one of them to the Abbot of Tiltie, and the other to the Prioresse of Deny, wherewith he also granted a licence of Mortmaine for 100. pound by yeere towards their maintenance for euer. But shortly after the said William Bingham in the yere 1447. resigned vnto the said King Henry the foresaid Colledge, to the intent that hee should be accounted the onely founder thereof as he was indeede. But now it is annexed to Christs Colledge founded by the Lady Margaret Countesse of Richmond and Derby.

Kings Colledge. The Kings Colledge of our blessed Lady and Saint Nicholas, was first founded by King Henry the first, vnder the name of a Rector and Schollers in the 19. yeere of his raigne. And after in the 21. yeere of his raigne, he translated the same of that foundation, into the name of Prouost and Schollers. Edward the fourth in displeasure withdrew from this Colledge so much Land as the founder had giuen them, and after restored them to the yeerely value of fiue hundred markes. After that King Henry the seuenth finished the same work of that notable Chappell begun by King Henry the first, and K. Henry the eight finished the glazing, stalls, and pauement of fine Marble. This Colledge was meant by King Henry the first, to haue borne one of the beautifullest houses in this Land, the plat whereof is more particularly set out in this my Annales.

Queens Colledge. The Colledge of Saint Margaret and Saint Bernard, commonly called the Queenes Colledge, was first begun by Queene Margaret, wife to King Henry the first, and Daughter of Reyner King of Sicile and Ierusalem, who procured Mortmaine for the same of 100. pound by yeere, in *Anno* 1441 at the intercession of Master Andrew Dokett Parson of Saint Botolphes in Cambridge, sometime Procurator of Barnard Hostell, which Hostell shee purchased and gaue to the said Colledge. And by his owne money and helpe of others, purchased certaine other Tenements, and builded the Colledge being the first President of the same: and gaue as well in his life time, as by his testament, diuers summes of money and parcels of land: procuring likewise certaine gifts of George Duke of Clarence, of Cicely Dutches of Yorke, of Richard Duke of Glocester, and Anne Dutchesse of the same, of Edward Earle of Salisbury, of Maude Countesse of Dorset, and Marmaduke Lomely Bishop of Lincolne, sometime Chancellour of the Vniuersity. But the creation of this foundation goeth now in the name of King Henry the first, as appeareth by his Charter dated the third day of December, in the 25. yeare of his raigne, who made the same vpon his owne ground, where now it standeth in Queenestreet for one President, and fortie fellowes or more, as their liue loaue should extend, according to such rules and Statutes as should be deuised by Master John Somerset, Chancellour of the Exchequer, John Langton Chancellour of the Vniuersity, Richard Cawdrey, Peter Hurford, Gilbert Northington, and Thomas Colyn, and by the longest liuers of them. After all which, Queene Elizabeth the wife of King Edward the fourth, made perfect the defects of that Colledge in the yeare 1465. King Richard the third endowed this Colledge, with 500. markes the yeare lands.

Katherine Hall. Katherine Hall was founded by M. Robert Woodlarke Doctor of Diuinity, Chancellour of the Vniuersity, and Prouost of the Kings Colledge, to the honour of our blessed Lady and Saint Katherine, the virgin and martyr, in the time of King Edward the fourth, about the yeare of Christ 1475. for the number of one Master, and three fellowes or more vpon a certaine messuage in Milnestreet, by him purchased, wherewith he also obtained of the said King a licence of Mortmaine for 40. marks of yeerly rent towards their maintenance for euer. Since it is enlarged by other good benefactors.

Iesus Colledge. Iesus Colledge was of old time a Nonnarie of religious women of S. Radegund, which Nonnarie being destitute of gouernment, the edifices fallen in decay, the goods and ornaments of the Church wasted, the lands diminished, and in conclusion a small number of Nunnes left, being but two, whereof the one ready to depart, and the other an Infant, were brought into such pouerty, that they were not able to releeue themselues, and therefore forced to depart and leaue the house desolate: whereupon Iohn Alcocke Bishop of Ely, obtained licence of King Henry the seuenth, in the yeare 1497. to found in place thereof a Colledge to the honour of the holy Trinity, and our blessed Lady, and S. Iohn the Euangelist, and Saint Radegund the virgin, for the number of one Master fiue fellowes, and a certaine number of Schollers, to be governed by such rules and statutes as he should appoint vnto them.

This Iohn Alcocke was borne at Beuerley in Yorkshire, and builded a free Schoole at Kingstone vpon Hull, and a Chappell on the Southside of the Parish Church wherein his parents were buried: hee builded likewise a most beautifull monument in the great Church of Ely, where himselfe lieth buried, and did in his time so many and so good acts, as would require a long Treatise to set them forth. The rents of this Colledge, and the number of fellowes and Schollers haue been more amplified at seuerall times, by Sir Robert Read Knight, chiefe Iustice of the common Pleas, Doctor Elcfor, Doctor Royston, and Doctor Fuller.

Christs Colledge. Christs Colledge was first begun by King Henry the first, and after his decease by the Ladie Margaret Countesse of Richmond and Darby, daughter and heire of Iohn Duke of Somerset, and mother of King Henry the seuenth,

in the place where sometime the Colledge of Gods-house stoode in the Preachers streate, which Colledge was first founded by William Bingham Parson of S. Iohn Zachary in London and other, but because it came neuer to perfection, the obtained of the said King her sonne his Charter, dated the first day of May, in the 20. yeare of his raigne, and the yeare of our Lord God 1505. to increase the number of students there, translating it according to her disposition, so that from tyence forth it should be called Christs Colledge, wherein thee allowed by her Will to the number of 60. persons, with seruants to them conuenient and necessarie. The Abby of Creke being dissolued, the Lands were giuen to that Colledge.

A Master, 12. Schollers, fellow-s, and 47. scollers disciples.

Saint Iohns Colledge.

Saint Iohns Colledge was of ancient time an Hospitall of regular Canons, founded by Nigellus the second Bishop of Ely, and Treasorer to King Henry the first, in the yeare of Christ 1134. After him many yeares Hugh Balsham *alias* Norwold Bishop of Ely obtained lycence of King Edward the first, in the yeare 1280. to translate the order of that house, and placed therein a certaine number of Schollers, to cohabite among the religious persons, assigning to each part their portions by their owne consents, as well of the lands as the goods: so that alwaies the poore people of ancient time there relieued, should not be defrauded of their accustomed charity.

The noble Lady Margaret, Countesse of Richmond and Derby, being informed, that the number of religious brethren was greatly diminished, and now brought but to two, the house decayed, and the lands and goods wasted, procured lycence of her Nephew King Henry the eight, to erect in the same place a Colledge in the worship of Saint Iohn the Euangelist: but thee being preuented by death, left the execution thereof to her executors, Richard Foxe Bishop of Winchester, Iohn Fisher Bishop of Rochester, Charles Somerset Lord Herbert, afterward created Earle of Worcester, Sir Thomas Louell, Sir Henry Marney, and Sir Iohn St. Iohn Knights, Henry Hornsby, and Hugh Ashton Clearkes, who with her goods finished the buildings, and with the remaine of the lands that was in the house before, amplified with her owne lands, founded the said Colledge for a Master and fifty Schollers, in the yeare 1509

Magdalen Colledge.

Magdalene Colledge was first an Hoskell or Hall, inhabited by diuers Monkes of sundry Monesteries (and therfore of old called Monks Colledge) being sent from their Abbies to the Vniuersity for to study.

Edward Duke of Buckingham had an intention to bestowe great cost in the building thereof, who builded vp the Hall in the yeare of Christ 1519. whereupon it was for a time called Buckingham Colledge.

But these buildings being left by the Duke vnperfect, were after brought to some better passe by the Priors of Ely, and the Abbots of Ramsey, and Walden, and so continued a place of study for the Monkes till the generall suppression of Monasteries made by King Henry the eighth.

At length the Lord T. Audley Baron of Walden, and Chancellour of England, founded there a Colledge vnder the name of Saint Mary Magdalen, and indowed it with possessions, in the yeare of our Lord 1542. But being preuented by death, so that what hee had begun, he left vnfinished Sir Christopher Wray Lord chiefe Iustice of England repaired and beautified it.

Trinity Colledge.

Trinity Colledge was founded by King Henry the eight, in the yeare of Christ 1546. This Colledge was erected in the plat where sometime Edward the third builded his Colledge, called the Kings hall, whereunto was also ioyned one other Colledge called Michael house, founded by Hemicus de Stanton, in the time of King Edward the second. And yet a third house called Phitwick Hostell: All which three houses the King tooke into his new Colledge, with the possessions and buildings to the same belonging, and called it by the name of Trinitie Colledge. The possessions thereof were greatly enlarged by the gift of Queene Mary. Shee gaue three hundred thirtie eight pound land by yeare: in whose time the faire Chappell of that Colledge, was also builded about the yeare of Christ 1557.

Begun, but not finished.

Gonuile and Caius Colledge.

Gonuile and Caius Colledge was first begun by Edmond Gonuile, as before is said. Iohn Caius Doctor in Physick sometime fellow and late Master of the said Colledge, hath enlarged that house, and now made a second foundation thereof, with giuing certaine Mannours and Lands to the same, in the yeare 1557. and calling it by the name of Gonuile & Caius colledge.

Emanuell Colledge.

Emanuell Colledge was founded by Sir Walter Myldmay Knight Chancellor and vnder Treasurer of the Exchequer, and one of the Queene Counsell to our Soueraigne Lady Queene Elizabeth, about the yeare of our Lord 1584. vpon the house and grounds of the late Frier Preachers, or Dominick Friers, in the Preachers streate.

Sussex Sidney Colledge.

Sussex Sidney Colledge was founded in the yeare 1598. by the right honourable the Lady Frances Sidney, late Countesse of Sussex, by founde-, whose foundation it hath a Master, ten fellowships, & twenty schollerships, since which time Sir Iohn Hart hath giuen two fellowships and foure schollerships, and diuers others likewise haue bin good benefactors to the same Colledge.

And thus farre of the Vniuersitie of *Cambridge*, with the Colledges and Halls in the same.

THE

THE VNIVERSITY OF OXFORD WAS instituted by King *Alfred* a Saxon, after the birth of Christ 873. yeeres.

And hath Colledges.

Vniuersity Colledge.

VNiuersity Colledge (as some haue written) was founded in the time of King Alfred, by Sir William Archdeacon of Duresme, in the yeare 873. but in a booke intituled, the Acts of the Bishops of Durham, I find that the said Colledge was builded by William Bishop of Durham, in the 12. yeare of the raigne of William the Conqueror, to wit, in *Anno* 1081.

The Vniuersity Church, *alias* Saint Mary Church, was begun to be redified in the time of Doctor Fitz-Iames, after Bishop of London: he procured much money towards the building of it. The battlements of it were full of Pinacles, but by tempest were most of them throwne downe in one night.

Balliol Colledge.

Balliol Colledge founded in the time of Edward the first, by Iohn Balliol, Father to Iohn Balliol King of Scotland, in the yeare of Christ 1263.

Merton Colledge.

Merton Colledge was founded in the time of Henry the third, by Walter Merton, sometime Canon of Paules, and also of Salisbury, at a Towne by Nonesuch called Maldon in Surrey, in *Anno* 1264. and after in Edward the first's time, he being Bishop of Rochester, translated the same to Oxford in the yeare 1274. This Walter Merton deceased in *Anno* 1277.

Exceter Colledge.

Exceter Colledge was founded in the time of Edward the second, by Walter Stapleton Bishop of Exceter, 1316. And augmented in the time of our Soueraigne Lady Elizabeth, by Sir William Peter Knight, in the yeare of Christ 1566.

Oriall Colledge.

Oriall Colledge was founded in the time of Edward the second, by Sir Adam Browne, Almoner of the said King, the record called King Edward the second founder, the yeare of Christ 1323.

Queenes Colledge.

Quéenes Colledge was founded in the time of Edward the third, by Robert Eglisfield, in his owne ground, & by him called the Quéenes Hall: he was Chaplaine to the Lady Philippe, wife to the same Edward, the yeare of Christ 1340.

New Colledge.

New Colledge was founded in the time of King Richard the second, by William Wickham Bishop of Winchester, in the yeare of Christ 1379.

He also founded a Colledge in the Cittie of Winchester, by the like name of New-colledge in *Anno* 1389.

Lincolne Colledge.

Lincolne Colledge was founded in the time of Henry the fift, by Richard Fleming Bishop of Lincolne 1430. And augmented in Richard the thirds time, by Thomas Rotheram Bishop of Lincolne, in the yeare 1479.

Alsoules Colledge.

Alsoules Colledge was founded in the time of King Henry the first, by Henry Chichely Archbishop of Canterbury, in the yeare 1437. King Henry the first gaue to it foure Prouostes Aliens, to wit, Alberbery in Salope, Rumney in Kent, Lauguenith in South Wales, Weden Pinkney in Northamptonshire: And therefore the foundation of this Colledge was giuen to him, as appeareth by the Charter, recorded in the Tower. He also founded Bernard Colledge in Oxford, since suppressed by King Henry the eight, and now restored by Sir Thom. White, and by him called S. Iohns Colledge. Note he founded a Colledge at Higham Feris, with Almes-houses there.

Duinity Schoole.

Duinity Schoole was founded in the time of King Henry the first by Humfrey Duke of Glocester: hee gaue 129. Bookes to the Libzarie 1447.

Magdalens Colledge.

Magdalene Colledge was founded in the time of King Henry the first, by William Wainflet Bishop of Winchester 1459 He builded a good part of Eaton Colledge, begun by Henry the first: hee builded a Free-Schoole at Wainflet in Lincolnshire, seauen miles from Alford toward Boston.

Brase-nose Colledge.

Brase-nose Colledge was founded in the raigne of King Henry the seuenth, by William Smith Bishop of Lincolne, who deceased in the yeare 1513.

The same William Smith sometime Bishop of Litchfield, ordained an Hospitall there for poore folkes, and a Grammar Schoole for poore folkes children. Also at Farnewoorth, where he and his parents had their originall, he bestowed ten pound the yeare for euer, to one that should teach a Grammar Schoole.

Corpus Christi Colledge.

Corpus Christi Colledge was founded in the raigne of Henry the seauenth, by Richard Fox Bishop of Winchester, himselfe being a fellow in Pembrokehall in Cambridge: he endowed the same Colledge with 110. l. 8. s. 11. d. of yerly rent for euer 1516.

Christs Church.

Christs Church was founded in the time of Henry the eight, by Thomas Wolsey Cardinal, and Archbishop of Yorke. in the yeare of Christ 1539. And finished by the same King Henry the 8. in the yeare 1546.

Canterbury Colledge.

Canterbury Colledge in Oxford, founded by Simon Islip Archbishop of Canterbury, in the yeare of Christ 1353. and lately suppressed by Henry the eight, in the 21. yeare of his raigne, and was ioyned to Christs Church in Oxford.

Trinity Colledge.

Trinity Colledge was founded, and so named in the raigne of Quéene Mary, by Sir Thomas Pope Knight, in *Anno* 1556. Which Colledge was first founded in the time of King Edward the

Durham colledge.

the

the third, by Thomas Hatfield Bishop of Durham, and by him named Durham Colledge, for eight Monkes and seauen Clearkes, admitted by the Prior of Durham, there to Reade, *Anno* 1370.

Robert Walwcorth Prior of Durham, endowed it with three Mannors of land, &c. In Radington and Claxton, with the aduowson of the Church of Radington: which Colledge at the suppression by King Henry the eight, might dispend in land as the same was then valued by the Visitors, one hundred and fifteene pound foure shillings, foure pence.

Saint Johns Colledge. Saint Johns Colledge was founded, and so named, in the time of Queene Mary, by Sir Thomas White Marchant Taylor, in *Anno* 1557. which Colledge sometime called Bernard Colledge, founded by Henry Chicheley Archbishop of Canterbury, being amongst other suppressed in the raigne of King Henry the eight, and greatly ruinated: the same Sir Thomas White purchased, and after bestowed large summes of money in building thereof, and did lay the same Colledge in very good land, neere to the Vniuersitie of Oxford, to the yearely value of 500. pound, which he purchased with his money, and hath left order to make it dispend 600. pound the yeere.

Warnard colledge.

Wadham colledge founded. In the yeare 1613. was finished the famous Colledge in Oxford called Wadham Colledge, founded by Nicholas Wadham, late of Merefield in the County of Somerset Esquire, and Dorothie his wife, Sister to the right honourable Iohn Lord Peter of Writle.

The said worthy Gentlewoman undertaking this worke after the death of her husband by his former direction, but most part at her owne charge, began the same worke three yeres past, and endowed it with one Warden, fifteene fellowes, and fifteene Schollers, with other seruiceable Officers, and furniture, befitting such a place: and for the maintenance of the said Society, haue left in present, and to come, from their owne estates, 800. pounds by the yeere.

Eaten Schoole
Westminster of new
Winchester
Paules Schole in London
Saint Anthonies in London
Marchant Taylors Schoole
} founded by
Henry the fift 1443.
Queene Elizabeth.
William Wickham Bishop of Winchester.
Iohn Collet 1510.
Iohn Tate.
The Marchant Taylors 1560.

Shrewsbury Schoole founded.

In the Vniuersities of England (saith Erasmus Roterodame) there be certaine Colledges, in the which there is so much religion, so straight discipline, in such integrity of life, that if you did see it, you would neglect in comparison of them, all Monkish rules and orders.

All the Cities in England, many Market Townes, and Villages, haue free Grammar Schooles erected in them for the further encrease of learning and vertue. Vertuous men haue to the perpetuall regestring of their good names, done these good deedes, learned men haue not beene all the dayes. Some thereof for the supply in other, of that which wanted in themselues, haue done wisely, all to this purpose: that vertue and learning vnited and knit together, might in this our age make a learned vertuous world. It were much (they are so many) in a small roome to comprehend them, but the chiefe and worthy patrones of the rest are.

There is yet one other Schoole of note in this Kingdome, to wit, The free Grammar Schoole of Shrewsbury, in the County of Salop, which consisteth of one chiefe Schoolemaster, and three vnder Schoolemasters.

It was first founded by K. Edward the first, in the first yeere of his raigne, being the yeere of Christ 1552. and after augmented by Queene Elizabeth, in the 13. yeere of her raigne *An. Dom.* 1571. With the said famous Princes gaue liberall meanes for the maintenance of it, and also power for an ordinance to be provided and made, as well concerning the rule and gouernment, as also the disposing of the reuenues thereof, which being made accordingly, those persons that were trusted with the estate of it, became bound by couenant each to other, not onely to obserue the ordinances thereof, but also to sue and implead both one another, and euery other person that should doe any thing to the preiudicing of it.

Accordingly the said Schoole hath continued now 54. yeeres, and of those 54 yeeres my worthy & learned friend Mr. Iohn Meighen, now chiefe Master of the same, hath bin chiefe Master there 48. yeeres complete, hauing all which time of 48. yeeres notwithstanding, that many attempts haue bin made by diuers persons of place and great power, both by suits of law and otherwise, thereby as well to haue taken away, part of the meanes thereof, as also to haue enfringe some of the said ordinances, yet as well the meanes of the said Schoole, hath beene hitherto preserued through the good care and speciall endeauour of the said Mr. Iohn Meighen, the chiefe Master and Gouernor thereof, and godly blessing vpon the same, as also the ordinances thereof, to the vttermost of his power, and with the expence of his owne purse defended from violation.

With the meanes so preserued, there haue beene lately erected and built a faire Library, furnished with necessary bookes for the vse of the Schoole, and other publique vses therewith: also a pleasant Gallery, and a conuenient Chappell: also a Schoolehouse in the Countrey for a refuge and continuance of teaching in the times of sicknesse: and last of all, a godly new Schoolehouse in place of the olde, being ruinated within the Towne. And all the said building being made of the faire White free Stone worke set out, together with the inward furniture suitable thereunto, cost the best part of three thousand pounds if not more. But with the same meanes also two Schollerships are already founded for the said Schoole in Saint Johns Colledge in Cambridge, as a beginning and precedent for succeeding times, to proceede in founding more like Schollerships, with Fellowships also in both the Vniuersities, or either of them according to the meaning of the ordinances, by which it is specially prouided, that as the riche of the said Schoole shall encrease, so it shall from time to time be imployed wholly that way, and neuer conuerted to any priuate vse at all.

THE

THE THIRD VNIVERSITIE OF ENGLAND:

OR

A TREATISE OF THE FOVNDATIONS OF ALL THE Colledges, ancient Schooles of Priuiledge, and of Houses of Learning, and liberall Arts, within and about the most famous Citie of LONDON.

With a briefe report of the Sciences, Arts, and Faculties there in professed, studied, and practised.

Together with the Blazon of the Armes, and Ensignes thereunto belonging.

Gathered faithfully out of the best Histories, Chronicles, Records, and Archiues, by G. B. *Knight.*

AT LONDON
Printed by AVGVSTINE MATHEVVES for
RICHARD MEIGHEN. 1631.

LONDINI

OLIM AVGVSTÆ

VRBIS CELEBERRIMÆ

ELOGIVM.

LOndinum templis, & turre, & ponte superbum,
Magnificis tectis, medio, Ianoque celebre:
Nauibus innumeris, portu, fluvioque beatum,
Elisium campis, ciuibus & referentibus hortis:
Vrbs belloque situ, cæloque triumphat amico.
Principia, et procerum, Sedes et summa senatus.
Quodque rei caput est, Regi dilecta supremo.
Omnis mechanices, claríque hinc omnis omnis,
Insignes alit artifices, magnosque magistros.
Cæsarii iuris studiis, patriique, sacríque,
Exculta, & variis feriata subinde theatris:
Dives opum, dives pictai vestis, & auri.
Mercibus omnimodis, gemmis, gazisque referta,
Mercurii claris, fœcunda & Martis alumnis.
Et populos supra tercentum millia pascens,
Et bellis sponsis, & cornu-copia abundans,
Denique Londinum, tot claret dotibus vna,
Emporium, rus, vrbs, acies, academia, ludus,
Arx, regum aula, forum est, & quicquid in vrbe requiras,
Iure vt Metropolis dici queat vnica m undi.

TO THE RIGHT HONOVRABLE, AND THE MOST REVEREND, AND MOST learned Iudge, Sir EDWARD COKE Knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of *England*, of Pleas before the KING himselfe to be holden, and one of his Maiesties priuie Councell.

MY VERY HONOVRABLE GOOD LORD,

I Present here to your Lordship a view of the Academicall State, and of the Vniuersality of the Studies, and of the liberall Arts, and Learnings taught, and professed in this Cittie of London: And vnto your Lordship rather then to any other, for these causes. First, because you are not onely generally well learned, but also an excellent Antiquarie, that is, one that can best iudge, and is much delighted with these kinde of Studies. Secondly, in respect that your Lordship is an especiall louer of this Cittie, and very studious by all meanes to aduance the flourishing state thereof. Thirdly, in regard that the greatest part of this Booke is bestowed in the description of the Colledges, and collegiate houses founded in this Cittie, for the professours of the Municipall, or common Law of this Land: Whereof your Lordship is not onely a most learned Professour, but also a singular Antecessor, a chiefe Iudge, and a principall Interpreter. My last, and not my least reason, is grounded vpon the due consideration of the many fauours, which I haue receiued of your Lordship, and for the which I hold my selfe exceedingly bound to your Lordship: and albeit I doe not (in complementing manner) make daily profession of this my obligation (as many vse to doe) yet there is no man shall be more ready to doe to your Lordship any honour, or seruice, then my poore selfe, when, and so often as occasion shall be presented: and in the meane time, and for a gage, and arrhes thereof I giue and dedicate vnto your Lordship, this THIRD VNIVERSITIE, vnto the which I pray your Lordship to giue fauourable entertainement, or if in your Iustice you thinke it not worthy, I submit it to your Lordships censure or sentence, either of life, or death, presse or suppression. And so I humbly take my leaue, from his Maiesties Office of the Reuels, vpon Saint *Peters* hill. 24. of *August* 1612.

Your Lordships very much obliged,
ready to doe you seruice,

George Buc.

A CATALOGVE, OR TABLE OF ALL THE ARTS AND SCIENCES READ, and Taught in this Vniuersitie of LONDON.

Theologie
Grammar
Rhetorick
Poetry
Arithmetike
Logick
Philosophie
Municipall, or common Law
Law of Conscience
Ciuill Law.
Canon Law
Phisicke
Chirurgery
Astronomy
Geometry
Musicke
Mathematicks
Hydrographie
Geographie
Nauigation
Languages
Cosmographie
Calligraphie
Brachygraphie
Steganographie
Art Gladiatorie
Hippice, or the Art of Riding
Polemice, or Art Millitary
Pyrotechnie
Artillerie
Art of Swimming.
Orchestice, or Art of Dancing
Graphice, or the art of Painting
Heraldica
Art of Reuels
Art Memorative, And others.

A DISCOVRSE, OR TREATISE OF THE THIRD VNIVERSITIE OF ENGLAND.

The Preface, and generall argument to this Booke.

HAuing obserued in diuers Writers, as well Forraigne as English, the Cittie of London to be stiled an Vniuersitie, and doubting of it, I take occasion thereby to examine vppon what grounds and causes they had so stiled it, and after some search and consideration thereof, I found sufficient cause and reasons to satisfie me: For I saw that not onely those Arts, which are called liberall, but also all, or the most part of all other Arts and Sciences, proper and fit for ingenuous and liberall persons, were, and are in this Cittie professed, taught, and studied: which is (adding but *cum priuilegio*) as much as can be sayd, for the name and authority of any Vniuersity, and which can be rightly sayd of very fewe other Vniuersities of Christendome. For in the Cittie of London be reade and taught the Arts of Grammar, of Rhetoricke, of Arithmetike, of Musicke, of Geometry, of Astronomie, of Geographie, of Hydrographie: Likewise the other Mathematicall learnings, and Philosophie, Physicke, and Metaphisicke, the lawes Ecclesiasticall, Municipall, and Ciuill. As also the Arts of Riding, Gladiatorie, Alchimie, Optica, Gemonatiue, Geodesie, Poetrie, Heraldrie, Graphice, Charactery, Brachigraphie, and diuers Languages, holy, learned, and strange, and many other free and subtill Arts and Sciences are professed, taught, studied, and practised within this Cittie, as shall more plainely appeare in the processe of this Treatise. And (that which is most chiefely of all to be obserued) the chiefest Science, the Science of Sciences, and the Key of all knowledge (to wit) the Science and Art of seruing of Almightie God (called Theologie and Diuinitie) is no where better nor more plentifully taught then in this Cittie; many and dayly lectures being read thereof, not onely in the chiefe and Cathedrall Churches of Saint Paul, and Saint Peter, but also in all the Parish Churches, and Temples: and particularly and Academically also in Gresham College. So that these places are nothing else but Schooles of Theologie, and Colledges of Diuines. Then consequently it followeth (if *Academia & Studium*, & *Vniuersitas*) according to their vses in seuerall ages be but *Synonyma & æquiuoca* (as the learned know) and that this last name *Vniuersitas*, hath beene lately giuen and appropriated to generall Schooles of learning, for and in respect of the Vniuersality of Arts, Sciences, and Faculties professed, taught, and studied in them, *Et pro ipsa studiorum Societate* (as our most learned Countryman hath intimated in his immortall Britania) and that an Vniuersitie or Academie be but *Cœtus hominum exercentium studia literarum, & in ijs se occupantium* (as Francis Iunius defineth it.) When I say it followeth consequently, that London may not only challenge iustly the name and stile of an Vniuersity, but also a chiefe place in the Catalogue of Vniuersities.

And as for that obiection, which some make, viz. that it is requisite that all Vniuersities be allowed and authorized by the Popes bulls, and by his letters Apostolicall of Priuiledge and of Indulgence: this is friuolous, for then had Athens beene no Vniuersitie, for there the Pope had nothing to doe, as being not then in *rerum natura*. Neither doth this principall hold for good and currant since yee hath had being, yea euen in those Countries and Kingdomes, and Citties, where the Popes Primacie or Supremacie, and Authority is received and acknowledged: For in the Kingdome of France, the ancient Kings of France haue founded, authorized, and priuiledged Vniuersities, in diuers Cities in that Kingdome, as Rebuffus, and Leo Tripault, and others affirme. And the Imperiall Lawyers peremptorily hold *Academiarum authoritatem ab Imperatore cognoscam, &c.* Besides those instances, it might bee sayd for further answere of this obiection, that it were vnreasonable any absurd to expect or to attend the POPES allowance, and authorizing of Vniuersities founded, or to be founded in these times, and in this age, either in the Kingdomes of England, of Scotland, of Ireland, or of Denmarke, or of Sweden, or in any Principality or Commonwealth in Germanie, or other Countries or Citties, where the reformed Religion is professed, and established, and out of all which Kingdomes, and Countries, the Popes power and authority is excluded: But suppose it were not excluded out of England, and that it were in such force here as it is in the Empire,

and in Fraunce, and in other Kingdomes: yet the Kings of England (who are and haue beene as free and as soueraigne and absolute in their Kingdomes (as either the Emperour, or the French King) may as iustly challenge the power and prerogatiue of establishing and authorizing Vniuersities, and publique Schooles within their owne Kingdomes and Dominions, as the Emperour or any King whosoeuer, and this power the auncient Kings of England not onely challenged, but also practised and put in vre, and particularly within this Citty of London, wherein they haue not onely allowed the publique exercises and professions of liberall Arts and Sciences, but also haue founded diuers Schooles, Temples, and Collegiate houses, and endowed them with faire Lands, and Reuenues, and authorized and strengthened them with many large priuiledges, and immunities, as in our Annales, and in Records, and in diuers particular and peculiar Charters yet extant may bee seene: and shall appeare better hereafter in this discourse.

And hereupon it is, that William Fitz Stephan, very aptly and rightly calleth these publique Schooles of London, *Scholas celebres de priuilegio, & antiqua dignitate.* But admit that this Citty had no other Colledges in it, but the Innes of Court; nor other Sciences studied and professed in it but the lawes; yet might London (as Iustice Fortescue well obserued, and boldeth) be as worthily stiled an Vniuersity, as either Angiers, or Orleans in France, or as Padua, or Perugio, in Italy, wherein the study of the Ciuill Law, is onely professed, or as Salerne, and Montpelier, wherein nothing but Physicke is read publiquely, or as Salamanca in Spaine, or as Maiorica in Lulliana, in Maiorca: in the one whereof none but Theologers, and in the other none but Alcamists, haue publique Salaries.

To conclude then briefly vpon the Allegars, and Probats premised. It appeareth hereby to be cleare, that vnto London belongeth duely not onely the Stile, and title of Vniuersity, but also of a chiefe and principall Vniuersity, hauing no complement thereof wanting but one, and that is the gouernment and protection of an honourable Chancellour; which the King my Master may easily at his Maiesties pleasure supply, hauing good choyse of most graue and noble personages, fit for this charge when it shall please his Maiesty.

The extent of this Vniuersity

Cap. II.

Before I enter into any particularities, I must aduertise the Reader: that vnder the name of London, I comprise not onely the Towne and Suburbes, and Territories thereof, but also all adiacent, and contiguous places, as namely Westminster, Southwarke, S. Katherines, &c. notwithstanding their peculiar Charters of Incorporation, and Franchises: And this I doe by the warrant of the best Cosmographers, and Politicians, who hold for an Axiome, that *omnia aedificia vrbibus contigua Suburbia annumerenda sunt.* And hereupon it is that diuers forraigne Writers describing London, doe directly ascribe not onely the Borough of Southwarke, but also the Citty of Westminster to the Suburbs thereof, and therefore I hope that in following them (and that onely in the matter of this subiect, and not hauing any purpose or thought to preiudice the particular rights and peculiar honours of those places) I shall be excused. And thus much for the ground worke and generall argument of this Treatise. And now I will to the particulars. In handling whereof, I will first set downe the beginnings and foundations of all the Colledges and Schooles of Learning, within and about this Citty of London, with a briefe mention of the Arts, Sciences, and Faculties, professed and taught in them: and next the names of the Founders, with the times of their erection, and foundation: and lastly close euery one of them with the blazon of the Armes belonging to euery seuerall Schoole and Colledge, all which Armes haue beene gathered, and set forth by Master Nicholas Charles Lancaster Duke at Armes, and perused, and allowed by Master William Camden Clarencieux, and Southroy d'armes.

The order of this Treatise.

Cap. III.

In this Vniuersity I must, and will giue the first place to the Schooles of Diuinity, next vnto them I will place the Colledges of the municipall or common Lawes, and of Chancerie, and then those of the ciuill Lawes. For as Theologie (which is the study and profession of the Law of God, and the perfect rule to attaine to eternall happinesse, & in briefe the fountain of all good learning, and the Archetype of all good & wholsome lawes) hath by due right the first place: so the law of man (which is or ought to be deriued frō thence) and whose end & scope is to administer Iustice to all men, and to preserue in safety and in peace, the temporall Estates of the Subiects) must needs haue the next place. And albeit the ciuill Law, be a very honourable, and a iust, and a most wise Law, yet I will place the Law of this Land before the Law of the Empire, or ciuill Law, and that by that rule, which teacheth mee to preferre my Soueraigne Lord, and King, before all other Kings and Keysars, and my native Country before any Country in the world. But as concerning that matter of controuersie, which is betweene the professours of the municipall, and ciuill Lawes about precedence, I will not meddle with it, but leaue the determination thereof to the learned heraulds and to their most Noble Superintendents, the high Constable and high Marshals of England to whom of right it belongeth. In the fourth place shall follow the Colledges of Physicke, and Chirurgery, and those which Philosophy and necessity hath brought forth: and all according to their marshalling by George Cornuus, and set downe briefly by him in these words. *Theologia nobis dei cognitionem suppeditat: Iuris peritia lites & controuersias omnis generis iure & aequitate diiimit: Medicina morbos & eorum remedia ostendit: Philosophia rerum omnium infra Deum, cognitionem nobis exhibet.* And I purpose to place all these Colledges, and Schooles of learning according to the times of their foundations and institutions as conueniently as I may doe it, which cannot be precisely obserued by reason that the times and beginnings be intricate, and often uncertaine and obscure, and it would make sometimes a confusion in the Method, and order, which I haue protested. And thus much for the order in generall, and now I will goe to the particulars.

Of the Schooles of Theologie, or Diuinity, and of other Arts and Sciences within London.

Cap. IIII.

Vhelmus Stephanides, or William Fitz Stephan, a learned Gentleman (who liued in the time of King Henry Fitz Empresse) in a little Treatise which he wrote of the description of London, making mention of the famous and priuiledged Schooles of good learnings, and liberall Arts professed of auncient time, long before his dates in London, saith: *In Londonia tres principales ecclesiæ, Scholas celebres habent de priuilegio & antiqua dignitate,* That is to say, in London 3. principall Churches haue in them famous Schooles of Royall priuiledge, and auncient dignitie: and those also were ordered according to the manner now vsed in Vniuersities: For as hee saith, there were in them read, not onely the Science of Diuinitie, but also the Arts of Grammar, of Rhethozike, of Logike, of Poetrie, and of Philosophy. But for breuitie, Stephanides nameth not those three Churches and auncient Schooles, but our Antiquaries affirme that they were Saint Paules, Westminster, and Saint Peters in Cornehill, hauing good warrant for this their assertion, by circumstances, traditions, and some matters of record. And because Saint Paules Church is the most magnificent: and for that also Saint Paul was the Apostle of the Gentiles, and so consequently of the Britaines, and by whom our great Auncestors were conuerted to the Christian faith, (if it bee true which Sophronius and Theodoretus, auncient Fathers write) who say, that Saint Paul after his second releasement out of prison in Rome, came into Britanny, and preached here the Gospel of our Lord Iesus Christ, and tooke Baptisme our Forefathers: and this being so, we must needes for our particular obligation and interest, not onely stile him our Apostle, but also giue to him the first place as mought be. For hee was not onely the chiefe Doctor and Apostle of the Gentiles by vocation, but also by merrit and holy exercisements: For he left to the world more Testimonies of his great labours, and of his feruent zeale, to the conuersion of heathen nations, by his many diuine writings, then all the rest of the Apostles besides. But because this matter concerneth not much this place, I referre the Reader to the treatise of Frances Dillingamus, *de Comparatione Petri cum Paulo*, only here according to the present purpose, that in speciall honour of this our Apostle Saint Paul, it is very probable that the good Ethelbert King of Kent, erecting and founding this Church in the yeere of our Lord DCX. in token of his religious thankefulnesse, dedicated it to this our Apostle Saint Paul. And for the aduancement of this study, and profession of Theologie, this King and other ancient and pious Benefactors, placed in this Church a Bishop, a Deane, a Chancellor, and a Treasurer, fiue Arch-deacons, and thirty Cannons, or Prebendaries, all Doctors, (or at the least) learned and graue professors of Diuinitie. And not only those honourable and reuerend prelates and professors, but also the greatest part of the best diuines of both the other Vniuersities, and of other Cathedrall Churches, and other parts of this Kingdome, doe reade and teach their holy Science publikely, both without at Saint Paules Crosse, and also within the Quyer, twise a weeke at the least throughout the yeere.

Besides that, Doctor Bradwardin, (some-times Chancellor of Paris, and afterwardes Arch-bishop of Canterbury) about the yeare of our Lord 1344. founded a Lecture of Diuinity to be read perpetually in the times of Aduent and of Lent, for the better interpreting and opening of those holy Scriptures, which were appointed by the Church to be read to the people, at those more solemne times. But now this Lecture is translated from Aduent, and Lent, to the times of the 4. Termes, and read twise a weeke, viz. euery Tuesday, and euery Thursday, during the Termes in the morning.

There is also in this Church, a Master of Musique, to teach the Art of Musique and song, to the Quiristers, and an Organist, and diuers Petti-canons, and Clearkes, and Minsters, ordayned for the dayly seruice of God in the Quire.

Furthermoe in the South Churchyard of Paules, there were two Colledges founded the one by Io. of Gaunt duke of Lancaster: the other by Doct. Holmes sometimes Chancellor of Paules and hereof the one was called Gaunt Colledge, and the other Holmes Colledge, but they were both dissolued in the raigne of King Edward the 6. some part of Gaunt Colledge is yet standing, & is that building of stone work right ouer against

the great steeple house of Paules, the other was almost ouer against that, and what remaineth of them both is conuerted to dwelling houses, to Tenements, and Timber-yeards.

The Armes of this Cathedrall Church, are Gules, two Swoords in Saltor Argent garded Or: whereunto the Deane of Paules for the Armes of the Deanry, inserteth a Capitall D. betwixt the points for difference.

The auncient Schoole of Saint Paul where- in these liberall Arts, and Learnings mentioned by maister Fitz Stephan, were taught, was long since ruined, or rather (as many other) deuoured by some sacrilegious cormorant, whereof the reuerend and pious Iohn Collet, Doctor of Diuinitie, and Deane of Pauls, hauing compassion, purchased a piece of ground in the East side of the Crosse Churchyard, and built instead thereof, a faire Schoole-house of free stone, Anno Domini, MDXII. (and which, there now flourisheth) and endowed it with sufficient rents, and reuenues, to maintaine therein a Chaplaine, two Schoolemasters, and one hundred, thirty and fiue poore children, to be taught therein, the Arts of Grammer, Rhethorike, Poetry, and the Latine, and Greeke Languages.

The Armes of this Schoole are the same (with due difference) which the founder thereof bore (who was the sonne of Sir Henry Collet Knight, thrise Lord Maior of London) according to the honourable customes of other Collegiat places and houses of learning, whereunto there hath beene no other peculiar enfigne Armes Assigned, viz. a Shield sables, a Chenetron argent, charged with three Annellats sables betwixt three Windes, Tripant Argent, within a bordor Gules.

Schooles of Theologie, and of other Arts in Westminster.

Cap. V.

The Church or Abbey of Monaskery of Saint Peter called of the Site Westmonaster, and commonly of corruptly *Westminster*, i. *Monasterium occidentale vrbi Londoni...iacens positum*, (or, new Abbey, as that Monastery which stoode somtimes in Salt-Smithfield, by the like reason was called Eastminster) was founded by Sebertus King of the East Saxons, about the yeere of our Lord, DC VII. the place or Towne was auncietly called Thorney, and this Church was afterwards reedified, and much beautified and enriched by the holy King Edward, surnamed the Confessor, who placed therein Monks of the order of Saint Benedict, endowing this Abbey with fayre and goodly Lands and Lordshippes, besides the tithes of all the reuenues of the Crowne Land. After this, came King Henry the third, and pulled downe the Church, and new built, and much enlarged it. The Abbey remained and flourished vntill the raigne of King Henry the eight, who suppressing all Religious houses within this Kingdome, expelled the Monkes and Abbots out of this Monastery, and tooke away a great part of the Lands, and reuenues from it, and instead of the Abbot and Monkes, placed there a Bishoppe and a Deane, and certaine Prebendaries, but it continued but a very small time in this estate, for Doctor Thirlebey was the first and the last Bishop of Westminster, who soone after that hee was made Bishop of this new Sea, conueyed the lands of the Bishoppricke to certaine great men, and that done, he was translated from thence to Ely.

But the late Queene Elizabeth, of most glorious memory, at the mediation of the goodly and excellent Common-wealths man, Sir William Cecill, Lord Burghley, and Lord high Treasurer, restored a good part of the Lands taken from this house and Church, by the King her Father, and erected and conuerted it into a Colledge, and placed therin (besides the Deane) twelue Prebendaries, all professors of Theologie, and twelue almes-men, and for 30 Scholers, which were called the Queenes, and now are calles the Kings Schollers, and founded in this new Colledge, a publique Schoole for Grammer, Rhethoricke, Poetrie, and for the Latine, and Greeke Languages, and ordained two Schoolemasters for it, and there is also belonging to this Colleage, a Master to teach Musicke and other like, as in the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul.

And in this Church and Colledge, there bee Sermons, and Lectures of Diuinitie, read euery Sunday, and euery holliday, and now in our time the Gospell, and most Holy Lapis, Dame Frauncis Sidney, Countesse of Sussex, founded a Lecture of Diuinitie to bee read twise a weeke in the Quearne times for euer.

There was also another Colledge in Westminster, called Saint Stephans Colledge founded by King Edward the third: but that also fell by the hands of the great Dilapidator Anno Domini 1330.

The auncient Armes of this Weast Monastery, or Abbey of Westminster, were partie per fesse endente. Or and Azure, in the chiefe a Crozier erect, and a Miter: but the new armes of this Colleage of Westminster, are partly the Armes of King Edward the confessor, and partly the Armes of England, in a Chiefe. Or, betweene two red Roses.

But I must not leaue Thorney or Westminster thus, vnlesse I would be guiltie of omission, and leauing out the best matters. and the chances of my purpose, and proiect, inasmuch as this diuine Science of Theologie, is no where in this Kingdome, nor in Christendome, more learnedly, nor more frequently taught, and preached, then in the Kings chappel at Whitehall (sited in Westminster) during the time that his Maiestie keepeth his Court there, for besides the learned Sermons which are preached therein euery Sunday, and euery Tuesday, and euery Holliday, by his Maiesties reuerend and most learned Chaplaines, to wit, by his Maiesties Almoner, by the Deane of his Chappel, and the rest of the Chaplaines (all or the

the most part Doctors in Theologie) and by others the most learned and most famous Diuines of this Land; there bee also thrise euery weeke during the time of Lent, many Sermons preached before the King, by the Archbishopps, Bishoppes, Deanes, chiefe Prelates, Doctors of Diuinitie, and all the chiefest and most segnall Theologians of this Kingdoome, selected and appointed to this holy seruice, in which time there is no sacred misserry, nor any necessary and notable part of Theologie, and Christian religion that is left vnhandled, and vndiscussed.

Of Saint Peters in Cornhill.

Cap. VI.

The third of those most famous Schoole-churches, mentioned or meant by William Fitz Stephan, is that of Saint Peter in Cornhill, and which by that right of Priorite, and precedence, which belongeth to antiquitie, should haue the first place, for it is held by our best Antiquaries to be the most auncient Christian Church of London, as hauing beene founded by Lucius the first Christian King of this Ile, or at the least in his time by the blessed Theanus then Archbishop of London, or by both of them about the yeare of Christ, CL. E, and it is recoded to be the most ancient Sea both of the Archbishopps, and also Bishops of London, as you may see more at large in the Catalogue of Bishops gathered and set forth by Doctor Godwin, now Bishop of Landaffe.

There was belonging to this Church of Saint Peter, a faire and well furnished Library, for the better helpe of the Schollers and students entertained therein, but that is not now extant. But there is yet belonging to this Church a Schoole, wherein are taught such arts and learnings as are taught in the Schools and Colledge of Saint Paules, and Westminster (Musicke excepted.)

And thus much for the most ancient Schools of Priuiledge, and of auncient dignitie founded in London, and mentioned by William Fitz Stephans. The Armes of this Church, and Schoole of Saint Peter in Cornhill, be Argent, a Crosse Gules empaled with S. Peters keyes Or, the field Azure.

Other places of Diuines.

Cap. VII.

But because the publike profession, and practise, and exercise of this diuine Science in this City, extendeth further then to these three last ancient Schooles and Churches: I must not omit to make known the other places of this city where this heauenly facultie of Theologie is professed, and taught publikely. For there be very many learned diuines, which be readers, and preachers in the Innes of Court, and readers, and Publots of the many parishes within, and about this City, who exercise this Art of Theology by publike preaching and teaching, not onely weekely but also daily in one or other Church of this Citie, as for better Memorie, and instance hereof, vpon euery monday there is a Sermon or Lecture in Whittington Colledge, and in, &c.

Vpon Tuesday in Saint Hellens, and in S. Stephens in Walbrooke, &c. Vpon Wednesday in S. Dunstones East, and in Alder Mary, and in S. Buttolphs Aldersgate. Vpon Thursday in S. Dunstones West, in S. Magnus, and Mary Woolchurch. Vpon Friday, in Rood-church, and in S. Clements Danes. And vpon Saturday in Allhallowes Bredstreete, yet that is but monethly: but vpon all Sundayes there be three Sermons, and Theological Lectures read and preached in euery Church throughout the whole Citie, &c.

Furthermore there be three Sermons preached at Saint Maries spittle, in the Easter holidayes, whereof there is a rehearsall made at Paules Crosse the next Sunday following. Besides there is a Lecture of Diuinitie after the manner of the Vniuersities, read euery Terme time, in Gresham Colledge: amongst other Lectures, whereof I will speake more at large, when I come to their places.

Of the Kings Colledge at Chelsey.

Cap. VIII.

Before I passe from the foure Schooles of Diuinitie, I must not omitte to make due honourable mention of the new Colledge, now in founding at Chelsey, neere Westminster, by our most redoubted, and most religious Soueraigne Lord King Iames, to the which there bee already allotted and appointed a Prouost and twelue fellowes, with other complements and endowments, proper to so Magnificent a worke. It is founded vpon certaine Lands of the Kings, situate in the East end of Chelsey, neere vnto the Thamis, and although that it bee but yet in the ground-worke and rearing, and that besides, it bee not within this Citie of London, nor the suburbs thereof, yet it is so neere a neighbour, and of so great hope, as it were a sinne scarcely veniall to leaue it out. And because the matter and the occasion, and the vse thereof, are already set downe and registred by Doctor Willet, in his Catalogue of the charitable workes done by Protestants, in his great and learned booke, intituled Synopsis Papismi, reimprinted one thousand fiue hundred and thirteene. I will deliuer it in his owne wordes, and thus he writeth.

Our worthy King (that now is) in doing god

good and charitable workes hath followed Queene Elizabeths steppes, as in founding the Kings Colledge at Chelsey, ordained for Diuines to bee employed in the writing of controuersies. To the which worke that industrious man, and learned writer, the reuerend Deane of Exeter, Doctor Sutcliffe, Provost of the sayd Colledge, hath bin a large benefactor, and contributor. So necessary a worke and profitable for the good of the whole Church, what well minded man will not wish may prosper? Such as God hath enabled can doe no better then to set to their helping hands to finish the building begun, and to raise up the walles, which are now but rising out of the ground, &c. Thus much Doctor Willet.

I would here blaze the Armes of this new Colledge... if I knew what they were, but I thinke they are not yet giuen, and thus much for the Schooles and Colledges of Theologie. Now I will speake of the Colledges, and houses of the professors, and students in the Lawes, according to my promise, and orderly Methode.

Of the Colledges of the Municipall, or common Lawyers.

Cap. XI.

NOw follow in their order the Colledges, houses, or Innes of the professors of our Lawes of England: who haue within and about this Citie, fourteene houses, which our Iudicious Camden stileth discreetely Colledges, *Collegia Iuris consultorum*, i. Colledges of Lawyers, which are commonly called Innes of Court, and Innes of Chancery. And because this word Inne, is in this age vsed commonly and in a manner only for such houses as the Romanes called Diuersoria, Gueste Innes, and common houses for entertainment of all Trauellers for their money, therefore it must bee vnderstood that anciently here in England the houses of the greatest Lords both Spirituall and Temporall of this Kingdome (which they had here in London) were called Innes, as Oxford Inne, Warwicke Inne, and Ely Inne, &c. which we call now Oxford house, Warwicke house, Ely house: and yet vntill this day, the houses of the French Noblemen in Paris, are called Hostels, which comineth from the Latin word *Hospitium* (and is the same, which Inne is in English) as Ostel de mont pensier, Ostel de Burgoigne, Ostel de Guyse, &c. And which word Hostel was vsed also in our fathers age in Cambridge, for lesser and vnpriuiledged houses, wherein certaine free Scholers, and Students were lodged: therefore this must bee obserued here (to wit) wheresoeuer this word Inne hath the addition of Sergeant, Court or Chancery, it implyeth a honorable Colledge or Society of students, and professors of the Lawes of this Land.

And of these Innes, there bee in London three sorts, and in all foureteene, viz. two of Sergeants, foure of Court, and eight of Chancery.

And because that by auncient customs and by old orders of the houses of Court and Chancery, all those which were admitted into these houses were, and ought to be Gentlemen, and that of three discents at the least, as Master Gerard Leigh affirmeth, therefore they which are now admitted are Registred by the stile and name of Gentlemen. But yet notwithstanding this, if they be not Gentlemen, it is an error to thinke that the sonnes of Graziers, Farmers, Merchants, Tradesmen, and Artificers, can be made Gentlemen, by their admittance or Matriculation in the Buttrie Role, or in the Stewards Booke, of such a house or Inne of Court: for no man can bee made a Gentleman but by his father. And be it spoken (with all reuerent reseruation of Duty) the King (who hath power to make Esquires, Knights, Baronets, Barons, Viscounts, Earles, Marquesses, and Dukes) cannot make a Gentleman, for Gentilitie is a matter of race, and of blood, and of discent, from Gentile and Noble parents, and auncestors, which no Kings can giue to any, but to such as they beget.

Of the Coledges or Innes of Iudges, and of Sergeants at the Law.

Cap X.

THere be some who compile the Innes of Sergeants vnder the names of Innes of Court. And it is without question that in former times the Iudges, Barons, and Sergeants continued in those houses of Court, whereof they were fellowes, and wherein they had beene at their first comming admitted, and had studied, and practised: But afterward following the example of the houses of Parliament (which now are two houses, and auncienly were but one) these chiefe and reuerend professors of the Law left those auncient great houses of Court, and tooke lesser houses for themselues onely (and as I take it) the first peculiar house which they had, was in Holborne, situate ouer against S. Andrewes Church, and went by the name of Sergeants Inne, vntill such time as they taking these other two houses (which now they possesse) it came into the hands of the Lord Scroope, and is of him called yet Scroops Inne, although this honourable family hath also relinquished it many yeares agoe.

But if now the question bee asked why these two Innes beare the names of Sergeants Innes, and not of Iudges or Iustices, or of Barons Innes, my answere is, that because this word Sergeant is Genus (or the generall voice as the Logicians terme it) to them all, for there is no Iudge, nor Iusticer nor Baron, amongst them, but is a Sergeant by title and stile, or (which is better) by eminence and desert. And I doe not hold them to bee called Sergeants onely

onely a *Seruiendo*, but also *a seruando*, to set Order, for their pregnant wits and reuerend professors be conseruators of the Law, and of Iustice: and they be inclutibly conseruators and preseruers of the Kings and common wealthes peace, and quiet, for they be the indifferent administrators, and distributers of Iustice and right, and the Oracles, and interpreters of the Lawes of this Land to euery Subiect, and therefore may be stiled as well *Seruientes Legem*, as *Seruientes ad Legem*.

But I would not haue our Antiquaries thinke that I goe about to barre them from their bearing of their Sergeants at Armes, and the Sergeants of the Kings house, nor the Sergeants at the Mace from Seruio, but I holde that Etimologie proper vnto those kind of Sergeants: And further I am so farre from giuing offence to our Antiquaries or from checking of their conceipts as I will also admit it to be proper to these reuerend professors of the Law, in respect of the great good seruice which they doe vnto God, and to their Prince, and Countrey, by the continuall paynes, which they take in their Circuites, and by their great and profound knowledge of the lawes of God and man being pious, and vertuous Gentlemen for so I hope they are all.

The Innes of Sergeants (although they bee of later foundation and erection then the rest, yet for the reuerence and eminence of the personages therein harbenged, I will borrow a little of the Law and Prerogatiue of the precedence, due to honourable Antiquity, and giue these the priorite, and precedence in this Register, and begin with them first.

Of these Innes there bee (as I sayd) two, the one in Fleetestreete, and the other in new Streete, now called Chancery Lane. Sergeants Inne in Fleetestreete, was a house or messuage belonging to the Deane, and Prebendaries of Yorke, and purchased by the reuerend Iudges, and Iustices, and Sergeants, in the Raigne of King Henry the eight, for the residence, and abode of themselues, and the rest of their brethren, and of their successors. Sergeants Inne, in Chancery Lane, was a messuage appertaining to the Bishop of Ely, but whether it were any member or appurtenance to the manno? of Hoborne *Quare*.

In these two Colledges, or Innes of Sergeants, I doe common, lodge, conuerse, conferre, and consult, the chiefe Iustices of either Bench, (viz) the Lord Chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, and the Lord chiefe Iustice of the common Bench, or common Pleas, The Lord Chiefe Baron of the Exchequer, and the rest of the reuerend and graue Iudges, Iustices, and Barons, and also the Sergeants at Law, and who are also for the most part of them employed in the Circuits, as Iudges, and as Iusticers, itinerants, in the times of the vacation to determine causes, and to giue Iustice to the Kings Liege people in all the seuerall shires of England: And all these liue in one societie, and confraternitie, and by the name of brethren.

The Armes of these Innes of Sergeants, are a sheild of Gules Paleé, and Sceptris in Saltor, for the one: and an Ibis proper in a field, Or, for the other. And thus much for the two chiefest Innes of Court or Sergeants Innes.

Of the foure Innes of Court.

Cap. XI.

THe other Innes or Colledges of our Municipalities, commonly called Innes of Court, are foure, viz. the middle Temple, the Inner Temple, Lincolnes Inne, and Grayes Inne: and they are called Innes of Court, in respect of the students, and professors residing in them. Who professe, and study that Law, which hath only course and place in the Courts of common Law, and therefore (as I take, and vnder correction) the other eight lesser Innes, or Colledges, which are distinguished from these by the names of Innes of Chauncery, and were at their first institution, onely houses of students, and professors of the Law of Equity, and of conscience (which is proper especially to the Courts of Chauncery) or at the least, of Officers, Ministers, and Clearkes, and others belonging to that high Court.

But these differences of studies are not now strictly obserued. For the Lawes now studied as well in houses of Court, as of Chancery, are alike, and all one. But the degrees, practises, auuancements, and qualities of the one, and of the other, be very different, and vnequall as shall appeare better hereafter.

Of the Temples.

Cap. XII.

OF all the Innes of Court without controuersie, the Temples, or the Templars Inne, (for so I haue seene them written in an old monument) bee the most ancient which although they came to be diuided into three seuerall houses, yet they were at the first, all but one house, and that was founded, and built, by an order of Religious Souldiers, called *Templarij*, i. Templars being so called of an house, which they had adioyning to the most holy and famous Temple of Ierusalem. Their vow and profession was to defend the Temple of Ierusalem, and to beare Armes, and make warre against all Infidels, and to preserue the holy Sepulchre of our Lord and blessed Sauiour Iesus Christ, from spoyle, and prophanation attempted and practised by Turkes, Sarazens, Agarens, and other Barbarous and cruell misbeleeuers, who blasphemed the most sacred name of Christ, and pursued with all malice, rage, and hostilitie, all professors of Christianitie, and extreamely infested the holy Land.

This Temple, and house of their order, here

here founded in Fleetstreete, was at the first Erection of it for difference sake, called the new Temple, in respect of another Temple more auncient (and first a Monastery of Blacke Fryers) scituate part in Holborne, and part in New Streete, and then that house began to bee called the old Temple, so long as it belonged to the Templers, but afterwards they passing it away to the Bishoppe of Lincolne, it was the lodging of the Bishoppes of that Sea, a long time, vntill it came to the hands of the Earle of Southampton, Lord Chancellor of England, and now is called Southampton house, and was neuer in a more noble, or more worthy patrons handes, then at this instant it is.

But to returne to the new Temple againe: the Knights Templers (desirous to haue a seate neere to the Thames) purchased certaine Landes, and Messuages in Fleetstreete, bordering vpon the Riuer of Thames, and thereupon built a goodly large and Magnificent house, together with that faire round Synagogue-like Church, or Temple yet standing, and flourishing, and which was dedicated to the seruice of God, by Heraclius Patriarch of Ierusalem, Anno Domini 1185. and in this their house, those Templers liued and continued in great honor and opulency, for the space of 108. yeeres. For they had many fayre Lordshipps and Castles, and goodly Lands, and Seignories belonging vnto them, and their order, in many parts of England, and the Master of this order was a Baron of this Kingdome.

But this order alwell in England as in all other parts of Christendome was suddenly and at an instant suppressed, by the authority of Pope Clement the fifth, a French man, then residing and keeping his Papall Sea, in Avinion, a Towne in France, who was solicited and perswaded hereunto by some couetous Princes, but especially by Phillip le Bell, King of France, who fearing this order, for they were very mighty, both in forces and in fauour, and credite, or else enuying the prosperity and flourishing estate of these brane Religious knights, or lastly (as some say) greedily thirsting after their goodly possessions in France (which hee had in hope already swallowed vp) neuer left to incite and presse this his olde vassall, the Pope with all importunities, vntill hee had brought them to ruine and vtter destruction.

And to make the Pope the more vehement, & to incense him the more sharply against them, it was suggested that these Knights had committed many foule & most hainous offences: for they were accused of heresie, of Idolatry, of Sodomy, & of other horrible crimes as I haue seene in a Bull of this Popes: but besides this it was secretly intimated to the Pope, that they had not only compared and equalled their Patriarche vnto the Pope: but also preferred him before his Holinesse, and what crime could bee more haynous then this.

But when some of the chiefest of this order, came to be arraigned, and condemned, and put to death for these crimes, they made solemne protestation to the World, that they were wrongfully condemned, and not guilty of these crimes, for which they suffered death and torture, and which innocence (to say by the way) were no hard matter to make appeare to be so, and that by good proofe, and testimony, if this place were for it. But notwithstanding this their condemnation, and confiscation, of all their houses, goods, and Landes, yet the French King, and the other couetous Princes, fayled of their hopes, and were frustrated of the rich pray, which they gaped after; For all the Lordshippes, Castles, Townes, Landes, and houses appertaining to this order (as well to auoyde the Sacrileges of the French, and also that these Landes, and goods of the Church might no where else be put to prophane vses) were by a generall, and solemne Councell holden at Vienna, conferred vpon the other more auncient Religious Knights of the order of Saint Iohns of Ierusalem, called also Ioannites, and after Knights of Rhodes, and lastly of Malta, where they liue at this day.

And this Canon, and Ordinance of that Councell was confirmed to the Ioannites, or Knights of S. Iohns, residing here in England, by an Act of Parliament made by the three Estates of this Kingdome in the seuenteenth yeere of King Edward the second. And thus much briefely for the founding of this Temple, and withall, for the suppressing and the oppressing of the founders, and Knights Templers.

After this suppression, and condemnation of the Templers, their house here in Fleetestreet came to the handes, and occupation of diuers Lordes. For our Antiquaries & Chronologers say, that after this suppression Sir Thomas Plantagenet, Earle of Lancaster (and Cousin to the King then raigning) had it, but being after attainted of Treason, hee enioyed it but a short time.

Then next Hugh Spencer Earle of Glocester got into it, but he also was soone after attainted, and executed for Treason. After him Andomare de Valence, a noble man of the great house of Lusignan, and Earle of Pembrooke, was lodged in it for a while. But this house was *Equus Sciamus* to them all: and (as here it appeareth) was ordayned by God, for other better vses, and wherevnto now it serueth. After all these noble tenants and occupants, were thus exturbed, dead and gone, then certaine of the reuerend, ancient professours of the Lawes, in the raigne of King Edward the third, obtained a very large, or (as I might say) a perpetuall Lease of this Temple, or (as it must bee vnderstood) of two parts thereof, distinguished by the names of the middle temple, and the Inner Temple, from the foresayd Ioannites (then residing in their goodly house neere Smithfield called the Priory of Saint Iohns of Ierusalem) to pay yeerely Ten pounds. But the other third part called the outward Temple, Doctor Stapleton, Bishop of Exceter, had gotten in the Raigne of the former King Edward the second and conuerted it to a house for him and his successors Bishops of Exceter, in whose possession it continued by the name of Exceter Inne, vntill

till Queene Maries time, and then the Lord Paget Principall Secretary, found meanes to haue it conueyed vnto him, and to his heires, and rendred it. After this, it came by purchase, to the high and mighty Prince, Thomas the late Duke of Norfolke, and he passed it ouer to the Earle of Leicester, who bequeathed it to his Sonne, Sir Robert Dudley, and of whom the late Earle of Essex purchased it, and it is now called Essex house: hauing first beene (as I haue said) a part of the Templers house, and in regard of the situation thereof, without the Barre, was called the outward or vtter Temple, as the others for the like causes were called the middle Temple, and the Inner Temple.

The Armes and Ensignes of the old and new Templers.

CHAP. XIII.

BEcause I shall be longer in the Blazon of the Armes of the Temples, then otherwise I shall bee of the rest, and became the former Chapter of these Temples hath beene somewhat long, I will assigne to this businesse, a peculiar Chapter, concerning the Armes of the Knights Templers. It appeareth vpon record, and in good authors, that they bore a Shield Argent, charged with a Crosse Gules, and vpon the Nombrill thereof, a holy Lambe: and this I haue seene enluminned, in an auncient manuscript booke of the foundation, and Statutes of this order, belonging to the right honourable, and most learned noble Gentleman, the Lord William Howard of Naworth. But before they tooke this deuise, they bare a horse (as Mathew Paris writeth) with two men riding vpon him: and this (as hee sayth) was engrauen in their common Seale, and this I will bee bold to say; had a very honorable beginning and was a symbole of piety, howsoeuer they which loued to depraue and make scandalous, and ridiculous interpretations, of euery thing, or (at the least) not vnderstanding the true cause of the taking of this deuise, would haue it supposed that it was taken, and deuised to show and expresse the poore, and needy beginnings, and first estate of this order, as hee being driuen for lacke of horses to ride two vpon one horse: but the truth is, this was an emblem of Loue, and Charity, and a true Hieroglife of ingenious kindnesse, and noble courtesie of soldiers, and of none more exercised, and put in practise, then by these religious Knights, who being martiall men, and men of Noble mindes, when they happened to see any other Christian souldier Wounded, or hurt, or sicke, lying vpon the way, they would take him vp vpon their owne horse, and carry him out of danger, and into some place of safety, where he might haue cure, and releefe.

Neither was this a curtesie onely vsed by Christian knights, but euen by the Pagans and Heathen themselues, for wee may reade in Ariosto, that when Rinaldo, and Ferrau the Moore Knights errant of Charlemaine, had fought vntill they were both tired, and also hurt, and therefore thought good to adiorne the triall for the victory vntill another day; and by reason that during this parly, and breathing Rinaldoes horse was strayed away, the gallant confident Moore offered Rinaldo a part of his Horse, and in briefe desired Rinaldo to get vp behind him, and hee would carry him, whether hee was to goe: Rinaldo accepted this honorable Courtesie, and leaped vp behind Ferrau, and rode behinde him. And I my selfe haue knowne a gallant Gentleman yet liuing, who after a skirmish, finding a noble Knight on foot (his Horse being killed vnder him) tooke vp this Knight behind him, and carried him into a place of safety. But the report of this Pagan Knights courtesie is so well set downe by Ariosto, as it is very well worthy the Reading, and obseruation also, and therefore I will transcend thither.

Il Pagan &c.

Non lascio a piedi il buon figliuol 'Amone,
Con preghi inuita, & al fin toglie in groppa,
& per l'ormed' Angelica galoppa:
O gran bontà de cauallieri antiqui,
Eran riuali, eran di se diuersi,
Esi sentian de gli a sperì colpi iniqui,
Per tutta la persona anche dolersi:
Et pur per seluo oscure, & calli obliqui,
Insieme van senza sospetto hauersi:
Di quattro stroni il destrier punto arriua,
Done vna strada in diuersi dipartiua, &c.

Which verses I haue aduentured thus plainely to turne into an English Octaua, and could haue beene well content to haue spared the Labour, had not Sir Iohn Harrington discouled from the author. And yet I must confesse he hath performed an excellent part of a translator in that his English Orlando.

The Pagan would not suffer *Almons* sonne,
To goe on foote, but prayeth him to ride,
And takes him vp behind him at the last,
And then pursues *Angelica* with hast.

O Vertue rare of Noble Knights of yore,
Rivalls they were, and in faith opposite.
And both their bodies yet were very sore,
Of enterchanged blowes when they did fight,
Yet without doubt, or dread this gallant Moore,
Through vncouth wayes rid with the Christian Knight,
And thus their horse with foure spurres prickt amayne,
Brought them into a way which parts in twaine.

But now to conclude, and close vp this Chapter with the deuices, and the Blazon of the Armes and Enfignes, of the Moderne Templers. It is thought fitte by men of Art, and authoritie in these affaires, to retaine both these auncient deuices, and Armes of the olde Templers before remembred for the choice, and vse of these two Colledges of Iuriconsults, placed in this auncient Temple, or house of Templers.

But if the fellowes and Gentlemen of the Inner Temple, haue taken for the deuice, or Enfigne of their Colledge, a Pegasus, or flying Horse Sables or Gules, vpon a Shield Or. As I heare that they did in the Raigne of the late Queene of immortall memory, then are they already fayrely armed. And because the vtter Temple neither is, nor was, euer any Colledge, or Society of Students, and therefore not to bee considered here, I will leaue the choice of either of these olde deuices, and Enfignes to the Gentlemen and fellowes of the middle Temple, they not hauing as yet to my knowledge chosen, or appropriated any Enfigne to their Society or Colledge, to whom and to their house, and Studies, I wish all honor, and prosperity, for my particular obligation, hauing beene sometimes a fellow, and Student (or to confesse a truth) a freeraind in that most honourable Colledge.

And I must not omitte here to intimate that for the better increase of Piety, and exercise of deuotion, and Christian Religion, there is in the Temple church (common to both these Colledges) a Minister and a learned preacher, but by the olde foundation there was placed one Master, and foure Priests, and payed out of the reuenues of the Ioanites.

Of Lincolnes Inne.

CHAP. XIII.

THe next Colledge, or Inne of Court to these Temples, is Lincolns Inne the auncient Mile, and scituate in new-Streete, or Chancery Lane, and a part of it was of olde time the messuage, or mansion house of a Gentleman called William de Hauerhyll, Treasurer to King Henry the third who was attainted of Treason, and his house, and landes confiscate to the King, who then gaue his house to Ralph *de nouo villa*, Chauncellour of England, and Bishoppe of Chichester, and he built there a faire house for him and his successours Bishopps of Chichester, as Matthew Paris hath recorded: And it continued in the possession of the Bishops of Chichester, vntill the time of King Henry the seuenth, when it was conueyed to Iudge Sulliard, and to other Feoffees, and this Iudge, and his posteritie held the inheritance of it vntill the raigne of the late Queen Elizabeth, of glorious memory, and then Sir Edward Sulliard of Esser, sold the Estate of inheritance of this house, with the appurtenances, to the Gentlemen, the Benchers of Lincolnes Inne, as I am ascertained by that most worthy and learned Gentleman, Sir Iames Lea Knight, late Lord chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench in Ireland, an auncient fellow of his honourable Colledge, and an excellent antiquary. And notwithstanding that part of the inheritance of this house, had first beene belonging to the sayd Hauerhyll, and after to the Bishoppes of Chichester, yet the auncient Students, and professors in this house, did not admit the name of Haverhill Inne, nor of Chichester Inne, nor of Sulliards Inne, but of Lincolnes Inne, although neuer any Earle of Lincolne had any Estate of inheritance in this house, nor in the one halfe as it is, but I deny not but that Sir Hen. Lacy, Earle of Lincoln, entoyed that part of it which was made out of the old monastery of the black fryers, giuen to him by King E. the first, which friers left that, and went into the new monastery of black-fryers founded within London, by Doctor Kilwarby Archbishoppe of Canterbury, and it is likely also that this Earle of Lincolne got some part of the Bishoppe of Chichesters ground, or housing towards the enlarging of his new house in Lincolns Inne, which he prepared and built in the raigne of King Edward the first, and therein he dyed, An. Dom. 1310. And not onely that house, but also Chichester Inne, and Haverhyll Inne, and diuers other messuages purchased by the Benchers of this Colledge, and fellowship, and layed into it, goe now, and haue long since gone by the name of Lincolnes Inne. i. de Nervis.

And as it seemes, and is most probable, the Benchers of this Colledge, tooke an Estate of long time by lease, soone after the death of the Earle of Lincolne, who died in the Raigne of King Edward the second, by which estate they held this house, vntill their purchase from Sir Edward Sulliard lastly mentioned.

Neither is there any mention vpon record of any certaine flourishing estate of this Colledge, vntill King Henry the first his Raigne, at which time it appeareth by the records, and Roles of the house, that it was then a flourishing, and a fully established Colledge, and full of famous professors, and Students of our municipall Lawes.

And since that time it hath beene much enlarged, and beautified with goodly buildings, for the in the Raigne of King Henry the eight, Sir Thomas Louell (hauing beene sometimes a fellow of this house) built the Gate-house, and set vp in the Frontispice the Armes of the foresayd Earle of Lincolne, as the Armes of this House, together with his owne, and since that, the Benchers haue builded many very faire Lodgings, and Chambers, and still continue in building, and enlarging, and beautifying of it.

And now according to my methode to say something of the Armes of this house. The Gentleman of this house (as I take it) haue beene willing to retayne the ancient Armes of the sayd Earle of Lincolne (viz.) a Lyon purple rampant in a Shield Or, finding the same in the windowes of the hall, at their comming thither and with which as a thing more proper, and Authentical, I would haue wished to be, empaled, the Armes of the Bishops of Chichester the auncient Lords of this house, which are Azure, our Saviour Christ, Or.

But Sir Iames Lea, tolde me there was lately a coate deuised for this house, viz. Azure, *seme de fers de mouline*, Or. With a purple Lyon in a Canton, Or. And now keeping on my way, I will passe to their Noble neighbor Grayes.

Of Grayes Inne.

CHAP. XV.

GRayes Inne, was sometimes the Inne, or Lodging of the auncient and Noble Barons the Lords Gray, from whence it tooke the name.

It is scituate within the manor of Pirpole in Holborne, being an ancient Prebend of the Cathedrall Church of Saint Paul in London, as the right reuerend Father the Bishoppe of Ely, Doctor Andrewes, (who was lately a Prebendary residentiary in Pauls, and well acquainted with the Archiues, and euidences of that Church) hath enformed me.

An estate of this house was taken in the Raigne of King Edward the third: by the Gentlemen, and professors of the common Law, as Master Saintlow Kneviton, a learned Gentleman, and a rare Antiquary, and an auncient fellow of this Colledge, affirmeth out of his owne search, and readings of Antiquities, concerning this house.

In this present age there hath beene great cost bestowed therein, vpon faire buildings and very lately the Gentlemen of this house, purchased a messuage, and a Curtillage, scituate vppon the South-side of this house, and thereuppon haue erected a fayre Gate, and a Gatehouse for a more conuenient, and more honourable passage into the high Streete of Holborne, whereof this house stood in much neede. For the other former Gates were rather Posterns then Gates.

For Armes this house or Colledge might (by the auncient custome of honorable Fauour, liberally indulged in these behalfes) beare the armes of the Lord Gray, the auncient possessor, or inhabitant of this house, but differenced with a border Argent, and Azure counter-changed, or such like conuenient difference. But the Gentlemen of Grayes Inne haue not long since chosen for deuice, or Enfigne of their house, A Griffon, Or, in a field Sables, and so they are furnished already very well.

Of the Studies of the foure Innes of Court.

CHAP. XVI.

HEre will I make a briefe relation of the manner of life, and studies, exercises, and proceedings in these foure last Innes of Court, according to my owne obseruation, and experience, and shall desire thee (gentle Reader) to take it in good part. *Vel si quid seu rectius isto candidius imperti, &c.* according to the old Poets honest motion. But to the matter.

In these foure Innes of Court, viz. the two Temples, Lincolnes Inne, and Grayes Inne, doe Cohabite, Common, Study, and practise young Gentlemen, the lonnes of the best or better sort of Gentlemen of all the Shires of England (and which haue beene formerly trodde, and brought vp liberally in good Schooles, and other Vniuersities) who at their first admittions into the house, are called Students and Gentlemen, of such and such an Inne of Court. And after some yeeres well imployed in the Studies of their professions, viz. The municipall Law of England, they obtaine the degree and stile of Inner Barristers, and at the seauen yeeres ende, they proceede or become outward Barristers, and are then sayd to be called to the Barre, and shortly after they are allowed to make publike profession and practise of the Law in all Courts and to giue Counsell vnto all Clients. And

hereupon they are also called Councellors at the Law, and learned Councell. After seme more yeeres, and as they grew in Learning, and credit, they come to degrees of higher dignity and reputation, and are allowed to read the Law publikely in their halls (which they performe with much magnificence and solemnity) and are henceforth called Readers, and if after this they come to read againe, they are called double Readers, and also Apprentifes at the Law, of the French word apprendre to learne, because they haue by this time so well learned the Law, as they are able to teach, and to instruct all others, being indeede such as the Antecessors were amongst the olde Ciuilians. And lastly they are called Benchers, and Antients, of the credite and authority which they haue in their houses, and power to gouerne the affaires of their Society, and state, and to reforme matters of offence, and misdemeanors committed by any fellowes, or Students of the same Colledge, as maisters, and Presidents in the Colledges of the other Vniuersities: but many of these Professors, after they become to be Readers, and are more pregnant, and iudiciall then the rest, as also for their great Reading, and Learning, and for their fauour and credite in the State, are called by the King out of those houses of Courts to pleade, and serue his highnesse at the Barres of his high Courts of the Kings Bench, of the common Pleas, of the Exchequer, and also of the Chauncery, and Starre-chamber, and other Courts, and haue place of audience before other Councellors at the Law, and they are inuested in a peculiar habite, and weare a white coife, whereupon they were called Sergeants of the Coife but most commonly Sergeants at the Law, & they are lodged from henceforth in one of the Sergeants Innes before mentioned, and of the Iudges and Iustices are called Fratres, *Vt Supra*.

All these degrees and titles of preferment, and dignity are giue t vnto them as the degrees be giuen to graduats, and Candidats, in the other Vniuersities where they are called Lau reats Bacheloes, Licentiats, Maisters in Arts, and Doctors, according to their Proficiency, Continuance, and Worthinesse.

But all the Gentlemen of these houses, are by one common name and stile called, *Sacy*: id est, fellowes. Concerning the Scholler like exercises which they haue in their houses: they haue conferences and disputations which they call Moots, and Pleadings, and putting cases, and Leaures, and Readings vpon the Lawes and Statutes of England. But these ordinary Lectures, and Readings, are not performed with such magnificence, as those more solemne readings are, (whereof I spake before) which are onely kept in the Lent, and in August, viz. twise a yeere. But all these readings, as well the greater as the lesser, serue much for the helpe and instruction of all professors there assembled, but chiefe lie of the young Students, and Pupones, who also if they bee diligent, and desirous to attaine to the better knowledge of the Law, doe not onely frequent these Moots, and Lectures holden in their houses but also in the Termne times resort to Westminster hall to heare the pleadings and arguements, and iudgement of the best, and chiefest professors and Iudges of the Law. Thus then to conclude, these gentlemen by their long continuall, painfull, and diligent studies, and chiefely by their due seruing of God (who is the onely and best rewarder of vertue, and honest mouerty) gette much Wealth, and attaine to great places, and dignities, and Offices in the Law and in the common Wealth, and become rich, and famous Lawyers, Worthy members of the common Wealth, and great and much honoured magistrates in this Kingdome, and founders of many Worshipfull, and Noble Families in this realme, and so herein the old *Maxime* of the ciuill law is doubly, and euery way verified *Vigilantibus iura subueniunt*.

Moote or Mote in old Saxon signifieth a generall assemblie or meeting: of meet which may b latined conventus, or coitio.

Of the Innes of Chancery and first of Thauis Inne.

CHAP. XVII.

NOw I come in due order to the lesser houses, and Colledges of Lawyers, called Innes of Chauncery: why they are called so, I haue declared before, and therefore I shall not nede here to repeat it and I must and will begin with Thauis Inne, for besides that at my first comming to London, I was admitted for probation into that good house, I take it to be the eldest Inne of Chancery at the least in Holborne, and so may Iustly challenge precedence by Seigniority, and antiquitie: it was before the dwelling of an honest Citizen called Iohn Thauie an armorer, and was rented of him in the time of King Edward the 3. by the chiefe professors then of the Law, viz. Apprentises, as it is yet extant in a record in the hallings, and whereof my Lord Coke, shewed to me the transcript, but since that time it was purchased for the Students and other professors of the Law of Chauncery by the Benchers of Lincolns Inne, about the Raigne of King Henry the seauenth, and retaineth the name of the olde Landlord or owner, master Thauie. The Armes of this house are Azure, 2. Barbes in Saltor Or, with a Cr. Argent, in a chiefe Sables.

Of Furnivals Inne.

CHAP. XVIII.

FVrnivals Inne (as it appeareth vpon record of the first yeere of King Richard the second) was the house of Sir Wil. Furnivall knight, without any other addition or title of honor. But doubtlesse that Sir William owner of this Inne, was a Baron and Lord Furnivall, whose heire Generall was after married to Iohn Lord Talbot, created Earle of Shrewsbury, by King Henry the 6. and the Earle had this house with other goodly inheritances in Dalwac with his wife, the daughter and heire of the Lord Furnivall. And the late Sir George Talbot, Earle of Shrewsbury sold the inheritance of this house in the beginning of Queene Elizabeths raigne, or there about, to the Benchers of Lincolnes Inne, for a Colledge or house for the Gentlemen Students, or practisers of the Law of Chauncery, they hauing before but hired it for yeerely rent, of the foresaid Lords. And this doth maister Knueton affirme out of his certaine knowledge.

Therefore the Armes of this house must bee the Armes of this Noble Lord, the ancient owner (whose name it yet beareth) according to the fauourable custome in these cases, and with a conuenient difference viz. Argent a bend betwixt fiue Martlets Gules in a bodder Azure.

Of Barnards Inne

CAP. XIX.

BArnards Inne, called also formerly Mackworths Inne, was in the time of King Henry the first, a messuage belonging to Doctor Iohn Mackworth, Deane of Lincolne, and beeing in the occupation of one Barnard, at the time of the conuersion thereof, into an Inne of Chauncery, it beareth Barnards name still to this day. The Armes of this house, are those of Mackworth, viz. party per pale endented Ermin and Sables, a Cheueron Gules fretted Or.

Of Staple Inne,

CAP XX.

STaple Inne was the Inne or Hostell of the Merchants of the Staple (as the Tradition is) whereof with vntill I can learne better matter, concerning the antiquity and foundation thereof, I must rest satisfied. But for latter matters I cannot chuse but make report, and much to the praise and commendation of the Gentlemen of this house, that they haue bestowed great costs in new building a fayre Hall of Bricke, and two parts of the outward Court yards, besides other lodgings in the garden, and elsewhere, and haue thereby made it the fayrest Inne of Chauncery in this Vniuersitie.

For Armes or Ensigne, this Inne beareth Gord, vn pacquet de Laine Argent.

Of Cliffords Inne.

CAP. XXI.

CLiffords Inne was first the house of Maccomus Herley, and was passed to King Edward the fifth for debts, and it is commonly sayd to haue beene the Inne of longing of the Lord Cliffords, but in the records of the raigne of King Ed. the 2. it is written, the house of Robert Cliffords, plans queue (as the French men say) without any addition, or other stile, to whom King Edward the second gaue this house: and was let to students in the Law, by Dame Isabell, widdow to the sayd Robert Clifford in the eighteenth yeere of King Edward the third, for foure pounds of Annuall rent. Yet I embrace their opinion which holde it to haue beene the house of the auncient Lords Cliffords, ancestors of the Earles of Cumberland, for the antique building of it, and the auncient and honorable Coates of Armes, set vp in the hall and other places of the house, shew it to haue bin the mansion of a Noble personage.

The Armes of this house bee the Armes of the auncient founders thereof, the Lord Cliffords by the customary liueries, viz. Checky, Or, and Azure, a fesse and bordure Gules, Besante sable.

Of Clements Inne.

CAP. XXII.

CLements Inne was a messuage belonging to the Parish of Saint Clement Danes: the deuise whereof is, as an anchor, without a Rocke with a capitall C. couchant vpon it, and this is graued in stone ouer the gate of Clements Inne. It seemeth to bee a Hieroglyphike, or *Rebus* (as some coniecture) figuring herein Saint Clement, who bearing his Pope, and so reputed head of the Church, (and the Church being resembled to a Shippe) both his name and office are expressed in this deuise of the C. and the anchor. But if it be true which Iacobus de Voragine, & Surius write in their Legends of Saints, to wit, that S. Clement was bound to a great anchor, and so throwne into the Sea by the commandement of Traian the Emperour: then it must needes bee, that the occasion of the deuise of the anchor for S. Clement, came originally from the Act of his Martyrdome.

Of New Inne.

CAP. XXIII.

NEw Inne was a guest Inne, the signe whereof, was the picture of our Lady, and thereupon it was also called our Ladies Inne: it was purchased, or hired by Sir

John Fineux, chiefe Iustice of the Kings bench, in the raigne of King Edward the fourth fo. 6. li. *per Annum*, to place therein those students of the Law, who were lodged in the little old Baily, in an house called S. Georges Inne, neere the vpper end of S. Georges lane but some say the going in was ouer against S. Sepulchers steeple, and reputed to haue borne the most auncient Inne of Chancery, when it stood: but now and long since it hath bene conuerted into Tenements.

The Armes of New Inne, are, vert, a pot of flowers, Argent.

Of Lyons Inne.

Cap. XXIIII.

LYons Inne was also a guest Inne or hostery held at the signe of the Lyon, and purchased by Gentlemen practizers and students in the Law in the raigne of King Henry the eight, and conuerted to an Inne of Chancery.

It beareth checky Or, and Argent, a Lyon Saliant Sable.

Of Strand Inne, and of the Studies of these Innes of Chancery.

Cap. XXV.

THere was also another Inne of Chancery in the Strand called Chester Inne, or Strand Inne, which together with the houses of the Bishops of Chester, of Worcester, and of Landaff, and the church of S. Mary in the Strand, were all in the verge of our Lord by DVDLEY. swallowed vp in the foundation of the goodly Palace built by the Duke of Somercet, Vncle Paternell to King Edward the first, and thus much for the foundation and institution of these Innes of Chancery. For the other matters belonging vnto them, I am able to say by mine owne experience, that in these houses of Chancery, Inne and common together, Attorneis, Secretaries, and Clarks, belonging to the Courts, as well of mere and strict Law, as of equity and conscience. The chiefe or gouernour in euery Inne of these Innes of Chancery, is called Principall. And in these houses or Colledges the Lyones and young Gentlemen, at their comming vp, are initiated to make first here an essay and a tryall of the study of the Law, which if they like, and haue a desire to proceed they remoue shortly after, to one of the Innes of Court, whereunto that house of Chancery belongeth: for hee can take no degrees in an Inne of Chauncery, but such as I here last names, which bee rather seruices and procurations, then aduancements and honours. Euery Inne of Court, hath two or three Innes of Chancery belonging vnto it, viz. to the middle Temple belong New Inne, and sometimes Strand Inne. To the Inner Temple belong Chifferds Inne, Lyons Inne, and Clements Inne. Thauis Inne, and Lumbards Inne, are members of Lincolnes Inne, Staple Inne, and Barnards Inne, belong to Grays Inne, and this maketh mee the rather to bee of their opinion, which estimate that all these houses of Chancery were founded, purchased, and established by the professours and Gentlemen of these houses of Court; And for confirmation of this conceit, twise euery yeere in Lent and in August, a learned Gentleman is chosen out of the ranke and degree of Counsellers, to come to heare the Moots, and disputations, and exercise of the young students and to read a Law Lecture in euery of these houses of Chancerie, belonging to that Inne of Court, from which this reader hath his mission.

But for the going of one of these yong Students, after this his probation to one of the houses of Court (whereunto that Inne of Chancery belongeth) there is no necessitie, for he is at his choise to goe to any other of the houses of Court: But if he choose any of the others then his admission into that fellowship and colledge, will be somewhat the more costly.

Of the sixe Clerkes Inne, or Kedermisters Inne.

Cap. XXVI.

I Must not leaue out of this mention of Chauncerymen and Chancery matters, the Inne or common house of the learned Gentlemen, the Attorneis in the high Court of Chancery, comm only called the Office of the sixe Clarkes of the Chauncery. They are a Society of Gentlemen learned in the Lawes, and were at first Priestes, and thereupon called Clarkes (for in auncientely all Churchmen were called.) These Clarkes liue and lodge, and commen together in one house in Chauncery Lane, purchased, and accommodated for them by Master John Kedermister Esquier, one of this Society, and a most skilfull man in his profession, and as faithfull a man to his friends and clients, as euer was in his place, as I can testifie by good proofe. Their house was in auncient times, the Inne of the Abbot of Necton in Lincolne shire, and was since the house of one Herlestre, and of him it was called Herlestres Inne. But now it is (or ought to be called) the sixe Clarkes Inne, or Kedermisters Inne, of the aforenamed Founder thereof. And it is right worthy to haue the title of an Inne of Chauncery, because that onely chauncery-men liue, and onely chauncery matters are handled and recyded in this house, And it may for Armes, beare the armes of Kedermister the Founder thereof, viz. Azur two chewrons Or, betweene three besants, within a bordet Argent differencing.

The 6. clarks could not lawfully take wines dutil it was permitted to them by an act of Parliament, made Anno 14. Henry the eight.

Of

Of Bacons Inne, or Corsiters Inne.

Cap. XXVII.

IOthe sayd Clarks Inne may be added the Inne of the Corsiters or rather Corsiters, founded by the right honorable Sir Nicholas Bacon Knight (Lord Keeper of the great Seale of England) a very wise and goodly Gentleman, situated also in Chancery lane, ouer against Lincolnes Inne. Their Office and profession is to make all originall writs to bee serued and sent into all parts and shires of England. And these Clarkes be in number 24. and this is all that I can say of this Inne, hauing small or none acquaintance, either with the Officers or Office, but this I may note, that in respect that some men deriue the name of Corsiter a Curtin which is as well reincountred as that by P. Paxton, for his cloake, viz. Cloake *quasi Cleaueke* for those Gentlemen be neither polls nor pursenants. I like their conceit and coniecture better which derive it from *Chorista*, and which commeth of *Chorus*, and thereof wee make *Chorister*, or Corsiter in English, and corruptly Corsicer: and this seemeth the more probable, because aunciently all, or the most part of the Officers and Ministers of the Chancery or Court of conscience (for so the Chancery hath beene called) were Churchmen, Diuines, and Canonists, as for example, first the chiefe Officer of this Court was a Bishoppe, and was called *Cancellarius*, a Councellor, because he sate *intra Cancellos*, that is to say, in Chauncells or places lettised after the maner of Chancels in Churches, as P. Pichard, a very learned man, hath well obserued. The second Officer in this conscionable Court, is the maister of the Roules, who was wont to be an eminent Ecclesiasticall person (to wit:) either a Deane, or Warden, or Prouost, of some Cathedrall, or collegiate Church: for it is an Office which requireth a iudge, and a very carefull, and religious man. The maisters of Chancery were Doctors of Diuinitie, and of Cannon Law, and had Prebendes and dignities in such Churches as he forsaw. The sixe Clearkes were seculer Priests (as it hath beene intimated before) and as their habits and shauen crownes, yet extant vpon their monuments in the Temple Church, and else where, doe sufficiently testifie, though there were no other proofe thereof. It is then consequently fit and proper that among all these churchmen, and next to them should follow Choristers, being so necessary, that there is not any principall Church nor any honourable Chappell, which can bee without them. And furthermore in those dayes the counsellaries, or Ghostly fathers were the examiners of the Chauncery, as men aptest by their function, for such a charge and employment, *&c. Et omnium rerum est Vicissitudo*, and that hath made all the Officers now in Chancery, to be laymen, and who notwithstanding may be as honest, and as pious as Clergie men, prouided that they be men of good vnderstanding, for that rule is infallible, *Ad pietatem requiritur scientia.*

The Armes of this Society, be the honourable founders creest, viz. a Sanglier Crimin passant, in a feucheon Azure.

Of the Colledge of Ciuilians, called Doctors Commons.

Cap. XXVIII.

THe Professours of the ciuill, or imperiall Lawes, (being also Canonists and professours of the Spirituall and Ecclesiasticall Lawes) haue a Colledge or common house, commonly called the Doctors commons, situate vpon Saint Bennets hill neere Paules Wharfe: which was purchased or prouided for them about the beginning of Queene Elizabeths raigne, by Master Henry Haruey, Doctor of the ciuill and canon Lawes, Master of Trinity hall in Cambridge, Prebendary of Ely, and Deane of the Arches, a reuerend, learned, and good man, whom I being a young scholler knew. Before which time the Ciuilians and Canonists were lodged in Paper notter row, in a meaner and lesser, and lesse conuenient house, now a Tauerne lins one by the signe of the Queenes head, which was sometime a house for a Prebendary residentiary of Saint Paules Church, when there were many more Residentiaries then are now: this house thus procured for them by Doctor Haruey, was lately called Mountioy house, because the Lord Mountioy lay in it many yeares, but it was also the house of a Residentiary of Paules, as was likewise that house in Paper notter row, called Lovell Inne (of Doctor Fulco Lovell, an auncient cannon of Saint Paules, a Gentleman of a good house, and a good Housekeeper, and Archdeacon of Colchester, as his Epitaph in the North side of the Quier there doth.) And that house in Warwick Lane, where the Office of the Kings remembrancer in the Exchequer is now kept, and sometimes called Stafford Inne, and that wherein Master Blackwell dwelt in Warwick Lane also, and that house in Ivy Lane, where the Lord Treasurers remembrancer is lodged, and the next to it called in the Records *Hospitium Ioannis de Sancto Laurentio*, and that wherein Master Sergeant Branchwaits dwelt in Amen corner, and that wherein Doctor Dale (late Master of the Requests to Queene Elizabeth) dwelt in the South Churchyard, and the three Tunnes Taueme, ouer against the crosse Church-yard gate, and the Paulehead Taueme, and the Paulehead Inne, and the next house to the Doctors Commons, called *Camera Diane* in their olde Records, and diuers others were sometimes houses of

Residentaries, Prebendaries, and Cannons of Paules, and all which be now in the hands of Laymen: But to returne to the matter, Doctor Harvey obtayned a leafe of this new Colledge of Ciuilians for a hundred yeares of the Deane, and Chapter of Paules, for the Annuall Rent of fiue markes, wherein are now lodged, and liue in commons the Iudge of the high Court of the Admiralty being a Doctor of the ciuill Lawes, and Lieutenant to the Lord high Admirall of England, Ireland, Gascoine, Guyenne, Normandy, and Calice, &c. for matters of Law, and indenture in causes maritime, be they criminall, ciuill, or Capitall: Item, the Deane of the Arches being Doctor of the Ciuill and Spirituall Lawes: Item, the Commissioners delegate or Iudges of the Court of the delegates. The Vicar generall. The Chancellours of the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, and of the Lord Bishop of London. The Walker or Custos, or Commissary of the Court of prerogatiue *Cantuariens*. The auditor *Causarum*, or Iudge of the Court of Audience, and so many of the Iudges of the Court of high Commission, as be professed Ciuilians: as also the Doctors of Ciuill, and Cannon Lawes, which be aduocates in all the seuerall Courts together with the Procurators, or Proctors in those Courts, being commonly called Licentiats, and Batchelers, in the Ciuill and Cannon Lawes.

All these I say are lodged and hosted in this 3rd Colledge, and had beene lodged in a much more beautifull and magnificent Colledge, if the designes of the late most renowned and pompous Prelate Doctor Thomas Wolsey Cardinall of Yorke, had succeded well and taken effect, for he was purposed to build a faire Colledge of Stone, for them in London, in hereof my very worthy and learned friend Sir Robert Cotton, Knight Baronet, hath seene the plot and modell in papers as hee hath affirmed to me. This magnificent Cardinall being preuented by the Kings displeasure this with other good proiects and honourable workes miscarried, and either vtterly perished, or were extreamely crushed and maymed, as the Colledge at Ipswich, and that of Christs Church in Oxford, besides others.

The Armes of this Colledge be Gules, 3. tresuels verd vpon a bend Argent in a border verd, in a perpetuall remembrance of the 3rd founder thereof, by whose worshipfull firname this coate (the bozder excepted) is borne.

Of the Colledge of Physicians, and of the Lectures of Anatomie and Chirurgerie.

Cap. XXIX.

THe Physicians or Doctors of Physick, and learned Professors of that Art, and Faculty, haue their Colledge in Knightriders Streete, neere to the Colledge of the Ciuilians, it was founded by Doctor Butts, and other vertuous and famous Physitians, in the time of King Henry the 8. and they by the fauour of Cardinall Woolsey, then Lord Chancellor of England, obtained a Charter, with many faire priuiledges and immunities of the King. *Anno* 10. *Regni sui*, wherein by expresse words, the King did erect and constitute in London a perpetuall Colledge of certaine graue and learned professours of the Art of Physicke, within the Citie and Suburbes of London and within seuen myles thereof euery way: and that none but they, and such as they should allow and authorize, should bee permitted to practise within the sayd Citie or limits.

This King also ordayned by his Letters Pattents, confirmed by Act of Parliament, that out of the most graue and learned Physitians of this Colledge, there should be eight called Elects, chosen for terme of life, for the gouernment of the affaires of this Colledge: and one first and expert Doctor, in this Science of physicke, should be yeerely chosen out of these eight Elects, to be the head and chiefe of all, and by the name of a president of this colledge, or communalitie, to ouersee, correct, and gouerne for one yeere the sayd Colledge, and all other of the same Society, and their affaires. And to haue a common Seale to bee imployed in the businesse of the said President and Colledge. And it is graunted therein also that the President, and the Doctors of this Colledge, may make Statutes, and Ordinances for the gouernment, onelight, and correction of the sayd colledge or communalty of all men practising Physicke within the sayd City of London, and within seuen myles round about it. And furthermore, that there shall bee chosen yeerely foure gouernours out of the Doctors of this colledge, to haue the survey, search, correction, and gouernance of all the Physitians, as well forreine, as English, using the faculty of Physicke, within London, and within seuen myles compasse, together, with punishing of them for not well exercising or not well vsing their Art: and also the survey and search of all their medicines to be giuen or minister'd by them to any of the Kings leege people, sicke or diseased, &c.

Item, it is further enacted that the President, and the Elects, and gouernours, and Doctors of this sayd Colledge, may yeerely authorize, and appoint foure Doctors or professors of their Colledge, to enter any Apothecaries house, and to search and to view all his Waires and Drugges, and to burne or otherwise to destroy all such Waires and Druggs as they shall find to bee defective, or corrupted, and not fit to bee ministred in any medicine to sicke and infirme persons &c.

Item, that no physitian of this colledge shall bee impanelled in any Iury, nor charged to keepe watch and ward, nor beare any office in the City or Suburbes, and all this was confirmed by acts of Parliament, made Anno 14. and 32. Henry the 8. as may be seene in the booke of Statutes more at large.

Since which time there hath beene a purpose

pose to found a Lecture of Physick in this Colledge, but in respect that all the Doctors and Fellowes of this Colledge were expert and well learned in that Art, it was not thought necessary to be read amongst them there. But rather that there should be a Lecture of Chirurgery and Anatomy, read by some one of these Doctors, for the better enabling of the Chirurgians or Surgians in and about London, wherein many had not beene bred in Schooles. And hereupon Doctor Richard Caldwell a learned Physitian, and a good man propounded this matter to the right honourable Iohn Lord Lumley, a most noble and vertuous Gentleman, who at this Doctors instance, gaue a fee of twenty pounds by the yeare, for the maintainance of a Lecture of Chirurgery, to be read in the Colledge euery Wednesday and Friday for euer, by a Doctor of Physick, and fellow of that Colledge.

And for the Anatomie Lecture, there is one read by one of the Doctors of this Colledge also, at the Chirurgeans Hall, vpon the proper naturall body of a found man newly executed for Fellony, lent to them by the Sheriffes and Capitall Magistrates for that purpose: But the times of this Lecture of Anatomie are not certaine, for ought that I can heare, but that there is such a Lecture there read, I can my selfe witnesse, hauing heard Doctor Padey (now Sir William Paney Knight, a very learned Physitian) read this Anatomicall Lecture vpon a corps, not many yeares since in the sayd Hall in Monkwels Streete.

And thus much for this Colledge of Physitians, which beareth for Armes a shield Sa. with a celestiall hand proper in a cloud in the verter point, feeling the pulse of a terrestiall hand proper, as I haue beene informed by my very learned friend, Mr. Doctor Palmer, an eminent fellow in this Colledge, and one by whom I haue been holpen in the matter of this Chapter (for I loue to acknowledge by whom I haue profited.) And now to the Colledge, which is an Epitome of an Vniuersity by it selfe, viz. Gresham Colledge.

Of Gresham Colledge.

Cap. XXX.

GResham Colledge in Bishopsgate Streete, was lately founded by that Royall Marchant Sir Thomas Gresham Knight, about the yeare of our Lord Mr. D. LXIX. This is a little Vniuersity or Academies Epitome, as Rome when it flourished was, *Orbis Epitome* in the conceit of Athenæus and others: for in this Colledge are by this worthy Founder ordained seauen seuerall Lectures of seauen seuerall Arts and faculties, to be read publikely, viz. a Lecture of Diuinity, a Lecture of Ciuill law, a Lecture of Physick, a Lecture of Rhetoricke, a Lecture of Astronomy, a Lecture of Geometry, and a Lecture of Musick, by seauen seuerall renowned professors of these Arts and Learnings. And these Lectures must be read onely in the Tearme time. To euery Lecturer or Reader is pronoud and allowed by this Founder, fifty pounds of Annuall Fee, or Stipend, and a faire lodging within this his Palace-like house, now their Colledge, which this magnificent Knight built and disposed, and bequeathed to this good and honourable vse, giuing by this his good worke and by his hospitall, and by his famous monument of the Royall Exchange, a notable example to the rest of his quality the richer Merchants, and more opulent Cittizens of London, the Fauourites of Pluto and Mercury, to imploy some good part of their great wealth in publick workes of necessary or pious vse, or of ornament, or of either, or of all, lest the remainder be profoundly consumed by acolastes and ingracious heires, whereof too many examples may be brought, and not vnknowne to the moderne Magnificoes of this Cittie. But if these rich Cittizens abstayne from the employing of their treasure and great riches in good workes, not out of any miserable disposition, but for lack of knowledge and notice of good proiects, I haue here provided for the helpe of their good inclination, an inuentorie or note of diuers necessary, charitable, and honourable workes, fit to be done, for, and in this Cittie of London, as namely to build a Theater, for the more safe, and certaine, and wholsome hearing of the Sermons in Paules Churchyard: Item, to repaire and beautifie Paules Steple, and to refurnish the Belfrey thereof. Item, to make a faire Piazza, or Market place within London, such as is and ought to be in euery good cittie, and to bee placed as the manner is, neere to the Towne Hall: viz. between the Guild-hall and Bowe-church. Item, to paue Smithfield. Item, to erect faire arched gates at the bounds of the Liberties, where now beall rences or wooden bars and rayles stand. Item, to enlarge the cumbersome and dangerous streates of the royall and more publique wayes of this cittie, as for example, those of Ludgate hill, of S. Martines le grand, of New Fish-streete hill, and Woodstreete, and the most miserable Carstockes of Thames-street, and especially and last of all, that of the Old change, that the hallowed ground of S. Paules churchyard may no more be trampled and prophaned with beasts, and carts, and coaches, to the end that through that streete thos coaches, carts, and beasts, may continually passe to their old and proper way of Carter-lane. Item, to deliuer the walls of the cittie and the Towne ditch, from the pester and encumbrances of tenements, and gardens, and other priuate vses, and to open that Ditch, and to bring a Riuer or fresh current into it. And lastly (and which is a great matter of conscience, and of necessity) to supply the Suburbes with new parish churches, wherein by reason of the exceeding encrease of new houses and tenements, the people and inhabitants are so extreamely multiplied, as the olde churches (wherevnto those new houses

houses, and places, and stretes belong) are not able to containe the fourth part of the people, no nor the tenth part of them, in some of these Suburbes. Of these prooefs and good woorkes, the richer Cittizens (above mentioned) may make their choise according to their affections, fancies, deuotions, or abilities and for all and euery whereof, I could yeeld good reason, and adduce good matter and argument to induce them to vndertake these good woorkes, if this place would beare it: which therefore I will deferre and reserue (vntill another time and place) with other plots also, and propositions of woorkes of charity, of honour, and of Ornament (whereof I haue a tolly Catalogue) lest I should cloy this Chapter with too long a digression. Wherefore I will conclude it with the Armes of this Colledge, which are blazoned Argent, a Chequer Gemineste betweene three Mollets sables, as the Founder bare them, according to the allowed customes in these behalfes.

Of Cosmographie, Hydrographie, and the Art of Nauigation.

Cap. XXXI.

IN the time of Queene Elizabeth there was a Lecture of the chiefe Mathematicall Sciences, viz. Geometry, Astronomie, Geographie, Hydrographie, and the Art of Nauigation, read in the Chappell of Leadenhall, but now it is discontinued. But at this day there is a Lecture of Cosmography read in the Black Friers, in the house of *Marianus Marin*: how long that will last I know not, but for the continuance and aduancement of the study and knowledge of the Art of Hydrographie, and of Nauigation, there is no doubt to be made thereof, by reason that for the better maintenance and continuance of Nauigation, and for the better ordering, gouerning, and instructing, and disciplining of Mariners, Pilots, Saylers, and other Professours and practisers of the Arts of Hydrographie and Nauigation, there is a Colledge commonly called Trinity house in Deptford, neere London which was founded by King Henry the eighth. and chiefely for the seruice and vse of the Kinne Royall, and the which our rare Countryman (who speaketh euer properly) termeth *Collegium in vsum Ciuis constituum*, and that made me the more willing to giue it a place in this Vniuersity.

To this house or Colledge were giuen for Armes, at the institution of it, a shield Gules, a crosse betwixt foure ships Argent.

Of Whittington Colledge.

Cap. XXXII.

SIr Thomas Gresham hath much honoured his name, and his race, with the goodly Monuments (before mentioned) erected in this our age, and in this Citie. So there may and must very much honour be spoken of the most magnificent and vertuous Cittizen Sir Richard Whittington, founder of Whittington Colledge, fower times Lord Maior of London, in the Raignes of Richard the second, and Henry the fourth, Kings of England. Who (besides this Colledge) new built the West gate or Chamberlaine gate of this Cittie, (and thereof called Newgate) and the Hospital of little Saint Bartholmewes, and other goodly and godly Monuments. Hee founded this Colledge in the Royall, and dedicated it to S. Spirit, but (commonly called Whittington Colledge) for the seruice of God, and the relefe of the poore of this Cittie, and for the good education of children: giuing sufficient maintainance for one Master, foure fellowes, some Clarkes, Choristes, and Schollers, and for a certaine number of poore men, and poore women for euer. And thus he hath most worthily deserued to be enrolled in this list of magnificent, vertuous, and pious benefactors and founders, Cittizens of London. And although there hath beene very many of his coate and profession, both before him, and since, which had as great or greater wealth and riches then he, yet they haue not had the grace to imploy their wealth so well, nor to bestowe their talent so happily as hee did, and as Sir Thomas Gresham lately did, and as before him Alderman Knowles. and Alderman Eyre, and some few other rare Cittizens, vertuous and honourable minded Marchants haue done, founding good Monuments for the benefit and ornament of this Cittie, and to the perpetuall honour of their names and memories.

The Armes of this Colledge, be those of the Founder (as they yet stand in the Church of this Colledge, and in other Monuments of his foundation) viz. Gules, a fesse Chekie Or and Azure, an annulet in the verter poynt.

Of S. Catherines Colledge.

Cap. XXXIII.

THe Colledge or Hospitall of S. Catharine beyond the Tower (or vpon the Thames as it is stiled in old writing) was founded by Queene Maude, wife to King Stephen, for such charitable vses as the foresaid Colledge. But (as I heare) intermitted or much altered: Albeit there be yet a Master, and certaine learned Clarkes maintained, and also prouision for the relefe of certaine poore men and women. Pope Honory graunted diuers priuiledges to this house by his Bull, which is yet to be seene in the Exchequer. Not long since there was good Musick in the Quyer at Diuine seruice, both of Voyce and Organ, as diuers both eye-witnesses and eare-witnesses haue informed mee *viua voce*. Besides other complements of a Colledge, which not being now in being, it little auaileth to speake of. Duely this I will adde, that it neuer had a more graue nor more honorable Master or President then now it hath, to wit, Sir Iulius Cæsar Knight, Chancellour of the Exchequer, and of the Kings priuie Counsell, a very graue and noble-minded Gentleman.

The Armes of this Colledge be party per fesse Gules and Azure, in chefe a sword Argent, in base a demy Wheele Or.

Of the Monastery of Gray-fryers or Christs-Church.

Cap. XXXIIII.

AT the subuersion or suppression of Monasteries, and Religious houses here in England by King Henry the eighth. The Monasterie of the Franciscanes or Gray-fryers now called Christ-Church in Newgate Market, escaped the fury, by the protection or mediation of what good Angell incarnate I know not: But surely it was Gods good will it should stand. And the King shortly after Anno Domini 1546. gaue this house and the Church to the Cittie, to bee imployed to pious and charitable vses, whereupon the Magistrates of the Cittie faithfully and religiously conuerted the Church into a Parish Church, and turned the Lodgings into an Hospitall, and a Grammar Schoole and other houses and rowmes necessary for such foundations. Herein are taught many children, sonnes of Cittizens and others, and besides them, there are fed and brought vp, and taught in this house more then 600. Orphanes (as I haue beene informed by the Officers thereof.) This Monastery hath had many Founders: the ground plot was first purchased by John Ewyn, and other good Cittizens a meane Church thereon built Anno Domini 1228. and about the yeare 1306. it was pulled downe, and a new Church built more large and more beautifull, and all the Lodgings new built by Queene Margaret de Valois, wife to King Edward the first, and by the Earles of Britaine, and of Glouceller, and by the Lady Margaret Countesse of Norfolke, and by diuers noble and worthy Benefactors, whose names may be seen in Iohn Stowes Survey. And then it was made a House for Franciscan Fryers, whose profession was to preach and to teach. And for the better promoting and furtherance of their studies, this Sir Richard Whittington before mentioned, made a goodly Library in this Monastery. Lately the good Lady Ramsey founded there a Schoole for Reading, Writing, and Cyphring, to be taught to poore children, for their better enabling to learne and exercise Trades and Occupations, whereunto they are apt or destinate.

And thus much for Christ Church, onely adding the blazon of the Armes of this House, viz. Azure. Iis semes sans nombre Or, in a bordure Argent.

Of S. Anthonies Colledge, and of diuers other Schooles in London.

Cap. XXXV.

THe Schoole or College of Saint Anthony was at the first a Synagogue of Iewes, and changed by King Henry the third to a Cell of Monkes, of the order of Saint Anthony, Anno Domini 1231. there was also a Schoole founded there in, which being decayed or neglected (as diuers other were, in and about the Cittie in the time of the ciuill Warres.) The good and godly Prince King Henry the sixth, by publique Edict and royall Ordinance, commanded that those auncient Schooles, which were decayed, should be re-edified and repaired, or new in their places erected: as namely, in Saint Martins le grand, in S. Mary de Arcubus, in S. Dunstons West, and in this Saint Anthonies whereof now I speake: And the next yeare following, the same good King caused an act of Parliament to be made, that there should be foure other Schooles built in some other seuerall Parishes (viz. S. Andrewes in Holborne, in Allhallowes the great, in S. Peters in Cornehill, and in the Hospitall of Saint Thomas of Acon, where now is Sir Humphrey Weldes house, and the Mercers Chappell, &c.) And to this house of S. Anthony, the King gaue good lands, and placed therein two Priests, and a Schoolemaster, and twelue poore Almes-men, and since that time I. Tate Alderman of London, and a charitable Gentleman new built the Church of S. Anthony, and repaired the Schoole, and gaue lands and rents for the better maintainance of the Colledge, and of the Almes-men, An. Dom. 1496. But these Priests and Almes-men are not heere, and the Landes are vanished, no man knowing what is become of them. But the Church remaineth, and the Schoole, the one serueth for the French Protestants, for the exercise of their Religion, and the other still flourisheth, and out of it (and which for the honour of it may not be forgotten) came two Lord Chancellours of England, and two Archbishops within this age, viz Sir Thomas Moore, and Doctor Nicholas Heth, and Doctor Iohn Whitgift.

The Armes of this olde house are Sable, a Bigge Clarine Argent.

More of other Schooles in London.

Cap XXXVI.

BEsides these Schooles lately rehearsed, there were many other and more auncient founded and instituted for the liberall and good education of youth and children in

in all, or in the most part of the Monasteries of Religious houses within London, and the Territories thereof. As for instance in the Abbey of Bermondsey, in the Priory of Saint Bartholmew, in the Hospitall of Ronciuall, and in those without Creplegate, and without Aldersgate, and in the Priories of S. Iomes, and of S. Mary Ouery, and of the holy Trinity without Aldgate, and in the olde Blacke-friers in Holborne, and in diuers others, in whose stead there be some few founded lately by good men: As that by the Company of Marchant Taylors, or Linnen Armourers, who purchased the Mannour of the Rose in the Parish of S. Lawrence Pountney (lately the house of the Duke of Buckingham) and haue therein founded a faire Schoole with sufficient stipend, and maintainance for the Master and Vshers, and other things thereunto necessary and requisite, in the yeare of our Lord 1 6 1 1. And now very lately Thomas Sutton, founder of the great new Hospitall in the Charter house, hath translated the Semis-court to a Grammar Schoole, that is, a *ludo pilario ad ludum literarium*, for 30. Schollers, poore mens children, and for a Master, and an Vsher, with conuenient lodgings, and very competent entertainment, and maintainance for them 1613. There be also other Triuiall Schooles for the bringing vp of youth in good literature, viz. in S. Magnus, in S. Michaelis, in S. Thomas, and others, which are not necessary all to bee reckoned vp in this place (my purpose being to write of an Vniuersity, and not of Grammar Schooles) although they be so necessary, as I know no Vniuersity without them, either at home or abroad. The Armes of the Marchant Taylors Schoole be the same of the Company, viz. Argent a tent betweene two Robes of Estate Gules, and vpon a cheefe Azure a Lyon passant gardant Or. And the rest of these Schooles doe or may beare for Armes, the Armes of their Founders (not to be tedious in the blazons of euery one of them.)

Of Languages.

Cap. XXXVII.

Besides the Latine and Greeke tongues, which are taught in these Schooles before named. There bee also in this Citie Teachers and Professours of the holy or Hebrew Language, of the Caldean, Syriake, and Arabike or Larbey Languages, of the Italian, Spanish, French, Dutch and Polish Tongues. And here be they which can speake the Persian, and the Mosaico, and the Turkish and the Muscouian language, and also the Sclauonian tongue, which passeth through 17. Nations. And in briefe diuers other Languages fit for Ambassadors and Orators, and Agents for Merchants, and for Trauellers, and necessary for all Commerce or Negotiation whatsoeuer.

Of Poets and of Musicians.

Cap. XXXVIII.

Here be also in this Cittie Poets, excelling in all kinde of Poesie (to wit) Dramatike, Lirike, Heroicall, or Epick, Pcemenicall, or Pastorall, Satadik, and Satyrical. That first and most auncient kinde of Poesie the Dramatik, is so lively expressed and represented vpon the publique Stages and Theaters of this Cittie, as Rome in the Auge of her pompe and glory, neuer saw it better performed, (I meane in respect of the action, and Art, and not of the cost and sumptuousnesse) for therein the Romanes exceeded all the nations of the world. Of this Art haue written largely, *Petrus Victorius, Petrus Crinitus, Caluus Rodygnius, Carlo Gatto, Ludouico Dulce, Georgius Fabritius, Iulius Cæsar Scaliger*, and who hath written so much and so well (and bring an Author in all good Poets hands) as it were in vaine for me to say any thing of the Art, besides that I haue written thereof, a particular Treatise.

Here be also the best Musicians of this Kingdome, and equall to any in Europe for their skill, either in composing, and setting, or in singing, or for playing vpon any kinde of Musicall Instruments. The Musicians haue obtained of the King our Soueraigne Lord, Letters-pattents for a Society and Corporation.

And for their Armes they beare Azure a Swan Argent, within a Tressure Counterflowre Or, and in a cheefe Gules a Rose betweene two Lyons Or, and for their crest the signe called by the Astronomers Fidicula, or the Orphean Lyre.

Of the Arts of Calligraphie, Brachygraphie, Steganographie, Arithmetick, and Cyphering.

Cap. XXXIX.

In this City be taught the Arts of Calligraphie, or faire writing of diuers hands and Characters, and of Cyphering, and Algarisme, and (which is much to be regarded) the Art of Brachygraphie, which is an Art newly discouered, and newly recouered, and is of very good and necessary vse, being well and honestly exercised: for by the meanes and helpe thereof (they which know it) can readily take a Sermon, Oration, Play, or any long speech, as they are spoken, dictated, acted, and vttered in the instant. It hath a good part in the Art of Steganographie, and is a principall member thereof.

The Armes of Calligraphie is Azure a Pen Or, and this was giuen to Peter Bales, at a prize, where solemne triall was made for mastery in this Art, amongst the best Pen-men of London.

Of other Arts and Sciences ingenuous, and liberall, professed in this City and in few other Vniuersities.

Cap. XL.

Now that I haue runne ouer the Liberall Artes, and other Scholler-like and Accademicall Studies, I will speake something of other Arts, which although they bee not professed in euery other Vniuersitie, nor reckoned amongst the auncient liberall Arts, and Sciences, yet in respect that they are fit for a gentleman (whom none doe become but honourable and liberall and ingenuous Artes) and other Arts shall haue no place in this discourse. In the choice of the Arts of this kind, I will not be mine owne Taruer, but will receiue them of the recommendation and warrant of that most learned and iudicious noble Gentleman the Count Bildesler Castilio, who recounting the qualities and Arts necessary and properly appertaining to a Gentleman (and so consequently to bee esteemed liberall and ingenuous) giueth to the Arts Gladiatorie, or of defence, and of Ryding, and of Painting, and of Pourtraying, and of Dancing, place amongst them: And these all beeing professed and taught in this Citie, and that by excellent Masters, I thinke I should wrong this Academy, and the professors and learners of these Arts herein, if I should not mention and record them in this register or treatise, I will first begin with that art of Ryding (which the Grecians called Hippice) as the most worthy of them, and is a principall part or member of Polemica, or Art Military.

Of Hippice or the Art of Horse manship.

Cap. LXI.

The Art of Ryding and of good horsmanship is so necessary for a Gentleman, as neuer any attained to any great honor in deeds of armes and in the profession Military, without he had learned to be a good horseman before. And therefore amongst the ancient Romans it was in so great estimation, as it was a speciall honour to be stiled *Eques* as it is yet in Spaine, in Italy, and France, to be called *Caualliero*, and *Chenalier* which signifying a horseman, or a Knight. But my purpose being not to discourse, but to point at it, it sufficeth that I shall giue to this Art, a place proper to it in this treatise. They that desire to be instructed in this Art, may read Fredericke Grison, and *Gasparo da Rocca*, and the Count *del Anguillara*, and diuers other strangers: but none better then our owne countreymen, Mr. Thomas Blondeuile, and Mr. Gerualse Markeham. For the skill of this Art professed here in England, I will giue the Palme to his Maiesties Keepers, and his gallant *Cauallerizos* and to the Gentlemen of his Stcuyrye, or Stable Royall, who are commonly called Quirries, who since the burning of the Kings Steuyrye, at Blondesbury, neere high Holborne, haue practised this art at Charing Crosse in the Mewes and thereabout, and haue borne and are as expert as any Neapolitans whatsoeuer. This art is taught also vpon Clarken-well greene, and was not long since at Mile-end, by Seignieur Prospero. The armes of this profession be vert, a horse armed, and caparisonne Or.

Of the Art gladiatory, or Science of Defence.

Cap. LXII.

The art Gladiatorie which wee call the Science of Defence, (and the Italians *Scrimia & arte ad arme*) was anciently much practised amongst the noble Romans, & euen by some Emperors. They which professed this Art were called of the Romans, *Gladiatores & Lanistæ*: It was practised also by other Nations. In this City there bee many professors thereof, and very skilfull men in teaching the best and most offensiue and defensiue vse of very many Weapons, as of the long sword, the backe sword, the Rapier and dagger, the single Rapier, the case of Rapiers, the sword and buckler or Targate, the Pike, the Polbere, the long staffe, and other, King Henry the 8. made the professors of this Art a company, or corporation by Letters Pattents, wherein the Art is intituled the noble Science of Defence. Of this Art Gladiatorie there bee diuers Schooles in London kept by the Masters of Defence: and they bee the same which the Romanes called Lanistæ, for the *Lanistæ iuniores gladiatores instituebant*, as I finde in the writings of *A. Hirtius*, and of *Vegetius*, and others. The manner of the proceedings of our Fencers in their Schooles, is this: first they which desire to bee taught, at their admission are called Schollers, and as they profit, they take degrees, and proceede to be Prouosts of Defence, and that must be wonne by publique tryall of their proficiency, and of their skill at certaine weapons, which they call prizes, and in the presence, and view of many hundreds of people. And at their next and last prize, well and sufficiently performed, they bee proceede Masters of the Science of Defence or Masters of Fence, as wee commonly call them. The King ordained that none but such as haue tane his orderly proceeded by publique act and tryall, and haue the approbation of the principall Masters of their company, may professe or teach this Art of Defence publikely in any part of England. Of this Art as it was vsed amongst the

Romanes, see *Lipsius* in *Saturna. lib. 9.* But for the moderne vse, and estate thereof, see *Achilles Marozzo* in his booke intituled *Arte del'arme* and George Silver in his booke in English of this matter, and *Iacomo Medinese* in his *Scrima* and *Antonio Manciolino in arte dello Schermire con ogni sorte &c.*

The Armes of this corporation be Gules, a sword Argent pendant.

Ars telorum, or Artillery, and of Polemica or art Military, and Pyrotechnie, and of the art of swimming

CHAP. XXXXIII.

ARtellerie or Arteley, *id est, Ars telorum materialorum* (for thus for Etimologists become vs not) is the art of Shooting in long Bowes, Crosse bowes, Stone-bowes, Sreoppens, Rams, Catapults as all (and especially in this age) in canons, Faselskis, Culuerings, Bakers, Falcons, Sagitions, Fowlers, Chambers, Hagbuts, Dargbusses, Culuers, Petronels, Pistols, Dags, &c. For this is the Artellery which is now in most vse and estimation, and therefore deuided into great Ordinance, and into other guns. Of the one is hereof written more at large, intituling it, the art of Shooting in great Ordinances. And of the other, *Iohn Smith* a sculdier wrote a booke intituled the art of Gunnery. These bee warlike arts and of great importance either for munition, or for defence. The art of shooting in great ordinance is taught in a field enclosed with a bricke wall, without Bishopsgate, called the Artillery Garden (and as it is to be well noted) all the men which come thither to learne this Art, are first solemnely sworne, not to teach any forrayner, or Alien this Art, nor to serue any forraine Prince their with, without the leaue or commandement of the king of England their Soueraigne Lord. And ouer all the professors of this Art and of the Kings ordinance & armes, there is alwaies a martiall Noble Gentleman, who hath the superintendance and command, and is called therefore the Master of the Ordinance: And this place is now occupied by the right honorable Sir George Carew Lord Carew of Clopton a very Noble, wise, and martiall Gentleman.

Furthermore, here in this Citty are abiding very ingenious engineers, men very expert in mining, saping, and deuising stratagems of war and men very skilfull in the art of Pyrotechnie, or of fire-works, and of fortification: And all these bee but members of the Art Military or Polemica, and which is the most noble & Heroicall Art, being the proper occupation and profession of Princes, Gentlemen, and very iustly epithered noble. For it is the art which hath enabled all the greatest families in the world, and which protecteth and preserueth all other good arts and sciences in safety as Marcellus well obserued. And of this Polemica, so many Authours, auncient and moderne haue written in Greeke, Latine, English, Spanish, Italian, French, &c. as all this booke could hardly serue to make a Catalogue of their names: neither in good reason it, to discourse of it here, my end being but to mention this and the rest. But that which is requisite to be remembred now, is that there be in this Citty and in the Territories very many notable nobleand most valiant commanders, Colonels, Captaines, and expert souldiers, not onely able, to teach this art Military, but also to take charge of Regiments, Legions, and Armies reall, if need required, for their experience, valeur, and skill in Martial Discipline, and affayres of warre.

The Armes of Art Military are Gules, 2 Lances in Saltor, on a chefe vert a canon Or.

Here to these Arts of Warre may bee added the art of swimming (called of the Grecians *Νεῖν & Κολυμβᾶν*) the which as it is most full for all men, so it is most necessary and important to a souldiour, and therefore it was so much esteemed of the Romanes, as they commanded their Tyrones or young souldiers to learne it, as Vegetius testifieth. And this Art can many men in this Cowne teach very well: and for commodetie of River and water for that purpose there is no where better. Of this art of swimming, diuers haue written, as Pedro Mexia in the Spanith tongue, Thomaso Garzoni in Italian, and our Countrymen Master Digby, and Walter Middleton in Latine, and in English.

Of Orchestice, or the Art of Dauncing.

CHAP. XXXXIIII.

THe art of dancing called by the ancient Grecians, Orchestice, and Orchelis (although Tully in his austerity, and out of his spleene towards M. Anthony, iesting him dance, said *Nemo saltat sobrius*) is notwithstanding an art & quality, not onely conuenient to that his bitter imputation; but certainly commendable & fit for a Gentleman: being exceedingly and modestly vsed. And Plato that most graue Philosopher thinketh meete that ingenuous children bee taught to dance: And it is not only allowed and graced in the Courts of Princes and in the best and most honorable Cities, and euen in the colledges of the reuerend and graue professors of our Lawes, but also hath so good approbation in the holy Scriptures, as we find that Michol was much blamed for laughing at King Dauid when hee dauncede. Of this art many bookes haue beene written, as that Pamflet in the Pantagonicall tongue, intituled *Liber brogardissimus de danzis*, and diuers other the like. And much more anciently it hath beene handled by Athenæus, and Iulius Pollux, and since by Celius Rodigynus, and lastly and largely enough by *Thomaso Garzoni*, in his *Piazza Vniuersale in discorso 45. de Ballarini.* Vnder this art, Tilting and tumbling, and going vpon ropes,

ropes, and the doing feates of Actiuity, and rare agility are comprehended: and in these Arts of dancing and vaulting, wee haue Country men of our owne, which be very excellent, as M. Carden, Groome of the Queenes priuie Chamber, and M. Warren, and M. Rowan, the Kings Musitians, and M. Iohn Hasler, and diuers others.

I see not howe the Armes of the professors of dancing, because I haue not seene them: besides I am informed that they are of the Society of the Musitians, which I easily beleeue, for dancing cannot stand without Musicke, and then are they furnished, hauing an equall and common interrest, as well in the customes as in the Society and Corporation.

Of Graphice, or Art of Painting, and of Pourtraiture, and of Staining, and of Cosmetica.

CAP. 45.

IN the Art called of Authors *Graphice*, Graphice, and in English painting: there be in this Citie cunning Painters, for either shaddowing, pourtraying, counterfetting, tracking, painting, enuemming, or limming. But this is an Art now not accounted ingenuous or fit for a Gentleman, by reason that it is much fallen from the reputation, which it had anciently, which whether it bee for the vnworthinesse or vnskilfulnesse of the persons, exercising and practising it in this age, or for the abuses and deceipts vsed by Painters, or for the scandall of Images and Idols (for the which Philo condemneth it) or for the foule deuise of the fairs Cosmetica: or for what other cause I know not well, but sure I am, it is now accounted base and mechanicall, and a meere mester of an Artificer, and handy Craftsman. Insomuch as fewe or no Gentleman or generous and liberall person will aduenture the practising this Art. But in so much as Aristotle recommendeth it to his Statesman, or Politician, and because it is numbred amongst those Arts which are necessary for a Gentleman, and for a Courtier, by Count Baldessin (as hath beene before intimated) and in regard also that the Romaines (who be Gentlemen by their places, and whose place is next in this Treatise, shall bee skilfull in this Art) I must perforce somewhat in the defence or excuse of it. But I dare not pronounce with Count Baldesar, that all those men in this Realme are not well of this Art of Painting, be voyde of reason, for that is an vncharitable and peremptorie censure. But this I will say by the authority of Plinie, Quintilian and Aristotle, and of others, that the auncient Romanes had it not onely in estimation, but also in admiration, and in so much as not onely diuers noble Romaines in the time of the Consuls, but also afterwards some Emperours did take great pleasure (and paine also) to practise it, as the Writers of the imperiall History shew at large, whereupon Gregorie de Rimini amongst other praises and Elogies of Painting, stileth it *exercicio Nobile.* And Alexander Neapolitanus giueth a greater honour vnto it, in his Booke of Genuall dayes, in these words: *Pingendi ars primum Sicyone, mox per omnem Graciam tanto fuit studio, vt pueros ingenuos plastrarum tanquam liberalium artium præcipuam imprimis edoceret Magistri, perpetuo interdicto (cauentes) ne ad illam mancipia admitterentur.* And thus much for the warrant of placing the Art of Painting in this Treatise. To this Art of Painting belongeth the Art of Staining, which was a fine Art, and (as I heare) is now lost. Cosmetica afore mentioned is of this ranke, so farre as it concerneth Painting, but because it is an Art teaching Women to paint and stayne their owne bodies: it is not onely reputed infamous, and in critticis time, but also wicked and vngodly. For wee may reade in the holy Scriptures of an impious Woman, who is recorded to her perpetuall shame, to haue painted her face, and her eyes: yea, it is a thing scorned and detested euen by the Heathens themselues, as it may appeare in many Writings of theirs, and particularly in an auncient and elegant Epigram written to a Lady, by Lucilius, which I will set downe in Greeke, because I haue not seene it in Latine, and then mine owne homely translation of it shall follow.

Τὴν καλὴν ἐλάλεις, τὴν δ' ἄλλην ἐσκέλλεις ἔδαφος· σεμνὸν μὲν φύτιδας ἐσκέλλεις.
Μὴ τί τοι τὸ πρόσωπον ἀπ' ἄλλου τοῦ γεγάασιν,
οὐχὶ γραπτόν ἐστιν, ἢ ἀμάτερα, κοὐχὶ λίθος,
καὶ ἱδρῶτος τοῦδε τὴν ἀκάλυπτον ἔχεις.

Madame, you dye your hayre, and paynt your face,
yet doe your wrinckles and your age appeare:
Then colour not your face, vnlesse perceaue,
you would a vizard, not a visage weare:
It is in vaine (Madame) no Paynters Art,
can *Hecuba* to *Helena* conuert.

Therefore I like very well Stephano Guazzos censure thereof, and hold it to be a sentence worthy to be written in letters of gold in euery Ladies and Gentlewomans Chamber, viz. that those women whose beauties be naturall, are the faire creatures of God. But those women which paint, and make themselues faire by Art, are the creatures of the Deuill. Of the

Art of Painting Paolo Lomazzo hath written in Italian largely and learnedly, and is translated into English by Doctor Haydocke, besides diuers others.

The Armes of Painters be quarterly, the first quarter Azure 3. escutcheons Argent: the second a Chaueron betweene 3. birds heads Or.

Of the Colledge of Heraulds.

Cap. 46.

And now hauing made this Preface and Apology for Painting, and thus prepared the way for the Art of Heraudry, participating with the Art of Painting (as I noted before) I will speake of the Colledge of Heraulds, founded here in this Cittie by the auncient Kings of England. These Heraulds are, or ought by the Statutes of their foundation, to bee all Gentlemen (which I thinke is to be vnderstood, either by race or by conditions and parts of a Gentleman.) But if there be any fellowes of this Colledge, which haue no more Gentry, nor Art Heraldike, nor learning, nor ingenuity then common Painters, they must be esteemed as men crept in at the windowe, and distinguished or discerned with a baston trauers, for bastards of Heraldrie. The officers of Armes or Heraulds (for these two words be Genus, or the generall name to the rest) must necessarily be skilfull and well seene, not onely speculatiuely in the Art of Painting, but also by practise, in regard of the continuall vse, which they haue of it, for pourtraying, copying, tricking, and limming in Inke Orle, or water colours the ensignes, banners, pennons, bandroles, shields, escutcheons, timbers, crests, lyttres, supporters, hachements, and such like, with the figures of the variety of things animall, vegetall, senceleſſe or inanimate, born for armes and ensignes, and tokens of Nobility and Generosity, which bee much like vnto the Hieroglyphicks, or deuyses vsed more then 2000. yeares past by the Egyptians. And these figures the Heraulds must register and record in their bookes of Armory, and of blazons, the better to preserue them for the posterity, and for their owne vse and knowledge. And this must be done by the helpe and meanes of the Art of painting and tricking. Their study also is or ought to be auncient Historyes Chronicles, and Antiquities: they must search olde rolles and scrowles, and peruse authentike records, Archiues, olde Charters, and euidences, and such like, out of the which they gather matter for Genealogie, and Pedegree, and markes of honour, and good testimony of the valour and vertue of the worthy and famous ancestors of Noblemen and Gentlemen: whose honourable acts, atchieuements, aduentures, marriages, alliances, and issues, they must diligently and faithfully record and preserue in their Colledge and office of Armes. These Heraulds be the ministers of honour, the Antiquaries of the Britiſh and Engliſh Heroes, and the Messengers of Mars, being not onely officers of Armes but of Armies. For they were wont to carry defiances, to proclaime warres, to summon Cities to entertaine or sollicite parties, and to propound truces, and treaties, &c. and are officers of great Antiquity, for I am of Dionisius opinion, that Heraulds haue been as long as there haue been Kings. They were called of the Romanes *Feciales & Caduceatores*, and had a Colledge. I will not say that they were any collegiate society here in England, vntill the time of King Richard the third: but it is certaine, that hee by his Charter made them a Company and Corporation, and setled the office in Sole-herbert, from whence they were remoued (by them which appointed nothing of his doings) to our Ladies of Roncivall, neere Charing-crosse, and at the length they obtained by the fauour and mediation of the most illustrious Princes of the house of Norfolke, Marshals of England, to be placed in Derby place: and for the more secure enioying thereof (because an honorable Gentleman had gotten about that time an estate in it) Queene Mary gaue it to the Heraulds by her Charter Royall, as I haue beene informed. In this house these Heraulds haue seuerall lodgings, and a common Library and place to keepe their Records, and Books of Armory, and haue maintenance and yearely pensions, and fees of the King's Maiesty. They are distinguished by these names of office, and seruice, viz. Garter, Clarenceaux, or Southroy, and Norroy, Kings at Armes: Yorke, Somerset, Richmond, Windsor, Chester, and Lancaster, Dukes at Armes: Rouge dragon, Rouge croix, Blew-mantle, Portcullis, Blanc lyon, and Portsmouth, Pursuants at Armes: whereof the two last be extraordinary. There be also belonging, and depending vpon the office and officers at Armes, certaine ministers which they call Marshals to Heraulds, and certaine Painters, which are called Painters at Armes.

And now that it may appeare that this Colledge of Heraulds which hath giuen or deuised Cusignes, and Armes for so many, hath not forgotten to giue her selfe a due marke of honour. It must be declared here, that this Colledge hath taken Argent, a crosse Gules betweene foure birds Azure, borrowed from a Gentleman of the most fegnall name and family that euer hath beene of their Colledge.

Of the Art of Reuels.

Cap. 47.

Might hereunto adde for a Corollary of this discourse, the Art of Reuels, which requireth knowledge in Grammar, Rhetorick, Logicke, Philosophie, Historye, Musick, Mathematicks, and in other Arts (and all more then I vnderstand I confesse) and hath a setled place within this Cittie. But because I haue described it, and discoursed thereof at large in a particular commentary, according to my talent, I will surceasse to speake any more thereof: blazing onely the Armes belonging to it, which are Gules, a crosse Argent, and in the first corner of the Escutcheon, a Mullets Pertes Argent, and a Lyon Gules in chiefe Or.

Of diuers Professors of many other Arts, and Faculties residing in this Vniuersity, and of Arts mechanicall.

Cap. 48. *Peroration.*

But not to be long in particularizing euery Art and euery Science professed and taught in this Cittie, and in the Territories thereof. I say in a word, that there be here many excellent Philosophers, Cabalists, Thomists, Scotists, Humanists, Philologers, Historians, Poeticians, Arithmeticians, Antiquaries, &c. men able for their knowledge and sufficiencie to read lectures of these Arts and Faculties, in any Vniuersity in the world. Here also be very cunning Architects: and in briefe here be as good Chemists, and Alchymists, as any be in Maioricana, although there be no publick professor thereof entertained in this, as is in that Vniuersity. And finally (the better to attaine to any of these Arts, Sciences, and Faculties, and to retaine their principles, and rules, in minde and remembrance (and which may also serue for an aptcloſe of this generall Technologie) I must not omit that the Art of Memory is taught within this Vniuersity of London. Seeing then that there be read, taught, studied, and professed so many Arts, Faculties, and Sciences in this Cittie of London, as in no Vniuersity more and in seuer or none so many. And that there be so many magnificent Colledges, Athenæes, houses, and Schooles founded and erected for them and their professors, and endowed with lands and reuenewes, by the ancient Kings and Princes of this Land, and by other noble and worthy Benefactors, and vnto them royall priuiledges subioined; who can then deny that London is not onely the third Vniuersity of England, but also to be preferred before many other Vniuersities in Europe, or in any other part of the world known.

FINIS.

The names of such to whom I haue beene particularly beholding in the furtherance of this generall worke, which I haue here set downe for a thankfull remembrance.

Doctor *Whitegift* Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.
Doctor *Bancroft* Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.
Doctor *Abbot* Lord Archbishop of Canterbury.
Sir *Thomas Egerton* Knight Baron of Ellesmer, Lord Chancellour of England.
Robert Earle of Salisbury Lord high Treasurer of England.
The Lord Viscount *Fenton*, Captaine of his Maiesties Guard, and one of his Maiesties priuie Councell.
Sir *Edward Coke* Knight, Lord chiefe Iustice of England.
Doctor *Andrewes* Lord Bishop of Ely.
Doctor *Mountague* Lord Bishop of Bath and Wells.
Doctor *Neyle* Lord Bishop of Lincolne.
Sir *Alexander Hay* Knight, Master of the Roles in Scotland.
Sir *Edward Hoby* Knight.
Sir *Robert Cotton* Knight Baronet.
Sir *George Buck* Knight, Master of the Reuells.
Sir *Lewis Lewkenore* Master of the Ceremonies.
Sir *Henry Mountague* Knight, Recorder of London, the Kings Sergeant at Law.
Master *Seagar* Garter chiefe King at Armes.
Master *Camden* Clarenceaux King at Armes, surnamed the learned.
Master *George Salterne* of the middle Temple Esquire.
Master *Thomas Screpnen* Esquire.
Master *John Meighen* of Shrewsbury.
Master *Brooke* alias *Yorke* Herauld.
Master *Trefwell* alias *Somerset* Herauld.
Master *Charles* alias *Lancaster* Herauld.
Master *Abraham Hartwell*.

NOVV DOE FOL-LOW CERTAINE VERSES CONCERNING LONDON, WESTMINSTER, and the River of THAMES, which Verses I tooke out of *Poly-Olbion*, in the 16. and 17. Songs, where the Author having formerly spoken of the Riuers in *Middlesex* and *Hartfordshire, &c. he likewise speaketh of the Cittie of* London, *and the Riuer of* Thames, *Written by* Michaell Drayton Esquire.

The 16 Song.

THe Citie to salute doth bid the Muse prepare.
Whose Turrets, Fanes, and Spyres, when willfully she beholds,
Her wonder at the sight, thus strangely she vnfoldes:
At thy great builders wit, who's he but wonder may;
Nay: of his wisedome thus, ensuing times shall say;
O more then mortall man, that did this Towne begin;
Whose knowledge found the plot, so fit to set it in.
What God, or heauenly power was harbour'd in thy brest,
From whom with such successe thy Labours should be blest;
The goodly situation of London.
Built on a rising Banke, within a Vale to stand,
And for thy healthfull soyle, chose grauell mixt with sand.
And where faire *Thames* his course into a Crescent casts
(That, forced by his Tides, as still by her he hasts,
He might his surging waues into her bosome send)
Because too farre in length, his Towne should not extend.
And to the North and South vpon an equall reach,
Two hills their euen Bankes doe somewhat seeme to stretch
The North and South Wardes.
Those two extreamer Windes from hurting it to let;
And onely leuell lies, vpon the rise and set.
Of all this goodly Ile, where breathes most cheerefull ayre,
And euery way there-to the wayes most smooth and fayre;
As in the fittest place, by man that could be thought;
To which by Land, or Sea, prouision might be brought.
And such a Road for ships scarce all the world commauds,
As is the goodly *Thames* neere where *Brutes* Citty stands.
Nor any Hauen lyes to which is more resort,
Commodities to bring, as also to transport.
The fourteenth Song.
Then *Westminster* the next great *Thames* doth entertaine;
That vaunts her Pallace large, and her most sumptuous Fane:
The Lands tribunall seat that challengeth for hers,
The crowning of our Kings, their famous Sepulchers.
Then goes he on along by that more beautious strand,
Expressing both the wealth and brauery of the Land.
(So many sumptuous Boures, within so little space,
The all-beholding Sun scarce sees in all his race.)
London lying like a halfe Moone.
And on by *London* leades, which like a Crescent lies,
Whose windowes seeme to mock the star-befreckled skies
Besides her rising Spires, so thick themselues that show,
As doe the bristling reedes, within his Banks that grow.
There sees his crowded Wharfes, and people-pestred shores,
His Bosome ouer-spread, with shoales of labouring Ores:
London bridge the crowne of Thames.
With that most costly Bridge, that doth him Most renowne,
By which he clearely puts, all other Riuers downe.

THE

THE COPPIE OF MY EPISTLE DEDICATED TO THE LORD MAIOR AND Aldermen of LONDON, which I haue here placed, to serue for a generall Apologie, touching the reasons that moued me to vndertake this troublesome businesse of Chronologie, and to expresse the manner of my proceeding *therein, being very desirous to satisfie the honest, wise, and well minded, &c.*

RIght Honourable and graue Senators, the blessed and peacefull entrance into this Land, and ioyfull possession of our liege Lord, of his immediate right of the Imperiall Crowne of England, and the vtter banishment of all dislust in the Regall succession, with the vniuersall hearts applause of all his Highnesse English Subiects, who with one content acknowledged their loue and duty vnto his lawfull right in Soueraignty, all which in the speedy effecting and establishing of peace in this Kingdome, was much more then either our neighbour Nations held possible to be so easily performed, as appeare by their great admiration vpon the certaine knowledge thereof, or was rightly vnderstood of the multitude that wholy enioyes the benefit, as too plainely appeareth by their wilfull ingratitude and forgetfulnesse, seeing their long continued feare to quickly suppresst, and beyond all expectation conuerted into as great freedome and tranquility, as either their hearts could wish, or is enioyed by any other Nation. All these, and many other high blessings of Almighty God still succeeded one another, and no man would once hold vp his finger, to make present acknowledgement or publick vnderstanding vnto posterities, of the boundlesse and wonderous workes of God in these our dayes, as also of the manifold remarkable accidents which haue happened of late yeares.

These motiues, I say, with the earnest perswasions of diuers graue and Honourable personages, who neuer ceased to accite me vnto this present Act of Chronologie, haue directly caused me to performe this generall businesse, in which my tedious labours I haue beene intollerably abused and scandalized by *Thraso, Momus, Zoylus*, and other back-biters, and detractors, concerning whom, sith it is *the least of offences to offend offenders*, I will neither vexe my selfe, nor trouble your patience in seeking to pleate the enuious and infatiate. But forasmuch as I highly prize the good content of the honest, wise, and vertuous, thus was the course and manner of my proceeding herein.

After I had well obserued, that no man would lend a helping hand vnto the late aged painefull Chronicler: neither in many moneths after his death, that any would expose or shew themselues to prosecute so good a worke: and I albeit that in this interim, and before, there were many named to haue already entred into this Labyrinth, yet not one appeared: whereupon I remembred the saying of the Phylosopher: *That the naming of many friends, is a meane impediment vnto friendship.* And as in that, so in this, then for my owne cleare satisfaction, and full assurance, that I could neither preiudice nor preuent any others better proceeding, I entered into particular conference with euery man whose names had beene diuulged. Some of them of honourable ranke, and reuerend quality: all of them learned, and of good sufficiencie; some whereof answered mee, they thought that the giuing out of their names in this sort, was rather done by their secret enemies, of purpose to draw them into capitall displeasure, and to bring their names and liues into a generall question, then for any other intent of good: Other said, who doth this worke, must flatter, which I cannot, neither will I wilfully leaue a scandall vnto my posterity. Another said, I cannot see how in any ciuill action a man should spend his trauaile, time, and money worse, then in that which acquires no regard, nor reward, except back-biting and detraction. And one amongst the rest after he had sworn an oath, said: I thanke God that I am not yet mad, to waste my time, spend two hundred pound a yeere, trouble my selfe, and all my friends, onely to gayne assurance of endlesse reproch, losse of liberty, and bring all my dayes in question: And like as these spake, so did many others. And in conclusion, I saw it vtterly refused of all. And by this time it was generally obserued, that this worke was wholly neglected.

Then

Then many of my friends began againe to animate me, and very seriously required me to make supplement: whose kinde perswasions prevailed so farre, that I promised them to doe my endeuour, onely for one yeares space, wherein my good will exceeded my best experience, as I found afterwards, for that it is not a yeere or two wherein a man may obtaine the particularities of truth, neither accomplish any thing to the effect in this solide and variable imployment. Then forthwith I repayred to the most honourable superiours, vnto whom I humbly signified my zealous loue, duty, and diligence in this generall seruice of my Prince and Country. Of whom I receiued very gracious incouragements, and honourable instructions. And after that, vpon conference with diuers graue Elders, louers of vertue, and fauourers of the Cities honour, by whose direction, with all meet kenesse I manifested my willingnesse vnto the Lord Maior, and Court of Aldermen, being then resolued, neither to breake my former promise, nor to neglect so great and generall a good for any depraying speeches, or maleuolent aspects. May it therefore please your worshippes rightly to vnderstand, that in all my proceedings, I haue neither presumed too farre of my selfe, nor done ought that might discourage, or preuent any other. And thus much for the cause and manner of my proceeding.

Now right honourable, and most worthy Elders, whose state and gouernment is renowned through the world: What is he that hath any vnderstanding, and knowes not London to be the most flourishing and peacefull Cittie of Europe? of greate t antiquity, happiest in c ontriuance, most increased, chiefe in prosperity, and most stored with plenty: and here I might alledge many auncient presidents of pleasures, profits, time, and state, whereof neuer any subordinate Magistrates could equill yours. But seeing fewe words to the wise suffice, I will onely speake a word or two by the way. The promised blessing vnto the auncient Israelites, to possesse a Land that flowed with milke and honey, is with seauen-fold measure, heaped on your heads, your Cittie filled more aboundantly with all sorts of silkes, fine linnen, oyles, wines, and spices, perfection of Arts, and all costly ornaments, and curious workmanship, then any other Province: so as London well deserues to beare the name of the choicest storehouse in the world, and to keepe ranke with any royall Citie in Europe: her Cittizens rich and bounteous, witnesse their franke giving of more then twice seauen fifteenes in one yeere, and their long continued charges and experiences, as well vpon all occasions by sea and land, for defence of their Prince and Country, as in ayding and releiuing their distressed neighbour Nations, and in performing many other worthy matters for their owne honour, the delight of strangers, and the releife of the poore, as otherwise: so as without offence it may truly be said, that the liberality of the Londoners, is but halfe knowne to their common friends. Peace and plenty in the highest degree possesseth now your gates and Pallaces: all Nations repaire with willingnesse to be partakers of your happinesse: many other glorious Cities haue many wayes wanted these incessant blessings: witnesse the famous Cittie Rome, which hath beene often spoyled and sacked, the Cittie Moico, which not long since was twice spoyled with fire, the first by her enemies, the last was a priuate politick practise of her owne Emperour. The like misfortune hath befalne vnto the great Cittie Constantinople. Stately Antwerpe hath felt the smart of diuers changes within mans memory. Populous Paris of late yeeres was glad to beat down her owne Suburbs, and cut her skirts shorter, least other should sit vpon them: Cracouia, Lisbon, and many other royall Cities, were glad and fayne to seeke and sue for that which is freely giuen vnto her. These last haue I cited to be as a looking glasse to London: sith it is as impossible for any to know their proper face and feature, without an obiect, as it is for any people to be truly sensible of their owne felicity, that haue not seene nor tasted others misery.

And thus (right Honourable and graue Fathers) although it was my meaning to haue vsed breuity, yet being enforced to the contrary, I craue your pardon, least I haue offended by prolixity. And because I will for euer be exempt, and free from all danger of all preeurrent Vipers, lurking Adders, and venomeous tongues, I here conclude with tender of my loue, and these my free offered thirty yeeres labours in this Chronologie, which I heartily recommend vnto your kinde acceptation, and patronage, with testimony that I here proclaime a cessation from any further obseruation or practise in the promisses, or continuation of the English Chronicle, to the end it shall plainely appeare, that I haue no coherance with the enuious, that neuer did good themselues, nor spake well of others: but will doe my vtmost to auoyde all impediments that may impeach others better proceedings; wishing you all encrease of your hearts desire, and euerlasting happinesse.

EDMOND HOVVES.

AN ALPHABETICALL TABLE, shewing the principall Matters contained in this CHRONICLE.

The first figures show the page, the second the colume, the third the line.

A.

Abbie. The Abbie of Battaile founded, *fol.* 121. *col* 2. *lin.* 15. The Abbie of Chester when built, *fo.* 131. *col.* 1. *lin.* 27. The Abbey of Reading, *fol.* 140. *col.* 1. *lin.* 56. The Abbey of Sherbourne, *fol.* 140. *col.* 2. *lin.* 1. Waltham Abbey, *fol.* 154. *col.* 2. *lin.* 18. Abbies visited and viewed, *fol.* 572. *col* 1. *li* 22. Abbies suppreſt, *fol.* 575. *col.* 2. *lin.* 37. A new Abbey by the Tower of London founded. *fol.* 246. *c.* 1. *l.* 30.

Abbot. The Abbot of Whalie beheaded, and others hanged, *fol.* 574. *col.* 2. *l.* 17

Abraham, the beloued of God, *fol.* 17 *c.* 2. *l.* 20.

Accusers. A false accuser hanged 385 2 *lin.* 33. burnt in the face with *F.* and *A. fol.* 588, *col.* 2. *lin.* 44.

Acre: Long Acre, *f.* 1049. *c.* 1. *l.* 1.

Adeling its signification, 94 *c.* 2. *l.* 60.

Adrian: Pope *Adrian* an Englishman, *f.* 150. *col.* 1. *l.* 7. 27. His Epistle to King *Henry* the second, *ibid.* 48.

Adultery punished with Death among Infidels, 70, *c.* 1, *l.* 35

Agnes: they sorely raigne, *f.* 634, *c.* 2, *l.* 20

Alban, his Martyrdome, with others in Britaine, *f.* 43, *c.* 2, *l.* 34. Saint *Albans* Abbey new built, *fol.* 71, *co.* 2. *li.* 56. Is rebuilt by *Paul* a Monke of Cane, *fol.* 117. *c.* 1. *l.* 30

Ale: Bacchus the first Inventer of it, *fol.* 18. *col.* 2, *lin.* 54

Alexander the Great, *f.* 26. *c.* 2, *l.* 64

Aldgate new built, *f.* 892. *c.* 1, *l.* 10

Aldersgate new built, *f.* 1025, *c.* 2, *l.* 27

Alder-Mary, its Steeple repaired and finished, *f.* 1043, *c.* 2. *l.* 57

Allegeance: The Oath of Allegeance administred to all persons, *f.* 995, *c.* 2, *l.* 4

Allen: His Hospitall at Dulledge, founded, fitted and ended, with its endowments, *fol.* 117, *co.* 1, *l.* 10. *fol.* 1033, *col.* 1 &c.

All Soules: That Colledge in Oxford, when and by whom founded, finished and filled, *fol.* 383, *c.* 2. *l.* 1

Amazones, their Originall, *f.* 20, *c.* 2, *l.* 5

Ambassadors: Some sent for Russia, *fol.* 1027. *col* 1, *lin.* 49. & 60, *c.* 2, *l.* 27. An Ambassador from the Great Turke, *f.* 1030. *c.* 1, *l.* 1. An Ambassadour from the Emperour, *fol* 103: *col.* 2, *lin.* 37. A speciall Ambassadour from France, *fol.* 1034, *co.* 1, *lin.* 10. From Russia, *fol.* 1044, *c.* 2, *l.* 18. from *Henrie* the Eighth to the Emperor and Pope. *fol.* 554, *c.* 1, *l.* 15.

Saint Ambrose Bishop of Millayne enjoyned the Emperour *Theodosius* to doe open penance, *fol.* 47 *c.* 2, *l* 25

Anabaptists: they beare faggots, and are burnt, *fol.* 576. *col.* 1, *lin* 64. More of them burnt, *fol.* 579. *col.* 2, *lin.* 44. Yet more, *fol* 679. *col.* 1, *lin.* 57. Some banished, *fol.* 680, *col.* 1. *lin.* 43

Anglesey beseiged *fol.* 133, *c.* 1, *l* 14

Anhalt: The Prince of Anhalt comes to King *James* for a Treatie of peace, *f.* 995, *c.* 2, *l* 64.

Anselme Archbishop of Canterbury, *fol.* 132, *col.* 1, *lin.* 32

Antiquitie: A briefe Abstract of Memorable Antiquities, *a fol.* 14, *ad* 29

Antwerpe, a second time beseiged by the Spaniards, *fol.* 699, *col.* 1, *lin.* 14. Its apparant wealth, *col.* 2. *lin.* 47. It is yeelded vp, *fo.* 700 *col.* 2, *lin* 20.

Apothecaries: they are made a particular Companie, *fol.* 1028, *c.* 2, *l.* 54.

Apparell: How the English of olde were apparelled, *f.* 100, *c.* 2, *l.* 60. Certaine particular habits for Harlots, gotten of Londoners from the Parliament, *f* 254, *c.* 1. 23.

Apprentices: their custome of wearing Blew Gownes: *f.* 140, *c.* 1, *l.* 1. They vsed to carry Clubs, *ibid.*

Arbella: The Lady *Arbella* is entowred, and there dyeth, *f.* 1024, *c.* 2, *l.* 5

Archbishop: Archbishop of Canterbury his goods confiscated, and he banished the Realm, *fol.* 317 *c* 2, *l.* 26, *&c.* Arbishop of Yorke flieth the Realme, *f.* 362, *c.* 2, *l.* 5. *Courtnie,* Archbishop of Canterbury deceaseth, *fo* 313, *c.* 2, *l.* 35. *Arundel* Archbishop of Canterbury his answer to the Lay-Parliament at Coventrie, 330, 2, 35. An Archbishop of Yorke beheaded, 333, 1, 47. Archbishop *Harsnet* sworne a Priuie Councellour, 1045, 1, 42. *Stigand* Archbishop of Canterbury deposed for three causes, 111, 1, 1. *Vodine* Archbishop of London reprehendeth King *Vortiger,* 51, 2, 53.

Archers: Foure thousand Archers compasse the Parliament House, ready to shoot, 316, 1, 28.

Arrius his miserable end, 45, 2, 40. His Heresie grew hatefull, 47, 2, 15.

Armada: The Spanish Armado prepared, 746 2, 65. discouered, 747, 1, 22. A full Discourse of that matter, *a fol.* 747. *ad* 752.

Arthur: His Round Table, 55, 1, 3. A Battell given him at Dover, *ibid. lin.* 57. Hee dyeth, and is buryed at Glastenburie, *ibid. &c.*

Prince *Arthur* married, *fol.*483. *col.* 1. *l.*13.

Artificer: A search made throughout the world for skilfull Artificers, 25, 2, 50.

Artillerie: The practise of the Artillerie Garden revived, 997, 2, 51. Artillerie whence so called, 1084, 1, 17

Arundell. An Earle of Arundel beheaded, 317 1, 63. One *Arundell* Archb. of Cant. his answer to the Lay parliament men at Coventry, 330, 2, 35. This present Earl of Arund. is L. high Marshall, 1025 2, 60. An Earle of Arundell committed to the tower, 73, 1, 50.

Ashendun, the Church therof, by whom built, 93, 1, 45.

Azores: A Nauie prepared for the taking of the Isle of Azores, 783, 2, 42.

Athanasius: His Creed, 46, 1, 27.

Athens: when founded, & by whom, 17, 2, 55.

Atlas: 17. 2, 38.

Audley: *Mervin Touchet*, L. *Audley*, Earle of Castlehaven arraigned, 1047, 2, 50. Beheaded, 1048, 1, 3. His confession of his faith, *ibid.* 19.

Augustine: S. *Augustine*. his conversion, 47, 1 66. *Aug.* the Monks first comming into England 57, 2, 26. He exhorteth the Brittans to vnitie, *ibi.* 55. A precise historie of the Brittans opposition of him, 58. &c.

Augustus Cæsar, 30. 2 27.

B.

Bachigraphy: A Schoole for that Art, 1082, 2

Bacon: Sir *Francis Bacon* sworne a Priuie Councellor, 1024, 2 67. Made L. Chancellor, 1026, 1. 62. but deposed of it, 1034, 1, 1.

Banbury: It is burnt, 1042, 1, 41.

Banquet: Saint *Iames* Banquetting house burnt, 1031, 1, 61.

Bargenpsome, Where it is, and its estate, 733, 2, 15.

Bayonas Castle besieged by Rebels, 664, 1, 1. and deliuered to them, *ibi.* 16.

Barons: Some created, 1024 2. 9. & 1026, 1, 45

Bath: When built and by whom. 8, 1, 35. Its scituation, 54, 2, 34. King *Edgar* crowned there, 83, 1, 62. The names of the Knights of the Bath, *fol.* 900, 901. Fiue and twentie Knights of the Bath made by King *Iames* 1026, 1, 1.

Bartholmew: Its Hospitall, when and by whom built, 135, 2, 33.

Barwicke taken by the Scots, and regained by the English, 255, 2, 46. Taken againe by the Scots, 282, 1, 27. Hither K. *Iames* comes after he was proclaimed K. of Eng. staies there three dayes, sees their strength, and confirms their Charter. 820, 1, 18.

Battell: A Battell at Redcote bridge, in which Sir *Thom. More* and *Leonax* were slaine, 302 1 54. A battell at *Hallidowne*-hill, betweene the Scots and English, 1288, 1, 2.

Beaumont: Lord *Thomas Beaumont* taken prisoner, 255, 2, 5.

Becket: *Th. Becket* Archb. of Cant. made *H.* 2. Chancellor, 148, 2, 63. Hee refuseth it after consecration, 151, 1, 65. Hee is slaine, and by whom, 152, 2, 44. A precious stone, called *The Regall stone of France* offred to his shrine, 155, 2, 36. His Shrine suppresst, and his bones burnt, 576, 1, 4.

Bedford: That towne besieged by King *Stephen*, 144, 1, 48. A noble Duke of Bedford dyeth, 374, 2, 57.

Bells: They of Rye fetch their Bells from Normandy, 281, 1, 20.

Bench: The Court of K. Bench and Exchequer remained at Yorke seuen yeeres, 209, 1, 20.

Bennet: Sir *Io. Bennet* censured in Star-chamber for base Bribery, 1034, 2, 55.

Bermodes: Discouered, 1019, 2, 58. Its distance from Virginia, 1020, 2, 47.

Beston: A Castle there built on a rocke in King *Richards* time, 321, 1, 60.

Beverlie: The towne with the Church burnt, 157, 2, 40.

Bible: When it began to bee read in euery Ch. 575, 2, 61. Rent by Rebels, 663. 2, 25. The *Septuagints* time, labour, and reward for translating the Bible, 28, 1, 54. New translated, 1048 2, 6.

Bingham: Of Sir *Rich. Binghams* famous acts, 72 2, 72 5, &c.

Birth: A strange and euer vnheard of Birth of the Countesse of Holland, who had 363 children borne at a Birth, all borne aliue, and all baptized, and died, 217, 1 58.

Bishops: The names and number of Bishops in Engl. 1, 2, 40. Bishoprickes sold for money, 1373, 1, 10. A Bishop of Rochester beheaded for denying the Kings Supremacy, 572, 1, 2. Three Bishops confecrated at once, 996. 2, 3: Notable verses made on the Bi. of that time, 222, 2, 20. A Bish. of Exeter beheaded, 224, 4. Popish Bishops deprived, 639, 2, 60.

Blacke-Friers: The fall of *Plunsdon* house there, when the Papists were assembled at Masse and Sermon, to the number of 300 persons, 1035, 1, 54.

Bladud: An Athenian student brought from thence foure famous Philosophers into Britaine, 10, 1, 30.

Blazing-starre: One seene seuen dayes, 98, 2. 62 Verses made on a Blazing star in *William* the Conquerors time, 101, 2, 66. An other Blazing-starre, with two full Moones seene, 136 2, 31 Another seene two moneths, on which M. *Bembridge, alias Briggs* shewed his judgement, 1030, 2, 23.

Blockehouses: some built, 576, 2, 44.

Blood: A strange mortalitie by bleeding to death, 248, 1, 22.

Blunt: Sir *Richard Blunt*, and Sir *Charles Danvers* speeches at their execution, 795, 1, 22.

Bohemia: The reasons of that peoples refusall for dwelling in Poland, 89 1, 25. When Bohemia became Christian, 90, 1, 25. The first Christian King thereof, *ibid.* 30.

Bologne: King *Henry* the Eight going thither, 587, 2, 50. He assaults it; they yeeld; he enters, 788. 1, &c.

Bonner: That bloody Butcher both of bodies and soules, had his head broken, so that it ran with blood, which Cardinall *Woolsie* called *malum omen*, 556, 2, 1, &c.

Booke: The Booke of Common Prayer commanded to be read in English in S. *Pauls* 608 2, 5. The Latin Masse booke put instead of it againe, 617, 2. 20. The Seruice-booke read in English againe, 639. 2 30.

Boyle, or *Boyling*: A Cooke boyled for poysoning diuers persons, 563, 1, 22. So was a maid serued for the like fact, 503, 1, 57.

Brennus the *Gaule* besieged Rome, 25 1, 62.

Briberie: Sir *John Bennet* censured in Star-Cha. for it, and put out of his place, 1034, 2, 55.

Bridge: A Bridge made with Barges of 900 yards long, 700, 1, 10. London Br. described, 2, 2, 32. It is burnt, 143, 2, 52. Made of timber, 151, 2, 54. Founded afterwards with arches of stone, 154, 1, 5. It was thirty and three yeeres in building, 168, 1, 50. K. *John* gaue something towards it, 6. 2, 13.

Brittaine. The Kings of Brittaine, *à fol.* 8. *ad* 14. The Brittaines barbarousnesse, 14, 1, 54. They vsed to dye themselues with Woade, *col* 2. 13. Brittaine Houle in Holland, 31, , 30. Their great victory and slaughter of the Romans, euen to the number of eighty thousand, 32, 1, 36. The first conversion of Christians in Brittaine, 36, 2, 43, & 37, 1, 1, &c. Vineyards permitted to the Brittaines. 42, 1, 63. Churches persecuted, Temples throwne downe, 43, 2, 3. The martyrdome of *Alban* in Br. *ibid.* Brittains estate described, 50, 51, &c Many Br. slaine at a banquet by *Hengest* 52, 2, 30. Their miserable estate, *ibid.* 44. Brittaine when first named England, 77, 2, 12.

Broadstreet: A fearefull fire there in the night, in which Alderman *Cocking*: house (where the fire began) with other houses were burnt downe and spoyled, 1035, 2, 5.

Broadway: *Giles Broadway* Gentlem. arraigned, found guilty and executed, 1048, 1, 60.

Broccas: Sir *Peecall Broccas* was forced to doe penance at *Pauls* Crosse, for his notorious whoredomes, 1005, 1, 24.

Brunswicke. Duke of Brunswicke made Knight of the Gartar, 1036, 1, 6.

Brute: A King of England his name, birth, and acts, *fol* 8, *ad* 8. He built the citie of Troy, 8, 1, 5. He dying, his sonne *Ebranke* succeeded him, 9, 2, 29.

Buckingham. Vide *Villars*. This *Villars* is made Marquesse of Buckingham, 1028, 2, 67. and L. High Admirall of Engl. 1031, 2, 20. He with a royall Nauy, enters the French Isle of Ree, 1043, 1, 13. Hee is slaine, how, where, and by whom, 1044, 1. 5. Buried by night, *ibi.* 37. An Oration of that Duke of Buckingham, which was in King *Edward* the 5. his time, 454, 1, 49. Hee and King *Richard* the third fall out, 460, 2, 54. His Pride, 461, 2, 1. Hee is proclaimed against, 465, 2, 35. Hee is betraved by his deare seruant *Banister*, whom the Duke bred tenderly, *l.*45. But marke that villaines end, which was to die in a hogstie, *lin.* 47. The Duke is beheaded at Salisbury, 57.

Building: A Proclamation for Vniformitie in building, in and about London, 891, 1, 67. Late increase of buildings, 1048, 2, 59.

Bull: A Bull from the Pope hanged vp at the Bishop of Londons gate, 667, 1, To. One *Felton* found to haue done it, for which hee was there hanged, *col* 2, 14.

Burchet. one of that name apprehended, examined, found an Heretike, abiureth it, takes penance for it, yet afterward kills his keeper, and is hanged for it, 677, 678..

Burdeaux yeelded to the English, 596, 2, 5.

Burgoyne: The Breaches that were betweene England and it, with the causes, 366. *per totum*. The Duke of Glocester challengeth that Duke in combate, 367, 1, 1.

Burckes: They were a kind of Irish rebels, their rebellions, suppression, and end, 722 723.

Bushy: He accuseth on *Arundel* that was Archbishop of Canterbury of a threefold treason, 316, 2, 5. and for this the Archbishop is arraigned *ibid.* & 317, 1, 1, &c.

Burton on Trent, when, and by whom founded, 90, 1, 43.

Busse: Brittaines Busse built in the Strand, 894, 1, 45.

C.

Cade: The Captaine of the Rebels in Kent, 388, 1, 36. The peremptory command he sent one *Cooke* a Londoner, 389, 2, 10. A copie of his requests, *lin.* 50.

Calice: the winning of it, 771, &c.

Cadwallen: A Prince of Wales accused, freed, but yet shine, 155, 2, 50.

Calis besieged, 376, 1, 20. Wonne by the Spaniard, 770, 2, 27. Rettored, 787, 1, 45. Deliuered, 243, 2, 60 Built by the Romans, 244. 1, 1. Callis like to haue been betrayed, 248, 1, 47. Callis besieged by the French, 631, 2, 52 Deliuered to them, 632, 1, 10. The French enter it, *lin.* 30.

Cambridge described, & shewed whence it hath its name, 131. 2 27. A Parliament kept there 304, 1, 41. A Earle of Cambr. his enditement, 346, 2, 45. K. Colledge there, when and by whom built, *fol.* 379. and described to the full, 380, &c.

Candish: Mast. *Thomas Candish* his going about the world, 720, 2, 10. A commemoration of him, 809, 2, 42.

Cane deliuered to the French, 387, 1, 44.

Canterbury: An Archb. thereof hath his goods confiscated, 317, 2, 26. The citie of *Canterb.* when built, 10, 1, 20. The prouince of *Cant.* diuided into Parishes, 59, 1, 6. It is destroyed by the Danes, 90, 2, 58. The Church of *Cant.* repayred with the towne walls, 128, 54. It is burnt, 153, 2, 16.

Cannute, a King of foure kingdoms; his acts and armies, 91, 2, &c. 93, 1, 1.

Captaines for the citie of London, 1050, 1, 18.

Carracks: The first that euer came into England, 808, 2, 3.

Carew: Sir *Nich. Carew* beheaded, 576, 2, 21.

Carkason in France; it is burnt to the ground, 257, 2, 25.

Carlile: Its towne and castle built, 132. 1. 46. A Parliament there, 210, 2, 50. The Earle of Carlile degraded, 221, 2, 22.

Castle: Beston Castle built on a rock, 321, 1, 60. Carlile castle built, 132, 1, 46.

Catherine: one of that name martyred for the Christian faith, 45. 1, 45. one Queene *Catherine* sayled into *France* 361, 2 62. shee dyeth and is buryed at Westminster. 376, 1, 55. Qu: *Kath:* wife to *Henry* the 8. her speech in Court to her King. 543, 1, 8 she is beheaded, 583, 1, 15.

Catsbie: his labour about the Powder-plot, 874 1 &c. 875. he is discovered, 876 &c.

Cæsar: his first voyage into England. 13, 2 4. *London* submitteth vnto him, 14, 1. 20. he is slaine with botkins, 43. The first Emperour in *Rome*, 29 2, 4.

Chamber: The Councell Chamber of *London* new built, 1013, 13, 18.

Charles: Prince *Charles*, King *Iames* second sonne borne 1044, 2, 53. Christned, 1045, 2, 27, 47. his first Tilting, 1033 1, 47. His iourney into *Spaine*, 1035, 1, 20 His Returne from thence *Iin.* 30. The Triumphs at his Marriage of *Marie* sister to the French King, 1035 2, 53. his Raigne and life, 1041, &c. He maketh a Speech in the Parliament house. 1041 2, 5. He holdeth a great Feast in honour of his Marryage, *Iin.* 13. when crowned, 1042. *col.* 1, *Iin.* 30.

Charterhouse: Their Monks executed, 371, 1, 64.

Chastitie: A rare example of it in an Abbatisse of *Coldingham*, 78, 2, 50.

Chaucer: When, where, and how hee lived, where he dyed and was buried 326 1. 12.

Chester: The Abbey there, when built, 132, 1. 27

Chichester: Burnt 157, 1, 38.

Colchester: It is founded, 28, 1, 13. 136, 2, 4. burnt, 138, 1, 54. A Bishop of it murthered, 387. 2. 44.

Creechurch, a Church of that name in London new built from the ground, 1043, 2, 43.

Christ-church, a Colledge of that name in Oxf. suppresst by *Henry* 8. 560, 2. 47.

Church: Hereford Church burnt, when & by whom 119, 1, 45. Clockes first set vp in Churches 561, 54. Churchmen complain'd of by their king, which was K. *Edgar*, with his reformation of them, 84, 1, 63. A new Church built by Sir *Marm. Dorell* at Fulmer in Bucking. and consecrated by the Bp. of Lincoln, 997. 2, 17. Lincolns Inne Church new built, 1043 2, 42. Three thousand men burnt in a church 224, 1, 50.

Cilicester, an ancient Citie neere Reading in Barkshire. 53 2. 55.

Clockes: Their originall from whom, and when set vp in Churches, 561, 54.

Cloth-workers: Priviledges giuen the 233, 2, 63.

Cobham: A Lord *Cobham* built a Colledge in Kent, 268, 1, 14. a L. *Cobham* arraigned, 371, 2 3. *Eleonor Cobham* apprehended, 381, 2, 1. she did penance, 382, 1, 5. Another Lord *Cobham* arraigned, and the manner of it is a fine Storie. 830, &c.

Coyne: New Coine of gold made by the Prince of Wales in Gascoyne, 259, 2, 35.

Colledges: Of the Kings Colledge at Chelsey, 1067, of the Col. of Lawyers & images, *ib.* of the Col. called *Do. Commons*, 1077. The Chirurgions Col. 1078, of *Gresham* Col. 1079, of *Whitington* Col. 1080, of *St. Catherines* Col. *ibid.* of *Cobham* Col. in Kent, 266, 1, 16. *Fodringhay* Col. built, 339 1, 32. *Christchurch* C. suppresst, 560, 2, 47. *Emmanuel* Col. founded, 702, 2, 10. *All Soules* C. when and by whom founded, 382, 2, 1. A Catalogue of the names of the Colledges in both Vniversities, with their Founders and Benefactors, 1057, 1, 2.

Colline, alias *Culline*, its Original, 155, 1, 50.

Combate: A single Combate to bee fought betweene the Earle of *Hereford*, and the Duke of *Suffolke*, 118, 2, 19, 1, 1. and betweene two Scots, 1, 11. The former two Dukes are banished, *Iin.* 30. A combate fought before King *Richard* 2. 282, 2, 16.

Commotion, in Norwich, 383, 1, 38. In Lincolnshire, 573, 2, 43. In Yorkshire, 574, 1, 5. 6. 2. *Iin.* 14. in Somersetshire, *col.* 2. 50.

Compasse. The meanes which Saylers vsed in passing ouer Sea, before Compasses were knowne, 81 c, 2, 3. Who, and how hee attayned this knowledge. 811, 1, 35.

Constantine the Great, his birth, taigne, & great deeds, 44, 1. 29 His mother *Helena* builds a City, and goes to Ierusalem, to see *Christs* sepulchre. 45, 1, 1. The seuerall names of *Constans*, *Constantius*, & *Constantinus* distinguished, & all Emp. of Britaine, 4. 2. *Constantius* ordained Kings of Britaine, 55, 2, 54.

Constantinople: When built, 44, 2, 64. *Byzantium* called *Constantinople*, 45, 2, 10. In the Councill of *Const.* the Apostles Creed was commended by *Theodosius* to be read and sung in the Greek and Latin Churches 47, 1, 30. The Arch bi of Const. constituted Patriarch, *ibid.* An Emperour of Constantinople came into England, 32, 2, 43. Constantinople is taken by the Turks, 393, 2. 10. Conetousnesse was its ouerthrow, *Iin.* 27.

Corsites: Their originall in Rome, 24, 2, 30.

Convocation held by *Cuthbert* Archbi of Canterbury with the articles thereof, 71, 1, 30.

Cooke: Sir *Ed Cook* made L. chiefe Iustice, 1005 1, 31. and Priuie Counseller, *ib.* 48. & put from the place of L. Chiefe Iustice, 1026, 1, 54.

Cooke: A Cooke boyled in Smithfield for poysoning of men. 560, 1, 32. and a Maid vsed for the like fearefull fact, 583, 1, 57.

Coppinger: He and his fellow *Arrington* preach in a cart in Cheapside in London, 761, 2, 53. *Coppinger* sent to Bridewell, and there dyeth, 762, 1, 45.

Cornhill: Saint *Peters* Church in Cornhill founded for an Archbishops Sea, and made the Metropolitan Church of the kingdom, which so endured for 400 yeeres, 38, 2, 58.

Cornewall: It is the fourth part of great Britaine, 5, 1. 40.

Coronels for the Citie of London, 1050, 1, 18.

Cottington: Sir *Francis Cottington*, Ambassador for Spaine, 1048, 2, 39. Hee is made a Baron, 1049, 1, 31.

Coventrie: Sir *Thomas Coventry* made Lord Keeper, *fol.* 1041. *col.* 2. *Iin.* 29.

Covent Garden, 1049, 1, 2.

Councils: The Councell of *Nice*, 44, 2, 57. that Councell made a Creed, 45, 2, 27.

Cow: A Cowe brought foorth foure calues at once, 761, 1, 44.

Cranfield, he is sworn a Priuie Counceller, 1033 1, 46, made Treasurer, but depoted againe and fined, and entowred, 1035, 2, 40

Cranmer: Doctor *Cranmer* Archbishop of Canterbury burnt, 628, 1, 10.

Creed: The Apostles Creed appoynted by a General Councell to be sung in all Churches, 47, 1, 30.

Crewe: Sir *Randall Crewe* discharged of being Lord Chiefe Iustice, 1042, 2, 40.

Cripplegate, when built, & by whom, 1121, 2, 26.

Crosses: Many Crosses set vp, among which Charden crosse, 2 5, 1, 5.

Cromwell, his rising, 553, 1, 40. Lord *Cromwell* made Lord Keeper, 573, 2, 5, and Vicar Generall, *ib.* 13, Knight of the Garter, 575, 1, 3. A great Favourite, 577, 2, 34. He begins to bee in disgrace, 578, 1, 32. Recouereth his grace againe, and is made Earle of Exceter, and Lord Chamberlaine, 579, 2, 5. At last, accused, arraigned, condemned, and executed for treason, 580, 1, 62. & 2, 1 &c. He was but a Blacksmiths sonne, *c.* 2, 50.

Crosse: Cheapside Crosse defaced, 694, 2, 10.

Curfue: or ringing the Bell at 8 of the clocke, why vsed, and when it began, 103, 2.

Cursing: A fearefull example of a father cursing his sonne, 117, 1, 18, 158, 1, 7.

D.

Daers: *Dacres* of the South arraigned for Murther, and executed, 582, 2, 24.

Dagger: A great stirre in London about an Italians wearing a Dagger, 401, 1, 17.

Dancing: The Invention of it by Measures, 18, 1, 18. The Schoole for the Art of Dauncing, 1086, 1, 30.

Danes: They are once, and oft subdued, 77, 2, 12, 11. & 311, 2, 15. They spoyle London, 77, 3, 31, and Winchester, 78, 1, 12. They make a League and breake it, *ibid. l.* 40. Their Ensigne was a Raven, 79, 2, 10. A King of the Danes christened, *ibid.* Another King of the Danes converted and christened 82, 1, 35. They spoyle the East Angles, 90, 2, 25. They destroy Canterbury, *Iin* 58. Their tyranny in England, *Iin.* 65. They possessed all England, 92, 1, 50. That which was called *Dane-gelt*, discharged, 95, 2, 10. They invade England againe, 111, 1, 25. They are compounded with by *William the Conqueror*, for their departure, *Iin.* 61. They come for England with two hundred ships laden with Men of warre, but are discomforted, 115, 2, 18. They are againe subdued by *Edward* the Confessor, 311, 2, 15.

Darby: An Ear. of Darby diseased, but thought to be poysoned, 767, 1, 16.

Delphes: Its Temple burnt, 18, 2, 35.

Denmarke: The Contract of Peace made betweene him and the King of Sweden, *a.* 1006 *ad* 1011. An Ambassador from him to Engl. 786, 1, 3. The L. *Zouch* Ambassador for Denmark, 787, 1, 50. The K. of Den. second coming into Engl. 1012, 1, 20. his bounty, 2. 37 is royally receiued, feasted and much honored, *a* 885, *ad* 889. His daily exercises, *ib.* 2. 35 He feasteth the King and Qu. of England aboard his owne ship, 889. 1. 1. His Fireworkes, *Iin.* 40. His returne, *ibid.* 2, 10. His bountie, *Iin.* 16.

Dertmouth: It is inuaded by the French, 330, 1, 30.

Diademe: The first Emperour of *Rome* that euer wore a Diademe, 2, 1, 30.

Digby: Sir *John Digby* tworne a Priuy Counsellor, 1024, 2 56. created Baron of Sherborne, 1031, 1, 50. committed to tower, 1042 1, 42

Disstaffe: the first vse of it in Engl. 870, 1, 20.

Dineh: He appeareth in the likenesse of a Frier at Danbury in Essex, 327, 2, 37.

Dolphin: A Sea-Dolphin came vp to London bridge, and was taken; with the issue thereof, 306, 1, 62. Seuen more come vp, whereof foure were killed, 351, 2, 1, 1.

Doomes day Booke: What it is, and where now kept, 118, 1. 53.

Dorchester: It was a Bishops Sea, 75, 2, 33. Removed to Lincolne, 121, 1, 57. sorely burnt, 1003, 2, 27

Dorell: Sir *Marmaduke Dorell* built a Church at Fulmer in Buckinghamshire. 997, 2, 17.

Dorsetshire: A strong and strange Birth-quake, or mooning thereof, 696 1, 52.

Dover: Its haven repaired, 741, 2, 48.

Douglas: Sir *Thom. Douglas* arraigned and conuicted, 365, 2, 3.

Downeborow: It is besieged, 735, 2, 42. It is yeelded to him 736, 1, 20.

Drake: Sir *Francis Drake* his voyage about the world, 687, 1, 25 He is Knighted, 688, 1, 37 His voyage to *Domingo* and *Carthagena*, 709, 2, 64. His life and death, 805, 1 12.

Drunkennesse: Lawes against it, 85 2, 42. It was once said That Englishmen were more giuen to drinke then to prayer, 599. 2, 37. of 180 persons that died with drunkennes, as well women as men, 385, 2 25. A great disorder among Eng. Souldiers in their drinke, which bred a great Plague among them, 753, 1, 20.

Dudley: He and his companion entowred 486, 2, 66. arraigned and condemned, 487, 2, 3. he is executed. 488, 1, 50. *Dudley* writ a Booke called *The Tree of a Commonwealth*, but it neuer came to the Kings hand *Iin.* 56.

Dukes: Dukes created, 318, 1. 53. of diuers Dukes that lost their honours in *Henry* the 4 raigne, 324, 2, 5. The bitter words of the Duke of Norfolke against Cardinall *Wolsey*, 553, 2, 20. The D. of Suffolke banished and murthered, 388, 1, 7. The D. of Exceter. fetcht out of Sanctuary and put in prison, 400, 2. 54. The D. of Bauaria & the Palsgraue came into Engl. 577, 1, 54. The first Duke of Cornwall by whom created, 991, 2, 21. The D. of Buckingham his life, honours and end. See *Backing.* or *Villers.*

Dunkirke in Flanders burnt, *f.* 633, *col.* 1. *l.* 54.

Dunstable: the Towne and Priorie therof built by a notable Thiefe whose name was *Dunne*, *f.* 136 2. 53.

Durham. *William* the Conquerour comming thither, what he did, and what he found, 111, 2, 37. The Bish. thereof once left the Church of Durham like a Desart, but afterward returned againe, *lin.* 45. A Bishop of Durham slaine, 118, 1, 8.

E.

EDward the first called *Longshanke*, his life and raigne, *fo.* 199 *&c.* The Pope grants him the tenth of all Ecclesiasticall Benefices for one yeere, in recompence of his expences in the Holy land, 199, 1, 53. He is crowned, *ib.* 2. 53. He summons *Leonel* Prince of *Wales* to come to his Parliament, who refused to come, and said Hee remembred the death of of his father *Griffin*, *c.* 2, 58 He doth forbid Vfury to the Iewes, 200, 1, 1. Hee and his Queene goe to Glastenbury, and there soiourne, where hee caused *Arthurs* bones to bee taken vp, and hee measured for length and bignesse, 200, 2, 30 Hee goeth into Wales, 201, 2, 30: he enters it with an army, 202, 1, 17 Hee had a sonne named *Edward*, borne at Carnarvan, *c.* 2, *l.* 40. A policie of his to winne the Welsh, *c.* 2, *l.* 60 & 203, 1, 1. He takes a journey into Scotland, to decide great matters, 204, 2, 47. The Pope allowes him another Tenth towards the taking of Ierusalem, 205, 1, 43. He takes all the Priories lands into his hands, 206, 1, 60. Hee causeth all the Monasteries to be searched, and their money to be brought vp to London, *c.* 2, *l* 40 He winnes a Battel at Faulkerke in Scotland, at which were slaine about twenty thousand Scots, 207, 2, 5 He marrieth *Margaret* the French Kings sister, 208, 1, 10. He subdueth a great part of Scotland, *lin.* 55. Hee brings backe the Courts of Kings Bench and Exchequer from Yorke to London, 209, 1. 20. Hee goes againe into Scotland with a great army, subdues many places, tooke many prisoners, and executed them heere in England, 210, 1, 42, &c. Hee falleth sicke in Scotland, sendeth for his sonne, giueth him many good advertisements, among the rest commandeth him not to be too hasty in taking the Crown of England, vntill hee had reuenged the Injuries done on the Scots, 212, 1, 60, *col.* 2. *l.* 1, &c. He dieth, and is buried at Westminster, 212, 2 40 &c.

Edward the second, his life and raigne, 213, &c. he was faire bodied, but vnstedfast and light, *ibid.* Hee causeth Bishop *Langton* to be arrested, and sent prisoner to Wallingford, and to confiscate his goods, because hee reprooved him in his fathers life time of his insolent life, *ibid.* Hee is marryed to *Isabel*, the daughter of *Philip the Faire* King of France, *lin.* 57. Hee calleth *Pierce* of *Gaveston* out of exile (contrary to his fathers command) and he ruleth him at his pleasure, *ibid. l.* 27, & *c.* 2, *lin.* 12. His Councell accuseth this *Pierce*, *lin.* 20, who is banished, but with great Rewards and preferments from the King, *ibid.* & 214, 1, 1. Hee and his Barons are at variance, and in hope of being ayded against them, see what he doth, 214, 2, 17. He held a Parliament, in which once againe (though sore against his minde) *Pierce* of *Gavestone* is vtterly banished all his Kingdomes, 215, 1 10. whom notwithstanding hee afterward received as an heauenly gift, *ibid. l* 50. about whom there is great stirre, 216, 1, 4. His Queene is brought to bed of a sonne, whose name is *Edward*, *l.* 34. A vow of his made, which he kept, 217, 1, 11. Hee goes againe for Scotland, but returnes with much dammage, and great hazard of his owne person, 221, 1, 20. He sends his Queen into France, and afterward banisheth her and her eldest sonne, 223, 1, 17. He feares her returne with the power of Aliens, and therefore fortifieth himselfe, *ibid.* & *col.* 2, 1. Hee requires ayd of the Londoners; they refuse him, and stick to the Queene and her sonne, *ibid. lin.* 25, & 60. Hee is taken prisoner, 224, 2, 1, adjudged to bee deposed, *lin.* 40. Assoone as the Queene heard of his being deposed, and of her sonnes Election, she was full sorrowfull, and almost beside her selfe; and her sonne lamented and swore, that against his fathers will he would neuer take the Crowne, *l* 52. Hee is perswaded to it, 225, 1, 10. He yeelds to them, but with teares, *l.* 25. Hee resignes the Crowne, *lin.* 48: afterward liues like a Monke, *col.* 2, *lin* 30. None of his well-willers were to haue accesse vnto him, *lin.* 65. His manifold miseries recited, 226, 1, 10 He was crowned with Hay, *lin.* 30, shaven with colde water taken out of a ditch, *lin* 50. A Consultation for murthering him, *col.* 2, *per totum* The manner of it fearefull, *fol.* 227, *col.* 1, *lin.* 15, 30. The Executioners end, *col.* 2, *lin.* 10. 20

Edward the third: His Birth at Windsor, 227, 1, 60. Coronation at Westminster, *ibid.* Commendations both for personage and inclination, *ibid.* 2. 60. Governed at first by Queen *Isabel* his mother, *ibid.* In danger to be slain, escapes, 228, 2, 30. His title to France, *ibid.* 40 King *Edward* the third, with others, goe to Sea like Merchants, 230, 2, 1, leaving his Brother *Iohn* of Eltham Protector of the Realme, *ibid.* Hee assumes all his mothers Ioyncture into his hands, assigning her an annuitie, *ibid.* 2, 10 Denies ayd to *Edward Baliol*, and why, *ibid* 40. His great conquest over the Scots, 231, 1, 50. Sendeth *Edward Baliol* &c. to keepe the Realme of Scotland, and receiues homage of Earle *Patricius*, who eftsoones rebels againe, *ibid.* 2, 1. Keepes his Christmas at Wallingford, *ibid.* 40. takes homage of the Duke of Brittaine, 50. Enters Scotland; and is solicited for a peace by the French King, 232, 1, 16. Makes an In-rode vpon the Scots priuily, and on the sudden: where many Earles, &c. submit and yeeld vnder conditions, and the rest hide themselues, 232, 2, 50. Makes Knights, 233, 2. 40. Writes to the French King perswasiue letters tending to amitie, 234, 1, 30. King *Edward* the third, Founder of Kings Hall in Cambridge, made vp now with other houses into *Trinitie* Colledge, *ib.* 2. 30. Takes vp Wooll at a low price all England ouer, and appoints Corne and Glebe-land to serue for his warres, 234, 2, 50. The King and Queen passe the Seas with a great Nauie into Flaunders, *ibid.* 60. Debates of revenge for spoyle done by the French Pyrats, 235, 2, 1. King *Edward* takes on him the Vice-regiment of the Empire, as in the D. of Bavarias right, *ibid.* 2, 20. Invades and spoyles France: and so matcheth a Cardinall for flowting him a little before, *ibid.* 40. Read afore at the tenth line. King *Edward* on edge to bee vpon the bragging French King, offers to stay 3 dayes for his preparation: But the French King instead of meeting King *Edward*, puls downe Bridges, and stops vp passages, that hee may escape without pursuite, 236, 1, 1. Is encouraged by the Flemings to stile himselfe King of Fraunce, and put the *Flower de lyces* into his Armes: vrging a necessitie thereof before they dare doe him fealtie, *ibid* 50. His spoyle at Bonony, *ibid* 2, 30. His Sea-fight and victory ouer the French, with other occurrences betwixt the French and the English, 237, 1, 30. Hee besiegeth *Tourney*: but vpon request graunts truce, *ibid.* 2, 50. Missing of the Money hee sent for home, hee returnes into England secretly, and enters the Tower of London, *ibid.* Imprisons the delinquent Lords and others for his disappoyntment of money for the siedge, 238, 1, 1, 30. King *Edward* will not heare of *Magna Charta*, *&c. ibid.* 10. His entring vpon Scotland occasioned by *David* King of Scots, threatning to invade England, 2, 50. Receiues supply from the Religious houses towards the maintenance of the warres; and commands survey of strength and discipline, 239, 1, 30. King *Edward* his petitory (yet peremptory) Letters to the Pope, for reformation of abuses, and remedy of grievances, occasioned to this Realme by his Holinesse Graunts, 239, 1, 50. He feasteth sumptuously at Windsor, and builds the Round table, *ibid.* 2, 20. Recouers vnto *John Montfort* his Dukedome of Brittaine againe, *ibid.* 40. Winnes many townes, and a great part of Gascoigne, 240, 2, 10. Hath a Graunt of Wools, *ibid.* Sayles into Normandy, 241, 2, 1. Lodgeth at Hogges then in Marcelles, burning and spoyling euery where as he passeth, *ibid.* 20. Hee besiegeth Cane in Normandy, *ib.* 40. He fires the Castle of Roche Blaunch: besides the spoyle of 302 Carts &c. laden with armour and victuals, and repaires the Bridges & passages for pursuite, 242, 1, 10. 40 Meets the French King ayded by two other Kings and huge armies, and proffers them advantage, *ibid.* The King hath a sore conflict to get his passage ouer a fourd, *ibid.* Remoues to Cressie field: and how hee ordered his battell, *ibid.* 50. His Counter-Banner, and the signification, *ibid.* 2, 1. Hath after much and doubtfull conflict a glorious victory: Kings, Princes and Prelats falling in it, *ibid* 40. King *Edward* besiegeth Caleis, and fortifies his Campe, and stops the passage to it by Sea, 244, 1, 10. Looseth some Shippes: Receiues ayd: and thereupon the French King flieth, and his tayle is cut off by *Lancaster* and *Northampton*, who slewe and tooke many of them, *ibid.* 2, 30. King *Edw.* hath Caleis yeelded vp into his hands: and the manner how, *ibid.* 40, 60. Causeth the Mannors of Markes and of Hoy to bee fortified with Hogs-heads of stones (instead of walls) while wals were in building, 245, 1, 1. Great pestilence and fluxe causeth truce, *ibid.* 10. Erects a castle at Risbanke for preservation of Caleis, 1, 20. Loseth many ships, and hardly escapes drowning, *ibid.* 30. The King holds a Councell, decreeing punishment and banishment to such his servants as should take vp victuals in his name without ready money, or against the sellers will, *ibid.* 50. King *Edw.* 3. elected King of Almaine, *ibid.* 2, 1, with his answere, *ibid.* He demands (by the Du. of *Lancaster*) and hath homage and fealtie of the Earle of Flanders, *ibid.* 20. who neverthelesse stands out afterwards vpon termes, and making havocke where he goes; but is the loser himselfe, and shortly forced to flight, 246, 2, 20. The King &c. sayled into Flanders with an army, and vpon request renues truce: but returnes into England to solemnize the Translation of St. *Thomas* the Confessor, 248, 1, 40. Prevents the losse of Caleis like to haue been betrayed by *Emericus*, *ib.* 50. His device to betray the betrayers, *ibid.* 2, 30. It taketh effect, 249, 1, 40 He pursues them that flie: who perceiuing his small company, returne vpon him: but hee holds them to it so close, that they flie, and hee after long pursuit, returnes firme Conquerour, *ibid.* 2 *per totum.* King *Edw.* holds S. *Georges* feast at Windsor, augmenting the Chappell & number of Canons, and erecting an Order of poore Knights: and is first founder of the Garter, 250, 1, 10. The Habit of the Order, *ibid.* 50. King *Edward* by a Sea-fight strange and victorious revengeth Spanish iniuries done to the English fleete, &c. *ibid.* 60, 2, 50. Bewayles the losse of Sir *Richard Goldsburgh*, *ibid.* Creates Earles; and restores *Maltravers* to his lands, 251, 2, 20. Hee purchaseth the Castle of Guisnes in France, of English Exiles, 252, 2, 50. that by a mad adventure had won the same, 251, 2, 10 His ready answer to *Ioh. de Valoys* the French King, charging him with truce-breach therin, *ibid.* 60. King *Edward* hath a great impost of transportiue Wooll granted towards his right in France to bee recovered, 255, 1, 40. While he is wasting and spoyling in France, Berwick is taken by the Scots: but hee returning thither, soone recouers it, and spares the trespassers, *ibid.* 2. 40. Enlargeth and beautifieth Windsor Castle, *fol.* 264, 1, 40. K. E. 3. vpon none-performance of French-

THE TABLE.

proffe-

proffered conditions and graunts, inuades Burgundy. 264,2,10. Spoiles and burnes as hee goes. *ib.* 40. Who on horseback died, looseth men by cold weather, vpon Black Monday (thence named.) *ibid.* 40. Makes firme peace with Fraunce, and the condition thereof: then vpon ransome releaseth the French King. *ibid.* 50. Began a Parliament: wherein he makes full confirmation by oath of the peace, &c. 265, 1, 1. Makes restitution of lands, &c. to the Priors, &c. that were aliens. *ibid.* 1, 10. With the forme of instrument. *ibid* Petitioned for ayde against the Pagans, by Spaniards and Cypriots, &c. at his Iusts in Smithfield. *ibid* 2 30. The K. on the anniuersary of his birth graunts pardons, and priuiledges amongst others: that the lawes shall thenceforth be pleaded in English. *ibid.* 2, 60. Inuests his other sonnes into higher dignities. 266, 1, 1. The King hath a Subsidy of woolls *ib* 1. 1. Punisheth corrupt Iustices. Forbids Peter-pence. *ibid.* 60. Composeth a controuersie betweene the Vniuersities and the Friers Mendicants in them. 267, 1, 40. Borroweth great sums of money. 268, 1, 50. Confirming the great charters, is granted a very great Subsidy. *ibid.* 2, 20. How to be leuied, and of whom. *ibid.* A Catalogue of the Shires and summes, *ibid*, 50. The King goes to remoue the siege of Rochell: but is hindred by contrary weather, to his very deare expence, 270, 1, 40. He restraines the Earle of Warwicks outrage, and mischieuous rage against the Prior and Covent of *Eueshame*, discharging him from being of his Counsell, 271, 2 20. & 30. Creates his grandchilde *Rich.* (sonne of *Edward* the blacke Prince) Earle of Chester, Duke of Cornwall, and Prince of Wales, 271, 2, 1. The King lyes sick at Havering, 272, 1, 30. His louing answer and satisfaction to the Londoners concerning their Liberties, which the Duke of Lancaster stucied to adnull, 274, 2, 60. The King being ouer-much confident in the wisedome and aduice of a bold woman that had vsed to haunt him; euen neere his death, crediting her flattering promises of recouery, neglects his soules health to discourse of hunting, gaming & other *ibid*, 50. None offering him prayer or counsell; till at last a Priest taking deepe consideration of his present estate, with much pitty and piety called vpon him to call vpon God, 269, 2, 12. Vnto whose words, the King listning, attempted to speake what was in his mind, *ibid*, 20. But what for weaknesse and what for contrition, &c. for his sinnes, his speech failed him; onely with the name *I E S V* (his last word) he deceased. *ibid*, His end and departure. His praises, &c. *ibid.* 40.

Edward the fourth, his life and raigne, 415, 416, &c. Hee began his raigne being about 18. yeares of Age, *ibid*, 1, 40. Hee was of great wit, but of greater trouble, *ibid.* 50. He raised a great Armie, fought a great battell, in which were slaine 35091, 415, 2, 60. He is crowned at Westminster, 416, 1, 33. Hee takes his iourney towards Scotland, *ibid*, 2, 60. He calls a Parliament, 417, 1, 62. Hee is married, 418, 2, 16. He maketh 48. Knights of the Bath, 419, 1, 37. His Queene is crowned, *ibid*, Hee takes King *Henry*, who is brought to Tower with his legges bound to the stirrops, *ibid*, 50. His Queene is deliuered of a daughter, *ibid*, 2, 24. His sister the Lady *Margaret* is married to the Duke of Burgony, 421, 1, 33. Hee is taken prisoner, 422, 1, 30. He was preached against at Saint Paules by one Doctor *Goddard*, *ibid*, 2, 27 He flyeth beyond the Seas, *ibid*, 42. In whose absence they elected King *Henry*, who had bin entowred for the space of nine yeares, 423, 1, 13. And this *Edward* was proclaimed Vsurper, *ibid*, 21. His Queene meane time was brought to bed of a sonne, who was afterward King *Edward* the sixth, *ibid*, 30. The King returnes for England, and takes King *Henry*, and puts him into the Tower againe, 423, 1, 40. And in 63, 2, 1. King *Edward* granteth pardon to many, and afterward cuts off their heads, 424, 1, 30. Hee came to London with 3000 men, at which very instant, King *Henry* was murthered in the Tower, *ibid*, 2, 3 King *Edward* entereth London, 425, 1, 35. He dealt strangely with *Nevill* Archbishop of Yorke, with whom he promised to feast, and in steed of so doing, spoyled him, and sent him to prison, 426, 1, 27. Hee conuerts that Archbishops Mitre to a crowne, *ibid* 56. He prepareth for a warre in France, 126, 2, 43. Thither he sayleth, 427, 1, 1. He is three weekes passing betweene Dover and Calis, *ibid*, 20 His returne into England, 428, 2, 25. His practises against *Henry* Earle of Richmond, 429, 1, 26. Hee hath a daughter borne named *Anne*, *ibid*, 66. Hee sought much for the forfaiture of penall lawes, 431, 1, 60. Hee had another daughter borne named *Bridget*, *ibid*, 2, 55. He sends the Duke of Glocester with an Armie into Scotland, 432, 1, 34. He banqueteth the Maior and Aldermen of London, *ib*, 2, 56. A great Christmasse kept by him and his Queene at Eltham, wherein were aboue 2000 persons serued, 433, 1, 5. Hee dieth at Westminster, and is buried at Winsor, *ibid*, 1, 46, &c. A description of *Edward* the fourth, 434, 1, 65.

Edward the fifth, his life and raigne, 434, 435, &c. He made an Oration on his death-bed, 436, 1, 66, &c. His marriage, 452, 2, 60. *Warwick* takes it haynously, and pursues the King with an Armie, and makes him flye, 453, 1, 1. Doctor *Shaw* shewes in a Sermon, that this King nor the Duke of Clarence were lawfully begotten, *ibid*, 42.

Edward the sixth, his life and raigne, 593, &c. Hee was borne at Hampton Court, 593, 1, 40. Hee is nobly receiued by the Councell and others into the Tower, *ibid*, 2, 40. Hee maketh many Knights, and among them, the then Lord Maior of London, *ibid*, 50. He creates *Somer* Earle of Hertford Duke of Somersset, 594, 1, 5. Hee was crowned at Westminster, *ibid*, 35. Hee suppresseth all Images in Churches, *ibid*, 2, 46. In his raigne began the Latine Service to cease, and the English to be vsed, *ibid*, 2, 54. He causeth his Protector to commit bloudy *Bonner*, and *Bourner* to prison, *ibid*, 2, 57. He had a Parliament, wherein were enacted many holy and wholesome lawes, both for Religion, and for the Commons, 595, 1, 10. His Proclamation for receiuing the Sacraments in both kindes, *ibid*, 2, 5. He puts downe Masse in all the Realme, *ibid*, 58. He sells Chauntry lands, 604, 1, 35. Hee createth Dukes and Earles, 605, 2, 40. He is sore sicke of a cough, 607, 1, 17. he dieth at Greenewich, *ib*, 2, 51, buried at Westminster, *ibid*, 54. The manner of his death opened, *ibid*, 58. After his disease Lady *Iane* was proclaimed Queene, 610, 1, 1. Lady *Mary* proclaimed Queene, 35.

Edward the Confessor: he is canonized a Saint, 311, 2, 54. he subdued the Danes, *ibid*. 15. his gathering of a mighty Navie into the Haven of Sandwich, against *Magnus* King of Normandy, 95, 1, 28. He forsaketh his wife, and why? 96, 1, 3. A great commendation of him, 98, 2, 2.

Edward the Prince: when borne, 575, 1, 6. A motion of marriage betweene him, and the Queene of Scots, 584, 1, 20.

Edenbrough: It was besieged, 675, 2, 50. yeelded to the English, 676, 2, 60. The causes rehearsed, 677, 1, 4.

Edgar: That he was rowed with eight Kings, 85, 2, 57. His raigne and burial, 86, 1, 2. His son *Edward* crowned, and by whom, *ib*, 11. *Edward* his sonne murthered and buried, 86, 1, 21.

Edgerton: Made Lord Chancellour, 771, 1, 63.

Edmond: King *Ed.* his raigne, 64, 1, 40 Cruelly martyred by the Danes, *ibid*, 2, 60.

Edmonds: Sir *Tho. Ed.* made a priuie Councellour, 1026, 2, 13.

Edmundsbury: It's foundation and priuiledges, 93, 1, 7. Burnt, 892, 1, 32. King *Iames* liberality towards the repaire of it, *ibid*, 44.

Earth-quakes: An vniuersall Earthquake, 46, 2, 38. Nice destroyed with it, *ibid*. More strange Eerthquakes, 56, 1, 50. An Earthquake in Lombardy continuing fourty dayes, and removing a whole towne a good distance, 138, 2, 50. An Earthquake lasting two dayes, with Thunder and Lightning, 368, 2, 27. Another strange Earthquake, 668, 1, 60. 679, 1, 23. 687, 1, 37. One in Kent, *ibid*, 2, 15 The Earth moued and sunke in a strange manner, 783, 1, 10.

Ebranke: A sonne of *Mempricius* a King of Britaine, 9, 1, 55. *Brutus* his second sonne succeeded him in his kingdome, *ibid*, 2, 29.

Ecclipses: Foure in one day, 586, 1, 38.

Electors: The Constitution of them in Germanie for the more peaceable chusing of the Emperour, 82, 2, 1.

Elie: *Williams* the Conquerour conquered the Isle of Elie, 114, 2, 1. *Elie* made a Bishops Sea, 237, 2, 30.

Elizabeth, Queene of England, of euer blessed memory, her Birth, 569. 1. 3. Where, and where Christned, and who were her Godfather and Godmothers, *ibid*, &c. Her life and raigne, 635, 636, &c. The first thing she did, was to proclaime her care of establishing the true Religion, 635, 1, 20. She puts in practise the Oath of Supremacie, *lin.* 45, She is crowned, *ibid*, 2, 34. A motion made to her for marriage, with her noble, wise, and religious antwere vnto it, 636, 1, 2. Shee bringeth the Service to be sagaine in the English Tongue, 639, 2, 20. She causes Church-images to bee burnt, 640, 1, 21. Shee sends ayde into Scotland against the French, 641, 1, 55. Shee is neere touched with the French troubles, 648, 1, 56. Her Crowne claymed by the French, 650, 1, 30. Her Progresse thorow Cambridge, 657, 2, 30. Her Progresse to Oxford, 660, 1, 3. She sends her declaration to the King of Spaine, 682, 1, 43, &c. A practise to haue married her to *Monsieur* of France, 689, 2, 3. Commissioners appointed for that purpole, *lin.* 10. *Monsieur* commeth over in person, 690, 1, 16. The Queene is entertained by the Londoners, comming home from Progresse, 700, 2, 23. Shee makes a Speech at the Dissolution of a Parliament, 702, 2, 13. Shee sends the Earle of Leicester with a Royall Armie to relieue the Hollanders, 711, 1, 47. Her Letters to the Lord Maior of London, 728, 1, 58. Shee goeth in person to Tilbury Campe, 749, 1, 16. Shee comes to Saint Paules Church in London, to heare the Sermon of Thankesgiving, 751, 1, 35. Her Prayer at the going forth of her Hoast. 772, 1, 54. Her Progresse into Hampshire, 797, 1, 10 A large letter written, wherein is declared to the full, her victories ouer both Spanish & Irish, 797, 798, 799, 809, &c. Shee augmenteth the meanes and reuenues of the free Grammar Schoole of Shrewsbury, in the County of Salop, in the 13. yeere of her raigne, and giveth power to the chiefe Schoolemaster, by whose meanes the chiefe reuenues of the Schoole was procured, to make ordinances both concerning the rule and gouernment: as also the disposing of the reuenues thereof, 1067, 1, 46. Shee dyeth, 812, 2, 25. A commemoration of her, 813, 814. Her Funerall, 819, 1, 32.

Emanuel: The Colledge of that name in Cambridge founded, 771, 1, 63.

Empresse: She is besieged, 146 1, 30.

Empson: He and *Dudley* sent to Tower, 486, 2, 66. Hee is arraigned, 488, 1, 7. Attainted of high Treason at Parliament, *lin.* 14. He is executed, *lin.* 50.

England: A briefe Description of it, *fol* 1. 2. diuided in foure Countries, *ibid. col.* 1 *lin.* 16. The antiquitie of this Commonwealth. 1 43. &c. which, and by whom it received the Faith, 38. 1. 27. A foule aspersion on it for its Drunkennesse. 99. 2, 37. The *Danes* invade it, 111. 1, 25. So doe the *Scots*, 113. 1. 15. The English fight a great Battell on the Seas, 270 2. 37. *England* called one of the five Nations, 352. 1. 57.

Epesus:

Epesus: When, and by whom founded, 20.2.15
Excester, or *Exceter*. Its Bishopricke, when, and by whom created, 86.2.16. Confirmed by *Edward the Confessor*. 95.1.61. It was besiedged by *William* the Conquerour, & yeelded 109.2.55. A strange sickenes by meanes of a stincke of the Prison there, 719.2.3.
Exchange. The *Royall-Exchange* built, when, and by whom, 668.1,10. how it was furnished and adorned for Queen *Elizabeths* comming to it, 868.2.53.
Exchequer: The Originall of that Booke there called *The Blacke-Booke*, 154.1.23. It was removed from Westminster to Northampton, 168, 1, 29. The Courts of Exchequer and Kings bench remained at Yorke seven yeares 209,1.20.

F.

FAire: *Bartholmew Faire*, and others forbid by reason of the great Plague, 1045, 2, 63.
Famine: Of a Famine which caused the people to eate Catts, Doggs, yea, and Mans flesh, 110.2,25. So great a Famine with a Plague, that their quicke were scarse able to bury their Dead, 132, *in.* 50 An other Famine wherein the Lord Maior of *London* made a wise provision, 306, 1,2. 378, 1.45. *ibid.* 30. A fearefull Famine wherein men were constrained to eate Doggs flesh, yea, Women their owne children, and Theeues in prison devoured one another 218, 1, 17.
Fawkes: He is apprehended, 879,2,1. His Associats in the Powder-plot were some taken some slaine, 880,2,1.
Feast: A Feast wherein was spent more bloud then wine, 89.2,45. A Feast, whereat there was meat enough left to haue satisfied ten thousand men, 267,2,45. 268,1,1.
Felt: Felt-makers made a Corporation, 885, 2, 35.
Felton: He is arraigned, and condemned, and executed for killing the Duke of *Buckingham* 1044,1,66.
Fencer: A Fencer that was a great Challenger hanged, 855, 2, 35.
Fenton: Lord Viscount *Fenton* made Priuie Councellor, 898, 2.48
Fire: Strange Fires appeared in the night, 302 1,23. Many strange fires both in *France* and *England* in one yeare, 1029,1,30 A great Fire in Broad-street *London* 1035,2,5. The Lord *Wimbletons* house burnt in the Strand. 1044,1,62, *London* burnt, 142,2,1. S. *Pauls* steeple burnt, 121.2,45. 142,2,1. Burnt with Lightning, 384,2,15. Many other fires which the Reader shall finde in their proper places, that is in the names of those places which were burnt.
Fire-Patricke: *Florence Fire-Patricke* arraigned found guilty, and executed, 1048,1,60.
Fish: A strange Fish like a Man taken, and kept in *Oxford* Castle, 157, 1, 44. Fishes like men and women, seene in North-Holland, 220, 2, 52.
Flaunders: Its originall 72,1,15. The *Flemmings* voyded out of *England*, 149,1,5.
Flies: They were seene in strange manner in heapes in the month of February, on the Riuer of Aven, 679, 1, 23.
Flouds: Great Water-flouds, &c. in *Henry* the Fourths time, *fol.* 331. *col.* 2, *lin.* 31. High Flouds at *London*, 1045,1,38. At Bury in Suffolke, 308,1,50. Great Flouds in England, Wales, and Ruthia, 889,1,2, *fol.* 768,2,23. *fol.* 769,1,17.
France, French: They relieue the Welch, 333, 2,20. They helpe *Owin Glendowerdewe*, 334. 1, 23. A Peace proclaimed betweene the French and English, 1044,2,47. The originall of the French Nation, and of Paris therein, 47, 2, 33. The King of France came into England, 155,2,25. Two Kings of France at once, 364.1.1. All Christian Princes seeke to appease the warres in Fraunce, 383, 2, 33. Monsieur of France comes in person to see Queene *Elizabeth*, 690,1,17. His titles, *f.* 264. The States negotiate to haue Monsieur their Protector, *lin.* 38. He armes himselfe against Spaine, *col.* 1, *lin.* 40. His endeavour to suppresse Antwerpt, 691,1,43. Hee returneth into France sore perplexed 692,1,30. A touch of the auncient Kings of France, *col.* 2, *lin.* 8. *Clouis* was the first king of France that euer received the Christian Faith, *col.* 2, *lin.* 51. The French king *Henry* the fourth murthered, 897,1,8. The French king slaine, 758, 1,15. Hee sueth to Deepe, and our Queene releeueth him, *lin.* 30.47. He recouereth the field, and ouerthroweth the Duke of Maine, *col.* 2, *lin.* 24. The French refuseth English ayde for regayning of Calis, saying: We are new friends and old enemies, 770,1,50. The French king inuested with the order of the Garter, 782,1,4. A French king dieth at London, 266,1,34.
Fryer: The deuill appeared at Danbury in Essex in the likeneese of a Fryer, 227,2,37. Fryers houses suppressed, 571, *lin.* 63. Fryer *Forrest* burnt, 575,1,45.
Frogges: The Abderites droven out of their Country by Frogges and Rats, 27,2,48.
Frost: A great Frost and Snowe *Anno* 1614. 1023,1,4. Another Frost, 1034,1,47. Of a Frost and Snowe continuing from October the first, vntill the latter end of February, 67, 2,7. Of a Frost holding from November to Aprill, 116,2,60. 374,2,37. Another, 891, 2,21.
Fullmer: Fullmer Church built by Sir *Marmaduke Dorall*, 997,2,17.

G.

GAllen: The famous Phisitian when hee flourished, *fol.* 37, *col.* 2, *lin.* 53.
Gamoth: The invention of it when, and by whom, 82.2,36.
Gardiner: A Gardiners sonne, Emperour of Rome, 42,1,47.
Garter: The first founder of the order of the Garter, 250,1,20.
Gaueston: *Edward* the first charged his sonne *Edward* the second on a curse, not to call home *G.* whom he had banished, 212,2,10. But he did though, 213,1,25. And hee ruleth him at his pleasure, *col.* 2, *lin.* 12. Hee was againe banished by Act of Parliament, which done, the King gaue him infinite riches, and great commands in Gascoyne, accompanies him to Bristowe, and sends him into Ireland, 213,2,65. & 214.1,1. Hee is a second time abjured the land, 215,1,10. Yet he is sent for againe, 53. At last taken and beheaded, 210, 1,24.
Gaules. They wonne Italy, 25,1,66.
Gawen. His bones found of great length, 122, 1,30.
Germanie. It is invaded by the Sarasens, 82, 2,45.
Giles. Giles Cripple gate Church, when and by whom built, 135,2,43.
Glamorgan. Its shire whence it had its name, 10,2 2. The winning of it, 129,2,16.
Glasses. The first making of Venice Glasses in England, 104,2,7.
Glastenbury. The first Church in Britraine was there built, with its antiquities, 31,1,20.30. King *Arthur* being dead, was buried there: and how, and when found, with diuers other strange circumstances of him, 55, 1.2. *Knulphus* King of the West Saxons, built in it a Chappell of gold and siluer, 76,2 4. *Thurstane* an Abbot of Glasse, slew his Monks, 119,2,25. It is burnt, 157,1,1.
Gloucester. The Duke of Glosc. condemned to die, after his death, 317,2,16 The first Earle and Bishop of Glosc. who, *fol.* 57, *lin.* 20. This Citie spoyled by the Welch, 132, 1,58. Burnt, 140,1,61.
Gnats. A strange fight of theirs at Shine, 305, 1,36.
Godfathers. And Godmothers their first institution, 39,2,1.
Godwin. His pedigree, 90,2,20. Hee is suddenly taken speechlesse, 97,1,10. Godwins Sands when, and whence so called, 133,1,60.
Granaries. New Granaries and Store-houses built by the Citie of London, 996,2,42.
Grant-Bridge. When, and where built, 131, 2,34.
Gray. The Lord *Gray* sent to Tower, 581,1,29 Beheaded, 582, 1, 52. The Lord *Gray* arraigned, 830, *col.* 1, 2 *lin.* 1.
Grave. It is both wonne and lost, 731,1,40.
Gravesend. Burnt by the French, 282,2,54.
Greece. The Patriarch of Greece, which resigneth his State and stile vnto the Metropolitane of Mosco, 874, *col. lin.* 17.
Greene-land. It is discovered by the English, 1017,2,32. Eight men left by chance in the yeere 1630. and lived nine moneths there in Winter, till the London Fleete the yeere following 1631 fetcht them away, 1049,1,35.
Greenwich. Its Tower by whom built, & when, 376,2,53.
Gresham. Sir *Thomas Gresham* diseased, 686, 2,52.
Greuill. Sir *Fulke Greuill* made privie Councellour, *fol.* 1013, *col.* 1, *lin.* 9. *Lodowick Greuill* preest to death for a murther, 757,1,50.
Gruyne. The English arrive there, Sir *Io. Norris* viewes the situation and strength of the Towne, 752,2,8&c. The Spaniards come to relieue it, 753,2,45.
Guise. The Duke of Guise and the French king slaine, 757,2,4. The Cardinall of Guise slain, 758,1,1.
Gunnes. The first invention and vse of them in England, 572 1,50. The first iron Gunne cast, when, and where, 584 2,45 A house blowne vp with Gunpowder, 696 2,51. Gunpowder plot, 874,1,52. It is discouered 876,2,33
Guyana. it is first discovered by Sir *Walter Rawleigh*, 091,64.

H.

HAcket: That great Impostor, that should haue beene anointed King, 761,1,54. Hee was deservedly Crowned with an Halter at Tyborne, 762,1,30.
Hailstones: Some as bigge as mens fists fell in *Derbyshire*, wherein were seene the races of men, and Gunnecholes, 589,1,32.
Haire: Long haire in vse, but suppressed with an example of one terrified in Conscience for it, 141,2,53.
Halfepence: The halfepence of *Ianus* forbidden, 352,1,3.
Hall: A Catalogue of all the Halles of both Vniuersities, with their founders and benefactors, 1057,1,&c.
Hambleton, Marquesse *Hambleton* deceased, 1036,1,11. Hambleton a Towne in *Scotland* besieged, 666,2,50. Yeelded to the *English*, 667,1,27.
Hampton: *Hampton Court* builded by Cardinall *Woolsie*, and given King *Henry* the eight, 525 2, 30.
Handkerchefes: The time was that they were worne in Hats as Brouches, and Loue-tokens, 1039, 1,43.
Hanging: Five men hanged, and afterward pardoned, 386.1,30.
Hauke Wood: See *Io. Hauke woods* life and death. 308,2,38.
Haulots: Their habites of note prescribed by Act of Parliament, and gotten by Londoners of the King 254 1.23.
Harlod: Or King *Harlod* the eldest sonne of *Godwin*, and his noble Acts, 98.2,51. His death, 100,2.1. His Body begged, and where buried, 101,1,5.
Harpagus: He was compelled by *Astiages* to eat his owne sonnes flesh, 73,1,40.
Hartford: The Terme kept there two seuerall times, 696,1,14 765,1,64.
Hastings: It was burnt when, and by what meanes, 280,1.11.
Hatton. Sir *Christopher Hatton* made Lord Chancellour, 742,2,10. He dieth, 764,1,54.
Hawkins: Sir *John Hawkins* life, and death, 807, 1,40.
Hay: The Lord *Hayes* sworne privie Councellour, *fol.* 1027, *col.* 1, *l.* 28. He is married, 1028, 2,27.

Haydock:

Haydocke: That pretended Preacher, who prated in his sleepe, 863, 2, 64.
Heath: Sir *Robert Heath* is made the Kings Atturney, 1041, 2, 33. Made Lord Chiefe Iustice of the Common Pleas, 1050, 1, 6.
Henrie the First: He is called for his Learning, *Beau-Clerke*. His life and Reigne, 135, 136, &c. He reformeth Measures, 1351, 142. Restoreth lights, *lin.* 45. Saileth into Normandie, 136, 1, 60. He takes his brother *Robert*, and puts out both his eyes, *ibid.* 2, 50. Hee built the Towne and Castle of Windsor, 137 137. He told Bishopricks, and other spirituall livings, 2, 10. His daughter *Mawd* marryed to the Emperour, 138, 1, 38. His great desire of strange things, as wilde beasts, and the like, *ibid.* 2, 60. His Queene dyeth, 139 1, 1. Hee marrieth the Duke of Lovaines daughter, 140, 1, 26. Is oft troubled in his sleepe, 142, 1, 25. In danger of being drowned, *ibid.* 44. He dyeth, 2, 45.
King *Henry* the second borne, 141. Comes into England with an armie, 146, 2, 60. Marryed, 147, 1, 50. Sonne of *Geoffrey Plantagenet*, and *Mawd* the Empresse, 149, 1, 20. Besiegeth certaine Castles, 147, 2, 60. Is crowned, 148, 1, 50. His description, parts and worth, vertues and vices, *ibid.* 60. Hee enricheth England, *ibid.* Throwes downe the vnprofitable Castles, 149, 1, 1. Takes divers into his hands, *ib.* By his wife Queene *Eleanor*, hee is Duke of Aquitaine, and Earle of Poyctiers, *ibid.* 10. His discent and pedigree, *ibid.* 20. Hee takes fealtie of the Nobilitie at Walsingford, *ibid.* 30. Hee is at peace with his brother *Geoffrey*, after much adoe, *ibid.* 40. His owne Coyne onely currant, *ibid.* 50. He hardly escapes the Welsh, *ibid.* 2, 1. At Worcester he lets his Crowne vpon the Altar, and neuer weares it againe, *ibid.* 30. How hee gets the Citie of Nants, *ibid.* 40. Hee takes the Escuage of the English, gathers infinite exactions to besiege Tholouse, *ibid.* 50 His Companions in the siege, *ibid.* Frustrate, *ibid.* 60. A great peace succeeded by a great discord, *ibid.* Hee obtaines the Lordship of Ireland, by the Grant of Pope *Adrian*, who was an Englishman, 150, 1, 1. The tenour of the Graunt, *ibid.* 40. Hee causeth all from twelue yeeres old to abjure *Romes* obedience, 151, 1, 50. Makes his Subjects sweare fealtie to his sonne *Henrie*, *ibid.* Seizeth the Archbishops goods, &c. 152, 1, 1. Hee is in danger of death: but is rescued by one that receiued it for him, *ibid.* 20. King *Henry* rewards him in his issue, *ibid.* Hee taxeth Normandie, *ibid.* 30. Warre renewed for Tholouse, *ibid.* 40. Hee receiueth fealtie at Nants: from whence returning into England, he loseth many of his men by sea, 152, 2, 20. Hee causeth his sonne to be crowned, *ib.* He is receiued as supreme Lord, by the Princes and all the Nobles of Ireland, and keepes Christmas at Dublin, 50. His returne into England, and voyage into Normandie, 153, 1, 1. He cleares himselfe of *Thomas Beckets* death, and is assoyled, *ibid.* 10. His sonne *Henry*, &c. rebels, *ibid.* 20. The king subdues the Rebels, *ibid.* 50. His sonne reconciled, *ibid.* 2, 10. The King vowes vengeance for the murther of an Earles brother in London, *ibid.* 2, 30. His sonne and he eate & lodge together, *ibid.* 60. He causeth certaine Castles to be raised, and why, 154, 1, 1. Hee builds a Labyrinth for *Rosamond*, *ibid.* 2, 30. After her decease, gets another Lemman; and whom, *ibid.* 2, 60. Practiseth a divorce from Queene *Elianor*: and variance thereupon betweene the French King and himselfe, *ibid.* But appeased, 155, 1, 1. He shewes the French King all the treatures of the Realme, *ibid.* 2, 50. Hee cleares himselfe of *Cadwallins* death, *ibid.* 60. His liberality to the Holy land, 156, 1, 30. King *Henry* the second goes into Normandy, *ibid.* Makes his will there, *ibid.* 40. Gives Legacies, &c to houses of Religion, as also portions to poore Maydes towards their marriage, *ibid.* Keepes Christmasse at Cane; with his three sonnes, *ibid.* 50. Requires homage of the younger sonnes to the heire, *ibid.* One denies, 60. Hee gets all the three sonnes to sweare obedience vnto him, *ib.* 2, 20. Is shot at, *ibid.* 30. He refuseth to come to his eldest sonne that was sicke: and the reason, *ib.* 40. Sends him his King, *ibid.* 50. As he returned for England, sends men into Wales, to curbe their pride and malice against the English, *ibid.* 60. He dares not graunt the Patriarch of Hierusalem his request (of ayde) and why, 157, 1, 1. But promiseth the Patriarch a great summe of money, *ibid.* Hee makes his sonne *John* Lord of Ireland, *ibid.* 10. The whole land is taxed towards his voyage to the Holy land, *ibid.* 2, 30. The iourney stayd, *ibid.* He is required (at a meeting betweene the two Kings) to release King *Philips* sister, the wife of *Richard* Earle of *Poictow*: but hee denies: and thereupon warres, *ibid.* 40. He is so hard pursued, that he is faine ere long to yeeld to all requests, *ibid.* 50. His request of the names of the French Kings confederates against him, is granted by the French King, *ibid.* 60. He findes his sonne *Iohns* name in the Catalogue: thereupon he curseth his sonnes, with the day of their birth, 158, 1, 1. Hee cannot be entreated by any, to revoke his curses, *ib.* Buried where, *ibid.* 10. His foundations of Religious houses, Colledges, Castles; and the beginning of London stone-bridge, *ibid.* What treasure he left behinde him, 20. Issue. *ibid.* The manner of his Buriall. His corpes bleedes at the presence of his sonne *Richard*: who weepes bitterly at it, &c. 53.
Henrie the Third: His life and Raigne, 175, 176 &c. Borne at Winchester, and crowned at Glocester, 175, 1, 37. Hee is opposed by *Lewis* as his father was, *col.* 2, *lin.* 40. &c. but hee, with the power hee had from France were vanquished, 177, 1, 20, 30. The King and hee agree vpon Articles, *lin.* 50. New crowned againe, 178, 1, 17. He banisheth all strangers, but Merchants out of his realme, *lin.* 35. Hee subdueth the Welsh, which rebelled, *c.* 2, *lin.* 4. His mother goes into France, and marrieth without his knowledge, *col.* 2. *lin.* 10. Hee marrieth his sister *Ione* to the King of Scots, *lin.* 14. &c. Layeth siege at the Castle of Bedford, 180, 1, 10. A fifteenth part of all mens goods were granted him for to maintaine all his rights beyond the Seas, 180, 1, 45. He exacted money of the Londoners, *col.* 2, *lin* 60. He cancelleth the old Charters, and maketh proclamation of taking new, 181, 1, 3. For this, he is threatned of his Barons, *lin.* 20. Hee feasteth the King of Scots at Yorke, *col.* 2. *lin.* 54. He faileth into Britaine, but to no purpole, 182, 1, 17. Hee demanderh Subsidies, but is denied them, *col.* 1, *lin* 40 He entertaining Pictavians into his service, is preached against for it by *Bacon*, and threatned, 182, 1, 14, &c. He buildeth Churches, and houses for relicfe of Christians that were Strangers, *lin.* 47. Hee is married to *Elionor* the daughter of *Raymond* Earle of Provence, 184, 1, 20 His people murmur against him for divers matters, *ibid.* 2, 20 Hee was in danger of being killed by a Scholler of Oxford, who feigned himselfe mad, who was taken, and plucht in peeces with Horses at Coventry. 185, 1, 1 Hee fayleth into Normandy, 186, 1, 36. He fined the Citizens of London for receiving one *Bokell* that was banished, *ibid.* 2. 37. Hee enlargeth Saint *Peters* Church in Westminster, 187, 1, 31. Hee was forced to sell his Plate and Jewels, 188, 1, 17. Hee marrieth his Daughter *Margaret* to *Alexander* King of Scots, 189, 2, 27. At which Marriage feast, were spent threescore fat Oxen at one dinner, *lin* 40. He ceateth on the Londoners Liberties, and imprisoneth the Sheriffs the reof for a moneth or more, *ibid* 2, 190 *col* 1, *lin* 4. His eldest sonne *Edward* is married to *Elianor* of Spain 190, 1, 53. *Lewis* King of France sent him an Elephant, *col.* 2, *lin*, 28. Hee sits in the Exchequer, and sines all the Sheriffes of England, 191, 1, 20 He had a Bull from Pope *Vrban*, for Absolution of him and his, 192, 1, 2. Hee and his Queene betake them to the Tower of London, and she is chased, 193, 1, 7. Hee and his Barons being at odds are reconciled, *lin.* 20. But afterward being at odds, they take him in his warres, with his sonne *Edward*, 194, 2, 28, & 50. His sonne *Edward* escapeth from his Keepers, and raiseth an Armie, 195, 1, 64. *col.* 2, *lin*, 1, *&c* Hee was like to destroy London in displeasure, but they submitted, and were reconciled to him, 196, 1, 19 He gives vnto his servants divers Citizens houses in London, *lin*, 60. Hee banisheth his sister, and for what, *col*, 2 *lin*, 16. He translates with great solemnity the body of *Edward* the Confessor, bestowing on him a shrine of Gold, 198, 1, 27. He falls sick, and dyed, and what hee did give in charge concerning his sonne *Edward* in his sickneſſe, 198, 2, 29.
Henry the fourth: His Raigne is said to be rather by Force, then of lawfull Succession, *fol.* 324, *col*, 1, *lin*, 12. A Conspiracie against him at Winsor, *col*, 2, *lin*, 54. Hee escaped great danger, *fol.* 327, 1, 44. Another Conspiracie against him, *col*, 2, *lin*, 15. He went into Wales to pursue *Owen-Glendoverdesme*, 328, 1, 6. Hee marrieth Queene *Ioane de Nauarre*, *col*, 2, *lin*, 30. He besiegeth Shrewsbury, wherein the *Percies* were taken, slaine, and strangely vsed, *ibid* 1, 2. A Conspiracie against him by the Archbishop of Yorke, and others, 332, 2, 23. For which the said Archbishop was beheaded, 333, 1, 47. He was like to be taken at Sea by the French, 334, 1, 45 He invadeth Scotland, 325, 2 46. At what time the Welch men rebell, *lin*, 57. Hee writeth to the Pope, 336, 1, 57. A motion in his time to take away Temporalls from the Clergie, but it tooke no effect, 338, 57 He aydes the Duke of Burgoyne, against the Duke of Orians, *col*, 2, *lin*, 47. He intendeth a tourney into France, 339, 1, 63. His sonne Prince of Wales visiteth his sick Father disguised, his behaviour herein, and issue thereof, *fol.* 339, 340. Hee afterwards contriveth helpes *Orlans* against *Burgoyne*, 339, 2, 5 His counsell to his sonne, *lin.* 66 He dieth, and is buried at Canterbury, 341 342.
Henrie the Fifth: His Life and Raigne, *fol.* 342, 343, &c. Hee heareth all Suiters, *ibid. c.* 2. *lin.* 35. Hee consulteth of the recovering of France, 345, 1, 23. The Archbishop of Burges is sent vnto him, who makes a speech, and hath his dispatch 345, 1, 2. A conspiracie against him discovered, 344, 1, 2. An other 346, 1, 12. Hee fayleth into Normandie 347, 1, 30. He takes the place which was the very Key of Normandie, 348, 2, 1. After his victorie, hee arriveth late at Dover, 351, 2, 1. His royall entertainement into London, *lin.* 20. Hee makes another Preparation for Warres in Fraunce, 352, 2, 55. Hee besiegeth Cane, 354, 1, 11. and winnes it, *col.* 2. *lin.* 26. Which whiles hee was about, Sir *John Oldcastle* stirres vp the Scots to invade England, *ibid. col* 2. 355, *col.* 1. He besiegeth many other Townes, 356. *col.* 2. *lin.* 52. *fol.* 357, 1. 17 Queene *Ioane* conspires against him, and what becomes both of it, and her, 358. 1, 5. Hee falleth sicke, makes his Will, and dyeth, 362, 1, 25. And hee was buryed at the feete of *Edward* the Confessor, 363, 2, 5.
Henry the Sixth: His Life and Raigne. *fol.* 363, 364, &c. Hee was crowned about the age of nine yeeres, 373, 2, 9. Hee is crowned at Paris, 372, 2, 25. Hee summoneth a Parliament, *fol.* 373, 2, 62. Of the wonderfull cheapnesse of Victuall in his dayes, 375, 1, 55. He built Kings Colledge in Cambridge, 379 2, 30. Hee loued Peace, and fought it euen of Rebels, *fol.* 403, 1, 47. His Queenes Attourney slaine, 404, 1, 24. Shee robbed, 409. 2, 14. Articles betweene him and the Duke of Yorke, *lin.* 35. His mother is beheaded, 413, 1, 58. His Exercise, 424, 2, 30 His Continencie, *lin.* 43. Not couetous, *lin.* 53. His Oath was none other but *Forsooth*, *lin.* 66. His pittiousnesse and patience, 425, 1, 1.

Henrie the Seventh: His Life and Raigne, 470, 471, &c. Hee is fayd to bee a Prince of excellent Qualities and Endowments, 476, 1, 62. Hee is crowned, and calls a Parliament, 471, 1, 50, 58. He marrieth *Elizabeth*, eldeſt daughter to *Edward* the fourth, by meanes whereof the Houſes of *Yorke* and *Lancaſter* were made one, *ibid.* 2, 14. This his Queene is deliuered of a ſonne at Winton, and is named *Arthur*, *lin.* 38 Hee hath a truce with the Scots, 472. 2, 5. His Queene is crowned 473, 1, 20. Hee calles a Parliament, *lin.* 60. Hee layeth into France, 476. 1. 48. Hee beſiegeth Boloigne, *col.* 2, *lin.* 1. The Hemings with their wares were baniſhed this land, *ibid.* Hee lodgeth in the Tower of London, on policie to diſcouer a Conſpiracie, which hee effected, *li.* 36. Ambaſſadors ent to him to bee at peace with the Duke of Burgonie, 480, 1, 4 His third ſonne is borne, and named *Edward*, 481, 1, 26. Hee ſame his Queene layeth to Calais, *col.* 2, *lin.* 28. His ſonne Prince *Arthur* is married to *Catherine*, and the manner how, 483, 1, 14. He betroths his daughter the Lady *Mary*, vnto the King of Scots, 2. 24. His ſonne *Arthur* dyeth, 44 His death and buriall, 486, 1, 2.

Henry 8. When he began his raigne, 486, 1, 36 The names of his Priuie Counſellers *lin.* 50. he proclaimeth pardon for all treſpaſſes, 2. 54 He marrieth Q. *Catherine*, 487, 1, 12. Hee is crown'd, 33. His noble attendance by Spearmen, *l.* 59. The King and Q. *Katherine* come's into London, to ſee their Watch, 488, 1, 30. He ſends 15000 Archers againſt the Moores 1 64. He firſt perſwades, and then threatneth the French K. concerning his going to warr againſt the Pope, 489, 2. 39. Hee ſends an army into Biſcay againſt the French 490, 1, 33 His palace at Weſtminſt. and Chappel of the tower of London were burnt, *col* 2 / 51. He goes in his owne perſon to the beſieging of the citie of Turwin in France, 491, 1, 63, takes it, 492. 1, 16, raſeth and burneth it, *li.* 24. He beſiegeth Turney another citie, which yeeles vnto him, 1, 54. He writes letters to Sir *William Molineux* 494, 2, 52. He loſt a great ſhip of foure Tops called the *Lubecke*, 496, 1, 20. His ſiſter *Mary* maried to the King of France, *lin.* 26 His daughter *Mary*, when and where borne, 504 1, 45. He procureth *Maximilian* to warre with the French, *ibid.* 2, 46. Hee takes ſhipping for Callis, 507, 1, 2. Hee taketh ſtrict order againſt Incloſers, 512, 2, 7. Hee wrote a Booke againſt *Luther*, to which *Luther* anſwered him ſharpely; and for the writing hereof Pope *Leo* the tenth named him *Defendor of the Faith*, 514, 1, 2. Hee demandeth the ſixth part of all mens goods to maintaine his warrs, 523, 1, 11. He is in danger of drowning, *ibid.* 52. How ill the Commons takes that demaund of the ſixt part of their goods, 524, 2, 17. How hee diſgratifieth his Baſtard ſonne, 525, 1, 50. Hee would needs bee divorced from his Queene, 530, 2, 62. He ſent in a famine ſix hundred quarters of corne to the Citie of London, 536, 1, 27. Hee banqueteth a French Ambaſſadour at Greenwich, 540, 1, 1. His marriage called into queſtion, *ibid.* 2, 30. A Legat from Rome was ſent about it, *lin.* 44. He made an Oration, 541, 1, 54. His Mariage diſputed in open Court at blacke-Friers, 543, 2, 37. He ſends to the Pope an Ambaſſadour for expedition of his ſentence about his Mariage, 546, 1, 30. He is now called *Supreame Head*, 559, 2, 50. Concluſions againſt his Marriage, 560, 1, 8. Hee cauſed the Pope to bee ſummoned to a Councill, 561, 2, 45. Hee marrieth the Lady *Anne* of *Bulloigne*, 562, 1, 13. Hee enacteth at a Parliament, that no perſon ſhould appeale to the Pope, *lin.* 27. His ſecond Marriage is reprooued by two Friers, *lin.* 35. for which they and all their Order are baniſhed, 2, 57. He is ſummoned by Pope *Clement* to appeare perſonally at a Councill, but he ſends Ambaſſadours, 563, 1, 45. Preparation made for crowning his Q. *Anne*, *ibid.* 2, 3. The ſolemnitie of that Coronation at large, 564, &c. He and his reelme curſt from Rome, 570, 1, 23. Queene *Anne* accuſed of treaſon, and entowred, 572, 2, 30. Condemned and executed, 573, 1, 12. He is married againe to *Anne* of *Cleene*, 577, &c. After which hee was vexed, and his wrath was kindled againſt all them that preferred her vnto him, 578, 1, 30 He is married vnto her, but hates her, *li.* 50, 53, & *col.* 2, 10 How diuorced, 581, 1, 27. He married againe to the Lady *Catherine Howard*, 2, 3. He is proclaimed King of *Ireland*, 583, 1, 13. His Queene *Catherine* is beheaded *ibid*, 14. He marrieth the Lady *Catherine Parre*, wife to the Lord *Latimer*, 584, 2, 67. Hee is in warre both againſt the Emperour and French King, 585, 1, 20. He goes to Bulloigne, 587, 2, 50. He aſſaults it, they yeeld, and he enters it 588, 1, 13. His gifts to London, 592 1 55. He is ſicke, maketh his will, and dieth. 2, 35.

Henry Prince of Wales, when hee was borne, and where, 1005, 2, 25. Chriſtened, *l.* 37. Hee is made free of the Marchant-Taylors of London, 890, 2, 45. His firſt feates of Armes, 898, 1. 62. Hee is created Prince of Wales, *fol* 890, 1, 13. The Triumphs at his Creation, 991, &c. Made Knight of the Garter, 826, 1, 10.

Heraulds: Their firſt vſe, and who ordayned them, *fol.* 8. *col.* 4. *l.* 64. *col.* 2. *lin.* 23. Whence ſo called, *ibid.* The Colledge of Heraulds, 1087, 2, 50.

Hereford: The Towne deſcribed, 64, 1, 40. The Church thereof burnt, and by whom, 117, 1, 45.

Heretikes: An Heretike burnt in Norwich, 686, 1, 5. Two Heretikes more burnt, 1002 1, 12. Diuers Hollanders condemned for Hereſie, 57, 2, 48.

Heſſon: The Landſgraue of *Heſſon* comes to ſee our King, Queene and Prince. 1001, 2, 54.

Hide: Sir *Nicholas Hide* made Lord Chiefe Iuſtice, 1042, 2, 35.

Holland: The originall of it, 72, 1, 15. Diuers *Hollanders* condemned for heretikes, 57, 2, 48 They proclaime the Earle of *Leiceſters* Authoritie among them, 712, 713, &c. They ordaine *Graue Maurice* for their Generall, *col.* 2. *lin.* 1. They are ſworne to the Qu. of England, 715, 1, 50.

Holland: *Margaret* Counteſſe of Holland, was brought to bed of 363 children, all borne aliue, to the bigneſſe of little chickens newly hatcht; they were all baptized by a Biſh. and then died, 217, 1, 58. This came of her pride, and by a curſe of a poore woman, 218, 1, 1.

Horſmanſhip: Its Art, 1084. 2. 42.

Hoſpitall: Saint *Thomas* Hoſpitall, when, and by whom founded, 171, 2, 12. Maſter *Sutton* Citizen and Girdler of London, built an Hoſpitall at Charterhouſe, 1016, &c.

Hubbard: Sir *Henry Hubbard* made L. Chiefe Iuſtice of the Common Pleas, 1005 1, 31.

Humber: Its Riuer deſcribed, 2, 2, 10. Whence it tooke that name, 9, 1, 12.

Hungerford: A Lady *Hungerford* hanged at Tyborne, for murthering her owne husband, 517, 2, 58.

I.

Iames: St. *Iames*, which is the Kings Court, when built, 560, 1, 57.

Iames: King *Iames*, his Life and Raigne, 817, 818, 819. &c. Barwicke willingly yeeldeth to him, 818, 1, 5. His letters to London, *lin.* 50. Proclaimed at Yorke, *co.* 2. 35. His iourney into England, 819, 1, 54. He is receiued at York, 820, 2, 52. He createth many Lords, Barons, and Knights, both in the Tower, and at Weſtm. 826, and Knights of the Bath, 827. His Coronation, *col.* 2. *lin.* 60. Hee Knighted all the Aldermen of London, 828, 1, 5. His Speech in Parliament, 837, &c. His league with Spaine, 845, 1, 3. His Articles, 846. Hee is proclaimed King of Great Britaine, 856, 2, 46. The Papiſts Powder-practiſe againſt his Perſon, progenie, and whole Realme, 874, 1, 52. *col.* 2, 34. He entertaineth the King of Denmarke, 885, &c. *ad* 889. He dineth with the Lord Maior of London, and is made free of the Cloath-workers, 890, 1, 32. He payeth a great ſumme of Queene *Elizabeths* debts, *col.* 2. 30. Hee commeth in perſon into the Starre-Chamber, 1000, 1, 20. The things that paſſed in his Raigne, 995, &c. His going to, and returning from Scotland, 1027, 1, 11, 21. He is dangerouſly ſicke, 1031, 2, 46. He comes to *Pauls* Croſſe, 1033, 1, 52. Deceaſed, *fo.* 1035, 1, 15. King *Iames* his bountie, 1037, 1, 1. *Iames* a King of Scots ſlaine at Bamſton-field, 494, 2, 1.

Ierome: Saint *Ierom* that tranſlated the Old and New Teſtament, 47. 1, 56.

Ieruſalem: It and its Temple deſtroyed, 37, 2, 15. It is new built, 45, 2. Chriſtians win Ieruſalem, 133, 1, 36.

Ieſuites: They with Seminary Prieſts baniſhed 995, 1, 57. A Proclamation againſt them, 688, 2, 50. A Proclamation for their baniſhment, 833, 2, 45.

Iewes: They are brought into England, *fol.* 2, 8. They ſlay themſelues, *fol.* 359, 2, 20. They were ranſomed, *fol.* 168, *col.* 2, *lin.* 2 A Iew baptized in London, *fol.* 306, 1, 53.

Iſle, or *Iſle* of *Wight*: It was invaded by the French in the firſt yeere of King *Henry* the fourth, *fol.* 329 2, 60. *fol.* 330, *col* 1. 15. The Iſle of Ree invaded by the Engliſh, *fol* 1043 *col.* 1, *lin.* 13. This Iſle what ground it contained, and noted to bee the laſt that receiued the Faith, *fol.* 61, 1, 2. Taken by the French, 279, 2. 10. The French aſſaulted it before, 237. 2, 40.

Images: Images of the Kings of England ſet vp in the Exchange, 1043, 2, 59. Church-Images burnt, 640, 1. 22.

India: The Originall of the India Merchants, with other things of note, 992, 1, 53, &c.

Innes: Of the foure Innes of Court, 1069, of all the Armes of thoſe, with the reſt of the Innes, *a* 1068, *ad* 1077.

John: Saint *Johns* Colledge in Oxford, when, and by whom founded, 383, 2, 12.

John: The Life and Raigne of King *John*, 164, &c. A Prophecie of him, *col.* 2 *lin.* 55. He createth States, *f.* 165, 1, 7. Hee rateth the French Wines, *lin* 35. His taxe ouer England, *col.* 2, *lin.* 5. He being diuorced from *Iſabell* his wife, marrieth with another *Iſabell*, *lin.* 20. The King of Scots doth homage to him, 151. A taxe laid on euery plow-land, 165, 2, 7. One *Hugh Bruno* rebelleth againſt him, 166, 1, 40. A ſharpe warre of his on the Earle of *March*, *col.* 1, 64. Hee is ſummoned to the French Kings Court; whither refuſing to come, hee was iudged to bee depriued of all his lands which he held of the King of France, *col* 2, 5. He marrieth his baſtard daughter to the prince of Wales, 167, 1 30. In his time England was interdicted by the Pope, *col.* 2. 46. He commandeth the Exchequer to be remoued from Weſtminſt. to Northampon, 168, 1, 20. The Welſh come and doe homage to him, *lin* 36. He impriſoneth all the Iewes, and grieuouſly puniſheth them, *col.* 2, 20. He goes with an armie into Wales againſt his ſonne in law, *lin.* 60. The Pope abſolues all his ſubiects from ſubiection vnto him, 169, 1, 13. He is complained of by his Biſh. at Rome, 2, 5. He diſinherieth ſome of his Nobles without conſent of his Counſell, 170, 1, 22. He is moued to repentance 171. 1. 10. takes an oath to obey the iudgment Of the Church, 1. 27. Hee reſignes his Crowne into the Popes hand. 50. He is abſolued, 2. 4. Hee faileth into *Britan.* 2. 47. His Nobles require of him, the Charter of Liberties, 172. 1. 2. He is forced by *Lewis* to fly, 2. 36. Hee mareheth into *Norfolke*, and comes to Lin, and is there entertained wher ſee what befell him, 174. 1. 54. Hee makes *Henry* his eldeſt ſonne heire of his kingdome, 2. 34. He dieth, 47. Hee was buried at *Worceſter* Cathedrall, 175, 1. 4. Reported that hee was poiſoned by a Monke, and for what, 1 20.

Ioanes: Maſter *William Ioanes* bounty to a Schoole in Walles, almes houſes there, and a Lecture in London, 1024. 2. 56.

Ireland: When first inhabited, and by whom, 12,1,36. Conquered by *Rich.* 2. 310,2,33. It is described, *1.50.* Conquered by Q. *Eliz.* of blessed memorie, 688,2,13. The Ear. of Tyrones treason discouered, 891,2,30,40. *Bren Royrke* an Irish Lord arraigned of high treason, 762,1,60.

Isabel: Q. *Isabel* crowned, 315,1,42. She is sent into France honorably attended, 327,1,15.

Julian the Apostata rayled by the Duill in the time of *Athanasius*, 46,1,40.

Justice: A most noble piece of Iustice on a Prince, by a L. Chiefe Iustice, 342,2,30. &c.

Justing on L. Bridge, between L. *Cranford* & Ear. of *Wells*, 313,1,5. Of a Iusting in Smithfield, to which repaired many strangers, 305,2,35.

K.

Kellenworth: Its Priorie and Castle founded, 138,1,13.

Kempe: *Iohn Kempe* Archbishop of Canterbury deceased, when, 398,1,10.

Kent, Ever vnconquered, 102,103. The ancient Liberties and Lawes of Eng. remaine in Kent only, 103,2,1. The Kentish men break down prisons, and the Stewes, enters London, &c. 285,1,5. King *Henry* the 6. goes against the Kentish Rebels with a great power, but was ouercome, 389,1,60. *col.2 l.10.* They enter Southwarke, *lin.40.* Their acts and end, 389, 390, 392. One *Atorp Burton* called the holy Mayd of Kent, begins strange practises, 569, 2,50. Attainted of high treason, 570, 1,40. Executed, and her head set on Lond. Bridge, 571,1,42.

Ket: *Fr. Kett* burnt for hereste, 751,2,55.

King: Doctor *King* made Lord Bishop of London, 1002, 1,4.

Kings: The meeting of the Kings of Engl. and France, 314. 2, 24. King *James* death into Scotland, 1027.1.11. Returned, *lin.18.* The names of the ancient Kings of Britaine, from the yeere of the Lord. 24, to the yeere 1084, *à fo.9. ad 13.* An excellent example of a King that tooke wel the reproofe of a Bishop, and repented, 51,2,53. King *Sebba* turnes Monke of St. *Paules*, 66, 2,14. King *Burricus* poysoned by his owne wife, 773,1,45. The King of Scots taken prisoner, 153,1,60. Foure Kings feasted by the Lord Maior of London, 263, 2,61. The French King in danger to be burnt by his trayterous brother, 307,2,61. Foure great Kings died in one moneth, 385,2,30.

Kings-Bench: That Court remooued to Yorke 308,1,15. The L. Chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench committeth the Prince to prison for his ill behaviour at the seat of Iustice, 342,2, 30, &c. The blessed issue of it, *ibid.*

Kings-Evill: The first healing of it, and by whom, 98,1,10.

Kneves: Sir *Edw. Kneves* arraigned for striking in Court, 581,2,44. Pardoned, 582,1,30.

Knights: The manner of making them in old time, 1038,1,10. The King of Sweden and the Prince of Orenge made Knights of the Garter, 1043,1,10. The Knights of the Garter feasted by the L. Maior, 1044,2,37. The Order of Knighthood, when it began, and how it was, 721,1,1. Knights of the Order of the *Temple*, 139,1,50. Knights of the *Starr*, 253,1,13.

Knives: The perfection of the fine making of Knives first attained vnto by one *Rich. Matthewes* at Fleet-bridge, 10,8,2,26.

Knowles: They of Norfolke famous, 334,2,34. One Sir *Robert Knowles* built a Colledge and Hospitall in the Towne of Ponfrait, *ibid. l.57.*

Kyllaare: An Earle to whom Cardinall *Wolsey* made a speech, and layd treason to his charge, 529,1,25.40. Hee replies to the Cardinall, *col.2.lin.40.*

L.

Lambe: A Sorcerer slaine by the multitude, 1043,2,8.

Lambeth: The Bishops house there spoiled by the Commons of Essex, 285,2,4.

Lancaster: The Duke of Lancaster returned out of Gascoine, 312,1,5. *Iohn* Duke of Lancaster married to *Katherine Swinford* a Concubine, 312,2,25. Duke of Lancaster chosen King, 323,2, *lin.10.11.&c.* The Duke of Lancaster enters France, but with infinite losse hee returnes, 270,1,53. The Duke of Lan. and the Londoners reconciled, 258,2,2. The Duke of Lan. his returne out of Spaine, 305,1,50. He was made Duke of Aquitane, 2,12.

Language: Schooles set vp in London for the learning of Languages, 1083, 2,50. Languages much of them, 1082.

Latimer begins to preach against the Pope, 571 1,5. Doct. *Latimer* that had not preached before in 8 yeeres, now preacheth at S. *Pauls* Crosse, 595,2,27. He and Doctor *Ridley* are burnt, 627,2,12.

Lawes: The antiquitie of the Lawes of Engl. 1036,2,20. Of the Common Law, 1,1,43. Of the Ciuill Law, being reduced in Vniformity, 54,1,55. The first comming vp of the Com. Law, 94,1,48. Lawes, they were commanded to be pleaded in the English tongue, 265,2,60. *Lex talionis* excellently executed on Guggers, 796,1,44.

League: A new League betweene England and France in King *James* his raigne. *fol.996, col. 2, lin. 2.*

Leicester: when built, 10.1.43. Burnt, 153.1, 54. The Earle of *Leicester* his returne out of the low Countries, 741,1,52. Hee is made Steward of the household, 743,1,32, hee dieth and is buried, 750,2,48.

Lent: Its first institution, 37.2,47.

Letters: Their first Invention by *Phanix*, which was in the yeere 1456, before, *fol. 18, col.2.lin.1.*

Ley: Sir *James Ley* made L. Treasurer of England, 1036,1,7.

Libeller: A Libeller executed, 1032,1,10. Libels against the Clergie, 310,1,20. The Clergie made odious by Libels, 372,2,25. A Libeller hanged, 795,1,5.

Library,

Librarie: The Capitall Library in Rome burnt, 93,2,58. A large Library in *Roane*, 778,1,39.

Libussa: Her and *Valasque* with their Army of Ladies, 86,1,52. *fol.67,&c.* An excellent example of humility in *Libussa*, 87,2,8.

Lightning: Of great Lightning which burnt vp Townes, and Corne in the fields, 95, 1, 35. Another at *Winchelscome* fearefull, 130,2,34.

Lincolne: Its great Church, when, and by whom built, 73,2,10. Burnt, 140.2.21. Earle of Lincolne sent Ambassadour into France, 672. 2.27.

Lindsey: Lord *Lindsey* made Generall of the Fleete, 1044,1,46.

Linwood: One that wrote a glosse on the constitutions of the Church of *Engl.* 405, 2. 37.

Lisbourne: Thither march the Earle of *Essex* and Lord *Norice*, 755,1,9. They take the Suburbs thereof, *lin.40.* The Spaniards sally out of it, *lin.50.* Our Armies depart thence, and the cause, *col.2.lin.32.*

Litchfield: Founded, and made a Bishops Sea, 67,2,63. A description of the Townes scituation, 64,1,&c.

London: That Citty built new Granaries and Storehouses, 996,2,42. The Londoners Plantation of Ireland, *anno* 1609. 1004,1.44. London Bridge new repaired, 1043,2,40. High floods at London, 1045,1,34. The Schooles of Diuinity and other Arts within the Citty of London 1065. Of Lon. Schooles, *fol.* 1081 London Bridge described, 2,2,32. Whence London hath its name, and when built, 13,1, 57. London submitteth to *Cesar*, 14,1,20. A new River brought to London by Sir *Hugh Middleton*, 1014, 1, 35. The Danes spoyle London, 77,2,32. London reedified by King *Alfred*, 79,2,45. Lon. besieged, 91,2,5. London Tower when and by whom built, 117,1, 57. A tempest in Lon. blowing downe 600. houses, 130,2,50. Lon. burnt, 142,2,1. London with the bridge burnt, 143,2,52. The Duke of Lancaster and the Londoners reconciled, 218,2.2. The Lord Maior of London rayseth a power in defence of his King, 289,2,48. The City denied the King a loane of money, with the issue thereof, 366,2,15. The Lord Maior and Sheriffes committed and deposed, *lin.* 30. Called before the King at Winsor, *lin.53.* Their entertainement of the King in Royall manner shortly after, 307, 1, 13. An Alderman of London made Treasurer of the Kings house, 555,1,31. A Tower on London Bridge taken downe, 681,2,50. The cause of the Londoners wealth and greatnesse, 686,1, 40. Its plenty in all commodities, exceedes all other Countries, *col.2.lin.10.* Of Saint *Antonies* Colledge, and divers other Schooles in London, 183,1.4. Certaine Roagues attempt to burne *Bartholomew* Faire in London, 756, 1,23. London in Armes, *lin.39.* The Lord Maior meetes King *James* at his comming in, three miles from the City, 823, *col. lin.19.* The Apprentices rise on May day, for which it is called *The euill May day*, 505,1,& 2.

Lopez: Doctor *Lopez* a Phisitian arraigned for attempt of poysoning Queene *Elizabeth*, of blessed memory, 766, 2,52. Executed, 768, 2,35.

Lottery: A great Lottery in Queene *Elizabeths* dayes, 663,1,21. A Lottery of Armory, 720, 2,2. A Lottery of Plate, 1002.1,52.

Love: A bloudy president to cure Loue, 393,1,35.

Lovelace: *Thomas Lovelace* a worthy peece of Iustice done on him for a trayterous practise to enioy the Lands of his neere kinne, 719. 1.25.

Lovell: In King *Richards* dayes, Lord *Lovell*, with *Catsby* and *Ratliffe*, were great rulers, of whom went a Rime, 466, 2, 10. One Sir *Thomas Lovell* Knight of the Garter, dieth, 520,2,33.

Lubecke: That Citty when founded. 96,1,44.

Lud: He repaireth, and fortifieth London, 13. 1.57.

Ludgate: It is repaired, 741,1,58.

Lyon: A Lyon slaine by *Calisthenes* in plaine fight, 27,2,66. A Lyon baited with dogges in the Tower, 835,2,45. A Lyon whelpt in the Tower, 844,2.65. Another Lyon whelpt. 857.1,27. The King maketh a breeding place for Lyons. 865.1.5. A triall of the Lyonesse quality. *lin.54.* A great fight betweene a Lyon, Beare, Horse, and Mastiffe dogge, 899, 2,20.

M.

Mackmur: An Irish Rebell there, his notable Acts and exploites commended. 319,2,44.

Madan: A King of Britaine slain by Woolues. 9,1,35.

Mahomet, His false doctrine, 62,1,45. His Alcaron, and other Heretical villanies. 63.1.5.

Maine: The King of Maine forceth the French King to flye Deepe, 558,1,40. Hee ouerthrowes the Duke, and makes him fly, *col.2. lin.* 20.50. He recouereth strength, *lin.54.*

Malmesbury: The Castle thereof was wonne by *Henry* Duke of Normandy. 147.2.31.

Man: The Isle of Man was given to the Earle of Northumberland by *Hen.* the fourth, 324, 1, 63. The Isle of Man subdued by *Magnus* King of Norway, 133,1,24.

Mandelen: A Priest like King *Richard* the second, and heretofore vsed in some exploits for him, but taken in it, was executed for it. 325.1.27. *col 2.lin.5.*

March: An Earle of March slaine in Ireland. 319 2.10.

Margaret: Queene *Margaret* crowned, 385. 1.17.

Marleborow besieged by K. *Stephen*, *fol.* 144. 2.55.

Mary: The Lady *Mary* King *James* daughter, when borne and christened, 891,1,3.

Mary Qu. of England, her life and raigne, 613, &c. The great plenty that was at the entrance into her raigne, *c.1.10.* She discharged the Duke of Suff. out of the tower, and pardoneth him, *c.1,27.* Her first comming to London, and the manner of it at large, *lin*, 30. She pardons *Bonner*, *c.2.17.* She makes *Gardiner* Lo

Chancellor,616,1,36. Shee causeth the Seruice to be said againe in Latin,*ib.*38. She sends *Cranmer* Archb. of Cant, to the tower, *c.*2,1. Her Coronation, *ib.*8. A proposition made about her marriage with *Philip* of Spain, 617 2,35. She commeth in person to Lon. Guildhall, and declares her will against *Wyat*, 619,1 27. The marriage of the Q. to *Philip* 625,1 1. She was bruited to be with child, *ib.*2,45. Her K. *Philip* went into Flanders, 627,1,40. Shee had sent vnto her great gifts from the Emp. of Russia, but they were spoiled by the Scots, 630, 1,60. Shee sends great gifts backe againe to him, *c.*2,10. She recciues K. *Philip* againe, *col.*2,37 She hath war with France, 631,1,10. She dyeth, and that very day Cardinall *Poole* also dyeth; she is buried at Westminster, he at Canterbury 634.2.36.

Mary: The Lady *Mary*, daughter to our Soueraigne Lord K. *Charles*, borne, 1050,1.15.

Meighen: The meanes of the Free-Schoole of Shrewsbury preserued through the good care and speciall endeauour of Master *John Meighen*, 1062,2,29. Wherin (to vse Master *Cambdens* words in his *Britania*, 596, *lin.*14) were more Scollers in number, when I first saw it, then in any one Schoole throughout all England againe.

Merick: Sir *John Mericke* Knight is sent into Mosco, as Ambassador, 1612.2.45.

Mice: They deuoure the Grasse at *Dansey* in *Essex*, 688,1,10,

Middleton: Master *Hugh Middleton* bringeth a new Riuer to the Citie of *London*, 1014. 1,35.

Milaine; *Fredericke* the first Emperour of that name tooke it, and slew the people thereof, for their great pride, 1155,1,13. Three Kings came to *Mill.* to worship Christ, 37.

Mine: A Siluer Mine found in Engl. 769.1.44

Mompesson: He and *Michell*, are degraded, and disnobled in a Parliament, 1034,1,36.

Monasteries: They are rifled, 110,2,55, The *Mon.* of S. *Sauiour*, founded when, and by whom, 118,2,60, Suppressed, 361,1,48.

Monks: *Ethelfride* destroyed 1200 Monks, 73, 1,22, The Mon. of *Ely* submit to *Wil.* the Conquerour, 1,17, *Henry* the second turnes Monke, 15 1,2,34.

Monsters: There were seene at *Bedford* Monsters come out of the woods 328,2,37. monstrous births, 648.1,12.

Monuments: A worthy saying of a King against the defacers of Mon. 375,1,1,

Money: Money paid by weight, 114,2,55, Money-makers punished, 141,1,5. A Mint of Mo. found in *Ireland*, 168,2,40. King *Iames* maketh tryall of his monies, 1000,1,26. Hee maketh Proclamation for the preseruation of it, 2,32.

Moone: Two full Moones seene at once, 136. 2,31.

Moore: Sir *Thomas Moore* made L. Chancellor of England, 553,2,55.

Moore-fields: By whom and when first founded, 1021,2,33.

Mortimer: Two of them sent to the tower, 220 2,1.&c. *Roger Mortimer* breaketh out of the tower, 222,2.34.

Montague: When sworne L. Chiefe Iustice of the K. Bench, 1026,1,58. Bishop *Montague* (worne a Priuy Counsellor, 1027,1.45 Sir *H. Mount.* made L. Treasurer, 1034.1.1.

Mounteagle: His discouery of the Powder-plot, 877,1.22. His reward for that seruice, 883,1,1.

Mulburies: The first generall planting of Mulbury Trees; and making of Silke in England, 894.1,5.

Munster: When, & by whom founded, 72,1,22.

Muster: A generall Muster throughout all England, 1013, 1,26. A Muster of young Boyes, *lin* 40.

Murther: Never scape vnpunished, 672,1,34. *George Sanders* Murthered at Shuters Hil, 675,1,1. The miserable end of a Queene that Murthered her Husband, 77,1,54 A notable example of Murther pardoned, 91,2,42. Of *Nicephorus* sonne that killed his Father, 82,1, 50. A Murther committed in the Church of Westminster, 282,1 4. The Earle of Northumberland found to haue Murthered himselfe, 706,2,62. A most cruell Murther of one *William Cleverly* Esquire, 870,2,63. Another horrible Murther of a woman on her children and her selfe. 884,2.60. Lord *Burke* an Irish man Murthered most vildly by one *Cosby*, and gaue him 21. seuerall wounds with his dagger, 764.2,34.

N.

Nanson: Made Secretary. 1029,1,1.

Nantwich: It is burnt, 377,2,30. Burnt againe, 698,1,54.

Nauigation: Of the Art of Nauigation. 1080.

Needles: One *Henry Crowse* a Germane, the first maker of Spanish Needles, 1038.2,60.

Nero: Hee set Rome on fire, which burnt sixe dayes, and seuen nights, 33,2,42.

Newcastle: Vpon Tine, when, and by whom built, 118,2.35. Built again, 131,1,4 Drowned, 235,2,30.

Newelme: Its Church founded, when, and by whom, 388,1,23.

Newforest: When, and by whom made a Chase, 119,1,30. Its description, 121,1,40.

New-found-land: The first Plantation of the English there. 1019,1,11.

Newgate: Broken vp, 286.2 15.

Newhauen: A band of English sent to *Newhauen*, 651.1.4. The Earle of Warwicke is landed there, *lin.* 40. The prices of Wine brought thither, 652, 1, 14. The Castle of *Tankerville* taken by them of Newhaven, *col.* 2,21. Ayde from thence to the siege of Cane, 653, 2, 8. The French appointed to depart from thence, *col.*2, *lin.*64. An Alarum given to the Fort of Newhaven, with two great skirmishes, 654, 1, 2. A Galliasse of Newhauen burnt. The Prince of Conde, and Constable of France come to the siege of Newhaven, 655,2,1,13.29. The Plague is there, 656,1, 1. Articles agreed vpon on its surrender, 650. *Nieot*

Nice: *Niteu*: The Nicen Councell and Creed, 45,2,20. The City destroyed by an earthquake, 46.2.43. Another counell there, 71,2, 40. The City of Nice taken by *Godfry* and *Beamond*, 132,1,45.

Nightwalkers: They did in London kill all they met, 153,2,30.

Norfolke: The Duke of Norfolke sent to Tower, 663,1.50. A cõspiracie there, 667,1,37. He is sent to Tower, 670,2,7. Hee is arraigned, 671,1,30. He is beheaded, 673,2,17.

Normans Normandy: Their beards alwayes shaven, 102,1,58. They abhorred the custom of souldiers confecration, 110,1,34. The description of *Heresieete*, that key of the Normandy Sea, 347,2,16. The Towne is surrendred to the King of England, 348, 2, 1. It is loft to the French, 387,2,10. The originall and name of Normandy, 693,2,44. *Rollo* was the first Duke of it, *lin* 65.

Norris: Sir *John Norris* his life, carriage in the warres, and death, 805, 806.

Northampton: A Castle built there, 216,1 35.

Norwich: Trinity Church there when built, 132,2,50, Burnt, 152.2,*vlt.*

Northumberland: The sixth Kingdome, consisting of Shires, 72,1,42. The children of Northumber. sold at Rome, 72, 2, 51. The first Christian King of North. 73, 1, 33. North. spoiled by the Scots, 117,1,37. A second time spoiled, 118,37. It is invaded by Scots, 144,2, 37. Northum. burnt by the Scots again, 402, 1,10 The Earle of Northum. beheaded, 673, 2.1. An Earle of Northum. murthered himselfe, 706, 2,62. The Earle of Northum. convicted in the Starre Chamber, 884,1,32. The Duke of Northum. arraigned and condemned, 614.1,30. Beheaded, 2,42.

Nottingham: A Castle there built, 109, 2,35. The towne burnt 145,1,25.

Noy: *William Noy* Esquire, made the Kings Attorney generall, 1050,1,11.

O.

Odo: *William* the Conquerers mothers second sonne, made Bishop of *Bayon*, of him, and his acts, and his end, 119,1,20.&c. Imprisoned for foure yeares, 120, 2, 26. Entreated for, 126,1,21. Enlarged but against *Williams* will, *ibid.lin* 52.

Oldcastle: Sir *John Oldcastles* conspiracie against the King, 344,1,*lin*,26,56. His Confederates, and confesse the fact, *lin.*57. He stirres vp the Scots to take England, 348,2,349. *col.*1, *lin.*1. He is taken himselfe, and adiudged and hanged, 355,2,356,1. His disperate end and blasphemous speeches, *lin.*37.

Oration: The Prince of Wales Oration on heare-say of the French mens resolution of hauing no peace, 260,2,30.

Orlands: *Orlance*: Its siege broken vp, 370,1,64

Ostend: Besieged, 855,2,48. Sir *Rob. Cecill* puts a thousand fresh souldiers into it, 60.

Ostney: Saint *Mories* of *Ostney* when and by whom founded, 115,2,28. *fol.*142.1,7.

Oswine: He built Litchfield Church, and when, 73,2,66.

Oteney: A Colledge built by *Edward* the Confessor at *Oteric* in Deuonshire, 97,2,32.

Otto: That Emperour Founder of *Magdeburgh*, 82,1,50. *Otto* Duke of Brunswicke, challengeth to combate with the Duke of Lancaster before the French King at Paris, 253.2,47.

Ouersury: Poysoned, and the murtherers of him executed, 1024,2,17.18.&c.

Oueries: Saint *Mary Ouries* made a Parish Church, 579,1,50.

Outlawes: When and by whom instituted, 110, 1,58.

Owe: *William de Owe*: cruelly handled by *William Rufus*, 132,2,13.

Oxford: Dissention there among the Southern and Northren Schollers, 302,3,22. The Vniversity of Oxford first founded & by whom, 803,2,30. Oxford Castle built, 113.*col* 2.1. Oxford left empty of Schollers, by reason a wrong excution of three Clarkes that were hanged, 168,1,38. A great dissention at Oxford betweene the Schollars and Townesmen, the Townesmen committed to Tower 255, 1, 13,&c. The Vniversity is restored, *ibid. lin.*64. A strange sickenesse there, wherof many dyed, 681,2,57. The Schollars and Burgers of Oxford doe one spoyle another, 193,2,30. The Clarks of Oxford banished, *lin.*50. Another dissention at Oxford, 2.6, 2, *lin.* 45. A Catalogue of all the Colledges names in Oxford, with their Founders and Benefactors, 1057,1,&c. 1807.*col.*1,2. The Vniversity of Oxford was instituted by king *Alfred* a Saxon; when, 1061,1,&c.

P.

Paget: The Lord *Paget* had his Garter and George taken from him in the Tower, 608,1,10.

Painting: Its Inventer, 17,2,33. 1085,1,34. It is not onely reputed infamous for women to Paint, but impious, and was scorned of the very Heathen, 1085 1,30.

Palsgrave: His comming into England, with his magnificent entertainement, gifts, and shewes, &c. 908, 909, &c. The Nobles that attended him into England, 1022,2,18. The description of his Country, 1012, 1013, &c. The birth of his second sonne, 1028,2 50.

Palyne: His bounty to good vses. 997,1,31.

Paris: The Kings Pallace there, burnt, 1029,1, 28. Its Originall whence, 1032.33. The beginning of Misery in Paris, 757,1 63. The Duke of *Parma* marcheth through France to Paris, 760,1.22. The siege of Paris raysed, *ib.*34. The King had almost surprised Paris on a suddaine, *lin.*60 Its misery, *col.*2, *lin.*1.

Parishes: The Parish Churches of every Shire through England, *fol.*268,269.

Parks: More Parkes in England then in all Europe besides. 2,2,37.

Parliament: A Parliament in King *Richard* the seconds time that wrought wonders, 303,1,29. Divers Iustices arrested as they sate in Par. *lin.*37. Many Iustices condemned

and executed, *lin.* 50, & *col.* 2, *lin.* 8. In that Parliament was granted a Subsidie of wooll, 304,1,30. A Parliament held at Cambridge, *col.*2,*lin.*40. At Winchester, 307,2, 54. At Westminster,313,2,59. At London, 315,1, 66. Another Parliament at Westminster, *ib.* 2,44. Foure thousand Archers compessed the Parliament house ready to shoot. 316,1,28. A Parliament in Westminster Hall, where was chosen another King,323,1,*in firem*,*col.* 2, *lin.* 1. A Parliament held at Shrewsbury, 318,2,15. The Lay-mens Parliament at Coventry, 330, 2, 30. A crue of great women came and checked the Duke of Glocester in the open Parliament, 369, 1, 50. A Parliament kept in Reading, 378, *col.1*,*in*,57. The Papists practise in the Powder-plot at the Parliament house,874,1,52. A Parliament at Westminster,1034 1,23. Dissolved,*col.*2.*lin.* 39. Another Parliament at Westminster, 1043,1,45. The first Parliament at Salisbury, 138,2,15. At Northampton, 283,1, 10. At Stepenhith,267,2,44. A Parliament at Salisbury,229,1,14. At Nottingham,*col.*2,*lin*,14.

Parma: The Duke of Parma his strange preparation for invading England,745, 2, 26. His Oration to his Lords, *lin.*64. His secret purpose for himselfe,746,1,30. He dissembled deeply with Queene *Elizabeth*, of blessed memory,*lin*,40. He marcheth to Paris thorow France with a great Army.766,1,25.

Parro: One of that name made Earle of Essex, 586,1,4.

Parry: His Treason and execution,702,1,63.

Pauls: Saint *Pauls* Church first foundation,65, 1,44 Afterward burnt and new layd againe, 121,2,45. Burnt againe,142,2,1. Burnt with Lightning,384.2,15, A speciall Commission for the repaire of it,1048,2,5.

Paulet: He is made Lord high Treasurer, 671, 2, 12. Sir *Thomas Paulet* is beheaded, 615. 2,20.

Peacocke: A Bishop of that name for Translating the Bible, convicted and condemned, and for certaine strange heresies deprived, *fol*,402.403.

Peda: He was the first Christian King of *Mercia*,69 1,9.

Pedro: *Don Pedro* taken,747,2,44.

Pelagians: His heresies when hatched, 47, 2, 60. They corrupted the Brittaines,but were at last confuted and confounded,49,2,4,50.

Penance: Publique Penance done by Sir *Peeefall Brocas* at Saint *Pauls* Cresse, for his notorious whoredomes, 1005,1,25. Done also by the Lord *Strange* and his Lady,352,2,30.

Penry: He was taken for Treason, condemned and executed,766,2,10.

Percy: *Henry Percy* the younger, and *Thomas Percy* Earle of Worcester conpired against *Henry* the fourth,328,2,48. The *Percies* are taken, slaine, and strangely vsed, *ibid.*

Persia: Its Originall,18,1,40.

Peter: The manner of the Apostle Saint *Peters* death,34,2,30. Peter-pence their originall, and how payd, 76,2,40. Forbidden, 266, 1, 65. Saint Peters Cornhill in London, founded for an Archbishop See, and made the Metropolitane Church of the Kingdome, which so endured for 400. yeares, 38,2,58. Afterward made a Schoole-Church,1067.

Peterbrough: It was burnt, and how, *fol.*138, 2,38.

Philpot: A Cittizen of London made an Oration vnto King *Richard* the second, 277, 2,43. Of divers exploits of his,281,2,29.

Picktring: When, and by whom built,*fol.*12, 2,56.

Picts: They first inhabited the Marches,12,1, 55. The Britaines endangered by them, 48, 1,34.

Pinnes: The first making of them in England, 1038,2,40.

Plagues: A great Plague in this Land in the seventh yeare of *Henry* the fourth, 334, 2, 27. Another great Plague in London,1041,2,35. London extreamely infected with the Plague 1046,1,11. Of a Plague in this Land, wherein the quicke were scarce able to bury the dead,132,1,50. A great Plague in the North of England, 305, 2,20 A generall Plague throughout Europe, 665,1,7. Another heavie Plague in London,857,858,&c. A generall Plague,245,2,25.

Playhouse: The Globe, Fortune-Play-house burnt,1003,2,61.

Planting Plantation: A Plantation in Ireland by the Cittizens of London,1004,1.44.

Plimouth: It was spoyled by Britaines,*fol.*329, 2,45.

Polana: Whence so called,89,1,27. An Orator sent from thence to the Queene of England, and answered, *fol.*784,785.

Pompe: Examples of worldly Pompe, *fol.*126, 2,50.

Poole: Cardinall *Poole* sent for by Queene *Mary* into England,617,1.66. He is made Archbishop of Canterbury,628,1,6.

Pope: Three Schismaticall Popes put downe, 346,1,33.

Portingale: An Army sent thither, 283,1,47. Portugale voyage, and the causes thereof, 752,1,4. *Don Antonio* desireth the Queene of England to land him there, *lin.* 23. The Earle of Essex vnknowne to the Queen goes thither.*col* 2,*lin.* 8. The English embarque themselues there,754,1,50. They are faint-hearted,755.2,32, A provision for Sea voyage.756,2,39 The King of Persia coveting others Right, left both his life and Inheritance to the King of Spaine, 685,1,17.

Poytiers: A sore battell there fought, *fol.*260, 1,25.

Prentices: Their great disorder at Shrovetide in and about London, 1026, 2, 31. *Vide* Apprentices.

Priests: Three Priests burnt & hanged, for what 58, 1, 33. The Priests wages was so small, that they fell to stealing, 265, 2. 48. A time wherein they were so great againe, that they were in office about their King, and some had 20. Benefices besides other dignities,266,2,20. A Story of one that swore *That hee would make Priests heads as sheape as Sheepes heads*, 372, 1, 28. Seminary Priests banished,710,1,13. Some executed, 719,1, 10. Six more executed,750,1,50.

Prince: Charles now King of England, when created Prince of Wales,1025,2,37. Of his going into Spaine, with his returne from thence,1035,1,20. Of Princes, see more vnder the Titles of their names.

Printing: When, and by whom first invented in Germany, and brought into England,44, 2, 1,

Priories: An 120 Priories suppreft, 345,2,42.

Publicans: How the Publicans which came from Germany into England were punished, 151,1,60,*col.*2,*lin*,15. A bloudy procession of Publicans,247,1,1.

Purgatory: An Hole in Ireland called Saint *Patricks* Purgatory, with his description, 310, 1, 60.

Pyrates: They encrease, they are taken and executed,675,2,40 Of their most notorious abuses,89.,2,45. How they submitted themselues to the Turkes, 893,1,3. Three Pirats executed,*lin.*50.

R.

Raleigh: Sir *Walter Raleigh* his Discouery of *Guyana*, *fol.*109, *col.*1, *lin.* 64. He is arraigned, 830, 1,5. He was the first that euer brought Tobacco into this kingdome, *fol.* 1038, *col.* 2, *l.*16. He is executed, 1030 1, 5.

Ramsey: When founded, 85, 2,51.

Reading: When the Abbey there was founded 140,1, 56. A Parliament kept there, 378,1, 57. The Terme kept there, 1042,1,27.

Rebellion. Rebells: A great rebellion in England, and the cause thereof, 283, 2,7. Rebels had a Chaplaine whom they called Sir *John Bale*. 284, 2, 63. Their King sends to them to know the cause of their Rebellion, 285, 1, 20. The Rebells burne one of their fellowes, and there are two and thirtie of them mewed vp in a Seller, where they dyed, 286, 1,15, 30. They all murther one another, *lin.* 50. he rest are taken with their Ring-leader *Legat*, with feuenteene more, and are beheaded, *ibid* 2,30. Others rise, and enter the Tower, 287,1,36. How they tooke and beheaded an Archbish. of Canterbury, 2,5,21. The Rebells of Kent, their stirres, coveting ends, *à fol.* 388, *ad* 392. The Earle of Northumberland and Westmerland rebell against Queene *Elizabeth* of blessed memory, 663, 1,55. Of rebels which tooke and rent the Bible, *ibid.*2,2,5. These besiege *Barnards* Castle, take it, and are taken againe, and executed at Durham, 664, *per totum*. Rebels executed at Barwicke, 666, 1, 36.

Rhodes besieged by the Turkes, and why they desired that place, 516, 2, 17, 33. 600000 Pioners sent to the Rhodes, 517, 1, 3. It is besieged with 200000 Turkes, *lin.* 30. It is yeelded to the Turkes after the slaughter of 64000 of them, and 40000 of a mortalitie, *ibid.* 2, 35.

Richard the First: his Life and Raigne, 158. 159, &c. He subdueth the Isle of Cyprus, 159, 2. 38. *John* his younger brother rebelleth, *l.*50. and 160, 1, 13. *Richard* changeth Cyprus for Ierusalem, *lin.*21 Hee is taken prisoner, *ibid.* 2, 4. His ransome, 62. Hee is wounded to death, 163, 2, 20.

Richard the Second: his Life and Raigne, 277, 278. *John Philpot* a Citizen of London, his Oration vnto him, 277, 2, 43. He reconciled the Duke of Lancaster and the Londoners, as also the Bish. of Winton and the Duke, 278, 2, 2, and 31. He is crowned, 279, 1, 14. Hee was exceedingly troubled with Rebels, *à fo.* 284 *ad* 288. Hee was like to bee slaine, but rescued by the Lord Maior of London, 289, 2, 48. Many removed from his Court, 290, 1, 17. A Parliament in his time, which wrought wonders, *lin.*29. He reneweth his oath taken at Coronation, 304, 1, 44. Hee saileth into Ireland, 309, 2, 47. He saileth to Callis, 313, 2, 12. Hee marrieth *Isabell* the French Kings daughter, 315, 1, 15. He is betrayed, 322, 1, 27. After he had raigned two and twenty yeeres and three months, he was deposed, 323, 2, 50 Messengers sent into diuers Countries, certifying the cause of that his deposing. 324, 2, 29. One *Searle* counterfeiting King *Richards* Seale, was hanged and drawne, *lin* 62. One *Maudlen* a Priest, who much resembled the King, was vsed in many things in his person, as if he had beene King indeed, but afterward was executed for his good seruice, 325, 1, 26. *col* 2, 4. This King was afterward imprisoned in Pomfret Castle, where he died of hunger, thirst, & cold, 325, 2, 15. After that he was brought to S. *Pauls* bare-faced, and there set three dayes to be beheld, *ibid.* He was buried at Langly, *ibid.* but afterward his body was taken vp, and buried at Westm. 343, 2, 57.

Richard the Third, his Life and Raigne, 458, 459, &c. His pleasant Oration which hee made to winne his Nobles. 458, 1, 50. His Proclamation for Pardon, *lin* 6. How friendly hee vsed one *Fogge*, a deadly enemy of his 459, 2, 40. He with his wife Queene *Anne* are crowned, 459, 1, 5. The order hee takes with the Constable of the Tower to put his two Nephewes to death, which he refusing, hee implyes one Sir *James Tyrell*, who appoynts one *Miles Forrest*, and *John Dighton*, to smother them in their beds, which they did, & buryed them vnder an heape of stones 459, 460. The Duke of Buckingham conspires against him, 460, 2, 50. A large Discourse thereof, *ibid.* 461, &c. The King gets a great strength, with which removes from London to Salisbury, 465, 1, 61. Hee calles a Parliament, and therein attainted the Earle of Richmond for treason, and layd great Taxes on the people, 466, 1, 55. He began to build an high tower at Westminster, which is yet vnfinished, *col* 2, 4. His chiefe Councellers then were *Lovell*, *Ratcliffe*, and *Catesby*, *l.* 10, &c. Hee concludeth a peace with the Scots, yet feares *Richmond*, *lin.* 45, 60. Hee would haue

haue married his Neece, 467, 2, 45. King *Richards* Battell at Bosworth, 469, 1, 50. He perswades his people to be valiant, *col. 2, lin.* 28. Hee himselfe fights manfully, but is slaine, 470, 1, 26. His body was shamefully carryed to Leicester naked, trussed behind a Purfivant of Armes, like a Hogge or a Calfe, &c. *ibid.* 2, 3. and buryed very meanly, *lin.* 37. He founded a Colledge at Midleham beyond Yorke, *lin.* 39, and another at London besides the Tower, in a Chappel called Our Lady of *Barking, ib. lin* 40.

Richardson: Sergeant *Richardson* made Lord Chiefe Iustice of the Common Pleas, 1042, 2, 30. Made Lord Chiefe Iustice of the Kings Bench, 1050, 1, 2.

Richmond: Duke of Richmond and Lenox, deceased, 1035, 2, 26.

Ridley: hee and *Latimer* burnt, 627, 2 12.

Rie: The Towne of Rye taken and burnt by the French, 278, 2, 44. They of the towne of Rie sayle into Normandie, and spoyle the towne of *Peters*-Haven, 281, 1, 12. They fetch their Bells from Normandy, *lin.* 20.

Riot: A great Riot in Fleetstreet, 1045, 1, 1.

Rivers: Diuers Riuers discovered and described, 1, 2, 3.

Roane: It is besieged, 357, 1, 20. Yeelded to the French, 386, 1, 60.

Robbin: *Robbin Hood*, and Little *John*, a couple of notable theeues in King *Richard* the firsts time, 159, 1, 50.

Rochell: There was taken an hundred shiploades of Wine in King *Richard* 2. time, 301 1, 19. It was yeelded to the French King, 1044 1, 52. It was besieged long before, but in vaine, 270, 1, 40.

Rochester: It is burnt, 144, 1, 34. The Castle besieged, 284, 1, 45. By whom the Bridge was made. 335, 1, 4.

Roe: Sir *Thomas Roe* was the first Ambassadour to the great *Aghore*, alias *Mogull*, 1022, 1, 4.

Roystone: Its Founder, with his name, *fol.* 160, 1, 48.

Role: The Role of Winton, what, and why so called, 118 2, 13.

Rome: When built and by whom, 10, 2, 24. & 22, 2, 58. The first beginning of Consuls there, 24, 2, 30. There were slaine of them by *Mithridate* King of *Pontus* 8000 in one day, 29, 1, 25. *Iulius Cæsar*, the first Emperour of Rome, 2, 4. The Romans Niceneſſe, 33, 1, 5. Rome set on fire by *Nero*, burnt six dayes, and seuen nights, *ibid.* 2, 42. The Vniversitie of Athens referred to Rome, 37, 2, 27. The Capitall Librarie in Rome burnt, 39, 2, 58. The first Emperor of Rome, that wore a Diademe, 42, 1, 30. The English Schoole in Rome repayred, 77, 2, 55. An Hospitall in Rome for the English, 335, 1, 64. A curse sent from Rome on King *Henry* 8. and his whole realme, 570, &c. A Bull come from Rome against Queene *Elizabeth* of blessed memory, hanged vp at the Bishop of Londons gate by one *Felton*, who being found, was there hanged himselfe, 667, 1, 10 & *col.* 2. 14. Rome sacked by the Duke of *Burbon*, and the Pope brought into great pouertie, 526, 2, 12. Sacked againe, in which the Duke of *Burbon* was slaine, 527, 1, 24. Againe sacked and spoiled, *col.* 2, 5.

Rose: A golden Rose sent from Rome, 520, 2, 50

Ruffes: The fashion of Ruffes invented in England, and called the French fashion: but they called vs English Monsters for wearing of it, 869, 2, 15.

Ruffin: Ruffins Hall, when and where changed, and why so called, 1024, 1, 28.

Rufus: His Raigne, 128, 1, 36. His costly paire of Hose that were raitea from three shillings to thirteene shill. and foure pence, *c.* 1, 60. His Nobles rebell against him, *col.* 2, 44. He kept Churches and Church-liuings in his owne hands, 129, 1, 1. The abuses of this Kings time, *l.* 28. His oath and vnfaithfulnesse, 150 Hee inuadeth *Robert* his elder brother, 130, 1, 22. He is strucke off his horse by his hardinesse, and Knights him that did it, *lin.* 60. *co.* 2 *lin.* 10 He inuadeth Wales, 132, 2, 3. Hee built Westminster, 133, 1, 5. His courage is tryed, 134, 1, 44. He is slaine hunting in New Forrest, *ibid.* 2. 20. How and where buried, and how little bewayled, *ibid.* 29.

Russia: The State of *Russia*, and death of three Emperors in one yeere, 871, 2, 24. How long they haue assumed the state of Emperours, *ibid.* 2. 60. Wee receiue Ambassadors from thence, 1027. 1 45. Sir *Dudlie Digges* sent Ambassidor thither, 1029, 2, 7. Another speciall Ambassidor from *Russia*, 1034, 2, 17.

S.

S*Acvile*: Sir *Thomas Sacvile* sent Ambassidor into France, 660, 2, 24.

Sacraments: But three Sacraments allowed in the Popish Church in King *Henry* 8. time, 573, 1, 50.

Salisbury, or *Sarum*: Old *Sarum* built, and the Steepie of the Cathedrall burnt the next day after that it was finished, 131, 1, 12.

Sandwich spoiled by the French, 401, 2, 60.

Savoy, Its first founder, who its finisher, & further her, with his end of doing it, 483, 2, 50.

Saxons: Their description, 100, 2, 13.

Schooles: A Catalogue of all the ancient famous Schooles in England, 1062, 1, 34.

Scots. Scotland: It is another part of Great Britaine, 2, 2, 38. Its situation and limitation at large, 2, 4, &c. The Scots invade Engl. 113, 1, 25. The K. of Scots taken prisoner, 153, 1, 60. They invade Engl. 304, 1, 57. Scotland invaded by a Duke of Suffolk, and ouerthrown, 583, 2, 18. Scotland entred by Sir *Ioh. Foster*, 665, 2, 5. By the L. *Scroope*, 666, 1, 5. Hambleton in Scotland besieged, *ib.* 2, 50. A proclamation against the Queene of Scots, 741, 2, 10. Shee is beheaded, 742, 1, 20. K. *Iames* erecteth a royall Tombe for her, 1002, 2, 30.

Scriveners: They are made a Corporation, 1043 2, 65.

Sea. Sea-Rovers: vide *Pirats*.

Seale: Privie Seales for money, 408, 2, 13.

Serpent seen with 2 heads in Oxfordsh. 247, 1, 20

Seuentie: The Seuentie Translators time, labour and reward, in and for translating the Bible, 28, 1, 54.

Shaftesburie: when built, 10, 1, 20.

Shaving: Normans faces all shaven, & English men so also, all saue the vpper lip, 99, 1, 54.

Sherborne: An Abby there built, 140, 2, 3.

Shine: A strange sight of Gnats there, euen at the Kings Court, 305, 1, 36.

Ship: The Ship called the *Prince*, was the greatest Ship that euer was built in England, 996 1, 43. English ships arrested in France, 1042 2, 48. A Ship built in Leaden-hall, 770, 1, 56.

Shrewsbury: It was besieged & by whom, 329, 1, 30. A Parliament kept there in the raigne of K. *Rich.* the third, 318, 2, 15. The Earle of Shrewsbury slaine in the raigne of K. *Edw.* the Sixt, 397, 1, 10. A free Schoole founded at Shrewsbury by K. *Edw.* 6. in the sixt yeere of his raigne, 1062, 1, 39.

Shore: *Iane Shore* was *Edw.* 4. his Concubine: Her description, 447. 2, 56. The L. Chamberlaine kept her after the King had done with her, 450, 1, 5. And yet notwithstanding shee begged before she died, *ibid.* 2, 5.

Sidney: Sir *Phil. Sidney* made Gouernor of Flushing, 710, 1, 40. He enters it, 733, 1, 1. Hee makes an Oration, *col.* 2, 24. He is wounded, 737, 2, 45. He dyeth at Arnhauen, and is buryed in London, 739, 2, 40.

Sleepe: One *Will. Foxly*, a potmaker in the Towet of London, fell asleepe, and so continued and could not be awaked with pricking, &c. for fourteene dayes, & 15 nights, 599, 1, 23

Smithfield, when new paved, 1023, 2, 36.

Snow: A great Snow, 685, 2, 15. *Vide Frosts.*

Sommerules: He is arraigned for treason, against Queene *Elizabeth* of euer blessed memory, condemned, & to be executed, but he strangleth himselfe in prison, 698, 699, &c.

Sonne: A Sonne cursed of his father prosperetb not, 117, 1, 18.

Soulder: Of a Souldier that became a Monke, and Abbot of S. *Augustines*, 131, 1, 41.

South-Hampton: A noble Earle of Southamp. sworne Priuy Councellor, 1032, 1, 7. Southampton sacked and burnt by the French Pirats, 235, 1, 2.

Spaine: Its originall, 17, 2, 48. Its Intendment against England, 743, 2, 40. They prepare an Armado for Engl. 746, 2, 65. A present sent from the Queen of Spaine to the Queene of Engl. 883, 2, 10. A Spanish Nauie discouered, 747, 1, 23. The approach of it sent word to the Queene, *lin.* 34. The first sight of the English with them, *ib.* 60. The second fight, English with them, *ib.* 60. The second fight, *col.* 2. *l.* 13. A full Discourse of that matter, *ad* 747, *ad* 752. A Sermon of Thanksgiuing at *Pauls* Crosse for our delinery from the Spanish Armado, 750, 1, 50. The Spaniard takes Naples, 482, 2, 30.

Spalato: He arriueth in England, and is honourably entertained, 1026, 1, 67. He preacheth in London, 1028, 2, 30.

Spring: Of a Spring of water, running in likenesse of Blood, 134, 2, 8.

Stamford: That was an Vniversitie, 10, 1, 28. It was suppresst by the Pope, *lin.* 33.

Starching: Who was the first that euer taught Starching in England, 869, 1, 22.

Starre: Vide *Blazing-Starre*. 1030, 1031 *l.* 75, 2, 66. Of such as were called Knights of the Starre, 253, 2, 13. 673, 2, 27.

Stephen: King *Stephens* life and raigne, 134, &c. He besiegeth Bedford, 144, 1, 48. Wallingford, 145, 2. He is taken prisoner in London, *lin.* 28. He and his brother *Robert* Earle of Gloceſt. deliuered on exchange, 446, 1, 5. He besiegeth the Empresse two moneths, 146, 1, 30. King *Stephen* flieth, *lin* 59. He taketh *Mandevile* Earle of Essex, *col.* 2. *li.* 3. Hee is crowned at Lincolne, *lin.* 38. He besiegeth Worcester, 147, 1, 37 He calls a Parl a nent at London, *lin.* 59. He imprisoneth *Theobald* Archbishop of Cant. *ib.* 2, 7. He concludes a peace with the Duke of Norm. for which his sonne *Eustace* is angry and dyeth mad, *co.* 2. *li* 40, &c. He adopteth *Henry* to his Kingdome, 148, 1, 1. He dieth, 2, 1. His issue, 30.

Stone-age: or, *Stone Hedge*. By whom, and for what cause it was thought to be built or laid in that marvellous manner, 53, 1, 27.

Storie: One Doctor Story executed, 669, 1, 43.

Stowe: This *Stowe* that made this Chronicle, is become a part of the Chronicle himselfe, where see both his life and death, 811, 2, 5.

Stratford: Stratford on Auon burnt, when, and how, 1004, 1, 36.

Subsidies, Of wooll paid for Subsidies, 266, 1, 5.

Stowes put downe, 591, 1, 14.

Sudbury. A Colledge there founded, and by whom, 287, 2, 28.

Suffolke: Earle of Suffolke made L. high Treasurer, 1012, 2, 63.

Summerset: Lord *Rob.* Earle of Summerset, (to Gods great dishonour, and their eternall sin and shame) marryed the Lady *Howard*, *Essex* wife, 1005, 1, 52 Is made Lord Chamberlaine, 1012, 2, 64. *Edmund* Duke of Summerset made Capt. of Callis, 39, 2, 55. A Duke of Summerset in *Edw.* 6. time arraigned and condemned, 606, 2, 55. beheaded, 607, 1, 40.

Sunne: It was seene to appeare as red as blood, 305, 2, 60. And shortly after there fell a fearfull Plague and Dearth, 306, 1, 5.

Sussex: Humfrie and Sussex created, 61. 2, 25.

Sutton: A Gerdler citizen of *London*, built an honourable hospitall at *Charter-house*, 1016. 1017, &c.

Sweat. A Sweateing-sickneſſe that raigned in *London*, 540, 2, 2.

T

T*Artars*: The originall of the Tartars kingdomes, 163. 2, 47. 475. 2, 10, &c.

Teasdale: his bountie to *Balioll* Colledge in *Oxford* and *Abbingtons* free schoole in *Berkeshire*, 997, 1, 40.

Temple: Templers: of It, and Them see much, 1069, 1070. New-temple Inne built, when and by whom, 1571, 1, 10

Tempest: A Tempest at *London* blowing downe 600, how

600 houses, 130,2,52.
Terme: When kept at *Reading*, in *Barkeshire*, 1042,1,27.
Testament: The New-testament translated into English, 553,2,63.
Tewde: The Riuer of *Tweed* whence it is, and whether it flowes, 2,2, 60.
Thames: Riner of *Thames* cleared of stops, piles and wares, 1013, 2,60, How the Thames stands, 2,1,32. It was dryed vp, 138, 1, 43, 149,2,47. 765,1,52.
Theodosius: He is put to open Penance by Saint *Ambrose*, 47,2,55.
Theukesbury: Its Church and Towne built and endowed with great Reuenues, 135,2,11.
Throkmorton: He is arraigned of high treason, condemned and executed, 698,2,60.
Thunder: Of a strange thunder and lightning in *Barkeshire*, 1043,1,64, *vid plura*, 308,1,45.
Tidbury: Its Castle built, when and by whom, 118,2,48.
Tilbury: The Campe there in the yeare, 83, 744,2,23. A preparation for it, 40, Queene *Elizab.* of blessed memory, was there in presence, 749. 1,16. A prophecy of it, 40, The ships that were vnder the Lord Admirall, that yeare, 2,5. The particulars of horse and foote that were there for that seruice, 63, There was a Musser before the Queene, 750,1,40. A Sermon at Saint *Paules* Crosse for our deliuery, 50. Where also were the Ensignes that were taken from the Spaniards shewne, 756,2,62. And these Ensignes were afterward hanged vpon *London* bridge, 751,1,7. Another Sermon for it by Bp. *Cooper*, at which the Qu. was present, *fol.* 751, *col.* 1, 21, 33.
Toades: Of one *Scissilus Elkarber*, that was so sorely haunted with Toads, that he could rest in no place for them, and at last was flaine and deuoured by them, 156,1,15.
Tobacco: That (stincking weede so much abused to Gods dishonour) first brought into this land by Sir *Walter Ralegh*, 1038,2,7, or by Sir *Iohn Hankins* as some say, 2,57.
Tolouse: It was walled with fire and sword, *s.* 257,1,27. Twentie Wind-Mills threin set on fire at once, 2,4.
Tower: The Tower of London built by *William* the Conquerour, when, 117. 1, 57. Repaired, 560,2, 60. Prisoners remoued from thence to Winton, to be tryed there, by reason of the great plague in London, *fol.* 810, *col.* 2, *lin.* 57.
Treske: Hee is censured in the Starre-Chamber for his Iudaicall opinions, *fol.* 1029, *col.* 2, *lin.* 25.
Traytors: Vide *Treason*: The Popish Powder-plotting Traytors Practise, Discovery and end, *a fol.* 874, *ad* 881. The great Duke of Buckingh. the traytor betrayed by his deare seruant, 465,2,57.
Trent: The Riuer of *Trent* described, *fol.* 2, *col.* 2, *lin.* 10.
Trey: Its Founder and Confessor, 20,1,2.
Turkes: A great victory which Christendome had euer the *Turkes*, *fol.* 670, *col.* 2, *lin.* 17.
Tydes: Of foure Tydes which were within fiue houres, 1035, 1, 10. two Tydes within one houre, 678, 2, 56. Another strange shifting of tydes, 893, 1, 54.
Tylar: *Iohn Tylar* slew the Kings Collector, 284, 2, 25. Of *Wat Tylar* and his actes, 288, 289. Hee was arrested, and wounded by the Lord Maior of London, 289, 1, 60. Hee was slaine by one *Cauendish*, *c.* 2, 15.
Tyrants: An example of one *Aygebert*, a Tyrant that came to a miserable end. *fol.* 77. *col.* 1 *lin.* 15.

V.

Vander-Mount: Prince *Vander-Mount* comes to visite our King, *fol.* 888, *col.* 2, *lin.* 37.
Velvet: When Velver and Silke slops were first made in England, 869, 2, 50.
Venice: Its originall and State, 50, 1, 4.
Vere: Sir *Robert Vere* Duke of Ireland, forsooke his wife and married another Lady, 301, 1, 23. *Robert Vere* sometimes Earle of Oxford, dyed most miserablie, *fol.* 307, *col.* 2, *lin.* 47.
Verses: The originall Author of *Saphique* Verses, 24, 2, 40.
Villars: Vide *Buckingham*: When sworne Gentleman of the Kings Bed-chamber, 1025 2, 20. Made Master of the Horse, 1024, 2, 52, and Knight of the Garter, 1045, 2, 7, and a Viscount, *col.* 2, *lin.* 17. Created Marquesse of Buckingham, 1028, 2, 27. How hee liued and how when, and where hee dyed, *Vide Buckingham*.
Vineyards permitted to the Brittans, *fol.* 42, *col.* 1, *lin.* 63.
Virginia: Its Plantation by the English, 1017, 2, 66.
Virgins: Of 11000 Virgins which were sent into Brittaine, there martyred or murthered, and that by whom, 47, 2, 53.
Vlfar: Hee slew his owne brother, *fol.* 69, 1, 25
Vnfreuile: A Knight and Vice-Admirall of England, sent against the Scots, 338, 1, 27.
Vniuersities: The Vniuersities of *Athens* referred to *Rome*, *fol.* 37, *col.* 2, *lin.* 27, the Vniuersitie of *Oxford* first founded, *fol.* 80, *col.* 2, *lin.* 20, See more hereof in *Oxford*, and *Cambridge*. The Vniuersitie at *Stamford* forbidden, *fol.* 232, *col.* 1, *lin.* 1. A Catalogue of all the Vniuersities of *England* with their Founders and principall benefactors, *fol.* 1057, *col.* 1, *lin.* Vniuersitie Colledge by whom founded, *col.* 2, *lin.* 35.

W

Wales: It is discouered and described, 3, 2, &c. Foure Bishopricks in it, *fol.* 5. *c.* 2. *lin.* 20. The Welch and Normans cruell battle, *fol.* 144, *col.* 1, *lin.* 30, *vid.* Welch.
Walbrooke: That place in London, whereof it tooke its name, *fol.* 43, *col.* 1, *lin.* 40.
Wallingford: It is besieged by King *Stephen*, fol. 145, *col.* 1, *lin.* 2.

Ware

Ware: The towne of Ware, when first built, *fol.* 81, *col.* 1, *lin.* 60.
Warcham: there was a King buried that was poisoned by his owne wife, *fol.* 77, *col.* 1, *lin.* 45. Her miserable end, *ibid. Warcham* besieged, *fol.* 146, *col.* 1, *lin.* 35.
Wares: Fine wares which were long vnknowen in *England*, *fol.* 868, *col.* 2, *lin.* 35.
Warewicke: An Earle of *Warewicke* arraigned, *fol.* 318. *col.* 1, *lin.* 19. *Warewicke-castle* built, *fol.* 153, *col.* 2, *lin.* 1.
Wassaile: When the custome of Wassailing began, *fol.* 51, *col.* 2, *lin.* 30.
Watson: A traytor, who with one *Clarke* was executed, 831, 1, 17.
Worm-mouth: The Church there destroyed *fol.* 113, *col.* 1, *lin.* 25.
Wells: The Bishoprick of *Wells* founded, 77, 1, 25. A dreadful sudden tempest on the Cathedrall Church of Welles, 782, 2, 37.
Westminster: When and by whom built, 97, 2, 41, Westm. Hall when built, 133, 1, 5. Its length and bredth, 43. A great feast made there by *Rufus* its Founder, *ibid.* It is repayred, 318, 2. The Schooles of *Theologie*, and other Arts within *Westminster*, 1066. A banqueting house built there, in Queene *Elizabeths* time, 689, 1, 29 The Kings Pallace at *Westminster* burnt, 207, 2, 60.
Weston: Hee being Chancellour of the Exchequer was made Lord high Treasurer of *England*, 1044, 1, 44.
Whale: A VVhale taken on dry land, when, where, and how, with a description of it, *fol.* 678, *col.* 1, *lin.* 60.
Wheate: It was sometimes sold in *England* for 12, pence a quarter, 398, 1, 1, And againe for 6, pence a Bushell, 282, 1, 56.
White-hall: The Banquetting house there built, *fol.* 891, *col.* 1, *lin.* 29.
Wich: Sir *William Wich*, A Priest: hee was burnt on Tower-hill for Abiuration. *fol.* 387. *col.* 2, *lin.* 3.
Weckham: *William* of Weckham is made Lord Bishop of *Winton*, *fol.* 367, *col.* 1, *lin.* 10, Hee was made Lord Chancellour of England, *fol.* 305, *col.* 1, *lin.* 17. When hee built his Colledges, by Winchester, and in Oxford, *fol.* 331, *col.* 2, *lin.* 50. The most part of the Cathedrall Church in Winchester built by him, *lin.* 57. Hee was borne at *Wickham*, and preferd by *Edward* the third, *fol.* 332, *col.* 1, *lin.* 5. His banishment but a fable, *lin.* 30. His lands confiscated, but restored againe, *ibid.*
Weckliffe: His Sect sprang, And the manner how, *fol.* 344, *col.* 1, *lin.* 19.
William the Conquerour: His first comming into *England* with 896 ships, claiming it for his right, and got it indeed by Conquest, *fol.* 99, *col.* 1, *lin.* 5. His fiercenes in Battle, *fol.* 100, *col.* 1, *lin.* 50. Three horses slaine vnder him in one Battle, *ibid.* His Life and Raigne, *fol.* 102, 103, 104, &c. Hee was crowned thrice euery yeare, *fol.* 102, *col.* 2, *lin.* 22. The names of the Nobles and Gentry that came into *England* with him, *fol.* 107, and 108. A conspiracie against him by the Earles of *Norfolke* and *Suffolke*, 116, *col.* 1, *lin.* 1. He built the Tower of London, *fol.* 117, *col.* 1, *lin.* 57. His wife *Marild* dyed, *fol.* 119, *col.* 1, *lin.* 1. *Richard* his second sonne dieth and is buried at *Winchester*, *lin.* 20. His oration to his Nobles after his returne out of *Normandy* into the Ile of *Wight*, *fol.* 120, *col.* 1, *lin.* 34. Hee wasted *France*, *fol.* 122, *col.* 1, *lin.* 60. Hee dieth, *col.* 2, *lin.* 2. His words at his death, *lin.* 42. His councell to his children, *fol.* 125, *col.* 1, *lin.* 1. He condemneth his son *Robert*, but commendeth his sonne *William*, *fol.* 125 *col.* 1, *lin.* 18, 50 His gift to his sonne *Henry*, *lin.* 62. Hee freed all prisoners, *col.* 2, *lin.* 46. The yeare, day, and houre of his death, with the amazement of the Beholders thereof, *fol.* 126, *col.* 2, *lin.* 18. His body forsaken of all his Nobles, and onely one poore knight takes and buries it, at his owne charges, *fol.* 127, *col.* 1, *lin.* 24 His burial forbidden by *Anselme*, *Fitz-Arthur*, *col.* 2, *lin.* 12. A place purchased for it, *lin.* 30, his body stancke, *lin.* 40. *William* the Conquerour his tombe defaced and boaes scattered, *fol.* 127, *col.* 2, *lin.* 63, *fol.* 128, *col.* 1, *lin.* 1. A Catalogue of his issue, *ibid.*
Williams: Deane of Westminster, sworne priuie Counsellour, and Lord Keeper, *fol.* 1034, *col.* 2, *lin.* 4.
Walton: The Church thereof when and by whom founded, *fol.* 97, *col.* *lin.* 60, burnt, *fol.* 146 *col.* 1 *lin.* 56.
Wimbleton: The Lord *Wimbletons* house in the Strand at *London* burnt, *fol.* 1044, *col.* 1, *lin.* 62.
Winchester: or *Winton*, when built, *fol.* 10, *col.* 1, *lin.* 20, made a Bishops See, *fol.* 75, *col.* 2, *lin.* 48, Spoyled by the Danes, *fol.* 78. *col.* 1. *l.* 12. *Winton* Role what, 118. 2. 14. it is burnt, *fol.* 145. *col.* 2. *lin.* 32. A Parliament there, *fol.* 387 *col.* 2. *lin.* 54.
Winds: Strange winds, *fol.* 1042, *col.* 1. *lin.* 44. *Vide* Stormes.
Wind-mills: Twenty Wind-mills set on fire at once at *Tolouse*, 5. 2. 4.
Wine: It was made at *Winsor* as well as in other parts, 143. 1. 27.
Winsor: The Castle and towne of Winsor built by *Hen.* the first, 137, 1, 57. Winsor Colledge founded, 142, 2, 57. Winsor castle enlarged, 284, 1, 44. Winsor castle burnt, 206, 2, 22.
Witch: The Witch called the Witch of Eye, burnt, 381, 1, 42.
Wolues: They are destroyed in Engl 83, 2. 30.
Woodstock: That Parke made to the destruction of many parishes, villages, chappels & Churches by *Henry* the first, 143. 2. 17.
Wool: forbidden to bee carried beyond seas 223. 2. 54. 2000 sackes of wool granted to King *Edward* the third, 24. 2. 15. the first Staple of wooll in *Calis*. 255. 2. 34.
Woolsey: Thomas *Woolsey* Almner to *Henry* the eighth, and made Bishop of *Tarwine*, 452. 2. 14. Hee was but a poore mans sonne of *Ipswich*, Apt to learne, and Batchelour of Arts at 15 yeares of age, and therefore commonly called the Boy-batchelour, 497. 1. 47.

Hee

Hee had onely a poore Benefice, 497. 2. 5. Vpon displeasure of one Sir *Amias Paulet* hee was set in stocks, 15. Hee revengeth his imprisonment, 26. He was afterward Chapline to one Sir *John Mapham* Treasurer of *Calice*, 498, 1, 7. Hee is sent an Ambassadour to the Emperour *Maximilian*, 37, 54, many pretty passages in his dispatch of that Embassage, 2, *per totum*, made Deane of *Lincolne* 499, 1, 20, made Priuie Councellour, 60. Made Bishop of *Lincolne* 500, 1, 37, made Archbishop of *Yorke*, 56. Hee is made Lord Chancellour, 2 51, at which time hee began to shew his pride, 60. Then Bishop of *Winchester*, succeeding Reuerend *Fox*, 501, 1, 13. The order of his house, 40, and of his Chapell, 2, 15, hee had 16 Chaplines, Doctors attending him, 50. Twice Ambassadour to *Charles* the fift, 502. 1. 17. Pope *Leo* constituteth him Legate with *Campaius*, 507, 1, 17 hee goes againe to the Emperour, 514, 1, 22, hee had a vaine hope of being Pope, 2, 5, his pompous receiuing the Emperour at Douer, 516, 1, 10. A pollicie of the Cardinals which turned against himselfe, 521, 1, 1, hee suppresseth Priories to build Colledges in *Oxford*, and *Ipswich*, 522, 2, 23. He setteth in order the Kings house, 525 2, 16, hee is sent to the Earle *Kildare*, 529, 1, 25, hee is sent Ambassadour into *France*, 531, 2, 1, his stately passage through London, 36 57. His pride, 532, 2, 13. The manner of his entertainement by the French, 533, 534, 535. He had many despights done him in *France*, 535 2, 30, hee declareth in Starre-chamber what an honourable peace he maketh with *France* 536, 1, 42, hee banqueteth the French Ambassadour at *Hampton-court*, 2, 50. Hee is suspected to send Treasury to *Rome*, 546, 1, 43. Hee is commanded to deliuer vp the great Seale of England, 2, 1, hee did deliuer it, 25. Hee tooke account of his riches, 30. The passages of his strange cariages on the high way, receiuing a message of good tydings from the King, 547, 2, 1. The King sends a Ring, and hee rewards the messenger, 52. 63. Hee sends Parch his Foole to the King for a Token, 548, 1, 24. Sir *Thomas Cromwels* councell to the Cardinall, 60, his speech to his houshold, 549, 1, 7. Their Contribution to him, 2, 35 hee is cheered by another message from the King, 550, 1, 30. hee is endighted at Parliament, 2, 37. The King promiseth to reward his seruants, 551. 1, 30. He fals sicke, 552, 1, 60 The King sends to him another Ring, 2 5. Hee first built Hampton-court, for which the King gaue him *Richmond*, 60. He is arrested, 556, 2. 29. 557. 1. 26, So is his Physitian *Augustine*. 38, hee sickneth, 30, hee dieth, 558, 2, 54. Pride hath a fall, 559. 1. 39.

Worcester: It is burnt and spoiled, 145. 1. 5.

World: The seuen ages of the world, *fol.* 1050. *col* 1. *lin.* 24.

Worme: A strange worme found in the heart of an horse. 719. 2. 50.

Worthington: A famous Preacher of Saint *Andrewes Holborne*, who made 3083 Sermons, 386, 2 10.

Wyat: Sir *Thomas Wyats* Commotion in *Kent*, 618. 1. 40. The Duke of *Norfolke* sent against him, 66. *Wyat* is strengthned with Ordinance, 2, 20. He comes into Southwark, 619. 1, 46. Hee and his company spoyle the Bishops of *Wintons* Library, 2. 13. He remoueth out of *Southworke* and goes for *Kingston*, on Thames, 619. 620. Hee comes backe to *Branford*, and so to saint *Iames* fields, 620. 2. 34. 58. Hee is taken, and sent to Tower, 621. 2. 11. 32. Hee is condemned, 623. 1, 8. Beheaded, 2 44.

Y.

Yeare: The Yeare 1588. called *The Wonderfull Yeare*, 743 1. 50.

Yelverton: He is made the Kings Atturney, *fol.* 1027. 2. 3. He is censured at Starre-Chamber, 1033. 2. 27.

Yorke: The first foundation of Yorke Cathedrall, 73 1 60. of the Library, 74. 1. 64. The Duke of Yorke and Somerset at variance 397. 1 & 2. The Duke of Yorke raiseth a power and commeth for London, 398. 1 64, He sends Letters to the King, *col.* 2. 47. A Synod, wherein it was provided that the Archbishop of Yorke should bee subiect to the Archbishop of Canterbury, 113. 2. 8. Yorke burnt, 155. 1. 13. Yorke Church repaired, 279. 2. 30. The Court of Kings bench removed to Yorke 308. 2. 15. *Richard* Duke of Yorke made Regent of France, 375. 1. 17. 378. 2, 40. *Richard* Duke of Yorke winneth favour with the Irish, 387. 1, 10. His letters from out of Ireland to King *Henry*, 394. 1, 13. The Kings answere, *col.* 2 22. The Dukes reply, 395, 1, 5. His submission and oath to the King, *col.* 2. 2. Of which see more, 399, &c. He with others are attainted of high Treason. 406, 2, 3. *Charles* Duke of Yorke Created. 856, 2, 13.

Z.

Ziphen: The Prince of Orange encamps before it. 736. 2, 28.

LONDON,

Printed by *A. M.* for RICHARD MEIGHEN, and are to bee sold at his Shop at the Middle Temple Gate, neere Templebarre in *Fleetstreet*. 1632.